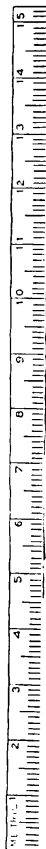




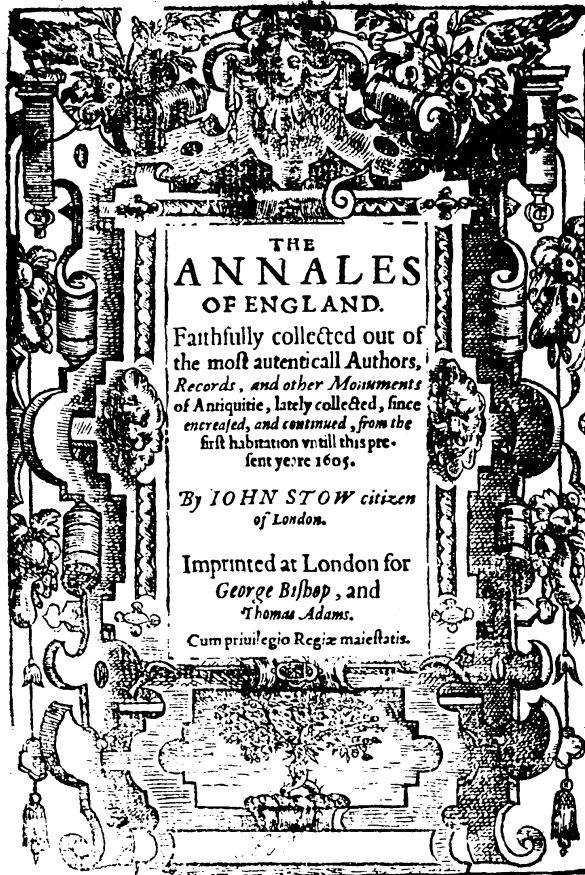
XEROX MICROFORMS SYSTEMS  
University Microfilms

Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

(313) 761-4700



MICROFILMED-1973



Authors out of whom these Annales  
are collected.

[illegible][illegible]

Historie of Lois duke of Orleans.  
*Huge de Piteveries.*  
 Humphrey Lloyd.  
 Henry Bradshaw.  
 Henry Archer.  
 Jacobus Bergomas.  
 Jacobus LaJabou.  
*Incipit.*  
 Johannes Salvatorius in  
 Johannes Hannu le  
 Joffius.  
 J. hannes de Vigny.  
 John le Taylor.  
 J. hannes Beuer.  
 Johannes Rowland.  
 Jo: ams Mandemite.  
*Incipit.*  
 Johannes Roué.  
 Johannes Mator.  
 J. hannes Ballo.  
 Johannes Eorden.  
 Johannes Casgrau.  
 Incipit de Brackelme.  
 Incipit Euri: enis.  
 Johannes Lelandus.  
 Johannes Leonius.  
 Johannes Taxior.  
 Johannes P. ke.  
 Johannes Buiuslucis.  
 Johannes Everdin.  
 Johannes Blackman.  
 Johannes Truckow.  
 John et Lerev: enis.  
 Johannes Trington.  
 Johannes Brompion.  
 John Curat.  
 John Vowell.  
 Jo: ams *Frumentarius* alias *He: tene*  
*bonifide.*  
 John of London.  
 Jo: ams *nes Gower.*  
 Johannes Belandus.  
 John Froate.  
 John Andrey.  
 Johannes Fortesc.  
 John t. enill.  
 John Skelton.  
 John Cairis.  
 Jo: ams *o. e. Gl. et.*  
 John Lidgate.  
 John Wadding.  
 Jo: ams *idus.*  
 Jo: ams *Editha Regina.*  
 Jo: ams *tuat. London.*  
 Jo: ams *ke. e. rom.*  
 Jo: ams *Le: nime. Gt.*  
 Jo: ams *Norwic. fide.*  
 Jo: ams *Winton. Gt.*  
 Jo: ams *S. Martin magn.*  
 Jo: ams *Le: London.*  
 Jo: ams *Le: Norwic.*  
 Jo: ams *Le: fide.*  
 Jo: ams *Le: London.*





# A Table of the principall matters contained in these Annales.

## A

Archflames.	18
Alban martyred. 45. Albans builded.	89
Albans towne spoiled by <i>Fulcatius</i> . 264. by the barons.	265
Ailesford.	56. 118
Andredlesage.	58
Arthur. 58. his table.	60
Austlin in England. 65. threatmeth the Britains. 66. decea- sed.	67
Andrewes in Rochester founded. 65. Rochester besieged.	103
103. Castle builded.	103
Atulbrough.	76
Adultry punished.	86
Articles for the Church.	88
Andreds walde.	100
Apuldore.	103
Afrida king.	104
Athden.	101
Abbot of S. Albons his pollicie against D. W.	118. 120
Ancient lawes of England remaine in kent.	134
Ancient Charters.	137
Abbey of S. Albons new builded.	144
Abbot of Glaffenbury murdered his monkes.	157
Abbot of S. Augustine some time a souldier.	161
Abbey of Chester.	183
Angusme Archbishop of Canterbury. 185. deceased.	185
Angles-Aye an Isle.	194
Archbishop of Yorke with his croffe cast out.	186
Adrian Pope an Englishman his epistle to Hebe 2.	202
Arthur Duke of Britaine taken & murdered in prison.	211
Albert de Vire Earle of Oxford.	247
Army into Wales.	248
Apollata circumcised.	251
Abbot of Westminster put to his shifts.	268
Archbishop of Canterbury visiteth Saint Bartholmewes in Smithfield.	269
Augustine frigers.	286
Abbey of Hailes.	287
Alexander king of Scots came into England.	290
Alaine de la Zouch flaine	303
Arthur bones remoued.	306
Aueland Colledge.	331
Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford.	346
Abbey of Bay spoiled.	351
Ades Tirre. 437 banished.	444
Arundell a knight drowned.	448
Aldermen knighted.	463
Archbishop of Yorke fled the Realm.	485
Armes of E. the confessor. 4. Marvlets.	501
Archbishop of Canterbury banished.	513
Alexander Ptole flaine.	607
Against defacers of Monuments.	615
Adam Mellens Bishop of Chichester murdered.	638
Alexander Eden sherrif of Kent.	647
Articles betwixt king Henry the first, and Richard Duke of Yorke.	679
Aldermen of London knighted.	706
Archbishop of Yorke spoiled and sent to prison.	708
Alecke Bishop of Ely.	806
Allome deare.	811

Archers sent against the Moores, and to aide the Dutchesse of Sauoy.	818
Andrew Barton a Scottish pyrate.	820
Army into Biscay against the French.	821
Augustine doctor of physike.	927
Abbeies visited. 963. small houses suppressed.	964
Articles of Religion devised by the king.	965
Abbot of Whaly and others executed.	968. 973
Abbeies suppressed.	970
Anabaptists bare fagots and were brent. 971 brent.	974
Abbey of S. Albons surrendered.	973
Army into France.	988
Ann. Ashew and other brent.	997
Admirall of France came to London.	997
Arden murdered.	1010
An Arian brent.	1021
Ambassadors to Rome. 1059. to Calcis.	1060
Abbot of Westminster.	1065
Ambassador from Roussa and Muscouia.	1064
Ambassadors from Sweden.	1083
Aide given to the Scots against the French.	1085
Arundell Earle of Warwike. landed at Newham.	1022.
deceased.	1263
Ambassadors from Mescouie.	1123
Arne Sanders, Anne Dremphanged.	1143
Aide into Scotland against the castle of Edenbrough.	1143
yielded to the English.	1145
Agnes Bridges, and Rachel Pinder counterfeited to be posses- sed.	1148
Anabaptists Dutch men. 1149. banished, brent.	1151
Ambassador into Denmarke.	1170
Albertus Alais.	1174.
Ambasadour from the king of Denmarke.	1175
Almes houses founded by the Merchant taylers.	1271
Ambassador from Poland.	1299
Ambassador from Denmarke.	1300
Ambassadors into France.	1302

## B

Britaine described page 1. named England.	29
Bridge at London.	2
Bishops in Wales.	7
Bishops in England.	1
Bret. 11. his line extinguished.	16.
Bambrough.	13
Bathe or Bathes. 15. Bathon hill.	19
Banner downe.	60
Hangor, 15. Monastery.	66
Bloud rained.	15
Brother traytor to brother.	13. 16
Belinus. 16. Gate.	18
Brennu.	16. 17
Britaines barbarous. 22. Warriors. 27. Maines, their flate.	63
57. wasted.	24
Britaine house in Holland.	47. 49
Bishops of London. 37. reproach the King.	73
Britaines placed in France.	79
Bibbrough.	85
Barking.	95
Bonsface to Ethelwald.	98
Benington.	98
Bloud rained.	98

# THE TABLE.

Battails at Affindowne, 101. at Chipinham, 100. against the Welchmen.	107
Battle at Lewes, 256. at Ewelham, 298. at Fankrike in Scotland, 318. at Chesterfield, 300. at Struven, 333. at Halidowne hill, 359. on the sea, 391. at Porters, 408. on the sea, 426. at Gressly, and of Durham, 380. at Halidowne hill, 531. at Shrewsbury, 532. at Otcombe, 482. at Vernone in Perche, 598. at Albons the first, 660. the 2, 686. at Wakefield, 654. at Mortimers cross, 685.	421
Battle at Northampton, 678. at Chepam, 693. at Theobury.	464
Beaufete.	479
Burton upon Trent.	482
Bishop of Durham slain.	526
Bishops and Abbots charged with keeping of soldiers.	509
Bermondsey in Southwarke.	638
Battle Abbey.	654
Bishop of Durham the kings Chancellor in great danger of death.	671
Bloud the likenesse thereof in a spring.	700
Bishopricks sold for money.	703
Bridges over the river Lec at Stratford.	706
Bedford befeiged.	707
Bosley in Kent.	707
Bishe Thomas Chancellor, 216. archbishop of Canterbury, 220. fled the Realm, 221. restored, and slaine.	707
Barnards castle.	707
Blacke booke of the Exchequer.	707
Bread allowed for 100. men, xij. pence.	707
Beverley brent.	707
Bones of Arthur found.	707
Baynards castle throwne downe.	707
Barons of England sworne to <i>Radcliff</i> the Legate, 255. require the charter of liberties, 257. excommunicated, 258. sent for <i>Lodowick</i> .	707
Barons overthrowne at Lincoln, the City spoyled. they tooke their voyage to Lewtalem.	707
Benevolence to H. the third.	707
Bedford castle befeiged.	707
Barons threat H. the third.	707
Butlers at coronation.	707
Bate coine.	707
Dygot Earle of Norfolk.	707
Barons in armour.	707
Boelard Abbey.	707
Blacke friers.	707
Bridges borne downe.	707
Boston burned.	707
Breach at Rotherhithe.	707
Bewmarsh Castle.	707
Barram nephew to <i>Gaufrers</i> .	707
Burgh beheaded.	707
Barwick betrayed, 338. Barwick taken by the Scots, 404. and againe by the English, 401. by the Scots, 448. lost and woone againe, 477. Scottes besieged Barwick and Rochester.	707
Bakenings set vp.	707
Baileie resigned the crowne of Scotland to <i>Edward</i> the third.	707
Barbican at London.	707
Blacke Prince his oration, 409. returning with his priuies, 415. prince of Aquitaine, 418. deceased.	707
Beards of Englishmen shaven.	707
Beuchamps buried in Paules.	707
Eastard brother disherited the lawfull brother and mur-	707

thereth him,	421
Barly belonging to the B. of Norwich.	464
Bull against the Clergy for their temporalities.	479
Barly sold for xij d. the quarter.	482
Blanke Charters, 515. burned.	526
Bush Bagot and Greene.	509
Blowhard hanged.	638
Bordeaux yielded to the English.	654
Blorcheath field.	671
Barnbery field.	700
Barnet field.	703
Banazars made.	706
Bowrnes draff out.	707
Banisher betrayed his master, the duke of Buckingham, which duke was beheaded.	707
Beacons set vp and watched.	707
Blackheath field.	707
Bighthamsted in Suffex brent by the French.	707
Banquetting house prepared in Calais delaced, the cauaus breuen blowne away.	707
Broad scale of England left at Calais.	707
Broad scaire at London.	707
Bump head broken.	707
Birth of Lady Elizabeth.	707
Bishops preach against the pope.	707
Table in English in every parish church.	707
Blocke houses builded.	707
Dafe monies cunyed.	707
Peneuolence demanded.	707
Boligne yielded to the French.	707
Booke of Common prayer.	707
Bridwell given to the civic of London.	707
Bishops restored.	707
Barge of Grauefend overturned.	707
Peete and mutton sold by waight.	707
Blazing sturre.	707
Fishops depiued.	707
Purfe in Cornhill builded.	707
Bull from Rome hanged on the p. of Londons gate.	707
Banquetting house at Westminster.	707
Ball falvi s. the bushell.	707
Beare garden fall of a scaffold Killed eight persons.	707
Bren Orosio of Ireland, 1267. executed.	707
Bridges at Cambridge, at Ware almost borne down.	707

## C

Counities or shires.	1
Cornwall.	8
Canterbury.	14
Chesse a game.	16
Cyfar Llanus.	21.12
Christians in Britaine, 34. persecuted.	36
Cheslar.	35.107
Colchester.	35.106
Churches overthrowne.	44
Constantine first christened Emperour.	46
Council at Nice.	47
Constantinople.	47
Croford.	47
Cilester.	56
Camelot castle.	59
Certery.	70
Credo and Pater noster in English.	88
Crowland.	88

Cups

# THE TABLE.

Cups of brasse.	91
Cerdike shore.	94
Cirencester.	95.103
Church yards.	98
Chastity preferred.	101
Cleary slaine in yaler.	118
Combat for the kingdome.	118
Combat at Reading.	221
Challenge of combat by <i>Turkill</i> .	389
Combat before king <i>Edward</i> the third, 392. at Westminster.	448.477
448.477 at York.	527
Combat fought in Smithfield.	609
Combat in Smithfield, 630. 635. at Shire.	795
Combat appointed at Westminster.	1132
Clement the Dane, 118. king of foure kingdomes.	119
Clements church without temple barre.	121
Castles at Nottingham and York, 143. at Wisbech, 148. at Leeds in Kent, 150. at Oxford, 150. at Durham, 155. at Northampton, 155. at Rochester, 157. New castle upon Tyne, 160. Tutbury, 160. at Stordford, 166. at Grantbridge.	184
Colledge S. Martin in London.	165
Creepley gate of London.	165
Council at Salisbury.	185
Carlisle Citie and castle.	185
Colchester S. Johns a monastery.	193
Conspiracie against king W.	193
Conspiracie against king <i>Henry</i> the fourth, 530. against king H. the fourth by the archbishop of York, 539. discovered, 544. against king H. the 5.	56
Conspiracie at Abingdon, 610. at Concutry.	876
Castles at Brilflow and Cardiffe.	195
Chichester brent.	195.231
Gretefleur Abbey founded.	197
Cardinal inuenging against priests concubines, was detected of whoredome.	204
Carlisle a Bishopricke.	201
Crede in English.	219
Canterbury brent.	224
Castles rased by H. the second.	225
Castles at Ongar in Essex.	227
Charles Prince of Wales trayterously slaine.	228
Cruz Roissa, or Roiffon, 136. hospital there.	250
Colledge at Lambheath.	242
Corne deere.	248
Colchester besieged.	259
Croxton abbey.	262
Councils at Oxford and Cambridge.	264.268
Castles yielded to Lewes.	264
Castles at Charlsey and Beeston builded.	268
Christ counterfeit.	268
Confutane with ether hanged.	269
Carcage groned.	271.278
Charter of liberties confirmed, 271. cancelled.	272
Cemeteris in house in Chancel lane.	276
Cometous archbishop of York.	277
Corne full of vermin.	277
County of Chester came to the king.	279
Cambridge schoolers burnt houses.	286
Castle at Kingstone and at Townebridge taken.	296
Castle of flint.	305
Castle burned.	312
Charing Crosse and other.	313
Canon law taught in Cambridge.	317
Children eaten, and theues in prison deuoured.	336
Cardinals robbed in England.	336
Cardis forficed.	345
Commons of Bery executed, their towne amerced.	353
Challenge of combat by <i>Turkill</i> .	359
Copland tooke the king of Scots.	381
Commodities of peace.	384
Caleis woon 380 like to haue been lost.	385
Charter house by London.	385
Cow fat for xvi d.	385
Carelon brought from Ireland.	389
Caracalon in France brent.	404
Cobham colledge.	419
Council against <i>Isam</i> of Gaunt.	433.435
Chaucer sent into France.	437
Commissions into Essex. <i>T. de Drampton</i> .	441
Commons of Essex spoile the archbishops house at Lambheath, and brent the manor of Highbery.	441
Commons of Essex assembled at Billica.	467
Custome of Wales.	472
Custie iustice taken and executed.	487
Cruelle of Scots.	489
Colledge and hospital at Pontfra.	543
Colledge of Fodingay.	551
Cardinal of Winchester.	605
Cow for xii d. a sheepe for one peny.	616
Caleis befeiged.	617
Colledge at Tattishall.	618
Commoion at Norwich.	630
Colledge and hospital at Ligham.	630
Cane deliuered to the French.	637
Colledge at Wyre in Kent.	657
Coinc enhanced.	695
Church robbers hanged, burned and pressed to death.	717
Crosby place.	744
Celebration making a libell, was executed.	780
Cite of Granado woon from the Moores.	795
Commoion in Cornwall.	801
Colledge at Rotherham.	806
Cupbord of plate.	809
Chappell of H. the seventh at Westminster, 810. his se.	814
pulture.	814
Coinc altered.	811
Cap of maintenance sent to H. the seventh.	811
Cap of maintenance to H. the eight.	831
Charles Brandon duke of Suffolke married lady <i>Mary</i> fifte.	841
Henry the eight.	842
Charles the fifth Emperour came to London.	868
Court to heare complaints of the poore erected.	847
Cardinal <i>Campas</i> came into England.	852
Charles the fifth Emperour came into England.	855
Charles duke of Suffolke entered France with a power.	874
Charles D. of Burbon reuolued from the French king.	875
Cardinal <i>Campas</i> came to London.	908
Cardinal <i>Wolsey</i> departed from York place.	919
Cardinal <i>Wolsey</i> at Purneth.	920
Cardinal indiged in primumire.	926
Colas deane of Paules.	933
Cardinal <i>Wolsey</i> sickened, 988. dieth.	940
Cleargie condemned in primumire.	942
Conclusions against the kings marriage.	942
Cooke boyled in Smithfield.	943
Coiners and clippers executed.	944
Chrills church priory suppressed.	950
Crosse in Cheape new builded.	963
Chauities their names taken.	978
Curse from Rome.	979
Charterhouse monkes executed.	982.983
Commoion in Lincolnshire aspeafed.	986

b 2

Commoion

## THE TABLE

Commotion in Yorkshire. 906. of the rebels there.	906. 578	Ditch about London.	235
Chancery, colleges, hospitals given to the church.	992	Dunstable spoiled by the Barons.	265
Channery in Somersetshire and Lincolnshire, Cornwall and Devon, also at Norwich.	1006	Delacreste Abbey.	268
Commotion in Yorkshire, rebels executed.	1006	Darkefle in Pauls church.	274
Church plate and jewels called into the kings hands.	1009	David of Wales rebelled.	307
Coines new.	1041	Draw the flafte.	321
Cardinal Peck.	1043	Dogs flesh good meate.	335
Conspiracye againſt Queene Mary.	1044	Dezereth Knight.	387
Commotion in Kent by <i>T. Wat.</i> 1044. <i>Wats</i> ſtrengthened with the queens ordinance. 1045. came into Southwark. 1046. went out of Southwark. 1047. into St. James field. 1049. taken, beheaded.	1050	1. ſentence at Oxford. 399. townſmen indiged.	400
Cat hanged in Cheape.	1054	Beath of corne.	423. 62
Cardinal Peck came into England. 1057. archbiſhop.	1062	1. ſecond in Pauls church.	430
Crauer Archbiſhop of Canterbury beent.	1062	Diſſention at Oxford.	430
Conspiracye to have robbed the Exchequer.	1062	Death of corne here, relieved from beyond the ſea.	431
<i>Charls</i> lord Sturton executed.	1067	Dolphin of the ſea came to London bridge.	492
Conſpiracie in Norfolk.	1067	Dukes created.	513. 60
Caleis beſieged, and taken by the French.	1069	Dukes of Surrey and Exceſter executed.	526
Come and wood deare.	1073	Duke of Gloceſter condemned after he was dead.	512
Conference appointed.	1077	Bermouth invaded by the French.	535
Church ſervice in the Engliſh tongue.	1082	Duke of Burgundy enamoured on the Counteſſe of Salimbrie.	599
Citizens of London muſtered at Greenwich.	1082	Duke of Glouceſter goeth into Holland, chalenge the combat. 601. married <i>Elisabeth</i> . 602. fell at debate with the Biſhop of Wincheſter.	603
Commiſſioners appointed.	1082	Dorſet <i>Lords</i> .	671
Church Images burned.	1082	Degrading of a knight <i>Ralph Gray</i> .	693
Churches in London ſmitten by tempeſt.	1083	Duke of Somerſet and other beheaded.	694
Coines of ſilver monies.	1094. 1096	D. <i>Godard</i> preached at Pauls croſſe againſt <i>K. Edward</i> .	701
Captaine <i>Rendall</i> knight marſhall of Newbaute on his puiſſance.	1111	D. <i>Agiln</i> ſermon at Pauls.	757
<i>Charles</i> <i>Louis</i> crowned king of Scots.	1119	Duke of Fuchingham oration.	758
Cardinal <i>Cicilian</i> came into England.	1123	Drie ſummer.	804
Conſpiracie in Norfolk.	1129	Duke of Buckingham his gowne.	808
Coffers ſeized.	1159	Dudley arraigned. 816. executed.	818
Croſſe in Cheape defaced.	1159	Death and death in England.	865
<i>Carin</i> executed.	1167	Degrading of a knight of the Garter.	873
<i>Charles</i> <i>L. Howard</i> <i>L. Chamberlaine</i> , <i>L. admiral</i> .	1186	Duke of Devon champion for Henry the eight.	877
Conny <i>Howells</i> ſhot into the mouth.	1237	Duke of Suffolke his ſpeech to the Cardinals.	918
<i>Chriſtopher</i> <i>Hatten</i> <i>L. Chancellor</i> .	1247	D. of Norfolk to the Cardinal. 922. his bitter words.	911
Campe at Tilbury in Hefex. 1244. Queene <i>Elizabeth</i> went to the campe.	1259	D. of Baſet and Paſſeſſaure of Rhine came into Eng. 973.	973
Copiers and other preſhed in Cheape.	1264	Dumpe and <i>Compton</i> of the kings gail hanged.	978
Commiſſions for inquiſition to be made.	1267	Duke of Norfolk ſmurd Scotland.	981
Copiers executed.	1301	Dumme and Cleyſer of Pauls pulled downe.	1004
<i>Charles</i> <i>Howard</i> created earle of Nottingham.	1302	D. of Somerſet to the tower. 1022. condemned.	1023
Cole of great price.	1279	beheaded.	1024
<i>Colin</i> <i>Blunt</i> <i>L. Mountie</i> towards Ireland lieutenant.	1305	Dagger throwe at the preacher.	1037
		Duke of Northumberland arreſted. 1034. arraigned.	1037
		beheaded.	1038
		Diſputation at Oxford.	1064
		<i>Dan</i> <i>el</i> and <i>Peckham</i> executed.	1083

**D**

D	Dotteraine.	13	Extraction from test by great fire, to the king or page.	1155
D	Downe, 61. spoyled.	317	Heavenly snowes, and great floods.	1160
D	Dorchester.	319	Houses builded for in London bridge.	1176
D	Danes arrived, 9.8. spoyled London, 9.9. east England.	115.	Deputies for the states of the low Countries.	1184
D	their tyranny, 116. invade England.	116.	Demond in Ireland peopled by the English.	1201
D	Drunkards, condemned.	146	Disordered soldiers hanged.	1241
D	Durham a Fishops fca.	114	Disordered youths punished.	1279
D	Dane gilt, 122. discharged.	124	Declaration of causes why a Navy was sent to sea.	1282
D	Danes invade England, and are compounded with.	125.	Duke of Boloigne came into England.	1290
D	made claim to the crown of England, 147. invade England.	156. 163		
D	Domes day booke.	159		
D	Diuels appeared to men.	189		
D	Disseable towne and priory.	193		

**E**

E	Denbrough.	13
	Elutherius his Epistle.	36
	Esther first Saxon baptized.	65
		Ea8

THE TABLE.

Ear Angles.	72	Edward the fourth elected king in S. Tores field, rooke on	72
Edward the king maytyred.	76	him the kingdom. 688	688
Falt Saxons.	76	crowned. 690	690
Eouefham.	85	late in the	691
Egelsburge.	95	king's bench 691 this touny into Scotland	691
Egelftun.	95	prisoner. he padeneth and beheaded. 701	701
Edburge payoned her husband.	95	leas: 702 landed at Aunsefont. 703, pardoned many	703
Englith schoole at Rome.	98	and cut off their heads. 704	704
Excheq. 102. a biſhops ſea: 114. 114 beſieged.	143	banquered the Maier of London and Aldermen.	720
Excheq. 102. a biſhops ſea: 114. 114 beſieged.	143	deceased	721
Egbrights ſtone.	103	Edward Monſteute Earle of Northumberland made mar-	694
Edeſbury.	103	queſſe Monſteute.	700
Edwaine deprived of his kingdom.	108	Earle of Warwike his houſe keeping.	712
Edwaine crowned at Bath 109 his oration. 110. ſtate of the	108	Edward the ſit	712
church in his rme. 113. Wolves deſtroyed. 109 Kings	108	Earle of Northumberland ſlaine.	712
eight rowed Edwaine.	113	Exchequer beſieged.	712
Edwaine of Straton.	115-117-118-119	Edward Plantagenet beheaded.	803
Edmondbre. 120 brent.	257	Edmond de la Poole Earle of Suffolke and his brother ſed in	805
Edwaine of Caſtelle. 122. healed the kings euill. 128. he ſawe	257	to Flanedis.	807
the diuell dance.	257	Edmond de la Poole earle of Suffolke ſent to the Tower.	811
Engliſh men giuen to drinking. and not to praye.	131	Emſon and Yndre ſent to the Tower.	815
Edwaine and Alſeſtare againſt king 131. William.	148	Emſon arraigned and attained 817. executed.	818
Eſt. of men put out.	152. 154.	Edward Howard lord admirall drowned.	823
Earthquake.	160. 204. 221. 284. 285. 179. 303	Edward de la Poole beheaded.	823
Hly made a Biſhops ſea. 195. beſieged.	258. 288	Euill May day at the London. 849. three Queenes obtained	849
Earle of Glouceſter Robert.	197. 198	pardon for the Leathers.	851
Earthquake.	197. 198	Edward duke of Buckingham beheaded.	863
Edwaine Nuns.	222	Example of pride and arrogence.	941
Engliſh men tranſported into Ireland.	222	Earles of Hicx and Oxford deſeased.	972
Exchequer at Northampton.	222	Earle of Kildare and ſue of his Vnles executed.	968
Exchequer and kings bench at York.	311	Edmond Kneſt knight arraigned for ſtriking a man in the	978
Exchequer at York.	339	court.	987
Earle maiſhall W. died.	267. 275	Earle of Hertford ſent into Scotland.	987
Engliſh Lewes.	287	Engliſh men put to flight by the Reingrue.	995
Elephant ſent into England.	289	Edward the ſixt. 999. crowned. 1000. deſeased.	1009
Edward the ſixt crowned. 304 went into Wales. 308. lay in	327	Earthquake	1021
the wike. 317. died.	310	Edward Courtenay created earle of Deuon. ſent to Fodering-	1056. 1041
Edward Courtenay prince of Wales.	327	hay.	1056. 1041
Edward the ſecond 327 crowned. 328. againſt his Parons.	327	Earle of Northumberland & Weſtmerland rebelled. 1123	1123
329. hee ſendeth for Gauſſe. 330 his wife and eldeſt	329	rebeck ſent the Bible 1124. proclaimed traytors. 1124	1124
ſon into France. 344. the king ſixth. 345 he ſeigneth the	345	Earle of Lincolne Embaſſador into France.	1131
crowne 348. his milery. crowned with hay. ſlaueen with	348	Earle of Northumberland beheaded.	1137
cold water 350 murdered.	352	Engliſh men ſent to Villan in Ireland.	1139
Elham mannor in Kent.	332	Earle of ſlarly Edward deſeased.	1139
Earle Waren excommunicate.	336	Earthquake 1149. 1163. in Iorſetſhire.	1140
Earle haſſell cheape coraſe.	337	Example of forſerite.	1159
Earle of Carlele 341 degraded and executed.	342	Edmond Caſpian 1616 and other executed.	1169
Ely an Ile crowned.	351	Edmond Grindall Archbiſhop of Canterburie.	1174
Edward the third crowned. 353 his vile to France. 354. hee	354	Earle of Northumb. founde to haue murdered himſelfe. 1174	1174
woone Barwike. 359. entered Scotland. 360. founded	359	Earle of Shienſbery Gilbert. embaffador into France. 1290	1290
kings hall in Cambridge. 365. made Vicegerent of the	365		
empire. invaded France. 367. entered Scotland. 372.	372		
ſlayed into Normandy.	377		
Elſing ſpittle.	359		
Elſing water founded.	439		
Earthquake.	439		
Earle of Arundale arraigned in the Parliament. 511. be-	511		
headed.	511		
Earle of Warwike arraigned.	512		
Emperer of Conſtantinople came into England.	513		
Earle of Cambridge indighted.	529		
England made one of the ſix nations.	575		
Earle of Arondale wounded in France.	611		
Elmer Calſham 627. did penance.	628		
Edmond duke of Sommerſet ſent to the Tower. 657. Captaine	657		
at Calcis. 658. ſed to Guines.	673		
	673		

**F**

59	<b>E</b> lie Bishop of Dunwich Stew.	72. 73
39	Faulham.	103
04	Fenham.	104
be-	Flux of men.	117
12	Fier and light for bidden to the English.	134
13	Fier great.	156
29	Forc't new, in Hampshire.	161. 165
65	Famine and death of men.	165
75	Fire and light reffored to the English.	190
15	Flemings sent to Wales.	194
28	Flemings voiced England.	216
nine	Fish like to a man.	239
73	Faile accuser of his elder brother hanged.	240
		<b>Page</b>

# THE TABLE.

Frost great	248.127.302	Glastenbury.34.97. brent.	230
Fette and hands of men cut off.	269	Gurmoncheiler.	63
Friers minors arrived here.	271	Gloucester.85. spoiled by the Welch. 285. brent.	200
Fifteenth of all mens goods to the king.	271	Castile taken. 253. besieged.	255
Fishes monstrous.	280	Glaifing to the Saxons.	92
Friers of the sickle.	315.321	Guy of Warwicke.	107
Friers Carmelites in Oxford.	334	Gadare his peugrew. 115. dieth.	126
Fight on the sea with the French.	369	Gillingham forfeit.	117
Florens of golde coynd.	373	Glanmorant le Rich.	180
Fealt of S. George at Windsor.	890	Gates bones found.	166
Founders of the Garter.	391	Glamorgan and Morganoche.	180
French king prisoner in England released. 417. died in	419	Gladstone defended. 184. burned.	189
land.	419	Greatbridge defended. 184. burned.	189
Frost great 8. months.	419	Giles church at Cruple gate.	191
Fubbing. Curingham and Sansford in Essex assembled.	451	G. Mansel earle of Essex slain.	212
Flemmings beheaded.	459	Geredon.	222
Frier tormented to death.	475	Gifford earle of Britaine died.	230
Frier in strange forme appeared.	484	Gifford Rade the proud Bishop of Fly.	233
Fable repeated.	494	Gifford. Archbishop of Yorke, drawne from the altar to	235.256
French king in danger to be breut by his trayceous bro-	495	prison.	235.256
ther.	495	Glaicoigne subdued.	271
Frier stout, the duell appeared in likeness of a frier.	530	Grafith of Wales.	283
Fifteene granted to the king.	537	Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester.	283
Fray in S. Justins church.	575	Glaucelind Bishop of London.	321
Foway brent.	665	Gilbert earle of Gloucester.	333
Flemish merchants with their wares banished England.	798	Gulsties. 383. gotten by the English.	394
Falle accusers committed to prison.	816	Groaties and halfe groates.	393
Flodon field.	826	Graucelind brent by the French.	449
French king taken prisoner.	878	Guns invented.	449
French Craier chafed to the Tower.	908	Great taxe the cause of great rebellion.	449
Frier surreit brent.	969	Greenhill beheaded.	481
Fier in Roode lane.	969	Governors of this realme. 13. appointed.	489
Fith brent.	962	Guns fight a great battaile.	490
Frier houses suppressed.	962.970	Gifford. Chaucer Poet.	529
Fust fruites and tenths given to the king.	962	Gads house at Neweme in Oxford shire.	619
Fier at Bilsing fytale.	980	George Duke of Clarence, and the earle of Warwicke fled in	701
Falle accuser fet on the pillory.	991	to France, and againe landed at Plymouth.	701
Firft and second fals of monies.	1021	George Duke of Clarence, the earle of Warwicke and other	702
Firft fruites and tenths restored to the cleargie.	1061	restored Henry the first. 702. Duke of Clarence agreed	703
Falle accuser fet on the pillory, and brent in both the	1062	with his brother. 703. attained by parliament. 716. put	717
checkes.	1062	to death.	717
Firft fruites and tenths granted to the crowne.	1075	Great Harry a shippe made.	822
Fall of the bale monies.	1094	Great payment to Henry the eight.	822
Fallen and others executed.	1130	Golden rose sent from Rome to Henry the eight.	876
French Embassadors.	1138	Gardens secretary to Henry the eight.	918
Frost great.	1140	Gold enhanced.	886
Fish monstrous.	1148	Gerard Fitz Gerard deputy of Ireland.	891
Fles in February.	1149	Giffith Clarke Vicar of Famsworth and other execu-	922
Family of loue.	1151	ted.	922
Four children at a burden.	1152	Going to Landrese.	984
Fery at Lambheath drowned.	1163	Gallies taken from the French.	995
Ferisus Drake his voyage.	1164.1165	Great watch at midfomer.	1003
Fustfruites first voyage to Catay. 1152. second voyage.	1160	Greenwich and Ier ex. invaded by the French.	1003
1154. th id voyage.	1160	Great countreil prison punished.	1020
French Tinterton executed.	1177	Great feare upon full occupation.	1025
French Rufell earle of Bedford deceased.	1187	Grey friers church in London made an hospitall.	1026
French Drake his voyage to S. Domingo.	1187	Gilbert Rie punished in Cheape.	1030
Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased.	1275	Gun shot at the preacher.	1056
		Gun shot out of a ship into the court at Greenwich.	1064
		Great S. m. lers murdered.	1141
		George Browne changed.	1142
		Guns powder blew up houses.	1174
		Grou-d and trees funke and swallowed vp.	1187
		Gun powder house blewne up.	1241
		Gates of Pauls Church blowne open.	1263

Humbar

# THE TABLE.

H	Hospital at Leicester.	358
	Henry earle of Lancaster died.	377
	Hay.	378
	Harlots apparell appointed them.	388
	High Chancery. 437. his journey towards Boloigne.	445
	Hallings burnt by the French.	444
	Henry Spence Bishop of Norwich, his boldnesse against the	464
	rebels.	464
	Hereford.	75
	Hereford duke of Hereford accused the duke of Norfolk.	514
	Hunstantone.	514
	Hereford.	829
	Hereford the fourth crowned. 524. confpiracie against him.	517
	525. innadeth Scotland. 527. elcapheth great danger.	517
	530. went into Wales. 531. writhe to the Pope. 546.	517
	ayled the duke of Burgundy. 551. gane ayde to the duke	517
	of Orleanes.	556
	Hospital at Rome for English men.	546
	Henry Prince of Wales strangely disguised visiteth his father	553
	being sick.	553
	Henry the first. 557. crowned. 559. he heareth all suites. 559.	559
	Richimour. Shene, and Ston built. 559. kept the field by	559
	S. Giles without Oldborne. 561. builded at Kenelme, and	559
	slayed into Normandy. 562. Proclamation in his hostie.	559
	565. Herefter surrendered to him. 568. wan the battaile	559
	at Agen court. 570. arrived at Douer. 574. he besieged	559
	Cane. 578. won it. 579. he besieged Louars, and Pontle-	559
	archand. 583. hee besieged Meluie. 590. hee	559
	died.	593
	Halfe pence of Iarus for biddeleg.	574
	Henry the first king of England and of France. 595. crown-	595
	ed. 609. crowned at Paris. 611. he went against the re-	595
	bels of Kent. 643. he went to Killingsworth. 644. rode	595
	into Kent with an army. 648. fled into Scotland. 690.	595
	taken. 695. restored. 702. lent to the Tower. 703. mur-	595
	dered. 705. his exercises while he liued.	706
	Henry duke of Warwicke.	635
	Henry duke of Gloucester died.	635
	Harlow Castle won.	700
	Henry duke of Richmond landed at Wilford hauen. 783. won	783
	the battaile at Bolworth, was crowned in the field. 787	787
	married E. daughter to Edward the fourth. 789. slayed	789
	into France, and besieged Boloigne. 796. lodged in the	796
	Tower. 799. rode to Paules on Saint Georges day. 811.	799
	died.	813
	Hospital of the Sany.	813
	Henry the eight. 814. crowned. 815. speares appointed to	815
	waite on him. 816. besieged Lutwite. 823. besieged	823
	Turney. 825. procurer Maximilian the emperor to war	825
	upon the French. 848.ooke shipping towards Calcis.	848
	856. landed at Calcis and rode to Boloigne. 944. mar-	856
	ried lady Anne Boloigne. 946. preparation for his coro-	944
	nation. 947. crowned. 953. beheaded. 965. married lady	947
	Lane Somer. 965. married lady Anne of Cleve. 973. was	965
	divorced. 977. married lady Katherine Howard. 977. be-	977
	headed. 980. his progresse to Yorke. 980. king of Ire-	980
	land. 980. married lady Katherine Par.	984
	Henry the 8. went to Boloigne. 989. Boloigne weilded. 990	989
	Henry the 8. wrote against Luther. 865. king H. in danger of	990
	drowning.	881
	Hampton Court builded.	885.536
	Hospital of S. John of Ierusalem suppressed.	974
	Holy made of Kent. 959. 950. headed.	965
	Henry duke of Richmond died.	966
	Hollanders condemned for heretikes.	963
	House blowne vp with gunpowder.	986
	Hadington brent.	987
	Haile Stones strange.	991.1170
	Henry	Henry

## THE TABLE.

<i>Henry Howard</i> Earle of Surrey arraigned and beheaded. 997	<i>John Philipot</i> of London. 435. his oration. 440. 447. his good service. 449. deced. 476
<i>Henry</i> the 8. his gift to the Cizio of London. 997. died. his tombe made. 998	<i>John Smith</i> of London. 436
Hadington besieged and taken. 1003	Jurers heads chopped off. 451
Halsford given to king I. the first. 1003	<i>John Tiler</i> of Dartford slew a collector. 452
Halsford lost in Scotland. 1013	Jurers, Lawyers and lurers beheaded. 453
High altar in Wales pulled downe. 1019	<i>John Bull</i> a wicked priest chaplain to the rebels. 453. taken
House blowne with gun powder. 1025	brought to S. Albons, his doctrine. 468. sermon and li-
<i>Henry Gray</i> duke of Suffolk beheaded. 1053	bels. 469. hanged. 473. commons of Kent came to black
<i>Henry Stewart</i> Lord Darnley married the Queene of Scots. 1115	hearts. 453. into Southwarke and to London, brent the
1115. was murdered. 1118	Sauoy. 454
<i>Hey</i> sold by waight. 1121	<i>John Newton</i> sent to Wat Tyler. 460
High waters drowned many. 1130	<i>John Cauesdale</i> flew Wat Tyler. 401
<i>Hill</i> and <i>Walden</i> executed. 1140	<i>John Wraw</i> a rebell. 463. hanged. 472
<i>Hoile</i> scales hanged. 1176	<i>John Cauesdale</i> lord chiefe Iustice, the Prior of Pety and o-
<i>Henry</i> earle of Darby his Embassage into France. 1178	ther beheaded by the rebels. 463
<i>Henry Sidney</i> knight deced. 1203	<i>John Lister</i> of Norwich served by knights. 464. his end. 465
<i>Horle</i> . men and foot-men trayned and mustered at Lon-	<i>John Strach</i> his confession at the galowes, and purpose of
don. 1304	the rebels. 465
I	
<b>Ireland.</b> 18	<i>John Burly</i> , <i>James Burghly</i> , and <i>Rich. Turry</i> by knights. 472
Jerusalem. 47. woon by the Christians. 187. taken by the	<i>John</i> t Gaunt duke of Lancaster accused. 475. fayleth into
Saraffins. 231	France. 476. kings of Spaine. 480. returned. 490
<i>Jahane</i> executed. 78	<i>John Northampton</i> conspired. 476
Jewes brought into England. 137. ransomed. 251. 100y-	<i>John Newton</i> that bare the kings sword. 471
led. 257	Iustices arrested as they fate in parliament. 486
<i>Jane</i> Baynard lady of Donmow. 192	Iustices in Smithfield. 491. 496
<i>James</i> at Bristow apriory. 195	Jewes baptized at London. 492
Ipwich besieged. 214	lic of Man purchased by <i>W. Scrope</i> . 493
<i>John</i> the kirge son, lord of Ireland, ware a crowne of pea-	<i>John</i> . <i>Hawkes</i> , his adcs, life, and death. 496
cockes feathers. 219	Irish people to auoid England. 498
<i>John</i> Earle Morton. 233. vsurperth the kingdome. 235. re-	John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne
belled 237. his submission. 234	503. died. 516
Jewes slew themselves. 234	Iusting on London bridge. 504
<i>John</i> Earle Morton lord of Ireland, procured an orthe of all	Iusting and feasting. 515
men. 242. seized on the kings treasure, took on him the	Iusting in Smithfield. 549. in the Tower of London. 669.
dukedom of Normandy. 243. elected king of England,	in Smithfield. 698
crowned, prophetic of him 244. divorced from his wife,	<i>John Gower</i> poet. 527
married another. 245. summoned to the French kings	lic of Man given to the earle of Northumberland. 524
court. 247. moved to repentance, took an orthe. 255.	<i>John</i> Benet Woolman beheaded. 575
resigned the crowne, abdicat. 256. layed into Britain.	<i>John</i> Lord Talbot layed into Normandy. 614. laine. 615
258. returned, cross. died to Jerusalem. 259. invaded the	<i>John</i> Duke of Bedford Regent of France. 616
lands of his Barons 259. died. 260. died. 262	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> de Courcy earle of Ulster. 247	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> mother to the third went into France. 268	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Jewes Synagogue in London. 275	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Jewes at Norwich stole a child. 277	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> filiter to H the third married to the Emperor. 277	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Iusting at Rochester. 287. at Reading and at Langley. 371	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Jewes hanged. 389. drowned 291. 100y. for Vliue. 293.	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
executed. 306. 311. Synagogue destroyed. 308. banished	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
England. 313	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Jewes Synagogue. 321	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Iustices comitted to the Tower 312. punished. 420	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> Lord Furdy. 322	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Jewes and Leapers poisoned waters. 329	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> the queene sent into France. 344. returned. 345	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> Sherdon knight. 368	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> of Gaunt borne. 369	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Iusting at Linc. Inc. 784. at Windfore. 886. at Woodstock	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
400. in Smithfield. 415	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Iusting in Smithfield. 418	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
<i>John</i> duke of Lancaster challenged to combat. 397	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636
Ireland yielded come to England. 398	<i>John</i> de la Poole Duke of Suffolke. 636

## THE TABLE.

<i>John Dudley</i> L. Admirall brent Traypore. 992	<i>Ley</i> a River. 104
Johns church by Smithfield blown up with gun powder. 1002	<i>Leicester</i> repayed. 107. brent. 224
<i>John</i> of 13. and Warwick against the rebels at Norwich. 1004	London bridge. 124. of timber. 221. with arches of stone. 225. 250
<i>John</i> butcher brent. 1019	Page. 225. 250
<i>John</i> of 13. brent. 1059	Lit. colne a Bishopricke. 165. brent. 200
<i>John</i> of 13. brent. 1059	London and Paules church brent. 165. 204
<i>John</i> Throckmorton and other executed. 1060	London with the bridge brent. 207. justified. 266
<i>John</i> Lord Burke murdered. 1270	Lightheart at Winchelcombe. 182
<i>John</i> Parry knight arraigned. 1271	Lewes in Suffex. 185
<i>John</i> Tuckering Lord Keeper. 1271	Line of the Saxons restored. 227
K	
Kings deuoured by beafts. 13	Legate from Rome 251. Pandolph. 355
Kentish Saxons. 58	Lewes arrived in England. Scots did homage to Lewes. 240.
Kenechetter. 64	his power vanquished, agreed, & returned, Dover Castle
Kensham Abbey founded. 195	be sieged. 260. 266
Keselworth Priory and Castle. 195	Leopards sent to H the third. 278
Knighten guild, now Portoken ward. 196	Legate put to his shifts. 279
King John deced. 252	London liberties tested. 188. taken by the Earle of Glo-
King of Jerusalem came into England. 270	ceffer. 302. Riot in London. 302
Keselworth Castle besieged. 300. yielded. 301	Ludlow Castle taken. 297
Kings palace at Wellminster brent. 318	Legat accused the Barons. 301
King E the third besieged Turney, returned into England, 371	Le Gures of Diuinity in Granbridge. 313
entered the Tower. 371	Londoners riding to meete the Queene. 320
King F. besieged Calais. 380. yielded. 383. elected king	Leedes Castle besieged. 339
of Almaine. 384	Lunday an Ile defended. 346
King E. fayled towards Flanders. 387. into France. 400. in-	Late house. 358
aded Bardi ndy. 416. borrowed sum of money. 423.	Library in Oxford. 377
dieth. 438. his issue. 439	Libaltie by Gwines. 396
Kings three came into England. 419	Laves pleaded in the English toong. 419
Knights of the stature. 397	<i>Leoni</i> Duke of Clarence married, his wedding feast. 425
King of Ermony came into England. 420	Lightning and thunder. 473
Kings bench and Chancery removed to Yorke. 495	Londoners fled without cause. 478
King Richard his conquest of Ireland, the same described. 500. fayled to Calais. 505. fayled into Ireland. 516	Lords came to the king in the Tower of London. 485
returned. 518. betrayed. 520	Libell against the Cleary. 499
Kings Colledge in Cambridge. 624	Lord Strange and his wife did penance. 576
Knights of the bathe. 695	Ludlow spoiled. 672
Kentish men robbed Flemings. 702	Lord. fled the Realme. 677
Knights made. 713	Lord. Scales murdered on the Thames. 679
King of Castile landed in England. 811	London the kings especiall chamber. 760
King and queene of Denmark arrived in England. 811	Lone to Henry the 7. 789
<i>Katherine</i> Dowager dowced 927. deced. 964	<i>Long</i> Lord of Wiltchetter. 807
Knights of the church. 964	Lady Katherine of Spaine arrived in England. 807
Knights of the Bathe. 942	Lincolnehir men executed. 871
Knights made at Liech. 949	<i>Lawne</i> borne executed at Bristow. 968
King H. the eight his oration. 992	Lords (borne to the succession. 961
Kers hanged as rebels. 1013	Lord Dacres of the North arraigned and acquitted. 962
Kentishmen pardoned. 1053	Lithe spoiled. 979
King Philip and Cardinal came to Paules Crosse and heard	<i>Lord</i> Sheffild laine. 986
the sermon. 1058	Libertie of Southwarke purchas. 1005
King F. the first counterfeit. 1060. 1062	Liberties of the Stilyard tested. 1012
King Philip went into Flanders. 1061. returned into Eng-	Lady Lane proclaymed. 1029
land. 1067	Latin service. 1041. in the church.
Ky burned at Norwich. 1261	Land waters great. 1061
L	
L. Egion of fouldiers. 15	Lady Lineux sent to the Tower. 1115
Leicester. 14	League with France confirmed. 1138
Lewes. 11. 16. 18	Land waters bare downe houses. 1146
Lind fortified London. 21. repayed. 103	Londoners receive the queene. 1177
Lichfield. 82. 92. 107	Londoners traveld up with thot 4000. 1182
Lincolne minster founded. 91	League with the Scots. 1203
Library at Yorke. 963	Lottorie at London. 1203
Lignaburge. 983	<i>Lawne</i> borne pressed to death. 1261
	Londoners fled with fear. 1263



## THE TABLE.

[illegible]

## THE TABLE

Robert earle of Cornwall 272.	282.	king of Almaine.	290.	Robert Takteton murdered.	967
taken prisoner.	296			Rodee made into Scotland.	985
Robert and Roger Bacon.	276			Rebels executed.	1017
Robert Greyell.	283.	288		Rebels & & other knights executed.	1015
Robert Bacon.	285			Roddy and Lawmer brent.	1065
Rot of thecpe in England.	305			Religious houses suppressed.	1082
Round table at Kenilworth. 306.	at Windfore.	374		Royal exchange.	1131
Rhodes woun by christians.	376			Rogues burned through t e care.	1137
Richard de Bery B. of Lutham.	383			Rowall Grog tate of Kent deceased.	1141
Rickebanke.	396	416	446	Robert Duke of Lisleier transported ouer to Flushing. L. Lieutenant. 1189. Infallid and the flates inwome.	1259
Robert Knaples.	442.			1193. went aga ne into the low Countries. 1143. d. executed.	1278
Richard the Second. 439. crowned. 442.				Robert earle of Essex Lieutenant General rode towards Ireland.	1304
he lent to the rebels. h. took: the Tower of London. 453.				Richard Bancroft Bishop of London sent by commissio to Fenden.	1306
he rayed a power and rode into Kent. 466.					
renewed his oath of coronation. 488.					
recieued into London with great ioy. 493.					
went into Ireland. 498.					
the towns in suffex brent.	442				
Rokes burrow burned by Scots.	443				
Rebellion in Fngland.	451	486.			
Robert Duke of Luthie.	451				
Rebels mured up in a fellar at the Sauoy, brake up the flect.					
burnt Fleetstreete, spoiled the Temple, murthered one					
other in their drunkenness. 455.					
went to Wellmifer, brake up Newark, beheaded many, befiege the Tower					
of London brent the hospital of Saint Iohn by Smith-					
field. 456.					
commande the King to come to them, they enter the Tower, let the Archbisshop. 457.					
beheaded him and other.	461.				
Robert Truffin in Luthie fare at Chelmsford.	468				
Robert Vere Marquisse of Doune.	479				
Rocheiter bridge beaten downe.	481				
Rochell wine for xij. s. iii. d. the tunne.	482				
Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland and other banished.	486				
Roylton brent.	543				
Robert Kyles died.	543				
Rochester bridge.	546				
Robin Mendr married.	550				
Richard Duke of Yorke Regent of France.	615.	622			
Richard Beauchampe Earle of Warrwicke.	610				
Richard witch brent at Tower hill.	622				
Roger Bolnbroke. 627.	executed.	628			
Roane yielded to the French.	637				
Rebels of Essex pight their fielde on the miles ende.	644				
pardoned.	646				
Rebe s in Kent and Suffex executed.	648				
Richard Duke of York pretended title to the crowne. 648.					
his declaration. 549. his letter to the king. 653.					
his rebellion and ach to the king. 653.					
his practice. 658. married to Wakenie d.	664				
Robert Poppyngs. iworde bearer to Lucke Cade proclaymed	666				
traitor.	667				
Richard Peacock B. of Chichester. 666.	his bookes.	667			
Robert of Midelton.	700				
Richard Duke of Gloucester went with an army into Scotland.	719				
Richard the third elected king in the Guild hall of London.	763.				
crowned. 67. flaine.	787				
Richmount and Bayardys Castle new builded.	807.				
Richmond fiered. 811.	gallery full.	822			
Regent of England a thecpe brent.	833				
Richard Harbanged in Lollards Tower.	879.	887.	889		
Rome ticked.					
Rogier booke in every church.					
Rode of France shewed at Paules.					
Richard Farmer in the pramouse.					
Reynold Emari his good seruice.					



### THE TABLE.

[illegible]

### THE TABLE.

[illegible]

# THE TABLE.

Windfor town and Castle. 194. Colledge. 205. wine made at Windfor.	205	<i>William de La Peste</i> Duke of Suffolke banished and murdred.	639
Warwike with the Colledge.	201	<i>William Afoth</i> B. of Salisbury murdered.	647
Worcester C. tie and Monastrey brent.	196	Wheate for xij. the quarter.	917
Watham Castle besieged.	211	<i>Walter Waler</i> beheaded for a word speaking.	689
Wallingford besieged.	209. 212	<i>William Sturmy</i> beheaded.	799
Worcester brent and wasted. 209 besieged.	213	<i>William Capell</i> put in suite.	800
Waltham Abbey.	226	Wine, salt, and wheate cheape.	805
<i>William Longshewe</i> B. of Elw. 234 put to his shifts.	256	Weathercocke of Pauls blowne downe.	811
<i>William</i> with the beard, tedious, a false accuser of his brother, &c.	240	Warre betweene the Emperour and French King.	864
<i>William Longespe</i> Earle of Salisbury.	241	Waters great.	886
Welch men did homage. 550. invade England, their pledges hanged.	252	Wauering of newfangled multitude.	920
Wisting at London, a tumult there.	269	<i>Wolsey</i> Cardwall sick. 933. lay at Richmond. 933. his last Maundy. 934. prepared for his translation. 935. arre.	937
Women monstrous.	284	<i>William Fitz</i> <i>William</i> knight, treasurer of the kings house.	937
<i>Winchelsey</i> drowned.	287	Page.	944
Wales subdued to the lawes of England.	287	Westminster and Bristol made Bishopricks.	980
Worcester besieged.	253	White meates licensed to be eaten in Lent.	983
Worcester in London brent.	297	Wight invaded by the French.	992
Water floods.	307. 311. 361. 538	<i>William Foxley</i> kept more then 14. daies, and as manie nights.	295
Wales subdued, deuided into shires.	309	Weathercocke of Pauls.	1042
Windfor Castle burned.	316	<i>William</i> lord Howard lieutenant of the Citie.	1046
W. Wales of Scotland.	322	<i>William Thomas</i> executed.	1050
Wheate forbidden to be made into malt.	326	<i>William Flower</i> brent at Westminster.	1059
<i>Walter Stapleton</i> B. of Excester beheaded.	346	Warre with France.	1068
Wheate forbidden to be transported.	364	<i>William Giffrey</i> a fayned Chrift whipped.	1095
Woollo forbidden to be knight Banaret.	368	<i>William Parlet</i> lord treasurer deceased.	1136
<i>William de La Peste</i> made knight Banaret.	370. 534. 535	<i>William</i> lord Howard Baron of Effingham, lord priuy seale	1140
Wight assailed by the French.	370. 534. 535	deceased.	1140
<i>William Atonwite</i> Earle of Salisbury crowned king of Man.	373	<i>William</i> lord Somerset Earle of Worcester sent into France.	1140
Woollo granted to the king.	375	1140. robbed on the sea.	1145
<i>Walter Mayn</i> knight. 385. deceased.	425	<i>Walter Deuereux</i> Earle of Essex sent into Ireland.	1146
<i>Walter Bentley</i> .	396	died.	1153
Woollo staples in England. 398. at Calcis. 418. in England.	423	Water floods great.	1162
Page.	416	<i>William Brewster</i> and <i>Mary Browe</i> mouldred to death.	1171
Windfor Castle enlarged.	416	<i>W. Parrey</i> executed.	1180
Winchelsey Inuaded by the French.	416	Wall falling flew fure persons.	1187
<i>Wichem</i> B. of Winchester. 421. deprived. 429. 431. recovered. 436. Chancellor of England. 489. his Colledge.	538	Women brent in Smithfield.	1271. 1275. 1279
Page.	423	Wines great.	1274
Whot somer.	423	Water floods great.	1277
<i>Wichem</i> John 431. 450. died, and his letters testimoniall of him from Oxford.	474	<i>W. Cred</i> lord treasurer deceased.	1301
Wight taken by the French.	443	Wines boisterous.	1305
Winchelsey defended from the French. 443. taken by them.	449		
Wheate and wine cheape.	448		
Whirecote to ride in.	457		
<i>William Walsworth</i> Maior of London arrested <i>Walter Tiler</i> and wounded him. 461. released the king, and was knighted.	462		
Water floods.	495		
Westminster hall repayed.	514		
Witch of Eye brent.	628		
<i>William Lashfield</i> preb. her.	636		

F I N I S.

Y

Yorke builded. 13. cathedrall Church. 91. Yorke besieged. 259  
 Younger brother beguileth the elder (offe.) 191  
 Yorke minster burned. 207. Citie brent. 227  
 Yarmouth and Dunwich spoiled. 308  
 Yarmouth. 386  
 Yorke monastrey repayed. 217  
 Yorke minster burned. 995

x942  
24 77a  
1000  
410

TO THE RIGHT REVEREND  
FATHER IN GOD MY LORD ARCH-  
BISHOP OF CANTERBURY, PRIMATE AND ME-  
TROPOLITANE OF ALL ENGLAND, AND ONE OF  
her Maiesties most honorable priuie Councell,

JOHN STOVV wisheth increase as well of  
*all beauenly graces, as worldly  
blessings.*



THIS NOW NIGH FORTY  
yeeres (Right reuerend Father)  
since I first addressed al my cares  
and cogitations to the studie of  
Histories and search of Antiqui-  
ties; the greatest part of which  
time I haue diligently imploied  
in collecting such matters of this  
kingdome, as I thought most  
woorthie to be recommended  
both to the present and succeeding age. These laborious  
collections in so long a time haue now at length grown in-  
to a large volume, which I was willing to haue committed  
to the presse, had not the Printer, for some priuate re-  
spects, been more desirous to publish Annales at this pre-  
sent. Wherein I haue condescended to him to publish  
these, which I submit to your gracious and graue conside-  
ration, and to the censure of the courteous Reader and  
learned Antiquaries: relying wholly vpon this comfort,  
that the truth and credit of my Authors is in no point in-  
jured, how simple and naked soeuer the stile may be iud-  
ged. Neither doe I doubt but they may haue free passage  
in the world, if they be countenanced vnder your honora-

a 2.

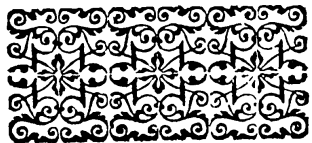
ble

# THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

ble name and protection. Vnto whom I offer, and with al dutifull affection I dedicate both my selfe and them: being hereunto induced, both for that your woorthy predeceffor, and my especiall benefactor Archbilhop PARKER animated me in the course of these studies, which otherwise I had long since discontinued; and also that your great loue and entire affection to all good letters in generall, and to the Antiquities in particular hath beene so singular, that all which like and loue good studies, doe iustly esteeme you their principall and gracious patrone.

Thushoping of your fauourable acceptance of this, as but part of that which I intended in a more large volume, I humbly take my leaue.

London this 24. of Nouember 1600.



## To the gentle Reader.



Amongst other Bookes which are in this our learned age published in great numbers, there are few, either for the honestie of the matter, or commoditie which they bring to the Common wealth, or for the pleasantnes of the study & reading, to be preferred before the Chronicles and Histories. What examples of men deseruing immortallitie, of exploits woorthy great renoune, of vertuous lining of the posteritie to be imbraced, of wise handling of weightie affaires, diligently to be marked and aptly to be applied: what encouragement of Nobilitie to noble states, what discouragement of vnnaturall subjects from wicked treasons, pernicious rebellions, and damnable doctrines: to conclude, what perswasion to honestie, godlines and vertue of all sorts, what dissuasion from the contrarie is not plentifully in them to bee found? So that it is as hard a matter for the Readers of Chronicles, in my fantasie, to passe without some colours of wisdom, inuitements to vertue, and loathing of naughty fautes, as it is for a well fauoured man to walke up and downe in the hote parching sunne, and not to be therewith sun-burned. They therefore which with long studie, earnest goodwill, and to their great costs and charges haue brought hidden Histories from duskie darknesse to the sight of the world, and haue beene diligent obseruers of Commonwealths, and noted for the posteritie the fleeting manners of the people, and accidents of the times: deserue (at the least) thanks for their paines, and to be misrepord of none, seeing they haue laboured for all. I write not this to complaine of some mens ingratitude towards me (although iustly I might) but to shew the commodities which ensue of the reading of Histories, that seeing they are so great and so many, all men would (as they ought) employ their diligence in the honest, fruitfull, and delectable perusing of the same, and so to account of the Authors, as of men carefull for their Countrie: and to confesse, if neede require, by whome they haue taken profite.

It is now nigh forty yeeres since (I seeing the confuse order of our late English Chronicles, and the ignorant handling of ancient affaires) leauing mine owne peculiar gaines, consecrated my selfe to the search of our famous Antiquities. What I haue done in them before time, the former editions of my Summarie, and other my Chronicles, as also of other mens, wherein I haue bestowed no small labours, may well testifie, but how farre (be it spoken without arrogancie) I haue laboured for the truth more than some other, this last edition (an abstrail of a farre larger worke which I haue gathered, and meant to haue published, will evidently declare. Wherein, that I differ from the inordinate and vnstifull collections of other men, it is no maruell, seeing that I do not fully agree with my selfe, as some malicious persons haue fondly

Note that the vngenerall booke but slayeth three at once, himselfe by his owne malice, him that errecteth his false tales, and him that he backbiteth.

## The Preface to the Reader.

fondly charged me: but let it be considered, that there is nothing perfect at the first, and that it is incident to mankind to erre and slippe some times, but onely the point of fantastickall fooles to perseuer and continue in their errors. Wherefore, seeing that the perusing of ancient Records and best approved Histories of all times (not without great difficultie obtained) doe not onely mone me, but for their authority drive me to acknowledge both mine and other mens errors, and in acknowledging to correct them, I trust to obtaine thus much at your hands, that at the lesse if you will call to remembrance a most gentle and wise lawe of the politike Persons, wherein it was enacted, that a man accused to be in their lawes a trespasser, and found guilty of the crime, should not straightway be condemned, but after a diligent inquirie and search of his whole life and conversation (no slander imputed unto him as of importance) if the number of his laudable facts did counterwaile the contrarie, he was full quit of the trespassse. The same law doe I wish the Readers of these my Chronicles to put in minde, that if the errors be not so plentifull, as Histories truly alleaged, they will beare with them: for as I promised, so haue I tried all matters worthy of immortallitie, by the certaine touchstone of best allowed Historiographers: and yet notwithstanding, some faults by misprinting haue escaped the correction, which easily may be seene and amended by the diligent Reader.



# A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, WALES, AND CORNWALL.



**B**RITAIN, or Bruttanne which by two names is called England and Scotland, is an Island in the Ocean Sea, situate right over against France: one part of which the Englishmen do inhabit, another part Scots, the third part Welshmen, and the fourth part Cornishmen. All the either in language, conditions, or lawes, doe differ among themselves.

England (so called of Englishmen, which did winne the same) is the greatest part, and is divided into xl. Counties, which wee call Shires: thereof tenne (that is to say) Kent,

*fourte Counties of Shires,*

Sussex, Surrey, Southampton, Berkshire, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, Devonshire and Cornwall, doe containe the first part of that Island: which part bounding toward the South, standeth betwene the Thames and the Sea.

From thence to the river of Trent, which passeth through the middell of England be sixtene shires, whereof the first five (standing Eastward) are Essex, Middlesex, Hertfordshire, Suffolke, and Norfolk, and Cambridge shire: the other ten which stand more in the middle of the Countrey are these: Bedford, Huntingdon, Buckingham, Oxford, Northampton, Rutland, Leicester, Nottingham, Warwick, & Lincoln. After the se there be five which border Westward upon Wales, as Gloucester, Hereford, Worcester, Shropshire, Stafford, Chester, & Monmouth. About the middle of the Region lie Derbyshire, Yorkshire, Lancashire, and Cumberland. On the left hand toward the West is Westmerland. Against the same is the Bishopricke of Durham, & Northumberland, which boundeth upon the North in the Marches of Scotland.

These shires be divided into xlii. Bishopricks, which by a Greek word, be called Dioceses. Of which Dioceses, Canterburie hath Kent. Rochester hath part of Kent. London hath Essex, Middlesex, and part of Hertford. Winchester hath Sussex. Winchester hath Hampshire, Surrey, & the Isle of Wight. Salisbury hath Berkshire, and Wiltshire. Exeter hath Devonshire and Cornwall. Bath and Wells hath Somersetshire. Worcester hath Worcestershire, and part of Warwickshire. Gloucester hath Gloucestershire. Hereford hath part of Shropshire, and Herefordshire. Coventrie and Lichfield hath Staffordshire, Derbyshire, part of Warwickshire, & part of Shropshire. Lincoln which is the greatest, lying betwene the Thames and Humbe, hath Lincoln, Leicestershire, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham, and the residue of Hertford.

the  
639  
647  
957  
689  
799  
800  
805  
811  
864  
886  
220  
the  
the  
937  
the  
914  
980  
983  
992  
anie  
295  
243  
246  
250  
252  
268  
295  
136  
eale  
140  
nce  
141  
46  
153  
163  
171  
180  
187  
179  
174  
177  
303  
305  
  
be  
159  
92  
127  
101  
136  
127  
195



of Saint Columbe, by name called Aconia. The same river againe bendeth from Loughdean a countrey adioyning (abundant of all thinges) called the ffrife, in which countrey are many towne, as Donfermle, Cuppe, but the notable towne of Saint Andrew, specially famous for the Vniuersitie, and beautified with the Sea of the Archbishop and Bpimate of all Scotland. On the other side towards the ffrish side Southward, is Niddadale, so called of the River that passeth thereby, where be the strong towne of Douglass and Donfrife.

Vpon the South adioyneth Galloway, more abundant of fodder for Cattel, then of Wheate, where is the towne of Candida Casa, now called Whitherne, and the ancient Temple of saint Pinian, adioyned also with an Episcopall Sea. In those partes besides the towne of Wighton is a lake of a wonderfull nature, because the one side in Winter doth freeze, and the other not. By that standeth the countrey of Carida, once renowned with the towne Caricon, whereof perchance it toke the name. Above Carida towards the West, is Elgonia (by which name Ptoleme calleth the countrey) bordering by on the Ocean, wherein is the lake Lomunde, which is verie broad and large, containing manie Islands, situate at the foot of the mountaine Spantelbelne, eight miles from the castell of Donbryton, besides the river Bobotria, now named Leuinus, entering into the River of Glota or Glude. Here some do contend that the name of Bobotria is not well applied to Leuinus, because it appeareth by Cornelius Tacitus, that Bobotria and Glota haue sundry passages into the sea, and are clearely diuers one from the other, as Leuinus and Glota, are not: wherefore they iudge rather the River now called the ffrish to be that which of old time had to name Bobotria, and to proue the same they adde many other reasons, which here I omit. But a good space on this side Grampius riseth the River of Taus, the greatest in all Scotland, taking his name of a lake from whence it springeth, which falleth by Acholia and Caldonia by manie places, but chiefly by Perichum now called Saint Johns towne, and lastly by Wunde, in time past called Alectum, and there breaketh into the German sea, and at the mouth forceth great estuaries or armes of the sea, whereof Tacitus maketh mention. Against Taus is Anguile, which by meanes of that river is fertile and prosperous, and is deuised from ffrife.

So the same vpon the South adioyneth Athol, not the barrenest countrey, as well for water as for plenty of soile. On the other side Arguile the west it selfe, which being full of lakes, yeildeth greater plenty of fodder then fruits, whose bettermost bounds stretch so farre, as Ireland is not distant past sixtens miles, about which the promontorie or foreland called Lands head standeth. That coast whilome the Silures did inhabit, as Polidor gathereth by these wordes of Plinie in his 4 booke, the 16. chapter.

Ireland being situate over against Brytaine, is distant from the nation of Silures by the shortest cut twentie miles. Whobeth, some other, for that it is manifested by the same Plinie in the same Chapter, and also by other writers, that Brytaine was not in his time well knowne so farre South, suppose he meant not by this, that the Silures should inhabit Arguile, but rather South Wales,

Wales, from whence the passage over was better knowne (and as hee might haue vnderstanding) thereof. Where also as well Tacitus as Antoninus seeme to place that people.

Betwene Argile and Leniox Westward lieth the Countrey of Sterling, so called by a towne there. Here the Forrest of Calidonia began on the left doe, which within stretcheth farre and broad. This Forrest sometimes bredde white Bulles, long maned like Lyons, which were so wilde as they could not be tamed, but because the flesh was pleasant and daintie to the mouth, the whole race of them almost is extinguished. There likewise is the Castle of Calydene, situate by Taus called Doucheldine. From a little hill of the Forrest riseth Glota, or Cluid, which by a broad channell falleth into the ffrish Ocean, for stayed in a manner by the bankes of the mountaine Grampius, it slideth into the Sea by great tides, so (as witnesseth Tacitus) the Romanes thought it to be another Island. Of that river the Dale was called Gloteuale, which Countrey that River runneth by; and in the same is the Citie of Glasco, a goodlie Vniuersitie.

Again towards the East is layned the Countrey of Anguile and Meme vpon the Sea coast, wherein Forbune by situation is verie strong, and for the reliques of S. Palladius the Scottish Apostle, famous.

Of the same side of Scotland, is the Countrey of Marre, garnished with a Citie called Aberdone, standing betwene the two rivers of Dona and Dea, with a Schoule also adioyned. Then followeth Morrey, which the two notable Rivers doe compass about, called Nesa and Spea. At the mouth of this last River, standeth the towne of Elgin, about the banks whereof be huge woods replenished with all sortes of wilde beastes. There is a Lake also called Spina, flozed with plenty of Swannes: but in the middle part standeth the broad Country of Rossia, now called Beane Rozen, stretching to the uttermost angle euen to both the Seas, and the further it goeth Eastward, the better it is inhabited. In the same is a bolome of the Sea, now and then to convenient for Sailers, as commonly it is called the port of Health, (or the Haven of Safety) and the towne Thana. The breadth of the Island is verie short, for falling into the forme of a wedge, it is scant xxx. mile over, which defended with three promontories like towers, repelleth the great waues and surges of the Sea: and intironed with two gulfes, which those promontories doe inclose, the entries be quiet and calme, and the water peaceable. The stratte of that land is at this day called Cathanes, coasting vpon the Sea Deucalidon.

Thus much of the particulars of Scotland. But the same is in euerie place full of good Hauens and nauigable entries, Lakes, with sparrowes, fowles, fountaines, verie full of fish, and mountaines, vpon the tops whereof be pleasant plaines, yeolding great store of grasse, and plenty of fodder for Cattel, woods likewise full of wilde beastes. That part of the land is well stocked with commodities, and therefore the people hard to be banquished at any time, by reason the woods and sparrowes be at hand for refuge, and hunger eased with venison and fish. Without Scotland in the ffrish Seas, are manie Islands twelue discovered, to the number of one hundred and fourtie: some of these in  
A 3. length



length are fiftie miles, but in breadth not above twelue. Amongst them is Iona beautified with the Tombes of the Scottissh kings. The Islanders generally speake Irish, which declareth them to take their originall of the Irish nation. Beyond Scotland toward the North, be the Isles of Orkades, which (as Ptolomie saith) bee threescor in number, some lying in the Deucalion Sea, and some in the Germane Ocean, the principall of which Islands is Pomonia, because it is a Bishoppes Sea, and is vnder the gouernement of Scotland. The Islanders vse the Gothes speech, which argueth them to procede from the Germanes. They be tall of stature, but verie healthie and lustie of bodie and minde, lining verie long, although their chiefe food is fish, for the land almost continually beset with cold, in many places is not able to beare corne, and generally almost without tre or bush. Beyond the Orkades be the Isles of Scotland, vnder the king of Scots obedience, and beyond those standeth Thule, in the frozen sea now called Ireland, to which our merchants repaire for fishing once euery yeare in the Summer. And thus much haue I to saie of the site of Scotland: now of the nature and manners of the people.

The Scots which inhabite in the Southerne part, be well nurtured, and liue in good ciuilitie, and the most ciuill vse the English speech. And for that land there is geason and scant, their common felwell is of a blacke stone, which they dig out of the earth. The other part Northerne, and full of mountaines, a verie rude and homely kinde of people doth inhabite, which are called the Red-thankes or wilde Scots. They be clothed with a mantell and shirte saffroned after the Irish manner, going bare legged to the knee. Their weapons are bolvs and dartes, with a verie broad sword and a dagger, sharpe only at the one side. All speake Irish, feeding on fish, milke, cheese, and flesh, hauing a great number of Cattell. The Scots differ from the English in lawes and customes, because they vse the ciuill lawe as almost other Countreies doe. The English haue their owne lawes and edictes. In certaine other conditions they be not farre unlike, but their language is one, their habite and complexion like, one courage in battell, and in the societie one desire & pregnancie in hunting. The Countrey houses bee narrowe, covered with strawe and reede, wherein the people and beastes doe lodge together. Their Townes besides Saint Johns Colone are unwalled, which is to be ascribed to their animositie and hardi- nesse, firing all their succour and helpe alwaie in the baliaunce of their bodie. The Scottes are verie wise, as their learning declareth. For to what vntoener Art they do apply themselves, they easily profite in the same. But the idle and slothful, and such chieflie as shun and auoide labour, liue in great poverty, and yet will not sticke to boast of their nobilitie & gentrie, as though it were more famely for the honest to lacke, then comely by exercise of some honest Arte to get their living. But the Scots generally be deuoute obseruers of Religion. And thus much of Scotland.

Whales the third part of Brytaine lieth vpon the left hand, which like a Promontorie or forland, or an Isle (as it were) on euery side is compassed with the maine sea, except it be on the Southeast part with the Riuer of Sa-  
byrne,

byrne, commonly called Seuerne, which deuidenth Wales from Englande, although some late writers affirme hereof to be a bound betwene Wales and England, and say, that Wales beginneth at Chepstowe, where the Riuer Wye (augmented with an other Riuer called Lugg) passing by Hereforde, both runne into the sea, which Riuer riseth in the middle of Wales out of that hill (but vncertaine whether out of that spyring that Sabrine doth,) for euery to that place there goeth a great arme of the sea, which passing through the land westward, on the right hand leaueh Cornwell, and on the left Wales: which Topographic or description, although it bee newe, yet I thought good to followe. Therefore Wales is extended from the Colone of Chepstowe, where it beginneth almost by a straight line a little above Shrewsburie, euen to Melchester Northward. Into that part, so manie of the Brytaines as remained aliuie after the slaughter and losse of their Countrey, at the length being driuen to their thistles, did repaire, as ancient writings report, where partly through refuge of the mountaines, and partlie of the woods and marshes, they remained in safetie: which part they enjoy euen to this daie. That land afterwards the Englishmen did call Wales: and the Brytaines the inhabitantes of the same, Walshmen: for amongst the Germanes, Walshman, signifieth a stranger, an alien, an outboine or strange man, that is, such a one, as hath a contrarie language from theirs, for Wal in their tongue is called a stranger boine, as an Italian or Frenchman, which differ in speech from the Germane. Man signifieth *Homo*, which is a man in English. Therefore Englishmen, a people of Germanie, after they had wonne Brytaine, called the Brytaines, which escaped after the destruction of their Countrey, after their Countrey manner, Walshmen, because they had another tongue or speech besides theirs: and the lande which they inhabited Wales, which name afterward both to the people and Countrey did remaine. By this meane the Brytaines with their kingdome lost their name. But they which affirme that name to be deriued of their King or Quene, without doubt be deceiued. The Countrey sitle towards the sea coast, and in other places in the balles and plaines, is most fertile, which yeldeth both to man and beast great plentie of fruite and grasse: but in other places for the most part it is barraine and lesse fruitfull, because it lacketh tillage: for which cause husbandmen doe liue hardly, eating Watlen cakes, and drincking milke mirt with water. Where be many Towns and strong Castles, and foure Bishopricks, if the Bishopricke of Hereford bee counted in England, as the late Writers declare. The first Bishopricke is Meneue, so called of Meneu, which at this day they call Saint Davids, a Citie verie auncient, situated vpon the sea coast, and boundeth Westward toward Ireland. Another is Lambasse, the third Bangor, and the fourth Saini Asaph, which bee vnder the Archbishop of Canterburie. The Walshmen haue a language from the Englishmen, which (as they saie) they fetch their pedigree from the Troians) both partly sounde of the Troian antiquitie, and partlie of the Greeke. But howsoeuer it is, the Walshmen do not pronounce their speech so pleasantly and gently as the Englishmen do, because they speake more in the throte: and contrariwise, the Englishmen rightly fol-  
lowing

This arme of the Sea, as I haue, is now called Aud, where is a passage betwene the village of Aud and Chepstowe.

Giraldus Cambrensis.

Four Bishopps in Wales.

holding the Latines, doe expresse their voice somewhat within the lips, which to the hearers seemeth pleasant and sweete. And thus much of Wales, the third part of Brytaine.

Cornwall.

Now followeth the fourth and last part of Brytaine named Cornwall. This part beginneth on that side which standeth toward Spaine Westward: Toward the East, it is of breadth fourescore and ten miles, extending a little beyond S. Germaines, which is a verie famous villiage, situate on the right hand upon the Sea coast, where the greatest breadth of that Countrey is but twenty miles: for this parcell of land on the right hand is compassed with the coast of the maine Sea: and on the left hand with that arme of the Sea, which (as before is declared) parteth the land, and runneth by to Chepstowe, where the countrey is in forme of a boine: for at the first it is narrow, and then groweth broader a little beyond the said towne of S. Germain. Eastward it bordereth upon England: West, South, and North, the maine sea is round about it: it is a very barren soile, yielding fruit more through trauell of the tillers and husbandmen, then through the goodness of the ground: but there is great plenty of Lead and Tinne, in the myning and digging whereof both specially consist the living and sustentation of the inhabitants. Their tongue is farre dissimant from English, but it is much like to the Walsh tongue, because they haue many wordes common to both tongues: yet this difference there is between them, when a Walsh man speaketh, the Cornish man rather vnderstandeth many wordes spoken by the Walshman, then the whole tale he telleth; whereby it is manifest, that those three people doe vnderstand one another, in like manner as the Southern Scots doe perceiue and vnderstand the Northern. But it is a thing very rare and marvellous, that in one Island there should be such variety of speeches. Cornwall is in the Diocesse of Exeter, which was once worthy to be counted the fourth part of the Island, for the contrarietie of the language. Afterwards the Normans, which constituted a kingdome of all those 3. parts, reckened Cornwall to be one of the Counttes or Shires of the Countrey. Thus much of the particular description of Brytaine, that the whole bodie of the Realme (by the members) maie bee the better knoone to some peraduenture that neuer heard the same before.

S. Germain.

The forme of the Island is Triquetra, or three cornered, hauing three corners, or three sides: two whereof, that is to say, the corner toward the East, and the other toward the West (both extending Northwards) are the longest.

The third side which is the South side, is farre shorter then the other: for the Island is greater of length then of breadth. And as in the other two partes is contained the length, even so in the last, the breadth, in which place the breadth beginneth: and so continuing from the South part to the North, it is but narrow. The first and right corner of which Island Eastward, is in Kent, at Dover and Sandwich. From whence to Calais or Boloigne in France, is the distance of thirty miles. From this Angle, which is against France, to the third Angle, which is in the North in Scotland, the maine whereof boundeth upon Germanie, but no land seen, (and there the Island is like vnto a wedge euen at the very Angle of the lande in Scotland,) the length is seauen hundred miles. Againe,

gaue, the length from this corner at Dover in Kent, to the uttermost part of Cornwall, being S. Withels mount (which is the West part or West Angle) is supposed to bee three hundred miles. From this left Angle being the West part and the uttermost part of Cornwall, which hath a prospect towardes Spaine, in which part also standeth Ireland, situate betwene Brytaine and Spaine to the North Angle in the further part of Scotland, in which part the Island doeth end, the length is eight hundred miles, in which part there be very good hauens, and safe harboroughes for shippes, and apt passages into Ireland, being not past one daies sayling: but the shortest passage is from Wales to Waterford, a towne in Ireland upon the Sea coast, much like to that passage betwene Dover and Calais, or somewhat more: but the shortest passage of all, is out of Scotland, from this last Angle to Hampton, which is a towne upon the sea coast, with a haven so called toward the South, and therefore called Southampton, betwene the Angles of Kent and Cornwall, they do measure by straight line the whole length of the Island, and doe saie, that it containeth eight hundred miles, as the breadth from Meneus or S. Dauids to Harmouth, which is in the uttermost part of the Island towardes the East, doth containe two hundred miles, for the breadth of the Island is in the South part, which part is the front and beginning of the land, and endeth narrow, or as it were in a straight. So the circuite or compasse of the Island is, 1800. miles, which is 200. lesse then Caesar doeth reckon or accompt.

Of

# Of the first habitation of this Iland, a short note to the Reader.

Genes. 10.



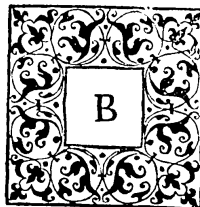
Here it is recorded by the sacred and most auncient Historie, that after the vniuersall flood, the isles of the Gentiles were diuided by the posterity of Iapheth the son of Noah, we doubt not but this Isle of Brytaine was also then peopled by his progenie, the history of whome, as it is to bee wished and appertinent to this purpose, to sith it is irrecoverable, not onely vnto vs, but also to other nations, I thinke it better to say nothing therein, then to set downe here Samoths, Magus, Sarron, Druijs, and Bardus for his successours, which are vpholden and bolstered onely by the credite and authoritie of a newe small pamphlet falsely forged, & thrust into the world vnder the title of the auncient Historian *Berosus*. For that is the censure of all the best learned as concerning our common *Berosus*, which at his first appearing, about one hundred yeeres since, was partly suspect by *Lodowicus Vives*, afterward conuincd to be fabulous by the learned *Gaf. Varerius*, in a seuerall Treatise, and nowe vniuersally reiected of all skillfull Antiquaries, as a meere fable, vniuersally the name of *Berosus*. Therefore I dare not ground the beginning of our Historie vpon the credite thereof, vnlesse I would be preiudiciall to the truth, whereunto I leuell all my induour. I hope it shall be sufficient in this History for the Brytainestime, to follow the authoritie of the receiued Brytish History, which *Geoffrey* Archdeacon of *Mormouth* translated out of the Brytish tongue about 400. yeeres since, beginning with Brute, who after the progenie of Iapheth seemeth to be first discouerer, namer, and Ruler of this land. Yet before we enter into the Historie of Brute, it shall not bee impertinent to note here, that whereas *Pomponius Melamentioneth* that one Hercules killed Albion a giant about the mouth of Rhodie in France, many learned men haue iudged the said Albion to haue ruled here, (sith the Greeke monuments doe alway call this Isle *Albion*), and after his death that Hercules came hither, *Lilius Giraldus* writteth. An auncient Altar also containing the inscription of a vow found in the vttermoost North part of Brytaine 1500. yeeres since, as *Solinus* reporteth, plainly prouoed that *Vlysses* the renowned Græcian in histennye yeeres traueles, after the sacking of Troy, arriued in this our country.

And thus much is found onely in approved Histories, as concerning Brytaine before the arriual of Brutus.

The

Lodowicus Vives,  
Gaspardus Varre-  
nius.Nicol. Peronius.  
Lilius Giraldus.  
Solinus.

The race of the Kinges of Brytaine after the common receiued opinion since Brute, &c: and in the margent are placed the yeeres before Christ his birth, when euery King began their reignes, till *Cunobelinus*, in whose time Christ the Sauour of the worlde was borne, and then following, the yeeres from Christ his birth are placed.



R V T E the sonne of Syluius, the sonne of Ascanius the sonne of Aeneas, after the death of his father, being banished into Greece, deliuered there the remnant of the Troians from the long captiuitie, wherein they were detained vnder the Grecian, with whom he departed thence for to sake some habitation: and associating to himselfe Corineus with his Troians whome he found in the waile, after a long and wearie iourney, and manie notable actes atchieued in Aquitaine, hee arriued in this Iland, which was called Albion at a place now called Totnes in Devonshire, the yere of the world, 2855. the yere before Christes natiuitie, 1108. where in hee first beganne to raigne, and named it Brytaine (as some wyte) or rather after his owne name Brutaine, as Aethicus that wonderfull Philosopher (a Scythian by race, but an Italian by Countrey) translated by Saint Hierom about a thousand yeres past, termeth both it and the Isles adiacent *Insulas Brutanicas*. And for more proufe of this restored name, not onely the said Philosopher (who traueled through many landes, and in this land taught the knowledge of mynerall workes) may be alleadged, but sundrie other, as the Sibils Oracles, wherein the name of the Brytaines is written with y that is the Grækes little u, which Oracles although they were not the Sibils owne worke, as some suspect, yet are they verie auncient indubie, and that they might seeme more auncient, vnder the most auncient name of Countreies and peoples. And some English writers more then two hundred yeres since, vsuallie doe name it Brutaine, and not otherwise, through a large hisorie of this lande, translated out of French, Brute builded the citie of new Troy, now called London, hee stablished therein the Trojan lawes, and gaue the vttermoost Westerne part of the Realme to his companion Corineus, of whose name it was called Corinea, and to this daie Cornewall. John Harding saith, that Brute bare Coles, two Lyons rampant enbossed on a shield. Also a banner vert, a Diana of gold fitchel crownded and inthronised, that wore Aeneas armes, when he entered the land of Latins. John Hanuile in Archirenio, and Nicholas Vpton, and other our auncient Heraulds saie hee bare on a shield, a Lyon passant, Coles, &c. apant are desirous (saith Aeneas Siluius) to knowe howe the name of Heraulds came first in vse, who first ordeined them, and what office, and authority they beare amongst men. Of the which thing I once stood in doubt my selfe: but

1108  
Gaulfride.

Aethicus.

Oracula Sibit.

I. Mandeuil.

John Hardings.

John Hanuile.  
Nicholas Vpton.  
Aeneas Siluius.

Beginning of  
Heraulds.

but as the nature of man is to desire knowledge of many things, and seeking to be satisfied therein, I found in the newesrie, or treasure of S. Pauls Church in London, (in anno 1451.) an olde historie written (as the Title did specifie) 600. yeres before. Which if it be true, it may both satisfie my desire, and others in the premises: the Author of the booke, was Thucydides the Grecian, but the translation name was not therein noted: but truly it was right eloquently set forth in the Latine tongue. The content of the two booke I doe not now well remember, but the tenure of the sentence, was well nere in this sort, as I shall declare. Heraulds be they, which our Elders were wont to call Heroes, that is to saie, those which were greater or surpassing all men in maiestie, and yet inferiours to the gods. For whom the people of antiquity did perceiue to be notable, and surmounting all others in his acts, and feates, renowned in vertues, and friendly, or gracious vnto them: him would they magnifie and exalt in the highest degree, and as it were, with their god words make them consins to God almightie, placing them amongst the Gods, if it so were, that they had wrought some miraculous feate above the common course of nature. But if there were no such miraculous or wonderfull dooers, but that through their vertues they seemed wonderfull and honourable: then thought they to call such persons, not altogether gods, no; yet simple men, but inuented out a meane word and name for them, calling them Heroes, as it were halfe gods. And of this word Heroes or Heros, groweth by corruption of sle this name Heraulds. Albeit some saie that those Heroes were olde souldiers, that had spent all their age weelmore in the warres: out of the which sort the Heraulds ought to be chosen, and so the terme Heraulds seemeth to bee a Dutch word, and to sounde as much as an olde souldier, or man of war. But the first that beganne and ordeyned this order, was Dionysius, the which was the first also that invaded Italia with an armed power, and gathered the rude people there together, which liued in woodes and desartes like wilde beastes, feeding on leaues, barkes of trees, and rawe fleshe: teaching them to liue after a ciuile order and fashion: also to build Townes and villages, to worship the gods, to till and plowe the earth, to plant vineyards, and make wine, to weare apparel, to anoint and trim their bodies, and to be thort, to liue after a humane maner. And now following the common opinion, after Geoffrey Monmouth.

Brute deuised the whole Island among his three sonnes, which hee had by Innogen his wife, Locrine, Camber, and Albanact. Vnto Locrine he gaue the middle part betwene Humber and Seuerne, which of him was called Loegria. To Camber he gaue all the region beyond Seuern, which of him take the name of Cambria, and is now called Wales. To Albanact he gaue all the landes beyond Humber, which of his name was called Albania: after which partition he deceased, when he had reigned foure and twenty yeres, and was buried at new Troy.

Locrine, the eldest sonne of Brute, reigned twentie yeres: hee chased the Hunnes, which invaded this realme; and pursued them so sharply, that many of them with their king, were drowned in a riuer which then parted Eng- land and Scotland. And so much as the king of Hunnes, named Humber, was

was

was there drowned, the riuer is till this day named Humber. This king Locrine had to wife Guendoline, daughter of Corineus, Duke of Cornwall, by whom he had a sonne named Madan. He also kept as Paramour, the beautiful Lady Estride, by whom he had a daughter named Sabine. And after the death of Corineus, he put from him the said Guendoline, and wedded Estride: but Guendoline repaiued to Cornwall, where she gathered a great power, and fought with king Locrine, and slewe him. He was buried at new Troy. So hee drowned the Lady Estride, with her daughter Sabine in a riuer, that after the young maidens name is call Seuerne.

Guendoline the daughter of Corineus and wife to Locrine (so much as Madan her sonne was too young to gouerne the land) was by common assent of all the Brytains, made ruler of the whole Ile of Brytan, which she well and discretely ruled, to the comfort of her subjects, fifteen yeres, and then left the same to her sonne Madan.

Madan, the sonne of Locrine and Guendoline, was made ruler of Brytaine: hee vied great pyrrany among his Brytains; and being at his disposal of hunting, he was deuoured by wilde Wolues, when he had reigned xl. yeres. He left two sons, named Memprius and Manlius.

Memprius, the sonne of Madan, being king, by treason slewe his brother Manlius, after whose death hee liued in more tranquillitie, where through he fell in sloth, and so to lechery, taking the wives and daughters of his subjects: and lastly, became to euill, that hee forsooke his wife and concubines, and fell to the sinne of Sodomitie with beastes, whereby hee became odious to God and man: And going on hunting, hee lost his companie, and was deuoured of wilde Wolues, whereof the land was then full, when he had reigned threene yeres.

Ebranke, the sonne of Memprius, was made ruler of Brytaine, he had xxi. wives, of whom hee receiued xx. sonnes, and xxx. daughters: which were sent by their fathers to Alba Siluius, the fourth king of Albanos in Italy, to be married to the Albanes. This Ebranke first after Brutus attempted to invade France with an armie, as Iacobus Bergomas saith in his list of his Chronicles, and Iacobus Lessabeus in the description of Henault affirmeth the same, and that he was driven backe by Brunchildis Lord of Henault with no small losse of his men. Alfaracus the second sonne of Ebranke, with the rest of his younger brethren 18 at the least, by the aide of Alba Siluius, conquered all Germanie, which was then no great matter, for then Europe was verie small inhabited, saue onely about the Sea coasts, as Dalmatia, Italie and the coasts of France, as in reading the histories may easily be seen how the East people at sundry times came swarming into Europe. Of the brethren had Germanie the name, a Germanis fratribus, that had subdued it. Ebranke was a founder of manie Cities (saith Bergomas) as Aclais in Albania (nowe Scotland) which is after Hector Boetius, Dunbretaine, but other thinke the same to be cleane destroyed. He made the Castell of apaldens called Denbrough. Hee made also the Castell of Wamburgh. In the xlii. yere of his raigne hee builded Harpynke, since by the Saxons called Nozwiike, now corruptly Nozke, where in

Humb-  
ber took that  
name.

Seuerne

1064

Guendoline  
a Quene  
reigned.  
Gauldris  
Flores Historiar.

1049

The king de-  
uoured by  
Wolues.

1009

A traitor to his  
brother deuoured  
red of wilde  
beastes.

989

Gauldris  
Flores Historiar.

Iacobus

Bergomas,

Iacobus

Lessabeus,

Germanie

took the name

of Ebranke his

sons, who con-  
quered the

same

Bergomas,

Hector Boetius.

Dunbretain,

Denbrough,

Wamburgh,

Nozke,

builded.

wherein he builded a Temple to Diana, and let there an Archpriest, and was there buried when he had reigned lx. yeres.

John Rouse saith hee builded Caer Henni, after it was called Bellestum, at length Caer Henni, Rhodden, and Drenade, of a certaine Forde, which John Leiland called Hs, in English Dule, and saith it is now called Dyfforde for Dulefode.

929

Rutius 2. the eldest sonne of Ebranke, succeeded in the kingdome, and for that his father had received such a repaile at the handes of Brunchildis Wyde of Bernant, he in reuenge therof inuaded Bernant with a great armie in the Fennes and Sparthlande at the mouth of the Riuer Scaldis (of olde time named Stadas) and encamped himselfe vpon the Riuer Hania, where betwene Brutus and Brunchildis, was foughten a strong battaile in that place, which to this day is called Ckam-hunges, of the station and campe of Brutus, as Iacobus Lessabeus wryteth in his description of Bernant. This Wyde of his lusty courage was furnamed Wynechilde, hee reigned xli. yeres, and was buried at Pothe.

Tacubus Lessabeus.

917

Henry Bradshaw.

Leil the sonne of Brute Greenechilde, being a lover of peace, builded Carlelle and repaied Carleon, which was since by the Romaines reedified, when a legion of souldiers was sent thither, and by them named The City of Legions, now called Chester, of the ancient building with banlikes and towers, each house like a Castell, which sometime had bene of great pleasure. A legion of the Romaines (as Vigeius reporteth) contained 6000. warriors or more: which legion was deuised into tenne bandes, but the first passed all the rest, both in number of souldiers, and also in estimation: for this bande bare the Eagle, which was the chiefeest standarde of the Romaines. This first bande contained 1105. footemen, heavy armed horsemen 132. and was named *Cohors milliaria*, that is to saie, a companie of a thousand and more souldiers. This bande is the head of all the legion: whensoever they must fight, these begin the battaile, and are first set in order in the front of the battaile. The second bande containeth 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen of heauie armour, and this bande is called *Cohors quingestaria*, that is to saie, a companie of 500. and more souldiers. The third bande likewise hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fourth bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The fifth bande hath as manie. These five bandes are set in aray in the first battaile. The first bande hath 555. footemen, and 66. horsemen. The seventh bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The eighth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The ninth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. The tenth bande hath 555. footemen, 66. horsemen. These tenne bandes make a full and perfect legion, containing, 6100. footemen, and 726. horsemen. King Leil in the ende of his reigne fell to sloth and lust of the bodie, by meane whereof ciuill strife was raised, and not in his daies ended. Hee reigned xlv. yeres, and was buried at Carlelle alias Chester.

Canterburie, Winchester, and Bath built.

Rudhudibras, alias Cicuber, the sonne of Leil, builded Caergant, of the Englishmen called Canterbury, (that is to saie, the Court of the Catholikes) Caergant, now Winchester, and Caerlepton now called Bath: buris

buris, wherein he builded three Temples, and placed in the same Flamines. He reigned xxx. yeres.

By Leil the sonne of Rudhudibras, who had long studied at Athens brought with him some Philosophers, to keepe schools in Brytaine: for the which hee builded Stamford, and made it an Vniuersity, wherein he had great number of scholars studying in all the seven liberrall Sciences: which Vniuersitie lasted to the coming of S. Augustine. At which time the Bishop of Rome interdicted it for heresies that set among the Saxons: Brytains together myrr, so saith Harding. He builded Caer Wadon or Bath, and made there a temple to Apollo, and placed there a Flamme: he made also the hote Bathes, and practised his Pyromancie: hee decked himselfe in feathers, and pyramed to sle, but by falling on his temple, he brake his necke, when he had reigned xx. yeres.

Leir the sonne of Bladud succeeded his father. He builded Caer Lear vpon the Riuer of Soze, now called Leicester, and made there a Temple of Ianus, placing a flame to gouerne the same, he had three daughters, Gonoril, Regan, and Cordeilla, which Cordeilla for her vertue and wisdom towarde her father, succeeded him in the kingdome. When he had reigned xl. yeres hee deceased, and was buried vnder the channel of the Riuer Soze, within Leicester. This vault vnder the earth was built in honour of Ianus Bifrons. There all the workmen of that Citie, when the solemnitie of the daie came, begonne all things that they had to do the yere following.

Cordeilla, the youngest daughter of Leir, succeeding her father, was seuered by her two nephews, Morgan of Albany, and Cunedagius of Camber and Cornwall, who at the length tooke and cast her in prison: where shee being in dispaire of recovering her estate, slew her selfe, when shee had reigned v. yeres, and was buried at Leicester.

Morgan, the eldest sonne of Dame Gonorilla, claimed Brytain, and warred on his nephew Cunedagius, that was king of Camber (that now is Wales) of Cornwall: but Cunedagius met with Morgan in Wales, & there slew him: which place is called Glamorgan til this day. And then Cunedagius was king of all Brytain. He builded a Temple of Mars at Perth, that now is St. Johns towne in Scotland, & placed there a flame: hee builded another of Minerua in Wales, which now is named Bangor. The thirde hee made of Mercurie in Cornwall, where he was borne, he reigned xxxiii. yeres, and was buried at new Trop.

Riualus, sonne of Cunedagius, succeeded his father, in whose time it rained blood 3. daies: after which tempest ensued a great multitude of venemous bites, which slew much people, & then a great mortality throughout this land, caused almost desolation of the same. This Riualus reigned ouer this whole Brittain xlvi. yeres, & then deceased, & was buried at Caerbyank, & now is Bath. Rome was builded in Italy, by Remus and Romulus 356. yeres after Brute arrived in this land.

Vrgulius, sonne of Riualus, succeeded in the kingdome of Brytaine, who reigned quietly, but was a common drunkard, whereof followed al other vices. When he had reigned xxxviii. yeres, hee deceased, & was buried at Perth. Sciculus,

863

Stamford an Vniuersitie.

John Harding.

J. Rouse.

John Bale.

Bath with the hote Bathes built.

He king at the length to sle.

844

Leicester built.

805

Leir.

806

Stamford built.

807

Stamford built.

808

Stamford built.

809

Stamford built.

810

Stamford built.

811

Stamford built.

812

Stamford built.

813

Stamford built.

814

Stamford built.

815

Stamford built.

816

Stamford built.

817

Stamford built.

818

Stamford built.

819

Stamford built.

820

Stamford built.

684

**S**icilius, brother of Gurgustius, succeeded in the Kingdome: of whome is left but little memorie: he reigned xliij. yeres, and was buried at Bath.

636

**I**ago or Lago, Cousin of Gurgustius, reigned xlv. yeres: for his cruel government he died of a litargie, and was buried at Pothe.

Johannes de  
Vigney.  
Camp of  
Cecilius dicitur.

612

**K**immacus reigned liiii. yeres, and was buried at Pothe.

559

**O**rbodug reigned thyscote and thre yeres, and was buried at netwe Trop.

Flores Historiar.

496

The brother  
due the byo-  
ther, and the  
mother mur-  
dered her  
about sonne.  
Dunwallo King  
of the Britons.

**F**errex with his brother Porrex, ruled Brytaine five yeres: but it was not long ere they fell at ciuill discorde for the soueraigne dominion, in which Ferrex was slaine, and Porrex afterwards by his mother, whose name was I-doine, was killed in his bed. Thus cruelly was the blood and house of Bruce destroyed, when this Realme by the space of 616. yeres had bene governed by that lynage.

After this Realme was deuided with ciuill warres, for lacke of one soueraine gouernour, untill Dunwallo reduced the same into one Monarchie.

443

**M**ulmutius Dunwallo, the sonne of Cloten, Duke of Cornwall, reduced this Realme into one Monarchie, being before by ciuill warres and dissention diuised and brought into diuers dominions: he was the first that wore a crowne of gold: hee constituted good lawes, which long after were called Mulmutius Lawes, these lawes holy Gildas wrote out of the Brytish speech into Latine. He gaue priuiledges vnto Temples, and ploughes, and began to make the foure notable waies in Brytaine. He reigned xl. yeres, leaving after him two sonnes, Belinus and Brennus.

The second  
lawes were  
Mulmutius  
lawes.  
Flores Historiar.

401

**B**elinus and Brennus, sonnes of Mulmutius and Comouenna, deuided this whole Ile of Brytaine betwene them. Vnto Beline the elder brother was appointed England, Wales, and Cornwall. Vnto the other the North part beyond Humber: this Brennus, a young man, desirous of glory and dominion, raised warre against Beline. But in the conclusion by the meanes of their mother, they were accorded, and Brennus being wholly giuen to the studie of wars, left his countrey to the gouernance of his brother, and went into France as amongst the Galles, where for his excellent qualities he was greatly esteemed, & made of them their soueraine Captaine, with whom he passed into Italy, sacked Rome, and expelling the Tuscanes, builded Spillaine, Vercellia, Como, Bergamo, Vincenza, Trent, and Merona, which he called after his owne name Brenna. After this (as writeth Trogus Pompeius, abridged by Iulius) Brennus leader of the Galles, (he nameth him not a Brytaine) raised an host of 150000. footemen, and 15000. horsemen, and inuaded Spacedone againe. Whom when Sothenes sawe how they waied the Countrey and villages, he met them with his host of Spacedones well appointed. But by reason they were fewe, and their enemies many, they were sone put to the worser. Wherefore while the

Flores Historiar.  
I. Leiland.  
Gaufride.

Trogus Pom-  
peius,

Spacedones

Spacedones being beaten, kept them within the walles of their cities, Brennus like a conquerour, against whome no man durst shewe his head to make resistance, foraged all the Iles of Spacedone. And from thence as though those booties and spoiles seemed to bafe and simple in his eye, he turned his minde to the Temples of the Gods immortal, malapertly scoffing that the Gods were rich, and ought to depart liberally to men. Wherefore hee took his iourney towards Delphos, setting more by the gaine of the golde that had bene offered to the Gods, then by their displeasure.

The Temple of Apollo at Delphos, is situate in the mount Parnassus, vpon a cliffe on euery side falling steepe downe. Where the confluence of men hath made a populous Citie. Moreover both the Temple and the towne are enclosed with the steepenesse of the rocke. The middle part of the rocke inward is in fashion like a Theatre, by meanes whereof when men make anie shouting, or any trumpet is sounded, the same breaketh and reboundeth in such wise vpon the stones from one to another, that the Echo is heard double and triple, the noise resounding farre louder then it went forth. The which causeth the ignorant to stand in more feare, thinking it to be the presence of the Godhead. In the winding of the rocke, almost midwaie to the toppe of the hill, there is a little plaine, and in the same a deepe hole into the ground, which seemeth to giue oracles: out of the which a certaine colde breath ascending vppward, stirreth the mindes of the Prophets into a madnesse, and so compelleth them to giue answer to such as come for counsaile. In the same place therefore, there are to be seene manie and rich giftes of kings and peoples. Wherefore when Brennus came within the view of the Temple, he was in doubt a great while, whether he were better to attempt the matter forthwith, or giue his souldiours that nights respite to rest them. Euridanus and Theisalonus, who for couetousnesse of the pray, had sopened themselves with him, willed to cut off all debate, while their enemies were vnprovided, whereas by giuing them that nights respite, their enemies should perchance get both courage and succour: but the common souldiers of the Frenchmen, when after long penurie, they found a Countrey replenished with wine, and all other kinde of victualles, they dispersed themselves in the fieldes, making haucke of all things like Conquerours, by which meanes the Delphians had respite to lay for themselves, and manned the towne by the helpe of their neighbours, or neuer the Frenchmen could be called from the wine sat to the standard. Brennus had thyscote and five thousand chosen footemen of the best in all his host, whereas the Delphians were in all but 40000. fighting men. In dislike of which small handfull Brennus to the intent to sharpen the mindes of his men, shewed them all, what a rich and plentifull praye they shoulde haue. The Frenchmen being by this vouching of their Captaine, or rather by their owne beholding, stirred vp, and also wounded with the wine they had poloyed in the day before, without respect of any danger ran headlong to the encounter. On the contrarie part, the Delphians putting more trust in God then in their owne strength, resisted their enemies, and what with stones, and what with their weapons, shewed the Frenchmen (as they scaled) headlong from the

top of the mountaine. While the two parts were thus striving one with another, suddenly the Priests of the Temples, and the Prophets, with their haire about their eares, &c. like men distracted and out of their wits, came running into the forefront of the battaile, crying out, that while they were all making their supplications to God for aide, they met a young man of beauty and personage, far exceeding any mortall creature, and in his company two Virgins in armor, wherefore they besought them, seeing the gods did garde their standarde, they should not sticke to dispatch their enemies. And therewithall they forthwith perceived that God was present on their side. For both a peece of the mountaine being broken off, by a sodaine earthquake, overthrewed the French hoste, and the thickest of their enemies (not without great slaughter) were opened and put to flight. In the necke where of there ensued a tempest, with haile, thunder and lightning, consuming as marte as were any thing sore wounded. The capitaine Brennus himselfe not being able to abide the smarte of his wounds, took a sword and killed himselfe. Thus farre abridged out of Iustine.

Being in the meane time (saith Gaufride) both in ciuill iustice and also Religion, greatly increased his Realme. He made three Archbishops, whose Sees were at new Troy, Baybriank and Baylegion. He finished the four great waies begonne by his father: he subdued and made tributary vnto him Denmarke. In new Troy he made the haucn, which at this day retaineth the name of him, called Belines gate: He married his daughter Cambria vnto a Prince of Almaine called Antenor, of whom these people were called Cymbri, and Sycambri.

Finally, after he had reigned with his brother and alone xviij. yeeres, he died: and after the Pagan manner, with great pompe was burned, and his ashes in a vessel of brasse set on a high pinnacle ouer Belines gate. He builded Carheon vpon the riuer Aske, which since by a legion of the Romanes there placed, was named Carlegion, now cleane destroyed.

Gurgunus sonne of Beline succeeded his father. I. Rouse saith he builded Caier Merith, that is, Longcastre: he subdued Denmarke, compelling them to continue their tribute, and in his returne home, mette with a flate of Balouises coming from the parts of Spaine, which were seeking for habitations, because their countrey was so populous, and not able to sustaine them, to whom the king granted the Ile of Ireland to inhabit, and to hold the same of him as their Soueraigne Lord: But the Scots wite, that Spaniards arrived before this time in Ireland. This Gurgunus builded Dorchester and Warwicke in the middle of the Realme (saith I. Rouse.) He reigned xix. yeeres, and was buried at Carheon.

Vinchelinus sonne of Gurgunus, was crowned king of Brytaine. A Prince sober and quiet, who had to wife a noble woman named Mercia, of excellent learning and knowledge. Shee druided certaine lawes, which long time among the Brytaines were greatly esteemed, and named Mercian Lawes. This Prince reigned xxij. yeeres, and was buried at new Troy.

Brennus killed himselfe.

Archbishops.  
Four notable  
wites.  
Belines gate  
builded.  
John Leyland.

More Historian.

375

Cirallus.

Ireland inhabited.

H. Aer Boetius.

355

Merican lawes  
the druid.

Cecilus

Cecilus the sonne of Guintheline and Mercia, reigned vij. yeeres, (as the Scots wite.) In the first yeere of his reigne, a people called Pices, arrived here in Brytain, & possessed those parts, which now be the Marches of both realmes, England and Scotland. Cecilus was buried at Carheon.

Kimarus succeeded Cecilus, who being a wilde young man, and living after the manner of wild beastes.

Elanius, called also Darius, was king of Brytaine nine yeeres.

Morindus, the bastard sonne of Darius, beganne to reigne in Brytaine: he fought with a king who came out of Germanie, and slewe him with all his power. Afterward, out of the Irish seas in his time came forth a wonderfull sposter, which destroyed much people: whereof the king hearing, would of his valiant courage needes fight with it, by whome he was cleane deuoured, when he had reigned eight yeeres.

Gorbomannus, eldest sonne of Morindus, reigned xi. yeeres: a Prince iust and religious: he renewed the Temples of his gods, and gouerned his people in peace and wealth. This Gorbomannus builded Grantham in Lincolnshire. Our English Chronicle saith, he builded both the townes of Cambridge and Grantham: but seeing that Cambridge in ancient Chronicles is called Grant (as it is also Grancheester, Catergrant, and Grantbridge) it was an easie matter (as Grammaticians know) to translate Grantham into Cambridge, and so ascribe the building of both townes to him that builded but one, or neither of them both.

Archigallo, brother to Gorbomannus, was crowned king of Brytaine: he was in conditions unlike to his brother: for he deposed the noblemen, and exalted the vnnoble. He extorted from men their goods to enrich his treasure: for which cause by the estates of the Realme he was depriued of his royall dignitie, when he had reigned v. yeeres.

Eldurus, the third sonne of Morindus, and brother to Archigallo, was elected king of Brytaine: a vertuous and gentle Prince, who gouerned his people iustlie. As he was hunting in a forest, by chance he met with his brother Archigallo, whome most lovinglie he embraced, and found the means to reconcile him to his Lords, and then resigned to him his royall dignitie, when he had reigned v. yeeres.

Archigallo thus restored to his royall estate, ruled the people quietlie and iustlie ten yeeres, and was buried at Poske.

Eldurus afterwards, after the death of his brother Archigallo, for his pietie and iustice, by the generall consent of the Brytaines was againe chosen king. But he reigned not passing ii. yeeres, for his younger brethren Vigenius, and Peredurus raysed warre against him, took him prisoner, and cast him in prison, where he remained during their reigne.

Vigenius and Peredurus, after the taking of their brother, reigned together seven yeeres. Vigenius then died, and Peredurus reigned after alone two yeeres. Hee builded the Towne of Pichering in the north partes of Poskeshire.

350

The Pices  
first inhabited  
the Marches.  
323

321

311

Gaufride.

303

Canton.  
Oranham  
builded.  
I. Rouse.

292

The king depri-  
ued.  
286

282

272

270  
The Towne of  
Pichering  
build-  
Canton.  
I. Rouse.

261 **E**lidurus, the third time was made King, who continued his latter reigns honourably and lustily: but being foreboded with age and troubles, he finished his life, when he had nobly lastly reigned foure yeres.

258 Gorbonian reigned in Brytaine ten yeres.

248 Morgan guided the Realme peaceably foureteene yeres.

224 **E**merianus his brother, when he had tyrannously reigned seauen yeres was deposed.

227 **I**al was chosen king for his iustice and temperance, which gouerned peaceably twentie yeres.

207 Rimo gouerned this realme firtene yeres, his time was peaceable.

191 Geruncius reigned in Brytaine thientie yeres.

171 **C**atellus reigned peaceably ten yeres, hee hung by all oppressours of the people, to geue example vnto other.

161 Coilus succeeded Catellus, who quietly reigned twentie yeres.

143 Porrex, a vertuous and gentle Prince, reigned five yeres.

136 Chirinus, through his drunkenness, reigned but one yere.

135 Fulgen his sonne reigned two yeres in Brytaine.

133 Eldred reigned in Brytaine but one yere.

132 Androgus likewise reigned but one yere.

131 **V**rianus the sonne of Androgus wholy gaue himselfe to the lasses of the flesh, and reigned thre yeres.

136 Eliud reigned five yeres, who was a great Astronomer.

124 Dedantius king of Brytaine reigned five yeres.

120 Detonus reigned in this land two yeres.

118 Gurgineus reigned thre yeres in Brytaine.

115 Merianus was king of Brytaine two yeres.

113 Bladunus gouerned this land of Brytaine two yeres.

111 Capenus reigned king of Brytaine thre yeres.

108 Quinus ruled this land of Brytaine two yeres.

106 Silius reigned in this land of Brytaine two yeres.

104 Bledgabredus reigned ten yeres, and gaue himselfe to the studie of Philosophie.

94 Archemalus was king of Brytaine two yeres.

91 **E**ldolus reigned foure yeres. In his time diuers prodigies were sent, as Eglobes of fire, bursting out of the aire with great noise, &c.

88 Rodianus was king of Brytaine two yeres.

86 Redargius reigned king of Brytaine thre yeres.

83 Samulius reigned king of Brytaine two yeres.

81 Penicillus was king of Brytaine thre yeres.

78 Pyrrhus ruled this land of Brytaine two yeres.

76 Caporus was king of Brytaine two yeres.

74 **D**nellus the sonne of Caporus, a iust and vertuous prince, gouerned this realme foure yeres.

79 **H**elius his sonne reigned not fullie one yere. Of this prince the Ile of Elp took the name, saith Geoffrey.

Lud

**L**ud the eldest sonne of Hely succeeded his father: he amended his lawes, and toke away all vices that were naught: mozeouer he repaired the Citie of newe Troy with faire buildings and walles: and builded on the west part thereof, a strong gate, which vnto this time retaineth the name of him and is called Ludgate. Finally, he died, leaving after him two sonnes Androgus, or Auarous, and Theomantius: who not being of the age to gouerne, their vncle Casibelaue obtained the Crowne. London toke the name of Lud, and was called Ludston, as saith Geoffrey.

**C**asibelaue, the son of Hely, after the death of his brother Lud, was made gouernour of Brytaine, which ruled xix. yeres. In the xiii. yere of his reigne, Julius Caesar comming vnto that part where Caleis and Boloign now stand, determined to make warre into Brytaine, which untill that time remained infrequented and unknowne of the Romanes. His quarrell was, because that in the warres of France, he persecuted the Frenchmen to haue much succour and aide from thence: And because hee couide not vnderstand nor learne the greatnesse or state of the Island, neither what pations they were which inhabited the same, nor what lawes, customes, or kinde of gouernment they vied, nor yet what Hauens they had able to receiue any number of shippes, he sent Caius Volusenus before with a galley, to discouer as much as he couide, concerning those matters, who within fise daies after returned to Caesar, declaring such things as he had learned by coasting alongst the shore, so: he durst not for feare of the Brytains stirre out of his galley. In the meane space there came Embassadors from many Cities of the Isle, and deliuered him hostages, with whome hee sent Cornius of Arras, charging him to crhoit and persuade the rest of the Cities and Counties to do the like. And hee himselfe shortly after hauing prepared lxxx. shippes, sailed into Brytaine, where at the first being wearied with an hard and sharp battaile, and after with sodain tempest his nauy almost destroyed, he returned again into France, there to winter his men.

The next Spring (which was the yere before Christ 55.) his manie being newe rigged and increased, he passed the Seas againe with a greater armie: but whiles he went towarde his enemies on land, his shippes lying at anchor, were broken on the sandes, where they strack fast: or else through beating one against another, with force of the tempest, they were destroyed, so that fourty were lost, the other with much labour were saued. In the meane space Scaxa, one of Caesars souldiers, with foure others, who before in a small vessell were conuied to a rocke nere the Isle, and by ebbing of the Ocean being forsaken, a great number of Brytains fell on a few Romans, and some of his companions (though but few) found meanes to returne by boate, but Scaxa remained without feare in the middell of his enemies barks: first with his speare he resisted them, after with his sword he alone fought against many of them, and when he was both weary and wounded, and had lost his helmet and shield, with two light harinicks, he ran to Caesars tents, and asked pardon of the Emperour for his ouerboldnesse, who not onely forgave him, but honoured him with the office of a Centurion. Upon land Caesars hostmen at the first encounter were vanquished, and Laberius Durus the Tribune slaine in a place now called Ch.

W 3.

ston

66

Lud repaired and fortified London. Flores Historiarum.

Ludston, or London took the name of king Lud.

58

Julius Caesar his first voyage into England. Eutropius. Caesars Commentaries.

Two voyages of Caesar.

Eutropius.

A good example.

Prodigious signs.



Chro. Wygmore. Iron wood neare unto Rochester, as saith the Chronicle of Wygmore. At the second confliit, not without great danger of his men, he put the Byztaynes to flight, from thence he went unto the riuer Thames, on the further side whereof Casibelanus with a great multitude of people was keeping the bankes, who had set all the sayd bankes, and all the shallowe places, vnder the water with sharpe stakes, enery one of them as bigge as a mans thigh, bound about with lead, & piuen so fast into the bottome of the riuer, that they can neuer be removed, (so sayth Bede and Asker) who affirme that in their times the sayde stakes were easily percelued to remaine as aforesaid. But Casibelanus and his Byztaynes not being able to resist the violence and force of the Romanes, hid themselves in woodes, and with sodaine eruptions oftentimes invaded them: but in the meane time, the Trinobants, which is the strongest Citie belmeere of all those contries submitted it selfe, and deliuered hostages to Caesar, who at their request placed Mandubratius to bee their gouernour, whose father called Immanentius, being chiefe Lord or ruler of the Trinobants, Casibelane had before slaine, wherewith Mandubratius fled, and coming to Caesar, not only submitted himselfe, but also was a great meane (as manie do write) for Caesar to subdue the rest: yet did Casibelane send messengers to the four kinges that ruled in the quarters of Kent, that with all their puissance they shoulde set on the Romanes that late hurt them: their names were Cingetorex, Carullius, Taximagulus, and Segonax, who obeying his request were discomfited, and Cingetorex taken, wherewithall Casibelane being dismated after manie losses, was constrained to giue pledges, and to agree that Byztaine shoulde become tributarie to the Romanes. Thus Byztaine became tributarie to the Romanes, the yere of þ world 3913. after the building of Rome 698. before Christs birth 3. When Caesar like a conquerour, with a great number of prisoners sayled into France, and so to Rome, where after his returne out of Byztaine, hee consecrated to Venus a surcote of Byztaine pearles, the desire wherof particularly moued him to invade this Countrey: shortly after he was by the Senate slaine in the Countrell house.

Tullius Caesar  
slaine with  
bodkins.  
Autropius.  
Punice.  
Succonius.

Caesars Com.  
mentaries,  
touching the  
barbarousnes  
of Byztaynes.

Caesar in his Commentaries describeth the Byztaynes thus. The inner part (saith he) is inhabited of such, as by witnesses of their ancient Records were born and bred in the Isle, and the sea coast by such as haue passed thither out of Belgike to fetch booties, and to make war. All the which belmeere, are called by the names of the Cities where they were borne, and from whence they first came, remaining there still when the warre was done, and tilling the ground. The country is marvellously well replenished with people, and there be very many buildings, almost like in fashion to the building of Gallia. There is great store of cattell, the coine they vse is either of brasse, or else ringes of yron used at a certaine weight in stead of money. In the inner parts of the Realme groweth tinne: and in the sea coast groweth yron, but hercof is small store. The brasse that they occupy is brought in from beyond the sea. There is timber of all kinds as in Gallia, sauing beech and firre. They thinke it a hainous matter to taste of a hare, a henne, or a goose: neuertheless they cherish them for the pleasure. The aire is more temperate in those places then in France, & the colde lesser.

Of

Of all the inhabitants of this Isle, the civillest are the Kentishfolke, the which Countrey marcheth altogether vpon the sea, and differeth not greatly from the manner of France. Those that dwell more into the hart of the Realme, for the most part sowe no coyne, but live by milke and flesh, and clothe themselves in leather. All the Byztaynes doe die themselves with wood, which setteth a blewish colour vpon them, and it maketh them more terrible to beholde in battaile. They weare their haire long, and haue all parts of their bodies sauing þ head and the upper lippe. They haue x. or xii. wiues a pce, common among themselves, specially brothers with brothers, and parents with their chilszen, but the issue that cometh of them, is accounted his that first married the mother when she was a maide, &c.

Theomanthus the sonne of Lud, and nephew to Casibelane, succeeded in the Realme of Byztaine, and reigned quiettly xxiii. yeres, paying the tribute to the Romanes which Casibelane had granted.

Ocranius Augustus desiring to be like Iulius Caesar his father (so) so he alwaies termed him) prepared an expedition into Byztaine, but being come forward into France, understanding that the Pannonians lately subdued, rebelled, he turned his power against them, and altered his minde as touching our Countrey.

The fourth yere after, hee opened the Temple of Ianus at Rome, fullis determining to invade Byztaine, but when he had marched on his way, as far as Ariminum, Ambassadors of Byztaine met him, humbly suing for peace, and submitting themselves vnto his obedience and protection. Wherefore he stayed againe to settle some troubles then raised in France.

The yere following, because the covenants betwene him and the Byztaynes could not be agreed vpon, hee made provision for a thirde expedition into this Isle, but an actuall rebellion in Biscay and Saouoy withheld him then also. But shortly after Ambassadors came from Byztaine to Rome, intreating for peace, swearing fealtie in the Temple of Apars, offering giftes in the Capitol to the Gods of the Romanes: and submitted part of the Isle vnto Augustus, so that the Byztaynes began first to paie tolles and tribute without grudging, for all wares which they traded, which were for that time, Quozie bores, tongues, bowches, and other trinkets of Amber and Glasse. And all here were so quiet, that one band of soldiers and a few hozemen, were sufficient to keepe the Isle in the Romane possession.

Vnobelinus, for so is the inscription of his coine, which I haue seene, and Creab, and therefore corruptly called Kymbelinc, the sonne of Theomanthus reigned king in Byztaine xxx. yeres. In the xliii. yeres of his raigne Christ our saulour was borne in Bethlehem of Iuda.

From this place following, the yeres from Christ his birth are placed in the Margent.

When Caesar Augustus the second Emperour by the will of God had established most sure peace through the world, our Redeemer Iesus Christ vertie God and man, was borne in the xliii. yere of the raigne of Augustus,

37

34

Dion. Cassius  
lib. 49.

25

Dion. 55.  
Galerius.

24

Strabo. lib. 4.

14

Ann. Christi  
1

Fr Eusebi.  
Paulus Orosi.  
Baptista Platina.  
Martiana Polono.

gustus, he beganne to preach the 16. yere of Tyberius, and suffered his passion the 18th. yere of the same Tyberius, according to the prophesies. But here is to be noted, that the first yere of our Lord hath but seven dates, after some computation, for he was borne the 25. day of December, and the first of January following, began the second yere.

211

Guiderus, the first son of Cunobelinus, was ordained king. This man was valiant, hardy, wealthy, and trusted much in his strength. And for that he thought the Romans had their tribute wrongfully, he of great courage denied to paie the same.

Geffrey Mon.  
Hunfrey Lhuud.

Wherefore Tyberius the Emperour purposed to come hither in person, but death prevented him. Guiderus reigned 11th. yeres. Aruiragus, or rather (as the Brytains tearme him) Monigus, the pongest son of Cunobelinus, & brother of Guiderus was ordained king of Brytaine. he slew Hamon neare to a haven of the sea, and there he gobbet meale therein, it is now called South-hampton. He strengthened the castell of Douer, & also the castell of Richbourgh, neere unto Southwich in Kent. he reigned 28. yeres, and was buried at Closter.

40  
Suetonius.

Albeit the Brytaine historie doth here place Aruiragus, yet it is probable that Cunobelinus as yet liued, for about 40. yeres after Christ, Adminus the son of Cunobeline banished out of Brytain by his father, was received into protection by Caius Caligula the fourth Emperour, who was then set forward with great preparation against Brytaine, but when he came into the partes of Holland against Norfolk he staied, writing vaunting letters to the Senate, that all Brytaine was yielded vnto him, because Adminus had so done. Afterward as though he would immediatly fight a field, he cast his men into battels and squadrons vpon the sea coast, disposing all his Engines in most warlike manner (no man knowing what he meant): this done, he himselfe in a Galley launched into the sea, and immediatly returning, he caused the Trumpets to sound to battaile, and subauntelic commaunded them to gather Cockles and Muscle Shelles, and therewith to fill their helmets, saying, they were spoiles due to the Capitoll, and in these spoiles hee greatlie triumphed, as though he had subdued the Ocean. He rewarded his souldiours and returned to Rome, after he had built a high watch Tower in token of his victory against the sea, & ruines therof are great remaining in Holland, but ouerslowed by the water.

Brytaine house  
in Holland.

45

Claudius the Emperour dispatched Aulus Plancius with an armie into Brytain, where after diuers conflicts when he had receiued part of the Boduini into his tuition, and had slaine Cataracus and Togodumnus sons of Cunobeline, and thereby had made the Brytains more eager to reuenge, he sent for Claudius himselfe, who with great preparation and Elephants came into Brytain to his army, then incamped neere the Thames, with which he passed euery into Essex, fought with the Brytains, obtained the victory, took the chiefe citie of Cunobeline, and all weapons from the Brytains, and so returned to Rome the fifth month after hee set forth from thence, where hee triumphed, surmounting his soune Brytanicus: to which triumph hee permitted not onelie the

Dio.  
Suetonius.

the presidentes of prouinces, but also certaine banished prisoners to repaire to Rome: and amidst the spoiles taken from the Brytains, he fired on the top of his pallace a crowne of gold beset with stermes and foyepartes of shippes, in token he had vanquished the Brytish Ocean. He behaued himselfe very courteously towards diuers of his friends, in so much that when Plancius (a notable man) who in his voyage which he made into Brytain, atchieued diuers notable acts, and should triumph for the same, the Emperour himselfe accompanied him, and (the die being such that with his triumph hee should go by into the Capitoll) Claudius gaue him the preheminence, and went on the left hand.

At this time Vespasian who was after Emperour, was sent by Claudius into Brytaine, where he fought 30. times with the Brytains, subdued to the Roman Empire two worthy nations, about 20. towines, and the Isle of Wight.

Storius was appointed lieutenant in Brytaine for the Romanes, who at his first entrie in the beginning of Winter assaileth the Brytains, & purposed to pierce them by and include them with diuers & fortifications, wherefore the Iceni made an insurrection, which when he had pacified with some slaughter, he marched against the Gangi, foraging all the countries as he passed, but was forced by new tumults to turne from the against the Brigants, whome with some slaughter, and promise of pardon, he pacified. Then he made pouison against the Silures which inhabited South-wales, bearing themselves bolde vpon the puissance of Caratacus a valiant Brytaine, who being skilfull of the Countrey, remoued the war into Shropshire, where he fortified amongst craggie mountaines a place strong by situation, where neuertheless the Romans prevailed. The wife, daughter, and brethren of Caratacus were taken, & he flying to Carismandua a D. ruling in North-shire, was by her perswaded captiue to his enemies. 16. yeres after the wars began, who sending him to Rome, was there in open assemble brought before Claudius, with his wife, daughter, brethren, and friends, and such spoiles as had been taken from him, where hee (nothing dismayed in spirit or countenance,) spake after this sort to Claudius.

If my moderation of prosperous successes had bene correspondent to my state and nobilitie, I might haue come to this Citie, rather a friend then a captiue: neither you haue disdained to admit me into league, being descended of noble parentage, & soueraigne over many nations. His present state of mine, as it is villanous toward me, so it is honorable to you. I had hope, men, money, munition, and what wonder is there, If I had lost them unwillingly: For if you will rule and raigne ouer all, of necessity all must come into slavery: If I had yielded at the first, neither my fortune nor thy glory had bin reuolued, and the obliuion of me had ensued immediatly after my execution: but if you saue my life, it shall be an euertlasting crable of your clemency. At these words Claudius remitted his offence, granted him life, & the Senate adiuaged Offorius worthy to triumph: but in the meane time the inhabitants of South-wales to reuenge Caratacus captiuitie intercepted and discomfited certaine bands of the Romanes, amidst which new wars, Offorius fired with trauel, departed this life.

Claudius sent Didius to supply the place of Offorius now departed, but in the meane time the Silures fought fortunately against the legions which

50

In Orosius  
time certain  
Cities were  
giuen to Cagli.  
burne a Bry  
tish king, and a  
Colone of Ro  
mano was  
placed here.

52  
Tacitus 3. Histo.  
was

was under the conduct of Manlius Valens. In this time warre brake out betwene Cartismandua Q. of the Brigantes, and Venutius her husband, whome she refused, and matched her selfe with Velocatus his Esquire: whereupon Venutius favoured of the people, assailed her territory, and she succoured by the Romans; after she had intercepted by treachery Venutius brother and allies, fought with him. Where after a sharpe fight, she by the aid of the Romans, prevailed, as also Cæsius Nafica did with his legion against the Brytaines in another place: for Didius used others in these matters, because he was aged, and onely kept that which others had heretofore conquered.

61 Claudius being now poisoned by Agrippina his wife, Nero her sonne obtained the Romane Empire, and about the 7 yeere of his raigne Verennus was appointed lieutenant here, who died within the first yeere of his government, saying that hee woulde have subdued provinces, had he reigned but two yeeres, but about this time great slaughter was here of the Romans.

62 Suetonius Paulinus was then sent hither, who at his arrivall purposing to subdue Anglesey, whither many Brytains had withdrawne themselves, hee in vessels with flat boies ferried over his footmen, bringing over his horsemen by some fords, whereas on the shores stood closely together great numbers of Brytains, and among them women gadding up and down frantically in mourning weeds, their haire hanging about their eares, and shaking sleeves; the Draydes also casting by their hands towards heaven hundred out cruell execrations, with which uncomely sights the Romans at first stood dismayed, but after encouraged by the Generals perswasion, they brast in among them, made great slaughter, got the possession of the Isle, and sold to the Romans consecrated to superstitious uses: two cities belonging to the Romans were taken, 80000. of their people slain, and the whole Island revolted, and to the Romans reproch, the slaughter was committed by a woman, being forgot then by many strange signes & tokens. For in the court was heard a noise with much laughter. In the Theatre a great tumult and much wondring, when there was no man there, that either spake or mourned. Besides, in the ruins of the certain houses or buildinges were seene. The Image of the goddess Victoria in the Temple of Camulodunum (which is Spaldon in Essex as W. Camden writeth) turned her backe as though she had yielded to her enemies: the women ranne as mad here and there, saying, and singing, Destruction is at hand.

Finally, betwixt the Island and France, the Ocean sea appeared as it flowed with blood. The occasion of this warre was a confiscation of the Brytains goods, which being remitted by Claudius the Emperour, Decianus Catus then Procurator of the Isle, said that it ought to have bene reneued. To this cause was added, that whereas (against their wills Seneca had lent them fourty Sellenies upon great usurie) he now with great force and all kind of violence compelled them to pay all the whole summe at one payment, and also perswaded them to make warre on the Romans.

Bunduica of Brytaine, a woman of noble birth, not onely with much honour ruled amongst them, but also was the soueraine in their wars, and had

in deed a stomacke more manly then womanlike: who having gotten together an army of 120000. men, got her upon her seat made of sparrow turnes, after the manner of the Romanes, and being a tall woman, of comely shape, and severe countenance, sharpe voice, with yellow haire hanging downe to her waistes (Ponticus Virinius saith to her thighs) she wore a great chaine of golde, and had on her backe a coate of sunbeile colours, and a platted kirtle. When she was thus apparelled, and had in her handes a great speare, she spake unto them to this effect.

Ponticus Virinius.

First she commended libertie, shewing them how povertie with libertie, was farre better then great riches in miserie and bondage: on the other side, with great eloquence she declared the mischiefs and calamities they suffered at the handes of the Romanes, who exacting Tributes of payments, so oppressed them, that much better it were once to die, then long to live in such extreme slaueage.

Secondly she reproved them, for not expelling their enemies, as their forefathers had done Julius Cæsar, Claudius and Galigula: And againe she prayed them for their present readines to helpe her, and recover their ancient state.

Thirdly, she disabled the Romanes, for that they were fewe, combred with armour, and so faint of courage, that they had rather fight a farre off, then encounter with them by hand strokes: she commended the Brytaines, to be more in number, of greater valour, and farre more able to abide hunger, cold, thirst, raine, winde, heat, &c. she added the vantage of the place, as being at home, where the woods and rivers, lakes, and all other things were well knowne to euerie one of them.

Lastly, she exhorted them to shew themselves as Dogs and wolues among fearefull Hares and Foxes: wherewithall, she let out of her lap a quicke Hare, thereby to learne the event of her enterprize. The Hare hauing a prosperous passage, all the multitude gaue a great shout, and Bunduica clapping her hands, gaue thanks to her Gods, that she ruled not the Romans, as did Nero, (who though he were a man, yet was in deed but a woman, for that he sang and plaied on the Harpe) but the Brytaines, who esteemed it better to be Martiours then sloughmen, who, as they had all things in common, so had they both wines and chylzen, and that hauing a kingdome amongst such a kinde of people, they paid their dutie aides against a spitefull and wicked kinde of men, if they were to be called men, who used hote bathes, vainty face, wine, ointments, lay in soft beds, and wore bassals to such a wanton spindestall as their Emperour Nero was.

What the Brytains were gient to.

Alceme of the Romanes.

Bunduica hauing spoken these and such like amongst her people, without her posse shee set forward against the Romanes, who at that time were without head or gouernor, for that Paulinus was gone with his armie into Anglesey, (as is before rehearsed,) which is an Island nere Brytaine, by meanes whereof Bunduica took two of their Cities, and committed the notable slaughter before remembred.

She exercised all kinde of crueltie on such men as she took. As for the noble women that shee gate, shee hanged them vp, and cut off their pappes, and

selved them to their mouths: besides this, the stretching their bodies out at length, thrust sharpe stakes cleane through them: all which thinges were done in despiht, when they sacrificed and seaded in their Temples, but specially in the wood called Andates.

Paulinus, who had now subdued Anglesey, hearing of the foresaid slaughter, returned to Brytaine, yet would he not adventure the fortune of battaile with them, fearing their number, but when he wanted victuall, and that his enemies approached, he was compelled to abide the battell. Boudicca, who had in her army 230000. men, was her selfe placed in a Chariot, and ordered her men at length: but Paulinus could not stretch his companie so long, for that they were not of anie such number; but at length he divided his armie into three partes, so that at one time they might fight in sundry places, exhorting them not to be abashed at the multitude of their enemies, for both they and their fathers, had with lesse number atchieved greater matters, and gotten greater victories. Adding, that now was the time to plaie the men, to entoy that in quiet, which before their ancestors had won, and recover that which they had lost, or else to live for ever in miserie and shame. Againe, he shewed what crueltie their eyes had seene, by those barbarous people, to such as they had overcome, exhorting them in revenge thereof to fight manfully, and there was no doubt but the Gods (who were alwaies favourable to such as had suffered cruelty) would helpe them: and better it were to die fighting valiantly, then with reproch to be taken, and die in their enemies hands like dogges. Finally (saying he) whether we live or die, Brytaine shall be ours; for, though the other Romanes lose it, yet shall our bones continually keepe it. When he had thus spoken, the signe of the battell was given, and each part prepareth himselfe: the Brytains with great and strange noise, the Romanes in silence came so nere, that they might throwe their dartes to them: and perceiving their enemies to approach, with great violence, rushed in amongst them, and brake their array: but after being compassed with the multitude of their enemies, the battell wared doubtful. The light harnessed men began to smite each other, and those of heaunie armour together with the horsemen encountered, and the Roman Archers fought against the Brytish Chariots. They which fought with out breastplates, were slaine with Darts. This encounter was made in three severall places, and was fought with great courage on both sides. At the last the Romanes departed Conquerors, many were slaine in the battelle, and many were taken. Great numbers which escaped, prepared to fight againe, but in the meane space Boudicca died of a discaie which she had, and they mourned, and buried her verie honourably. After those that remained were easlie overcome and dispersed.

Tacitus saith, that Prasutagus King of the Iceni, a Prince of great wealth, appointed, that Caesar and his owne two daughters should inherit his lands, here by thinking all his life to be more quiet, and being deceived, his wife and daughter should be the more safer by means of such protection: but it fell out farre other wise, for the Centurions gat his Realme, their servants spoiled his house, beate his wife, and destroyed his daughters: besides, the chiefest men

Cornelius Tacitus

of his land were displaced of their inheritances, and handled extremelie. In revenge whereof Boudicca raised the warre, and committed the slaughter before remembred, and at last her armie once overthron by Paulinus, being afraid to fall into her enemies hands, she poisoned her selfe.

Policletus then a servaunt of Nero, was sent hither to surveie the state of Brytaine, who discharged Paulinus Suetonius of the government.

Petronius Turpilianus was sent into Brytaine as a man easie to be entreated, and being not altogether acquainted with offences of the enemies, was the readier to receive them to grace: who setting matters in their former stay, and attempting no further, delivred the Province unto Trebellius Maximus. Trebellius being both faint hearted and too sluggish, and also utterlie unacquainted with experimentes of armes, ruled the Province with a certain mildnes of government. Now had the barbarous people also learned to wincke at inticing bices, and the civill warres of the Romanes then happening, was a cloake to his cowardise: but there presentlie arose discord betwene Rofcius and Caelius, legates of the xx. legion, when the souldiours (accustomed to be employed in expeditions) gave the miselues to lasciviousnes: whereupon Trebellius tooke his flight, and hid his head, to avoide the furie of the armie, and in most base and beastly manner, governed (as it were) by entreatie, so as they might seeme to have compounded, that the souldiours should live in all liberty, and the Generall at his safetie. This time for a yere and halfe there was deably civill warre among the Romanes for the Empire, betwene Galba, Otho, and Vitellius.

Vespasian Volanus, then was sent hither by Vitellius, he did not use ante discipline or correction in Brytaine, so as there continued the like slooth and cowardise in the souldiers, toward their enemies, and the Campe still as full of wantonnesse, saying that Volanus was a good and milde man, and thereby made himselfe belovued where he should have borne feare. In this time Vitellius advanced manie souldiours in the Brytaine legions, and Herdonius Flaccus brought unto him 80000. chosen men of warre out of Brytaine. The Brytaines seeing the Romanes thus emboldened with civill warre, began to trouble them, wherefore Volanus would send no succor to Vitellius at his commandement, when Vespasian warred against him for the Empire, and all the Brytaines favoured Vespasian.

When as (with the rest of the world) Vespasian had recovered Brytaine, then were there placed great Captaynes, and notable armies, the enemies hope abated, and Petilius Cerealis brought great feare upon the Brytaines. The Citie of the Brigantes (which was accounted one of the greatest of the land) being by him assailed, he hadde many encounters, and some not without slaughter, where by hee eyther conquered or assailed a great part of their Countrey.

Julius Frontinus, a man as worthy and ballant as was possible, toke then the charge upon him, and subdued the nation of the Silures, being both ballant and warlike, notwithstanding the valour of the enemy and difficulties of the places.

64  
Petronius Turpilianus.

69  
Cerealis Volanus.

Tacitus.

70  
Petilius Cerealis.

Julius Frontinus.

This was the state of Bypitain, and course of the wars, which Agricola found arriving in the middelt of Sommer, the souldiers euen then beginning to retire to their strengths, and the enimie searching for his most advantage.

The Citie of the Ordouices felwe daies before his arrivall almost wholly defeated a company lying upon their borders. This beginning stirred up the pprovince, serving for an example to them, who courted the warres, and yet desired to see what was in their newe Governour. Agricola, although the Sommer were now well spent, the bandes dispersed all about the pprovince, the souldiers had determined to rest for that yeere, the time being late and incummodious to commence the war, thinking it would be better to man the places most suspected: yet he determined neverthelesse to prevent daunger, and gathering together the Standardes of the Legions, with a felwe of his foraine aides, for that the Ordouices durst not take the felde, marched forth against them himselfe in the backward of his armie, that others might take like courage in the same danger, and put almost that whole nation to the sword: then following his good successe, hee invaded Anglesey, (which Suetonius had before attempted) causing certaine Bypitaines that served him, and kinctue the shal- lowes and manner of swimming, with hoise and harness to passe over into the Isle on a sodaine, wherewith the inhabitants were so amazed (who fearing no thing because they sawe no nautie) that they submitted the Isle unto him immediately. Now having some quietnesse, and perceiving that warre would little ppeuaile against the Bypitaines, if they were intirciously handled, he purposed to cut off all causes of quarrell, and first reforming his own familie, did nothing partially, onely respected the vertue of men, loosened tributes, and behaved himselfe most honourably. And thus much the first yeere.

When the Sommer began, he assembled his armes, trained his souldiers, foraged the enimies Countries with sodaine invasions to their great feare, and yet so favorably, as manie Countries willingly yielded unto him, and suffered Castles to be built among them. The Winter following he spent in civill administration, counselling the people privatelie, and helping them probably, to build houses, Temples, and Court houses. He procured noble mens children to study liberall Sciences, and then began the Bypitaines to conforme themselves to Romane fashions and attyre.

The third yeere he discovered people in the North hitherto unknown, euen as far as Tau, terrifying the people, and placing fortresses most wisely to the annoyance of the enimie.

The fourth Sommer he employed getting those Countries which hitherto hee had passed through, euen to Edenborough, Fritch, and Cluid, the narrowe space betwene the which waters he fortified.

The fifth yeere by Sea he discovered and vanquished further nations in the North, and placed garrisons in the coast toward Ireland, wherunto hee also aspired, and to that end retained an Irish Prince with him, that was driven out of his Countrey by civill dissention.

But in the Sommer which began the first yeere of his government, he feared the Spanens by a nautie for that purpose sent to the Sea, fearing least all

that

those nations beyonde had united themselves and kept the passages by lande; but afterward he marched forward, his naucie coasting with his army by land, so as sometime in the same Campe, he had horsemen, footmen, and Seamen, lodged together. It was reported by such as were taken prisoners, that the sight of the naucie much astonished the Bypitaines as men from whom all refuge was cutte off, the secretes of their Seas being discovered: wherefore determining to trie it with hand blowes the inhabitantes of Calidonia with great preparation, although the report thereof were greater (as it often happens in unknown matters,) of their owne accorde, assailed some Castles, and seeing themselves rather to bee assailable then defendantes, put the Romanes in some doubt: whereupon the cowardes pretending pollicie, advised to retire on this side Bodotria, rather then to bee driven thereto by force, when as in the meane while, Agricola knowing that the enimie would charge him in severall troupes and companies, and fearing to bee overmatched and couped in with number, or deceived by the ignorance of the place, divided his army into three battels, and so marched forward: which order marked by his enemies, made them alter their purpose, and in the night killing the watch, brake in upon the ninth legion, halfe a slepe and halfe affrighted, which (as they took it) was the worstest, and so the fight continued within the Campe till it was day light, at which time the Romanes began to gather courage, and the Bypitains were discomfited, so as, had it not bin for the woods and bogges, that victorie had ended the whole strife, after which battell the Roman souldiers bewelme to be of haute courage, crying out to pierce the countrey of Calidonia, that they might finde out the uttermost postes and boundes of Bypitain. The Romanes on the other side, ascribing the praise of this victorie, not to the prowesse of the Roman souldier, but to Fortune and the willnesse of their Captaine, used all meanes possible, to hearten up and arme their youth, bestowing their wives and children in places of safegard, and by sacrifices and holy assemblies unite at their Cities together: upon these resolutions they remoured.

In the beginning of the next Sommer which was the sixth yeere of his charge, Agricola sending his fleet before him, which often put a land and spoiled the Countries, thereby causing a great and uncertaine feare: himselfe with a picked army, wherunto he added of the valiantest Bypitains, came to the mountaine Grampius, whereon his enemies had encamped, for the Bypitaines nothing quailed by the successe of the former encounter, and expecting nothing but a reuenge, or bondage, learning at length, that common danger is onelie to be resisted with common consent) by leagues and embassages had stirred up the mindes of all the Cities about. Nowe were there to be in armes thirtie thousand and upward, unto which number, the youth, and all such as were of strong and lustie yeeres, euerie man bearing his tokens of praise about him, continually repayed from all sides. When amongst many other Captains, Calgacus a man both in nobilitie and valor; about the rest, spake to the assembly in this manner: As often as I behold the causes of this warre and our necessity, my minde gluetly me great hope, that this day and your mutuall con-

sent

sent shall be the beginning of libertie to all Bypaine; for, every one of you ha-  
 uing tried seruitude, and hauing no other land nor sea, which can saue vs (the  
 Romanes naue being at our elbowed) the verie warre and weapons which  
 are the honour of the worlde, must be the onlie safetie of the faint-hearted.  
 With these and manie such reasons drawne from the calamitie of their future  
 seruitude, the pride and tyrannie of their gouernors, the sickle friendship of the  
 strangers seruing in their enemies campe, ready to change vpon any high oc-  
 casion, and the present remedie of al misery, which, as he said in the beginning,  
 was onely baliaunce, he so stirred vpon all mens minds, that they applauded his  
 oration after their manner, with songs and diuers kind of noises. This ora-  
 tion being ended, as also Agricola his speech to his shouldours, the two ar-  
 mies beganne to encounter. Agricola placed his battails in this order: hee  
 made his maine battaile of the strangers (his aides) which were in number  
 viii. thousand, on each side whereof, for winges he placed his horsemen to the  
 number of thre thousand, and his legions he caused to garde the trenches of  
 his Campe, that if it were possible, the victorie might be gained without the  
 shedding of Roman bloud, or if his main battaile were broken, they might be  
 gathered againe, and the fight restored by his legions. The battaile of the Byp-  
 taines (to terrifie their enemies, as also to make their brauery thewe,) stood on  
 higher ground, so as their forward being come vpon the plaine, the rest were  
 on the fote of the hill, their Chariots, in the meane time gallopping vp and  
 downe the fiele, making great howles and cries. Then Agricola perceiving  
 the number of his enemies to bee greater then his owne, and fearing to bee  
 charged both on the face and flanke of his battaile at one time, and that ma-  
 nie thought necessarie to haue the legions advanced forward, remained not  
 withstanding firme in his first resolution, causing his battaile to bee some-  
 what drawne in length, himselfe alighted from his horse, and stood on fote  
 before his forward. The first fight was with shotte of arrowes and darts,  
 during which time, the Bypaines, both skillfull and couragious with their  
 huge swords and small bucklers, either bare or broke the Romanes shotte,  
 and answered them with an infinite number of the like, untill Agricola was  
 perswaded by bands of Iollanders, and Zabanders, that the matter might be  
 brought to swords and hand strokes, which kinde of fight they were acquaint-  
 ed withall, by long haunting the wars, and the same was verie incommo-  
 dious for their enemies, bearing but small shields, and vnnecessurable swords:  
 for the pointlesse swords of the Bypaines, were vsit for a throng, and where  
 they wanted roue. Wherefore the Iollanders strake thicke together, and  
 thrust them over the bucklers, wounding them in the faces, and hauing bro-  
 ken that battaile, passed forward towarde them which kept the hill, which  
 fane by the rest of the Romanes bandes, they partly moued by cruell of the  
 others glorie, and partly by heate of their owne courages, cutte in pieces  
 those that they first encountred, leauing notwithstanding, some halfe dead,  
 and others not touched, for haste to obtaine a perfect victorie. In the meane  
 while, the troups of the Bypaine horsemen, did take their flight, but the  
 Chariots put themselves pacement among the fote bandes, which kinde  
 of

at fight, (at first) seemed somewhat terrible to their enemies, but it long ser-  
 ued not their turnes, being assailed with a thicke paele of their enemies,  
 and the ground not commodious for the Chariots, nor their riders all of the  
 best. So as at the last, their Chariot horses, coursing vp and downe the fiele  
 without guiders, ouerranne many of their owne companie, as they fled for  
 feare from one place to another. The Bypaines, which all this while kept the  
 hill, and came not to the fight, making little reckoning of the small number  
 of the Romanes, beganne by little and little to descend, intending to hemme  
 them in, in the midst of their conquest, which surely they had done, if Agri-  
 cola, suspecting the same, had not dispatched foure companes of horsemen  
 (which he kept for all sodaines) to encounter with them, who, the more fiercely  
 they assailed, so much the more sharply repulsed them, and sent them to flight:  
 whereupon the deuice of the Bypaines turned to their owne harme. Where-  
 after, by Agricola his commandement the winges of the horsemen were ta-  
 ken from the front of his battell, and were made to charge vpon the battell  
 of his enemies, standing ouer-against them. Then might you behold in the  
 open fiele, a grieuous and lamentable spectacle, some followed the chafe,  
 some took prisoners, and after killed them to take others. Some the ene-  
 mies as euerie one thought best, fledde, some in heapes and armed fled from  
 a smaller number: other, though vnarmed, tarried and were slaine: eu-  
 rie where late weapons, carcases, and limbs cut off, the ground all bloudie:  
 sometime the banquetted appoaching neare to Woods, would make dead, and  
 entrappe the hebeleste followers, so as, if Agricola had not caused certaine  
 lustie bandes in the manner of a search, and also diuers horsemen, leauing  
 their horse where the Woods were thicke, and other on horsebacke, where  
 the Woods would suffer, to range them all about, there might haue bene  
 some detriment receiued by too much hardinesse. But when the Bypaines saw  
 themselves pursued in order of battaile, they took againe their flight, not in  
 companie as before, nor tarrying one for another, but here and there, euery  
 as men glad to escape, sought long and by waies. Flight and heauinesse of  
 slaughter ended the chafe. There were slaine of the Bypaines about tenne  
 thousand: of the Romane armie, thre hundred and fortye, among whom Aulus  
 Aricus, Captaine of a bande, whome the beate of his youth, and courage of  
 his horse brought into the hands of his enemies. That night the victors made  
 merrie with the spoile, but the Bypaines wailing vp and downe, men and  
 women lamenting together, wailed and fetcht away their hurt men, assem-  
 bled together the whole, forsooke their houses, and for anger set fire on them,  
 chafing themselves lurking places, which straight way quapled againe: some-  
 time concealing good hope, which straightway quapled againe: and some were  
 knownen to kill their wives and children, as though they had therein taken  
 compassion vpon them. The next day made the victorie more manifest, in which  
 there was nothing but silence, the hills being then forsaken, and also the ho-  
 les smooking a farre off.

Agricola sending abroad his espialles, coulde finde no enemy to make  
 head, wherefore Sommer being so farre spent to proceede any further in the  
 warre,

warre, hee had his Souldiours into the coastes of the Horelli, and there taking hostages, called his name to coaste about Bytaine, which at last arrived at the Haven called Trutensis, afterwarde having bestowed his souldiours in their wintering places, departed Bytaine, and left the province in quiet to his succellour.

First Christi-  
ans in Bytaine.  
Nicephorus.

Divers authors affirme, that about this time, the Gospel of Christ our salour was first preached in this Island. Nicephorus a Greeke author in his second booke the 40. Chapter, bath as followeth. Simon boyne in Cana Galilee, who for his fervent affection to his Master, & great zeale he toke by all means to the Gospel, was surnamed Zelotes, he having received the holy Ghost from above, travailed through Egypt and Aethiopia, then through Paavitania and all Lybia, preaching the Gospel. And the same Doctrine he brought to the occidentall sea, and the Isles called Brytanie, &c. And in the third Booke the first Chapter, he saith. The holie Apostles (like as we have declared already) being dispersed throughout the whole earth, did divide the provinces amongst them by lot, to preach the Gospel in, Peter undoubtedly first at Jerusalem, then in Galatia, Bythinia, with the higher Asia, Cappadocia, and all Italie, taught the Gospel: John in Asia, who ended his life there: To Andrew fell the provinces on the coaste of Euxine, all Sephia, Byzans, Macedonia, and the firme land of Greece: Thomas amongst the Parthians, Indians, and the Ile of Taprobana did publish the Gospel: Another chose Egypt and Lybia: and ther the bittermost coastes of the Ocean, with the Isles of Bytaine, &c. Dorotheus writeth thus. Simon Zelotes passing through Paavitania, and Africa preached Christ, at length was crucified, slain and buried in Bytaine, or rather Bythania. Also he saith, Aristobulus, whom the Apostle to the Romans remembreth, was made a Bishop in Bytaine or Bythania. George Maior writeth in a preface, that immediatly after Christs resurrection under Claudius the Emperour, the light of the gospel was kindled in Bytaine by Ioseph of Arimathea that buried the body of Christ. Tertullian writting against the Jewes of those times, saith: The Bytaines inhabitants of places unknowen to the Romanes, yet did obey and were subiect to the kingdome of Christ. William of Malmesbury, in his booke of the antiquities of Glasseburie, alleageth Freculphus to write in his second booke and fourth Chapter, as followeth: Philip the Apostle, preaching the worde of God in Gaule (nowe called Fraunce) chose out xii. amongst his Disciples, whome hee sent into Bytaine to preach the worde of life, and upon cuerie one of them, he most devoutly stretched out his right hande: ouer these he appointed for chiefe, his deare friende Ioseph of Arimathea, that buried our Lord. These (saith John Capgrauce, who alleageth Melkin and Merlin) came into this lande the yere of Christs incarnation sicth thre, in the time of Arviragus who gave to them the Ile of Avalon, where they builded an Oratorie of wytten wodes, and after three were buried: which place being since encreased, and newly builded by diuers Princes, was named Glasseburie. For confirmation whereof, King Henry the second (as himselfe in his Charter affirmeth) having diligencie perused the Writalleges and Charters, which hee caused to be presented and read,

Dorotheus.

Antiquities of  
Glasseburie.  
Freculphus.

Glasseburie  
first Church of  
Christians in  
Bytaine  
John Capgrauce.  
Melkin and  
Merlin.

Charta Regia.

not onely of William the first, of William the seconde, and Henry the first his Grandfather: but also the Charters of the Princes his predecessours, of moze ancient time, to wit, of Edgar, Edmond, Edward, Elfred, Bringwalthius, Kenethwin, Baldred, Ina, Arthur, & that noble man Cudred, & many other Christian Kings beside, also of Kenewalla, sometime a Heathen and Pagan King, concerning the house of Glasseburie found, that in some of those Charters it is called the Spother of Saintes, of some other, the Graue of the Saintes, and that the sayde place was first builded even by the vertie Disciples of Christ the infelices, and by them dedicated to our Lord, as the first place which hee chose to himselfe in this Realme: all which so to be the foresaid King Henry established by his Charter: which Charter my selfe have seene and read.

Marius sonne of Arviragus, an excellent wise man, was ordained King of Bytaine. At this season Rodrik King of the Pictes, (which were people of Scythia) accompanied with the Scots invaded Bytaine, and spoiled the country with sword & fire, against whom Marius with his knights assembled in a battell, & gave them sharpe battell, wherein Rodrik was slain, with a great number of his souldiours upon Scarnemore, in token of which victory, there was a stone not farre from Carlisle created, with this inscription, In token of Marius victorie. To them which remained Marius gave inhabitation in the further part of Scotland. And forsomuch as the Bytaines disdained to giue to them their daughters in marriage, they acquainted them with the Irishmen, and married their daughters, and grew in procelle of time to a great people. He repayed, walled, and fortified the citie of Caerlegion, now called Chester. He raygned liii. yeres.

73  
Gaufride.

Flores Historie.

Ran Hig.  
Henry Bradshaw  
Whither repayed  
viii.

Domitianus the Emperour sent Salustius Lucullus into Bytaine, whome hee shortly put to death, for that he suffered certain lawes to be called Lucullen, after his name. Some write that Cneus Trebullius was now gouernour, here.

94  
Sugonius.

What Lieutenants were in Bytaine for the time of Nerua and Traiane, I find not recorded: but when Adrian was possessed in the Empire, Iulius Severus gouerned here under him, whom Adrianus called out of Bytaine, to waite against the Jewes, and came hither himselfe in person, pacified the tumultes, reared a wall, which should seperate the barbarons from his subiectes, and returned to Rome.

Iulius Seuerus.  
120

Spartianus.

Coilus the sonne of Marius was ordained king, hee was brought by euery from his youth in Rome among the Romans, and therefore fauoring them, paid the tribute truly: hee builded Colchester, and raygned lv. yeres.

124

Galfridus.  
Colchester  
builded.

Antonius Pius succceeded Hadrianus in the Empire, and gouerned this province by Lollius Urbicus, who ouercame the Bytaines, and rayped and ther wall of turkes to keepe out the inrodes of the southerne Bytaines.

139  
Capitolianus.

Antonius Philosopher now ruled the Romane Empire, and Capthurnius Agricola was sent hither with authority against the Britains then repining at the Romanes, but with what successe it is not specified.

162

Lucius the sonne of Coilus, was ordained King, who in all his actes and deedes followed the steps of his forefathers, in such wise as hee was of all men loued and deard. He sent his two Embassadors Eleanus and Meduinus,

179  
Florent. Wigorn.



England erect-  
ed the faith.  
Beda.  
After.  
Flores Historiar.  
liber. 5.  
Alfred.  
John Capgrave.  
Marianus Scotus  
London Poets,  
and Carliu.

two learned men in the Scriptures, with his loving letters to Elutherius Bi-  
shoppe of Rome, desiring him to send some devout and learned men, by whose  
instruction both he and his people might be taught the faith and Religion of  
Christ: whereof Elutherius being verie glad; baptized these two mes-  
sengers, making Eluanus a Bishoppe, and Meduinus a teacher, and sent also  
with them into Brytaine two famous Clarke, Faganus and Denianus, by  
whose diligence Lucius and his people of Brytaine were baptized and instruct-  
ed in the faith of Christ, Temples were made Cathedral Churches, and Bi-  
shops placed, where flames of fire had bene: at London, York, and Car-  
lion upon Wike, (now saint Danils in Wales) were placed Archbishops: thus  
far after the common opinion, & writers of that time. True it is that till this  
date, there remaineth in Somersetsshire, in the Denerie of Dunfor, a parish  
Church, bearing the name of S. Denianus, as a Church either by him found-  
ed, or to him dedicated. To the confirmation thereof, the reuerend Beda  
writeth thus. In the yere 156. Marcus Aurelius Verus, the 14. Emperour af-  
ter Augustus governed the Empire, with his brother Aurelius Commodus. In  
whose time Elutherius, a holie man being Pope of the Church of Rome, Lucius  
King of Brytaines wrote vnto him, desiring that by his commandement he  
might be made a Christian: which his request was granted him, whereby the  
Brytaines receiuing then the faith, kept it sound and vndecked in rest and peace,  
untill Dioclesian the Emperours time. Thus saith Beda of that matter, which  
maie suffice to proue the Christian faith, then to be receiued here, but Beda  
speaeth nothing of such an Epistle, sent by Elutherius to Lucius as some haue  
fattered vpon him, I onely find the same entered in a booke intituled, Con-  
stitutions, pertaining to the Guildhall of London, misdated in the Latine,  
as the English following sheweth.

Beda falsly  
alleged, by H.  
Craffon.

Epistle of Elu-  
therius to Luci-  
us King of  
Brytaine.  
Lib. Const. Lon.

Palms, 45.

The yere after Christ byth 202. Pope Elutherius did write to Lucius  
king of Brytaine, for the amendment of the kings and the nobility of Brytain  
as followeth. You required that we should send you the Roman and Imperfall  
lawes, y you might be the in your kingdome of Brytain, but those lawes we  
may disproue, & not the lawes of God. You haue receiued lately through Gods  
goodnesse in your kingdome, the faith and law of Christ, you haue there in your  
kingdome both Testaments, out of them by Gods grace, and the aduice of  
your realme take a lawe, and thereby patiently gouerne the kingdome. You  
are the Vicar of God in your kingdome, according to the kingly Prophet. The  
earth is the Lordes, and his fullnesse is the whole world, and all that dwell there-  
in: and againe, Whon hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquitie, wherefore  
God (euen thy God) hath appointed thee with the oyle of gladnesse above thy  
fellowes. They are the kings children, Christian nations, and people of your  
kingdome that liue and consist vnder your protection, peace, and kingdome ac-  
cording to the Scripture, as an hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings,  
the people, and nations of the kingdome of Brytaine is yours, such as are di-  
uisied you should gather them together to the lawe of Christ: his holy Church,  
to peace and concord: and cherish, maintaine, protect, gouerne, and de-  
fend them from the inuious, malicious and their enemies. What be to that  
kingdome,

kingdome, the King thereof is a childe, and the Princes eate early in the morn-  
ing. I doe not call a King a childe for his youth or minority, but for his fol-  
lie, iniquitie, and madnesse, according to the kingly Prophet. The blood-  
Christie and deceitfull men shall not outliue halfe their daies. By eating we  
shall understand Gluttonie; by Gluttonie Lururie; by Lururie, all filth, vice,  
heednesse and mischiefe, according to King Salomon: Whosedome will not en-  
ter into a spitefull soule, nor inhabite in a bodie subiect to sinne. A King hath  
his name of gouerning, and not of his kingdome, so long you shall be a King,  
as you rule well, otherwisse, you shall not be so named, and lose that name,  
which God forbid. God graunt that you may so rule your Realme of Brytain,  
that you may reigne with him euerlastingly, whose Vicar you are in the saide  
kingdome. To whom with the father, &c.

Palms, 45.  
Sapience, 11.

There remaineth in the Church of Saint Peter vpon Cornhill at London,  
a Table, wherein is written, that Lucius founded the same Church to be an  
Archbishops see, and made it the Metropolitane and chiefe Church of his king-  
dome, which he endured the space of 400. yeres, vnto the coming of Saint  
Augustine.

The Archbishops names, I finde onely to be set downe by Iocelyn of Fur-  
nes, in his booke of Brytish Bishops, and not else where.

1 Thean (saith he) was the first Archbishop of London, in the time of Lu-  
cius, who builded the saide Church of S. Peter in a place called Cornhill in  
London, by the aide of Ciran, chiefe butler to King Lucius.

2 Eluanus was the second, and he builded a Librarie to the same Church  
adoptyng: and conuerted manie of the Prydes (learned men in the Pagans  
lawe) to the Christian faith.

3 Cadar was the third.

4 Obinus.

5 Conan.

6 Paludius.

7 Stephan.

8 Ilcra.

9 Dedwin.

10 Thedred.

11 Hilary.

12 Guidelinus.

13 Voderius flaine by the Saxons.

14 Theanus fled with the Brytaines into Wales, about the yere of Christ  
387. Thus much out of Ioceline of the Archbishops: the credit whereof I leane  
to the iudgement of the learned: for I read of a Bishop of London (not before  
named) in the yere of Christ, 326. to be present at the second Councell holden  
at Arlas, in the time of Constantine the Great, who subscribed therunto in  
these wordes: Ex provincia Britania ciuitate Londinensi Restitutus Episcopus: as  
plainlie appeareth in the first Tome of the Councelles. He writeth not him-  
selfe Archbishop, and therefore maketh that matter of Archbishops doubtful,  
or rather overthroweth that opinion.

Iocelyn of  
Furnes.



Lucius reigned xiii. yeres, and was buried at Gloucester.

Bion.  
181

Comodus after his father Antonius Philosophus succeeded in the Empire with most cruel tyrannie. In his time the Northern Brittaines burst in through the wall, forayed the Countrey, and slew the Romane General with his souldiers, wherefore Vlpus Marcellus was appointed here a carefull vigilant Capitaine: he sore annoyed the Brittaines, which were enemies to the Roman state, and purchasing enuie by his vertue, was shortly dismissed.

Lampridius  
Dion.

Then Ceronnis who ruled all vnder Comodus, appointed certaine men of base estate to gouerne the Romane enemies here, wherewith the souldiers being grieved, sent 15000. chosen men out of their number to Rome, who accusing him before Comodus to compasse the Empire, for his sonne, was deliuered vnto them, who immediately mangled him and slew his wife with his two sonnes.

Lampridius.

Comodus then sent Holnius Pertinax into Brittain, and surnamed himselfe Brytanicus thereunto perswaded by flatterers, when the Brittaines were sore will affected toward him, that they would haue nominated some other Emperour against him, and namely Pertinax: but these tumults were appeased by the wisdom of Pertinax, to his great danger, for he was well nere slaine in tumult, and left among the dead, which insurp he after seuerally reuenged, and sued for his discharge, being after ward preferred to the Empire.

Ca. Iulianus.

Capitolinus.

Clodius Albinus was then sent thither by Comodus, who at the first so greatly esteemed of him, that he honored him with the title of a Caesar, which Clodius refused: but afterwards when a false rumor was dispersed, that Comodus was slaine, hee made an Oration to the legions of Brittain, impeaching the government of Emperours, and preferring the Senate, whereupon Comodus being sharped against him, sent Iunius Seuerus to rule here, and shortly after Comodus was slaine.

194

Pertinax then was chosen Emperour, and within iii. monethes was slaine through the perswasions of Didius Iulianus, who enjoyed the Empire two monethes, and the practise of Clodius Albinus, which then returned into Brittain, and (as it seemeth) recovered his former government.

194

Seuerus after the death of Pertinax was saluted Emperour: he immediately slew Didius Iulianus, and because he feared Clodius Albinus with his Brittain legions, he created him Caesar, and partaker of the Empire, and sent Heraclitus to gouerne this Isle: but after he had subdued Niger who also vsurped the Empire, he moved warre against Albinus, who passing hence into France with the Brittain armie, encountered with Seuerus neare Lions, and was there slaine. Henceforth Seuerus quietly enjoyed the Romane Empire, and made sharpe warres into the Gaillie partes of the world, with great glorie.

209

But returning to Rome, he undertook of a war raised in Brittain. Wherefore he passed thither with his two sonnes Bassianus and Geta: at his arrivall peace was offered, which he refused, and leaving his yonger sonne Geta to gouerne the prouince, (being the thither part of the Isle) he with Bassianus his eldest sonne entered into the North, & passed the further part of this Island with out any resistance: yet by ambushes, difficultie of the waie, and other inconueniencies,

iniences, he lost 50000. men, and then returned, enforced the enemies to conclude a league, and yeld some part of their Countrey.

At conclusion of which league, when hee and his sonne rid to treat with the Caledonians: Northern Brittaines, Bassianus his sonne drawing his sword in the sight of the enemy, was ready to haue slaine him, and had done it, had not some of the companie made an outcry: yet this fault was remitted.

After this league, the Brittaines of the North resorted to the Emperours Court, where Iulia Seuerus wife, objected to a woman of Brittain, the wife of Argentorix the Caledonian, that the Brittain women accompanied with men dishonestly: yea quoth the Brittain woman, wee satisfie the natural lust in better sort then you Romanes, for wee accompanie our selues openly with the best men, and you commit adulterie closely with the most vile persons. But after this league there was a generall reuolt of the Brittaines against the Romanes, which yet was pacified with great slaughter, and then hee built a wall of turfe, to inhibit the Northern Brittaines, from whence when hee returned, at the next lodging, a blacke Spyke that serued him, a notable scoffer, met him with a Crowne of Cypres: he moved with the colour of the man, and the Cypres (which was then used at all burials), as with signes of euill lucke, commanded the man to be sent awaie, wherewith he cried: Thou hast bene all in all, and hast vanquished all, and now of a Conqueror be thou a God. Then comming to the Citie of Poike (as is supposed,) he was by mistaking brought to the Temple of Bellona: blacke beafts also being ordained for sacrifice, folloved him home to his pallace: which things these did then account to be ominous.

Shortly after he departed out of this life at Poike, partly through sickness, and partly through griefe conceiued of his sonnes euill demeanour. At his last gaspe he uttered these wordes: I found the state troublesome euerie where, and leaue it quiet euen vnto the Brittaines.

Herodian witeth that in these warres of Seuerus against the North Brittaines, he found their Countrey full of watery Marshes: by those Marshes did the Brittaines swim and skirmish with their enemies, being couered with water by vnto the ghaull, not caring that men sawe the pynle parts of their naked bodies. Neither did they knowe the vse of apparell, but accustomed to compasse their bellies and necks onlie with yron, which they esteemed an ornament and token of riches, as other barbarous people supposed of Golde. They painted their bodies with diuers pictures and formes of beafts, and therefore wore no garment, least the painting should be hidden, being a nation very valiant, and warlike, grædie of slaughter, and content onely with a small target, a speare, and a chain hanging by their naked sides, ignorant of the vse of shirts of malle and helmets, for they reckned the same comberous vnto them, when they should swimme ouer the lakes, &c.

A grievous disease came vpon Seuerus, being sore appalled with age, so that he was constrained to keepe his chamber and send Antonius vnto the warres: but Antonie not regarding the business of Brittain, endeouored by all means he coude, to win the hearts of the souldiers vnto him, deprauing his brother,

to the intent they should onely aide him to the attaining of the Soueraignty. The long maladie of his father, caused him to perswade Physicians to rid the old man out of the world, untill that Seuerus, being consumed, ended his life, who was the most famous of all Emperours in warlike affaires: for none other had obtained so manie victories and conquests, either still against his aduersaries, or forraigne against the barbarous nations. Thus deceased hee, after hee had gouerned the Empire the space of thirtie yeres, leaving his sons for successors in the same: vnto whome he lefte also great abundance of riches, as none of his predecessours had before him done. When Antony had gotten the supreme authoritie, he put to death the Physicians, because they obeyed not his commandement in hastning his fathers death: and seldoe all his owne and his brothers bringers vp and instructors, for that they went about to reconcile them, leaving none alive, that was either of dignitie, or had reuerenced his father. The Captaines of the armie hee enticed, to perswade the souldiours to proclaim him onely Emperour: imagining dalle manifold mischiefs against his brother: but hee could not win the souldiours good willes. Wherefore Antony, hauing taken truce with the Egyptians, remoued towards his mother and brother. Their mother laboured to bring them to agreement, wherein also many prudent counsellours earnestly traueled, Antony thereby was induced, rather of force, then god will, to counterfaite loue. After which done, the two brethren gouerning the Empire with equall honour, launched out of Egyptaine, and sailed with the reliques of their father toward Rome. For when they had burned the bodie (as was the custome of the Romanes) they carried the ashes, intermixed with pleasant odours, in a Vase of Alabastrer to Rome, that it might be there interred amongst the monuments of other Princes. Themselves led thus their armie, as conquerours of Egyptaine, and passed ouer the Ocean vnto the next coast of France, and so hasted towards Rome. When they were entered into Rome, all the people crowned with Laurel, receiued, and the Senate welcommed them. For most roade the Emperours themselves, clothed in Imperiall purple, And next vnto them followed the Corsars bearing the bestell with Seuerus reliques. Which bestell, the people, after they had saluted the new Emperour, did reuerently worship. The Emperours and Consuls being thus accompanied with Princely pompe, carried the same into the Temple, where the diuine monuments of Marcus, and other Emperours are seene. After they had finished the solemne sacrifice, and according to the ancient vsage, celebrated the funerals ceremonies, both the brethren departed into the Imperiall pallace: which they deuided betwene them, closed vp all backe doores, and shutt out the seruants, and met together onely at the outer gates. They chose besides either of them vnto himselfe a hundrie garde, and neuer came together buttles it went sometime for a little while to be seene of the people. Nevertheless, first of all, they accomplished the due Funerals of their father. For the Romans accustome to consecrate with immortallitie, such Emperours, as at their death, leave either children, or successors in the Empire behinde them. And those which are endued with that honour, they canonize amongst the Gods. There is through

the Citie, a certaine dolefull lamentation, mixed with fearefull loie. And they use to interre the dead corpes verie sumptuously. But then, they haue an Image, made as like the dead Emperour, as may be. The same, within the porch of the Imperiall Pallace, they laie in a great and high bedde of fustie, covered ouer with cloth of golde. The same Image looketh verie pale, like a diseased patient. About the bed on either side, a great part of the daie, do certaine persons sit: that is to wit, on the left side, the Senate, clothed in blacke garments: and on the right side, many matrons. None of these are seene to weare any clothes, or chaines of gold, but being clad with thin white bestines, they shewe the countenance of mourners. And thus doe they continue the space of 7 daies: during the which, euery day the Emperours Physicians do repaite vnto the bedde, and, as though they had felt the patients pulses, declare that hee is more sicke then before. Finally, when it seemeth that hee is deceased, certaine of the most noble and worthy young men, of the orders of knights and Senators, doe take vp the bedde on their shoulders, and carrie it through the streete, called *Sacra via*, vnto the olde market place, where the Romane Magistrates are accustomed to render vp their offices. There on both sides, are certaine stages made with steps, vpon the which, on the one side, is a quire of voices, being noble mens sonnes; and on the other side are many beautiful women, singing hymnes and ballades, in praise of the dead Emperour, measured with diuers lamentable verses. When these are finished, the young men doe take vp the bed againe, and beare it out of the Citie, into the field called *Campus Martius*, in the broadest part thereof, there is created a Tombre foure square, with sides of equall height builded of great tymbre, like vnto a Tabernacle. The same within forth, is filled with dyie chippes and reedes: and on the outer side, it is hanged with Arras clothes of golde, and decked with Images of Iuorie, and sundrie painted pictures. Within it also, is an other lesse Towre, but like in forme, with doores and portalles opened. And ouer that, the third and fourth, with manie other raunces ascending continually, untill they reach vnto the highest, which is lesse then all the other. A man may compare this building vnto Towres, which are set in Heauens with fire on the toppes, to direct shippes which saile by night on the Seas, into their perked portes. The same are commonlie called *Phari*. Now when they haue put the bed in the second Tabernacle, they gather al kinds of spices and perfumes, with diuers odoriferous fruites, beeries and sugres, the which they throwe on heapes in the tabernacle. Neither is there anye Nation, Citie, or person, which excelleth in honour or dignitie, but at that time will to the uttermost of his power, most honourably celebrate the last funerallies of the Emperour.

When they haue couched a great heape of spices together, and stuffed the building therewith, all the Roman knights do ride about the Towre, with a stiff course and order to and fro: Chariots are also drawne about, wherein many do sit clothed in purple, representing the persons of al noble men being magistrates and captaines of Rome.

The ceremonies being thoroughly ended, the successor in the Empire, taketh

a hand of fire in his hand, and firely therein the tabernacle. After whome, all other that are present, do throwe fire likewise into the same. And immediately, all the building being filled with those fyre sticks and spices, beginneth to burne vehemently. Then out of the highest and least towre, as out of a high steeple, is let forth an Eagle, the which they beleue, doth beare the Emperours soule into heauen. And from thenceforth is that Emperour worshipped as the other gods.

From this time to the raigne of Dioclesian, for the space of 72. yeeres, there is nothing recorded in our histories hitherto published concerning Bytaine; but whereas it is manifest that the soueraintie of Bytaine rested in the Romaine Emperours all that space, I will set them here downe successiuelly.

After Seuerus, Balsianus surnamed Antonius Carracalla, murdering his brother Gera, succeeded in the Empire. He was cruell to his people: hee founded the Bath in Rome, which is called Antonians: he was out of measure giuen to sensualitye, and carnall concupiscence, in so much, that he espoused his mother in law Iuba. He was murdered by Marcialis when he had gouerned six yeeres.

218 Macrinus one yeere.

Antoninus Heliogabalus thre yeeres.

223 Alexander Seuerus, who was slaine by his souldiers here in Bytaine, in a battle called Sicila, but other say in France, thirtie yeeres.

236 Julius Maximus thre yeeres.

238 M. Antonius Gordianus one yeere.

239 Antonius Gordianus the sonne six yeeres.

245 Julius Philippus the first christian Emperour: siue yeeres.

250 Decius two yeeres.

252 Trebonianus Gallus, and Vibius Hostilianus two yeeres.

252 Julius Aemilianus foure moneths.

254 { Licinius Valerianus six.

{ Licinius Gallicinus fiftene.

At this time there arose in diuers countries shertie vsurpers, which are called, the thirtie tyrants, of the which Lollianus Posthumus, Victorianus Tetricus, as it is supposed, kept Bytaine from Gallicinus.

269 Flavius Claudius two.

Aurelianus siue.

276 Tacitus six moneths.

Florianus thre moneths.

277 Aurelius Probus siue yeeres. In which time Bonesus a Bytaine borne, but brought vp in Spaine, fearing lest he should be executed because the Germans had burnt certaine vessels in the Rhene, wherof he had charge, vsurped the Empire with Proculus at Colen, & would haue exempted from the Romanes, Bytaine, Spaine, & part of France, but being banquished by Probus in a long and sore battaile, he strangled himselfe. Some sedition was then raised in Bytaine and appeased by Victorinus, a Monke, by whose motion Probus had made him Regerit of Bytaine, which was cause of this trouble. This Probus permitted

Vopiscus:

the Bytains and others that they might haue wines and make wine. After he had raigned siue yeeres, he was slaine of the souldiours.

Carus was created Augustus, hee made Carinus and Numerianus his sonnes. Carus, to which Carinus he assigned Bytaine, Gaule, Illyricum, Italie, and Spaine, but Carus was slaine by lightning, and the other two within thre yeeres space lost their liues.

Dioclesian was then chosen Emperour, who adioined Maximianus into him in like gouernement.

Carauus was appointed to bee admirall of the Bytaine seas, which were sore troubled by the pirates of the Frankes and Saxons: but when he had oftentimes apprehended the pirates, and neither reserved the prizes, or was accountable for it, neither to the Emperours, nor their deputies, it was suspected, he of set purpose hee permitted those roners to haue recourse through those seas, to the end hee might rife them, and enrich himselfe. Maximianus therefore sent part of his armie to suppress him, in which were manie of the Thebane legion, who in this iourney were slaine by his commandement, and made Sparticus, because they professed Christ. Carauus understanding of the preparation made against him, passed out of Gaule into Bytaine, where bying the countrey to his obedience, he blurred the roabe of an Emperour: whereupon they which were sent to surprize him, returned to Maximianus, who then was incumbered with newe warre in Gaule. In the meane time Carauus built shippes in Bytaine, intercepted certaine companies of souldiours, assembled a great number of barbarous people with spoyle, with hope of whome he purposed to trouble the sea coasts of Gallia and Spaine. Holland also (then holden by certaine Frankes) revolted to Carauus.

Then purposed Maximianus the second time to make warre against Carauus, but by stormy weather, and want of Pilotes, he was enforced to defer his purpose. Shortly after, the two Emperours elected two Cafars, Valerius Maximus, and Constantius Chlorus, to which Constantius they committed the recovery of Bytaine. He immediately passing through Gaule hitherward, so donly surprisid Gesloriacum (now called Bullcin) which Carauus had manned, and so stopped the haueu, that it could stand Carauus in no steade. Then building shippes to passe ouer hither, hee first assailed iuchelle the Hollanders, which had revolted to Carauus, and then slaying for conuenient winde, hee hoouered a while on the sea coast, and in the meane time Carauus was traittously slaine by Alecdus his familiar friend.

Alecdus then vsurped the empire here in Bytaine, against whom Constantine with his former preparation made ready for warre, and launched out in haste, though the wind was contrarie: which when his souldiers understood, they set out also with side winds out of the same and other portes, in such foggy and misty weather, that they passed by Alecdus naue, then hoouering about the Ile of Wight, the one not seeing the other. The Romanes as soone as they landed burnt their shippes, determining eyther to winne, or lose their liues. Which when Alecdus understood, hee left the shore, and prepared himselfe for battaile with his mercenarie barbarous souldiours, in which he was

292

Alecdus slaine.

Timeards permitted to the Bytains. 282 Vopiscus.

name by Asclepiodatus Lord great master of the Emperours house. In this sight none of the Romanes perished, but here all the field was overspread with dead bodies of the enimies, among whom lay Alecctus himselfe without anie Emperfall ornaments, and scantlie knowne. Other Romanie souldiours also which had lost their company in the mist, arrived at London, nowe in the Citie a great number of barbarous people which escaped from the bat taile, and purposed to have sacked London. Then when Constantius came a land, the Brytaines with their wives & children flockt unto him, and submitted themselves to his rule, being nowe deliuered out of a long thraldome. This expedition of Constantius into Brytaine is ascribed by some to Maximianus, into which error, a false inscription of the Panegyriks hath led them.

Asclepiodatus hauing recovered Brytaine, as is before touched, he beleide the Citie of London with a strong siege (saith Geoffrey Monmouth) and ere it were long by knightlie force and violence, entred the Citie, and slew the Romanes Captain named Linius Gallus, nere unto a brooke there at that time running, into the which brooke he threw him, by reason whereof it is called in Brytish Nant Gallon, since in the Saxon tongue Gallus or Wallus brooke, and to this day the strate where sometime the brooke ran, is called Wallbrooke. The Romanie Historics speake nothing of this Gallus, but of Galerius, which was loined in the empire with Constantius, after the decease of Asclepiodatus, also of the Brytish king Coill, as that he shewed in place conuenient. True it is I grant, that a certaine brooke, dyined, I knowe not from what brads, but much encreased by the moishly groundes, without the Citie of London on the south side, passed through the same Citie southward to the riuer of Thames. And therefore of coming through and from the wall, and so through the Citie, was since called Wallbrooke: which brooke in olde time had in diuers places, Bridges ouer it, as appeareth by inquisition made in Anno. 1300. Elius Russell being apato; of London, William Iordane, and I. de Beuer then spauillers of those Bridges founde, who were bound to repaire them so oft as needed, and then was the same brooke vaulted ouer with byck, as it now remaineth.

301

Coill, after Asclepiodatus, (as saith Geoffrey) tooke on him the kingdome of Brytaine: Peter de Icham saith this Coill was Duke of Caltre Clote, or Gloucester. But to returne to the Romanes: who had now recovered Brytaine within ten yeres after Carausius first toke it. Dioclesian (saith Eusebius) persecuted the Church of God. In the thirtieth yere of his raigne, hee beganne to ouerthrowe the Churches downe to the grounde, yea, and the very foundations were digged vp, the holie and sacred Scriptures burned to ashes in the open market place, the Pastors of the Church were persecuted. When he had raigned together with Maximianus, who persecuted with him xx. yeres, he depozed himselfe voluntarily, and liued a priuate life. From that time to his end he pined away with diseases: but Maximian hanged himselfe.

Of this persecution, Bede hath thus: Dioclesian in the East, and Maximianus in the West, raised the tenth persecution, after Nero, against the Christians, he commaunded the Churches to be spoiled, the Christians to be tormented

ted and killed. Which persecution was both longer, and also crueller then all the other: for whole tenne yeres together it continued in burning the Churches, in banishing the innocents, in murdering the Martyres, and neuer ceased. Besides, among other places, it made Brytaine to bee honoured with the glory of manie holie Martyres, which constantly stode and dyed in the confession of their faith. Among other suffered S. Albane, of whose Fortunatus Poets in the booke he wrote in the praise of Virginitie, speaking of the Martyres, which from all the coasts of the world came unto God, saith:

The Martyrdom of Alban and other in Brytaine.

*Albanus egregium fecunda Britannia proferit.*

The fertile land of barfull Brytannie

Bringeth forth Alban a martyre right worthy.

S. Alban for professing Christ, being led from the Citie of Verolanium, unto Holmehurst, since called Derswold wood, where now the Towne of S. Albans is builded, suffered martirdome in the yere of Christ 297. who is specified to be the first Martyr of Brytaine: and thosly after to the number of one thousand Christians were martyred at Lichfield, where Amphabele Minister of Alban was taken, brought to Verolanium, and there tormented, by sitting by his belly, whipping him about a stake, winding his bowelles out of his body, and stoning him to death. The life and martyrdome of these two, to wit, of Alban and Amphabele was recorded and written in Latine at large, by one, who wrote himselfe by none other name, then, of all wretches the simplest man: since by Mathew Paris, a sponke of S. Albane, turned out of Latine prose into French verse, both which Bookes I haue seene, and was since translated out of the Latine and French, into English metre by Iohn Lydgate sponke of Burie.

Iohn Capgrave.

Mathew Paris.

Iohn Lydgate.

305.

Constantine beganne his Empire with Galerius, the Empire was diuided betwene them: so that Constantius shoulde possesse Africa, Italie, France and Brytaine: Galerius shoulde haue Illyria, Asia, and the East parts: which done, they substituted under them two Cæsars. Constantius holding himselfe content with the dignitie of Augustus, refused to susteine the trouble which he shoulde haue endured through the administration of the affaires of Italy and Asike: he sought by all meanes howe hee might enrich the people of the Empire. He abolished the superstition of the Gentiles in his dominions, so that afterward Brytaine felt no persecutions. The yere following he passed out of France thither against the Vices, at which time his sonne Constantine, who then serued Galerius, perceiuing his destruction to be compassed, posted to his father in all haste, houghing and killing all the post hoyses, which way heere he passed, that he might not be pursued, and came to his father the very houre that he went a boorde to come into Brytaine: but Constantius as soone as hee came to Wyke, was ainslie sickened, and perceiuing his day to draw neere, when he was asked to whom he would leaue the Empire, answered, to Constantine, and thosly after departed.

This Constantine begot Constantine on Helena his wyf, daughter of Dripodas in Bythinia, as he was passing through Countrey, being one of the Romanie legates, sent into East parts: Constantine was created Emperour in France.

Constantine.

290

Wallbrooke  
whereof it  
saies that name

Asclepius  
Christians in  
Brytaine per-  
secuted, Churches  
overthrowne, and  
the Scriptures  
burned.

Bede.

Constantine surnamed the Great, sonne of Constantius boyme in Bithynia by Helena, the Emperour (saith William of Malmebury) first consecrated, as is aforesaid: his father being now dead, did with so great sorrow, and shedding of teares solemnize his battall, that the souldiers hoping he would resemble his father, saluted him Emperour at Poreike against his will: but at Rome Maxentius the sonne of Maximianus Hercules, is chosen of the Christian souldiers, not to gouerne the Empire, but rather to practise tyrannie.

Maximianus being chiefe Emperour, after he had crowned Emperour Licinius, (by originall a Dane, his ould fellow souldier and familiar friend) departed himselfe rather a tyrant then an Emperour, abusing the spouses of noble personages, slaying manie with the sword, and putting in vye other such like practises.

Constantine the Emperour, being certified hereof, deuided with himselfe which waies possible he might ridde the Romanes from vnder this grieuous yoke of seruitude, and dispatch the tyrant out of this life: Deliberating thus with himselfe, he foresaw also what God he were best to call vpon for aide to wage battaile with the aduersarie. He remembred how that Dioclesian, which wholy dedicated himselfe vnto the seruice of the heathenish Gods, preuailed nothing thereby: also he perswaded himselfe for certaine, by his father Constantius, who renounced the Idolatrie of the Gentiles led a more fortunate life, musing thus doubtfully with himselfe, and taking his iourney with his souldiers, he beheld whither, a certaine vision appeared vnto him, as it was strange to behold, so in deepe incredible to be spoken of. About none, the daie somewhat declining, he saw in the skie, a lightsome Pillar in forme of a Crosse, where in these wordes were ingrauen: In this ouercome. The which vision so amazed the Emperour, that he mistrusting his owne sight, demanded of them that were present, whether they perceiued the vision: which when all with one consent had affirmed, the wauering mind of the Emperour was settled, with this beuine and wonderfull sight. The night following in his sleepe, hee saw Christ, which saith thus vnto him: I frame vnto thy selfe the forme of a Crosse after the example of the signe which appeared vnto thee, and beare the same against the enemies, as a fit banner or token of victorie: He being fully perswaded with this oracle, commandeth the victorious signe of the Crosse (which as yet is reserved in the pallace of the Emperour) to be made, and therewith proceedeth forwards with great courage, and ioyning with the enemy, fight ouer against Rome, about the bylge commonlie called Bulbia, hee got the victorie, for Maxentius being dyed in the river died: it was the seauenth yere of his raigne, when he ouercame Maxentius. After these thinges, when as Licinius his fellow Emperour, and his brother in lawe, hauing married his sister Constantia, led his life in the East: Constantine enioying ample benesites receiued at the handes of God, shewed himselfe gratefull in offering of thanks and praises vnto the author of all goodnes, his practises were these. To deliuer the Christians from persecution: to call againe perilled vnto their native stile: to set at libertie such as were in prison: to reuoe againe the goods of the confiscated, to build againe the Churches that were ouerthrowne: all which

The godly studie and practises of Constantine.

which thinges he accomplished with great promptnesse of minde. But Licinius persecuting the Christians, Constantine waged battaile against him, meeting oft by Sea and land, in the end, at Chisopolis a Citie of Bithynia, to witte at the haue of Chalcedon, Licinius was overcome, and yeldeth himselfe to Constantine.

After hee had repelled the ciuill warres, vanquished the Gothes in manie places, and woon great memorie among the Barbarians, he placed the Bypatines that had done him so good seruice, in a part of France towards the weste of the Ocean, hee applied himselfe wholy to the studie of the liberall Artes. He summoned the Sicene Councell, which was helde at Alica, a Citie of Bithynia, for the debating of the controuersie about the feast of Easter, and the rotting out of the heresie of Arius. Which Councell being ended, he liued in great tranquillitie and turned himselfe wholy to the building of Churches, as well in other Citie as in that Citie which he called after his owne name, Constantinople. In this Citie he created from the foundation two Churches calling the one of Peace, the other of the Apostles.

Helena the Emperours mother (which of the village Drepane made a Citie, the which afterwards the Emperour called Helenopolis) toke her iourne to Jerusalem, which when she found lying waste in a heape of stones, she searched diligently for the Sepulture of Christ, and at length she found it, but with great difficultie: for as they which embraced the faith of Christ, highly esteemed of that Sepulchre and monument after his passion: so such as abhorred Christian Religion, heaped in that place much earth, and raised great hillocks, and builded there the Temple of Venus, and set by her Idoll. But when the Emperours mother was made priuie therunto, she threw downe the Idoll: caused the great heape of earth to be hurled downe, where vnder theee found thre Crosse in the grane, one vpon the which Christ suffered: other two, where on the two theenes ended their liues, together with the table of Pilate, where in he had written that Christ was crucified king of the Iewes: the Emperours mother builded ouer the Sepulchre a gorgeous Church, calling it New Jerusalem, right ouer against that olde and waste Jerusalem. She builded a second Church nothing inferiour to the first, at Jerusalem in the hollo rocke, where Christ was boyme. Also the third, vpon the mount, where Christ ascended vnto the Father, manie things he gaue to Churches, and to poore people, the liued goodlie and religiously, and departed this life being fourescore yeres olde: her bodie was buried at Constantinople. Symon of Durham writeth, that thre builded walles about the Citie of London, and the Citie of Colchester.

W. Malmebury. Bypatines placed in France.

Councell at Alica.

Constantinople builded.

Socrates.

Helena mother to Constantine.

New Jerusalem builded.

About this time Octavius, whome Constantine had left gouernour in Bypatine, rebelled against whome Constantine sent Traherne with a legion of Romans, who (after diuers conflices) was slaine: Gracianus surnamed Funarius was at that time gouernour of the Roman legion in Bypatine.

Constantine at the age of 65. yeres died, and was buried at Constantinople, he left behinde him thre sonnes, to wit Constantinus, Constance, and Constantius, to succede him in the Empire.

Constantinus.

337 Constantinus beganne his Empire and raigne over Byptaine: with him his father Constantine had appointed by his last will, that his two brethren Constant and Constantius should participate and haue their portion of the Empire, but not long after, when Constantius attempted warre against his brother at Aquileia, and demanded himselfe vnadvisedly therein, he was slaine, and then was the Empire reduced under the gouernment of the two brethren onlie.

340 Constant then ruled Byptaine, which he administered with great iustice: but after, when he failed of his health, he associated vnto him in stead of friends, euill disposed persons to assist him, through whose euill counsell he declined to horrible vices, by meane whereof, wearing scant tolerable of the inhabitants of the provinces, he was slaine by Magnentius, who usurped the Empire in France, Spaine and Byptaine.

353 Constantius then had the regiment of Byptaine, who sent thither a Spaniard called Paul, a doctor by profession, to bring out certaine men of war which had conspired with Magnentius: but he vpon false promises greediously molested the guiltlesse, fettering and manacling whome he pleased. Where vpon Martinus then lieutenant in Byptaine, being moued with compassion, desired him to forbeare the harmlesse: but he was so rigorous, that he also charged Martinus himselfe of conspiracie with Magnentius, and was earnest to bring him before the Emperour: whereupon Martinus drawing his sword, smote at him, and because he could not slay him, he sodainly slewe himselfe, and this Paul embryued with blood, haled a great company (linked in chaines) to the Emperours presence, which were either banished, executed, or attainted.

Constantius after this appointed Iulianus to gouerne Gaule, at which time great spoile was made in Byptaine by the Scottes and Pictes, wherefore Iulianus busied with warre against the Almaines, sent Lucinius thither with an army, in whose absence Iulianus usurped the Empire: whereof when Constantius heard, he returned from the war (against the Parthians) against Iulianus, and died in the way.

362 Iulianus (called the Apostata) began his raigne over Byptaine and the Empire, a man sene passing wel in the Liberal Sciences, but an earnest aduocacie of Christian religion: he banished Palladius a great and honorable person into Byptaine vpon a supposition: he sent Alipius who had bene a lieutenant of Byptaine to repaire Jerusalem, but terrible flashes of fire (smaing out of the earth, when they laide the foundations, enforced them to leaue their purpose. This Iulian with great preparations made warre vpon the Parthians, he spyled Asiria, and returning from thence a Conquerour, he was slaine by his enemies, as he pleased vnadvisedly into the battels. After him succeeded in the Empire Iouinian, and held it nine moneths.

365 Valentinian was then chosen Emperour by the souldiours, The Pictes, Scots, Attacotes, and Saxons, greediously molested the Byptaiues. Ne Aradius who had the charge of the sea coast here, was slaine by them, and Buchobandes a great captaine was enclosed by them: wherefore after diuers captaines

taines Theodosius was sent thither, who discomfiting the enemy, and recovering the spoile, entred triumphantlie into London, and the next yeres went into the north, suppressed the enemies, recovered the province, and repaired Cities & fortresses: he oppressed Valentinian an Hungarian, who being banished thither, practised new tumultes, deliuering him to Dulcius to be executed, without any enquire of his confederates, because hee would not renewe the tumulte: which done he returned to Rome. Shortly after Valentinian sent thither Praemarius (which he before had obtained King of the Boccenobants in Germany) to be apparthall of the Almaines which serued in Byptaine. And not long after Valentinian died.

Gratian with his brother Valentinian was then created Emperour. Hee to the intent he might better repaire the decayed state of the Empire, made Theodosius a copartner with him in it.

Maximus a valiant and worthy man, was shortly after forced here in Byptaine to take the Empire vpon him, who passed into France, and immediately at the German legions and Roman souldiours recruited vnto him from Gratian, so that he being destitute of men of warre, fled to Lions, where he was slaine by treason: for Maximus gaue out that Gratians wife was coming to her husband, which Gratian entreated louing his wife, lightly credited, and therefore accompanied with a few, went forth to meete her: but in the coach where he supposed to haue founde his wife, was Andragacius a desperate man, who leaping out of the coach killed Gratian.

Then Maximus created his sonne Victor a Caesar, and vsed some crueltie against Gratians Captaines. Valentinian being herewith terrified, sent Ambrose vnto him to treat a peace, which he accepted, and Theodosius permitted him to vse the title of Augustus. Then he settled himselfe at Trier in Germany, empowered the Countreies round about him, executed certain heceties called Willianis, and then entred into Italy, breaking the peace, & thought to haue intercepted Valentinian, but he with his mother fled to Theodosius, and perswaded him to take reuenge of Maximus. In the meane time Maximus came to Aquileia, all Italic and Africa submitted themselves vnto him, when suddenly Theodosius coming from Constantinople, moued warre against him, corrupted his souldiours with byzbes, and after one or two skirmishes enforced Maximus to flee to Aquileia, where his owne souldiours deliuered him to Theodosius, by whose commandement he was shortly after beheaded. Andragacius also who kept the seas, vnderstanding this, dyed himselfe, and Victor the sonne of Maximus was slaine in France by Arbogustes. The Byptaiues which serued him returned into France, and soiled them in the country there, which is now called Byptaine, so was Byptaine recovered againe to the Roman Empire.

So Virgilia with the 11000. virgins, which were sent into Byptaine to bee married to Canon and his knights, were slaine and martired of the barbarous people being on the sea. But, as some write, by Aelia King of the Huns.

Honorius the sonne of Theodosius succeeded in the Empire. In whose time Pelagius a Byptaine boyme, disparckled the denome of his faithlesse doctrine.

Marinus.

Amianus.  
Marcellinus.

Dulcius

375

383

Siegbertus

Byptaine in  
France.The 11000  
virgins.

395

Pelagius  
here.

doctrine

doctrine berle farre abroad, holding, that a man might line well without the helpe of the grace of God: Using herein the aide of Iulianus of Campania, who was intemperatly stirred with the losse of his bishopricke, to whom S. Austen and other fathers also haue answered in most ample maner, but yet they would not be amended thereby, but being conuicted of their fallshode, they rather would encrease it by defending and maintaining it, then amende it by returning to the truth.

This time Marcus was chosen Emperour by the souldiers in Brytaine, fearing the inuasion of the Vandales, but immediatly they slew him, and elected Gratianus, whom also they murdered within foure moneths.

Then Constantine, a souldier of base estate, onely upon confidence of his name, was elected here Emperour, who passing hence into France, with all the youth of Brytain, got al the men of warre there to take part with him. Honorius sent therefore Sarnus to withstand him, who in a foughten field slew Iulianian Constantines Captaine, and so pursued Constantine, that he made him take Valencia, wherein he sharply besieged him, untill Gerontius with his Brytaines, and Edebrichus with the Franks raised the siege.

Then Constantine fortified the Alpes and Rhene with garrisons, sent Constantians his sonne (whom of a sponke hee had made a Caesar) with a great armie into Spaine, where he toke, and afterward slew certaine noble personages allied to Honorius, and returning to his father, left Gerontius to governe Spaine. Constantine himselfe then craued pardon of Honorius for usurping the Empire, saying, that he did it by compulsion, which when Honorius heard, he so well liked of him, that he sent an Imperiall robe vnto him.

In these troubles Brytaine was greatly endangered by Picts and Scots, and sued to Honorius for succour, but he sending them onely Letters, willed them to looke to their owne state. Shortly after Constant, that was sponke, was slaine by Gerontius his owne Captaine, at Menna in France: and Constantine himselfe being besieged at Arles by Honorius souldiours, entered in to help ouers, and fled into the Church, thinking thereby to saue himselfe, but was drawen out from thence, and slaine. Gerontius who had traperously killed his master, was beset round about with Spaniards in his lodging, where fore he first slew Allanus his tried friend, then Nunichia his wife, and lastly himselfe, and now Honorius recovered Brytaine. In his time (saith Bede) Rome was destroyed of the Gothes, the 1164. yere after it was builded: after which time the Romans left off to rule in Brytain, almost 470. yeres after that Iulius Caesar first entred the said Ile. The Romanes dwelt within the trench, which as we haue saide, Securus diuise ouerthwart the Island at the south part, which thing may appeare by the cities, temples, bridges, and paved streets to this day remaining, notwithstanding they had in possession, & under their dominion the farther parts of Brytaine, and also the Islands which are about Brytaine. By means (as is aforesaid) the Romans had vsed to transport with them ouer in to France the flower of al the youth of Brytaine, to serue them in their forraigne wars, these men of war were consumed, and was not now able to defend themselves against the inuasions of their enemies: whereupon many yeres together

they

they liued vnder the opprellion of two most cruell nations, the Scots & Picts: which were of the circuite of Brytaine, but diuided from the land of Brytaine by two armes of the sea, running betwixt them, of the which one from the east sea, the other from the west, runneth in far and wide into the land, though they may one crake to the other. In the middle of the east crake, there is a city builded called Guidi. Above the west crake toward the right hand standeth a citie called Alcluth, which in their language is as much to say, as the rocke Clutch, for it standeth by a cloud of the same name. The Brytaines then being thus assailed by six said nations, sent their embassadors with letters vnto Rome, with lamentable supplications, requirring of them aide and succour, promising their continuall fealty, so that they would rescue them against the opprellion of their enemies: whereupon there was sent vnto them a legion of armed souldiours from Rome, which comming into the Island, and encountering with the enemies, overthrew a great number of them, & drave the rest out of the frontiers of the countrey, and so setting them at libertie, and free from the miserie with which they were before so grieuously overcharged, counselled them to make a wall betwene the two seas, which might be of force to keepe out their euill neighbours: and that done, they returned home with great triumph. Now the Brytaines building the wall which they were bid to make, not of stone, as they were willed, but of turfe, as hauing none among them, that had skill therein, made it so slender, that it serued them to little purpose. This wall they made betwene the two armes or crakes of the sea, many miles long, that where the fence of the water lacked, there by the helpe of the trench they might keep their countrey from the breaking in of their enemies, of which piece of worke, the remaneth euen vnto this day most assured tokens yet to be seene. This trench beginneth about two miles from the monastery of Abercuring, in a place which in the Picts language is called Penuahil, and in English is called Panwell, and running out west ward, is ended by the city Alcluth. But the former enemies, when they had once perceived that the Roman legion was returned home againe, forthwith being set on land by boats, inuaded the borders, overcame the countrey, and as it were brake downe all before them: whereupon Embassadors be sent againe to Rome, beseeching them they would not suffer their miserable Countrey to be bitterly destroyed. Againe, there is sent an other legion, which comming vpon a sodain, made a great slaughter of the enemies, & chased them ouer into the their owne countrey. Then the Romanes tolde the Brytaines, that it was not their ease to take any more such trauellous iournies for their defence, and therefore bade them to practise their armour themselves, and to learne to withstand their enemies.

They builded up a wall of hard stone from sea to sea, right betwene the two Cities, which there were made to keepe out the enemy, in the selfe same place where Securus before had cast his trench, with publicke and private charges: the Brytaines also putting to their helping hands, they then builded it eight fote broad, and twelue fote high, right as it were by a line, from east to west, as it doth to this day appeare, which being perfected, they glae the people straight warning to looke well to themselves, they teach them to handle their weapons,

D 2.

and

Penuahil.

and in frant them in warlike feates. Also by the sea side southward, where their ships lay at harbor, least their enemies should land thereabouts, they made by bulwarks along, one somewhat distant from another: and this done, bid them farewell, as minded no more to returne. At this time almost all the treasure of Brytaine was hid vnder ground, or transported ouer into France.

As some as they were gone, the Scots and Pias heauing intelligence that they had made promise they would come no more, they taking heart of grace, certaine againe to their businesse: and first, all that was without the wall, they toke for their owne. After that, they giue assault vnto the wall, where the Brytaines were with grables pulled downe, and otherwise so assaulted, that they leaving both the Cities and the wall also, were dispersed and put to flight, the enemies following, killed and slayed more cruellie then euer they did before, whereupon being diuinen out of their owne houses, and possessions, they fall a robbing and spoiling one the other of them, so farre forth, that all the whole country was brought to that crigent, that they had none other sustenance, but that they got by hunting and killing of wilde beastes.

**T**heodosius the younger, sonne of Arcadius, succeeded his uncle Honorius, and appointed Valentinianus his cousin, Emperour in the West partes.

At this time, Tamotheus here in Brytaine, vnder a pretence of religion, and great continence, drew many into a dangerous heresie.

Chrysanthus the son of bishop Marrian, a Consul of Italy was made viceroy and Lord deputy of Brytaine: he was afterwarde made Bishop of Constantinople.

Now the pope remnant of the Brytaines directed letters to Actius, where of this was the beginning: To Actius thrise Consul, the mourning of the Brytaines. In the procelle of which Epistle, they thus set forth their pittifull estate. The barbarous enemy drieth vs vpon the sea: the sea againe vpon the enemy: betweene these twaine riseth two maner of deaths, either we are killed or drowned. And yet for all their suite, they coulde obtaine no aide of him, as he which had then both his hands full of busines and battaile at home with Bleda and Arila, Kings of the Hunnes.

The Pelagian heresie being brought in by Agricola, the sonne of Seuerianus a Pelagian bishop, about this time did soze corrupt the faith of the Brytaines, but the Brytaines being neither willing to receiue their lewd doctrine, as blasphemous against the grace of God, neither able to refute their wily and wicked persuasions, they desired this wholsome counsell, to seeke for aide of the Bishops of France, against these the spiritual enemies. And they calling a common counsell, consulted among themselves, whom of the all it were best to send to help their neighbors faith. By the assent of them all there was chosen two worthy prelates, Germanus Alisiodorensis, and Lupus Bishop of the Citie Trecaids, which should passe ouer into Brytaine to confirme them in the faith, which with ready obedience accepting the commendement of the synode, toke shipping thitherward, and had prosperous winde, which set them in a shore in place where they themselves desired. A higher great multitude of people be-

Pelagian  
heresie.

ing assembled, receiued the Bishops of God, and the worde of God was preached by them, not onely in their Churches, but also in the open streets, and in the Countrey, in such sort, that in all places both the sound and faithfull were confirmed, and they that before swarued out of the right faith, were amended. The Anchors and head professors of this hereticall error, lay lurking all this while, and much spited to see the people daily to fall from them. After long abasement bled, they take vpon them to trie the matter by open disputation, which being agreed vpon, they come forth richly appointed, gorgeously apparelled, accompanied with a number of flattering fauourers. The people were present both to see and iudge the matter. The parties were farre unlike of condition: on the one side was the faith, on the other, mans presumption: on the one side, mekenesse, on the other side, pride: on the one side, Pelagius, on the other, Chyist. First of all Germanus and Lupus gaue their aduersaries leaue to speake, which vainely occupied both the tyme and eares of the people with naked wordes. But after the reuerend Bishoppes polished out their wordes confirmed with Scriptures out of the Gospelles and Apostles. Thus the banishe of heretikes was consulted, and falsehood confuted, so that at euery obligation, they were forced to confesse their error, not being able to answer them: but after their departur, the heresie beganne againe to reuolue. Wherefore Germanus returned into Brytaine with Seuerus, banished the heretikes, and resto:ed the faith.

Pelagians be-  
lieue conuict.

The end of the Romans government in Brytaine.

Brytaines and Saxons.



The Brytaines continued in doubtfull war with the Scots and Pias, sometime bearing away the victorie, and sometime losing it to the enemy. But considering the ambitious minds of men, and fearing least some should stirpe the kingdome at home, while they were detained with warres abroad, thought god to appoint ouer them some king: and so with one consent they eleaced Vortiger.

**V**ortiger reigned in Brytaine, in whose time hunger more preuailling against the Brytaines, drew many of them to yield themselves vnto the hands of their enemies. Other there were which could neuer be brought there vnto, but from the hilles and bakes where they lurked, many times invaded their enemies, as trusting so much the more in the helpe of God, how much the lesse hope they had of aide of men, and by such means, first of all both resisted and ouerthrew them, which many yeeres together had liued by the spoile of the Countrey, whereby for the time they drew homeward with shame enough, intending not long after to returne.

The Pides then, and long time after, kept themselves quiet at home, save onely they would now and then make invasions into the lande, and draw away booties of cattell. After that they drew to a quietnesse, there ensued



such plenty of graine as neuer was seene the like before, as farre as any man could remember, whereof the people grew to louse and wanton living, whereof al manner of lewennesse followed, specially crueltie, hate of truth, and loue of lying, insomuch, that if any were gentler and more giuen to truth then other, the other would worke him all the hurt and spite they could. This did not onely the Seculars, but also the Clergie, and the heads thereof, giuing the miselues ouer to drunkenness, pisse, contention, enuie, and such other, casting from them the yoke of Christ.

In the nicene season, a bitter plague befell among them for their corrupt living, consuming in short time such a multitude of people, that the quicke were not sufficient to burie the dead: and yet for all that, the remnant remained so hardened in sinne, that neither their friendes death, nor feare of their owne, could cure the murreine of their soules, which daily perished through their sinnefull living: whereby a great stroke of Gods bringance ensued vpon the whole sinnefull nation: for being now infested againe with their old neighbours the Scottes and Pides, they deuised with themselves what was best to doe, and where they might seeke refuge to withstand and repell the feare of the Northerne nation: and they agreed all with their king Vortiger, to demand aide of the Saxons beyond the Seas, which thing doubtlesse (saith Bede) was done by Gods owne appointment, that the people might be thereby plagued, as by the ende it manifestly appeared.

W. Malmes.

The people of the English or Saxons, being sent for of the said king into Brytaine, landed here in three long ships, and by the kings commandement, were appointed to abide in the east part of the land. And the Ile of Ebanet was giuen to them, they to defend their countrey like friends: but indeed, as it prooued after ward, minding to destroy the Countrey as enemies. Wherefore encountering with the Northerne enemy, the Saxons had the better, wherof they sending word home into their Countrey, as also of the fruitfullnesse of the land, the Saxons sent over a great naup and number of men before appointed for the warres, which being now ioued with the former band, became to a stronger army then all the poluer of the Brytaines was able to overcome. Those by the Brytaines were allowed a place to dwell among them, with that condition, that they should warre for them against their enemies, for wages of the Brytaines.

These Saxons, English, and Iuites that came from beyonde the Seas, were three of the strongest Nations in Germanie. Of the Iuites came the people of Kent, and the Ile of Wight, and also they in the prouince of West Saxons are called Iuites right ouer against the Ile of Wight. Of the Saxons (that is, of the Region now called olde Saxons) descended the East Saxons, the South Saxons, and the West Saxons. Of the English descended the East English, the Mercies, and the Northumbers. The chiefe Captaines of the Saxons are saide to be two brethren, Hengist and Horsa. This Hengist (saith Geoffrey Monmouth) on a time required of King Vortiger, so much ground as might be compassed with a thong of a bulles skine, there upon to build a place to rest in, which the king granted, where Hengist built a

Castell,

Castell, which hee called Thong Castell, and therein seasted King Vortiger with great royalty, and when night was come that the king should go to rest, Rowen the daughter of Hengist by commandement of her father, came with a cuppe of gold in her hand, and kneeling before the king, said to him, Wastasse, and he againe, by counsell of an interpreter, answered, Dwinke haile: at which time King Vortiger seeing the beauty of this Rowen, hee was enamoured, and desired to haue her to wife, which was graunted by her father on condition, the king should giue him al the countrey of Kent, for him and his people to dwell in, which the king willingly, but vnadvisedly graunted, and espoused the Damocell.

Thong Castell in Kent, is now a small village, little more then halfe a mile from Sidingborne. The ditch, and the keepe hill of Thong Castell appears in a little wood a two slight thome by south from Thong Church. Thong is a mile from the mouth of Apelton creeke, and about halfe a mile from Apelton towne, if passage were through the apparities the next way.

For the loue that Vortiger bare to Rowen the Saxon, he was diuorced from his lawfull wife, by whom he had three sonnes, for which doede, welnere all the Brytaines for to keepe him.

Vodine Archbishop of London, a man of singular deuotion and good life, by the abuse of Vortimer, went to Vortiger, and saide to him, that hee had not done as a chistian Prince, in departing from his lawfull wife, and taking another woman, whose father was an enemy to the chistian faith, and also went about to conquer the Crowne of Brytaine. Then saide Vortiger, I was not wise when I brought the Saxons to help me against mine enemies, but I was more vnwise, when I was taken with the inordinate lust of the daughter of Hengist, I knowe that mine Emptire will be terrible, except I repent me with speede and turne to God.

Hengist hearing Vortiger make this lamentation, blamed him, for that hee beleued the persuasions of a prophane man, of fained life (as he termed him) and forthwith seue the good Archbishop Vodine, and many other priestes, and religious persons. All the Churches in Kent were polluted with blood, the Saxons, with other religious persons, were by force put from their houses and goods, and constrained to pollution of their bodies.

The Brytaines considering the dallie repaire of the Saxons into this Realme, shewed to their king the leopord that might the reof ensue, and aduertised him of the danger, but all was in vaine: for Vortiger, by reason of his wife, bare such fauour to the Saxons, that he would in no wise heare the counsell of his subjects, wherefore, they with one minde depriued him of his royall dignitie, then he had reigned sixe yeres, and ordained to be their king Vortimer his eldest sonne.

Vortimer pursued the Saxons, and by his martiall knightthode fought against them foure battelles, besides diuers skirmishes, untill at length he was poisoned by the means of Rowen his stepmother, after he had reigned sixe yeres. The first battell Hengist and Horsa, who were (saith Bede) the sonnes of Wiglife, whose father was Vecta, whose father was Woden, fought

*Ælfthorpe, or  
Ælfthorpe in  
Kent.*

*Worsted in  
Kent.*

*Catigern  
daine.*

with Vortimer, and his brother Catigern in a place called Ælfthorpe, now Ælfthorpe in Kent; and notwithstanding that Horfe was slain in this battell, yet Hengist bare away the victory. Bede saith that Horfe was buried in east Kent, where his tombe or monument, bearing his name was in his time to be seene. And true it is, that in Kent is a place, to this daie called Worsted, about two miles from Ælfthorpe, in the parish of Chatham, where the people of that countrey say the said Horfe was slaine. There was also slaine in the same battell at Ælfthorpe Catigern brother to Vortimer, whose monument remaineth till this day, on a great plain heath in the parish of Ælfthorpe, & is now corruptly called Cits cotthons, for Catigernes. (I haue my selfe in companie of diuers twoo-shipfall and learned Gentlemen behelde it in Anno 1590.) and is of foure flat stones, one of them standing byright in the middle of two other, inclosing the edge sides of the first, and the fourth laid flat aloft the other three: and is of such height, that men may stand on either side the middle stone in time of storme or tempest, safe from wind and rain, being defended with the breadth of the stones, as hauing one at their backs, one on either side, and the fourth ouer their heades. And about one coites cast from this monument lieth an other great stone, much part thereof in the ground, as fallen downe where the same had bene fixed.

*Craford in  
Kent.*

The second battell Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place called Craanford, or Craford in Kent, of the Brytaines many perished by the sword, the rest of them abandoned Kent altogether, and with great feare fled to London.

*Weymouth*

The thirde battell, Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place called Weymouths state, that is to saie, the state of Weymouth, where they killed Dukes or Captaines of the Brytaines, with manie other, whereas on the partie of the Saxons there was one onelie man slaine, whose name was Weped.

The fourth battell was fought by Hengist and Eske against the Brytaines, nere to a place called Colmose, the which was soe fought by the Saxons, and long continued with great danger to the Brytaines, because that the said place inclosed a part of their hoste so strongly, that the Brytaines coulde not approach to them, being beaten off with the enemies shotte, albeit in the ende, the Saxons were put to flight, and manie of them drowned in the same place.

460

*W. Malmes.*

*The Barons of  
the Brytaines  
dineat a banquet.  
The king taken  
prisoner.*

Vortiger obtained againe the kingdome, & shortly after Hengist, which was chased into the Ile of Thanet, entred the land with a number of Saxons, but when he heard of the great assembly the Britains had made against him, he treated for peace, which in fine was concluded. Shortly after Hengist (by a guile which before he had deuised) by his sonne in law, and three hundred of his nobles unto a feast or banquet, where when he had overlaid his guesstes with oormuch wine, he fell to quarrelling, and with taunting talke, pinched euery one of them, and straight fell to fighting, where through the Brytaines were slaine euery one. The king was taken prisoner, and forced to giue for his ran- some, Kent, Suffry, Suffolke, and Northfolke. This manner of the Bry-  
taines

taines was on the plaine of Salisbury. Then Hengist begarne his dominion ouer Kent, & Vortiger fled into Wales, and builded there a Castell, of which building, and long let of the same, and of his Prophet Merlin, Geoffrey Monm. Bede. and others speake many things. Great companies of the Saxons daily flocked into this Island, and grew so strong, that the people of the countrey which sent for them, were in great feare of their puissance, for those Saxons had taken league with the Pias, & began to turne thir force vpo the Brytaines: and to be short, the fire once kindled in the Lunds of the Pagans there, took lust reuenge of the wickednes of the people, raging first vpo the cities and countrey next ad-joining, after from the east sea to the west, ouerwhelming all the whole Island without resistance: both publike and priuate houses were ouerthrowne to the ground: the priests were slaine standing at the altar: the bishops with their flock were murdered, without respect of their dignitie, nor there was any that would bury the slaine: some of the miserable leauings being taken in the hills, were there killed: other being serued with hunger, were faine to creepe out of their caues, & buy their vidual at their enemies hands, with sale of their libertie for ever, if yet they were not killed out of had: other fled ouer the seas with an heavy hart: other tarrying still in their countrey in feare of death, and lacke of food, liued full miserably in the mountaines, woods, and cliffes. Aurelius Ambrosius, and Vher (brother of Constantine that was before slaine in France) landed with a nauie of ships at Totnes, made warre vpon Vortiger, and burned him in his castell in Wales, when he had secondly reigned sixe yeeres.

Aurelius Ambrosius was ordained king of Brytaine, in whose time the Brytaines by little and little began to take strength and courage vnto them, coming out of their caues in which they lurked before, and with one consent, calling for heauenly helpe, that they might not for euer be bitterly destroyed, they hauing for their captaine and leader, the foresaid Ambrosius Aurelius, assembled themselves together, and prouoking the vikars to fight, through Gods assistance atchieued the victorie, and from that day forward, were the men of the countrey. Now the enemy had the victorie, untill the yeere that Vastie was besieged, where they gaue their enemies a great overthrow, which was about the foure and fortieth yeere of their coming into the land. But of this wee shall speake more hereafter.

Of this Ambrosius, William Malmesburie writeth thus: Aurelie, when (saith he) the Brytaines had gone to swacke, if Ambrosius, who onelie and alone of all the Romanes, remained in Brytaine, and was Monarch of the Realme, after Vortiger, had not kepte vnder the psonde Barbarians, with the notable trauaile of the warriour Arthur. Now it followeth in Geoffrey, that this Ambrosius caused Churches to be repaired, which had bene spoiled by the Saxons: hee caused also the great stones to bee set on the plaine of Salisbury, which is called Stonehenge, in remembrance of the Brytaines that were slaine and buried there, in the raising of Vortiger, at the banquet, and communication of Hengist with the Saxons. This ancient monument is yet to be seene, and is a number of stones, rough and of a grey colour, 25. fote in length, and about 10. fote in breadth, they are for-  
ward

*Hengist king  
of Kent.*

*A miserable  
state of the  
Brytaines.*

466

*W. Malmes.*

*W. Malmes.*

*Stonehenge  
beside Salis-  
bury.*

ned by two and two together, and euerie comple sustaineth a third stone lying oerthwart gatewise, which is fastened by the meanes of tenons that enter in to mortaises of those stones, not closed with any cement. It appeareth, that there hath bene three ranks going round as circles one within another: where of the uttermost and largest, containeth in compasse about 300. fote, but the other ranks are decayed, and therefore hard to reckon how many stones there be.

The Chronicles of the Brytains do testifie, that wher as the Sorons, about the yere of our Lord 450. had slaine 480. of the Brytaines: Nobilitie by treason, and under colour of a treaty, Aurelius Ambrose now King of the Brytaines, desirous to continue their memorie, with some worthy monument, caused these stones to be set by in place of their murder and burfall, the which stones hadde bene first brought from Affrike into Ireland, and placed on Spounte Kyllare, and from thence by the industrious meanes of Merlin, were conueyed to this place to the foresaide end. There are about this place, certaine little hilles, or banks, vnder the which are found sometimes bones of bigge men, and peeces of armes, also not far from thence remaine old ruines of the maner of a fortreffe, which the Romans (as it is not unlike) did build there in times past.

Alla, and his three sonnes, Kimon, Plincing, and Cissa, came into Brytaine with three ships, and landed with them, in a place called Kimenshore, and there slew many of the Brytaines, forcing the rest to make their flight into a wood called Andredsfage, this Alla fighting with the Brytaines in a place now called to Mercreds Borne, or Mercreds Rilear, slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

Alla and Cissa his sonne, after long siege, brake into the Citie of Andredsester, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest.

Porte, and his two sonnes, Byda, and Mogla, arrived in Brytaine with two ships, in a place called Portesmouth, and there slew a pong gentleman, one of the nobilitie of the Brytaines, and diuers others.

The same yere two Dukes, to wit, Cerdic and Kenric, his sonne came into Brytaine with v. ships, and arrived in a place called Cerdics fhere, the same day they fought with the Brytaines, and put them to flight. Cerdic and his son Kenric slew Natanland king of the Brytaines, and 5000. men, of whose name that countrie as far as Cerdicsford, was called by the name of Natanled.

Aurelius Ambrose, being possessed died when he had reigned 32. yeres, and was buried at Stonehenge, then called Chorea Gigantum.

Vther Pendragon, so called, for that hee caused alwayes a Dragon to be born before him in his battalles, was crowned king of Brytaine: he vanquished Octa and Oza at Windgate by Coquer Witter. He was enamored by on Igen the Dukes wife of Cornwall, and to obtaine his vnlawfull lust, made waite vpon her husband Goelen, and slew him in battaille at Duuilioc. On her he begate Arthur, he reigned vññ. yeres, and was buried at Stonhenge.

Arthur the same of Vther borne in Cornwell, at the age of 20. yeres was crowned king of Brytain, as fower say at Caerleon, other at Winich, one old names pamphlet saith at Cilcester, by Dubricius Archbishop of Legions.

This

Geffrey mon.  
Giral. Cam.  
Gerau. Doro.

Kingdome of  
the South  
Saxons.  
Marianus.  
Kimenfhere.  
Andredsfage.  
Mercreds borne.

Andredsester.

Portesmouth.

498  
Gaufride.  
Arthur Succes.

516  
Nennius.

This Citie of Cilcester in Brytysh is called Caerlegent, and was situate nere Reading. It was so called, for that Constantius, the sonne of Constantine the great dyed there: his Sepulchre might once haue bene seene there besides the Citie, as the letters engrauen on it in stone did declare. Thus farre the said namelesse autho.

Sea Cro.

The Towne of Cilcester is yet to be seene in Hamshire, euen in the vertice of it, as the booke devideth, it is 6. miles or more from Reading, and containeth within the wall of stone about 80. acres of ground, deuoted into three feldes, before the ground about the manner place it selfe, and the Church. The wall is about 2. miles compasse, with foure places where gates haue bene, on the which wall grow some Wakes of 10. cart loads the pece, the ground within the wall is almost leuell with the toppe of the same wall, but without, the wall is 6. or 7. fote of height, above the ground within the wall at this present is one farme house, and a parish Church, the parishioners whereof dwell without the Towne, there is in digging and plowing much Romane money found, the ground there beareth good corne, saue in some place, the corne being marvellous faire to the eye, and ready to thew perfecter, it decayeth. The lands of the towne, after the conquest came to one Blewich, & then one of the Blewichs leaving no heire male, the land not entailed to the heyres generally, came by marriage to one Peter de Cusance knight: and after to one Edward Baynard, coming out of the house of the Baynards of Essex, whose name is now obliterated there, thus much of Cilcester. And now againe to Arthur, who, as is reported, toke to wife Guineuer, cousin to Cadur Duke of Cornwal, and daughter to the king of Biskap. Of this king Arthur there be many fabulous reports, but certaine he was (saith W. of Malmesbury) a Prince more worthy to haue advancement by true histories, then false fables, being the only prop and vpholder of this his countrey.

Cilcester an  
ancient Citie.

Leyland.

Sea Chron.

W. Malm.

In the beginning of his raigne, Lorbho and Conradus his allies, enoying his prosperity, made war against him, but he valiantly vanquished them with their diades and Sots, and at his pleasure appointed them a gouernor named Angulid. He fought vii. battels against the Sorons, and alwaies bare away the victorie. These battels (saith Nennius) were fought in places following.

Anna. Hist.

Nennius.

The first battell was fought in the mouth of the water Gleyne or Gledy. The second, third, fourth, and fift, ne vnto the riuer Douglass, which is in the Countie of Lincolne.

The first vpon the riuer Bassus.

The seauenth in the Wood Callidon, or Carroffe Callidon.

The eight beside the Castell called Guinien.

The ninth at Cairelien in Wales.

The tenth by the sea side, in a place called Trachenrith, or Kithowotoc.

The eleuenth vpon an hill named Agned Cathergonien.

The twelfth at h. hill or towne of Bath, then named Sathen-hill, where many more were slaine by h. force of Arthur, for he alone (saith W. Mal.) hauing the image of our Lady bowed vpon his armes, set vpon 900. of his enemies & with an incredible slaughter put the to flight. But now concerning this Bath before mentioned

Bath in Ws-  
then hill.

tioned, it is to be noted, that Bath in Somersetshire standeth close, compassed about with hills, whereby it is evident, that either it is removed from that place where it stood in Nenius time, or els that the place which he called Badonicus mons, was not this town it selfe, as Leiland and other coniecture, but some other high place nere, which is not unlikely, for at this day within a mile of it, ever a town called Bannar downe, which is so called, either corruptly for: Bathendowne, or els in remembrance of the Banners displayed there, Bannier downe, and so much to me both upon the sight of the place, and report of such as have gathered caps full of mens teeth in following the plow there, to be the same that Nenius (corruptly called Gildas) or Bede meant, though Polidor mistakes it for: Blanchemore. Thus much for: Bathon hill: now to the historie.

Afterward Arthur raised the siege which the Saxons had planted about Lincolne, & drew them in great numbers. On the other side (saith W. Mal.) though the English Saxons were tossed with variable dalliance of fortune, yet they did alwaies supply their armies when they were decayed with their countrymen which came to him, and therefore with the better courage they ran upon the weapons of their enemies, & when the inhabitants by little and little quailed and gaue over, they spread themselves through the whole Island. Gods pleasure being so, in whose hand & power the alteration and change of all kingdomes is, and both consist, but these things came to passe in pcesse of time and yeeres.

Arthur having abated the rage of the Saxons as is aforesaid, and recovered his countrey to quietnesse, he constituted the order of the round table, into the which order he only retained such of his nobilitie as were most renowned for vertue and chivalrie. This round table he kept in diuers places, especially at Carlion, Winchester, and Camalot in Somersetshire. This Camalot sometime a famous towne, or castle standeth at the South end of the Church of south Gadbury, the same is situat on a very top: or hill, wonderfully strengthened by nature, to the which be two entrings way, by very steepe way, one by north, and other by Southward. The very rate of the hill, whereon this fortresse stood, is more then a mile in compass. In the upper part of the top of the hill be four battlements or trenches, and a halpy hal of earth betwixt euery one of them. In the very toppe of the hill above all the trenches, is Magna area or campus, of 20. acres or more, where in diuers places men may see foundations, and rudos of walls. There was much darkish blew stone, that people of the village there by hath carried away. This top within the upper wall being more then 20. acres, hath often bene plowed, and borne very good corne, much gold, silver, & copper of the Romans comes hath bin found there in plowing, & likewise in the fields about the roots of this hill, with many other antique things especially by Carl.

There was found in the memory of men a horse shoe of silver at Camalot. The people can tell nothing there but that they have heard say the Arthur much rejoiced to Camalot. The old Lord Hungerford was owner of this Camalot, since, Halting Earle of Huntingdon by his mother, &c.

There is yet to be scene in Denbigh shire, in the parish of Llanfagan, in the side of a stone hill, a place compassed, wherein be foure and twenty seats for men to sit in, some lesse, and some bigger, cut out of the maine Rock by mans hand,

W. Lamb.  
Banner downe

Arthur's  
round table.

Camalot castle.

Leiland.

where children and young men, coming to seeke their Cattell, use to sit, and plaie: they commonly call it Arthurs round Table.

While Arthur was ballantlie occupied in his wars beyond the Seas, (where he wrought many wonders, as some have written, but far unlike to be true,) Mordred, to whom he had committed the gouernement of Brytaine, confederating himselfe with Cerdicus first king of the West Saxons, traitterously usurped the kingdome, of which treason, when relation came to Arthur, he speedily returned into Brytain, and at Richborough nere to Sandwich, gaue battell to him, and wanne the siebe. Anguise of Scotland, Gawin and Cador were there slaine: then pursuing him into Cojunctallan, gaue him battell there againe by the River of Alaue, of some histories called Cablan, where Mordred was slaine. And Arthur being deadly wounded, was conueied to Glasfenburie, where he died on the xxi. day of May, in the yere of Christ 542. and was there buried after he had victoriously gouerned this Realme 26. yeeres, hee gaue 25. sent marth (saith Rowle) with other possessions to the value of 500. Sparks, to the Abbots of Glasfenburie.

More then 600. yeeres after his death, to wit, about the yere of Christ 1189. which was the last yere of the reigne of king Henry the second, his bodie was founde, buried in the Churchyard, betwixt two pillars, rbt. some deape under ground, but those that digged the ground there to find his body, after they had entred about 7. fote deape into the earth, they found a mightie broad stone, with a leaden Crosse fastened to that part which late downe wardes towards the corpes, containing this inscription,

*Hic iacet sepulchrum rex Arturium in insula Avalonia.*

This inscription was grauen on that side of the Crosse which was next to the stone, so that till the Crosse was taken from the stone, it was not scene. His body was found, not inclosed within a tombe of stone, it was not scene. His made hollowe like a trough, the which being digged by and opened, therein was found the bones of Arthur, which were of a marvellous bignesse, as Giraldus Cambrensis, a learned man that then lived, reporteth to have heard of the Abbot of Glasfenburie, of whom he was enformed that the shin-bone of Arthur being set up by the leg of a very tall man, came above his knee the breadth of three fingers. The skull of his head of a wonderful bignesse, in the which head were appeared the prints of 11. wounds or mo: all the which were growne into one frame, except onely that whereof hee died, which being greater then the other appeared vertie plaine. Also in opening the tombe of his wife Guineuer, that was buried with him, they found the tresses of her haire whole and perfect, finely platted, of colour like to gold, but being touched fell to dust: the Abbot of that house (sometime Prior of Bermondsey) was named Henry Bloys, and was nephew to king Henry the second, by whose commandement the buriall of Arthur was searched for and found. Whose bones, with the bones of Guineuer his wife being found, were removed into the newe great Church, (for the old was burned in Anno, 1171.) and there buried in a faire tombe of Marble, laying the bones of the king at the head of the tombe, and the bones of the Queene at his fete toward the West. The Crosse of leade with the inscription,

Flores Historiarum.

Attalle at  
Doner.

Arthurs  
table.  
Ant. olafen.  
quater couch.  
Antiqu. claf.

scription, as it is found, and taken off the stone, was kept in the treasure of reuelier of Glasenburie Church, till the suppression thereof, in the reigne of King Henry the eight.

Constantine kinsman to Arthur, and sonne to Cadur Duke of Cornwal, was ordained king of Brytaine, and reigned thye yerres.

This man was by the two sonnes of Mordred graueously bered, for they claimed the Land by the right of their father, but after manie bat talles they fled, the one to London, the other to Winchester, which Cities they obtayned and toke them: but Constantine followed, and subdued, and toke the fore said Cities, and one of the yong men hee found in an Abbey at London, slew him nere the Altar cruelle, and buried him nigh Vter Pendragon, at Stonehinge. The other yong man hee found at Winchester, and slew him, flying in to the Church of St. Amphibalus.

Aurelius Conanus a Brytaine, raised mortall warre against Constantine the king, and after long fight slew him in the field, when he had reigned thye yerres, and was buried at Stonehinge.

Aurelius Conanus, stephew to Arthur, was Crowned King of Brytaine.

He cherished such as loued strife and dissention within his Realme: and gave light credence to them which accused other, where it right or wrong.

Hee imprisoned by strength his Uncle, which was right heyye to the Crowne. He reigned thye and thirt yerres.

The kingdome of Northumberland began first in Brytaine under a Saxon named Ida.

Victorinus the sonne of Conanus, was ordained King of Brytaine, a vicious king, and cruell tyrant, who put from him his wife, and kept his daughter for his Concubine. In diuers battels hee discomfited the Saxons. He reigned foure yerres.

Malgo Pulcher Canonus of Northwales, began his raigne ouer the Brytaines, and gouerned them fye yerres.

This Malgo was in proportion of body, greater then all the Dukes of Brytaine, but hee delighted in the foule sin of Sodomitie. Hee slew his first wife, and then toke to wife his owne brothers daughter.

Caraticus began to rule the Brytaines. This man loued ciuill warre, and was odible both to God and to his subiects. They moued the Saxon (being accompanied with Gurmundus king of Ireland) to make warre vpon Caraticus, in such wise, that hee was fayne to take the Towne of Cicester, where they assaulted him fore, and firoe the come, by tying fire to the winges of Sparrowes, that he with his men fledde from thence into Wales: by which means, he left a great part of his dominion, and ended his life, when hee had reigned thre yerres.

This Gurmund burned up the land of Brytaine from sea to sea, and the most part of that hee called Leogrea he gaue to the Saxons. The Brytaines gave place, and fled into the West partes of Cornwal, and Wales. Theanus Archbishop of London, and Thadecus Archbishop of Poike, when their Churches

were all destroyed to the ground, they with their Cleargie fled into Wales, and many of them into little Brytaine. This plague came on the Brytaines for their couetousnesse, rauine, and Lecherie. Gurmund builded Gurmundchester.

Adwane Duke of Northwales, was made Soueraigne of the Brytaines, who gaue strong battell to Ethelwold king of Northumberland, and forced him to intreate for peace: After which concord being made, they continued all the life time louing friends. He reigned xxiij. yerres.

The kingdome of the East Saxons began under Erchenwinus, about the yere of Christ, 614.

The kingdome of Mercia, or middle England, began under Penda, 626.

Adwalin, the sonne of Cadwane, reigned ouer the Brytaines, he warred strongly vpon the Saxons, and made Penda king of Mercia tributarie to him: he reigned xlviij. yerres, and was buried at London, in a Church of St. Martine nere vnto Ludgate, which Church was then newe founded, and builded by the Brytaines, in Anno, 677.

Cadwalladar (saith Gefrey) was ordained king of the Brytaines, and ruled only iij. yerres: hee vanquished and slew Lothier king of Kent, & Ethelwold king of south Saxons: and then for taking his kingly authoritie, hee went to Rome, there to be christened, who after became a Monk, and was buried in St. Peters Church at Rome. He was last king of Brytaine, (saith Gefrey) but Bede theweth, that Lothier king of Kent was slaine by Edneke, who succeeded him in that kingdome of Kent, and Ethelwold he saith was slaine by a Saxon called Ceadwalla K. of the West Saxons, which Ceadwalla went to Rome, and was there buried as ye may read in the historie of the West Saxon kings.

Now are we come to the time wherein God (who for the sinnes of the people translated kingdomes) dispossessed the Brytaines of their ancient habitation, and rule of this land, who by the violence of Saxons were enforced, either to miserable seruitude, or giuen into the Westerne partes of the Isle, now called Wales and Cornwal, (where they now inhabit,) or els to their countreyment the Brytaines in France. They also called the Brytaines Welshmen, as who should say strangers, that use an unknown tongue. This happened in the raigne of Ceadwalla King of the West Saxons, whose Gefrey Monmouth calleth Cadwalladar king of the Brytaines about the yere of Christ, 685, when the Brytaines being wasted with ciuill dissention, pestilence and famine, lost all that small that they had long time painfully kept, and were conched in a corner. Thus much for the Brytaines, and now shall be shewed the raigne of the Saxons, who enioying the fertile soile of this Realme, parted it in proceesse of time into seauen kingdomes: Kent, Southey, East-angles, East-saxons, Mercia, Northumberland, and West-saxons, which the learned call the Heptarchie of the Saxons, of which kingdomes, I purpose (for avoiding of confusion) to treat severally, setting downe the limits of these Countreies, with the succession, ades, and ciuill bat talles of their pettie kings, vntill the time that this Heptarchie, or government of seauen, was reduced to a Monarchie, or regiment of one.

Gurmundchester builded.

617

Paulus Diaconus

the kingdome of Saxons. Seventh kingdome of Saxons.

635.

685

542  
Beutehookes.

Spoyles  
children slaine.

Gildas.  
Arbor successi.

545

Flores Historiar.

The first king  
dome of the  
Saxons.

578

Gildas.  
Gaufride.

581

Gildas.

586

Sea. chro.

## Kentish Saxons.

456



Ent the first kingdome, possessed by the Saxons, containing that countrey that stretcheth from the East Ocean to the river of Thamis, having on the South west side Southey, on the West London, and upon the North east the said river of Thamis. It hath the Archbishopricke of Canterbury metropolitan and pismote of al England, and the Bishoppicke of Rochester, and had kings as followeth.

**H**engist the sonne of Widgeu, the sonne of Vicia, the sonne of Wecta, the first sonne of Woden & Frea, was the first of the Saxons that made himselfe king of Kent, as before ye have heard, eight yeres after his first entring into this Island, in the yere from Christs birth 456. He reigned xxxiii. yeres, and died honorably saith Marianus, others have written, that by the counsel of Elded B. of Glocester, Edell Duke of Glocester caused his head to be cut off, at Coneshojow. But this hath no likelihood of truth, for certaine it is, that Robert base sonne to Henry the first, was made the first Earle of Glocester, and Henry the eight made the first Bishop of Glocester.

490

**E**ske of Vske, succeeding his father Hengist, reigned peaceably twenty sonne yeres.

Otra sonne of Eske reigned xxi. yeres.

Emmericus the sonne of Otra reigned xvj. yeres.

**E**thelbert the sonne of Emmericus had the government of this kingdome, by the space of liii. (or after Beade, lvi.) yeres. This Ethelbert in the beginning of his raigne being but a childe, was troubled with warres on every side, that he could hardly defend his owne coasts. In his first battaile against Ceauline king of the West Saxons & Cuibe his sonne, he was forced to make his flight into Kent, having two of his Dukes Oslauc and Cnebanno slaine in a place called Gubaduni: but when he came to more age, and was more cunning in warre, in short space he overcame all the kingdomes of the Saxon round about him, save the Northumbres. And to the ende hee would have acquaintance with foraine princes, he made affinity and alliance with the king of France by the marryng of his daughter Berta, a Christian woman, to whom he permitted to use the lawes and rites of her Countrey, and to have a Bishop, whose name was Letardus, to remaine with her, for her better instruction in the lawes of God. By this means the barbarous and heathen Saxons keeping company with the French, did agree to have all one lawe and his customes: besides this, the chaste and vertuous life of Letardus the Bishoppe, and the other French, which came with the Quene; changed the kings mind unto the knowledge of Christ, whereby it came to passe, that after ward hee did so farre give place to the preaching of Augustine. At this time (saith Beade) the Byptaines being at quiet, little regarding the Saxons past in their fathers dales, and having respect onely to the present prosperous estate in the which they then lived, were so set to breake all god orders of trusty and justie, that

Beade.

that scant any tok:n to remembre therof remained, but only in a feto, among manie other of their doings, which their owne Historiographer Gildes, hath lamentably set forth in writing (he saith of them thus) that the yenger took care to preach the Gospell of Christ unto the Angles and Saxons, which inhabited the land among them. But yet the goodness of God provided for the said nation of the Angles, much more worthy preachers, by whome they might be brought to the faith.

In the yere 596. Pope Gregorie moved of goolie inclination in the hundred forty and seven yere after the arrivall of the Angles in Byptaine, sent Augustine, Melius, Iustus and Iohn, with sundrie other Monkes that lived in the fear of God, to preach the Gospell, to the nation of the Angles in Byptaine, which landed in the Isle of Thanet, and were first received by Ethelbert king of Kent, whom they converted to the Christian faith with divers of his people in the 34. yere of his raigne: and king Ethelbert delaying no time, gave unto Augustine the Citie of Canterburie, who furthered thus by the king, set up at his handes an olde Church, sometime founded there by the faithfull Romanes, and dedicated the same to our Saviour Jesus Christ, which since was called Austins

Augustine consecrated Melius and Iustus Bishoppes, and appointed Melius to preach unto the East Saxons, who with their king Sebert the nephewes of king Ethelbert, at the preaching of Melius received the word of life.

King Ethelbert founded the Church of Saint Paul in London. Iustus was made Bishop of Rochester, where Ethelbert builded for him and his successors the Church of S. Andrew.

This yere 603. died Pope Gregory the first, upon the first of March, being the seconde yere of Phocas the Emperour, after hee had governed the Roman Sea 13. yeres, 6. monethes, and 10. dales, after whome succeeded Sabinian the first.

About this time (saith Beade) Austine (by the aide of king of Ethelbert) called together the Bishoppes and Doctors of the greatest prouince and nearest to him, which were the Byptaines, to commune with them, in a place which to this daie is called Augustines Wake, as ye would see the power and strength of Austine, being in the borders of the Viccians and West Saxons. There hee beganne with brotherlie admonition (saith Beade) to persuade them to peace, and Catholike unitie with him, and to communicate with him for Gods sake the labour of preaching the Gospell to the Heathen of England: for as yet they kept not the Easter Sundae in due time, but from the fourteenth to the twentieth Mone, which cometh is concluded in compasse of eightie foure yeres. They used moreover, manie other things contrarie to the unitie of the Church, which when they had bene with long discourse declared, and these men, neither for prayers, rebukes, or threats of Augustine and his companie would give their assent, but rather preferred their owne traditions before all other Churches which throughout the world, agreed with Austine in Christ. Whereupon Austine fell to prayer, and also rebuked a blinde man to sight (saith Beade) which the Byptaines could

Gildes.

Marianus Floriacca Bede.

Austine came into Byptaine. Ethelbert was the first of Britons an king of the Saxons.

Augustinus at Canterbury builded.

S. Paul in London founded.

S. Andrew in Rochester founded. Bede.

Augustine rebuked the Byptaines to a unitie with him.

could not bee, and therefore confessed indeede that to bee the true waie of righteousnes which Austine had preached and shewed them, but yet they saide they could not alter their olde customes without the consent of their Cleargie and people. They desired therefore to have a seconde Synode of a greater multitude. Which when it was appointed to bee so, there came by report seven Bytayne Bpshoppes, and many othe well learned men, especiallye out of their greatest Monasterie of Bangor, where at that time Dinoh was Abbot.

These men beinge nowe readie to goe to the foresayde Synode, came first to a certayne holie and wise man (which lived there about an Anchorite life) to Aske his counsell, whether they ought at Austines preaching and exhortation leave their traditions or no, who answered them in: if (quoth he) hee be a man of God, followe him. But howe shall wee prove (sayde they) that hee is a man of God? The Anchorite answered, our Worre safely, take on you my yoke, and learne you of me, for I am milde, and humble of heart: it is likelie that himselfe beareth the yoke of Christ, and will offer you the same to beare; but if he be curst and proude, it is certaine, that he is not of God, neither must we much esteeme his wordes.

Then they enquired of him howe they might knowe whether this Austine were proude or not, marie (quoth hee) proude ye that hee with his company come first to the place of the Synode, or Councell house. And if when ye approach nere, he ariseth courteously to you, thinke ye that hee is the servant of Christ, and so heare ye him pbenientlie; but if hee despise you, nor will bowd-safe to rise at your presence, which are the more in number, let him likewise be despised of you.

And truelie as this Anchorite bade them, so did they, for it happened that when they came thither, Austine was already there, and sate in his chaire, which when they sawe, straightwaie bearinge togoth, they noted him of pryde, and therefore endenoured to overthrowe and gaine say whatsoeuer he proposed, his Oration by hiselpe was thus: Although deare brethren in many other points ye bee contrarie to our custome, or rather contrarie to the custome of the vniuersall Church of Christ; yet notwithstanding, if ye will in these three things consent unto me: that is, to celebrate the Easter in due time, to accomplish the ministrie of Baptisme, according to the Romane and Apostolike Church, and last of all to preach with vs to this English nation the worde of our Lorde, all your other Ceremonies, Rites, and Customes, though they be contrary to ours, yet we will willingly suffer, and bee contente to beare with them. But they answered, they would doe none of the things requested, neither would account him for their Bpshope: sayinge naie, if hee would not much as rise to vs, truelie the more we should nowe subiect our selues to him, the more would hee hereafter despise vs, and set vs at naught. To whom Austine greatfullie prophesied, that if they would not take peace, and bee at accord with their brethren, they should receiue and seele warre from their enemies. And if they would not preach to the Englishmen the waie of life, they should suffer at their hand, and by their power the vengeance of death, which

Second Synode

Monastery of Bangor.

The Bytayne counsell to an Anchorite.

March 11.

Austine requirith 3. thinges of the Bytayne

The Bytayne refuse Austine to be their Archbysop, or to obey him in any thing. Austine repeates with the Bytayne.

thing came to passe afterwarde, as shall bee shewed in the reigns of Edlilfinge King of the Northumbres.

The same yere of Christ 603. also died Augustine the Archbysop, the xvij. day of May, after the deccale of Saint Gregory, two monethes, two weekes, & two daies. And after himselfe had bene consecrated Archbysoppe of Canterburie, egypt yeres, five monethes, and 21. daies, but before hee deccaled, he obtained Laurence to succede him in the Archbysoppitike, which hee saue in his life time the rather per fourmde, least that after hee was deade, the state of the Church (being as yet but rude and latele converted) might begin to waue and fall, if it should haue lacked a pastour or ruler neuer so little a while: his bodie was for a time layde in the porch of the forenamed Church of Saint Peter and Paul, because the Church was not yet finished nor dedicated, but shortly after the dedication of the same, (which was done by Laurence his successor) hee was translated into the Church, and layde on the South side therof decentlie. And vpon his Tombe was writen this Epitaph. *Hic requiescit Dominus Augustinus Dorobornensis Episcopus primus, &c.* Here resteth blessed Augustine, the first Archbysoppe of Dorobornia, who being sent hither of helie Gregory, Bpshope of Rome, and strenghtened of God by the working of miracles, converted king Ethelbert and his people from the worshipping of Idoles, to the faith of Christ, and fulfilling in yeace the dayes of this office, he died the 26. day of May, in the reigns of the same king Ethelbert.

The noble king Ethelbert, makinge provision for them that should come after, brought the lawes of his country into the mother tongue, thereby to reward the god accordingly, and to withstand the wicked by seuerer means, and lest nothing thereof his posteritie needed to doubt in any matter, and then after his temporall reigns, which he had kept most gloriously ouer the Kentish Saxons, the space of 54. (or after Bede 56.) yeres, he entred into the eternall blisse of the kingdom of heauen vpon the foure and twentieth day of February being the eleuenth yere after that hee had receiued the faith of Christ, and the ninetenth yere after S. Augustine with his company were sent to the English nation to preach: he was the third king, and reigned ouer all the South prouinces, which are separated from the North by the Riuer of Humber, and the borders adioyning thereunto. King Ethelbert being married to the Ladie Bertha a Christian woman, and daughter of the king of France, receiued of her a sonne named Edbald, (who married Emma the daughter of the king of France) and a daughter named Ethelburge other wise called Tate, that was married to Edwin king of Northumberland, which Edwin was connected to the faith by Bpshop Pauline. The place of king Ethelberts buriall was in Saint Martinus parish within the church of the blessed Apostles Peter and Paul nere Canterburie, on the South side of the same church, which he builded from the ground as before is declared, where also the noble Ladie Quene Bertha his wife was buried before him, and the bpsop Lucardus that came out of France with her, and vpon his graue was left this inscription.

*Rex Ethelbertus hic clauditur in polidoro.  
Fanapians certus Christo meas absque meandro.*

E 2.

Edbald

Augustine the Archbysop deccaled.

Gocelin monke bartiniani. Epitaph of Augustine.

W. Malmes.

Register Canteg. W. Thorne.

**E**dbald when he had taken upon him to rule the Realme, and rode no longer in awe of his father, he did not only refuse to accept the faith of Christ, but was also polluted with such a fornication as the Apostle witnessed never had been heard of among the Gentiles, which is, that he had married his fathers wife, with the which two haprous facts he gave occasion to his subjects to returne to their former faith, which under his fathers raigne for feare or for feare of the king had perished to the lawes of christian faith, & chastity: but the scourge of God, and vengeance from heauen wanted not to the punishment of this unfaithfull king, for he was plagued with often frensie of minde, and raging fits of an uncleane spirit, but by Laurence Archbishop of Canterbury, he was at length converted from his Idolatry, and unfaithfull sinne, and was turned againe to the faith, and being baptised, he endeoured to maintaine the state of the Church in all points to the uttermost, he builded a Chappell within the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul, and gave to that Monastery a great portion of land, he is said to be the first founder of Fulkstone in Kent, but 3 yeare scene no Charter thereof, he reigned 25. yeres, and was buried by his father in the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul.

**E**Reombert the sonne of Edbald by Emma his wife, hee first suppressed the Temples of the Idoles, and because his people were given to excess, commanded a solemn fast of forty daies long, to be observed throughout all his kingdome, and reigned twentie five yeres. It is recorded in the antiquities of Charches Church in Canterburie, that about this time Honorius Archbishop of Canterburie divided his province into Parishes, which Honorius decessed in Anno 693. when hee had late Archbishoppe twentie yeres.

**E**gbert his sonne succeeded, whose quiet government for a long season was after ward defaced by the cruell murder of Ealbert, and Egelbriht his cousins Germans, whom either he slew himselfe, or procured to be slaine by a traitor named Thunor: he reigned nine yeres.

The Abbie Domneua next true heire to the Crowne from Edbald, erected a Monasterie called Winton in the Isle of Thanet, and became first Abbesse there.

**L**otharius succeeded his brother Egbert, who being assaulted oftentimes by Edrike the sonne of Egbert, in a cruell fight was shot through with a dart, whereof he died under his Surgeons hands, when hee had reigned thirtie yeres, and was buried with his predecessors kings, in the Monastery of Peter and Paul by Canterburie.

**E**drice the sonne of Egbert, within the space of two yeres lost both life and kingdome. After his death the kingdome being sometime governed by usurpers, and sometime by foreigners, began to decay.

The Kentishmen, by casting of fire, did cruellie burne Moll the brother of Cedwall King of the West Saxons, and twelve of his Knights with him: wherewith Cedwall being moved to furie, did miserable havoc and spoile all Kent, so that by the space of five yeres, there was no king in that Countrey.

Widreds

**W**idreds the sonne of Egbert purchasing peace with money, was then established king, in which state he behaved himselfe very honourably, both in peace and warre. He founded the Monastie of Saint Martin at Wodan, and reigned xxiij. yeres, with whom King Swedheard reigned jointly in one part of his kingdome.

**E**gbert the sonne of Withred walked in his fathers ordinances, and had like successe, and reigned thre and twentie yeres.

The yere 729. two dreadfull Starrs appeared, the one before the Sunne rising, the other after the Sunne setting, both which appeared in the month of January, the space of 15. daies, and carried with them the likeness of a bundle of fire against the South, and somewhat towards the West, at which time the Pagans infested France and Spaine.

**E**delbert his brother succeeded, in whose time the Citie of Canterburie (as is to be thought) was burned by chance: he reigned not xi. yeres, and was buried in the Monasterie of Peter and Paul at Canterburie.

**A**lricke the thirde sonne of Withred ruled Kent after his brethren, and was vanquished in a fought feld against Offa king of the Mercians: he reigned foure and thirtie yeres, and was the last of the line of succession of the kings of Kent.

**E**delbert or Egbert otherwise called Pren, then usurped the kingdome, and Elenied warre against the Mercians, by whom he was taken prisoner, and not long after released, but the Kentishmen would not receive him, Cuthred then usurped, and bare a title of a Kentish king for the space of eight yeres.

**B**alred the heire of Cuthred then took on him the Princely dignitie, but Egbert king of the West Saxons so discomfited him in battell, that he fled over the River of Tamis, and forsoke his kingdome, when he had reigned xi. yeres, and was never heard of afterward, wherby this kingdome of Kent was united to the kingdome of the West Saxons.

The yere 829. Wilfred Archbishop of Canterburie decessed, and was buried in Christs Church in Canterburie, when he had late 27. yeres, after whom succeeded Floegild.

South Saxons.



**S**outhsex the second kingdome, contained the Counties of Southsex and Surrey, which had on the East side Kent, on the South side the Sea, on the West side Hampshire, and on the South the River of Tamis: it containeth the Diocesses of Chichester, and part of Winchester.

**A**le the eight from Woden, with his three sons Cimen, Pleneing, and Cissa, came into Brittain with 3. ships, landed in a place called Hamenstowe, and there slew many of the Britains, & forced the rest to make their flight into a wood which is called Andredesleage. Afterward fighting with the Britains in a place nere unto spactodes burne, slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

E 3.

The province  
of the Arch-  
Bishopricke of  
Canterburie  
divided into  
Parishes.

667  
W. Malm.

674

698

731

754

765

799

807

478



sight. Then he and Eisa his sonne after long siege, brake into the City of Andredes Ceiter, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest, and so began the kingdome of Southsex: he reigned xxxvi. yeres.

514

Cissa his sonne succeeded, he built the cite of Cissacester now called Chichester, & named it after his owne name, he reigned, as it is said, lxxvi. yeres. Thelwulfus (whome Bede nameth Edelwach) was chrisened in the prouince of the Mercies, in the presence and at the exhortation of E. Wulhere, who also at the font was his godfather, and in signe of that adoption, gaue him two prouinces, that is to say, the Isle of Wight, and the prouince of Manures, in the West part of England.

Bede.  
First chris-  
ened King in  
Southsex.

Willride the Bpshope came to the prouince of the South Saxons, unto them did he minister the worde of faith, by the permission and great reioicing of the king. This Bpshope chrisened the chiefe Lordes and Knightes of the Countrey: and the rest of the people at the same time, or soone after were chrisened by other Bpshoppes. The Quene Ebba was chrisened in her Isle which was in the prouince of the Viccians: for she was the daughter of Eanfride, who was Eanheres brother, where were both Chistian men, and all their people. But all the prouince of South Saxons had neuer before that time heard of the name of God, nor the faith. Yet there was in that countrey a certaine Spoke, a Scot borne, named Dicub, which had a very little Monasterie in a place called Bosanham, all compassed about with woods and the sea, and therein b. or vi. brethren seruing God in humble and poore life, but none of the people there did giue themselves either to followe their life, or heare their preaching: but when Bpshope Willride came and preached the Gospell unto them, he deliuered the people not onlie from the perill of damnation, but also from an horrible murrain of tempo:all death, for in 3. yeres before, it had not rained in all those quarters, whereby a famine destroyed the people by heapes, in so much that diuers times 40. or 50. in a company being famished for hunger, would go together to some roche or sea bank, and cast themselves all downe, either to be killed with the fall, or drowned in the sea: but on the same day they receiued baptisme and faith, there fell a plentifull shoure of rayne, wherewith the earth flourish again. This Bpshope also taught the people there to get their sustenance by fishing.

Edilwachs  
Monas-  
tery in South-  
sex.

Edilwach gaue unto Bpshope Willride the land of 87. tenementes, where he might place his company, the name of the place was Seolesey. In this place he founded a Monasterie, to be his Episcopall See.

605

Ceadwall a valiant yong man of the West Saxons, being banished from his Countrey, came with an hoste of men and slew King Edilwach, wasted that prouince, cruellie murdered and spoiled euerie where. Edilwach reigned xxx. yeres.

And soone after Ceadwall was slayen out by two Captaines of the Kinges, Berham and Anthun, which from that time did holce and keepe the Dominion of that prouince, the chiefe of which two, was afterwarde slaine of the same Ceadwall, (being then king of the West Saxons,) and the prouince subdured and brought into more grieuous subiection then it was before. Againe Ine that reigned

reigned after Ceadwall oppressed it with like misery & bondage many yeres, whereby it came to passe, that the people of Southsex in all this time could haue no Bpshope of their owne: but were saine (their first Bpshope Willride being called home to Poike) to be vnder the Dioces of the Genies which belonged to the West Saxons, as many as were in the territorie of Selley.

After that Ceadwall had thus obtained the kingdome of the West Saxons, hee took the Isle of Wight also, which was so altogether giuen to the wo: shipping of Booles, that he intended utterly to banish and drive out thence all the olde native inhabitants, and to put people of his owne Countrey in their place. For though he was not yet at that time baptised, and regenerate in Christ, yet he bound himselfe with a vow, that if he took the Island, he would giue vnto God the fourth part thereof, and of all the pray. Which thing he so performed, that Bpshope Willride happening to bee there at that time, a man of his owne countrey, he offered and gaue the same vnto him, to the use and seruice of our Lord. The said Island contained as the English did rate it, 1200. tenements, wherof was giuen to the Bpshope, the possession of the land of three hundred tenements, which portion the Bpshope gaue and committed to one of his Clerkes named Bernice, and appointed thereto a Priest named Hildila, to minister the worde and baptisme of life to all that would bee saued. Two children of the bloud Royall, being brethren to Drualde King of that Island, being fledde into the next prouince of the Vices, where they had hidden themselves in a place called Stonestat, were betrayed and found out, whome the king commanded to be put to death. Which thing when a certaine Abbot named Cimerber had heard of, whose monasterie was not far from thence, at a place called Redford, he came to the king, and desired him that if hee would needs haue the children put to death, yet they might first receiue the Sacraments of Christs Church. The king granted his request, and then hee took and Catechised them in the faith of Christ and washed them with the font of Baptisme, made them sure in perfect hope to enter the kingdome euertlasting, then were they put to death by the hangman, when after this order all the prouince of great Britaine had receiued the faith of Christ, the Isle of Wight receiued the same also: In which notwithstanding, because of the misery and state of foraine subiection, no man took the degra of the Spinsterie and place of a Bpshope, before Daniel, who was Bpshope of the West Saxons, and of the Genies, Suffer and Hampshire.

The Isle of  
Wight.

Stonestat.

Redford.

The Isle of  
Wight: the last  
that receiued  
the faith.

The situation of this Isle is ouer against the mids of the South Saxons and Genies, the sea comming betwene, of the breadth of three miles, which sea is called Selent: in which, two armes of the Ocean Sea, that brake out from the maine South Sea about Britaine, doe daily meete and violently runne together beyond the mouth of the Riuer Homelen, which runneth along by the Countrey of the Vices that belong to the prouince of the Genies, and so entirely into the foresaid Sea, and after this meeting and striding together of the two Seas, they goe backe and flowe againe into the Ocean from whence they came.

Howe at length (saith Bede) it was determined by a decre in a Synode, Suffer and Hampshire

note, that the prouince of South Saxons, which to that tase appertained to the Dioces of Winchester, where Daniel was Byschoppe, should haue a Sea and Byschoppe of their owne generally, whereupon Cadbert Abbot in the Monastrie of Byschoppe Willfride was made and consecrated first Byschoppe of that Dioces.

After his death Ceolla took the Byschoppicke vpon him: after whose departure the Sea stode vacant many yeres.

## East Angles.



East Angles the third kingdome, contained the Countreies of Norfolk and Suffolke, Cambridge, and the Isle of Ely, which had on the East and North sides the Sea, on the West, Saint Edmondes Dyke, with a part of Hertfordshire, and on the South side Essex. It containeth the Diocesses of Norwich and Ely.

492 **V**ffa the eight from Woden first King of the East Angles, reigned seven yeres.

499 **¶** Titulus reigned 11. yeres.

519 **R**edwaldus the tenth from Woden, as men wyte: this is hee that for the fauour of Edwine, killed Edelfrith king of Northumberland. The same Redwalde was by the perswasion of Edwine baptized, but in vaine, for after by his wifes counsell he fell from the faith againe, his sonne Dorwaldus in pure and vncorrupted Christianitie was slaine by the heathen Roobert. Redwaldus reigned 11. yeres.

554 **G**Erpenwalde sonne to Redwaldus, succeeded in the kingdome of the East Angles, reigned 11. yeres.

569 **S**ebert brother to king Carpenwalde, took vpon him the kingdome, a man sin all pointes learned, and most Christian, who whilste his brother was yet liuing, being himselfe banished into France, was there baptized and instructed in the faith, of which faith he laboured to make all the Realme partakers, as soone as he came to the Crowne. To whose good endeavour, Byschoppe Felix did greatly applie himselfe. Who when hee came from Burgundy (where hee was borne) into Bytanie to Honorius the Archbyschoppe, and had obtained licence of him to preach the worde of God vnto the forsaide East Angles, his zeale and vertuous desire proued not in vaine, for he found in that nation plenteousnesse of fruite, and encrease of people that beloued him. For he brought all this prouince vnto the faith, and workes of iustice, and in the ende to rewarde of perpetuall blessednesse, according to the abode ment of his name, which in Latine is called Felix, and in our English tongue, Happie, he was made Byschop of Dunmoke, or Dunwich, an ancient Cite in Suffolke nowe soe decayed, and as is supposed more then halfe swallowed vp in the Sea.

The common fame, and report of the inhabitants is, that befoze the toliue came

came to decaye, there belonged therunto two and fiftie decaine houses, as 33 parish Churches, Byschoppes, Hospitallies, and Chappells, as manie Cellidnalls, and as manie toppes Shippes. But certayne it is, as appeareth by manifest and sounde recorde which I haue seene, that euen of late time, there was within the sayde Towne fye parish Churches, two houses of Friers, an house which had bene of Templars, two Hospitallies, and thre Chappelles, foure of the parish Churches are now of late swallowed vp in the Sea, and but two of them remaining on the land, to wit, Saint Peters, and all Saintes. The men of Dunwich desiring succour for their Towne against the rage of the sea, affirme that a great peece of a Forrest, sometime thereby, is deuoured and turned to the vse of the Sea.

There hath bene a Spynt, manie men of that Towne can yet thewe of the coines, which are sterling pence, with this inscription, Civitas Dunwic, twenty of which pence waighed an ounce, 12. ounces a pound Troy, and so being 11. s. in money, was both a pound in payment, & also a pound in waight, as is aforesaid. This City was gouerned by a Mayor and thre Bailiffes besides inferior officers, Felix their first Byschop fate 18. yeres, and ended his life there in Anno 649. and was buried at Seham, a place where sometime a great famous monastery stode replenished with religious persons, vnder their Abbat Warfrid, which house was founded by a Noble man named Lutinus, and was wholie subuerted by the Danes: the bodie of Felix was removed to Ramscote. Byschop Felix founded a Church at Radham, which was also amongst other destroyed by the Danes. Felix also founded Schooles at Felixstowe, nowe called Fishcote. After Felix succeeded Thomas, a Deacon, borne in Germany, hee fate nine yeres. After him Beretgillus surnamed Bonifacius, a Kentish man borne, fate seuentene yeres. After him succeeded Bisi, who doted the Sea into two Byschoppickes, to wit, Dunwich, and Helmhaim. Thus much for Dunwich.

Sebert the King being desirous to followe the good order which he had seene in France, set vp Schooles in his kingdome (by the ayde of Felix, whome hee had taken out of Lent for that purpose) appointing masters and teachers to bring by children in learning and vertue, after the manner of the Kentishmen. This Sebert was so inflamed with the loue of heauen, that leaving at the last all affaires of his Realme to the gouernement of his cousin Egike, he became a Monk, and entred a monastrie by him builded, wherein hee bestowed his time in diuine studies, and contemplation: but the bylawish Englishmen with their old Captaine Penda, inuaded his dominions, so that his people after long resistance, finding themselves too weak, they pluckt Sebert out of the monastrie, and brought him against his will vnto the field, whereof the cruell heathen people he was killed, with king Egike, and the whole armie discomfited, about the yere of Christ 652.

**A** Nna the sonne of Ewide brother to Edwald succeeded Egicus, and was likewise slaine by the furie of Penda, Captaine of the Danes, or Unlawful Englishmen, then heathen and vncristened people, when he had reigned nineteene yeres, and was buried at Biddiburg, in which place also

Records D.n.

Soham, nowe called Somers four miles from Ely.

Radham.

Felixstowe.

637

was

was buried his sonne Firminus, but was after translated to S. Edmundsb. ric. He had issue by his wife Herefwida daughter to Herericus the nephew of Ardwine king of Northumbers, sister to Hilda, Etheldred, Ethelburga, and Saxburg. Etheldred daughter to Anna founded the Church of Saint Peter in the Isle of Ely, in the yere of Christ 674, placing there an hundred persons of both sexes, under monasticall habite, and she her selfe became their first Abbesse. This Countrey of Ely is a province of the East English, and containeth about two hundred householdes, and is compassed on eche side, as an Island round about with fens or waters: and for that many Ceeles are taken there, some suppose the said Isle to be called Ely: but other thinke the same to take name of Willowes, whereof the Isle aboundeth. The ground here is verie plentifull of all kinde of fruites, full of pleasant woods and vines, replenished with manie kindes of wilde beastes, foules and fishes, &c.

Aethelhere brother to Anna, succeeded, and both hee and Penda were slaine by Oswin king of the Northumbers, and that deserviedly, because he had ayded Penda against his owne brother, and his kinsman.

Adelwaldus his brother succeeded him with like fortune, and left the kingdom to Aldulfus, Elohboldus and Hisberna, sonnes of the same Aethelhere.

Ethelbert succeeded him: he had by his wife Laenorine a sonne named Ethelbert.

790

**E**thelbertus his son succeeded in the kingdom of the East Angles. This man in his youth much profited in learning, not given to voluptuous pleasures, but to prayers, almes, and other good woorkes, hee was profounde in counsell, mercifull in judgement, and sober in speech, he was at length perswaded to marry, for hee increase of children, whereunto he assented. At length, Offa king of the Mercies, being decreit, when strength failed, for this king Ethelbert, promised him manie great things, but when he had got him into his Pallace, which was at Sutton Wallis three miles from Herefords Northward upon Luggie in Herefordshire, by the counsaile of the said Offas wife, for ambition of his kingdom, caused his head to be stricken off, by one Grimbert a familiar to king Offa, on the eighteenth daie of Maie: his bodie was buried on the bankes of the river Luggie, where now standeth the parish Church of Spaurdine. And so Offa unloosly invaded and obtained the kingdom of the East Angles: but when a Virgin named Alfrede, daughter to Offa, whom Ethelbert should have married, understood thereof, shee willed his servants to haake them into their Countrey, for their Master was beheaded. And being taught by the Holy Ghost, prophesied to her mother in this manner, quoth she, I by some shall not live three yeres, and the kingdom shall be unstable, and thou thy selfe shalt not live in the confession of God over three moneths, but shalt be possessed with a wicked spirit, and shalt cate thine owne tongue, and die an evill death: And it followed (saith mine Author) as the Virgins had spoken: which Virgin vowed to live a religious life, and became an Abbesse at Crowland.

When king Offa heard hereof, he repented him, and caused the boote of Ethelbert to be remooved to Hereford three miles from Kenchester, and from miles

miles from Sutton Wallis, where after ward over him was builded a goodly Church by king Milfride, which Church he endowed with great possessions, and made the same a Bishops See: since which time the Church is dedicated to the said Ethelbert.

At Sutton Wallis there appeareth yet notable ruines of some ancient and great building, and therefore great likelihood that it was sometime the mansion house of king Offa, at such time as Kenchester stode, or else hereof was a beginning. Spaurdine village is about a mile from Sutton Wallis, and hard by is a hill whereas men saie Saint Ethelbert was beheaded. At this village is now a faire Church dedicated to Ethelbert. I thinke he was slaine at Sutton in king Offas house, but his name of Spaurdine seemeth to expresse the martyrs hill.

Kenchester three miles from Herefords Westward, a mile from the bankes of the river. There was a pallace of Offas (as some say) the ruines yet remaine, there hath bene found ditches and fiores. This towne is farre more ancient then Hereford, it standeth on the same side of the river Wale, and three miles or more above Hereford, and was in the Romans time, as appeareth by many things, especially by antique monies of the Cæsars very often found within the towne, & in plowing there about, the which, the people there calleth dwarfe money. The compass of Kenchester hath bin by estimation as much as Hereford, excepting the Castell, the which at Hereford is very spacious: peeces of the walles and towres yet appeare from the foundation: the people of Hereford have setcht much awaie from thence to build withall. The place where the towne was, is all overgrowne with byambles, hazles, and like shrubs, there hath ben found in our time Brytaine byrches, conduites for water, stoned pavements, peeces of golde, and other strange things. To be short, of the decay of Kenchester Hereford rose and flourished.

The towne of Hereford is large and strongly walled, also having a maine Castell, hard by the ripe of Wale: the Castle is thought nigh as great of circuit as Windsoze. The dungeon of the Castle is high, and strong, and in the dike not farre from it is a faire spring called Saint Ethelberts well. Within the Castle in digging hath bene found bones of men of great bignesse, and hard by in the ripe of the bankes also is found the like bones: the wall of the towne is compassed with a dike, alway filled with morish water descending into it: this water refresheth to the bottome of Wale. There be in the town foure parish Churches, one being the Cathedrall Church of a very strong building. So Ethelbert was buried there (but since the Welchmen destroyed the towne in king Edward the Confessors time, his reliques have not bene seene there) there be in the suburbs two parish Churches, there hath bene a cell of blacke Monkes, and two houses of friars black and gray. Some say that this towne take the name of an olde ford or passage over Wale, not farre from the castle: some say it was called Fernlege, or Fernehill: and the place where the cathedrall church now is, was a chapel of our Lady called Fernlege. Thus much for Hereford.

After Ethelbert, seve men of might reigned in east England, by means of the violence

John Capgrave.

Giraldus Cambrensis.  
Osberr de Clero.  
Sutton Wallis.

Spaurdine.

Kenchester.

violence done by the Mercians, untill Edmund boine in Sarouie, in the Citie of Northenberge sonne to king Alkemon and Quene Syware. In which time reigned in East Angles a king named Offa, who minting a voyage to the holy land, took his journey through Sarouie, there to visite his cousin Alkemon, and his nephew Edmond, which Edmond hee adopted to be his heire of East Angles. Nowe it so happened, that the saide Offa, having accomplished his voyage at the holy sepulture, and returning, deceased at Port Saint George, having before sent his ring to Edmond, making him gouernor of the East Angles, his father Alkemon provided him of men famous by experience, both in armes and gentleness; he had also clearkes circumspect & wise, to counsell him; he stuffed his ships with men and victuall: which thing done, and leaue taken of his father and mother, he sailed, and landed in East England, at a place called Spaydenboure, where falling on his knees, he made deuoute prayer vnto God, that his coming thither might be to him acceptable, and to all the countrey profitable. And not farre from thence he builded a rovall Towre, which to this day is called Hunstantone, which betokeneth sweetnesse and great might: there he helde his householde nigh one yere, and then remoued to the Saron tounge, where he remained one whole yere, and learned his psalter in the Saron tongue, which booke was referred in the lienestrie of the Monasterie of Saint Edmundsbury, till the same Church was suppressed in the reigne of king Henry the eight, as I haue bene credibly informed.

Edmond reigned xv. yeres, in whose time Hinguar and Hubba, Danish kings, entring the prouince of the Northumbers, raged ouer all the same, and made great spoiles. Hinguar hauing gotten a great pray, left Hubba, and with his Raue sailed into East Angles, and arrived at a certaine Citie ther called bynawares to the Citizens, set it on fire, and slew both man, woman and child. This wicked Hinguar toke Edmond king of that prouince, in a village then called Heglidune, nere to a wood bearing the same name, where this holle Edmond being constant in the Christian faith, was first by the Pagans beaten with bats, then scourged with whips, he still calling on the name of Iesus: his aduersaries in a rage shot him full of shafts, and then smote off his head and threw it into a bush: after which time the Angles ceased to reigne in the East Angles, but the same was possessed by Danes, till fiftie yeres after, that Edward the sonne of Etheldred did expulse the Danes, and toynd that prouince, and also the East Saxons, to his kingdome of the West Saxons.

## East Saxons.



After the fourth kingdome contained Essex, Middlesex, and Hertfordshire, being bounded on the East with the German Ocean, on the South with the riuer Thames, on the West with Colne, and on the North with Stowe, which at this date parteth Suffolke from Essex: it containeth the diocesse of London.

Erchenwine,

Erchenwine, the eight from Woden, from whom all the Saxons deriued their genealogies, first erected this Countrey to a kingdome, which neuertheless he held as feodarie to the kings of Kent, who were as yet the very Queraigns of the whole Countrey from Thames to Humber. And as we haue specified, Voriger yielded seizon to Hengist for his deliuerie, when 6 yeres of the Wyrtines were slaine on Salisbury plaine, and he taken prisoner.

Sleda the sonne of Erchenwine succeeded his father in the gouernment, and to establish the state more sure, married Ricula the daughter of Ermenich king of Kent, and enioyed his gouernment so quietly, that he ministred small matter to Historiographers.

Ebert the sonne of Sleda by Ricula, ruled this kingdome after his father. The second yere of his reigne, which was the yere of Christ 604 Augustine Archbishop of Canterburp, consecrated two Bishops, the one named Miletus, the other Iustus, Miletus hee appointed to preach to the people of the East Saxons, which are separate from Kent with the riuer of Thamis, & are fast toynd to the East sea, whose chiefe Citie is London, a princely port town, of many people, arriving thither by sea and land. Nowe as some as this prouince, by the preaching of Miletus, had receiued the word of truth.

Ethelbert king of Kent builded in the Citie of London S. Pauls Church, wherein Miletus and his succedours were appointed euer after to haue their Sea. Iustus was ordained Bishop of Rochester in Kent, where king Ethelbert builded the Church of S. Andrew the Apostle, and gaue many goodly gifts to the Bishops of both Churches. Which Ethelbert in his Charter to the Church of S. Paul, hath these wordes: *Adilbertus Rex, Deo inspirante, pro anime sue remedio dedit Episcopo Miletio terram que appellatur Tillingham ad monasterium sue solatium scilicet S. Pauli. Ego Rex Ethelbert ita firmiter concedo tibi praesuli Miletio potestatem eius habendi & possidendi, ut in perpetuum in monasterio uolente permaneat, &c.*

Afterward king William the first, surnamed Conquerour, by his Charter, confirming the lands given by the saide Ethelbert king of Kent, to the saide Church of Saint Paul in London, hath these wordes: *Wilhelmus Rex Anglorum omnibus fidelibus suis Francis & Anglis de Middlesex salutem. Sciatis, quod concedo Deo & sancto Paulo suisque seruitoribus 24. hidos quos Rex Ethelbertus dedit ecclesie sancti Pauli iuxta ciuitatem London, quando eam fundauit, in perpetuum liberam esse, & solutam & quietam de Dane-gildis & omnibus alijs gildis, & ab omni expeditione, & ab omni opere, & uolo, & firmiter precipio, ut bene & honorifice, & in pace teneant, & ne aliquis super hoc eis iniuriam vel contumeliam faciat. Teste Lanfranco archiepiscopo, &c.* Moreover, besides this confirmation aboute saide, the same king William gaue vnto the Church of Saint Paul in London, and vnto Mawrice then Bishoppe thereof, the Castell of Stotford, or Stotford in Essex, and all thinges which belonged thereto, and namely, the land which William the Deacon, and Ralph the brother held of the king. Thus much for the foundation of Saint Pauls Church in London, founded by Ethelbert king of Kent, and constructed by king William the Conquerour.

King

I. Prington.

Hunstantone.

Griffbrough.

870

Affricus.

Albo Flori.  
accens.

King Edmond  
cruelly marti-  
red by the  
Danes.

527

Scade.

587

603

Erbert first  
christian king  
of the East  
Saxons.

Saint Pauls  
church in Lon-  
don builded.

Stotford in  
Essex.

king Sebert, by the perswasion of king Ehelbert his uncle, and through the preaching of Miletus, having embraced Christianitie, was baptised by the same Miletus, and immediately, to shewe himselfe a Christian, built a church to the honour of Saint Peter, on the west side of London in a place, which because it was overgrown with thornes, and environed with waters, the Saxons at that time called it *Athorney*, and now of the monastrie, and west situation thereof, is called *Westminster*. In this place long before was a temple of Apollo (as Sulcardus writeth) which being overthrowne with an earthquake, Lucius then built thereon a Church for the Christians. Sebert (when he had reigned thirtene yeres) died, and was buried in the Church which he had built, with his wife Aethelgoda, whose bodies manie yeres after, to witte, in the time of Richard the second (late Thomas Walsingham) were translated from the olde Church to the newe at Westminster, and there entered.

Westminster  
founded.  
Sulcardus.

T. Walsingham.

616

Serred, Seward and Sigbert, sonnes of Sebert, jointly (as it seemeth) then ruled Essex, men wickedlie given, irreligious, and deadly enemies to the Christian profession: who presumed contemptuously to the Table of the Lords supper, being not baptised: and because Miletus would not permit them to be partakers of the christian sacrament, they expelled him from his See at London, but shortly after Serred encountering with the West Saxons, was slain with both his brethren by king Kingesles.

Sigbert (surnamed the Little, sonne of Seward succeeded in this kingdom, and left the same to Sigbert his kinsman.

Bede.

Sigbert sonne to Sigbalde, brother to Sebert, then ruled in Essex, by the perswasion of Oswy king of Northumbers, abandoned all superstition, and became a christian, and took an holie man Ced with him, who did mightily brate downe errors, and wanne many by preaching the christian religion in his dominions, whereupon Ced was by Finan consecrated Bishop of the East Saxons, and then proceeded with more authoritie in his function, ordering priestes and Deacons in all places of Essex, but especially at Thancester and Silberie.

Thancester  
and Silberie  
Cities in Essex.

This Citie of Thancester, stode on the banke of the river Pante, that runneth by Maldene in the Hundred of Dansey, but now that Citie is drowned in Pante, so that nothing remaineth but the ruines of the Citie in the said river. Silberie standeth on the Thames side.

Ralph Cogshall.

In the good proceedings of Sigbert, he was slain by a kinsman of his own, upon none other occasion, but for that he used too much clemencie towards his enemies, as the murderers themselves confessed.

Swidelin son of Sexbald succeeded then in his regiment, who was baptised by Ced in a town of the kings called Wendlesham in East England; Edelwald king of the East Angles, brother to Anna, was his godfather at the font.

Sigher then ruled with Sebba or Sebbi, although they were also under the allegiance of Wulhere king of the middle Englishmen. This province being visited with a great plague and mortallitie, Sigher with the people unto whom he ruled, forsaking Christs religion, fell to Apostasie, for both the king himselfe,

himselfe, and many of his people, as well of the nobles as of the meaner sort, beganne to renew their temple, which had stood desolate, they worshipped their Idoles, as though they could by that means have escaped the mortallitie. But Sebbi his companion, with all under him, persevered devoutly in the faith, and he ended his life in great felicitie, as we shall hereafter declare. Wulhere the king understanding part of his dominions to fall from the faith, for to call them backe againe, sent unto them Iarumanus the bishop of Lichfield, (successor to Trunihere, who by much labour and diligence, being a man of great vertue, painefull and zealous (as a certaine priest waiting then upon him, and helping him in preaching the Gospell reported unto Bede) brought them to the faith againe, both the king and all his people, so that abandoning, and overthrowing downe their Temples and Altars, they opened againe the churches, confessed gladly the name of Christ, and chose rather in hope of resurrection to die, then in the filth of idolatrie to live. Which being so brought to passe, their priestes and instructors returned home with much joy and comfort.

Theodore Archbishop of Canterbury appointed Erkenwald to be bishop of the East Saxons in the citie of London. This Erkenwald, in the yere of Christ 677. before he was made bishop, had builded two goodly monasteries, one for himselfe at Crotsey in the Isle of Crote in Surrey, by the river of Thames: and another for his sister Edilburge, in a place called Berching in Essex, for his sister Ethelburge she was first Abbas there. Sebbi king of the East Saxons (as is aforesaid) a man very devout and goodly, being given to often praise, and charitable almes giving, esteeming the solitary and monasticall life, before all the riches and honors of a kingdom, which kind of life he had long time before taken, & had given by his kingdom, had not his wife refused to be separated from him. And therefore some men thought (as it had bene often said) that a man of such a nature and well disposed minde, was more meete to be made a bishop then a king. Now when this soldier of the Ecclesiasticall kingdom had passed a xxx. yeres in his temporall raigne, at length he died: but first he admonished his wife, that then at the least they should wholly give themselves both together to serve God, whereas they could no longer now enjoy or serve the world together. Which thing, when he had with much ado obtained of her, he came to his bishop of London, named Waldhere, who had succeeded Erkenwald, and at his hands received the habite of religion, which hee had long desired, to wit, of a Monk, for at that time were Monks in the Church of St. Paul in London, as writeth Radulphus Dediceto and other.

Chertsey and  
Berching  
founded.

So this Bishop he brought a great summe of money to be bestowed and given to the poore, reserving nothing at all for himselfe, but rather desiring to remaine poore in spirite for the kingdom of Heaven. And when he perceived the day of his death to be at hand, because his foresaide sickness grewe still upon him, for the princely and banke courage that he had, he beganne to feare least at his death, through bitter paine, he might hap, either to utter with his mouth, or with his body do any thing that were not decent for his person, he sent for the bishop of London, where he also then continued, and desired him that at his departing out of this world, there should be no more present but him-  
selfe.

King Sebba  
a Monk in  
Pauls  
Church.  
Radul Dediceto.

King Sebbi  
buried in  
Pauls church  
at London.

selfe, and two of his Chaplaines: which thing when the Bishop had promised glablie to do, the third day after he gaue by the ghost, and was buried in a coffin of stone, and laid in the Church of the blessed Apostle Saint Paul, by whose good lessons hee had bene taught to labour, and long for the toyes of heauen.

Sigehard sonne of Sebbi, then reigned ouer the East Saxons for a time, and after him his brother Seofide.

Seofide sonne to Sebbi, and brother to Sigehard, reigned next successuallie, of whome I find nothing recorded of his auns.

Offa the sonne of Sigher then ruled this prouince, hee enlarged with building, and enriched with lands the Church of Westminster, and then forsaking his wife Genesuede Pendaes daughter, lands, kinne, and countrey, he went to Rome with Kenred king of Mercia, and Edwine Bishoppe of Worcester, and there in a Spontane came ended this life, leaving Seled to rule his country.

Seled (whome other call Colred) peaceable after Offa reigned in Essex thirtie yeres, and at length was slaine.

Seled after Seled was slaine, reigned in Essex: but Egbert king of the West Saxons, the very yere that hee conquered Kent, subdued also this Sussex, annexed Essex to his kingdom: yet London with the countrie continuing about it, came not in subiection to the West Saxons, but obeyed the king of Mercia, as long as that kingdom continued.

Sigehrike and Sigehard after wards aspired to the kingdom of the East Saxons, but with no good successe, and so that kingdom ceased,

### Mercians.



Mercia the fifth kingdom and greatest of the other, contained Gloucester, Hereford, Chester, Stafford, Worcester, Oxford, Marlborough, Darby, Leicester, Buckingham, Northampton, Nottingham, Lincoln, Bedford, Huntingdon, and part of Hartford shires. It had on the West side, the river Dee fall by Chester, and Severne fall by Shrotonbury into Wirslow: in the East, the East sea: in the South, Thames into London: in the North the river Humber, and so Westward, downe to the river Merce, unto the conner of Wykehall.

This kingdom of Mercia in the beginning was departed into thrie partes, into West Mercia, middle Mercia, and East Mercia: it containeth the diocesses of Lincoln, Worcester, Hereford, Coventry and Lichfield.

Reda (the eleuenth from Woden) first king of the Mercians reigned tenne yeres.

Wibba his sonne reigned twenty yeres,

Ceorlus his sonne reigned ten yeres.

Penda the sonne of Wibba, a man active in wars, a frantike and most wicked man, took on him the kingdom of the Mercians, when he was thirtie yeres olde: hee shooke the Cities, and disturbed the borders of the kingdom.

here his olde countrey men boie: hee slawe Edwine and Oswald, kings of Northumberland, (where Oswald was slaine is now situate the Towne of Oswalstre, which of him take that name) he also slawe Sigbert, Egfride, and Anna, kings of the East Angles, which all were of holie life and conuersation: hee banished Kenwallus king of West Saxons, but in the ende, himselfe was slaine by Osfin which succeeded Oswald his brother, when hee had reigned thirtie yeres.

Peda the sonne of Penda, succeeded in part of the kingdom which was called middle England, who coming after to Osfine king of Northumberland, requited his daughter Alsfede to wife, which sute he obtained, vpon condition he would receiue the christian faith, and be baptized: and so hee receiued Baptisme at the hands of Bishop Finan, in a famous Towne of the kinges called Ad murum, by the Herts wall, twelue miles from the East Sea, from whence he returned home with 4. priestes, notable for learning and vertue, which should instruct and baptize his people. These preached the worde of God, and were gladly heard, whereby manie dauple, as well noble, as of the base sorte, renounced their filthie idolatrie, and were baptized. Neether king Penda father to the yong Prince did withstand the preaching of the Gospell in his dominion, but persecuted such as bare the names of christians, and liued not accordingly, saying, that such men were wretched which regarded not to serue the God in whom they professed to beleeue. These things began thus two yeres before the death of Penda.

In the daies king Osfine, after often and cruel inuasions of the heathen tyrant Penda, forced of necessitie offered manie and most precious iewels, with an infinite summe of treasure, to redeeme quiet and peace to his Countrey, but the barbarons tyrant, pursuing his deadly enterprise, and protesting bitterly to extinguish the whole nation from the highest to the lowest. King Osfine called to God for help against his enemies, bowing, that if he had the upper hand, his yong daughter should be consecrated to God in perpetuall virginittie, and twelue farme places with the land, should be converted to the erecting of monasteries. When preparing himselfe to battell, with a verie small armie, the army of the Heathen reported to be thirtie fold as manie, hee overcame them: and this is to be noted as a great helpe to the Christians, that whereas the field was fought nigh to the river Turuent, the saide river did at that time so overflowe the banks and felles about, that in the sight of the heathen more were drowned then perished by the sword. And thus was king Pendaes poluer overcome, and himselfe slaine, when he had reigned 92. yeres cruelle thirtie yeres. This Penda (saith Ingulphus) had sonnes that were most devout maintainers of Christian religion, to wit, Peda, Vifere, Ethelred, Marwald, and Mercelin, and daughters, Knisburge and Kenelwith, both for holie conuersation excellent. The foresaid battell was fought by king Osfine, in the countrey of Leid, the thirtieth yere of his reigne, the yere of Christ 659. the sixtieth daie of November. Osfine hauing obtained this victory, rendered due thanks therefore to God, gaue his daughter Alsfede to be brought vp and consecrated to perpetuall virginittie, and also the twelue possessions promised hee performed.

Ad murum by  
Barkwith.

A notable saying of a Mercian Prince.

Ingulphus.

Rich. Ciocke.

718  
Ri. Grinceltri.

748

586

595

616

626

W. Malmel.

The Lady Elfrida entred the monastery of Harteseye, to bee brought by under Hilda the Abbess, and afterward builded for her selfe a monastrie in a place called Strenshalt thirty miles from Poche, and was there buried.

Strenshalt  
founded.

Oswine now reigning ouer the Mercies, and ouer the South people of England, subdued also the places, for the most part, to his allegiance: he founded Lichfield, and procured it to be a Cathedrall Church of that province: Dwin was first Bishop of Mercia, also of Lindsey; for there were then so fewe Priests, that one Bishop was compelled to gouerne two Provinces. This Dwin was a Scottish man, and gouerned the Church of Lichfield two yere, and died at fepping. The seconde Bishopp was Cellaeh, a Scot, who ere long lefte his Bishoppicke, and went to Lindesferne. The thirde was Thrumhere an Englishman, who was also Abbot of Ingehtling, a monastery builded there this king Oswine was slaine. The fourth was Iarman. The fift was Cedda, who was buried at Lichfield, though hee had founded an Abbey at Lindsey, in a place called Cheare. The sixt was Winifrohus. The seuenth Sexulfus a great builder of Peterborough Abbey: after whose deceale, two Bishops ruled the province of kingdome of Mercia, to wit, Winifrede at Chester, and Heda at Lichfield, after Winifred was reioiced: and Hilda fate alone, and died in the yere of Christ 721. 4c. Noie concerning the name of Lichfield. Iohn Rouse saith there was in Biptaine a great number of Chelicans, which hearkened to the preaching of Amphibal (Instructor of Albon) martyred and slayne in a place at Lichfield, called *Cadaverum campus*, a place of dead bodies, &c. This towne, for the most part, standeth upon a lode and equall ground, onely the close and the cathedrall church, with a long strate, that lieth north on the bidge of the Towne, is somewhat upon a high ground: there is no token that euer the Towne was walled: a ditch was made in a part of the Towne by Langton Bishop of Lichfield. There hath bene a castell of auncient time, but no part of it standeth: the place of the ditch is sene, and is yet called Castell-furche. In the maine Towne, which is a faire largething, be thre parish churches, S. Maries, a right beautifull peece of worke, in the berie market heade, whereas was a Colde or brother hoo, begunne about king Edward the thirde time, and since much encreased by one Heywood, Deane of Lichfield. Saint Nicholas in the South-east ende of the Towne: Stowe Church in the East ende of the Towne, whereas is Saint Ceddes Well, a thing of pure water, where is sene a stone in the bottoime, on the which (some saie) that Cedde was wont to stande and praye. At this stone Cedde had his Maroey in the time of Vicer king of the Mercians: at which time, all the countrie about Lichfield was a forest and wildeernes. There was an house of Saint Iohn in the berie South ende of the Towne, where in was a Master and fellowes. Smith Bishop of Couentrie and Lichfield, in king Henrie the seuenths dayes, and afterwarbes Bishop of Lincoln, beganne a newe foundation at this place, setting vp a Master, two Priests, and tenne poore men in an Hospitall, bee set there also a Schoole master and an Usher to teach a Grammar schole. King Henrie the seuenth gaue onto it an olde Hospitall called Denhall in Wyzehall in Cheshire, with the lands

Lindsey.

Rouse.

Lichfield.

and the impropriation of Burton Church in Wyzehall: there was an house of gray friars in the South-west parte of the Towne, Alexander Bishop of Lichfield was the founder of it. There cometh a conduite of water out of an hill to the Towne, and hath two caisterles, one in the East wall of the friars close, and the other about the market place, besides water to serue the close and the Prebendes houses. There was a faire olde Crosse, enuironed with steppes in the market place: Denton Deane of Lichfield compassed this Crosse with eight faire Arches of stone, making a rounde vault ouer them for market folkes to stande vnder in, it did cost him a hundred and thyselcore poundes. The South part of Lichfield is diuided from the South part with thre ponde or lakes, whereof both the two first lying by west, are nothing so great as the thirde that lyeth by East: there bee diuers Springes in these podes, but the principall Spring is a brooke that entereth into them and feedeth them, coming from Dwe about a mile and halfe by West from Lichfield: the first westward pole is diuided from the second pole by a great maine causeway, walled on eue side with stone, and in this causeway be Arches of stone for the water to issue into the second pole: and this causeway serueth to come out of the South part of the Towne into the North. This causeway was last made by Langon Bishop of Lichfield. There is also a stone causeway, and an issue for the water betwixt the second pole and the third, leading out of the Towne hard to the South gate of the close of the Cathedrall Church: and on the East side of it, is a faire Mill, this causeway is little more then a quarter so long as the first. The third pole that lyeth by West, is a berie faire thing, and plentifull of fish, and goeth in length about halfe a mile or euer the whole water be drayne into a narrowe bottoime, that thre miles lower goeth into Trent, by the right riue.

The Cathedrall Church of Lichfield being first erected by king Oswyne, was of later times renouated and dedicated to Saint Mary and Saint Cedde. The whole close of the cathedrall church was newly ditched and walled by Bishop Langon, and he made one gate of a maiestie, and great strength at the West part of the close, and an other, but a lesse gate, at the Southeast part of the close: he made also the Bishops pallace, at the East end of the close: he made Collesball castell, Sheborowhe manour place, and the pallace by Strond at Alonon, besides many other great aces, he was treasurer to king Edward the first. The Prebendaries in the close be very faire builded. The Choristers haue a goodly house lately builded by Bishop Blyche. Faire well a small priorie of Runnes, suppressed by Thomas Wolsey Archbishop of Poche, and giuen to Lichfield, in recompence of a pension that should haue bene giuen out of his college in Eford, was impropriate to the Choristers of Lichfield. The Librarie, at the North-west part of the Cathedrall Church was erected by Thomas Haywood, Deane of Lichfield. The glorie of the Church is the worke of the West ende, that is exceeding costly and faire. There be thre pyramides of steeles of stone, two at the west ende, and one in the midst of the church. That parte of the Towne that lyeth by South the great causeway or bidge, is but one faire strate in length. And thus much for the Citie of Lichfield: all

which sprang of the Monasterie there. King Oswyne came to Peda sonne to Penda, because hee married king Oswynes daughter as is afore thewed, the kingdome of the South marches, divided by the river of Trent from the north marches.

Peda nowe king of Mercia, being also the first Christian king of that kingdome, beganne to plant Christianitie, throwing downe, and destroying the Idoles, and erecting Churches of Christian Religion. Among the which, hee beganne the foundation of Weddhamstede, nowe called Peterborough; but hee raygned not long, for hee was trayterously slaine, by the means of Alfhede his wife, in the feast of Easter in the yere of Christ 657. And king Oswyre three yeres after his great victorie ouer the cruell Pagan Penda, the Nobilitie of the Mercians Lumin, Eaba, and Eadbert rebelled against him, advancing to the Crowne Vlfere brother to Peda.

Vlfere brother to Peda, earnestly preferred christianity, which his brother had begunne, but he was the first (sayeth William of Malmesburie,) that through the sinne of Symonie, solde the Episcopie of London unto Wyna.

I reade in a Legar Booke of the Monasterie of Peterborough, that Vlfere king of Mercia, remaining at his Castell of Ulstercester in Staffordshire, and understanding that his sonne Vlfade, had led his brother Rufe to Chad (under colour of hunting) by whome they were both instructed in the Christian faith, and had receaved Baptisme, hee by perswasion of Werobode, goeth to the Synagoge of the Iolic man, where finding both his kinsmen in devout contemplation, hee killed them with his owne handes, whose Bodies Ermenhelde the Quene their mother did burie in a Sepulchre of stone, and in proceesse of time, caused a Church of stone there to bee builded: which place was after called Stones, by reason of the stones which the multitude brought thither for the building thereof, when they came to frequent the place.

But Vlfere after, repenting thereof, destroyed all the Temples of the Idoles, and in place of the same did build Churches and Monasteries, among the which hee bestowed great coſt on Weddhamstede, enriching it with large possessions.

This Church standeth in the Prouince of Gertwor: such as inhabit the Fennes, and maie not bee come thitho, except on the East side: on the South side whereof doth run the River of Fenne, in the midst of the which course is a place, as it were, a Chirkpole, which is so deepe and colde, that in the Summer none can swimme o' vnto the bottome, and yet it is never frozen in the Winter: (as they saie) there is a Fountaine, out of the which issueth water, which place the Ancients did name Weddewell, of which the Monasterie built hard by was called Weddhamstede, which the three brethren, Peda, Vlfere, and Ethelred, the sonnes of Penda, with their sisters, Kenesburg, and Keneswith, and king Oswyne did build from the foundation. But Peda in the yere of Christ 675. with the devout multitude, by the help of Sexulfus first Abbot there, began this monastery, & laid y foundation there, of such stones as hee poked open could scarce draw one of them, which stones were same when the monastery

Vingo de Peterborough.  
Peda the first Christian king of Mercia.

662

Ulstercester.

Vlfere now his owne sonnes.  
Bishop of Stones in Staffordshire.

Weddhamstede.  
Peterborough.

Weddewell.

monastery was burned. This Church was destroyed by the Danes, as all other monasteries were, & so remained 96. yeres, til the time that Ethelwald bishop of Essex coming into a place called Undal: Dundal, began there to make a new foundation, but after coming to Weddhamstede, which he found desolate, by the helpe of king Edgar and Adolphus his Chancelour, hee did newe repaire the monastery there: and the monastery at Dundal was made a parish church. In Anno 1117. this monastery of Weddhamstede with the whole Towne was burnt, but in the yere after begunne to bee newe builded by Abbot Iohn from the foundation, and the Monkes entred againe in the yere 1140. King Vikere raygned 17. yeres, and was buried at Lichfelde: Ermeneld his wife, after his decease became a Nun at Ely, under her mother Sexburg.

Ethelred brother to Vlfere succeeded in the kingdome of the Mercians: he obtained a Bishops See to be in the citie of Worcester: Boscellus was first Bishop there: Egwinus was the second. This Egwinus, by the helpe of Kenedus king of the Mercies founded the monastery of Euxham, in a place then called Couetham, of the Shepheardes field and boole, purchased by the said Bishop. The Towne in the Saxons time was called Ipoetholme. About the same time two Noblemen Odo and Dodo founded the priory of Etwelberie. Alfo Olficke Duke of Gloucester founded the monastery of Gloucester, the first Monks: since the same is a Bishops See. Ethelred became a Monk at Bardoney in Lincolnshire, when he had raygned 30. yeres.

Kenedus sonne to Wollerus, in the 6. yere of his raygne went to Rome, & became a Monk in the Church of S. Peter the Apostle, where he continued in fasting, prayer, and almes giving, untill his dying daie.

Ethelred the sonne of Ethelred, who as he was marvellous in prowesse against the West Saxons, so was he miserable by untimely death, for hee raygned not past 8. yeres, and was buried at Lichfelde.

Ethelbald raygned in continuall peace many yeres, and then by the procurement of Beuredus, was slaine of his owne tabicides. Unto this Ethelbald Boniface, the second Bishop of Atriche in Holland, after Archbishop of Spire upon the Rhene an Englishman borne, who was afterward martyred, for the profession of Christ and his holie Gospell, sent an Epistle, of the which I will here set downe a peece to bee seene, so that it sheweth patly the state of that time then present, and serveth for example in time to come.

This most dere Lord, and to be preferred in the love of Christ above all other kings of England, Edbaldus, Boniface Archbishop, the Germane Legate perpetual health of charitie and love in Christ. We acknowledge before God, that wee did reioice to heare of your prosperitie, your sayth and god woorkes: and wee bee sory when we heare any thing that goeth against you, eyther in successe of warre, or in danger of your soule, for we have heard, that you forbid theft and robbery, that you love peace, defende the widowe and the poore, for the which wee give God thanks: but in that you cease lawfull marriage, which if it were to the preferring of chastitie, it were commendable: and sith you wallow in lecherie and adultery with Virgins consecrate to God, it is both shamefull and damnable, for it doeth confounde you renowme, both

Dundal in Northamptonshire.

675

Bishops see of Worcester.  
Euxham.

Lib. Tewkt.  
Etwelberie.  
Monastery of Gloucester  
Interpretation  
Gloucester.

706

710

718

Chronicle of Holland.  
Ro. Mai.

Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbald.



before GOD and man, placing you among Idolaters, because you violate the Temple of GOD. Wherefore my deare sonne repent, and remember how filthy a thing it is, that thou, who by the gift of God raignest ouer so many nations, shouldst to the great displeasure of God, make thy selfe a bondslau to thine owne fleshly lust. We haue heard also, that the more part of noble men and people of the Mercians, by thine euill example, haue left their lawfull wiues, and haue defiled the wiues of other, and also Virgins, which, howe farre it differeth from all good order and honestie, let the Lawes of strange Nations teach you: for in the ancient Countrey of the Saxons (where was no knowledge of GOD) if either a maide in her fathers house, or being married to an husband, were become an aduoutresse, she should be strangled by her owne hand closed to her mouth, and the corrupter should be hanged vpon the pit where the aduoutresse was buried. If she were not so used (her garments being cut awaie vnto the girdle) the chaste Matrones did scourge and whippe her, and picke her with knives, and so was sent from Towne to Towne, where other flesh and new scourgers or whippers did more and whip her, vntill they had killed her. Likewise the Comedians, who are the most uncleane kinde of people, had this manner of blage with them, that the husband being dead, the woman, together with the dead body should cast her selfe headlong into the fired stake or pile of wood prepared for the burning of their bodies. If therefore the Gentiles (not knowing God) had so great zeale to chastitie, how much more (my deare sonne) is it to be required at thy hands, who art a Christian and a King? Haue therefore compassion of thine owne soule, and spare the great number of the people, that by thy fatherly example yet maie beware to offend God, for whose soules thou shalt giue an account. Consider also, that if the English Nation, despising lawfull matrimonie, doe encrease by aduoutrie, (as the Frenchmen, Italians, and also the verie Pagans doe cast in our teeth and hypraise vs withall,) of such continuations and copulations, shall spring by a peashy barbaric people, which shall despise God, and with their wicked qualities vndoe the Countrey, as it came to passe to the Burgundians, the people of France, and the Spaniards, whome the Saracens haue manie yerres assaulted for their sinnes which in times past they had committed. Besides this, it is tolde vs, that you take awaie priuiledges of Churches, and the rebey giue euill example vnto poor noble men to doe the like: but I pray you remember howe terrible vengeance God toke vpon the kings your predecessors, which committed such offences as we rebuke you for.

A wicked spiritte came vpon Solredus your predecessour, which was a defiler of Virgins, and a breaker of Ecclesiasticall priuiledges, for sitting roially among his Barons at a dinner, the Duell plucked awaie his soule without confession of his sinnes. The Duell also dwelt in such a rage, Othodus king of the Northumbres, which was guiltie of the same crimes, that with a vile death he lost both his kingdome and life in his lustie young age. Also Charles king of France which destroyed Churches, and altered the Church maner to his owne vse, was consumed with a long torment and fearefull death.

It

It followeth therefore (my deare beloued sonne) that with fatherly and earnest prayers wee beseech you, that you will not despise the Counsell of your fathers which diligentlie doe admonish your Highnesse, for nothing is more commodious to a good king, then willingly to amend such faults when hee is warned of them, as Salomon saith, Who so loueth Discipline, loueth Wisdome. Therefore (my deare sonne) declaring our aduice, we beseech you by the liuing God, by his sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, and by his holie spiritte, that you will remember howe transitorie this present life is, and howe short and momentane the pleasure of this fleshie flesh is, and howe vile and shamefull a thing it is, that man shall leane euill examples to his posteritie for euer: beginne therefore to frame your life in better waies, and amend the errors of your youth, that you may obtaine praise with men in this life, and eternall glorie in the life to come: We with your Highnesse well to fare, & to encrease in all godnesse.

Moreover, the same Bonifacius sent an Epistle of the like tenor vnto Cuthbert Archbishop of Canterbury, adding therunto, that he should rebuke the Clerges and Junnes for their finenes, and pompe of apparel and garmente. He also willed Cuthbert not to maruaile that he mebled with other mens matters, nor to thinke it no part of his charge, to deale with the English Nation, but to vnderstand that Gregorie Bishop of Rome had bounde him, by the Sacrament whise receiued, to let him vnderstand, of the maners and vsages of the Nations about him: which indeede (he saide) he would doe, if his gentle admonition toke not good successe.

The Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbalde toke such effect, that Ethelbalde forthwith sending to the Archbishop Cuthbert, and other his Clergie and nobilitie, by their counsell, amongst other things he caused to be published, as followeth:

I Ethelbalde King of the Mercians, foreséeing that I ought to prouide for the kingdome euerlasting, and the remedie of my soule, that I may be liuer it from the bondage of sinne. And forasmuch as Almighty GOD, by his mercifull clemencie, without any of my deserts going before, hath giuen me the Scepter of the kingdome, gladly therefore will I render vnto him of the things which he hath giuen me, and for this cause I glue this gifte by my life time.

That all Churches of my kingdome shall be discharged of all manner of tribute, in workes, and burdens, except it be in the building of Towers, Castles, and Bridges, which cannot be released vnto any. Moreover, that seruitours of Monasteries and Churches, shall haue their owne proper libertie in the profite of woods, & of fieldes, and shall not be bound to giue any reward vnto the king or Princes, except they will, but shall be free that they maie serue God, &c.

This Councell or conuocation was holden by Cuthbert the Archbishoppe of Cantuarie, and the other Bpshoppes and Brelates, in the yere of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ, seven hundred, fourtie, and seven, and was in the thre and thirtie part of Ethelbalde king of the Mercians, who then

F. 4.

was

aduoutrie among Infidels punished by death.

W. Malmef.  
Articles for  
the Church of  
England.

was present with his Princes and Dukes, where then there was assembled out of diuers provinces of Brittain, Bishops and other spiritual persons, and the writings of Pope Zacharie were read in two partes, where with he did admonish the people of England to liue more continually, and threatened that the despisers of his commandments should be excommunicated: whereupon the Bishops and Prelates agreed vpon certaine Articles, as foloweth:

That the Prelates should liue more carefully and warne their fabiects.

That they should liue in one peaceable mind, although they liued separate in houses.

That euery pære they should visite their parishes and charge.

That euery one in his iurisdiction warne the Abbots and Monkes to liue orderly, and the Bishops not to oppresse their fabiects, but to cherish them.

That they also see that the Monasteries, the secular men that can not be taken away, be decently ordered.

That none be admitted to orders, unless his life before be well examined.

That the reading of holy Scriptures be frequented in the Monasteries.

That the Bishops be not buyers and sellers in worldly affaires.

That the Priests receiue no reward for baptizing of children and other Sacraments.

That they learne and teach in English the Lordes prayer and the Credo.

That al do finish their ministry after one & same manner in their churches.

That they sing seruaice in the Churches with labor voice.

That the solemnization of our Lord, and the byth daies of Saintes be solemnized at one and the same time.

That the Sunday be kept honourably holy.

That intercession be made for kings and rulers, &c. In all xxx. Articles.

Ethelbald founded the Monasterie of Crowland, and because the marsh of this Crowland, as the very name declareth (for it signifieth cruddy ground and mpyie) was not able to beare a stone building, the fornamed king caused many and mighty piles of Oake to bee dymen into the ground, and commanded hard earth to be brought thither nine miles off by water in boates, from the higher ground, and to be mingled with the marsh, and in this sorte he laid the foundation, and finished the Church of stone.

When Ethelbald had reigned xli. yeres, fighting against Cuthred, in the war not prudentlie begun, vpon Segiswald, or Secondone (as some say) thre miles from Tamworth, he was slaine of the tyrant Barred, and was buried at Wipendine or Wipon, at that time a famous monasterie.

Eareadus the murderer of Ethelbald did nothing worthy the remembrance, but was slaine by Offa, and had an end made for a traitor.

Offa nephew to Ethelbald succeded: hee toynded battell with Kinculfus King of the West Saxons, and got the victorie. He sent for Ethelbert King of the East Angles, promising great things by flatterie, but when he had gotten him to his Pallace, hee caused him to be beheaded, and then busilie vniued the kingdome of the East Angles, as is shewed in the reigne of the East Angles.

Holy Scrip-  
tures to be read  
in the Church.

The Lordes  
prayer & Credo  
in English.

The monastery  
of Crowland  
founded.

Segiswald by  
Tamworth.

749

Vito Albani.

He caused the reliques of S. Alban to be taken up, and put in a Shyrine adorned with golde and precious stones, and builded there a Princely Monasterie, enduing the same with lands by his Charter, dated the yere of Christ, 793. in the yere of Offas reigne, 33. in the famous place called Celchyth, with the witnesse of himselfe, his sonne Egfride, 9. kings, 15. Bishops, 10. Dukes, &c.

He founded the Abbey of Bath.

He translated the Archbishops See to Lichfield.

He made a Dike betwixens Wales and the kingdome of the Mercies, which dike extendeth by South from the partes about Bristow, ouer the mountains of Wales, and so North toward Flint, and vnder a hill of coale, even to the mouth of the North Sea, which dike is yet to be seene, and manifestlie appeareth in diuers places. He reigned xxxi. yeres, and died at May, and was buried in a Chappell which then stode on the bancke of the River Ouse, without the towne of Medforde. Which Chappell with the Sepulture of the king, the said River hath swallowed up, whose tombe of lead (as it were some phantassical thing) appeareth often to them that seeke it not, but to them that seeke it (saily Route) it is inuisible.

Egbertus or Efride his sonne reigned one yere. Alcuine wrote to Osbert of the Mercians, that the noble young Efride died not so lone for his owne fautes, but because his father was a great thedder of blood.

Kenulfus, Nephewe in the fifth degre vnto Penda, warred on the Kentish Saxons, punished their Countrey very sore, and caried away bound their king Egbertus, but not long after, when he had builded a church at Lichfieldcombe, on the day of the dedication thereof, he belouced him, declaring a worthy example of clemencie. He founded the church of S. Ethelbert in Hereford, and reigned xliiii. yeres.

Enelmus sonne to Egbertus a child of seauen yeres, was innocentlie slaine by his sister Quenda, whereby he obtained the name of a Martyr.

Ceolwulfus, brother to Kenulfus, reigned one yere, and was expelled by Bernulfus.

Bernulfus in the third yere of his reigne was overcome by Egbertus King of West Saxons at Elyndune.

Veaus after hee reigned two yeres, was oppressed by the East Angles.

Wihlafus, being at the first subdued by Egbert, reigned xlii. yeres, paying to him and his sonne a tribute.

Ethulfus reigned xiii. yeres, in the same estate, till at the last he was chased beyond the Seas, by the sea-rouers of Denmarke.

Wredrus paying the Tribute, enjoyed the same twentie yeres, and then he being deposed, and dymen out of his Countrey, fled to Rome, and there was buried at the English Schole. When that kingdome was by the Danes deliuered to Ceolwulfus, and in fewe yeres after that, Alfhred the Nephewe of Egbert got it. So the kingdome of the Mercies fell auaie in the yere of Christ, 875.

S. Albones  
builded.

796

Flaccus Albinus,

796

W. Malmef.

Lichfieldcombe  
founded.

Bishops see at  
Hereford  
founded.

820

820

821

824

826

829

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

852

Northumb-

## Northumbers.



The first kingdome was of the Northumbers, which contained Lancashire, Yorkshire, Cumberland, Westmerland, Northumberland. It had on the West the Sea, by South the River of Humber, and so downeward toward the West by the endes of the shires of Nottingham and of Darby, unto the River of Merce, hath the Diocesses of Yorke, Durham, and Carlisle.

At the beginning, it was divided into two kingdomes, Bernicia, and Deira. Bernicia stretched from Edenborough Frith to Tine: and Deira, from Tine to Humber, but these two were shortly united.

W. Malmes

When Hengist had established himselfe in Kent, he sent his brother Otha, and his sonne Ebusam to possesse the south partes of Brytaine, where manie times they put the men of that prouince to flight, and for the space of ninetie nine yeres, they and their successors ascribed to themselves the names of Dukes, and bare themselves under the kingdome of Kent, but in the yere of Christ, 547. the yere after Hengistes death 60. that Dukedom was changed into a kingdome.

547 Ida, the ninth from Beldegus, and the tenth from Wodden, continued xlii. yeres in the kingdome of Deires.

559 Ella his successor of the same kindred, but by another line, strongly advanced his kingdome xxx. yeres.

In his time, children of Northumberland were caried to bee sold in the market at Rome, where when the Citizens beheld them, and wondered at their comeliness and beautie of face, amongst other, Gregory the Archdeacon of the Apostollicall seate being one, asked of what Nation they were, unto whom it was answered, that they were the children of English men, of the prouince of Deires, and subiect to Alla their king, but were Paintims, whereunto Gregory said, they shall be taught to sing Alleluia there, during the raigne of Alla our the Deires.

¶ Adda the eldest sonne of Ida reigned ouer the Bernicians vii. yeres:

¶ Elappa sine yeres:

¶ Theodwald one yere:

¶ Frothulfe seven yeres:

¶ Theodrike seven yeres:

¶ Aethelstide two yeres, and all in the life of Bernicians.

A Ethelrike, the sonne of Ida, reigned in both prouinces of Deire and Bernicia sine yeres.

Ethelstide, brother to Ethelricus, made greater spoile of the Brytaines, then all the kings of the Angles, and vniuepled and subdued more of their Countries, and made the same tributary and habitable for Englishmen: wherefore Aadan king of the Scots being greatly moued with this happie success came against him with a mighty army, but was overcome and put to flight of a few Saxons, which battell was fought by Ethelstich, in a place called Deglastan,

582

W. Malmes.

587

Marianus.  
Florentinus.

fallen, in the xi. yere of his raigne, and in the first yere of Phocas the Emperour, which was the yere of Christ, 603.

This king also not long after this time, leuyed a newe power, and according as Augustine the Archbyschop of Canterburie had before spoken, marched toward the Citie of Legion, which of the Brytaines is called Caierlog, and there first slew 1200. Monks, assembled to make prayer unto God, for the good successe of their Souldiours in the battaile: and afterwarde he overthrew the whole power of the Brytaines host. He was slaine by Redwald king of the East Angles in a battaile nere unto the River which is called Iole, in the yere of Christ 616. when he had reigned xxiij. yeres.

Edwyne succeeded Ethelstide, and dyed out the seven sonnes of king Ethelstide.

In Anno 626. Paulinus being the third Byschoppe of Rochester, was constituted by Iustus then Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, to be Byschoppe ouer the Northumbers, and sent by Eadbold to Edwyne the king of that nation, with his wife, being the daughter of king Ethelbert, and sister of the said king Eadbold.

A certaine desperate fellow, named Eomer, was sent unto king Edwyne, by Guicheline king of the West Saxons, who came unto him on Easter daye, and having a naked weapon under his garment, assailed the king, but Lilla his seruauant thrust himselfe before the stroke, yet notwithstanding the king was with that stroke wounded throughe the bodie of his faithful seruant.

The same night the Q. his wife was deliuered of a daughter, which bypon Whitsontide next after, was the first that was baptised of Paulinus the Byschop, and named Eanfleda.

In the yere of Christ 628, Edwyne the most nightie king of the Northumbers, and his people, receiued the word of God, at the preaching of Paulinus the Byschop: this was done in the xi. yere of his raigne, and in the 230. yere after the arrivall of the Angles in Brytaine.

Edwyne gave unto Paulinus a Byschoppes See in the Citie of Yorke, and began the Cathedrall Church of S. Peter there, which Church was after finished by king Oswald his successor, after this, in encreasing of the Christian faith and beauntie kingdome, his earthlie possessions did wonderfullie encrease, for he first of all the Angles brought Brytaine whollie under his subiection, saving the kingdome of Kent.

Edwyne in the 17. yere of his raigne, and the 48. of his age, towe slaine in a battaile which he fought at Heshdeside, with the most valliant Pagan King of the Mercies, and Ceadwalla king of the Brytaines. Paulinus the Byschoppe builded the great Church at Lincolne. In the raigne of king Edwyne, such was the peace and tranquillitie throughe all Brytaine, which waite Queen king Edwines dominions lay, that a weak woman might haue walked with her new borne babe ouer all the Land without any damage. Afterwaite for the refreshing of travelling men, he obtained Cares of piers or barks, to be furnished by such cleare wells and fountaines as did runne by the wayes side,

617

First Christian  
king of Northumberland.  
An. an.  
Florentin. W.

Eathemall  
Church at  
Yorke founded.

Lincolne Byschop  
see founded.  
Rece.

Cares of barks  
by the high  
wayes.

which cuppes no man durst touch further then to his owne present vse and necessity, for the loue and good will they bare to their Prince, who was for the time of his raigne so honoured and loued, that the triumphant banners were borne before him, not in warre onely, but in peace to, where soeuer hee went abroad.

After the death of Edwine, the kingdome of Northumberland was againe divided.

633 **O**srice sonne of Elfrike, who was Edwines uncle, succeeded in the gouernance of Deira. And Earfride the son of Echelfride, ruled the Mercians; but both these forsaking the Christian profession, wherein they were instructed, yielded themselves to be ruled with the filth of Idolatry: but this Apostasie was reuenged by Cedwall king of the Brittaines, who slew them both, & with tragicall slaughter spoiled Northumberland.

634 **O**swald brother to Earfride, then gouerned this kingdome, who with a small armie overcame the Brittaines, and slew Cedwall their king at Deniscburne. He sent for Aidan a Scot to advance the Christian Religion among his people, assigning to him the Isle of Lindisfarne or holie Islande, for his sea. He greatly enlarged his kingdome, reconciled the Welshians and Mercians, which did deadly hate one another. And when he had reigned viii. yeres, was slaine in a cruell battell at Maserfelde, by Penda king of Mercia, and canonized a Saint.

641 **O**swine brother to Oswald, succeeded: he buried the head and armes of Oswald, which Penda committed to be hanged upon poles. His gouernment was greatly disquieted by inuasion of the Mercians, rebellion of his owne son Aelfrith, and insurrection of Adilwald sonne to Oswald. He murdered Oswy, the sonne of Osrike, who ruled Deira, being traiterously deliuered vnto him at Ingethling, where afterward a Monasterie was created. But at length he deliuered his Countrey from foraine inuasion, banished the Mercians with Penda in a fought felde, nere the riuer Teuet, brought them to his subiection, and caused them to be instructed in the Christian faith.

He builded a Church among the Mercians called Lichfelde, and procured the same to be a Bishops see, in Anno, 657.

Quina was first Bishop there of Mercia, and also of Lindisfarne: for there were then so fewe Bishops, that one Bishoppe was compelled to gouerne two Provinces. King Oswine ended his life quietly, when he had reigned xxiij. yeres.

670 **E**gfride his lawefull sonne, then inherited Northumberland: hee deposed Wilfride of the Bishoppicke, and appointed thre Bishops ouer the Northumbers. Mildred, otherwise called Esheldred, his wife, would by no means accompany with her husband, but continued a Virgine, and after she had bin married twelue yeres, took at the hands of Wilfride the batle and habite of a Nunne, and built the Monasterie of Ely, where she was Abbesse.

Egfride her husband fought a battell with Edilfride king of Mercia, but after they were reconciled by Theodore the Bishop. When turning his power against Ireland, he sent Berce thither, who miserably destroyed the saie pe-

Liber Lichfeld.  
T. Rudburne.

Lichfelde  
Church a Bi-  
shops see  
foundeth.

ple. But the yere following, he marched against the Pictes contrarie to the good counsaile of S. Cuthbert, whom hee made Bishop: & was slaine by them in an ambush, in a place called Nechtansmere, when he had reigned xij. yeres, and was buried in S. Columbes Island.

**A**ldred, bassard sonne of Oswine, succeeded after his brother Egfride. Hee 685  
Aldred repaired the decayed state of Northumberland, but could not recover all that Pictes, Scots, and Brittaines took from the Northumbers at the death of his brother. He reigned xii. yeres.

**O**sfred his sonne, a child of eight yeres succeeded, who, when he had touchedly 704  
reigned xi. yeres, was murdered by his kinsmen Kenred and Osfricke. Kenred, when he had slaine Osfred, ruled Northumberland two yeres.

**O**sricke obtained the kingdome after xi. yeres, and created Ceolnulp 715  
ther of Kenred to be his successor.

**C**eolnulp reigned in this prouince with great pietie, and viiij. yeres, 728  
and then forsoke the state of a king, and took the habite of a Monk in the holie Island.

**B**enedict, who first brought Spasons, Painting, and Glasing into this 736  
kealme to the Saxons, flourished at this time. Beda also that famous learned man, lived at this time, who dedicated his historie of the Church of England to the forrenamed Ceolnulp, brought among the Saxons Bede famous.

**E**gbert, cousin germane to Ceolnulp, reigned in Northumberland twentie 736  
yeres peaceably, and then forsaking the woode, entred into Religion, and became a Monk: his brother bearing the same name, was Archbishop of York, which see he greatly advanced, and founded there a most worthy Librarie, replenished with all good Authors.

**O**swulf succeeded his father, who was slaine by the people in the first yere 757  
of his raigne.

**M**ollo then took the regiment, and after xi. yeres was traiterously mur- 758  
dered by Alered.

**A**lered reigned after him xi. yeres, and was enforced by the people to leave 769  
the Countrey.

**A**thelred or Esheldred the sonne of Mollo, was advanced to the regiment 780  
of Northumberland by the people, and the fifth yere after was by them deposed.

**A**elfwold then was proclaimed king of Northumberland, and when hee 785  
had reigned xi. yeres, was slaine by his subjects: he lieth buried at Haugstald.

**O**sfrede, the sonne of Alerede then succeeded, but the first yere he was 796  
deposed.

**A**shelred or Esheldred, who was before deposed, now recetured the king-  
dome, and when he had ruled foure yeres, was also miserably slaine. After his death, this kingdome decayed, and was pitifully ransacked by cruell  
sestion, and foraine inuasions, for the space of 30. yeres, in which space, there  
ruled here without title of kings.

† Eadulf,

† Aelfwold,

¶ Alfwold,  
 ¶ Eandred,  
 ¶ Ethelred,  
 ¶ Readulfe,  
 ¶ Osbert, which two last, to wit, Readulfe, and Osbert, were slaine at Worke, by the Danes, in a place yet to this daie called Elle Crofte, because Elle was there also slaine.

This Osbert rauished a fladde of his Countrey, wiſe to Bernebokard, in reuenge thereof, the ſame Bernebokard ſlæing into Denmarke, returned againe with the Danes Hinguar and Hubba, and arrived in holy Island, and ſo came to Worke, and there ſlew king Osbert, and Elle the newe elected king of Northumberland.

¶ Egbert king of the West Saxons, then obtained Northumberland.

**R**icely then ſurped it, and after him Cuthred, from thome Sitricke the Dane got it, vnto whome king Athelſtane the Monarch gaue his daughter in marriage.

Thus ended the race of the kings of Northumberland, & was ſince counted an Earldome, the ſucceſſion of the Carles whereof ſet downe by T. Oterborne, 3 ouerpaſſe for beauty, as alſo the names of Caſtles & Forts, in the ſaid county, with the ſe owners, ſet downe by John Currar, to the number of 78.

T. Oterborne.  
 John Currar.

## West Saxons.



The ſeauenth kingdome was of the West Saxons, which contained the Countreies of Warkeſhire, South-hampton, Wilthſhire, Dorceſthire, Somerſetſhire, Deuonſhire, and Cornwall, and hath Diocelles, Bath and Wells, Sarisburie, and Exceſter: hauing on the Eaſt ſide Southſex, on the North ſide Thames, on the South and the Weſt the Sea Ocean.

This kingdome, although it toke beginning long after the firſt coming of the Saxons, yet the ſame endured longeſt, and ouercomming all the other kingdomes, brought them againe to one Monarchy.

**C**erdic, the tenth from Woden, with his ſonne Kenike, and other Saxons in ſiue ſhippes, in Anno Chriſti. 499. landed in Brytaine, at a place called Cerdikeſhoze, and ſlew Natanleod king of the Brytaines, and ſiue thouſand men, of whole name the Countrey as farre as Cerdikeſſowd, was called by the name of Natanleod. From thenceforth hee kept the Brytaines in great quiet, for they thought not good to ſtirre, where they wanted hope to pzeuaile.

519

**C**erdike and Kenike beganne to raigne as kinges, and the ſame yere they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdikeſſowde, and departed vanquiſhed.

After that, they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdikeſſeg. Theſe two kings to wit, the father and the ſonne, toke the Ile of Wight, and gaue

gaue the ſame to their Nephewes, Suſſe and Withgare, and ſlew the Brytaines in a place called Withgarberg. He raigned 17. yeres. Withgare the Nephew of Cerdic was king of the Ile of Wight, and was buried at Withgarberg, at the Citie of Withgar in the Ile of Wight.

**K**enrike the ſon of Cerdic fought with the Brytaines at Searesberige, and afterwards at Beranbrige, and at both times put them to flight, and raigned rrb. yeres.

**C**eaſline the ſon of Kenrike toke vpon him the kingdome of the Weſt Saxons.

In the beginning of his raigne he diſcomfited Ethelbert king of Kent, and ſlew his 2. Dukes, Oſlaue & Cnebban at Wibbandune. Thier ward his brother Cutholfe vanquiſhed the Brytaines at Hedford, and wan from them the towne of Liganburge, Egelfburge, Wenſington, and Egneſham.

Siue yeres after, Ceaulin ſlew 3. kings of the Brytaines, Commeale, Condidan, and Fariemeile, at Deorham, and toke thre Citieſ from them, Gloceſter, Cirenceſter, and Bathanceſter.

After he fought with the Brytaines at Fethanleah, in which he had the victory, but loſt his ſonne Cutha: for now his fortune changed, and when hee had raigned 33. yeres, he was overcome at Wodoneſbrothe, at Wannes ditch in Wiltſhire, and expelled out of his kingdome by the Brytaines, by the meanes of Cealrike his brother Cuthas ſonne, that now rebelled againſt him, and expelled him the kingdome, when hee had raigned rrr. yeres.

Cealrike the ſonne of Cutholfe ruled the Weſt Saxons v. yeres.

**C**eolnuſe ſonne of Cutha before named ſucceeded, who had continually wars either with the Engliſhmen, with the Brytaines, with the Scots, or with the Pias, and laſtly moued war againſt the South Saxons, and there died, when hee had raigned 14. yeres.

**K**inegilſus the ſonne of Ceolrike ſucceeded. He brought his hoſt againſt the Brytaines into Beandune, and there ſlew of them 2046.

He alſo fought with Penda king of Mercians nere vnto Cirenceſter, and after made peace with him.

And thoſely after in the yere of Chriſt ſix hundred thirty ſiue, by the preaching of Berinus, king Kinegilſus, and all his people receyued the Chriſtian faith, to whome king Oſwald was Godfather at the font, of which kinges, the ſayde Berinus had graunted to him the Citie of Dorcheſter, & builded there an houſe of Canons for his Wyſhoppes Sea. Kenegilſus raigned ſaueu and twentie yeres.

**G**uicheline the ſonne of Kinegilſus was baptizd by Berinus the Wyſhoppe, in the Citie of Dorcheſter, and deceeded the ſame yere.

**C**uichedrus the ſonne of king Guicheline, was baptizd at Dorcheſter, by Berinus the Wyſhop, who was his Godfather at the font. Hee raigned liii. yeres. About this time Honorius Archbiſhoppe of Canterburie deuised his pzoince into parishes.

**K**ennewalcus the ſon of king Kenegilſus, toke on him the kingdome of the Weſt Saxons.

5:6

560

Liganburge.

Tho. Redborne.  
Leyland.

591

598

611  
Marian.  
Flora. Wigor.  
Exceſter baptizd.

Vita Berini.

Dorcheſter a  
Wyſhops Sea.

638

639

643

Winchester  
a Bishops see.  
Walmesbury  
builted.  
Vita Adelm.

He founded the Cathedral Church in Winchester, placing there a Bp.  
Hops Sea.

He gave Meydulfus burgh to Aldelmus the Abbot, there to build a Monastery.  
Afterward being infested with warres by Penda king of the Mercians, because he had forsaken his wife, sister of the said Penda, was by him driven out of his kingdom, and fled to Anna king of the East Angles, where he was baptised by Bishop Felix, and after was restored to his kingdom by the helpe of the forenamed Anna. He reigned xxx. yeres. After whom Quene Sexburgeo his wife governed a while. She founded a Monasterie of Nunnes in the Isle of Sheppey, and became her selfe a Nunne, and after Abbelle of Ely.

673 E Alcwinus Bpethew to Kingillus succeeded, hee fought a battaile against Wulfere king of Mercia, in a place called Wdanheafod. He reigned two yeres.

676 K Enecewinus, sonne to Kingillus, chased the Bypatins even to the sea shore, and reigned ix. yeres.

685 Ceadwalla, Bpethew to Ceauline succeeded in the kingdom.

Marianne. He deue Berthune Duke of the South Saxons, and brought that prouince under grieuous bondage.

After that, he & his brother Mull washed Kent, and subdued the Isle of Wight, which till that time was given to Iudolair, wherof he purged them, giuing the fourth part thereof to Bishop Wilside, who appointed Preachers to conuert the people of that Isle to Christianitie. Ceadwalla once againe spoiling the countrey of Kent, his brother Moll, and xii. of his knightes were slaine by fire cast vpon them, after which time, euen before he was baptized, hee gave for the tenth to God all the pray and spoiles he had gotten to his owne use: in whome (saith Malmesbury) although we praise his affection, we allow not the example: for it is written, that who so offereth the sacrifice of paye (saith god, doth as it were sacrifice the sonne in the sight of his father.

After this he went to Rome, when Sergius was Pope, he was there baptized on Easter Euen, the yere after Christs birth, 689. and falling sicke he died on the 20. day of Aprill, and was buried honorably in St. Peters Church, with an Epitaph in Latine verse, and another in Latine prose, which maie be Englished thus.

Ceadwalla buried at Rome. Here Ceadwall is buried, otherwile named Peter, king of the West Saxons, who died the 20. of Aprill in the second indiction, and liued 30. yeres, or thereabouts, when that noble and mightie Prince Iustinian was Emperour of Rome, and had reigned 4. yeres in the Coptick, and Sergius a true paterne of the Apostles, had late 2. yeres in Peters seate.

687 He reigned among the West Saxons, a noble man, of great power & wisdom, and therewith valiant and hardie, in feates of armes very expert: he maintained such warre against the Kentish Saxons, that he constrained them to seke and intreace means of peace, giuing to him for the same great gifts 30000. Mancas (pieces of gold so named.)

Floriaceus. This Ine was the sonne of Kenred, the sonne of Ceadwolde, brother to Keadiwold, and sonne to Chensling, sonne of Keni, sonne of Cirdic, the first king of the

the West Saxons. This man was more for his industrie and naturall probesse, then for his succession of the right line, called to be king. He was a Patrone of strength and mannesse, an image of wisdome, and his like was of no man knowne at that time, for religion in profession, and framing himselfe thereafter in his living.

About the 26. yere of his raigne he fought a great battell against Celed king of Mercia, at Wobnesburie. And the same yere he invaded the South Saxons with a mightie armie, and slew in battaile Anthon king of the South Saxons, and joined that kingdom vnto his. He builded a Colledge at Wills, dedicating it to the honour of God, and Saint Andrew: the Appell. in the yere of Christ 704. which Church was since translated into a Bp. Hops Sea, by Kenulphus king of the West Saxons. He new builded the Abbey of Glaffenburie, in a fenny place out of the way, to the end the monks might so much the more giue their mindes to heavenly things, and chiefly the contemplation made for men of such profession: this was the fourth building of that Monasterie. Besides which the said king did also erect a Chappell of gold and silver (to wit garnished) with ornaments and vessels likewise of gold and silver, to the building of the which Chappell, he gave 2640. pounds of silver, and to the Altar, 264. pound of golde, a Chalice with the patten, tenne pound of gold, a Sencar eight pound, and twenty Mancas of gold, two Camlestickes, twelue pound and a halfe of silver, a basin for the Gospel booke twenty pound, and 60. Mancas of gold, vessels for water to the Altar, thirtene pound of golde, a basin eight pound of gold, an holy water Buckett xx. pound of silver, 3 images of our Lord, our Ladie, and the twelue Apostles 175. pound of silver, and 28. pound of gold, a Wall for the Altar, and ornaments for the monks, of gold and precious stones subtilly compased, all which treasure he gave to that Monasterie. In the yere of Christ, 705. Hedda Bpethop of the West Saxons departed this life, after whose death, king Ine caused that by Hopiche to be diuided into two parishes, the one to Winchester which he gave to Daniel, the other, to wit Shireborne, was giuen to Aldelme, where he ruled foure yeres.

Also Eadbert Abbott, was made Bpethop of Selsey by Chichester.

This Ine king of the West Saxons, was the first that caused the money called Peter pence to be paid to Rome, & this was called the kings almes, & was leuened in this maner, every man that had 30. pennithworth of good of one manner catel in their house of their own proper, should giue a peny at Lammas yere. And when he had gouerned the West Saxons by the space of 37. yeres, by the earnest laboz of his wife Ethelburge, he left this woibly kingdom to his sonne Ethelard, and went to Rome, and there ended his life in poore estate.

Thelard kinsman on the fathers side to Ine, succeeded in the kingdom, notwithstanding Oswald a yong man of the kings blood did disturbe the beginning of his raigne, for he stirred by rebellion among the inhabitants, but not long after, he died, and then Ethelard reigned quietly xlii. yeres.

Chrede his kinsman made warre on Ethelwald king of Mercia against the Bypatins, and had of them the victory.

Wobnesburie.

Colledge of Wills.

Glaffenburie new builded with a Chappell of gold and silver.

Hedda Bpethop of the West Saxons departed this life, after whose death, king Ine caused that by Hopiche to be diuided into two parishes, the one to Winchester which he gave to Daniel, the other, to wit Shireborne, was giuen to Aldelme, where he ruled foure yeres.

Bishopricke at Selsey or Chichester. Peter pence paid, and how leuied.

Blasing Stars.

In his time there appeared 2. blasing Stars, casking as it were burning brands to towards the South. He reigned xvi. yeres.

Antiqui. Britan.  
Ecclesi.  
Buriall in  
Churchyards.

The Englishmen buried not the bodies of their dead in Cities, untill the time of Cuthbert Archbysop of Canterburie, who procured of the Pope that in Cities there shoulde bee appointed Churchyards, for Honorius when hee deuided his prouince into parishes, appointed not to them Churchyardes for buriall.

757

W. Malm.  
Scala Cro.

Sigebert was king of the West Saxons. Hee was cruell and tyranous towards his Subjects, and changed ancient Lawes and Customes after his owne lust and pleasure, and because a certayne Noble Man some deale sharpeke aduertised him to change his manners, hee put him to cruell death; and for so much as hee continued in his malice, and would not amend, hee was depised of all kinglethe authoritie, and lastlie as a person folowne, wandring in woods, and hiding himselfe in caues of wild beasts, he was slaine in Andreds Walde by a Swineheard, whose Lord & master called Cumba, he had wponge faste put to death, when he had not reigned one yere.

757

**K**enulphus of the blood of Cerdicus, appeased certayne mutmours and grudges that were amongst the people, for the deposing of his predecesso; Sigebert.

Bysshops (sa  
at Cities founded.

Hee founded the Cathedrall Church of Willes. As hee haunted a woman which he kept at Sperton, he was slaine by the treason of one Olio, the kinsman of Sigebert late king, when he had reigned nine and thientie yeres, and was buried at Winchester.

786

**B**richicus of the blood of Cerdicus, was made king of West Saxons, a man more desirous of peace then of warre.

Hee married Eadburga the daughter of Offa king of Mercia, by whose power hee expelled Egbert, that was an vnder king in the Lo;ship of the West Saxons.

Blood rayned.

In his time it rayned blood, which falling on mens clothes, appeared like Crookes.

The Danes  
first arrived in  
this land.  
Marianus.

In An. 800. the Danes arrived in the Ile called Portland, but by the pulsanee of Brithicus, and other kinges of the Saxons, they were overcome at Reigemouth, driven backe, and compelled to auaide the land.

The king posses-  
sed by his wife.

Brithicus was poisoned by his wife Ethelburga, when hee had raygned 17. yeres, and was buried at Warham. For this deede the Nobles obtained that from thenceforth the kinges wives shoulde not be called Quenes, nor suffer to sit with them in place of estate.

Eadburga with infinite treasure fledde into France, where offering a great portion of her golde to king Charles of France, hee sayde vnto her, thou Eadburga to whom thou wilt haue to thy husbande, mee or my sonne: and she answered, if choyle be graunted me, I choole your sonne, because he is yonger then ydo: then (quoth Charles) if thou hast chosen me, thou shouldest haue had my sonne, but because thou hast chosen my sonne, thou shalt haue neither him nor me: and then gaue to her a Sponasserie, where in she professed her selfe Nunne, & became there Abbesse a few yeres, but afterwards committing a

dultery

After a wicked  
life followed a  
miserable end  
so Eadburga  
Abdurge  
Monacha.

dultery with a lay man, and cast out of the Sponasserie, she ended her life in povertie and miserie, as of many that haue sene her too heard, saith mine Author Alerius.

After.

**E**gbrichus obtained the gouernment of the West Saxons. Hee tained the Welchmen, vanquished Bertulphus king of the Mercians at Hellenburie, and subdued to his obeyfance the Kentish Saxons, East Saxons, and Southumbers. He caused the brazen Image of Cadwaline king of the Bryttains to be throwne downe, and this land no more to be called Bryttaine, but Anglia or England. Hee was crowned at Winchester.

802

W. Malm.  
Scala.  
Bryttaine first  
named Eng-  
land.

In the 33. yere of his raighe the Danes arrived at Lindesferme, and fought with the Englishmen at Carham, where two Bysshops, two Carles, & a great number of the English people were slaine. Two yeres after the Danes arrived in West Wales, where Egbricht overcame them at Hengistendon. In Anno 832. the Danes spoyled the Ile of Shepey in Kent, and yet were they expelled out of the Ile of Manete. Hee reigned ouer the most part of England the space of seuen and thirtie yeres and seuen monethes, and was buried at Winchester.

Danes arrived  
here.  
Scala.  
cron.

**A**ethelulfus the sonne of Egbrichus, late Bysop of Winchester, (sayeth John Brompton Abbot of Iaruaux) began his raighe ouer the most part of England. Hee toke to wife Osburge his Butlers daughter, and after her Luidich, daughter to the king of France, and had by his first wife 4. sonnes, which were kings after him.

839

W. Malm.  
L. Brompton.

In his time there came a great army of the Pagan Danes with 350. shippes into the mouth of Thamis, and so to London, spoyled it, and put to flight Beorhtulf king of Mercia, with all his power which came to bid them batfaile: Then the Danes went with their armie into Southpy, where Adhelulfus with his sonne Adhelbald, and a great armie came against the foresayde Danes, and at a place called Aolea they fought a cruell battell, wherein the most part of the Danes were slaine.

Aedus Riual.  
Danes spolie  
London.

The same yere Adhelstane the sonne of Adhelus, and Calchere the Carle slew a great army of the Pagans at Sandwich in Kent, and toke nine of their shippes.

Scala.  
Cro.

Adhelulfus sent his sonne Alfride to Rome with a great number of Noble men and other, at which time Pope Leo confirmed the sayd Alfride, and toke him to his son by adoption, and also consecrated him king.

This Adhelulfus did make the tenth part of his kingdome free from tribute and seruice to the king, and gaue it to them that did serue Christ in the Church: and the same yere hee went to Rome, where hee repayed the English Schoole, which was first founded by Offa king of the Mercias. Hee confirmed that graunt of the Peter Pence to Rome, and as hee returned home through France, hee toke to wife Luidich, the daughter of Charles the bald king of France.

Tenth given to  
the Church by  
king Adhelul-  
fus.  
English schoole  
at Rome repa-  
red.

In the meane season, his Sonne Adhelbald rebelling, sturped the kingdome, so that when Adhelulfus returned, hee was forced to deuide the kingdome, and to take the woyle part. Hee reigned eightene yeres, and was

buried

buried at Winchester, where sometime he had bene Wythoppe (elected belike) but was after the decease of his father, of necessity taken from thence & made king.

857  
Flor. Wigot.  
A. Ethelbald reigned after his father: against God, and the goodness of Christianity, yea, and contrarie to the custome of all Pagans, he presumed to his fathers marriage bedde, and with great infamie married Iudith the French kinges daughter: He reigned after his father ii. yeres, and was buried at Shiroborne.

860  
Danes invade and spoile Winchester.  
A. Thelbricke, brother to Ethelbald, took under his dominion Kent, Southeyr and Souther.

In this time, the great Armie of the Pagans invaded and spoiled the Citie of Winchester, who when they returned with a great preie, towards their Ships, Onke Earle of Hampton, and his folke, and Adhelulfus the Earle with Warkeshire men, met them, and farr from ante Towne they joined battaile, where the Pagans were slaine in enerie corner, and the Christians kept the field.

The Saxons and Danes made a firme league with the Bentishmen, who promised them monie to keepe the league, but notwithstanding the Pagans brake promise out of their Castles by night, and spoiled all the East partes of Kent.

Athelbriht reigned five yeres, and was buried at Shiroborne.

866  
F. Thelred brother to Athelbriht, received the kingdome of the West Saxons. In the first yere of his raigne, a great Raup of Pagans came into England, and remained all the winter in the kingdome of East England.

The Pagans departed out of Northumberland, came to Nottingham, and there wintered, but Beorde gathering a great armie against them, strenghtened himself with Etheldredes power king of the West Saxons, forced the into leave Nottingham, and to go back againe to York, where remaining til winter was passed, they then passed over by Boate into Lindsey, and coming by to Humbertlane, spoiled the whole Countrie, they despoiled the most famous and ancient Monasterie of Bardene, slaying all the Monkes without mercie, they ranging the Countrey, slew the Abbot and Monkes of Cropkand, and sired their Church, with the houses belonging to the Monasterie. At Spethamstedde or Peterborough, they made the like slaughter, hawocks, and spoile, and so proceeding toward Huntingdon, praying and spoiling the Countrey, came unto Grantingeshire, and to the house of Rums in the Isle of Wely, where they murdered all, as well women as men. Thus entering into East Angle, they slew the most valiant Earle Walketulus, and all his company that resisted. The king also of the same prouint, holie Edmond they took, bound him to a stake, shotte him full of Arrowes, and strake off his head: by means whereof they possessed all East England, and abournd there all the winter.

The yere 871. the said army of the Danes came to Reading a towne of the kinges situate on the South side of the Riuer Thamis in Warkeshire, and there two of their Carles with a great power rode forth to spoile the Countrie,

trie, in the meane time, the other call a trench betwene the Thamis and Ciumon or Kynet, on the right side of the same Towne, with whom Ethelwold Earle of Warkeshire did meete in a place called Englefield, (or field of the Englishmen) where one of the Carles being slaine, and the rest chased awaie, the Christians obtained the victorie.

The Christians withyn 4. daies fought a battell with the Paganes, in Alfenbune, but the Paganes deuised themselves into two battells, for then they had two kings, which when the Christians saw, they likewise deuised their army into two companies.

It was determined that king Ethelred with his battell, shoulde go against the two Pagan kings with their battell, and that his brother Aelfrede with his armie shoulde set on all the Pagan dukes and their army. All things thus ordered, when the king tarried long in his prayer, and the Paganes being readie prepared, came to Chippenhane where the battell was pitched, Aelfred seeing he must either retire, or set on his enemies before his brother did come, he straightwaies set upon them, though the place of battell was unequal, for the Paganes had gotten the higher ground, and the Christians brought their battell from the valley. There was in that place one onlie thorne tree, verie short, about which tree the battells met and joined, where when they had a long time fought, Hubba one of the kings, 5. Carles, and many thousands mo of the Paganes being slaine, the other were chased.

A great heape of stones was laide copped by where Hubba was buried, and the place called Hubblehow.

This being done, king Ethelred and his brother Aelfrede shortly after gathered their power againe to fight with the Paganes at Walsing, where after a long and sore battayle, the Paganes had the victorie.

After this battayle, came another armie of Paganes from beyond Seas, and opened with the first.

When king Ethelred had reigned 6. yeres, he was slaine of the Paganes at Nottingham, & buried in the monasterie of Minburne, with this Epitaph:

In hoc loco quiescit corpus sancti Etheldredi regis West Saxonum martyris, qui Anno Domini. 872. 23. die Aprilis, per manus Dacorum Paganorum occubuit. His armis a croce Florie.

An. 870. Saint Ebbe Abbess of Colidingham, 61 miles south from Winton, cut off her nose and upper lip, and perswaded all her sisters to do the like, that they being odible to the Danes, might the better keepe their Virginitie, in despite whereof the Danes burned the Abbey, and the Rums therein.

Aelfrede borne in Warkeshire, at a village called Granting, the 4. son of Athelwold, receiued the gouernement of the whole Realme, and withyn one moneth after, with a very small number fought a sharpe battell against the whole armie of the Paganes, in a place called Wallton (which lyeth on the South side of the Riuer Welly of which Riuer the whole shire taketh his name) and after they had fought a great part of the daie, the Paganes fledde, but seeing the feynesse of them that pursued, they set themselves in battaile againe, and got the field.

Battaile at Alfenbune.

Battaile at Chippenhane. See Cro.

Hubbeshow. See Cro.

Paganes banquished.

See cron. Marianus Scotus

Flores Historiar. Chastity before braute preferred, a rare example.

872  
Marianus Scotus  
Florentin. Cro.  
Aelf.  
Speculum Hist.  
Wiltshire.  
Ricardus Circu  
cellensis.



The West Saxons made a league with the Pagans, upon condition they should depart out of their Countrey.

The next yere they wintered at London, & made league with the Mercies. The next yere they wintered at Lindesey, which was in the kingdome of Northumberland.

The next yere, at Wipendune: they constrained Burgoredus king of Mercies, to flee beyond the seas, who went to Rome, where he died, and was buried in the schole of the Sars.

The Pagans subduing the whole kingdome of the Mercies, which they committed to Ceonulfus: The next yere one part of the Pagans wintered in Northumberland nere to the River Tyne, subdued the whole Countrey: the other part went with Guthram, Osketellus, and Amandus, three kings of the Pagans, to Cambridg, and wintered there.

The yere following, the Pagans going from Cambridg in the night, entered the Castell of Warham, where there was a Monasterie of Nuns, situate betwene two rivers fraile and Trent, in the Countrey called in the Saxon Thomsela, a most sure seat, except the West Saxons, where it lay next to the land, with whom king Aelfred made a league that they should depart his kingdome, but contrary to their othe, they rode into Denonshire, to Crancester, and there wintered.

Excester.

Hinguar and Halfdene with 23. ships, came out of Northwales, where they had wintered, and like fierce Wolves had shed much christian blood: setting fire to divers Abbeies, and made them equall with the ground, neuer kingdome or countrey suffered greater calamity, at the hands of any nation, then did the English, especially the Wponkes and religious women, for them they burnt in their houses, or otherwise tormented them to death.

Wponkes and  
other religious  
people burnt.

The next yere 120. of the Pagans ships were drowned at Suanaung: And king Aelfred pursuing an armie that went by law to Excester, took of them pledges, and also an oth to depart with all speed.

In the yere following the Danes came to Gylpingham, a manor of the kings, situate on the left side of Wiltshire, and there wintered, compelling many of the West Saxons to leave their Countrey and to go beyonde the seas: the rest that remained they subdued. King Aelfred himselfe was oft times brought into such misery, that none of his people knew where he was become. On a time being forced to hide himselfe with a Cowheard in Somersetshire, as he sat by the fire, preparing his bolue and shaftes, the Cowheardes wife baking bread on the coales, shew the kings bolue and shaftes aside, and said, thou fellow why dost thou not turne the bread which thou hast borne, thou art glad to eat it ere it be half baked. This woman thought not that it had bin king Aelfred, who had made so manie battels against the Danes, and gotten so manie victories. For God did not only vouchsafe to giue him victories over his enemies, but also to be wearied of them in the sight of his owne people, to the end he should knowe there is one God of all, to whom all knees shall bow, and in whose handes the hearts of kings consisteth. The brother of Hinguar and of Healden, who had wintered in Mercia, and had made great daughters

After.  
Spe. Hist.  
R. Ciren.

of

of the Christians, sayled with 23. ships into Denonshire, where doing great mischief, he and the most part of his people were slaine, the rest escaped by flying to their ships. In this battel among many rich spoiles was taken a banner or ensigne called Reafan, which among the Danes was had in great estimation, for that it was imboldered by the three sisters of Hinguar and Hubba, the daughters of Lodbroke. King Aelfred made a castle in Aethelingei, from thence he went to Petram Egebricht, which is on the East side of the chafe called Salnuddum, in Latine *Silva magna*, the great wood: there met with him all the inhabitants of Hampshire, which when they sawe the king, reioyced as though he had been risen from death to life.

The ensigne of  
the Danes  
was a Rauen.  
Alfredus Rivall.Ethelingei,  
the noble  
place.  
Ethelingei  
font.

The king with his armie went to Ebandune & fought against the Pagans where he made great slaughter, and pursued the rest to their Castell, who after this daies desired peace, gaue pledges and took oth to depart this realme: and Gyltham their king received baptisme hard by Ethelingei, in a place called Alce, whom Aelfred received to be his God-sonne.

Gyltham king  
of Danes chris-  
tend  
Ethelingei.

In the yere 879. the Pagans went from Chipman to Cirencester, & there remained one yere after. The same yere a great army of Pagans came from beyond the seas, and wintered at Fullanham hard by the River of Thames.

Fullham.  
Marianus Scotus

The next yere, the Pagans went from Cirencester to the East English, deciding that Countrey among them, and there inhabited. The Pagans that wintered at Fullanham, went into East France.

In the yere 885. an army of Pagans came into Kent, and besieged the citie of Ashofereaster, which lyeth on the East side of the river Medowege, and before the gate of the same citie they made a strong Castell, but Aelfred with a great army chased them to their ships.

Recheber be-  
sieged.  
The Castell  
built.  
Gyltham.

The next yere Aelfred restored, and honorably repayed the Citie of London (after it had been amongst other Cities destroyed with fire, and the people killed by,) he made it habitable againe, and committed it to the custodie of his son in law Adhered Earle of the Mercies, unto whom before he had giuen his daughter Ethelfleda. And now unto king Aelfred, all the English, Mercians, Kentishmen, South and West Saxons (which before were in captiuitie vnder the Pagans) willingly came and submitted themselves.

Asterius.  
Floriacn.  
London built.  
then made ha-  
bitable.  
Marianus Scotus

In the yere 890. Gyltham the king of the Pagans (whose name in his baptism was changed to Athelstane) died, he was buried in the Kings towne called Heableaga in Suffolke among the East English.

Hadley.

In the yere 892. the great armie of the Pagans, came from the East kingdome of France unto Adbon, and from thence with 250. ships into Kent, arriving in the mouth of the River Linene, which river runneth from the great wood, which is called Andreads Weald, from whose mouth foure miles into the same wood they drew their ships, where they destroyed a Castell, and fortified another more strong, in a place called Apultrans, now Apuldor. This wood was from the East to the West 120. miles in length and more, in breadth 30. miles.

Andreads  
weald in Kent  
and Hamp-  
shire.

The same yere, Hastings came with 80. shippes into the mouth of Thames, and made a strong towne called Spidleton in the South side of the Thames, and another on the North side, called Beandæte.

Spidon.  
Beandæte.

The yere following, the Citie of Dork was taken by the Normans, but Seber the Bpshopp, by Gods prouision escaped.

The same yere also Aelfred fought against the Normans at Fernham, in Kent, in the parish of Alesford, where he slew them, wounded their king, and chased the remnant through the Thames into Galfier, whereby many of them were drowned, the which escaped fled to an Island called Welesley, situate in a streame of the River Colne.

Aelfred hearing that a great number of the Pagans were arrived at Exanceastre, he took with him a great armie, and by battaile ouercame, and chased them alwaie.

In the meane season Adhered Earle of the Mercies, and the Citizens of London with other came to Beauflete, & besieged the Castle of the Pagans, and brake into it, where they took exceeding rich spoiles of gold, siluer, horses, and garments, among which was taken the wife of Hastings and his two sons, which were brought to London, and presented to the king, who commanded them to be restored againe. But Hastings came againe into Beauflete, and repayed the Castle, which they had broken downe. From thence he went to Seaburgh, and there builded a strong Castle: there was ioyned vnto him the armie that remained at Apuldrane, and other that came from the East English, and from the Northumbers, who altogether spoiled and robbed, till they came to the banke of Seuerne, and there at Walsingham, they made a strong towne, but by Adhered Earle of the Mercies, and other, they were besieged, and shortly through famine forced to come out, where many on both sides were slaine, but the Christians had the victorie.

In the yere, 895, the Pagans wintered in a little Ile called Merf, in the East part of Essex, situate in the sea, and by same yere they sayled by the River of Thames, after by the River of Ligea, and twenty miles from London began to build a fortreffe. In the summer following, the Londoners and other were adioynning did seek to destroy the fortreffe of the Danes, but they being put to flight, king Aelfred pitched a field not farre from the Citie, least the Pagans should take away the harvest of the Countrey, and viewing the river one daie, perceived that the Chamell might bee in one place dammed by, that the Danes should not get out their shippes, he forthwith commanded on both sides of the river a damme to be cast, and decided that river into 3. streames, so that where shippes before had sayled, now a small boate could scantely row, which when the Pagans perceived, they leaving their townes and ships, fled afoote to Quatbridge, and there building a fortreffe, lodged there the winter following, whose shippes the Londoners bring, came to London, the other they brake downe and destroyed.

Anno 897, the Pagans came from Quatbridge, part into East England, part into Northumberland: some got them shippes and sayled into France. After all these vexations, by the cruel Danes committed, followed far greater, the space of three yeres, by death of cattell, and mortalitie of men: twentie Danish shippes were taken being Pyrates, and the Pyrates slaine or hanged on the gallowes.

Fernham.

Beauflete  
taken from the  
Pagans.Seabury.  
Apuldray.Florentii. Cro.  
Marianus ScotusIle of Merf.  
Icy, a river  
that bare shippes  
unto Collice.  
Alicius.Now called  
Cartwylbridge,  
or Cartwal-  
bridge.

The victorious Prince, the studious provider for boldness, orphans and poor people, most perfect in Saron Poetrie, most liberall, endued with wisdom, fortitude, iustice, and temperance, the most patient bearer of sickness, where with he was dallie bered, a most discrete searcher of truth in executing iudgement, a most vigilant and devout Prince in the service of God, Alrede, the xix. yere and six moneth of his reigne, departed this life, the xxviii. daie of October, and is buried at Winchester, in the new Monasterie of his foundation. He founded a Monasterie of Monkes at Ethinglesp, and another for Nunnes at Spastisbury. He ordained the hundreds and tenths, which men call Centuraries and Cupings: he sent for Gimbald to come into Englad, that by his aduise he might erect the studie of good learning, cleane decayed. By the counsell of Neotus, he ordained common shcoles of diuers sciences in Orenford, and turned the Saron lawes into English, with diuers other bookes.

He established good lawes, by the which he brought to great a quietnesse to the countrey, that men might haue hanged golden bracelets and iewels, where the wales parted, and no man durst touch them for feare of the lawe. He carried euer the Psalter in his bosome, that when he had any leasure he might read it ouer with diligence.

He diuided the foure and twenty heures of the day & night into three parts: he spent 8. houres in writing, reading, and praying: eight in prouision of his booke: and eight in hearing and dispatching the matters of his subiects. He diuided his yearly reuenues into two parts, and the first he diuided into three: one part he gaue to his seruants, the second part to his workemen which were occupied in building, the third part to strangers. The second part of the whole he diuided into foure parts, the first part wherof he gaue in almes to the pore, the second to Monasteries by him founded, the third to shcoles which he had erected, and gathered of manie both noble mens and other mens sons of his nation, the fourth part he distributed to the next monasteries in all the English Saron. Alhwido wife to king Alrede founded the Monasterie of Nunnes in Winchester.

Edward furnished Sento, the son of Aelfred, was crowned and appointed King at Kingstone, and shortly after Adhelwoldus, cousin germane vnto king Edward, revolted and went to the army of the Pagans, who sought to dole him to be their king in Northumberland.

Ioannes Loofer in his thirde Booke of the description of Africa, writeth, that about this time (to say) about the yere of our Lord 901, the Englishmen at the perswasion of the Gothes, besieged the great Citie Argilla in Barbary, which the Africans call Arella, being 70. miles distant from the streight of Sparacho southward, hoping thereby to withdraue the Saracens out of Europe, where they fought with so great courage and good successe, that they wanne the said towne, and so ransacked it with fire and sword, that scant one escaped thence, and the Towne laye desolate and without inhabitants for the space of thirtie yeres. Wee account this to haue happened in the aforesaid yere, because the Authour, after the fashion of the Saracens, doth referre it

Hastings  
Alrede.

Aelfred deceased

Floriacensis.  
Reg. Hig.  
Seal. cron.  
Regist. Hyde.  
T. Kneburne.  
Cantuar. Hist.  
in S. f. 129.  
Marianus. cotus  
Regul. Hyde.

Alicius,

Marianus Scotus

900

Speculum hist.  
R. Cron.  
Adhelwoldus  
revolted.  
In. Localen.

to the 314. yere of Mahomets Hegira, which by conference of their places doeth seeme to beginne in the yere of our Lord 591. which number being added, doeth bring forth 905.

Adhelwoldus king of the Pagans brought a great army from Casser, and the East English, which robbed and spoiled through all Mercia, and the West country, until they came to Cerikelade, and there went over the Thames, and toke great spoiles about Winton.

King Edward gathered an army and went toward the Danes, but while he tarried for his army out of Kent, Adhelwoldus king of the Danes came upon him with a great power, and bade him battell, wherein Cothricus, and Adhelwoldus kings of the Pagans were slaine.

In the yere 910. a battell was fought at Wodnesfeld, a mile north from Wulfstane Hampton in Staffordshire, where Cowillus and Healdene kings of the Pagans, with many Carles and nobles were slaine, but of the common people innumerable.

Aethelred Carle of the Mercies died, and king Edward toke into his Dominion London and Wrenford, and all the Countrey abisping them into.

In the yere 912. by the kings commandement, at Hertford, betwixt the rivers of Hemeran, Benefician, and Legian, in the north side a Citie is builded.

In the yere 914. the Pagans of Northumberland, and Leicesters, in the countie of Wrothce took spoiles, and in the kings towne called Hokenoxton, and in many other places they slew many people, and returned home against another army of the Danes, being horsemen, were sent into Hertfordshire, towardes Legeeton, with whom the men of the countie encountered, and slaying manie of them, put the rest to flight, taking their hoeses and armour, with great pray. King Edward leaving certaine to build a citie in the south part of the river Ligea, to wit, the towne of Ware, with more part of his army went into Essex, and encamped at Healdune, where he tarried till a towne was builded at Waltham.

In the yere 915. a great naule of Danes sayled about the west countie, and landed in divers places, taking great prayes, and went to their shippes againe. The king for strengthening of the Countrey, made a Castell at the mouth of the water of Avon, and another at Wackingham, and the third at By, that is, on either side of the rivers curle one, & then went into Northampton and Bedfordshires, and subdued the Danes there, with their leader called Turketils.

King Edward builded 02 newes repayed the Townes of Dorchester and Wigmore.

In the yere of our Lord 918. the Kentish, Southey, and East Saxons, besieged Colchester, and wanted it by force, and slew all therein, a few except that escaped by flight. The same yere king Edward went to Colchester with an armie, repayed the wallies, and put a great garrison of souldiers into it.

The next yere died the noble Princesse Elfreda (wife to Etheldredus Duke

Wodnesfeld  
in Staffordshire  
Wulfstane  
Hampton.

Hokenoxton.

The towne of  
Ware builded.  
Waldon in  
Essex.  
Waltham.

Dorchester.  
Wigmore.

Colthall.  
Colchester in  
Essex.

of Mercia) and was buried in the Monastery of Saint Peter, which her Lord and the before had builded in the towne of Gloucester, which Monasterie was after thowne to the ground by the Danes, but Aeldredus Bishopp of Exeter and of Gloucester, made there an other, which is now the chiefest Church in the towne.

This noble woman Elfreda, reedified the Citie of Chester, she repayed the towne of Lamswoth, beside Lichfield, Stafford, Warwike, Shrewsburie, Watresburie, Cloisburie, Legeceaster, with a towne and Castell in the north end of Mercia, upon the River of Merce, that is called Kuncorne: she builded a Bridge over Seuerne called Wymsberie Bridge, &c.

When she had once assayed the paines that women suffer in travelling with child, she ever after refused the embracing of her husband, saying it was not lawfully for any noble woman to be soch desirous liking, where of should arise too great sorrow and paine: she tamed the Welshmen, & in divers battels chased the Danes, after whose death, Edward held that province in his owne hand.

King Edward builded a newe towne against the old towne of Nottingham on the south side of the river of Trent, and made a bridge over the said river betwene the two townes: he subdued the kings of Scotland & Wales: he builded a towne in the north end of Mercia, by the river of Merce, and named it Chiltal, and repayed the towne of Manchester: after all which deeds by him done, he deceased at Faringdon, and was buried at Winton in the new church, which his father Alfred had builded when he had reigned cristl. yeres.

Aethelstane, after the death of Edward Senior his father, was crowned at Kingstone by Athelmus Archbishop of Canterbury. His coronation was celebrated in the market place upon a stage erected on hie, that the king might be seene the better of the multitude. He was a prince of worthy merrour, valiant and wise in all his aces, and brought this land into one monarchie: for he expelled utterly the Danes, and quieted the Welshmen. He caused them to pay him yearly tribute twentie pound of gold, three hundred pound of silver, and two thousand six hundred head of neate, with houndes and halukes to a certaine number.

And after that he had by battell conquered Scotland, he made one Constantine king of Scots under him, adding this princely word, that it was more honour to him to make a king, then to be a king. He made seven coining mints at Canterburie, four for the king, two for the Archbishop, and one for the Abbot: at Rochester three, two for the king, and one for the bishop: besides these, in London six, in Winchester six, in Lewes six, in Hastings two: in Chichester one: in Hampton two: in Warham two: in Exeter two: in Shaftesburie six, and in every good towne one Coiner.

He founded S. Germans in Colnehall, which was since a Bishops See: he founded S. Petrosus at Wodmin: he founded Bilton priory, Spilketon and Spilchney. He walled the citie of Exeter with squared stone, of which Citie more shall be shewed in my larger Booke.

In this time Guy earle of Warwike, in a combate, slew Colbrand the Danish Giant in Wyde made, nere unto Winchester.

Henry Bradshaw  
Rexaul. Hygden.

Chester.  
Lamswoth.  
Lichfield.  
Stafford.  
Warwike.  
Shrewsburie.  
Watresburie.  
Legeceaster repayed.  
Kuncorne towne and Castell, and Wymsberie bridge builded.  
Mansus Scotus.  
Hen. Hunting.  
Alredus Rual.  
Shiltal builded.  
Manchester repayed.

924

Alfredus Bener.  
Io Leland.  
Spe. Histor.  
Ri. Cirenc.  
W. Malmsb.

Cant. Record.  
W. Lambere.  
Saxon Lawes.

T. Rudborne.  
Girardus Cornubius.

Copy of Warwike  
Rex Cole.  
brynd.

Aethelstane

John Lydgate.  
940

Aethelstane reigned 16. yeres, and was buried at Spalmeburie.  
Edmund the brother of Adelstane took upon him the government of this Realme, whose short reigne took from him the renome of most high pates that should have rebounded to this posterity: for he was a man disposed of nature to noblenesse and iustice: he took out of the Danes hands the townes of Lincoln, Nottingham, Warbie, Leicester, and Stamford, and brought all Mercia to his dominion: he expelled the two kings, Anlafus the sonne of Sichicus, and Reginald the sonne of Cuthbert, out of Northumberland, and subdued the Countrey to his dominion. He granted the privilege unto S. Edmund, in which the limites of the towne of Edmundsburie are contained.

Marianus;

Io. Taxter.

W. Malmes.

On Saint Austines day, in the kings towne named Buckletharch, the king (whilst he would have saved his Swear from the hands of a wicked theefe called Leof) was slaine, when he had reigned 16. yeres, and six moneths, and was buried at Glaffenbury.

945  
Spe. Histo.  
Ru. Circen.

Eldred succeeded Edanund his brother: for his sons Edwyne and Edgar were thought to yong to take on them so great a charge. He took on him but as protecto<sup>r</sup>, but afterwards he was crowned at Kingstone.

This Eldred had the earnest fauor of the commons, because he was a great maintainer of honestie, and also most abhorred naughtie and unruly persons: for his expertnesse in feates of armes, he was much commended, whereby he quitted and kept in due obedience the Northmbers and Scots, and expelled the Danes.

He placed the Bishop of Coyntwall at S. Germans, where it continued till the time of Edward, next before the conquest, in whose time it was translated to Excester.

Marianus.  
Cantab.  
Record.

In the yere of our Lorde, 951. hee committed to prison Wolfstane, Arch bishop of Yorke in Luthabrie, because hee often had bene accused to have committed inanie Citizens of Ebsford to be slaine, in reuenge of the abbat Adelme unjustlie by them slaine: he was a yere after released, and returned to his See.

Alder-

Ising Eldred builded spich at Abindone, gaue great laides, and confirmed them Charters with seals of golde.

He reigned nine yeres, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church at Winchester, in the olde spnasterie.

Edwyn succeeded his uncle Eldred in the kingdome: hee was crowned at Kingstone, of whose isle no honest memorie, for one heinous act by him committed in the beginning of his reigne.

Abieious King.  
W. Malmes.  
Speculum Hist.  
Bi. Circence.

In the selfe day of his coronation, hee sodainlie withioyde himselfe from his Lodes, and in the sight of certaine persons rauished his owne kinswoman, the wife of a noble man of his realme, and afterward slewe her husband, who he might haue the vniuersall vs of her brautie. For which acte, and for hauing Dunstane, hee became odible to his subjects: and of the Northmbers and prople of middle England, that rose against him, was deprived, when he had reigned foure yeres. Hee died and was buried in the new Abbey of Winchester.

The king de-  
prived.

Edge

Edgar the Peaceable, brother to Edwyne, was crowned at Bath. He was so excellent in iustice, and sharpe in correction of vices, as well in his magistrates, as other subjects, that neuer before his daies was used lesse felonie by robbers, or extortion or biberie, by false officers. He chastised the great negligence, couctousnesse and vicious liuing of the cleargie, and brought them to a better order. Of stature he was but little, yet of mind: balliant and hardie, and verie expert in martiall pollicie. Dunstane was ordained Metropolitane and Primasate of England, by whose, and other wise men the king being instructed, did in euerie place oppresse euill persons, expound rebels under sharpe correction, the iust and modest man he loued and cherished, Churches that had bene destroyed, hee repaired; casting out of monasteries secular priestes; and gathered together companies of Monkes, and of Nunnes, giuing good admonition to the Pastors, whom he appointed to haue rule ouer them. He was in his government discrete, ciuill, liberall, gentle, mercifull, and balliant; in warres hardie, defending with warlike power the right of his kingdome, bringing his people vnder the obedience of their gouernours, naming his magistrates to iustice, ordaining rightfull lawes, whereby hee enioyed a quiet kingdome, so that hee needed not to prouoke other to warre, nor anie warre was procured against him, but kept the boundes of his kingdome, so long as he liued, with prudence, fortitude, iustice, and temperance: not onely the Princes of the Isles being tyants shode in feare of him, but also the kings of manie nations, hearing of his wisdom, and valiantie, did all honour him. Hee caused Widwall king of Wales to pae him, in name of tribute, three hundred shillings yearly (or rather three hundred shillings) when he had performed for the space of three yeres, the fourth yere, was none there to be found.

959  
King crowned  
at Bath.  
Alfridus Bowerla.

Marianus.

Wolnes de-  
stroyed in  
W. land.

Marianus.

King Edgar prepared a nanie (as diuers authors haue written) of thre thousand and five hundred shippes, of the which, after Callen every yere, one thousand two hundred, he appointed to come into the East part of the realme; one thousand two hundred into the West parts, and one thousand two hundred into the North parts: this number of shippes being incredible, peradventure one author following another, the first being deceived by mistaking the same, the rest haue erred, but William Thorne a Spoke of S. Augustines by Cantabrie, setteth downe the whole number of ships to be 300. and this hath a more likelihood of truth. But to the matter, with the East nanie, he sailed into the West, and sending that backe, hee would saile with the West nanie into the North, and that being sent backe, with the North nanie he would saile into the East partes; and after this lost, hee used to saile round about the whole Island euery summer, by the which doing, hee prouided for the defence of his kingdome against strangers, and practised himselfe, and his people in exercises of warre.

In the winter season and spring of the yere, hee traualled through all the parts of his Realme, diligently searching howe the lawes and statutes were obserued by the Lodes, and men of greatest authority, least the poore should be oppressed, by the mightie and rich men.

Thus

Thus Edgare notwithstanding his manifold vertues before rehearsed, was reported (saith W. Malmesbury) to be a cruell Prince, and also given o- uermuch to the lustes of the flesh, and for example they saie, that Edgare hea- ring tell, that Orgare Earle of Deuonshire had a daughter of passing beauty, named Alfred, he commanded Ethelwold an Earle, and also his secretarie to go loke vpon her, and so to prouide, that if she were according to the common byated fame, he mought bee his wife. Which Ethelwold took his iourney, and founde it to be true: whereupon, (being himselfe taken with her loue) lea- uing his message from the king vndone, he laboured to obtaine her to bee his wife: and returning to the king, reported the damosell to be such a one as pas- sed not the common beauty of women, and therefore not mete for so great a spaciouse as he: So that after, when the king had set his loue vpon another, Ethelwold obtained the false damosell in marriage, to his owne destruction, for when the fame of her passing beauty was spread through the whole realme, the king desiring to see her, and by deceit to deceiue the deceiver, shewing a great countenance to the Earle, appointed a daie to go loke on the woman, which he heard so much commended.

The Earle being in great heavinesse, went before to his wife, and desired her that she should, for the safeguarde of his life, disfigure her selfe with some homely apparell, and otherwise as she might: but she breaking promise with her wretched husband, dressed her selfe in a glasse as curiously as she mought, omitting nothing that mought tempt the king, and prouoke his desire, and ac- cording to her meaning it came to passe, for the king no sooner sawe her, but he was taken with her loue, and to obtaine his purpose the sooner, shewing a good countenance to the Earle, hee called him to go with him to hunt in the wood of Marston, where he shot him through with an arrowe, into the which place, a ballard sonne of the dead Earle came, euen as the dead was done, whom the king asked, how he liked such hunting, who (as men saie) made this answer, I like it well, my Lorde, that liketh you: with which saying he so ap- pealed the kings angrie mind, that the king neuer loued any man better then him, and made amends to the sonne for the cruell act against his father. The king tooke Ladye Alfred to wife, and she builded an house of Priests in the same place where her first husband Ethelwold was slaine.

963. Ethelwald Bishop of Winchester, in a great famine, solde alwaie all the sacred vessels of his Church for to relieue the almost starued people: saying that there was no reason, that the fencelesse temples of God should be bound in riches, and liuely temples of the holie ghost lacke it.

The yere 969. King Edgare, gaue commandement to Dunstane Arch- bishop of Canterbury, Ethelred Bishop of Winchester, and Oswold Bishop of Worcester, that expelling secular Priests out of the great Monasteries, builded through Mercia, they should place Monks, and to that effect he made the like Oracion as followeth.

Because our Lord hath magnified his mercie to worke with vs, it is met (most reuerend fathers) that with worshippe worshes, we answer his innum- erable benefites: for neither by our owne worke possesse we the earth, and our

Marston  
founded.

Bishop of Winchester.  
After his saying.

Alfredus  
Ritualensis.

Oracion of  
Edgare.

owns arme hath not saved vs: but his right hand, and his holie arme; for that he hath bene pleased with vs: mete therefore it is, that we submit both our selues and our soules to him, that hath put all thinges vnder our feete; and that we diligently labour that they whome he hath made subiect vnto vs maie be made subiect vnto his lawes. And truly it is my part to rule the latie, with the lawe of equitie, to doe iust iudgement betwixt man and his neighbours, to punish church robbers, to repelle rebels, to deliuer the weakke from the handes of his stronger: the poore and meete from them that spoile them. And it also belongeth to my care, to haue consideration to the health, quietnesse, or peace of the ministers of the church, the flocke of Monks, the companies of Virgines, and to prouide the thinges needfull for them. The examining of whole manners belongeth vnto you, if they liue chastly, if they beaue themselves honestly towards them which be abroad, if in diuine ser- uice they bee carefull, if in teaching the people diligent, if in feeding sober, if moderate in apparell, if in iudgement they bee discrete: If ye had cured these thinges by prudent scrutine (by your licence I speake w reuerend fa- thers) such horrible and abhominable thinges of the clearkes had not come to our eares. I omit to speake, that their crowne is not large, nor their rown- ding conuenient, but wantonnes in apparell, insolencie in behaviour, stifi- nesse in wordes, doe betwixt the madnesse of the inward man. Further- more, howe great negligence is there in the diuines, when in the holy vigils, they will scarce vouchsafe to be present; when at the holie solemnities of the diuine seruice, they seeme to be gathered together to plaie and to laugh, ra- ther then to sing?

I will that which god men lament, and euill men laugh at, I will speake with sorrowe (if so bee it maie be spoken) how they dole in banque- tings, in drunkennesse, in chambering and wantonnesse, that now clearkes houses maie be thought to bee brotherly houses of harlots, and an assembly of players. There is dice, there is dauncing and singing, there is watching til midnight, with crying and howling. Thus the patrimone of kinges, the almes of Princes, yea, (and that more is) the price of that precious blood is o- uerthrowne. I haue our fathers, therefore, for this purpose emptied their trea- sures: for this intent, hath the kings erdetours by withdrawing of manie re- uenewes bene giuen: hath the kings bountifullnes giuen lawes and posses- sions to Christian Churches for this ende: that Clearkes harlots should bee pampered with delicious dainties, that riotous guests maie be prepared for, that boundes, and halokes, and such like toles maie be gotten? Of this the fondlours crie out, the common people murmur, the iesters & scoffers sing and daunce, and you regard it not; you spare it, you dissemble it: Where is the worde of Leuie, and zeale of Symeon, which killed the circumcised Sichimites: being the figure of them that defile the Church of Christ, with polluted ades, abusing Jacobs daughter as a harlot: Where is the spirit of Moyse, that spar- red his bowholoe himselfe, with shipping the head of the Calfe: Where is the dagger of Phinies the Priest, who killing him that plaid the harlot with the spadiante, with this holy emulation pacified Gods wrath: Where is the

spirit

spirit of Peter, by whose power comenoues is destroyed, and Simon shall be reſte condemned: Endeavour to imitate *W*ise Priests, in God: It is time to rise against them that have broken the lawe of God. I haue Constantine, you haue Peters sword in your handes, let vs soine right handes, let vs couple sword to sword: that the Leapers maie be cast out of the Church, that the hallowe place of our Lord maie be purged, and the sonnes of Leueie may minister in the Church, who saide to his father and mother, I knowe you not, and to his brethren, I am ignorant of you. Go to carelessly I beseech you, least it repent vs to haue done that that we haue done, and to haue giuen that wee haue giuen, if we shall see that not to bee spent in Gods seruice, but on the riotousnesse of most wicked men, through unpunished libertie. Let the reliques of holie Saintes, which they seene, and the reuerende Altars before which they rage, moue you. Let the marvellous notion of our auncestors moue you, whose almes the Clearkes surie abuse.

*W*ise Great grandfathers father Echelwold (as you knowe) gaue the tenth part of all his landes to Churches and Abbeyes: my great grandfather Alfred of holie memoie, thought not meete to spare his treasures, his patrimonie, no coffes, nor reuenewes that he might enrich the Church: my graund father, the olde Edward, holwe much he gaue vnto the Churches, your fatherhood is not ignorant. It becometh you to haue in remembrance, with what gifts my father and uncle enriched Christs Altar. *W* Dunstane, father of fathers, beholde, I praye you, the eles of my father thinking on the, from the bright coast of heauen, heare his complaining wordes with a certaine pittie thumbe ring in thine eares. *W*hon *W* my father Dunstane! *W*hon gauest me whole soule counsell to build Abbeyes and Churches, thou wast my helper and fellow worker in all things. *W*he I elected as a shepheard, father and bishop of my looke, and keeper of my manners, when did I not obey thee? what treasure did I preferre before thy counsels? what possessions despised I not, thou commanding me: If thou thoughtest meete to giue anie thing to the poore, I was ready. If thou iudgedst anie thing to be giuen to Churches, I deferred not. If thou complainedst any thing to bee wanting to *W*ponkes or Clearkes, I supplied. *W*hon saidst that almes was euerlasting, and none to bee more fully fall than that which was giuen to Abbeyes and Churches, therewith Gods seruants maie be sustained, and what remaineth maie be giuen to the poore.

*W*retched almes, worthy price of the soule! *W*hole some reme die for our finnes! which from the Priests A man sinketh in the little skin of a strange mouse, which adozeth her little eares, which garnisheth her small fingers, which trusteth by her delicate bodie in silke and purple. Beholde *W* father the fruit of mine almes, and the effect of thy promise. What wilt thou answer to this complaint? I know, when thou doest see a theefe, thou runnest not with him, neither hast thou put thy position with adulterers. Thou hast rebuked, thou hast intrated, and blamed them, wordes are condemned, thou must come to stripes, and thou shalt not want the kings authoritie. Thou hast here said *W*he *W* venerable father Echelwold Bishop of Winchester, Thou hast the

rend *W*relate of Worcester Oswold: to you I commit this businesse, that both by bishopricke censure, and kingly authoritie, filthy sinners maie be cast out of the Church, and they that liue in order brought in.

King Edgar, hauing restored and new founded foure seuen *W*ponasteries, which before his time had bene destroyed by the Danes and other Pagans, and intending to continue that his intent till the number of fifty were accomplished, he confirmed the *W*ponasterie of Worcester, which Oswold then *W*ishop of Worcester, by the kings consent, had enlarged, and made it the cathedrall church of that shire.

Echelwold *W*ishop of Winchester, renewed the *W*ponasterie of Ely, and Edgar confirmed his foundation, with great priuiledges, as by his Charter may appere.

*W*ise concerning the state of the Church of England in those daies maie appere by the wordes of Edgar in his Charter to the Abbe of Malmesbury, which are to this effect: All the *W*ponasteries in my Realme, to the outward sight, are nothing but worme eaten, and rotten timber and boards: and that worse is, within they are almost empty and void of deuine seruice.

The Danes and all other people in England, vied the vice of great drunkening. The king therefore by counsell of Dunstan put downe manie alehouses, and would suffer but one in a village or towne, except it were a greatborough: hee ordained certaine cuppes with pinnes or nailles, and made a law, that whosoever dranke past that marke at one draught, should forfeit a certaine paine.

Alwinus Alderman Earle of East Angles, kinsman to king Edgar, founded the Abbe of Ramsey: king Edgar confirming the same on Christmas daie, the yere of our Lorde God nine hundred seuentie and foure, in the presence of all the Nobilitie. The same yere was an earthquake through all England.

Edgar being at Chester, entered the Riuer of Wye, hee toke the rule of the helme, and caused eight kings to row him vnto Saint Johns Church, and from thence vnto his pallace, in token that he was Lord and king of so many prouinces. The names of the 8. kings were, Rinoch king of the Scots, Malcolme of Cumberland, Macone king of Span and of many Ilands, Dufhal king of Demetia or South Wales, Siferich and Huwall kings of Wales, Iames king of Galaway, and Iukil of Westmerland. King Edgar reigned xvi. yeres, and was buried at Glassebury.

By his first wife Egelsede (as some doe write) or by a religious botarie, as some other doe write, he had issue Edward surnamed the Martyr, who succeeded after his father. Of his wife Elfrich daughter to Ordgarus, Duke of Devonshire, he received another sonne named Eadred, and a daughter named Wolfrith.

Edward the sonne of Edgar was crowned at Kingston, by the handes of Dunstan Archbishop of Cantuarbie, and Oswald Archbishop of Yorke. This man might well bee compared to his father for his modestie and gentleness, so that he was worthily fauoured of all men, except onely of his step-mother

Liber Ely.

*W*. Malmes.  
Church of Malmesbury, the state thereof.

Against queening.

Labours against drunkenness.

Ramsey foundation.  
Ex charta regia.

Eight kings rowed king Edgar.  
Floracensis.  
John Pike.  
Fulegium.  
*W*. Malm.  
Alfred. Deener.  
Speculum histor.  
Rt. Circencell.  
Rog. Hound.  
Flores Historiar.  
Reynold. Lloyd.  
Henry. Baltham.  
Edmuns.  
Osberrus.  
Antonius Archi.  
Marianus Scotus.

975  
John Pike.  
*W*. Malm.  
Alfredus Deener.  
Speculum Histor.  
Rt. Circencell.  
Flores Historiar.

mother, and other of her alliance, which ever bare a grudge against him, for so much as she desired to have the governance of the Realme for her owne sonne Ethelred.

The king mur-  
dered.

Marwell and  
Spaldenburie  
built.

978  
W. Malmes.  
Speculum Hist.  
Ri. Cirencestr.

T. Redburne.

Affertus.  
Flux of men,  
and murthering  
of cattell.  
Byshops sea at  
Cirencestr.

Byshops sea at  
Durham.

Alfwine  
Durham.

This Edward while he was hunting in a forrest (by chance) lost his company, and rode alone to refresh himselfe at the castel of Cossie in the Isle of Dorsetche, where, by counsell of his Stepmother Elfrida, he was traitorously murdered as he sat on his horse, when he had raigned iii. yeres. He was buried at Egham, and after at Shaftesburie. Elphred did after that take great penance, and builded ii. Monasteries of nuns, Almsburie and Egham: in which Egham he after lived a solitarie life till he died.

Ethelred commonlie called Unrædie, the sonne of king Edgar, by his second wife Elphred, was crowned at Kingstone. But because he came to the kingdom by wicked meanes, and by killing his brother, hee coulde neuer get the god will of the people, who had conceived an ill opinion of him: of this arose ciuill wars within the Realme, and often dissention and discords, as well of the Nobles as of the common sort.

In the yere 982. a great part of the City of London was burnt, which City at this time had most building from Ludgate toward Westminster, and little or none where the hart of the city is now, except in diuers places was housing, that stood without order: so that manie cities, as Canterburie, Dorche, and other in England, passed London in building: but after the conquest it increased, and now passeth all other.

988. Dunstan Archbishop of Canterburie deceased, and was buried at Canterburie. Ciricus Byshop of Sarum succeeded.

A disease not knowne in England in time past, to wit, seuers of men, with the fire, and murthering of cattell killed many.

In the yere 994. king Ethelred created a Byshops sea at Excester.

The same yere Anlaf king of the Norwaies, and Sweyne king of Danes on the daie of the natiuitie of our Lord, in xliii. Gallies came vp to London, which he attempted to breake into, and to set on fire: but they were repulsed, not without their great detriment and losse by the Citizens, whereupon they being driven with force, leauing London, set vpon Caister and Kent, by the Sea coasts burnt townes, and wasted the fieldes, without respect of sexe or age killed all, and wasted with fire and sword all that theire male not carry away. At length being pacified with a tribute of 16000. poundes departed to their ships, and wintered at Southampton.

In the yere 995. a Comet appeared. The Byshopricke of Lindisfar of Holle Island was removed to Durham: and there Aldwine the Byshop first builded a small Oratory of tweluen wands or hurdles, where the body of Cuthbert lay for a time, till a larger Church were builded.

In the yere 996. the Lady Wlfrune widow sometime wife to Adelme duke of Northampton, obtained licence of king Ethelred to giue lande to the church which he had founded at Hampton in Staffordshire, whereby the said town of Hampton took the addition of Wlfrune, and so was called Wlfrunehampton.

In the yere 1002. king Ethelred caused all the Danes in England to be drine upon the daie of Saint Brice. The same yere Wlricus Spore founded a Monasterie at Burton vpon Trent. King Ethelred confirmed this foundation in these wordes: 1004. *Indictione 2. horum testimonio sapientium quorum nomina inferius annotata cernuntur.*

*Ego Ethelred rex Anglorum, hoc donum perpetuum duxi a libertate.*

*Ego Ethelstan filius regis.*

*Ego Eadbrigt filius regis.*

*Ego Edmund filius regis.*

*Ego Aedred filius regis.*

*Ego Adung filius regis.*

*Ego Adgar filius regis.*

iii. Archbishops and bishops, xii. Abbots, iii. Dukes, &c.

In the yere 1003. Swaine king of Denmarke with a great armie invaded England with fire and sword: 1004. they fought a great battell at Egham against Wlketell Cate of East Angles.

In the yere 1006. The deceitfull Edrike of Straton, bade the noble Duke Alfhelmus to a banquet at Shrobsbury, from whence he had him out to hunt, where a certaine Butcher of Shrobsbury named Goodwin Dorchard, whome Edrike long before had byed, kept out of a place, where he had laine in waste for him, and wickedly slewe Alfhelmus. And within a while after, his sonnes, Wulfegus, and Wegate, by commandement of the king Ethelred, at Coham, where the court then lay, had their eyes put out.

In the yere 1007. king Ethelred made Edrike of Straton duke of Mercia, and gaue to him his daughter Edina to wife. This Edrike the son of Egelricus was but a man of low kindred, to whome neuertheless, his eloquent tongue had purchased riches and nobility: toly he was of toly, pleasant of speech, and passed all men in those daies in enuie, falsehood, pride, and crueltie, he had to his byre, then Britricus, Alfricus, Beda, Agelricus, Agelwardus, Agelmarus, father to Godwine Duke of West Saxons.

In the yere 1009. Swaine king of Denmarke, with the Danes fought a great battell against Wlketell at Hengemore.

In the yere 1010. The army of Danes march through the wood called Cistron to Wroth, which tolonge they burnt & destroyed. When marching about into East Angles, spoiled that country, burnt Egham, Grantbridge. Then they spoiled the shires of Hertford, Buckingham, and Bedford. When they wasted Northamptonshire, Wiltshire, &c. The Danes hauing spoiled the East Angles as is afore shewed, Alfwine byshop of Ely, brought the bodie of St. Edmund from Wrothsworth through Caister, ouer Stratford bridge, and so to London in at Triplegate, (a place so called of cripples begging there) at which gate (it is said) the bodie entering, myacles were wrought, as, some of the lame to go by sight prayling God. The body of king Edmund rested for the space of thre yeres in the parish church of St. Gregory, adioyning vnto the cathedrall church of St. Paul, from whence it was conueyed backe againe to Stapleford in Caister, and so to Wrothsworth, now called Worp in Suffolke, where his

The Danes  
murdered  
Burton vpon  
Trent.

Wife of  
Straton Duke  
of Mercia and  
his byre.

Protectors of  
Godwine.

The Danes  
spoile East  
Angles.

thop Ailwyne builded for him a new Church.

In 1011. East Angles, East Saxons, Middlesex, Bedfordshire, Dorsetshire, Cranthbridgeshire, halfe Huntingdonshire, and Portsmouthshire: and on the south side of Sharnes, Bent, Surrey, Southsex, Southampton, Wiltshire, and Berkehire, being destroyed with sword and fire, king Ethelred required peace with the Danes, promising to them stipends and tribute: to the which they scintillie assented, but yet they never left their cruelties: at length they besieged and destroyed Canterburie, and so; that the Archbyschoppe Ellegus would not yield to them, he was first imprisoned there, and after conveyed to Orerich, and there banished to death. Chrifts Church is spoiled and burnt: the Sponkes with all other men are tentred, i.e. of every x. being put to death, the tenth suffered to live in misericordie: the number of them that were left alive, was 4. moneths, & of lay people 800. so that the number slain was 36. moneths, & 8000. of the lay people.

In the yere 1012. they took tribute of 48000. poundes, and at the last, after divers overthowes giuen to the men of this Ilande, they possessed the same, and put king Ethelred to flight, constraining him to live in exile among the Normans.

This Ethelred had two wiues, Ethelgina an English woman, and Emma a Norman: of the first he had two children, of which, sailing of Edmund, who succeeded him in the kingdome, it were nothing to our purpose to speake: of the second that was Emma sister to Richard Duke of Normandie, there was borne two sonnes, to wit, Edward and Alured. And that I doe here (contrary to that is commonlie vied) set Edward before Alured as elder brother, I am moued therunto by no small authoritie, which I haue taken out of the Historiographers of that age, out of Gemeucensis, a most diligent writer of genealogies, and one other Author, who in his commentarie written in praise of Emma the Quene, affirmeth, that Edward was the elder brother, whome I do the better beleue, because it is not like, that he seeing the thinges with his eyes, should mistake the matter, especiallie writing to the M. who was mother to them both.

Swanus in the meane time subdued all Englands, and the people for feare yielded vnto him on euerie side, ouer whome most crueltie he triumphed. Not long after he departed this life at Seinsburge, and left Canutus his sonne successor in the kingdome.

Ethelred hearing that Swanus was dead, leaving in Normandie to Duke Richarde his Sisters Sonne, Emma his Wife, and the children that hee had by her, returned with all speede into Englands with Edmund his Sonne by his first Wife, being then at Spanis state, and by the treachery of his owne men, and the ayde of the Normans, moued warre against his enemy.

Canutus finding himselfe vnable to match with him, went into Denmark, minding to returne thither immediatlie againe.

Ethelred being contrary to his expectation thus restored to his kingdome, shewed great crueltie vpon the Danes that remained in England, sparing no

The Danes destroyed Canterburie.

Tyranny of the Danes in England.

Recon. eccle. Cant. Marianus, Floriacensis.

Ethelgina and Emma wiues to Ethelred. Alured and Edward the son of Ethelred.

W. Gemeucensis. & com. Emma.

ther man nor woman, young nor olde. Therefore Canutus being herie desirous to reuenge the same, prepared a new army, and came into England against Ethelred with all speede he coule, raging wide and side with fire and sword. Ethelred in the meane season, whether by sickness or for sorrow, died, when he had reigned 38. yeres, and was buried in the north Ile of Saint Pauls Church in London.

Edmond the son of Ethelred by his first wife, succeeded in the kingdome, who (whether it were for the great strength of his bodie, or for that hee always vied to go in armour) was surnamed Ironside.

Canute in the meane time, with all his manie came by to London, & on the south side the Thames, he caused a trench to be cast, through the which he caused all his ships to be towed or drawne into the west side of the bridge. And after with a deepe and large trench and siege they compassed the Citie round about, and so shut by all going in or out, of all manner of persons: and after attempted to haue wonne it by assault, but that would not serue, the Citizens made so ballant resistance, that in the end, the enemies were repulsed farre from the walls: whereupon the siege for a time being dismissed, part of the army being left to keepe the ships, the other part went into the West Saxonie, with such speede, that they gaue no leisure vnto king Edmund to gather his armie, notwithstanding, with that small army which he had, he boldly met with them in Dorsetshire, and joining battell with them at Benham nere to Gillingham, he ouercame them, and put them to flight.

After this, king Edmund determining manfully to giue battell vnto Canute with a greater hoste then before, mette with his army at a place called Shereffane in Willocestershire, where he in the foreward fiercely fought, executing the office both of a hardie souldiour and ballant Captaine. But because Edrike of Straton, the offe named Traitor, and the beloued Almaricus, and Algarus the sonne of Meaninus, which ought to haue ayded him with the Southamptonshire men and Wiltshire men were of the Danes party, hee was sore wearied, but yet the first day of the battell, the fight was so errime and bloudie, that both the armies were so wearied, they were not able longer to fight.

The next day the king had ouerthrowne the Danes, but for Edrike of Straton, who seeing the Englishmen haue the better hand, he cutte off the head of a certaine man, named Osmearus, like to king Edmund in face and haire, and holding it vp, cried out, that the Englishmen fought in vaine, and held by the head, saying: Your master king Edmund is dead, die as fast as you can: which the Englishmen had no sooner heard, but they were ready to flie. But shortly after vnderstanding the king to bee alive, they took courage againe, and are carried vpon the Danes, and beate downe a great number of them. After this about midnight Canute commanded his people to depart with silence, and hastening toward London, went to their ships, and shortly after besieged London. Duke Edrike sued for pardon, and obtained it.

King Edmund hastened toward London, and deliuered the Londoners from the siege, chasing the Danes to their ships.

In. Tacton: W. Malmes. Alfricus Bower.

1016

A trench cast, and ships towed about the south end of London bridge.

Gillingham fought in Dorsetshire. Benham.



About two daies after, king Edmund passed over the Thames at Wyntersforde, but passing the river manie of his men were drowned. He encresing his armie, halsted toward the West Saxons. And the Danes againe go by to London, but coulde there profite nothing: wherefore going from thence with their nauie, they enter the river of Arcine, and passe into Mercia, there to fetch spoiles, slaying all they mette, and burning Townes, and so laden with spoyle returne unto their shippes. After this their footemen passe in shippes into the river of Swerway, but their boyssmen toke prayes upon the land.

King Edmund againe passed the River of Thames at Wyntersforde, entered Kent, and fought with the Danes at Otford, and put them to flight: and if the false Edrike had not staied him at Eaglesforde or Nellsforde, hee had that daie gotten the full victory. So hee shoyte, the first and last battell was at Alesenden in Essex, nere to Rochford, here he put his army into thre battels.

In the meane time Canute bzinging his men into order, a fore battell was fought, and manie slaine on both sides. But Edrike perceiving the Danes to give ground, he with his power fledde, as he had promised to Canute, and so king Edmund and the English armie had the worst: there was slaine in that battaile, Duke Alfrike, Duke Godwine, Visekerrell Duke of East Angles, Athelwardus Duke, sonne to the Duke of East Angles, Athelwine called Gods friend, a duke: and almost all the compante of the English nobilitie. Cadnoth also bishop of Lincoln, sometimes Abbot of Ramsey, and Wolsey the Abbot, which were come together with their clergie to pray to God for the soules of that fought, were slaine. And Edmund went almost alone on foote to Gloucester, where he gathered a newe force to set upon his enemies, but Canute pursued him as he fled. And having prepared their armies, both the kings themselves attempted to fight by hand for the right of the kingdom in the Ile of Manis in Severne, in the which combate, they both being wearied, fell to a covenant to denide the same, so that the one halfe of the kingdom should be under Canutus, and the other halfe under Edmund, which Edmund not long after died at London, slaine by the treason of Edrike of Straton, and was buried at Glasterburie, leaving Edmund and Edward his children very young.

Canutus the Dane, taking an occasion, because in the covenant that was concluded concerning the deniding of the Realme, no assurance was made for the children of Edmund, he chalenged all England to himselfe alone by lawe as they call it, of growing to, which was a most easie thing for him to doe, because there was no man that durst erect himselfe as patron to defende the childrens right and title, and by this subtile and craftie interpretation of the covenant the Dane got the Monarchie of England, and helde the brother of Edmund, and continued the children farre awaie out of England, least they shoulde at anye time be brought againe and receive the full right. Some say, they were sent to a certaine man that was a Prince in Swerthland, there to be kept watched out of the waie: and that the Prince understanding they were king

Nellsford in Kent.

Woden in Essex.

Bishop, Abbot, and George slaine in prael.

Combate for the kingdom. England divided.

1018 The Danes possided all England.

The Kings children continued into Swerthen.

children, spared them, contrarie to the credite and trust that was committed unto him: which appeareth to be true, in that the same foraine Lord kepte and brought uppe the children honorable, the yongest of which, whose name was Edward, did afterwards marrie Agatha, the daughter of Henric the fourth, Emperour of Rome, of whome he had manie children, of which we shall speake hereafter. And the other, which was the elder brother, whose name was Edmund, died without children.

In the meane season Canutus, because he had no heire that lawfully might succede him in his kingdom (for Harolde and Swaine were begotten of a concubine) partlie that he might establish in time to come the kingdom that he had gotten unto his owne kinred that came by lawfull succession; and partlie that he might purchase to himselfe the friendship of the Englishmen, and of the Normans, procured to have given him in marriage Emma, the widow of king Ethelred, who at that time was with Edward and Alured her Sonnes in exile with Duke Richard in Normandie, which marriage seemeth to be made even by Gods providence, who had determined to restore the common wealth in England, whereby, as by the Lawe and Title of Recouerie, and returne out of exile, the monarchie of all England, which the Danes had taken from the Englishmen, and had possessed five and twentie yeres and more, did returne againe to the Englishmen that were the right heires. For Emma concluded marriage with the Dane, upon condition that the kingdom of England shoulde remaine unto none other but unto the children that were begotten of her, if anye of them did remaine alive: by reason of this marriage, shortly after the did beare Canutus a sonne of his owne name, commonly called Hardycanutus.

This second name was given him because of his great courage, like as his brother Harolde was named Harescote, that is to saie, Lightscote, because of his notable swiftnesse of foote.

By this assentie and alliance, the Danes became of the more strength and power. He kept the Englishmen in his service so long as he lived.

At the feast of Whitsmasse, king Canute being at London, commaunded the traitour Edrike of Straton to be put to death in his Pallace closelie for feare of tumulte. Some saie, hee was tormentted to death with firebrands and linkes: some saie one waie, some another, but dispatched hee was: for the king feared, through his treason to be circumvented of his kingdom, as his predecessors had bene before, to wit, Ethelred and Edmund. His bodie hee caused to be layde forth on the wall of the Citie, there to remaine unburied, to be seene of all men. With him also were slaine, Northman a Duke, son to Duke Leofwinus brother to Leofricus, and Ethelwardus the son of duke Egelmere, and Brichricus sonne of Elfegus prince of Denonshire: these died without fault (saith mine Author.) The king made Leofricus Duke in his brothers place, and helde him afterwards verie deare. King Canute subdued the Scots, whereby he was king of Englands, Scotlands, Denmarke, and Norway.

After that, king Canutus went to Denmarke, and so to Rome, and returned

Agatha the Emperours daughter the wife of Edward.

Harolde and Swaine concubines children.

Marriage made upon condition.

How 2. names were giuen to kings.

Edrike of Straton the traitor rewarded.

Marianus.

Canute king of 4. kingdoms.

turned againe into England, where hee kept good iustice all his life, and did many charitable deedes: whereof moze shall be spoken in my larger Chronicle.

Edmund.  
buried new  
found and  
painted  
grained.

Record Exche-  
quer, y. 31.  
of H. 3.

Iohn Lydgate.

Edmund  
in Essex.

Henry Hun-  
tington.

Canute founded anew the Monastery of Saint Edmund at Bury, restoring to the same, the donation which Edmund king of the West Saxons had given to Saint Edmund the king and Martyr, who was there buried: he displaced the secular Priests for their dissolute life, and placed there an Abbot with Monks, he gave to them many great liberties, and made a ditch overthwart Meltonmarket heath, it is now by some called, the Dineles ditch, to enclose the lands sometime belonging to king Edmund, and discharged the same of all tribute.

King Edward the Confessor, since that time, not onely confirmed the same liberties of S. Edmund, but also gave to Abbot Baldwin a Charte, and authority to haue an exchange of mints, and to come in his Monasterie: And moze to encrease their franchise, gave the manour of Eldenham and to towe, with eight hundredes to their possession (saith Iohn Lydgate) and trust it is, that I find in record, the franchise of Saint Edmundsbury, to containe the hundredes following, Blackborne, Wilsbyrge, Thedwarder, Wabbar, Colford, Shingo, Lackeford, and Goring halfe hundred. Thus much for the liberties of that towne. Now Baldwine a Monk, of Saint Dionys, physician to the said king Edward, being made Abbot of Bury in the space of nine and twenty yeeres, erected a newe Church of Stone, by licence of William Conquerour, brought from Caen in Normandy, landed at Waltham, and from thence brought by land to Bury: the foundation was accomplished, and the body of the Martyr, was translated out of a chappell called Botund, into a shrine prepared for him in the new Church of Bedfworth or Bury, in the yeere of our Lord God 1095. Thus much for Bury.

The church which king Canute, and Earle Tucketell builded on the hill of Aften in Essex, was dedicated with great honour, of Wollane Archbishop of Yorke and other bishops, the king and nobles being present.

Hee appointed to be king of Norway Swanus his sonne (as was saide) by Alfgine daughter to Athelme Duke of Northampton, and Lady Vulfune: but other saide hee was a Priestes sonne. He also appointed his sonne Hardicanutus by Emma to be king of Denmarke, and decreed at Shaffelsburie, when hee had reigned twentie yeeres, and was buried in Saint Swithins at Winchester. After whose decease and buriall, Queene Emma made her abode there.

Henry of Huntington of this Canute hath as followeth: When (saith hee) doe speake of the great deedes that hee did: first, that he married his daughter to the Emperour Conradus: that he went nobly to Rome, and came againe with precious gifts: that he set his fate on the sea strand while the sea was flowing, and commanded the sea not to rife, to wet his robes with clothes: but the sea keeping his olde course, rose, and wet both his fate and his thighs: whereupon the king started away, and saide: All men shall knowe and knowe, that the power and might of kings is vaine, and vanitie: and that

now

none is worthy to haue the name of king, but hee that hath all thinges subiect to his commandment and lawes. And after this, this Canutus neuer bare Crowne upon his head, but hee set the same upon the head of the Crucifix at Winchester. Peter Picot, since chancelor of Paris, saith, that the custome to hang by the armour of kings and noblemen, and other in churches, sprang of that this Canutus refused to weare his crowne, and offered the same as he thweth.

Peter Picot.

Harold, for his swiftnesse called Harefote, whome Canutus had by a Concubine Alice of Hampton, a Shomakers daughter (affirming himselfe to be sonne of Canutus, and Alfgina the Earle of Northampton daughter) kept not upon the occasion and oportunitie offered, but using the force of the Danes that dwelt in England, invaded the realme, while his brother Hardicanute governed in Denmarke.

1038

Peter de Icham.  
Marianus.  
Floriacenc.

Hee took from his mother in law Emma, the most part of the riches and treasure that Canute his father had left her, and then with consent of the great lords beganne to raigne, but not so mightily as his father Canutus did, for a moze swift heire Hardicanutus was looked for, whereupon the kingdome was deuised, the north part to Harold, and the South to Hardicanute.

Edward and Alfred sons to king Ethelred, with manie knights, came out of Normandy, to see their Mother at Winchester, which sore troubled the mindes of many great men, who bare moze fauour to king Harold. Especially Godwyne Earle of Kent, faining to receiue Alfred as a friend, came to meete him, but in the end put him in prison, part of his company he put in fetters, and after put out their eyes. Of some hee caused their skinn to be plucked over their eares, chopping off their hands and feete. Some hee commanded to be sold, and others were murdered at Wilford.

Queene Emma hearing of this dealing, shee sent her sonne Edward backe againe into Normandy.

After this, Alfgine was conueied to the Isle of Ely, where his eyes being first plucked out, hee was deliuered to the Monks to be kept prisoner there, where hee after hee departed this life, and was buried in the south Ile of the west part of the Church. Because Hardicanutus delated to come over being sent for, hee was utterly reiected, and Harold, who before was king of the Mercies and Northumbers, was chosen king of all England, who shortly after expelled his mother in law Emma out of the Realme. Hee reigned thre yeeres, died at Oxford, and was buried at Westminster, and after at S. Clements without Templebar at London.

Hardicanutus the lawfull begotten sonne of Canutus and Emma, as soon as hee had gotten his fathers kingdome, fetched home his mother out of exile: and in reuenge of displeasure that was done to her, and of the murder of his brother Alured, hee commanded the carcase of Harold to be digged out of the earth, and to be throwne into the Riuer of Thames, where by a sifter it was taken by, and brought to the Danes, who buried it in a church yard, which they had at London.

1041

It is supposed  
to be S.  
Clementes  
Church with-  
out Temple-  
Barre.

With done, the king appointed eight markes to be paid to euery sailor in his

his name, and sheweth markes to every pilote or master, which tribute was to be paid of all England, so grievous, that scarce any was able to bear it.

Shortly after, he sent for Edward the sonne of Etheldred his brother on the mothers side, to come into England, and embraced him with all love and favour. Being at a marriage feast pleasantly drinking with the Bide and other persons, in the midst of his cups he fell sodainly downe to the ground, and he remaining dumbe, departed this life the third yeere of his raigne, and was buried by his father at Winchester.

Edward boine at Ely besides Wyrd, the son of Etheldred, whome Hardicanutus had sent for into England at the age of almost fourty yeeres, was by the helpe of Godwine crowned at Winchester.

This Edward for his excellent holinesse, is untill this day called Saint Edward, who so long as he had gotten his fathers kingdome, of his owne free will released the tribute of fourtie thousand poundes called Dane gilt, which the English people, even from the verye beginning of the raigne of the Danes, was compelled to paye to their kings everie yeere. He was also the chiefe author and cause, that the law which we call the common Law, was first brought up, being gathered together out of the lawes and ordinances of foure nations, which were received when the Island was subiect to divers regiments and governmentes, to witte, of the Mercies, of the West Saxons, of the Danes, and of the Northumbers. He was hard to his mother, because she was hard to him in his minority, and also suspected with Alwine bishop of Winchester, whom he put in prison by counsell of Robert Archbishop of Canturburie: but after his mother had purged her selfe, Alwine was delivered, and Robert the archbishop conveyed himselfe out of England. He tooke to wife Edgitha, the daughter of Earle Godwine, who was a virgin most chaste, in whose breast there was a Schoole of all liberall Sciences (saith William of Malmesbury.) And for a farther testimony of the said Quene, Ingulphus witnesseth thus: Unto this Edward was given to wife, the daughter of Earle Godwine, a very beautiful woman, verie well instructed in learning, and for behaviour, and the rest of her life, a virgin most chaste, & for humility most holy, named Edgitha, in no point favouring of her father or brothers barbarousnes, but milde and modest, faithfull and honest, enemy, or hurtfull to no bodie: whereupon this verse was spoken of her:

*Sicut spinarofum, genuit Godwinus Editham.*

I have seene her (saith Ingulphus) often, when being yet but a boie, I came to see my father, dwelling in the Kings Court. And often, coming from Schoole, when I mette her, she would appose mee teaching my learning and lesson, and falling from Grammar to Logicke, wherein she had some knowledge, would subtilly conclude an argument with me, and by a hand maiden give thee or foure paces of money, and send me unto the place where I should receive some vituals, and so be dismissed.

Now concerning this Edward, he was boine in England, as is afore shewed, but brought up in Normandy, and continuing there a long time, was in a manner

manner become French, bying his brother, and drawing out of Normandy by himanie, whom he promoted to divers dignities, and created above measure. Among whom chiefly was one Robert a Monk of Gemetence, made by him first Bishop of London, and after Archbishop of Canturbury. And William the kings Chaplaine made bishop of Dorchester.

Then beganne the whole land under the king, and other Normans brought in, to leave off the English rites, and in manie things to imitate the maners of the French. All the noble men tooke it to be a great point of gentrie in their courtes to speake the French tongue, to make their Charters and debets after the manner of the French, and to be ashamed of their owne custome and use, as well in this, as in many other things. But here of more in another place.

He sent for home into England his nephew Edward the sonne of king Edmund his brother, who by reason of his long absence out of the country, was commonly called the Outlawe. This is that Edward the sonne of king Edmund surnamed Ironside, which remained alive, whome Canutus when hee had gotten England, had sent into Sweden with his brother. He knowing the abuse of his uncle, came againe into England, and brought with him Aegitha his wife, and Edgar, Margaret, and Christian his children, boine in Denmark, in hope of the kingdome, where hee lived but a while. Thus Saint Edward being disappointed, both of his nephew and his heire, so that Edward the Outlaw was both by nearnesse of blood, and by lawfull succession right heire unto the kingdome, without debate pronounced Edgar the Outlawes sonne, and his great nephew, to be heire of the kingdome, and gave him to surname Adelung, which name in those daies was peculiar onely to kings children, which were boine in hope and possibilitie of the kingdome: for this word Adelung, in the English tongue is as much to say, as Prince or Lord, the contrarye of which word is Vnderling, that is to say, a servant or bondman: or according to the Welch speech, Adelung signifieth heire: but because this Edgar was but young of yeeres, and in his age, by his testament he made Harold the sonne of Godwine (a stout man both in warre and peace) Regent, untill the young Edgar should bee of age to receive the kingdome, and that then he should be made the king: which thing Harold with a solemne othe promised to see performed and done. Notwithstanding, he like a Traytour (by force of armes) immediately after the death of Edward, refused the name of Regent, and pronounced himselfe king, which thing shortly after brought destruction both to himselfe, and to all England.

In the yeere of our Lord one thousand fourtie and five, King Edward gave a mightie navie into the Haven of Sandwich, against Magnus king of Norway, that meant to have come into England, but though the warres that Swanes king of Denmarke moved against him, his journey was broken off.

In the yeere of our Lord one thousand fourtie and sixe, Levingus Bishop of Exeter, Devonshire, and Cornwell deceased: and the bishopricke of Exeter and Cornwell was straight given to Leofike Baton the kings chamberlain.

The first mention of the word Adelung.

Alfredus Rex, Speculum Hist. in Curia. Flores Historiarum.

The kings Chamberlain: Bishop of Exeter.

1043  
Alfredus Rex.  
I. Houet.

Danegilt.

The first coming up of the common lawe Mercies, West Saxons, Danes, and Northumbers.

Sca. cro.

W. Malm.

Ingulphus.

cellour. And Alfredus a Sonke of Winchester was made Bishop of Worcester.

Magnus king of Norway, sonne to Vlanus, having chased Swaine king of Denmarke out of his realme, subdurd that kingdome to himselfe.

In the yere 1047. Swaine king of Denmarke sent Embassadors to king Edward, requiring of him a naue against Magnus king of Norway, but none were sent.

In the yere of our Loide 1048. Magnus being dead, Swaine recovered Denmarke, and Harold Haruager sonne to king Swadus of Norway, returned into Norway, and shortly after sent Embassadors unto king Edward, offering to him peace and amitie, which hee accepted, and promised the like againe.

A great earthquake chanced on the first of March: a mortallitie of men and beasts followed, and lightning brent vp towne, and come in the fields, where through rose such a dearth, that one horse load of wheate was solde for five fillings.

In the yere 1049. the Irish pirates with 36. ships entring into the mouth of Seuerne, arrived in a place called Wiltscapam, and with the help of Galfich king of Southwales, spoiled about these coastes, and did much mischief. After this the false Galfich, and those Irish pyzates toyning their powers together passe over the river Wile, and brent Domesham, and slew all that they there found. Against whome Aldredus byshop of Worcester, and other of Gloucester and Herefordshires hastily went, but the Welshmen whome they had in their company, sent messengers to Galfich, willing him to make speed against the Englishmen, which hee did, and slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

In the yere 1050. Edsine Archbisshop of Canterbury deceased, in whose roome the king placed Robert a Normanc, late bisshop of London, a great enemy to Duke Godwine, as shall be shewed in my larger Chronicle.

This yere king Edward and Edgitha his wife translated the bishops seat from S. Germanes at Crispington, and placed the same at Excester: the king laying his right hand upon the Altar of S. Peter, instituted one Leofrike bisshop there, whom the king taking by the right hand, and the Quene by the left hand, called him in his bishops seate, in the presence of five dukes, and many other noble men: at which king John established, confirmed, and augmented by his Charter, the first yere of his reigne.

In the yere 1051. when the earth yielded not her fruites after the accustomed fertillenes, but famine consumed very many inhabitants, inasmuch that through dearth of corne, and want of bread, many thousands of men died: the good king Edward moved with compassion in ouer the poore, released for ever all England of the most greivous tribute called Dane Gilt. It is reported that the kings clemencie was moved to compassion, upon occasion as followeth. When his cradois (so) to were they then called) or treasurers (as we call them) had collected that greivous tribute called Dane gilt, and brought it into the kings chamber, the king being called to see the heape of so great treasure, was

Townes brent  
by lightning.  
Great dearth  
of wheate.

Excester a Bi-  
shops se.  
Ex charta,  
Hilton. Eccl.

Ingulphus.

The Dane Gilt  
discharged.

at the first beholding thereof much afraid, protesting, that he did see a Diuell dancing upon the heape of money, and making overmuch loy. And thereupon gave commandment, it should be fourthly rendered againe to the former owners thereof, & of so cruell an exaction, he would not keepe ore farthing, but released the said tribute for ever. Euflice Earle of Nullogne the elder, which had to wife Goda the sister of king Edward, arrived at Dover in Kent with a fewe ships, in the which Euflice whilest his souldiers calyly take by their finnes, they slew one of the towne men, in revenge whereof, not only the quarreller, but other of his company, with many of the Towne were slaine, which doing so much offended Godwine Earle of Kent, that hee assembled a great power out of all his Countreies, of Kent, Sussex, and Wessex, and his eldest sonne Harold out of his Countreies of Hereford, Gloucester, Hereford, Somerset, and Berkshire, & his son Swaine out of Galfier, East England, Huntington and Cambridge shires, so that he had a great armie, wherewith he marched towards Gloucester, where the king then lay, unto whom he sent messengers to denounce warre, except he would deliver Euflice, and his fellow Normans and Boloni-ans, which held a Castell upon the Cliffe of Dover: but king Edward when he understood that the armies of Leofrike Earle of Wessex, Siward Duke of Northumberland, and Ranulph Earle of Hereford were coming to his aide, he answered stoutly, that hee would in no wise deliver Euflice to the other demanded. But after this, Godwines armie entring into Gloucester, it was there agreed, that at a date appointed, the king and Earle Godwine should meete at London: & thus departing for the time, the king increasing his armie, led the same to London, and Godwine with his power came to Southwarke on the other side of the river Thamis into his own house, but there because his armie by little & little slipped from him, he fled, and the king forthwith pronounced him, with his five sonnes, to be banished, who straightwaies with his wife, and two of his sonnes came to Thorney, where his shippe being laden with gold, silver, and precious things, he sailed toward Flanders: his other sonnes take ship at Bristol, and sailed into Ireland.

The king forsaketh his wife Quene Edgitha for displeasure conceived against her father Duke Godwine, and sent her with one maiden unto Wiltton, in no honourable wise, where she was committed to the custody of the Abbess, William of Malmesbury addeth, that her goods being taken from her to the bettermost farthing, she was sent to Wiltton there to bee kept under the kings sister, least whilest all her parents were in sorrow for their Countrey, she alone should rest in ease: but a namelesse autho, that wrote a booke intituled Vita Edwardi, which he dedicated to the same Edgitha writeth thus. The king perceiving this honest cause of divorce, that in the Monasterie of Wiltton, where she had bin brought by, she should be, to quiet such troubles of the realme, & thus therefore with kingly hono, and princely company (yet sorrowfull) shee was brought to the bondes of the Monasterie of Wiltton, where almost one whole yere in prayers and teares she expected the day of comfort.

At this time the most noble Earle, or Duke of Normans, William, with a great traine came into England, to king Edward, whom the king honourably receiveth.

King Edward  
did see the Di-  
vell dance.

Marianus.

W. Malms.

Vita Edwardi.

receiving, and for a while keeping him, carried him about to his Cities, and kinglie Castles, and with condigne humanity shewed, at length gave him many giftes, and dismissed him to his owne, but of the succellion of the Reialme hope as yet o: mention betwene them was not made.

William a Norman the kings Chaplaine toke upon him the Bishoppicke of London.

1052

Emma late wife to the kings, Etheldred and Canutus, and mother to two kings, Hardicanutus and Edward, departed this life at Winchester, on the first of March, and was there buried.

Griffith king of Wales wasted a great part of Herefordshire, against whom the men of that country & Normans out of the castel, went, but Griffith obtained the victory, slaying many of them, and toke a great pray.

In the next yeere, Harold and Leofwine, sonnes of Earle Godwine, returning out of Ireland, entred Seamerne, arrived with many Ships in Somerset and Dorsetshires, spoiled manie Townes in the Countrey, slew many people, and returned with pray, then they saile about Poestelmouth, &c.

Earle Godwine landed in Kent, gathered a power, sayled to the Isle of Wight, waiking along the Sea coastes, till his sonnes Harold and Leofwine came with a flauie, which being come together, they take their course vpp the Riuer of Thamis, came to Southwarke, and there staid for the tide, and then lued by Anchor, and finding none that offered to resist them on the bidge, they sailed by by the south side of the riuer, & his armie by land, placing it selfe vpon the banks side, made thew of a thicke and terrible battail.

After this, the flauie turned toward the North shore, as though it would haue compassed in the kings flauie: but they that were with the king, and with Godwine, abhorred to fight against their owne kindred and countrymen, wherefore a peace was made, Godwine with his sons were restored to all their former honor, and the Normans were banished the land. Such as had given the R. eail counsel against the English, a few excepted, as Robert the deacon & his son in law, Richard fitz Scroby, Alnide the kings seler, Ansfidus surnamed Geereffer, and other whom the king before the residue loved, & had ben faithful to him and his people, these were permitted to remain in England. Rob. Arch. bishop of Canterbury, Wil. Bishop of London, Wilko B. of Lincoln & other Normans with much ado passed the sea, but Wil. bishop of London, for his honest conseruation being thrally called back again is restored to his bishoppikk. Osberne Pentecoste, and his fellow Hugh yielded by their Castelles, and by licence of Earle Leofricus went through his Earldome into Scotlande, and were receiued of Machura king of Scots.

1053

Rele brother to Griffith king of Southwales, for the often prayers which he had taken at Solent is slaine by commandment of king Edward, and his head sent to the king being then at Glocestre.

On the second day of Pasch, Earle Godwine as he sate at meat with the king, being suddenly stricken with a grieuous sickness, he shanke down down in the seat where he sate, which his sonnes, Earle Harold, Tosti, & Girche beholding, bare him into the kings chamber, hoping that he should haue recovered,

but

London by Dye.

Marinus;

Duke God.  
time blith.  
Vita Edwardi.  
Marinus;  
Simon Duncl.  
Alfred Beuer.

but when his strength failed him, on Thursday following he died in miserable torment, and was buried in the olde Monasterie of Winchester, whose Dukedome his sonne Harold toke vpon him, and his Earldome is giuen to Algarus the sonne of Leofricus Earle of Chester, thus hath Flurens of Winchester. Now to adde somewhat out of Vita Edwardi, Duke Godwine (saith he) and his sonnes being reconciled to the king, and the Countrey being quiet, in the second yeere after, died the said Duke of happy memorie, whose death was the sorrow of the people, him their father, him the nourisher of them and the kingdome, with continuall weeping they bewailed: he was buried with two wives honor in the old Monasterie of Winchester, giuing to the same Church giftes, ornaments and rentes of lands. Harold succeeded in his dukedome, which was a great comfort to the whole English nation, for in vertue both of bobie and munde he excelled all people, as an other Iudas Maccabeus, and was a friende to his Countrey, diligently supplying his fathers place, and walking in his steppes, that is to saie, in patience, mercie, and affabilitie to well willers, but to disquiet persons, theues and robbers, with a Lyons countenance he threatened his iust seueritie, thus much out of the auncient monument intituled Vita Edwardi.

Touching his Issue (saith William Malmesbury) Godwine in his first age had to wife the sister of Knute king of England, Denmarke, and Norway, of whome hee begate a sonne, which when he was past his childes age, whilst hee probably did ride vpon an horse, which the king his grandfather had giuen him, the horse bare him into the Riuer of Thamis, where he was drowned, his mother also was slaine with a thunderbolt. After her he married another, by whome he had five sonnes, to wit, Harold, Swaine, Tostine, Woolnod, Girche, and Leofwine, &c.

Siward Duke of Northumberland, ouercame Machute king of Scots, and made Malcolm the king of Camberlands sonne king of Scots.

Siward Duke of Northumberland departed this life at Pothe, and was buried in the Monasterie of Colmanho, dedicated to S. Olave the Martyr, which he had builded.

Griffith king of South Wales, and Algar spoiled the Monasterie of Hereford, slew the Canons and bent the whole Citie. Duke Harold repaired, but Remenius the Bishop reedified it of his owne proper expences.

Cito Edgare son to king Edmund Ironside, by procurement of his uncle king Edward came into England, out of Hungarie, where he had long remained, being now sent by the Emperour honorably accompanied together with his wife Agatha, and their Issue to wit, Edgar Adeling, Margaret and Christian, king Edward was purposed to haue made this Edward his heire of his kingdome, but he died, of Edgar Adeling his son ye shall heare more in the reign of W. Conquerour, Margaret his daughter was married to Malcolm king of Scots, by whom she had Issue, five sonnes and two daughters, Edgar, Alexander, David, Edmond, Etheldred, and Edward, three of the which were kings, to wit, Edgar, Alexander and David, Marild their sister married to H. Beaularke king of England, her sister Marie was married to Eustace Earle of Bologne,

1054

1055

1057

of

of Marild, came a daughter named Marild the Emperesse, mother to king Henry the second, Mary had a daughter named Matild also, married first to the earle of Mauritaine, and after unto king Stephen.

King Edward founded the Colledge of Saint Marie Orie in the Countie of Devon: hee gave unto it the Village of Dotoze, being of the Citty of Exmoore.

Griffith king of Wales was killed by his owne people, his head with the head of his ship, and his armour was sent to Earle Harold, which he straight waie bringeth to king Edward.

Without the walles of London, upon the river of Thamis, there was a little monasterie with a few monks under an Abbot, here the king intended to make his Sepulchre, he commended therefore, of the tenths of all his rentes the worke to bee begun from the foundation, which happilie proceeded till the same was finished, he also caused the Parish Church of Saint Margaret to bee newe builded without the saide Abbey Church, for before the saide Parish Church stode within the olde Abbey, in the south Ile: This Church of Saint Margaret that king Edward builded, continued till the daies of king Edward the first, at what time the Staple of wools was at Westminster, and then the parishioners and staplers builded a newe the said Church of S. Margaret, the great chancel excepted, which was now lately made before by the Abbot of Westminster. The D. also having bene brought up in the auncient Monasterie of Runnes at Wilton, which Church was but of wood, began there a princelie worke of stone, and feruently persisted till the same was in princelie sort finished, dedicated, and indowed it with large possessions in Anno 1065.

This king Edward of famous memory (saith mine Autho:) before the date of his natione was elected of God, who perseuering in chastitie, led all his life dedicated unto God in true marriage, wherefore as we haue knowne promysed by god and sufficient men being witnesses, God greatly glorified him in his life with wonderfull signes, amongst the which, this that followeth was one. A young woman married, but without child: en, had a disease about her labes, and under her cheeke, like unto hernels, which they termed aloynes, and this disease so corrupted her face with vench, that she coulde scarce without great shame speake to any man, this woman was admonished in her sleepe, to go to king Edward, and get him to wash her face with water, and she should be whole. To the Court she came, and the king hearing of this matter, disoigned not to do it, and having a bason of water brought unto him, he dipped his hand therein, and washed the womans face, and touched the diseased place, and this he did oftentimes, sometimes also signing it with the signe of the Crosse, which after he had thus washed it, the hard crust of sinne was softened and dissolved, and drawing his hand by bladders of the holes, out of the hernels came little worms, whereof they were full, with corrupt matter and blood, the king still pressed with his handes to bring forth the corruption, and disoigned not to suffer the stench of the disease, untill he had brought forth all the corruption with pressing, this done, he commanded her a sufficient allowance every day for all things necessary, untill she had receiued perfect health, which was within a weeke after,

1061  
S. Mary D.  
1062

1064

Westminster.  
T. Clifford.

Vita Edwardi.  
Wilton.

King Edward  
healed a woman  
of a disease  
in her  
cheeke, since  
called the  
kings tulle.  
Vita Edwardi.  
W. Malmec.

and whereas she was ever before barren, within one yeere she had a child by her husband. And although this thing seeme strange, yet the physicians said that he often did the like in his youth, when he was in matrimony.

Next after this, mine authoys affirme, that a certaine man named Vlsinius Spilcome, the sonne of Vlmor of Nurgarhall, who when he betwix timber in the wood of Bzubeullena, laying him downe to sleepe after his sore labour, the blood and humours of his head so congealed about his eyes, that hee was thereof blind, for the space of 19. yeeres, but then (as he had bene moued in his sleepe) hee went woulwarde, and bare scoted to manie Churches, in euerie of them to pray to God for helpe in his blindness, and then last of all hee came to the Court, where a long time hee stode at the entrie of the kings Chamber, an earnest suiter, till at the length the king hearing of the blindmans dreame, hee said, by our Lady Saint Mary, I would doe much with a good will, if it would please God through me to haue mercie vpon the poore wretch, and thus being giuen to it by his seruants, he laid his handes & the water vpon the blind mans eyes, and straightway the blood dropped plentifully from him, and being healed, he cried with a cheerefull voice, I see the, O king, I see the, O king. Thus having recovered his sight, he kept the kings Pallace at Westminster a long season (for there hee was healed) after king Edward was dead, and deceased in the reigne of William Conquerour.

King Edward sickening on Christmas Eue, deceased on the fourth of January, and was buried at Westminster, on the day of Epiphanie, when he had reigned 23. yeeres, 6. monethes, and odde daies.

Alluridus Riualensis writing the life and death of this king, reporteth him to be a man bold of pride, a louer of peace, a vanquisher of Ire, a contemner of courtousnes, &c. And for example he writeth, that as king Edward on a time lay waking in his bedde, it chanced that his Chamberlain or Steward, taking monie out of one of the kings coffers, lest the same coffer open after him, and went his waies about the kings businesse, which thing being espied of a young fellow that was wont to wait on the kings table to beare away empty becell, he came to the coffer, thinking the king had bene a sleape, and thrust a great quantitie of monie into his bosome, and going awaie laid it where he thought best, and coming againe did the like, but when he came the third time, and that the king knew (as was thought) that his Chamberlaine was at hand, and willing the theefe to be boyde of danger, Thou art unfortunate saide the king, if thou wilt beleue me, take that thou hast, & get thee hence, for by Gods mother, if Hugelin come (for so was his Chamberlains name) he will not leaue thee one pennie, whereupon the young fellow ran his way, and was neither bittred nor pursued by the king, and behold, when the Chamberlaine came, and perceiued much monie to be gone though his negligence, he was in such sorrow, that his sighes and other noyse that he made betwixt him, whereupon the king rising, and seeming not to knowe the matter, asked what hee asked to bee so troubled, which when the Chamberlaine had tolde what had happened, holde thy peace saide the king, happily he that hath taken it hath more neede then we haue of it, let him haue it, that which remaineth is enough for vs.

Wulfstan  
Spilcome.

1066

Allured. Riual.

Hugelin the  
kings Chamberlaine  
or Greatlaine

1066  
The yere of our  
Lords beginneth  
here at Chri-  
mas.

Rog. Hoved.  
Sim-on Danel.  
Gualter Couen.

William Can-  
querour counte  
to king Ed-  
ward by the  
marriage doe.

William duke  
of Normandie  
arrived at  
Dorchester in  
Sept. R.  
Earle of  
Dorchester, and  
Hastings built  
do.

The Normans  
sawre at Ham-  
burgh  
showen all save  
the upper lip.

On the brother  
to Harold.

**H**arold, the eldest sonne of Godwine, Earle of Kent, hauing obtained saye of the nobilitie take the Crowne, and that hee might in some behalfe seeme to make the young Edgar amends for the wrong he had done him, gaue him the Earledome of Oxford, and so from a king, he made him an Earle. But in the incense season England began to bee tossed & turmoiled with wars within and without: for the differiting of the right heire is alwaies wont to be the beginning of ciuill wars.

The 24. day of Aprill, a Comet appeared, not onlie to the people of this land, but also in other parts of the world seauen daies. Tofius enuying (as men saide) the prosperitie of his brother, stirred vp troubles in the Reialme, for hee joining himselfe to Harold the king of Norway, assaulted England in warlike sort, both by Sea and Land. Whose attempt whyles Harold of England prepared to withstand, William Duke of Normandie, who notwithstanding hee was a bastard, was of kinne to Saint Edward in the third and fourth degree of consanguinitie, seeing a convenient time and occasion offered to take the kingdome in, gathered a nauy of 896. ships, and came into England with a brave well appointed armie, alledging, that by all right and title it was due to him, by the gift of king Edwarde his kinsman, and also by the covenant that was made, and by other established betwixt Harold and him. He landed at Peimsey, nere vnto Hastings in Sussex, on the 28. daie of September, where in going out of the ship, the dukes foote slipped, but he recovered it well enough, and one of the souldiers that were next him, cried vnto him, he said, O Duke thou hast gotten Engl and, and thou shalt be king: he fortified there a pece of ground, and intrenched it, leauing there a competent number of his men to keepe the same, went then to Hastings, where he built another fortresse, not without vinding hee restrained all his host from roving, and by the space of fiftene daies, hee kept himselfe so quietly, that a man would haue thought he had meant nothing lesse then to haue warre.

Harold, notwithstanding hee was bare of men by reason of the battel that hee had fought against Tofius and the menne of Norway, yet hearing of Williams comming cwen so bloody as hee was in his armour hee went towards Hastings, being garded with a very small company of souldiers, his fatal destinie so disposing him forwarde headlong. Notwithstanding hee sent out before, them that should spy and blesse the number and force of the enemies, which when they were perceived to be among the Dukes tents, Duke William caused them to be led about the tents, and then made them good chere, commanding them to be sent home to the Lord safe without harme. When they were returned againe, Harold asked them what tidings they brought, and they with long commendation extolled the clemencie of the Duke, and in good sadnesse declared that all the host almost did seeme to be priests, because they had all their face & both their lippes shauen. For the Englishmen did leaue their upper lippes onhauen, with the haire growing alwaies, which thing also Iulius Caesar in his commentaries declareth to be an heathen fashion of the old Egyptians.

The king laughing at their follie, saide, they be no Priests but men of warre, ballast in armes and stout in courage, Cirche his brother tooke the waye

waye out of his mouth, and saide,asmuch as the Normans be of such great force, me thinketh it were not wisely done of you to soine battel with them, you cannot denie but that with or against your will, you made vnto him an othe, therefore you shoulde do more wisely, if you keepe you out of this present necessitie and strait, and do but onely leaue vs, and let vs abide the daunger to make a shew of battaile, we which neuer shewe to him maie iustlie draw our weapons in defence of our Country, you may iustly assist, and relesse vs if we die, and you maie auenge our death, if we be slaine. But such was the hardnesse of Harold, that hee would giue no good care vnto his counsaile, because hee thought it shame and reproch to turne his backe vnto any danger whatsoeuer, and with the same vnbisferetenes, hee draue away a monke that was duke Williams Ambassador, onely hee wished that God would be iudge betwixt duke William and him.

The sponke byought 3. offers, to wit, that either Harold shoulde vpon certaine conditions giue ouer the kingdome, or to be king vnder duke Wil. or elsse in the sight of both the armies, they two shoulde try the matter with the sword betwixt them, for Duke William chalenged the kingdome (as hee sayde) because king Edward by the counsaile of Stigand Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, of Earle Godwine, and Earle Swardus, had giuen it vnto him, (a thing unlike to bee true) if Harold would denie this, hee offered to stande to the iudgement of the sea & of the folk.

Of which message, the Ambassadour had none other answer given then I told you, whereupon he departed, and encouraged the hearts of his countrymen to battaile.

Then the stout Captaines on both sides set in order their battalles, according to the fashion of their Countreies. The Englishmen (as was reported) when they had spent the whole night in drinking, singing and dauncing, not sleeping one winke, in the morning, without delay fell vpon their enemies, all the footemen with their poleaxes being intrenched with their targets before them, made a ranke that nothing coulde enter vpon them, which thing without doubt shoulde haue bene for their safegarde, if the Normans had not sained as though they would haue fled, and by that meanes caused them to break the arraye wherein they had set themselves. The king himselfe stode a foote by the standard, and his brethren Cirche and Leofwine with him, to the ende that in such a common perill and leopardy, no man shoulde once thinke to flee or run away. Duke William after hee had got the victory, sent this standert to the hope, which was made after the shape & fashion of a man fighting, wrought by sumptuous art with gold & pretious stones: on the other side the Normans gaue the mules to acknowledge the firsts, and to praise al the night, & in the morning they communicated the Lords body. The footmen with their bowes & arrowes defended the first front, & the horsemen were set in the reeward divided into two wings. Duke William then with a loud voyce, declaring vnto them that God would be with them, because his quarrell was iust and good, called for his army immediately, and through the tumult and hasty running of his seruants, he put his coat of fence on the wrong way, to wit, the inner side outward, at which chance

Others mane  
by Duke Ed-  
to Harold,  
challenge at  
Duke William

Englishmen  
more giuen to  
drinking them  
to prayer.

Standert of  
king Harold.



chance he laughed, and turning the right side outwards, said the pines of my dukedome shall bee turned into a kingdome. Then they beganne to sing the songs of Rowland, to the intent that the example of that man of armes should inflame them that should fight, then after they had called to God for aide, they beganne the battell, fought fiercelie, neither of both parts gaining place till the daie was farre spent, which thing when duke William did perceiue, hee gaue his men counsaile to make as though they would fly, & to withdraue the melles out of the felde, by which deuice the ranks of the Englishmen was broken, and while they meant to smite their enemies on the backs, the Normans turned themselves in good order, and set upon the Englishmen, being dispersed and out of array, and so put them to flight. Thus the Englishmen died a faire death in defence of their country, and yet they were not slache in reuenging of themselves, for they stood hard to it, and made great slaughter of them that pursued them, for hauing gotten a hill, they ouerthrew the Normans into the valley, as they courageously did clime to attaine the said hill, and with their darts which they shot, and stones which they cast upon the Normans, that were under them, with small labour beat them al into the bottome. Also the Englishmen with a sword, and to them wel knowne passage, running through a certaine ditch, did ouerthrow so many of their enemies following them, that with the dead bodies, they made theyr valley euen with the higher ground, thus it continued all that whole daie, that one while the English, another while the enemies had the better, so long as Harold was alliue, but in the closing of the euening, when he by the shot of an arrowe (which pierced his braine) was killed, the Englishmen fled awaie in the night season: one of the foul blows when Harold was slaine, did cut him in the legges with a sword, for the which dede duke William blaming him for his cowardlinesse and shamefull ad, put him out of the wars. Also duke William himselfe shewed his fiercenes in euerie place, three of his best hostes were slaine under him that day, the power of God so defending him that the enemy did drawe no blood of his bodie, notwithstanding the number of darts throwne at him. The two brethren of king Harold, to wit, Gernie & Leofwine were there slaine, with almost all the Nobles of England, and the Normans had the victory, especially (saith Rowle) by meanes of their wooden bowes and arrowes (which the Englishmen had not then in vse) for Duke William commanded his men that some of them should shote direaile forwarde, and other some upward, by reason whereof, the arrowes shot upward, destroyed the Englishmen as they stooped, and the arrowes shot direaile afore hand wounded them that stood upright. And king Harold himselfe (valiantly fighting) as before is said, was shot through the braines, whereof he died, when he had reigned nine monethes and odder daies. This battell was fought niner miles from Hastings in Southeser upon the 14. day of October being Saturday, in the year of Christ 1066. There was slaine of Englishmen 67974. saith I. le Tailor in his history of Normandy, of 47944. after other. And of the Normans 603. besides such as were drowned.

This was (saith Mathew Paris) the dolefull destruction of this sweete and pleasant lande, the kinges whereof (meaning the Saxons) at their first coming,

Marinnes;

I. Roule.

Sigebertus.  
W. Geminien.  
Gualter Coun.  
I. le Woodbrige.  
I. le Tailour.

Chronicle of  
Normandy.

ming, with barbarous countenance and gesture, in warlike sort, psoned all men to malice and hatred towardes them, who ouercame all men by warre and subtiltie: but after they had receiued the Christian faith, and by little and little applied their diligence unto Religion, they neglected the exercise of armes, for the kings did change their habites, and some at Rome, and some in their owne Countre, sought to change their temporall kingdomes for euerglasting kingdomes: and many which of their life time embraced worldly things, did yet distribute their treasures unto all the workers of mercy: but afterwards when charitie waxed colde, all their studie and traualle in religion slacked, and then came the destruction of the inhabitants: first at the coming of the Danes, and now in the expulsiue of the Englishmen by the Normans: for the noble men gluing themselves to gluttonie and lecherie, did not goe to the Church in the morning, as Christian men be to doe, but lying in their Chamber dallying with women, did heare the Priest hastily rattle up diuine service. The Clerkes also that had taken orders, if one had learned but his Grammar, euerie one wondred at him, the Monkes made a mocke of their rule, and were both sinellie apparelled, & metellicke bed fed. The common people were brought to bee a prais to the mightier sort, so that either their gods were looked from them, or else that was worse, their bodies were sent into farre Countries, to increase the riches of the great men that oppressed them, many when they had fulfilled their lust, and had got their maides with child, they sent them out to bee common harlots, all men in generall gaue themselves to drincking and gulling, and in that kind of exercise they continued sometimes night & day. These vices made the Englishmen effeminate, & womanish, whereof it came to passe, that running headlong against Duke William, they lost themselves and their country, with one, and that an easie and light battaile.

To conclude, the Englishmen were then apparelled in garments to the mid breast, their haire rounded, and their beards shauen, all saue the upper lip, their armes adorned with golden bracelets, and their skin marked, painted, and painted, at meat they forced the melles to sarfet, and drank till they vomited, the last qualitties they dealed to them that ouercame them, but I would not (saith mine author) you should thinke I speake these euillies of all Englishmen, for I know that many of the Clergie, did simply obserue the path of holinesse, and also of the lay people that did endeavour to serue God, &c.

When Duke William had gotten the full victory, hee caused his men that were slaine to be buried, and also gaue leaue that if any man would they might burye their enemies in like manner, he gaue the body of Harold unto Haroldes mother, at her request, taking no money, although by messengers she offered much, thus hee receiuing his bodie, buried the same at Waltham in Essex, in a Colledge which hee himselfe had founded to the honour of God and Saint Crosse, and had placed there a Deane and xi. Canons.

The death of Harold being knowne, Edwin and Morcar, two brethren of great towardnes, Charles, the one of Mercia, the other of Northumberland, which with their people had withdrauen themselves from the battaile, came now to London, and sending the Queene Edgitha, the late kinges sister into

The Description  
of the Saxons.  
Mathew Paris.  
W. Malmet.  
Flores Historiar.

Apparell of the  
English.



the city of Chester, they solicited the citizens to erect either of them to the kingdome, which enterprise of theirs being frustrated, they departed into Northumberland, supposing that Duke William would never come thither. The rest of the nobles with the Citizens of London would have erected Edgar the nephew of Edmond Ironside to the kingdome, and promised with him to give a new battaile to Duke William, but through the danger that was at hand, and the discourse that was among the nobles, they did neither. So that the Englishmen if they had agreed together, might have reformed the decay of their Countrey, but whilst they would have none of their owne Countrey men to be king, they brought in a stranger. In this meane time Duke William determining to passe to London, turned south of the right wale, over the west coastes of England, waiking and destroying through Suffolke, Kent, Surrey, Hampshire, & Berkehsire, till he came to Warringford, or Wallingford, from thence he passed over the River of Thames, commanding his army to settle themselves there for a while, from thence he passed through Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Hertfordshire, not ceasing to burne towne, and to hate the people, till he came to Berkeham, or Berkehamstede, where staying for a time, (for cause as that he shewed) thither came to him Aldred Archbishop of Yorke, Wulfane Bishopp of Worcester, Wilfre Bishopp of Hereford, Cito to Edgar, and all other the noble men about London, with many other, who altogether submitted themselves giving pledges, and swore fealtie unto him, with whome also he made a league, but notwithstanding he permitted his men still to burne towne, and to take spoiles.

The cause that Duke William staid at Berkehamstede, was this, there was at that time an Abbot of Saint Albones named Frederike, who when he hearde of Duke William his comming into Hertfordshire, hee caused the woods belonging to his Church round about Saint Albones, and so in the wales towards London to be felled, so that no man could passe that way for the trees that were layde crosse one over an other, and thus this Abbot for the time, kept his power from spoiling, for duke William could not come there, but was forced to coast about, to the Castell of Berkehamstede (as is afore sayd) whither by divers suretie he sent for Frederike the Abbot, and demanded of him, why such felling of woods was made about him more then in other places: whereunto Frederike answered, and said, I have done but as becommeth me, for if the spiritual persons throughout this land had done their endeavour against thee as they mought and ought to have done, it should not have bene in thy power to have entered the land so farre: quoth duke William, is the spirituality of England of such power? If I may live and enjoy that which I have gotten, I will make their power lesse, and especially I mind to begin with thee. The Abbot perceiving hee had saide so farre, as some as hee could departed home to his monastery, where calling a chapter of his brethren, he told them of duke William, what he had said, and then taking his leave of them, departed and went to the Isle of Cely, from whence he never returned to his Abbey.

When Christmasse approached, Duke William marched with all his army towarde London, whose routes comming together before him, to see the

W. Gemiden.

Lib. S. Albani.  
The War of Saint  
Albones his  
policy against  
Duke William.

manner and behaviour of the people, found them assembled in the streets, determined to resist Duke William with all their might; but when the Duke came thither, he made a great slaughter of the Citizens, till perceiving themselves not able to resist him, they submitted themselves, and gave pledges unto him.

And thus ended the raigne of the Sarons, who were first sent for by Vortiger king of the Brytaines, as is afore said, about the yere of our Lord 450. and had continued sometimes in wars with the Brytaines, then with the Danes, and now with the Normans the space of 600. yeres.

*Verses of the Blazing Starre, which appeared on the 24. of April  
last before passed, as is shewed.*

A thousand sixe and sixtie yeece, it was, as we doe read,  
when that a Comet did appeare, and Englishmen lay dead.  
Of Normandy Duke William then, to England ward did faile,  
who conquered Harold with his men, and brought this land to baile.

## King William the Conquerour.



William Duke of Normandy, surnamed *Ann. reg. 1.*  
Conquerour, Bastard sonne of Robert the  
first, Duke of that Duchy, and cousin ger-  
mane unto King Edward on the mothers  
side, having slain King Harold, and ob-  
tained the victory in the battaile nere un-  
to Hastings in Suffolke, on the 14. day of  
October being Saturday, in the yere of  
our Lord 1066. And also now having ob-  
tained the Citie of London (as is afore  
shewed) was there both by the Normans  
and English men chosen and proclaimed  
king on Christmasse day, which that yere  
fel on the Sunday, and forthwith the same

1067

day crowned, not by Sigard Archbishop of Canterbury and Bishope of all  
England, who refused (as some saide) to crowne him, William, for that by blood  
and crueltie hee had obtained the kingdome; but other affirme, that William  
would not take the crowne at his hands, because hee was chalenged of Pope  
Alexander, not to have received the Pall Canonically, Robert a Norman,  
some time from London by King Edward translated to be Archbishop of Can-  
terbury, as then living: wherefore Aelred Archbishop of Yorke, associating  
unto him Wulfstan Bishopp of Worcester, and Walter Bishopp of Hereford,  
with others of the nobilitie of England, annointed and crowned him king at  
Westminster: but before he was consecrated the Archbishop required an othe,  
which

Duch of King  
William.

which he took on the Altar of St. Peter, where he promised before the cleargie, and all the people, to defend the holy church of God, the Pastors thereof, and all the people subiect unto him, he should iustlie gouerne: he should ordaine good lawes, and obserue true iustice, and to the uttermost of his power to with- stand all rapines, and false iudgements.

Normans  
beare alwaies  
thauen.

This William was of a good stature, of a goodly countenance, and a valiant forwarde, his beards alwaies shauen, for so was the custome of the Normans, hee had great strength in his armes, so that many did wonder at him, because no man could dawe his boine, which hee would benche sitting on his horse backe, stretching out the string with his fote: hee made great and costlie feastes upon high and principall daies, keeping his Christmas offering at Gloucestre, his Easter offering at Winchester, and his Whitsun offering at Winchester, in each place being crowned, and this hee used euerie yeere so long as he continued in England. He caused all his nobles of what estate soeuer they were to come to those feastes, to the ende that the Ambassadors of feyrene countreies might wonder at the sight of such a multitude of people and preparation of delicate, and daintie fare, and hee was at no time more courteous, or ready to grant pardon to any that had offended, then at such times, onely conuolnesse of money was the thing, whereof he mought worthily be blamed.

Thomas Spot.  
Will. Thorne.

King William took his tourney towards the Castle of Douer, to subdue that, and the countie of Kent: which when the Archbishop Stigand, and Eglesin the Abbot of Saint Augulines (being as it were the chiefe Lords and gouernours of all Kent) did perceiue and consider, that the whole Realme was in an euill state, and that whereas in this Realme of England, before the coming of the foresaide Duke William there were no bondmen, now all, as well noble men, as the common people, were without respect made subiect vnto the perpetuall bondage of the Normans, taking an occasion by the perill and danger that their neighbours were in, to provide for the safeguard of themselves and their Countrey, they caused to assemble at Canterbury all the people of the Countie of Kent, and declared to them the perills and dangers imminent, the miserie that their neighbours were come into, the pride and insolencie of the Normans, and the hardnesse and grieue of bondage and seruile state: whereupon all the people rather choosing to ende their unfortunate life, then to submit themselves to an vnaccustomed yoke of seruitude and bondage, with a common consent determined to mete duke William, and to fight with him for the lawes of their Countrey. And the foresaide Stigand, the Archbishop, and the Abbot Eglesin, choosing rather to die in battaille, then to see their nation in so euill an estate, being encouraged by the examples of the holy Macchabees, became Captaines of the armie. And at a date appointed all the people met at Swanefcombe two miles west from Chancel-ende, and being hidde in the woods, lay piously in waite for the coming of the foresaide Duke William. And because it can not hurt to be very wary in such cases, they agreed before hande, that when the Duke was come, and the passages on euery

the

the stopped, to the end he should no waie be able to escape, euery one of them, as well horsemen as footemen, should beare boughes in their haues. The next daie after, when the duke was come into the fields & territories nere vnto Swanefcombe, and saue all the Countrey set and placed round about him, as it had bene a stirring and moving wood, and that with a mirae pace they approached and dwelt nere vnto him, with great discomfite of minde hee wondered at that sight. And as soon as the Captaines of the Kentishmen saue that Duke William was inclosed in the middell of their armie, they caused the Trumpets to be sounded, their banners to be displayed, and theye downe their boughes, and with their bowes bent, their swordes drawne, and their speares and other kinde of weapons stretched forth, they shewed themselves ready to fight: Duke William and they that were with him, stode (as no maruail it was) loze astonied, and amazed, and hee which thought that he had already al Engl and fall in his fist, did now dispaire of his own life. Therefore on the behalfe of the Kentishmen were sent vnto Duke William, the Archbishop Sigand, and Eglesin Abbot of Saint Augulines, who tolde him their message in this sort.

My Lord Duke, behold the people of Kent cometh forth to mete you, and to receiue you as their liege Lord, requiring at your hands the things which pertaine to peace, & that vnder this condition, that all the people of Kent may enioy for euery their ancient liberties, and may for euermore vse the lawes and customes of their Countrey, otherwise they are ready presently to bidde battaile to you, and them that be with you, and are minded rather to die here altogether, then to depart from the lawes and customes of their Countrey, and to submit themselves vnto bondage, whereof as yet they neuer had experience. The Duke seeing himselfe to be drawn into such a straffe and narrow pinch, consulted a while with them that came with him, prudently considering, that if he should take any repulse or displeasure at the hands of this people, which be the key of England, all that euer hee had done before, should be vnto no purpose againe, and of no effect, and all his hope and safetie should come in daunger and teopardie: not so willingly as wisely hee graunted the people of Kent their request. So when the covenant was established, and pledges giuen on both sides, the Kentishmen being ioyfull, conducted the Normans (who also were glad) vnto Rochester, and yaldered by to the Duke, the Earle home of Kent, and the noble Castle of Douer. Thus the ancient liberties of England, and the lawes and customes of the Countrey, which before the coming of Duke William out of Normandy, were euill kept throughout all England, doe (through this industrie and earnest trauell of the Archbishoppe Sigand and Eglesin Abbot of Saint Augulines) remaine inuolubly obserued vntill this day, onely in the Countie of Kent. Thus farre Thomas Spot, after him William Thorne.

King William bought the Felwes from Khome to inhabite here: hee receiued homage, oath of fidelitie, and pledges of the nobles, and commanded that in euery towne and village a bell should be rung euery night at sight of the clocke, and that all people should then put forth their fire and candle, and goe to bedde,

which

The ancient  
liberties and  
lawes of Eng-  
land, remaine  
in Kent onely.

Felwes brought  
into England  
Fire and light  
forbidde to the  
Englishmen.

which order was observed through this Realme during his raigne, and the raigne of William his sonne. Thus were the English men forced to imitate the Normans in habite of apparell, chauning off of their beardes, service at the table, and in all other outward gestures.

The historiographers of that time accompted the yere to begin at Christmas, after which accompt then beganne the yere 1067. but after the accompt of England nowe observed, the yere beginneth not till the twentieth of March following.

And now because those houses maie not be intrembled unto whom King W. disposed the landes and possessions of this Realme for their good service, I haue thought good to publish the names of them as heretofore I haue done, out of the Chronicles of Normandy, gathered by William Tayleur of Abbeene.

To wit, Odo Bishoppe of Baton: Robert Earle of Mortaigne: These two were brethren to Duke William by his mother: Bandonni de Buillon: Roger Earle of Beaumont, that was furnished with the Beard, of him came the lineage of Melent.

Guillam Maller  
Guillam Fitz Osborne  
Le sir de Môtfort sus Rille.  
Guillam de vielz Pôr  
Neel de saint Saeur le vicont.  
Le sir de Feugiers  
Henry sir de Ferrers  
Le sir de Dambemare  
Guillam sir de Romarc  
Le sir de Lichare  
Le sir de Tonque  
Le sir de la Mare  
Le sir de Nehabon  
Le sir de Piron  
Le sir de Beaufon  
Le sir de Damnon  
Le sir de Soteuile  
Le sir de margneuille  
Le sir de Tankeruille  
Eustace Dambleuille  
Le sir de Magnuille  
Le sir de Grimauille  
Guillam Crespian  
Le sir de saint Martin  
Guillem de Moulinous  
Le sir de Pins  
Gicffray sir de Mayence

Affroy de behunt  
Affroy & Mauigr. de Cartaiet.  
Guillam de Garennes  
Hue de Gournay sir le de Bray.  
Le conic Hue de Dournay  
Enguimount le Laigle  
Le vicont de Touars  
Richard Donnemchmi  
Le sir de Biars  
Le sir de Salligny  
Le Boutellier daubegny  
Le sir de Marre  
Le sir de Viêtry  
Le sir de Lucy  
Le sir de vall Darie  
Le sir de Tracy  
Hue sir de Montfort  
Le sir de Pigny  
Hamon de Brayen  
Le sir de Spinay  
Le sir de Port  
Le sir de Torchy  
Le sir de Iort  
Le sir de Riuers  
Guilem Moyon  
Raoul Tisson de Chig-nelois.

Rogier Marmion  
Raoul de Gael  
Aue Neel de Biars  
Parnel du Monflier  
Bertram le Tort  
Hubert Robert  
Le sir de Seukee  
Le sir de Dormal  
Le sir de Brenal  
Le sir de saint Iehan  
Le sir de Bois  
Le sir de Homme  
Le sir de Sauffay  
Le sir de Cailly  
Le sir de Semilly  
Le sir de Tilly  
Le sir de Romely  
Martell de Basqueuill  
Le sir de Praux  
Le sir de Gony  
Le sir de Sainteaulx  
De Mullox  
These Arabers of the vale of Rueill, and of Bre-tucill, and of manie othr places.  
Le sir de saint Sacn  
Le sir de la Rimer  
Le sir de Salnarille

Le sir de Tony  
Eude de Beaugien  
Le sir de Ollie  
Le sir de Sacy  
Le sir de Valfye  
Le Bisquams de Chay-mes.  
Le sir de Sap  
Le sir de Duglosse  
Le sir de Nime  
Le sir de Blamuille  
Le sir de Brencon  
Le vidam de Partenay  
Raoul de Mormont  
Pierre de Bailleul  
Sir de Fescamp  
Le sir de Beaufault  
Le sir de Tillieres  
Le sir de Pacy  
Le seneschall de Tor-chy.  
Le sir de Gacy  
Le sir de Douilly  
Le sir de Sancy  
Le sir de Bacy  
Le sir de Tourneur  
Le sir de Praores

Guillem de Colombiers  
Hue sir de Bollebec  
Richard sir Dorbec  
Le sir de Donnebos  
Le sir de trois gros  
Le sir Mont Fiquet  
Hue le Vigot alias Bigot de Maletot.  
Le sir de la Haye  
Le sir de Bracy  
Le sir de Moubray  
Le sir de Say  
Le sir de Lasert  
Bonteuillam Tronfe-bours.  
Guillem Patris de la land.  
Hue de Mortemer  
Le sir Donuiller  
Le sir Donnebant  
La sir de saint Cler.  
Robert le fitz Herneys duke Dorlians.  
Le sir de Harecourt  
Le sir Creuecure  
Le sir de Dancourt  
Le sir de Brunetot

Le sir de Canibray  
Le sir Dauncy  
Le sir Fonteney  
Le counte Deureux.  
Le sir de Roberchil  
Alan sergent Counte de Britaigne.  
Le sir de saint Wallery.  
Le counte Dedden  
Gualtar Guisart, counte de Longeuille.  
Le sir de Scouteuile  
Le counte Thomas Dan-binale.  
Guillem de Hoimes & Darques.  
Le sir de Barreuille  
Le sir de Breante  
Le sir de Freanuile  
Le sir de Panilly  
Le sir de Clere  
Toftandubec  
Le sir de Mangny  
Roger du Mont  
Gomery Cornes.  
Almay de To-uars.

Beside a very great number of knights and esquires that were under them. Thus farre out of the Chronicle of Normandy, the other following are taken out of a Table sometime in bataille Abbey.

Aumerle	Albeny	Bonylayne	Broune
Audeley	Asperemound	Barbayon	Beke
Angilliam	Bertram	Berners	Bowlers
Argentoun	Burtecourt	Braybuf	Banestre
Arundell	Bralus	Brand	Belony
Auenant	Byseg	Bonuile	Belknap
Abel	Bardolf	Burgh	Beauchamp
Awgers	Bassier	Bulfiny	Bandy
Angenoun	Bohun	Blundell	Broyleby
Archer	Baylyse	Breton	Burnel
Asperuile	Bondeuile	Belasyse	Belot
Amoneuduile	Barbason	Bowfer	Beufort
Arcy	Beer	Bayons	Baudewine
Akeny	Bures	Bulmere	Burdon

Bentcuyley

Berteuyley	Clarell	De la Pole	Fitz Morice
Barre	Camuine	De la Lind	Fitz Hughe
Buffeuile	Chaunduyt	De la Hill	Fitz Warren
Blunt	Clarays	De la Ware	Faunnuile
Beawper	Chantilowe	De la Warche	Formay
Brer	Colet	Dakeny	Formiband
Barret	Cressly	Dauntre	Friton
Barneuale	Courtenay	Desnye	Finer
Barry	Constable	Dabernoun	Fitz Vrcy
Bodyt	Chaucer	Damry	Furnuall
Berteuile	Cholmelay	Daucros	Fitz Herbert
Bertine	Corneuile	De la Vere	Fitz Iohn
Belew	Champency	De Liele	Gargraue
Bulhell	Carew	De la Warde	Grannson
Beleners	Chawnos	De la Planch	Gracy
Buffard	Claruile	Danway	Glaunnuile
Bocler	Champaine	De Hewse	Gouer
Boruile	Carbonell	Disard	Gascoyne
Brasard	Charles	Durant	Gray
Belhelme	Charberge	Drury	Goloser
Branche	Chawnes	Estrange	Grauns
Bolesur	Chawmont	Escutaile	Gurly
Blundel	Chayne	Escriols	Gurdon
Burdet	Cursen	Engayne	Garnages
Bagot	Conell	Euers	Gaunt
Beawpount	Chayters	Esfurney	Hanfar
Bools	Cheyne	Foluile	Hastings
Belesfroun	Cateray	Fitz Water	Haulay
Barchampe	Cherrecourt	Fitz Marmaduk	Hufie
Camos	Chaunnuile	Fibert	Herne
Canuile	Clerency	Fitz Roger	Hamelyn
Chawent	Curly	Fitz Robert	Harewell
Chancy	Clyfford	Fancourt	Hardel
Couderay	Deanuile	Fitz Phillip	Hecker
Coluile	Dercy	Fitz William	Hamound
Chamberlaine	Dine	Fitz Paine	Harecord
Chambernounge	Dipencet	Fitz Alyne	Jarden
Criber	Daniel	Fitz Raulfe	Jay
Corbine	Denyse	Fitz Browne	Januile
Corbet	Druell	Foke	Jasparuile
Coniers	Deuaus	Freuile	Karre
Chaundos	Dauers	Faconbrige	Karron
Coucey	Doningels	Fritfel	Kyriell
Chaworthe	Darell	Filioll	Le strange
Claremaus	Delabere	Fitz Thomas	Leuony

Latom

Latomere	Mandure	Punchardon	Traynel
Loueday	Manle	Pynchard	Taket
Logenton	Malory	Placy	Talbot
Leuel	Menny	Patine	Tanny
Le Scrope	Muffet	Pampillon	Tibtoze
Lemare	Menpincoy	Poterell	Truffell
Literile	Mainard	Pekeney	Turbeuile
Lucey	Morell	Perrinke	Turuile
Lilay, or Liele	Morley	Penicord	Totet
Longspes	Mountmartin	Quincy	Tauers
Longschampe	Myners	Quintine	Torel
Lastels	Mauley	Rofe	Tirell
Lind-Scy	Mainwaring	Ridle	Totels
Loerel	Mantell	Rynel	Tauerner
Lindley	Mayel	Rous	Valence
Longuaille	Morton	Ruffel	Vancord
Le Vawse	Neule	Rond	Vaufour
Loy	Neumarche	Richmond	Vender
Laue	Norton	Rocheford	Verder
Le dispenser	Norbet	Reymond	Verdon
Marmilou	Norece	Seuche	Aubrie de
Moribray	Newborough	Seint Quintine	Vere
Moruile	Neele	Seint Omer	Vernoune
Manley	Normanuile	Seint Amond	Venables
Malebranche	Otenel	Seint Leger	Venoure
Malemaine	Olibef	Soueuile	Verland
Mulchampe	Olifaunt	Sanford	Verlay
Mulgraue	Oyfell	Somery	Vernois
Menlebillers	Oliford	Seint George	Verny
Mormaine	Oryoll	Seint Les	Vilan
Morteine	Pigot	Sauine	Vmframnuile
Mountbocher	Percy	Seint Clo	Vnkee
Maleuile	Perecount	Seint Albine	Vrnall
Mountney	Perthale	Seint Barbe	Wake
Maleherbe	Power	Sandeuile	Walenger
Mulgros	Paynel	Seint More	Warde
Mulard	Peche	Seint Scudemor	Wardebus
Maurauers	Peuerell	Tows	Waren
Murres	Perot	Toget	Wate
Montague	Picard	Talybois	Wateline
Mantalent	Pudley	Tuchet	Wateuile
	Pimeray	Truffot	Woly
	Pounley	Trusbur	Wyuell

This pere through the great use and labour of William the 3<sup>rd</sup> of Norwic, then  
 bishop of London, king William granted the charter and liberties to the same  
 William

Wherefore the  
Baron and  
Citizens of  
London re-  
paired to Pauls.

Epitaph of  
William by  
Bishop of London.

William Bishop, and Godfrey Portgreue and all the barons of the Citie of London, in as large forme as they enjoyed the same, in the time of S. Edward before the conquest: in reward whereof, the Citizens haue fixed on his grave, being in the midst of the great West Ile of S. Pauls church in London, this Epitaph following:

*G. Wilhelm viro sapientia & vite sanctitate claro, qui primum dno Edwardo regi & confessori familiaris, nuper in episcopum Londonensem erectus, nec multis post apud inuictissimum principem Angielmum Angliarum regem eius nominis primum, ob prudentiam fidemque singularem in consiliis adhibitus, amplissima huic urbi celebrissima privilegia ab eodem impetravit: Senatus populusque Londonensis bene memoranti posuit. Sedit Episcopus Annos 20. Decessit anno a Christo nato 1070.*

*Hec tibi, clare pater, posuerunt marmor acies,  
Pramia non meritis equiparanda tuis:  
Namque sibi populus, te Londoniensis amicum,  
Sensit, & huic urbi non leue presidium,  
Reddita libertas ducere, donatque multis,  
Te ducere, res fuerat publica muneribus.  
Diuitius, genus, & formam breui opprimat hora,  
Hec tua sed pietas, & beneficia manent.*

The same in  
English.

**T**H William a man famous in wisdom and holines of life, who first with S. Edward the king and Confessor being familiar, of late preferred to be bishop of London, and not long after for his prudence and sincere fidelitie, admitted to be of counsell with the most glorious Prince William king of England, of that name the first, who obtained of the same great and large privileges to this famous citie: The Senate and citizens of London to him being well deserved, haue made this. He continued Bishop twenty yeeres, and died in the yeere after Christ his natiuitie 1070.

These Marble monuments to thee thy Citizens assigne,  
Rewardes (O Father) farr vnfit to those deserts of thine,  
Thee vnto them a faithfull friend, thy London people found,  
And to this towne, of no small weight, a stay both sure and founde:  
Their liberties restore to them, by meanes of thee haue bene,  
Their publike weale by meanes of thee, large gifts haue felt and scene.  
Thy riches, stocke, and beauty braue, one houre hath them suppress't,  
Yet thee thy vertus and good deedes, with vs for euer rest.

Medant.  
Ypodigma.  
Neculr.

King William (leaving his brother Odo byshoppe of Bayon, and William Fitz Osborne whome he had made Earle of Hereford, to be wardens of England) returned into Normandie, which at that time was bent to thynke from him. He toke with him, Edgar Etheling, Stigandus archbishop of Canterbury, Frederike Abbot of S. Albons, Egelnothus Abbot of Glasseburie, Edwin Duke of Mercia, Morcarus Duke of Northumberland, Walden Earle of Northampton

W. de Wilum.

hampton and Huntington, Roger late Earle of Hereford, Renulph Earle of Cambridg, Gospatrike Earle of Cumberland, Guaker the son of Siward, and many other nobles of England, thinking they would be truer to him in a foreign country then in their owne: by their diligence he subdued the rebelling Normans.

When winter was at hand, king William returned, and set an impossible tribute on the English men.

William Conquerour gaue to Geoffrey Magnaule the Earldome of Essex, to the which Earldome, of ancient right belonged bearing of the kings banner, saith the Chronicle of Waltham.

After this, going into Devonshire, he besieged Excester, which the Citizens and other Englishmen held against him. The Countesse Guha mother of king Harold, and sister to Swanus king of Denmarke with many other fleeing out of the Citie escaped, and got them ouer into Flaunders, and the Citizens yielded to the king.

Matilda wife to king William came forth of Normandie, and on Whitsontide, was consecrated Quene by Aldred Archbishop of Yorke, Marleswine, Gospatrike, and other noble men of Northumberland, to oppose king Williams rough and boisterous dealing, and fearing to bee put in warde, taking with them Edgar Etheling, with his mother Agatha, and his two sisters, Margaret and Christian, went by sea into Scotland, where they were received, and well entertained of Malcolme king of Scots, who toke Margaret the sister of Edgar to wife. King William with an army went to Nottingham, and there builded a Castell. He also went to Yorke, and there caused two Castles to be builded, and put in the in garrisons: he commanded also Castles to be made at Lincoln, and in other places. Whiles these things were in doing, Godwine and Edmund surnamed the Great, sons to king Harold, returning forth of Ireland, landed in Sommerfetshire, where Edgredus that was master of the horse to king Harold, mette them with a great army, and fighting with them was slaine amongst many other. The two brethren hauing got the victorie, toke manie great prizes in Cornewall and Devonshire, and returned into Ireland.

It was the practise of king William to put the Englishmen into all places of danger, by that means to weaken their force: for against certaine Englishmen that after the battel at Hastings fled into Denmarke & Ireland, and came againe the third yeere after with a great power, he set an English captain with an hoste of Englishmen. so both the armies fought, and brought the victorie to the king: the strangers were chased into Ireland, but with great slaughter of themselves, and losse of their capitaine Ednothus, a man excellent in the time of the English men, both at home in his own countrey, and also abroad. He was the father of Harding, who liued in the time of king Henry the second. Thus when the power of the lay people was overthrowen, he also established, that no Clarke of the English nation should be suffered to come to any promotion. He abhorred much the gentleness of Knouth which sometime had bene king of England, for that he restored the m, whome he had overcome, vnto all the

rester be-  
sieged.

Anno reg. 2.  
1068  
Ypodigma.  
The kin of  
Scots married  
Margaret si-  
ster to Edgar.

Castles at  
Nottingham-  
and Yorke  
builded.

Harding the  
sonne of Ed-  
nothus.

promos.

promotions and honours: whereby it came to passe, that when hee was dead, the inhabitants did easily: pulle the strangers, and chalenge their olde right, and title.

Ingulphus.

But king William deposing them, distributed the Earldomes, Baronies, Bishopslikes and dignities to his Normans: onely Hereward alme mentioned in the yere of our Lord 1062. had reward with a prosperous end. For being in Flanders, and hearing, that the realme was subdued by strangers, and that his fathers inheritance (his father Leofinke being dead) was given to a Norman, and that his mother a widow was much troubled and injured, cometh with spede into England with his wife Thurfride, and gathering together a companie of his kindred, chased them out of his fathers inheritance. Then goeth to his uncle by the fathers side, then Abbot of Peterborough, and first making confession of his finnes, and absolution received, watcheth all night in the Church, in prayers and fasting, and the next daie offered his sword upon the Altar: and after the Gospell, the Abbot put the same beloved sword about Herewardes necke, with a benediction, and communicating the holy mysteries of Christ, from thenceforth remained a lawfull and souldour of knight.

Hereward returned into England.

Ancient deedes.

This custome of consecration of a souldour, the Normans abhorred: and not onely this custome, but manie other they did alter and change: for the English men making deedes and charters, which to the time of king Edward had bene firme, by the subscriptions of the faithfull with Croeses of Golde, and other holie seales, the Normans did condemne those charters and deedes, and appointed them to make their charters and deedes firme, with a pinte, set upon ware by the spectall Seale of euerie one, under three or foure witnesses.

At the first, many formes and manors were given by bare wordes without writing: onely with the sword of the Lord, or his headpiece, with a borne, or standing goblet: and manie ornaments, with a quill, with a boile combe, a bolow, or arrow, to wit in the beginning of his raigne: but in the yeres after this manner was changed. They did so much abhorre the vcrp speech, that the lawes of the land were pleaded in the French tongue. And boies in Scholes were taught their letters, and principles in Grammar in French, and not in English, &c.

Of statutes and customes.

Among the lawes of William Conquerour, there is one of the Church as followeth. If any man breake the peace of the Church violently, he is in the jurisdiction of the bishops to haue iustice, but if the partie that is gualtie, flee from it, or arrogantly refuse the Bishops order, the king within forty daies shall be enjoined of it, who will presently take iusticie of him, that he shall satisfy God first, and then the king: but if within thirtie daies hee can not be found, the king by the wordes of his owne mouth shall outlawe him, and if after he be found, and maie be kept, he shall bee deliuered to the king alive, or els his head if hee defend himselfe, for hee beareth the head of a traitor, after the daie of his outlawrie, this is the generall law concerning our lawes.

This

This yere Henrie the kings sonne was borne in England: his other sons, Robert, William and Richard were borne beyond the seas in Normandy, before he conquered England.

Anno 1063. Henry the first boine.

1069

Lib. Duclia.

King William gave to Robert surnamed Cumin, the Earldome of Northumberland, of whose coming thither, when the men of that country heard, they made themselves ready to forsake their houses, and to shift for themselves abroad: but suddenly there fell such abundance of snow, and roughnes of weather, that they could not in any wise flee, therefore they took a device and concluded, either to flee the realme, or els to die all together for the libertie of the country. The which thing when the Bishop of Durham understode, hee went out to meet the earle, and exhorted him to turne backe againe: but he suffering his souldiers to robbe and spoile, would not heare any counsel of health, but forthwith entered Durham with seven hundred men, spoiling like enemies through the house of Durham every where what they listed for the time, which lasted not long, for on the next morning early the men of Northumberland being gathered together, burst open the gates, and running by and to the walls, slate all that they found in that Citie, that took part with the Earle, whereby all the streets were filled with blood and dead bodies: some there were that defended the entrie of the house, wherein the Earle was, and had thought to haue saved himselfe, but the other by fire endeouored to burne the house, with all that were therein, whereby the west tower of the church was burnt, but through the wind that then blew out of the East, the church escaped burning: notwithstanding the house yet burning as it began, some of them that were within were burnt and other same, whilst they burst out to save themselves, were immediately slain, so that the Earle himselfe was dispatched, and all his souldours saving one that hardly escaped being wounded. King William taking great displeasure with these doings of the Northumbers, directed a certaine Duke with an army, to revenge the slaughter of Earle Robert: but when they were come to Alnerton, and was in the next morning setting forward towarde Durham, there arose such a darknesse of weather through thicke of clouds, that they could not see one another, so that they could not find their waie, whereupon they returned, and so it came to passe, God hauing pittie upon them, that they heard of the departure of their enemies before they heard of their coming towards them.

About the same time, by the testimonie of an old Chronicle in the Lib. Richmond at Richmond, king William gave such a gift of lands as followeth:

Lib. Richmond.

I William king, the third yere of my raigne,  
Gave to the Norman Hunter, to me that art both life and deere,  
The Hop and the Hopton, and all the boundes up and downe,  
Vnder the earth to hell, above the earth to heaven,  
From me, and from mine, to thee, and to thine,  
As good, and as faire, as euer they mine were:  
To wimes that this is sooth, I bite the white waxe with my tooth,  
Before Iugge, Mawde and Margery, and my yonger soane Henry,  
For one bow and broad arrow, when I come to hunk vpon Yarrow.

King William gave lands to the Norman Hunter.

R

Some.

Lib. Ebor.  
The Danes in-  
made England.

Somewhat before the feast of the natiuitie of our blessed Ladie, Harold and Canutus sonnes to Swamus king of Denmarke, Earle Esborne, Earle Tuckelus, Christerne their bishop, and many other, with 204. ships comming forth of Denmarke, landed in the mouth of the riuer Humber, where Olivo Edgare, Waltheus, and Merleswine, with many other, and the nante which they had assembled came to them, of whose comming Aldred Archbishop of Yorke being verie sorrowfull, made earnest intercession to almighty God, that he might not see the bitter ruine and destruction of his countrey, fell sick, and ended his life in the yere next following, as shall be shewed.

The eight day after the landing of the Danes, to wit, on the nineteenth day of September, the Normans that kept the Castle of Yorke, fearing least the houses that were nere to the Castle should be a furtherance to the enemies, to fill by the ditch, beganne to set fire on them, and to burne them vp: which fire increasing so exceedingly, invaded all the Citie, and consumed the Monasterie of S. Peter, together with the city, but this aue was grievously reuenged on them verie speedily, for before all the city was burnt, the Danish naue came, to wit, on the Monday, being the 21. of September, and breaking the castles, the same day slew above 3000. Normans, saving William Mallet and his wife, two of their children, and fewe other: which done, they returned to their ships with innumerable booties. Which doing, when it was signified to the king, he forthwith assembled an army, & halloed with an angry minde towards Northumberland, not ceasing to waste that Countrey all that winter, to kill men, and to doe all the mischief that was possible. In the meane time, messengers being sent to the Danish Earle Esborne, king William promised to giue to him no small summe of money, and to permit his army freely to take victuals, by the sea coast, with this condition onely, that winter being past, he should depart without battell. Esborne being too greedy of golde and siluer, not without great shame, yielded to his requests, and departed without more claime of this kingdome for that time.

By reason that the Normans had wasted England in Northumberland, and in certaine other places in the yere before, notice this yere, and the next that followed such a scarcity increased through all England, especially through Northumberland, and the countries next adjoining, that men were faine to eat horse flesh, cattes, dogges, and mans flesh; for all the land that lay betwixt Durham and Yorke, lay waste without inhabitants, and people to till the ground, for the space of nine yeres, except onely the territorye of Saint Iohn of Beverlake.

When Eglesine Bishopp of Durham hearde of the comming of King William, he and the elders taking aduise together, fledde to the Church of holy Land: but in the meane season the kings armie being scattered through out all places that sooner betwixt Sele and Ene, found nothing but empty houses euerie where: and then was bent the Church of Saint Paule at Parroto.

The Church of Durham being bereft of all ecclesiasticall service, was left like a desert, but Lent being at hand, when peace was made, the bishop retur-

King William  
compounded  
with the Danes  
to depart with-  
out battaile.

A great dearth  
to that mans  
flesh was eaten  
of men.

Anno reg. 4.  
1070

ned againe, and entered the church the first of April, where he found the Image of the Crucifier cast to the ground, and altogetherspoiled of the ornaments. Through the counsell of William Fitz Osberd Earle of Hereford, and certaine other, in the Lent season king William caused the monasteries of all England to be searched, and the money which the richer sort of the English people, for the cruel spoiling which they saw in him had laide vp in the same Abbeies, he caused to be brought into his treasure. Roger of Wendouer Abbe, he bereaved all the Monasteries and Abbeies in England, of their golde and siluer, sparing neither Thalis nor Shyine, appropriating the said monasteries and Abbeies to himselfe: he brought under knights service, all those Bishoppicks and Abbeies that held baronies, which had bene free from all secular bondage, appointing them how many fouldours they should finde him and his successors in time of warres.

A great counsell was holden at Winchester by commandement of the king, who also was present at the same, Pope Alexander consenting therunto, sent by his Legates Ermenrich bishop, and the Priestes, Iohn and Peter Cardinals of the sea Apostolike, who exhibited there his authoritie. In which counsell Sigand Archbishop of Cantuarie was degraded for thre causes, to wit, because he did possesse vniuersally the bishoppicks of Winchester, together with his archbishoppicks, and because that whilest the Archbishop Robert was yet liuing, he had not only taken vpon him the archbishoppicks, but also in celebrating of diuine service, for a time used the Pall, which remained at Cantuarbury, when he was excommunicated by violence out of England, and after received the Pall of Benedict, whom the church of Rome did excommunicate, for that hee had invaded the Apostolike Sea by money. His brother also Agelwine Bishop of the East Angles, and diuers Abbots were there degraded by the kinges meanes, that other of his nation might bee placed in their romes, for the confirmation of his kingdome, many, as well Bishops as Abbots, who for no euident cause were depriued of their honour, and by the king vnto their liues end holden in prison.

When the feast of S. Iohn Baptist was at hand, Earle Esborne with his naue which had wintered in Humber, (according to appointment made) returned into Denmarke, but his brother Swain king of Denmarke banished him that reaine, for the money which (against his will, and the will of the Danes) hee had receiued of king William: whereby it appeareth, that Swaine B. of Denmarke succeeded not his claime to the crowne of England, as some haue affirmed, namely in a table, vniuersally intituled, The true portraiture of the countenances, and attires of the Kings of England, &c. collected by T. T. wherein his wordes be these, Will. of Normandie, &c. took the crowne vpon him by election of the estates (the contrarie whereof is true) then seeking to stoppe titles, he imprisoned Edgare Etheling, the onely true heire of the Saxons blood, and by meanes of Ethelbert Archbishop of Hambrogh, for money purchaseth Swaine king of Denmarke to successe the claime of the Danes; banishing thus establish his affaires, &c. which error the said T. T. hath framed by misinterpret- ing of his Authour Adam Bremenensis, whose wordes be these: Inter Suen & Ba-

Marionus,

Monasteries  
spoiled.

R. Windower,

Marionus,  
Sigand Arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terbury is de-  
posed.

Earle Esborne  
returned to-  
ward Den-  
marke.

The Danes  
made continu-  
all claime to  
the crowne of  
England many  
yeres, as by the  
history follow-  
ing may ap-  
peare.

Adam Bre-  
menensis.

*per diem perpetua contentio de Anglia fuit, sed nos pontifex numeris Guelicis persuasus, inter reges pacem firmare voluerit.* Which is to be Englished thus: by twene Swene and the barke, there was continuall contention, although our Bishop being perswaded with the giftes of William, would have established peace betwene the kings. Marke how little this without treueth to his interpretation, and now to our purpose.

King William having placed a Canon of Bayon, named Thomas the elder, in the Archbishoppes See of Poike, doth also now call for Lanfranke Abbot of Cane in Normandie, that was a Lombard, borne in the cite of Bapiza, a man skilfull in science, prudent in counsell and government of thinges, and for religion and life most holie, him he made Archbishop of Canterbury. This Lanfranke being consecrated archbishop of Canterbury, he consecrated Thomas Archbishop of Poike, but not before he had made profession of subiection to the said Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, which the said Thomas was ordered by the king to do, and did before his consecration.

Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury being in such fauour with king William, that the same William thought not good to deny any thing that he requested, procured by his industrie that the said king left his euill custome of selling his prisoners, which he toke in Ireland: which was a thing hardly granted to him, and to Wolfane Bishop of Worcester, the gaines that the king had by the sale of those Irishmen was such.

The Carles, Edwine of Mercia, Morcare of Northumberland, Siward lay named Bran, Eglewinc Bishop of Durham, with many knights and souldiers, both of the cleargie and lay people, fearing that king William would put them in prison, secretly fled out of the court, and for a time rebelled against him, till they perceived the thing they had taken in hand, went not well with them, and then Carle Edwine determining to goe to Malcolme king of Scots, was in the way thitherward slain through treason of his owne people.

Eglewinc bishop of Durham, Carle Morcare, Siward surnamed Bran, and Hereward, a right balliant person, with many other, went into woods and wild places of the countrey, because they were not able to abide the force of king William: and after they had done much harme in many places, at the last, they came into the Isle of Elp by boate, and chose there a place in the fennes, they make Hereward their Captaine of the warre, where hee did manie warlike feates, so often overcoming his enemies, so manie times belouding them, that he deferred perpetuall commendations, for as long as he could, he with ned the ruines of his countrey decaying.

Whereof when as king William was aduertised, hee gathered a great power, marched thitherward, and stopped their going out of the Isle on the East side thereof, and caused a bidge of canvas of two miles in length to be made in the West part. Hee also (saith Roger of Wendouer) builded a Castle from the ground vpp, in a place called Wilsch. Whereupon they of the Isle perceiving themselves so inclosed, they raised a fote of earth of turkes and timber in the marshes, which by the inhabitants of that countrey, is called the Castle of Hereward: this castle they raised against the

assaulting

assaulting of the kings hoste, and fought with their enemies many daies together. From thence the king went to the castle of Grantbidge, from whence, as the necessity of the time required, set forth others companies to bedge and trouble the next places unto the Isle, for the king himselfe was called vnto other businesse, and enforced to repaire into Normandie, to speake with Philip king of France. In the meane time Hereward, and the nobles of England obtained by price, which they were not able to doe by prayer, and won the Scots to take their part against the Normans. And also the Danes fauouring them, did greatly desire to triumph over the Normans. Further, there were within the Realme great commotions on euerie part, as well by the Normans, as other against the king, by perswasion of Carle Ralle de Walser, calling Hereward into that faction, and others the nobles of England, as Morcare, Echelm, Waltheum, Siward, and Edgare. At which time Hereward leaving the Isle of Elp, committed to him for safeguard, went towards the English, to whom a balliant company of young souldiers did toine themselves, which no man durst encounter.

Malcolme king of Scots with an innumerable multitude of Scots, passing through Cumberland, and turning aside towards the East, did cruelly forrage all Ceddale, and the places nigh adioyning: but when they came to a place called Hunnorsfelde, after they had there slaine certaine noble men of the English nation, the king of Scots sent home part of his army laden with spoiles. Then he set vpon Holbernelle and destroyed the same with a sodaine destruction: then raging through the groundes of Saint Cuthbert of Durham, he cruellie departed all men of their goods, and manie of their liues. At the same time also did he consume with fire, the Church of Saint Peter at Wethermouth, and others other Churches, with them that were thither fledde to saue themselves. And whiles the same Malcolme rode about the river banks, delighting his eyes with the cruell actes committed against the English people: it was tolde him that Edgar Echeling with his sisters of the blood royall, and manie other noble men, banished from their lawfull inheritance, were arrived at that haen: he came to them, and shaking hands with them, gaue them and all theirs licence with his assured peace to dwell in his kingdome as long as they would.

Besides these robberies of the Scots, Gospatric of Northumberland did waste Cumberland, and made there great slaughter and burnings, and after returned with great bootie, to a strong fortrell at Wabbungh, where hee with his fellows inclosed themselves: for at that time Cumberland was vnder the inhibition of king Malcolme, who when he heard what was done by Gospatric, he charged his souldiers to spare none of the English nation: whereupon, pittifull it was to beholde, olde men, and women, some were killed with swordes, some pierced with speares, the young babes taken from the mothers papies were cast by into the aire, and falling downe againe, were reueiled on their speares, and then the speare haues stricken into the ground in a balliant together: but the young men and maidens, such as were thought meete to labour, were bound, and forced to be slaves. Malcolme beholding the teares of

th 3.

the,

An. reg. 5.  
1071  
W. Malcolme

Edwine and  
Morcare with  
other rebell  
against king  
William.

R. Windouer.  
Edwine Carle  
of Mercia  
slaine.

Hereward.

Wilsch Castle  
built by  
Hereward  
the builder.

Ro. Houdeca.  
The Scots  
invade Eng.  
land.

Church at  
Wethermouth  
burned.



these, to encrease his tyrannie, commanded them to be scourged in their going forth.

Ex tab. Ofney.  
Annoreg. 6.

At this time (saith Houeden) Scotland was so replenished with bondslaves, men and women of the English nation, that no village or cottage could be found without them.

The Castle of Eades in Kent was builded by Creuicure, a noble man, a Norman.

The Castle of Orford was builded by Robert de Olly the first, a noble man that came into England with king William the Conquerour.

Also William Earle Warren, that came in with William the Conquerour, and married Gundred daughter to the said William, this yere founded the Priorie of Iles in Suffex.

This yere, by the commaundement of Pope Alexander, and consent of King William the Conquerour, in the presence of the said king, his bishops, Prelates, and nobilitie, the title of Primacie, the which Lanfranke Archbyschoppe of Canterbury did claime over the Church of Yorke, and concerning the ordering of certaine Byschops, whome men were vncertaine unto which Archbyschoppe they shoulde especially belong, was examined and tried out: where, by the authoritie of olde Writings it was proued and declared, that the Church of Yorke ought to bee subiect unto the Church of Canterburie, and ought faithfully to obey the same, in all matters pertaining unto Chryslian Religion, as being Primacie of all England. And the Archbyschop of Canterburie, as Metropolitane, graunted the Archbyschop of Yorke and his successors, to haue vnder their iurisdiction, the Byschopricke of Durham, that is to saie, Lincolne, and from the great Riuer of Humber vnto the bittermost part of the borders of Scotland, and also all whatsoever doeth appertaine to the parish of Yorke vpon the side the Riuer, so that if the Archbyschop of Canterburie doe summon a councell in any place, the Archbyschop of Yorke and all his Suffraganes, Subiects and Clerkes shall be there present at his commaundement, and shall be obedient vnto his canons and orders, &c. at London.

King William went into Scotland, and Edric king of Scots did homage vnto him.

King William hauing in his companie Edric surnamed Syluaticus, or Wildoe, marched towarde Scotland with a nanie by sea, and with an armie of horsemen by land, to haue subdued Scotland, for that Malcolm had in the yere last before passed, so cruelly desolated the borders of his kingdome.

In the which iourney, when king William came vnto Durham, hee entered the Church with great deuotion for to pray, and afterwarde hee inquiring of the life and conuersion of the Confessor Cuthbert, and also of the antiquitie of that Byschopricke, hee confirmed all the Libertiees of that same Church, &c.

This being done, King William went into Scotland, against whome King Malcolm came vnto a place called Aberinthe, and became his man. And after king William deposed Gospatricke of his Earldome, laying vnto his charge, that he had consulted with them that helpe the Earle Robert Com-

men

men of Durham, and that hee was among the enemies, when the Normans were slain at Yorke: who being erpuised, Waltheus was entolled vnto that Earldome, being due vnto him both by father and mother, for he was the son of Earle Siward by Elfied the daughter of Aldred sometime Earle.

At the same time when king William returned from Scotland, he builded a Castle at Durham, wherein the Bishop might keepe him and his safe, from him builded, such as made assaults.

This yere Eglewine Byschop of Durham, who had bene by king William committed to prison first at Abindune, and since at Westminster deceased, and was buried there in S. Nicholas chappell.

King William went into Normandie, which Duke done was then rebellious against him, but with strong hand he subdued the Citie of Bayne, and the whole Countrey, especially by the helpe of Englishmen, whome he applied in these affaires, they spoiled the cities, townes, vineyards, and cornfields, whereby they greatly weakened and empouerished that prouince. Clito Edgar at this time came forth of Scotland, and passing through England, went into Normandy, and was there agreed with king William.

About this time the Monkes of Ely, seeing the miseries of themselves, and of the whole Island, determined to trie the kings clemencie, for there was such a dearth in the land, as the like had not bene sene, for al prouision being spent, many thousands died through hunger, since it was now the seventh yere since they had bene besieged, wherfore taking their iourney to Warwike a famous towne, they came to the king with great reuerence, commending themselves, and all that they had to his clemencie. Thurstane and his Monkes standing before king William, beseeched him for the mercie of God to turne his displeasure from their Citie, promising faithfully hereafter to obey him. The Abbot saide, that if the king would restore vnto the Abbey their possessions, violently taken from them, hee might haue sure entrance into the Ile: which the king granted, and commanded William de Warren, and Gilbert de Clare, that they shoulde become pledges for the same. Whereupon the Abbot conferred with them about the regathering together of their possessions. Who (going after to his owne) did first instruct Gilbert de Clare, and Earle VVarren of the manner of the rebellion, willing them not to feare for the often repulse of the enemies, for they shoulde haue his counsell and helpe, whereby the king might vnderstand that the power of the enemies was weakened.

Whereupon the king began to triumph, as though he had already got the victorie: he assembled therefore as great an armie as he could be both of horsemen and footmen, he toke his iourney to Ely, he prepared his engines, laid siege to the place which was of most defence, and daily laboured to overthrow that which Canutus neither with wit, or strength, with policie, or (wo)de could at any time subdue.

At length, though with difficulty wonderfull to be declared, he safely brought his army nearer then anie one thought he could haue done, which was euen to the waters of Ely, the Normans passed Cottinglade, neither did it grieve the king first to passe ouer many riuers, although he was almost drowned at the point

Annoreg. 7.  
1073  
R. Wendover.

The Monkes of Ely submit themselves to king William.

King William in peril of drowning at point Sale.

point Sale: hee could not for marches or other neuer so dangerous, till the sounding voice of braze quickly drave the enemies out of the Iland, but the Normans compassing the enemies, did in a moment take a thousand of them, wherefore the king as soon as he had entered the Iland, went about the mores, marches, and crooked wailes, and with siege inclose the whole company of his enemies. These armed men are brought forth, first the Captaines, then the better sort of the other, where hee imprisoneth some, and put out the eyes, cut off the hands and feete of other some, and suffered the multitude of the common people to depart.

In this Ile he found abundance of beastes and cattell manifolde to recompence his slain horses and other damages. Edwine is taken, and with him many persons of name & power, who were bound in strict prison, but Edwine was escaped: forthwith the king sent a great company to keep the gates of the monastrey, to the end the Monks with crosses and other ceremonies should not moleste him, and entreate for pardon at his hand, whereunto hee must needs have granted. Wherefore when he came to the monastrey, he rode aloofe from the tombe of Saint Ethelred, and hurled a marke of golde upon the Altar. Which done, and having placed a garrison within the walles of the Monkes: he disposed of Grantzibidge, Huntingdon, and Bedford shires, committing them to such men as he had brought out of France: and likewise placing a strength of Frenchmen in the Castle of Alrech, he went out of the Iland, the same way by which he entered into it: there was no divine service since that unto the xxvij. of October, the time was so troublesome. After the king was departed, the Church doores were fast locked: and Gilbert de Clare entering the monastrey to see the monks places of offices, in the end came into the refectory, finding the Monks at dinner, said to them, Oh wretches and slothfull persons, had you none other time to dine in, but whilst the king remained in your Church: With which wordes they all rising, ranne to the Church: but when they found not the king there, they were greatly troubled: wherefore gaining no hope but in God, they required Gilbert de Clare, that by his means they might obtaine a firme peace, which in the ende taking upon him to doe, he went to the king, and with great difficultie obtained the same: with condition, that when the Monkes came before him, they should by prayer or price pacifie his displeasure against them.

This done, he brought the Monkes before the king to Wichford, where he then sojourned, who being with much adoe brought in favour with the king by the false Gilbert, and other noble men, promised seven hundred markes of Silver. For the providing whereof, the Monkes were enforced to spoile and sell the iewelles and ornaments of their Church, and then repaie to Grantzibidge to paie that money to the kings officers: but one great being lacking of the said summe, by the deceit of such as did tell it, the waight was not full, by so much. Whereof when the king had understood, hee was greatly offended with them, denying unto them all manner of hope of any further peace. Whereupon they were driven to make an other composition of a thousand markes, for the which they were faine for to spoile, and to sell

whatsoever

whatsoever other kind of ornaments that were left, and yet notwithstanding, lacked that peace which they so much sought, and so deere bought. Walter boyme at Eboraine, was elected by the king, and then consecrated Bishop of Durham.

King William the Conquerour with a great power of Englishmen went into Normandie, which rebelled, and subdued it, spoiling the cities, towncs, vineyardes, &c.

Gregorie the seventh, Pope, excommunicated all committers of symonie, and removed married Priests from executing divine service, whereof rose great troubles in England.

Radulph whom lately before king William had made Earle of Rossefolke and Suffolke, or, as some write, of the East Angles, now hee toke to wife (against the kings commaundement) the daughter of William Fitz Osbert, sister to Roger Earle of Hereford, and celebrating most royally the marriage feast, with a great multitude of noble men at Erningham in Grantzibidge shire, concluding a pride of his marriage, for that his wife was the kings kinswoman, even upon the marriage day, when the feast was solemnly kept, and the riotous superfluity of the Englishmen was entered into the Normans thowates, the guests being drunken and full of wine, with a long circumstance of wordes, he opened his minde and purpose, whereunto the guests consented with a great shout. There was Roger Earle of Hereford, Radulphs wines brother: there was Waldeosus Earle of Northampton and Huntingdon, and many other, who all conspired the kings death. But on the next morrow, when the heat of the wine was digested, and the mindes of some of them come to better temper, the most part of them repented of that they had promised, and slipping away from the feast, Waldeosus as soon as hee could went to Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, and toke penance for his othe which he had received against his will, and though his advise went to the king, then being in Normandie, and opening the matter unto him, yielded to his merrie. The other Nobles proceeding in their beguine conspircie, went to their Castles, and raised their people to open rebellion. But Wollane Bishop of Worcester, with a great bande of men of warre resisted the Earle of Hereford, so that hee might not (passing the River of Senerne) come to Earle Radulph at the appointed place with his campe, in whose companie was Aglewine Abbot of Cueltham, with his people, having called to his aide Vre the rifice of Worcester, and Walker de Lacie with their men, and other multitudes of common people.

But Odo Bishoppe of Bayon, and Godfrey Bishop of Constance assembling a mightie armie as well of Englishmen as of Normans, came to encounter Earle Radulph being encamped at Grantzibidge, where earle Radulph perceiving that his enterprise wanted force, fearing the number of them that came against him, he secretly fledde from thence to Northwich, where committing the Castle to his wife and knights, he getteth himselfe to flicke, and fled into little Baptaine, whom his enemies pursuing, slew all those of his men that they might come to: and after this they besiege the Castle, till that peace

was

King William  
conquered the  
Ile of Egle.  
Edwine was put  
out, and their  
hands and  
feet cut off.

King William  
his offering to  
St Ethelred  
of Egle.

King William  
lay at Wich-  
ford.

Money paid  
by weight.

W. Malmesbury  
Amor. l.  
1074

Conspiracie  
against king  
William, by  
Radulph Earle  
of Rossefolke  
and Suffolke.

Earle the rifice of  
Worcester.  
Walter Lacie.

was granted, and licence to the Countesse and her people to depart the realme, and so she followed her husband.

King William returned out of Normandy.

Eyes put out, hands cut off, &c.

R. Wyndecor, Counte the Son of Swaine King of the Danes, his wife against England.

Anno reg. 9.

1075  
W. Malmes.  
John of Lond.

Ingulphus.

These thinges being done, the king in the hartell returning forth of Normandy, put Earle Roger of Hereford in prison, wherein hee remayned all the dayes of his life: and all the Englishmen that had bene at the marriage, hee caused to have their eyes put out, their hands cut off, hanged on gibbets, or to be banished at the least. Earle Waltheofus also was committed to prison, although that hee went to the king, and had obtayned of him a promise of pardon.

Counte the sonne of Swaine, and Hacon the Earle came out of Denmarke with two hundred ships full of men of warre: but when they hearde that their factors were overcome, and banquished, they turned their backs, and sailed into fflanders, and durst not fight with king William: but William of Malinesburie saith that king William did likewise by the earle Hacon, as before he had by the earle Elborne.

Edgitha late Quene of Englande, wife to king Edward, called (of some) the Simple, or (of other) Confessor, daughter to Duke Godwine, and sister to Harold late king of England, departed this life at Winchester, whose corps, by the kings commandement was brought to Westminster, and there by her husband solemnele entered: there had a Tombe of silver and golde curiously wrought. This Quene Edgitha possessed on her death bed, that notwithstanding shee had bene manie yeres wife unto king Edward, yet now shee died a pure virgin.

King William banished certaine rebelles, others hee dismembred, as by putting out their eyes, and chopping off their hands. The earles Waltheofus, and Roger, by iudiciall sentence, hee condemned unto more streite prisons.

At this time (saith Ingulphus) Brand, Herewards uncle, Abbot of Peterborough, being dead, succeeded Thorold a stranger, by the gift of king William, which thing Hereward taking in ill part, that a stranger should rule over his kintred, hee invaded Peterborough, and chased away the Abbot. And though in the sayde Abbots defence, Iuo Talbois a most mightie Norman, and by the gift of king William made Lozde of all Hollar in Lincolnshire, Hereward tooke the sayde Iuo in open battell, and set him free for a great summe of monie. To this Iuo Talbois king William had given to wife Lucie, the sister of the earles Edwyne and Morcar, with all the landes and tenementes that to the said earles had appertained.

At this time moreover, to increase the calamitie, happened the cruel beheading of earle Waltheofus of Walden: and although Lanfranke Archbyschoppe of Canterburie his Confessor, affirmed him to be free from the conspiracy and faction, and that if it chanced him to die in that case, he should for his innocencie be counted a martyr, yet his most wicked wife, coveting to be married anew, did most hainously hasten the death of her husband. Certaine Normans also gaped after his Earle, namely of Northampton, and Huntingdon, and Iuo Talbois Earle of Angew, most greedy to make those landes and tenementes

Hereward chased the Abbot of Peterborough. Hereward tooke Iuo Talbois and banished him.

Wicked wife hastened the death of her husband.

mentes his owne, by bloodshedding, this innocent and harmlesse man was beheaded without the Citie of Winchester, upon the last day of the moneth of May, and was there basely buried, in a place, where since was builded the chapel of Saint Giles: but sixtene daies after by permission of the king, his body was conveyed unto Crokland, and was there honorably buried. Iudith Earle VValtheofes widow, after the decease of her husband, with her two daughters, had the Lordshipp of Huntingdon given to her in the name of a dowrie, and there made their abode, untill such time as the king was willing to marrie her to a knight boyne in France, named Simon Syluaticus or Seintiz. For his brother came two brethren to the aide of the king, and to serve him with forty soldiers horsemen, their names were Guarnerus le Riche, and Simon de Sendiz, and their fathers name was Ranulph le Riche, after whose death the eldest son, Guarnerus went backe into his native Countrey, and succeeded in his fathers possessions: but Simon the younger sonne remained here with the king, unto whom the king gave the Towne of Northampton, and the Hundred of Shacpley, hee builded the Castle of Northampton, and also the Abbey of Saint Andrewes there. The king would have given unto him Iudith the widow of Earle Waltheofus, but she refused him, because that hee halted on the one legge: in wach whereof, king William bestowed upon him the whole honour of Huntingdon, and so was he called Earle of Northampton and of Huntingdon, &c.

This yere mine ofte alleadged Anthon Ingulphus, was by the kings gift made Abbot of Crokland, which Ingulphus, of himselfe, and his becalon to the Abbacie of Crokland writeth thus: I Ingulphus, an humble servant of God and Saint Guthlake, and of the monastery of Crokland, boyne in England, and of English parents, in the most beautiful City of London, for to attaine to learning, I was first put to Westminster, afterward to Oxford to studie. When I had profited in reading Aristotle above manie mine equals in age, I studied also Tulies Rhetorikes: waxing elder, loathing the base estate of my parents daily more and more, I desired to leaue my father and mothers house, and to be in kings and princes pallaces, to be attired in silkes and gorgeous apparell. And beholde, noble William, now our king of England, then Duke of Normandy, came to London, to talke with his cousin king Edward then king of England, with a great traine attending upon him, unto whom I soone toynd my selfe, thrusting forwarde, to dispatch all businesse arising, I became in a little time knownen to Duke William, and was of him verie well beloued, and with him I sayled into Normandy, there was I made his Secretarie, I ruled the whole court of the Duke at my pleasure, to the enuie of manie.

At length it was noyed, that many Archbishops and Bishops of the Empire, and many other Princes would go to Jerusalem, I among other, as well soldiers as clerkes, with the licence of my Lozde the Duke, prepared my selfe. Comming unto Constantinople, wee did reverence to the Emperour Alexes, &c. Departing from thence through Italia, we fell into the hands of Arabian robbers that tooke from us much money: wee came at the length

Simon Gentilis. Guarnerus le Riche.

Castle of Northampton builded.

Ingulphus boyne in London, brought up in learning at Westminster, and at Oxford, made Abbot of Crokland.

to Ierusalem, where the Patriarke Sophronius received his honourable, and brought us to the Church of the holie Sepulture, and so to other places. In the spring returning home by Rome, and so into Normandie, I halted to the Abbey of Fountauill, where I received the habite of a Monk, meaning to purge and amend, as the grace of the holy Ghost inspired mee, the offences of my youth, and ignorances, &c. At what time duke William understanding of the death of king Edward his cousin expected a favourable wind in the port of Saint Valarke, to saile over into England, I presented unto him the Abbot's gift, to wit, twelve yong men chosen on Holsbachie and armed, with an hundred markes towards his expences in that voyage, and I returned to the Monasterie. After certaine yeres Walkerelus Abbot of Cropland was deposed of his office; King William sent to the Abbot of Fontauill for me, &c. To London I came to the king, there inuaded of the stasse and passuall office of Cropland Monasterie, and consecrated on the day of the natiuitie of our Lord. On the day of the conversion of St. Paul I first came to Cropland, and was installed, 1075.

The king passing ouer the sea, went into little Bytaine, and besieged there the Castell of Dolence, belonging to earle Ralph, but Philip king of France came with a great power vpon them, and tooke all victualles from them, so that king William was forced to leaue his siege with the losse of manie soldiers and hozes, with much other substance: and not long after king William made peace with them.

An. reg. 10.  
1076  
R. Windover.

Walter Bpshop of Durham, contrary to his Bpshoplike dignitie intermedled himselfe with secular and worldly matters, and bought of king William the earledome of Northumberland, and then playing the part of a Shirriffe, set in a secular and lay court, determining of matters, extorting infinite Summes of money, as well of the Noble men, as of the others of that same Province, &c.

I great frost.  
T. Callicford.

The earth was hard frozen from the first day of November, until the midd of Aprill.

Wilbert Lacie  
Lad of Pont-  
fract.

King William the Conquerour gaue the Castell, with the Towne of Pontfracte, and the lande lying therabout, to Hilbert Lacie a Norman, the which Castell, Towne, and landes before the Conquest belonged vnto one Richarde Afnalde, who had Ithur Ailricke, who had Swayne, who had Adam, of whome came two daughters, one of the which two daughters was married vnto Gawfride Neuell, and the other vnto Thomas Brough, but neyther of them had anie parte of the Towne or landes about the Towne of Pontfracte, Robert Sonne to Hildebert Lacie founded the Priorie of Pontfract.

An. reg. 11.  
1077

About the same time, Robert the kinges Sonne, vnto whome, when as hee had conquered Englanre, hee had giuen the Dukedome of Normandie, in the presence of Philip king of France, because now his Father woulde not suffer him to possesse the Dukedome of Normandie, the said Robert went into France, and by the ayde of the same King Philip, committed great robberies, and toke great preies in Normandy, and burned Townes

and

and sette the people, doing no small vexation vnto his father, so that king William the Conquerour fighting a battaile against his Sonne Robert befoze the Castell of Gerbarie in France, was vnpoised himselfe, and his Sonne William was wounded, and manie of his familie were slaine. Wherefore king William the Conquerour cursed his Sonne Robert, the which curse hee felt euidentlie befoze hee dyed, for there did nothing prosper with him,

William Con-  
querour curseth  
his Son Robert.

Paul a Monk of Cane, is made Abbot of Saint Albones, who in short space by the counsell and ayde of Lanfranke Archbysshop of Canterburie, he builded verie trimmelie a newe Church and Cloyster there, and all offices, and adourned the same Church with manie good Bookes, and rich ornaments.

An. reg. 12.  
1078  
Abbe of Saint  
Albones new  
builded.

This yere on Palme Sundae about the first houre, the aie being cleere and faire, a great Starre appeared, and was seene of manie next vnto the Sunne,

This yere Malcolm king of Scottes, on the fiftenth of August, with an army waiked Northumberland vnto the riuer of Tyne, slawe manie, and toke great preies, and spoile of the Countrey, which they returning, conueied into Scotland.

The Scots  
spoil North-  
umberland.

Also in the same yere the Cathedral Church of Hereford was burned by Gryffith the Prince of Wales, and Algar son vnto Leofrike Earle of Mercia.

Marianus,  
Church of Here-  
ford burned.

Roger de Belesme, or Mongomerie, founded of an olde Church in the Suburbes of the Towne of Serobburie an Abbey of blacke Monkes, dedicated vnto S. D. D. Saint Peter, and Paul: he made Fulchardus his Sonne first Abbot there. He also placed Monkes at Wenloke, in the Priorie sometime founded by Milbrough sister to Mildred, and by Leofrike Earle of Chester for Nunnes.

Serobburie.

Gundulphus Bpshop of Rochester was turnetour of the great towkes of the Tower of London, which Tower was builded by the commandement of king William. And this Gundulfe founded the Abbey of Spawling in Kent for nuns: he builded part of the Castell of Rochester, and founded the Hospitall of Saint Bartholomew without the East gate of that Citie, which is in some Records called Getham, &c.

Towm  
Ramp.

Walter Bpshop of Durham, borne in Normaine as is aforesaide, is slaine by the Northumbers, in a place called Gatelysh, in reuenge of a Noble man named Leulfus, befoze slaine by meanes of the Bpshoppes Chaplaine named Leofwinus. The sayde Leulfus in manie partes of England intoped great possessions by right of inheritance, but because the Normans euerie where practised their cruelty, he got himselfe with all his family to Durham, he had to wife Aegitha, daughter to Earle Aldred, of whome hee begate two Sonnes Vred and Morcare.

An. reg. 13.  
1079  
Marianus.

This Leulfus was so beloued of the Bpshoppes, that without his counsell, hee woulde doe nothing of anie great weight, for the which cause the Bpshoppes Chaplain Leofwinus greatly hated the said Leulfus, and therefore on a time going

ing out of the court house, or mete hall called unto him Gilbert, a man to whom the byshop had committed the earledome of Northumberland under him to be gouerned, he requested him to reuenge his displeasure against the said Leulfus, and as soon as he could to put him to death, which hee performed in this manner, gathering together his men of warre, one night went unto the village where Leulfus dwelt, and there in his owne house, together with all his familie, slew him, which thing being knowne, the Byshoppe sore vexed in displeasure therewith, toke his hode from his head, threw it to the ground, and saide to Leofwine his Chaplaine, these thinges are done by thy meanes Leofwine, and therefore I will that thou know for certaine that thou hast killed me, and al my familie with the sword of thy tongue. Having this said, he got him straight into the Castell, and forthwith sending messengers through Northumberland, he caused to be declared to all men, that he was nothing pained to the death of Leulfus, but was now desirous to banish his sister Gilbert and all his fellows in that action, and for himselfe he was ready to purge himselfe according to the Ecclesiasticall lawes. This being signified, the Byshop and the friends of him that was slaine, professing to be at peace together, appointed a day and place of meeting together, where they might establish a more firme peace; to wch when the day came, they met at the place appointed, but the Byshop refusing to talke with them abroad, abode in the Church thereby with his cleargy and knights, and when the talke was began, once or twise he sent out to them of his counsaillers, to make an attonement, but they would not agree, because they believed that Leulfus was slaine by the Byshops consent, for the night after the slaughter of Leulfus, not onely Leofwine did reuelue Gilbert and his complices into his house familiarly, but also the Byshoppe did the like. Whereupon, all those that were found out of the Byshops place they slew, verie fewe excepted, that gate a wale by night, which thing perceived by the Byshoppe, he to satisfie the furie of his enemies, commanded his cousin Gilbert (whose life was sought) to depart out of the Church, whome as hee went, the men of armes followed with speare and sword, till they had slaine him and all their enemies, sparing onely two Englishmen that were servants to the Byshop, they also slew Leofwine the Deane of Durham, and other of the Prioules, as they coulde finde them out of the Church. When the Byshop perceived that by no meanes thei fury might be pacified, except the head of the author were cut off, he besought Leofwine to go forth, which when hee coulde not get him to doe, hee went himselfe to the Church doores, and besought them to graunt him his life, which when they refused to doe, hee couering his head with the skirt of his garment, went forth, and straightwaies with the enemies swades hee was dispatched out of his life: after this they bade Leofwine come forth, but hee woulde not, whereupon they set the Church walles and rouffe on fier, which hee continued a while, but when he felt the bitter flames about him, and began to smart, he leapt out, and being cut in peeces, suffered for his wickednes.

This detestable slaughter of the Byshop was committed on the 14. daie of May, when he had fate Byshop nine yeeres, and two monethes, the Sparrow failed to the place, toke the bodie of their Byshop into their sholpe, which

Byshop of  
Durham slaine.

Lib. Dunelm.

which body they could hardly know for the number of woundes, being also spoiled of his garments, the body they carry to their Monasterie, which being translated thence to Durham, was there buried, but with no such solemnitie as other Byshops had bene buried, for his murderers roused by and downe all the Citie, and assaulted the Castell, but could not preuaile; whereupon at length they dispersed themselves here and there, and were consumed with many calamities, wandring like runnagates, and banished people, for when king William had knowledge of these things, he sent his brother Odo Byshop of Bayon, and manie Nobles of his realme with a great army, to destroy Northumberland, who whilste they fought to reuenge the death of the Byshoppe, brought all that land to desolation, many of the sely people that remained at home, they either committed to be beheaded, or other waies to be dismembred, many being vngodly charged, were forced to ransom themselves with money.

The said Odo toke certaine ornaments of the Church, among the which there was a Byshops staffe, maruillous for the matter and woymanship, for it was made of Sapphyre stone, who hauing set a garrison in the Castell returned.

This yeere was finished the booke named Domes day, or Domus Dei, being a perfect survey of the whole land, which booke remaineth in the kings Exchequer at Westminster, of the which booke making thereof, Ingulphus writeth thus.

King William for the taxing of his whole lande, toke this order in all England, there was not an hie of land, but he knewe the valewe thereof, and the possessor also, neither meire nor place there was, but it was valued in the kings role, the rents and profits, the possession and the possessor, were made manifest and knowne unto the king, according to the fidelitie of taxors, which being chosen out of euery Countrey, taxed or seised their owne Territories, or made their owne rent role. These men well willers and friends to our Monasterie, weighd not our Monasterie to the full paye, nor to the true measure thereof, preuenting and prouiding upon zealous affection towards vs, for the kinges taxations, and other burdens that after might befall.

This role is called the role of Winton, and of the Englishmen for the generalitie thereof, containing wholie all the tenements of the whole land, it is named Domesdaie. Such a role and very like, did king Aelfred once set forth, in which he taxed all the land of Englande by Shires, Hundreds, and Tithings.

And this role, as is before noted, was called the role of Winton, because it was laide in Winchester to be kept. Which Citie was the head of the West Saxons kingdome, committing vnto him by inheritance: At this time among all the particular kingdomes of England most noble and famous. In this role of Winchester, so most of all called, because it was made after the example of the other, were taxed and set downe, the Earledomes, Hundreds, Tithings, Woods, Parks, and all ffarmes, in euery territozy, or precinct, howe manie carncates of lande, howe manie ploughlandes, and acres, what pastures and fennes, or marshes, what tenements and tenants were contained, &c. Thus much Ingulphus.

Northumber-  
land againe  
spoiled.

An. reg. 14.  
1080  
Domes daie  
booke, a register  
of the whole  
realme, holme  
many acres of  
land, &c.  
Ingulphus

The role of  
Winton.

Lib. Bermond.

The Boke of Bermondsey, saith this Boke was laid vp in the kings Treasurie (which was in the Church of Winchester, or Westminster) in a place called Domus Dei, or Gods house, and so the name of the boke, therefore called Domus Dei, and since shortly, Domes day.

New Castell  
upon Tine.

The same yere king William sent his sonne Robert into Scotland against Malcolme, but when he was come to Eggesbirch, hauing in no point achieved his enterprise, he returned againe, and builded the new Castell beyond the river of Tine.

William Bp.  
shope of Dur-  
ham.An. reg. 15.  
1081

After that five monethes were past, Once the murdering of Walter Bp. shope of Durham, William Kairliche Abbot of Saint Vincents was by king William chosen to bee Bp. shope of Durham, the 9. of November, and on the thirde of Januarie hee was consecrated at Gloucester, by Thomas Archb. shope of Pojke, the king being present, and all the Bp. shops of the realme, for he was an excellent man in wisdome, learning and vertue, and therefore welbeloued of all men.

Lib. Toubur.  
Turbury Ca.  
still and sphe-  
re builded.

Henry Carle Ferrers founded a priorie within his Castell of Tutbury. The late new Church was founded and builded in Anno 1407. when the Monks were put out, and the Priors allants suppressed.

William Archb. shope of Roane, held a councell at Lisbon, king William being present with manie other Princes and Bp. shops.

Earthquake.

A great earthquake, and roaring out of the earth was heard in the first of April, about the third houre of the night.

Bermondsey in  
Southwarke.  
Lib. Bermond.

Alwine Child a citizen of London, founder of the Monastery of S. Sauour at Bermondsey in Southwarke besides London, in the Countie of Surrey, by licence of king Wil. gaue vnto the Monks de charitate there, diuers rentes in the citie of London. William Rufus after ward gaue them the maner of Bermondsey, and builded them a new Church.

Matene Ma-  
tild deceased.

Matild the Quene, Daughter to Baldwin Carle of Flanders, and wife to king William deceased, king William had manie children by this Matild, whereby shee prouoked him to loue her, certaine it is a little variance was growne betwene them in their latter yeres, for his sonne Robert, whome men said his mother, out of the kings coffers did maintain with a warlike power, but king William himselfe declared that the fauour of matrimontall loue was not diminished by that, whereas she died 4. yeres before him, he did honour her with roiall obsequie and funeralles, and did with teares mourne for her death manie daies after, and from that time forth (it was said) he abstained from all beluptionousnesse: The Quene was buried at Cane in Normandie in the Monasterie of Runnes, which he had founded and dedicated to the holie Trinitie,

Richard the  
kings sonne.

Richard the kings sonne Duke of Beorn died in the new Forrest, and was buried at Winchester with this Epitaph, *Hic iacet Ricardus Filius Willielmi senioris Beornici dux.*

An. reg. 16.  
1082

This Richard king Williams seconde sonne was a goodly ladde, and such a one as of his age did attempt great matters, in whome his noble father had a very good opinion: but a bitter death did soon denour him in his young age,

men

men said that the Dære in the new Forrest, by reason of a cloode of mist of infected airc, got a disease of goyng, and so spoiled him. This new Forrest is a place whither king William the father of Richard, had laid waile, overthrowing towines, villages, and Churches, by the space of 30. miles and more, bringing the same into a chafe for deer, an horrible thing it was to see, that there before men did inhabit and dwell, and where God was honored: now Dære, Goates, and such other kind of wild beasts do wantonly conserue about, & not so much as made to the use of men. Therefore it is declared for certaine, that in the same Forrest, William his son, and his nephew Richard the son of Robert Duke of Normandy, did by the severe iudgement of God find their death, Wil. with an arrow that was shot in his breast, and Richard had his neck broken, or as some say, as he rode through the wood on horse backe, he was hanged vp by the chaps vpon the bough of a tre.

King William in his life time shewed great fauour vnto his mother, who before his father was dead, had married a certain man of mean substance called Herlewinus of Canterulle, by him king William had brethren, one named Robert, whome he made Carle of Boyton, a grosse and dull witted man: The other brother was called Odo, who when he was Duke, he promoted to the Bp. shope of Bayon, and when he was king, he made him Carle of Kent, he being a man of subtil wit, was vnder the king Willcelod of al England, after the death of William firz Osborne, in somuch that hee being wonderfull craftie and subtil in heaping vp of treasure, and one of a maruellous obdinate, being absent from the citizens of Rome, had almost bought the papacy by stuffing the bagges of straungers with letters and money. And (by reason of the opinion, that all men had of him, that he should go to Rome to bee Pope) all matters of controuersie throughout the whole Realme were brought vnto him, which matter the king toke verie euill, and laid him in prison as shall be shewed in places conuenient, saying that he would not appehnd the Bp. shope of Bayon, but that he would appehnd the Carle of Kent, his seruantes being constrained therunto with threats, bewrayed such plenty of golde, that the heape of yellow mettall did excede the opinions of all men: moreover, manie bagges full of grounden gold were dylawne out of Miners, which hee had buried in certaine places.

William Bp. shope of Durham, by licence of the king and the Nobles of the Realme, went to Rome and obtained of Pope Gregorie the seventh, to bring the Monks from Barrow, and Wermouth into the Cathedall Church of Durham; he gaue to them lands, Churches, ornaments &c. all which king William confirmed by his Charter.

A wicked sedition arose betwene the Monks, and Thurstane the Abbot of Claffenburie, which Thurstane king William had taken forth of the Monasterie of Cane in Normandie, and (being a man furnished with no wisdome) made him Abbot of Claffenburie. This man among other his felowes, despising the song called Gregories song, began to counsel the Monks to learne the song of one William of Festamps, and to sing it in the Church, which to doe when they refused, as they that had bene euer bled not onelle

¶

in

New Forrest  
in HampshireHerlewine  
married Odo  
mother to king  
WilliamOdo Bp. shope  
of Bayon.An. reg. 17.  
1083Thurstan.  
Thurstane  
Abbot of Cla-  
ffenburie from  
his Monks.

in this, but in other service of the Church to follow the maner of the Romane Church, suddenly on a day with a company of armed men, (the Monkies not aware thereof) brake into the chapter house, and the Monkies flying through excessive feare into the Church, even to the high Altar, the men of warre pursuing with their darts and arrowes, shot, not sparing to hit the Crosses, Images and thynnes, and ran one Monke through y<sup>e</sup> body with a speare, as he embraced the altar, and so slew him, an other was slaine with an arrow, lying as it were hidden under the altar, the other constrained of necessity, defended themselves with formes and candlesticks of the Church, so that although they were sore wounded, they dawe all the men of armes behinde the quere, and so it fell out, that two being slaine, 14. were hurt of the Monkies, and some of the men of armes, were hurt also, this matter coming to iudgment, because it was found that the Abbot was in all the blame, the king removed him, and set him in his house againe in Normandy, manie of the Monkies were bestowed in Bishops houses, but after the Conquerours decesse, the Abbot got his Abbey againe, at his sonne William Rufus hands, buying it with 500. pound of silver, and waarding through the possessions of the Church, certaine pères together from the Monasterie, ended his life miserably as he well deserved.

An. reg. 18.  
1084  
Of Odo Bp.  
shop of Bayon.

About this time many tempests raging in this world, certain Southsaiers of Rome declared, who should succede unto Hildebrand in the Popedom, they affirmed after the decesse of Gregorie, Odo to bee Pope of Rome. Odo Bishop of Bayon, hearing this, who (with his brother) governed the Normanes and Englishmen, little esteeming the power and riches of the West kingdome, unless by right of the Popedom, he might largely rule all the inhabitants of the earth, he sendeth to Rome, he buyeth a pallace, he seeketh out the Senators, whome with great giftes given he fopneth with him in amitie, and his pallace he adorne with much cost, and superfluous trimmings, he sendeth for Hugh earle of Chester, and a great company of the chiefe knights, and hartely prayeth them to goe with him into Italy: and the prodigall man, unto his prayers addeth great promisses. They, for that the Normanes were light, and desirous to see foraine Countries, straightwaies assented unto the presumptuous Bishopp, to whome the Princeborne of Albion, and Normandie fastidied not, and consented also to forsake their huge Landes, which they possessed in the West Climate, and promised by their faith to accompany the foresaide Bishopp to the River of Doon. Proud king William, when he heard of such great preparation, allowed not thereof, but thought it to be hurtfull to his kingdome, and many others, wherefore he hastily sayled into England, and suddenly unloked for: in the Isle of Wight met with Odo the Bishopp, now desirous with great pompe to saile into Normandie, and there the chiefe of his Realme being gathered together in the kings hall, the king spake in this sort.

Vita W. Con.

King William returned from Normandy to the Isle of Wight.

His Oration to his nobles,

Excellent Pères, hearken my wordes diligently, and I beseech you give unto mee your wholesome counsaile. Before I sailed over the Sea into Normandie I commended the government of England to my brother the Bishop of Bayon.

¶

In Normandie manie have risen up against me, and, as I may say, inward friends, and foraine foes have invaded mee, Robert my sonne, and certaine younglings, whome I have brought up, and to whome I have given armes, rebelling, and my false clientes, and bordering enemies cleaned unto them, but they profited nothing, God whose servant I am, defending me: neither yet obtained they any thing of mine, but yron in their wounds.

They of Angew gathered together against me, whom with feare of preparation to warres I pacified, with these businesses I have bene provoked beyond the Sea, and there I have staid long, and laboriously have given all my endeavour to publike commodities. In the meane time my brother hath greatly oppressed England, and hath spoiled the Churches of their lands, and rents, hath made them naked of the ornaments given by our predecessours, and hath seduced my knights, who ought to defend England against the Danes, Irishmen, and other enemies our trouble some unto me, and condemning me purposed to traine them out beyond the Alpes into foraine kingdomes, an over great dolour grieveth my heart, especiallie for the Churches of God which he hath afflicted.

Christian kings that have reigned before mee, have loved the Church of God, with honour: and gifts of manie kindes, they have enriched it, therfore now (as we beleave) they rest rejoycing with a happy retribution in a pleasant seate. Adelbert, and Edward, Saint Oswald, Althulph, Aelfred, Edward the elder, and Edgar, and my cousin and most deare Lord Edward have given riches unto the holy Church the spouse of God, and my brother to whom I have committed the government of the whole kingdome, violently plucketh away their gods, cruelly oppresseth the poore, with a vaine hope, stealthly awate my knights from me, and hath exasperated the whole Realme, by oppressing it with uniusk taxations. Consider you worthily what is to bee done hereupon, and I beseech you insinuate it unto me.

And when all they fearing to great a personage, doubted to pronounce sentence against him, the valliant king saide, hurtfull rashnesse is alwaies to bee repressed, oftentimes heretofore hee strave against his father, and then likewise stomacked for certaine follies, presently departed awate to the king of France, &c. now the king committed his said brother Odo to prison, where he remained about the space of foure yeres after, to wit, to the death of king William.

Odo Bishopp of Bayon put in prison.

King William taketh of every hide of land throughout England 6. shillings, and then sayled over into the parts beyond the Seas.

An. reg. 19.  
1085

Cnut the king of Denmarke, with a mightie flante by the assistance of his father in lawe Robert Earle of Flanders, was ready to have come into England, whereupon king William hying Souldiours out of all fraunce, manie thousandes of footemen and archers, and taking some forth of Normandie, in the harvest time returned into England, and denoised his Souldiours throughout the Realme, charging the Bishoppes, Abbots, Carles, Barons, Sheriffes, and prepositors to find them meat and drinke, but after, when he understood that his enemies were impeached, and let of their purpose, hee sent

Cnut the king of Denmarke prepareth to invade England.

Bishoppes, Abbots, &c. charged with the keeping of Souldiours.

backe

L. 2.



backe part of his armie, part he kept with him all winter, and in the feast of the Nativite he helde his Court at Gloucester, where unto thre of his Chaplaines bee came thre Bpshoppes, to Maurice the Bpshoppes of London, to William that of Hereforde, and to Robert the Bpshoppes of Chester.

King William caused all England to bee described, to understand what land euerie of his Barons did possesse, how manie knights fees, how many plough landes, howe manie villans, how many beastes, or cattell, yea how much rentie money euerie man possessed within his kingdome, from the greatest to the least, and howe much rent euerie mans possession might yeelde, thus the land was replete with manie mischiefes, that came of this doing.

In the Whitsun weeke king William honoured his sonne Henry at Westminster, where he then held his Court, with the order of knighthood, which order of knighthood, how the same was ministered I read not, but as Iuxta Ingulphus. In time of the Barons before the conquest of the Normans, the English mens custome was, that he that should be consecrated to lawfull warfare, should the evening going before the date of his consecration, to some Bpshoppes, Abbot, Bpshope, or Priest, contrite and compunct, make confession of his finnes, and absolved, should continue all night in the Church, and give him selfe to prayers, deuotions, and affliations: And on the morrowe bearing the devline service, should haue a sword put about his necke, and communicating at the same service the holie mysteries of Christ, should thenceforth continue a lawfull knight, which custome of consecrating a knight the Normans despised.

Shortly after king William commanded that Archbishops, Bpshops, Abbots, Carles, Barons, Viscounts, with their power of men of armes should meete him on the first daie of September, at Salisbury, whither when they were come, hee caused the men of armes to sweare to him fealtie against all men.

The same yere Clito Edgar with licence obtained of the king passed the sea with 200. men of armes, and went into Apulia, whose sister Christine entred into the Monasterie of Rumsey and was made a Nunne.

When the Normans had accomplished the will and pleasure of their Lord upon the Englishmen, & that there was scantily any noble man left of the English nation to beare any rule over them, but was come to passe it was a reproch to be called an Englishman: There sprang up twelke tolls, a custome, & the more people spake of equitie, the more wrong was done. Those that were appointed Justices were the authors of all vnrightheousnesse, who so ever did take a Bribe, or a Coate had his eyes put out, and no man durst speake against it, for the cruel king loved wilde beastes, as though he had bene father of them, and by twelke counsell hee brought to passe, that where men were wont to be habite in towne and villages, and where God was wont to be honoured, that all kinde of wilde beastes did sport themselves, so that men saie for certain, that for the space of more then xxx. miles, god profitable coyn ground was

turning

turned into a chase for wilde beastes: this was called the new Forest in Hampshire, wherein be 9. walks, 9. keepers, 2. rangers, a bow bearer, and the Earle of Armeale is lord Warden by inheritance. In building of Castles this king excelled all his predecessours. Normandy came to him by inheritance, & Normania he got by force of armes, he made Armoica or Britain obedient unto him, in England he reigned alone. Scotland and Wales he subdued, he laied peace so well, that a yong twelke might without daunger carrie a burden of golde through all places of England safe.

King William having giuen unto Remigius a Bpshope of Hereford, the Bpshoppes of Dorchester, he nowe misliking that the Bpshoppes seat shod in a small Citie, whereas in the same diocesse was the citie of Lincoln, which seemed to be more mete for his seate, he bought lordshippes in the top of the hill, and builded there a Church, and notwithstanding that the Archbishop of Poike affirmed that place and Citie to bee part of his Diocesse, Remigius not regarding his wordes proceeded and finished the work which he had begun, and when he had finished the same, he adorned it with Clarkes that were appoynted both in learning and manners: he was but small of stature, but stout of hart, brown of barke of colour, but cleare and excellent in wordes: hee was once accused of treason to the king, but a certain servant of his, by iudgment of the fiery sword, purged him, and returned him to the kings favour.

There was a great water flood through abundance of raine, so that bluer hills being softened fell, and overwhelmed manie villages. About the same time king Wil. had builded the Abbey of Battail in Souther, on the place where he overcame Harold, in which place he set Bpshopes, and dedicated the Church to the holie Trinitie, and to Saint Martin. He also founded Selby Abbey in Yorkeshire, and the Priorie of Saint Nicholas at Worcester, and the Abbey of Saint Stephen in the Citie of Canne in Normandy, where he was buried, hee gave priuiledges to Saint Martins le Grand in London (which Church was founded before the conquest, by Ingelricus and Edwardus his Brother, cousins to king Edward the Confessor) hee also gave to that Colledge all the lande and more, without the Posterne called Creeples gate of London, on either part of the Posterne, that is to saie, from the North corner of the Wall, as the sluers of the wellies there remanuing depart the same spoye from the wall, to the running water which entrench the Citie (to wit, through the wall, and so through the Citie, though under ground, to the sluier of Hamis, and is called Walbrooke, of coming through and from the wall.) The description of king Williams seale, with the names of the testis, (among the which is Ric. Gilbert pince, Wilk. Weller pince, Arfatus the kings Chancellor, &c.) 3. omitted for brevity.

This yere was a great death of cattell, and a fore disemperature of the aier, whereupon a great mortalitie of men happened, so that manie dyed first of the fevers, and after of famine.

In the meane time a deuouring fire spread abroad over almost all the principall Cities of England, the Church of Saint Pauls in London was burnt, with the more part of the Citie, which fire beganne at the entrie of the Colledge

gate,

gate,

Chire of the  
kings Chap.  
laines made  
Bpshoppes.

An. 1086.

King William  
made Henry  
his son knight  
The order of  
knighthood  
among the  
Barons.

R. Windsor.

John Leyland.  
Roger of Wind.

Therues to pun-  
ished, but all  
people might  
passe safe.

Bpshoppes of  
Dorchester re-  
mooued to Lin-  
colne.

Judgement by  
the fiery sword.

Water flouder.  
Battail Ab-  
bey, and other  
builded.

Colledge of S.  
Martin le grand.

Creeples gate  
of London.

The river of  
the wellies came  
down from and  
by Clarks well,  
and so by Old-  
borne to the  
Thames.

Calbrook, of  
coming  
through and  
from the wall  
of the Citie.  
Famine and  
death of men.  
Marinas.

London and St.  
Pauls Church  
burnt.



Vita takenwald.  
A new found-  
ation of  
Pauls church.

Stofford Ca-  
stle in Brit.

gate, and consumed to the East gate. Maurice then Bishop of London, after-  
ward began the foundation of the new Church of S. Paul, a worke that men  
of that time judged would neuer have bene finished, it was to them so won-  
derfull, king William gaue toward the building of the East end of this church,  
the choise stones of his Castle, standing nere to the bank of the river of Tha-  
mis, at the West ende of the Citie; he also gaue to God and Saint Paul, and to  
Maurice the Bishop and his successors the Castle of Stofford with all the ap-  
purtinances, namely the lande which Will. Diacon, and Radulph his brother,  
held of him, that they maie possesse it for euer.

After Maurice, Richard his successor did also wonderfully increase the same  
Church, purchasing of his owne cost the large Brates about it, where were  
wont to dwell manie lay people, which ground hee began to compasse about  
with a strong wall of stone and gates.

King Henry the first gaue to the saide Richard Bishop of London so much  
of the mote or wall of the Castle on the Thamis side, to the South, as should  
bee needfull to make the saide wall of the Church, and so much as should suf-  
fice to make a way without the wall on the North side, &c. It should seme  
that this Richard inclosed but two sides of the saide Church, or Cemetery of  
Saint Paul, to wit, the South and the North sides, for king Edward the second  
graunted that the Churchyard should be inclosed with a wall, for the murders,  
and robberies that were committed there. And when the Citizens of London  
claimed the East part of the Churchyard to be the place of their assembly to the  
folkemote, and that the great steeple at that time there situate, was to that use,  
that all the inhabitants of the City might heare. They claimed also the West  
side, that they might assemble themselves together with the Lorde of Wap-  
nards Castle, for viewe of their Armour in defence of the Citie. This  
matter was in the Towre of London referred to Heruins de Stanton and his  
fellowe Justices Itenerantes, but I finde not the iudgement of that contro-  
uersie, wherefore it is like the Church prevailed, for the wall euen to this  
time continueth, although now on both sides hidden with dwelling hou-  
ses.

Am. reg. 20.

1087

Stevens  
bones found  
of great length.

This pere in a prouince of Wales called Rose, was found the Sepulchre  
of Wavyn or Gawen, upon the sea shore, hee was sisters sonne to Arthur the  
great king of the Brytains, being as is affirmed by many of the length of xiiii.  
foote, he reigned in the partes of Brytaine, with to this day (saied Windover)  
is called Walwyth, a most famous man in war, and in all manner of ciuilitie,  
as in the actes of the Brytains is declared.

The Bishop Sigand of Gloucester, Scotland Abbot of S. Augustines at Can-  
terburie, Alfus Abbot of Bath, and Thurstan Abbot of Divesor, deceased.

This pere king William remaining in Normandy, being at variance with  
Philip king of France, continued there a long while, whose patience the saide  
Philip did (as men said) abuse, with these or like words.

The king of England lieth at Roane, and keepeth his chamber as women  
doe when they be deliuered of childre, and nourisheth his fatte belly, with which  
saith king William being offended, saide, when after my childbirth I goe to  
Church,

Church, I will offer a thousand candles to him, swearing by Gods resurrec-  
tion and his brightnes, &c.

About the latter end of August, king William in a great displeasure entered  
France, where hee wasted and spoiled all as he passed.

Last of all hee stered the city of Speure, & burnt it with our Lady Church, and  
two Anchors that were inclosed there, who perswaded themselves they ought  
not to forsake their house and came in such extremitie, whereat the king rejoy-  
cing, charged his men to feed the fire, and came himselfe so nere, that with the  
beate of his harness he got a disease, and to the increase of his sickness, (it was  
said) his horse leaping over a ditch, did burst the inner part of his bellie, with  
the paine whereof he was soe afflicted, and returned to Roane, where shortly  
after he ended his life.

This wise noble man feeling himselfe grievouslie diseased, deferred not to  
do good unto himselfe in time to come, & also to many others, wherefore he com-  
manded all his treasure to be distributed vnto Churches, poore folkes, and  
ministers of God, and politicklie assigned howe much hee would give vnto  
euery one, and commanded the same to be written out by notaries before  
him.

Amongst the which giftes I finde that hee gaue to the Church of Saint Ste-  
phen in Cane, and the spouns there, two manors in Dorsetshire with their  
appendantes, one Manor in Devonshire, one other in Essex, manie hides of  
land in Warkeshire, some in Norfolk, and a mansion house in Woodstrate  
of London, with manie annotations of Churches, but speciallie to be noted, he  
gaue his Crowne and ornaments to the same belonging, to the saide Church,  
which hee before had founded, for the redeming of the which Crowne and  
kingly ornaments, king Henry the first, sonne to the saide Conquerour, gaue to  
the saide Church of Saint Stephen, the manor of Wyldeton in Dorsetshire.  
King William also sent great summes vnto the Cleargie of Speure, that there-  
by the Churches which hee had burned, might be repaired,

Of keeping faith and iustice, of holding the lawes of God, and peace, of  
obseruing the priuiledges of the Churches and Statutes of the fathers, hee  
admonished all those that were present, and his sayings worthy to be re-  
membered, mixed sometime with teares; hee eloquentlie bitered in this  
sort.

Being laden with many and grievous sinnes (O Christ) I tremble, and be-  
ing ready to be taken by and by vnto the terrible examination of God, I am  
ignorant what I should do, for I haue bene brought by in the feates of armes,  
euen from my childhod, I am greatlie polluted with effusion of much blood.  
I can by no meanes number the evils which I haue done, this 64. yeres,  
wherein I haue liued in this trouble some life, for the which I am now constrain-  
ed without faile to render an account to the iust iudge.

When as my father (of his owne free will going into banishment) commit-  
ted vnto me the Dukedome of Normandy, I was but a tender boie, that is to  
wit, of eight yeres olde, from which time, euen vntill this present I haue al-  
wayes sustained the weight of armour, and haue gouerned the same Duke-  
dome

king William  
after  
king William  
walked France.

King William  
felt close to the  
death.

Gift of king  
William to the  
Abbey of Cane  
in Normandy.

Liber vite Will.  
Conquerour.

Widowes of  
William the  
Conquerour  
before his death

king William  
64. yeres old.

Confession of  
W. William

done almost 56. piers, in great danger of enemies. Those whom I have governed, have often laide snares for mee, and wickedly have brought unto me damages and great injuries.

Turcell my nourisher, and Osborne Herfastus sonne, the Wapster or Selver of Normandy, and Earle Gilbert the father of the Countrey with many other necessary for the common wealthe, they have fraudulently slaine, with the things therefore I have tried the faith of my Countrey: oftentimes in the night for feare of my kinsfolke, I have bene secretly caried by my uncle Gualter out of the principall chamber, and brought unto little houses and lurking corners of pover men, lest by those traytors that sought my death I should be found: The Normans if by a good and hard government they bee ruled, they are most valiant, and in doubtfull thinges invincible, they excell all men, and for their strength, they contend to overcome all their enemies. Wherefore they feare in pieces and consume one another, for they couer rebellions, they desire rebellions, & are ready to al mischief, let them therefore be constrained with a strong censure of government, and with the yoke of discipline compelled to walke by the path of iustice, for if at their pleasure, without a poke they be permitted to go, like a wilde untamed Asse, they and their prince shall be overwhelmed with penurie and reprochfull confusion. And this I have lately learned by many trials, my neighbours and kinsmen that ought by all means to defend me against all mayfall men, with often conspiring have risen by against me.

Guy Harold the duke of Burgundy his son by my aunt Adaliza rendred me euill for good, for I receiued him courteously comming out of a strange countrey, and honoured him as a brother, and gaue unto him Aernoun and Bironand, not a little part of Normandy, he hath derogated much from me both in his wordes and aces, detesting and declaring me to bee a bassard, to degenerate and to be unworthy the government, and as an enemy hath defamed mee, what neede I say more, he hath falsified his faith unto mee, he hath rebelled against me, and my Beeres, Ranulph of Bayon, and Haimo Teothed, and Nigel of Constantine, and many other more he hath withprowen from me, and hath constrained them by his wicked persuasions to be perjured persons with him, vntill of late therefore of his homage and fidelitie which he ought unto me, he went about to take all Normandy from me.

Thus therefore being yet without a beard I was constrained to take by armes against him, and in the plaine at Malebune to fight against my kinsman and owne seruant.

When God assisting me, betwene Cane and Argiers I overcame my enemies, who by Gods appointment being overthrowen, I freely possessed my fathers right.

That done I besieged a cast of Bayon, and therein included Guy fore wounded, and fled from the battell, nor I suffered him to depart with them until I had compelled him as a common enemy out of Normandy, and obtained all his strong holds. Not long after this an other grievous aduersitie came unto me, for my uncles Malgerius Archbishoppe of Roane, and William his brother, to whom

The Normans  
bassard if they  
be well gover-  
ned, otherwile  
readie to all  
mischief.

whome I had freely given Arches and the Carleborne of Calegi, condemned me as a bassard, and called Henry the king, and Engelram Earle of Pontine against me. Presently after I had heard of such rumors in Constance I entred into the Seyne, many rumors dissuading me, and sent before me to Arches a fewe souldiers which were more seruenter to fight, and I followed after not with a great army, & besieged the strong fort, but before I could come unto the Countreies betwene the two Rivers, Sevan and Serene, my souldiers had pericuted Earle Engelram passing to enter the Castle, and had slaine him, manfully fighting, (for he was a most shapely souldier) and had put to flight all his companies.

These of the Castle I besieged with an harde besieging, and forced the perjured Earle to exile, neither yet permitted I him in all his life to returne to that which hee had lost. And also the forward poylate that was neither deuout to God, nor trustie unto mee, I deposed by decree of the Pope from his Bishoppes seate, and placed for him Maurice the venerable Monk, whome God gaue unto me from the city of Florence in Italie. Henry delighted with his kingly power, & hot with warlike boldnesse, and greatly piched forwards with the derogations of mine enemies oftentimes hath endeuoured to treade me under as one vnarmed, and by many meanes to feare me, and to appoint unto me vnlawfull faces. Often with a huge armie he hath entred my land, but hee neuer relouped of the praise of my spoiles, hee often entred my lands, but hee neuer merrie, nor without shame returned home to his owne, many strong men he brought hither with him, whome for that by my sword and my souldiers (two words the grieve,) they were slaine, hee neuer caried back againe. Heretofore king Henry ouermuch inflamed against mee, deuised his huge host into two partes of France, that he might oppresse our landes with a double burking in with violence, for hee himselfe brought an armie of eight hundred footmen into Chyolene Diocesse, that they might destroy all euens unto the River of Some, and the other companie hee committed to Odo his brother, and to Raynold of Clarimount, and to two Constables Raffe of Montdesice, and Widon of Pontine, that by the shallow places, they shoulde come enter into Normandy, and invade Drani Calcegi, and the whole Towne of Roane, and shoulde utterly destroy with sword, fire, and robbing, euery to the Sea.

This therefore I understanding, on the other side, I went so; wardes, not fleghtly, against the kinges tentes, and reposed my selfe and my souldiers by the shore of Some, and wheresoeuer hee endeuoured to destroy my lande with weapons and sword, I prepared a reproch, but Robert Earle of Ankeuse, and Roger Mortimer, with other most tried souldiers I sent against Odo, and his legions, who when almost at Calcas, which is called the dead Sea, they met with the Frenchmen, the companies on both partes being, provided, a terrible battell was fought, and on both partes great effusion of blood, for euery where there were most valiant fighters, and euery unto death ignorant to die, here were the Frenchmen for desire of gaining, there strike the Normans with a seruant hope of escaping, and defending them-  
selves.

retues and their dwelling houses, at the last God helpeth, the Normans vanquished, and the French men scode away. And this battaile they had beyond Some in Winter, before Lent, the eight yers after the battaile at Valdesdorne.

Then Wido Earle of Pontine was taken, and Odo with Raynold and others that were lustie in quicknesse of soote were byuen away. Raulphe also the Earle had likewile bene taken unless Roger the Prince of my warre had supported him, for lately he had done homage unto him.

Therefore in such necessitie he requited him with a faire competent service, when he protected him thre daies in his Castle, and after permitted him to go safe home to his owne, for this offence I cast Roger out of Normandie, but a little after, being reconciled unto him, I restored him the rest of his honours, yet the Castle of Mortimere, wherein he kept mine enemy, by right, as I suppose, I toke from him, but I gave it to William de Warren his kinseman and lawfull ballall.

Wido Earle of Bayon I held in prison so long as it pleased me, and after two yeres I received againe homage of him, with such honour, that from thenceforth hee should alwaies be faithfull unto mee, and should everie yere give unto me Shouldiers service, wherefore I commanded with an hundred Shouldours.

This done I gave him great rewardes, and so honoured, sent him away in peace. After this fight ended, by and by as I certainly had tried the rumours, I sent by Raulph of Oren those things that had chanced on the farther side of Some unto the king of France, which thing hee hearing, straightwaies rose up, and with his hoile speedely fledde, and neuer after did lie one night in my land, and thus even from my childehood with innumerable pressaures on everie side I have bene letted, but by the grace of God, I have bene honourably delivered from them all.

Therefore I was made hateful to all my neighbors, but God assisting me in whom alwaies I put my trust, I was overcome of none.

This oftentimes have the Byptaines, and them of Angewo, and Cenomania grievously tried.

Godfrey Martell Earle of Anioy, and Conan Prince of the Byptaines, and Robert Frise Prince of Puterell, have laide waite to entrap me by many subtil inventions, but God keeping mee, they were never satisfied of their desire.

A Royall Diademe that never any of my predecessors did beare, I have gotten, which only heavenly grace, not right of inheritance hath given to me. What labours, and perillous conflicts I have sustained beyond the Seas against those of Excester, Chester, and the Northumbers, the Scottes, the Gaules, Postwegians, and Danes, and against other adversaries that endeavored to spoile me of the Realme of England it were hard to declare, in all which the lot of victorie hath come unto mee: And although manly greedynesse upon such triumphes relopeth, yet inwardly a careful feare picheth and byteth mee, when I consider that in all those, cruel rashnesse hath reigned.

Where

king William held not England by right of inheritance.

Wherefore I humbly beseech you, O Prelates, and Ministers of Christ, that you will commend me to the almighty God, with your praies, that hee will forgive me my sins, wherewith I am greatly pressed, and by his unspcakable mercy, will make me safe amongst his.

My treasures I commit to be given to the poore and to Churches, that those things that have bene heaped up by wicked doers, may be disposed to holy uses of the Saints, for you do remember howe sweetely I have loved you, and how strongly against all emulations defended you.

The Church of God, that is do wit, our mother, I never violated, but in every place where reason required did willingly honour, I have not sold Ecclesiasticall dignities, simonie alwaies detesting I have reieted in election of Pastors, I ever searched out the merite of life, and his learning of wisdom, and so nere as I could committed the government of the Church to the most worthy.

And this may be faithfully proved in Lanfranke Archbishoppe of Cantuarie, this in Anselme Abbot of Becco, this in Gerebert of Pontanel, and in Durand Trearne, and in manie other Doctors of my kingdome, whose famous praises (as I suppose) sounding in the bittermost corners of the earth may be tried.

Such fellows I chose to talke with, in the fellowship of these I found trust and wisdom, and therefore relopeng I wished ever to enjoy their counsells. Nine Abbeies of Monkes, and one of Nunnes, which by my fathers were founded in Normandy, I helping by the assistance of God have increased, and with augmentations of many things, which I have given them they are gloriously magnified.

Moreover, in the time of my government, severant Monasteries of Monkes, and fire of holy Nunnes are builded, where great service unto God, and much almes to the poore is daily bestowed for the lone of the chiefe king. With such camps Normandy is fenced, and in these fortres let the poyntings come to fight against the devill, and vices of the flesh. Of these truly either I by Gods inspiration have bene builder and founder, or els a fervent helper, and well willing interder.

All things also which my Noble men in lands or rentes, have given to God and his Saintes for their spirituall healt in Normandie and England I have courteously granted, and the Charters of the giftes, I have frely confirmed with princely authoritie against all emulations and troubles.

These studies I have followed from my first yeres, these I have used my helmes to be kept in all times. In this, my childe, follow me continually, that here and for ever before God and men, you may be honoured.

This chieflly, O you (my deare bowels) I warne you that you continually cleane unto the companie of god and wise men, and be obedient to the government in all things if you will long gloriously prosper. It is the doctrine of godly wisdom, to discern god from evill, to kepe justice at all times, and with all force to thune wickednesse, to save and helpe the like and poore, to suppress and vanquish the proud and unwill, and to bidde them from troubling

king William commended Lanfranke, Anselme, and other Doctors his counsellors.

king William his counsellors to his childe.

bling of the simple, to frequent devoutly the holy Church, and about all things to love the worshipping of the divinity, and to be obedient without any weariness day or night, in adversity and prosperitie unto the law of God.

The Dukedome of Normandie before I fought against Harold in the vale of Senlac, I granted unto my sonne Robert, for that he is my first begotten, and hath now receiued homage almost of all the Barons of this countrey: the honoꝝ granted cannot be taken away againe, but without doubt I know that truly it will be a miserable region that shall be subiect to his dominion or government: for he is a proud and wilful knave, and to be long punished with cruell fortune.

I doe constitute none heire of the realme of England, but commend it unto the everlasting creator; whose I am, and in whose hands be all things, for I possessed not such an honoꝝ by right of inheritance, but by the instinct of God, and with much effusion of mans blood I took it, and the perjured Harold being false, or his fauourers taken away, I made it subiect to my dominion.

The naturall sonnes of the Realme I hate more then right required, the Noble men and bulgare sort I cruelly vexed, manie husbandes I disherited, innumerable, especiallie in the Towne of Poike, with hunger and sword, I brought to death, for the which the Countrey men beyonde Humber take in against mee the armie of the King of Sweueland, and slew Robert of Cumin, with a thousand squidous within Puresme, and other of my Nobles and most approued young Schoollers in diuers places. Wherefore moued with an immoderate rage, like a wood lyon, I hastied vnto the Northerne English men, their houses, their come, and all their possession and household stuffe I commaunded to be burned, and great droues of beastes, and flockes of sheepe enerie where to be killed: therefore I punished with the sword of such horrible hunger the multitude of both sex, and so manie thousandes both of young and olde of the most beautifull Countrey (Whose woorth the griefe) I cruelly killed. The officers therefore of this Realme, that with so manie sinnes I haue obtained, I dare not giue to anie but to God, lest after my death, they be made yet worse by my occasion. William my sonne, who alwaies from his first yeres hath sticked vnto me, and according to his power hath willingly obied me in all things, I wish in the Spirit of God long to liue in health, and if it be Gods will, happily to flourish in the throne of the Kingdome. These and manie such like wordes William spake, and an amazednelle inuaded the standers by, that possibikely measured things to come.

After that Henry the younger sonne heard nothing to be giuen vnto him of the kingly treasure, lamenting with teares, he saide vnto the king: And what (father) doe you giue vnto me? To whome the king saide, Five thousand poundes of silver out of my treasure I giue vnto thee. To this Henrie saide, What shall I doe with that treasure, if I shall not haue a dwelling place of habitation: Whereunto his father answered, Be of a patient minde my sonne, and comfort thy selfe in God, quietlie suffer that thy elder brother goe before thee. Robert shall haue Normandie, and William England, thou in thy time shalt haue all the honour that I haue gotten, and shalt exell thy brethren in riches and power. These wordes thus spoken, the king fearing

King William  
of his sonne  
Robert.

England not  
king William  
by inheritance  
but by conquest

King William  
commendeth  
his sonne  
William.

King William  
gives gift to his  
sonne Henry.

Words of King  
William to his  
sonne Henry.

lest in such a wide Realme sodaine trouble should arise, wrote a Letter vnto Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, and being signed with his owne seale, gaue it vnto William Rufus his sonne, commanding him presently to saile ouer the Sea into England, and that done, he kissed and blessed him, and speedilie directed him to take the Crowne, who in short time came to the porte called Whitstane, and there he heard his father to be dead. Henry also hastied diligently to receiue the nominated summe of money, and to call necessary fellows, in whom he might trust.

In the meane time, the Physicians, and the kings seruantes that kept the languishing Prince and the Nobles that came to visite him, beganne to speake vnto him for the prisoners that hee kept in halde, and humble besought him to haue compassion vpon them, and to release them. To whome hee saide, Morcare the noble English Carle I haue long kept in prison, and that traitorlie, but it was for feare, lest by him, if he were at libertie, the Realme of England should be troubled. Roger also of Wyke, for that he vertis subduerely raged against me, and prouoked Ralph of Guaderbis others sonne and manie others against me, I haue straitly kept in prison, and knowe, that in my life he should not come forth. So many I cast in prison deserting it, though their owne peruersitie, and sundrie others mo, for feare of sedition to come; for this is the rule of rightconnesse, as the diuine Law by apostles giuen vnto the gouernours of the world requireth, that the wicked be oppressed, lest they destroy the innocent. But now being at the point of death, as I desire to be forgiven, and absolved by Gods mercie from my sinnes, so I presently command all prison doores to be opened, and all prisoners except my brother, the Bishop of Bapon, to be released, and for the loue of God to be frelie dismissed, that hee may haue mercie on me. Notwithstanding, I haue decreed that they depart out of prison with this condition, that first for more security they giue their othe to the officers of the common wealth, that they will by all meanes keepe peace in England and Normandie, and according to their power manfully resist all aduersaries of the same.

And when Robert Carle of Poitou heard his brother to be commaunded by the kings sentence to perpetuall prison, he greatly sorrowed; for Herkenwinus of Canteruill take vnto hisse Herlewine duke Roberts concubine, of whom he begate two sonnes, Odo and Robert. And Duke William, who after wards was king, enriched his father in law with manie great honours in Normandie and England, and set vp with great possessions his sonnes, Ranulph whom he had gotten of another wife, and Odo and Robert, his brothers by the mother: for after that hee had for small offences expelled out of Normandie William surnamed Werclenge Carle of Poitou, sonne vnto Carle Magens, hee gaue the Carledome of Poitou vnto his brother Robert Herkenwinus sonne.

Hugh also Bishoppe of Bapon sonne of Rike Chadele; being dead, he granted the foresaid Prelates dignity to his brother Odo, whom afterwards in England he made ruler of the Carledome of Kent. To conclude him, for his excelluence (as before is plainly related) king William took in the

King William  
and sonnes  
left him and  
sought to helpe  
themselves in  
the warres.

All prisoners  
to be released  
except his  
brother Odo.

Herkenwinus  
Roberts con-  
cubine.

He of all right, and kept foure yeres in prison, neyther yet at his death for his insolencie, woulde release him. Wherefore the foresaide Earle of Morton greatly sorrowed, and for his brother both by himselfe, and by his friends humble intreated, and with prayers wearied the languishing king. And when manie had earnestly desired him for the Bishop of Bayon, the king wearied with the requestes of so many, said: I marvel that ydientlie you thinke not, whom, or what a man he is, for whom you intreate: do you not aske for such a man, as I tellie hath bene in appearance, a contemner of religion, and a crafty stirrer of sedition: haue not I corrected him now the foure yeres? A Byschoppe, who ought to haue bene a most iust gouernour of the Englishmen, and was in dede the worst oppressor of the people, a sponge, and a destroyer of Abbeyes. In deliuering a scottish person, you doe euill, and desire a great hurte vnto your selfe, it is plainly seene, that my brother Odo is light, and ambitious, following the desires of the flesh, and vnnaturall cruelties, and he will neuer bee brought from balowzie, and hurtfull vanities. And this I haue in manie thinges seene, therefore I haue imprisoned, not a Byschoppe, but a tyrant, and without doubt the destruction of manie thousandes. These thinges I speake, not of hate as an enemie, but as a father of the Countrey, I prouide for the Christian people, for if hee behaue himselfe chastlie and modestlie as of very right becommeth a Priest and Minister of God, a greater lole woulde bee at my heart then I can declare. Currie one psonding the amende ment of the Byschop. The king said againe, Will I, will I, your petition must be graunted, for that I being dead, sodainelie a vehement mutation shall bee of all thinges. Against my will I graunt, that my Brother bee deliuered out of prison: but knowe you, that by him death, or a great impediment shall bee brought to mante. From Baldricke also the sonne of Nicholas, for that he sought to leste my seruice, and without my licence went into Spayne, I toke all his landes for a punishment; but now, for the loue of God, I restore them to him againe. A better young Souldiour in armes then hee is, I suppose is not to be founde, but hee is prodigall and light, and wandereth to vniuers places.

Thus King William, although græued with ouermuch paines of the inward partes of his bodie, yet effectually enioied his wit and liuelie speech, and vnto all demanders gaue prompt and profitable counsell of matters of the realme.

To conclude, the Ides of September on a Thursdaie, the Sunne nowe clearly spreading his beames throughout the round world, the king raised vp, beate the sounde of the great bell in the Metropolitane Church, and asking wherefore it sounded, his seruantes answered, Sir, it ringeth now to pyrie of our blessed Laste. When the king with great deuotion lift vp his eyes vnto heauen, and holding abroad his handes, sayde: I commend my selfe to our blessed Lady Mary mother of God, that she by her holie prayers make reconcillie vnto her most deare sonne our Lord Iesus Christ. And the seke words spoken, hee presentlie perished by the ghost, on the ninth day of September, when he had reigned thwentie yeres, eight monethes, and sixtene daies, at the age of

The bodie  
buried of king  
William.

thyscore and foure yeres. The chiefe Byschops, and others that were present with them that had kept the king all the night without groaning or calling, now seeing him vpon a sodaine to haue presentlie departed, were greatly astonished, and made almost madde. Furthermore, the richer sort of the straght, taking their horses, departed auaile, and hasted home to defend their owne. The inferior sort, or clientles also, seeing their Master in such sort to haue departed, snatched a waile the armour, vessel, apparell, limmen, and all the kinges household stuffe, leauing the kinges dead bodie almost bare in the stoie of his house, fledde auaile. Beholde, I praise you, that wondrous shew is, euerie one as a fild snatched that hee coude of his stuffe, and presentlie fledde auaile with their praye. Impletie therefore, Iustice falling downe impudentlie commeth forth, and exerciseth rauenous pillage vpon the reuenger of rauenous pillers.

The same of the kinges death shewe abroad, with swift wings, and wyde and broad brought sole or seare to the hartes of the bracers. For the death of king William the berie selfe same daie that hee died at Roane, was vnto his kined in Rome, and Calabria also thewed, as after wards by them in Formandie it was truelie related. Cruelie the euill spirite greatlie reioiced, when hee sawe the seruants that vehemently gaped to snatch and take away all by death of the Iudge to be free. A wondrous pompe! how contemptible art thou, because thou art euer vaine and slippery? Rightly thou maist be compared to a bubble in the water, that in a moment so prouidelic testeth by thy selfe, and so vaine lie thou shalt be brought into nothing. Behold the mightie prince vpon whome aboute a hundred thousande Souldiours willinglie waited, and whome manie Countreies with trembling feared, now is in his owne house by his owne seruantes shamefully spoiled, and from the pyrie, vnto the third house left vpon the bare ground. For the citizens of Roane hearing of the death of the prince were greatlie feared, and almost all like drunken men, were so troubled, as if they had seene a multitude of enemies to be nere vnto the Citie, euerie one departed from the place where hee was, and asked counsaile of his wife, or his companions that hee mette, what were best to doe. Currie one either carped or creepe to carrie their goods from one place to another, and with feare hid them, least they shoulde bee founde. At the last, the religious men, Priests, and sponkes, gathering their powers and senses together, ordained a procession, and decentlie went forwarde vnto Saint Gerasius Church: and according vnto the custome of holy Christians commended the soule of the king to God.

Then William the Archbishop commanded that his bodie shoulde bee carried to Cane, and there in the Church of Saint Stephen the first Martyr, whiche hee had builded shoulde bee buried. But his brethren and kinsmen were nowe gone from him, and all his seruants had wickedly left him as a barbarous person, wherefore there was not one of the kinges knights to be found that woulde take care for the requies of his bodie.

Then Harlino a certaine countrey knight, being pricked with his stonish god nature, manfullie, for the loue of God, and honour of his countrey, toke vpon

The amercement  
of the breibolders  
of the kinges  
death, and the  
king.

The kinges dead  
body spoiled  
and for taken.

Same of the  
kinges death so  
dauidly spread.

A sample of  
wondrous pompe.

King William  
and his bodie  
buried: for  
then of all his  
professors friends  
and followers.

A certain  
poore knight  
prepared for  
the kinges bur-  
iall.

King William  
and his army  
were taken  
to Cane,  
where the same  
was honorably  
received.

The Tomb of  
Cane fired by  
Calistat.

upon him carefullie to see the kinges funerall solemnized. Therefore the dyers  
with ointmentes, and carriers of the dead bodie, and a Waggon bee byzed  
at his owne proper costes, they carried the dead bodie of the king to the haven  
of Hone, and putting it in a Shippe, by Sea and Oze lande, brought it unto  
Cane. When the Lord Gullebert Abbot, with the count of Spokes re-  
verentlie came forth to mete the corpes: to whome, weeping, and praying, clea-  
red the whole multitude of the Clergy and laity: but presentlie perurie for-  
tuire powred out upon al together a great terrour, for straightwaies a terrible  
fire burst out of a certaine house, and cast by huge flames, and hurtfullie in-  
creased a great part of the towne of Cane. All the Clerkes therefore, with the  
laie people run to reppelle the fire, only the Spokes ended the office begun, and  
singing, brought the kinges bodie to the Abbey Church.

To conclude, to bury this great duke and father of the country were gathe-  
red together all the bishops and abbots of Normandy, of the which was William  
Archbishop of Roane, and manie other Bishops and Abbots which were long  
to name.

All they came together at the solempne funerall of the famous King, and  
buried him in the Presbyterie betwene the quire and the Altar. The masse  
ended, when the Coffin was now set in the earth, but the bodie yet remained  
on the Water: The great Gullebert Bpshope of Eboisen, went by into the  
pulpet, and eloquentlie pronounced a long Sermon of the magnificence of the  
dead king that he valliantly had enlarged the boundes of Normandy, and had ex-  
tended his Countrey more then all his predecessors, peace and justice he kept  
throughout all his dominions. Thieves and robbers hee manifoldly chastised,  
with the rule of righteousnesse, and the secular Justice, Spokes, and unar-  
med people hee strongly fenced with the sword of vertue. The Sermon  
ended, and for pittie manie weeping and protesting his words to be true, he re-  
quired the people with this addition, for that no man mortall can live  
in this life without sinne, in the loue of GOD wee praye you all for the dead  
sajner, that you will make intercession for him unto Almighty God, and if  
he have offended anie you, charitable to forgive him.

When Anselme fitz Arthur rising from the companie, with an high voyce  
bittered such a plaint. This ground whereon you stande, was the dore of my  
fathers house, the which that man for, whome you doe make intercession,  
when as yet he was Duke of Normandy, violentlie took from my father, and  
all right denied, mightilie founded this house. This ground therefore I chal-  
lenge, and openlie reclaime, and in Gods behalfe I forbid that the bodie of the  
taker awaie by violence be covered in my earch, neither yet shall he be bur-  
ied in my inheritance.

After that the Bishops and other noble men heard this, and understood by his  
stridenes, who testified him to have false true, they sent for the man, and all vio-  
lence set aside, mollified him with gentle speeches, and made peace with him:  
for, for the place of his buriall, they presentlie gave him threescore hillings, and  
for the rest of the ground which hee claimed, they promised him an equivalent  
price, and so in a small time, for the salvation of their speciall friends whom  
they

Buriall for-  
biden to the dead  
king.

Place of buriall  
for the king  
purchased.

they plowed, they made an agrément, and (by the consent of Henry his sonne)  
100. pound of silver was given. Further, when the bodie should bee put in  
the tombe or coffin, and was violently pressed, that the same, through the fol-  
lie of the rough masons, was throte, and straight, his fat belly (not botwelled)  
cracked, and an intolerable stinke filled the standers about, and the rest of  
the commonaltie, so that the smooke of frankincense, and other gummes or  
spices, copiously ascending from the censers prevailed not to exclude the  
woyle smell: therefore the Dyestres halloed to finish the buriall, and presentlie  
with feare to get them to their cellas. And thus haue I truly shewed the fall  
of the Duke, and not a balne Comedie, to make men laugh: which also suffi-  
ceth to proue, that the bodie of King William coulde not bee found incorrupte  
more then foure hundred yeres after the same was buried (as some haue sa-  
buled) neither yet his bodie to be of eight fote length: for then, such as wrote  
of his life, raigne, and description, would so haue noted, who all agree in one,  
that he was a man of meane stature, bigge bellied, &c. And last of all, for  
a full confuting of the false fable, when his restlesse bones, which so hardly had  
obtained entombing (as ye haue heard) did afterward as unluckely againg  
lose it in the yere of Christ, 1562. to wit, when Chastillon, conducting the  
remnant of those that escaped at the battell of Dreux, took the Citie of Cane,  
certaine savage souldiours, as well English men as others accompanied  
with foure Capitaines, did beate downe, and bitterly deface the noble tombe  
and monument of that renowned Conquerour, and bloody king, pulling  
out all his bones, which some of them spitefullie theye away (when they could  
not finde the treasure they falsely surmised had bene laide vpper there) and o-  
thers, to wit the English snatched, euery one to haue some piece of them, not  
making anie wonder of them, as they would haue done, if the same had rec-  
ded the length and bignesse of mens bones of latter yeres, where as in deed,  
there was no such thing noted in them, as I haue bene certainly informed  
by English men of god credite, who were present etc. witnesses at the spoile of  
that monument and bones, and brought some part of them into this realme.  
Thein maketh mention of this matter in his vniuersall Cosmographie by  
king of Cane.

Now to speake of the issue of this noble Conquerour, thereof I haue be-  
fore, partly touched: He had by Matild his wife daughter to Baldwine Earle  
of Flaunders, Robert surnamed Curthos, as some write, but as safely Cor-  
nelius Martin, and Peter Balchazar, in their booke of the Carles of Holland,  
Courteaise, to wit in English, shote thighe, who after his father was Duke of  
Normandie. Richard that died young in the new foirell, as he was a hun-  
ting in the place where his father had ouerthowne Churches, and Townes  
to make harbour for beastes, hee was buried at Winchester, on whose mo-  
nument, hee was written Duke of Bologne. William surnamed Le Rouse,  
or the Red, who succeeded in the kingdome of England. And Henry, unto  
whome he gaue 5000. pound of silver out of his treasure (as ye haue heard  
before). He had daughters, Cicilie Abbess of Cane. Constance married to  
Alan Earle of Wexstaine. Adela wife to Stephen Earle of Blois. Margaret  
promised

King William  
by burking of  
his body, could  
not be found  
with a fowle  
smell.

The body of  
King William  
could not be  
found incor-  
rupte 500.  
yeres after  
his death.

Argument of  
King William  
defaced, and  
his bones ex-  
posed.

Andreas Thein.

Issue of Will.  
Conquerour.

Cornelius  
Martin.  
Peter Balchazar.

promised to Harold king of England. And Aclianor betrothed to Alfonso king of Castile.

William the Redde fetched from Winchester the treasure, which all the pères of his fathers raigne had bene gathered, and gaue the golde to the Monasteries, and to the parish Churches, euerie one five shillings of silver, and to euerie borough towne he gaue an hundred pounds to bee dealt to the poore. He also adorned a memoriall of his father with a great heape of silver, and golde, and precious stones.

## William Rufus.



William le Roufe or Redde the third sonne of William Conquerour, beganne his raigne the ninth daie of September, in the yere of our Rode 1087. and was crowned at Westminster by Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, the first daie of Maye. He was of person a square man, red coloured, his haire somewhat yellowe, his forehead square like a windowe, his eies not one like the other, not of anie great stature, though somewhat big belied, he was variable, inconsistent, couetous and cruell, hee burdened his people with unreasonable taxes, pilld the rich, and oppressed the poore, & what he thus got, he prodigally spent in great banquetting and sumptuous apparel, for he would neither eate, drinke, or weare any thing, but that it cost vnnecessarily deere. As for example it was in those daies written (and for vs now to be noted) that in a morning his Chamberlaine bringing him a new paire of hosen, hee demanding what they cost, and the chamberlaine answering three shillings, the king being wroth, said, Away beggar that thou art, are those met hosen for a king to weare, bring me a paire of a marke, or thou shalt see repent it; then his chamberlaine fetcht an other paire that were much worse then the first (for a better paire could not be got) and said they cost a marke, where with William was well pleased. Thus farre haue I noted the saying of William, because it importeth the simplicitie of apparel in those daies used, so farre different from the excess of this present time.

Odo bishop of Bayon, and Earle of Kent, with his brother Robert Earle of Mortaigne and Hereford, and almost all the nobles of England, raised war against king William, and would haue had Robert his eldest brother to be king; but king William by faire words pacifying some of the principal conspirators, besieged the rest in the Castle of Rochester (which Odo Earle of Kent had lately repared) and with much labour lastly overcame them.

Lanfranke archbishop of Canterburie deceased, he reuend the great church of Canterburie, restoring reu. manours to the same. He repaired the walls of that Citie, builded two hospitalls, the one of Saint John, the other at Bartholomew. He restored the church of Rochester from foule secular Clergies, to fitte sponkes. He alwaies attended his Booke, and travelled to copen the

corrupt

corruption of Writers. He was a great benefactor to the Abbey of S. Albons, giuing towardes the reparations thereof 1000. markes, and also got Redboine to be restored thereunto. Spozoner by his testament he gaue to that church a hundred pounds of silver, besides ornaments.

When Lanfranke was dead, king William kepte in his owne handes the Churches and Monasteries of England, after their Pastours were dead, making great spoile, and letting them out to farme to such as would giue most for them.

This king William, so long as Lanfranke liued, seemed to abhorre all kinde of vice, so that hee was accounted a mirrour of kings: But now when Lanfranke was dead, he first shewed himselfe for a while variable, as it were, betwixt vice and vertue, and after, to wit, toward his later daies, al indeuor of vertue waxing colde, the heate of vices increased in him, he set his mind to crading; and one Ranulph a Clarke (or Secretarie) a man of base birth, by his faire tongue and subtill wit, being come to promotion, bid picke for ward his countenance. This Ranulph was a poller of the rich, and an vnder of the poore, a conficatur of other mens inheritances, an inuictuall lawyer, the king would ofte laugh at him, and say, he was a man alone, which could compass his matters so well to please his Master, he being the Author: Churches were set to sale, so lone as the Incumbent was dead: for straightway this Ranulph was sent to take inuention of al that was found, and the same to be confiscate to the kings use, and inquirie was then made for one meete to be set in the place of the Bishop, Abbot, or other deceased, not for their worthinesse, but for their money that would giue most, who at the length theyd haue that promise naked and bare, notwithstanding they pated deere for it. There was no man rich but Collectors of money, no cleark but men of law, not of conscience, no Pilles but flarmons. What crime soeuer any man had committed, so lone as he did appeale for the kings aduantage by accusing other, he was heard, & the rope was taken from their neckes. The courtiers deuoured the substance of the husbandmen their tenants: When the laying out of haire, and the superfluite of garments was found, the tendernes of the body, and wrestling with women, nice going, with dissolute behauiour was in vze, there followed the court a number of effeminate persons, and great companies of ruffians, whereby the same court was not a place of maiesty, but a brodded house of vnlawfull things, such as ought to be abolished.

This was a token of great insolence in the king, that when the Jewes at London came to him, and brought him presents, he encouraged them to fight against the Christians, swearing by Lukes face, that if they did ouercome, he would become one of their secte.

On the eleuenth day of the moneth of August, about thye of the clocke in the afternone, a great earthquake made all England astraide, with a terrible wonder, so that all buildings did (as it were) leape vpward, and immediately set themselves in their olde place: after the which there followed great scarcity of fruite, and late harvest of coyne, so that the same was scarcely inned at S. Andrewes tide.

M 2.

Robert

king William  
and treasure  
giuen to the  
poore.  
king William  
and some  
adorned with  
golde.

Amo. reg. 7.

R. of Glocest.  
S. Albons chron.

The best parte  
of hols thye  
sp. wings.

1088  
The nobles  
rebell.

W. Malme.

An. reg. 2.  
1089  
Hospitall of  
Saint John  
and Barthol.  
downe.

Mathew Paris.  
G. Lilly.

W. Malme.

Abuses of the  
kings time.

king William  
and some, and  
unfaithfulness.

Earthquake.



An. reg. 3.  
1090

Robert de Ollie the second, founded the Priorye of Olney besides Driford. King William being desirous to take Normandy from his eldest brother Robert, and to bring it under his dominion, he first bought the castle of St. Valery of one Walter, and the castle of Albemarle of Odo, and put into them men of armes to waite Normandy. Which thing being knowne to duke Robert, he sent his messengers vnto his soweraigne Philip king of France, requiring him to come to aide him in Normandy, who indeede shortly after brought a great power, and besieged one of the forenamed Castles, wherein king William had placed a number of men of armes. Of which siege when king William understode, hee sent over no small portion of money vnto king Philip, requiring him to withdraw his siege, who receiving the money returned home.

The winning  
of Glamorgan  
and Morgann  
wrought out  
the Welsh  
within hande.

About this time, one Iustus sonne to Gurguntus Carle of Glamorgan, and Morgannoke, refusing to obey Rhelus, sonne to Theodore Prince of South Wales, sent Aeneas sonne to Gedinorus, sometime Lord of Demetia into England, to take muster of souldiers, and there received a great army, under the conduct of one Robert Fitzhamon, and joining with other rabbles out of Wales and Brecknia, met with Rhelus in Blacke hill, and there slew him, and so paying the Englishmen their wages, discharged them. But they taking revenge vnto the godnesse of the losse, and the great variance which was then amongst the Welshmen, as in sometime the Saxons had done, they turned their force of armes against those which had intertaineed them, and sone displaced them wholy of all the champaign, and the best of the Countrey, which Robert Fitzhamon divided amongst twelve knights which he brought with him, reserving the better part to himselfe, who building there certaine Castles, and joining their power together, defended their farmes and Lordships which they had taken and possessed, whose heires peaceably enjoy the same unto this date: but Iustus scarcely referred to himselfe and his, the hill Country. The names of the twelve knights were these:

- 1 William Lowdon.
- 2 Richard Granuile.
- 3 Paganus Turberuile.
- 4 Robert Saintquintine.
- 5 Richard Siward.
- 6 Gilbert Vmfreuill.
- 7 Roger Berkerowle.
- 8 Reynald Sully.
- 9 Peter Soore.
- 10 John Fleming.
- 11 Oliver Saint John.
- 12 William Easterling: now for shortnesse called Stradling.

Thus was the Lordshippe of Glamorgan and Morgannoke won out of the Welshmens handes, which Lordshippe contained in length from Rimbidge on the East side, to Dallenham in the West side seven and twenty miles. The breadth from the haven of Aberthaw on the South side,

to the confine of Brecknockeshire, about aporetts Castle, is two and twenty miles.

In this province are next vpon a river of the same name Pontaine, that is to say, Stonebridge, sometimes called Colobridge, Lantwit, Wecny, Dinwid, townes, and castles, besides Caer Dabill, a most ancient Castle and fortress, which by report was created by the Romans, and Caerdd the principall town of the shire, standing vpon the river Tafe, Englishmen terme it Caerdd or Cardife. Also, within the body of the said Lordship were eightene Castles, five and thirtie knights fees, a halfe, that held of the same Lordship by knights service, besides a great number of freeholders. Also, the said Lordship being a Lordship Marcher, or a Lordship Royall, and holden of no other Lordship, the Lordes thereof, euer since the winning of the same owing theire obedience onely to the Crowne, haue used therein *Iura regalia* with the trial of all actions, as well reall as personall, and pleas of the crowne, with authoritie to pardon all offences, treason only excepted.

Now to returne to king William: he in this meane time making warre against his brother Robert duke of Normandy, took the Castles of Malerike and of Albemarle, then sending his souldiours into his brothers countrey, he began to spoile and robbe. But through the diligence of friends, agreement was made betwene them, vpon condition, that Robert his brother should giue vp into the kings handes, the castles that he had gotten of him, to wit, the countie of Wilt, the Abbey of Ffescampe, the Abbey of St. Michaels Mount, and Heref-bourgh, &c. And those Castles which were reuolted from the duke in the countie of Spaine, with the Castles which stode against him in Normandy, the king should subdue them, and restore them to the duke, and all the lands in England pertaining to the Normans, which for their loyalty to the Duke they had lost, he should restore to the Normans. Also he should giue to the duke so much land in England as was covenanted betwene them. Moreover, it was agreed, that if the Duke died without issue male, the king should be his heire: and in like case, if the king died without lawfull issue male, the Duke should be his heire. Which covenants were confirmed by the othe of twelve Barons on the kings part, and as many on the Dukes part.

In the meane time Henry younger brother to the king and Duke, with a power of men of armes entered Saint Michaels Mount, and wasted the kings landes, taking prisoners, and robbing other. Wherefore the king and Duke with an army besieged mount Saint Michael, all the Lent season, oft times fighting with their brother Henry, where they lesse both men and horses, but prevailed little. The king on a time coming out of his pavilion, and seeing the enemies a far off riding in a battterie, he alone rode against them, and set vpon them, thinking that no man durst breake his bolde as to withstand him: but straightway his horse was slaine vnder him, and himselfe brayne by the one fote: and when the knight that had overthorne him, took his sword in his hand to smite him, he cried out, Hold thy hand haue, I am the king of England. The whole company of men of armes knowing his voice, straightway they reuerently took him vp from the ground, and brought him another horse:

Humfrey Lloyd

King William  
inuedeth Ro-  
bert his elder  
brother.

Henry inua-  
deth his elder  
brother.

Henry inua-  
deth his elder  
brothers lande.  
King William  
looleth hardie.



and hee looking for no stroke, sprang upon the horse backe, and with an angry countenance beholding all that stood about him, said: Who was it that ouerthrew me? And the knight which had done the deede, saide: I not thinke that you had bene the king, but a knight, did ouerthrow you. With the which answer the king being pleased, swore by Lukes face, thou shalt be my knight, and shalt bee written in my white Booke, with the reward of a worthy knight.

Malcolme did homage to king William.

An. reg. 4.

Malcolme did homage to king William.

Tempest of lightning at Winchester.

Malcolme king of Scottes, with a great armie invaded Northumberland, meaning if he had sped well to proceede further, but he was disappointed in his first attempt, notwithstanding he returned with great praises. Whereof when king William vnderstode, hee returned into England with his brother Robert, and shortly after with no small naup and army of horsemen and footmen, he went into Scotland to invade king Malcolme, but before he could come thither, almost all his naup was drowned, and many of his horsemen perished through hunger and colde. King Malcolme mette with king William, which when Duke Robert behelde, he called to him Clito Edgar, whome king William had expelled out of Normandie: upon trust of whose helpe, he made peace betwixt the two kings, with condition, &c. Duke Robert also pacified the kings wrauth against Clito Edgar.

On the nineteenth of October, a vehement stroke of lightning, shaking the steeple of the Abbey at Winchester, made a great hole in the stone work thereof nere to the toppe, rent one of the beames in the church, and cast downe to the ground the head of the Crucifer with great violence, and brake the right legge of the same Crucifer, the Image of our Lady also, that stood by the crosse, being shaken with the blowe, fell to the ground. Also a great smoake afterwards with a marvellous filthy smell, filled all the church, which continued long after: although the Monkes toke holy water, and incenses, went about the houses of the Monasterie, singing Psalmes, &c.

Tempest of wind at London, more then five hundred houses blew downe.

And on the seventeenth day of November, a mighty tempest of wind out of the South west, beat downe in London stre hundred and six houses, and shaken the Churches, especially the Church of Saint Mary Bowe in Cheape, where the winde brake in with such a vehement force, that two men were theewith flaine in the Church, and the roose being raised with the beames thereof were carried in the ayre a great while, and at the last fell to the ground. There were dyuen with their fall into the ground, that there appeared of some of them the seventen, and of some the eight part, to wit, but foure fote above the ground: which beames of rafters were seauen and twentie or eight and thentie fote long, which was a wonderfull thing to see them so pierce the ground (not parted then with stone) and there to stand in such order, as the workemen had placed them on the Church, untill such time as they were cut euen by the ground. The Tower of London was also broken, &c. When king William had repaired such Castles as the Scottes had impeyed, and builded the newe Castle upon Eime, hee returning south of Northumberland, came through Mercia into Worcester, and kept the Duke with him till Christmas, but he would not performe any promise made with him, which the Duke taking grievously passed

Downe Castle upon Eime builded.

ouer into Normandie with Clito Edgar the twentieth daye of December.

Osmond Bishop of Salisbury founded the Cathedral Church of old Salisbury one on the morrow after the dedication thereof, the steeple was scted by lightning.

1097  
Bishop of Salisbury  
Bishop of Winchester.

This deceased Wido the 42. Abbot of St. Augulines by Canterbury. After whose buriall, the monkes of St. Augulines went to king William to obtaine licence to chuse a new Abbot, which request was not onely denied the m by the king, but he also charged them upon a great paine, not to elect any, saying, that he would holde in his hand, all the Spirituall livings in the whole realme, and would dispose of them at his pleasure: so the Monkes of Saint Augulines returned frustrate of all hope therein. Now it happened at the same time, there was in that Monasterie a certaine Monke, in religion young, but grave in discretion, a Norman borne, and king Williams kinsman, by name called Hugh de Floriaco. This Hugh having bene a valiant souldier, had long served king William the elder, and the said king William Rufus, as well in Normandie, as in England. Hugh, as yet by profession a souldier, on a certaine time comming to Canterbury with king William Rufus, upon deuotion did visit St. Augulines church, where by Gods speciall grace, ravished with the love of God, and delighting in the chaste life of the Monkes, he would not goe out of the limits of the monasterie before he had procured to be made a monke and brother of the said monasterie. Which being granted, the said Hugh went into Normandie, distributed his goods unto his kinsmen, and to the poore, because he had no wife nor childe, and returned unto the monasterie, and put on the monkish habite, and so remained a Monke. The Abbot Wido being dead (as it is said) at the last it was decreed that two circumpect Monkes, together with the said Hugh, who had scarce continued one yeere of probation should be sent to the king to procure his fauour by prayer or price, that he would graunt them licence to elect an Abbot. When these presented themselves unto the kings sight, and saw his cousin, who in time before had served him in the habiterie of a souldier, to be now clothed in habite of a monke, he was so dismayed in minde, that gushing out with teares he said, I do grant you this count of mine to be your Abbot, and at your petition I doe give him the gouernment of the Abbey of Saint Auguline, neither do I permit you to chuse any other, whom, unless you doe presently recuse, I will shortly burne your Abbey to ashes. When the Monkes seeing no remedy, submitted themselves to the kings will in the premises. But the foresaid Hugh long time refused the honour, saying, that he was as well unworthy, as insufficient, because he was a man in a manner unlettered, and one that had verie little skill, as well in religion, as in ecclesiasticall ordinances, but the king and the monkes forced him to accept the honour offered, neither did the king suffer him to depart from the Court before he were consecrated Abbot, which was done in the kings Chappell at Westminster, by Maurice Bishop of London. This Abbot did manie laudable aces to the great commoditie of that church. King William would waare against the Welshmen, but prevailed not, for he lost many of his best knights, and much cattell, as well at this time, as at other.

W. Thorne.

A souldier became a monke, and was Abbot of Saint Augulines.

Amores.

1092

John Bishophe of Welles a Turon bozne, by consent of king William for a gre at summe of money translated his bishops sea to Wate.

This pere a noble man of the Normans bloud named Picot, *vicecomes* of Herefe, at request of Hugolin his wife, founded a church to the honor of God & S. Giles, nere unto the castle of Cambridge, but afterward, to wit, in an. 1102, the Chanons were remoued to Barnwell, by Paine Peuerell. The towne of Cambridge toke name of a fair large bidge, made ouer the riuer Grant there running, and so named Grantbidge (corruptly Cambidge:) it increased by mean of this bidge, which was the ruine of Grantcester, sometimes a famous citie, situate little more then a mile from Grantbidge. The Castle was builded in the first pere of William Conquerour, as male appeare by the description in Doomes day Booke in the Erchequer, which hath thus. The borough of Grantbidge defended it selfe for one hundred in the time of Edward the 1. In this borough haue bin, and yet are 2. wards: in the first ward are 54. mansions, of them 2. be waisted: In this first warde Allan hath 5. burgesses that pay nothing, & earle Porzon hath 3. mansions of the land of Litchel: and there be 3. burgesses, which in the time of Edward the 1. paid 5. shillings and 8. pence halfe peny, at this day they pay nothing: Ralfe of Bant hath 2. burgesses that pay nothing. Roger seruant to Bishop Remigius hath 3. burgesses that paie nothing. Erchingor hath 1. burges that paie nothing: this ward was accounted in the daies of king Ed. for 2. wards, but for the castle 27. houses were thowen down. In the second ward were 48. mansions in the time of king Ed. whereof 2. be waisted, of them 13. paie nothing, the other 32. pay all customes, Carle Allan hath of them 5. burgesses that paie nothing, and 9. remaine in the hands of the Englishmen. In the thirde ward were 41. mansions, of them 11. be waisted, the other 30. pay all customes. In the fourth ward were 45. mansions, of them 24. be waisted, the other 21. pay all customes. In the fift ward were fiftie mansions, one of them is waisted, all the rest pay the customes. In the seventh ward were 37. mansions, 3. of those 37. frenchmen haue, and pay nothing. In the eight ward were 37. mansions, a priest holdeth one & paie nothing, 3. are waisted. In the ninth ward were 32. mansions. In the tenth ward were 26. mansions, 7. of them are waisted, but yet they defend themselves. The customes payable for this towne were 7. pounds by pere. And for Landgale 7. pounds, and 2. oyes and 2. pence. The burgesses in the time of king Edward lent the sherriffe their carts thise in the pere: now they are demanded nine times. They found neither boates nor wagons in the time of S. Edward, which they doe now by custome set upon them, They claime of the Carle Picora common pasture, which he hath taken from them. The same Picote hath made there three Millcs, which taketh away the pasture, and destrcteth manie houses, and one spill of the Abbot of Ely, and an other of the Carle Allan, the spillcs paie nine pounds the pere. The same Carle Picot hath of the heriot of the Lagemens seven pounds, and one palfrey, and one knights armor. Alurike Godriclon when he was sherriffe had of one of the twenty shillings for a heriot. Thus much Doomes day for Grantbidge, whereof more shall be said in place conuenient.

Hugh

Hugh Lupus earle of Chester, sent into Normandy for Anselme, by his counsell to build an Abbey of S. Werbridge at Chester.

King William lying sicke at Gloucester, and thinking he should haue died, his Barons put into his head, his promise to God and the world, that he would amend his life. And forthwith he gaue vnto Anselme Abbot of Becce, the archbishoppicke of Canterburie; and to Robert Bloct, his chancellor, the bishoppicke of Lincoln. But when the king had recovered his health, he repented him that he had not sold those bishoppicks for a great peece of money.

Malcolme king of Scots comming into England was met withall, and disdainely slaine, with his son and yetre also, by Robert Mowbray Earle of Northumberland.

William Waren first earle of Surrey, and Gundred his wife, founded the abbey of Lewes in Sussex.

King William builded againe the Citie of Carlile, which was destroyed by the Danes 200. yeres before: hee also builded a Castell there, and out of the South parts of England sent men to inhabit.

This pere was a great famine: and after, so great a mortallitie, that the quicke were scarce able to burie the dead.

King William made great wars in Normandy against his brother Robert, through the which both Englande and Normandie were sore oppressed with exactions.

The Welchmen spoiled the Citie of Gloucester, with a part of Shrewsbury and won the Ile of Anglesey to their subiection.

The Bishoppicke of Hereford was translated to Hereford, by Herbert being Bishop there, sometime Abbot of Ramsey.

King William sent his brother Henry into Northumberland with a great powder, because Robert Mowbray Earle of that countrey refused to come to the kings court: the countrey was spoiled, the Earle was taken, and many were dismembered, some had their eies put out, &c.

King William with a powder entred Wales, but not being able to followe the Welchmen among the hilles, he builded two Castelles in the borders, and returned.

Great preparation was made by the Christians to go against the Infidels at Ierusalem: Peter the hermite being their first leader, and after Godfrey of Lorraine, called Godfrey of Boloigne.

In a Councell holden at Salisbury, William de Owe was accused to the king of treason, who whiles hee prouoked his accuser to fight with him in combat, by the kings commandement his eies were plucked out, and his stones cut off. Spanie innocent men were also accused, of which number was William de Aluerie, a man of goodlie personage, godfather to the king, his Auntes sonne, and his selwer, yet the king commanded him to be hanged: which William making his confession to Olmond Bishoppe of Salisbury, was first whipped throughout by all the Churches of the citie, who dealing his garments to the poore, went naked to hanging, bloodying his flesh with often kneeling vpon the stones: and at the place of execution, he satisfied the Bishop and people, saying,

Abbot of Chester.

Anselme Bishoppe of Canterburie.

An. reg. 6. Lewes in Sussex.

1093 Carlile Citie &amp; Castle builded.

The Citie of Gloucester spoiled by Welchmen.

An. reg. 7. 1094

King William invaded Wales.

An. reg. 8. 1095

Councell at Salisbury. Citey of Carlile.

saying, & o God helpe my soule, and deliuer it from euill, as I am guiltlesse of the thing that I am accused of: and after the Bpshp had commended him to God, he was hanged.

An. reg. 9.  
1096  
Marston,  
Normandy  
patented  
Blazing Star.

Robert duke of Normandy took his journey towards Jerusalem, and laid the dukedome of Normandie to gage to his brother king William for 6666. poundes of silver. Paulus Aemilius saith 13600. pound.

The 22. of September, a blazing starre was seene, and for the space of 16. daies after, the greatest part thereof pointed toward the east, and the lesser toward the west. There were also starres seene, which did, as it were, shote out vantes one at another.

The Dukes Godfrey, Beaumont, and Robert besieged the Citie of Nice with six thousande horsemen, and tenne thousande footemen, and took the same, with the wife of Soliman, and his sonnes. They also took the Citie of Antioch.

An. reg. 10.  
1097

The Church of the holie Trinitie in Norwich was founded by Herueus, being first Bpshp there.

King William returned out of Normandy into England, and after Easter with an army of horsemen & footemen, went the second time into Wales, that he might kill all the male kinde there, but he coulde wineth kill or take one of them, notwithstanding of his owne people hee lost blunders, and also manie horse.

Clito Edgar  
sent against the  
Scots.

After this king William sent Clito Edgar into Scotland with an army, that he might make his cousin Edgar the son of king Malcolm king, and expelle Donwald, which had invaded the kingdome.

An. reg. 11.  
Abbots dyed.

About the feast of Saint Andrew, king William went into Normandie, and shortly after, to wit, in the monethes of December and January, deceased the Abbots of S. Edmundsbury, of Abindune, of Peterborough, of the new monasterie at Winchester, and Walcherus Bpshp of Winchester.

Peter Pichau,  
1098

This yere king William builded Westminster hall.

King William making great warres in Normandie, subdued to his dominion the city of Rantis, and a great part of that province: but in the meane time with taxes, exactions, and tributes, he did not only poule, but haue and slay the Englishmen.

The of Anglesey  
drages, and the  
Welshmen  
slaine.

Hugh Earle of Chester, and Hugh Earle of Shrewsburie assailed the Isle of Anglesey with an armie, and slew manie Welshmen, whome they took in it, and some they dismembred, by cutting off their handes and stones, and putting out their eyes: and a certaine Priest called Kenredus, a man of great piety, of whome the Welshmen take their counsell, for all matters that they take in hand, they drew him out of the Church, pulled out one of his eyes, and cut out his Tongue.

Spanius king  
of Norway sub-  
dued the Isle of  
Spain.

The same time Magnus king of Norway, the sonne of Olauus, the sonne of Harold Haruager, when he had subdued to his dominion the Isles of Wykeney, and of Spain, with a few shippes hee arriued in the Isle of Anglesey, but when he would haue come a land with his vessels, Hugh earle of Shrewsburie with manie armed men of warre on the sea shore met him, and as it was then reported,

ted, by a thaste he was stricken: he ended his life, and his brother Robert de Belasme succeeded in his Earledome.

The Princes of the pilgrimages with their armies took their journey toward Jerusalem, besieged it, and took it on the tenth of July, placing there a king, and a patriarche, and afterward fought with the Souldan of Egypt (who besieged him in Jerusalem) and overcame him.

An. reg. 12.  
1099  
The Christians  
won Jerusalem

King William being returned out of Normandie into England, kept his feast of Whitson tide very royally at Westminster, in the new hall, which hee had lately caused there to be builded, the length whereof was 270. foot, and 74. foot in breadth: and when he heard men say that the hall was too bigge, and too great, he answered and saide, This Hall is not bigge enough by the one halfe, and is but a bed chamber, in comparison of that I minde to make. A diligent searcher might yet finde out the foundation of the Hall, which he had purposed to build, stretching from the River of Thames, euen vnto the common high way. As witeth H. Huntington, he chalenged the inuestiture of Bzetales, he pilld and shaued the people, with tribute, especially to spend about the Tower of London, and the great Hall at Westminster.

Westminster  
hall.  
T. Woodbridge.

Matthew Paris.

King William having transferred into his treasure three hundred pounds by yere forth of the Bishopricke of Durham, and six monethes being past of the fourth yere, from the death of William Bpshp of Durham, gaue the Bpshprie to Ranulph, who for certaine excellent parts about the king was named the kings Chaplain, but some haue written that he gaue the king a thousand pound for that Bishopricke. This Ranulph was first familiar with Maurice bishop of London, but falling at variance, because the Deanry was taken away from him, he went to the king in hope of a higher place, in which point his hope was not deceived, for being admitted, and hauing a good wit and ready tongue, in short time he obtained to be preferred afore all other estates of England, who being called to be Procurator or Chancellor of the whole realme, did manie times beaue himselfe so proudly, abusing his authoritie, that he little esteemed to offende many, who laboured with continuall accusations to cloud the clere minde of the king toward him, whereof when they failed with baine labour, they imagined how to haue killed him. For which cause, one Gerald, armed with audacitie and deceit of other, taking a boate with a few persons, met with the Chaplaine Ranulph at London, humbly requesting him that he would make speed vnto his spasser Mauricius Bishop of London, lying very sicke at his house vpon the riuer of Thames, who being almost ready to depart the world, greatly desired to speake with him. In affirming the truth whereof, he had brought a boate for him from his spasser, wherein hee might more speedily be carried.

Lib. Duncelm.

Ranulph Bpshp  
of Durham  
The kings  
chancellor.

Ranulph suspecting nothing, entered the boat with a few of his companie, which boat Gerald with a straight course directed in the middle of the streame vnto the sea: and when the Chaplaine demanded why they rowed so long, and did not turne to the shore, they sayned that the port was further off, where they should haue convenient place to land.

The kings  
chancellor in  
great danger  
of drowning the  
sea.

In the meane time the Chaplaine perceiving a great shippe to lie at anchor,

The kings  
chancelour  
call the great  
and pious  
father into the  
sea.

cho: in the midst of the floude, which, as it seemed, awayted for his coming, did presentlie suspect the deuisse of their deceit. And being transported unto the suspected Shippe, in the which was harboured a great number of armed men, perceiving no hope to escape, hee cast the King which he wore on his finger into the Sea: and his Secretarie did throw his Seale into the midst of the floude, lest through those Seales the state of things might bee disturbed by counterfeite processe, and Wittes set forth by the deceyving enemy. After this his men are set over, being first bounde with an othe, not to disclose anie thing of the sealing atwaie of their Passier.

Howe the Shippe leaving the River, with boyled sailes, entered the deepe Sea, directing their course towardes the South, and Ranulph sitting in the foreparte of the Shippe. There arose a contention among the shipmen for the manner of his death: and two are chosen forth, either to leane him into the sea, or to knocke out his braines, who shoulde for reward obtaine those garments wherewith hee was clothed: of which persons, when the one shoulde haue his roabe or uppermost garment, and the other would also possesse the same, this contention protracted time of his death. At length there sodaynelie arose a fierre wind from the South, which troubled the Sea from the very bottome, and the Heavens were covered with darkenesse. Which tempest so tossed the Boate hither and thither, that they coulde neither goe forwarde, nor retorne backe againe to land. And when the spast and Cables were broken, the Ship was not onelie carried on the water, but she also carried in her the water, nothing being more certaine then death to them all, which they looked for, onelie such was the course of the Sea, that the Shippe was returning to the place from whence she came, and yet the waves beating her backe, the murderers, a new determine for the death of the chaplaine, lest he escaping shoulde reuenge such iniurie.

But one which was next to Gerald in the Shippe, abhorring this wickednes, and being nere to the Chaplaine with sorrowfull repetition sayde, But alas, Ranulph, thou shalt not be murdered, but if thou wilt pardon me this wicked conspiacie, I will stand by thee to thy defence, as a companion of thy life or death. Whereunto he (as he was alwaies bold spirited) with great noise calling upon him, saide: What dost thou thinke Gerald? What dost thou request of vs? Thou art my man, thou owest faith to me, call backe thy mind from the wicked deede thou intendest, demaunde what thou wilt, for I am he that glue more then thou canst demaunde. Then Gerald, not so much allured by words, as feared with the authoritie of the man, did consent, and bringing him out of the Shippe, now beaten to the shore, did procure him honourable furniture, at his owne house. But not trusting the former promises, he procured his owne safetie by banishment into perpetuall exile. Ranulph therefore calling knights together, is brought to London with manie armed men, and a great noise of people, to the astonishment of all men, supposing him to haue bene slaine, he as then was sodainly reuiued, and set againe as executor of the kings affaires, and received the Bishoppicke of Durham, being consecrated in the Church of Saint Paul in London.

The kings  
chancelour  
releaseth death  
and is made  
B. of Durham.

King William being a hunting in the new Forrest, wood was brought him that his people were besieged in Spaine: he forthwith took shipping, though he were vehemently perswaded to the contrary, for that there was at that time a great tempest: to whome he answered, he neuer heard that anie king was drowned. At this time he got more honour then euer he did in all his life, for he chased his enemies, and returned with victorie.

This yere, as well in Scotland as in England, on the third day of November the sea broke in ouer the banks of the Thames and other rivers, drowning manie towne, many people, with innumerable numbers of oren and sheepe: at which tempest, the lands in Kent, that sometime belonged to Duke Godwyne, Earle of Kent, were covered with sandes and drowned, which are to this daie called Godwyne sandes.

Osmond Bishop of Salisburie deceased.

King William returning out of Normandy, kept his Christmasse at Gloucester.

The Monastery of Gloucester, which Abbot Serle had builded from the foundation, was now dedicated.

This yere many strange things came to passe, the diuell did visible appeare unto men, and sometime spake unto them.

Afterouer, in the Towne of Finchamsted in Barkshire, nere unto Abingdun, a spring did continually by the space of fiftene daies flowe plentifully with blood (or the likenesse thereof) so that it did colour and tinct the next water broke unto it. Of which things, when men tolde the king thereof, hee laughed them to scoone, and gaue no credite to them, neither yet to his owne dreames, nor the visions that other men told him of.

King William on the morrow after Lammas daie, hunting in the newe Forrest of Hamphire, in a place called Chorougham, where since a Chappell was builded, sir Walter Tirel shooting at a deer, his arrowes hit the king in the breast, that he fell downe stark dead, and neuer spake word. His men, especially that knight got the man away, but some came back again, & laid his body upon a Colliers cart, which one felis leane breast did draw unto the Citie of Winchester, where he was buried on the morrow after his death, at whose buriall, men could not weepe for sole.

This king was taken out of this world in the midst of his unrighteousnesse, who being wicked to his owne people, and to strangers, was most wicked to himselfe. The countries about him he psonned with wars, and England was so miserably oppressed under him, that it could not recover, for he and his traine spoiled and subuerted all things.

He died in the yere of Christ, 1100. and in the 13. yere of his raigne, on the second day of August, when he had reigned 12. yeres 11. moneths, lacking eight daies, and was buried at Winchester, in the Cathedral Church or Monasterie of Saint Swichen, under a plaine slate marble stone, before the lecture in the quere, but long since his bones were translated in a Coffin and laid with King Knutes bones. He gaue vnto the Monkes called de chantrac an Southwarke, the great newe Church of Saint Sauour of Bermondes-ey, which

King William  
came courage  
and his words.

An. reg. 13.  
Hebor Boctius.  
Great water  
floods.

Godwyne  
sandes.

1100

W. Malmes.

Duels appea  
red to man.

A spring ran  
the likenes of  
blood.

King William  
slaine.

William Rufus  
troubled  
the lands about  
him with wars  
and oppressed  
his owne peo-  
ple.

which he had caused to be builded for them, and also his manor of Bermond, sep it selfe, with all the pertinances, and confirmed unto them all whatsoeuer Alwyn Child their first founder, Robert Byschop of Lincoln, (who also gaue to them the towne of Charleton) or other had giuen unto them.

He also of an olde Monasterie of Monkes in the Citie of Poerke, founded an Hospitall, and dedicated it to Saint Peter, for the sustentation and findinge of the poore as well men as women, which Hospitall was since greatly augmented by king Stephen, and by him dedicated to Saint Leonard.

Lib. Bermond,

## Henry Beaucherke.

Anno reg. 1.  
Io. Rouic.

Henry, the yongest sonne of William Conquerour, borne in England, at a place called Selby in Lincolnshire, brother to William Rufus, and the first of that name, for his learning called Beaucherke, brought up in the studie of the liberrall artes at Cambridge, chieflie through the trauaile of Henry Newborow Earle of Warwike, (who appealed all debates of that time to the contrarie) obtained the dominion ouer this Realme of England, and began his reigne the second of August, in the yere of our Lord 1100, and was crowned at Westminster on the first day of August, by Malrice Byschoppe of London, because at that time Anselme Archbishop of Canterburie, was by persecution of William Rufus expelled.

This Henry was a noble Prince, strong and mighty of body, high of stature, and amiable of countenance; blacke haired, and that somewhat long about the elcheuones; faire eyes, broad breasted, well in flesh, full of merie conceits. Hee was excellent in wit, eloquent in speech, and fortunate in battaile, and for these thre hee had thre notable vices, Couetousnesse, Crueltie and Lecherie.

Hee married Mawde the daughter of Melcolme and Margare, King and Quene of Scots, of whom he begate William and a daughter named Mawd. At the beginning of his reigne, he restored the state of the Cleargie, asswaged the grievous punishments, reduced againe Saint Edwards lawes, and amended them. He put out of his Court all vice and wanton persons.

He reformed the olde untrue measures, and made a measure by the length of his olue arme, which was then called *Armo*, and now the same is called a *yard*, or a *metre*, &c.

He restored to his subjects the vse of lights (as the night, with lights and also fire, had ben forbiiden by his father to be used, after the ringing of a bell, at eight of the clocke at night.

Edgar king of the Scots to homage to this Henry. This yere Jordan Bailef Baron, the sonne of Raule, the sonne of Brian Bri- cer, founded the house of Saint Iohn of Hierusalem, nere unto London, by Smithfield.

Westminster  
founded.Use of fire and  
lights restored.Priory of S.  
John of Hieru-  
salem.

The

The same Jordan gaue 14. acres of ground lying in the field next adioining unto Clerkenwell, to build thereupon a house of nuns, wherein he with Muriel his wife, were both buried in the Chapter house.

Robert Shorthole Duke of Normandie, the kinges eldest brother, which was now returned from Hierusalem made warre vpon his brother Henry for the Crowne of England, who assembled a strong armie, and landed at Poerke mouth, but by mediation a peace was made, on condition, that Henry should pay 3000. marks pærelie to duke Robert: and if the one died without issue, the longer liuer should inherit. Winchester was bent the 17. of May, and Gloucester was bent the 20. of May.

Robert Fitzham, who came with the Conquerour out of Normandie, with Sibell his wife, sister to Robert Belasme Earle of Shrewsburie, founded a new Church of Shenelesburie, with the offices thereto belonging, and enriched it with large possessions, and was there buried.

Robert de Belasme Earle of Shrewsburie, eldest Sonne to Roger Mountgomerie, strengthened the Towne and Castell of Shrewsburie, so did hee the Castles of Bridgenorth, Wichle, and Arundell, with viualles and armed men against king Henrie: but the king being warned thereof, he gathereth his power and besiegeth Bridgenorth, which Towne was yelued vnto him. And this being knowne to them of Arundell, they forthwith submitted themselves, with condition, that their Lord Robert de Belasme, might be permitted frælie to passe into Normandy. Also they of Shrewsburie sent the keies of their castell, and pledges of their obedience, and then Robert, with his brother Ernulfus and Roger of Hoptiers abured this land for euer.

This yere the Priory and Hospitall of S. Bartholomew in Smithfield was begun to be founded by Rahere (a man of a singular and pleasant wit, & therefore of many called the kinges iester and minstrel) in a place which before had bene a marshy ground, a common laishale of al: bores & filth, & the place where felons and other transgressors were executed. This Rahere ioined vnto him a certain old man named Alsine, that had not long before sold the parish church of S. Giles, nigh a gate of the city of London, then called Cæples gate: this man he bled as a counseller & companion in his building of the Church and Hospitall, and the one of them, to wit, Rahere, became the first Priory of that priory, & the other, to wit, Alsine, became hospitaller or superior for the poore, & went himselfe daily to the Chambers, & other markets, where he begged the charitie of devout people for their reliefe, promising to the liberrall giuers (adueaging testimonies of holy scripture) reward at the hands of God.

King Henry inuited two of his Chaplaines, Roger his chancelor, in the Byschoppiche of Salisbury, Roger his Larder, in the Byschoppiche of Hereford, at Westminster.

King Henry gaue the earldome of Leicester to Robert Beaumont earle of Arkeint, that came in with William Conqueror. This Robert new founded the college of secular Chanons in the castell of Leicester, before by wars defaced. Robert the second surnamed de Boleu, his son Earle of Leicester, and Amicia his wife, for Robert his father, and Mabel his mother, founded an Abbey to the honour

1101  
An. reg. 2.Shenelesburie  
buried.1102  
Earle of  
Shrewsburie  
rebuilt.  
An. reg. 3.Priory and  
hospitall of S.  
Bartholomew.Saint Giles  
at Cæples gate  
of London.

1103

Robert Beaumont, Earle of  
Leicester.

82.

of God, and the virgin Mary, in the meadowes without the north gate of Leicester for Canons Regular, naming the same Church *S. Mary de prato*, in *Anna* 1144. he endowed it with lands, &c. Robert duke of Normandy comming into England, through the subtiltie of king Henry his younger brother, released to him the tribute of three thousand marks of silver, which he should have received yearly.

Hugh Lacy founded the monastrie of *S. John* at *Lanthony*, the Chanons of which place were since translated by Miles, high constable, and earle of Hereford, to a place nere unto Gloucester, then called *Hyde*, since called *Lanthony*.

Juga Baynard ladie of little Donmow, caused Maurice Bishop of London to dedicate the church of Donmow which he had founded, and the same day she gave to it halfe a hide of land. This lady juga was late wife to Baynard, that first builded Baynards castell in London.

William earle of Spoxton was disseised of all his lands in England, and all his castels made leuell with the ground, and the countrey soe bereid with the kings exactions.

Now the flames of wars being translated into Normandy, prevailed there, being kindled by the assemblies of traitours, as with fire which catcheth in all things that is about it. Normandy is a patient sufferer of mischiefs, though it be no large region: it doeth tolerate sedition verie long, and by restoring of peace ariseth into a fertile state of subsistence, letting out the bioplemaker into France with free passage. Contrariwise, England doth not suffer rebels long. Robert de Belesme earle of Shyresbury comming into Normandy, having confederates of his wickednes, among whom was W. Morton, the son of Robert the kings uncle, who from his childehood ever envied the glory of Henry, for not content with two earldomes of Spoxton in Normandy, & Cornwall in England, he required the earldome of Kent, which his uncle Odo held, being so presumptuous, y<sup>e</sup> he would say, he would not put on his uppermost garment, except he might obtain of his uncle his desired possessions. But the betraying him with subtil answers, did not onlie denie him that which he demanded, but began to challenge from him such things, as he said, he held unlawfully: whereupon the said William being disseised of all his landes in Englande, in a rage got him into Normandy, where besides the same assaults he made against the kings Castels, he raged against Richard Earle of Chester, the sonne of Hugh, invading, taking, and spoiling such things as appertained unto him, who was then but a child in yeeres, and in the kings wardship.

There appeared about the Sun foure circles, and a blazing star.

King Henrie raised a great armie, and passed the sea into Normandy, against his brother Robert, and got the towne and Castell of Cane, and bent Bayon, with the Church of *S. Mary*, by the help of the President of Angeow, & many Castels more he wan, whereupon the Priories of Normandy submitted themselves unto king Henry. The Flemings having a great parte of their countrey destroyed, came unto England, and obtained a place to inhabite in, nigh the River of Tweede, but afterward they were removed thence, and sent into West Wales.

Endo

Endo Wapiser or Sewer to king Henry, founded the monastrie of Saint John in Colchester of regular Chanons of Saint Austens rule, commonly called blache Chanons, and this house was the first that ever was erected in England of that order. King Henry having set things in an order in Normandy, he sailed and returned into England, that hee might increase his strength and returne againe.

Robert duke of Normandy came to his brother at Portsmouth, and friendly required him to beare brotherlie love toward him, but king Henry falling his conscience accusing him, for obtaining the kingdoms by defrauding of his elder brother, and fearing men more then God, first hee reconciled the nobles of the Realme with faire promises, thinking afterwards to make amends for his great wrongs, by founding of an Abbey, which he purposed to build.

The Duke returning into Normandy, the king followed with a great power, where betwene them were manie soe battayles fought, but at the last the valiant and most stout man Robert was taken, and William earle of Spoxton, Robert de Belesme, William Crispine, & other, to the number 400. men of arms, but Robert de Belesme escaped, when hee sawe that manie of his men were taken.

This yere appeared a blazing starre, from thre of the clocke till nine, and on the spawnde Thorsoate was scene two full spones, one in the East, and an other in the West.

The first Chanons entred into the church of our Lady in Southwarke called *S. Mary Overy*, founded by William Poundarge knight, and William Dancys Normans, William Gifford Bishoppe of Winchester assisting them in that worke. Algodus was first Prior there.

When king Henry had set in order Normandy according to his pleasure, he returning into England, brought with him his brother Robert, and William of Spoxton, and put them in perpetuall prison: from whence shortly after duke Robert deceiving his keepers, sought to scape, but he was taken as he fled, sitting on his horse in a deepe mire and tough clay where hee felle fast: and by his brothers commandement had his eyes put out, and kept straiter till his dying daie, which was about 26. yeeres after, when hee pined a waile for sorowe and griefe of mind.

It appeareth by the private historie of Dunstable, that in the joining of the two high waies of Watling and Thening, there were great woods, which were selled by king Henrie, to represse the cuiles that were there committed by one Dunne, a most famous theefe of that time, of whom the place was called Dunstable, the said king therefore built there a Boro, by the which he also erected a pallace for himselfe, making the Burgeses there as free as anie other Burgeses of the Realme were, to the which towne the king granted both faire and sparket.

And this yere he began there to build a faire church of priory, placing there in regular Chanons, and gave to Peter the first Prior, and his successors there serving God, the towne of Dunstable and 4. cultures of land about the towne, with great privileges, as appeareth by his Letters Patents, this Priory was

An. reg. 6.  
S. John of Colchester.

1106  
An. reg. 7.

S. Mary Overy.

1107  
An. reg. 8.  
S. Henry put out the eyes of his elder brother Robert.

Histo. Dunstable.  
The 6. towne and Priory of Dunstable.

Record.

Ponger brother beguileth the elder.

An. reg. 4.

Lanthony by Gloucester.

Donmow in Essex.

1104

William earle of Spoxton disseised.  
W. Malmesbury.

An. reg. 5.

1105  
King Henry layd into Normandy.

valued at the generall suppression to dispend by the yere, 344 li. 14 s. 3. d. 10c.

Also this yere king Henry began to bulde the newe Castell with the Chappell and towne of Windsor, on the hill, one mile from the olde towne of Windsor.

This yere Maurice Byschoppe of London, Robert Fitzhamon, Roger Bigot, founder of the monastrie of Wonkes at Hertford, Richard de Reduers Counsellors to the king, Milo Cuspen, and manie other Noble men of England deceased, Richard de Bwemes was elected Byschoppe of London, and was consecrated by Anselme at Bageham, Gundulphus Byschop of Rochester deceased, after whome succeeded Radulphus.

1108

Gerard Archbyschop of Dorkie deceased at Southwell, when he had late archbyschop 7. yeres, and almost 6. moneths, and was buried at Dorkie. Thomas the younger, the kings Chaplaine, prouost of Beuerlake succeeded.

This yere the Byschop of the holy Trinity, within Aldgate of London, was founded by Matild the Quene, in the parishes of Mary Magdalene, Saint Michael, Saint Katherine, and the holy Trinitie, all which are now but one parish of Christs Church: in old time called holy Rode parish: the gate to the same Byschopricke the port of Aldgate, with the stocke therunto belonging, which was of her demaines, and is now called Aldgate ward.

Byschoppe of the  
Trinitie in  
London founde  
it.

Flemings sent  
into Wales.  
An. reg. 9.

King Henry with sundrie expeditions brought vnder him the Welshmen, and to pull downe their fortines, he sent all the Flemings that inhabited England thither, which Fleminges of late were come hither, when a great part of Flanders was destroyed, also in time of his father. by alliance of his mother, in so much, that through their greates multitude they seemed grieuous to the realme: wherefore he sent them all with their substance and kindred into Wose in Denbosheshire, a country in Wales, as into a finck, that he might cleanse the realme of such noisome people, and also suppress the wildnesse of the enimie: and not long after hee made expedition thither, compelling the Welshmen to giue him for pledges the sons of the Nobility, with some money, and much cattell, and returned.

1109

Three shillings  
sterling of land to the king

Henry Emperour of Rome, sent Messengers into England, requiring to haue Mawde the kings daughter giuen him in marriage, which was granted by the king, who then tooke thre shillinges of currie hyde of lande through England.

Canterburie  
records.  
Anselme Arch  
bisshop of Can  
terbury de  
ceased.

The 21. of Appill Anselme Archbyschop of Canterburie deceased, and on the next morrow after being on thursdai was buried at Canterburie, when he had late archbyschop 12. yeres, being of the age of 76. yeres, he bestowed on Christs Church in Canterburie much money, as well in building, as in ornaments, he wrote many booke upon the holy scriptures, he was twice expelled the realme, at the first for three yeres, and wanted the whole profit of his Byschoppicke. The seconde banishment was almost foure yeres long, and liued onelie two yeres after the second returning. After whose decease, King Henrie assumed the custome of his father, and brother, and inuadeth as well the possessions of the archbyschop of Canterburie then void, as of al. 4. ante that fell void. And puteth extremely in execution the decrees of the Synode at London, touching priests

wives,

wives, exacting of them great sommes of money, and at the last without respect, alloweth imposition in that respect vpon euerie Church, which diuers therein not guilty did cull like, and much curse. The archbyschop was void, after the death of Anselme five yeres and six daies, the king receiuing the reuerences, as from the beginning. He made saleable all spirituall promotions, selling to his Chaplaine Ragnolph the byschoppe of Durham for a thousand pounds, and Harbert losing the byschoppe of Ely for 10c.

Byschopps &  
other spiritual  
promotions  
sold for money.  
An. reg. 10.

Richard the tenth, and last Abbot of Ely deceased, and was buried among his predecessours at Ely. This Richard being a man of gre at wit, perceiving that the ancient priuiledges of his house were daily violatid, by sundrie great personages, especiallie, by the Byschop of Lincoln, who challenged episcopall iurisdiction ouer the house, notwithstanding that the same was clearly exempt thereto by the ancient priuiledges, went to the king, and dealt with him in such sort, that he obtained his regall consent, to chaunge the Abbe into a bischoppe: vnto the which place was named for the first bishop one Harucus then bishop of Worcester. And because there was yet no prouince assigned, where this new bishop should haue iurisdiction, the king sent for the Byschop of Lincoln Robert, and of him obtained, that the country then called Grantbidge might bee his prouince, and gaue vnto the Byschop of Lincoln the manor of Spaldwicke, in recompence of the iurisdiction which hee before had ouer the countie of Grantbidge, and so Harue was placed in the Byschoppe.

Lib. Eli.

He made a by.  
the Sea.

A Comet appeared after a strange fashion, for it was risen out of the east, and ascended upwards.

1110

A great Earthquake was at Shrewsbury, and the water of Trent at Nottingham was dyed by from one of the clocke, till thre, by the space of a mile, that men might passe ouer the channell by sho.

An. reg. 11.  
Floriacen  
Earle of Glo  
cester.

King Henry married Robert his bastarde sonne to Mawde, daughter and helre to Robert Fitzham, and made him the first Earle of Gloucester, who after buld the Castles of Wiltshire and Cardiffe, with the Byschopricke of Saint James in Wiltshire, where his bodie was buried. And his sonne Earle William began the Abbey of Benthum.

Castles at  
Wiltshire and  
Cardiffe  
Saint James  
a Byschop.  
Benthum.

King Henry went into Normandy to make war against the earle of Angew, which kept faith against the kings will, and spoiled the whole countrie.

1111  
An. reg. 12.  
Matthew Paris,  
Cro. Dun.

William Baynard, vnder whome Ladie Iuga helde the title of Dunmow, by misfortune lost his Baronie, and king Henne gaue it whole to Robert Fitz Richard the sonne of Gilbert Earle of Clare, and to his heires, together with the honour of Wapnarde Castell in London, and the appurtenances. This Robert was Cupbearer or Butler to the king. Robert Fitz Richard married Mawde de Saint Licio, Ladie of Bzadham, she gaue two partes of the towne of Bzadham to the Chanons of Dunmow.

Robert Fitz  
Richard.

About this time, Geoffrey Clinton, Treasurer and Chamberlaine to king Henry the first, founde the Byschopricke at Kenelworth of regular Chanons, Geoffrey Clinton the ponger, confirmed to the Chanons all which Geoffrey his father gaue them, except those landes which his father reserved, to make his Castle and Parke on in Kenelworth.

1112  
An. reg. 13.  
Kenelworth  
Byschopricke  
and Castle  
at Kenelworth.  
Lib. Ken.



Matthew Paris.

This yere was a sharpe winter, great dearth and mortalitie of men, and murraine of beastes of the field, and also of the house, and a great destruction of fowles.

1114  
An. reg. 13.  
Floriacen.  
Cro. Hanten-  
price.

The Cite of Worcester, the chiefe Church, the Castell and all other buildinges, one of the Honkes, with two servants, and sixtene Citizens, were all burnt the twentieth daie of July. The Cathedral Church of Excester was new builded, by William Warvill Bishop of Excester, he also founded the monastirie of Wilmpton in Devonshire.

The king subdued the Welshmen.

1114  
An. reg. 14.  
Spande daughter  
to Henry the  
first, married  
to Thimptrop.  
Chamers and  
Wedway by  
the  
Th. de Wike.  
Walker, Coucun.  
John Taxor.  
William Shep-  
heard.  
Lib. Rossinis.  
Chichester  
burnt  
A blazing Star.

The king caused all his Nobles to sweare to William his sonne, whome hee had by Quene Matilde. He also gaue his daughter Matild, the being but five yeres old, unto Henry the Emperour, the was married to him at Spents, and there consecrated Emperess.

The tenth of October, the riuer of Medway, by no small number of miles, did so faile of water, that in the midd of the Chancell the smallest vessels and boates could not passe. The selfe same daie the Thames did suffer the like lack of water, for betwene the Tower of London and the Bidge, and under the bidge, not onelie with horse, but also a great number of men and children did wade ouer on foote, which defect of water did endure the space of two daies.

The city of Chichester, with the principall monastery was burnt.

There was manie stormes, and a blazing Starre.

Thomas Archbishop of York deceased, and Thurston the kings Chaplaine is elected to that see.

1115  
An. reg. 16.  
Liber Trinitatis  
Knights  
Child, nold  
Portoken  
warde.

This yere through an hard winter, almost all the Bidges in Englande were bozne downe with yce.

Edgar sometime king of England graunted unto thirtene knights a portion of ground without the walles of the City of London, left void in the East part of the same Cite, together with a gilbe, which he named knighten Gilbe, that now is called Portoken warde, and now the Church of the holie Trinity being founded within Abgate of London by Matild then Quene, as is afore shewed. The successors of those knights, to witte, Radulphus Fitz Algede, Winiardle Douershe, &c. Came the foresaide landes called knighten Gilbe, to the same Church: but Odowerus, Accoliuillus, Otto, and Gessrey Carles of Gaster, Constables of the Towre of London by succession, withheld by force a portion of the same land, that is to say East Smithfield, nere to the Towre, to make a vineyard, and would not depart from it by any meanes til the second yere of king Stephen, when the same was adludged and reddeed to the church of the holie Trinitie.

1116  
First Parliam-  
ent at Salis-  
bury.

This yere on the 19. day of Aprill is Henry called a counsell of all the states of his realme, both of the Prelates, Nobles, and Commons, to Salisburie, there to consult for the good government of the common wealth, and the waygite affaires of the same, which Councell taking the name and fame of the French, is called Parliament. And this doe the Historiographers note to be the first Parliament in England, and that the kings before that time were neuer wont to call any of their commons or people to counsell or lawmaking, &c.

king

King Henry sayled into Normandy with a great army against the king of France, who with the Earle of Flanders, and other went about to make William sonne to Robert Courtoise Duke of Normandy, but at king Henries arrival, they returned home without honour. King Henry lay at Roane, and had great creations out of England.

This yere king Henry began the foundation of the Abbey of Cercester, or Churnecheester, which standeth upon Churne riuer. There was in this place before the Conquest, a faire and rich Colledge of Prebendes, Reimedes Chancellor to king Edward the Confessor was Deane of this house, and buried in the body of the church of Churnecheester, as appeareth by Epitaph on his tombe. King Henry also builded there the hospitall of S. Iohn, &c.

The Towne of Peterborough with the Natchy Church there, was burned downe to the ground. Also the Cite of Bath was burnt the same yere.

In March was exceeding lightning, and in December thunder and haille: and the Spone at both times seemed to be turned into blout.

The Priorie of Sperton begonne to be founded in Anno 1092. by Gilbert a Norman, Earle of Surrey, Cambridg, and Huntingdon, this yere he put Chaions regular there under Prior Robert.

This yere in Lombardy was an Earthquake, continued forty daies, which ouerthrew many houses, and that which was maruellous to be seene, a towne was moued from his seate and set a good way off.

King Henry had Morcard king of Ireland, and his successors so obedient unto him, that they would do nothing but what he commanded.

King Henry for his pleasure desired the wonderfull things of other Countreies, as Lyons, Leopards, Lincees, and Camels, of the which England hath none, craving them from kings, with great pleasure, hee had a Parke called Woodstocke, in which he kept such strange things, he put there amongst other, a beast called Strepe, or otherwise called a Porpentine sent him from William of Mountpillar, which beast amongst the Affricanes is counted as a kinde of Hedgehogge, couered with picking byssles, which they throw out naturally on the dogges that pursue them, &c.

Matilde the Quene wife to king Henry of England, deceased at Westmister, and was there buried in the Heustrie of Saint Peters Monastery. She was in her tender yeres brought up amongst the Nunnes at Winchester and Ramsey, in the exercises of learning and vertue. She founded the Priorie of Chyffes Church within the East gate of London, called Aldgate, with an Hospital of Saint Giles in the fielde, without the West part of the same Cite.

This Matilde, when she sawe the waie to be dangerous for them that frauailled by the Wde swode ouer the riuer of Aue (for she her selfe had bene well washed in that water) caused two stone bidges to be builded, in a place one mile distant from the Wde swode. Of the which, one was situated ouer Aue at the head of the towne of Stratford, now called Bowe, because the bidge was arched like unto a bow, a rare piece of worke, for before that time the like had neuer bene seene in England. The other ouer the little bowe,

p. 3.

come

An. reg. 14.  
Cro. Peice.

Cercester Ab-  
bey founded.

Peterborough  
burned.

1117

Sperton priory.

Temple and  
Earthquake.  
Floriacen.

An. reg. 18.  
Child: also in  
Woodstocke  
parke.

1118  
Matild the  
Qu. deceased.

Matthew Paris.  
Bathilbas  
Hospital.

Bidges, and  
an high way  
made ouer the  
riuer of Aue at  
Stratford.



commonly called Chancelbridge. She made the Kings high wale of grauell betwene the two bridges. Moreover, she gave Spanors, and a spille, commonly called Aliggon Hill to the abbess of Barking, for the repaying of the bridges and high wale. But afterwarde, Gilbert de Mountfichet builded the Abbey of Stratford in the marshes, the Abbot thereof by giuing a piece of money, purchased to himselfe the Spanors and Mill aforesaide, and couenanted to repaire the bridges and wale. Till at length, hee laide the charge vpon one Godfrey Prat, allowing him certaine loanes of bread daily, that he should repaire the bridges and wap. Who being holpen by the aide of trauallers, did not onely performe the charge, but also was a gainer to himselfe: which thing the Abbot perceiving, he withholdeth from him parte of the bread promised. Whereupon, Godfrey demaundeth a tole of the wayfaring men, and to them that denied, hee stopped the wale, till at the length, wearied with toyle, hee neglected his charge, whereof came the decay and ruine of the stone bridges and wap.

Now concerning these three middle bridges of Luc, of the which, two be builded of stone, they be proper to three milles: whereof, one the spallier of S. Thomas of Acres in London made, the other the spalliers of the Bridgehouse of London, two of them which belong to Esher, the Abbot of Stratford is bound to repaire. The third the Bridge-masters of London, for the land was excheated the 37. of Henry the third.

An. reg. 19.  
knights of the  
Temple.

About this time, certaine noble men of the horsemen being religiously bent, bound themselves in the hands of the Patriarke of Hierusalem, to serue Christ after the manner of regular Chanons, in chastitie, and obedience, and to renounce their owne proper will for ever. Of which order, the first was the honourable man Hugh Paganus, and Gawfride de Saint Andemare: and where at the first, they had no certaine habitation, Baldwin king of Hierusalem graunted them a dwelling place in his pallace by the Temple, and the Chanons of the same Temple gaue them the strate thereby to build their houses of office in, and the Patriarke, the king, the poples, and prelates gaue them certaine reuenues out of their Lordships. Their first profession was for safeguard of the Pilgrimes, to keepe the waies, against the lying in waite of thanes. About 10. yeres after, they had a rule appointed them, and a white habite by Pope Honorius, at that time, where they had bene nine in number, they began to increase into great numbers.

Afterward in time of Pope Eugenius, they had Crosses of red cloth sewed on their uppermost garments, to be known from others thereby: and in short time, because they had their first mansion hard by the Temple of our Lorde in Hierusalem, they were called knights of the Temple.

1119

This yere deceased Robert Beaumont Earle of Leicester, and William earle Morton was deliuered out of the Tower of London.

Many more battels were fought in France, and Normandie, betwene the king of England, and of France.

King Henry made peace with Fulco the Earle of Angeure, taking his daughter to bee wife to his sonne William, whome he had now made inheritor

four of all his kingdomes. After that, by the aduice of all his Lords, hee made peace with the king of France, and with the Earle of Flaunders: in the which peace, his sonne William toke Normandie into his possession, to hold the same of the king of France. Peace with France.  
An. reg. 20.

This yere was a great Earthquake in manie places of Englande, on the eight and twentieth daie of September, about the thirde houre of the day. 1120  
Earthquake.

King Henry in the evening of the 24. day of Nouember, minding to returne into England, losed from land at Barbeclote, and the wind brought him proudlie to his kingdome. An. reg. 21.

But William his son, somewhat more then 17. yeres of age, who through his fathers kingdomes, lacked nothing but the name of a king, commanted an other ship to be prepared for him, all the young sons of the nobilitie flocking thither for the company of him, as their play: forre and the sailers also tipped with too much wine, in lustines bagged that they would quicklie leane the other behind, that went out before them. So in the darknes of the night, the youth lacking wisdome, and overcharged with drinke, discharged the ship from the land: she sailth swift as an arrow, and cutting through the dauncing clouds, by the negligence of the drunken sailers, dashed vpon a rocke about water, not far from land. The poore soules rose with great cry, besirred them with their pyroned stanes, long labouring to get the shippe from the rocke: but fortune was against them, bying their paines to no purpose: so the side of the shippe, leaning against the rocke, cracked, and the broken sternes hung downe: noles it did cast some into the sea, and the water coming in, drowned other, when with casting out a boate, the kings sonne was taken in, and might haue bene saued by returning to land, had not his base sister the Countesse of Perche, wra-ling with death in the great ship, craued her brothers helpe. He moued with pitie, commanted the boate to be rowed to the shippe, that he might take in his sister, and straightwaite the boate did sinke, being overladen with the great companie that leaped in, and so drowned them all, onely one clowne escaped, which swimming all night vpon the spall, shewed all the chaunce of the tragédie in the morning. There was neuer shippe so miserable to England, nor so famous aboade. There was drowned with William, Richard the kinges other sonne that hee begate before his kingdome, of one of his Subiectes, Richard earle of Chester, his brother Owle the kings sons Tutor, the Countesse of Perche, the kings daughter named Marie, and his niece the Countesse of Chester, sister to Theobald, William Bigot, Geoffry Riddle, Walter de Curcie, Geoffry Archdrakon of Hereford, and also manie the best knightes, and Chaplaines that were in the Court, and noble mens sonnes fit to be knights, to the number of 160. persons, they came together to shew the kings son sport, or do him anie seruise they could: but they made the miserie the more, that they could not bee easilie founde, for searchers being placed all along vpon the sea coast, found scantie one of them. For the bodies were gone to be fode to the Mon-  
sters of the sea.

Peace with France.  
An. reg. 20.

An. reg. 21.

W. Malmesbury  
The hit: go chit:  
then drowned.

King Henrie married Adalasia, daughter to Godfrey Duke of Louan. at

King Henrie  
married the  
duke of Louan's  
daughter.

1121

Cly on the third day of January, who was consecrated and crowned at London in the feast of Whitsonide.

King Henry prepareth a great armie against the Welshmen, and came to Poweslmo: which then the Lords of the land, Meridith Apblichin, and the three sons of Cadogan, Encon, Madoc, and Morgan saw, they sent to Grillich ap Conan prince of Southwailes for succour: which he denayed them, for that he had made peace with the king.

Thus they hauing no hope of aide from him, purposed to defend themselves within their owne lande after the best manner they coulde, setting men to defend the straites, whereby their enemies must needs passe. And as it chanced, the king himselfe with a small number, came vnto one of those defended places, for his whole armie had gone a further way about, because of their cartages.

An. reg. 22.

At whose comming, the men which kept the straites, skirmished with the kings men, and hauing the vantage of the ground, slew some, and wounded many, amongst the which, the king himselfe was smitten with an arrowe on the backe, wherewith hee being wonderfully abashed, sent to parley with them that kept the passage, and at length being agreed with them for a thousand head of Cattell, returned into England.

Reading Abbey founded.

King Henry hauing suppressed an house of Nunnes in the towne of Reading, founded by Eluede mother in lawe to king Edward the martyr, founded there an Abbey of Blacke Monkes to the honoꝝ of God, our Ladie, and Saint Iohn Euangelist.

1122  
The Citie of Gloucester burnt.

The Citie of Gloucester with the principall Monasterie, was burnt againe, as it before had bene in the first yere of this kings reigne.

Radulphus archbishop of Canterburie, died at Canterburie, on the twentieth day of October, and on the third day after, he was buried there.

An. reg. 23.  
Sherborne made an abbey.

Also Iohn bishop of Bath, deceased, and was buried at Bath.

The same yere, Sherborne and Hoxton, were ioyned together, and made an Abbey by the gift of the king, and of Roger bishop of Salisburie.

1123

King Henry hauing kept his Christmas at Dunstable, went from thence to Warkhamstead, hauing in his company his Chamberlaine named Ranulph, he had bene sicke the space of twenty yeres, and yet notwithstanding was prompt to all euill, delighting in oppressing innocents: and as he brought the king home, minding to haue lodged with him, in the verie top of the hill that the kings Castle stand on, he fell from his horse, and ended his life in great misery five yeres after. And Robert Bloche Bishop of Lincoln, in the moneth of January, whilst at Woodstock he sat on horsebacke talking with the king, he began to speake dolefully of spechelesse, and being brought to his lodging, died suddenly.

The citie of Lincoln burnt.  
Cio. Peterbo.

The Citie of Lincoln for the most part was consumed with fire, which ragged in such violent and furious manner, that it deuoured houses men, and women, and did so much harme besides, that no man was able to report it vnto other, this happened on the 18. day of June.

William de Corboyle Pilot of Saint Oliffe in Essex, was by the king appointed

pointed to be archbishop of Canterburie, and was consecrated there on the 16. of Februarie. The bishopricke of Bath was giuen to Godfrey the Duques Chaplaine. And Alexander Archdeacon of Salisburie, was made Bishop of Lincoln.

King Henry sailed ouer the seas into Normandie, at which time, Robert Carle of Aquitaine went from the king: wherfore the king besieged his castle called Mount Andomoꝝ, and the same time he builded a great broad and high wall about the tower of Roane: he repayed the castle of Cane, he also fortified and made inuincible the castles of Arches, Silors, Falace, Argentine, Donfront, Drine, Ambros, Janroy, Juta, and the towne of Vernon.

He also builded the Castle of Warwicke.

Henry Carle of Warwicke, and Margaret his wife, founded the Colledge of Saint Mary in the towne of Warwicke, and Roger de Belemounde his sonne Carle of Warwicke, and Aelin his wife, translated the same Colledge out of the Castle of Warwicke into the parish Church of Saint Mary, in An. 1123. At that time were nine Parishes in Warwicke, Saint Sepulchre, Saint Ihellens, of these twaine were made one Bishopricke of Saint Sepulchre: Alhalowes, S. Michael, Saint Iohn, Saint Peter, S. Laurence, Saint James, these sixe last were ioyned to Saint Maries, in Ann. 1367. Saint Nicholas. Thus much for the towne of Warwicke, whereof moze shall be spoken in my larger booke.

Robert Carle of Melene, loyning to him Hugh de Mountfort his sisters sonne, and Hugh Geruase his sonne, entred by force of armes into Normandy, but William de Tankerville the kings chamberlaine, setting his men of armes in aray, fought with them, toke them and brought them to the king, who committed them to strait prison at Roane.

William Archbishop of Canterburie, as the king commanded him passed the seas, but to what purpose mine author beclareth not.

Money makers throughout all England, being taken with false money, had their right hands cut off, and also their priue members. After this, by changing of the money, all things became most deare, whereof a right sore famine arised, and afflicteth the multitude of people euen to death.

Henry the Emperour died, and was buried at Spire with his grandfather, Lotharius the 98. Emperour succeeded.

Iohn Cremenis Priest cardinall, by the kings licence came into England, and for the time of his abode here, looded in the Bishops pallace, and in Abbeies, not without great gifts and rewards taking of them, he keeping a solenne Synod or Council at London, when he had there most cruelly entreated of Priests concubines, saying, that it was much wickednesse, to rise from an harlots bed, to consecrate the body of Christ: And hee himselfe the same day had consecrated the body of Christ: After the which, in the euening, he was deteced of whoredome, the matter was so plaine, that it could not bee denayed, and thus hee turned his great honour, into the greatest shame that might be.

Henry the Emperour being dead, Mawde the Emperesse returned to her father

Roger Wind.  
King Henry  
builded castles  
in Normandy.  
An. reg. 24.Warwicke with  
the Colledge.

Lib. Warca.

Henr. Hunting.

An. reg. 25.

Money makers  
punished.  
1125Roger Wind.  
An. reg. 25.  
A Cardinall  
entering a  
priests  
concubines  
was deteced of  
whoredome.

1126.

Spawde the  
Empresse re-  
turned into  
England.

Floriacen.

An. reg. 27.  
Arch bishop of  
Dyke with  
his Croffe cast  
out of the kings  
Chappell.

Dehe to Spawd  
the Empresse.

her king Henry, and dwelt with the Quene in her chamber, because she was suspected of her husbands death. For he went awate by night, and chose to lue in pouertie.

King Henry held his court with great magnificence in his Castle of Wyndesore, and there assembled all the nobilitie of his Realme, where when the arch-bishop of Dyke would haue crowned the King equally with the archbishop of Cantuarbie, by the iudgement of all men he was repelled, the bearer of his Croffe, together with the Croffe, was throwne out of the kings Chappell: for it was affirmed that no Metropolitane out of his owne prouince might haue any Croffe borne before him. The feast being ended, the king with all the states of the realme together came to London, and there at the kings commandement, William the Archbishop, and the Legate of the Romish Church, and all other bishops of the English nation, with the nobilitie, took an othe to defend against all men the kingdome to his daughter, if she married her father, except that before his decease he begate some sonne to succede him.

The king also graunted to the Church of Cantuarbie, and to William and his successors, the custodie and Constablership of the Castle of Rochester for euer.

The Archbishop of Cantuarbie assembled a councell of Bishops, Abbots and other Prelats at Westminster, where they determined many causes concerning Ecclesiasticall busines: & the King with his councell confirmed them.

King Henry of England being beyond the Sea in Normandie, had great wars against William Earle of Flanders that was his nephew.

King Henry with a warlike armie invaded France, because Lewes king of France did defend William Earle of Flanders, the kings nephew, and loyging at Hesperdune, the space of eight daies, as safe as he had been in his owne Realme. He kept the king of France, from giuing helpe to the saide Earle of Flanders.

There came a certaine Duke out of Germanie who was named Theoderick, with a warlike power into flanders through the procurement of King Henry, to take his part and soine with him: but Earle William with a small companie, though his inuincible manhode, with his bloudie sword did cleaue and breake their great battaile, and caused them to fle: but when this William besieged the Castle of Angewer, or Alburst (as other haue) against King Henry, so that it should haue been yielded vnto him, though one wound in his hande,

An. reg. 29.

he died, but not without immortal fame. Ranulph bishop of Durham deceased, he raised the wals of the bodie of the Church of Durham vnto the roose, hee translated the bodie of Saint Cuthbert into that new Church, he compassed the citie of Durham with a wall, he continued diuers banks along the river of Wear, and built a great stone bridge vpon the same river with arches. He also built a Castle vpon a steepe hill called Rotham, vpon the river of Tyne, to resist the enemies. He built the Wapstall of Beper, and the bridge of Framwelgate. After the death of this Ranulph, the Bishoppicke of Durham was committed to two Barons, John de Maunde-vile and Geoffrey Excomband the elder, to the vse and profit of the King,

Colours of  
Durham built  
and the  
Wapstall of  
Beper.

1129  
Lib. Duncelm.

King, for the space of fixe yeeres and eleuen moneths.

King Henry returned out of Normandie into England.

And in the first of August, the king beganne a great councell at London, in the which councell, by authoritie of the Pope, the feast of the Conception of our Ladie was confirmed, the which councell of the Cleergie, (through the simplicitie of the Archbishoppe of Cantuarbie) were by the King deceiued, for they graunted the King to haue the erection of Justice concerning the foraeie of Priestes, for their keeping of concubines which the Bishoppes afterwarde repented so late: but they could not helpe it. For the king took infinite summes of money of Priestes, and suffered them to doe what they would.

About this time, men forgetting their byrth, transformed themselves by the length of their heares into the habite of women kinde. One of the knightes of the Realme, a man very proud of his long heare, at the length stricken in conscience, it seemed vnto him in his sleepe, that one did choake him with the heares of his head (for all men were shauen of their faces.) Wherefore, being awakened, he caused forthwith the superfluitie of his heares to bee cut off. Which example took place throughout all England for the time, and almost all the knightes were contented to haue their heares cut off. But one yere was scarcely past, when all that thought themselves courtiers, fell into the former vice, & so contended with women in their long heares, that when they were decayed, they knitte about their heads, certaine roles, and coverings, being ignorant, or forgetting the Apostles saying. Let it be a reproch vnto a man, if he endeuour to haue his heares grow long.

This yere Robert de Olley and Edith his wife, founded the Priorie of Wyndesore by Wyndesore.

The tenth of May the Citie of Rochester, in presence of the King was sore defaced with fire.

King Henry gaue his daughter Matild the Empresse, to Geoffrey Plantagenet Earle of Angewer, to be his wife.

King Henry in the moneth of August passed the sea into Normandie, where he remained for a time.

This yere King Henry returned into England. And Matild the Empresse also, the same yere, and calling a great assembly of noble men at Northampton, the former othe was renewed by them that had received it before.

A great murraine of cattell went ouer all England, so that the like had not bene sene in many yeres.

King Henry being sore troubled ofte times in his sleepe, declared the same vnto Grimbalde his Physician, the effect thereof was, that some time it seemed to him, that he saue a great multitude of husbandmen with their rusticall toles stande about him, threatening him, for wrongs done by him against them: Sometimes hee seemed to see his knightes and souldiers in armour, threatening him. Sometimes the Bishops, Abbots and Clergie, with their pastall staves threatening him: Which sight so feared him in his sleepes, that oft times he rose naked out of his bed, took weapon in hand,

Men contend  
with women  
in long heares.

An. reg. 36.

Henry by  
Wyndesore.

1130

An. reg. 31.

1131

King H. by  
troubled in  
his sleepes.

and

and sought to kill them, he coude not finde. Grimbalde his Whilition being a notable wile man, expounded his dreames by true conieature, and willed him to reforme himself with almes and prayer, as Nabuchodonosor did by the counsell of Daniel.

King Henry in  
danger of dyow-  
ning on the sea.

In the moneth of June, when King Henry was entred his Shippe to returne into England with his traine, the sea was wye troubled, so that the Shippe was in manner ouerwhelmed with the floodes, and the winde was contrarie unto him, so that seeing death at hand, hee bowed that the tribute called Dane gilt, should not for 7. yeres be creaced. He also vowed to repent him of his former life, to reconcile himselfe, and enen after to obserue iustice.

An. reg. 32.

The eight of October, a Comet appeared, and was seene sine daies toge- ther.

1123  
Bishoppiche at  
Carlisle

King Henrie made a Bishoppiche at Carlisle, and made Achulphe, Prior of S. Oswald his confessor bishop there, he placed there Chanons regular and in- dowed it with manie honours.

Henry the se-  
cond begin.

Mawde the Emperesse did beare a son to Geffery Plantagenet, earle of Angeb her husband, and named him Henry, which when the is her father knew, he called his nobles together at Wyford, where he kept his feast of Easter, in his newe hall with great roialty: He there ordained, that she and her heires should in- cede him in the kingdom.

An. reg. 33.  
London with  
Powles burnt.

The 14. day of May, a great fire beginning at Gilberts house in West Cheape of London, consumed a great part of the same city from thence Eastward to Abgate, with the priory of Chanons of the holy Trinitie there, and many how- ses of office thereto belonging, and Westward to Ludgate, consuming the great Church of S. Paul, &c.

Hospitall of S.  
Croule.

Henry Bloyle Bishop of Winchester, new builded the hospitall of S. Crosse, nere unto Winchester, which Hospitall had of olde time bene spoiled by the Danes.

The second daie of August there was great darkenes in England, the Sun became like the Moone in the third quarter. And the same daie manie Starrs appeared.

1123  
Great Earth-  
quake.

The 4. daie of August earlie in the morning, in manie parts of England an earthquake was felt, so that it was thought that the earth woulde haue sunke vnder the feete of men, with such a terrible sound, as was horrible to heare. The King at that time of the eclipse, passed ouer the sea into Normandy: but neuer returned againe allue into Engl and.

An. reg. 34.

In the Moneth of Nouember, the city of Worcester as of times before was burned and sore defaced by fire.

Geffery the kings Chancellor was made Bishoppe of Durham, and Harrie the first Bishop of Ely being dead, Nigelus the kings Treasurer was made bi- shop there.

1134  
Robert Courts-  
guice dyeth  
An. reg. 35.

Mauile the Emperesse brought forth a son named Geffery. This yere, when our Lorde Iesus, who willett not the death of a sinner, had giuen vnto Duke Robert of Normandy a sufficient space of repentance, wherein to humble himselfe, that is to witte, almost 30. yeres, which time he

liued in blindnes of eyes, and also in straitte prison in the Castle of Cardiffe he died and was buried at Gloucester.

1135

Godfrey Bishop of Bath deceased on the 16. of August. After whom succor- ed Robert a fleming by kinde, but bozne in Normandy.

Is. Henry remaining in Normandy, upon a day did eate Lampanes, where- of he took a surfeite, and deceased the first day of December, Anno 1135. when he had reigned 35. yeres 4. monethes: his bowels, bzaines, and eyes, were buried at Roane, the rest of his bodie was powdered with salt, and wrapped in Baldes hides, because of the stincke, which poisoned the m that stode about him. The Whilition which being byed with a great rewarde to cleaue his head to take out the bzaine, with the stincke thereof died, so that he enioyed not the rewarde that was couenanted. Thus among a great manie that King Henrie slew, this Whilition was the last.

An. reg. 36.  
Death of King  
Henry.  
Mathew Paris.

King Henry was buried at Reading, which he had founded. He also founded the Priorie of Dunstable, hee conuerted a rich Colledge of Prebends in the Towne of Etrenceller, into an Abbey of Chanons regular: hee also builded there an Hospitall of Saint Iohn: and new builded the Castle of Winton, by on the hill, with a Colledge there, one mile from the old towne of Winton. King Edward the thirde builded much of this Castle, encreased the number of Chanons in the Colledge, adding to the 8. Chanons, a Deane, and 15. Cha- nons more, and foure and twentie poze impotent knightes, and other Mini- sters, as appeareth by his Charter dated the two and twentieth of his raigne, hee founded there the order of the Carter. King Edward the fourth toke from the Colledges of Eton, and Cambridge founded by King Henry the first, almost a thousand pound by yere, and gaue to Winton. He also builded the faire newe church now bled, same onely the toppe and crossing, which was since finished by the Lord Reinold Bray, and other knightes of the Carter. In place of the olde Colledge church, King Henry the seuenth builded a Chappell, where he meant to haue bene buried: but altering his minde, lesse the same unfinished, and builded his Chappell at Westminster, he made the faire can- way betwene Winton and London. King Henry the eight made the outer gate-house, which is called the Erchequer of the Honour, where hath bene, and yet continueth a moneth court, kept by the Clarke of the Honour and Cas- tle, for the pleas of the Forrest and honours. In which, among other thinges, is to be seene the yereley account, of the charges, of the planting of the Wines, that in the time of King Richard the second grewe in great plenty within the little parke, as also of the making of the wine it selfe, whereof some part was spent in the kings house, and some parte solde to his profite, the tythes where- of were paie to the Abbot of Waltham, then parson both of the olde and newe Winton.

Colledge at  
Winton, founde  
by  
John Leyland.

Wine made at  
Winton, as in other  
partes of this  
realme.

King Edward the first beganne to bring water to the Castle: Quene Ma- rie brought it thither in conduits, the house was before serued by wellles: shee also for her parte, added the lodgings for the almes knightes, and placed there to the number of twelue, for there had not bene ante of manie yeres tofore, to wit, in the monie of men then liuing, whereby it was supposed, neuer as

reg.

ny to haue bene there. But true it is, I haue read in the Tower of London, a patent, graunted by Edward the fourth, in the two and twentieth yere of his raigne, to one Thomas Crabbe Esquire, to be admitted one of the almes knights at Windsor. Quene Elizabeth hath also much enlarged with buildings the said Castle. All which, whether you regarde the wholefomenesse of the ayre, and beaultie of the soyle, or the beauty, strength, and situation of the place, or the pleasant pastime arising out of the forest, chase, and soveretene parkes that wayte vpon it, or the good neighbourhode of the rich Riuer of Thames that runneth by it, I haue thought it good to set downe thus much.

This Henry the first also builded the manor of Woodstocke, with the park, which he walled with stone seven miles compasse, bestroyng for the same, diuers villages, churches, and chappels. This is the first park that euer was in England; he placed there, besides great store of oare, diuers strange beastes to be kept and nourished, such as were brought or sent to him from farre countries, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, Porcupines, &c. By his example, Henry Carle of Warwicke, made his park of Madgenoke, nere unto Warwicke, since called the old park. He had issue by Maule his first wife, a sonne named William, that was drowned in the sea, and a daughter named Maule, whom with her sonne he appointed to inherite the Crowne and Reialme. He had also issue by his concubines, a sonne named Richard, and a daughter named Mary, which were both drowned with their brother William, Robert fitz Roy, whom he made Carle of Gloucester, Reginald after ward made Carle of Cornewall, in the fift yere of the raigne of king Stephen, a daughter married to Alexander king of Scots, and other.

Rad. Dedico.

W. Malmes.

## King Stephen.

An. reg. 1.  
W. Malmes.  
Floriacens.  
Geraul. Doro.  
Ypodigma.



Stephen Carle of Boston, and of Boloigne, sonne to the Carle of Bloys, and Adela, William Conquerours daughter, and nephew to king Henry the first, claymed the kingdome in the month of December, Anno 1135.

He coming into England, was repulled by them of Dover, shut out by them of Canterbury, but receiued of the Londoners, and peers of the land, admitted king, and crowned at Westminster on S. Stephens day, by William Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry by

shop of Winchester, and Roger bishop of Salisburie.

This was a noble man and hardy, of passing comely fauour and personage, he excelled in martiall policie, gentleness and liberality toward all men, especially in the beginning: and although he had continuall war, yet did he neuer burden his commons with exactions: but vniuersally, and contrarie to his oath made to Mawde the Emperesse, daughter to king Henry, he took on him the crowne of England.

A fire

A fire kindled in the house of one Ailward nere unto London stone, consumed Eastward to Aldgate, and Westward to S. Erkenwalds chyrche in Pauls church. The Annales of Bermondsey, say, that London brdge was also at that time burned: which might well be, for then, and long before, there was a brdge of timber, as before I haue touched. And further, to confirme the same, I finde in the Annales of Bermondsey, that in anno Christi 1122. the 22. yere of king Henry the first Thomas Arderne gaue to the monks of Bermondsey the church of S. George in Southwarke, &c. with five shillings rent by the yere out of the land of London brdge.

Flemings entered into Denonshire, and besieged the Castle of Excester a long time, which Baldwin de Reduers held against them, but at length when they with in the Castle wanted necessary things to liue by, they compounded. Baldwin with his wife and children are disherited and expelled the land. From hence king Stephen went to the Isle of Wight, and took it from the said Baldwin de Reduers.

A battell was fought at Gohet, betwixt Normans and Welchmen, where a hundred and sixtie persons on both sides were slaine, whose bodies lay in the fieldes, and were horribly tose and deuoured of wolues.

After this were made great eruptions by the Welchmen, who destroyed churches, towne, castles, corne, cattell, newe men, women, and children, rich and poore, or solde them in foraine countries.

In October a sore battell was fought at Cardigan, in the which, such slaughter of men was made, (that the men except which were lede awaie captiue,) were of women taken and led away, that there remained to the tenth a thousand, their husbandes with their small children partly drowned, partly bznt, partly slaine, so that the brdge being broken ouer the riuer of Tude, there was a brdge made of mens bodies and boxes drowned.

In March king Stephen passed the Sea to subdue Normandie, where hee took manie Citiees and strong Castles, and made peace with the King of France.

The third of June Saint Andrewes in Rochester was bznt, with all the Cite, and the bishops and monkes skalles in the church. And on the fourth day of June S. Peters the Archbishopps Sea in Worke, S. Maries without the walles, and an Hospitall which the Archbishop Thurstone had builded, with 39. other Churches: also the Trinitie church in the suburbs of the same Cite, within a small time after were bznt. Also S. Peters Church at Wasse, and all the Cite, the 27. day of June was bznt. And the same moneth the Cite of Acogete was consumed with fire.

England began to fall into great troubles, which caused king Stephen to returne out of Normandy before he had finished his businesse there, so that he came ouer into England in the moneth of December.

King Stephen besieged Bedford and tooke it, then he went with a strong power into Northumberland, where he staid not long, but went to Gloucester, where the citizens receiued him with great reioycing. Miles the kings counsaile brought him into the kings pallace there, where all the citizens were

1136  
Lib. Trinitatis.  
Lib. Bermond.  
London lib.  
the bridge  
bznt.

Excester  
besieged.  
Ger. Dorob.

Battell against  
the Welchmen.

An. reg. 2.  
1137  
Ypodigma.  
Rochester bznt  
Richard Duicent.

Saint Peters  
in Worke bznt.

An. reg. 3.

1138  
King Stephen  
besieged Bed-  
ford.

to

to him swoyne. From thence he went to Hereford, because that he heard the Castle was holden against him: and on Whitsunday hee late crowned in the church of Hereford. When they that kept the Castle sawe the kings power to increase, they yielded themselves. The king took also the Castle of Webbhelegge, which Geoffrey Talbot had helde against him.

The same date that the king departed out of Hereford, all beyond the river of Wille was bzent by the said Geoffrey.

The king returned to Wroth, where he took Roger the bishop of Sarum, with the bishop of Lincoln, and his sonne Roger: the bishop of Ely escaping, went to the castle of Eves, and kept it against the king: but at length it was deliuered.

The same time Robert Earle of Gloucester renounced his allegiance to King Stephen, fortified Bristowe, and other castles. Also Miles the kings constable revolted.

Wherefore the king besieged the castle of Bristow, but at length being tired, he turned to other of the earles castles, and seeing his enemies still increasing, hee called out of Flaunders men of warre with William de Ypres their leader, whose counsell he chiefly followed.

An. reg. 4.

The same yere Roger bishop of Salisbury, a great builder of Castles and houses, departed this life. There was found in his coffers fourtie thousand marks of Silver, besides much golde, and diuers iewels that came to the kings hand, so that he had gathered treasure, but wist not for whom.

1139

Loceline a knight of Lincolnshire, hailing to his son one Gilbert, whome for some imperfection of his limbs, he thought vnnuete for the world, made him a Priest, gaue him a benefice in a towne of his owne in Lincolnshire called Hemperingham. This man was author of a religious order, which were called Gilbertines, and began in the reigne of K. Stephen, he inclosed within one house both men and women, but secured them by such high walls, that the one neither saw, nor heard the other. His order in his life time increased to r. houses, containing in all to the number of 700. brethren, and 1500. sisters.

The Nobles sent for Mawd the Emperesse, promising her the poss. Mon of the realme according to their othe made to her. In the meane time, David king of Scots, promising to reconer the crown of England for the Emperesse Mawd his nece, in most cruell wise invaded Northumberland, where, by Thurstone Archbishop of Yorke, the Stambert being set by at Aluerston, the Scots had an overthrow at Conton, more then foure miles Northwest from Aluerston, and were slaine about ten thousand, on the 22. day of August.

In the month of Iuly Robert Earle of Gloucester returned into England with his sister the Emperesse, and a great army, which arrived at Portsmouth. The Emperesse was receiued into Arundell castle by Adelze late wife to King Henry, as then wife or concubine to William Earle of Arundel.

Earle Robert went to Wallingforde, and thence to Gloucester, and raised those countries.

The king helde his siege before Marleborough, but aduertised of the Emperesse arrival, he halst towards Arundel, where being by false speech pacified,

Earle Robert  
besieged by  
King Stephen

he commanded his brother Bishop of Winchester to bring the Emperesse unto Bristow, and he himselfe followed earle Robert with his armie. The Emperesse staid at Bristow till October, and then went to Gloucester, her coming thither being knowne, Miles the high Constable, and manie other Nobles took part with her against King Stephen.

The king besieged Wallingford castle, but posted not, and therefore raising a Towre of wood before it, stuffed it with men of war, and went to win the castle of Spalmeburie.

The army of earle Robert won the citie of Worcester, bzent the most part of it, and laden with the spoile, departed thence.

The Shrike of that citie, in reuenge hereof, destroyed the towne of Sudley, and with the spoile thereof returned to Worcester.

After this the king with a great armie, came from Wroth to Worcester, where he gaue the honour of high Constableshippe (being taken from Miles of Gloucester) unto William the sonne of Walter Beauchampe, Shrike of Worcester, and then returned to Wroth, and so to Salisbury.

The king went to Reding, and after with his armie towards Ely, but the Bishop fled to Gloucester, to earle Robert, and the king won the castle of Ely, and spoiled Algellus the bishop (who was fled to the Emperesse) of all that to him appertained, and then returned.

Robert earle of Gloucester with a great power invaded the towne of Nottingham and spoiled it: the Townes men were taken, slaine, or bzent in the Churches whereunto they fledde. One of them more rich then the others was taken and led to his owne house by his takers, to shewe them where his treasure laie: hee bringing them into a lowe Sellar, whilst they were busie to breake open lockes and coffers, hee conuicted himselfe awaie, and shutting the dores after him, set fire on the house: and so the theues to the number of thirtie, were bzent, and by reason of this fire all the Towne was set on fire, and bzent.

King Stephen besieged Lincoln against Ranulph Earle of Chester, but Robert Earle of Gloucester, came with a great power, and rescued the same, chased the kings army, and took him prisoner on Candlemas day: first he was had to Gloucester, and after to Bristow, and there committed to prison, and put in prions.

The Emperesse reioicing at this her good hap, departed from Gloucester, and came to Cicester, with Bishoppes, Barons, and other in great number, from thence she went to Winchester, where met her Lords spiritual and tempozall in great number, the city with the Towre and Crowne of the realme was deliuered into her hands.

The Bishop of Winchester, that was K. Stephens brother, accursed all that stood against the Emperesse, and blessed those that took her part. From thence she departed to Wilton, where the archbishop of Cantebury came and saluted her. When Easter was past, she went to Reding, where she was receiued with all the honour that might be: thence she went to Wroth, where the castle was deliuered unto her by Robert de Olly: then went she to S. Albons, and was

King Stephen  
besieged Wall-  
ingford.

Worcester  
bzent and  
spoiled.

An. reg. 5.

1140

Nottingham  
bzent.

An. reg. 6.

1141  
King Stephen  
taken prisoner  
at Lincoln.

received with all honour. Here the citizens of London came and yielded the citie to her, whereupon she went to London, and so to Westminster, where she being received with procession, remained certayne daies, taking order for the state of the realme, and there she gaue the Bishopricke of London to Robert de Sigello a Monk of Reding.

King Stephens wife, and many Barres of the realme, made suite to the Emperesse to haue the king restored to libertie, and not to the kingdome, promising to perswade with him to become a Monk, but she would not heare. The Bishop of Winchester requested her to giue vnto Eustace his nephew, King Stephens son, his fathers Cardedome, but it would not be. The citizens of London required her to restore King Edwards lawes, but she being puffed vp with pride, would not grant their request, whereupon they conspired to take her prisoner: but she advertised hereof, fledde with shame, leaving behinde her all her furniture of householde and apparel.

Henry Bishop of Winchester, casting which way to deliuer his brother, perswaded the Londoners to aide him. The Emperesse got her to Oxford, and from thence to Gloucester, and thence with her assured friend Miles again to Oxford: because the trusted most in him, she to do him honor, gaue him the Cardedome of Hereford. And now having got a great army, about Lammas went againe to Winchester, and lodged in the Castle there. The Bishop abashed of her sodaine coming, departed out at one Gate, as she came in at another. He getting a great army, with the helpe of the Londoners besieged the citie, and the second of August committed the Citie to the fire, with the which, the Minnie, and houses of office, with more then twenty churches (some wighte fortie) and a great part of the city, with the monastery of S. Gimbald, and the houses there to belonging, were brought to ashes.

About the exaltation of the Crosse, the Emperesse being wearied of long siege, got her to horse backe with her brother Reginald earle of Cornwall, and many other. Eric Robert followed with a great number of lords and knights, but the bishops men setting on them, slew and toke a great number.

The Emperesse fled to the castle of Lutetshall heauie and almost dead for feare: from thence she was brought to the Castle of Kiers, and from thence to Gloucester, bound in a horse-litter like a dead carcasse.

Eric Robert being pursued, was taken at Stobbyslodge with Eric Waren, & many other, and presented to the queene, as then newly entred into Winchester.

Carle Robert was deliuered to William de Ypres, who put him in prison in the castle of Rochester.

Miles erle of Hereford hardly escaped, and came to Gloucester almost naked.

The bishops men burnt the monastery of Runnes at Marwel, &c. the books and ornaments of the Runnes were taken and borne away, and men staine euery before the Altar. These things thus done, the bishops wrath was somewhat appeased, but his couetousnesse increased, so that being prompted thereto by the Prior of the newe monasterie in Winchester lately burnt, he toke off of the Crosse that was burnt five hundred pounds of silver, & thirtie marks in golde, three crownes, with as manie seales of fine Arabike golde, set with precious

Winchester  
burnt.

The Emperesse  
fledde.

Carle of Glo-  
cester taken.

Carle of Here-  
ford fled.

precious stones: all this he laide vp in his owne treasure.

King Stephen and Carle Robert being straitly kept, at length through mediation of friends, a peace was concluded, that they should bee deliuered, the king to his kingdome, and the Carle to his libertie.

Geffrey Mandeuille fortified the Tower of London: and Robert Bishop of London was taken at Fulham by Geffrey Mandeuille.

Geffrey bishop of Durham deceased, when he had late bishop of Durham 13 yeeres: he builded the Castle of Aluerton, which he gaue to his nephew William, whom he toynd in marriage with the Carles neere of Albemarle.

The king and earle being set at libertie, did not onely reuue, but multiplie their malice: the king repayed his power and expences, the Carle went ouer the Sea to Geffrey Carle of Anlow, whome he found occupied in warres against certaine of his subjects of Anlow, so that he could not come into England with him: whereupon he taking Henry, eldest sonne to Geffrey Carle of Anlow, and Mawd the Emperesse, with certaine chosen men of armes, returned into England.

King Stephen hearing that earle Robert was gone out of the realme, and the Emperesse to lie at Oxford, with a great power came and besieged her two moneths space.

Carle Robert with Henry sonne to the Emperesse, and other his complices, landed at Warham, where he besieged the castle, which was defended by Hubert de Lucie, who at length yielded the same. In the meane time, the Emperesse seeing that she was void of all helpe, with a womanish subtilty deceiued the kings scout-watch, cloathing her selfe and her company, fine in number, all in white, and vpon a night went ouer the Thames on foote, which was then hard frozen, and white with snow: that night she went to Wallingford, and the Castle of Oxford was yielded to the king. After the winning of Warham castle, Robert went to visit his sister the Emperesse, who was not a little ioyfull to see him and her young son Henry, which Henry remained at Wiltow for the space of foure yeeres, and there was brought vp in learning.

King Stephen after the robbing of many churches, burning and robbing of towns and villages by the hands of the Fleming soldiers, he and his brother Henry bishop of Winchester, builded a castle of the Runny at Wiltow, to represse the incursions of them of Salisbury. Carle Robert the first of July fell suddenly vpon them in Wiltow, and set the towne on fire. The king with the bishop fled with shame, the earles men toke the kings people, and sacht his plate and other things: there were taken of the kings men berie many, and among other, William Martell seldner to King Stephen, who was sent to Wallingford, there to be kept prisoner. William de S. Barbara was made bishop of Warham.

Miles earle of Hereford died and his eldest son Roger succeeded him.

William of Ypres founded Worley Abbey in Kent.

King Stephen toke Geffrey Mandeuille Earle of Essex, at Saint Albons: which Geffrey could not be set at libertie till he had deliuered the Tower of London, with the Castles of Malden and Plyer. When the Carle was thus

King Stephen  
and Robert  
Carle of Glo-  
cester deliuered  
by exchange.  
Alfredus Beuerla.

An. reg. 7.  
1142

The Emperesse  
besieged.

Warham ca-  
stle besieged.  
The Emperesse  
fledde.  
Gervasius.

An. reg. 8.  
1143

Wiltow burnt.

King Stephen  
fledde.

An. reg. 9.  
Worley.

1144  
Gervas. Dora

Geffrey Maud-  
deville earle of  
Gloucester.

spoiled of his holdes, hee took the church of Hamsey, and fortified it: as hee be-  
sieged the castell of Burwell, he was smitten in the head with a dart, wherof he  
died. Robert Marmion was also slain at Coventry, and Ernulfus earle Man-  
deuilles sonne, that held Hamsey Church as a foytrefse, after his fathers death,  
was taken and banished.

An. reg. 10.

1145  
Wallington  
besieged.

An. reg. 11.

1146

King Stephen besieged Wallington, but could not pzeuaile. The earle of  
Chesler was reconciled to the king, and was at this siege with him, but shortly  
after when he came to the Court, the king lying at Spothampton, hee was ta-  
ken and kept prisoner, till he had renoyed the castell of Lincoln and other foy-  
trefses, whereupon he was the kings enemie ever after.

Geffrey earle of Anslow, and now duke of Normandie, sent foure noble men  
with furniture of warriours to Robert earle of Gloucester, requesting him to  
sende ouer his sonne Henry, and if néede required, hee would send him backe a-  
gaine with all speede. The earle agréing to his request, brought the young  
Henry to Warham, where he took shipping towarde his father, of whome he  
was so fullie receiued, there he abode two yeres, and foure monethes. In the  
meane time earle Robert deceased, and was buried at Wyllow, in the quier of  
the Church of S. James, which he had founded.

Robert Earle  
of Gloucester  
deceased.

An. reg. 12.

1147

An. reg. 13.  
The Empresse  
went into Nor-  
mandy.

King Stephen entered Lincoln, and there wore his Crowne, after whose  
departure from thence, the earle of Chesler came to recover the town, but could  
not bring his purpose to passe, the citizens shewed such defence. The Empresse  
being wearied with the discord of the English nation, went ouer into Norman-  
dy, choosing rather to sit vnder the defence of her husband in peace, then to suffer  
to mainte displeasures in England. King Stephen banished Theobald Arch-  
bishop of Canterbury, and the archbishop interdicted al the land that was sub-  
iect to the kings dominions, till peace betwene them was made.

1148

An. reg. 14.  
S. Mathew.  
W. Dunthorne.  
Lib. Trinitatis  
London.

The D. lay at S. Austens in Canterbury, because she was desirous to see the  
Abbey of Feuertham finished, which she & her husband had begun to build; she  
also builded the hospital of S. Katherin by the Colyge of London, for poore bre-  
thren and sisters. Robert Fitz Harding sometimes Prior of Wyllow, whose  
father was a Dane, hauing founded the Monasterie of Saint Augustine in the  
towne of Wyllow, this yere placed Chanons there, which foundation was af-  
ter confirmed by king Henry the secon.

1149

Roger Houeden.

In the moneth of May, Henry the Empresse sonne, with a great companie  
of chosen men of armes and other came into England, vnto whome foytwithy  
manie Castels and strong holdes were deliuered, and hee made a newe coine,  
which was called the Dukes coine, and not onlie he, but also al the potentates  
of the Realme, as well byshops, as earles and barons, had each one his owne  
coine: but afterward the duke did inhibitte the most part of these coines. The  
Duke taking with him Ranulph earle of Chesler, Roger earle of Hereford, and  
diuers other, he went to David king Scottes, of whome he was so fullie recei-  
ued, & made knight. When king Stephen heard, that David king of Scots, with  
his strength, and Henry son to the Empresse with his westerne Lordes, were to-  
gether at Carlisle, he came to Wyke with a great army, for feare they should  
attempt anie thing against that Citie, and so laie there the moneth of August.

at

at length the one partie as well as the other departed: but Eustacius the kinges  
son being made knight, exercised many cruelties in the lands of the earles, that  
took part with Henry the Empresse sonne.

Henry the Empresse son, being made knight, sailed into Normandy. All Eng-  
land was full of trouble and noise of war, set forth to fire and rapine, through  
discord betwixt king Stephen, and certain earles that took part with Henry the  
son of the Empresse.

Robert earle Ferrers, founded the Abbey of Spertuall.

Geffrey Plantagenet earle of Anslow, and duke of Normandie deceased, and  
left his son Henry to be his heire.

A divorcement was made betwene Lewis king of France, and Elianor his  
Quene, because they were a kin in the 4. degree. Spozoner, she was defamed  
of adultery with an Infidell, &c.

King Stephen besieged the Castell of Worcester, which hee could not  
winne the last yere, and then he sawe note also that hee could not obtaine  
his purpose, he builded two Castelles before the same, stocking them with gar-  
risons, and went from thence, but by counsell of Robert Earle of Leicester,  
the kinges castelles were overthrowne, and the castell besieged, deliuered from  
danger.

Henry Duke of Normandie, took to wife Elianor, sole daughter and heire  
to William Duke of Aquitaine, shee was first married to Lewes, the seventh  
of France, by whome shee had two daughters, whereof, Mary the eldest, was  
married to Henry the Large, earle of Champagne: Ales the second, to Theo-  
bald, earle of Bloys. Lewes king of France, was divorced from Elianor, and  
yet was not content with this second marriage, because hee was loath, that  
anie other should beget sonnes by her, whereby his daughters might bee dis-  
herited.

King Stephen called a Parliament at London, declaring to Theobald arch-  
bishop of Canterbury, and the other byshops, howe he would utterly disherite  
Henry duke of Normandie, and confirme his owne sonne Eustace to be his suc-  
cessor by crowning him king: but the Pope had sent a commandement to the  
Archbishoppe, prohibiting him to crowne king Stephens sonne, because his fa-  
ther had usurped the kingdome, contrarie to his Othe. Which thing (as was  
thought) was brought to passe by the subtiltie policy of Thomas Becker, a Chap-  
laine borne in London.

King Stephen and his sonne, being not a little offended at the rebell, caused the  
byshops with their Diuites to be closed vp in an house, threatening with terrors  
to extort of them, that which with prayer or pice they could not obtaine. The  
Archbishoppe stilled standing in his purpose, some of the Byshops through feare  
went from him, at length the archbishop by a marvellous hap, escaping, got o-  
uer the Thames, and so to Dover: and thence transporting over the seas, esca-  
ped the threats of the king and his son, and depyrted his sonne of his court to  
honour.

Quene Mawde deceased at Haringham castel belonging to Albek de Vere,  
Earle of Norfolk, and was buried at Feuertham in Kent.

D 3.

The

An. reg. 13.

1150

Ex charta regia

Ypodigma.

Geraulfus.

An. reg. 16.

1151

Mathew Paris.

Genual, Dno

Choristrey

besieged.

An. reg. 17.

1152

Archbishop  
sent vp in pri-  
son.



Poswich in-  
creased.  
Chronicle of  
Mornholme.  
An. reg. 18.

The people of Poswich obtained of the king to have coroners and bailiffes; for before that time, they had no other officer, but a Sergeant for the king that kept Courts, and after this, that is to say, in the seven and thirtieth yere of Henry the third, they had licence to inclose that towne, with ditches got of sundrie hundredes, &c. William de S. Barbara Bpshop of Durham deceased, when he had reigned Bpshop there 9. yeres.

1153  
Palmerie  
Castell and  
Coloure donne  
by Henry Duke  
of Normandie.

Henry duke of Normandy furnished with an army, came into England, and at his first coming to the castell and towne of Spalmeburie, from thenceforth Robert the noble earle of Leicester, beganne to take the dukes part, and to furnish him with things necessary, 30. castles or mo (through his counsell with them that kept them) submitted themselves to the duke: At length it was decreed, that the king should talke with the duke touching peace to be had: and so they met in a place where the Thames was most narrowe, the one standing on the one sho, and the other on the other. After long talke they returned, the duke to his men, and the king to his, and so laying downe weapon, every man departed in peace. The Towne of London, and the Castell of Winlesore, were delivered to Richard de Lucy to be safely kept.

Polyconicon.  
John Sarisb.  
John Taxtor.  
Mathew Paris.

Eustace the kinges sonne was angry with his father, for agreeing to this peace, and therefore in a rage departed from the court towards Cambrige, to destroy that Conterpy. Coming to S. Edmundsbury, he was there honorably received and feasted, but when he could not have such monie as he demanded, to bestow among his men of warre, he went awaie in a rage, spoiling the corne in the fields belonging to the Abbey, and carried it into his castles there by: but as he late him down to dinner, he fell mad upon receteling the first moy sell, and miserable died, and was buried at Feversham.

Eustace king  
Stephens son  
dyed.

Stamford,  
Nottingham,  
and Ipswich  
buried.  
Ex charta regia.  
An. reg. 19.  
King Stephen  
adopted Henry.

Elian or wife to duke Henry dyd beare him a son named William, which was a name proper to the dukes of Aquitaine and Anjou.

The duke besieged Stamford Castell, and want it, and then he went to Nottingham and thence to that. The king in the meane time besieged Ipswich and thence to that. At length, through the great labor of the archbyschop of Canterbury, and the other bishops, the king commanded the nobles to meet at Winchester, where the duke being received with great soie, the king, in sight of all men adopted him his sonne, and confirmed to him the principality of all England. The duke received him in place of a father, granting to him all the duties of his life to enioie the name and seate of the kings preheminance.

William Archbyschop of Poike, about the feast of Pentecoste, died at Poike of poison, as some supposed, and was buried in his Cathedral Church of Saint Peter.

Duke Henry in the Dawes of the Epiphany, came together with the king to Oxford, where the earles and barons by the kinges commandement swore fealtie to duke Henry, leaving the kings honors so long as he lived. This assurance being made, they departed asunder, but shortly after they met againe at Dunstable, there to intreat of the state and peace of the kingdom.

Shortly after duke Henry with King Stephen and certaine Lords of England came to Canterbury, and from thence to Dover, where they had communica-

nication with Theodrike Erie of Flanders, and the countesse the dukes Aunt. When the king and the Duke had dismissed the Erie of Flanders, and were turning towards Canterbury, the daughter of the Duke was prepared by a conspiracie of the Flemings which envied both the Duke and peace: but behold, sodainly the kings yonger son William priue with the conspirators, on Barham Downe fell off his horse, and breaking his legges, he gathered all the company about him in sorow. The Duke in the meane time understanding the appointed treasons got him to Canterbury, and so escaped his enemies hands: from thence by Rochester and London, he came to the sea, and passed over into Normandie.

Hugo de Puteaco, treasurer of Poike and Archdeacon of Winchester, was made bishop of Durham.

In October the king met the Erie of Flanders againe at Dover, and talked with him.

After the earle was dismissed, the king was taken with a sodaine paine of the Illiack passion, and with an olde disease of running of the Emures, and there in the house of the Monkies died the five and twentieth of October, when he had reigned eightene yeres, tenne moneths, and odde daies. He founded the Abbeies of Cogshall in Essex, of Furnelle in Lancashire, and Feversham in Kent, where his bodie was buried for the time, but since the suppression of that house, for the lead that inclosed his bodie, the same bodie was throwne into the next water. Hee founded an house for Nunnes at Carew, and an house of Nunnes at Higham, foure miles from Chawesend. He also founded an Hospitall by the West gate of Poike, whereunto he gave all the oates that had bene used to be gathered betwixt the river of Trent and Scotland, for feeding of the kinges houndes, which was foure and twentie sheaves of cuerie plowland by yere, he appointed the Deane and Chanons of S. Peters church in Poike, to gather them to the reliefe of the said Hospitall, and caused Nigell Spio of Poike to deliver that place by the West wall for to receive the poze and lame, &c. Matild his wife founded the hospitall of Saint Katherine by the Tower of London, in a portion of land, which pertained to the Priory of the holy Trinity in London, but then purchased with the Will, by exchange of five poundes the yere land out of the kings manors of Wyaking. He had issue first a bastard son named William Erie of Warren, then Mathew earle of Beame, Mary, first Abbess, and then a Countesse, and Eustace that died before his father, as also Baldwin his sonne, and Matild his daughter, wife to the Erie of Millent, which two last named were buried in the Priory of the holy Trinitie in London. He had also a sonne named Genasius de Bloys, hee was abbot of Westminster 11. yeres, and was there buried, with this Epitaph.

King Stephen  
dyed.  
Gera. Doro.  
Rad. Cogshall.

Issue of king  
Stephen.

John Fiere.  
Bisshop of West.  
minster.

*Derequm genere pater hic Genuasius ecce,  
Et de defunctis, mors rapit omne genus.*

## King Henry the second.

*An. reg. 1.*

Henry the second, son of Geoffrey Plantagenet and Maud the Empress, at the age of twenty three years, beganne his raigne ouer this Realme of England, the five and twentieth date of October, in the yere of our Lozbe 1154. hee was crowned at Westminster the seventeenth date of December, by Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury: he was somewhat red of face, short of body, and the rest with fat: of spech reasonable, well learned, noble in chivalrie, and fortunate in battell, wise in counsell, one that loved peace, liberall to strangers, but hard to his familiars: unstedfast of promise, given to pleasure, and a webloke breaker: by his manhood and pollicie the crowne of England was much augmented, with the annexing of Scotland, Ireland, the Isles of Brytaine, Poytiers, Guyen, and other provinces of France.

Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterbury, was made the kings Chancellor, and was now in such favour, that he was accounted the kings governor, for he was chiefly directed by him in all things.

*Gera. Doro.*

1155

Firmings voted out of England.

He held his Christmas at Bermondsey, where having conference with his nobles, for the state of the kingdom, hee promised to banish all strangers. Whereupon William of Pyres, and all the Flemings that had flockt into England, fearing the indignation of the new king, departed the land. And the castles that had bene builded to pill the rich, and spoile the poore, were by the kings commandement, and counsell of his Chancellor throwne downe. The king visiting the cite of Poole, in that countrey received divers castles into his hands, namely amongst other he toke the Castle of Scarborough, from William earle of Albemarle.

In March Quene Elianor did beare a son at London called Henry after his father.

Line of the Saxons trusted.  
Gera. Doro.  
Rad. Dedico.

King Henry was sonne to Maud the Empress, whose mother was Maud Quene of England, wife to king Henry the first, and daughter to Margaret Quene of Scots, who was daughter of Edward, which he begate of Agatha, the sister of Henry the Emperour.

Edward was the sonne of king Edmund named Ironside: whose father was king Etheldred, whose father was the peaceable king named Edgar, the son of Edmund, the son of Edward the seignior, the sonne of Alured, &c.

*An. reg. 2.*  
Gera Doro.

1156

A counsell was holden at Wallingford, where the nobles were sworne to the king and his issue.

King Henry went over into Normandie, to whom when he was at Roane, came Toriaus earle of Flanders with his wife the kings aunt, that he might reconcile unto him Geoffrey his brother, which was then come thither also for that purpose: but Geoffrey not accepting the pointes offered by the king, they departed without any agreement, Geoffrey expelling Hoel out of Brytaine, toke the cite of Paunty, by yielding of the citizens. And king Henry afterwards

ward

ward with long siege toke the Castles of Spireable, and Chinon, which Geoffrey his brother had helde, whereupon there was a peace concluded betwixt them, that the king should give to Geoffrey, euerie yere a thousand pound of English money, and two thousand pound of Angeioin: and thereupon the third Castle called Loudune was yielded to the king, and so was the dissention appeased, and king Henry obtained homage, and pledges of all Aquitaine, and Gascoigne, and prepared to returne towards England.

This yere Quene Elianor brought forth a daughter named Mauid. And the same yere died William the kings eldest sonne, and was buried at Reading.

King Henry coyned new money, which onely was currant in this Realme, *An. reg. 3.* and all other coines were forbidden.

Conon Earle of Richmond coming out of England into Brytaine, toke the cite of Medonens, expelling Eudo, which Conon afterward was received as Duke ouer almost all Brytaine.

*Nicholas Tre.*

King Henry having overcome his brother Geoffrey returned into England, then with an army went against the Welshmen, where he felld their wodes, fortified the castle of Rudland, and recovered many strong holdes. He reedified the castle of Wasingtoirke, &c. but he lost many of his men, for Henry of Essex that bare the kings standard, as he was assailed amongst his enemies, let fall the standard to the ground, which encouraged the Welshmen in such sort, that the king being sore distressed, had much ado to saue himselfe, and was faine to fle: of whose part, Eustace sir John, and Robert Curcis, two woorthy knights, with diuers other noble men and gentlemen were slaine. After that Owen ramped and intrenched himselfe at Bryantine, and furnished with the kings men daily. And in the meane while that the king was fortifying the Castle of Rudland, his nauy which was guided by Madoc ap Meridich prince of Powesse, anchored in Span of Anglesey, and there spoiled two Churches, and part of the Isle, but as they returned, were all slaine. In the meane time there was a prate concluded betwixt the king and the prince.

Quene Elianor brought forth a son named Richard, at Wyford in the kings pallace there, which pallace was since made a church of white friers.

William Earle of Gloucester was taken by the Welshmen in the Castle of Carosife.

*Giraldus Camb.*

On Christmas day, king Henry wore his Crowne at Worcester, where, after celebration of diuine seruice, he set his Crowne upon the Altar, and neuer wore it after.

1158

King Henry went into France, and at Paris was ioyfully received of king Lewis, who required to haue his daughter Margaret to be married to his sonne Henry, which suite he obtained, and king Henry obtained, that as Seneschall to the French king hee might enter into Brytaine, and call afoze him such as made waite one against another, to appeale them, whereby he brought the cite of Paunty to his dominion.

An earthquake happened in many places through England: and the river of Thames was dyed dy, that at London men might walk ouer the same dryshod.

Quene

An. reg. 5.  
Ypodigma.  
1159  
Gervasius.

Quene Eleanor brought forth a sonne named Geffrey.

A new copine was made in England. King Henry tooke cleuage of the Englishmen, the summe whereof grew to 12400. pounds of silver. Of other countries subiect to him hee gathered also an infinite cracion, and then passed toward Holouise with an huge army, and besieged that Citie from Whidommer till Wallantone. There were with him Malcolm king of Scots, and a certaine king of Wales, and all the Barons of England, Raymond, Aquitaine, Anjou, and Gascoigne: but Lewis the french king so defended that city, that the kings purpose was frustrate, and the siege raised: and after great god peace and concord betwixt them made, a great discord shortly after followed.

An. reg. 6.  
1160  
Gerv. Doro.  
An. reg. 7.

King Henry returned from Holouise, and Henry the king of England's son, not 7. yeeres olde, married Margarett the french kings daughter, that was not yet 3. yeeres olde.

In this meane time the king, although he were much troubled with wars, yet was he not unmindefull of Ireland. For directing his messengers to Rome with the letters of abuses, gotten at the counsell of Cassels, he also obtained by their saile, of Pope Adrian (an Englishman by birth) a priuiledge, both to haue the dominion of the Irish people, with his authoritie and consent, and also to instruct them in the rudiments of faith and ecclesiasticall rites, after the order of the church of England. Which priuiledge, being sent ouer into Ireland, by Nicholas of Walsingham, then Bishop of Ely, and afterward Abbot, and also by William Fitz Adelme, immediately there was a synode of Bishops assembled at Waterford, wherein it was read in publicke audience, with generall consent of all, by Iohn Bishop of Salisbury, afterward Bishop of Charters, who was sent to Rome for that purpose, and by him the foresaide Pope Adrian sent a ring of golde to the king of England in token of the inuestiture, which was incontinently laide by with the priuiledge in the arches of Winchester. Wherefore, I thought it not superfluous to set downe here the tenore of that priuiledge, but first a word of two of Pope Adrian, because I haue saide, he was an English man, his name was Nicholas Breake-speare, borne at Langley in the Countie of Hertford, sonne to Robert a younger brother of the house of Breake-speares, which Robert after the death of his wife, professed himselfe a Monk of S. Albons, leaving his son to prouide for himselfe. This young man passed into France, was thorne a Monk, and after chosen Abbot, went to Rome, was consecrated Bishop of Alba, made Cardinall, sent Legate to the Spanyards, where he reduced that nation from Paganisme to christianitie, and after returned to Rome, when Anastasius was dead, he was chosen Pope, by the name of Adrian the fourth, and now followeth the priuiledge.

Giraldus Cam.

The licence of Pope Adrian the fourth, to king Henry the second to enter Ireland, out of an ancient written booke intituled, Topographia Hibernia, &c. by Giraldus Cambrensis, and dedicated to the said king Henry the second.

Adrian Pope  
his Epistle to  
king Henry.

Adrian Bishop, servant of the servants of God, to his dere sonne, the most excellent king of England, health and Apostolike Benediction, your highnes resolution in the lawfull, and fruitfull spredding abroad your glorious name on earth, and in obtaining the reward of eternal felicitie in heauen, while you determine

determine like a Catholike Prince to enlarge the boundes and limits of the church, to declare to the vblearned and rude people, the truth of the Christian faith, and to rote out of our Loyds ground the plants of wickednesse; and towards the performance thereof, you require the counsell and fauour of the Apostolike seate: In which action, with how much the more graue counsell, and deeper consideration, you doe procede, so much the more fortunate successe therein (God assisting you) we nothing doubt you shall haue, for that alwaies they are wont to attaine to a good and happy ende, which take their beginning from the zeale of faith, and loue of true religion. For Ireland, and all other Islands, to the which Christ the Sonne of iustice hath giuen light, and which haue receiued the instructions of the Christian faith, there is no doubt but they doe appertaine and belong to the right of Saint Peter and the holy church of Rome, which also your excellencie acknowledgeth: wherefore how much the more plentifully we do seate in them the faithfull plant, and graffe the bad acceptable to God, so much the more doe we see that shall bee more straitly required of vs in our inward thoughts: You haue signified to vs (most dere son in Christ) that you will enter into the Ile of Ireland to subdue that people vnto lawes, and that there you will enterprize the plantes of vices, and that you will paie a yearly pension of one penny for euerie house there to S. Peter, and that you will preferue the rightes of the churches there, whole and inuioleat. And we following with a great fauour your godly and laudable desire, doe gratefully accept, and willingly consent that you do enter into that Island to enlarge the boundes of the Church, to restrain the course of wickednes, to correct manners, to plant vertue, and augment the Christian religion, and that you doe put in execution those things that shall appertaine to the honour of God and saluation of that land, and the people there shall receiue you honourably, and as their Lord shall reuerence you, the churches right remaining sound, and no way infringed, and alwaies reseruing to S. Peter, and the holy church of Rome, the yearly pension of euerie house there. If therefore you bring that to passe, which in your mind you haue conceived, in order to informe that nation in good manners, and couet as well by your selfe as by others to instruct such as you perceiue capable in this faith, in this word, and in this life, that the church there may be adorne, the religion of the Christian faith may be there planted, and may there rest, and that those things that pertaine to the honour of God and saluation of soules be so ordered and disposed of, that of God you may receiue the full measure of euermouring reward, and in earth obtaine a glorious name for euer.

This that followeth is adscript to the former Epistle of Pope Adrian the fourth, being an English man, written to king Henry the second.

I beleue in God fadir almighty shipper of heuen and earth,  
And in Ihesus Crist his onlethi son vrc Louerd,  
That is iuange thurch the holy ghost: bore of Mary maiden,  
Tholede pine vnder Pounce Pilat, picht on rode tree, dead and yburiid,  
Licht into helle, the thriddie day from death arose,  
Steich into heauen, sit on his fadir richt honde God almighty,

Petrus,  
Andreas,  
Iacobus,  
Iohannes,  
Thomas,  
Iacobus Alpha.

Then

Philippus. Then is cominde to deme the quikke and the dede.  
 Bartholomeus. I beleue in the holy gott,  
 Matheus. All holy chirche.  
 Simon. Mone of alle hallwen: forgiuenis of sine,  
 Thadus. Fleiss vprising,  
 Mathias. Lif without end, Amen.

The Silence  
 counsell.

*Est symbolum triplex, sc. illud qui in prima dicitur sc. quicunque vult. Et illud est Athanasij patriarche Alexandrina. Aliud quod dicitur in missa, sc. Credo in unum deum. Et illud fuit sanctorum patrum in Niceno concilio. Tertium quod est commune omnium fidelium, & illud ex 12. apostolorum continens 12. articulos fidei.*

*Pater noster in Anglico.*

Vre fadir in heuene riche,  
 Thi name behaljd euerliche,  
 Thoubring vs to thi michilblisse,  
 Thi will to wirche thu vs wisse,  
 Als hit is in heueneido,  
 Euer in earth ben hit al so,  
 That holi bred that lasteth ay,  
 Thoufend hitous this ilke day,  
 Forgiue ous all that we hauih don,  
 Als we forgiuet vch other mon,  
 He let vs falle in no founding,  
 Ak seilde vs fro the foule thing, Amen.

*Ex siluestri Giraldo Cambrensi in sua Topographia Hibernia ad regem Anglie Henricum 2.*

1161

Mathew Earle of Bolonia married Mary abbess of Ramsey, daughter to king Stephen, and had with her the countie of Boloigne.

Thomas Wikes.  
 I. Beccia.

Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and the church of Canterbury was bothe one yere, one moneth, and foure tene daies: he had sate Archb. shop 22. yeres, and was buried at Canterbury.

Mathew Paris.

King Henry caused all his subiectes to sweare fidelitie to his sonne Henry concerning his inheritance. Thomas the kings Chancellor toke his othe, first, sauing his fidelitie to king Henry the father, so long as hee liued. This Thomas was elected Archbishop of Canterbury, and when he was consecrated, he forthwith refused to deale any more with matters of the court, renouncing the chancellorship, &c.

An. reg. 8.

1162

Willm. Noubour.  
 Ralph. Cogshall.

There came into England 30. Germans, as wel men as women, who called themselves Publicans: their head and ruler named Gerardus, was some what learned, the residue verie rude. They denied matrimonie, and the sacraments of baptisme, and the Lords supper, with other articles. They being apprehended, the king caused a counsell to be called at Oxford, where the said Gerard answered for all his fellows, who being pressed with Scriptures, answered concerning their faith, as they had bin taught, and would not dispute thereof. After they could by no meanes be brought from their errors, the bishops gaue sentence against them, and the king commanded that they shoulde be marked

marked with an hole pzon in the forehead, and whipped, and that no man shoulde succour them with house, come or other wise: they toke thei punishment gladly, their captaine going before them, singing, Blessed are ye when men do hate you: they were marked in the forehead, and their captaine both in the forehead and the shinne. Thus being whipped and thrust out in the winter, they died with colde, no man relieuing them. Maiane Elianor brought forth a daughter at Roane, and named his Elianor, after her owne name.

Publicans  
 whipped.

Robert de Mountfort accused his nere kinsman Henry of Essex of high treason before the nobilitie, affirming that he in an expedition into Wales, in a narrow and hard passage at Colleshell, most fraudulently threw abate the kings standard, and with a loud voice pronounced him to be dead, and turned back those that came to the kings succour. (And the foresaid Henry of Essex was perswaded that king Henry was slaine, which undoubtedly had come to passe, if Roger Earle of Clare had not with quick speed come to with his retinue, & raised againe the kings standard, to the incouraging of the whole army.)

An. reg. 9.  
 1163  
 Joceline of  
 Byacland.

Henry withstood the foresaid Robert, and denied all his accusations, where by, in proccesse of time, the matter came to be tried by combat. They mette at Reading to fight, in an Isle nere to the Abbey. Whither also came many people, to see what end the matter would come to. And it chanced, that when Robert had manfully poisoned out many and heauy strokes, Henry turning reason into rage, toke vpon him the part of a challenger and not a defender, who, whil he manfully stroke, was more slowly stricken againe, and intending to conquer, was conquered himselfe: he being overcome, fell downe for dead, and when he was thought to haue ben slaine, at the instance of such of the nobilitie as were of kinne to him, it was granted vnto the Monk there that his body shoulde be buried, but afterwards he reuiued, and hauing recovered his health, became a Monk in that place.

Combat at  
 Reading.

Henry of Essex  
 overcome

Flores Historiar.

London bidge was new made of timber, by Peter of Colechurch a Priest Chaplaine.

An. reg. 10.  
 London bidge  
 made of timber.

Malcolme the Scottis king, and Rufus prince of Southwales, and other, did homage to king Henry and his sonne Henry at Westminster.

1164

A Counsell was holden at Claringdon, in the presence of the king, and the Archbishops, Bishops, Lords, Barons, &c. wherein was recognised, and by their othes confirmed many ordinances, to long here to recite, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury being sworne to the same, shortly after soe repented, and fled the realme, and went to the court of Rome.

Geruasius Doros.  
 A counsell at  
 Claringdon.

The 26. day of January was a great earthquake in Ely, Suffolke, and Suffolke, so that it ouerthrew them that stood vpon thei fete, and made the bele to ring in the steeple.

An. reg. 11.  
 1165  
 The earthquake.

The king hauing seized into his hands all the Archbishops goods and rents, and banished all his kinsmen, women and children, Randol de Bior had the custody of the archbishopricke: this man was very cruell against the Archbishop.

Mathew Paris.  
 Genial. Doros.

The king led an innumerable army against the Welshmen, of Flemings, Scots, Brits, Angloians, and other, but with so great a multitude he coulde not overcome them.

Rad. Cogshall.

The Welshmen took the castell of Cardigan.

In a certaine assiege at Wydenozth, against Hugh de Mortimere, when the king was thoste at by one of the enemies, a valiant man Hubert de Saint Clere Constable of Colchester, did thrust himselfe betwixt the king, and the danger of the stroke, and so receiued death for him, whose onlie daughter the king taking into his custodie, hee gaue her in marriage to William de Languale, with her fathers inheritance, who begate on her a son, bearing the name and surname of his Grandfather.

An. reg. 12.  
1166

Sept.

The king passed ouer into Normandie, and there holding a Councell, appointed a collection to bee made through all his Countreys, two pence of the pounde of moueable goods for the first yeare, and one pennie the pounde for foure yeeres after; the same to bee receiued likewise of arable landes, and of vines, so that the charges and cost of them be not reckoned. Also euery man hauing a house, and the value of a pounde, shall giue a pennie, and he that hath not the value of a pound, but some office agent, shall giue a penny, this to be the reliefe of the cast parts.

An. reg. 13.  
1167

The same yeare 2. Elianor did beare a son named John. Robert sonne to William Earle of Gloucester deceased. The warre was renued betwixt the king of England, and the French king, for the city of Eholouse: and Mathew earle of Walloigne, brother to Philip earle of Flanders manned 5. hundred ships, to haue come into England, but by such preparation as Richard Lucy gouernor of England made, he was stopped wel enough.

An. reg. 14.  
1168  
Iohn Textor.  
Gera. Dorob.  
Ypodigma.

Mawde king Henries daughter was married to Henry duke of Sarony. Conan earle of little Brytaine died, and left for his heire a daughter named Constance, which hee had by the king of Scottes sister, which Constance king Henrie married to his sonus Geffrey, and trauspling earnestlie to set all things at peace and quiet in Brytaine, reconciled wito himself both the cleargy and the laitie of that Countrie.

An. reg. 15.  
1169

Sec. Cro.  
Geraldus Cam.  
Lacester and  
Eaton.  
Sta. Cro.  
Geraldus Cam.

Robert de Boscue earle of Leicester dyed, hee founded the Monasteries of Grenndon of Spokes: of Leicester called Saint Marie de Prat of Chanons regular: and Eaton of Huns, was founded by Amicia his wife, daughter of Ralph Montford.

King Henry caused the castell of Warwike to be builded.

Deruntius the sonne of Morcardus, called Macke Murgh king of Lepnstir, being expelled out of his kingdome, came into Copen to king Henry humble requiring aid for his restitution, who vnderstanding fully the cause thereof, gave licence to all Englishmen that would, to aid the said Deruntius: whereupon he returning into England, couenanted with Richard earle of Chepstow, to giue him his daughter in marriage, and with her the succession of his kingdome, so that he would helpe him in the recovery of it: and shortly after hee promised to Robert Fitz Stephen, and Mawrice Fitz Gerald large reuenues in Ireland for the like helpe.

An. reg. 16.  
1170

King Henry helde his court at Nants, where the bishops and Barons of Brytaine being present, sware their fidelitie to the king, and to his sonne Geffrey:

and

and then the king sailed into England, but manie of his company were brownded by the waite.

Robert Fitz Stephen first of all Englishmen after the conquest entered Ire. land the first day of May, with 390. men, and there took Waterford in the behalfe of Deruntius.

King Henry caused his sonne Henry bozne at London to be crowned by the hands of Roger Archbysshop of Dorke, as he thought to the great quietnesse of himselfe and his realme, but it proued farre otherwise: the young king reuelled the fealties of the earles and barons.

Thomas archbysshop of Canterbury, by the mediation of Pope Alexander, and Leives the king of France, was restored to his see of Canterbury, and returned from exile.

In the moneth of September, Richard earle of Chepstow, surnamed Strongbow, sailed into Ireland with 1200. men of war, and by force took Waterford and Dublin, and married Eue, Deruntius daughter.

Thomas Becker Archbysshop of Canterbury, in his church at Canterbury, the 28. of December was slaine by William Tracy, baron of Bryaines and Dorseton, Reginold fitz Vise, Hugh Monilt, and Richard Briton knight.

There was sene at Saint Olythes in Caster a Dragon of a marvellous bignesse, which by mouing burned houses.

King Henry returned from beyond the seas, and landed at Portsmouth in the moneth of August.

King Henry hauing caused Richard earle of Chepstow to giue into his hands all the land which he had conquered in that realme, took ship at Penbroke, and sailed thither, where the king of Conach, Deruntius king of Dorke, Morice king of speche, the king of Wziel, Duuenald king of Mery, Duuenald king of Limerike, Machachelin, Ophelon, Machaleny, Othnerchely, Gilmehelmach, Ocadecie, Ocaruell, with other princes, and the bishops, submitting theiues and thei to the king of England and his successors, builded for him a greate pallace at Dublin, where he held his Christmas.

The church of Roswich, with the houses thereto belonging was burnt, and the Spokes were disperkled.

The king returned into England on Mondale in Easter weeke, and about the ascension tide sayled into Normandie.

At Andouer a Priest praying before the Altare, was stricken with thunder and slaine.

Likewise one Larke and his brother were burnt to death with the lightning. King Henrie the sonne, with his Wife, the French kings daughter, were both together crowned at Winchester the seuen and twentieth daie of August, by the hands of Rotrod Archbysshoppe of Roane. Thos was hee twice crowned, (as ye haue hearde.)

King Henrie the elder was adjoyled of the death of Thomas the Archbysshop upon his othe made, that hee was not partie to it, but that those Palefactours took occasion to kill him by certayne wordes which the king in his anger vnaudiscolic spake.

King

Giraldus Cam.  
Englishmen transported into Ireland.

Henry the kings son crowned.

Gualter Couens.

An. reg. 17.  
1171  
Death of Thomas Becker.  
Chro. Colcheff.  
Ex Record.

King Henrie Lord of Irec land.  
Gella. Abbas.  
S. Abani.  
Regill. Mona.  
S. Albani.  
Cimphusius.

An. reg. 18.  
Giraldus Cam.  
Rad. Coghall.  
Geraff Dorob.  
The Church of Roswich burnt.  
1172

Chro. Colcheff.

Geraffus.  
An. reg. 19.  
1173  
Ypodigma.

King Henry married the eldest daughter of Hubert Earle of Sposton, unto his son John surnamed Without-land.

He also made Mary the sister of Thomas Becker Abbess of Berking.

Henry the younger rebelling in Normandie against king Henry his father, manie Cardes and Barons fledde over to him, whereby divers strong battels were fought, as well in England as in Normandie, Poytow, Cuyen and Byspaine.

There toke part against the father, Lewes king of France, William king of Scots, Henry, Geoffrey, and John his sons, Robert Earle of Leicester, Hugh of Chester, and others.

Robert Earle of Leicester with thre thousand Flemings comming into England, arrived at Walton, and after were received by Earle Hugh into Framlingham Castle. They burnt the castle of Wagoneth, the cite of Roywich, &c. but by Richard de Lucy the kings Justice, both hee, his wife, and as manie Normans and Frenchmen as were with him were taken, but the Flemings were all slaine, or drowned. This battell was fought without the Towne of Saint Edmundsburie, nere to a place called Saint Spartins of Farnham.

William king of Scots with many Flemings entering into England, won the Castles of Appleby, Wough, and Wydehow.

King Henry the elder, returning into Englande, in short time subdued his Rebels. The cite of Leicester by his commandement was burnt, the walles and Castle razed, and the inhabitants sparkled into other cities. Robert de Stoteville, Radulph de Mandeville, Barnard Baylile, of whome Barnards Castle toke the name, and William de Vescy came to Shrewcastle, and after toke king William prisoner, and sent him to London, from whence king Henry toke him and the Earle of Leicester with him into Normandie, and there imprisoned them at Roane, where king William compounded for his ranfome, and after was delivered at Poyke for 4000. pound. The nobles of Scotland came no nearer than Pemblis in Scotland to mate with their king, therefore he toke with him many of the younger sonnes of noble men in Englande that bare him good will, and gave them landes in Scotland, which he toke from such as were Rebels to him there. The names of those Gentlemen that he toke with him, were Bayellol, Brewic, Souilly, Mowbrey, Saintclere, Hay, Giffard, Ramsey, Lanudell, Biscy, Berkeley, Wellegen, Boys, Montgomery, Valx, Colenille, Friser, Grame, Gurly, and divers other.

The last day of December, Christs Church in Canterbury was burnt, with certaine houses of Edifice in the court.

King Henry the son, with his brethren, and other, were reconciled to king Henry the father.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, held a Councell in S. Peters at Westmister on Sunday before the Ascension day, at which Councell were present all the suffragan Bishops of his Province, Worcester excepted, that was sick, and so excused himselfe, and the Bishop of Norwich which was deceased.

A brother of the Earle Ferris was in the night prively slaine at London,

Henry the younger was killed.

John Texor.

An. reg. 20.

1174  
Leicester burnt.

Barnards  
Castle.

King of Scots  
taken prisoner.  
Geraul. Dorob.  
Scal. cron.

Geraul. Dorob.  
W. Thorne.  
Canterburie  
burnt.

An. reg. 21.

1175  
Rog. Houed.

which when the king understood, he swore that he would be avenged on the Citizens: for it was then a common practise in the cite, that 7. hundred or more in a company of young and old, would make nightly invasions upon the houses of the wealthy, to the intent to robbe them, and if they found any man sleeping in the cite within the night, they would presently murder him, in so much, that when night was come, no man durst adventure to walke in the streets. When this had continued long, it fortuned that as a crew of young and wealthy Citizens assembling together in the night, assaulted a stone house of a certaine rich man, and breaking through the wall, the good man of that house having prepared himselfe with other in a corner, when he perceived one of the thieves named Andrew Buccinque to leade the way, with a burning brand in the one hand and a pottle of coales in the other, which he assayed to kindle with the brande, he selve upon him, and smote off his right hand, and then with a loud voice cried thieves, at the hearing whereof the thieves toke their flight, all saying he that had lost his hand, whome the good man in the next morning delivered to Richard de Lucy the kings Justice. This done upon warrant of his life, appeached his confederats, of whom many were taken, & manie were fled, but among the rest that were apprehended, a certaine Citizen of great countenance, credite, and wealth, surnamed John the olde, when hee could not acquite himselfe by the Watar dome, offered the king for his life 500. markes, but the king commanded that he should be hanged, which was done, and the cite became more quiet.

The kings of England both father and sonne did eate and drinke at one table, lay in one chamber, and went together to visite the Tombe of Thomas late Archbishop of Canterbury, accomplishing invokde the peace which they had promised.

The king caused to be razed and overthrowen the Castles of Huntingdon, Walton, Groby, Tutbury, Wy, and Tress, with many other, in reuenge of the harme the Lordes of them had done to him.

This yere, or rather in the yere 1173. after Rouse of Warwicke, the stone bridge ouer the river of Thamis at London, was began to be founded, in place where before had bin a bridge of timber, first buildd and long since repaired by a college of Priests, which colledge stood there now S. Maries ouries church standeth, in Southwarke. The king assisting this work of the bridge, a cardinal late Legate here, and Richard then Archbishop of Canterbury, gaue one thousand markes towards the same foundation. The course of the river for the time was turned another way about, by a trench cast for that purpose, beginning in the East about Rabyse, and ending in the West about Battersey.

This yere was compiled a booke of the orders and rules of the Chequer, now commonly called the Blace booke: the author whereof (as divers affirm) was Geraulius Tibericenis nephew to king Henry the second. In this booke is described the reason and cause of the first institution of the same court, wherby it was called Scaccarum, the names of the officers resident in the same, aswell on the higher side, called the Chequer, as on the lower called the Receipt, or treasurie, their places and duties incident to the same, their privileges and dignities,

Sight witnesses  
in London, did  
murder all  
they met.

Gual. rouen.

An. reg. 22.  
1176

London bridge  
founded by  
archbis of Here.  
Lib. S. Mar. over.  
John Leyland.

Geraulius Til.  
bellent.  
Blacke booke  
in the Excheq.  
quer.

dignities, with divers of their fees. The order & forme of making failes, rolles, writs, and other like. The maner of accounts, & payments of rents used in those daies, whereof some were payed in money, & some in victuals, payed according to the valuation of the money of that time, whereof mine Autho: maketh mention. For provision of the kings household used within his owne remembrance (as he saith) from the time of H. Henry the first, wherein the officers of the kings household reducing their victuals into an estimate of money, did value for a measure of wheat to make bread for the service of 100. men, i. shilling: for the carcase of a fat Ox, i. shilling: for a fat shepe 4. pence: for the provender of 20. hores 4. pence: many other speciall notes there are contained in these booke worthy of memory, which for brevitie I overpasse.

In March the king called a Convocation of the Cleargie at London, when the Popes Legate was set, and the Archbyschoppe of Canturburie on his right hand, as primate of England, the Archbyschop of Yorke disdaining to sit on the left hand, came and swapt him downe to have thrust his taile betwixt the Legate and the archbyschop of Canturbury, which archbyschoppe being leathe to remour, the other sette his buttocke in his lappe, but he had vnneth touched him with his beemie, when the Byschops and oth: of the Cleargie and Laitie slept to him, pulled him, theyre him to the grounde, and began to late on him with fistes and baltes, so that the archbyschop of Canturburie yielding god for euill, was faine to defend the other Archbyschoppe, who with his rent Coape got vp, and abwaie strayght to the king with a greate complaynte: but when the truth of the matter was once knowne, he was well laughed at for his remedie.

Richard Strongbow earle of Chesholme, deceased, and was buried at Dublin in Ireland.

William earle of Arundell also deceased, and was buried at Wilmondbam. William earle of Gloucester, because he had no son to inherite his lands, and being loth to distribute them amongst his daughters, he made Iohn the kings son his successor.

A shower of blood rained in the Ile of Wylght two houres space.

The Church of secular Canons at Walsam in Essex, founded by Harolde, was by the R. commandement new builded and regular Canons placed there, to the number of 24. Richard the first augmented it, and so did Henrie the third, with faires and Parkets, a faire for seven daies, and at Epingburie a Parket euerie Sundae, and a faire for three daies. This Abbey at the generall survey, and surrender, was valued to dispend perrelie 900. pound, 4. shillings and 4. pence.

Rosamond the faire daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford, Concubine to Henry the second (poisoned by M. Elianor as some thought) died at Woodstock, where H. Henry had made for her an house of a wonderful wondrous king, so that no man or woman might come to her, but if hee were instructed by the king, or such as were right secreete with him touching the matter. This house after some was named Labyrinth, or Dedalus worke, which was thought to be an house wrought like vnto a knotte in a garden, called a Maze, but it was commonlie

saide,

saide, that lastly the Duene came to her by a clewe of thredde, or silke, and so dealt with her, that she liued not long after, but when she was dead, she was buried at Godstow, in an house of Nunnes, beside Oxford with these verses vpon her tombe:

*Hic iacet in tumba, Rosa mundi, non rosa munda,  
non redolet, sed olet, quare dolere solet.*

### In English thus:

The rose of the world, but not the cleane flowre  
Is now here grauen, to whom beauty was lent,  
In this graue full darke now is her bowre,  
Tharby her life was sweete and redolent.  
But now that she is from this life blent,  
Though she were sweete, now foully doth she stinke:  
A mirrour good for all men that on her thinke.

After the death of this Rosamond, King Henry toke partly the daughter of Lewis king of France, (that was married to his sonne Richard Earle of Powtow) for his Leman, and had practised for a divorce betwixt him and Elianor his Duene: whereupon followed great discord betwixt the king of England, and of France: but H. Henry sayling ouer into Normandie, the B. of France and he, had talke together, and entred into amitie.

Richard Lucy the Kinges Justiciar laide the foundation of the conentual Church in the honour of S. Thomas, in a place which is called Westwood, or heriotse Alesies, in the territorie of Rochester.

This Richard Lucy builded the Castle of Ringer in Essex, in the diocesse of the Bishop of London.

The Citie of Yorke was brent.

On Christmas day at Drenhall, in the territorie of Derlington, in the Bishoppicke of Duresme, the earth lifted vp it selfe in the maner of an high Tower, and so remained from the spring of the day vnmourable, untill the evening, and then fell with so horrible a noise, that it feared the inhabitants the rebout, and the earth swallowed it vp, and made there a depe pitte, which is seene vntill this day. For a testimonie thereof, Leyland saith, he saw the pittes there commonly called Hel-kettles.

The tenth day of Aprill the Church of Saint Andrew in Rochester, with the whole towne was consumed with fire.

Richard de Lucy chiefe Justice of England deceased in the Abbey of Evesnes, which he had builded, and where hee had changed his habite, and was buried come a Monk.

The 19. day of August at night, & Moone was eclipsed, which was seene of H. Henry and his company, as he rode all night, to meete the king of France coming into England, to visit the tombe of Thomas Becket the Archbyschop.

On the 21. day of August, Lewis king of France entred into England, which neither hee, nor any his predecessours had euer done, and king Henry of England meeting him, as he entred out of shippe,

P 2.

On

Allowance of  
bread for an  
hundred men,  
xii. pence.  
For a fat ox.  
xii. pence.  
A fat shepe,  
xii. pence.

I. Beutela.  
An. reg. 28  
Ypodigma.

Cron. Tinmouth.  
Walsam Abbey  
1177  
Ypodigma.  
Gervasius.

Rosamond con-  
cubine to king  
Henry.

An. reg. 24.

Ludovicus Vinco

1178

Arnes.  
Gervasius.  
Walter Comen.  
Gerv. Tilberien.

An. reg. 25.

1119

Cron. Tinmouth.

John Leyland.

Richard Lucy  
chefe Justice  
died.

The king of  
France came  
into England.

On the 22. of August, both the kings came to Canterbury, where they were with due honour receiued of the Archbysshop Richard, and other Bysshopes of England, the Count of Cantuarbie, and a multitude of Noble men. Lewes king of France offered vpon the Tombe, and to the shryne of Thomas Becket a rich Coppe of golde, he gaue also that renowned precious stone, that was called the Regall of France (king Henry the 8. put the same in a ring, which hee wore on his thumbe) he gaue to the Pynkes by his Charter one hundred measures of tunnes of wine, to be payde them yearly at Paris in France, he continued all one night in watching and prayer at the tombe, and in the morning requiured to be made a brother there, and was admitted. Then king Henry shewed the faide king Lewes all the treasure of his Realme, which he and his predecessors had gathered together, but the Frenchmen restrained from taking of gifts, but taking leaue of the king, receiving some thinges in token of amittie, returned to Douer, and so ouer into France.

Cadwallaw a prince of Wales, being accused, was brought to appeare before the king, but clearing himselfe, as he went homeward vnder the kings safe conduct, was slain, which thing redounded greatly to the kings dishonour, notwithstanding he professed to be ignorant thereof.

Cadwallaw a prince of Wales, being accused, was brought to appeare before the king, but clearing himselfe, as he went homeward vnder the kings safe conduct, was slain, which thing redounded greatly to the kings dishonour, notwithstanding he professed to be ignorant thereof.

1180

Ro. Houedon.

A new coine was made in England, by commandement of king Henry the father, it was made rounde, but not without great burden to the poore inhabitants of the Realme. He put all the coiners in England to great ranfome, for corrupting of the old monney.

An. reg. 27.  
1181

Inceratium  
Cambiz Giral.  
A man deuoured  
by a Toad.

Geruasius de  
mappa mundi.

Geffrey the kings bastarde son, resigned the Bysshopricke of Lincolne, and was made the kings Chancellor.

This poore Giraldu Cambrensis wrote his Booke of the description of Wales, wherein hee noteth to haue happened in his time, in the Province of Kerneset, a young man (whose in those parts) to be so persecuted with Toads, as if all within that country had come crawling together to ber him, and when innumerable numbers of them were killed by those that kept him, and other of his friends and kinmen, yet came they still as if they had sprung like hyppocres heads numberlesse: at length when his friends were wearied with watching, they caused him in a Coffin to be hoisted vp into an high tree that was shied of all the boughes, and made smooth: but there was hee not persecuted from his venemous enemies, which assaulted him, creeping vpppe into the tree, till they had eaten him to the bones that he died, his name was Scifillus Elker her (that is) long legges.

An. reg. 28.  
1182

Barnewell with the Bishop, nere vnto Cambridge, was fired and bent. King Henry at Waltham, in presence of his nobles of the Realme did liberally assigne to the aid of the holic land 42000. marks of silver, and 500. marks of gold, which was worth in mony 47333. pound, 6. shillings, 8. pence. This being done, he went ouer into Normandie, at which time also Henry, duke of

Saronie,

Saronie, the kings sonne in law, was by the Emperour banished, and came into Normandie to the king, and brought with him the Dutchesse, and his two sonnes Henry and Otho, and the king receiuing them, did liberally finde them all things necessary for their maintenance. Is. Henry remaining in Normandie, made his Testament, giuing amongst other Legacies, much to houses of Religion. Also to the marriage of poore maides of England, he gaue 300. marks. To the marriage of poore maides in Normandy, 100. marks, and to the like in Angew, 100. marks.

King Henry the father kept his Christinas at Cane in Normandy, with his three sonnes, King Henry the younger, Richard Earle of Poictou, and Geffrey earle of Bysptaine: there was also Henry Duke of Saronie, with his wife and their children, the Archbishops of Canterbury and Bolaine, with other bishops, earles and barons in great number. Here would Is. Henry the father, that his sonne Henry the young king, should haue receiued homage of his brethren, Richard earle of Poictou, and Geffrey earle of Bysptaine, whereunto the earle of Bysptaine did not stay to graunt, but the Earle of Poictou bitterly refused to doe it, saying it was not conuenient so long as their father liued, to acknowledge any superiority to his brother: for as the fathers inheritance was due to the eldest sonne, so he had to claime the lands which belonged to his mother. This deniall much offended his brother the young king, whereupon Richard departed from the Court in great displeasure, and comming into Poictou, he began to fortifie his Castles, that he might be in a readinesse to stand at defence for his safegard, if his father or brethren shoulde come to pursue him. But not long after, king Henry the sonne, by counsell of his father followed him, being also encouraged therunto by the earles and Barons of Poictou, which for the sharpe and cruell gouernment of earle Richard hated him. And shortly after commeth their brother Geffrey with a great armie in aide of his brother the young king, in somuch that earle Richard not knowing how to thist the present danger, sent to his father for aide. Who being sorry to see such vnnaturall dealing amongst his sonnes, gathered an armie, and came forthward, and did so much, that all the three sonnes came to Angeres, and there swore to be obedient to their fathers will. Whereupon a day was appointed them to mete at Spyable. In the meane while, king Henry the sonne obtained licence of his father to goe vnto Limongs, vnder pretence that hee might there labour to reduce both his brother Geffrey, and the Barons of Guyen to quietnesse, but all was dissembling, so that when the father followed with an armie, and came to Lymongs in stead of receiuing him with honour, they shot at him, so y they pierced through his dypermost armor, &c. At length, when Is. Henry the younger, and his brother Geffrey had done against their father what they could, yet could not obtaine their purpose, for that their power was far vnicomparabell to their wills, Is. Henry the younger, through indignation and displeasure, fel into a grievous sickness, in a village called Bartell, not far from Limongs, where his father lay at siege. At the first he was taken with an extreme feauer, and after followed a fluxe, where through perceiving himselfe in danger of death, he sent to his father, confessing his trespass, requiring

An. reg. 29.

1183



King Henry the  
youngest deca-  
sith.

An. reg. 30.  
1184

Glaffenbury  
brent.

An. reg. 31.  
1185

Heracles the  
Patriarche.  
Geraul. Dorob.

New Temple.

John the kings  
son, Lord of  
Ireland.  
Ypodigma.

The Empress  
deceased.  
House of Cister.  
fourth, the deca-  
sith at Roane,  
in anno. 1187.  
and was buried  
in the Monaster-  
y of Beccin  
Stepmandy.

An. reg. 32  
1186  
Geffrey Earle  
of Hytaine  
blith.  
Giral. Cam.  
Matthew Paris.  
Rog. Howed.  
John Textor.

rang him of forgiveness, and also to come to him, but the father fearing to com-  
mit himself into the hands of such ungracious persons, as were about his son,  
refused to come at him, sending him his ring in token of his blessing, and as it  
were a pledge or witness, to signify that hee had forgiven him. The young  
king receiving it with great humilitie kissed it, and so ended his life, without  
issue. Thus was the unbelieved child cut off, as it had bene a weavers thred,  
at the age of 28. yeeres, his body being wound in those linnen clothes, that at  
his coronation were imbued with holie Crisme, hee was solemne buried at  
Roane, in the Cathedral Church.

King Henry returned into England, and sent manie men of warre into  
Wales, for the Welchmen emboldened by the kings absence, had broken forth  
and slaine manie Englishmen.

The Abbey of Glaffenburie was brent, with the whole Towne and Church  
of Saint Iulian.

Heracles Patriarch of Jerusalem came to king Henry, desiring him of aid  
against the Turks, but the king because of the crueltye of his sons, was coun-  
selled not to leave his dominions in hazard, and to go so far off; wherefore hee  
promised the Patriarche 50000. marks of silver.

This Patriarche dedicated the church of the new temple, then first builded,  
in the West part of London, by the knights Templars in England, he also de-  
dicated the Pyloxie of S. John of Jerusalem by Smithfield.

King Henry sent his sonne John into Ireland, that he might be made Lord  
thereof. The Pope sent him a Crowne of peacocks feathers, bayed with  
Golde.

This yeere died Hugh Mortimere founder of Wigmore Abbey. A. Elianor  
at the suit of the Archbyschop of Canturburie was released out of prison in the  
which she had remained almost xii. yeeres.

Richard Archbyschop of Canturbury, deceased at Hawling, in the Dioces of  
Kochester, when hee had late xi. yeeres.

Mawde the Empress, mother to h. Henry the second deceased, shee founded  
the Abbey of Wyndeslay, and was buried at Reading, with this Epitaph.

*Ortu magna, viro maior, sed maxima pars,  
Hic iacet Henrici filia, sponsa, parens.*

The daughter, spouse, and Parent eke, of Henry lyeth here,  
Great of parentage, higher by marriage, most high by childbirth deere.

King Henry kept his Christen at Danfront in Normandy, and shortly af-  
ter, came to a communicatton with the king of France, at the which time hee  
toke a solemne oth, that he would relister the Ladie Alice, the king of Frances  
his sister (whome hee had yet in his custodie) unto his son Richard earle of Poy-  
rtow in marriage.

Geffrey earle of Hytaine the kings son of Englnd. died at Paris, about the  
beginning of August, and was there buried. He left issue 2. daughters which hee  
had by Constance daughter to Conan earle of Brittain who also at the time of  
his death was great with child, and after brought forth a son named Arthur.

A

A great earthquake threw downe many buildinges, amongst the which the  
Cathedral Church of Lincolne was rent in peeces the 25. of April.

The Cathedral Church of Chichester, and all the whole citie was brent the 20. Chichester  
of October: king Henry gaue Constance, Countesse of Hyptain, mother of Ar-  
thur, to Ranulph earle of Chester to be his wife.

Here unto Wyf orde in Suffolke, certaine fishers of the sea toke in their  
nettes a fish having the shape of a man in all pointes, which fish was kept  
by Bartlemew de Glaunvile, Custos of the Castell of Wyf orde, in the same Cas-  
tell, by the space of six monethes and more; for a wonder: he spake not a word.  
All manner of meates he gladly did eate, but most graciously raw fish, after he  
had crushed out all the moisture. Whentimes he was brought to the Church,  
where hee shewed no tokens of adoration. At length when hee was not well lo-  
ked to, he stale away to the sea, and neuer after appeared.

Saladine chiefe prince of the Saracenes won a great battell against the chri-  
stians, and toke Guido king of Jerusalem with the Crosse that Christ died on,  
and all the christians were either slaine or taken. Where escaped among other,  
Theodoricus Agallas of the knights Templar, notwithstanding 230. of his bre-  
thren were beheaded, that had been taken prisoners: besides 40. that were slain.  
The city of Jerusalem was taken, by composition euerie man to giue ten be-  
sants, every woman 5. every child 1. All the rest to the number of 14000. men  
and women became subiect to perpetuall bondage.

The kings of England and of France met betwixt Gisors and Tye, where  
they toke on them the Crosse, and diuers other with them. The king of Eng-  
land landing at Wynchelsea, hasted towards Portsmouth, where at Goding-  
ton, about eight or ten miles from Portsmouth he held a Parliament, about  
the voyage into the holie lande, where manie Articles concerning that voyage  
were concluded, and the whole Realme troubled with paying of tithes toward  
that voyage. The Christians were appointed to paie about thyscore mit r.  
thousand pounde, and the Jewes thyscore thousand, without any delay: but by  
means of a discorde that fell betwixt the two kings, that voyage was staied.

The Towne of Winclesley, with the Church of Saynt John there, was brent  
the twentieth of September.

The kings of England and of France, with Richard earle of Poyrtow, the  
Legate, and the archbishops of Canturbury, Roane, Ahenes, and Burges, met  
at Paris the ninth day of June. There Philip the French king required, that  
his sister which had bene kept in England two and twentie yeeres, might be  
restored unto earle Richard as his wife, and earle Richard desired the same,  
but king Henry denied this request, and so they departed dissunder, and got the  
m to armour. The French king, and earle Richard pursued the king of Eng-  
land so hard, that he was forced to yeld to all the requests, as wel of the French  
king, as of his sonne Richard. This was done at Gisors, and so departing came  
to Agat. When all matters were accorded, as is aforesaid, betwene the two  
kings of England and of France, the king of England required of the king  
of France to haue all their names deliuered him in writing, which had promi-  
sed to take part against him, and were tolmed as confederates with the king of

P 4.

France,

Chichester  
brent.

An. reg. 33.  
1187

A fish like a  
man.  
Paph. Cossell.  
Eccomm. in in  
Cotch. Rec.

knights Tem-  
plar slaine,  
and beheaded.

An. reg. 34.  
1188

Parliament  
at Godington.  
Richard South-  
well.  
Roger Howeden.  
Gual. couen.

Winclesley brent.  
An. reg. 35.  
Geraul. fuit.

1189

Lodowicus Vices  
Death of king  
Henry the 2.  
Richard canbr.

France, and earle Richard, which request was granted, and when the roble was presented unto him, he found his sonne John the first person that was named in the register, wherewith he was so sore troubled, and disquieted in his minde, that comming to Chiron; he felt such griefe hereof, that he cursed even the very day in which he was borne, and gave his sonnes Gods curse and his, the which he would never release, although he was admonished to do it by many Bishops, and religious persons. Whereupon being brought to such extremity as ye have heard, he was taken with a grievous sickness, which bringing him to bitter desperation of returning to health, he finally departed this life on the 6 day of July, in the yere 1189. and the 61. of his age, when he had reigned 34 yeres, 7. moneths lacking 11. daies, and was buried at Fonteneuward in a monastierie of Nunnes, which he had founded. He had also founded the Priories of Stanley, of S. Martin in Dover, and of Walsingham, he made of an olde Colledge of secular Chanons, an Abby of regular Chanons at Walsingham in Essex. He builded many Castles in England, and he beganne the stone bridge ouer the river of Thames at London. Here left in his treasure more then a hundred thousand markes.

He had issue by Elianor his wife, William that died young, Henry that was crowned king, and died before his father, Richard that reigned next after him, Geoffrey Duke of Brytaine, that died before him (but left issue Arthur and Elianor) and John that after the death of his brother Richard, took on him the kingdom, disheriting his nephewes Arthur and Elianor the true heires: daughters he had Matilde, married to the Duke of Saronie, Helene Quene of Castile, and Joane Quene of Sicilie.

This king, when he was carried forth to be buried, was first appareled in his princely robes, hauing his crowne on his head, gloves on his hands, and shoes on his feet, wrought with goide spurres on his hailes, a ring of gold on his finger, a scepter in his hand, and a sword by his side, and so was laide bencoured, hauing a pleasant countenance, which when it was told to his sonne Richard, hee came with all speed, to see him, and as soone as hee came nere him, the blood gushes out of the nose of the dead corpses in great plenty, even as if the spirit of the dead king had disdained, and abhorred the presence of him, who was thought to be the chiefe cause of his death, which thing caused the said Richard to weepe bitterly, and he caused his fathers bodie to be honourably buried at Fonteneuward as is afore said.

## King Richard Cueur de Lion.



Richard the first borne at Orford, for his valiantnes surnamed Cueur de Lion, or with the lions heart, the third son of Henry the second, began his reigne the sixth day of July, in the yere of our Lord 1189. at the age of 35. yeres.

He was bigge of stature, with a merrie countenance. To his

his souldiers sauourable: bountifull to his friends: to strangers a grienous enemy: hard to be pleased: desirous of waere: abhoyring idleness.

Elianor the olde Quene, mother to Duke Richard, who at the commencingment of her husband, had bene long kept in prison, was set at libertie. And then she with the Lordes of the Realme abode the kings coming at Winchester, where Geoffrey Ridel the proud Bishop of Ely fell sick, and departed this life in estate, leauing in his coffers great treasure, to wit, 3060. markes of silver, and 205. markes in gold, which was bestowed on the new kings coronation, for the bishops soule.

Duke Richard hauing receiued Adelisa, or Alice his wife, upon suspicion that she had bene dishonested whyles she was in his fathers custody, sent her home with her Dowrie, hauing concluded a marriage with Ladie Berengaria, daughter to Genus king of Navarre, he returned into England, and landed at Southampton the twelfth of August, and on the fourteenth was receiued into Winchester, with him also came his brother John, unto whom hee gaue the Earldomes of Devon, of Cornwall, Dorset, Summer set, Nottingham, Darby, and Lancaster, with the Castles of Carleborow, and Ludgerthall, with the forrest, and the appurtenances, the honours of Wallingford, Tichill, and Eye, to the value of foure thousand markes by yere. Hee also gaue him in marriage with Isabel his second wife, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, the Earldome of Gloucester, although Baldwin Archbishoppe of Canterbury forbade the marriage, because they were Cousins in the third degree of consanguinitie. To Robert earle of Leicester, he restored all his lands, which had bene taken from him. He came to London, and on the thir of September, was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Baldwin Archbishop of Canturburie.

He commanded that no Jewes nor women should be at his Coronation, for feare of enchantments which were wont to be practised: for breaking of which commandement, many Jewes were slain the same day. For the Jewes dwelling about London, and other partes of the Realme, being there assembled, meaning to honour the same Coronation with their presence, and to present to the king some honorable gifte, one of them was stricken by a Christian, who alleadged the kings commandement to keepe them backe, which some of the brauly people perceiuing, supposing it had bene the kings commandement, fell upon the Jewes with staves, bats, and stones, beate them to their houses, and after assailing their houses, set them on fire, and burnt them in their houses, or slew them at their coming out.

The Archbishoppe of Canturburie being sore offended with Earle John the kings brother, for taking to wife Isabel Countesse of Gloucester, his cousin in the thirde degree, wrote a threatening letter to the same John, commanding him not to touch the virgine, and to appeare at a peremptorie day before him to answer the matter. The 15. of December at Pimwell, in presence of the king, the Archbishop and prelates were elected, Geoffrey de Lucy to the sea of Winchester, Richard Archdeacon of Ely, the kings treasurer, to the sea of London, Hubert Walter to Salisbury, William Longhampe, the kings

Lib. Filii.  
Bishop of Ely  
deceased.

John Earle  
of Devon.

Henry crowned himself  
and his sonnes.

Monasteries  
founded by Henry.

Issue of king  
Henry.

Roger Wind.

An. reg. 1.

Chancellor; to Ely, and Geoffrey the is. bastard brother, to the sea of Poike, is. Richard gaue, or rather solde, the Castles of Berwik and Hokerburgh to the Scottish is. for the summe of 5000 marks sterling: he also sold to Hugo de Pureau is. of Durham, his own prouince for a great piece of money, & cres- ted him carle of the same, and thyn said in game, I am a wonderous crafti- man, I haue made a new carle of an old bishop. He sold the Priory of Couen- trie, to Hugh Bishop of Chester, for iii. C. marks, which Hugh with a power of armed men, invaded the Priory, chased the Prio: away, brake the Monkes, lamed some, cast some into prison, and spoyling the other, dyone them allwaie, bzake the butches of the Church, bzent their Charters and pteiledges.

The king also fained to haue lost his signet, and made a new, and then cau- sed to be proclaimed, that who so euer would safely entoy those thinges which before time they had entrolled, should come to the new seale, whereby it came to passe, that many which could not finde him in England, went ouer sea to fine with him at his pleasure.

In this time were many robbers and out-lawes, among the which, Robert Hood, and little John, renowned theues, continued in woods, dispoyleing and robbing y gods of the rich. They killed none but such as would inuade them, or by resistance for their owne defence.

The saide Robert intertaineed an hundred tall men, and good archers, with such spoiles and thestes as he got, vpon whome foure hundred (were they ne- uer so strong,) durst not glue the onfet. He suffered no woman to be oppres- sed, violated, or otherwile molested: poze mens gods hee spared, about- dantie relieauing them with that, which by theste hee gotte from Abbeies & the houses of riche Carles: whome Maior blameth for his rapine and theft: but of all theues hee affirmeth him to bee the Prince, and the most gentle Thiefe.

King Richard betooke the guding of this lande to William Longshamp Bi- shop of Ely, Chancellor of England, and the foure and twentieth day of Fe- bruary, he toke his scrippe and staffe at Canterbury, and the 6. of March toke the Sea at Douer, and transported out.

The second of July the two kings of England and of France met at Tow- ers, and from thence set forward on their iourney towards Ierusalem.

The Towne of Hawling in Kent with the Hunnery was consumed with fire.

The Jewes in the townes of Norwiche, Saint Edmundebarie, Lincolne, Stamforde faire, and Linne, were robbed and spoyled. And at Poike to the number of 500. besides women and children, entred a tower of the castle, which the people assailing, the Jewes profered money to be in safety of their liues, but the Christians would not take it: whereupon their men of law said to them, it is better for vs to die for our lawe, then to fall into the hands of our enemies: and they all agreeing to that Counsell, cutte the throates of their wiues and children, and cast them ouer the walles on the Christians brads: the reli- due they locked vp in the Kinges lodging, and burnt both the house and thyn selues.

Ro. Houedn.

John Maior,  
Outlawes in  
England.1190  
Courtour of  
England  
William Bi-  
shop of Ely.  
is. Rich tooke  
his voiage ouer  
to Ierusalem.  
Genuasius,  
Ypodigma.Jewes slue  
themselues.

Geffrey

Geffrey Archbischoppe of Poike, returning from Rome, and now consecra- ted, arriued at Douer with his traine, whome Mathew de Clare by the com- mandment of the kinges Chancellor, entring with violence into the Church of Saint Martins, dyew from the Altar, and so caried him to prison. Baldwin Archbischoppe of Canterbury deceased at the siege of Acres, and was there buried.

William Byschop of Ely, builded the bitter wall about the Tower of Lon- don, and caused a depe ditch to be made about the same, thinking hee coulde haue caused the riuier of Chamis to go round about it, but hee be shewed great cost in balne.

King Richard subdued the Ile of Cypus, and then sayning his power with Philip the French kings in Asia conquered Acon, where there grew be- tweene the two kings a grienous displeasure: for which cause Philippe thot- lie departed thence, and comming into France, invaded the Countie of Normandie.

John brother to King Richard, toke on him the kingdome of England in his brothers abs:nce. He raised powers of men and with small adoe won the Ca- stles of Nottingham and Litchill.

Robert Earle of Leicester died in his iourney to Iherusalem.

is. Richard resoyed to the Christians the city of Joppa, and in many battels pat the Turkes to great forow.

The bones of the most famous king of Byptaine, Arthur, were founde at Glasterbarie, in a goodly olde Sepulchre, about the which stood two pillars, in which were letters written, which, by reason of the great barbarousnesse of the language, and the foulnessse, no bodie could reade: vpon the sepulture was a croffe of lead, whereon was written, Here lyeth the noble king of Byptaines Arthur.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, came to the Abbey of Dunnes called Godstow, betwene Wyford and Wobstock, and when he had entred the church to pray, he saw a tombe in the middle of the quire, covered with a pall of silke, & set about with lightes of waire. And dem:ning whose tombe it was, hee was answer- ed, that it was the tombe of Rosamonde, that was sometime a man to Hen- ry the second of that name, king of Engl:nd, who for the loue of her had done much good to that Church. Then quoth the Bishop, take out of this place the barlot, and bury her without the Church, least Christian Religion should grow in contempt, and to the ende that throught example of her, other women being made afraid, may beware, and keepe the mselues from vnlawfull and adou- terous company with men.

William Bishop of Ely, did commonly ride with 500. hoxses, and grieved Abbeies by meane of his lodging with them: he wished John the is. brother, who said, he wist not if his brother Richard were alive or not. To whome the Bishop answered, if King Richard be yett liuing, it were vntruth to take from him the Crowne. If he be dead, Arthur the elder brothers sonne, must enioie the same.

King Richard exchanged Cypus, with Guy of Ledingham, for the king- dome

Archbishop of  
Poike taken  
from the Altar  
to prison.  
Ralph Cogshall.An. reg. 2.  
W. Dunthorne.  
A ditch made  
about the tower  
of London.  
Rich. Southwell.  
Mathew Paris.  
Rop. Houed.  
Galind. Viniail.Arbor, successi-  
ons.  
John the kings  
poor brother  
buried the  
king come.1191  
The bones of  
Arthur the  
Byptaine found.Honorable bu-  
rial for bodines  
to aduoucerous  
women.

An. reg. 3.

John the kings  
brother re-  
billed.

1192

Ex'annalib. Elic.  
Vitz G. laogo.  
Caul.  
Ro. Honeder.  
The byshop put  
to his wythe.  
Gervail Doreb.

dom of Hierusalem: wherefore the king of Englande a long time after, was called king of Hierusalem.

The Bpshoppe of Ely Legate to the Pope, Chancelour of Englande, and Governour of the Realme, was forced to take the Tower of London for his refuge, wherein Earle Iohn besieged him, at length the Bpshoppe getting lycence to depart, went to Dover, but hee was there forced to sweare that hee woulde not departe the Realme: yet being in a marvellous disquietnesse of minde, he put off his mans apparrell, and put on womans, meaning for to escape, whilst hee goethe tpye and dowlne on the floze, bearing a doublet of clothe on his arme as though hee woulde sell it, still waiting for a ship, a sort of women pulled off his kerchiefe, and thwelve him to the grounde, and after beate him, and dyelwe him along the sandes, whereupon great crye being made, the Burgesse ranne, and with much adoe, gotte him from among them, and kept him streightlie till he had obtained licence to depart the Realme.

An. reg. 4.

Bpshop at Crux  
Roise, of Rois  
Roise.

When the Archbshop of Roane, with the consent of earle Iohn, toke upon him the rule of the law, as Vicechancelour.

A certaine Lady named Roisa, daughter to Paine Puerell, or Countesse of Dorsethe (as she might be both) having in the raigne of king Stephen, raved a stone Crosse in the kings high waie, on the North limites, by the which Hartfordshire toyneth on Cambridge shire, which Crosse was then called Crux Roise of Roisa. Some Eustachius de Marke knight, Lorde of Rocelles about this time, founded thereby a Priorie in honour of S. O. and Saint Thomas, for Chanons Regular. After which time, there were manie houses built, by meanes whereof the towne beganne to rise, and by little and little to encrease, so that in place of Crux Roise, it is called the towne of Roisa, or Ropstowne. Unto the which king Richard granted a faire, and a market, with other liberties. This Priorie was since renewed, and augmented by Radulph de Runcelifer, and other: so that at the supplie hon, the same was valued at 89. pounds, sixtene shillings. There was an hospitall of S. Iohn, and S. James, Apostles, also suppressed and valued but at 5. li. 6. s. 10. pence.

1193  
An. reg. 5.  
Richard taken  
pysoner.

King Richard having knowledge that Philip of France invaded Normandie, and that Iohn his brother had made himselfe king of England, made peace with the Saladine for thre yeres, and with a small company returning homeward, was taken pysoner by Leopold Duke of Austria, who brought him to Henry the Emperour, and there kept him in prison a yere and five monethes. He was enured for his balsance, in that he had thewed more proofe of his prowesse, than all the other had.

Wolfang Lazius.  
King Richard  
of England  
built the  
walls of Aken  
na.

Wolfangus Lazius in his booke de Romano Imperio, affirmeth that Leopold of Austria, when he had taken king Richard, for some iniurie done to the house of Austria, he compelled him to build the walls about Akenna, the chiefest cite of Austria, the which walls within our memory defended all Germany from the invasion of the Turke.

The rumour being spread that S. Richard was taken as ye have heard, forthwith

with the French king and earle Iohn made a great conspiracy together, meaning to take the kingdom of England, he upon a great number of Flemings were assembled at Ghent, ready to come over, but the intelligence being taken, the treason was betrayed.

Earle Iohn  
rebelled a-  
gainst king  
Richard.

Eleanor the olde Duene caused the Sea Coastes to be watched over against flauanders, but notwithstanding Earle Iohn came secretly into England to raise the Welchmen and Scottes, but the king of Scottes would not aid him. The Welchmen in the partes about Kingstone and Wiltshire toke praires aboab.

The French king entered Normandie, founde small resistance, tooke divers townes, Gisors was deliuered to him, then he halld towards Roane, and besieged it, but through the great industry of Robert earle of Leicester, he profited little there, and so returned into France. Earle Iohn perceiving his treason was discovered, fortified his castles, and passed over into France, and joined with the French king.

King Richard sent for his mother and the archbshop of Roane to come unto him to Almain, being now in great hope to be deliuered, & in the meane time the archbshop of Canterbury was made regent of England.

Ambassadors were sent from Philip king of France, and the like from earle Iohn to the Emperour, offering great sums, upon condition that king Richard might remaine still in prison, until the feast of S. Michael next comming, or els to deliuer him into their hands. The Emperour thewed these letters to S. Richard, which brane him into great dispaire of deliuerance.

The kings friends intreating for his deliuerance, his rancome was set at 100000. pounds, to witte to the Emperour 100000. markes, to the Emperesse 30000. markes: and to the duke of Austria 10000. markes: whereupon commandement was directed from the kinges Justices, that all Bpshoppes, Prelates, Cardes, Barons, Abbots, and Priors, should bring in the 4. part of their revenues towards the kings rancome, and besides this, the Cleargy brought in the golden and silver chalices, and senced their shynes, at which was comed into money.

The kings ran-  
come.  
Gervail. Dore.  
Rad. Cogshall.

This imprisonment of king Richard was procured by Saracenus Bpshoppe of Bath and Glastenburie, to the intent to haue Glastenburie abbey, to be translated to the seate of this Bpshopricke, for confirmation whereof I thought good to set downe the beginning of the Certificate of Henry the thirde to the Pope in this sort.

Significauit Sanctitati nostrae Henricus Dei gratia, Rex Angliæ, quod cum Filius memorie (rege Richardo auunculo suo in carcere in Alemania detento): scilicet: quondam Bathoniensis Episcopi. per ipsum cuius carcere Dominus Rex tenebatur, Abbati-um Glasten. &c.

The order of the Differences did giue their woll for one yere, &c. all the money gathered for the kings rancome, to remaine in the custody of Robert Archbshop of Canterbury, Richard Bpshop of London, William earle of Arundell, Hameline earle of Warren, and the spaior of London.

The king was restored to libertie, the most part of his rancome being payd, and

Mathew Paris.  
Reg. Honed.

and pledges left for the residue. In the meane time letters were intercepted of Earle Iohn which hee had sent into England touching treason, one Adam of Saint Edmond Clerk, being sent by earle Iohn, to prouide that his Castle might be fortified against King Richard, came to London, and dined with Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, where he bagged of Earle Iohns prosperitie, and familiaritie with the French king, for the which being suspected, he was after dinner apprehended by the spaiers of London, who toke from him his letters, and deliuered them to the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, who on the next morrow called a Councell of the Carles and Barons, and shewed them the letters, whereupon they all consented that Earle Iohn should bee dispossessed of all his land in England, and that his Castles should be besieged. The same day the same Archbishop and Bishops excommunicated earle Iohn and all his fauourers, which troubled the peace of the kingdome. And forthwith the Archbishop besieged the Castle of Spalborough, which belonged to Earle Iohn, and toke it. After this he besieged Potttingham Castle.

The king taking ship at Antwerp, landed at Sandwich, on the 12. of March, shortly after he besieged the castle of Potttingham, and toke it, and after that the Castle of Eikehill, and then rode to Winchester, where hee was againe solemnly crowned on the 29. of April. After this he called into his handes, all such things as hee had either giuen or solde by patentees or otherwise, by which meanes he got a great summe of money.

King Richard hearing that the king of France had besieged Mersaile, hee toke the sea together with his mother Queene Elianor, on the tenth of Maye, and transported ouer into Normandy, and arrived at Harflew with 100. ships fraught with men, horse, armour, &c. The king of France hearing hereof, plucked by his tentes, lefte the siege, and departed. King Richard here with aduising the French dominions, sent three bandes of Souldiours towarde Male Maell, and went himselfe vnto Rochis, and besieged the Castle and wanne it: about the same time Robert Earle of Leicester sitting south of Roane in hope to worke somewhat, vnadvisedly in the landes of Hugh Gourney he fell within danger of his enemies, who toke him prisoner with other of his company, King Richard wanne the strong castle of Carlebridge by surrender, hee was by force the citie of Engolisme, and other holdes: at length a truce was taken for a time.

King Richard being in Normandie kept his Christmas at Roane, whilst both the king of England and France were bent to trie their malice by dint of sword, there came messengers to eche of them from the Pope, exhorting them to peace, but they prevailed not, for as soon as the truce was ended, they got them to the field, King Richard drawing toward Meloune, a towne in the confines of Barrie, from thence he went to Bisen, and toke the Castle there, then went hee to a towne called Pouen court, this he besieged and it was yielded.

In the meane time the King of France besieged Albrmarle, whereupon King Richard came to raise the siege, & there was a sharpe fight, but the English men worarie with trauaile of their iourney, and being rashly entred into the battell, were

were not able to endure the French mens violence, and so not without great losse, were constrained to retyre.

King Richard sent messengers to the Pope, complaining vpon the Duke of Austrey, for misusing of him and his, as they came by distress of weather through his Countrey: whereupon the Pope excommunicated the Duke, and enioyned him to release the couenants that hee constrained the king to make and to send home the pledges: but the Duke refused this order, contemning the Popes authoritie, who shortly after hauing broken his legges, and in extreame anguish ended his life, and was kept hurtled till his sonne had released the English pledges that lay in hostage for the money behind of King Richards ransome, and further sware to stand to the iudgement of the Church for that offence of his father.

Thus were the pledges released, and the residue of the money behind released, which thing to king Richard was both pleasant and profitable, for taking occasion thereof to amend his former life, into a better order, he put away his Concubines, and toke him to his wife, whom of long time he had not known. Moreover, the Emperour gaue to the Christian Spokes, 3000. markes of silver, parcel of king Richards ransome to make silver censers in every church of that order, but the Abbots refused the gift, being a portion of so vngodly and vngodly gaine, at which thing king Richard greatly marvelled at the first, but after commended the Abbots in their doings chiefly for shewing that they were bolde of the accustomed graueynesse, that men noted to haue bene in them.

Hugh Bishop of Lincoln gaue to the king a thousand markes for his mantel of Sables, which his predecessors were wont yearly to haue giuen them by the king.

Robert Earle of Leicester, offered to the king of France for his ransome a thousand markes sterling, and to quit claime to him and his heires for ever, the right which he had to the castle of Dalay, with the appurtenances, but for that they were still continued, there was no answer giuen.

King Richard hauing refreshed his souldiours, went to Milligio, and by assault wanne it at the first brunt, and made it leuell with the ground. After this, there was a motion made for peace betwixt the two kings, being now wearied with long wars. Whereof, when Earle Iohn was aduertised, hee beganne to doubt, lest by agreement made, he might be betrayed by the king of France, vpon couenants passing betwixt them, and therefore determined to commit his whole safety to his naturall brother: whereupon comming to King Richard hee besought him of pardon for his offences, and though hee had not dealt brotherly towards him, yet, that he would brotherly forgive him his rebellious trespass, &c. vpon whose submission, and by the interceding of Elianor his mother and other, in the ende king Richard did not onely pardon him his life, but vpon his othe, restored him to the Earledomes of Poitouaige in Normandie, and Gloucester in Engl. and, with the honor of Eye, the Castles except, and in recompence of his other earldomes, his brother gaue him yearly 8000. pounds of Anglow money.

King.

Record. caponi.

1194.  
Godfr. Vinifal.  
Geru. Dorob.  
R. Richard the  
second time  
crowned.  
An. reg. 6.

Robert Earle  
of Leicester ta-  
ken prisoner.

1195

An. reg. 7.

Starling  
money.

Submission  
to Earle Iohn.

King Richard pardoned Hugh Nounce bishop of Couentry, and restored him to his bishopricke for the summe of 5000. marks of silver: but Robert Nounce his brother, died in the kings prison at Dover.

William Fitz Osbert a citizen of London, poxe in degre, until favoured of shawe, but yet verie eloquent, moved the common people to seke libertie and freedom, and not to be subiect to the rich and mighty, by which means he drew to him many great companies, and with all his power defended his poore mens cause against the rich. 5000 Londoners he allured to him to be at his deuotion and commandement.

The king being warned of this tumult, commanded him to cease from these attempts, but the people still followed him, as they before had done: he made to them orations, taking for his theme this sentence, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris*, which is to say, Ye shall drawe in ioy, waters out of the welles of your Sauour. And to this he added: I am (saide he) the Sauour of poore men, yee be poxe, and haue assayed long the hard hands of rich men. Fele dwale yee wthosome water forth of my welles, and that with ioie, for the time of your visitation is come. This William was commanded to appeare before the kings council to answer for himselfe in such causes as should be laid against him, where he appeared, but with such a multitude of people, that the Lordes were afraid, and remitted him with pleasant wordes for the time, appointing some priuily when he was alone to apprehend him. He took the steeple of Bowe Church in Cheape, and fortified it with munition and buicalles. The archbishop of Canterbury then being at London with other Iudices sent to him, and willed him to come forth of the church: he should haue his life saued: but he refused to come forth, wherefore the Archbishop talking with the citizens of London called together a great number of armed men least any stirre should be made.

The Saturday therefore being the Passion Sunday euen, the steeple and church of Bowe were assailed, and William with his complices taken, but not without bloodshed, for he was forced by fire & smoke to forsake the church: he was brought to the Archbishop in the Towre, where he was by the Iudges condemned, and by the hayles draine from thence to a place called the Glimes, and there hanged with nine of his fellows. Where because his fauourers came not to deliuer him, he forsoke Maries sonne (as he termed him) and called the diuell to helpe and deliuer him.

This counterfeit friend to the poxe, who named himselfe to be the saviour, perswading them against the rich, was a man of an euill life, a murderer, who slew a man with his owne hands: a fornicator, who polluted Bowes Church with his concubine: and amongst other his detestable facts, one that had falsly accused his elder brother of treason, which elder brother had in his youth bought him by in learning, and done many things for his preferment. Yet after the death of this wicked malefactor, the simple people honored him as a Martyr, in so much that they steele away the gibbet whereon he was hanged, and part away the earth, that was be-bleed with his blood, and kept the same as holy reliques to heale sick men.

King

with the  
heard.  
Roger Hounden.  
W. Parisus.  
John Textor.  
Gervas. Dorob.  
Cant. Record.  
Gualter Cochen.

1196

Ralph Higden.

A false accuser  
of his elder bro-  
ther, in the end  
was hanged.  
God amend o-  
therly sinners,  
such an end to  
such like by-  
gones.

King Richard granted licence vnto Philip his chaplaine late made Bishop of Durham, to coine money in his title of Durham, which liberty none of his predecessours had enjoyed of long time before. Robert earle of Leicester gaue Philip king of France two thousand markes of silver, and the quite claime of his Castle of Passay, for his liberty, and to be cleane released.

Philip king of France, besieged Albemarle, and at length won it, and raised it downe to the ground, and king Richard gaue unto him three thousand markes of silver, for the ransome of his men of armes, and other taken in that fortresse. After this the king of France won Poncourt, and earle John took the castle of Camages.

About the same time king Richard gaue vnto his nephew Ocho, the Earle dome of Poptow. His, as the countesse of Byptaine, the mother of Duke Arthur came into France, to haue spoken with king Richard, Reinulph earle of Chester, her husband meeting her at Pontowson, took her as prisoner, and shut her by within his Castle of St. James de Beuinemar, and when her son Arthur could not find means to deliuer her out of captiuitie, hee joined with the French king, and made great hauechie in the lands of his uncle king Richard. Whereupon the king gathered a mightie power, and invaded Byptaine, cruelly wasting that countrey.

This yere died William Earle of Salisbury, the sonne of Earle Patrike, whose daughter and heire, king Richard gaue in marriage together with the Cardelome of Salisbury vnto his base brother surnamed William Longespe, The Welchmen brake forth and did much hurt by spoyling of the marches. The Archbishop of Canterbury calling together an army hastened thither, besieged the castle of Pole, and took it, and chased the enemies, established peace, and returned.

Rise ap Griffeth the Welch king departed this life: after whose departure there fell discord betwene his sonnes for the succession, till Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury went to the marches of that country, and made an agreement betwixt them.

King Richard and the Earle of Flanders confedered together. The French king entering vnlawfully into Flanders, was intercepted and taken by the earle of Flanders, but giuing pledges vpon covenant to make peace, he was suffered to depart.

The eight day of September they met at Lille, where, by mediation of the Archbishop of Canterbury, they took a truce. The Archbishop of Roan returned from Rome, where he had complained on king Richard for taking from him a plot of ground, whereon he builded a strong Castle, but at the request of the archbishop of Canterbury, the king gaue him in recompence, the towne of Wepe.

The Welchmen on the marches took booties, and did much hurt, but Hubert the archbishop of Canterbury being lord chiefe Justice, lieutenant, or warden of England, found mirans to resist them, so that they being fought with, were overthowen, and 5000. of them slaine. The Archbishop hauing got this victory, returneth to London, where calling together a great number of the nobles

An. reg. 8.  
Roger Hounden.

Rog. Hound.

Longespe  
base sonne to  
Henry the se-  
cond.

1197

An. reg. 9.

1198  
Gervasius.

nobles of the land, he resigned his office of being head ruler, in whose place the Lord Geoffrey Fitz Peter succeeded in August.

An. reg. 10.

100. acres of  
land to an hide.

Mathew Paris.

King Richard took of every Carucate plough land, or hide of land throught Engl and five shillings. Commissioners were appointed in every shire, with the assistance of the Sherriffes, to see the same assessed, and rated after 100. acres of land to a hide, according to the custome. The French king was intercepted by the army of king Richard, so that with much ado he escaped into Cyprus, his army was disperced, and almost an hundred knights taken, besides other common souldiours, without number. The Charters which the king had before made with his new seale were changed.

Colledge at  
Lambeth.

Hubert archbishop of Canterbury, through the procurement of the monkes of Canterbury, and by the commaundement of the Pope, brake downe euen with the ground the Chappell or colledge at Lambeth which his predecessours had founded, and he had finished in the honour of Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.

1199  
King Richard  
wounded to  
death.  
Paulus Aemilius.  
Gualt. Cousen.  
Ralph Cossfall.  
Gualt. Vinesall.

King Richard turned his army against the Barons of Poitou that rebelled against him, he set their cities and towns on fire, spoiled their country, & slew many of his aduersaries cruelly, at the last came to the dukedome of Aquitaine, and besieged the Castle of Chalne, and brought it to that, that they with in offered to yelde vppon conditions, but he would not so receiue them, but would haue them by force: whereupon a certaine young man named Bertram de Gordon, standing on the castle wall, leuelled a quarell out of a crossbow, and smote him with a benoumed dart in the left arme or shoulder: which stripe the king little regarded, but inuading the castle, wan it, and put the souldiours in prison. Of this wound aforesaid, he died the 6. of Aprill, in the yere of our Lord 1199. when hee had raigned 9. yeres, and 9. moneths, and was buried at Fontenurard at his fathers side, whom he confessed he had betrayed, his hart was buried at Poaene, in testimonie of the loue hee had euer borne vnto that citie, for the stedfast loyalty he had alwaies found in the citizens thereof, and his bowels at the foresaid Chalne.

## King Iohn.

An. reg. 1.



John Earle of Poitou, and Lord of Ireland, aged 34. yeres, a person of an indifferant stature, but of melancholy complexion, after the decease of king Richard, took vnto him, and retrained all the knights and souldiours which had serued his brother, he kept them in wages, and promised them large gifts. Moreover, he sent Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, William Marshall, and Geoffrey Fitz Peter chiefe Justice into England, to proclaim his peace to be kept amongst the rest of the Nobles of the Realme. These, when they came into England, caused all men to sweare to be true to Earle Iohn, and so went forward to Northampton, where they called together all those nobles,

bles, whom they doubted, and promised in the name of Earle Iohn, that hee should restore vnto them, and to all men, their right: and vpon that comission they gaue to him their fidelities. Also they sent word by Eustace de Vescy, to William king of Scots, that earle Iohn at his returne into England should content him for all his right which hee claymed in England, and the restore told him in the meane season to be faithfull to the said Earle, and to keepe his peace, which hee promised, by which meanes all strife and debate in Englaunde was appeased.

Whilist these things were a doing in England, earle Iohn went to Chilton where king Richards treasure laye, which treasure, with the Castle, was deliuered to him by Robert de Turnehame. But Thomas de Furneis deliuered vnto Arthur Duke of Brittain, the citie and Castle of Angiers, for as well by him, as by all other the nobles and pères of the countries of Angiew, Spaine, and Turon, Arthur was receiued as their soueraigne Lord. Spoken, Constantia mother to the said Arthur, deliuered him to the king of France at Turon: whom he sent to Paris to be kept, and took into his hands all the Castles and Cities that appertained to the said Arthur: but Earle Iohn and Elianor his mother, came with a great army to the Citie of Paris, and won both it and the Castle, destroyed all the stone houses there, and carried the citizens away captiues. This being done, Earle Iohn entring into the countrey of Aniole held his Caster at Beaufort, and on the morrow after, he sent Quene Elianor and Marchadius vnto the Citie of Aniole, who with a warlike power spoiled it, and carried the citizens away captiues.

Earle Iohn  
tooke the kings  
treasure.

In which meane time earle Iohn came to Roan, and there by the ministerie of Walter Archbishop of Roan, he was girt with the sword of the dukedome of Normandy, in the Cathedra church, where the Archbishop before the high altar, did set a Crownet of golde vpon his head, artificially made with Roses of golde, &c. Duke Iohn swore vpon the holy Evangelists to defend the Church and liberties thereof, to see Justice ministered to the people, god lawes put in execution, and euill lawes suppressed.

Earle Iohn  
Duke of Normandy.

Then Iohn Duke of Normandie sayled ouer into England, and arrived at Shobham on the five and twentieth daie of Maie, and came to London on the Ascension euen, where the Archbishops, Bishops, Carles, Barons, and other being present, Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury standing by in the midst of them all, said in effect as followeth:

Your discrete wisdomes doe knowe (right honorable) that by most reason none ought to succede in the kingdome, except by the vniuersall consent of the whole realme (praying for the grace of the holy ghost) he be chosen according to the excellencie of his qualities and bechaitour, by the example of the first appointed king Saul, whom our Lord appointed vnto his people, not being the son of any king, neither of the progeny of any king. Likewise, after him, he made David king, the sonne of Ithai, who was a Monte man, apt and meete for the worthy dignitie of a king, and that because he was holy and humble, so that he which both in such sort excel in prouesse all other in the kingdome ought to be chosen to gouerne the same: but if there be any of the kings lineage that

Archbishop his  
Oration.

John Duke of  
Normandy e-  
lected king of  
England.

both excellent, he ought to be ready to elect and chose him. This I speake touching the noble Duke Iohn, brother to our late excellent king Richard now deceased, which had none before proceeding of his bodie. Which Duke Iohn appeared plainly unto us, to be both wary and stout, whom therefore beseeching the holy ghost of his grace, we doe with one consent elect and chose, as being both of the same worthines, and also of the same blood and kindred that king Richard was of.

Roger Wend.

This archbishop indeede was a man of deepe understanding, a singular pillar of stabilitie, and of incomparable wisdom, so that no man was so bold as to make any reasoning of the matter at that time, because they knowe well enough that he did not without cause define in such sort of this thing: wherefore the Duke Iohn, and all other there present did accept of the choise, crying, *Viva Rex*. But afterwards, the archbishop being demaunded, why he made this election, he answered, and said, that by certaine Oracles, and by the gift of prophete, he was certified, that this Iohn should once take to himselfe the realme and crowne of England, and should bring the same into great confusion: wherefore, to the end he should not have so much occasion to bring these things to passe, he saide, that he was so to be elected to the kingdome, though the same by succession of inheritance belonged not to him, and so he set the crowne upon his head, and annointed him king at Westminster in Saint Peters church, upon the Ascension day, which was the five and twentieth day of Maie: he was sworn to love the catholike church and ordinances thereof: to keep and defend the same harinlessse from the invasion of euill disposed persons: to disanull peruerse lawes, and create good lawes, and according to the same to minister true iudgement throughout his kingdome.

Prophecy of  
king Iohn.

John Duke of  
Normandie  
crowned king  
of England.

States crea-  
ted.

The same day king Iohn inuested William Marshall with the sword of the earldome of Striguile, and Geoffrey fitz Peter with the earldome of Essex, and they served that day at the table with their swordes girt to them. Also Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, was made Lord Chancelour of England.

Whilste these things were in doing in England, Philip king of France with an army, brake into Normandy, and take the citie of Caen, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Spaine, recovered that countrey. Also the Brytaines, wanne the townes of Coney, Butevant and Gensline: they take also the citie of Caen, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Spaine, recovered that countrey. Also the Brytaines, wanne the townes of Coney, Butevant and Gensline: they take also the citie of Caen, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Spaine, recovered that countrey. Also the Brytaines, wanne the townes of Coney, Butevant and Gensline: they take also the citie of Caen, the towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Spaine, recovered that countrey.

Philip of  
France bound  
by othe to alse  
duke Arthur.

Price of wines.

King Iohn made a law, that no tunne of Rochell wine should be sold dearer then xx. shillings, of Anslow for xxiij. shillings, 7 of France xxv. shillings, and not above, unlesse the same were of such principal goodnes, that some for their use would give xxvi. shillings liii. pence for the tun, and not above in any case.

g

A gallon (by retale) of Rochell wine to be sold for liii. pence, the gallon of white wine not above vi. pence. It was also ordained, that in euery cite, towne and place where wine was sold to be sold, there should be xii. honest men twome to haue regard that this assise should not be broken: and if that they found any tinter that should sell any wine by small measures contrary to the same assise, his body should be attached by the shiriffe and detained in prison, till order was taken for his further punishment, and his goods seized to the kings use: and the like punishment was appointed for such as should sell by the tunne, hoghead, or other wise, contrary to the assise.

Philip king of France, and Iohn king of England met betwixt the castles of Mtaplun, and Butevant, where they agreed upon a peace, that king Iohn should quite claime unto the French king, and his heires for euer, all Vilgelwin, Cisors, and other castles. Also king Iohn gaue in marriage with his niece Blanch, daughter to Alfonso, king of Castile, unto Lewis, sonne and heire to Philip king of France, all the castles which the same Philip had taken in Normandy, that is to say, Vernon, Badep, Puery, and Bonancot, and many other cities, townes, castles, &c. besides to king Philip 30000. markes. King Philip then bestowed Arthur to king Iohn, and receiued of him homage, for Brytaine and Richmond, both kings swore to obserue this peace firme with their scale for euer.

King Iohn having made peace beyond the seas, returned into England, where he requirith an aide of his realme to pay the thirty thousand marks, and edict was made, that euery plowland should paie three shillings, which troubled the land sore, considering the escuage that went afore, which was for euery knight sixe two marks, which before time was neuer but twenty shillings. King Iohn went ouer, and hauing paid his thirty thousand marks to the king of France, he was there by the hands of Helias Archbishop of Bourdeaur, and the Bishops of Poitiers, and Scone, divorced from his wife Isabell, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, because of nearnesse of blood, as touching her in the thirde degree: And then he married Isabell daughter to Americ Earle of Angouleme; which Isabell before Hugh surnamed Brune Earle of Marches had taken to wife.

This being done, King Iohn returned with his new wife, and crowned her Quene at Westminster on the eight of October. And the same day king Iohn commaunded Hugh Nevill chiefe forrester, and the other forresters to warne all the sponkes of the Cistiaur order throughout England, that from the Detanes of Saint Michael, unto the Quindem, they should remove all their boies, their swine, and other cattell whatsoeuer off the forrest ground: and if any were after found upon y forrest ground, they should be sold to the kings use. The monkes provided for themselves, and patiently bare the kings displeasure.

The archbishop of Canterbury sent to all the Abbots of that order, aduising them to mete the king at Lincoln on the xvi. of Nouember, that being together, by his helpe they might attempt to appeale the kings moode, they did as they were willed. The archbishop counselled them, the next day to mete the

1200

Philip of  
France dis-  
solved the  
marriage  
between  
him and  
Arthur.

An. reg. 2.  
A tale of  
the life of  
every plow  
land.

King Iohn di-  
uorced Isabell  
his wife,  
married an-  
other Isabell.



king without the city, and to humble themselves unto him, but they thought not this to be the best waie, lest those that robe before the king should abuse them.

The next day king Iohn talked with William king of Scots that was come to Lincoln, with Roland Lord of Galloway, and many other noblemen, to doe homage to the king.

The next day the Archbishoppe moved the king in the matter touching the Abbots, but the king willed him not to bere his spirits, for he meant that day to be let blood.

On Sunday next following, the archbishop caused the abbots to come into the kings presence at masse time: whereupon, after the king had heard masse, and comming forth of the church, the Archbishop besought him to heare their sute, and then they falling downe at the kings fete, besought him to haue pity upon them: the king commaunded one to bring the Abbots into his chamber, and he with the Archbishop, bishops, and Nobles went into the same chamber before them, where, when they had sate a while, the king rose vp, and went into an inner chamber, there to conferre with the noblemen, such as pleased him; and after comming forth, called for the archbishop and certaine other bishops, with whom he talked secretly: and after the Abbots being called, the king appointed the Archbishop to declare unto them his pleasure, which was, that although the king had shewed himselfe in wordes to be offended with them, yet he neuer meant hurt to that order, and now had put away all rancour and malice towards them: here with they fell downe on the ground, and gaue humble thanks to the king, and withall, the archbishop inferred, that the king requested them to forgive him: and the king herewith fell downe, watering his cheekes with teares, and they likewise at his fete. The Archbishop, after both partes were vp on their fete, said, that the king required, that by their intercession he might be made a brother in the chapter of the Cisterciars, and that they would procure him to be admitted: Whereupon, the king, he saide, minded to build a house of that order, that he might be had in memorie, and would be a patron and defender of their order. The Abbots being greatly reioiced, departed, praising God.

King Iohn going into Ireland toke a great piece of money there, and returning into England, was crowned together, with his Queene at Canterbury on Easter day.

King Iohn with Isabel his Queene sailed into Normandie, fell in communication with Philip king of France, where they agreed so well, that they passed together into France, where king Iohn was honourably receiued at Saint Denys, and into Paris, &c.

A nobleman of Aquitaine named Hugh Brune, rebelling against king Iohn invaded diuers parts of the prouince, because the king had married the daughter of the Earle of Angouleme, whom the said Brune had assid, and had in his custody, wherefore they passed over, and restrained the rebelles from their attempts.

The five and twentieth of June there arose a cruel tempest of thunder, lightning,

ning, and haile, with a vehement raine, that destroyed coyns, castell, men, and houses, by burning them, &c.

The tenth of July, another tempest much like to the former hapned, so that the meadowes could not be mowed, and the hay that was downe, was carried away by the outrageous course of waters that overflowed the ground, great numbers of fishes through the corruption of the waters died, manie bishopps boine downe, coyns and hay carried away, and many men drowned, so that all men thought a new deluge had bene come.

King Iohn sharply warred upon the Earle of March, Hugh Brune, and the earle of Que his brother, who being not able to resist, they complained to Philip king of France, as to their soueraigne and chiefe Lord, who sent oft times to king Iohn, mouing him to cease from beryng them, but that would not serue: wherefore he was summoned by the nobles of France as duke or earle of Aquitaine and Anjou, to come unto the court of the French king, and to stand to the iudgement of his peres, all which king Iohn denied: whereupon the same court adiabged him to be deprived of all his lands, which he or his predecessors beide of the king of France, &c.

King Philip forthwith assembled an army, and invaded the castle of Buteuant in Normandy, which Richard had builded, he rased it to the ground. He toke the land of Hugh Gorney, and all the Castles thereabout. He toke the Castle of Albemarle, with the countie of Que, and all the land to Arches, none resisting him Also Arthur earle of Byptaine being made knight by the French king, whose yonger daughter he had affianced, he being but thirteene peres old, went to Hugh Brune, and Geoffrey of Lucingham, and with two hundred and fiftie knightes, besieged the Castle of Mirable, in which Queene Elianor his Aunt was inclosed: but king Iohn came with a power, and deliuered his mother from danger. He toke there his Nephew Arthur, William de Brawla, Geoffrey de Lucingham, Hugh Brune, Andrew Caueny, Saluaricus de Maulcon, and diuers others.

Great thunder and lightning, with haile as bigge as hennes egges, &c. The waters increased, and did much hurt in England: Arthur earle of Byptaine, from Falaie was brought to Roan, and put in the Tower under the custody of Robert de Veypont, where shortly after he was dispatched of his life, some say by the handes of his uncle Iohn.

The king of France invaded the castles of Normandy, toke Lille, Wandeley, with the Castle, and the vale de Ruell, in the which were Robert fiz Walter, Sayer de Quincy, and manie other. He toke the strong Castle upon Setne, builded by King Richard, which had bene valiantly kept by the constable of Chester.

Among many other that found themselves agreed with the shamefull murder of duke Arthur, sonne to Geoffrey duke of Byptaine, king Iohns elder brothers sonne, and therefore rightfull heire to the crowne and realme of England, was Iohn Courcy the valiant conqueror, and earle of Ulster in Ireland: which being brought to the kings eares, he call the said Courcy into the Tower of London. But the matter fell out boter betwene the king of France

King of Scots  
did homage to  
king Iohn.

1202  
Ralph Cogshall.  
An. reg. 4.

King Iohn  
summoned to  
the French  
kings Court.

Arthur earle  
of Byptaine  
taken.

1201

An. reg. 3.  
Hugh Brune  
rebellid.

Prodigima.  
Emp. 11.

1203

Paulus Aemilius.  
Of Iohn de  
Courcy a val-  
iant and hardy  
man.

and is, John (as ye haue heard) so that the king of France berett him of all the lands that he held in the fee of the Crowne of France, and among other matters, he sent hither a mighty man, who should try that quarrel with an English champion by combat: To undertake the which, the king moued Courcy, who stoutly answered him, that in his quarrell, whose murderous vile minde, cowardlines, traiterous condicions, and tyrannicall gouernment deserued not the aduantage of losing one droppe of blood, hee would not fight one stroke, but for the honour of the realme, wherein many a good and honourable man liued, to his great griefe, he would willingly leaue his life, and cherefully accept the combat, yea with a wound. But no harme was doone, for the French man, as soone as he sawe the mightie him, and fierce countenance of Courcy, went awaie.

King John doubting treason in his owne men, in December returned into England, where he gathered great aides of money.

Eleanor daughter to the earle of Poitiers, that had bene wife to Lewis king of France, and after to is. Henry the second of England departed this life, and was buried in Fonteneard.

King John gaue to Allenike de Vere the earldome of Oxford, and made him earle, by giuing him with the sword. King John sent Ambassadors to treat a peace with the k. of France, but he, because the world went with him, would not agree in anye wise, except Arthur might be deliuered to him alive, or if he were dead, he would haue his sister in marriage with all the lands on that side the Seas.

Shortly after he toke Falaise, Caen, and so forth all the countrey to Barflet, Charburgh, and Dunfront, Roane, Bernoll, and Arches: and so prouide for many, Antio, Byptaine, Spaine, Poltowa, and Thoyaigne, were within a short time deliuered to king Philip.

King John married lane his bastard daughter to Lewlin prince of Wales, and gaue with her the Castell and Lordship of Clingsmore, in the Marches of Southwales.

Robert Fitz Parnell earle of Leicester died without issue, and then Simon de Mouniford, and Sayer de Quincy, diuided the earldome betwixt them, because that Sayer de Quincy, and the father of Simon Mouniford had married the sisters of the said Robert.

The foureteenth daie of Iannarie beganne a frost, which continued till the two and twentieth daie of March, so that the ground coulde not be tilled, whereof it came to passe that in summer following, a quarter of wheate was sold for a marke of silver in many places of England, which for the more parte in the daies of king Henry the second, was sold for twelue pence: a quarter of beanes or pease for halfe a marke: a quarter of oates for foure pence, that were wont to be sold for foure pence. Also, the money was so lowe clipped, that there was no remedie, but to haue it reued.

King John gathered great armies of men to haue gone ouer the Seas, but being failed on ward of his voyage, he returned againe, and toke esnage, two markes and a halfe of currie knightes for through Englands, pretending a quarrell

quarrell against his barons, because they would not follow him into the parts beyonde the Seas.

The earle of Salisburie, the kings brother, Geoffrey the kings son begot on a concubine, and many other knightes, were gone ouer before, but al in vaine: the charges was inestimable that had bene layde out about the preparation made for this Iourney.

Great thunders and lightninges bursting out of the cloudes were sene, so that men thought that the day of Doome had bin come, many men and townes were destroyed, beside catell, and houses that were ouerthrowne, and burned. The corne in the fields was beaten downe with hailestones as big as goose eggs.

About Spaldstone in Kent, a certaine monster was found, stricken with the lightning, which monster had an head like an asse, a belly like a man, and all other parts farre discordant from any one living thing. This dead bodie no man might brynne come nere vnto for feare.

King John toke the thirtieth part of all moueable goods, both of lay and religious through England, at which all men murmured.

The 7. day of Iannary a great wind ouerthrew many houses and trees, and a great snow destroyed manye beastes.

The monkes of Canterburie, by the aduise of the Pope, elected Stephen Langton to be their Archbisshop, and then Pope Innocent intending to obatine the fauour of king John towards this election, because hee knewe that hee did make diligent search for precious stones, sent him an eloquent Epistle, with diuers precious Jewelles, which were of king John well accepted: and Stephen Langton was consecrated at Rome. When the Pope sent letters to king John, humbley exhorting him to receiue the said Stephen Archbisshop of Canterburie, beeing the accunto canonicallie elected, the rather because hee was an Englishman borne, and a doctor of diuinitie, &c. But king John being greatly offended with the promoting of the said Stephen, sent men in armour to expell the monkes of Canterburie, to the number of thre score and foure out of the Realme, and condemned them of treason, the monkes went into Flaunders, and the ir goods, and lands of their church was confiscated. Also king John sent threatening letters to the pope, whereunto the pope made a large answer.

A. Isabel upon the first of October was deliuered of her first son at Winchester, and named him Henry.

The 23. of March, William Bishop of London, Eustachius Bishop of Ely, and Malgor Bishop of Winchester by the popes commandement executed the interdiction vpon the whole Realme, and they ceased through all England from ministering of Ecclesiasticall sacraments, sauing to them that were in perill of death, and baptisme to children. All the bodie of them that died, were buried like dogs in ditches and corners: Panie Bishops, especially they that pronounced the interdiction, fled the Realme.

The king set all the bishopps and abbates in the realme into the custody of lay men, and commanded all Ecclesiasticall reuenues to be confiscated. Also doubting lest the Pope should excommunicate him by name, or discharge the nobles of England of their allegiance towards him, he laid hold vpon them, specially

1206  
Ralph Coghall  
An. reg. 8.  
Geoffrey the  
kings son  
6. year than-  
ders, light-  
nings, and balls.

A strange  
monster.

1207

An. reg. 9.  
Mathew Paris.

1208  
England in-  
terdicted.  
Nic. Truer.  
Mathew Paris.  
Rad. Coghall.

An. reg. 10.

1204.  
Rad. Coghall.  
An. reg. 6.  
Allenike de  
Vere Earle of  
Oxford.

Normandie  
yielded to the  
French.

Lib. Bernewell.

Great frost.  
1205  
Deaths of  
cows.

An. reg. 7.

John Textor.  
Great tax.

Mathew Paris.

Specially such as he had in suspicion, and took pledges of them. King John requiring to have the sons of Will. de Brause, his wife made answer, she would not deliver them unto him, who had already slain his owne nephew Arthur, for which speech, both William de Brause and his wife, were saue to die into Ireland.

Philip byshop of Durham deceased, and was buried by the hands of lay men without the church and churchyard, because the land was interdicted. The Bishops that executed the interdiction, had their houses overthrowne, their towns cut downe, and their manors destroyed by the kings commandement.

W. Packington, 1209

Richard the kings second son by Isabel his wife was borne.

By the procurement of Stephen Langton archbishop of Canterbury, licence was granted to the conuentuall churches in Englande to celebrate diuine seruice once euery worke, but the white Monks had not this priuiledge, because they had disobeyed the interdiction.

Eschequer at Northampton.

The Eschequer was removed from Westminster to Northampton by the kings commandement. Hee also gathered a great armie, and went towards Scotland as far as the castell of Roxham, where the king of Scottes came to him, and treated a peace, for the which he gave 1000. markes of silver, and delivered his two daughters for a pledge.

Chro. Dan. Pledges burned Homage of freholders.

By the kings commandement, throughout all the forrests of England, all the ditches were made plaine ground, and the hedges bent. After this he took homage of all freholders, and swore all men to his allegiance from twelve yeres old upward. The Hospital of S. John and S. James at Crux Roilem, Roissone Crosse was founded the 10. yere of king Stephen.

Welshmen did homage.

The Welshmen came to Woodstocke, and did homage unto the king, which was neuer heard tell of before.

An. reg. 11.

A Clarke of Driford by chance killed a woman, and then ranne away, wherefore his three chamber fellows which knew nothing of the matter, were hanged at the towne sende, which caused three thousande maisters and scholars to forsake the vniuersitie of Driford, so that there tarried not one in that vniuersitie, but some went to Cambridge, some to Reding, some to Spalding to scholl, and left Driford emptye.

Rad. Cogshall.

A prodigious light was seene one morning in the beginning of Lent, the clouds seemed to fight with the Sun, from the Sun rising, till one of the clocke of that date.

London bridge builded of stone Exlib. Pontis Londinensis.

The arches and stone Bridge over the Thames at London, hauing bene three and thirtie yeres in building, since the foundation thereof was layde, to witte, in the yere of Christ 1176. and the 22. of Henrie the seconde, was this yere finished by the two worthy Merchantes of London, Serle Mercer, William Alman, and Bener Botewright. Master Fowle a learned man, last Bishop of S. Mary Oueries Church in his life time, reported, that at the first, being no bridge at London, but a ferrie, the ferrier and his wife deceasing, left the same ferrie to their daughter, a Spalden named Marie, who with the gods lesse by her parents, and the profits which came by the saide ferrie, builded a house of sisters, which is the vppermost end of S. Maries church above the quier, where the

Saint Mary Ductis.

John Leyland.

she was buried, into the which house shee gaue the ouersight and profite of the same ferrie: but afterwarde the house of Sisters was converted into a Colledge of priests, who builded the bridge of timber, and from time to time kept the same in reparations, but considering the great charges in repairing, lastly by the great aide of the Citizens of London, and others, they builded the same of stone. King John gaue certaine vacant places in London to builde on, the profits thereof to remaine towards the charges of building and repairing of the same bridge. A Mason being master worke man of the Bridge, builded from the foundation the chappell on London bridge, of his owne proper expenses.

The king commanded all the feloes both men and women to be imprisoned and graciously punished, because he would haue all their money, some of them gaue all they had, and promised more, to the ende they might escape so manie kinds of tormentes as he did put vpon them, for euery one of them had one eye at the least pulled out: amongst whom, there was one, which being tormented many waies, would not ransom himselfe, till the king had caused euery daie one of his great teeth to be pulled out by the space of 7. daies, and then he gaue the king 10000. markes of silver, to the end they should pull out no more.

King John at that time spoiled the feloes of 66000. markes.

In the moneth of June, the king ledde an Armie into Irelande, expelled Hugh Lacy, and brought all Ireland vnder his subiection. He caused the lawes of England to be executed there, and money to be coined according vnto the weight of English money, and made there both halfe pence and farthings: he returned with great triumph in the moneth of September, and then raised a great tare vpon all the religions in Englande, whome hee caused to paie such a ransom, and to spoyle their Churches, that the summe came to an hundred thousande poundes, besides fourtie thousande poundes of the white monkes.

Another fight betwixt the Sun and the cloudes was seene.

Margit a noble woman, wife to William de Brawse, and his sonne and heire William, perished miserablie with famine in the castell of Waindsofe. William her husband changing his apparell, passed ouer the sea at Spozam, and thither after died at Cozboile, and was buried at Paris.

The bishop of Londons castell called Stotford, is ouerthrowne, and the kings house at Wittle in Essex is builded.

The king went into Wales against Lewlin his sonne in law, that had married his barbar daughter, with a great force, euen to S. nobden. and subued all the princes and nobles, without any gaine saying. He took eight and twenty pledges for their subiection, and returned. When he came at Northampton, there met him messengers from the Pope, Pandolph and Durand, which came to make an bullie betwixt the king and the Bishop of Canterbury with the Monks which were banished, but the king granting their returne, denied to make them any amendes for their losse which they had sustained, or to restore their goods which he had confiscated, so that the Ambassadors returned without any end concluded.

Feloes ransomed. 1210

An. reg. 12.

Aunt in Ireland. Nich. Triver.

I. Beche. Ralph Cogshall.

Stotford castell.

1211 Wmp into Wales. Mathew Paris.

Legates from Rome. An. reg. 13.

A great care.

After this, the king took of every knight which was not with him in Wales, two marks of silver of every shield.

Pope Innocent abolished all, both pinnaces and other, which pertained to the crowne of England, from their fidelitie and subiection to king Iohn, and commanded them to eschue his company.

Gualter Couen.

A heard of hearts comming forth of the forest, leapt all into the Sea at the mouth of Severne.

Archbishop of  
Poysie deceased.

Cesrey archbishop of Poysie, bassard brother to king Iohn, because he would not give his consent unto a rate of the thirtenth penny of all mens goods, departed this realme in the yere 1207. whose possessions were forthwith seized into the kings hands, and now 5. yeres after his banishment, he ended his life beyond the seas: after whose deceale the sea was void by the space of 4. yeres.

Lib. Bernewell.

William king of Scotland being aged, was not able to quiet the inner parts of his realme, troubled with sedition, wherefore he fled unto the king of England, and committed himselfe, his kingdome, and onely sonne unto his prison, who making the young man knight, went into those parts with an army, and sending forth his men into the inner parts of that kingdome, hee took Cuthred Mac William Captaine of the sedition, and hung him on a paire of gallows, for he was of the olde ancient race of the Scottish kings, who assailed with the aide of the Irish and Scots, did exercise long enmitie against the moderne kings of Scotland, as his father Donald had done before him, sometime secretly, sometime openly: for the moderne kings of Scotland confessed themselves to be rather Frenchmen, as in stocke or linage, so also in maners, language, and apparell, and having brought the Scots unto extreme servitude, they admit onely Frenchmen into familiaritie and service.

The Welshmen take divers Castles of the king of Englands, cut off the heads of all the souldiers, burned many townes, and with a great pray returned without any harine.

1212  
Welshmen invaded Eng-  
land.  
Died of  
hunger.

The king gathered a great army, minging utterly to destroy all the coastes of Wales, but when he came to Potttingham, he caused eight & twenty plevages of the Welshmen to be hanged, and immediately after, while he sate at meate, there came a messenger, that brought him Letters from the King of Scots, informing him, that he should be betrayed; and likewise also came another messenger out of Wales, from the kings daughter, wife to Lewline king of Wales, certifying him of the same conspiracie, that is to say, that if he did not leave off and desist from that he had begun, his nobles would either kill him themselves, or else betray him to his enemies to be killed.

Wherefore, when the king came backe to London, he sent messengers to all the great men whome he suspected to be untrue to him, and demanded pledges of them, who daring not disobey the kings commandment, sent to him their sonnes, nephewes, and kindred to be at the kings pleasure.

Peter of Pont-  
fract.

About this time in the province of Poysie, there was an Heremite named Peter of Pontfract, who was also called the Wisse, because hee had declared unto many divers strange things that were to come. This Heremite prophesied openly of king Iohn, and said, that upon the Ascension day next comming, there

there

there should be no king, nor from thenceforth, but he said the crowne should at that day be translated to another. Whereof, when the king heard tell, hee commended this Heremite to be brought unto his presence, and demanded of him, whether the king should die as that day, or no, or else, in what order the king should be depstured of his raigne. The Heremite answered, I knowe this most certainly, that at that day, thou shalt not be king: and if I be found a liar, then doe with me what ye will. And the king said it should be even so, as thou hast saide, and so committed him to William de Hartcourt to keepe, and he kept him in dreight prison, until he sawe the end.

There were at that time manie noble men in England, whose wives and daughters the king had oppressed, and other some, whome with extreme exactions hee had brought into great povertie, and other some, whose parents and friends the king had banished, and had turned the inheritance unto his own use: so that king Iohn had almost, as many enemies as hee had nobles, and great men, and the report was that they did send their writing and charter to the king of France, sealed with their seals, wherein they promised him, that if he would come and invade England, they would receive him, and crowne him with honour.

About this time, Stephen Archbishop of Canterburie, William Bishoppe of London, and the Bishop of Ely, went to Rome, and informed the Pope how many enormous debtes king Iohn with great contumacie had done against God and his holy Church: wherefore they humbly besought him to helpe and succour the church of England, which now was in great danger. Whereupon the Pope determined, that king Iohn should be deposed, and another more worthy set in his place: Toward the execution whereof, the Pope wrote his letters to king Philip of France, willing him to expulse the king of England, and he should for ever possesse the kingdome.

The tenth daie of July at night, a marvellous and terrible chance happened, for the Citie of London upon the South side of the river of Thames, with the Church of our Lady of the Chanons in Southwarke being on fire, and an exceeding great multitude of people passing the bidge, either to ertingniss and quench, or else to gaze, behold, suddenly the north part, by blowing of the South winde was also set on fire, and the people which were even now passing the bidge, perceiving the same, would have returned, but were stopped by fire, and it came to passe, that as they staied, or protracted time, the other end of the bidge also, namely the South end was fired, so that the people thronging themselves betwixt the two fires, did nothing else expect or looke for then death. Then came there to aide them many ships and vessels, into the which, the multitude so badly pressed, that the ships being crowded, they all perished: it was said, though the fire and the shipwreck, that there were destroyed about three thousand persons. William Packington writeth, that there were found in part of halfe burnt three thousand bodies, besides those that were quite burned that could not be found.

King Iohn disherited some noble men without judgement of their peeres, and he would have destroyed Ranulph Earle of Chester, for that he repossessed him

Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
and other bi-  
shops com-  
plaint of king  
Iohn.An. reg. 14.  
London by bidge  
perished with  
fire  
Ex record S. Mar-  
tiz de Southw.Arbor successio  
Gual. couen.

W. Packington.

1213  
Noble men  
disherited.

him with this, that he should use the wife of his brother Geoffrey Earle of Britaine, whom Ranulph earle of Chester had married, and from whom Ranulph was disuoyced by the counsell of king Iohn, and the saide earle had married the daughter of the earle Ferrers.

King Iohn being now in extremity, and minding to impute the fault to them that would not appease his furor aforesaid, reprehended sometimes one, and sometimes another of his nobility as traitors, calling them lealous, whose bodies (as he bragged) he had defiled, and deflowered their daughters.

The Chronicle of Dunmow saith, this discord arose betwixt the king and his barons, because of Mawde called the Faire, daughter to Robert Fitz Walter, whom the king loved, but her father would not consent, and the reuenge ensued warre throughout England. The king spoiled speciallie the Castell of Baynard in London, and other holdes and houses of the barons. Robert Fitz Walter, Roger Fitz Robert, and Richard Mount Fitcher passed ouer into Fraunce, Iohn also went into Wales, and some into Scotland, and did great damage to the king. Whilste Mawde the Faire remained at Dunmow, there came a messenger vnto her from king Iohn about his suit in loue, but because she would not agree, the messenger poisoned a boiled or potched Egge against she was hungry, wherof she died, and was buried in the quier at Dunmow.

At this time also king Iohn subtiltie, to excuse himselfe withall, demanded and obtained of all religious persons, a writing, wherein they acknowledged, that they had willingly giuen the king all that he had with violence taken from them.

About this time, the king of France wasted the king of Englands landes beyonde the Seas, and the king of England likewise wasted his: but at the length a truce was taken, and an arme of the Sea being betwixt either host, there was a knight in the English host that cryed to them of the other side, willing some one of their knightes to list a course or twaine: wherupon without state, Robert Fitz Walter made himselfe readie, ferried ouer, and got on his horse without anie man to helpe him, and being readie against the face of his enemye, at the first course hee strooke the other so hard with his great speare, that horse and man fell to the ground, and when his speare was broken, he went backe againe to the king of France: by Gods toth (quoth king Iohn) he were a king in so be that had such a knight. Roberts friends hearing that, knelted downe, and saide, O king he is your knight, it is Robert Fitz Walter: and the next daie he was sent for, and was restored to the kings fauour, and by his meanes peace was concluded, and he receiued his linings, and had leaue to repaire his castles, &c. Thre the most forcible and valiant knightes of England in those daies were Robert Fitz Walter, Robert Fitz Roger, and Richard Mount Fitcher.

King Iohn caused a great armie to be gathered at Douer in the next season, and gathered together a great nauie of ships, and whilest he remained about the Sea coast with his force to withstande the French king when hee shoulde come, there arrived two brethren of the Temple at Douer, which came to the king and in friendlie manner saide vnto him: We be sent vnto thee (most mightie

Lib. Roicaf.  
Gualt. Couca.

Chron. of Dun.  
Mawde the  
faire, daughter  
to Robert Fitz  
Walter.  
Baynard Cas-  
tell thowne  
downe.  
Robert Fitz  
Walter fledde  
into France.  
Mawde the  
faire poisoned.

Robert Fitz  
Walter his  
valliance.

Robert Fitz  
Walter resto-  
red to the kings  
fauour.

mightie king) in the behalfe of Pandolph, who for the commoditie of you and of your realme desireth to haue talke with you, for he hath to propound vnto you a certaine forme of peace, wherby you may be reconciled to God, and to the Church, notwithstanding that you be condemned by sentence in the court of Rome to be deposed from the title of your realme.

When the king had considered well the message of those templars, he gaue them commaundement to cause Pandolph to come ouer vnto him. And not long after, Pandolph came to the king at Douer, and said vnto him: Behold, the most mightie king of France lieth with an inuincible number of ships, and a great multitude of knights, horsemen and footmen in the haven, readie to come ouer to invade, and depose you, as a rebell vnto God, and vnto his Pope: there come with him also the Bishops that of late were banished out of England, with the clerkes and lay men, to the end, that whether ye will or no, they hauing the French king to their capitaine, they may receiue their bishopricks and goods.

The king of France also doth boast that he hath Charters almost from all the Nobles of England of their allegiance and subiection vnto him, so that thereby he doubteth not but to bring his purpose to passe. Nowe therefore at the last loke to your owne commoditie, that you may come to repentance, and make no delay to reconcile you to God, whom you haue prouoked to take vengeance vpon you. For if you make assurance, that for his sake, which humbled himselfe for you, you will humble your selfe to the iudgement of the Church, you may recover your realme: from which, for your contumacie you be absolved and condemned by the court of Rome to be deposed. Nowe therefore that your enemies doe not reioice ouer you, turne into your owne heart, and take heede that you doe not bring your selfe into such a distresse as you shall not be able to ridde your selfe out againe.

With these wordes king Iohn was moued to repentance, chiefly considering 4 things. The first, for that he had excommunicate the space of five yeres. The second, he feared the coming of Philippe king of Fraunce, which lay round about the Sea coastes with a great force, prepared to depose him. Thirdly, he feared, that if he should loine battell with his enemies, the nobles of England would either leaue him in the feld, or deliuer him to his enemies. And the fourth, which he feared most, was because Ascension day was at hand, when according to the prophetic of Peter the Hermitte, he should lose both his life, and kingly authoritie, both spirituall and temporall. For these and such like causes, king Iohn being fallen into desperation, did follooe the perswasion of Pandolph, and toke his othe vpon the Euangelists, that in the presence of Pandolph, he would stand to, and obey the iudgement of the Church, and 16. of his Barons and Barons did sweare the same, and covenanted that if he peradventure should repent him of his othe, they would compell him, so much as lay in them to performe it. Thus on the 13. of Maie, on Sunday before Ascension day, the king and his Nobles, Barons, and Barons, mette with Pandolph at Douer, where with one consent they agreed vpon a forme of peace.

King Iohn, and Pandolph, with the Nobles of the Realme, came together at

Pandolph the  
legate.

King Iohn  
moued to re-  
pentance.

King Iohn took  
an othe.

The Barons  
took an othe.

4. John resign-  
ed the crowne  
of England.

Dirce of  
Pontefract.  
An. reg. 15.

Stephen Lange  
con returned.

The king ab-  
solued.

Lib. Bermond.  
St. Thomas  
Hospital.

Morgan a ba-  
lard elected  
Bishoppe of  
Durham.

Lib. Bermond.  
St ditch about  
London.  
Clao. Dun.

Bishop chief  
Justice.  
1214

Interdiction  
releas'd.  
Nic. Trivet.

King John  
saile into  
Bytaine.

at the house of the knights of the Temple, by the toson of Douer, on the 10. day of May, being the Ascension Euen, where the king, according as sentence was giuen at Rome, did resign his Crowne, with the realmes of England and Ire- land into the Popes handes: whose Alcegerent at that time was Pandulph a. foresaid, and when he had made this resignation, hee gaue the aforesaide king- domes to the Pope, and to his successors, and confirmed his gift with a Char- ter, dated the 15. of May, in the 14. yere of his raigne. When the Ascension day was past, hee commanded the foresaid Peter the Hermite to be set out of the castle of Coske, to be bounde to a horse-taile, & draine through the strates to Warham, and there both he and his son to be hanged on a gibbet.

The 17. of August, Stephen Langton Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, and all the other that were banished, arryued at Douer, and wente to Winchester to the king, who meeting them in the waie, fell flatte upon the earth before their kete, and with teares beseech'd them to take pittie on him, and of the Realme of England. The Archbyschop and Byschoppes likewise, with teares tooke him vp from the ground, and brought him vnto the doores of the Cathedral church, and with the psalme of Miserere absolved him: then the king toke an othe to call in all wicked Lawes, and to put in place the Lawes of king Edward. Di- uine seruice being ended, the king, the archbyschop, bishops and nobles, dined al at one table.

Richard Wylof of Bermondsey, builded an house (against the wall of the said house of Bermondsey) called the Almo:po: Hospital of conuerts and chyldren, in the honour of Saint Thomas.

Gilo de Brawfe the son of William de Brawfe, receiued all his Fathers inhe- ritaunce into his custodie, together with his Nephew, till the chylde came to law- full age.

Morgan Prouost of Beuerley, brother to R. John was elected byshop of Dur- ham, but hee coming to Rome to be consecrated, returned againe without it, for that he was a bassard, and R. Henry father to R. John, had begotten him of the wife of one Radulph Bloeth, yet would the Pope haue dispensed with him, if he would haue called himselfe the son of the knight, and not of the king. But hee being the aduise of one William of Lane his Clarke, answered, that for no woorthy promotion, he would deny the kings blood.

The fifteenth of October, was begun by the Londoners, the ditch without the wals of London, of 200. fote broad, causing no small hinderance thereby to the Chanons of Chylts Church nere vnto Aldgate, say that it passed through their ground.

Geffery Fitz Peter dieth, chiefe Justice of England, and the Bishhop of Win- chester in that office is placed, the nobles of England murmuring, that a stran- ger bozne, should be made ruler over them.

Pope Innocent sent his letters to Nicholas bishop of Tusculane his Legate, to release the interdiction, which had continued 6. yeres, 3. monethes, and 14. dales.

The seconde date of Julie, king John sayled towarde Bytaine, intending to besiege Flaunces, in the which warres hee had the aide of Otho the Empe- ror,

our, and of the Dukes of Louaine, Brabant, and Hollande, of Reignolde Earle of Bolougne, and Ferrandis Earle of Flaunders, so that there was a greates ffielde fought, in which the French King escaped narrowly, but be- ing rescued; hee tooke the foresayde Carles, put Hugh de Bones to flighte, and droue the Emperour out of the ffielde, and then a Truce was taken be- twixt King John and the king of Fraunce for five yeres, by the Popes com- mandement, as some sayde, but as other said, this truce was agræd by means of 6000. marks, which the king of England gaue, fearing to incounter with the great multitude of Frenchmen.

King John hauing finished his warres beyond the Seas, as yee haue heard, came ouer into England, about the fourteenth of November. And the same time the Carles and Barons of the Realme, especially them of the North, came to talke with the king, hee beeing then at Saint Edmundesburie, but their intent was not only to talke with him, as well appeared: for after they had along season hanelled the matter among themselves, they brought forth the charter of king Henry the first, which they had receiued of Stephen the Archbysch, wher of we haue made mention here before. And so they came together into S. Edmonds Church, where the chiefeest of them beganne, and they all swore by the high Altar, that if the king would not graunt the foresayde Lawes and Li- berties, they would make warres against him, and withdrowe themselves out of his allegiance, untill hee did with his Seale confirme and ratifie the same. And they consented all on this, to come to the king after Christmas, and in the meane season they would prouide themselves both of armes, horses, and munition.

Fishes of vnwonted shape were taken in England, for they were armed with helmets and shields, in outward shape they resembled, and were like vnto ar- med knights, sauing that they were far greater in proportion.

Almost the whole towne of S. Edmundsbury was consumed with fire.

The king beeing lodged in the newe temple at London, there came to him, the foresaid noble men in warlike order, demanding of him to confirme the Li- berties of king Edwards Lawe and other: the king requiring respite till Es- ter, was faine to put in forreities the Archbyschop of Canterburie, the Byschop of Ely, and other, to satisfie all men in that behalfe, and then the Noble men returned. The king in the Church of Saint Paul at London, at the handes of William Byschop of London, toke on him the signe of the Crosse of the holie Land, by meane thereof to be in the better safegard: the earles of Gesser and Darby did the like. In the Easter weeke the noblemen in armes met at Stam- ford, and after at Berkeley, whither came to them from the king, the Archbys- chop of Canterburie, William Marshall withy other, to demand of them what they would haue confirmed, and the nobles deliuered to them a scedule, contey- ning the olde Lawes and customes, which except the king would graunt, they would take the castles of his lands, and so compell him.

The 17. date of Ayle being Sundate, the Barons came to London, and en- tered through Aldgate, in the seruice time, where they toke such as they knewe fauoured the king, and spoiled their goods. They take into the Houses of the

4. John return-  
ed into Eng-  
land.

The Barons  
require the  
Charter of Li-  
berties.

S. Edmonds  
bury burnt.  
John Tector.  
The barons in  
armour.

1215  
4. John crossed  
to Ierusalem.

An. reg. 17.

Prises spoiled  
in London.  
Qual. Couca.

Willes of London repaired.  
Rad. Coghall.

the Jewes, and searched their Coffers, to finde their owne purses that had bene long emptye. After this Robert Fitz Walter, and Geoffrey de Maundeuill Earle of Essex, and the Earle of Gloucester, chiefe leaders of the armie, applied all biligence to repaire the gates and walles of the citie, with the stones of the Jewes broken houses. The Towler of London yet held out, though there were fewe within to defende it. When it was noyed that the Barons had London, all (except the Earles of Warren, Arundell, Chester, Pembroke, Ferrers, and Salisburie, and the Barons, William Brewer with other) went to those Barons that were against the king, who called themselves the Armie of God, whereby such a feare came on the king, that he durst not peere out of Winbore Castle: at length he appointed to meete with the Barons in a medebowe betwixt Stanes and Winbore, which appointment hee obserued, and there graunted the liberties, without anye difficultie, the charter whereof is dated: Given by our hand in Kunningmede, betwixt Stanes and Winbore, the 16. of June, the 17. of our raigne, unto which, all the whole Realme was sworne.

Matthew Paris.  
The is meritt of the Barons.

Whiles the Barons returned home, the king being left almost alone, hee sent Pandolph the Legate with other to Rome, to the ende that by the Apostolike authoritie, he might make frustrate the purpose of the Barons. Also hee sent Walter Bishop of Winchester, and John Bishop of Norwich, with other, unto the Realmes next adioyning, to procure him souldiers, promising them lands, and large possessions: By means of Pandolph, the Pope disannulled the foresaide Charter and liberties graunted, and also excommunicated the Barons. By the other messengers were procured a great number of men of war, which landing at Dover, the king forthwith besieged Rochester, coueting to burne the Bridge, that no aide should come to the besieged: but Robert Fitz Walter defended the Bridge, and quenched the fire, neuertheless after long assault the castle was yielded.

The Pope excommunicated the Barons.  
Rochester besieged.

Strangers dyowned.  
Matthew Paris.

As a great number of strangers were on the Seas, minding to haue landed at Dover, to haue ayded the king against his Barons, though a sudden tempest they were all dyowned, so that about the coast of the Sea, was cast by such a multitude of men, women, and children, that the aire was soe infected with their putrified bodies: It was saide that of forty thousand, there escaped not one aliue. The king had promised to this people, the Countreies of Norfolk, and Suffolke.

Rad. Coghall.

King John deuided his army, the one halfe whereof he put vnder the leading of Sauarke de Maulion a Poitouin, Fulco a Norman, the Earle of Salisburie his bastard brother, Gerard de Sotingham a Flemming, and Walter Buc a Bamber. He himselfe went against the Northerne men. Sauarke besieged the castle of Blaby, that belonged to Geoffrey Maundeuill, the other gaue themselves to waste the Countrey about.

Rad. Coghall.  
Lib. Bernecwell.

On Christmas day they spoiled the Abbey of Eilsey, and caried away much treasure that there was laid vp in trust by diuers of that countrey. On New yeres day they did the like at Coghall Abbey.

Site of Ely besieged.

From thence they went to Saint Edmondeshury, and so to the Isle of Ely, which

which he they besieged; because diuers Knights and Ladies were fledde thither with their substance: and those robbers entering the Isle, spared neither Clergy nor State, but by tormentes compelled them to tell where their treasure laye.

About the Epiphanie Sayre de Quincy Earle of Winchester, and other, returned from beyonde the seas, bringing with them one and forty ships laden with souldiers: and about the feast of the Purification of our Ladie they besieged Colchester Castle, but hearing that the Barons that were at London made haste to come and succour the Castle, they went backe to Saint Edmondeshury.

Colchester besieged.

The king with his army was long time on the Scottish Seas, and oftentimes invaded the Lands of his Barons in those coasts, burning their Castles, and spoiling their goods; in which expedition he went so farre, that it was not well knowne what was become of him, insomuch, that he was noyed to be dead, and secretly buried at Redding.

King John invaded the lands of his Barons.

Geoffrey Maundeuill died at London of a wound receiued in fasting: he was buried in the Priorye of the Trinitie at London.

The Pope excommunicated the Barons by their peculiar names, but the Chanons of S. Paul in London, and many other Ecclesiasticall persons, with the Barons that remained at London, appealed against this sentence, taking exceptions against it, as pronounced by false suggestion.

The Barons excommunicated.

The Barons sent Sayre de Quincy and other, to Philip king of France, earnestly requesting him to lend his sonne Lewis into this Realme, promising to make him king thereof, which the French king refused to doe, till the Barons had sent him foure and twenty pledges of the best men sons in the kingdome, and then hee sent them aide. Gwalo the Legate was sent from the Pope into France, to forbid Lewis to go into England, but his persuasions nothing preuailed, wherefore he excommunicated them. Also the Abbot of Abingdon, reuelled the excommunication against the Barons, the Citizens of London, and the French, which came to their aide. About Midlent the king besieged the Castle of Colchester, and after a few daies it was deliuered to him by the Frenchmen that kept it, with condition that they might depart free, with all that belonged to them, and that the Englishmen should be suffered to depart vpon reasonable ransom, notwithstanding the Englishmen he put in freight prison. After the King had taken Widingham castle, belonging to Robert de Vere Earle of Oxford, he made haste to besiege London, but the Londoners set open their gates, and were ready to meete with the king ten miles off the city: the king vnderstanding their boldnes and multitude, he withdrew himselfe, but Sauarke de Malone, being suddenly set vpon by the Londoners, losing many of his men, was sore beaten and wounded almost to death.

The Barons sent to London.

1216

Colcheſt taken.

The Northerne Lords recovering their strength, besieged Poike, at length receiuing aboue a thousand markes granted truce to the Citizens, till the Festiuales of Pentecost.

Poike besieged.

The Londoners also toke the 65. ships of Pirates besides innumerable other that were dyowned, that had besieged the coasts on the riuer of Thamis.



In the meane time the king hauing knowledge that Lewis meant to come into England, he sent ouer to the French king, the Bishoppe of Winchester, William Marshall the elder, and other, to try if they could perswade the French to stay his son from that iourney, but they returned without audience. The king therfore marching along the Sea coast fortified his Castles, and getting pldges of the fine Ports, gathered a great multitude of ships of Portsmouth, Linnce, Dunwich, and other haucens, brought them with men of warre, and determined to encounter the Frenchmen by Sea, when they came to arrive in England, but by tempest that arose from the South, those shippes were broust, & driven into the South parts of the sea, Lewis hauing al his power ready at Calceis, Chaunceling, and Wiltshir, the South east winde comming about, he set forward toward England, and with some difficulty, because it was a side winde, he landed at Sotmar, in the Isle of Ebanet, the 21. daie of May. From which place he directed his Capittles of title and claime, &c. as are set downe in my larger History. King John being then at Douer, because his soldiers were strangers, durst not go against Lewis, but fledde towards Gilsford, Lewis went straight to Canterbury, where he receiued both castle and citie into his subiection, and after all the other castles in Kent, Douer onely excepted: then came he to London, where he was honorably receiued of the Nobles and Citizens, who altogether sware fealty to him, and did him homage at Westminster: after this taking the castles of Rygat, Gilsford and Fernham, he passed forward to take the king, who as he heard was at Winchester, and had raised by the Standard of the Dragon, as he had meant to giue battell to Lewis, if he came to offer it. But when king John heard that Lewis approached, he laide downe his Dragon, set fire on foure parts of the citie and dedde. The Citizens quickly quenched the fire and went forth to meete Lewis, receiuing him joyfully into their Citie, and swore fealtie to him. Here came to him in manner all the Carles and Barons of the Realme: then taking the castle of Wygham, and the Tower of London, he returned into Kent, and the 22. of July he besieged the castle of Douer, and continued the same till the 14. of October: then Hubert de Brugh and Gerard de Scoting, being not able longer to abide the assaults, obtained truce, that they might send to king John for succour. Whilst this siege remained, king John went: about the land, consuming with fire and sword the possessions of the Barons.

Alexander king of Scots hauing subdued to Lewis all Northumberland, sauing Barnard castle, with the Barons of the North, came vnto Canterbury to Lewis, and did him homage, for that which he ought to hold of the king of England, and as he came towards Lewis with a great army, for feare of king Johns power, as he passed by Barnard castle, which was in the fee of Hugo de Ballioll, in the County of Northwarke folke, he with his Nobles of that countrey went round about the Castle to see whether it were weake in any place, and assaultable, and a certaine archer within the Castle shot a bart, and smote Eustach de Velay vpon the forehead, and pierced his braine, so that he died immediately. This Eustach was a noble and mighty man, and had married the daughter of Scots sister, so that the king, and the noble men were sore abashed: and when

Lewis arrived  
in England.

King John  
dies.  
An. reg. 18.

Douer castle  
besieged.  
W. Fackington.

King of Scots  
did homage to  
Lewis.

Barnard's Ca-  
stle.

Holy walsford.

the king of Scots had done his homage, he returned home into his countrey.

About this time it chanced that the Viscount of Melin a noble man of France, which came with Lewis into England lay very sicke in the Citie of London, who when he knew that death approached, called to him certaine of the Barons of England, vnto whom he declared in effect as followeth: I am soie byschozen, for your subuersion, and desolation, whereof you know nothing: for Lewis and his friends of the Carles and Barons wish him haue noone, that if it be his chance to subdue England, and to be crowned king, he would banish out of the realme for euer, al these which now doe take his part, and persecute king John, as traitors to their king, and will rote all their kindred out of the earth, and to the ende, you shall not doubt hereof to be true, I which now lie here a dying, vnder perill of my soule, affirme this to be true, and that I was one that did sweare the same with Lewis. Now therefore from henceforth provide for your owne commoditie, and profit, and keep this secret which I haue told you, and when he had said this, he died. The Barons perceiuing what danger they were in by Lewis, who had giuen to the French men the lands and castles which pertained to the Barons, and when anie murmured against Lewis, he cast in their teeth, that they were traitors, &c. they believed what the noble man had told them. This did also much increase their heauinesse, that they were euerie day excommunicated, and deprived of all earthly honour, so that they were in great anguish both of body and soule: Wherefore many desired how to returne into the allegiance of king John.

The king marched through Norfolk and Suffolke, till he came to Linne, where the Colonellmen receiued him with great joy, and honoured him with large giftes, there he appointed Sauanik de Malion to be Captaine, who beganne to fortifie the Towne: but here (as it was saide) filling his belly so much, as he was thereto greatly giuen, he gotte a surfeit, and the retchless all fell into a flure. Afterward taking his iourney towards the North, in the water which is called Spillstreame (they saide) hee lost suddenly all the Cartes and chariots, with his treasure, and precious princely beuel, and furniture of his chappell, which he set most by, for the earth opened in the midst of the wanes on the marches, and the whirlepit of the deepe so swallowed by both men and horses, that none escaped to bring king John tidings. The king with his army going before, elapsed very narrowly, and men said, that night he lay at the Abbey of Solinshene, where he remained two daies, and there (as men supposed) he took such heauines of heart for the losse of his treasure in the waldes, that he was taken with an extream ague, and began to be verie sore sicke, the pernicious greedie eating of peaches, and drinking of new cider, increased his sickness, and kindled the heat of the ague the more strongly, notwithstanding in the very beake of the day, with great paine, he went to the castle of Slesford in Lindsey, belonging to the Bishp of Lincoln. There he was let blood (saie some) but so it happened, that about this time, to wit, on the 14. of Octob. Hubert de Burgo & Gerard de Scoting, being not able longer to abide the assaults of Lewis and his complices, obtained of him truce, that they might send to king John for succour, which messengers, when they were come to Slesford and had declared their

The Viscount  
of Melin his  
condition.



case, that is, that except he would rescue them in the castle of Dover, the same must be delivered up to Lewis: his disease with griefe conceived thereat, increased much, so that on the next morning, he could scanty on horsebacke come to the castle of Newmarke, which castle also belonged to the said Bishp of Lincoln, in which place the sickness so increased in the space of 3. or 4. daies, that he took the counsell of his Confessor, and received the Sacrament at the hands of the Abbot of Croton, and then he made Henry his eldest sonne, the heire of his kingdome, causing all that were about him to sweare to him, and sent Letters sealed with his own seale, to all the sheriffes of England, & castle keepers, bidding them to be attendant and diligent to the said Henry. When these things were thus done, the abbot of Croton asked him if he should chance to die, where he would have his body buried: To whom the king answered and said, I commit my soule to God, and my body to S. Thomas, and after ward, to witte, in the night which followed next after the feast of S. Luke, he departed this life in the said castle of Newmarke, from whom his servants taking all that was about him fled, not leaving so much of any thing (worth the carriage) as would cover his dead carcase. At the time of king Iohns death, there came to him messengers of certaine Barons of England, to the number of 40. with letters requiring to have come againe to his peace, & allegiance, but he lying in the extremities of death could not give attendance to them, he deceased on the nineteenth of October, Anno 1216. When he had reigned 17. yeres, five moneths, lacking eight daies, at the age of 51. yeres. The Constable of the castle, caused the kings body to be holvelled by the Abbot of the Chanons at Croton, which Abbot was expert in Physicke, and also at that time, the kings Disposition, to the end it might be the more honourably carried, his bowels being powdered, were buried in the Abbey of Croton, unto the which Abbey, king Iohn had on his death-bed given tenn pound the yere of good land for ever, his body was honourably conveyed to Worcester, and there buried in the Cathedral Church, nere unto the body of Bishp Willone.

Thus have I set downe the life (though much abridged) and death of king Iohn, after the writing of Rog. Windour, Rad. Niger, Rad. Cogshall, a namelesse Chanon of Barnewell, Mathew Paris, and other, who all lived when the king reigned, and wrote for that time what they sawe, or heard credibly reported. Notwithstanding, I thinke good (as heretofore) to set downe concerning his death, as is reported by a namelesse Authour, a continuor of Geoffrey Monmouth, in the raisine of Edward the third, and since increased, printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle. This booke (I saie) and other after-commers report, that King Iohn was poisoned by a Sponke of Swinsted abbey in Lincolnshire, for saying that if he might live halfe a yere, he would make an halfe penny loafe of bread, worth 11. shillings, &c. as ye may reade in the said common English Chronicle. But to conclude, howsoever he died, certaine it is, that he reigned with trouble enough, as by the premises may appear.

He had three sonnes, Henry and Richard, and three daughters, Isabel the Emperesse, Elianor Queene of Scots, and Jane: Geoffrey a base sonne gotten on

a con

a concubine, Richard and other: hee founded the Abbey of Botoley, in the new forest in Southamptonshire: the Monasterie of Farendon, and the Monasterie of Hales Owen in Shropshire, he credited Goodslow by Wynd, & Willoughall by Warwike, and increased the Chappell of Anariborough, &c.

Farendon,  
Hales, Good-  
slow, and Anar-  
iborough.  
Ex charta regia.  
Ioh. Rowle.

## King Henrie the third.



HENRIE boine at Winchester, the eldest sonne of Iohn, of the age of nine yeres, began his raigne the nineteenth of October, in the yere 1216. hee was crowned at Gloucester on the 28. day of October, by Peter Bishp of Winchester, and Jocelyne Bishp of Bath, in the presence of Walo the Legate, Sylvester Bishp of Worcester, William Bishp of Coventrie, and many other Prelates, Isabell the Queene, Ranulph Earle of Chester, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, William Earle Ferrers, William de la Bruere, Saucric de Maulion, Iohn Marshall, Philip de Albincro, with the Abbots and other in great number: being crowned by common consent, the Gouvernement of the king and kingdome was committed to the Legate, to the Bishp of Winchester, and to William Marshall Earle of Pembroke. These things being knowne abroad, those that were of the contrary part, took great indignation thereat: and because there should be no hope left to the new king to prevale against them, they took a solemne oath, and swore they would never holde any lande of any heire of king Iohn; but the Legate maintaining the kings part, admonished, prayed, and commanded them that were disobedient to the king, to doe the like as he did, he calling a council at Wyndesore, caused the bishops and prelates to incline to his part: Notwithstanding, Lewis did what he could to the contrary, spoyling their goods, and possessions, yet could he not get one of the Prelates to doe him homage, or feaultie. William Marshall Earle of Pembroke perswaded the Countesse, Caille herpers, and other to doe their services to the young king Henry, promising them great gifts, and large possessions, whereby they turned king Henry much more faithfully then they did King Iohn his father, for they thought the iniquity of the father ought not to be imputed unto the son. This did also greatly incourage them, when they understood that every Sunday Lewis and his complices were excommunicated: Lewis and the Barons being not able to winne Dover Castle, determining therefore to subdue the smaller castles first, they remooved their siege, and came to London where on the first of November, the Tower of London was delivered to them. From thence Lewis with the Barons went and besieged the Castle of Warwicke, from the twelfth of November, till the first of December, on which day the castle was yielded: about the same time his men had won the Isle of Gyl, all, except a fortrell within the same, when in the kings people were inclosed. The citie of Lincoln also being won againe by his partakers, & the castle besieged, Lewis went to Bathamsted, and besieged

An. reg. 1.

In Leicester he  
were Chanons.  
In Stratford  
were C.  
Steele and monks.

Effigies of king  
Iohn.

the castle there. In time of which siege, there went out of the castle certain knights and soldiers, who with violence entered upon the Barons, took their Chariots with their carriages, and the standard of William de Mandeuill, and returned into their castle therewithall: but in the end, after long siege, by the kings commandement, they yielded the castle to Lewis on the 20. of December.

On the next morning Lewis came to Saint Albons, and demanded of the Abbot to doe unto him homage, which the Abbot refused; but Lewis swearing he would set the Abbey on fire, the Abbot after manie threats, by the perswasion of Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, fined himselte and the whole towne for 80. markes of silver. Which being done, Lewis returned to London; And a truce was taken till the Octaves of the Epiphanie, The feast of Christmas being past, the truce yet continuing, Lewis called his favourers unto a Councell at Cambridge, and the Governours of the king called the like councell at Wyford. All theie laboured to haue compounded upon a peace, or at the least to haue prolonged the truce, but when truce could not be prolonged, Lewis besieged the Castle of Herebingham, and at one selfe same time, the saide Castle, and also the Castle of Wyford were both rendered, and so likewise were the Castles of Norwich and Colchester, for to haue the truce continued till a moneth after Easter: And by this meanes all the East partes of England fell to Lewis.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 20. day of January, the knights and soldiers of the Castle of Mount-fortell in Leicestershire went out to robbe, which when the knights and soldiers of Nottingham understood, they met & fought with them, took some of their knights, fourtene of their soldiers, & drove the rest of them, and returned.

The 22. of Januarie, Falcarius de Brent, a wicked robber, having gathered a number of ruffians out of the Castles of Wyford, Northampton, Bedford, and Windsor, came to the abbey of S. Albons in the evening, spoiled the town, took men, women and children, and bound them verie sore, and slew some, so that the Abbot to save the abbey and towne from burning, was faine to giue to Falcarius one hundred pound of silver.

About this time, the ambassadours of Lewis, which were at Rome about his busines there, did giue him to understand, that except he went out of England, the sentence of excommunication, which Wale the Legate had pronounced against him, should be confirmed by the Pope, upon Maundie Thursday: for this cause therefore truce was taken betwene Lewis and king Henry until one moneth after Easter, all thinges to remaine in state as they then were.

Philip king of France called his sonne Lewis by speciall commandement, to returne into France, unto a councell at Lions, to be holden about Wholent, which thing the English men took heavily, but hee retaining an othe on the Evangelists to returne before the truce should be expired, they were some what pacified. He being passed over, straight way William Earle of Salisburie, William Earle of Arundell, William Earle of Warren, and many other, revolted to the kings side. Also William Marshall reclaimed William his eldest

sonne

sonne unto the kings allegiance: and thus became the part of Lewis weakned very much, and the kings power was greatly increased: And being divided into diuers places, they besieged many castles at one time, recovering the castles of Sarlebozow, Fernham, Winchester, Cicester, and other which they demolished.

In the feast of Easter, by procurement of William Marshall the elder, Ranulph Earle of Chester, William Earle of Albemarle, William Earle Ferrers, Robert de Veteriponte, Brienus de insula, William de Entelope, Philip de Merc, Robert de Gangy, Falcarius de Brent, with his Castle keeper and manie other were gathered together, to besiege the Castle of Mount-fortell in Leicestershire, the chiefe keeper of which Castle was named Henric de Braybrooke, who sent to Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, then at London with the French men, and requiring him to come to their aide: whereupon the saide Earle of Winchester, to whom the Castle belonged, went to Lewis, then lately returned out of France, requiring him to sende some aide to remove the siege, and so a power was sent out of London 600. knights, and 20000. armed soldiers, they had for capitaines, Earle Patricius, the marshal of France, Sayer de Quincy, Robert fitz Walter, and other, who marching toward, spoiled S. Albons, the church at Kaddborne, Dunstable, and so forth, toward the north; to raise the siege before Mount-fortell; but Ranulph Earle of Chester, and other left off their siege, and went to the Castle of Nottingham. The Barons somewhat finding the siege to be removed, they march toward Lincoln, where Gilbert de Gaunt and other had laide siege: they assaulted the Castle sharply, but W. Marshall the elder sent thither a great power, such as would be in this place too long to write, and therefore I referre the same to my larger booke. But to be short, these with much difficultie brake the gates of the Citie of Lincoln, and entering the towne, they boldly smote upon their enemies, and fought there a cruel battell, wherein the kings part too much relied the barons, that they slewe and took the most part of them: which being done, the kings company fell upon the earle of Perch, & smote him through the baines, so that he fel downe dead. Thus when the greatest part of the French men were slaine, the residue took them to flight, the Barons on the kings side following them that fledde, took manie in the chase, amongst the which was taken Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, Henry de Bohune Earle of Hereford, Gilbert de Gaunt whom Lewis had lately made Earle of Lincoln, Robert fitz Walter, Richard de Mountfichet, William de Mowbray, William de Bellocampo, William Manduice, Almaricus de Hacary, Roger de Crafe, William de Cahule, William de Rose, Robert de Resperit, Radulph Chanduice, and many more. The kings soldiers spoiled the citie to the bare walls. This battell was fought on the 19. date of Maie.

On the next morning there came news to the king, that the castle of Mount-fortell was taken: whereupon the shiriffe of Nottinghamshire was commanded to lay the same flat with the ground.

Lewis though this misfortune that fell to him at Lincoln, fell in despair of any good end to come to his purpose, and therefore sent messengers to his father,

1217  
Councells at  
Cambridge,  
at Wyford.

Castles of Here-  
bingham, Wy-  
ford, Norwich  
and Colchester  
yielded to Le-  
wis.

Castle of  
Mount-fortell.

The towne of  
S. Albons  
spoiled by  
Falcarius.

A truce taken.

Mount-fortell.

S. Albons.  
Rubbenes and  
Dunstable  
spoiled by the  
Barons.

The Barons  
overthrewen  
and taken at  
Lincoln, and  
that city spoiled.

Castle of  
Mount-fortell  
overthromen.

father, and to Blanch his wife, who forthwith dispatched to him a power: But the coasts by Will. Marshalls commandement were kept. And now upon St. Bartholomews day the Apostle the navy of Frenchmen were committed to the wicked man Eustach the mynne or monke, to be conduited to the aid of Lewes then being at London. These being entred into the sea, had a faire winde, which draue them vpon the English coast: where when they were sailed a great waite on their bolage, Hubert de Burgo, and they of the ports, clypping them to be twentie shippes, and a great number of smaller vesselles, and galleies wel armed, they durst not ioine battaile with them on the sea, hating themselves not pass fortye galleies and shippes, but hauing the aid of the kings Souldours, felt stoutlie vpon them on the backe part, made great slaughter of them. The Englishmen also had Gallies with pyon boikes, which gologed the shippes of their enemies, whereby they were drownded in a moment, there was a cruell fight betwene them, but the Frenchmen in shorte space were vicerlie vanquished: Eustachle Moyne was slaine by Richard a bastard sonne of king John.

These thinges beeing thus doone, William earle Marshall besieged the City of London round about, as wel by water as by land, so to cause them with in to yeelde: wherupon Lewes beeing in so greate a strait, gaue vnderstanding to the Legate, and to earle Marshall, that he woude bee ruled by their Councell in all thinges vpon condition, that sauing his honour, and auoiding slaughter of his men he might haue peace conuenient: wherupon both parties met, & talked together, next vnto the towne of Stanes, hard by the riuer of Thamis, th. Henry, the Legate, the Marshall, and many other on the one part, and the said Lewis, the barons, & noble men on the other side, where by the operation of gods grace, they did faultie agree to the forme of peace on the xi. date of September. First Lewis & the ercommunicate persons of his side, did sweare by the holy Evangelists, they should stand to the order and iudgment of the church, and should be faithful, &c. Lewis returned into France. From the benefit of the abolition and peace were exempted, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and all of the Cleargie, which had borne any fauor to Lewis, and the Barons, were all depriued from their benefices by the Legate.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, gaue 1000. marks to the Pope, and 100. marks to the Legate; whose example many other did follow.

This yere deceased William Vernon Earle of Denonshire. Ranulph Earle of Chester, Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, William de Albeneo Earle of Arundell, William Earle Ferrers, with the Barons, Robert Fitz Walter, John Constable of Chester, and William Harcourt, with a greata traine, toke their iourney toward Jerusalem. Walo the Legate being sent for by the pope to returne, departed toward Rome with an infinit quantity of money gotten by one meane or other, and Pandolph elected Bishop of Norwich succeeded Legate. About this time king Henry did obtaine, and gaue the proper seale of the reabne into his custodie.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, to whome Peter Bishoppe of Winchester ministered all things necessarie.

This yere died Hugh Bishoppe of Hereford, Hugh Folke Archdeacon of Salisbury,

Lewes of France his power of French vanquished.

London besieged.

King Henrie and Lewis agreed vpon articles.

An. reg. 2.

Lewis returned into France. The cleargie depriued of their benefices by the Legate.

1218 Barons of England took their iourney toward Jerusalem.

An. reg. 3.

1219

Salisbury, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, Gouernour of the kings person and Realme, and David Earle of Huntingdon, brother to William king of Scots, William Marshall was honourably buried at London in the newe Temple, vpon the 15. of April, concerning whome a certaine Versifier made these verses:

*Sum quem Saturnum sibi sensu Hibernia: Solem  
Anglia: Mercurium Normannia: Gallia Martem.*

He was a noisome tamer of the Irish men, & honor vnto the English men, he has bene a merchant vnto the Normans, for he had purchased many things in it: vnto the Frenchmen he was a warrior, and an invincible knight. He left after him five sonnes, and five daughters, which daughters were thus married. Mawd to Hugh Bigot, Ioane to Warren de Mounthensey, Isabell to Gilbert de Clare, Sibill to William Earle of Dorby, and Eue to Will. de Bruse, betwixt which five, all his great inheritance was after diuided, for all his sonnes died without issue, and were euerie one after other Earles of Pembroke. After the death of William Marshall, the king remained in custodie of the Bishop of Winchester.

About the same time, Lewis sonne to Philippe king of France, at the instigation of his father, went with a great army to the City of Tholouse, there to assaile the Heretikes called Albigenes, but he prevailed nothing at all against them.

In the siege of that city, Simon Mountfort earle and captaine of Lewis army was slaine, and at another castle not far off, was slaine the brother of the said Simon, for the death of which two noble warriors, great lamentation was made, and Lewis returned againe into France without any victorie.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Warleborough.

About midlent Pandolph the Legate called a councell at London, the archbishops, bishops, Abbots, and other being present, the Abbot of Welles was consecrated Bishp of Ely. Vnto the which Councell Robert sometime Abbot of Thomey brought the Popes letters, which commanded his Legate Pandolph and Steph. Archb. of Cantebury, that they should see the King to be newly crowned, because his first coronation, by reason of the troubles, was not so solemnly done as was decent: wherupon order was taken, and on Whitsunday he was crowned at Westminster by Stephen Langton archbishop of Cantebury.

Ralphe Earle of Chester returned from Damata in the siege whereof hee had set forth himselfe and his people, with most large expences, whereby hee wanted praise and honour before God and men: But Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, with Robert Fitz Walter and other arriving at Damata, after the same was wonne, died there.

This yere on Whitsun Euen, was the new worke of our Ladies chappel at Westminster, begun, King Henry being the sodner, who laid the first stone.

Proclamation was made, that all strangers should auoide the realme, except such as came with merchandise, and to make sale of them vnder the kings licence.

Ranulph the third Earle of Chester, Lincolne, and Richmond, and Loode of Little

Chro. Tint. Tho. Rudborne.

Caradacus.

An. reg. 4.

1220

King Henry newly crowned.

An. reg. 5.

All strangers to auoide the realme.

*Castles of  
Charley and  
Befone built  
by  
Abbey of Deles-  
celle.*

little Britain came out of the holy land into England, and builded the castles of Charley, Besfone, and the Abbey of Delacresse.

William of St. Maries Church, bishop of London, did of his owne free will resigne his bishoppe, the moow after the consecration of St. Paul, Eustach de Fawconbridge then treasurer of the Erchequer, was elected bishop of London, whose election was confirmed by Pandolph the legate. And the same Pandolph ceased from executing the office of legate, and returned to Rome.

The frier preachers, thirtene in number were sent into Englande, and having to their priors Gilbert de Fraxineto in companie of Peter de Roch Bish. of Winchester came to Canterburie, and there presenting themselves before the Archbishop Stephen, he commended the said priors to preach before him, and liked him so well, that he ever after loved their order. On Saint Laurence daie they came to London, and so to Orforde on the daie of the Assumption, in whose house they builded an Oratorie, and also those scholes which since were called St. Edwards scholes, in whose parish they took a place and there for a time remained, and after that removed to the place without the wals, which the king assigned them.

King Henry subdued the Welshmen which rebelled.

The noblemen granted to the king two marches of Alacer of everie hie of land.

Isabel the kings mother, without making her sonne or his Counsell priue to her purpose, went over into Fraunce, and there married with the earle of Barcy Hugh Bronne, unto whome she had bene betrothed before her first marriage with king John.

King Henry gave his sister Jane to Alexander B. of Scots, who married her at Poike: and Hubert de Burgh earle of Kent, and chiefe Justice of England, married the king of Scots sister Margaret. William de Albeneto earle of Arundell, died coming from the holy land, who was conveyed into Englande, and buried at Wilmonham, a priore of his foundation.

A Provinciall councill was holden at Orforde, by Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterburie, and his Suffragane bishops and others, in the conventual Church of Winc. sixtene daies after Easter, where were degraded a priest and a Deacon, the priest for homicide, the Deacon for sacrilege and theft committed. Another Deacon offending more deeply, denied the profession of Christian religion, and for the love he bare to a Jewish woman, caused himselfe to be circumcised, following the Jewish rites and customs: hee was degraded, and being left as a laie person and Apostate, was condemned and committed to the fire, by the servants of Falcatus, wherein he miserably ended his life. There was also a young man and two women brought before them, the young man would not come in anie Church, nor be partaker of the Sacraments, but had suffred himselfe to be crucified, in whome the scars of all the wounds were to be seene, in his hands, head, side, and face, and he refused to be called Jesus of these women and other. One of the women being old, was accused for bewitching the young man unto such madness, and also altering her owne name) procured herselfe to be called Mary the mother of Christ: They being consist of these

1221  
Nicholas Triu.  
Anic. Calend.  
in Britolia.

A benevolence.  
Nic. Triu.

Isabel the  
mother went  
into France.

An. reg. 6.  
1222  
Provinciall  
Counsell.  
Radulph. Cogh.  
Qualiter Couen.  
Lib. Bermond.

An Apostate  
gent.

A counter-sait  
Christ.

Radulph Cogh.

Qualit. Couen.  
Nic. Triu.

these crimes and other, were adjudged to be closed by betwixt two walles of stone, where they ended their lives in miserie. The other woman being sister to the young man, was let go, because she revealed the wicked fact.

On Saint James daie, the citizens of London kept games of defence and jousting, nere unto the Hospitall of Maulde, where they gotte the mairerie of the men of the Suburbes. The Bayliffe of Westmister desiring to be revenged, proclaimed a game to be at Westmister upon Lammas day, whereunto the citizens of London repaired, & when they had played a while, the Bailie with the men of the Suburbes barnessed themselves and fell to fighting, that the citizens being foullie wounded, were forced to runne into the Citie, where they rang the common Bell, and assembled the Citizens in great number, and when the matter was declared, everie man wished to reuenge the fact. The mayo of the citie being a wise man and a quiet, willed them first to move the Abbot of Westmister of the matter, and if hee would promise to see & mendes made, it were sufficient: But a certaine Citizen named Constantine Fitz Arnulph, willed that all Houses of the Abbot and Bayliffe should be pulled downe, which worde being once spoken, the common people issued out of the Citie without anie order, and fought a cruell battaile for Constantine the first pulled downe manie houses, and oftentimes with a loud voice cryed, in praise of the said Constantine, the ioy of the mountaine, the ioy of the mountaine, God helpe, and the lord Lodowick.

A few daies after this tumult, the Abbot of Westmister came to London to Philippe Dawbney, one of the kings counsell, to complaine of the injuries done to him, which the Londoners perceiving, besette the house about, and took by violence twelve of the Abbots Horses alwaie, cruellie beating of his men, &c. But whilles the foresaid Dawbney, laboured to pacifie the uprore, the Abbot gotte out at a backe doore of the house, and so by a boate on the Thames hardlie escaped, the citizens throwing stones after him in great abundance. These things being thus done, Hubert de Burgo, Justiciar of England, with a great army of men came to the tower of London, and sent for the Bishop and Abbermen, of whome hee enquired for the principall Authours of this faction. Then Constantine, who was constant in the sedition, was more constant in his answer, affirming that he had done it, and that he had don much lesse then he ought to have done: The Justiciar took him and two other with him, and in that morning early sent them to Falcatus by water, with a great number of armed men, who brought Constantine to the gallowes, and when hee sawe the rope about his necke, he offered for his life 15000. marcas, but that would not save him: he was hanged with Constantine his nephew, and Galfide, that proclaimed his proclamation on the 16. of August.

Then the Justiciar entering the Citie with a great army, caused to be apprehended as many as he could learne to be culpable, whose feet and hands he caused to be cut off, which crueltie caused many to flee the Citie.

The king took of the Citizens Arrie pledges, which he sent to blunders Calmes: he deposed the mayo, appointing a Gardien or keeper over the citie, and caused a great gibbet to be made, & after heauy threatnings, the citizens were reconciled.

Counter-sait  
Barry & Christ.

Westmister.  
Mathew Paris.

A tumult in  
London.

Chro. Dini.  
Abbot of Westmister put to his death.

Chiefe Justice  
entered the citie  
of London with  
an army.

Constantine  
with other  
hanged.

Mathew Paris.  
Feete and  
hands of many  
cut off.  
Mayo of London  
beheaded.

reconciled, paying to the king many thousand marks.

On holte Wednesday was great thunder and lightning throughout all England, and such great floods of water followed, with great windes and tempest, which continued till Candlemas, that the yere following wheat was sold for twelve shillings the quarter.

On St. Andrewes day a great thunder overthrew Churches, Castelles, and houses, so that scantille ante bodie escaped free from harine by this tempest. A knight and his wife and 8. men of his household, with the fall of his house were slaine, in Pilardune a village in Northwiltshire.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oxford, and after returned to London, In a counceill holden at London the Archbyschop of Canturburie and othre the nobilitie and Barons of the Realme, required the king to confirme the liberties, for the which the waite was moved against his father, and that himselfe at the departing of Lewes out of Englands, swore to observe: whereupon forthwith the king sent his Letters to all the Sherriffes of the Realme, commanding them to inquire by the oathes of the lawfull men in euerie Countie, what liberties were in Englands in the time of king Henry his Grandfather, and to send the inquisition so made to London 15. daies after Easter.

As the Bishop of Ely was giving orders, at Barnwell in the first weeke of Lent, there rose such a tempest of raine and thunder, that all in the church were ready to fall to the grounde, and such flashes of lightning entred the Church, that ech man thought it had bene set on fire, and such a filthy stench arose withall, that manie of the companie fell sicke thereof, and hardelie escaped death. At the wise whilste the Bishop of London was at Chelmsford giving orders, a greates tempest of winde and raine annoied such as came thither at that time: whereof it may be gathered (saith mine author) how highlie God is displeased with such as come to receiue orders, to the end they may liue incontinently, and at ease, of the stipends appointed to Churchmen, and the offerings of the faithfull, giuing themselves to banquetting and vncleanesse, and so with vnclean and filthy bodies (but more vnclean soules) presume to minister vnto God the author of all puritie and cleanness.

John de Brennes king of Ierusalem, and chiefe master of the Hospitall there, came into England, and required aid to win Ierusalem, but hauing rich gifts giuen him, he returned with small comfort.

Leolyn prince of Wales founded the castle of Mountgomery, and there with certayne Englishmen, Hugh Lacy and his retinue, in despite of the king, attempted to constrain William Marshall earle of Denbyshe, and othre, to yeld to them: but the whole countrie rose in armes, and ouercame them.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Southampton, with the Archbyschop, and a great number of knights, but the earle of Chester with othre conspirators against the king, kept their feast at Leicester, thenceforn the king and his iudicials, for the custodies of lands and castles, which the king required of them. The archbyschop of Canturbury and his suffragane bishops, excommunicated all the disturbers of the king and Realme.

The

The earle of Chester and his complices, percelating that the king had a greater number of men of armes then they, and also fearing the excommunication, came to the king at Southampton, yelding their Castles and honours which appertained to the crowne. Then the king laid siege about the castle of Bedford, that Falcarius had long kept by strength, which siege hee continued by the space of eight weekes, and tooke the Castle on the fiftenth of August, on which date he caused to be hanged to the number of eightie two men of armes and othre souldiers, Falcarius de brent, who was fledde into Wales, hearing that the Castle was taken, and his men slaine, under the conduct of the Byschop of Couentre, came to Bedford and fell at the kings feet, requiring mercy. The king deliuered him to Eustace bpschop of London, and the castle was made an heape of stones. There was granted to the king throughout England two shillings for euerie carncate of land.

The friers minors first arrived at Douer nine in number, five of them remained at Canturburie, & vnto there build the first count of friers minors that euer was in England: the othre foure came to London, and lodged at the preaching friers the space of fiftene daies, and then hired an house in Cornhill, of John Trauers one of the Sherriffes, they builded there little celles wherein they inhabited. The deuotion of the Cittizens towards them, and also the multitude of the friers so increased, that they were by the Cittizens remoued to a place in Saint Nicholas Shambles, which John Iwyn Cittizen and Mercer of London appropriated vnto the communalite of the Citty, to the vse of the saide friers, and became himselfe a lay brother.

William Ioynar builded their quier, Henry Wales sometime Pastor of London, the bodie of the church, Walter Potter Alderman, the Chapterhouse: Gregorie Roklie the Doctar; Bartholomew of the castle made the Refectory.

The fiftenth part of all mens goods moueable within the Realme, as well of the Cleargie as of the Laitie, was granted to the king to ayde him in his right beyond the Seas, and the king granted to the barons and people, the liberties which they long time had sued for: hee caused charters to be made, and sent into euerie countrie twaine, one of the common liberties, and the othre of the forest.

Richard the kings brother, and his uncle William Longa spey earle of Salisbury and many othre, were sent into Gascoigne, who subdued the same, and recovered possiters.

This yere died Hugh Bygot earle of Castangles, or Canbydgeshire, &c. al whose lands and honours the king appointed to the colodoy of Hubert de Burgh the Justiciar.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, from whence hee removed to Sparlebozow, where he was taken with a greivous sickness, and lay there manie daies like to die.

In the meane season, while the king at Sparlebozow recovered his sickness, there came to him William de Longa spata, barbarde sonne to king Henry the second, that by gift of king Richard had married Ela the daughter and heire of the earle of Salisbury, who after long and dangerous traualles on the Seas, had

Rad. Cogshall.  
Bedford castle  
besieged.

Caruages  
granted.

Grey Friers.  
Reg. St. Fracrum  
minorum.

An. reg. 9.

1225  
Fiftenth.

Great charters  
confirmed.

Gosfolmes sub-  
duct.

An. reg. 10.

1226

An. reg. 7.  
Tempests and  
dearth.

Great tempests  
ouertrowe  
Churches and  
Castles.

1223

Radul. Cogshall.  
Great tempests  
at Barnwell  
and Chelms-  
ford.

King of Ierusa-  
lem came into  
England.

An. reg. 8.  
Tho. Wiket  
Mount Gome-  
ry castle found-  
ed.

1224

Disturbers of  
the king excom-  
municated.

had with much adoe arrived in Coynewall, he being joyfully receiued of the king, made a grieuous complaint of the Iusticiar Hubert de Burgo, because, while he was in partes beyond the Seas in the kings seruice, the said Iusticiar had sent a lewd man, of base birth, and euill race, to haue committed fornication with his wife, and would by force haue contracted an adulterous marriage with her, he said further, that except the king did throughely punish the Iusticiar, for that fact he himselte with disturbance to the whole realme, would take to auenge it.

The Iusticiar being present, confessed his fault, and with great hoises, and other costly gifts, obtained the carles fauour, so that he had the said Carle to a dinner, in the which (as men thought) the Carle secretly poisoned, went to his castle at Salisbury, where hee late liue, and died, and was buried in the new Cathedral Church of new Salisbury, with this Epitaph:

*Flos comitum Guilielmus obiit steps Regia: longus  
Ensis uingam capis habere breuem.*

This yere Richard de Marisco bishop of Durham like an olde persecuter of religious persons, for the maintenance of his most filthy quarrell he picked against them, came with a great rolot of men of Lawe towards London, and lodged in the Abbey of Peterborough, after he had dauntly refreshed himselfe with costly meates, he went to bed in health, but was found dead in the next morning, he was buried at Durham, when he had late Bish. nine yeres. Also Benedict bishop of Rochester, and Pandolph bishop of Exeter deceased: into the which Pandolph succeeded Tade Blundeuile, cleark of the kings Exchequer, through helpe of Hubert de Burgo the Iusticiar.

The same yere also deceased William Brewer Lord de la Hiche, Loyde of Crumster in Devonshire, and was buried at Dunkewell an Abbey which he had founded. He had bene a worthy capitaine in the holy land vnder king Richard.

King Henry kept his Christmase at Reading, and in the holy daies died William Carle of Essex, for whom many soze lamented, because he was a litle young man.

The king blaming the citizens of London, because they had giuen to Lewis the French king (now deceased) at his departure out of England 5000. marks, he compelled them to pay the like summe to him, beside the fiftenth parte of their mouables: and of the burgesses of Southampton he toke 1200. marks.

In a council at Oxford the king proclaimed, that so far as he was not of lawfull age, he would rule himselfe at his pleasure, and forsooth made of the charters of the liberties & franchises to be frustrate, alledging, that they were granted while he was vnder ward of other, and had not power of his owne body: so it followed, that who so would enioy the liberties afore granted, must reuue their charters of the kings newe seale, with such a price as the Iusticiar awarded them.

Richard the kings brother returned into England, and was made Carle of Coynewall at Westminster, Hubert de Burgo was named Carle of Kent.

Greenowm complaint made against Hubert the Iusticiar.

An. reg. 11.  
Tho. Rudborne.

Bishops died.

1227

King Henry exacted money of the Londoners.

Charters cancelled.

An. reg. 12.

Richard Carle of Coynewall.

Shortly after the Barons declared unto the king, that except he would reuue the charter of liberties of the forest, which lately he had cancelled at Oxford, they would compell him by the sword.

King Henry kept his Christmase at Poike, and from thence went straight to London, but by the way, finding fault with the measures of coyne, wine, and oyle, he brake some of them, and caused other to be bent, commanding greater measures to be made, and the waight of bread to be made heavier, and the transgressors to be grieuouly amerced.

Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at his manor of Slimdon in Suffex, and was buried at Canterbury.

This yere during all the summer were great thunders and lightnings, which burned many houses in sundrie places, and slew both men and beastes: and in the harvest following, fell great raines which did great hindrance to the tinning of the coyne.

Eustace Bishop of London deceased, in whose place succeeded Roger Niger, a learned man, and of much worthines, a chapan of the church of Saint Paule.

Also Geoffrey de Burgo bishop of Ely deceased, he gaue 200. acres of moze in the marsh of Wisbich to the augmentation of the Bishop of Ely. In whose place succeeded Hugh Norwold Abbot of S. Edmundsbury.

King Henry kept his Christmase at Oxford, the nobles of the realme being there present, where there came vnto him the Archbishop of Burdeaur being sent from the nobles of Gascoigne, Aquitaine, and Poytlow, vnto whom he returned honorably; there came also other solemne embassadors out of Foyrmandie of the like arrand, that was to sollicite the king on the behalfe of the noble men of those partes, that he would boughse to come thither in proper person, promising him that they would all come to him with hoise, barneise, and all other furniture, and that all the people of those Countreies should stedfastly abide by him, by whose helpe he might get againe all his inheritance. The king taking no other counsell then onely Hubert de Burgo his Iusticiar, gaue them answer, that he would defer that matter till he saw a better time, and so sent away the embassadors.

Robert de Bingham was made bishoppe of Salisburie, who did slowly (by the helpe of God, the king, and good people) prosecute the building of the new church, which his predecessor Richard Poore lately translated to Durham, had begunne.

King Henry dubbed knight, John the sonne of Hubert de Burgo Iusticiar of England, Richard Wetherster, alias Richard the Great, Deane of Paules, was made and consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury.

This yere the Vniuersitie of Paris endured great afflictions and injuries at the citizens and lay mens hands, whereupon the k. wrote his letters to the masters and scholars that if they would come into England and there continue their study, he would appoint them cities and towens with priuiledges and liberties for their abode, as should be to their contentations, 16. of July.

About the feast of S. Michaell the Archangell, the king gathered together at Poynmouth, all his nobilitie of England, Carles, Barons, and Knights, with

Barons of England that at the king.

1228

Measures and waights amended.

Great tempests.

An. reg. 13.

1229

Great mourning on to small purpose.

so great a power of horsemen and footmen, as never any of his predecessors at any time had the like, where there came unto him out of Ireland, Scotland, and Gallogay, that the number was marvellous, thinking to have transported over such a power as were able to have won againe into his dominion all those lands that his father had lost: but when they came to take shipping, they wanted carriage for halfe the army: whereof when the king understood, he imputed all the fault to Hubert de Burgo Justiciar, and openly called him old traitor, casting him in the sea, that hee had taken five thousande markes of the quene of France, to hinder his purpose, in his rage, drawing out his sword, would have slaine the Justice, had not the Earle of Chester and other runne betwene, and boydded him away till the kings wrath was appeased.

At that time in the same haven arrived the Earle of Wyrtaine, who by other was bound to conduct the king into his land: but the said Earle and other persuaded the king to deferre that matter till Easter following, and the Justiciar was made friends with the king.

King Henry kept his Christmas at York with the king of Scots, whom he had bidden to that feast, the Archbishop of that Citie being present, with the Carles and Barons, and a great family. This feast was royally kept three daies: and on the fourth, when the Sermon was ended, the king of Scots returned homeward with divers rich gifts, and king Henry basked towards London.

Upon the day of Saint Pauls conversion, when Roger Niger bishop of London was at Masse in the cathedrall church of S. Paul, a great multitude of people being there, suddenly the weather waxed darke, that one could scarcely see another in y<sup>e</sup> church, and suddenly an horrible thunderclap lighted on the church, that the same was shaken as though it should have fallen, and out of a darke cloude came such lightning, that all the church seemed to be on fire, and such a stincke that all men thought they should have died. Thousandes of men and women ranne out of the church, and being astonished, fell upon the ground boie of all understanding, none of all the multitude carried in the church, save the bishop and one deacon, which stode still at the high Altar awaiting the will of God. And when the ayre was cleansed, the multitude came into the church againe, and the bishop made an end of his masse.

King Henry with a great army sailed into Wyrtaine, where, after hee had ranged the country, and made many spoiles, besieged the City of Chaunte, and did nothing but spend great summes of treasure, the earles and Barons also, seeing that Hubert the Justiciar would not suffer them to do any thing against the enemies, they made baguets & feasts as they were wont to do in England, and tended nothing but eating & drinking: but the poorer sort of men, to maintaine themselves, sold all that they had, and begged themselves for ever.

King Henry set all things in order for the keeping of the countrey of Wyrtaine, and so toke shipping, and on the 25. of October landed at Portsmouth, having spent and wasted an infinite summe of money, & given over unto death an innumerable number of noble men, or at the least brought them low with sickness and extreme poverty. But Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester did

Hubert de Burgo in the kings displeasure called out of treason.

An. reg. 14.

1230 King Henry kept the king of Scots at York.

Mathew Paris. Daenelle in Pauls church.

An. reg. 15. King Henry sailed into Wyrtaine, but lost his army to no good effect.

King Henry returned out of Wyrtaine with great loss.

by the way as hee came homeward, and was buried at Welshbury, whose lands and honours the king granted unto Hubert de Burgo the Justice.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Lambeth, where Hubert the Justiciar pouched all things for the feast, which being ended, the king called the prelates and nobles of the realme to a counsell at Westminster, where hee demanded of them a great subsidy, which would not be granted.

Richard the kings brother married Isabel Countesse of Gloucester, late wife to Gilbert Earle of Gloucester lately deceased, and sister to William Marshall earle of Pembroke: and the marriage being scantily finished, the said William died, and was buried in the new Temple at London by his father. His brother Richard succeeded him in the Earldome.

The 3. of May, the king sent his letters to the townefolkes of Oxford, and Cambridge, rebuking them for their over high renting of their houses upon the scholars of the Universities: commanding them therefore to temper themselves in their said rents, and that the same be rated according to the ancient custome of the said Universities by two masters, and two burgeses. Likewise the king hearing that the Universities were pestered with many that failed themselves to be scholars, the which were none indeede, he commanded the shiriffes of Cambridge shire, and Oxford shire to make proclamation that no cleark should abide in any of the said Universities, except he liued under the discipline and tuition of some master of a scholl, upon paine of imprisonment of all such as should so remaine in any of the said townes above 15. daies after the proclamation.

Leolin prince of Wales spoiled the lands of the Barons that were on the borders of Wales, wherefore the king gathered a great power at Oxford, and went against the Welshmen, and builded the castle of Mauid, which before had bene destroyed.

The Jewes builded a Synagoge at London very curiously, but the Christians obtained of the king that it should be dedicated to our blessed Lady, and was since by the same king Henry, granted to the brethren of Saint Anthony of Akenna, and so called Saint Anthonies Hospitall in London, and since annexed to Windso: Colledge, by Edward the fourth, about Ann. 1485. Shortly after which time, the same church of S. Anthony was new builded by John Tate mayor of London.

King Henry being informed of the hard dealing of the townefolkes of Cambridge against the scholars, in rating their house rents, directed his writte to the Mayor and Bailiffes, remembryng unto them the multitude of scholars resorting to their towne for cause of studie, as well from divers partes beyond the seas, as at home, whereof themselves ought not to be a little topsall, considering also that himselfe and his whole realme received thereby great honour and commoditie: And therefore in the ende commaunded them to measure themselves more temperatly in rating their saide houses, to be rated by two masters, and two burgeses, according to the ancient custome of the Universities, bechaung themselves in such wise, as no further clamour came to him for that businesse.

1231 Subsidy demanded and denied.

William earle of Pembroke buried in the new Temple.

Nic. Trivet. An. reg. 16.

Jewes Synagoge.

1 Shepherd, Record. So the towne men of Cambridge.



1232

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, Peter Bishop of Winchester, ministering to him all things necessary to the said feast, did also give to the king, and to all them that were with him festinall garments.

Ranulph earle of Chester, Lincoln, and Huntingdon, deceased at Wallingford, from whence his bodie was carried to Chester to be buried. Into this Ranulph succeeded in the Earldome of Chester, John the sonne of David, the brother of William king of Scots his sisters sonne. This Ranulph had four sisters, the eldest named Matild, married to David an Earle of Scotland, by whom she had this John: the second named Mabel married to the earle of Gloucestre: the third named Agnes, married to William Ferrers earle of Derby: the fourth named Hauisia, married to Robert de Quincy earle of Winchester.

Hubert the chiefe Justiciar sent to the tower

Great tempest.

Historia Aurea.  
An. reg. 17.

Though many complaints made against Hubert de Burgo, chiefe Justice of England, the said Hubert died to the chappell of Wyndwood in Essex, where he was taken, and the king sent him to the Tower of London.

The morrow after Saint Marins day began thunder very horrible, which lasted sixtene daies. Great harme was done in London by fire, which began first in the house of David Iones a Lombard.

Ela Countesse of Salisbury widow, founded the monasterie of Chanons at Lacok in Wiltschire, for William Longespey her late husband, and William their sonne and helte.

1233

Piscantians placed about the king.  
Matthew Paris.

The king kept his Christmas at Worcester, where he removed all his officers and counsellors, as wel bishops as earles and barons, and sent for Piscantians, whome he retained into his service, and committed to them the keeping of the castles and his treasures.

The likenes of five Sunnes.

The viij. of April there appeared as it were foure sunnes beside the naturall sunne, of a red colour, and a great circle of cristall colour, from the sides whereof went out halfe circles, in the divisions whereof, the foure sunnes went forth.

There followed that yere great warre and cruell bloodsheds, and generally great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland.

Dragons.

In the month of June in the south part of England by the Sea coast were seen two great Dragons in the aire, flying and fighting together a whole day, the one chasing the other to the deepe sea, and then were no more seen.

Robert and Roger Bacon.

The king being at Oxford, Robert Bacon openly preached against Peter bishop of Winchester, so that he euilly counselled the king to spoile the realme with Piscantians. Also Roger Bacon his brother both earnestly and pitifully persuaded the king to leaue the counsell of the said Peter. Also the Barons sent messengers to the king, requesting that he would put from him Peter Bishop of Winchester, and the Piscantians, or else they would depose him from his kingdom, and create a new.

The Barons threat the king.  
The oules of conuicia.

The king builded a faire church and many houses adioyning thereunto in the Citie of London, not farre from the olde Temple, but betwixt the old temple and the new: In the which house all the Jewes and Infidels that did conuert to the faith of Christ might haue under an honest rule of life sufficient living, whereby it came to passe, that in thortie time there was gathered a great number of conuerts, which were baptised and instructed in the lawes of Christ,

and

and did live laudably under a learned man appointed to gouerne them. He also builded the hospitall of St. John without the eastgate of Oxford for sick folke and strangers to be relieved in.

Richard Marshall  
Oxford.  
Hist. Angl.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Glocester, with a very small company, because many nobles were gone from him. At the which time there was such a frost, that the coyne was destroyed in the ground, and the roots of herbes in the gardens: this frost continued till Candlemas without any thawe, so that no man could plow the ground, and all the yere after was unreasonable weather that barrenelle of all things ensued.

An. reg. 18.  
Joh. Rous.

1234  
Great Frost

Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Northwales, with a great force invaded the kings lands, and destroyed the same with fire & sword, from the coasts of Wales to Salisbury, which to woe also they set a fire. By the persuasion of Edmund Archbishop of Canterbury, the king commaunded Peter Bishop of Winchester to go to his bishopricke, and also expelled all the Piscantians into their owne Countrey, and making peace with Richard Marshall and Leoline prince of Wales, he called againe his naturall familie, and submitted himselfe to their counsell.

Salisbury  
Oxford.

The Piscantians expelled.

Richard Marshall in Ireland raising a warre there, by Geoffrey de Marisco, was slain and buried at Bilkenny, Gilbert his brother succeeded him in the earldome.

Nic. Trivet.

This yere was a great dearth and pestilence, so that many poore folkes died for want of victuals, and the rich men were stricken with coulours, that they would not relieve them, amongst whom is to be noted, Walter Grey Archibishop of Yorke, whose coyne being five yeres olde, doubling the same to be destroyed by vermine, hee commaunded to deliuer it to the husbandmen that dwelt in his manors, upon condition to pay as much new coyne after harvest, and would giue moine to the poore for Gods sake. And it happened that when men came to a great stache of coyne nigh to the towne of Hipon belonging to the said archibishop, there appeared in the sheaves all ouer, the heads of worms, serpents and toads, and a voice was heard out of the coyn-moue saying, Lay no hands on the coyne, for the archibishop, and all that he hath, is the diuelles, to be shot, the Walliffes were forced to build an high wall round about the coyne, and then to set it on fire, lest the venemous wormes should haue gone out and spoiled the coyne in other places.

Matthew Paris.  
Archibishop.

Comendat of  
decimie.

An. reg. 19.

The same yere died Hubert Foliose bishop of Hereford, unto whom succeeded malice Robert de Maydenstone, a famous learned man.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster in presence of the bishops and nobles of the realme.

1235

The same yere was brought before the king seven Jewes, which at Hoxwich had stolen a boie, and kept him from the sight of the Christian people, by the space of one whole yere, and had circumcised him, minding also to haue crucified him in the solemnitie of Easter, as themselves counselled before the king, and were conuicted thereof, wherefore their bodie and goods were at the kings pleasure.

Jewes stole a child at Hoxwich.

Frederike the Emperour married Isabell the kings sister. The Emperour

Isabell the kings sister married to the Emperours



Three leopards  
sent to Henry

Carriage.

Harry Spil-  
tel.  
An. reg. 20.

1236

Mathew Paris.  
Hist. Aurea.  
W. Packington.  
King Henry  
married the  
early of Hen-  
ry's daughter  
the Countess.

The citizens of  
London butlers  
at the coronation

High waters.

An. reg. 21.  
Statutes of  
Barton.

1237

sent to king Henry three leopards, in token of his regall shield of armes, where  
in these leopards were placed: he also afterward sent him a carrell.

The same time king Henry took carucage, that is to say, two markes of silver  
of euery knight he, towards the marriage of his said sister Isabel to the Em-  
perour, with whom he gaue 30000. markes, besides her ornaments, erowne  
and other goods of inestimable value.

Richard herie to the earledome of Gloucester married the daughter of Hubert  
de Burgo earle of Kent.

Walter Brune a citizen of London, and Rosia his wife, founded the Hospitall  
of our Lady without Bishopgate of London, a house of such great reliefe  
to the needy, that there was founde standing at the suppression a hundred and  
four score beddes for the poore well furnished, and the lands thereof were then  
valued at foure hundred seuentie and eight pounds, five shillings, and six pence  
by the year.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great ioy and solace,  
looking for the returne of certain messengers, whom hee had sent into Po-  
uence to contract a marriage with Elianor the daughter of Raymond Earle of  
Provence: he was married at Canterburie by Edmond Archbishop of Canter-  
burie, and crowned at Westminster the twentieth daie of January. To this co-  
ronation resorted so great a number of all Estates, that the Citie of Lon-  
don was scarce able to receiue them. The citie was adorned with silkes, and  
in the night with lampes, cressets, and other lights, without number, besides  
manie pageants, and strange deuises which were shewed. The citizens robe to  
meet the king and queene, being clothed in long garments, embroidered about  
with Golde and like of dyuers colours: their hoeses finelie trapped in  
accorde to the number of 360. euery man bearing golden or silver cups in their  
hands, and the kings trumpeters before them sounding. The Archbishoppe of  
Canterburie did execute the office of Coronation. The citizens of London did  
minister wine as butlers. The citizens of Winchester take charge of the kit-  
chen, and other citizens attended their charges.

Joan the kings sister, wife to Lewin prince of Wales died at Hawering in  
Essex, and was buried at Tarent in Dorset.

About this time fell such abundance of raine the space of two monethes, that  
the Thames overflowed the bankes, causing the marthes about which to be  
all on a Sea, whereon the boates and other small vessels were carried with the  
stream, so that besides cattell, the greatest number of men, women, and chil-  
dren inhabiting those parts were drowned: in the great palace of Westminster  
men did roto with cherries in the middelt of the hall, and they rode on hoeses  
backe to their chambers.

A parliament at Barton, wherein were made the statutes of Barton.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

Richard Pore byshop of Durham, after he had late byshop twelue yeeres, a  
man of great vertue and profound learning, deceased: he was first Bish. of Chy-  
chester, then of Salisbury, and then of Durham, hee deuoured the last named  
from the debts which Richard de Marisco his predecessor had bounde it in, for the  
summe

summe of 40000. marks. He also did translate the church of Salisbury from  
a barra in bry place, nere to the earles castle, unto a more competent place, and  
by the aduise of his excellent artificers, whom hee fetcht out of farre countries  
laide a wide and large foundation of a new church in a more plentiful soile. To  
the furtherance of which worke, not only the byshop, but also the king, and ma-  
nie noble men did put their hands. After, he builded an house of Friars named  
the Charnell at Tarent in Wiltshire and gaue it to the queene, in which the chose  
her Sepulture. Hee also founded an hospitall for the poore, by the colledge of  
Waul in Salisbury.

John surnamed Scot earle of Chester was poisoned by his wife, daughter  
to Leoline prince of Wales, and died thereof. The countie came to the king for  
lacke of helres.

Odo cardinall, by the commouement of king Henry came into England  
as Legate from the pope, the nobles of the realme not knowing thereof till his  
landing: wherefore manie conceiued great indignation against the king, and  
said he peruertheth all things, he breaketh promise, law and faith, in all points,  
and hath married a stranger without our consent, he knowledg of his friends,  
and naturall subiects: now he giueth a thing, and by and by reuoketh it againe:  
and now he secretelie hee hath called in the Legate: it was saide, that Edmund  
Archbishop of Canterburie did blame the king, especially for calling in the Le-  
gate, whereby he knew that great preiudice of his dignitie would ensue, to the  
great detriment of the whole Realme, but the king not regarding the Archb-  
shops counsell, or anie other his subiects, would by no meanes call backe what  
he had intended.

This yeere passed on a stormy and troublefome weather, and very unhealth-  
full, so that no man could remember so many folks to be sicke of the ague.

Simon de Mountfort, son to Simon earle of Mountfort, for doubt that G. Blanch  
mother to the french king was offended with him, fled into England, and was  
made earle of Leicester, and steward of England by king Henry.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and on the morrow after S.  
Stephens day, he gaue in solemne marriage to Simon de Mountfort, Elianor his  
sister, Johns daughter, widow of William Marshall earle of Pembroke.

Richard de Clare took to wife Matilde, the daughter of John Lacy earle of  
Lincolne.

Odo bone being lodged in the Abbey of Wines, the schollers of Wyfo: de-  
lied his master coke, who was also the legates brother, and the legate for feare  
gate him into the steeple of the church, where he helde him till the kings officers  
comming from Abingdon, conueied him to Wallingfo:re, where he accursed  
the misdoers.

Odo de Kilkenny, as standardbearer of the schollers, was taken with 12. o-  
ther, and cast in prison, and long after went from S. Pauls church in London to  
the Legates house (which was Durham place) hanged, without gowne, bare-  
headed and barefooted, whereby the y asked him for giuenes, and then the legate  
restored them to their vniuersitie.

A scholler of Wyfo:re saining himselfe madde, enterprised to haue Raine the

New Church  
of Salisbury.

County of Che-  
ster came to the  
kings hands.  
An. reg. 22.

Murmuring a-  
gainst the king.

Simon Mount-  
fort earle of  
Leicester.  
1238

Mathew Paris.  
Ypodigma.  
Legate put to  
his thists.

Schollers did  
penance at  
London  
John Brewer.

King in Dan-  
ger.

An. reg. 23.  
Nic. Triuet.

1239

king in his chamber at Woodstocke: but he was taken, and after long imprisonment plucked in pieces with hories at Couentre.

Simon de Montfort, whome the king had made earle of Leicester (after hee had agreed with his elder brother earle Aimeric for the same earldome) being also steward of Gascoigne, induced the king of England to recognise, that hee would holde of the king of France the land of the Basques, the chiefe towne whereof is Salou, and was in times past a kingdome of it selfe, and so by acknowledging to be of the se of the king of France, excluded the king of Castile, who chalenged the said se to belong to the king of Spaine.

Mathew Paris.  
Tower of London  
Ypodigma.

The tower of London was fortified, which the citizens fearing lest it were done to their detriment, complained to the king, who answered, that he had not done it to the hurt, but (saith he) I will from hence forth do as my brother doth, in building and fortifying of Castles, who beareth the name to be wiser then I am.

An. reg. 24.

1240

Quene Eleanor bare a son named Edward at Westminster, the 21. daie of June.

The king kept his Christmas at Winchester, where he made Baldwin de Riparis knight, and also earle of Wight, in presence of Richard earle of Cornwall, in whose custodie Baldwin had bene many yeres, and had married him to his wifes sisters daughter, the Lady Amicia.

Mathew Paris.  
Bulwark by the Tower.

Richard earle of Cornwall, the kings brother, took his journey towards Jerusalem, with many other noblemen of England. Upon St. Georges night, the stone gate and bulwark which the king had caused to be builded by the Tower of London, was shaken with an earthquake, and fell downe, but the king commanded the same to be builded againe stronger then before. Leoline pynce of Wales deceased, and then betwixt his bastard sonne Griffin, and his legitimate sonne David, nephew to the king of England by his sister, great and greivous destruction rose for the principallitie, but at length Griffin being taken of his brother, was committed to prison.

Bonifrons  
fish.

An. reg. 25.

1241

Spanie strange and great fishes came ashore, whereof eleven were Seabuls, and one of huge bignesse passed by the river of Euphrates, through the Bridge at London banbury, till he came as far as the kings house at Spottlake, where he was killed.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and many noble men with him, where, when the solemne service was done in the church, the king dining in the great hall of Westminster palace, did there place the Legate in the most honourable place of the table, to wit, in the midst (which the noblemen took in euill parte) the king sate himselfe on his right hand, and the Archbishop of Yorke on the left (for the Archbishop of Canterbury Edmund was dead) and then all the prelates and nobles according to their degrees, so the king would haue it, and did himselfe set the guests.

King Henry dining in Westminster hall, placed his guests there.

The fourth day after Christmas the Legate was by the Pope called home to the court of Rome: whereupon taking his leave of all the prelates, he took his journey towards the sea, whome the king with great pompe and an innumerable companie of the nobles, with trumpets sounding before them brought to

to the Sea; so that on the morrow after the twelfth daie, the Legate (after the king with great sorrowe for his departure, had embraced him) took shipping, at Dover, at whose departure no man was soze but the king, and such as the Legate had intreated.

About the same time Peter of Savoy, uncle to the Quene of England, to whome the king had giuen the earldome of Richmond, came into England.

The Jewes were constrained to pay 20000. markes at two termes in the yere, or else to be kept in perpetuall prison.

Gilbert Marshall Earle of Pembroke, dyed without the Towne of Hertford, being busied in turnement, and was buried at London in the new Temple. Walter his brother hardlie obtaigned the earldome, because hee procured that turnement, contrarie to the kinges will and pleasure. This Walter dying without issue, his heritage was diuided betwixt the sonnes of his Que sisters.

The walles and bulwarkes that were newlie builded about the Tower of London (in the building whereof, the king had bestowed more then twelue thousand markes) were againe unrecoverable thowne downe, as it were, with an earthquake, for which chaunce the citizens of London nothing soze, were much amazed, for they were threatened, that the saide walles and bulwarkes were builded in despyght of them, to the end, that if any of them would presume to contend for the libertie of the city, they might the re be imprisoned, and to the end, that many might be laid in diuers prisons, many lodgings were made there, that no one should speake with another.

The same yere Gilbert Bassett, through the stumbling of his horse, fell in a certain wood, as he went a hunting in the haruest time, and brake all his bones and sinewes, whereof in a few daies after he died, and shortly after his only son being but a child, died, whereby his inheritance came to Fulco Bassett deane of Yorke, brother to the said Gilbert.

Also about the same time John Byfeth chiefe forester of England, departed this life.

The Templars in London, at this time in great glory, entertained the nobilitie, foraine Embassadors, and the pynce himselfe verie often, in such, that Mathew Paris crieth out on them for their pride, who being at the first so poore, as that they had but one horse to serue two of them (in token whereof they gaue in their scales two men upon one horsebacke) yet sodainlie they waxed so insolent, that they disdained other orders, and toyed themselves with noble men.

Radulphus Niger bishop of London deceased, a man of long life, excellentlie well learned, a notable preacher, pleasant in talke and countenance, libellat at his table: he fell sicke at his mannor called Bishops hall in the parish of Stepen heath, one mile east from London, and there died, and was buried in the Cathedral Church of Saint Paul in London. Fulco Bassett Deane of Yorke, succeeded Bishoph of London.

King Henry kept his Christmas in the great hall at Westminster, at which time, when tidings came of Richard earle of Cornewalles coming home into

Peter of Savoy earle of Richmond.

I. Reuerend.  
Gilbert Bassett  
shall be buried at  
the new temple.  
Nic. Triuet.

Bulwarks by  
the tower.  
Mathew Paris.

Gilbert Bassett  
dyed.

The Templars  
at London in  
great glory.

An. reg. 25.

1242

Peter earle of  
Richmond recei-  
ver of Douer  
Castle.

into England, Peter of Saxony Earle of Richmond, upon Petyperes date, like a discrete man, resigned into the kings hands, the most famous Castles of England, considering he had taken more upon him then hee was able to beare, lest any disturbance should arise in the realme by any complaints: hee asked licence of the king to goe to his owne Countrey, but before he had taken shipping, the king sent for him with speede to returne, and against his will hee recheued the Castle of Douer to keepe.

King Henry with a great army sailed into Normantie, purposing to recover Hoptiers, Copen, and other Countreys, but after manie bickerings, to the losse of Englishmen, he treated a peace.

Eleanor daughter to Geoffrey Earle of Wyttaine, and sister to Arthure, ended her life prisoner in the Castle of Wyllfow, famished to death.

Hugo de Albencro Earle of Arundel died, and his inheritance was divided among foure sisters, he was buried at Wymonham.

Alfo Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent died at his mannour of Hamfede in Surrey, and was buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers at London, which Church was then in Holborne, unto the which Church he gave his noble pallace at Westminster, which afterwards Walter Grey the Archbishoppe of Dojke bought of them, and made it his Anne, since commonly called Dojke place, now white hall.

The Thames overflowed the banks about Lambeth, and drowned howses and feldes, the space of five miles, and in the great Hall at Westminster men took their horsebackes, because the waters ranne over all.

King Henry kept his winter in Wardeour, being declared by the Picardians and Gascoignes, that he was greatly empowered, notwithstanding all the scutage he had extorted, and treasures that were given him, all was spent without profite, for he had lost all his lands and honors as well in Picardie as in Gascoigne.

King Henry having set thinges in order beyond the sea in Gascoigne, took shipping and arrived at Portsmouth in the 25. day of September.

Boniface, sonne to Thomas earle of Saxony, brother to Peter earle of Saxony, and uncle to the Quene Eleanor was confirmed Archbishop of Canturburie, and was consecrated at Lions.

Beatrice Countesse of Poynance and Harbonc, mother to the Quenes of England and of France, a comely, wise, and chaste woman, being sent for by the king, arrived at Dover, sumptuously and costly apparelled, and in great estate, upon the nobles of England received with great honor: also the city of London was gorgeously prepared against her coming: she brought with her her daughter Cincia, to be married to Richard Earle of Cornwall the kings brother, which marriage was celebrated at Westminster upon the 23. day of November, with great royalty, and companie of noblemen, in such that there were tolde 3000. dishes of meate at his dinner. At the which feast, by the desire of the king, and the said Earle his brother, the bydes name was turned, and of Cincia, was called Scientia.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Wallingford, where hee finished the

byball

byball feast of Earle Richard his brother, to the which were bidden almost all the nobles of the realme.

Rainulph de Noua villa Bishop of Chichester, and Chancellor of England decreased on the first of February in his noble pallace at London, which he had builded from the ground, not farre from the Jewe Temple, and the house of Conuerts.

Griffin the eldest sonne of Leoline Prince of Northwales, which was kept prisoner in the Tower of London, devised subtilly howe to escape: therefore one night having deceived the watch, made of the hangings, chetes, towelles, &c. a long line, and put himselfe downe from the top of the Tower: but as hee was sliding a good pace, with the twelght of his body, being a very big man and a fat, the rope brake, and he fell on his necke, whose miserable carcase in the morning being found by the Tower wall, was a pittifull sight to the beholders, for his head and necke were dyven into his breast betwene the shoulders: the king hearing hereof, punished the watchmen, and caused Griffins sonne that was imprisoned with his father to be moze strenghtly kept.

The king took of the Citizens of London 1500. markes, for that they had receiued into their citie againe Walter Bokerell, who had bene banished twenty yeres, notwithstanding the citizens had proved that before that time the said Walter and his brother Andrew by their suite to the king, had gotten him to be reconciled and restored to the kings favour. Robert Grosset Bishop of Lincolne, with other prelates, complained unto the king of waste made of the church goods, by allant Bishops and Clearkes of his lorde, whereupon they were shortly bidden.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at London with great solemnitie, manie nobles being present.

On the xvi. day of January Quene Eleanor brought forth an other sonne, named Edmond.

Isabel Bulbecke Countesse of Arford deceased, and was buried in the preaching Friers church at Arford, because she was the foundresse there. Alfo Baldwin de Riparis Earle of Devonshire deceased in his monage.

The Popes Warldrobe in the citie of Lions was burned, with all that was therein: and manie men did say that the detestable charter of the tribute of England, which king Iohn did make, was burnt in that fire.

King Henry being at London, made Richard de Clare sonne to Gilbert de Clare, (so called, because he was borne at Clare in Suffolke, who was already Earle of Glocester) knight, and to the number of fortye. The same Richard de Clare took to wife the sister of the Earle of March, by whom he had issue Gilbert de Clare.

The king enlarged the church of S. Peters in Westminster, pulling downe the olde walls and steeple, and caused them to be made moze comely.

Robert Ros otherwile called Fursan, being made a Templar, died, and was buried at London in the new Temple.

Walter Marshall earle of Pembroke deceased, and was buried at Tintarne, and shortly after, his brother Anselme that succeeded him in the inheritance deceased

Lincolns Inne.

Miserable  
death of Griff-  
in.  
Mathew Paris.

Citizens of  
London fined to  
the king

Robert Grosset  
An. reg. 29.

1245

Thomas Sprote.  
W. Thorne.  
The Popes  
warldrobe burnt

Gilbert de  
Clare earle of  
Glocester.

An. reg. 30.

Nichol. Tris.  
Ypodigma.  
King Henry  
failed into stop-  
mandie.

An. reg. 27.  
Gernat. Dorob.  
Hubert de Bur-  
go died.

Errat. Andrus.

1243

Rich. de earle  
of Cornwall  
rooke to wille  
Cincia.

An. reg. 28.  
1244

ceased also without issue: and so all the true sonnes of William Marshall being dead, their heritage was diuided amongst their sisters.

Peter earle of Saunoy uncle to the Quene, whom the king had made earle of Richmond, builded a sumptuous house by the Thames at London, which place after his name was called, and is to this day, Saunoy, now an hospitall founded by king Henry the seventh.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, accompanied with many nobles, who had bene with him in Wales.

This yere by much intreatie the office of the Marshallship, & the honoz therunto belonging, was given to Roger Bigot Earle of Norfolk, by reason he married the eldest daughter of the great William Marshall.

King Henry keeping his Easter at London, dubbed knight Harold king of Spain, who had done him homage. And at that time certaine of the noblest Welchmen came into the kings allegiance.

In the diocesse of Lincoln, there was a woman of noble birth, well favoured and beautiful, which was married to a rich man, and did beare him chyliden, she also got another gentlewoman with childe, and begate three sonnes of her one after another, or euer it was knowen: the womens names were Hauisa and Lucia, as Henry Knighton affirmeth.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, and dined with the bishop on S. Stephens day.

Upon S. Valentines euen there was a great earthquake in many places of England, especially at London, about the banks of the Thames.

There arrived here in England the three halfe brethren to the king, to witte, Guy de Lusignan, William de Valence, and Arhelmar a cleark, with their sister Alice: this was the issue of Isabel sometime Quene of England, Countesse of March, which she had by Hugh Brune Earle of March. These bring newe earle of Arraby in Placania, which the Frenchmen had taken, the king went out to meete them, promising them great gifts and possessions, which he after performed more largely then he promised.

The Lady Iane daughter of Gwarin de Monchency was married to William de Valencia the kings brother on the mothers side, for the said Lady was bette to Gwaren, and was a rich marriage. And Alice daughter to the Earle of March the kings sister on the mothers side was married to John earle Waren.

King Henry made William de Valence knight, and gave him the Castle of Hertford, and the honoz therunto belonging with great treasure.

The copie was so sore clipped, that it was thought good to change the same, and to make it bolder: Whereupon stamps were grauen, of a newe incision of cutte, and being sent to the Abbey of Wury in Suffolke, to Canterbury, Winton, and other places, forbidding to vse any other stamps then was used in the exchange or mintage at London, all the olde stamps were called in.

A great plague was in England, so that in September there was euery day nine or tenne buried in the churchyard of Saint Peter at Saint Albons.

William Earle Ferrers and Matild his wife deceased, and William his sonne succeeded.

Saunoy place  
builded.

1246

Bigot earle of  
Norfolk made  
Marshall.  
Harold king of  
Spain.

Hermesfodite.  
Gontrous.  
An. reg. 31.

1247

Earthquake.

Three halfe  
brethren to king  
Henry.

Castle of Hert-  
ford giuen to  
William de Va-  
lence.  
Bate colne.  
Record of Bery.

Distillence.  
Mathew Paris.  
An. reg. 32.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. Beatrice the widow of Richmond sometime Earle of Bouance, came into England, with Thomas of Saunoy sometime earle of Flawers, to get some reliefe of the king.

A parliament was called at London, wherein a subsidy was demanded, but denied, as before: it had bene diners times.

Walter Mancleake sometime bishop of Carlisle, Robert Bacon, and Richard Fische, all preaching friers did this yere, which were the best learned in Diuinitie, and other sciences at that time in England.

The parliament beganne againe at London, wherein the king declared that he would not at the appointment of the nobles admit a Treasurer, Chancellor, or Justiciar, whereunto the nobles answered, neither would they impoverish themselves to enrich strangers their enemies, and so the parliament brake off. Wherethrough the king for want of money was faine to sell his plate and jewels, greatly to his losse: and when the king demanded who had bought it, and being answered, it was solde at London, he saide, I knowe that if Danians treasure were to be solde, the cite of London would loppe it up, and by it those russicall Londoners (quoth the king) abound in wealth, and call themselves Barons.

The towne of Newcastle vpon Tyne, for the most part, with the bidge was burned with an vnquencheable fire.

Fourte daies before Christmas was a great earthquake in England, so that the tops of houses were shaken and thowne downe, walles did cleaue, and the heads of chimnies and towers were shaken, but the bodie and foundations stode not.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, in which solemnitie, Richard earle of Cornwall, went to Wallingford, where with great number he celebrated that feast. And Richard earle of Gloucester, not farre from Gloucester, with no small gloze kept the like feast. But the king (the feast of circumsion being nere) demanded of the citizens of London newe gifts, &c.

The king desiring how to erad money from the citizens of London, made a mart at Westminster to last fiftene daies, and commanded that all trade of Merchandise should cease in the Citie those fiftene daies, which the Citizens were faine to redeme with two thousand pounds. Besides this, the king tooke vitnals and wine, where any could be found and paid nothing for it.

Two Merchants of Zabab complained to the king at Winchester, that they had bene robbed by men of that countrey, who had taken from them to the value of two hundred markes, which theues they had taken in the Court, whereupon such as were suspected, were taken to be tried, but the countrey purged them by othe, because they were for the most part all infected and giuen to theuerie: the merchants therefore continuing their suite, saide, that if they could not haue iustice, they would stae so much of English merchants goods in Zabab. Then the king caused twelue men of Winchester to be chosen, who also did quitte them that were accused, which thing when the king did see, he caused those twelue to be imprisoned, and sware, that in thate space they should be hanged as accessaries and pertured, and caused other twelue to be

1248

Parliament  
at London.

Robert Bacon.

Parliament at  
London.

King Henry  
forced to sell his  
plate and jew-  
els.

An. reg. 33.  
New Castell  
burned.  
Earthquake.

1249

Mathew Paris.  
A mart at  
Westminster.

Mathew Paris.  
Strangers  
robbed, and gi-  
ven to hang.

King

be impeached, which last Quest found all, and appached manie, especially of Hampshire, which were hanged.

Discord at  
Cambridge.

Great dissention arose in Cambridge betwixt the Scholiers and Townesmen, so that houses were broken downe and spoiled, and many men wounded and slaine.

An. reg. 34.

In the moneth of June fell great raine, especially about Abingdon, which carried away many trees, houses, beastes, milles, bridges, and one chappell, not farre from Abingdon.

1250

Mathew Paris.

Mathew Paris.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great solemnitie.

The friers Augustines began to inhabite at Woodhouse in Wales.

Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury in his visitation came to the Priorie of Saint Bartholomew in Smithfelde, where being received with procession in most solemn wise, hee saide he passed not upon the honour, but came to visite them: unto whome the Chanons answered, that they having a learned bishop, ought not in contempt of him to be visited by any other, which answer so much disliked the Archbishoppe, that hee forthwith fell on the Subprio, and smote him on the face with his fist, saying, In dede, indeede, doeth it become you English traitors so to answer mee: Thus raging with offes not to be recited, hee rent in pieces the rich coape of the Subprio, trode it under foete, and thrust him against a pillar of the Chancell, that hee had almost killed him, but the Chanons seeing, that their Subprio was almost dead, they raine and plucked off the archbishop with such a violence, that they overthrew him backward, whereby they might see that he was armed and prepared to fight.

The archbishops men seeing their master downe (being all strangers, and their masters countreymen boine in Prouance) fell upon the Chanons, beat them, tare them, and trode them under their foete: at length the Chanons getting away as well as they could, ranne bloudy and myzie, rent and torne, to the bishop of London, to complaine, who bade them goe to the king at Westminster, and tell him thereof: whereupon foure of them went thither, the rest were not able they were so fore hurt: but when they came at Westminster, the king would neither heare nor see them, so they returned without redresse.

In the meane season the whole cite was in an byzore, and ready to haue rung the common bell, and to haue helued the Archbishop into smal pieces, but he was secretly got away to Lambeth.

The friers of the order of preachers through chaffeindome, and from Jerusalem, were by a common conuocation assembled together at their house in Holborne by London, to intreat of their estate, to the number of foure hundred, having meat and drinke found them of almes, because they had no possessions of their owne. The first day the king came to their chapter, found them meate and drinke, and dined with them. An other day the quene found them meate and drinke, and afterwards the Bishop of London, then the Abbot of Westminster, the Abbot of S. Albons, the Abbot of Waltham, and so of other.

The king taking inestimable summes of money of all the rich men in his realme, took of one Aaron a Jew boine in Poyke 14000. markes for himselfe,

and 10000. markes for the Quene, and before hee had taken of the same Jew so much as amounted altogether to 30000. markes of silver, and 200. markes of gold to the Quene.

A mark of  
gold or silver  
was 8. ounces.

In October the sea flowing twise without ebbe, made so horrible a noise, that it was heard a great way into the land. Besides this, in a darke night, the sea seemed to be on a light fire, and the waues to fight one with another, so that the mariners were not able to saue their shippes: and to omit to speake of other, in one haue called Hureburne, besides small vessels, three noble and famous shippes were swallowed up of the waues. And at Wichelesca, besides celages for salt, and fishermen's houses, bridges and milles, about 300. houses in that towne, with certaine churches, through the violent rising of the sea, were drowned.

Tempest on  
the Sea.

Wichelesca  
drowned.

A great earthquake at S. Albons on S. Lucies daie.

An. reg. 35.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester without any great rosalite: and the same Christmas day at night, great lightning and thunder happened in the Synagogue of Norwich.

1251

Adelmare the kings brother was made Bishop of Winchester, although he were neither of learning, or age sufficient.

In this season Wales was brought to be subiect unto the English Lawes, and that part which toucheth to the shire, was committed to the custodie of Alan de Luche, the which gaue for the same to farme it 1000. markes, whereby hee supplanted Iohn de Grey, which should haue had it for 500. markes.

Wales brought  
to be subiect to  
the lawes of  
England.

The Abbey of Wailes was dedicated, which was founded by Richard earle of Cornewall, the building whereof had cost him 10000. markes: at this dedication was kept a solemn feast, at the which was present, the king, the Quene, and almost all the nobilitie of England spirituall and temporall.

On S. Dunstons daie, a marvellous tempest of thunder and lightning to the terrour of many, beate downe to dust the chimney of the chamber, wherein the Quene and her children then were, the whole house was fore shaken in the castle of Winclesor, where also in the parke, oakes were rent aunder, and turned upwards, mils with their millers, sheepe folds with their shepherdes, and plow men were beaten downe and destroyed.

Great Tempest  
of thunder and  
lightning.

About the same time the sea on the coasts of England, rose with higher tides then the naturall course gaue, by the height of 6. foote.

On the 8. of December, at a iusting holden at Rochester, the strangers were put to the worse, and well beaten by Englishmen of armes, so that the dishonour which they did to the Englishmen at Berkeley, was now recompensed, whereof sprang great hatred betwixt the Englishmen and the strangers.

An. reg. 36.

High Masters  
pulling at Ro-  
chester.

The shepherdes of France and Englande took their iourney towardes the holy land, to the number of 30000. but their number diminished in short time.

Shepherdes  
parted a way  
afore to Jeru-  
salem

King Henry kept his Christmas at Berke, whither came Alexander king of Scots, and was there made knight by king Henry. And on Saint Stephens daie, he married the Ladie Margeret, daughter to the king of Englande, where was kept a sumptuous feast, the number of knights that were come thither on the kings part of England, were reckoned to be about a thousand. The king of Scots

1252

King of Scots  
took a wife  
Margarit,  
daughter to  
king of En-  
gland.

Scots had 60. knights, & a great number of other gentlemen, and did homage to the king of England: this assembly was no small charge to the Archbishop, in feasting them, and their traines, for it was reported that he spent at the first course of one dinner 60. fat oxen.

The Cathedral Church of Ely was dedicated, which the Bishop of that see, named Hugh de Norwood had now builded of his owne proper costs, together with the palace there, the king and the prelates of the realme, both spirituall and temporall, being present, who were all feasted in plentifull manner. This Hugh Norwood builded the Bishops palace in Ely, and redified diuers manors belonging to that house in other places. He builded the new work of the church of Ely, towarde the East, even from the foundation, called the Presbytery, which was finished in the space of seuentene yeres, with the expences of 3350. pounds 18. s. 8. pence. He also builded the new Tower of timber nere to the Galliean. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

The king took foure Willings of cuerie knights six, to make his eldest sonne knight. He purchased the tenthes of all spirituall livinges at the Popes hands for five yeres, as it had bene in aid of the holie land, but inderce it was to make his sonne Edmond king of Naples and Sicill. The Liberties of London were seized by the means of Richard earle of Cornewall, who charged the Priests that hee looked not to the Bakers for their sies of bread, so that the cite was forced to please the earle with 600. markes, and were rejoyced. The king imprisoned the Shirriffes of London in the Tower a moneth and more, and after deposed them of their office, because of the escape of John Offrom, a Clarke counsell, that was bunder their ward in Newgate, for the death of a pilot that was the kings allie.

A great flood happened in Holland, Lindsey, and Holdernes, countries of Englands, the tenth of October, which came unto Alnigham, where through a great portion of lande, with houses and people were drowned. Robert Grosset Bishop of Lincoln, in Greke, Latine, and other languages, old by an Epistle reproue Pope Innocent, affirming, that the preaching friers, and minoists friers were infected with heresie. This Robert Grosset deceased at his manor of Rugdenham, he was an Englishman born in Suffolke, whose learning (in Hebrew, Greke, Latine and other languages) joined with vertue, and good life, won to him perpetual commendation, he was a manifest blamer of the Popes king, a reprouer of Prelates, a correcter of Priests, a director of Priests, an Instructer of Clerks, a Sustainer of Schollers, a Preacher to the people, a persecuter of unchast liuers, a diligent searcher of the Scriptures, a Ballot to such straungers as sought preferment in the Realme by the Popes piousness. In house-keeping liberal, in corporall refection plentiful, and in ministering spirituall food, deuoute and godlie affected: in his bishops office diligent, reuerend, and neuer wearied, he gaue his booke to the friers minoists in Oxford.

William de Vesie a noble baron of the North, died in Gascoigne.

King Henry kept his Christmas in Gascoigne, and the Quene kept her Christmas at London, where she laye in Childbedde of a daughter named Katherine,

60 fat Oxen  
spent at a dinner.  
L. b. Eli.

Church of Ely.  
An. reg. 37.

1253

John Textor.

Liberties of  
London seized.

Ypodigma.

Great flood.  
An. reg. 38.  
Rob. Grosset.

1254

Katherine, and was purified on the Euen of the Epiphanie, making a royall Feast: at the which was present, the Archbyschoppe of Canterburie, the Byschoppe of Ely, the earles of Cornewall and Gloucester, and manie other Nobles: at which time she sent ouer to her husband for a newperres gift, the sum of five hundred markes out of her reuenues, towarde the mainte nauce of his warre.

Edward the kings eldest son wedded the kings daughter of Spaine Elianor: his father gaue him the earldome of Chester, and the gouernance of Owenen and Ireland.

Peter de Egeblanke Byschoppe of Hereford in the court of Rome, feigning himselfe Procurator for the Cleargie of Englands, bounde the small houses in Keligion in one hundred or 2. hundred markes the yere, the greater houses in three hundred, or five hundred markes the yere: Saint Edmundsburie was bounde in seauen hundred markes, to bee payde to certaine Merchauts strangers, and all this money was collected to expulse Manfred out of Naples, Sicilia, and Sicill, which the Pope had giuen to Edmond sonne to king Henry of England.

After king Henry had continued certaine dales at Boloigne, hee took the Seas and returned into England, landed at Dover in Christmas weeke. His tourney into Gascoigne was right costlie, and to little purpose, for the kings charges amounted to the sum of seauen and twentie hundred thousand pound, besides lawes and rents which he vnadvisedlie gaue to those, which little deserued. In two tourneies that king Henry made, the one into Bostowe, which countrey he left, the other into Gascoigne, which he hardly kept, he spent more treasures (saith mine Author) then a wise Couerour would haue giuen for the most.

The 5. of June the king by his writ commanded the Shiriffe of Cambridgeshire to see a due obseruation of all such ordinances and provisions, as he before had granted to the vniuersitie of Cambridge, by his letters patents, for the assise of bread and ale, for house rents, for imprisonment of Clerks, and deliuey of them againe at the Chancellors commandement.

Lewes king of France sent vnto king Henry of England, for a present, an Elephant, a Beast most strange and wonderfull to the English people, for that seldome, or neuer anie of that kinde had bene seene in England before.

The 22. date of November were brought vnto Westminster 102. Jewes from Lincoln, that were accused for the crucifying of a child of 8. yeres, named Hugh, in despite of Christs religion, these were vpon examination sent to the Tower: the murder came out by the diligent search made by the mother of the child: 18. of them that were so brought vp to London, were hanged, the other remained long in prison.

The earles and barons of England, with assent of the prelates, caused proclamation to be made through all England, that the Charters of liberties and foreis should be kept, & at their instance, Boniface archbi. of Canterbury accused all those that should breake them. Lewyn prince of Wales, gathering a mightie

The Quenes  
newperres gift  
to the king.

Edward the  
kings eldest son.

Radul de Diceto

Textor.

An. reg. 29.

1255

A chargeable  
tourney into  
Gascoigne.

An Elephant  
sent into Eng-  
land.

Jewes hanged.

Nicho. Triu.  
An. reg. 44.

mighty band of men, invaded Cheshire, which the k. had lately given to his son Edw. and destroyed all things with fire and sword, till he came to the gates of the cite of Chester, to represse whose violence, a valliant and famous knight called Stephen Baccan was sent of the king with an army, who entering the Lunds of a noble man of Wales called Rile, furnished Vaghan, that is, little, being circumvented and beset of his enemies in marshy grounds, was slain, the remnant of his army likewise either slain, or taken alive, and put in bands, few excepted that escaped by flight.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester: king Henry made Magnus king of Man knight, and bestowed on him great gifts.

Alexander king of Scottes with Margaret his wife, came into Englande about the beginning of August, who found the king of England at his manor of Woodstocke, where the king of Scotts sported himselfe for a season, and had the lands of the earldom of Huntingdon restored unto him, and here he did homage to k. Henry. On the feast day of the decollation of S. Ioh. the two kings and queens came to London, where they were honorably received and conducted to Westminster. Iohn Mansell the kings Chaplain brought the two kings and other states to dine with him, whereunto they granted, where they were entertained with marvellous cheer, there were 700. messes served up, but the multitude of guests was such, that underneath the same sufficed, nor house could receive them, so that tents were set up abroad, the like dinner had not bene made by any chaplaine before.

King Henry came into the Exchequer, and there set downe order for the appearance of sheriffes, and bringing in of their accounts, there was fine marks set on every sheriffs head for a fine, because they had not discontinued every person that might dispend 15. pound law by yeere, to receive the order of knighthood, as was to the same sheriffs commanded.

This yeere the new worke of Pauls, to wit, the crosse ples were begun to be newe builded. k. Henry kept his Christmas at London, and on Childermas day came messengers unto Richard earle of Cornewall, who declared unto him that he was elected king of Almaine.

Hugh Bigot chiefe Justice of England, and Roger Thurkelby kept their Courtes in the Gildhall of London, and punished the Baker's upon the Tomberell, and did manie other things against the lawes of the cite. Richard earle of Cornewall went over into Almaine, and was there crowned king of Almaine at Aquisgrame.

The 6. daie of July fell such abundance of raine, that many houses, byldges, and trees were borne downe. The king caused the wals of the cite of London, which were for decayed, and destitute of bulwarkes, to be repaired in moys semelie wise then afore they had bene.

Great scarcitie of Beaves and hoxes in England, whereof they were wont to have many thousands out of Wales yearly, and all the Marches were made as it were a desert.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnity. For so much as the king had oftentimes promised the restitution of certaine ancient

ancient lawes which he never performed, the Lords murmuring against him, held a Parliament at Wyndesore, which was after called the madde Parliament, because manie things were there enacted, which turned to the death of manie pables. In confirmation of these acts were chosen twelve Peeres, which had authoritie to correct the breakers of them, the king his brethren, the nobles men and Barons, taking their oathe to see the same observed. Hostilite after, they banished William of Valence, Galfrede, Guidon, and Ailmer the elect of Winchester, all four brethren to the king on the mother side, and other strangers.

Great dearth followed the wet yeere passed. A quarter of wheate was solde for sixtene shillings, and 20. shillings, but the worst was, there coulde bee none found for money, where-through many poore people were constrained to cate horse flesh, and barkes of trees, but many starved for want of fode: 20000. in London as it was said.

A Jew at Cokenhester fell into a pynde upon the Saturday, and woulde not for reuerence of his Sabbath bee plucked out, wherefore Richard of Clare earle of Gloucester, kept him there till Monday, at which time hee was founde dead. The said Richard Clare earle of Gloucester died, and also his brother William, by poison as was thought.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, with great solemnity. Richard Gray Constable of Dover, and Lord Warden of the ports was this yeere removed by the Lord chiefe Justice Hugh Bigot, who took into his owne hands the custodie of the said castle and ports.

This yeere a great mortalitie of pestilence reigned, whereof died many thousands of christian people, amongst whome deceased Fulco Basset bishop of London, and was buried in Pauls church at London.

In a parliament at Westminster, the ordinaunces made at Wyndesore with certaine other articles annexed, were read, and ratified by a curse pronounced against the breaker of these statutes, or anye of them. In the same Parliament was granted to the king a taske, called Scutage, to wit, 40. shillings of euerie knights fee throughout England, the which extended to a great sum of money: for as diuers writers affirmed, there were in England in the possession of spiritual and temporall persons more then 40000. knights fees, some saie 60000. knights fees. Iohn Rouse saith, that in the 15. yeere of William Conquerour, there were found in England 60211. knights fees, &c. k. Henry had now taken Scutage since his coronation eleven times.

The king commanded a generall assemble at Pauls Crosse in London, where he in proper person commanded the Mayor that the next daie following, he shoulde cause to bee sworn before the Aldermen, euerie drifpling of twelue yeeres of age or upwards, to be true to the king and his betres kings of England, and that the gates of the city should be kept with harnessed men.

King Henry of England kept his feast of Christmas at Paris in France. The two Romanes striving for Prebends in Pauls church at London, the one killed the other there.

Iohn Duke of Bypayne married Beatrice, King Henry the third his daughter.

Manuscript of Spain.

1255

King of Scots and his Queens.

One of the 8. chaplains feared two kings.

k. Henry late in the Exchequer. Sheriffs fined. An. reg. 41.

Radul. Baldok. New worke of Pauls. 1257

k. of Almaine.

Bridges boyned. Textor. Cites of London repaired. An. reg. 42.

1258

Parliament. Ypodigma. 12. Peeres.

Strangers banished. Dearth of coine.

Cro. Euseham;

It is to be noted.

An. reg. 43. Ex Record. Tho. Wikes.

1259

Great pestilence.

Parliament at Westminster.

Scutage taken.

Pauls crosse in London. Day to the 4.

An. reg. 44.

1260



ter, and was made knight, and with him Baldwin de Reduers Earle of the Isle of Wight.

Thugh Bigot  
chief Justice.  
W. Packington.

This yere Sir Hugh Spencer was made chiefe Justice of England, and Nicholas of Cly Chancellor to the king, and the Abbot of Peterborough Treasurer of the Exchequer, by ordinance of the Barons.

Parliament.

The king repenting that he had at Oxford granted such large liberties and liberties to the Nobles and people of the Realme by counsel of Edward his sonne, and Richard his brother, bee sent to the Court of Rome to bee absolved of his oath. The Barons and Nobles of the Realme, helde a Parliament at London in the newe Temple, and the king helde himselfe in the Tower of London.

An. reg. 45.  
Bevham.

Reignold de Moun, Earle of Somerset and Lord of Dunster, founded the Abbey of Bevham in Devonshire.

This yere great strife befell at Cambridge betwene the schollers & townsmen: and likewise betwene schollers and schollers of the north, and south parts. Wherefore the king sent thither Spas. Giles of Argenton, Spas. Henry of Bosham, and Spas. Laurence Broke the 24. of November, authorized by his commission to appeale those tumults: but they being overmuch extremity to one part, and favour to another, that commission was shortly after revoked, and a new charge given to Spasier Nicholas at Tower, and Nicholas Handlo, two of his Justices Itinerants for ceasing of those debates. The contention still continuing at Cambridge betwene the schollers and the townsmen in most hateful manner, manie of the schollers by agrément among themselves departed to Northampton, and there raised a new University by the kings consent, which continued not above foure yeres, before it was altered, and the university returned home to their olde place at Cambridge.

1261

King Henry kept his Christmas at Windlesore with his wife, the Quene of England, and his daughter Quene of Scots.

University of  
Cambridge  
remoued to  
Northampton.

In the moneth of February contention continuing betwene the schollers of Cambridge, and the townsmen, many of the schollers agreed among themselves to depart from thence, to the towne of Northampton, and there to raise a new University. Whereunto the king gave his consent, and granted them passport, but it was not long ere the University returned to their olde place.

ii. Henry comming to the Tower of London, fortified it greatly, and caused the gates of the city to be warded, sending forth commandement to his Lords to come to the Tower, and there to hold a parliament, which they denied to do.

An. reg. 46.

The Barons discharged Sir Hugh Spencer, of his office of chiefe Justice; and placed in his roome, Sir Philip Basset without the kings consent.

The Barons discharged the Sheriffes and Justices, which the king had appointed, and they placed other in their romes.

1262

King Henry with his Quene and Councell, kept his Christmasse in the Tower of London.

On the second Sunday in Lent, King Henry caused to bee read at Pauls crosse, a Bull obtained of Pope Urbane the fourth, as an abolition for him, and for all his that were sworne to maintaine the articles, made in the parliament

ment at Oxford: then bee with the Quene sailed into Fraunce, to make a small concord betwene him, and the king of Fraunce for Aquitaine, where the composition was, that Aquitaine should remaine to the king of France, paying to the king of England and his heires yearly 30000. poundes Tournois, which is 3000. pound sterling.

The Barons of England (Simon de Mountfort being their chiefe taine) armed themselves against the king, and all this yere hovered about London, and other places, without any notable act of rebellion, saving that they robbed all sorts, and such other persons as they knewe to be against their purpose, especially the Jews in all places. There wasaine Jewes at London to the number of 700. the rest were spoiled, and the synagogue be faced, because one Jew would have forced a christian man to have paid more then 2. pence for the buriall of xx. s. a weeke.

The Barons  
in armour.

Jewes spoiled  
for bury.

Richard of Clare earle of Gloucester, son of Gilbert of Clare, being with king Henry in France, deceased, and was buried at Tewkesbury, and Gilbert his son succeeded him.

W. Packin  
An. reg. 47.

King Henry with his Quene, and councell, landed at Dover on S. Thomas daie, and kept his Christmas at Canterbury.

Io. Euerden.  
1263

Sir Macy de Bescile, a French man, was by the king made Sherriffe and Constable of Gloucester, wherewith the Barons being offended, they chose to bee Sherriffe, and placed there a knight of that countrey, called Sir William Tracy, which Sir William keeping Court upon a daie in the Towne of Gloucester. Macy the Frenchman, with a number of armed men came suddenly upon him, threw him to the ground, and so to the castle, and cast him in prison, whereof when the Barons understood, they sent Roger Clifford, and Sir John Gifford with a great power to Gloucester, who besieged the castle, bent the bridge, and entered at the last, where they tooke the sayde Macy, with all his company, and for that a Carpenter from the Castle with a quarrell, hadaine an Equier of the Barons partie, Sir John Gifforde made the same Carpenter to leape from the toppe of the castle, where through hee was crushed to death. Sir Roger Clifford toke the keeping of the castle upon him, and sent Macy into the spard, Sir John Gifford toke all Macies goods at Herefstone, and elsewhere.

Macy a French  
man Constable  
of Gloucester.  
Rob. of Glouc.

Glouc. castle  
taken by the  
Barons.

Peter de Egblanuch a Frenchman, Bishophe of Herefords, was drayned out of his Cathedral Church by Thomas Turberuill, and other, and sent to the Castle of Crocley, where hee and Sir Macy were both committed to safe ward: his treasure was spoiled, and his Chanons sent to prison, and thus were Frenchmen served through the lande where they might bee founde, by them that were on the Barons part.

Wish of Heref.  
a French man.

Simon de Mountfort with the barons, pitched their tents in Killeworth, or Killeworth parke. The manor of the same Killeworth belonging to Richard king of Almain, was burnt by the Londoners. They also burned another house of his nere to Westminster.

The Wikeu  
chalen

In this meane while, the king and Quene remained in the tower of London, and when the Quene would have gone by water unto Windesore, the Londoners

The Quene  
chalen  
Nic. Trivet



Screeches of L.  
don chastised.  
Annals of Hyde.

Peace conclu-  
ded betwixt the  
king and his  
barons.

Londoners getting them to the bridge in great numbers, under the which the must passe, cried out on her, bling many vile reprochfull words, theise durte and scowes at her, that she was constrained to returne again to the towne. The citizens fortified the citie with yron chaines, & stone overthwart their streets, munited the citie, and did marvellous things.

There was a peace concluded betwixt the king and the barons, with these conditions, that Henry, sonne to the king of Almaine, that toke the Barons part, and was in prison, shoulde bee deliuered, that all the kinges Castles through Englande shoulde bee put into the Barons handes, that the promotions of Epschoe shoulde bee kept, and that all Straungers within a certaine time shoulde depart the lande, those except, whose abode the faithfull persons of the Realme with one assent shoulde accept: lastlie, that the Englishmen bozne, and such as were faithfull men to the kingdome, shoulde order and rule the businesse of the Lande under the king. But this notwithstanding, certaine knights of the kinges part fortified the Castle of Windsoze with victuals and armour. Edward the kinges sonne came to Wiltshire, where discorde betwixt his knights and the Townesmen, so that the Townesmen were minded to haue besieged the Castle: which when Edwarde understood, hee sent for Walter Bpshophe of Winchester that tooke the Barons part, that in his companie hee might goe to the Court of his father, promising to perswade his father to peace. Hereupon going forth with the Bpshophe, till hee came to Windsoze, hee entred the Castle, to the great misliking of the Bpshophe: but Edwarde shortly returned, and went to meete Simon earle of Leicester, who with his adherentes were comming to besiege Windsoze Castell. Edwarde the kinges sonne met with the saide Simon about Kingstone, and offered meanes of peace: but Simon trusting to Bpshophe Walters counsell, deteyned Edward with him, and woulde not suffer him to departe till the Castell was yielded, they that were within, hauing libertie to depart whither they woulde: and the Straungers that minded to passe the Seas, had safe conduits graunted them. Lewin prince of Wales confederate with earle Simon, in the meane time wasted the Countrey of Chester, and the marches of the same, and overthrew to the grounde the Castles of Duffard and Cannocke. After this, a Parliament was holden at London, in the which, many that had helpe with the earle, went to the kinges part, as Henry of Almaine, Sonne to Richard king of Romanes, and other. The kinges partie beeing increased, hee went to Douer, and endeuored to haue gotten that castle out of the earles handes, but hee traualled in vaine.

An. reg. 28.

1264

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with the R. the king of Almain and many other great estates.

Lewes king of France, through procuring of Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury (who in politike Sermons at Paris, as well at the friers preachers, as minors, declared the dolings betwixt the king of England, and the earle of Leicester) take vpon him to make a peace betwixt them: whereupon the king of England, with his sonne Edward, and diuers other of the English nobilitie, came to Paris about the 22. of Januarie, but the earle of Leicester, fearing the

the French kinges displeasure for: his mothers sake, or some other cause not knowne, staid at home in England and proceeded in his businesse: wherefore Roger Mortimer beganne to despoile the possessions which the earle of Leicester held, against whom the prince of Wales went, and besieged the castle of Radnoze, and brought it to yeld.

Edward the kings son, after his returne from Paris, about Lent, toke his journey toward the March, and passing by Wyke, the Burgeses shut vp the gates against him, whereby he was forced to lie at the kings hall without the towne till the next morowe and then departed. The schollers of Wyke being shut within the towne, brake vp the gate that leadeth toward Braumton, for which deede the Palor sent some of them to prison: and not long after, while the schollers were at dinner, the Palor and Commons with banners displayed, thought to haue spoiled the Clerkes ere they had bene aware, but being espied, the schollers ran together, and with bowes and other weapons slew and wounded the Burgeses and Commons, brake by manie houses, spoiling the goods, and set the houses of the Portresses (William Spicer and Gessrey Henckley) on fire, on the Southside of the towne. Moreover, because the Palor (Nicolas Kingstone) was a Wintener, they brake vp the Wintrie, brake the wines, and spoiled them, for the which fact the king caused the Clerks and schollers to be banished the Wintertide.

The Schollers  
and Burgeses  
of Wyke  
one spoile the  
other.

Clerks of Wy-  
ke banished.

Edward the kings sonne toke the Castle of Baie and Huntingdon, belonging to the earle of Hereford, and the Castle of Hereon being also rendered to him, he deliuered to Roger mortimer to keepe, with the territories adiacent. Robert Ferrers earle of Warbie (who toke parte with earle Simon) besieged Worcester, and entring by the olde Castell, spoiled the Citizens of their goods, and compelled the Jewes to be christened. The towne of Gloucester, that before was taken by the Barons, was now assailed by Edward the kings sonne, who entred the castle by great force, and in the next morning by meanes of the Bpshophe of Worcester, and Reignolde Abbot of Gloucester, a truce was taken betwixt the Barons in the towne, and the kings sonne in the Castle: but shortly after the Barons fled, and the Burgeses submitting themselves, were some of them hanged, the residue cast in prison, greivously ransomed, and the towne destroyed, from whence the kinges sonne departed, spoiling and wasting the countrey (contrarie to his othe made to the Barons) till he came to Wyke, where he lodged in the house of the frier preachers, and ioined his power with the king his father, who was lately come thither to make his offering to Saint Frideswide, (not fearing the superstitious opinion, that if any king entred that towne, the virgin there woulde be auenged on him.) The king hauing now with him his brother Richard king of Almaine, his sonne Edward, William de Valence his brother on the mothers side, and John Cumyn of Scotlande, with a multitude of Scottisshmen, John de Bailliol Lord of Galloway, Robert le Bruse Lord of Anandale, Roger de Clifford, Philip de Marmion, John de Vallibus, Roger de Laborne, Henry Percy, Philip Basset, Roger de Mortimer, with an armie went and besieged Northampton, and the fourth of Aprill breaking the wal, toke the towne, and in it 70. knights bearing banners, Simon Mountfort the

Worcester be-  
sieged.

Gloucester be-  
sieged.

Northampton  
besieged.

ponger, William de Ferrers, Peter de Mountfort, Baldwyne Wake, Adam de Newmarch, Roger Bartrand, Simon Fitz Simon, Berengario de Wateruile, Hugh Gubion, Thomas Maunfell, Roger Bonteuleyn, Nicol. Wake, Robert de Newcanton, Philip de Derby, Grimbold de Paunfuent: of whome Simon the ponger was sent to Winchester, the residue to other places to be safely kept. Other knights of meaner degree were taken, to the number of fourtie, and not a few Esquires: from thence the king went towards Spittingham, wasting with fire and sword the manors places of the Barons, and there hee gathered his Lordes and great men.

Carle Simon went to London, and from thence to Rochester, which John Carle Warren defended, the bridge and first gate whereof when he had won, being informed that the king was coming towards London, he left the siege and went backe to mete him: but the king turning his waie from London toke the castle of Harington or Harington, which was the Earle of Gloucesters, and then going to Rochester, chased away some that remained at the siege, but slew many mo: from thence he went to Donbridge, the castle whereof he toke, and the Countesse of Gloucester with him it: leaving a garrison there, he went to Winchester, where he received them of the 5. ports to his peace, and passing further to Lewis, was received into the priory, and his son into the castle, where whyles he remained, the barons wrote to him letters, as ye may read in Mathew Paris, and Nicholas Trivet: but they taking no effect, the Barons in armes approached towards Lewis, invading the kings people that were gone forth for rage, whereof the king being warned, he goeth forth to mete them with his armie divided into three lordes: The first was led by Edw. the kings sonne, having with him William de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and John de Waren earle of Surrey and Suffex. The second was guided by Richard B. of Almaine with his sonne Henry. The third the B. himselfe had in governing. The Barons army was divided into 4. wards. The first ledde Henry de Mountfort with the earle of Hereford. The second ledde Gilbert de Clare with John Fitz John, and William de Mountchance. The third in which the Londoners were, Nicholas Segraue. The fourth earle Simon himselfe led with Tho. de Pelueston. Edward the kings sonne with his battell broke on his enemies that hee made them to give backe, of whom many were slayned.

The Londoners were put to flight, whom whyles the kings sonne pursued for the space of foure miles, he made great slaughter, but being separate from the rest of the army, he weakened his part sore.

In the meane time many of the kings battell were slaine, & the king of Almaine taken in a windmill by Sir John de Bevis, so was Robert le Brui and Joh. Commyne, which had brought the Scots. King Henry also having his horse slaine under him, yielded to the earle of Gloucester, who sent him prisoner to the priory. Edward returning, he received with sharp battell, and the earle Waren, William de Valence, Guy de Lusignan, the kings halfe brothers, Hugh Bigot with men of armes to the number of 400. habergeons got then the castle of Wemsey, and when many were slaine on either side, the Lord Edward riding about the towne, found his father in the priory.

In

In the meane time an assault being given to the Castle, which was valiantly defended, the Barons withdrew to the river: whereupon the Lord Edward being greatly incouraged, and having gathered his people about him, would have made a new battell, so that the Barons sued for peace, which by the meanes of the friers preachers and priors, was brought to passe, that on the Friday following, the Lordes, Edward and Henry, for their fathers, of England and Almaine kinges, delivered themselves to Earle Simon, upon hope of quietnesse and peace that might be concluded. On the Saturday the king licenced them that were about him to depart to their houses, and to go unto them that were in Donbridge Castle, that they should not molest the Barons, as they returned homewards: but they notwithstanding being in armes, when they heard that the Londoners which were fled from the battell were received into Croydon, they halted thither, & slaying many of them got great spoiles. From thence they went to Bisholp, where they remained till Edward the kinges son was delivered. There was slaine in the battell at Lewes, (which was fought on the 12. of May) about 4500. men. About that time a great part of the citizens in London was bent by treason.

Carle Simon ledde the king and his sonne Edward about with him till hee had got all the strong Castles of the land into his hands, and then put Richard king of Almaine in the Tower of London, and Edward the kings sonne in Dover Castle.

In the meane time, Roger Mortimer, James Audely, Roger Leyborne, Roger Clifford, Haymo Lestrangle, Hugh de Turberuile, with many other, rose against Simon, who to restrain their boldnesse, associating to him the Prince of Wales, entered the Castle of Hereford, and caused Edward the kings sonne to be brought thither from Dover: after this he wanne the Castle of Hereford, which belonged to the Earle of Hereford, and toke the Castle of London, and after wasting the lands of Roger Mortimer, goeth towards Mountgomerie, and there taking pledges of peace of the said nobles, hee turneth to the South parts, to mete the power, which was saide to come out of France to the kings ayde.

Pope Urban sent a Legate and Cardinall, the bishop of Sabine into England, but they might not enter the Realme, the five portes prohibiting them: whereupon they called certaine English bishops first to Amience, and after to Bologne, to whom he committed the sentence of excommunication to be pronounced against the citie of London, the five portes, and all those that troubled the king of Englands peace: but the Bishops dissembled the matter.

This yere about the 20. of June a notable blazing starre appeared, such a one as had not bene sene in that age, which rising from the East with great brightnesse into the midst of the Hemisphere betwix his streame, it continued till after Michaelmas.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Woodstocke, and Simon Earle of Leicester kept his Christmas at Kenilworth.

The first of Februarie the king revoked his grant of the new universitie at Ro: Hampton, by reason of great discommodities thereby ensuing to the universitie.

Rochester besieged.

Castle at Harington taken. Castle of Donbridge taken.

Battell at Lewes.

The R. of Almaine taken.

King Henry taken.

Edward the R. soune taken.

Rob. of Gloucester kept in London by treason.

W. Packin. Chro. Glaffen.

Castle of London taken.

Blazing starre. Nic. Trivet. Rob. of Gloucester.

An. reg. 40. 1265.

universitie of Oxford, whereof all the Bishops of the Realme had given him advertisement by their writing.

The earle of  
Glocester for-  
tooke the earle  
of Leicester.

Between Simon of Leicester, and Gilbert of Glocester strife arose, for that Simon not only kept the king and other as prisoners, but also toke to himselfe the revenues of the kingdome, &c. which should have bene equally divided amongst them, so that Gilbert of Glocester departing, joined to him in league the noble knights of the marches, whose earle Simon had commanded to abide the realme, but Ioh. de Waren Carle of Surrey and Sussex, and William de Valence earle of Pembroke, had brought a great power by sea in the West parts of Wales, & arriving at Pembroke, earle Simon leading the king with him, went to Hereford, where he gathered a great power, to oppresse the said knights: but while the prelates laboured for peace, Edward the 3. sonne being in the castle of Hereford is permitted to exercise himselfe on horsebacke in a meadow without the city by his keepers, where after he had wearied divers hofes, and mounting on a fresh appointed for that purpose, he rode quite aboute, and passing the rafter of Wye, with two knights and foure Esquires, was followed hard by his keepers: but when they were advised of the standards of Rog. Mortimer and Roger Clifford coming to his rescue, they returned, and he escaped to Wigmore. And this chanced in the Whithson week. Lord Edward being thus escaped, gathered an army, confederately and submitted to him the Countreies of Hereford, Worcester, Salop, and Chester, with the townes, cities and castles, he also winneth by force the citie of Gloucester, which Carle Simon had lately fortified, the townesmen fled to the castle, who 15. daies after yielded it, and departed. The earle of Leicester won the Castle of Spennorth, and laide it flat with the ground, and entering into the land of the earle of Glocester called Glamorgan, meeting with the prince of Wales coming to his aide, they destroyed all with fire and sword.

Castle of Spennorth taken.

Edward the kinges sonne hearing that manie of Carle Simons partakers were come to the Castle of Kenilworth, taking with him the Carle of Glocester, he departed from Worcester, and came upon them at a foade, where hee toke the Carle of Oxford, Sir William Mounchaiffe, Sir Adam Newmarch, Sir Walter de Solenke and other; and Simon the sonne of Carle Simon hardly escaped in the Castle. The earle of Leicester having the king with him, returned out of South Wales, and on Lammass day came to Lemsley a place of the Bishop of Worcester, and there tarried the next day, Edward the kinges sonne returned from Kenilworth to Worcester, whose returne being knowne, Carle Simon departing from Lemsley, by unhappy chance staid in the town of Cuslham, for on the morrow being the 2. of August, Edward the 3. sonne departed from Worcester, passing the river nere to the towne called Cluac, closed by the passage betwixt Carle Simon and Simon his sonne, who was at Kenilworth. In the next morning L. Edward approached nere to Cuslham on the one side, & Gilbert earle of Glocester on the other side, and Roger Mortimer on the two other sides whereby Carle Simon was so enclosed, that he must either fight or yelde: on Friday therefore the first day of August, their armies encountered each other in a large feld without the towne, where the Carles part

Battel of Cuslham.

had the worst: the Carle was killed in the feld, and Henry sonne to earle Simon, Peter de Mountfort, Hugh Spencer Justice of England, William de Mandeville, Ralph Bassett, Walter Creping, William de York, Robert de Tregoz, Thomas de Hothile, John de bello-campo, Guido de Baylolle, Roger de Roulens, with Sir John de Saint John, Sir William de Verence, Sir John de Inde, Sir William Troseil, Sir Gilbert Einefeld, and other of manner fort in great number, especially of Welchmen, for almost none of them escaped thence, but they were slain at Cuslham. Lordes taken at Cuslham, Sir Vmfray de Boune, Sir John Saint John, Sir Simons son, Sir Guy, Sir Baudwyn Wake, Sir John Velly, Sir Henry Hastings, Sir Nicol. Segraue, Sir Perce and Sir Robert, Mounforts sons, and many other, Simon de Mountfort the sonne coming to late to mate his father at Cuslham, turned backe againe to Kenilworth Castle, and the first of September he released the king of Almaine, his mothers brother, Sir Reimond Fitz Pierce, and many other.

Simon de  
Mountfort  
slaine.

Lordes taken.  
L. Eust.  
The body of  
Simon de  
Mountfort and Henry  
his son, Hugh  
Spencer, by li-  
cence of the k.  
were buried in  
the Abbey of  
Cuslham  
at Almaine  
delivered.

Simon Mountfort being slain, his fauourers toke the Castle of Warwike, beat downe the walls, toke William Manduic, and Alice his Countesse, and sent them prisoners to Kenilworth Castle, where they remained till they had paid 1500. markes.

A parliament was holden at Winton. where all the statutes made at Oxford were disannulled, and all the goods of them that were against the king seized. London was in great danger to have bene destroyed by the king, for displeased hee had conceived against the Citizens, but the Citizens wholly submitted both liues and goods unto him. Eight persons carrying the same submission toward Winton, met Sir Roger Leyborn knight at Colbyrke, who turned them backe againe, and after they had discoursed the whole matter with him, he tolled them to deliver to him their submission, and he wolde move the king in it, which thing they did. After five daies this knight returned to the Citie, and said the king had received their writings, willing them first to take away all the chains that were in the streets of the Citie, & put the postes out of the ground that the same were fixed in, and bring both chains and postes to the Tower of London: then the Mayor with fortye Citizens should the next day following attend upon the king at Winton, to confirme their writing, and they should go and come safe: in witness whereof he delivered them in the kings letter and seale, for the space of foure daies. The next day the Citizens being at Winton, attended at the gate untill the king came from hunting, at which time he wolde not once looke on them. After the king was entered, they would have followed, but they were forbidden: shortly after they were called into the Castle, where they were locked vp in a Tower with kindly entertainment: the next daie the king came unto prince Edward the Mayor and foure Aldermen, the rest were committed to severall prisons.

A parliament  
at Winton.

King Henry with Quene Eleanor his wife, Richard king of Almaine, and Oshobone the Legate kept his Christmas at Northampton.

King Henry came to Winton, and there gave unto divers of his household servants about the number of threescore hundred and hundred tokens in the city, so that the owners were compelled to agree & receive their houses and goods.

An. reg. 50.

1266  
Pierre Longton.  
Robert Brune.  
A Gentleman  
unto his house.  
old tenants,  
three citizens,  
houses in London

ozels to auoyde them: then hee made Custos of the Citie, Sir Otho Cornstable of the Tower, who chose Bayliffes to be accountable to him, John Adrian, and Walter Haruy. After this the king toke pledges of the best mens finnes of the citie, the which were put in the Tower of London, and there kept at the costs of their parentes. By great labour and suite made, all the foresaie persons which were in Wyndosor castle, eight onelic except, were deliuered, and the king agreed with the citizens for 20000. marks to be paid, for the leaping of which fine, were taxed as well seruants as householders, and manie refused the liberties of the city to be quit of the charge.

The castle of Dover was yielded to Edward the kings son, into the which hee put Guy de Mountfort to be kept.

The Countesse of Leicester, wife to Simon Mountfort, yielded the castle of Wemsey to king Henry her brother, who forthwith banished her the Realme of England for ever. About Alhalowntide the Quene of England returned from beyond the seas, with her came the Legate, named Othobone, who shortly after his coming, in council holden at Roathamton, accursed all the bishops and priests that had appoynted earle Simon against the king, especially hee cursed by name, Walter of Worcester, Henry of London, and Stephen of Winchester, and the Bishop of Lincolne. Worcester shortly after deceased, the other three went to Rome, and were absolved. The Legate also published the popes Bull, for the tenthes of Churches to be paid to the king for the next pære. Sir Simon the younger fled from Kenilworth castle to the dysherited knights, who then were in the Isle of Orholme, where he remained not long, for through menagers with faile promises, and hostages giuen by Edw. the kings son, hee forsooke them went to London to the king and his nobility, but being priuily knowen of their guile, he made an escape and got ouer into France.

The keeper of Guy Mountfort about Easter being bylded, let him go, and went with him into France: this Guy went into Tuscanie, and serued earle Rufus, in whose warre waring famous, hee obtained to haue his daughter in marriage.

Robert Ferrers Earle of Darbie, Henry Hastings, Baudwyne Wake, John Danuile, and other with their power beeing in the Towne of Getherfeld in Derbyshire, there came against them John earle Waren, Sir Henry of Almain, Sir Waren of Basingborn, and many other knights, who on Wednesday euen met without the towne on hunting, Sir Baudwyne Wake, Sir Henry Hastings, Sir Gregorie Caldwell, Sir John Clinton, Sir Roger Maundcuil, Sir Ric. Caldwell, and to the number of 22. knights al under one speare, al which they chased and put to flight: whereof when Sir John Danuile being in the towne had vnderstanding, hee with a small companie rode out, pierced through the hostes, wounding many and escaped. Earle Waren entering the towne siew in a man, and toke the earle Ferrers, who was sicke of the goutte, and had that date bene letten blood: him they sent to the Towne of London, from whence but lately he had bene deliuered. Henry Hastings and his companie coming to Kenilworth, founde there Sir John de Eynuile and manie other ballaunt knights. Sir William de la Kuooue, and Sir John de la Ware, had well stored

King Henry  
banished his  
Mater.

Rob. of Glocest.

Battel of Gt.  
Berfield.

Kenilworth  
castle besieged.

the Castle of all things necessary. King Henry hastning thither, began his siege the morow after Epiphonmer day, which siege continued till Christmas after, for they told in the Castle, not fearing his force which was great, sette open their gates, and neuer closed them date nor night, come who so woulde they came to their cost, so that manie a man was slaine on both sides, and manie were taken and ransomed. At length the Legate, the Archbyschoppe, and thoo other Byschoppes, came to make accord betwene the king and the dysherited, and also them of the Castle: but the dysherites, nor they of the Castle woulde graunt to the kings will, wherefore the Legate accursed them, and all that were of their accord: but they of the Castle, not regarding the Legate nor his cursing, in mockage thereof, clothed a priest their surgeon, Philippe Porpeis, in a coape of white, and setting him on the castle wall, as a white Legate against the red, made him to accurse the king, the Legate, and all their partakers. Whiles this busines lasted at Kenilworth, the dysherites toke the Isle of Ely, and strengthened it in such wise, that they held it long: they robbed Norfolk, Suffolke, and Cambridgeshire, they spoiled the city of Norwich, and ransomed the rich men at their pleasure. At Bartholmeuwide the 21. held a Parliament at Billingsworth, wherein by his Barons were chosen six persons, which being thwoyne, chose to them other six, these six to make an accord betwene the king and the dysherites: the first 6. were, Walter Gifford bishop of Bath, Nicolas of Ely, bish. of Worcester, and Walter bishop of Exeter, Roger de Sumcrey, Robert Walrood, and Aline de la Souch barons: these 6. chose to them Gilbert earle of Gloucester, Humfrey earle of Hereford, the bishop of S. Davids, Sir John Balliol, Sir Philip Basset, and Sir Waren de Basingborn, if these six could not agree, the Legate, and Henry son to Richard king of Almain should be Iampers, these met and agreed at the last.

By the kings commandement the bishops, Abbots, Byschops, earles, barons, and knights of the realme were assembled at Roathamton on the Tuesday next before Alhalowntide, there to vnderstand and confirme by statute what the forenamed twelve states had decreed for the state of the kingdom, which was for the barons, that none should be dysherited, but the Mountforts and the Ferrers, the other should redeme their lands with money, at the hands of them who had the same in possession of the gift, so that none paid above 7. pæres value, nor vnder 3. pæres value, which was the least, & this shalbe assessed according to the quantity of their trespassse. The siege of Kenilworth yet continuing, they within the castle began to be sore troubled with the sir, and also were without hope of succour to come to them, whereupon on S. Tho. day before Christmas they yielded the castle to the king with condition to depart with life and lims, without losse of goods, or imprisonment, and not to be dysherited.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Wyndosor.

Such of the dysherited persons, as liked not the ordinance of Kenilworth, whose capitaine was John Cuil, after they had taken the city of Lincoln, & spoiled the Jewes, they fled again to the Isle of Ely, whose comming abroade when the king with a grea army had stopped, Edw. the kings son with byzoges made of hurdes & bozds, in place convenient, as the inhabitants thereabout had instructed

The Legate accursed those in Kenilworth castle, and they in the castle accursed him.

The city of Norwich spoiled. Parliament at Billingsworth.

Aug. 21.

Kenilworth castle yielded.

struck him, hee entered upon the Isle, some of them within yielded them to him, the other being dispersed by flight. Whiles these things were a doing a new trouble began, for the earle of Gloucester taking part with the dissenters, came with an army gathered in Wales, unto London, the 7. of April: therein he builded bulwarks, cast ditches and trenches in divers places.

The king gathered an army at Walslop, and the 5. of May, he with an 109. ensignes came towards London, he pitched his tents at Stratford, and tarried there the space of one month, where many entreated to make peace.

The 6. of June the earle of Gloucester, in peaceable maner rendred the Citie unto the king againe, and then many that were dissented were reconciled, at the instance of the Legate and the said earle. Four that bare the cognisance of the earle of Darby were put in sacks and cast in the Thames. Thomas Fitz Theobald and Agnes his wife, sister of Thomas Becker Archb. of Cantuarburie gave to the maister and brethren of the hospitall, called Saint Thomas of Acres beyond the seas, all the land with the appurtenances that sometime was Gilbert Beckers, father to Thomas Becker, in which land the said Thomas Becker was borne, to make there a Church.

About Michaclmas the king came to Shrewsbury, to passe into Wales, there to vanquish the prince of Wales Lewline, who had aided Simon earle of Leicester, but he sending to the k. granted him 32. M. li. sterling to have his peace, and by the Legates meanes there was restored to the prince, the land of foure Cantredes, which by law of armes the king had taken from him.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster. On hobone the Legate calling a counsell at London, ordained many things in reformation of the English Church. In which Counsell, he absolved Simon de Moundfort earle of Leicester, and other which had bene excommunicate by reason of the troubles passed.

Variance fell betwene the fellowship of Goldsmithes and Taylors of London, causing great ruffling in the Citie, and many men to be slaine, for which riot thirtene of the Captaines were hanged.

The king held a Parliament at Parleborow, in the which were made the statutes of Parleborow.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

The river of Thames was so hard frozen, from Saint Andrews tyde, to Candlemas, that men and beasts passed onfoote from Lambeth to Westminster, the merchandize was carried from Sandwich, and other haunces to London by land.

Edmond the kings sonne married Aurlina, the daughter of William de Albemarle Earle of Holdernes, she was heire both to her father and mother, by reason whereof, he was to haue with her the Countie of Denonshire, and the Lordship of the Isle of Wight, but he deceased before both the father and mother, and left all.

A discord was rased betwene Edward the kings sonne, and Gilbert de Clare Earle of Gloucester, because of the overmuch familiaritie, which the said Edward was saide to haue with the wife of the saide Earle. And shortly

after

after, the Earle of Gloucester took one at Cardiffe, that went about to haue poisoned him.

The thirtieth of October, king Henry did translate with great solemnity, the body of king Edward the Confessor, that before late in the Reue of the quire, where the monks did sing at Westminster, into a newe Chappell at the backe of the high Altar, which he had prepared for him of a marvellous workmanship, bestowing on him a new tombe, of thine of golde, on the day of his translation.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. The prior of Walsingham was the kings treasurer, Nicholas Leucanor keeper of his Wardrope, and Roger de Winton was Marshall.

The Nobles of England, by the kings commandment, assembled at London to treat of diuers matters, amongst the which one was, that all men should before the Justices shewe by what right they held their lands, which matter did much molest the people, untill John Warren Earle of Surrey appeared, who being asked by what right he held his lands, he drew suddenly out his sword, and saide, by this I holde my Crads fathers lands, and with this I will keepe them. Upon multiplying of words, the Earle made an assault upon Allen de la Zouch, Lord chiefe Justice of Ireland, before the other Justices of the bench, and cruelly wounded him, whereof he died. And shortly after the same John Earle of Surrey, by the oath of 25. knights at Winchester, affirmed, that he did not commit that fact upon any pretended malice, neither in contempt of the king, and so for the summe of 1200. marks was reconciled.

Edward the kings sonne with his brother Edmond and many other nobles sayling into Asia against the infidels, by his policy and manly aces so demeaned himselfe, that oftentimes he put the Turkes to great dishonour, for despite whereof they suborned a Saracene to wound him with a venemous dart, whereof he was long sicke. Henry son to Richard king of Almaine as he went through Luscane, at Witterbe was slaine by Guy de Mountfort.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

The temple of Boto in Cheape fell downe and slew manye people, men and women, that then were in the Church, or dwelled nere there about.

The 28. of January Richard king of Almaine and Earle of Cornwell, brother to king Henry deceased in the castle of Barkhamsted, and was buried at Bailes an Abby of his foundation. His sonne Edward succeeded in the inheritance of his Carlehome.

Divers bournes suddenly brake out of the holloine places of the sarth, and overflowed a great part of Canterbury citie, the dreame whereof was so swift and violent, that it bare downe buildings and houses, and drowned manye people.

Philip Basset Baron deceased.

In June began a great ryot in the citie of Norwich, through the which the monastirie of the Trinitie was burned, whereupon the king rode downe, and making enquiry for the chiefe doers thereof, caused xxx. of them to be condemned, hanged and beheaded.

King

The earle of Gloucester took the title of London.

Annales of Hyde

Specimen Chappell

Nic. Triet.

Peace with the Prince of Wales.

An. reg. 52.

1268

Riot in London.

Parliament at Parleborow.

An. reg. 53.

1269

Great frost.

An. reg. 54

1270

Annales of Hyde

Edm. Campion.

Tho. Wikes.

1270

Allen de la Zouch slaine.

An. reg. 55.

1271

Wil. Rishanger.

An. reg. 56

Tho. de Wikes.

W. Thorne.

Lib. Kenham.

1272

W. Rishanger.

Riot at Dover.

Wich.

An. reg. 57.  
Lib. Trinitati.

King Henry being sicke, called befoze him Gilbert de Clare, earle of Gloucester, and caused him to be swoyne to keepe the peace of the land, to the behoofe of Edward his son, and then died the fiftenth of November, in the yere 1272. when he had lived 65. yeres, and reigned 56. yeres, and 28. daies, he was buried at Westmynster, which church he had newly builded: he left issue by Elianor his wife, Edward his eldest son, unto whom he had given the earldome of Chester, who succeeded him in the kingdome, Edmund his second sonne, unto whom he had given the earldome of Lancaster, and after the death of Simon Mountfort and Robert Ferrers, the Earldomes of Leicester and Darby; and two daughters, Beatrice and Margaret.

I. Trecklon.

## King Edward surnamed Longshanke.

An. reg. 1.



Edward the first after the conquest, sonne to Henry the thirde, borne at Westmynster, surnamed Longshanke, being aged thirtie three yeres, beganne his reigne the fiftenth day of November, in the yere of our Lorde 1272. being then in the partes beyond the sea towards Jerusalem. Of stature he was tall, and mightie of bodie, nothing grosse: his eyes somewhat blacke, and in time of anger fierce, of such noble and valiant courage, that he never fainted in most dangerous enterprises: of excellent wit and great to wardnesse.

1273

An. reg. 2.

The Pope granted to king Edward, the tenth of all Ecclesiasticall benefices as well temporall as spirituall for one yere, and the like to his brother Edmund for another yere in recompence of their expences made in the Holy land. King Edward with Elianor his Quene kept his Christmas in Gascoigne.

1274

Bishops de  
sealed.

Robert Stichell bishop of Durham deceased when he had late Bishop foure teene yeres, he founded the hospitall of Gylgham. Unto whom succeeded Robert de Insula. Laurence bishop of Rochester deceased: unto whom succeeded Walter Merton, the kings Chancellor, that founded Herton Colledge in Wyford. Also William Byshop of Bath and Wells deceased: unto whom succeeded Robert Burnell. Henry the kings sonne deceased, and was buried at Westmynster. Auelicia wife to Edmund, brother to king Edward, Countesse of Albemarle deceased, and William de Howton Abbot of Croton deceased, who amongst other gifts to that house, gave a Bible in nine tomes faire written, and excellently well glossed by Solomon Archdeacon of Leicester, and paid for it fiftie markes sterling.

The second day of August king Edward came into England from the Holy land, and on the fiftenth of August, he with Elianor his wife were crowned at Westmynster by Robert Kilwarby Archbishop of Canterbury. At this coronation 500. great horses were turned loose, catch them who could.

Alexander king of Scots did homage to king Edward.

The king caused Leoline Prince of Wales to be summoned to his parliament

ment at Westmynster, but he would not come, saying, he remembred the death of his father Griffin.

On St. Nicholas euen were great earthquakes, lightnings & thunder, with a huge dragon, and a blaying starre, which made many men sore afraid.

In a parliament at Westmynster was forbidden to the Jews, & that they might be knowen, & king commanded them to weare a tablet the brydth of a palme vpon their outmost garments. The king also commanded the treasurer and chamberlaine of his Exchequer, to deliuer out of his treasure unto Giles de Andeward 200. markes, towarde the workes of the ditch about the Towre of London, of the fines taken of divers merchants of blunders of London. He also ordained, that Bakers making bread lacking weight, assigned after the price of Coine, should first be punished by losse of their bread: the second time by imprisonment: and thirde by the pillory: millers for stealing of coine, to be chastised by the Tumberell.

Clarity for  
den  
I. Route.

An. reg. 3.

A rich man of France brought into Northumberland a Spanishe Cbe, as bigge as a calfe of two yeres, which Cbe being rotten, infected the countrey, that it spread ouer all the realme. This plague of murrein, continued 28. yeres ere it ended, and was the first rot that euer was in England.

1275  
First rot of  
Sheep.  
Hen. off. Leicester.  
T. Walsingham.

King Edward went towards Chester, which is in the borders of Wales, that thither Leoline prince of Wales might haue more free access vnto him. But bee denying to come to doe his homage, the king gathered an host of men, minding to expell the Prince out of his heritage. Hee builded the Castle of Flint, strengthened the castle of Ruthland, and other, against the Welch men.

I. Route.  
Castle of Flint.

Amicia countesse of Denonshire, and Lable of the Isle, founded the Abbey of Boctland, for Gilbert Clare Earle of Gloucester and Hereford her father, Isabel her mother, and Baldwin Earle of Denonshire.

An. reg. 4.  
Boctland.

John Briton the skillfull Lawyer, who was become Priest and Bishoppe of Hereford, deceased, he compiled a booke of the Lawes called Briton.

The eleventh day of September, there was a generall earthquake, by force whereof, the church of St. Michael of the mount without Glassebury, fell to the ground, and peeces of many famous churches in England fell, by force of the same earthquake.

1276  
Earthquake.

Gregory Rokefley, and the Barons of London, granted, and gave to the archbishop of Canterbury Robert Kilwarby, two lanes or waies next the strate of Baynards castle, & the towre of Mountfichet to be destroyed, in the which place, the said Robert builded the late new church of the Blacke Friers with the rest of the bones that then were left of the saide Towre.

Can. Record.  
Ex charta.  
Baying  
friars church  
founded by  
Baynards ca-  
stle, befoze  
which time  
their church  
was in 290.  
borne.

Edmund Earle of Lancaster the kings brother married the Quene of Portugal.

Elianor the Quene brought forth a daughter named Beringaria.

The statute of Mortmaine was enacted.

Michael Tony was hanged, drawn and quartered for treason.

King Edwards caused the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iustices of the bench to remoue from London to Wykeburie, that he might the better be-  
ing

An. reg. 5.

1277

ing nere to the Welchmen, tame them. He also sent a great army into Wales under the leading of Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln: at which time the king himselfe led an army toward Suffolke and Norfolke, and kept his Court at Norwich, returning from thence to London by the sea coast of Suffolke and Essex, and shortly after Spidsummer carried almost all the foulbours of England into Wales, as farre as Gwent, and toke Anglesey, whither Leoline came to redeeme it. Finally, a peace was made: king Edward builded a Castle at Aberlwyth, and returned into England with great honor, having received Leoline Prince of Wales with a kisse of peace, brought him up to London; where after he had kept his Christmas with the king at Westminster, he departed toward his owne country.

The same yere the king gaue to Roger Mortimer, the lands of Barry, and Kidwily, with the Castle of Dolowoz, the which Castle Leoline had founded.

Toward the charges of these warres, the twentieth part of all mens goods was granted to the king.

Leoline Prince of Wales toke to wisfe the daughter of Simon de Mountford at Worcester.

In the moneth of Aprill, the king, the Quene, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, with their traines, toke their journey toward Glassebury, and there sourned, where the king caused the tombe of Arthure to be opened, whose bones he caused to be removed out of the said tombe, to behold the length and bignes of them, and then returned towards London.

King Edw. held his parliament at Gloucester, in the which parliament were certain statutes made, which unto this day are called the statutes of Gloucester.

Walter Merton Bishop of Rochester deceased, and was buried at Rochester. Reformation was made for clipping of the kings coine, for which offence 267. Jewes were put to execution.

The worthy souldier Rog. Mortimer, at Killingworth, appointed a knightly game, which was called the Round table, of 100. knights, and so many Ladies, to the which, for the exercise of armes, there came many warlike knights from divers kingdomes.

John Peckham a frater Minor bozne in Suffre besides Lewes, after the resignation of Robert Kilwarby, was made Archbishop of Cantuarburie.

Walter Gifford Archbishop of Poike deceased, and was buried at Poike, to whome succeeded William Wickwaine Chancellor of the same Church.

The Jewes at Southampton crucified a chistian boy upon Good Friday, but did not thoroughly kill him, for the which fact manie Jewes at London after Easter were byawne at hoise talles and hanged.

Whereas before this time, the penny was wont to haue a double crosse, with a cress, in such sort, that the same might be easily broken in the middle, or into foure quarters, and so to bee made into halpence, or farthings: which order was taken in the yere of Christ 1106. the 7. of H. the 1. it was now ordained, that pence, halpence and farthings, should be made round, whereupon was made these verses following:

Edward did smite round peny, halfe peny, farthing,  
The crosse passes the bond of all throughout the ring.  
The Kings side was his head, and his name written,  
The crosse side, what citie it was in, coynded and smitten.  
To poore man, ne to priest, the peny frayles nothing,  
Men giue God aye the least, they feast him with a farthing.  
A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeres and mo,  
On this money men wondred, when it first began to go.

The olde money was not forbidden to goe with the newe: and besides these moneys, there was coynded groates, containing foure pence the pence.

The pound of esterling money at this time contained 12. ounces, to witte, fine silver (such as men make into soyle or leaves, and is commonly called silver of Sutherland lane) 11. ounces, 2. esterlings, and one sterling, and the other 17. deniers, to be alay. Also the pound ought to wey of money, 20. s. 3. d. by account, so that no pound ought to be about 20. s. 4. d. nor lesse then 20. s. 2. d. by account. The ounce to wey 20. d. The peny to wey 24. graines, &c.

This yere was inclosed the first great sparth at Plumsted by the Abbot of Trinsle: the other part of the same sparth was inclosed foureteene yeres after in the yere 1293.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Winchester. He caused his fathers sepulture at Westminster to be richly garnished with precious stones of sapar, which he had brought out of France for that purpose.

Nicholas de Ely bishop of Winchester deceased, and was buried at Wamarc, unto whome succeeded John de Ponteflere. Also John Cheshele Bishop of London deceased: unto whom succeeded Richard Grauesend Archdeacon of Southampton: Walter Goade bishop of Excester deceased, unto whom succeeded Peter of Excester a chanon of the same church.

The moztowe after Lammas day, and in the night following was made such an inundation of flowing of waters, that therewith many men, women, and chyldren were dyrowned, besides beasts in the feldes, milles, byddges, houses and trees were ouerthrowne: the hay and grasse was spoyled.

On S. Martins euen a great thunder ouerthrowe many houses and trees in England, to the marualling of many.

The cleargie of England gaue to the king a sixtieth of all their goods for thre yeres.

Edmond Earle of Cornwall founded a new house for students of the order of Cistercians at Oxford, he brought thither monks from Thame, and for the first gift gaue them the mannor of Erdington. Robert Burell Bishop of Bath and Wells the kings Chancellor, dedicated that church, and that day the earle laide the foundation of the new church of South Wney.

King Edward celebrated the feast of Christmas at S. Edmundsbury.

David Lord of Denbigh being reconciled to his brother the Prince Leoline (against whom he had bin a traitor) upon condition he should neuer after serue the king of England, but become his bitter enemy, laide siege to the Castle of Haybarrow and toke therein Sir Roger Clifford (a noble knight) slaying all

Robert Bruce.

Regist. of Bury.

An. reg. 8.

1280

Bishops de-  
ceased.

Water floods.

An. reg. 9.

South Wney.

1281

David of  
Gales re-  
bellieth.

An. reg. 6.

Lib Kenilwar.

1278

Lib Kenilwar.

Arbures bones  
exhumed.

An. reg. 7.  
Parliament at  
Gloucester.

Jewes execu-  
ted.

1279

Round table at  
Killingworth.  
1. double.

Jewes hanged.

First halfe  
pence and far-  
things round.

Pierce Longose.



that resisted, and after spoiling all the Countrey, he with his brother the prince laid siege to the castle of Ruthland. The king hearing this, halted thither with a great army to raise the siege, and in his toying he celebrated the feast of Easter at the Wile in the Diocese of Salisbury, from thence he went to Ambzeshery, there to visite his mother, who remained in that Spousterie. Which being done, he halted after his army into Wales, whose coming being heard of, the Prince retired with his army. But in the meane time Ryce the sonne of Malgon, and Griffyth ap Meridithap Owen, with other noblemen of Southwales, took the castle of Aberiswith, the castle of Flint, of Ruthland, and diuers other, spoiling the kings people that inhabited the rebaboules. Whereupon John Peckham Archbyschop of Canturburie, after hee had visited his whole prouince, considering the great warres betwene the king and Lewline, he traualled for the appeasing thereof, first to the king being at Ruthland, then to the prince being at Snododon: which his whole traualle therein, with the griefe, and causes of those wars, he particularly set downe word by word in the said archbyschops records: all which I receiued at the hands of Doctor Yale, when he was Deane of the Archies, as I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Worcester. From this Christmas till the Purification of our Ladie, there was such a frost and snow, as no man living could remember the like, where through, five arches of London bridge, & all Rochester bridge were born downe, & carried away with the stream, and the like happened to many byldges in England. And not long after men passed ouer the Hamis betwene Westminister and Lambeth, and likewise ouer the riuer of Medway, betwene Stronde and Rochester by-ghod, fishes in ponds, and birds in woods died for want of food.

King Edward did celebrate his feast of Easter in the Abbey of Aberconway in Wales.

Pirates of Zeland and Holland about Harmouth and Donwich, did spoyle and rob whosoever they met, slew many men, and carried away not a few ships with all the goods in them.

The king entred Wales with an army, appointing his footemen to occupie the enemies in fight, whiles his horsemen in a toing set on the rebabell: himselfe with a power kept his place, where he pight his golden Dragon, vnto the which as to a Castell, the wounded and wearie might repaire: but David fleeing, the king with his power followed, and as he passed by a wood, there issued out of the same a foure thousand Welchmen, which inuading the kings army, made great slaughter: but at length the king marching through by strong hand, entred the castle of Ore, and took Anglesey, where hee lost Sir Lucas Thany, Sir William Linsay, William de Awdley, Roger Clifford the younger, and 120 other of his chiefe captains, 17 young gentlemen, and two hundred souldiers.

John Peckham Archbyschop of Canturburie sendeth commandement to the Byschop of London, to destroy all the synagogues of the Iewes within his diocese.

Leoline prince of Wales came downe from the mountaine of Snododon, to Spountgomerie,

King Edward  
went into  
Wales.  
An. reg. 10.

1282  
Bridges boyme  
downe.

I. Everiden,  
Harmouth  
and Donwich  
spoiled.

W. Rishanger.  
W. Packinge.

The Jewes  
synagogues  
destroyed.

T. Wallingham.

Spountgomerie, and was at length taken at Bweth Castell, where being reprochfull words against the Englishmen, Roger le Strange ranne vpon him and cut off his head, leaving his dead bodie on the ground. Sir Roger Mortimer caused the head of Leoline to be set vpon the Towler of London, crowned with Iule. This was the end of Leoline, betrayed by the men of Bweth: and this was the last poynt of the Byptaines blood, that bare Rule and Dominion in Wales.

The noble man Roger Mortimer died at Kingseme.

Eleanor Quene of England was deliuered of a daughter named Elizabeth, at Ruthland, or Hindland.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. He took the whole treasure of the tenthes, which were granted vnto the Pope, to the reliefe of the holy land into his hands, and to his owne vse, which had bene laid vp in diuers places of England, but he caused the lockes of chestes to be broken by wherein the money had bene kept.

After the death of Leoline Prince of Wales, his brother David taking his flight, the rest of the Welchmen, as well nobles as other, yielded themselves vnto the king, and then the king subdued all Wales euen to the sea coasts toward Ireland, and all the castles were yielded vnto him. Then he established there the lawes of England, and did place Iudices of Peace and other Spinifiers. Also he placed the Erchequer for Wales at Chester. In the meane time, David being destitute of helpe, wandering in vncertaine places, at length he returned to his owne confusion: for hee was taken with one of his sons, Packington saith 2. of his sons and 7. daughters, at St. Mores, all which were brought before the king by whose commandement he was committed to the castle of Chester. And afterwards in a parliament at Shrewsbury the said David was concluded of treason, and was iudged to be hanged and quartered, which was done accordingly. Then the king builded two strong castles, the one at Conway, (after he had remoued the Abbey at Aberconway to an other place:) the other castell he builded at Cairnarvon. He gaue diuers castles to Englishmen. He diuided Wales into shires and hundredes: and so the king passed through all Wales, and annexed it to the crowne of England.

King Edward founded the Abbey of Vale Royal in Cheshire for Cistercian Monkes.

King Edward held a parliament at Adon Barnell, wherein were made statutes, named of that place.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. In St. Stephens daie was great thunder and lightnings verie strange. And likewise on Easter day the 9. of April was the like thunders and lightnings, such as men could scarce stand on their feete.

On Saint Marks daie, or the five and twentieth daie of Apill, at Cairnarvon in Wales was bozne the kings sonne named Edward vpon this occasion: King Edward albet hee had brought all Wales vnder his subiection, and a statute made at Ruthland, in the twelfth yere of his Reigne, incorporated and united the same vnto England; yet could he neuer win the goodwills of the common

W. Rishanger.  
Nic. Bromfid.

An. reg. 11.  
Ewline prince  
of Wales slayn.

1283  
The tenthes  
granted to the  
reliefe of the  
holy land, the  
king tooke to his  
owne vse.

Wales subdu-  
ed.

Wales diuided  
into shires and  
hundredes.

An. reg. 12.

Parliament at  
Adon Barnell.

1284  
Tempests.

Edward the  
first bozne at  
Cairnarvon.



common people of the country to accept him for their prince, unless he would remaine himselfe in that country among them, neither could he bying them to pay obedience to any Prince, except he were of their own nation. For the Welchmen hauing experience of the government of the English officers, and knowing that the king would rule the countrey by his deputies, could not abide to haue any Englishman to be their ruler: wherefore oftentimes, vpon the kings motion they answered, that they were contented to take for their Prince any man, whom he would name, so that he were a Welchman, and other answer could be neuer get of them by any meanes. Whereupon, hauing secretly sent for the Q. being then great with childe, caused her to remaine at Carnarvon: and when she was nigh her time of deliuerance, the king being at Rotherhithe, sent for all the Barons and best men of Wales, to come to him to consult concerning the weale publike of their countrey; and when they were come, he deferred the consultation, untill hee were certified that the Quene were deliuered of a sonne: Then sending certaine Lordes to the christening, hee called the Welchmen together, declaring vnto them, that whereas they were oftentimes suiters vnto him to appoint them a Prince; he now hauing occasion to depart out of the countrey would name them a prince, if they would allow and obey him whom he should name. To the which they answered, that they would so do, if he would appoint one of their nation. Whereunto the king replied, that he would name one that was borne in Wales, and could speake neuer a word of English, whose life and conseruation no man was able to defect. And when they all had granted, that such a one they would obey, he named his owne son Edward borne in Carnarvon Castle a fewe daies before. Then the king hauing the countrey at his will, gaue Lordships and townes in the middest of Wales vnto English Lords, as the Lordship of Denbigh to Henry Lacy Earle of Lincoln: the Lordship of Ruthen to the Lord Reginald Grey, second sonne to John Grey of Wilton, &c.

An. reg. 13.

1285  
Westminster  
church finished.

Scutage paid.

Parliament  
at Westminster.An. reg. 14.  
1286  
Lib. Kewham.

Laurence Ducker Goldsmith of London was murdered in Botwe Church of Cheape, for the which fact, 28 men were hanged, and one woman burned.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster.

And this yere was finished the newe worke of the church of Westminster, vnto the ende of the quier: by which reason it appeareth to haue bene redifieding aboue the space of fiftie fire yeres since the third yere of king Henry the third.

King Edward toke scutage forty shillings vpon euery knights fee, toward his charges in his voyage against the Welch.

About the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist began a parliament at Westminster, wherein were made the statutes called Additamenta Gloucest.

William Wicwaine archbischoppe of Dore deceased, vnto whome succeeded John Romayne presbiter of Lincoln.

King Edward, with Elianor his Quene, kept his Christmas at Oxford, where he remained fiftene daies, hee caused Alfred Spaloz of the Citie, and foure other to be hanged, and John Picot to bee imprisoned, for the death of Walter Lechfelde.

After

After the Purification of our Lady, king Edward held a great parliament at Westminster.

King Edward entred the sea at Dover toward Gascoigne on the 13. of May, passed ouer into France, came to Andens with an honorable company, where the king of France Philip le Bewe, for honors sake met him: and after he Edward did to him homage at Paris, and was present at the parliament.

Hugh Bassam bish. of Ely deceased in his manor of Dobonham, vnto whom succeeded Iohn Kyrkby the kings Treasurer, and deane of Winbozne, Walter Bischoppe of Salisbury deceased, and Henry Brancelstone Deane of the same church succeeded.

William Warren son and heire of Iohn Warren earle of Surrey, in a turnement at Croyden, was by the Challenger intercepted, and cruelly slaine.

King Edward of England kept his Christmas in the Ile of Oiron in Gascoigne.

On Newyeres daie at night, as well through the vehemency of the wind, as violence of the sea, the monastirie of Spalding, and many churches were overthrowen & destroyed, not onely at Parnmouth, Donwich, and Ipswich, but also in diuers other places of England, adioyning to the sea especially in the parts called Holland in Lincolnshyre, all the whole countrey was for the most part turned into a standing pole, so that an intolerable multitude of men, women, and children were overthrowen with the water, especially the towne of Boston or Buttolphs towne, a great part thereof was destroyed by reason of wyndes done by Payne Tiptot, Rice ap Merdith rebelled in Wales, and did much hurt, against whome came Edmund the kings brother: and at the siege of Burdian Castle undermining of the walles, with the ruines were slaine William Mountcheney, Gerard de Insula, bannerets, Humfrey Haskings bachelor, and diuers other.

On the 2. day of May, all the Jewes in England were apprehended, by precept from the king bring them at Burdeur, for what cause, it was not known, but they redeemed themselves for 12000. poundes of siluer. And at that time the Jewes had a synagogue at Canturbury.

A Iustis was proclaimed to be holden at Buttolphs towne or Boston, in the faire time wherof one part of the Iustices came as Challengers in the habit of Monkies, the other as defendants in the habite of Chanons, both these sortes of Iustices had countraunted, after the Iustices to spoyle the faire: for at cleaving wherof, they fiered the towne in thre severall places, on the maypole after Saint James day, that they might more freely spoyle and sacke the residue, and whilist the merchants were busie to save their goods, & to quench the fire, they were slaine downe by the said Iustices, and their partakers, by this fiering the blacke friers church was bzent, and almost the whole towne, so that, as it was said, dreames of gold, siluer, and other mettals molten, ran into the sea, as it was moreover said, that all the money in ready coine within England would vntogether recompence the losse then sustained. The captain of which mischief was Robert Chamberlaine Esquier, who was afterward hanged, but would neuer confesse his fellows.

¶ 4.

On

Parliament at Westminster.

An. reg. 15.

1287

Great inundations of water floods.

Jewes apprehended.  
W. Thorne.

Jesters at Boston, and that towne burned.

An. reg. 16.

On a day as the king and quene sat together in a chamber, a thunderclap entring by the window passed betwixt them both, and slew two of their household servants, which stode in their presence.

1288

An. reg. 17.  
A het comen, &  
eþage graine.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Burdeur in Gascoigne.

The summer was so exceeding hote this yere, that many men died through heate, and yet wheate was solde at London for three shillings four pence the quarter when it was dearest, and in other partes abroad the same was solde for twentye pence, or thirtene pence the quarter, yea for twelve pence the quarter, and in the west and north parts for eight pence the quarter, barly for six pence, and otes for foure pence the quarter, and such cheapenesse of beanes and pease, as the like had not bene heard.

1289

King and Qu.  
returned out of  
Gascoigne after  
three yeres  
and more.

King Edward of England kept his Christmas at Belegard in the land of Hierne.

The king and Quene after thre yeres, two moneths, and oddes daies, being beyond the seas in Gascoigne arrived at Dover on the first of August, and remaining a while in Kent, he with his traine lay at Saint Augustines, from whence he passed over into Essex, and on Saint Lamberts day came to Saint Edmundsbury in Suffolke: from thence hee went into Norfolk, and from thence sailed by the Isle of Ely to London, where he was honorably received.

T. de Weyland  
Justice, comen-  
ced and com-  
mitted to the  
Tower.

Thomas de Weyland the kinges chiefe Justice, being in the kinges lower bench indicted, & by inquisition concluded, upon the discovery of certaine of his servants which had slaine a certaine person before, and fearing to yield himselfe to the kings merite, went to the friar Pinors at Babwell nere unto S. Edmundsbury, where the king so commanding, for certaine daies hee was diligently kept by men of that country, he toke on him the habite of a grey friar, whereupon the king caused him to be better looked unto, so that at length, after two moneths siege, when all the friers almost were first dispersed into sundry places, he forsaiking his friers cole, went out, and was taken and sent to the Tower.

An. reg. 18.

Great haille fell in England, and after ensued great raine, that the yere following, wheate was raised from thre pence the bushell, to thirtene pence, and so increased pærely, till it was lastly sold for twenty shillings the quarter.

Cry of Carlisle  
burned.

The citie of Carlisle, the Abbey, with all the houses belonging to the friers minors was consumed with fire.

William de Brassa called the Senor, deceased at London, and was buried in the monastery of Sele.

1290  
Justices ya-  
nished.  
Adam Meri,  
Chron. Dun.  
Rad. Balduke.  
Sta. Cro.  
J. Reule.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster with great solemnity. King Edward held a parliament at Westminster, wherein the transgressions of divers Justices were tried out, and punished accordingly: some lost their goods, and then were banished: some, as wel of the bench, as of the assises, were sent to the Tower, which with great summes of money obtained liberty. Sir Thomas Weyland had all his goods, both moveable and immoveable confiscated and was banished, Sir Ralph Hengham, chiefe Justice of the higher bench, offered seven thousand markes, Sir John Louet Justice of the lower bench three thousand markes, Sir William Bromton Justice, five thousand markes.

Of their clearkes for their redemption: of Robert Littleburie 2000. markes: of Roger Leicester 1000. markes: of Sir Salomon Rochester, chiefe Justice of Assises 4000. markes: of Sir Richard Boyland 4000. markes: of Sir Thomas Soudentone 2000. markes: of Sir Walter de Hopton 2000. markes: of Robert Preston 1000. markes: of Sir William Saham Justice 3000. markes: of a certaine cleark of the court called Adam de Stratton 32000. markes of olde money and new, beside ietwels without number, and pretious vessels of siluer, which were found in his house, and a kings crowne, which men said was King Johns. Whereupon, the king constrained the Justices to sweare, that from thenceforth they should take no pension, fee, or giste of any man, except onely a breakfast, or such like present.

Hee banished all the Jewes out of England, giving them to beare their charges, till they were out of his realme, the number of Jewes then expelled, was 1560. persons, whose houses being sold, the king made a mighty wadd of money.

The Scotkes by their Charter delivered to king Edward the kingdome of Scotland, with the castles, rights and customes the fourth day of June, that upon due discussing the matter, it might bee knowne who was lawfull heire therunto.

The cleargie granted to the king, a tenth of all their goods for one yere: the king also toke a fifteenth of the temporalitie throughout England.

The last day of April Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester & Hereford, toke to wife, Joane of Acres daughter to King Edward, at Westminster.

The same yere John duke of Brabant toke to wife Margaret daughter to King Edward of England.

King Edward toke his journey toward Scotland, there to decide of the right heire of Scotland, as superiour Lord of that land. But as hee approached to the confines of Scotland, the Quene his wife, being taken with a grievous sickness, departed this life at Herdby a towne nere unto Lincoln, on the eight and twentieth of November, whereupon he returned to conuoy the corps toward London, which he did with great sorrow, for he bewailed the losse of her all the daies of his life: she was in her life time a vertuous Lady, modest, pitifull, a lover of the English nation, & as it were a pillar of defence to the whole realme: her bowels were buried at Lincoln, and a tombe erected there, with hermes of Castile thereupon, in our Lady chappell: her body was brought to Westminster, and there buried on the seventeenth day of December. In curie towne and place in which the bodie of the Q. was staid in the bringing up to London.

At Westminster, the king caused a stately Crosse to be created, every one of them being garnished with the Image of the same Q. also with his armes and hers. The crosses erected were at Charing by Westminster, in Westchape of London, at Waltham in Essex, at Saint Albons in Hertfordshire, at Dunstable, at Long Stratford, and Southampton, without the towne South, at Woborne, Grantham, &c. Whereupon King Edward gave unto Walter Abbot of Westminster, and to his successors, the manors of Insoil, and Grafton, in the Hamlets, Culpath, Buley, Bulwerly, Wylchlakefield, Bonnelwaldey, or Downe.

All Jewes ban-  
ished out of  
England.

Record.

Quene Eliza-  
beth deceased.

An. reg. 19.

Charing crosse  
and oþre  
bustles.  
T. Clifford.

Downton, Walslop, Ruteburh, Longdon, and Dodington: all which were appointed for the keeping of p[er]petual obites for the saide Quene, and for mony to be given to the poore that shoulde come.

1291 In Edward kept his Christmas at Ashpurg an Hermitage in Buckinghamshire, founded by Edmund Beauford earle of Cornwell.

After the feast of Easter king Edward going into Scotland, when he came to Poike, hee tarried there a while, and then Rice ap Meridith before taken in Wales and brought thither, was by iudgement condemned, to dye through the citle to the gallows, and there ended his life. On the 21. of May was borne Gilbert de Clare, after earle of Gloucester and Hereford, at Ebekelesberie. The same yere deceased Elianor the kings mother, and was buried at Ambesburie, where she was baied.

After this, the king going into Scotland appointed all those that claymed anie right to the Realme of Scotland, that in the feast of S. Iohn Baptill next ensuing, they shoulde appeare before him, to declare plainly by what right they claimed the kingdome.

1292 King Edward at Westminster kept his Christmas, but Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester with the Countesse his wife, Ioan of Acres the king daughter, kept their Christmas at Clare in Suffolke.

The Pope granted unto the king of Englande, a tenth of all ecclesiasticall goods of Religious persons, onely Hospitallers and Templars excepted, for 6. yeres, towards the recovery of Jerusalem: wherupon a newe taxation was made, through England, Scotland, Ireland and Wales.

Isabell de Douer, Countesse of Arfle, deceased at Chilham in Kent, and was buried in Christs Church in Canterburie.

Roger Bacon a Franciscane, or Friar Minor, a learned man of Oxford deceased, and was buried in the grey friers Church at Oxford. He compiled and wrote more then fourescore booke, as Bale testifieth.

After the feast of Saint Iohn the Baptist, king Edward comming into Scotland, and receiving the allegiance of them which chalenged the Realme of Scotland, deserting his final sentence unto the feast of Saint Michael next ensuing. The assenters of Elicus king of Norway, made their request other wise then in their petition was declared, which was read before them, and daie was given till Wednesday next after the feast of Saint Martine: but in the ende, to wit, on the eighteenth daie of November, king Edward sate in his Tribunal seate at Berwick, and having heard the Assertions of the Comptons of the Crowne of Scotlande, hee adiudged Iohn Bailliol to bee true heire of Scotland, and therefore to enioy the same whole kingdome, with the appurtenances, and assigned him to do him homage, which was performed at Forham the 20. day of November.

1293 King Edward kept his Christmas at Newcastle upon Tyne, whither came to him the king of Scots. On S. Stephens daie the said king of Scots, Iohn Bailliol by name, did homage to king Edward.

Iohn Peckham Archbishoppe of Canterburie, deceased on the eight daie of Januarie, and was buried at Canterburie, when hee had sate Archbishoppe

bishoppe thirteene yeres, foure and twentie weekes, and two daies: he was a verie diligente preacher, and carelesse of worldly favour: hee founded a Colledge at Wingham in Kent, foure myles and a halfe from Canterburie.

The 9. of July a great part of the town of Granthbidge, with S. Maries church was consumed with fire.

The Carmelites or white Friers, that had first planted themselves at Okeston, then at Belwenham, this yere came to Cambridge, and builded then a new Church in the parish of Saint Iohn in Milnestrate, and then a Friar of that house named Humfrey obtained licence of W. de Luda bishop of Ely, there to begin a reading of divinity, and so he read solemnely in his scholes of that house.

At the same time also the Chansons of the order of Sempelingham, were diligent in lectures and disputations: these had their being at Saint Edmundes Chappell, manie houses were destroyed in the Towne of Cambridge for the setting up of the Colleges, and of the Augustines.

Also about the same time, a certaine order of friars called de penitencia Iesu Christi, beganne to builde them a Church, and other offices over against Saint Edmundes Chappell, these brethren de sacco gathered together manie good schollers, and multiplied exceedingly, untill the councell at Lions, in the which it was decreed, that from that time forth, there shoulde no more orders of friars beggars be admitted, but the preachers, Monks, Carmelites, and Augustines, and so from that time the begging friars decreased, and grew to nothing, save them afore named.

And this yere king Edward late two daies and two nights in the castle of Cambridge, as before that time neuer any king had don, that could be remembered. The king had then a great stable of horse at Barnewell, Adam de Riston being master there.

Edmund earle of Leicester & Lancaster brother to king Edward, founded an house of nuns of the order of S. Clare, called the Minories in the parish of S. Burtolphs without Aldgate of London.

The 20. of September William earle of Barre toke to wife Elianor the kings daughter of England at Bissol.

King Edward laid hardlie to the charge of the Archbishop of Poike, so that he had excommunicated Anthony Beke bishop of Durham, being then in the kings service, and one of his counsell, the archbishop put himselfe to the kings grace, and was pardoned for 4000. marks.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Canterburie.

Theremen had their right hands cut off in Westcheape for rescuing of a prisoner, arrested by an officer of the cite of London.

King Edward sent Anthony Beke Bishop of Durham, to move Radulph the emperor to ioin with him in league. He also commanded an army to be made ready at Portsmouth, from thence to passe into Gascoigne, appointing his nephew Iohn de Brytaine earle of Richmond to be chiefe taine over the same, joining to him Iohn de S. Iohn, and Robert Tiptot pyrent knights. Afterwar to the

Granthbidge burned.

Dulstie Lectures in Cambridge.

Friars of the sacke.

Councell at Lions, wher was it quere.

King Edward sate in the castle of Cambridge.

Lib. Keinham.

An. reg. 22.

1294

An. reg. 21.  
John Bailliol  
did homage to  
Scotland.  
Records.

the keeping of the sea, he set forth 3. seuerall fleets, appointing the Admirals to them of Dartmouth and those parts, John de Botecart: to them of Poxtesmouth, William de Leborne: to the Westermen and of Ireland, an Irish knight.

There was granted to the king for an aid in these wars, the one halfe of all the goods of the cleargie, a fift part of the Citizens, and a tenth of the Commons goods: the Abbot of Saint Augulines at Canterburie was charged and paid 566. pounds 7. shillings, and 10. pence, and also was charged with 6. horses and all their furniture, towarbes the keeping of the sea coasts. There was in all leased of the cleargie at that time, to the sum of thre score hundred thousand pounds, according to the account, and as it was valued in Salcoigne, to wit, 8. s. silver to the pound.

The kings army passing from Poxtesmouth, arrived at S. Mathews in Britaine, they entered the mouth of the river Giron towards Burdeaur, they took two goodly walled towncs, Burgo and Blespa, and passing before Burdeaur, they came to Lions, where the towne being delivered to them, they bring their horses to land.

In the meane space the Welshmen making them Captaines, Madoc, and Malgon, they burnt the castell of Carnarvon, slaying a great number of Englishmen. King Edward entering Wales, called backe his brother Edmund earle of Leicester, and Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln into Wales, who were ready to have passed into Gascoigne. The Welshmen with great strength came against them, and expelled the earles.

King Edward took into his hands all the Pzies aliens throughout England, with all their laites and goods any waie arising, committing the same to officers under him, allowing to every monke eightene pence the weeke, and all the querplus of their revenues was appointed towarde the charges of the kings warres, reserving also to his treasury, the pensions or annuities due to the principall houses. Also in the same parliament, he obtained againe of the cleargie and religious persons a loane of money, to the value of halfe the goods and lands, according to the former exaction of the tenths, which loane amounted to 100000. poundes, whereof the Abbot of Wury paid 655. poundes cleunt pence farthing.

King Edward in his expedition into Wales kept his Christmas at Aberconway. The 19. of January, together with the night and day following, by the rage of winde with vehement showers and stormes, such as the like had not bene seene in one hundred yeres before, all the winter seedes were consumed, as well in Yolland as in Scotland. At which time the water of Thames overflooded the banks, and a great bycatch was made at Radnorsh besides London, and all the grounds about Bermondsey, Lambeth, & Bathil was overflooded.

The last of February there sodainlie arose such a fire in the castle of Windesore, that many officers of the same house were the wayth consumed, and many goodly images made to beautifie the building, were defaced and destroyed.

The king passing the water of Conoway, and so forth into Wales with an army against the Welshmen, builded the castell of Brunmarth, in the Ile of Anglesey. The Welshmen were consumed by famine, their woods were felled,

felled, and many castles fortified, their captain was taken and brought to London, and so for that time the wars ceased.

The Frenchmen arrived at Dover, spoiled the towne, and burnt a great part thereof, amongst other they slew Thomas of Dover, a monke of great holines.

The king caused all the monasteries in England to be searched, and the money in them to be brought up to London. He also seized into his hands all their laie fees, because they refused to paie to him such a far as he demanded. Moreover, he caused the wool and leather to be staied in Englande, and there followed great dearth of corne and wine.

There rose a great discord at Arford, betwene the clearks and lay men, and all because of two barlets of divers countries, which fell out about a small matter, for upon that occasion, some took one part, and some another, and so all were divided into parties, in somuch, that learned and letw by stocke meale ran to the fight, and when the schoolers or clearkes were gone out of their hostles, the laity perceiving either none, or else verie few to be remaining at home, entered the clearks lodgings, and carried away a great deale and many kinds of stuffe, to the great and irrecoverable damage of the schoolers. In this skirmish was slaine Sir Fulke of Beppymouth, parson of Wyckedhorne, and manie other on either side. The king hearing thereof, sent Justiciars to restore the peace, and to condemne the murderers, which when they came, forced the Townesmen to pay the schoolers 200. poundes for damages don unto them.

Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester and herefore deceased at Monmouth, and was buried at Tewkesbury amongst his progenitors, on S. Thomas date the Apostle.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at S. Albons.

About the conversion of S. Paul, Edmund the kings brother earle of Lancaster, with Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, the earle of Warwiche, Robert Fitz Walter, and a mighty army taking shipping at Wlmmouth in Cornwall with 360 ships sailed over into Gascoigne. Edmund the kings brother died there, and was brought over and buried at Westminster. After whose death the English army constrained through lacke of victuals, departed, and brake up by siege.

John furnamed Romaine Archbishop of Pzpie deceased, to whome succeeded Henry de Newark, Deane of that Church.

John Bailliol king of Scots, contrary to his allegiance rebelled, wherefore King Edward halted him thither, and won the castles of Berwicke, and Dunbar: he slew of the Scots 25000. He conquered Edenborough, where he found the regall ensignes of Scotland, as crowne, scepter and cloth of estate, &c. In his returne he called a parliament at Berwicke, where he received the fealties of all the great men of Scotland, and their homages.

William de Valence earle of Denbroke was slaine by the French at Baton. This yere was a grete famine in England, chieflie a default of wine, that the same could scarcely be had to minister the communion with in the church.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Ipswich.

Simon a monke of Walsden, being notable learned, began to teach the canon law in the Universitie of Cambridge.

W. Packin.  
Monasteries  
searched.  
W. Shepheard.

Discord be-  
tweene the clerks  
and townes  
men at Arford.

An. reg. 24.

1296

W. Packington.  
T. Wallingham.

King Edward  
won Berwicke.  
Regallies of  
Scotland.

An. reg. 25.

Lacke of wine  
in England.

1297  
Canon law  
taught in  
Cambridge.

King

A great taxati-  
on.

A power sent  
into Gascoigne.

King Edward  
entered Wales.

An. reg. 23.  
Lib. Kenilham.  
Pzious all  
was taken to  
the kings use.

Great Taxe.

1295

Bycatch at Ra-  
darsh.

Castle of  
Edenborough  
burned.

Castle of Bru-  
marth.  
John Kouke.  
Chron. Dun.

King Edward offered to S. Edward at Westminster, the chaire, Scepter and crowne of gold of the Scottis king.

The king increased the tribute of the wolles, talking for euerie Sacke 40. shillings, where before that time they payd but halfe a marke.

An. reg. 26.

The Scots by the instigation of William Wallace rebelled, and put the Englishmen to much trouble, and losse of manie men. In the feast of S. Bartholomew king Edward tooke the sea at Wynchelsea towardes Flanders, and landed at Swyn, he went to rescue Guy their earle, which was greivously ouerlet by the french king, so that he had won much of his lands, but shortly after a peace was concluded for two yeres.

1298

King Edward kept his Christmas at Gaunt in Flanders, and returning into England arrived at Sandwith on the xii. of March.

Kings palace at Westminster after burnt.

The 29. of March, a vehement fire being kindled in the lesser hall of the kings palace at Westminster, the flame thereof being blowne with the wind, fiered the monasterie adjoining, which with the palace were both consumed.

Parliament at Poike.

The king preparing to represse the rebellion of the Scots, removed the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iudices of the bench unto Poike, calling a parliament thither, he appointed his Subiects to be readie with horse and armour at Hokeborow on Epiphany daie.

Nic. Triver, T. Walsingham, Sea. Cro. Battell at Faulkirk in Scotland.

King Edward wanne the battell of Faulkirk in Scotland, upon Saint Mary Magdalens daie, in which battell was slaine more then twentie thousande Scots, and William Wallace their captaine fled. Anthony Beke, Bishop of Durham had at this battell such a retinue, that in his companie were two and thirtie Banners. The towne of S. Andrewes was destroyed, no man there resisting.

Cron. Dur.

The citizens of London hearing of the great victorie obtained by the king of England against the Scottes, made great and solempne triumph in their citie euerie one according to their craft, especiallie the Fishmongers, which with solempne procession passed through the citie, hauing amongst other Pageantes and Games, foure Surgeons gibbed, carried on foure horses: then foure Salmons of siluer on foure horses: and after fire and fourtie knights armed, riding on horses, made like Lucies of the Sea: and then Saint Magnus with a thousand horsemen: this they did on Saint Magnus daie, in honour of the kinges great victorie, and safe returne.

An. reg. 27.

This yere the king paid to the merchants of Gascoigne 150000. poundes sterling, for his brothers rypences there.

This yere deceased William Beauchampe earle of Warwick, and William de Luda bishop of Ely, unto whome succeeded Ranulph Walpole.

1299

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Cadingham nere unto Werley, after which time hee removed towardes the South partes of his kingdom.

Humfrey de Bounce earle of Hereford deceased, and was buried at Wyndesore. Also John Gifford deceased.

Parliament at Stepenbrich.

In the beginning of Lent king Edward held a parliament at Stepenbrich by London, in the house of Henry Wallace, then Mayor of London, where being

being required by the earles and barons, that he would confirme the charter of liberties, according to that he had promised in Scotland, after certaine delays, he agreed to their instance, with this addition: The right of our Crowne saved; which words of addition the earles liked not, and therefore departed. But being sent for againe, about the Quindene of Easter, all things were granted to them at their desire. Whereupon the perambulation of foreests through England was committed vnto 3. bishops, 3. earles, and 4. barons, that they might see the execution of iustice done.

This yere was made an act of common counsell for prices of victualles to be sold at London, by consent of the king and nobilitie, concerning the price of poultrie. A fatte Cocke for thre halfe pence, two pullets for thre halfe pence, a fatte Capon for two pence halfe pence, a Goose foure pence, a Mallard thre halfe pence, a Partridge for thre halfe pence, a Fesant foure pence, a Heron fire pence, a Blouer one pennie, a Swanne for thre shillings, a Crane for twelue pence, two Woodcockes for thre halfe pence, a fat Lambe from Christmasse to Shrove tye sixtene pence, and all the whole yere after for foure pence.

A sodaine fire inclosed the monasterie of Gloucester; the cloister, bellrey, the great chamber, with other buildings was consumed.

For the establisment of the peace betwene England and France, on the 10. of September, king Edw. tooke to wife Margarete, sister to Philip le Bewe then king of France: they were married at Canterburie, and the feast was kept there in the great hall of the bishops palace. The king imprisoned his son Edward, because that Walter Langton Bishop of Chester had complained, that the foresaid Edward through counsell of Pierce of Caucstone, a squier of Gascoigne, had broken his parks, and that Edward was led and governed by the foresaid Pierce, therefore the king did erile the said Pierce for euermore.

Henry Newarke Archbyschop of Poike deceased, and was buried at Poike, Thomas Corbridge succeeded him in the Archbyschopricke.

An. reg. 28.

Oliuer Sutton bishop of Lincoln also deceased, unto whome succeeded John de Adarley chancelor of the same church.

King Edward commaunded that all the manacles and chaines of yron that might be found within the whole Realme, to an inestimable multitude, should bee brought into the Tower of London, the cause whereof was bitterlie knowne to his Subiects.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Werwicke, and the Quene at Wynchelsea, within the solempnitie of which feast, to wit, upon Saint Stephens day, king Edward forbade diuers false moneyes, as Crohardes, Dollardes, Rosaries, and others, coined in partes beyond the seas, and bittered here for sterlinges, so money that manie thereby were deceived. These moneyes the king at the first commaunded to be currant for halfe pence, which was but halfe the value they were coined for: but on Easter euen next following, the same moneyes were forbidden throughout all England, and after called in, and new sterling money coined vnto the kings great aduantage. This sterling money was so called of the Gaslinges that were the first coiners of siluer of that finenesse in England.

King

A great part  
of Scotland  
subdued by  
king Edward.

Citizens of  
London rising  
to meet the  
Queen.

An. reg. 29.

1301

Li. Dunmow.

Edward  
went into  
Scotland.

An. reg. 30.

1302

Parliament  
at London.

Tournaments  
forbidden.

An. reg. 31.

1303

Tho. de la More.

King Edward made his voyage against the Scottes, wherein he subdued a great part of the land, took the castle of Greuelin, with other, and made the Lords swear to him fealty and homage. In the meane while, the Quene on the first of July was delivered of a son at Brotherton in Yorkshire, not farre from Pontefract, and therefore was he named Thomas of Brotherton. Afterward the Quene was conveyed to London, against whome, the Citizens to the number of 600 rode in one huerie of redde and white, with the cognisance of their mysteries brodered upon their harnes, and received her foure miles without the Citie, and so conveyed her to Westminster.

The first of October, Edmond Earle of Cornwall deceased without issue, by meane whereof his earldome fell to the kings handes. The king gave the principallitie of Wales and the earldome of Chester to his eldest sonne Edward.

King Edward kept his Christmas with his Quene Margaret at Southampton, and after held his Parliament at Stamford, (some say at Lincoln) to the which the Barons came with horse and armour, for the purpose as was reported, that they might get of him by force the execution of the Charter of the forest.

A Tournament at Dunstable, *ad carnisprinium*.

In the feast of Pentecost, the truce ended that had bin taken with the Scots, whereupon, about the feast of S. John Baptist, the king of England went with a great army into Scotland, where he spent the ende of Sommer, and also the Winter following, and left many houses there for want of forrage.

The church of Anthony was burnt.

The Quene Margaret was this yere delivered of her second sonne, named Edmond at Woodstocke, the 5. day of August.

The 5. of October was borne Thomas the sonne of Raulphe de Mounthermer Earle of Gloucester, and Isabe of Acres the kings daughter.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lintheke in Scotland with a puissant armie, but afterward through the earnest suit of Philip king of France, whose sister he had lately married, he granted a truce with the Scots, till the feast of all Saints, and then he returned to London, and about Whidont, called a parliament, wherein he demanded a sixtiew, and also fourtie shillings of euerie knights fee.

Elizabeth the kings daughter of England, Countesse of Holland, and Zealand, was toynd in marriage to Humfrey de Bohun, earle of Hereford, and Essex, son and heire to Humfrey Bohun late deceased.

Turneies, Jousts, barriers, and other warlike exercises, which young Lordes and Gentlemen had appointed for their pastimes in diuers parts of the realm, were forbidden by the kings proclamations.

After the feast of all Saints, when the truce began to faile with the Scots, B. Edward sent John Segraue knight with an army into Scotland, committing to him the custody of that land as Warden there.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster.

The Scottes rebelling against king Edward, made William Wales first leader

leader, wherefore the king having his armie ready, passed by the Castle of Strimelne, over the whole land, none offering them battell, but fleeing before the sword.

Ex Record.

Richard Grauesend Bishoppe of London deceased, who is reported by some to have purchased the charters and liberties for the Citie of London, in the yere of our Lorde 1392. in the sixteenth yere of king Richard the seconde. The truth thereof I have thought good thus much in this place to note. Ralf Bal-docke deane of Pauls succeeded him in the Bishoppicke.

An. reg. 32.  
Adam Met.  
Grauesend Bi-  
shop of London.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Dunfermelin in Scotland, with the English nobilitie, and when winter was past, he went and besieged the Castle of Strimelne, which William Clifford kept the space of 90. daies with sunnyp valiant assaults but being able no longer to resist, they put off their shoes, with balters about their necks came forth of the castle and fel prostrate before the king, committing both liues and lims to his mercy, whome the king pardoned of life, but sent them prisoners into England.

1304

Tho. de la More.

The king returning out of Scotland by the Citie of Poike, commanded the Courtes of the kings bench and the Exchequer, which had nowe remayned at Poike 7. yeres, to be removed to their old places at London.

Courtes of the  
Bench and Ex-  
chequer at  
Poike.

John de Waren earle of Surrey and Suffre deceased, after whose succeded his sonne also, named John, who took to wife the kings niece, by his daughter Elianor, whome the earle of Barre had married. Also Thomas Corbridge Arch-bishop of Poike deceased at Anham, a singular Minne, hee was buried at Southwell, to him succedded William Greenfield a chanon of Poike, and chancellour to the king, an eloquent man and wise in counsell.

B. Edward taking a tallage of all cities, borowes, and townes, the toburne of Bristow gave him 400. pound for a fine, out of their treasure.

An. reg. 33.  
Lib. Kenilham.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lincoln with the Quene his wife, and there he ordained Justices of Traslabacon against intruders into other mens lands, trucebreakers, extortioners, murderers, and such like offenders, by which meanes the treasure was marvellously increased. Roger Brabazon and Robert de Ruersate at the Guild hall in London to heare the complaints made concerning the foresaid articles of Traslabacon.

1305  
Diet at the Masse  
Adam Met.

The Citizens of Poike made petition unto the king, that like as it had pleased him heretofore, to graunte them his helpe and licence certayne yeres, for the walling about of their Towne, which Tuarne was nowe expired, to grant them a longer time, the same being not yet finished: whereupon the yeres were graunted by him and his Parliament at Westminster.

Southwich  
walled.  
Parliament Record.

John Leyland writeth that a merchant of Southwich (whome he nameth not) builded a great part, almost halfe of that Wall.

John Leyland.

Robert Fitz Walker requested the king that the Friers of the Sacche (commonlie called De penitencia Iesu) in London, might assigne to the sayde Robert one Chappell of olde time called the Synagogue of the Jewes, nere adjoining to the place of the same Robert, which request was graunted. Robert Fitz Walker his house was then in place where nowe standeth the Woocers hall,

Friers of the  
Sacche.  
A synagogue of  
the Jewes.

Foliam. recor.

and the synagogue of the Jewes was in place, where nowe is a wine fauorne called the Windmill in Lothbury. These Friers liued altogether by begging, and had of late multiplied in number greatly, untill the Councell at Lions, wherein it was decreed, that Friers beggers should receiue none into their order, except Grey and white Friers. They were also licensed to enter into religion of larger rule, from the which time forth all mendicant Friers began to decrease, and were in short time brought to nothing, except the Preaching Friers.

An Wales in Scotland.

Adam Merimo. Tho. de la More.

William Wales which had oft times set Scotland in great trouble, was taken and brought to London with great numbers of men and women wondring upon him: hee was lodged in the house of William Delect a Cittizen of London, in Fanchurch strete. On the morrow being the euen of Saint Bartholomew, hee was brought on horse-backe to Westminster, John Segraue and Geoffrey, knights, the Shariot, Sheriffes and Aldermen of London, and manie other, both on horsebacke & on foot accompanying him, and in the great hall at Westminster, he being placed on the South bench crowned with Laurell, for that he had laid in times past that he ought to beare a crowne in that Hall (as it was commonly reported) and being approached for a traitour, by Sir Peter Mallorie the kings Justice, he answered that he was neuer traitour to the R. of England, but for other crimes whereof he was accused, he consented them, & was after beheaded and quartered. There was opened to the king a conspiracy, wrought by the Archbish. of Canterbury and diuers earles and barons against him, at such time as he was in flanders. The Earle marshall being examined of this, and being not able to purge himselfe, made the king his betce and put him in possession of his lantes to haue his grace, and thus doing, the king gaue him againe 1000. pound land by the yere during his life.

An. reg. 34.

1306.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at London.

Robert Bruce an Englishman, presuming by the right of his wife to usurpe the kingdome of Scotlande, called a Parliament of the Nobles of Scotland within the Church of the Friers spinnis in Donistries, where hee deliue John Comin, because he would not agree to the treason, and shortly after, to witte, in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, in the Abbey of Screne, he caused himselfe to be solemnly coronated king by the Bishops of Glasco, and Saint Andrewes first, and the third day after by the Countesse of Bowan, because her brother the Earle of Fife to whom by right of inheritance that office belonged, was then absent in England.

In the feast of Pentecost king Edward honored his eldest sonne, Edward of Carnaruan with the degree of knight-hood, and with him also more then a hundred noble young men, at Westminster.

About the feast of the Ascension of our Lady, the R. went againe into Scotland, with a great armie, having sent his sonne Edward with Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, Robert Clifford, Henry Lacy, and many other noble knights and Gentlemen, at Whitsonde before, also he sent before his iudices of Crayle Basson, two and two together into every city and place into which he would come, giving them power to kill traitors, dyabols and hang

Crayle Basson.

perjured

perjured persons, borne such as woike deesse, destroy the wicked and sette Englishmen in their places, and there were taken by them in the space of two moneths by inquisition of Juries, hundreds and thousands, breakers of peace and conspiratours, amongst the which Nigelus de Bruce, brother to Robert de Bruce, was taken through Berwikke and hanged: moreover Christopher and John Seyton brethren were hanged: the Countesse of Bowan was closted in a Cage, whose breadth, length, height, and depth, was eight fote, and hanged ouer the walls of Berwikke: the Bishop of S. Andrewes and of Glasco, with the Abbot of Screne, were sent to generall prisons in England.

King Edward besieged Simon Frisell in Lislecho, and took him and sent him to London Tower, where he found many Scottissh Lords in fetters of yron, amongst whom was Thomas Morham with Herbert his son, and Thomas Roys his Elquier, who were all beheaded: Simon Frisell was hanged, dyabole and quartered: Earle John de Ahol because he was of the kings blood and an Englishman, was not dyabolen, but hanged and beheaded: Sir Ioh. Walkers was sent to the Tower of London and after hanged and beheaded: Laurence de Megos Esquire was taken at Doner and there beheaded. The earle of Strathernie yielded to king Edward, who condemned him to remaine during his life in yron fetters in the Castle of Rochester.

At this time, and long after, king Edward had Scotland in such good obedience, as he gaue of the lantes thereof to his seruants and subiectes in England, with sparkets, faptes, and Wares: amongst others I haue seene vnder the broade seale of the said king Edward a mannor called Ihermes in the Countie of Fersare, in Scotland, and nere the furthest part of the same nation Southward, giuen to John Eure and his betres, ancestor to the Lord Eure that now is, for his seruice done in those partes, with market euery Sunday, faptes for thre daies euery yere, at the feast of Saint Michael, and ffre Warrant for the same, dated at Lauercoft the 20. day of October, Ann. reg. 34.

Ex charta regia.

Lord Eure.

This yere Margaret Quene, second wife to Edward the first, began to build the Chaire of the church of the Gray Friers in London, to the building whereof in her life she gaue two thousand markes, and an hundred markes by her Testament: Iohn of Byptaine Earle of Richmond builded the body of the Church: Lady Mary Countesse of Pembroke, Gilbert Clare Earle of Gloucester, Margaret Countesse, Lady Elianor le Spencer, & Lady Elizabeth de Brugh sisters to Gilbert de Clare, gaue great sums of money towards the same: Richard Whittington, sometime Alderman and Shariot of London founded the Library there, in anno 1421.

Regist. fraumith.

An. reg. 35.

King Edward helde his Christmasse at Carlisle, with a great multitude of English people, and in the moneth of January next following, he called a great Parliament to be holden at Carlisle vpon the Daues of S. Willary, to treat of matters concerning the state of Scotland, whereunto were summoned many lords both of the spirituality and temporality, who either appeared in person or els by proxy. My selfe haue seene and read an ancient register of good authority, containing the names of 87. Earles and barons, 20. Bishops, 61. Abbats, and eight priors, besides many Deanes, Archdeacons and other inferior

1307 Parliament at Carlisle.

Parliament records.

Clearkes of the Conuocation. The master of the knights of the Temple, of  
euerie shire two knights, of euerie Citie two Citizens, and of euerie borough  
two Burgeses, &c.

*Bishops.*

Archbishop of Yorke  
Of Lincolne  
London  
Chichester  
Excester  
Hereforde  
Salisbury  
Landaffe  
Saint Aslaffe  
Bangor  
Saint Davids  
Couentrie and Lichfield  
Bathe and Welles  
Norwiche  
Rocheſter  
Durham  
Carlile and Ely  
Worceſter  
Wincheſter

*Abbots.*

Of Saint Auguſtine in Canterburie  
Of Saint Edmond  
Saint Albane  
Weſtminſter  
Waltham  
Eueſham  
Saint Marie at Yorke  
Peterborowe  
Ramſey  
Winchecombe  
Gloceſter  
Biſtow  
Malmesburie  
Glaſtenburie  
Selby  
Cyrcceſter  
Reading  
Furneys  
Sawley  
Alnewike  
Saluda Oſith

*Bailings*

Tupholme  
Biley  
Dale  
Newhus  
Croton  
Cokerſande  
Saint Radegound  
Tichfelde  
Torre  
Holmeſcokthram  
Welbecke  
Hales  
Newe Monaſterie  
Iereuall  
Fountaines  
Bella lande  
Meſſia  
Kyrkeſted  
Rupe  
Rughforde  
Valeden  
Grendon  
Stanley in Arden  
Pipwell  
Combe  
Baſingwerke  
Crokeſden  
Croyland  
Werdon  
Wimondham  
Wauerley  
Cherteſey  
Quarrera  
Leteley  
Hyde  
Wendon  
Saint Agathe  
Swineſhede  
Stanley in Wiſſhire.  
The Maſter of the Knights of the Teſt  
ple in England.

*Barons.**Barons.*

Edward Prince of Wales  
Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne  
Ralph Mounthermer Earle of Gloceſter  
and Hereford.  
Thomas Earle of Lancaſter  
Humfrey Bohun Earle of Hereforde  
and Eſſex.  
John Warren Earle of Surrey  
Edmond Earle of Arundale  
John Brytaine Earle of Richmond  
Guy Bello Campo earle of Warwike  
Robert Vere earle of Oxford  
Gilbert Vmſframuell earle of Angeos  
Henry of Lancaſter  
Aymer of Valence  
John Ferrers  
Henry Piercie  
Hugh Spencer  
Robert Fitz Walter  
William Latimer  
Robert Cliforde  
Robert mount Alto  
John Haſtings  
John le Mare  
John de Ripaurs  
John de Mohun.  
Petrus de Malolacu  
Rupart Fitz Pagani  
Hugh Curtney  
Edmond Deyncourt  
John Saint John of Lageham  
Galfride de Geynual  
Thomas Furniual  
Robert Tony  
Thomas Berkeley  
William de Bruſe  
Peter Corbet  
William Marton  
Thomas Mulron  
John ap Adam  
John Kyme  
John Segraue  
Robert Fitz Roger  
Hugh Veer  
Walter Fauconbridge  
Ralph Baſſet of Drinton  
Roger la Ware  
John Paynell  
Alexander Wallicjo  
Hugh Poynts  
Roger Montomere  
William Rithe  
Reignald Grey  
Walter Muncy  
Robert Scales  
Adam Welles  
Almarice de Amando  
William Cantalupo  
John Engaigne  
Gilbert Pechy  
John Clauering  
William Leyburne  
John Bello Campo of Somerſet  
William Grandſtone  
John Eatuens  
John de Inſula  
John Sudley  
Simon Mountacure  
Walter Tey  
Edmund Haſtings  
John Lancaſter  
John Saint John  
Henry Treygoz  
John Louel of Tichmerch  
Alan la Zuche  
Henry Teyes  
Nicolas Segraue  
Fulco Fitz Waren  
John Fitz Reignald  
Geffrey Camuile  
William Vauſfor  
William Ferrer  
Robert Grendon  
Edmund Baron of Stafford  
Ralph Fitz William  
Thomas de la Roche  
Theobald de Verdon the younger  
William Tucher  
Henric Huſſey.



In this parliament many complaints were made of the oppression of churches and Monasteries, by the Popes Chaplaine named William Testa Archdeacon of Araine in the Church of Conentrie. The same Clarke was forbidden to use any more such extortions, and divers Statutes were ordained touching religious persons which had their principall houses in other realmes.

There came to this Parliament, sent from the Pope, a Cardinall called Petrus Hispanus, to treat of a marriage betwixt Edward Prince of Wales, and the French kings daughter.

And amongst many other soites made there, Henry Lacy Earle of Lincoln complained, that whereas in times past, the course of water running at London under Holbozne bridge, and Fleet bylode into the Thamis, had bene of such large breadth and depth, that ten or twelve ships at once with merchandises were wont to come to the foresaide bridge of Fleet, and some of them to Holbozne bylode: now the same course (by filth of the Tanners and such other) was sore decayed. Also by raping by of wharffes, but especially by turning of the water, which they of the newe Temple made to their milles with out Baynards Castle, and divers other perturbations, the saide shippes now could not enter as they were wont, and as they ought, therefore he desired, that the Spalor of London with the Sheriffes, and certaine discrete Aldermen might be appointed to see the course of the saide water, and that by oth of honest men all the foresaide hindrances might be removed, and to be made as it was wont of old time, &c. Which was answered and recorded, that Roger le Brabazon, the constable of the tower, with the spalor and Sheriffes are assigned, that taking with them other honest and discret men, they make diligent search and inquirie, how the saide river was in olde time, and that they leave nothing that maie hurt or stoppe it: and to keepe it in the same state that it was wont to be.

King Edward remaining all the winter and summer at Carlisle, disposed manie things of Scotland at his pleasure: but in the meane time Robert le Bruce going about the Countrey, did manie that would not please him, and he sent with part of his army two of his brethren, Thomas that was a knight, and Alexander a pylest, Deane of Glaseo, into another part of the Countrey, that they might allure the people unto them by gentle persuasions, which (by committing of Englishmen upon them) were taken, ledde to the Justices, condemned, hanged and headed at Carlisle.

Joane of Acres Countesse of Gloucester deceased.

King Edward sent messengers into England, commanding all that ought him service to be ready at Carlisle, within three weekes after the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist: but himselfe being vexed with the bloudie fluxe, hee sent unto his sonne that hee shoulde come with speede to heare his last wordes. Whome, among other things hee did counsell to be mercifull, just, and constant in all his wordes and deedes: hee commanded him not to be too hasty to take upon him the Crowne of England, untill he had revenged the injuries done by the Scottes, but rather to staie in those partes; and

The course of  
Fleete dilke at  
London fore  
decayed, which  
sometime bare  
ships of small  
burden to Hol-  
boyn-bridg, so  
the great com-  
moditie of the  
cittie in that  
small part.  
Wallingham.

to cause his fathers bones (being closed in a chest) to be bozne about with him, till he had gone thowoe all Scotland and overcome his aduersaries. He also commanded him to honour his mother, and love his two brethren, Thomas earle of Sparthall, and Edmund Earle of Kent. Moreover he charged him on his curse, that he should not presume to call home Pierce of Ganeffon, by common decree banished without common fauour: he declared to him also, that he had taken on him the crosse, for the service in the holy land, to the which he had determined to haue gone in person, but troubled with the newe and diuers at-temptes of Robert le Bruce, he was hindered of his purpose, and was constrained, omitting that businesse, to turne the warre into Scotland. 3000. pound of silver (saide he) I haue prepared for the charges of an hundred knights to go honorably thither with their retinnes: because it is not my happe to performe in proper person, what I had intended, let them yet take my heart, and carrie thither, which if they doe, I trust in my God that all things shall prosper with them. I therefore (saith he) doe straightly command the in paine of my curse, that am thy father, that the saide money be not otherwise spent.

The king also called vnto him Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, Guy Earle of Warwike, Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and Robert Clifford Baron, desiring them to be good to his son, and that they should not suffer Pierce of Ganeffon to come again into England, to set his sonne in riot, and the seventh of July he departed this life at Wygh upon the sands, in the yere 1307. When he had reigned 34. yeres, 7. monethes, and odde daies, and was 68. yeres of age. He was buried at Westminster.

He had issue by his first wife Elianor, daughter to the king of Spaine, five sonnes, to wit, Henry, Iohn, and Alfonso that died without issue, Edward that succeeded him in the kingdome, and Henry that died without issue, and tenne daughters, to wit, Elianor Countesse of Warre, Joane of Acres Countesse of Glocest. Julian that died young, Margaret Countesse of Sabant, Alice that died young, Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, Elizabeth Countesse of Holland, Mary that was a Nunne at Ambesbury, Beatrice that died young, Blanch that died young: he had issue by Margaret daughter to Philip king of France his second wife, two sons, to wit, Thomas of Woodstock, and Edmond of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, and one daughter, named Elianor that died young.

W. Packington.

## Edward of Carnaruo.



Edward the second sonne to the first Edward, bozne at Carnaruo, began his raigne the seventh day of July, in the yere of Christ 1307. he was fatte of bodie, but undesfast of maners, and disposed to lightnes, haunting the company of vile persons, and given wholly to the pleasure of the bodie, not regarding to governe his common weale by discretion and wisdom, which caused great variance betwene him and his Lords. He toke to be

An. reg. 1.

Chro. Dun.

of his counsell Patricke earle of Lincoln, and Otho de Granfone with other. He ordained Walter Reignald to be his Chancelour, and caused Walter Langton Byschoppe of Chester, Treasuror of Englande, to bring the king his fathers bodie from Carlisle to Waltham crosse, and then to be arrested by Sir John Felton Constable of the Tower, and sent to Wallingford, there to be shut up in prison, and his goods confiscate, because in his fathers life time he had reproved him of his insolent life, &c. He also called out of exile Pierce of Ganeson a stranger borne, which latelie in his fathers daies, had for certain causes bene banished this land. He gave to the saide Pierce the earldome of Cornemall, the Isle of Man, and the Lordship of Wallingford, other wise assigned to Duene Isabel.

Pierce of Ganeson called out of exile.  
Cro. H. 2. cap. 19.  
W. R. 2. 1. 1.

Parliament at Southhampton.

Edward the first buried.

1308

Knights of the temple apprehended.  
Th. de la More.

Adam Mart.

Edward crowned.

Chron. Dun.  
Pierce of Ganeson called out of exile.  
Th. de la More.

A parliament was holden at Southampton, wherein it was ordained, that his fathers colne, which was counted base, should not be refused upon paine of life and Lim, and that a fifthenth of the cleargie, and twentieth part of the goods of the Lattie should be given to the king.

The 27. of October king Edward the first was buried at Westminster, at the head of Henry the thirde his father, into the which Church hee had giuen lands to the value of 100 pound by year, fiftentie pound thereof yearly to be distributed to the poore. Anthony Becke patriarche of Jerusalem and Byschop of Durham doing the exequies.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Here in Kent, with a great traine of household.

After the Epiphany of our Lord, all the Templars in England were apprehended and committed to prison in divers places.

The king went over into France, and married Isabel the daughter of Philip the faire king of France, at Boloigne the 22. of January. There were present at that marriage Philip king of France, his son king of Navarre, the king of Almaine, and the king of Sicilie, with manie other. And on the 24. daie of February, king Edward with his Quene were crowned at Westminster, by Henrie Byschop of Winchester, being admitted so to do by Robert Archbishop of Cantuarbie. The king offered first a pound of golde made like a king holding a ring in his hand, and after he offered a marke of gold (which is 8. ounces) made like a pilgrime putting forth his hand to receive the ring. Sir John Blackwell knight, was thrust to death at his Coronation.

The king gave unto Pierce of Ganeson all such gifts and Jewels as had bin given to him, with the crownes of his father, his ancestors treasurie, and manie other things, affirming that if he could, he should succeed him in the kingdome, calling him Brother, not granting aught without his consent. The Lords therefore enaying him, told the king, that the father of this Pierce was a traitour to the king of France, and was for the same executed, and that his mother was burned for a witch, and that the said Pierce was banished for consorting to his mothers traitor, and that hee had now bene with the king himselfe. They brought the king to heare therefore their petitions, which should be both for his owne honor, and for the wealth of his people.

First, that hee would confirme and use such ancient Lawes and customs,

as

as are contained in the Charters of the kings his Predecessors: and for that they would graunt him the twentieth part of their goods, as bee his true subiects.

Secondlie, that he would take nothing of a free man, but at the price of the owner, the same to be paid for to the uttermost.

Thirdlie, that whatsoever was alienated from the crowne, since his fathers death, might be restored thereunto againe.

Fourthlie, that hee would observe the oathe hee made before his father, as of the revoking of Peter Gaveston, the prosecuting of the Scottish warre, and that all that was amisse should be amended, least his enemies rejoice at it, &c.

That Justice and Judgement might be done in the Lande, as well to the Rich, as to the Poore, according to the ancient and olde approved Lawes and Customs of Englande, and that no man should be restrained by the Kinges Witte from prosecuting his Right, or to defende himselfe by Lawe.

When the king taking counsell of Pierce, Hugh Spencer the Treasurer, the Chancelour and others, hee appoynted to answer the Barons at the parliament on Hockday. The barons being departed out of London, the city gates were shutt up and chained, greate watch kept, and Hugh Spencer made Constable of London. The k. with Peter of Gaveston went toward Wallingford Castle with a great companie of souldiers, as well strangers as English, and Hugh Spencer tarried still at London. The Parliament on Hockday was kept, the king and Barons being there when the preachers that the same Pierce should be banished the land to depart on the morrowe after Epiphomys date, neuer to returne againe. The king gave him two and thirtie Townes, and so manie castles in Gascoigne, and great summes of money out of his earldome of Cornemall during his life: The king accompanied him to Wyke, sent him into Ireland, assigning him the whole government and revenues of that countrey.

Hugh Spencer  
Constable of  
London.

An. reg. 2.  
Pierce of Ganeson banished.

In the feast of St. Michael, Gilbert de Clare earle of Gloucester took to wife Maill, daughter to Richard Brugh earle of Ulster, at Waltham, the same day John de Brugh, son to earle Richard was made knight by the king, and took to wife Elizabeth sister to the sayde Earle Gilbert, in the same place.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor with greate solennitie.

1309

The king sent William Lord Latimer with an hundred horsemen to fetch Henry Lacy earle of Lincoln, but he being forewarned, kept himselfe in his castle, and so prevented their purpose, onlie the Lord Latimer and he talked, and so departed.

The king intended to give Gascoigne to the French king, Scotland to Robert Bruce, Ireland and Wales to others, hoping thereby to have aid against his Barons.

king against his Barons.

Robert Archbishop of Cantuarby returned from Rome, and was restored to all his goods.

The

The de la More.  
Ioh. Triblow.  
Gaueffon sent  
for by the king  
and returned.

The king sent for Pierce of Gaueffon out of Ireland: he landed at Carnarvon, on the euen of S. Iohn Baptift, the king mette him at the Caste of Flint with great joy: and gaue to him the earle of Gloucesters sister in marriage, they were married at Bathhamsted, which caused him again to rise in pride, scornning the nobles of the Realme, and to a buse the king, as befoze he had done, in conueying the treasure of the realme into forraigne countries, amongst the which treasure, he conueyed the table and restles of gold from the treasure of Westminister, and deliuered them to one Armeroy of Frisconband to be conueyed into Gascoigne. The barons the refoze declared to the king, that except he would compell the said Pierce from his company, they would rise against him as against a perjured Prince: whereupon by the aduise of Pierce of Gaueffon, the king sent for aide into Gascoigne, to the earle of Foy, and the Count of Henop, and they came with three hundred horsemen through Fraunce, but Philippe the French king imprisoned the chiefe, and slewe and hanged the other. Also, the king of Engl had word from Robert Bruce of Scotland, and from Robert Fitz Thomas of Ireland, that they would not take part with the king against his Barons, whereupon the king bring togeth, fortified Windosor castle, and began to build towres and other strange things.

Cro. Pet. Calege.  
The barons  
there the king.  
Chro. Dan.

An. reg. 3.

The Abbot of Saint Denis in France, being sent Legate from the Pope, to demand the Legacie that king Edwards father gaue to the holie Lande, did earnestlie request king Edwards to remoue from him Peter Gaueffon, with whose conuersation all the world was as it were infected. When the king appointed a Parliament at Southampton, determining from thence to passe into Scotland: the Barons came to this parliament well furnished, but the king sent them word he would not come there, yet at the last he came to Stone Strاتفord, whither he was sent to him by the Barons, the earles of Warwike and Clare, who requested him to come for his owne profite, and the commonalty of the Realme: at length he went in the habite of a squire, and the Barons met him without armor, and in the end they lovingly embraced and were made friends, and the voyage to Scotland was returned till another time. After Michaelmas, the Parliament was holden at London, unto the which Parliament came Lewes the French kings brother, with the Bishoppes of Woytore, from the king of France, to intercede betwixt the king and his lordes; and there were diuers good ordinaunces made. And once againe, though force against the kings mind, he caused Pierce to abjure, with condition added by the barons, that if he were found again in any land subiect to the kings dominion, he should be taken as a common enemy, and condemned. This being done, he passed into Flanders, and from thence to other countries, seeking rest, which hee could not find.

Parliament  
at London.

Pierce of Gaueffon abjured  
the land.

1310

The king kept his Christmas at Windosor, where Walter Langton Bishopp of Chester, and the Bishop of S. Andrewes in Scotland, were released out of prison.

An. reg. 4.  
Templars at  
Windsor.

The seconde daie of September at night, an horrible Tempest of thunder happened, so that hedges and trees lost their greenesse, and the Church of Spidleton in Dorsetshire, with the Steeple, Belles, and ornaments, and all other monuments

monuments of that place, were consumed with the lightning, the monks being at Pattins.

Henry Knyght earle of Lincolne, Constable of Chester, and Custos of Englannde, died at London, in his house called Lincolnes Inne, in Holborne: hee was buried in the new Church (whereof he was founder) of S. Pauls Church, betwixt our Ladies Chappel, and S. Dunstons Chappel, there a faire monument of stone was raised for him, with his picture in armour crosse legged, as a Templar beloned for the defence of the holie land, and Citie of Ierusalem.

A Provinciall Councell was holden at London against the Templars in England, upon heresie & other articles, whereof they were accused, who denied the fact, saving one or two of them: notwithstanding all this confesse, that they coulde not purge themselves, and therefore were condemned to perpetuall penance in severall monasteries, where they behaued themselves vertie well.

At Paris in France 54. of the Templars were bent, by the iudgement of Philip the French king.

Pierce of Gaueffon conceiuing an affiance in the fauour of king Edward, and of the young earle of Gloucester, whose sister he had married, taking with him many strangers, returned into England, and a little before Christmas came to the kings presence, whom the king, forgetting all oathes and promised pades, received as a beauenlie gift.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wyke, where Pierce of Gaueffon was present with his Dutchlandish men, the king reioicing, and being in a greatesolitude because he had receiued him in safetie, all the court and Queene being sorrowfull, because they sawe the king not vertie founde. The mightie men of the land therefore sought howe they might set an ende to the trouble at hande, for they feared to raise warre, and durst not disquiet the king, yet the perill being leied, they founde that so long as Pierce liued, there coulde be no peace in the kingdome, nor the king to abound in treasure, nor the Queene to enioy the kinges true love. Thus after they had long considered the perilles past, present, and to come, they determined rather to trie all extremities, then to be despised and set at naught by a stranger, they chose a captain then for their business to come, Thomas of Lancaster, noble in lineage, ballaunt in armes, excellent in fame for his maners and iustice, he was son to Edmund earle of Lancaster, and therefore by inheritance earle of Lancaster, Leicester and Ferrers. In proces of time he married the only daughter of the earle of Lincoln, to wit, Henrie Lacyes daughter, whereupon after the earles decease, of a great man, he was made a greater, for he was earle of Lincoln, and of Salisburie, besides the liberties of Pickering, and the honoz of Cokermore, and other great lands in Wales, and the earldome of Artoys in France.

Anthony Beke Patriarch of Ierusalem, and Bishop of Durham, deceased at Eltham on the 28. of March, after he had late Bishop 28. yeres and was buried at Durham. Hee encausled the ancient Spanno place belonging to the Bishops of Durham at Aukland, he made there the great hall, wherein hee did set pillars of blache marble, speckled with white, and the great chamber with other buildinges there, hee also made the exchaung goble Chappell at Aukland.

W. Shep.  
Lib. Kainham.  
His monument  
is soley belaced  
by bad people,  
and such as de-  
scribed the mo-  
nument for  
goodnes in  
them.  
I. House:  
Templars  
confinement  
Tho. Beke.

1311

College at  
Aukland.  
Somerton  
castle.

land

Dammoy of  
Litham.

land of well squared stone, and founded there a Colledge with a Deane and prebends, and a quadrant in the south-west side of the Castle for Spinifiers of his Colledge: he builded or repayed castl Barnard, Gainsforth and Cunctliff; hee also builded Somerton Castle in Worcheshire, which Castle hee gave to the king, and the manor of Clifton in Kent, which hee gave to the Duene. The king shortly after gave the castle of Somerton to Henry Beaumont. The castle of Alnwick which William de Velez had given unto him by the said Bishop, trusting in him, that he would preserve it to the use of the bishops young husband, and deliver it to him when he came to mans estate, he took money therefore, and sold it to Henry Piercy, he had the use of man during his life by the kings graunt, Kellow was elect Bishop of Durham.

King Edward with Peter Gaucelion his companion, went to Porke, where the king was lodged in the palace of the Archbishop, and Peter in the Castle: they caused the Citie to be fortified, and the walles to be repayed, and sent to Robert Bailliol of Scotland for aide against his Lordes; but Robert came answer, he would not forgo Scotland, neither would he disquiet any man: the like answer was made by the Welchmen. The earles assembled at Bedford, Gilbert the younger Earle of Gloucester being one of them was made Custos of England, they came to London, and obtained the Deas to be kept, that strangers should enter to aide the king.

After Easter Bartram nephew to Pierce Gaucelion was taken in Cornwall with great treasure which he had conveyed out of the kings Treasure: his ship being tossed with tempest on the Sea, was driven where it was taken, and the treasure was brought to London in Cartes.

About this time king Edward for his recreation toke the Sea, leaving Peter of Gaucelion at Porke, whereupon the Barons brought their power, and entered the city of Porke, but Peter fled to Scarborough; then the Barons beseged Scarborough, where they toke him, and committed him to the custody of Aymer de Valence earle of Pembrroke, who brought him to the manor of Waddington which is betwixt Oxford and Warwicke, and there left him to be kept safe: but the next day in the morning Guy earle of Warwicke with a company of armed men, toke him from thence, and brought him to Warwicke castle: after deliberation taken, the earles of Lancaster, of Warwicke, and of Hereford, caused in their presence in a place then called Black Lowe, since Gaucelion beate, the 19. of June his head to be stricken off: his body by the frier preachers was conveyed to Oxford, and there kept more then two yerres, till the king caused the same to be translated to his manor of Langley, and there in the friers church (which he had builded) to be buried.

Quene Isabel was delivered of her first sonne, named Edward at Winton, the 12. day of November.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Winton.

The knights of the order of S. John Baptist, called S. John of Jerusalem, put the Turkes out of the Isle of Rhodes, after that was upon the said Turkes daily for along time after, this religion was greatly preferred by the king, the temple, whose possession was given to them by a council holden at

Ed. Kenham.  
Bartram nephew  
to Pierce  
of Gaucelion  
taken.

John Trecklow.  
Pierce of Gaucelion  
beheaded.  
An. reg. 5.

1312  
An. reg. 6.  
Tho. de la More.  
The Wordes  
spoken by the  
Christians.

Robert

Robert de Brose got againe almost all Scotland, the Castles with him into the English Garrisons being cast out) he toke againe into his power. This was the reason by consent of the Prelates, and certaine Nobles, Hugh Spencer the sonne was appointed the Kings Chamberlaine in place of Peter of Gaucelion, whom they the rather preferred, because they knew the king hated him: never the less, not long after, by his great diligence, he brought him self into the kings favour. The father of this Hugh being old, was yet living, a knight of great vertue, in counsell wise, in armes valiant, whose confusion and shameful end he wanne unto himselfe by natural loue though dishonourable towards his sonne, who was in bodie verie comely, in spirit proud, and in action most wicked, whose comeliness and ambition, by the disserving of himselfe and strangers, wrought the death of the Nobles, the fall of the king, with the utter destruction of himselfe and his father.

King Edward kept his Christmas at London.

King Edward gathering a great power, marched towards Scotland, to besiege the siege of Strueling Castle, and lodged himselfe and his people there about in the helde on the euen of S. John Baptist: never afore that time was there the like preparation, pride and cost in the time of warre, as affirmeth Robert Paston, a Carmelite frier, being present, and taken of the Scots, which he sorrowfully bewailed in his Heroycall Verse while he was prisoner. The first night (saith hee) ye might haue seene the Englishmen bathing themselves in wine, and casting their gorges: there was crying, shouting, laughing, and drinking, with other sporting farre above measure. On the other side, ye might haue seene the Scottes quiet still, and close, fasting the euen of Saint John Baptist, labouring in loue of the libertie of their Countrey. On the morning, the Scottes having gotten the most convenient place in the helde by the dikes, made ditches in the grounde that were deep, and the like in breadth, from the right wing of the army, unto the left, covering the same with twigs as hurdles, and againe over with the Turfe and grass, which was not of strength to beare horsemen. The army of the Scottes being divided into certaine troupes, stood not farre off from this dike, which was betwixt them and the Englishmen. On the other side, the army of the Englishmen coming out of the West, the sunne rising, casting his beams on their golden Targets, bright helmets, and other armour, gave such a resplendence, as was both wonderful and terrible to behold. In the first warde were the light horsemen, and heauie couriers. In the second were the Archers, and other footmen, who were appointed for the chase of the aduersaries. In the third was the king with his Bishopps, and other Religions, amongst whom was Hugh Spencer. The horsemen of the first front making upon their enemies, sounded with their force late into the ditch, and lay the same, adding the crueltie of the Scots, who coming upon them, did the same, and toke a great many rich men for ransome. There was also Gilbert de Clare Earle of Gloucester, (whome the Scottes would gladly haue kept for ransome, if they had knowen him, but he had forgotten to put on his coat of armes) with him was also Sir Edmond Manly, Sir Robert Clifford, Sir

Tho. de la More.  
Hugh Spencer  
the younger.

1313  
Tho. de la More.

Battell at  
Strueling.  
Robert Paston.

Gilbert Earle  
of Gloucester,  
and other noble  
men slain in  
Scotland.

Paine

Paine Tiptoft, Sir William Marshal, Sir Gyles Dargenton, and many other knights and Esquiers.

An. reg. 7.

There was taken Humfrey de Bohun earle of Herefordshe, John Segraue, John Claueringham, William Latimer, Sir Roger Northbrooke, bearer of the kinges shield or Seale: but Sir Ralf Mounthermer that had married Iane of Acres Countesse of Gloucester, the kinges sister, being taken, founde such favour, that his ransom was pardoned, and he returning into England, brought back with him the kinges shield or Seale; but Sir Edmond Marly the kinges steward showed himselfe in Banockburne.

Almost three hundred men of armes were slaine in that place, our Archers killing manie of them, who seeing the Scottes cruellie bent upon our Hosts men fallen in the ditch, shotte their Arrowes with a high compasse, that they might fall betwixt the armour of their Enemies, which was all in bayne: and then they shotte righte sooth, they slawe fewe of the Scottes, by reason of their armed breasts, but manie of the Englishmen, by reason of their naked backs.

White felars in  
Prison.

The king with the Wythoppes, and Hugh Spencer betooke themselves to flight; in which danger of flying, the king turned to G. D. D. that hee would build unto the pope Carmelite friers an house, in the which hee would place 24. Wythoppes, to be Students in Divinitie, which he afterward performed in Oxford.

Robert de Bruse caused his prisoners to be cruellie intreated, and honorable kept, he sent the bodies of the earle of Gloucester, and of the Baron Clifford, to the king of England, remaining then at Berwikke, to be buried at his pleasure, demanding no rewarde for; restoring of them. The earle of Glocest. was buried at Tewkesbury, his inheritance was divided betwene 3. sisters of the said Earle; the first whereof Hugh Spencer had to wife, the second Hugh Audley (whome Pierce de Gaueston before had married) the third Roger de Tamary (whome before John de Brugh sonne and heire, to the heire of Viskin in Ireland had married) and so the inheritance of that noble Carle dome was divided into three baronies.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor, with many Prelates of the Land.

Chron. Tint.

Ralf Baldocke bishop of London deceased, who in his life time gave 2000. marks of silver, toward the building of the newe worke of the Chappell on the South side of our Ladies Chappell in the East end of the church of S. Paul in London, and left much by his Testament to the same worke. And this is to be noted, that in digging the foundation of this worke, was found more then 100. heads of oxen & hene, which thing confirmed greatly the opinion of those which have reported, that of old time it had been called the Temple of Jupiter, and that there was the sacrifice of beasts.

The king calling to him the Archbishop of Canterbury, 4. other Bishops and manie Abbots and ecclesiastical persons, he caused the bodie of Pierce de Gaueston to be translated, and honorably buried at Langlep, but yet there were not manie of the nobles at his buriall.

The

The morow after Candlemas day there assembled a parliament at London, to treat of the state of the kingdome, and how to bring downe the prices of victuals, that were now grown to be so deere, that the common people were not able to live. It was the refore ordained, and the kings writs were published for prices of victuals, that no Dr. should or come, sed, bee sold for more then foure and twentie shillings: no grasse fed Dr. for more then fiftene shillings: a fat Calf at twelve shillings: another Calf at tenne shillings: a fat Suttton corne fedde, or whose wool is well grown, at twentie pence: another fat Suttton thorne, at fourtene pence: a fat Hogge of two yeres old, at thre shillings foure pence: a fat Cose, at two pence halfe pence, in the citie at thre pence: a fatte Capon at two pence, in the Citie two pence halfe pence: a fatte Yenne at one pence, and in the Citie thre halfe pence: two Chickens a peny, in the citie thre halfe pence: foure Pigeons for one pence, in the citie thre pence for a peny: foure and twentie egges a pennie, in the citie twentie egges a peny, &c.

Notwithstanding the statutes of the last Parliament, the kings writtes, & all things were sold dearer then before, no flesh conde be had, Capons and Cose would not be found, Eggs were hard to come by, Shape died of the rot, Swine were out of the way: a quarter of wheat, beanes, and pease, were sold for 20. shillings, a quarter of spalte for a Marke, a quarter of salt for 35 shillings, &c.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Cheshon in Shetword.

John Poydras, a Tanners sonne of Exeter, in diuers places of England, named himselfe the sonne of Edward the first, and sayde, that by a false purse hee was stolen out of his Cradle, and Edward that now was king, put in his place; but shortly after he was convicted of his untrue, and confessed that hee did it by the motion of a familiar spirit which hee had in his house in likeness of a Catte, whome he had served thre yeres, for the which service hee was hanged betwixt Southampton and Wallingworth, in a place called the Copid thorne.

The king in a parliament at London, gave the rodde and office of Marshall unto Thomas Wytherton earle of Norfolk his brother. He also renoked the possessions before made for selling of Victualles, and permitted all men to make the beste of that they had; neuertheless the dearth encreased through the abundance of raine that fell in Haruest, so that a Quarter of wheat, or of Salte, was sold before Whitsommer for thirte shillings, and after 40. shillings.

There followed this famine, a grievous mortalitie of people, so that the quick might vnder burie the dead.

Robert Fitz Paine deceased, and was buried at Shireborne. Also Guido de bello campo earle of Warwick deceased.

The beastes and cattell also by the corrupt grasse whereof they fedde, died, whereby it came to passe, that the eating of flesh was suspected of all men, for fish of Beasts not corrupted was hard to find. Wyse flesh was counted great delicates: the pope stole fatte Dogges to eat: some (as it was false) compelled

Parliament at  
London.  
Victuals prices

An. reg. 8.

T. Walsingham.  
Victuals deere.  
Chro. S. Albans.

1315

A Tanners son  
claimed to be  
king.

W. Paston.  
T. Walsingham.

An. reg. 9.  
Hospitalitie of  
men.

Dogs flesh  
good meate.

Children were  
eaten.  
Whereas he pri-  
son denour one  
another.

lee through famine, in hidde places, did eate the flesh of their stone Children, and fourtiale others which they deuoured. Wherof that were in prisons did plucke in peeces those that were newlie brought amongst them, and greddile deuoured them halfe alive. A gallon of small ale was at two pence, of the better, 3. pence, and the best 4. pence.

Wherof sym-  
den to be made  
into malt.

The Londoners considering that wheate made into malt, was much consumed, or bained, that from thenceforth it should be made of other graine, and also, that a gallon of better ale should be sold for thre halfpence, and of small ale for a pence, and not above.

The king according to the statute of London, sent his Writtes through the Mayor, commanding, that as well within the Liberties as without, in cities, boroughes, towtens and villages, a gallon of ale should be sold for a pence, and that from thenceforth no wheate should be made into malt: which if he had not the sooner caused to be proclaimed, the greatest part of the people should have perished through famine.

Chro. Dun.  
Carle Warren  
excommunicat-  
ed.

Carle Warren was excommunicated by the bishop of Chichester for adultery, whereupon the said earle came to the bishop with armed men, and worse hadly then the rest, threatened the bishop, whereupon the bishops men fell on them, and took the earle and the rest, and imprisoned them.

1316

Byshops deca-  
sed.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Clifton in Sherewood, as he had done the yere before. Richard Killow Bishop of Durham deceased, unto whom succeeded Lewes de Beaumont by the kings appointment, a man meruelous learned, and lawe on both sides. The king also made Thomas Cobham Bishop of Worcester, that Sea being boide by the death of Walter de Maydenstone. Also Adam de Arleton was made Bishop of Hereford, that Sea being boide by the death of Robert de Swinfield. Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, daughter to R. Edward the first deceased, and was buried at Wilton.

The same yere the king took of curie towtne in England, a man to serue in his warres of Scotland, and fourte markes of money towarde his charges hauing no respect to the greatnes or littlenes of any towne, which seemed to be unauiserable done.

T. Walsingham.

I. Treklon,  
Thos de la more.

There arrived in England by the kings request Gauscelinus and Lucas de Plisco, two Cardinales, to make peace betwixt the Realme of England and Scotland, and to reconcile unto the king Thomas earle of Lancaster. They brought Bullis from the Pope to excommunicate the Scottes, except they returned unto peace with the king of England. These Cardinales went into the North parts, to enball Lodowike Beomond, to whom the Pope (at the kings instance) had given the Bishopricke of Durham: and when they came nere unto the Towne of Berlington, certayne Robbers breaking out of a baloy, Gilbert Middleton and Walter Selby being their Captaynes, sodaynelle sette upon the familie of the Cardinales and of Lodowike on Wilselsheden Pass, robbed them of their treasure, and carried Lodowike Bishop of Durham to spoweth, where they constrained him to paie a great ransom: they brought Henry Beaumont to the castle of Winford, and there kept him till he had paid a great

Two Card-  
nals robbed.

great ransom: but the Cardinales came to Durham, where they tarried a few daies for answers of the Scots, and so under the kings conduct they returned to Pothe, and left their businesse which they came for to done. Gilbert Middleton after many damages done to the priory of Tynmouth and other, was taken in his owne Castle of Spittford, by William Felton, Thomas Henson, and Robert Horncliffe, carried to London, and there in the presence of the Cardinales executed and hanged.

The 14. daie of February, the king by his charter granted to the scholars of the University of Cambridge, that whensoever the Spalor of the towne shal take his accustomed othe, he shall be sworn in presence of the Chancellor of the University to uphold and maintaine the liberties and priuiledges of the University, and the same shall not maliciously or treacherously impugn, and for lacke thereof, the othe to be of no force, but to be againe ministered to that effect.

The Cardinales under certayne conditions, made peace betwixt the king and Thomas earle of Lancaster, which conditions shortly after were unlikly broken.

Sir Gosseline Deuail and his brother Robert, with two hundred in the habit of Friars did many notable robberies, they spoiled the bishop of Durhams pallaces, leauing nothing in them but bare walls, for the which they were after hanged at Pothe.

Whereas the  
Friars.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster, at which feast, few of the Nobles were present, because of sicknes moued betwixt the king and them, for that he would not obserue the Articles so often demanded and promised.

1317

Margaret, daughter to Philip, son to Lewes king of France, toke unto Edward the first, deceased the 14. of February, and was buried in the middle of the quier of the Grey Friars church at London.

Edward de Bruce the king of Scottes brother, who by the space of thre yeres had assailed Ireland, and had crowned himselfe king, was taken by Englishmen, and was beheaded at Dunbalke.

Ioh. Treklon.  
Edward de  
Bruce taken  
by Engli-  
shmen.

In that battell were slaine 29. baronets of Scotland, and five thousand and eight hundred other, the pimate of Armahe being chiefe captaine for the king of England.

The 18. of March the king sent his letters to the Pope John the 22. requir- ing of him a confirmation of all the ancient priuiledges of the University of Cambridge, which the Chancellor and scholars had of long time enjoyed, by the benefit of the popes his predecessors, and also of his own predecessors the kings of England: whereunto the Pope assented, as appeareth by his bull granted in the moneth of June following.

This yere was an early harvest, so that all the corne was tined before St. Giles day. A bushel of wheate that was before for x. shillings, was sold for x. pence: and a bushel of otes that before was eight shillings, was sold for eight pence.

Early harvest  
cheape corne.  
An. reg. 16.

Carle Warren took the tosse of the earle of Lancaster, and shut her up in his Castle,

**Castell**, for that he said he was betrothed to him before these wars were: the earles barether of them a wife, but neither of them could for it.

Ed. Edward kept his Christmas at Beverley with many prelates, lords, and barons, at which time he provided himselfe of a great army, that he might bring down the pride of the Scots, if by any means it were for him profitable, and to deliver England from their eruptions.

About Epiphany the towne of Berwick was betrayed to the Scots, through the treason of Peter Spalding, and other Englishmen, where the king of Scots came to be hanged for being traitors to their countrey. The castles held out, till for want of victuals they within were constrained to deliver it into the Scottishens hands, who was also at the same time, the castles of Warbetel, Elark, and Epiford, so that they possessed the more part of all Northumberland, even to Newcastle upon Tyne, having certain castles that were defended against them.

In May they went further into the land, burning all before them, till they came to Ripon, which towne they spoiled, and carrying thither dales, they received 1000 marks of those that were got into the church, because they should not put the towne to the fire, as they had done the townes of Spothallerton, and Woughbridge, &c.

In their returning backe, they bent Barnsburgh, and Whipton in Craven, and al other afoye them, carrying into Scotland a marvellous multitude of catell, besides prisoners men and women.

The Scottishmen gathered together, to the number of 10000 men, to fight the Scots at the Towne of Pitton, tenne miles by Rosburgh from York, where they lost 3000. men, and were overcome by the Scots. Which when the king heard tel of, he left the siege of Berwick, and hastied to meet the Scots, but they returned another waie.

The Pope ordained, that Parsons should have but one benefice a peece: where upon patrons straight presented new parsons to the residue.

A great mercuriall of kine happened, which were so mortally infected, that dogs and ravens eating of the carrion of the kine, were poisoned, and did such death, so that no man durst eat anie beefe.

The king being at York, the Scots entered England, came to York, and bent the suburbs of the city, and took Sir John de Wypain earle of Richmond prisoner, with many other.

Many heretikes and certain women of England, and of other parts of the world, gathered themselves together, and would go take the holie land, to kill the enemies of Christ, as they said: but because they could not passe over the great sea, they slew many Jewes in the parts of Sholousse and Calcoigne, where many of them were taken and put to death.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Winchester.

John Sendall bishop of Winchester deceased, unto whom succeeded Reginald de Affer the popes Nuncio. Also John Dalbred bishop of Lincoln deceased, and Henry Burwale Bishop to Bartholomewe Badlesmere was chosen to his see.

His

This year the Pope granted to the king of England, the tenth of all ecclesiastical goods for one year, as before he had done the like.

In the moneth of June King Edward went into France, and came to Amiens, where he met with the king of France, and received of him the countie of Ponthieu.

The 15. of October the clarks of the Exchequer went to York with the holie called Writtes day, and other Records, and provided that laded 21 cartes, but within the space of halfe a year in the halendis of Spain they his returned againe to London.

The same year the kings Justices sat in the Tower of London, whereupon John Gisors late mayor of London and many others fled the city, for things they had presumptuously done, and live to the miseries galleys.

This year the Jewes were distressed through all Christendome, for that they had couenanted with the Sarazens to poison the Christians in all places, which in divers parts they brought to passe, putting poison into wellles, fountains, pits, and other places; upon the which divers of them in psonance, and in other parts of France were bent, and the Jewes were detained in prison for consenting hereto to them, there died in Almaine for this cause (after some Authors) above 12000. Jewes.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster with great honour and glorie.

The earle of Hereford bought of Sir Wil. Bruce knight, a portion of land in the marches of Wales called Gowers.

Roger Mortimer the Uncle, and Roger the stepbrother, not knowing of the said bargaine, had also bought the said ground of the said William Bruce, who the 2. of Mowbray, who had married the daughter and heire of the said William, clamed it by inheritance of his wife. Last of all, Hugh Spencer the younger had bought that land, and put them all out, whereupon the most nobles were sore moved, and Humfrey earle of Hereford complained to Thomas earle of Lancaster, which two earles allied almost all the other earles and barons to take their part. Thomas earle of Lancaster being their captain, they came to Sherborne, and from thence with banners displayed, to Saint Albons: from thence they sent to the king being at London, requiring him to liberty the two Hugh Spencers, which were condemned by the communitie in many articles: which when the king would not grant, the barons came to London, where at length the king granted their petition, so that Hugh Spencer the elder was banished, but the younger Hugh fell to supplying on the sea, taking out of two Prisons about 5000. goods to the value of 20000. pounds.

About the feast of St. Michael, Isabel the queene came from Canterbury to the castle of Leeds in Kent, purposing to have lodged there that night, but she could not be permitted to enter.

The king being thus being offended, as being done in contempt of him, calling to him the Commons of Essex and London, he seized the castle, which belonged to Bartholomew de Badlesmere, who having left his wife and children

1318

Bartholomew  
1318

The Scots in-  
marched England  
Rich South,  
L. Trecklow.

T. Walsingham.  
W. Pakington.  
An. reg. 12.

A mercuriall of  
kine.

The Scots  
burnt the suburbs  
of York.  
Adam Meri,  
herdmen and  
women go too  
toward Jerusalem.

1319

Exchequer  
kept at York  
W. Paken.

Jehes and Lea  
para poisoned  
waters.  
Conradus  
Mendember.

1320

The barons in  
armour.

An. reg. 14.

The elder  
Spencer bank  
then.  
T. de la More.

Lesher Castles  
belonged.



then therein, was gone with the rest of the noble men to the ransacking of the Spencers goods.

In the meane time they in Lewes Castle besparring of their safegarde, the noble men with their army came to Kingston in the Vigill of Saint Simon and Jude, demanding (by the Bishops of Canterburie and London, and the Earle of Penbroke, who were sent betwene them) that the king woulde give over his siege, promising, that they after the next Parliament woulde deliver the Castle into the kings handes, and become obedient unto him: but the king would not graunt the noble mens petition, who being returned into other partes, the king with much labour obtained the Castle, and hanging fire of the chiefe of those whom he found therein, he sent the wife and children of Badellsmere to the Tower of London.

King Edward held his Christmasse at Cirencester, and after Christmasse leaving Gloucester and Worcester, he with his army went to Shrewsbury and Wigmore. Both the Mortimers meeting the king, treacherly and peaceably submitted themselves unto him: but the king sent them both to the tower of London.

Mawrice Berkeley, and Hugh Audley in like sort submitting themselves, he sent to Wallingford Castle.

Humfrey Earle of Hereford, Gilbert Talbot, Raufe Damary, and their adherents, fled into the north to the earle of Lancaster.

About the latter end of February the king gathered an hoste & went against the rebels, and at Burton upon Trent put them to flight. The king pursuing them the 16 of March, the hostes met againe at Borsbrydge, where Humfrey de Bohune (by a certaine Welchman, who stode under the bridge) being thrust into the fundament with a spear, died. There were taken in the field Thomas earle of Lancaster, with the lordes, knights, and other to the number of 65, the rest saving themselves by flight.

These, by the subgiment of Andrew Harkely earle of Carlisle, were condemned.

On the two and twentieth of March Thomas of Lancaster was beheaded: Waren de Lile, William Tochet, Thomas Manduit, Henry Bradebourne, William Fitz Will, the younger, and William Cheyney, Barons hanged & quartered at Pontefract: Jo. Mowbray, Roger Clifford, Goceline Deinuile, barone & quartered at Poike: Bartholomew Badellsmere at Canterbury: Henry de Mountfort, Henry Willington at Wyllow: Joh. Clifford, Roger Elinbrough at Gloucester: William Kerdisse, Henry Chies at London: Francis de Aldham at Wiltshire, Thomas Calpeper at Wiltshire, Hugh de Audely the younger, John de Willington, Robert Talbot, John Maiduit, Edmund Heclude, John de Sapy, Robert de Wacheuile, Philip de Labeche, John de Becke, Henry de Laybourne, these ten, and xlii. knights more were beheaded in divers pisons.

The Justices of Itellebaston in Gler, gave upon all complaints, except suches touching ples of feide landes, and others, in the kings Bench to be pleaded, who did abstaine their hands from all kindes of giftes, And would not be called to the feasts and banquets of any man.

the

The third weeke after Easter, a parliament was gathered at Poike, where Hugh Spencer the father was made earle of Wiltshire, unto whom the king gave the castle and hono<sup>r</sup> of Dunnington, which was parcel of the earldome of Lincoln.

About the feast of St. James, the king with a great army entred Scotland, but the Scots having destroyed all above, were retired beyond the Scottish sea. So that the king being oppressed by famine, returned into England, whom the Scottes followed, and in a place of the forrest of Blackmarke they sette on the king, so that he hardely escaped.

There was taken, the Earle of Richmond, and the Lorde of Silicico, the French kings Embassadors, and manie other: whereupon the Scottes spoiling all the Countrey, and burning even to Poike, they burned Ripon, and slew manie priests of the colledge there: but in Beverley they hurt not a man, for the Burgesses and Chanons did redeem the same with 400. pounds of sterling monie. And so the Scots by reason of winter made returne, beeing laden with spoiles.

This yere the R. made sir Andrew Herkeley Earle of Carlisle, and gave him lands in the sparches of Scotland.

This yere the Staple of the Monastery at Ely fell downe in the night, but hurt no person: which Staple was afterwarde twentie yeres and more in building, ere it were fully finished, and cost in the time of Allaine the sacril of that church, 2406. pounds 16. shillings and eleven pence: which Staple is builded by Architecture 8. square, of timber upon 8. Pillars of stone, and called the Ranshoirne. This is accompted one of the four famous thinges that commendeth the Ile and Church: the other thre beeing the Chappell of our Ladie, the Mill, and the Vineyard. Alicia Lady of the Ile, third wife to Robert Fitz Walker deceased, and was buried nigh to her parents in the church of the friars preachers of Cambridge.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Poike, dissembling his losses lately received at the hands of the Scots.

About the feast of the Purification of our Ladie, Andrew de Herkeley late made Earle of Carlisle, under colour of peace, sayned that hee woulde marrie Robert Bruse his sister. Whereupon the king re putting him a Traytour, caused him to be taken by his trustie friend sir Anthony de Lucie, who sent him in pions straight to London, where he was lodged before sir Anthony de Lucy in this manner. He was ledde to the barre as an earle worthily apparelled, with his sword girt about him, hooded, booted, and spurred, &c. Unto whom sir Anthony spake in this manner: Sir Andrew (quoth hee) the king, for thy ballant service hath done thee great honour, and made thee earle of Carlisle, since which time, thou, as a traitour to thy Lorde the king, leddest his people that should have help him at the battell of Belgisland, abate by the countrie of Copland, and through the earldome of Lancaster, by which meanes our Lorde the king was discomfited here of the Scots, through thy treason and falloweshe, where as if thou haddest come betimes, he had had the victorie: and this treason thou committedst, for the great summe of Wolbe and Silver that thou receivedst of

Y 3.

James

T. de la More,  
Parliament at  
Poike

T. de la More,  
Hen. Blanford,

Additions to  
Nic. Trivet.

An. reg. 15.

The Scottes  
burned in Eng-  
land to Poike.

Andrew Her-  
keley earle of  
Carlisle.

Commendati-  
ons of the Ile  
of Ely.

1322

1321

Wastmore sent  
to the Tower.

The earle of  
Lancaster be-  
headed, and ma-  
ny other execu-  
ted.

John Treklew,  
W. Packington.

Thron of Dun-  
stons of  
Grafton



Earle of War.  
Hee disgraced.

James Dowglaſſe, a Scot, the kings enemy. Our Lord the king will therefore, that the order of knightthod, by the which thou receivest all thine honour and worship upon thy badge, bee brought to nought, and thy state undone, that other knights of lower degree, may after thee beware, and take example hereafter truly to serve.

Then commanded hee to helpe his Spurres from his heeles, then to breake his sword over his head which the king had given him, to keepe and defend his land therewith, when he made him Earle. After this, hee let unclose him of his furred Tabard, and of his hose, of his coate of armes, and also of his Girdle: and when this was done, Sir Anthonie saide unto him, Andrewe (quoth hee) now art thou no knight but a knave, and for thy treason, the king will that thou shalt bee hanged and drawne, and thine head smitten off from thy bodie: thy bowelles taken out of thy bodie and buried before thee, and thy bodie quartered; and thy head being smitten off, afterward to be set upon London bridge, and thy foure quarters shall be sent unto foure good towne of England, that all other maie beware by thee. And as Anthony Lucy had saide, so was it done in all thinges, on the last daie of October.

In the month of Aprill the spallor and communkite of Cambridge, rose in great multitude against the scholars: In which tumult divers scholars were smayned, and some slaine, and the Charters of their priviledges torne and shrowne into the myre in miserable sort: whereupon the king sent thither after Henry Spigurnell, spall. Robert de Malberthorpe and others, with communkite to punish the offence.

The second day of August the two Mortimers were adjudged to bee drawn and hanged at Westminster, for divers robberies and murders which the king laide against them, but no execution of that judgement was done, by reason of a writ that the king sent to Sir Richard de Swardstone then Constable of the Tower, to stay the judgement, and the king granted them their lives, to be in perpetuall prison.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Hereford Castle with great glorie.

The 30. day of May Aymer de Valence Earle of Denbroke Hugh Spencer the younger, Robert Baldocke Archdeacon of Middlesex, Sir William Here knight, William de Arzewine Chanon of Poike, Galfide de Scroope, were for King Edward of England sent unto Newcastle upon Tyne, where they met with William Bishoppe of Saint Andrewes, Thomas Randolph Earle of Mount, John de Metch, Robert de Lowther, the father, knights, and maister Walter de Tromant Clarke for the king of Scottes, there to talke of a final peace: but when that would not be, they fell to a truce, which they agreed upon for thirtene payres, which was proclaimed about the eleventh of June, dated at Boorpe nere unto Poike.

This yere Philip king of France died, and his brother Charles succeeded him.

About the beginning of August, E. Edward being at Pickering, there came

Embassadours

Embassadours from the new French king, the Lord Benuille and Sir Andrew de Florenia, to cite the king to come to do homage for Guyen, Aquitaine, and other lands which he held of him: and though Hugh Spencer the son Lord Chamberlaine, and Robert Baldocke Lord Chancellor, had procured the said Embassadours, not to declare their message unto the king, yet when they should depart, they did it, admonishing him to come.

And the said Sir Andrew de Florenia being a Notarie, made a publicke instrument of the said citation and admonition.

Reginald de Asshe bishop of Elyngester, deceased, and John de Stratford succeeded in that bishopricke.

The French king made a proceſſe against the E. of England. And Charles de Valois uncle to king Charles of France a most deadly enemy to Englishmen, did seize on the dukedome of Anglow, and the County of Poytow to the use of his nephew the king.

At the length going forward to the towne of Wyall, he found it well defended by Edmond of Woodstock earle of Kent, betwixt whom a final truce being taken, to continue until such time as it could be determined betwene both the kings as concerning peace, and the towne being peesed up, both the armies departed home.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Nottingham Castle with great magnificence, gloie and resort of people.

The next Lent in a parliament holden at London, Adam Tarleton bishop of Hereford was accused of treason, but by the Archbishops of Canterbury, Poike, and Dublin, and their suffragan bishops, he was taken from the bar and had away: notwithstanding inquisition being made by lawful men of that Country, they found that he had ayded the Mortimers with horse and armour against the king, whereupon all his temporalities were seized into the kings hands.

In this Parliament the king granted a petition of the Prelate, that all the bodies of the noble men that were hanged on galowes, should be taken down, and buried in ecclesiasticall sepulture.

The king also asked a subsidy of the cleargie and people, for the redeming of John Bypaine earle of Archemond.

Adam Tarleton Bishoppe of Hereford, being deprived of all his temporal goods, did hate the Spencers deadly, so did Henry Burwash of Lincaine, whose temporalities by the space of two yeres had bene detained in the kings hands) of whom and of other were made these verses:

*Noſtri cornuti, sunt confilio quasi murti,  
Et quia non tuit, nequeunt sermonibus uti,  
Sunt quasi confusi, decreto legis abusi,  
Sic perit ecclesia, legis & ipsa via.*

Our horned Prelates, in council are dumme,  
And for feare of displeasure dare not say nymme.  
They are so confounded, with abuse of the Law,  
That Church, and right waye, are brought under awe.

The two Moys  
divers commu-  
ned to prison.

Truce with  
Scotland.

The de la Mont.

An. reg. 17.

1344

Hen Blanford,  
Parliament  
at London.

Hen Blanford,

In this parliament, the landes, lordships, and possessions of the Templars were given to the hospitallers of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem, through the whole realme, to be by them possessed for ever, for the defence of Christendome against the Infidels.

Wolmer of  
Wigmore brek-  
eth out of the  
Tower.

Whan Lammas day Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, by making a solemn banquet to sir Stephen Segraue constable of the Tower of London, and the other officers, and giving to his keepers a sleepe drinke, escaped out of the Tower, breaking through the wall, and coming into the kitchen nere adjoyning to the kings lodgings, and getting out of the toppes thereof, came unto a warde of the Tower, and so with the cordes knitt ladder: wise, prepared afore hand by a friend of his, got to another warde, and so with great feare got to the Thamis, and with his helper and two mo of his counsell passed the river, and avoiding the high waies came to the Sea, and there finding a shippe at Worcester, he passed over into France to the king there, where he lived long, looking when he might be reconciled to the king of England: his uncle Roger being still kept in flight prison, the space almost of five yeres very uncourteously, at length he died, and was buried at Wythowe: for the escape of the yonger Mortimer, the king being fore offended, put sir Stephen Segraue out of his constableness of the tower. About the feass of St. Martin, were the Burgeses of London and of other townes attached by a Clearke, named Thomas Neubigging, who purchased a commission of the king, and by force thereof accused many, obediating against them, that they had conference with sir Roger Mortimer, maintaining and sustaining him, on the other side the Sea, and that they ayded and comforted him to escape out of the Tower, of which inditeiments the good people did purge themselves, by all the course of law, before the kings Justices, whereby that Clearke was compted a wicked man, and imprisoned as a false traytor. The king sent Embassadors to the French king, the Bishops of Winchester and of Worcester, with Iohn of Bytaine Earle of Richmond, to take order for the duke dome of Byptain, who after long debates toke a certaine forme of peace with the king.

T. de la More.

1325

The Quene  
sent into  
France.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmasse at Nottingham very nobly and royally, after that the truce had bene confirmed at Poyke, betwixt the Englishmen and the Scots, by the graue and wise persons of both the realmes.

King Edward sent the Quene his wife into her brother the French king, to establish the peace, who went over with a small company. By her mediast on a peace was fully finished, to wit, that the king of England should give unto his eldest sonne Edward, the duke dome of Aquitaine, and the earle dome of Pontue, and that the French king should receive homage of him: whereupon Edward the kings sonne went over with a competent household about the feast of St. Mathew, and did homage under certaine protestations, to his uncle the French king.

King Edward  
darned his  
Quene, and  
his wife.

Whiles the quene with her suite remained in France longer then the kings pleasure was, and would not come againe without Roger Mortimer and other peables that were fledde out of Englands: and especiallie for the hatred she bare to the two Hugh Spencers, the king in displeasure banished them both, and all

all other that took their partes: whereupon many fledde over the Seas to the Quene, amongst the which was one, a subtil knight, sir Robert Wakefare, who laying the Constable of Corfe Castle, brake from thence, where hee had long laine prisoner.

Sir Oliver Ingham knight, whom the yong duke Edward had made keeper of Aquitaine, gathered a great army, and invaded the Prince of Antioch (which the French king contrary to covenants, did withholde) and brought it whole into the dominion of England.

Forerover, the kings nauy toke 100. shippes of the Roymans, and brought them into England, for which cause great hatred grew betwixt the two kings and their realmes.

The quene percelating that the nobles of France were corrupted with gifts sent out of Englands, so that she could trust none of them, secretly conveyed her selfe and her son to the earle of Heynald, desiring aide of him: who received and intreated her very honourably so long as she remained there.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at St. Edmundsbury fore aftaid of the Quenes returne & of those exiled persons that were with her, lest they should with a power of Aliens put him downe from his kingly dignitie, wherefore he ordered his Castles as well in Wales as in England, to bee furnished with biqualles, munitions and men: he also let keepe his rivers and coastes of the Sea, whereof the men of the Cinque portes toke the charge to defend. He also commanded, that in euerie Citie, borough, towne corporate, hundred, and wapentake of England musters should be made, and their men to be exercised in armes, both on horsebacke and on foote, so that they might at all times bee ready when any hue and crie should be made, to pursue the Aliens if any came into England. And to this purpose, he ordained Bikenings or Beacons to be set up, that the same being fierced might be sene farre off, and thereby the people to be raised.

Isabel the Quene made a marriage betwixt her eldest sonne Edward, and Philip the daughter to William earle of Heynald, and then with her sonne Edward, Edmund of Woodstocke earle of Kent, the kings brother, Roger Mortimer, and many other noble men that fled out of England, and Iohn brother to William Earle of Heynald being captain, with spendary knights, out of Almaine and Heynald, he toke the seas with all her power, which were to the number of two thousand seven hundred fiftie and seven men well armed, and arrived at Wrewell, or Wrewell haven besides Hartwich in Essex, about Michaelmasse, whither immediately the Earle Marshall, the Earle of Leicester, the Bishops of Lincoln, Hereford, and Duelin, and Ely came, and being led to the Quene, made a great army: the other Bishops specially of Canterbury, ayded her with money. When she had refreshed her army at Saint Edmundsbury, she went forwards pursuing her enemies, whose goods she applied to her owne use.

The king requested aide of the citizens of London, who made him answer they would with due obedience, honour the king and Quene, and their sonne, who was lawfull heire to the realme, and that they would synthe their gates against

Dinner Ing-  
ham.  
An. reg. 19.

1326  
Castles in  
England and  
Wales forti-  
fied.

Bikenings.  
set up.

An. reg. 22.  
Quene Is-  
abel returned.

The king re-  
quested aide.

gainst all foraine T raytours of the Realme: but they woulde not goe out of their citie to fight, except they might (according to their Liberties) retorne home againe the same daie before Sun set: which when the king heard, he fortified the Tower of London, and left there his younger sonne Iohn of Eltham: hee caused also to bee proclaimed that euerie man should resist them that were attainted, and to invade them to the bittermost of their powers (the Quene with her sonne Edward, and the earle of Kent his brother onelie excepted) and whoeuer could bring the head of Roger Mortimer, should haue 1000. pounds.

On the other side it was proclaimed in the Quenes behalfe, that all men should haue good peace, except the Disturbers of the Realme, to witte, the Spencers, the father and the sonne, Robert Baldocke Bishop of Norwich, the kings Chancellor, and their fauourers: and whoeuer did bring to the Quene the head of Hugh Spencer, should haue 1000. pounds. The citizens of London without respect of any, beheaded such as they tooke to be the Quenes enemies, among the which they beheaded one of their own citizens named Iohn Marshal because he was familiar with Hugh Spencer the younger.

They tooke also maister Walter Stapleton Bishoppe of Excester, and on the sixteenth daie of October beheaded him, and two of his seruants, a squire and a yeoman named William Askwall, and Iohn of Waddington at the Standarde in Cheape, because (as the saying was) hee had gathered a great army to iustifie and the Quene: they did also wrest the keyes of the Tower of London out of the Constables hands, and deliuered all the prisoners.

The king, Hugh Spencer the younger, and Robert Baldocke, determined to flee into the Ile of Lundy, which is in the mouth of the riuer Severne, two miles in length euerie waie, abounding with pasture grounds, and oates, very pleasant, it bringeth forth Conies verie plentifull, it hath Pigeons and other fowles, which Alexander Necham calleth Cantines des Wildes, hauing great needes. Altho it ministreth to the inhabitants fresh springing waters flowing out of fountains, although it be an euerie side enuironed with the salt Sea: it hath onelie one entrance into it, in the which two men together can scarce goe in a front; on all the other partes, there is an high hanging ouer of a great rocke, which letteth the passage to this Island as we haue saide: it aboundeth altogether with birdalles, and is verie full of wines, oile, honey, corne, braggot, salt-fish, flesh, and sea or earth coales.

The king being delirious to saile thither, a contrarie winde did altogether withstand him, whereupon hee scarce anoiding the cruell tempests of the seas, arrived at Glamorgan, and went to the Abbey of Metch, where, trusting too much to the promises of the Welshmen, he did pituile lacke.

The Quene being nio of great power under her sonnes banner (persuading his father) commanded the hoste to go forward in pursuing the king, till at length they were come to Strijon: where, before the whole Winteritie, the Quene, the young Duke of Aquitaine, Roger Mortimer, and other noblemen and lordiours, the chiefe denier of so wicked a dissension named Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, made a publicke sermon touching the Quenes coming, and cause of the army, taking for his theme, My head grieueth me, which

Proclamation by the king.  
The Quenes letters taken on the crosse in Cheape.  
Proclamation by the quene.

Citizens of London tooke part with the Quene.

Bishop of Excester beheaded.

The Ile of Lundy.

Tho. de la More.  
Ile of Lundy described.  
A. Necham.

Quene Isabel came to Strijon

Adam de Orleton preacheth at Strijon.

which authoritie he brought to such a question, that a balne and stouffshall head, ought necessarily to bee taken awaie from the administration of a kingdome, neither ought it to be bound with any hartfull bands of an hypocrite, &c.

After this the quene with her people came to Gloucester, from whence she went into Bristol, where Hugh Spencer the elder committed himselfe and all his into the mercie of the angry and outrageous woman, who commanded the earle to be bound, and without question or answer to bee drawn and hanged in his armour, taken downe alive and bowelled, his bowelles burned, then his head smitten off, and his bodie hanged vp againe, and after foure daies to be cut all to peeces and cast to dogges to be eaten, but his head was sent to Westminster. The quene went to Hereford. The last with Robert Baldock, and Simon de Reding being taken on the first day of Nouember, was committed to the custody of Hen. earle of Lancaster, who brought him to Spennymouth, to Ledbergh, and so to Kenilworth castle, where he remained the space of one winter, ordered for his diet no otherwise then a king.

The quene being at Hereford, Edmund earle of Arundell, Iohn Danell, and Thomas Mochelden were beheaded. Afterward Hugh Spencer the sonne Earle of Gloucester, was by certaine Welshmen, brought bounde before the quene, and without sentence or iudgement, was drawne, and hanged on a gallows thirtie fote high, and after beheaded and quartered on the foure and twentieth day of Nouember, whose head was sent to London by jage, his quarters to foure partes of the Realme. Simon Reding was drawne and hanged on the same gallows, but tenn fote higher: Robert Baldocke, after manie opprobrious words was brought to the Bishop of Herefords prison, where hee liued miserable untill the Purification, and then he was remoued to London, and cast into Fleetgate, where he was so hardly dealt with, that shortly after he died there.

These things being done, the quene with her sonne Edwards, Roger Mortimer, and other, went to Wallingford Castle, a little before Christmas, and before the Twelfth day they came to London, where the quene with much toy & great rewards was receiued: for al the nobilitie of the realme did assemble there being first summoned to come to the Parliament, to be holden the morrowe after the same feast of the Epiphanie, where they all iudged that the olde king was not too thie to beare the crowne, but for diuers causes was to be deposed: And that his eldest son Edward was to be chosen king with one whole consent, which consequentie was done, and the election openlie in Westminster pronounced.

The Archbishoppe of Canterburie did consent to the election, as all other the Bishoppes did the like: whereupon the Archbishoppe ascending into the Pulpit, preached a Sermon, taking for his theme, Vox Populi, Vox Dei, exhorting all the people to praye unto the king of kings for the king they had elected. The Sermon being ended, and the people departed, as soone as the quene understood that her sonne was elected king, and her husband deposed, she seemed to be full of sorrow, as it were almost besides her witte; her son Althowen his brothers beaues, and aware, that against his fathers will he would

Hugh Spencer submitted himselfe to quene Isabel.

Hugh Spencer the elder executed.  
King Edward taken.

Hugh Spencer the younger executed.

woulde neuer take the Crowne. Therefore by common decree on the behalfe of the whole Realme it was ordained, that thre Bishops, two Carles, Henry of Leicester, and John earle Waren, 2. abbots, Claffenbury and Boi, two barons, Roger Grey, and Hugh Courtney, two Justices, Sir Geoffrey Scroope, and John de Stanthour, two Barons of the Portes, foure Burgesles of London, 4 knights for the communalite of the land, &c. shoulde be sent to the king being in his first towre castle, where they ordained as followeth: John Stratford bishop of Winchester, Adam de Arlecon bishop of Hereford, and Henry Bishop of Lincoln were sent.

The bishop of Winchester and the bishop of Lincoln went before the rest, and talked secretly with the king, together with his keeper the Earle of Leicester, the thre craftily compassed him, counselling him to make resignation of the Crowne to his eldest sonne, promising him no lesse honor and renoume after the deposition of his royall dignitie, then his princelie estate was wont to haue of all men before. They added also, what a great reward it woulde bee at the hands of God, for the peace and quietnes of his subiects, for him to refuse the gouernement of a temporal kingdome. In the other part they threatened him, that if he woulde not make resignation, the people withdrawing their homage and obedience, faith and friendship from him, his sonnes also being forsaken, they woulde crowne another king, none of the royall blood. With these and other promises and threats, the king (not without sobbes and teares) agreed to the aduertisements of the Bishops. Finally, that malicious Embassador Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, brought to the castle, where in the king was shut up, the kings other enemies, whome he placed orderlie according to their dignities in the kings chamber, referring unto himselfe the thinges which hee had sought long time before. At length the king comming forth of his secreet Chamber, being clothed in a mourning gowne, shewing himselfe to his seruants, knowing the businesse, for which they came, for vertis sorow, being as it were, distraught of his wittes, sodainelie swooned, the earle of Leicester, and the Bishop of Winchester did take him vp, being almost dead, and being called to his senses, Adam de Orleton Bishopp of Hereford declaring the cause of the messengers coming, did adde, that the king shoulde make resignation of the Crowne and realme to his eldest sonne, or else, after that himselfe was refused, hee shoulde suffer them to chole to their king another fitter man, whome they thought good for the defence of the kingdome.

The king hearing this, with much mourning answered, that hee was vertis soyle, that the Commons had concluded such wrath and indignation against him, that they disdained to be gouerned under his rule, for the which hee asked them forgiveness, and finally added, that hee would be very glad, if they woulde receiue his sonne to be their king. His resignation was made on the five and twentieth daie of Januarie, in the yere of Christ, after the receipt of the Historiographers (who beganne their yere at Christmas) 1327. after the account of the Church of Englande 1326. And forthwith in this castle, those messengers did renounce (as touching the realme) all homages and duties due to Edw. of Carnaruan late king of England by the hand of William

Trussell

Trussell knight, be in presence of the aforesaid Lords, had these words following. Unto thee, O king, I William Trussell, in the name of all men of this land of England, and prolocutor of this parliament resigne to thee Edward the homage that was made to thee sometime, and from this time forth depyue thee of all kingly power, and I shall neuer be attendant unto thee as king after this time. Then Thomas Blunt knight and Steward of the kings household, by the breaking of the Rod, resigned his office, and shewed that the kings household had free liberty to depart.

After this the messengers returned to the parliament at London, declaring the resignation that was made, and the kings answer more fully then it was made. The Commons of the realme despising old things, willingly receiued Edward of Windsor eldest sonne to Edward of Carnaruan. Also such a great dowrye was assigned to Quene Isabell, that scarce the thirde part of the revenues of the crowne were left for her son, and his wife quene Philip. Moreover, Quene Isabell, the bishop of Hereford, and Roger Mortimer did appoint to expenses to Edward of Carnaruan 100. marks the moneth.

This Edward of Carnaruan, now depyued of his royall Crowne and dignity remained with Henry earle of Leicester his kinsman, lacking nothing but libertie, where hee being shut up, ledde his life, as if hee had bene a sponke. But the fierce and cruel woman being troubled with manie thinges, taking counsell of her wicked Scholemaster Adam de Orleton Bishopp of Hereford, she had an asseigne of him, which did not greve her a little, that was, that the Earle of Leicester did take pittie vpon Edward his cousin. Moreover, there was talke throughout the land, that there were covenantes made amongst manie, to take king Edward by force out of the castle of Kenilworth, to the which one friar Preacher, named Thomas Dunhed, and one Clarke were assenting, for which cause he and other were imprisoned at Ponke. It was therefore decreed by the cruel woman the Quene, through the subtil deuisse of her said Scholemaster, that Thomas of Gomey, and John Maltrauers knights, hauing receiued him from the keeping of the earle of Leicester, shoulde carry Edward the olde king about whither they woulde, so that none of his well willers shoulde haue access to him, or vnderstand where hee made any long abode.

And to these two wicked Traitors, authoritie was giuen by the biggish sort, that into what soeuer part of the kingdome they bent themselves, that all gouernours and keepers of the Castles shoulde suffer them to eniole their offices and homes during their pleasure, vpon paine of forfeiture of goods, landes, and life, if any shoulde denie them. By meanes of which authoritie Henry earle of Leicester, through commandement of king Edward the third, deliuered the olde king by Indenture to Sir Thomas Berkeley, and Sir John Maltrauers, and they brought him from Kenilworth, to the Castle of Corfe, then to Bristol, where for a season he was kept shutte vp in the Castell, untill it was vnderstande by certaine burgesles of the towne, who for his deliuerance conuened themselves ouer sea. Wherefore in a dark night, the keepers of Edward conuey him thence to Berkeley.

These

Articles of  
E. the second.

These tormentors of Edward exercised towards him such cruelties, unto whom it was not permitted to ride; but he it were by night, neither to be a man, or to be female of ante. When he came, they forced him to take bread: when he would sleep, they would not suffer him, neither when he was hungry would they give him such meats as he desired, but such as he loathed: so that he spake, was contrary by them, who gave it out most slanderously, that he was madde. And thoughtfully to speak, in all matters they were quite contrary to his will, that either by cold, watching, or unwholesome meats, for melancholy, by some infirmities he might languish and die. But this man being by nature strong to suffer paines, and patient thereof Gods grace to abide all griefes, he endured all the denials of his enemies, for as touching poplions, which they gave him often to drinke, by the benefice of nature he dispatched away.

Edward the  
second crowned  
with hay.

These Champions bring Edward towards Berkeley, being guarded with a rabble of hel-houndes, along by the Grange belonging to the Castle of Berkeley, where that wicked man Gomey, making a crowne of hay, put it on his head, and the soldiers that were present, scoffed, and mocked him beyond all measure, saying, A prut, auaunt Sir king, making a kinde of noise with their mouths, as though they had started: they feared to be met of any that should knowe Edward, they bent their iourney therefore towards the lesser hand, riding along over the parish grounds, lying by the river of Severne. Spoke over, desiring to disguise him that he might not be knowne, they bestowed mine for to haue as well the haire of his head, as also of his beard: therefore, as in their iourney they traualled by a little water which ranne in a ditch, they committed him to light from his horse to be shaven, to whom, being set on a moale hill, a Barber came unto him with a bales of colde water taken out of the ditch, to shave him withall, saying unto the king, that that water should serue for that time. To whom Edward answered, that would they, would they, he would haue warme water for his beard; and, to the end that he might keep his promise, he began to weepe, and to shed teares plentifully. At length they came to Berkeley Castle, where Edward was shut up close like an anchor. Isabell his wife taking it grievously that her husbands life (which she dearly loved) was prolonged, made her complaint to her Scholemaster Adam de Orleton, saying that she had certaine dreames, the interpretation whereof she mistook, which if they were true, she feared lest, that if her husband be at any time restored to his olde dignitie, that he would burne her for a traitor, or condemne her to perpetual bondage. In like sort the Bishop being grieved in his owne conscience with this like feare. The like feare also strooke the hearts of other for the same offence: therefore it seemed good to many of great dignitie and blood, as well spiritual as temporal, both men and women, that all such feare should be taken away, desiring his death. Whereupon these wrote letters colourably written to the keepers of Edward, greatly blaming them, for looking so slenderly to the king, suffering him to haue such libertie, and notwithstanding him so delicately.

Spoke over, there is a prime motion made unto them, but put in such sort,

as if it might be some halfe done, that the death of Edward would not be midling unto them, whether it were naturall or violent. And in this point, the great deceit of Sophisters sheweth in force, set downe by the Bishop who wrote thus:

*Edwardum occidere nolite timere bonum est.*

Kill Edward doe not feare is a good thing.

By thus:

To seeke to head King Edwards blood

Refuse to feare I count it good.

Which sophistical saying is to be resolved into two propositions, whereof the first consisteth of these words, to wit, *Edwardum occidere nolite*, doe not kill Edward, and the second of other three, that is, *timere bonum est*, feare is a good thing, so seeme to perswade subtilly from murdering of the king: but the recitours of these letters, not ignorant of the twisting, changed the meaning thereof to this sense, *Edwardum occidere nolite timere*, to kill Edward doe not feare: and afterwards these two words, *bonum est*, it is good, so that they being grafted, turned a good saying into euill.

The Bishop being thus determinately purposed touching the death of Edward, and warily providing for himselfe, if by any chance he should be accused thereof, craftily together that the authority which he gave by twisting, might seeme to be taken expressely contrary to his meaning, by reason of accenting and pointing of the same.

To conclude, the murderers of Edward hoping to haue founde both Isabell and the Bishops to be their trustie friends, they found them earnest persecutors of their enterprise, quite denying what sooner they had devised against Edward, yea, they were greatly busied in devising most cruel death for them, so that the murderers being quite dismayed, wist not what to doe: but they wrote the letters of Isabell, the Bishops, and other conspirators, being confirmed with their owne handes and seales, which the Bishops refused not, but confessed to be his and others, but construed them to another sense, accusing them to be false interpreters of his letters, and of his owne authority threatened them, untill hee forced them to runne away. Thus much touching the letters.

Now when King Edward was brought unto the Castle aforesaid, hee was courteously received by Thomas Berkeley then Lord of the Ex, who was allowed 100. shillings the day for the time: But the tormentors had received their letters of government over the Castle, the said Thomas is commanded to use no familiaritie with Edward: wherefore Thomas Berkeley both he and she departed thence to other his dwelling places: And Edwards persecution continuing to his death, beganne to take effect. For after this he was shut up in a close chamber, where, with the stench of dead carthasses, laide in a Cellar under him, he was miserably tormented many daies together, in such sort, that he was well nigh suffocated therewith. And that paine was almost intolerable unto him, It appeareth by the complaint he made on a certaine

day.

King Edward  
shaven with  
cold water.

King Edward  
murdered.

day at the chamber window, certaine carpenters then working on the right side thereof, hearing the same. But those tyrants perceiving that this terrible stench was not of a sufficient force to cause the death of this ballant man Edward, one night being the 22. of September, they came rushing in upon him sodainly, as he lay in his bed, with great and heauie featherbeds, beeing in weight as much as 15. strong men could beare, wherewith they oppressed and strangled him by smothering. Into whose also they thrust a plummer's boozing piron, being made red hot, vp into his bowelles, through a certaine instrument like to the end of a Trumpet, or glister pipe, put in at the fundament, burning thereby his inward parts, promising thereby least any wound being founde in the kings bodie, might cause his tormentors to answer for committing open treason, and therefore suffer just punishment. In this sort was this foule knight oppressed, crying out with a lowd voice, so that many as well within the castle, as without heard it, perceiving it to be the crye of one that suffered violent death, which caused many of Barkley, and also of the castle (as themselves affirmed) to take compassion the reof, and to praise for the soule of him that was then departing the world. And this was at the ende of Edward of Carnaruan, being betrayed as is aforesaid: but to colour the matter that they might some guilelesse in this case, Isabel and the bishop of Hereford laboured to cleare themselves by banishing and outlawing of Thomas Gorney, and John Maltrauer, laying as it were all the fault upon them.

This Thomas Gorney flying to Paris, and there lying hid bytill the space of three yeres, was at length espied and taken, and as he was brought towards England, there to haue receiued iust and worthy punishment for his deserts, he was beheaded on the sea, fearing that if he had bene brought into England, he would haue accused diuers other great personages. The other, to wit, John Maltrauer, living in great contrition and repentance, spent a long time in Dunwich land. Thus far out of Thomas de la More, a worshipfull knight, that then lived and wrote in the French tongue what he saw with his eyes, or heard credibly reported, by them that saw, and some that were actors. All which was at the sale. Sir Tho. de la Mores request translated, and more orderlie penned in the Latine tongue, by Walter Baker, alias Swinborne, Canon of Winchester Diocess.

Now to conclude this hissoy, of the raigne and end of King Edward the second, called of Carnaruan, for that he was borne there: he was deposed on the 25. of January, in the yere of Christ 1326. when he had reigned 19. yeres, six moneths and od daies, and was murdered on the 21. of September next following, being the feast of S. Mathew the Apostle, in the yere of Christ 1327. whose death was not published till after the feast of all Saints, and he was buried at Gloucester on the feast daie of S. Thomas the Apostle, or 21. of December. He had issue by Isabel his wife, Edward, which was elected king, and to whom he resigned in his life: John of Elham earle of Cornwall, that died at the towne of S. John in Scotland without issue: Ioane of the Toctoe Queene of the Scots and Elianor Countesse of Gueldar, that died young.

King



Edward the third bozne at Windsor, about the age of fourtene yeres, after the deposing of his father, began his raigne the 25. day of January, in the yere of our Lord 1326. after the account of the Church of England. He was crowned at Westminster, on the first day of February, by Walter Reignolds Archbishop of Canturburie. This Prince was endued with passing beauty and fauour, of wit proud, circumpect, and gentle of nature: of excellent modestie and temperance. He aduanced such persons to dignities, as did most excell other in innocencie of life. In feats of armes he was very expert, as the noble enterprises by him atchieued doe well declare. At the beginning of his raigne, he was chiefly ordered by his mother Isabel, unto whom was assigned so great a dowrie, that the third part of the kingdome did scantlie remaine to her sonne.

The inhabitants of the towne of Warre in Suffolke, assembled themselves in warlike manner on S. Lukes day last before passed, in the twentieth yere of Edward the second, and besieged the abbey of Warre, bent the gates, beat and wounded the monks, bare out of the abbey all the gold, silver, ornaments, books, Charters, and other writings, with the assay of their coine, stamps, and all other things pertaining to their Mint: and all other goods, as Wasse, Pewster, Iron, Lead, &c. They also bent many houses about the abbey, and in the towne, pertaining to the Abbot, with his manors in Berton, Wickenham, Rugham, Oldham, Hergeneshurp, Pewster, Whippes, Westle, Kilsby, Angham, Ferneham, Wedwell, Haberdon, and others, with all the coine in the same manors, & done away the horses, oxen, kine, swine, sheepe, &c. They drew the monks out of their Abbey and put them in prisons, & after brought them againe to their Chapter house, where they forced them to search Charters at their pleasure, &c. For the which facts, the malefactors were this yere by vertue of the kings commission directed to Thomas Earle of Norfolk, Sparshall of England, Thomas Bardolfe, and others, apprehended and conuicted: nineteen of them were hanged, and one pressed to death. After this, the whole inhabitants of the Towne, for that they had not stayed the malefactors of their enterprise in the beginning (as they might haue done) were amerced to pay the Abbot toward his dammagens 140000. pound. Nevertheless, the Abbot and Couent at the kings request (who was there present with his Nobilitie) forgave and remitted to them 122333. pound five shillings eight pence of the summe: and for the rest bled such fauour, that if they truly payd 2000. markes in twentie yeres following, and obserued their covenants for good order and quietnesse, they forgave them all the rest.

About this time, the like stirre was made against the monks of Canturburie: whereof I find recorded as followeth.

King Edward preparing an army into Scotland, commanded the Bailiffes and Citizens of Canturburie, to furnish him twelve horsemen, and send them

Tho. de la More.  
Gual. Baker of  
Swinbrook.

Regist. of Burie.  
John. Pricton.  
The Abbey of  
Warr Spalden.

1327

Comments of  
Barp antrac  
ed.

Record. Eadef.  
Christi. Canon.

Record. Eadef.  
Christi. Canon.



Epistles of  
the second.

These tormentors of Edward exercised to wards him sheweth cruelly, and without it was not permitted to rise; but as it were saying so, neither to let him man, or to beleave of any. When he came, they forced him to this torture: when he would sleepe, they would not suffer him, neither when he was hungry would they give him such meates as he desired, but such as he loathed: curie word that he spake, was contradicted by them, who gave it out most dangerously, that he was madde. And shortly to speake, in all matters they were quite contrary to his will, that either by colos, watching, or unwholesome meates, for melancholy, by some infirmities he might languish and die. But this man being by nature strong to suffer paines, and patient through Gods grace to abide all griefes, he endured all the deathes of his enemies, as touching poplins, which they gave him often to spinke, by the benefit of nature he dispatched away.

Edward the  
second crowned  
with hay.

These Champions bring Edward towards Berkeley, being guarded with a rabble of bel-boundes, along by the Grange belonging to the Castle of Wyke House, where that wicked man Gomey, making a crowne of hay, put it on his head, and the foulmouths that were present, scoffed, and mocked him beyond all measure, saying, A prut, anaunt sir king, making a kinde of noise with their mouths, as though they had started: they feared to be met of any that should knowe Edward, they bent their journey therefore towards the heath hard by, riding along over the sparrysh grounds, lying by the river of Severne. Spawner, desiring to disgrace him that hee might not be knowne, they betwixt mine say to shawe as well the haire of his head, as also of his beard: whereupon as in their journey they travelled by a little wood which ranne in a ditch, they commanded him to light from his horse to be shaven, to whom, being sit on a moale hill, a Barber came unto him with a basen of colde water taken out of the ditch, to shave him withall, saying unto the king, that that water should serve for that time. To whom Edward answered, that twentie they would they, he would have loarne teat or for his beard; and, to the end that he might keepe his promise, he began to weepe, and to shed teares plentifully. At length they came to Berkeley Castle, where Edward was shut up close like an anker: Isabell his wife taking it grievously that her husbands life (which she deprecates) was prolonged, made her complaint to her Scholemaster Adam de Orelton, saying that she had certaine dreames, the interpretation whereof she mistook, which if they were true, she feared tell, that if her husband be at this time restored to his olde dignitie, that hee would burne her for a witch, and condemn her to perpetuall bondage. In like sort the Bishop being grieved for his owne conscience, sheweth like feare. She like wise also sheweth the benefit of offer for the same offence: wherefore it seemed good to many of great dignitie and blood, as well spirituall as temporall; both men and women, that such feare should be taken away, desiring his death: whereupon there were letters colourably written to the keepers of Edward, greatly blaming them for looking so tenderly to the king, suffering him to have such libertie, and not rising him delicately.

Spawner, there is a plain motion made unto them, but not in such sort as

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

as if they should have said, that the death of Edward would not be without hanging to them, as they it were natural to be violent. And in this point, the great detest of the poplins that in those, it sheweth by the Bishop who wrote them, and would shew, and what you will.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.

Edward the second.



King Edward  
murdered.

day at the chamber window, certaine carpenters then working on the right side therof, hearing the same. But those tyrants perceiving that this terrible death was not of a sufficient force to cause the death of this balliant man Edward, one night being the 22. of September, they came rushing in upon him suddenly, as he late in his bed, with great and beanie featherbeds, beeing in weight as much as 15. strong men could beare, where with they oppressed and strangled him by smothering. Into thome also they thrust a plummers bozngy iron, being made red hot, vp into his bowelles; through a certain instrument like to the end of a Trumpet or glister pipe, put in at the fundament, burning thereby his inward parts, providing thereby least any wound being founde in the kings bodie, might cause his tormentors to answeare for committing open treason, and therefore suffer just punishment. In this sort was this brave knight oppressed, crying out with a lowd voice, so that many as well within the castle, as without heard it, perceiving it to be the crye of one that suffered violent death, which caused manye of Barkley, and also of the castle (as themselves affirmed) to take compassion therof, and to praye for the soule of him that was then departing the world. And this was the ende of Edward of Carnarvan, being betrayed as is aforesaid: but to colour the matter that they might seeme guiltlesse in this case, Isabel and the bishop of Hereford laboured to cleare themselves by banishing and outlawing of Thomas Corney, and John Maltruen, laying as it were all the fault upon them.

This Thomas Corney flying to Sparlils, and there lying hid p'ssulle the space of three yeres, was at length espied and taken, and as he was brought towards England, there to haue receiued iust and worthy punishment for his defaults, he was beheaded on the sea, fearing that if he had bene brought into England, he would haue accused diuers other great personages. The other, to wit, John Maltrauers, living in great contrition and repentance, spent a long time in Dutchland. Thus far out of Thomas dela More, a worthy full knight, that then lived and wrote in the French tongue what he saw with his eyes, or hearde credibly reported, by them that saw, and some that were actors. All which was, at the last, by Thoma dela Mores request translated, and more orderlie penned in the Latine tongue, by Walter Baker, alias Swinborne, Chanon of Winsey bestowes of Wilt.

Now to conclude this history, of the raigne and end of king Edward the second, called of Carnarvan, so that he was borne there: he was deposed on the 25. of January, in the yere of Christ 1326. when he had reigned 19. yeres, 8. moneths and od daies, and was murdered on the 21. of September next following, being the feast of S. Mathew the Apostle, in the yere of Christ 1327. whose death was not published till after the feast of all Saints, and he was buried at Gloucester on the feast daie of S. Thomas the Apostle, or 21. of December. He had issue by Isabel his wife, Edward, which was elected king, and to whome he resigned in his life: John of Elham earle of Cornewall, that died at the towne of S. John in Scotland without issue: Joane of the Tokeze Duene of the Scots and Elianor Countesse of Guelbar, that died young.

King



Edward the third borne at Windsor, about the age of fourtene yeres, after the deposing of his father, began his raigne the 25. day of January, in the yere of our Lord 1326. after the account of the Church of England. He was crowned at Westminster, on the first day of February, by Walter Reignolds Archbishop of Canterburie. This Prince was endued with passing beauty and fauour, of iust proudent, circumped, and gentle of nature: of excellent modestie and temperance.

He advanced such persons to dignities, as his most excell other innocence of life. In feats of armes he was very expert, as the noble enterprises by him atchieued doe well declare. At the beginning of his raigne, he was chiefly ordered by his mother Isabel, unto whom was assigned so great a dowrye, that the third part of the kingdome did scantlie remaine to her sonne.

The inhabitants of the towne of Burie in Suffolke, assembled themselves in warlike manner on S. Lukes day last before passed, in the twentieth yere of Edward the second, and beseged the abbey of Burie, bent the gates, beat and wounded the monks, bare out of the abbey all the gold, silver, ornaments, books, Charters, and other writings, with the assay of their colles, hammers, and all other things pertaining to their spirit: and all other gods, as Wasse, Pelster, Iron, Lesb, &c. They also bent many houses about the abbey, and in the towne, pertaining to the Abbot, with his manors in Berton, Wachenham, Inggham, Olbham, Hernigelbury, Pewts, Walthipster, Wethle, Kiteby, Inggham, Sferneham, Medwell, Haberdon, and others, with all the cozne in the same manors, & drove away the horses, oxen, kine, swine, shepe, &c. They drew the monks out of their Abbey and put them in prisons, & after brought them againe to their Chapter house, where they forced them to search Charters at their pleasure, &c. For the which facts, the malefactours were this yere by vertue of the kings commission directed to Thomas Earle of Northfolke, Marshall of England, Thomas Bardolf, and others, apprehended and committed: nineteen of them were hanged, and one pressed to death. After this, the whole inhabitants of the Towne, so that they had not stayed the malefactours of their enterprise in the beginning (as they might haue done) were amerced to pay the Abbot toward his dammages 140000. pound. Whereupon, the Abbot and Couent at the Kings request (who was there present with his counsaill) forgave and remitted to them 122333. pound five shillings eight pence of the summe: and for the rest used such fauour, that if they truly payd 2000. markes in twentie yeres following, and obserued their tenants for god order and quietnesse, they sozgaue them all the rest.

About this time, the like stirre was made against the monks of Canterburie: whereof I find recordeed as followeth.

King Edward preparing an army into Scotland, commanded the Bailles and Citizens of Canterburie, to furnish him twelve hoxenmen, and send them

Ann. reg. 1.

Thoma dela More.  
Qual. Baker of  
Swinbrooke.

Regist. of Burie.  
Inch. Priston.  
The abbey of  
Burie in Suffolke.

1327

Commons of  
Burie excused.

Corporation  
of Burie.

Record. Bodl.  
Christi Church.

to Newcastle, toward which charge, the citizens required aid of the Monks: who answered them, that without the assent of the king and their archbishop, they would not agree therunto, for so much as the kings of England had founded their Church in free and perpetuall almes. Whereupon, William Chylham Bapteste, and many Commons of the cite, assembled themselves in the preaching friers Churchyard, conspired and ware against the Monkes, as followeth.

- 1 That they would ouerthrow the pentices, windowes, and milne, belonging to the Monkes.
- 2 That no Citizen should dwell in any house belonging to the Monkes.
- 3 That all rents belonging to the Monkes of Canterburie should be gathered to the use of the Commons.
- 4 That no man should lend or sell to the Monkes any victuals.
- 5 That they should sell all the hoxles and beasts that came into the cite with cartiage to the Monkes.
- 6 That all such Monkes as came forth of their house should be spoiled of their garments.
- 7 That a trench should be cast, to stoppe all men from going in or coming out.
- 8 That euery Pilgrime should at his entring, sweare that he should make no offering.

9 Also, that euery of those commons aforesaid should weare on their finger a ring of gold of those that belonged to Thomas Becket.

Cro. pet. College.

Sir Iohn the Carles brother of Henault, came to helpe Edward the third against the Scots, with five hundred men of armes: which Henaults and the Englishmen fell out by chance on Trinitie Sunday at Poike, where eightie of the Lincolnshire men were slaine, and much of the cite of Poike was burned: and the Englishmen slaine were buried vnder a stone in Saint Clements Churchyard in Fosegate.

Joyned to  
ward Scots  
land.

The king went against the Scots that were entred England, as farre as Stanhope Parke in Wardeale, where they were besieged thre dayes, but they escaped. James Douglas one night secretly entring the English campe, came nere to the kings Tent to haue taken or slaine him, but his Chaplein being a bold man and well armed, with some other being slaine, he with much adoe got backe unhurt.

This yere also king Edward the second was murdered on the 22. of September, as is before declared.

Edward the  
sister to France.  
An. reg. 2.

This yere died Charles king of Fraunce the third brother, which was brother to the Ladie Isabel Quene of England, mother to king Edward the third: by whose death the succession of the kingdome of Fraunce came to the said Edward, but it was vsurped and possessed by Philip de Valois uncle to the said Charles, who did intrude himselfe by force.

Edward the  
third marked.

King Edward married Philip daughter to William Carle of Holland and Henault, at Poike the five and twentieth of Februarie: she was sisters daughter to Philip de Valois aforesaid.

A War

A Parliament was holden at Northampton, in which a shamefull peace was made betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, so that David the sonne of Robert Bruce, seuen yeres old, married Ioane of the Tower king Edwards sister, at Berwik the twelfth of Iulij. Also the king made the Scots charters, the tenour whereof was unknowne to the Englishmen: but all was done as it pleased the old Quene, Roger Mortimer, and Iames Douglas. The Scots made many taunting rimes against the Englishmen, for the fond disguised apparell by them at that time used: amongst the which this was fastened vpon the Church doores of Saint Peter toward Stangate:

Parliament at  
Northampton.

Peace with  
the Scots.

Long beards heartlesse,  
Painted hoods widelesse,  
Gay coates gracelesse,  
Makes England thriflesse.

Scottish  
taunts.

Walter Reignolds Archbisshope of Canterburie, deceased after he had 84 Archbisshop 13. yeres, 9. moneths, and 20. dayes, and was buried at Canterburie, to whome succeeded Simon Mapham Doct. of Diuinitie. Thomas de Cobham Bisshop of Worcester also deceased, to whome succeeded Adam de Orleton in that Bisshopricke.

In a Parliament at Salisbury, the king made thre Carles, Iohn of Gloucestre his brother Carle of Cornewall, Roger Mortimer Carle of the March, and Iames Butler of Ireland Carle of Desmond. From this Parliament the Carle of Lancaster, the Lord Wake, Henrie Beaumont, Carle Sparhall, and other noble men did absent themselves, not being far off from thence in armes, for the which the king was highly displeased: notwithstanding in Sommer following, they submitted themselves vnto the kings mercy, seeking his fauour.

Parliament at  
Salisbury.

Certaine men of this land, to the intent to trie what friends they had in England, craftily disguised that Edward the second king of England was alive in the Castle of Coziffe, but not to be seen in the day tyme, and therefore they bled many nights to make the wyes, & making vpon the towres and walles of the Castle, which being perceived by people of the countrey, it was thought there had ben some great king vnto whom they did these great solemnities: this rumour was spread ouer all England, to wit, that the old king was alive: whence it came to passe, that the Carle of Bent sent thither a frier preacher, to try the truth of the matter, who (as it was thought) hauing corrupted the porter of the castle with rewards, is let in, where he lay all the day in the porters lodge very close: and when night was come, he was willed to put on the habit of a Lay man, and then was brought into the hall, where he saw (as he thought) Edward the father of the king sitting royally at supper, with great maiesty. This frier being thus perswaded, returned againe to the Carle of Bent, and reported as he thought, what he saw: whereupon the Carle said and affirmed with an oath, that he would endeavour by all the meanes he could to deliuer his brother from prison.

Edward  
the second  
was  
to be alive.

The same yere at the earnest request of some, the king held a Parliament at Worcester, where, by procurement of the old quene, and Roger Mortimer,

As 2

the

specimens at  
Ston. p. 122.

Earle of Kent  
the kings uncle  
beheaded at  
Winchester.

An. reg. 3.

1229.  
Parliament at  
Boulogham.

Roger Spottis-  
mure appli-  
ca. 20.

the said Earle of Kent, and many other noble men and religious persons, to wit, the p[ro]vincials of the white Carmelite Fryers, and of the blacke preaching Fryers, and Fryer Richard Wilson were accused of conspiracie, touching (as it was said) the delivrie of the Kings father: which matter although it were but beuilled fantastic and a mere lye, yet the said Earle for certaine confessions which he made, and for certaine letters which were found about him, was there beheaded. The other, to wit, the p[ro]vincials of the P[re]dicants and Carmelites, were banished: but, the bishop of London was set at libertie, Robert de Taunton priest, and some certaine Carmelite Fryers and P[re]dicants, were condemned to perpetual prison. The death of the said Earle was the lesse lamented, because his family and servants had above measure afflicted the Commons, in taking by thylings (as they traualled) at the kings price, paying nothing or very little for it.

There was a Parliament holden at Bottingham, where Roger Mortimer was in such gloze and honour, that it was without all comparison. A man durst name him any other than Earle of March: a greater route of men waited at his heeles, than on the kings person: he would suffer the king to ride to him, and would walke with the king equally, step by step, and chéeke by chéeke, neuer preferring the king, but would go for most himselfe with his officers: he greatly rebuked the Earle of Lancaster, cousin to the king, for that without his consent he appointed certain lodgings for noble mē in the towne, demanding who made him so bold, to take up lodgings so nigh vnto the queen: with which words the Constable being greatly feared, appointed lodging for the Earle of Lancaster onemyle out of the towne: and like wise were lodged the Earle of Hereford, Iohn de Bohune of Essex, high Constable of England, and others. By which meanes, a contention rose among the Noblemen, and great murmuring among the common people, who said, that Roger Mortimer the Quēens Paragon, and the kings Master, sought all the means he could to destroy the kings blood, and to usurpe the Regall Maiestie: which report troubled much the kings friends, to wit, William Mountacute, and other, who for the safegard of the king, swore themselves to be true to his person, and drew vnto them Robert de Holland, who had of long time been chiefe keeper of the castle, vnto whome all secret corners of the same were knowne. When vpon a certaine night, the king lying without the castle, both he & his friends were brought by torch-light through a secret way vnder ground, beginning far off from the said castle, till they came euen to the Quēens chamber, which they by chance found open: they therfore being armed with naked swords in their hands, went for wards, leauing the king also armed without the dore of the Chamber, leaue y his mother should espie him: they which entred in, slew Hugh Turpinton knight, who resisted them, Master Iohn Neuell of Wyndesore, giuing him his deadly wound. From thence, they went to ward the Quēens mother, whome they found with the Earle of March ready to haue gone to bedde: and hauing taken the said Earle, they ledde him out into the hall, after whome the Quēne folloved, crying, *Bel filz, bel filz, ayes pitie de gentil Mortimer*, Good sonne, good sonne, take pitie vpon gentle Mortimer: for the suspected that

that her sonne was there, though she saw him not. Then are the keys of the Castle sent for, and euery place with all the furniture is yielded up into the kings hands, but in such secret wise, that none without the castle, except the kings friends, vnderstood thereof. The next day in the morning very early, they hying Roger Mortimer, & other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout & crying (the earle of Lancaster then blind, being one of them that made the shout for) towards London, where he was committed to the Tower, and after ward condemned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on S. Andrewes daie next following, and then drawne to the Glines, and there hanged on the common gallows, whereon he hung two dayes and two nights by the kings commandement, and then was buried in the Gray Fryers Church. He was condemned by his Wares, and petitioner was brought to answer before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Carles of Lancaster, Winchester, Gloucester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle had that law himselfe, which he appointed for others. The causes of his death laid against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the murdering of the Kings father: Secondly, for that he had receiued a great summe of money, whereby the kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where he gave a signe vnto the Scots that they should die.

Thirdly, for that he caused certaine ancient deeds and Charters to be burnt, wherein the king of Scots stood bound vnto the king of England: and especially for that he had caused a contract to be made betwixt the kings sister, and David the sonne of Robert le Bruce.

Fourthly, that he had vnprofitably consumed a great deale of treasure which he found in the kings treasure, and in the treasure of the Carles of Winchester and Gloucester.

Fifthly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixthly, for being an euill Counsellor to the king, and to the Quēne mother, and for being overmuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Burford knight, brother to sir William Burford that was Justice, and Iohn Deuereux Esquier, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the kings fathers cruell death, but he could not be suffered so to doe. Iohn Mautreuers was attaint for the death of Edmond Earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murdering king Edward the second. Mautreuers restored the 25. of Edward the third, and the heiress of Mortimer in the 28. of the same king.

King Edward, the bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and berie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had been Merchants, hauing with him scarce fiftene horsemen. He left Iohn of Elgham his brother, wrote our of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Apriill, & then held a great Tournament at Wodstocke in Kent. The fiftenth of Iune was bozned vnto H. Edward his first sonne at Wodstocke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The king toke into his hands all the lands assigned to his mother,

An. reg. 4.  
1330.

Tournament  
at Wodstocke.  
Edward the  
blacke Prince  
bozned.

Parliament in  
Cheap at London.  
Adam Meri.  
Rob. Auerber.

Wate Haruett.  
W. Shep.

Ann. reg. 5.  
1331.

Edm. Bailiol  
reigned the  
Crown of  
Scotland to  
King Edward  
of England.  
Hospital at  
Leicester.

John Mandevill

mother, and anel left her a thousand pound the yere. About the feast of S. Machy, there was very solemn. Tysing of all the shute Carles, Barons, and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Condoite nigh Soper Lane, which lasted the dayes, where the Quene Philippe, with many Ladies fell from a Stage, notwithstanding they were not hurt at all: wherefore the Quene took great care to save the Carpenters from punishment, and though her prayer (which she made on her knees) she pacified the King and Councell, whereby she purchased great love of the people.

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yere, that the come in the felde could not ripe, so that in many places they began not Haruett till Epiphanius. The house of Exorton got not in their wheate till Hallowtwe, and their Pease not before S. Andrewes tide. The Ponkes on Albalwyn day, and Partlemas day, were served with Pease greene in the coods, in stead of Peases and Apples.

King Edward held a solemn Christmas at Wils in Somersetshire, which he continued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made, to please the King and his guests.

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to John King of Scots, came into England, which Edward had ben before that time banished out of Scotland. At his coming, he declared what right he had in the Kingdome. Henry Beaumont Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vrosecuill Earle of Arundell, David Earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Baron of Stafforde, Fitz Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of England, to recover the said Kingdome and lands due to them, but the King having regard of the peace lately made, and also for his sisters sake Quene of Scots, would not suffer them to leade an armie through his land, wherefore the said Lords getting a flet of ships, entered the sea, and sayling toward Scotland, landed at Bunkhozne, where the Earle of Gylfe, and Robert Bruce, halfard son to Robert Bruce, with ten sh. Scots resisted them nere unto Dunfermeling: but the Englishmen put them to flight, and slew many. After ward, to wit, on S. Lawrence day, they had a fore conflict at Gledesmoze, where two thousand Englishmen overcame fourtie thousand Scots. By reason of the great thyng of the multitude amongst themselves, five Carles, & many other were thrynged to death. On the morow, the Englishmen toke the Towne of S. Johns, well furnished with victuals.

The seven and twentieth of September, Edward Bailiol was crowned King of Scots, but after ward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remayned under his protection many yeres after.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, high Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poore impotent people provided for with all things necessary.

Edward Bailiol, and the foresaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, unto whom came many other Noble men of the Realme

of England voluntarily, serving of their owne charges, and besieged Berwike.

The King of England gathered a great power, and besieged Berwike, which at length was yielded for want of victualles. During this siege, the Scots sought many wayes to remove the same, leuving a great armie over al Scotland; but coming to the siege, they could not bring their purpose to effect, yet still prouoking the Kings armie to battell: whereupon at length the two armies appoynted to fight, and setting out upon Halidowne hill, there cometh forth of the Scots campe a certaine stout Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the two armies challenged al the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Robert Venale knight, a Dorsetshire man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword & brane, marcheth toward the Champions meeting by way a certaine blacke mastiffe Dogge, which waited on the Champion, whom with his swoord he boldly strake, and cut him off at his lornes, at the sight whereof the master of the Dogge slaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also after ward, this worthy knight cut off. After this Combat both the armies met, but they fighting scarce half an houre, certaine of the Scots being slaine, they closed their armie (which was in thre) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pittes, for the space of five miles. There were slaine of them eight Carles, 1300. Horsemen, and of common soldiers 35000. at a place by Berwike, called Bothull, nere unto Halidon.

In the meane season the Scots had besieged the castle of Bamburgh, in which at that time the Quene was: but when they heard of the slaine aforesaid, they left the siege and fled. The towne of Berwike yielded to the King of England both the castle and the Towne, who placing garrisons there, he sent Edward Bailiol, and other Nobles to keepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius, in the next Parliament holden at Berwick castle, and did homage unto the King by oath, who received of the King for yielding up of Berwike unto him, many honors and preferments: not withstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellion, who holding Dunbar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury.

This yere, William Elsing Mercer of London (obteyning the Kings licence) made a new Hospitall of an old house of Gunnes by Creeplegate with, in the wall of London, and placing Chanons Regular there, he became their first Prior, endowing the same with Lands for the reliefe of the poore and impotent.

Lewes de Beaumont Bishop of Durham deceased on the 28. of September, and was buried at Durham, he builded a wall of stone about the citie of Durham, and a hall with a Chappel at Spidleham, unto him succeeded Richard de Bury by the Kings appointment.

Also Simon Mepham Archbishop of Canterbury deceased about the fourteenth of October, after he had late five yeres, some monthes, & was buried at Canterbury.

Ann. reg. 6.  
1332.

Challenge of  
courtesy by  
Turnebull.

Turnebull a  
challenger as  
winner in  
combat.

Battell at  
Halidon hill.

Ed. Beaumont  
ward of  
Scotland.

Edm. Spittle,  
John Leyland,  
Lib. Triant.

Canterburie. Into whome succeeded at the kings request Iohn Straford Doctor of Lawe Cluill, Bishop of Winchester. And on the first of December, Adam de Orleton, first Bishop of Hereford, then of Worcester, was translated to Winchester.

Edward Baylioll King of Scots, held a Parliament at Galloway, to the which came the noble men of England, and made claime for their lands and possessions which they had in Scotland, and so returned peaceably into their Countrey.

Ann. reg. 7.

1333.

Parliament at  
Works.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wallingford, and immediately after, the Quene was deliuered of a daughter named Isabel Woodstocke.

The King summoned a Parliament to be holden at Poike, the same to begin on Monday the second weeke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the king of Scots (called Conquerour) although he were warned to be there, yet he came not, but sent messengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Bellemount and William Mountacute Carles, and certaine other Barons and knights, who signified, that the King of Scots Conquerour could not be there without great daunger, so; that certaine Scottes lay in the Islands ready to do him damage.

King of Scots  
do damage.

At the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, the said king of Scots Conquerour; did his homage to king Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tyne, and not long after that king Edward take homage of the Duke of Wyntaine, for the Earldome of Richmond.

Parliament at  
London.

In a Parliament at London it was told the king, that the Scots had taken Richard Talbot, and sixe other knights, and had slaine many souldiers: wherefore the king toke a fiftenth of the Laite, and a tenth of the Clergie, to the intent the malice of the Scots might be bridged.

Universitie at  
Oxford for  
William.

This yere in the moneth of November diuers masters and schollers of Oxford withdrew themselves to Stamford, minding there to have begunne an Universitie, without licence of the King obtained in that behalfe: whereat the King being offended, did by proclamation utterly forbid it, & suppressed it.

King Edward  
certain Scots  
land.

King Edward went toward the Marches of Scotland, and wintered in those coasts, but understanding that the Earle Dacels was traitterously turned to the Scots, and Henry Bellemount besieged by the Scottes, he entered Scotland, and raised the siege, and then kept his Christmas at Roxburgh, which castle he repaired. Presently after the feast of the Epiphanie, the French king sent messengers to K. Edward, to wit, the Bishop of Auxerres, and certaine Lords, to treat a peace for the Scots, who waited for an answer in England till mid-lent, and then at Nottingham a truce was granted unto them till the feast of S. Iohn next coming, that in the meane time a Parliament might be holden of matters concerning peace, and the state of both the kingdomes: in which Parliament holden at Poike, it was decreed that the K. should passe with his armie through Scotland, beyond the Scottish seas, the which thing was quickly performed & done: but the Scots desirous to fight a field, they feigned that they would have peace, to obtaine the which, many came about the feast of S. Michael, and chiefly the Earle of Dacels:

Ann. reg. 8.

1334.

Parliament  
at Poike.

where;

whereupon it came to passe, that after ward the Earle of Hereford being taken prisoner at Edenborough, was sent to be kept prisoner in England, and Richard Talbot was ransomed for two thousand five hundred markes, but the Earle of Dacels willing to shewe that he was truly revolted to the king of England, rode against the Scottes at a siege of a certaine castle, and falling into the hands of his enemies, because he would not yield, he was slaine with thirtene of his men.

After the feast of Saint Michael, the king continuing still in the marches of Scotland, was daily entreated by messengers from the French king, concerning some peace to be made.

About the feast of S. Martine, Edward Bohune a noble man, was drowned in the Marches of Scotland: for as he was dining a bottle of Cattell over a riuer, he felt himselfe in daunger, causing his guide to ride besyde him through the water, where through the smoothnesse of the stone whereon the water ran, his guide not being able to take sure footing fell downe, with his master being armed, and besyde any helpe could come, they were drowned in the bottome of the channell.

John Bohune  
drowned.

Iohn Archbishop of Canterbury went over the Sea to Philip de Valoys king of Fraunce, requesting of him the continuance of peace and amitie betwixt the two kingdomes to be maintained. Secondly, that all townes and castles taken besyde time by his father, should be restored to the King of England. Thirdly, that the said French King should sweare, neuer to give aid to the Scottes against the King of England: under which conditions, the two Kings of both Realmes should prepare to trauaile towards the Holy Land, and to fight against the enemies of Christ. But the French King accounted the King of England not worthy of his friendship, so long as he continued warres against the Scots his friends, whome he said were iust men. Unto the second petition he would not otherwise consent thereunto, than if all charges were repaid againe which his father Charles de Valoys laid out in the warres of Gascoigne. Thirdly, he said, that he was a friend and lover of iustice and equitie, which he would neuer swaue from, neither for friendship, nor affinitie, but he would by all means be comid, molest and bere all breakers of the peace of the kingdom of Scotland: so; (saith he) there shall neuer be perfect peace and quietnesse among Christians, before the King of Fraunce sit in place of iudgement for the right of the Kingdome of France, England, and Scotland.

Upon Saint Clements night, through abundance of waters, but specially high waters, in the Thames, all the cattell and beasts nere thereunto were drowned, and the land made unfruitfull by salt waters.

King Edward had a tenth of the Clergie, and also of the Burgeses, and a

Ann. reg. 9.

1335.

Attenth of the Commons. About the feast of Whetecost, he held a Parliament at North-hampton, where leaving the Prelates, States, and commons debating about matters, himselfe secretly rode to Berwike, and there taking with him a few men of armes, he went to Saint Johns Towne, which he strengthened with trench and

Parliament at  
North-hampton  
1335.

Howdela Morn.

and ramplice, and sent his Carles, with the king Conquerour, to make an rode vpon the Countrey, and to see what Scots they could finde would resist them: but none durst abide their coming, but hid themselves in billes, Woods, and Marshes, and in the meane time many Carles and Barons came, and submitted themselves to King Edward vpon conditions as fol loweth.

These be the poynts agreed betwixt the Councell of the Kings of Eng land and Scotland on the one party, and Alexander Mowbrey, Geoffrey Mow brey, Godfrey de Roos, William Bullocke, and Eustace de Lorey, hauing full powler from Dauid Stravulgi, Earle of Daffels, and Robert Steward of Scot land, to treate, accord, and affirme all poynts enterparled and to be enterpar led betwixt the said kings, and the Earle, and Steward, as appeareth by their letters patents of either partie.

First it is accorded that the said Earle Daffels, the great men, and all o ther of the communalitie of Scotland, which shall come in the same conditi ons, shall haue life and member, lands and tenements, fees and offices within Scotland, which they ought to haue by inheritance or right, those except, which shall be surprisid by common assent.

Item, that they shall be pardoned of imprisonment, and of all manner tres passes by them done in the Realmes of England and Scotland from the begin ning of the world, vnto the date of these presents.

Item, the Earle Daffels, and Alexander Mowbrey, shall haue lands, tene ments, possessions, and fees in England, which they had at their departure, after the homage done at Newcastle vpon Tyne.

Item, that the franchises of the Church in Scotland shall be maintayned, after the ancient vsage of Scotland.

Item, that the lawes of Scotland in Borough Townes, & Shireuokes, within the lands of the king of Scotland, be vsed after the ancient vsages and custome of Scotland, as they were vsed in the dayes of king Alexander.

Item, that the offices of Scotland be ministred by people of the same na tion, yet not withstanding, that alwaies the king of Scotland may put such officers in as shall please him, of what nation soeuer they be.

Item, that all those that within the conditions of the Earle Daffels haue lands within the lands of the king of England in Scotland, shall haue againe the same lands, tenements, possessions, offices and fees, as they had them at their departure, after their homage done at Newcastle vpon Tyne, except those that shall be surprisid by common assent.

Item, that if they be employed for their landes and tenements aforesaid, that they haue their defences and recourries in Court where they ought to haue.

Item, as touching the demand which the Earle Daffels claime, that the king of England ought to acquite his lands in England which he hath in gage for eight hundred markes, the king neither ought, nor will do it, but as touch ing the Spanoz of Wyppingsdone, which the said Earle laide to pledge for two hundred and fiftie pounds, it is accorded that if the said Earle do come within

one

one yeare, after the date of these presents, and will acquite the Spanoz, the king shall cause that he haue the same Spanour.

Item, as touching the Castle and Landes of Chilling, it is accorded that the said Earle be in the same poynt that he was before at his departure, and haue his recovery by lawe, and the king promisseth in god faith that he will cause that he may haue the land, without delaying either partie. And touch ing the lands which the said Earle claime, that he haue in Norfolk, of the which he hath charters, it is accorded that his charters being seen of the kings Councell, he will doe reason.

Item, that in case any man surmise treason vpon the said Earle, he may defend himselfe by his bodie, according to the lawes and blages of Scot land, and on the marches, and that all those that be within these conditions, haue the like graunt.

Item, as to the pardon which William Ramsey knight demaundeth for the trespassse by him done to William Lord Mountague, to wete, for beating down his castle of Houghton, the same William shall be ready to doe according to that that shall be aduised by the Kings of England and Scotland.

Item, that the said Stacie de Loraine haue his lands and tenements which he ought to haue within the Realme of Scotland, and if any man haue tres passed towards him, he shall haue his recovery by law. Written at Saint Johns Towne in Scotland the 18. of August, Anno 1335.

Philip Quene of England did beare her second sonne named William, at Hatfield, who shortly after died.

About the feast of the Epiphanie, the King and the Archbishop returned out of Scotland, to the buriall of Iohn of Eltham, Earle of Cornewall, brother vnto the King, who deceased at Berwike in the moneth of October, and was buried at Westminster. At which time, the King kept a Parliament at London, which began on the Sunday after Saint Matthes day: and on the first Sunday in Lent, he made his eldest sonne Edward Earle of Chester, and Duke of Cornewall. He made also five other Carles, Henrie of Lancaster (sonne to Henrie Earle of Lancaster) Earle of Derby, Hugh Audley Earle of Gloucester, William Bohune Earle of North-hampton, William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, William Clinton Earle of Huntingdon, Robert Vfford Earle of Suffolke, to the which Robert he at that time gaue the Spanoz of Bale court, in the Parish of Saint Giles without Cræplegate of London, commonly called to this day the Barbican, because in olde time the same had ben a Burgekening, or watch-tower for the citie.

The same day, the King made twentie Knights, to wit, Sir Edward Mountacute, Sir Thomas Somerton, Sir Ise, Sir Darcy Richard, Sir Dam wory, Sir John Poultney, Sir de Mere, Roger Banant, Roger Hilary, Sir Boling broke, Sir Butterel, Sir Simon Swanland, William Scot, William Bassier, Robert Sodington, William Zoules, Sir Cogshall, Roger Sangraule, Thomas de la More mine Authoz, and Iohn Strache.

In the same Parliament it was enacted, that no wooll growing within the Realme of England, should be transposed out of the same, but that it should

An. reg. 10.

Parliament at London.  
Dukes and Carles created.  
W. Shepshed.  
H. de la More.

1336.  
Barbican at London.

Will. Shepshed.  
H. de la More.  
made knights.

Tho. de la More.

Woolle cloth  
bri to bee con-  
uayed ouer the  
seas.

Whillegges  
giuent to cloth  
woykers.

be made into cloth in England, and that all *Woollers, Weavers, and Cloth-woykers* of euery degree, being sufficiently instructed, and cunning in their Art, from what countrey soeuer they came into England, should receiue and enioy certaine priuiledges, yea and moreouer should liue at the *Kings charges* out of the Exchequer, vntill they had prouided commodiously to liue by their Art. Although this Statute seemed at the beginning to be nothing profitable, yet in short time the Art of cloathing increased so much thereby, that it was twentie times more vfed than before.

Also it was enacted, that no man should after that time buy any cloth that was made beyond the sea, and that none should weare any *Furres*, but such as might dispend one hundred pound by yere.

The 20. of March, the *K.* granted by his Letters patents powler to the Chauncelloz of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to recceiue in his name yerele the oathes of the *Mayor, Bayliffes, Aldermen, and Burgeesses* of the town; which euer since hath so continued.

The. deli Mort.

After the feast of Saint Michael, a Parliament was holden at London, and a Conuocation was assembled by the Archbishop, wherein the Clergie granted a tenth for thre yeres, and the Commons a fiftenth, in consideration of the *Kings warres* which was hot in Scotland, and also to resist the French King, who made great bygges, and shewed great crueltie, so he outlawed, slew, and imprisoned all Englishmen, and confiscated the goods and cattels of all that were found in his kingdome of France, threatening that he would be reuenged for his friends the Scots.

Ann. reg. 11.

Moreouer, he let not so much as one towne or castle in the Countie of Aquitaine, or of *Poytiers*, that was not seized into his hands: whereupon King Edward sent into *Brabant*, to take vp all the wolle which Merchants had brought thither, and made sale thereof for ready money. He also wrote letters to the French king, exhorting him, that he would continue his old amitie, Sir *Walker* Many being the Ambassadors for the king of England, and desirous to renenge the blood of two Englishmen that were slaine comming a land so fresh water, in a certain Island, called the Isle of Agnes, nigh vnto *Flanders*, he caused all that he found in the said Island to be put to the sword, and toke prisoner the Earle of *Flanders* brother, who was capitaine of the Isle.

1337.

The. Wal-ling-  
gent to the  
number of  
3000. brient in  
a Church.

Certaine of the Island men being fled into a Church, were bent to the number of thre thousand, with the Church and all, by the Welshmen.

The warres being thus as aforesaid begun betwixt the two kingdomes, the rumour thereof came vnto the court of Rome, whereupon the Pope sent two Cardinals for the reformation and ordering of the peace betwixt the two kingdomes: who comming to Westminster, declared before the King the cause of their comming: wherevnto the *K.* answered, that although with out all reason they did seeme to restraine him of right and equitie, for that he ought to succed into the kingdome of his forefathers, the which his aduersarie Philip de Valois did deny him, expelling, murdering, and imprisoning his people, and taking away the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and Earledome of *Poytiers* without cause, maintaining the Scots and other rebels against him,

yet

yet these injuries notwithstanding, he was contented if they could take order for the quiet enioying of Aquitaine, and other lres belonging vnto him, which his predecessors did enjoy.

Moreouer, for the dismissing of all aid that the French king should giue vnto the Scots at any time of rebellion, for the which he offered him money, and also the marriage of his eldest sonne, and also to resigne all such rites and interest that he had to the kingdome of France.

The Cardinals being greatly comforted with this answer, departed, hoping that all warres were now ended. They toke with them John the Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of Durham, & Geoffrey Lord Segrave, who all together went on message with the Kings answer to the French King, hauing full authoritie to treat and conclude a peace.

These being so reasonable offers, could not pacifie the furious mind of the French King, who repoled great trust in the Scots, hoping by them, and through their meanes, quite to dispossesse, and to disinherit the king of England of all the title he had.

This yere on the 7. of October, King Edward began the foundation of his Colledge in Cambridge, that since was called the Kings hall, but now with Michael house, and Physicke hostell, all made into one by King Henry the 8. is called Trinitie Colledge.

Kings hall in  
Cambridge.

Also this yere because of the warres with France, king Edward caused to be confiscated all the goods of the Priories aliens in England, that is to say, such Priories as were selles to any monasteries in France. He let put the Priories to ferme, with all their lands and tenements, and rented them at his pleasure for the space of thre and twentie yeres: in the which time diuers of those Priories were purchased of the king, made free, and againe (as it were) new founded by Englishmen, as *Witburie* in the *Caslie*, and other; the residue not changed, were in the five and thirtieth yere of King Edwards raigne againe restozed to their lands: as shall be shewed when I come to it.

Priories aliens  
in England  
their goods  
confiscate.

Ann. reg. 12.

The King toke *Wool*, to a certain number of sackes, at a low price in euery countrey: the number that was set vpon *Saffordshire* was five hundred sackes, price nine markes the sacke of good wool: but nothing was paid. first, the *Wool* was vniuersally taken. Secondly, for the halfe, in whose hands soeuer it were found, as well Merchants as other. And the thirde time the King toke a fiftenth of the comminaltie, to be paid in wool, price of euery *stone* (containing fourtene pound) two shillings.

1338.

The King appointed also all the *Corne* and *glebe* lands to serue for his warres.

About *S. Margarets day*, King Edward, with *Quene Philip* his wife, and a great armie passed the *seas* with a *flotte* of five hundred sail of ships into *Flanders*, and so to *Cullen*.

Rob. Auebury.

The fourth of October, *Little Calles* well manned and furnished, came to *South-hampton* about nine of the clocke, and sailed the to towne, to the townsmen running away for feare: by the break of the next day they which fled, by helpe of the countrey thereabout, came against the *English*, and fought with them:

South-hamp-  
ton sacked and  
brient by the  
French wy-  
nars.



them, in the which skirmish were slaine the number of three hundred pyrates, together with their Capitaine a young Souldiour the King of Sicilie sonne. To this young man, the French king had given whatsoeuer he got in the kingdome of England: but he being beaten downe by a certaine man of the countrey, cryed Rancon, notwithstanding the husband-man layd him on with his clubbe, till he had slaine him, speaking these wordes: yea (quoth he) I know well enough thou art a Frenchman, and therefore shalt thou dye, for he understood not his speech, neither had he any skill to take Gentlemen prisoners, and to keepe them for their ransom: wherefore the residue of those Schinowayes, after they had set the Towne a fire and burnt it by quite, fledde to their Galleyes, and in their flying, certaine of them were drownd. And after this, the inhabitants of the towne compassed it about with a strong and great wall.

The king still maintaining his warres in Fraunce, on the euen of the Annunciation of our Lady, eleven gallies approaching to the towne of Harwich, they cast fire therein: the force wherof, by a contrary wind was staied, so that no great harme was done thereby. Furthermore, in the same yere about the feast of Pentecost, certaine Pyrates of Normandie and Genoa (shippes in Gallies and Pinnares) made a shew on the Sea about South-hampton, as they would haue come aland, and threatened to spoile the towne againe, but perceiving the townsmen ready to resist them, they returned to the Sea at night, but entred not, being put backe by the inhabitants: whereupon they sailed about the sea coasts, seeking to land in places lesse defended, and after came to Hastings, where they bent fishers cottages, with their boats, and slew many men. Also they made great shewes many times against the Isle of Thanet, Dover, and Folkestone, but in those places they did little harme, except to poore Fishermen: thence they sailed about to the hauens of Cornwall and Devonshire, doing in all places much harme to the fishermen, and such shippes as they found unmanned, they fiered. At length they entred Plimouth Haven, where they bent certaine great shippes, and a great part of the Towne: these were met by Hugh Courtney Earle of Devonshire, a knight of fourescore yeres old, being accompanied with many souldiours of his countrey, who hauing lost at the first front a fewe of his men which were slaine by the quarrels of the French, turned to fight with their hand to hand, and slaying many of the pyrates upon the land, chased the residue which fledde to take their gallies, and being not able to come nigh them by wading, they were drownd in the sea to the number of five hundred. Fewes being brought to the King living in Brabant, that diuers Boyses of England were spoyled with the Pirates, he declared to his friends, to wit, the Marques of Salicenne, and a certaine Cardinall, what great causes he had to reuenge himselfe vpon them, and in the end, was answered by the Cardinall as followeth.

The kingdome of Fraunce (saide he) is compassed about with a threde of Alke, which cannot be broken, by all the strength of the kingdome of England, wherefore my Lord king, you must say so, the coming of the Dutchmen,

men, and other your friends and confederates, the greater part wherof you now lacke. The King taking great dislike hereat, staying nothing at all, said, that he would ride into the land of Fraunce with banner displayed, and that there he would looke for that mightie power of the French men, and that he would either win the same against any man that should withstand him, or else honestly die in the field.

King Edward wintered at Antwerpe, where Duene Philip was deliuered of her third sonne Lionel after Earle of Ulster. The king took upon him to be Lieutenant of the Empire from the Duke of Banare, who helde himselfe as Emperour.

The first day of the assumption of our Lady, a suddaine inundation of water at Newcastle upon Tyne, surmounted the wall, and bare downe a peece of the Towne wall, a fire pearched in length nere to a place called Wall-knaw, where 160. men, and seven Chaplains and women were drownded.

In the Month of Marchy king Edward began to ride with banner displayed, and twelue thousand men of armes, against the French king, burning towens and castles wheresoeuer he came. In the first night being very darke, Geoffrey Lord Scrope one of the kings Iustices, led one of the Cardinalls, to wit, Bertrand de Mount Fauentine, of the title of our Lady, vp into an high Towler, shewing him the whole land about toward Fraunce, for the compasse of fiftene leagues, to be in euery place on fire, (saying these wordes,) Sir, both not this filken thred wherewith Fraunce is compassed, seme to you to be broken: the Cardinall answering nothing, fell downe as dead for sorow and feare.

In this fort King Edward made iourneyes into Fraunce daily, continuing the space of five weekes, and caused his armie to trauell in such sort, that they destroyed the whole Countrey of Cambzay, Tourney, Vermoden, and Landenew, excepting those Cities which were swozne to him, with Churches and Castles. The inhabitants of the Countrey fled, neither was there any man that durst resist his enterprises, although the French king had gathered great armies within the walled Cities, himselfe lying in the strong Towne of Saint Quintines, what time the Brabanters had determined to returne home againe, and were entred into their iourney, being forced thereunto, partly by want of victuals, and partly by the coldnesse of Winter which grew on fast.

The French king vnderstanding thereof, began to moue himselfe with his army toward the campe of the King of England, who gladly looking for his coming, called backe againe the Brabanters, and hauing received Letters from the French king, that he would soone battell against him, he sent him word backe againe, that he would stay for him three dayes, wherefore on the fourth day the king looking for the French kings coming, which would come no nerer then then two miles off, breaking bridges, and felling of trees, that the King of England might not follow him, he fled to Paris, whereupon King Edward returned by Hanonia into Brabant, where he continued almost the whole winter.

This thirteenth yere on the seventh of September King Edward, at War-

R. Edward made his entry into the Empire.

L. f. Mari. ebo. Rich. South. Newcastle drownded.

An. reg. 13. King Edward invaded France.

1339.

The French men spoyle the towne of Harwich.



William de la Poole made knight banneret for his good service to the king.

Record.  
This was farther to Sir Michael Lord Beauchamp earle of Suffolk and knight of the Garter, who had the gift of Suffolk that died at Agincourt the 3 of May, without issue, and with his own apparours and afterwards duke of Suff. beheaded the 26 of May the 6. of the Flemings.

Sir John of Bohemich knight and lord of the French king.

An reg. 14.

teine in Fraunce, gave unto William de la Poole for the succour of Monmouth frankely by him lent, and freely brought unto him in the coasts of Brabant, so as thereby his honour was preferred, which otherwise was in danger greatly to have been embased, to be honoured with the Militarie girdle, appointing him to keepe, and continue the state and honour of a Banneret: and he gave him the manors of Burfworth, and Skipp, with the appurtenances of two hundred and forty marks, in part of five hundred marks land yearly, more conveniently to maintain the same estate. And 260. marks yearly to be received of the customes in the port of the towne of Kingstone, until he were provided off two hundred and threescore marks land of yearly revenue. Finally, because William had delivred him, laying his owne goods and lands in gage, for recovering the kings right in Fraunce, the king granted, that if he recovered the rights of inheritance in Fraunce, he would further withbin the realme of Fraunce (in some competent place) give to him and to his heires, a thousand marks sterling by yeare.

In this winter time, King Edward grew into great friendship with the Flemings, who prepared at all times to shewe their felues as good subjects unto him, swearing to doe homage and fealty, upon condition that he would call himselfe king of Fraunce: and in token thereof, would from thenceforth give armes with flourdeleys, for otherwise they durst not obey him, for feare of the Popes curse, which was to be laid upon them, if at any timesthey rebelled against the king of Fraunce. Wherefore by the counsell of the Flemings, and consent of his noblemen, he agreed therunto, and toke upon him both the name and armes of the king of Fraunce. He also toke Flaunders under his government, the people whereof long after in all matters were to him obedient, as unto the king of Fraunce Conquerour. Touching the title and armes aforesaid, the French king said to certaine Englishmen sent unto him: Our cousin (quoth he) both wrongfully beare quartered armes of England and Fraunce, which matter notwithstanding both not much displeaseth us, for that he is descended from the weaker side of our kinne, and therefore as being a bachelor, we would be content to graunt him licence to beare part of our armes of Fraunce: but whereas in his scales and letters patents he nameth himselfe as well king of England as of Fraunce, and doth set the first quarter of his armes with leopards, before the quarter of Lilies, it doth grieve us very much, making apparant to the beholders, that the little fland of England, is to be preferred before the great kingdom of Fraunce. To whom sir John of Bohemich knight, made answer, That it was the custome of men in those dayes, to set the title and armes of their progenitors, before the armes and title of the right descending of their mother: and thus of dutie and reason (said he) doth my Lord the king of England preferre his armes.

King Edward being thus buied, he kept his Christmase at Gaunt: the partners of the Cinque Portes, embarked themselves in pinaces and small boats well appointed, who after the feast of S. Hilarie arrived at Bononia upon the sea coast, the weather being so cloudie and darke, that they could scarcely be perceived to be in the haven: they went in the lower towne nine

times

these galleys and foure great shippes, and twentie small boates with all their tackling, and all such howes as were situate nigh to the sea coast, among which was one great houle full of oares, saples, weapons, and other necessities, sufficient to furnish ninetye galleys, and men for them: at the length in a skirmish betwixt the townemen and the Englishmen, many of the land men were slaine.

About the beginning of Februarie King Edward returned into England, came unto Gaunt, where the Quene lay in childbed of her fourth sonne named John, he held a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Compoaltie granted him every ninth sheeke of Wool, every ninth Lambe, and every ninth sheefe of all sortes of coppe, and the Cleargie gave him a new tenth.

John of Gaunt.  
Parliament at Westminster.

1340.

Immediately after Easter, the Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke, being accompanied but with a few men, gave an assault unto the towne of Aile in Flaunders, which towne was confederate with the French king, but they chasing the Frenchmen to farre within the gates, the Percolices being let fall, they were beset with a multitude of men of armes, and being taken, they were conveyed into France, fettered and shackle with yron, although they had sworn to be true prisoners: they were drawn in a cart through the middle of every cite, towne, village and hamlet, with great shoutes and cries, rayling on them: and at length being brought to the presence of the French king, he would have most shamefully slain them, had he not been therewith perswaded by the counsell of the king of Boemia.

The seventh day of May the king gave to William Marquess of Flanders, and to the heires of his bodie, the Earldome of Cambryge, with the towne and castle, and twenty pounes by yeare in fee, and created him at Westminster by the girding of a sworde, whereof he also made him his charter with the gift of one thousand pounds of yearly rent.

Record.

King Edward kept his Whitsontide at Ipswich, for that he intended from thence to take his passage into Flaunders, but being certified that the French king had sent a great number of Spanish shippes, and also the whole fleet of France, to stoppe his passage, he caused his shippes of the Cinque Ports and other to be assembled, so that he had in his fleet great and small two hundred and threescore shippes.

Wherefore on the Thursday before the nativite of Saint Iohn Baptist, having a prosperous wind, he began to sayle, and the next day in the even of the sayd feast, they eschued the French fleet lying in Swine haven. Wherefore the king caused all his fleet to come to anchor.

The next day being the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, early in the morning, the French fleet divided themselves into three parts, and removed themselves as it were a mile, approaching towards the kings fleet.

Great fight on the sea, against the French.

Which when the king perceived, about nine of the clocke, having the wind and sunne on his backe, set forward and met his enemies as he would have wished, where withall the whole fleet gave a terrible shoute, and a holow of arrows out of long wooden bowes so powred downe on the French men,

13 b

that

that thousands were slain in that meeting, at length they closed and came to hand blowes, with pikes, pole-axes, and swordes, and some they wone from the toppes of shippes wherewith many were hained.

The greatnesse and height of the Spanish shippes caused many Englishmen to strike many a stroke in vaine. But to be shorte, the French shippes being overcome, and all the men spent of the first part, the Englishmen entred and took them.

The French shippes were chayned together in such sort, that they could not be separated one from another, so that a few Englishmen kept that part of the fleet: wherefore they set upon the second warde, and with great difficulty gaue the charge, which being done, was soner overcome then the first, so that the French men leauing their shippes, many of them leapt out boorde.

The Englishmen hauing thus overcome the first and second part of the fleet, and now hauing night drawing on, partly for want of light, and partly for that they were wearie, they determined to take some rest till the next morning, wherefore that night thirtie shippes of the third crewe slede away, and a great shippe called the James of Diepe, thinking to haue carried away a certaine ship of Handwich belonging to the Bishop of Canturbury was stayed: for the Gallies so slowly defended themselves by the helpe of the Earle of Huntingdon that they saved themselves, and their ship from the Frenchmen. The fight continued all the night, and in the morning the Frenchmen being overcome and taken, there were found in the ship above foure hundred men slain. Whereupon the King vnderstanding that thirtie ships were fled, he sent fourtie ships well appointed to followe them, ouer the which he made Iohn Grahbe gouernour: but what god spake he had is not knowen.

In the first company of shippes that were taken they found these conquered shippes, the Denis, the George, the Christopher, and the blacke Cocke, all which shippes were taken by Frenchmen at Sluce, and carried into Flanders.

The number of ships of warre that were taken, was about two hundred and thirtie barges: the number of enemies that were slain and drowned were about six and twentie thousand, and of Englishmen about four thousand, among whom were foure knights, Sir Thomas Mortimer the Kings cousin, Sir Thomas Latimer his sonne, Sir William Butler of Seoythorne, and Sir Thomas Poynings.

About the same time the Scots came with a great power into England, burning and spoiling all the Marches by fire and sword, and when they were returning with a great botle of rattel, the common people set upon them, took their botle, slaine many of them, and took more then fourescore Scots of good reputation, whom they kept for ransome, for the which fact the people men of the Marches were highly displeased.

About Lammas certaine french pirates gaue an assault to the Isle of Wight and suddenly entred it, but Sir Peter Russell knight, meeting them with the people of that Isle, put them backe againe, and made them to depart.

The French  
assault the Isle  
of Wight.

slaying many of them, in the which skirmish the said knight was wounded where he died. These pirates sailed thence toward the coast of Denmarke, and coming to Reigsmouth, they set fire on the towne and burnt it: from thence they sailed towards Blomouth, which towne was so defended, that they could not hurt it, but burnt the farmes and faire places nigh adioyning, and took a knight prisoner, whom they carried with them.

The same yere King Edward besieged Bourne, but upon intreatie made by the French, a truce was taken from Michaelmas till Epiphany, wherefore the King coming to Gaunt in Flanders, stayed there, looking for money out of England, which came not.

King Edward with eight of his men, sayning that he would ride abroad for his pleasure, secretly came into Zeland, where taking shippe, after he had layed three dayes and three nights, on St. Andrewes day at night about the Cockcrowling, he entred the Towter of London by water, being waited on by the Earle of Southampton, Nicholas Cantilope, Reinalde Cobham, Giles de Bello Campo, Iohn de Bello Campo knights, William Killesby, and Phillip Weston priests: early in the morning he sent for his Chancellour, Treasurer, and Iustices then being at London, and the Bishop of Chichester being his Chancellour, and the Bishop of Couentry his treasurer, he put out of office, minding also to haue sent them into Flanders, to haue ben pledges for money he owed there: but the Bishop of Chichester declared vnto him what danger might insue to him, by the Canons of the Church: whereupon the King dismissed them out of the Towter: but as concerning the high Iustices, to wit, Iohn Lord Stoner, Robert Lord Willowby, William Lord Scharshell, and especially Nicholas de la Bech, who before that time was Lieutenant of the Towter of London, and Sir Iohn Molens knight, with certaine merchant men, as Iohn Poultney, William Poole, and Richard his brother, and the Chancellours chiefe Clerkes, to wit, Maister Iohn de Saint Paul, Michell Wathe, Henry Stafford, and certaine of the Exchequer, as Maister Iohn Thorpe, with many other moe, the King commaunded to be imprisoned, some in one place, some in another, neither would he suffer them to be discharged thence, till he were thoroughly pacified of his anger conceived for not sending the money which should haue serued at the siege of Bourne.

This yere about Christmas, Henry Bishop of Lincoln, and Geoffrey Lord Scrope, chiefe Iusticiar to the King and his chiefe Counsellor died at Gaunt. King Edward kept his Christmas at Gilsford, and after that a great fasting at Kyng.

Also at Candlemas he kept a great fasting at Langley, for the honour of the noble men of Gasconia, which he trained by there in feates of warre. He made Robert de Bousier knight Lord Chancellour of England, and Robert Parrike knight treasurer, the one to succede the other. Also he sent out Iustifiers that should sit in every thre, to enquire concerning the rolled ours of the tenths and sixtenth, and of wittles, and to ouersee all officers. And because the Citie of London would not suffer that any such officers should sit as Iustices within their Citie as inquisitors of such matters contrary to their liberties,

King Edward  
returned secretly  
into England,  
and entered the  
Towter by night.

William Poole  
and Richard his  
brother.

An. reg. 15.

Justing at Kyng  
and at  
Langley.

Iustice of  
Canturbury,  
forbidden to sit  
in London.

1341.

Parliament  
at London.

liberties, the King provided that those Justices should hold their Sessions in the Tower of London, to make inquisition of the damages of the Londoners; but because the Londoners would not answer there, untill their liberties were fully confirmed, neither any such confirmation could be had either of the King, or his Chancellour touching Writtes and Charters in the Tower, there rose thereof such a great tumult, that the Justices appointed there to sit, said that they would holde no Session, till after Easter. Whereupon the King being highly offended for the said tumult, and desirous to knowe the names of them that had raysted it, could not understand but that they were certaine meane persons, who claimed their liberties: whereupon the King being pacified of his troubled minde, for that all the offences committed by the Londoners, the Justices breaking by all their sitting touching the said place. This yere within the quindene of Easter a parliament was holden at London, wherein the Carles and Nobles of the realme, with the commons requested, that the Charter called *Magna Carta*, and *Carta Foresta*, with all other liberties belonging to the Church and kingdome should be observed, and that the officers and chiefe rulers of the Kings house should be chosen by the pères of the realme, in the parliament: but these persons the King would not confirme, nor could abide to heare talked of.

About the beginning of the moneth of July, King Edward received letters from Lodowike Duke of Bauary, usurper of the Romane Empire, in the which pretending friendship betwixt him and Philip the french King, he signified that those warres which the King of England had begun in France, did greatly dislike him, and therefore desired that there should be concord and amitie betwixt the Kings of both realmes, the which to be performed, he offered to bestow some labour, requesting King Edwards letters of authoritie therof to treat and to conclude a truce for one yere or twaine, toward the end of which letter he addeth these words: The deputation and lieutenantship which we gave unto you, we doe for diuerse and sundry causes reuoke againe. Dated at Frankford the fourteenth of June in the seven and twentieth of our raigne, and of our Empire the fourteenth. To the which letters, King Edward wrote an inscription, in foote as followeth.

So the renowned Prince Lodowike, by the grace of God Romane Emperour, allwayes Augustus, Edward by the same grace King of France and England, Lord of Ireland &c.

King Edward kept his Christmase at Kenington besides Lambeth.

This yere John Maluene, Fellow of Oxiall Colledge in Dorseth, made and finished his booke entituled, *The Mitions of Pierce Plowman*.

King Edward gaue the Cardedom of Cambrydge to John Lord Benault, brother to Quene Phillip, and after kept his feast of St. Katherine at Newcastell, and his Christmase also. Untill this time David King of Scots threatened to leise an armie, and to enter the land, whereupon King Edward entered Scotland, and followed after David, who fled before him beyond the Scottish sea, working and spoiling all as he went, except Castles and Parishes, in the which the Scottes together with David their King hidde themselves. And

William

William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, hauing gotten a great flecte, entered an Island belonging to Scotland, where most victoriously he conquered it, and the same Ile being called the Ile of Man, the King gaue it to the conquerour frankly and freely to be possessed, and caused him to be called and crowned king of that Ile. When king Edward returning towards the south parts, kept solenne turneaments at Dunstable, being accompanied with two hundred and thirte knights.

The same yere was a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Archbishop of Canterbury, was reconciled to the king, before whom the Archbishop swore that although the king by his counsell and consent had done homage to the french king for the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and the Earldome of Devon, yet he neuer consented thereto as to be any hurt or prejudice to the king, or that by his counsell he might incurre fauour, or seeke to please the french King, but for that present time he thought it best to be done, both for the obtaining of peace, and also for the profite of the king and realme.

After this Parliament the king commanded flozenges of golde to be made at the Tower of London, that is to say, the penny of the value of five shillings eight pence, the halfe penny of the value of thre shillings foure pence, a farthing twost twenty pence.

In a Parliament at Westminster, in the moneth of May, the religious men that were possessours of lands, granted to the king, towards the maintenance of his warre, all their felwels and plate, aswell flax as golde, hoxes, carts and wagons, whereupon the kings treasure was notably enriched.

The same yere authoritie was giuen to the Kings escheiters, to enquire and certifie the Counsell of all such persons, which helde of the king any lands in capite, or by any other se, to the value of one hundred shillings, and that the names of all such should be enrolled and giuen by for record. Also certaine other were put in authoritie to signifye how many sufficient and able hitmen were in euery shire: also what other sufficient men were able to beare armour for the defence of their Countrey, and to see them practised with such kind of weapon wherein they had best skill: and being thus assembled in all parts of the realme, specially such as were of lawfull age, commaundement was giuen out, that they should be ready at the Kings commaundement to fight against their enemies.

King Edward and his nobles pertaine the derogation that was done to the Realme by such reservations, piousness and collations of benefices; as the Pope practised here in England, wrote to him, requiring, that like the Churches of England had been founded and endowed by noble and worthy men, to the ende the people might be instructed by men of their owne language, and that he being so farre off, could not understand the benefices, yet his predecessours, and he more then had ben used, by diuers reservations, piousness, and collations made to diuers persons, some strangers, and some enemies to the Realme, whereby the Realme and poples were carried forth, their cures not provided for: according to the founders minds, they therefore upon due considerations desired to him, that they

William Mountacute  
Earle of Salisbury,  
conquered, and  
was crowned  
King of Man.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

flozenges of  
golde.

Ann. reg. 17.  
1343.

in general livery  
of the  
whole realme  
of England.

Ro. de Auebury  
Qual. Hunting.  
foord.

could not suffer such enormities any longer, and besought him to revoke such reservations, p[ro]visions and collations wholy, to avoid such disorders, mischiefs and harmes as might ensue, and that the cures might be committed to persons mete for the exercises of the same, beseeching him further without delay to signify his intention, sith they meant to bestowe their diligence to remedie the matter, and see that redress might be had. Given in full Parliament at Westm[on]ster, the eighteenth of May, in the yere of our Lord 1343.

Many being called to ayde the King against the Scottes, but not being ready, they contributed their money, wherewith the King might hire soldiers in place of them that remained at home. This yere saith one witten booke in French, that Edward held a great feast at Windsor of 300. knights, and as many labours, with great outrage of expences and costs.

King Edward caused to be called together a great many of Artificers, to the Castell of Windsor, and began to build an house which was called the round Table, the floore whereof, from the Center to midde point into the compass, was an hundred fote, and the whole Diameter two hundred fote, and the circumference thereof is five hundred fote and thre quarters.

The same time Philip de Valois King of France, builded a round Table in his Countrey, to the end that he might allure the men of Barre of Germany and Italie, and so to keepe them from the King of Englands round Table.

King Edward in succour of John Mountfort Duke of B[er]kshire, and of his wife and children, who then remained in the Kings custody, sent the Carles of Southampton, and of Oxford, Hugh Spencer, and Richard Talbot knights, and Master William Killesby Clarke, every one of them having under them many men of armes and archers, into B[er]kshire, who entred therein, in despite of all their enemies which resisted them, making many conflicts. They took as well walled townes as other, with divers fortresses and castles, both by assault and surrender, by which means they had the whole countrey under their subjection, conquering till they came to the towne of M[ar]tine, where Charles de Blois met them with a great army. Therefore in the champaigne ground nigh unto M[ar]tine, the two armies made great and most fowle battell, wherein the worthinesse of both sorts did full well appeare: for they fought so stoutly, that in the first conflict it chaunced as the like had not ben sene: for the chiefe Captaines, Charles de Blois, to whome the French King had given the Dukedome of that countrey, and William de Bohune Earle of Southampton, who for the defence of the right of John de Mountfort, naturall heire and Duke of that land, the King of England had made a Generall over the armie of the Englishmen, fought so long with hand strokes in the fildoe that day, that no man but a liar could give more paine to the one then to the other. Thre times that day they being wearied on both sides, withdrew themselves to take breath, and then fell to it againe with spear and shield, and sword and target: but in the end the right worthie and stout Charles de Blois, his men fleeing away, was also forced to flee himselfe, wherupon

wherupon after many saine on both sides, the victory fell to the Englishmen.

King Edward sent over Henry Earle of Derby, sonne to the Earle of Lancaster his cousin, with more then five hundred men of armes, amongst whom was the Earle of Derby, and Walter de Maui, with many Archers into Gascoigne, with Ralph Baron of Stafford Seneschall of Gascoigne, who being come thither, the said Earle made fifty knights of his army, and after wanh many walled townes and castles, making many worthie skirmishes, and at length tooke the towne of Dagulstone by assault, to the keeping whereof they appointed Ralph Stafford, afterward they appointed thre townes towards other townes, as especially to Wigerette (so called for the strength thereof, and also called the chamber of France) and also to the towne of Saint John de Laruell, and to many other great and strong townes well fortified, which with great toiles and divers dangerous assaults they won: where the Earle of Derby and his souldiours undermining the towres and walles of the said towne, were very sore assaulted by them which defended it.

Thus he conquered cities, to townes, castles and fortresses, to the number of one hundred and fiftie, bringing a great part of Gascoigne under subjection, even to Toulouse, unto the which cite he did no damage, neither to the inhabitants thereof, but that he made them wonderfully afrayde: as certaine of them tolde me (saith my author) their feare was such, that the religious people were constrained to beare armour, and the Prior of the Carmelite Friars of our Lady of Toulouse, having a banner of our Lady in golde set in a feld of siluer, displayed the same, provoking thereby many to take armour.

About the second Sunday in Lent, the earles being fully fraught with booty, prisoners, gold and siluer, they returned towards Barbeur, where John de Valois, eldest sonne to the French king, being accompanied with a great number of hyed Dutch souldiours, besieged the towne of Agnolwone, and the captaines thereof the Earle of Stafford and other, so intrenched the same towne, that without great daunger the Englishmen could have no access unto them, but the Earle of Derby beate away them that besieged the cite, and elisions new victualled the same, notwithstanding they were not able to raise the siege, because they had so intrenched themselves without the towne, who refusing to fight in the fild, would answer, that they came not to pitch a feld, but to besiege a towne, wherefore they continued the same siege until the decollation of Saint John, but understanding then that the King of England chased his father Philip very sore to Cressie, and fearing that he should come very late to the ayde of his father, he gave up the siege, setting all his tents on fire, and fled in the darke, but the Earle of Stafford with his powder pursued them, cut off their talle, took a great many of their horses, and returned.

After this certaine bow-men are mustered in England, appointed to be sent over sea, who coming over, are layde in garrison for defence of the countrey. Also twentie thousand sackes of wolle are granted to the King. 20000. sackes of wolle granted to the King. Geoffrey de Harcourt a Bozman, came to the King requiring ayde against the French King, who wrongfullie with-helde his landes from him:

Ann reg. 18.

1344.  
The Wall of  
Round Table at  
Windsor.Round Table in  
France.

Thode la More.

Battle at  
Mortimer.

An. reg. 19.

R. A. Aubrey,  
1345.

Thode la More.

him; at his first coming he was seallie, and swore homaige to King Edward, but afterward he revolted.

Richard de Bury  
Bishop of Durham  
deceased. Thomas  
Bishop of Ely  
first succeeded.

Richard de Bury deceased at Aukland, when hee had late Bishoppe of Durham eleven yeeres, two moneths, and odder dayes, and was buried at Durham, unto whome succeeded Thomas of Hatfield the Kings secretary, by meanes of the Kings letters to the Pope: And when certayne of the Cardinales saide, that the saide Thomas was a light person, and a lay man: the Pope answered, truly, if the King of England at this time had made his request for an abbe, hee should haue obtained it. But Richard Bury is somewhat to bee remembred for example to other, hee was bozne nere Saint Edmundsbury, by his father Sir Richard Angarvill Knight, and his uncle Sir John Willowby his gouernour hee was first set to Grammar schole, and after sent to Oxford, from whence hee was called to teach Edward of Wintonse, then Prince: afterward this Richard was made principall rectour to Edward the second in Calcoigne, at such time as young Edward with his mother fledde to Paris, whose expenses beginning to faile, the said Richard came to them priuily with a great summe of money, for which cause hee was pursued to Paris where he lay hid in a steeple by the space of seuen dayes. After this hee was made Cosseter to Edward the third, then treasurer of the Wardrobe, then cleaerke of the priuie scale by the space of five yeeres, in the which time, whise he went to Pope Iohn. In the five and twentieth yeere of his age hee was consecrated Bishop of Durham, then was he made Treasurer of England, and after Chancelour, since the which time hee was sent thirke to the French King to claime the kingdome of France, and after that, to Antwerpe, and other places in Habant in embassage by the space of nine yeeres, hee was greatly delighted in the company of Clearkes, and had alwayes many of them in his family, among whom were Thomas Bradwardine, after ward Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Fitz Ralph Archbishop of Armaicham, Walter Burley, Iohn Mandit, Robert Holcot, Richard Kilwington, all of them doctors of diuinitie, Richard Wentworth or Benworth Bishop of London, and Walter Segreue Bishop of Chichester every day at his table, hee was accustomed to haue some reading: and after dinner daily hee would haue disputation with his priuie clearkes, and other of his house, except some by gent cause had let him. At other times hee was occupied, either in seruice of God, or at his bookes, whiche he bestowed for the reliefe of the poore eight quarters of wheate made into bread, besides the ordinary fragments of his house. Moreover, in coming or going from Newcastle to Durham, hee bestowed sometimes twelue markes in almes, from Durham to Stockton eight markes, from Durham to Aukland five markes, from Durham to Spidaleham an hundred shillings, &c. Hee was so delighted in Bookes, that hee had more (as was thought) then all the Bishops of England besides, hee bestowed many rich ornaments on the Church of Durham, hee busied an hall or house in Oxford, indowing it with revenues needfull for his schollers. And also provided in a library great store of Bookes, for the use of the whole Ministrie, as the said Bishop writeth himselfe in his booke entituled, Philobiblos, and

Chapleins to  
the Bishop of  
Durham, and  
their exercise.

Chapleins of  
Richard de  
Bury.

and appointed the masters of the Hall to assigne five schollers for keeping of the common library, &c.

The same yeere died Adam Tarkton Bishop of Winchester that had been long time blinde, after whom succeeded William Edendon treasurer of England.

This Edendon founded the monastery of Edendon, the religious brethren whereof were called Bonhomes.

The same yeere died Henry Earle of Lancaster, father to Henry Earle of Derby, and was buried at Leicester, in the monastery of canons, the King and both the olde and yong Quenes being present, with Archbishops, Bishops, Cardes and Barons, in manner of all the land, whose sonne was then in Calcoigne doing chivalrous acts.

This yeere the Scots, to the number of thirtie thousand, William Douglas being their leader, entred into Westmerland, and bent Carlisle, Penrith, with many other townes, wherfore the Bishop of Carlisle, with Thomas Lucy, Robert Ogle, and a great number, compassed them in the night season, and with lights and noise so disquieted them, that they neuer durst goe out for bidualles, nor giue their bodies to sleepe, but at the last Alexander Stragan stoutly prepared to goe out for bidualles, whom the Bishop and Robert Ogle mette, and with a speare thrust him through the body, so that the Scots were sone after ouer come and slaine.

The Earle of Northampton, and the other Lords in Brytaine committed certain castles wome by them in Brytaine, to the safekeeping of the faithfull captaines and souldiours, and then returned into England.

King Edward prepared to make a voyage into Normandy, his nauy being ready to transport him from Portsmouth and Dorchester, with the Cardes of Northampton, Arundell, Warwicke, Herecourt, Huntingdon, Drenford, and Suffolke, the Bishop of Durham, and Maister William Killesby cleaerke, every one of these leading a great army of souldiours well appointed, were embargued, and waited for the winde, from the first of Iune, to the sixt of July, and then hauing a good winde, they beganne to make saile with the number of one thousand shippes of burthen and pnales, and on the thirtieth day of July, they landed at Hogges in Normandy, where on the shoare of the Sea, King Edward made his eldest sonne Knight, and also Prince of Wales, and immediately the Prince made knights, Mortimere, Montacute, Rose, and other.

That night the King lodged in the towne of Hogges, and the next day the towne was bent by the army.

The night following King Edward lodged in Perrels. where he stayed five dayes, during which time, all the Countrey, with the Towne of Warberste, was by his men consumed with fire. From thence they departed to Melongis, which they set on fire: then they went to Saint combe Mount, which is nigh the sea, and to Garantam, thence to Serius, and to Saint Lewes, passing along unto the towne of Tournay, waisting all with fire, and that night the King lodged at Camartin, then to Gerin, being a religious house belonging

Common li-  
brary in the  
city.

Lib. Edendon.

Henry Earle  
of Lancaster  
deceased.

Scots entred  
England.

Scots ouer-  
come.

An. reg. 20.

1346.  
King Edward  
sailed into  
Normandy.

Tho. de la More.  
Tho. Walling.  
No. de Auebery.

The Kings  
sonne made  
Prince of  
Wales.

Hogges in  
Normandy.

belonging unto Cane, leaving nothing behind them unpoyled.

Afterward they made an assault, and entered the City of Cane, making their entrance by a bridge which was strongly defended.

There was slain an hundred and thre and fourtie knights, among the which was taken the Earls of Cleve, and Camberlinde Tankerull, with divers other capitaines, and of them of the Citie, were slain above one thousand thre hundred.

At this Citie the armie remained five dayes, and the spoile thereof they sold to those mariners which followed the coast as the King went. Then they went to the monastrie in the Towne of Toward, a verie strong thing, and well defended. Afterward, they came unto Argons by night, burning still as they went, till they came to the Citie of Licens, where they found the Cardinall of Clarimount, and of Paples, and one archbishop, who offered the King a treatie of peace, and there the King continued thre dayes, refusing to treatie of peace. Then they went to Kessentmoland, and to the Towne of Wyke, and lodged at Peter Burge, and after at Selesse upon Sayne, and there the Welchmen swamme through the water of Segan, and being resisted by the inhabitants, they slew many of them. When they passed nigh to the towne and Castell of Mount Darch, being strong places, and not assailable. This night he lodged at Lury upon Segan, nigh unto the good Towne of Louars, which they did burne. After, they passed by the towne and castell of Gallon, which they took, and bent, and lodged at Lingene, which is nigh the good towne and Castle of Wernon, which they touched not, and there they first entred into Fraunce, and the same night they bent the Castell of Roche Blanch, which standeth on the other side of Segan, and lodged at Fremble upon Segan. After that they passed by the Towne of Mount, lodging that night at Apoyne. On the next day they passed to Frignias, and the next day to the good towne of Poecie, where being a bridge to passe over the river of Segan, the French had spoiled it, but the King caused it to be redified: and the next day they came to Amias, where were thre Armies appointed to keepe the King from passing that way: but he slew thre hundred of them at the first charge, put the residue to flight, and spoiled their tentes, burning thre hundred and two cartes and wagons laden with crosebowes, quarrels, armour and victualles: the King staying there two dayes, they went to Greslie nigh unto Mountops, then to Antell: the next day they passed by the Citie of Gennepe, which they touched not, and so by Trosolours at the water of Some, where they lodged.

The next day they wanne the towne of Poys, and bent the castell. From thence they went to Argens, then to Achen, where they lodged. The next day they came to Spoell upon the sea side, the French men of Dabulle and the countrey came to the foydes side to hinder their passage, with whom the King had a close conflict, but the enemies were put to the worse, and more then two thousand slain, and the Towne of Croptoy taken and bent, and above thre hundred Germanes slain.

The next day they followed the King on the river of Some, and on the banks

Came in that  
maner by the  
gate of the  
ward the third.

banks side (where the King with his host were lodged) came traveling Philip de Valois the French King, with the Kings of Boheme and Palegre, leading an armie of men innumerable, divided into eight great battelles. King Edward sent to the French King, offering him free passage over the foyde, if he would come and chuse a place apt to fight a field in, but this Phillip went to another place of passage.

On the morrow King Edward remoned to Cressfield, where the armie of the French King met him. The King therefore set his sonne the Prince of Wales to gouerne the backward. The middle warde the earle of Portbampton. The third he took to guide himselfe.

The armie of the Frenchmen were deuised into nine troupes. The backward was committed to the King of Boheme. The French King commanded his banner called Millaine to be set vp, after which time it was not lawful vnder paine of death to take any man to saue his life.

This banner, that it might differ from his standard, had in it lillies of gold very brab.

On the other side, King Edward commanded his banner to be erected of the dragon, which signified fiercenesse and cruelty to be turned against the lillies.

These armies being thus appointed, rode in the feldes from one of the cloche untill the evening. About the Sonne setting, after the armies had rested, they beganne by the sound of Trumpets to give signe of battaille, but they themselves felt the force of the English Archers, and as for their quarrels, they fell short a great way. Moreover, their footemen being placed among their owne horsemen, were by them (when they were gauled with the English shotte of arrowes) overrunne and troden vpon, that a great outcry was made as if were to the starres, and the whole foyme of the array was broken, and they fighting with the English armed men, are beaten downe with poles.

In this so terrible bickering, the Prince of Wales being then but sixteenth yeeres old, shewed his wonderfull to wardnesse, laying on very hotely with speare and shield. This battell dured thre partes of the night, in the which time the Frenchmen gave five great assaults against our men, but at the length they being conquered, ran away.

On the morrow, there came foure armies of fresh souldiours to the French side, and making semblance as though their part had suffered no harme, they came against the Englishmen, and gaue them a fresh battell. On the other side, the Englishmen withstood them very stoutly, and after a sharpe conflict they forced their foes to flie, and in chasing of them together with them that were slain in the conflict, they slew thre thousand men in the said two dayes. There were slain in the battaille of Cressie, the Kings of Boheme and of Palegre, the Archbishop of Zahrinus, the Bishop of Poypone, the Dukes of Lozaine & Bourbon, the Earls of Alanfon, Harecourt, Aymarle, Sanoz, Pois, Mountbilliard, Pluars, and of Flanders, with the great Prince of the Hospital of Fraunce, and 4000. men of armies, beside common souldiours without number.

Th. de la More.

Battell of  
Cressie.

The French  
banner of the  
lillies signified  
no mercy vnto  
the flie in the  
side.

The third day after, King Edward passed by the Abbey of Mountney, and the next day they came to the town of Mountney, & from thence to the Burgh of Saint Joice, and after they passed over a fowde, and came to Newcastle, where they stayed two dayes, and from thence they came to Calets, which presently they entrenched to besiege, being the fourth day of September.

The French king in this meane time sent a number of Senowayes, and other hired scaldours, unto David king of Scots, earnestly requesting him that he would invade England with all his force: wherefore about the 7. of October, he with a mighty power entered England, passing along by Berwikke, which was strongly defended by the Englishmen, and so ranging over the forefrest of Alnewikke, they tooke a certaine mannour place called Ludey, belonging to the Lord Walter Wake, who yielded himselfe on condition to be ransomed, where (Selby a knight being desirous by law of armes to save his life) he was taken, which when it was known to David, he commanded him to be slaine: but Selby intreated for him, that he might be brought alive to the presence of David, who having obtained his request, he saileth downe before David, requesting his life for ransome, but he was againe adjudged to die. The malice of the tyrant was such, that he commanded two of the children of the poore knight to be strangled in sight of their father, and afterwards himselfe being almost madde for sorrow, was beheaded.

From thence the Scots passed forward, waiking along the Countrey, wherein were many farmes belonging to the monasterie of Durham, & coming within two miles of Durham, they tooke certaine of the Spokes, which they kept prisoners, for their ransome, making covenant with the residue for a certaine summe of money and coine to redeme their mannours from spoiling. The Englishmen of the marches staid before the face of the enemy, William de la Zouch, Archbishop of Porke, vicegerent to the king in the marches, calling together the bishop of Carlisle, the Earle of Anguise, the Lord Mowbray, the Lord Henry Percy, the Lord Ralph Neucl, Ralph Hastings, with all their apde, together with the archers of Lancashire, went towards the armie of the Scots, and on the even of Saint Luke, met them at a place called Bewze Parke, nere Hewils Trosse. The Scottissh nation not accustomed to fite, with stode them stoutly, and having head-pieces on their heads, and targets on their armes, preading fore upon the Englishmen, they abode the brunt of the archers: but the men of armes which were in the forefronts, gave their enemies many deadly wounds. The Marchall of the Scottes, Earle Patrick, who had the charge of the reereward, when he perceived his men to be beaten downe, he fled away with other that were puaile to his cowardlines: he being fled, the residue of the Scottes continuing faithfully with their king, stode about him like a round Tower, keeping him in the middle, who continued till there was scarce fortye of them left alive, of the which not one of them could escape away.

At length David their king valiantly fighting and fore hurt, an English of Northumberland, named John Copland took him, who with eight of his servants rode strait out of the field with the king, and so rode siffene leagues from

King Edward besieged Calets.

Sir Walter Wake and his sonnes cruelly slaine by the Scottes.

2 Battell of Durham.

from that place, to a castle called Argaine, the residue about him being taken by slaine, the Englishmen pushed the chafe after them toward Wretton, slaying and taking them as fast as Bradshott and Colbyge. In this great battell were taken David de Bruce king of Scottes, the Earle of Gentles, the Earle of fife, the Lord Paleolin Flemming, the Earle Wilton, William Douglas, William de Lenningstone, Walter de Haliburton, John Douglas, David de Anade, John de Saint Clere, William Mowbray, David fir Robert, William de Ramsey, Adam Moygne, John Steward, Roger de Kirkpatrick, John Hume, and William Morrey knights, James Sudelloure, James Lorn, Henry Delker Barohets. There were slaine in this battell the Earle of Porzise, the Earle of Straterne, also Alexander Stragy, John de Haliburton, Henry de Ramy, Naso de Ramy, Adam Nilkenon, Thomas Boid, John Steward, Allan Steward, David de la Hay, Edward Keth, John Crawford, John de Kindesey, Philip de Maldren, Henry Ramsey, Alexander Morey, Humfrey de Bois, Gilbert Inchmarren, Robert Maltallen, and his brother Humfrey Kirkpatrick, John Strange, and Patrike Hearing knights. There were many slaine in the chafe, but there were no more coate armours found in the maine battell then two bare reckened.

This battell was fought on the seventeenth of October. The prisoners were conveyed to London about Christmasse, David de Bruce except, which might not traueil by reason of two deadly wounds in his head with arrowes, but the second of January he was brought by, and conveyed from Westminster to the Tower of London, in sight of all the people, and there lodged in the blacke towke of the said Tower, nere to the Constables guard, there to be kept. About the feast of S. Math: the Apostle, the Earle of fife was at London drawn, headed and quartered, his head set on London Bridge, his quarters set by in foure parts of the Realme.

John Copland, that took David de Bruce king of Scottes at the battell of Durham (so is it called in the Record) for his seruice, King Edward made him a banneret, and gave him for his maintenance in that state five hundred pounds by yeare, after this manner, to wit, four hundred poundes out of the custome of the Citie of London, and one hundred poundes out of his custome of the Towne of Barwikke upon Tynde, untill such time as five hundred pound lands by yeare were given to him and his heires for ever. And more for his good seruice with one hundred men of armes, one hundred pound the yeare, out of the custome of the kings port of Newcastle upon Tyne, till the said John had paid for him and his heires one hundred pound land by yeare.

While these things were done in England, the King was buised at the siege of Calets, which towne is situated in the marches of Artops, being closed about with a double wall, and a double ditch, hard on the thore of the English sea, right over against the castle of Douer. And there is belonging to the same towne an haven, wherein ships may lie very safe without danger. This towne was sometime with the castle thereof very strongly built by the force and balancines of the Romans, for after that Julius Caesar had brought all France under his subication, he built Calets in Artops, and the castle of

King of Scots taken by John Copland Esquire.

John Copland rewarded by record.

An. reg. 23. 1347. Tho de la More. Calets besieged.

Calets builded by the Romans.

Chepstow



Castles of  
Chepstow in  
Wales, & Was-  
ter in Kent,  
built by the  
Romans.

Chepstow in Wenebedia, or South Wales, and the Castle of Dover in Kent, what time he had conquered Brytaine (as saith mine author,) King Edward cast a ditch about his campe, and laide his maine of ships against Caleis hawke, to the intent that the Frenchmen should make no invasions upon his landes ours, neither they within receive any victuals by water. The forman piers at sundry times take 15. of his ships, wherof some of them they carried away for their owne occupying, the other they burnt, and Sir Thomas Hach, with Sir William Borton Knights, as they were sailing into England, were taken prisoners on the sea. King Edward having fortified the siege, lay without giving any assault, knowing that it was not possible to fight with his enemies without great losse of men, considering the depth of the ditches, and height of the walles: neither would he erect any engines against the towne, for there wanted firme ground whereupon to place them. Besides that, if he should beate downe the walles, yet were the ditches so deepe, and full of salt water let in on every side, that they were able to withstand all the work, with little strength and defence. On that side of the Towne on which the Bolloniers were wont to victual Caleis, that is along on the Sea side, and especially when the shippes could not be suffered to passe by Sea, but along the shoare with small boates, the Earle of Northampton made a rampe, wherewith he kept away, & beat backe such boates, & after ward when the Armie of France had purposed to come with his ships of war to fight against our English ships that lay at the kege, thinking, & in the meane time, whilst they were in fighting, the small boates should passe to Caleis with victuals, the said Earle of Northampton meeting with him valiantly, put him to flight.

This siege during in such sort, from the feast of the Nativite of our Lady, all the whole winter, with a great part of the summer, and still warring stronger and stronger. On monday next before the feast of Saint James, the French King came to the castle of Guynes, with his eldest sonne John, and the Kings sonne of Boheme: and a great power, to have removed the siege from Caleis. Also the Emperour (promising by othe, that he would remove the siege either by warre or peace, or at the least, he would victual them that were besieged) came with his army towards the English campe, and lodged scarce a mile from thence, requesting by messengers a treatie of peace. He sent the Duke of Betenes, and the Carles of Bulone and Darminake, who paroling with the Duke of Lancaster, the Carles of Northampton and Huntington, touching a truce, could not obtaine their consent, whereupon after they had exercised a little warlike iusting, they returned to their Tents. The second day following, the French king offered the king of England a day of battell, which the king on certaine conditions accepted very gladly. In the meane season, they which were besieged, made known their state to y<sup>e</sup> french king by signes and tokens, for at his first comming, they within the Towne set up his ancient on the chiefe tower of the castle, and also they let out banners of the Dukes and Carles of France, and a little after the shutting of the evening, they made a great light on the top of one of the highest towers, which was towards the army of the Frenchmen, & therewithal they made a

great

great lights and noise with trumpets and drummes: The second night they made the like, but somewhat lesse. The third night a very small fire, giving light therewith a sorrowfull voyce, signifying thereby that their strength touching the keeping of the Towne, was quite spent and done. And the same night they took in all their flags and ancientes, except their standard. At the last, the day of battell drew on, against which time, there came out of England and Dutchland, toward the helpe of King Edward 17000. fighting men, whereupon the french King betimes in the morning of the second daye of August, making fire in his tents, Bedde, whose tale the Duke of Lancaster and Earle of Northampton cutting off, they flew and took many of them.

When they of Caleis perceived this, they took their standard downe, and with great sorrow cast it from the Tower, downe into the ditch, and on the satterday following, John de Vienna their Captaine, a man very skilfull in warlike affaires, opening the gates of the Towne, came out to the King of England, sitting on a little nagge, for that hee being lame on his left side could not well goe, with an halter about his necke, with the other burgesses and souldiours following on foote, bare headed, and bare footed, hauling hal- ters about their neckes.

The Captaine comming thus before the King, offered him a warlike sworde, as unto the chiefe Prince of armes amongst all Christian Kings, and as one that had taken that Towne from the mightiest Christian King by noble chivalry. When he delivered to him the keyes of the towne. Wherby, he requesting of him pitty, asked pardon, and delivered him the sworde of peace, wherewith he should give right judgement, spare and forbear the humble and lowly, and chasten the proude hearted.

The King receiving that which was offered him, sent the Captaine with fiftene knights, and as many Burgesses into England, enriching them with large gifts. The common sort of people, and such as he found in the Towne, being somewhat refreshed with the Kings almes, he commaunded to be safe conducted to the castle of Guines.

After the taking of the towne of Caleis, the souldiers at the kings commaundement took the Spanes of Sparks and of Hop, and with great difficulty they built in their forts, setting in order where walles wanted, hoggesheads filled with stones against the enemies, whilst the walles were a building within. Immediately after the taking of Caleis, there began in those parts a generall pestilence of the Aire, comming from the east part, into many other parts of the world, whereupon it came to passe, that a great multitude of people dyed. This pestilence gave occasion that certaine Cardinals were sent on the behalfe of the french King, to craue a truce from that time, unto the feast of Saint Barnabe next following, which was agreed upon on the eight and twenty of September.

The truce being taken as aforesaid, King Edward built a Castle at Rishbank, betwixt the towne of Caleis, and the havens mouth, to the intent to keep off all the enemies force of ships from the said towne: & he made Captaine

The french  
King sent  
W. Norwell.

Caleis pebble.

The other boys  
sawg was  
pauke.

Cutling.

sparks.  
hop.

Moody Aire.

Caleis at Rish-  
bank.

of

A rampe  
built at  
Caleis.

The french  
king came to  
raise the siege  
of Caleis.

The french  
king offered  
battell.



R. Edward  
returned from  
Calce into  
England, not  
without great  
danger of  
drowning.

An. reg. 22.

Commodities  
of peace.

1348.

of the towne Say John Montgomery, and thence conueyng the Queen and his eldest sonne, with a great company of noble men, he took his longney-wardes England by water, and being on the Sea, he was beaten with a tempest, that he lost many of his ships, and hardly escaped himselfe, notwithstanding he came on land the fourteenth of October, and so to London.

This peace being made, it seemed through England as a new summer followed, because of the plenty of all things, for there was no want of any name, but he had some of the pyses of Cane and Calceis, or of other cities beyond the Seas, whereof the maiesties being proud, did bragge in French and trones apparell.

At the feast of Easter, James Douglas, who was taken at Durham in the warres, and brought to London with the king of Scottes, was licenced to depart home againe, swearing to the king peace and fealtie, who afterwards liuing peaceably in the Marches, and being requested by William Douglas to ride a hunting with him, was by him comming behind his back most treacherously slain.

After Easter, the king held a councell, wherein it was decreed that none of his seruants should take by any viuals of any man against his will, nor but that he payd for it ready money, upon paine to bee punished and banished the court, Richard Talbot high steward of the kings house being appointed to see execution of that proclamation.

The Earle of Arrent was raked, arreigned, and committed, for that contrary to his faith and homage sworn to the king of England, he did againe beare armes against him, and so that sad he was dytome, hanged, and quartered. To this councell came two Carles, and two clerkes sent from the Princes electors, signifying that their election was made to the king, for the dignitie of the kingdom of Armaine. These messengers the king received with due honor, but answered them, that he would not take so greete honour upon his shoulers, untill he had the crowne of France, due vnto him, in peaceable possession.

A little after Easter, there were great Justings holden at Lincoln by the Duke of Lancaster, where were present many Ladies, with the Countesse, and also certaine messengers sent from the King of Spaine, for the lady Iane daughter to the king, that should be married to their master the kings sonne, whose her husband meeting, she died of the great pestilence, so that he followed her to the graue.

The same yere R. Edward with his eldest sonne the Earle of Marwick, and the bishop of Winchester, went to Calceis, from whence the king sent the Duke of Lancaster to Poenemre, to receive in his behalfe fealtie and homage of the earle of Flanders, which thing was by the said earle performed. John Stratford Archbishop of Cantuarie deceased, vnto whom succeeded John Vifard Doctor of Law.

Where began amongst the East Indians and Tartarians a certaine pestilence, which at length waied so general, infecting the middle right of the ayre so greatly, that it bestrafed the Saracens, Turks, Syrians, Persians, &

This is the  
first pesti-  
lence.  
The. Wal-  
king.

the Grecians, with a wonderfull, or rather incredible death, in so much that those peoples being exceedingly dismayd with the terror thereof, consulted amongst themselves, & thought it good to receive the Christian faith & Sacraments, for they had intelligence that the Christians which dwell on this side the Greekish sea, were not so greatly (more then common custome was) troubled with sickness and mortallitie. At length this terrible slaughter passed ouer into those Countreies which are on this side the Alpes, and from thence to the partes of France, which are called Hesperia, and so by order along into Germany and Dutchland. And the seventh yere after it began, it came into England, and first began in the townes and ports lonyng on the Sea coasts, in Dorsetshire, where, even as in other Countreies, it made the Country quite void of inhabitants, so that there were almost none left alive.

From thence it passed into Devonshire, and Somersetshire, even vnto Bristol, and raged in such sort, that the Gloucestershire-men would not suffer the Wyllow-men to haue any access vnto them, or into their Countrey by any meanes: but at length it came to Gloucester, yea and to Dors, and London, and finally it spred ouer all England, and so wasted & spoiled the people, that scarce the tenth person of all sorts was left alive: when Church-yards were not sufficient and large ynough to bury their dead in, they chose certaine fields appointed for that purpose.

Gualter Mayny, Lord of Mayny, borne in Cambray, who serued in company of Henry Duke of Lancaster in his great ad of Calceine and Guen, after this time made knight of the Garter in England, hauing a respect to the danger that might fall in tyme of this pestilence then begunne in England, if the Churches & Church-yards in London might not suffice to burie the multitude, he purchased a peece of ground called Spittle Croft (so that it belonged to the Garter and brethren of S. Bartholomewes Spittle) containing 13. acres and a rodde, without the barres of West Smithfield, & caused the same to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Bishop of London, in the which place in the yere following, was buried more then fiftie thousand persons, as is affirmed by the kings Charters which I haue seene, and also by an inscription fired on a stone crosse in the same place And in memorie thereof, the same Gualter Mayny caused vpon the same ground a Chappell to be builded, & after founded the same to be an house of Charter-house Monkes, in the yere. 1371.

Also about the same time, one John Cory procured of Nicholas Wyloz of the Church of the Holy Trinitie neere vnto Aldgate, one toft of ground neere vnto East Smithfield, for the buriall of them that died, that it might be called the Church-yard of the holy Trinitie: which ground he caused to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Stratford Bishop of London, in the which place King Edward the third, by consent of the said Wyloz and Conuent, founded the abbey of S. Mary of Grace in the yere 1359. placing therein an Abbot and Monke of the order of Cisterciars, which were white monks, and named the place Eastminster.

All suites and pleading in the Kings Bench, and other places so; a season ceased.

Records of the  
Garter.

Register of the  
Charter house  
for Carta.  
Charter-house  
at London  
by the towne  
of London.

An. reg. 23.

1349.

Roude Auebury  
Charter-house  
at London  
founded  
shew abbey  
by the towne  
of London  
founded.  
Libertine Lond.  
Lib. Eastmst.

Where few noble men died, among whom departed Iohn Montgomery, his Ladie: the Lord Clifles Capitaine of Caleis died at Caleis, and was buried in the white Friars at London. Of the common people, together with Religious and Clerkes, there died an innumerable sort, for no man but God onely knew how many. Where died from the first of Januarie, to the first of July, in the Citie of London 57104 persons, besides Ecclesiasticall spendicants and Dominikes. There was buried in the Church and Church-yard of Parmouth, in one yere 7052 men and women, before which time the personage there was worth 700. markes by yere, and afterwards was scarce worth ffortie pound the yere. This note was certified to King Henry the seventh in the 22. of his reign, & the same is written on the gates of the Church of Parmouth. This great pestilence began at London about the feast of All Saints, in the yere 1348. What time this pestilence had waiked all England, the Scots greatly reioycing, mocked and swore oft times by the deathe of the Englishmen: but the word of Gods wrath, thus consumed the Scots in no lesse numbers, then it did the other. It also waiked the Welsh men, and within a while passed over into Ireland, where it destroyed a great number of English people that dwell there, but such as were right Irishmen bozne, that dwell in the hilly countries, it scarcely touched, so that few of them died thereof. This plague continued sometime in one place, sometime in another, untill the yere of our Lord 1357. the same yere for a truce of small peace to be concluded, the Bishop of London, the Earle of Northampton, the Earle of Stafford, Richard Talbot, Walter Mayny knights, sailed over the sea into France, whom the Frenchmen met peaceably, but they would not agree to a final peace, unless that Caleis were restored to them againe, which would not be graunted: and the truce which was taken for a yere was continued. But the Earle of Flanders, who would not in any case receive conditions of peace, unless the French king were quite forsaken, notwithstanding his solemne oath, not long after entered into Flanders with a great power of Frenchmen, burning & killing where ever he came: but the people of the countrey with a few Englishmen withstood him stoutly, and gaue him a fore skirmish, in the which, beside that many Frenchmen were slain, the earle himselfe was forced to fle, for the which worthie acte, many knightes were made, amongst the which was Iohn de Filbert, an English man.

In the feast of the Purification of S. Iohn, the Quene was purified at Windsor, where were solemne Iusts, and running at the tilt, at the which, David king of Scots was present, and the Earle of Cleve, the Lord Tankerville, Lord Charles de Valois, and many other strangers captives, who by the kings licence were permitted to runne also at the tilt, at the which pastime the prize of the field was adjudged to the Earle of Cleve. After in Sommer season, these strangers passed their time in hunting, in the companie of the king, and other nobles of the Realme, at Claringdon in Northshire, and in divers other forests.

Whiles the king was thus occupied, the Frenchmen notwithstanding their truce, entered the marches of Britaine, but the Countes of Sabazer, with a few

men, who went out a foraging, take Thomas Dagworth knight, a man of great experience, who but with a few men, to wete sixteen armed men, entered the wood against these robbers, & invaded them, slaying to the number of thre hundred, but at the length being stricken five times in the face with quarels, all his men being first slain, he himself was thrust through the body with a sword.

About the feast of Saint Michael, more then 120. persons of Scotland, and Holland, comming through Flaunders into London, sometime in the Church of Saint Paul, sometime in other places of the citie, twice in the day, in the sight of all people, from the loynes, unto the heeles, covered in linnen cloth, all the rest of their bodies being bare, hauing on their heads hats with red crosses before and behind, every one in their right hands a whip with thre cordes, each cord hauing a knot in the midst, beate themselves on their bare bloudie bodies going in procession, some of them singing in their owne language, all the other answering them.

The same yere the Earle of Lancaster, the Barons of Stafford & Grey, Stocke, also the helres of the Lords Percy and Nevell, and the Lord Furniwall with Bartholomew Burwash, and divers other, about the feast of all Saints, passed over sea into Calcoigne, to delay the furious voyage that Iohn de Valois came to the French king had made in that Dukedome, greatly spoiling and waiking the same. Also the kings Counsell ordained, that none of the kings officers during the time of their offices, should receive any fee, gift, or reward of any man, except it were of the king himselfe.

Also this yere in the Countie of Dorset, nigh unto a towne called Chipplingdon, there was found a serpent hauing two heads, and faces like two men, one being shaped after the new tye of that time: another after the manner of the old attire, and it had great wings, after the manner of a flindermouse of Bat. Thomas Bradwarden Archbishoppe of Canturburie deceased, Simon Ilip succeeded.

About the feast of All Saints, king Edward being accompanied with the Carles of Lancaster, and Suffolke, and divers others, passed over the seas into Flaunders, and thence leading his armie towards France, the Frenchmen made meanes unto him to renewe their truce: and now the Earle of Flaunders submitted himselfe the third time unto the kings mercie & dominion. When the king returning toward England, to solemnizate the translation of Saint Thomas the Confessor and Bishop of Hereford, did with his presence and nobilitie honor the same, to the great experiences of Nicholas Cantulupus Baron, and cousin to the said Saint Thomas: during which feast and solemnitie, it was signified to the king by the Secretaries of Emericus of Padua, who was a seed man to the king of England, that on the fourteenth day of Januarie next comming, Geoffrey Charney knight, and many other French men should be received into Caleis, unto whom the said towne was sold by the said Emericus: but the towne being presently rescued by king Edward, the said Emericus of Padua with other Venetians continued in Caleis, being maintained there at the costs of the French king against the king of England, when he besieged it, who also after the yielding of it to the king of England, being

See Thomas Dagworth's name.

Ro. de Auebury Adam Merit.

As bloudy procession of publicans.

As serpent with two heads in Dorsetshire.

St. Edward sailed towards Flaunders.

Caleis like to have been betraped.

being pardoned both of life and limme, from thenceforth continued and dwelt as a feed man of the kings in the said Towne for the defence thereof. At that time the said Geoffrey was Lord of Gascon, a man more skillful in warfare than any French man in France. Wherefore he was greatly esteemed, even to the time of his death. His craftie deviser inducured by his letters, wherein he made promise of large gifts of gold, and other sophistical persuasions, quite to subvert the faith and loyaltie of the said Emericus.

Finally, this craftie deviser agreed with this false man, that for twentie thousand French crownes he should let in the French men to the Towne, and as much as lay in him, deliver by to the French men both the Towne and Castle. This bargain being most traitorously made, by oath and breaking of the Sacrament betwixt them, yet at this notwithstanding, he wrote letters unto the king touching the state of the whole matter, but very privately, how that he was ready to shew friendship to the French men, yet meaning to make frustrate their purpose, whereby they should be convicted of breaking the true, and also many of them should be taken to bee ransomed, wherefore King Edward speedily passed over, being accompanied with his eldest sonne, the Earle of March, and a few other, comming before the time appointed for the yeelding of the Towne, certaine daies. Therefore being come to Calais, hee lade certaine men of armes within the Mantles which were betwixt the outer gate and the inner part of the Castle, building a thinne and slender Wall before them newly set up, not made of plaister, but of counterfaste matter, which layned to the other Wall, craftily devised and made like the olde woocke, so that no man would iudge that any were enclosed therein.

Also hee caused the mainepostes of the drawe brydge to bee sawed almost in sunder, yet in such sorte, that armed horse-men might ride over it: and for the purpose he had a great stone, which was laid up in a hole made in form of an arch, being in the forefront of the Towler hanging over the Brydge, in which hee appointed a faithfull Souldier should bee in due time to throwe downe the said stone upon the Brydge, that with the fall thereof, the Brydge being halfe cut in two, should bee broken in sunder, and so that hole where the stone was laid, should bee wrought in such sort, that bee within should perceue through the hole how many did enter in: some were made privie to this practise, neither did many know of the kings presence or of the Wynde of Wales, who when they had wrought this feate, secretly conveyed themselves into the Towne.

The day before the time of deliverte of this Towne, Geoffrey Cheneysent fiftene of his faithfulllest men with the greater parte of the golde which was to bee payde, who should also trie the faith of Emericus, and the order of the Castle, who searching everie where, in everie Tower and corner which they could finde open, could perceue nothing contrarie to their liking, whereupon on the next day in the morning, they set by the French Kings standerde in the highest Tower of the Castle, and the ancients also of Geoffrey, and of other Lords upon other Towers and places. When the peo-

ple of the Towne who kept common watch and ward, not knowing of this secreete devise, were greatly terrified therewith, in so much that they taking weapon in hand, began to give a charge against the Castell: by and by the French men who had entred the day before, took Thomas Kingstone, then standing away, quite ignorant of that which was devised, and forcibly they set him in the stocks. When certaine of them being sent out to the French men their companions and masters, who lay without in ambushes they towed them the ancients and standard set by, and all to be well, even as they would have it, hastening them so; ward to come to the defence of the Castle, against the townes men: wherefore they rising from their lurking places, advanced themselves in pride and bragging, and came by heapes in at the gates of the Castle. The townes men perceiving this, had much ado to forbear their hands from them, had not their chiefe leaders with; a wen them from it, least some danger should have happened to them that lay hid: by and by those that lay hid closed under the arches of the walles, prepared themselves to bryake out upon their enemies. In like sort also be that with the great stone was shut up in the hole, after that he saw so many entred in, esteeming that his fellows were sufficient to overthrow them, with that great stone put to his cuffe he bryake the draw brydge, by the which the enemies had entred in, but being once in could not goe that way out againe: when the stone was thus downe, and had discharged the thing for the which it was laid by, and the French men deceived by that practise, they were enclosed safe enough. At the noyse of this stone and the brydge that bryake, these armed men of whom before I spake, breaking downe their counterfaste wall, besyde the which all the deceit was hid, they presently set themselves in order to invade the French men, bitten to a bitter breakfast. The conflict was sharpe for a good season, but at the length the enemies being overcome, yielded themselves to the pleasure of the Conquerours. They which were without and had not entred, as soone as they perceived their companions to be deceived, fled, after whom the king with scarce fiftene men of armes and as many archers followed apace, the rannall wayes not knowing what companie would follow them: many in this chase were wearied, and many more slaine, and in a small time the king overcame dangerous and great labours: but at length, when it was understood by them that fled, how few there were that chased them, fourscore armed men turned them against the king. I dare not ascribe this boldnesse of the king in chasing of his enemies, to his wisdom, but onely to the stoutnesse of this minde, the which is well knowne through Gods grace to be brought to good effect by his meanes, though the danger were never so great: for when hee perceived that the French men had turned themselves to withstand him, hee erst alway the scabers of his sword, and comforting his men about him, setting them in good order, exhorted them to play the men lustily. The Archers being placed in the March against the sides of the enemies stand on by the bryke, which were compassed about with gnagge-myes and soggie places, that neither horse-men nor foot-men might approach them, but they should rather be downed in made then come nere to hurt them: these also did the king comfort,

Tho. de la More.

saying to them (doe well you Archers) play the men lustily, and know that I am Edward of Windsor. When the presence of the King, and necessity the matter, stirred up their hearts to doe well: the Archers uncovering their heads, stripping by their sleeves, bent themselves to bestow their arrowes in such sorte that they might not be lost: and as the French men drew to wards them, they saluted them after with their arrowes. The armed men of both parts stood in order to fight upon a long and narrow way, the breadth whereof was not able to receive scarce twentie men of armes in a front, having on both sides thereof the sparish, in the which the Archers were placed, who galed and wounded their enemies on the sides, fleeing as thicke as haile. The King and his men befoze with the Archers on the side, flew and took a great many: and many of them stood stoutly to it, till at the length by the coming of the Prince of Wales, the French were put to flight: after a long chase in pursuing the enemies, they returning backe againe to Caleis, numbered those which were fled, as well as those which were taken, and they found, that for the taking of the Castle (as the prisoners reported) there came a thousand men of armes, and six hundred armed men, but they which serned, were above thre thousand: among them which were taken, was Geoffrey Charney and his sonne, Edward de Renty, Robert Danquile, Otto de Gulo, the Baron of Sparringham, Baldyna Saylly, Henry de Pres, Garinus Baylofe, Peter Renel, Peter Dargemole, Eustace de Riplemount and many other, Lordes, Knights, and Barons, who were chased and rane away with their vassals, as the Lord de Mountmarice, also Laundas, who married the Lady Saint Paul Countesse of Wembroke in England, also the Lord Fenas, the Lord Planches and another Eustace de Replemount. There were slaine in the skirmish the Lord Henry de Boys, the Lord Archibalde, and many others, whose names the Conquerours were not able to certifie. Thus by pollice and devised treason the authors thereof came to death and destruction: neither Eustachius himselfe escaped scotfree from the snares, for he within a while after being taken by the Frenchmen, was burned alive with a hot yron, and degraded from the order of Knighthood by the cutting off of his heeles, & depviling of his tongue by abscision: after ward, he was hanged up, and last of all beheaded and quartered; receiving iust punishment for his treason and false swearing.

This yere the Lord Furniall giving a rashe enterpryse upon his enemies, was taken prisoner in Gascoigne. Not long after King Edward prepared to make a voyage into France, but the Earle of Lancaster, returning out of Gascoigne, signified that there was a truce taken by him, by reason whereof of the passage prepared by the King was laid aside.

This yere on Saint Georges day, the King held a great and solemne feast at his Castle of Windsor, where he had augmented 8 Chappell which Henry 6 first and other his progenitors Kings of England had before created of eight Chanons, he added to those eight Chanons, a Deane, and sixtene Chanons more, and 24 poore and impotent Knights, with other ministers and servants as appeareth in his Charter, Dated the two and twentieth of his reigne.

Wellies

Besides the King, there were other also that were Contributors to the foundation of this Colledge, as followeth.

- |  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| 1 The Soueraigne King Edward the third.    | 12 Sir John de Mahune.       |
| 2 Edward his eldest sonne Prince of Wales. | 13 Sir Hugh Courtney.        |
| 3 Henry Duke of Lancaster.                 | 14 Sir Thomas Holland.       |
| 4 The Earle of Warwike.                    | 15 Sir John Grey.            |
| 5 Captaine de Bouch.                       | 16 Sir Richard Fitz Simon.   |
| 6 Ralph Earle of Stafford.                 | 17 Sir Miles Stapleton.      |
| 7 William Montacute Earle of Salisburie.   | 18 Sir Thomas Walle.         |
| 8 Roger Lorde Mortimer Earle of March.     | 19 Sir Hugh Wrothesley.      |
| 9 Sir John de Lisle.                       | 20 Sir Nele Loring.          |
| 10 Sir Bartholomew Burwath.                | 21 Sir John Chandos.         |
| 11 Sir John Beauchampe.                    | 22 Sir James de Audley.      |
|  | 23 Sir Oches Holland.        |
|  | 24 Sir Henry Eme.            |
|  | 25 Sir Sechet Dabridgecourt. |
|  | 26 Sir William Panell.       |

All these together with the King were clothed in gownes of Russel, powdered with garters blew, wearing the like garters also on their right legges, and mantels of blew, with scutcheons of S. George. In this sort of apparell they being bare-headed, heard Masse, which was celebrated by Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury, & the Bishops of Winchester and Excester, and afterwards they went to the feast, setting themselves orderly at the table, for the honor of the feast, which they named to be of S. George the martyr, and the choosing of the Knights of the Garter.

In the Sommer following, barancie rising betwene the states of England and Spaine, the Spaniards beset the Wyptaine Sea, with 44. great ships of warre, with the which they sunk ten English ships coming from Gascoigne towards England, after they had taken and spoiled them, and thus their former injuries being reuenged, they entred into Saluce in Flanders.

King Edward vnderstanding hereof, furnished his naule of fiftie shippes and Pinaces, for calling to mete with the Spaniards in their return, having in his company the Prince of Wales, the Earles of Lancaster, Northampton, Warwick, Salisbury, Arundale, Huntington, Gloucester, and other Barons and Knights with their seruants and archers, and vpon the feast of the decollation of S. Iohn, about Cuenlong time, the Spanies mette at Wincheles, where the great Spanish bevels surmounting our ships and forsses, like as castles to cotages, sharply assailed our men, & stones and quarels flying from the tops, soze and cruelly wounded our men, who no lesse buile to fight alone with lance and sword, and with the foreward manfully defend themselves, at length our Archers peared their Arbalisters with a further retch then they could strike againe, and thereby compelled them to forsake their place, and caused other fighting from the batres to made themselves with tables of the

C. 1

Ships,

Anreg. 24.

1350.

Thede la More.  
Great seal at  
Windsor of S.  
George.  
Thos. Walling.  
13 charta regia.

First founders  
of the noble or-  
der of the Gaze-  
ter.  
Records of the  
Garter.

Th. de la More.  
First seal of  
S. George.

Ro. de Aucusbury.

Battle on  
the Sea.

ships, and compelled them that they wold fones from the toppes, so to hide thing that they durst not shew their heads, but tumble downe: then our men entering the Spanish vessels with swords and halberds, kill those they mette, withins while make boorde the vessels, and furnish them with English men, untill they beeing beset with darknesse of the night, could not discerne the 27. yet remaying untaken: our men cast anker, Tying of the hoped battell, supposing nothing finished, whilst any thing remained undone, dressing the wounded, throwing the miserable Spaniards into the Sea, refreshing themselves with victuals and slepe, yet committing the vigilant watch to the armed band. The night overpassed, the English men prepared (but in daime) to a new battell, but when the sunne began to appeare, they biewing the seas, could perceiue no signe of resistance, for 27. ships flying away by night, left 17. spoiled in the cucking, to the Kings pleasure, but against their will.

The King returned into England with victorie and triumph, the King preferred there 80. noble ymages to the order of knight hood, greatly bewapling the loss of one, to wit, Sir Richard Goldesborough Knight.

This yere Philip de Valoys French King, deceased, and his eldest sonne John was crowned.

Two hyed souldiers of the King of Armenia, came into England, into the presence of the King, where they shewed the letters of the aforesaid King of Armenia, wherein it was signified that the one of them, to wit, John de Vilcount, a man bozne in Cyprus, had slanderously charged the other, that is Thomas de la March, a French man bozne, and bastard sonne to Philip late King of France, saying that the said Thomas should haue receiued of the Turkes a certaine somme of gold, for the betraying the armie of the Christians onto the Emperour of the Turkes: and for the proue of this slander, this John challenged a combate with the said Thomas, to be tried by the iudgement of Edward King of England, and that by him (as by a most worthy Wyne,) all this should be ended. For this therefore were these two worthy souldiers appointed to fight, which they perfourmed within the lisses of the Kings palace at Westminster, on Spynay next following after the feast of Saint Michael, where Thomas, in declaration of his innocencie, in that he was accused of, overcame his enemy, but yet killed him not, for he could not, because he was not able to wounde him being so armed, with any kinde of piercing weapon, except it were in his face, which was bare. For after that they had runne at the wille, and fought on fote, as they were striding together on the ground, with certayne piches both short and sharpe, then called Gadlings, being closed in the topes of his right gauntlet, the said Thomas stroke the said John in the face, and soze wounded him: but on the other side John had no such short kinde of weapon, wherewith he might hurt Thomas face, and therefore cryed out aloude most horribly, whereupon by the Kings commaundement the Combate was ended, and the victorie adiudged to Thomas, who gaue the said John, being thus overcome, to the Prince of Wales for a Captiue, and offered vnto his owne armour to Saint George, in Saint Pauls Church at London, with great deuotion. These matters being thus finished,

While the French King died.  
Combat before King Edward.

the Cyprus man is manumitted and set at libertie as a free man againe. And Thomas thinking boldly to goe into the presence of his brother the French King, toke his Iourney thither, and at his coming, found the said King and the Nobilitie of France, greatly offended, and in indignation against him, for that he agreed that the combate should be tried before the King of England. Wherefore Thomas thinking secretly with himselfe how to winne the false friendship of his brother, being desirous to shew that therein he had done well, among all other things he greatly praised the nobilitie of Edward and his worthie fame spread ouer all the world, and also the iustice which he vsed in iudging, not accepting the person of the man of Cyprus, (yea though hee loued the king himselfe very well) neither suffered him to be preferred before me, which am a Frenchman, and brother, and friend to thy my Lord King of France, Iudge ouer the said King Edward my aduersarie. Also the Earle of Cleue highly praised the King of England, for that he had receiued great comfort and commoditie at his hands during the time of his Captiuitie in England, shewing also how farre that good King had banished enuie and hatred from his heart, who at a time of iusting, being in the field at that exercise, and the King also, was commaunded by the King himselfe to beare away the pryce and pycke from them all. These commendations did the French King enuie at, and for indignation, hee most wickedly commaunded the letters forth of those prayes to be beheaded. And for to colour the matter the better, hee sayned that the Earle vsed too much familiaritie with the Quene his wife, and that his brother was guiltie of treason against the king of France, because he committed his cause and the combat to be thus tried by the iudgement of the King of England. After hee had thus murdered his brother, hee tormented his wife to death by famine, who was daughter of the noble king of Boheme, lately slain in battle by Geoffrey.

William Edington Bishop of Winchester, and treasurer of England, a wise man: but losing the Kings commoditie, more then the wealth of the realme and common people, caused a new coyne called a Groate, and halfe Groat to be coyned, but these were of lesse waight then the pence, called Casserlings, by reason whereof victuals and merchandise became the dearer thow to the whole realme.

After the Statutes of the Purification of our Lady, in a Parliament holden at Westminster, Henry Earle of Lancaster was created Earle of Lincoln, Leicester, Derby, Glosinount and Ferrers, and Duke of Lancaster, unto whom also was giuen great priuiledges, such as neuer any Earle had before his time. Also Lionel of Antwerpe the Kings sonne is made Earle of Ulster in Ireland, John of Gaunt his brother is made Earle of Richmond, and Ralph Baron of Stafford, is made Earle of Stafford. John Mautmours, one of the murderers of Edward the second, was this yere restored to his lands.

In the last following Walker de Maine, and Robert Herk Capitaine of Calais, rode into France, making great prayes and doing great damage, brought away great trove of beasts, cheape, and swine, so that at Calais a fat Colwe was scarcely

Groates and halfe groates.  
Tho. Walsing.  
Historia Ricardi.

Parliament at Westminster.  
1351.

as fat colwe  
uttered pence.

scarcely sold for fifteen pence sterling. About Easter the Duke of Lancaster departing from Calais marched along the Sea coasts of Artops, and Picardie, burnt the suburbs of Bulloigne, but assaulting the Towne he prevailed not, for that onely the ladders were too short. Wherefore he wasted the Cities of Artois, and the haven, also the townes of Fauconbridge and Staples, and in the same havens he burnt about 120. ships of divers moulds. After this burning the champion countrey, he rode unto Saint Omers, and winning by force many fortresses, with a great pray and many prisoners he returned to Calais. About the feast of Saint George things prospered well in Calais, for the Marshall of France, with a great number of armed men spoiled the countrey about Saint Wangel, where Edmond Rose a Norfolk man was Capitaine, who with the garrison, valiantly encountered the enemies, slew many of them, and took the said Marshall and many other Nobles of France, chasing above 400. Knights.

The same yere the Spanish Ships by a treatie of peace came into England, where the last yere they were restrained, but now a truce was taken for twentie yeres, betwixt England and Spaine, and a truce betwixt England and Fraunce for one yere, which the Frenchmen brake, by reason of taking the Castle of Guines, as in the next yere shall be shewed.

About this season the olde coine of gold was changed into a new, the olde Noble was worth much above the fared rate of the new, and therefore the Merchants bought the olde and conveyed them out of the Realme, to the great losse of the king and kingdome, to the which there was a remede provided, by changing of the stampe.

About the beginning of Januarie, the Frenchmen being occupied about the repaying of the walles of Guines towne, being asofore that time destroyed by the Englishmen, some men of armes of Calais understanding their doings, devised how they might overthrow the worke, in this sort. There was an Archer named John Dancaster, in prison in the castle of Guines, before that time taken, who not having wherewith to pay his ransome, was let loose, with condition that he should worke there among the Frenchmen. This fellow charged to lye with a laundress, a strumpet, and learned of her where beyond the principall ditch, from the bottome of the ditch, there was a wall made of two foote broad, stretching from the rampiers, to the bylme of the ditch within forth, so that being covered with water it could not be seen, but not so low, as that a man going aloft thereon, should not be wet past the knees, it being made for the use of ffishers: and therefore in the middle it was discontinued for the space of two foote: and so the Archer (his Harlot helving it to him) measured the height of the Wall with a threde. These things thus knowne, one day slipping downe from the Wall, he passed the ditch by that hidden Wall, and lying hidde in the Marsh till Evening, came in the night nere unto Calais, where tarrying for the cleare day, he then went into the Towne (for else he might not:) here he instructed them that were gredie of pray and to scale the castle, how they might enter the same: they caused ladders to be made to the length by the Archer appointed. Whittle men conspiring

together,

together, clothed themselves in black armour without any brightnesse, went to the Castle by the guiding of the said John Dancaster, and climbing the wall with their ladders, they slew the watchmen, and therein they had long headlong beside the Wall: after this, in the Hall they slew many whom the found unarmed, playing at the Chess and Hazard. Then they brake into the Chambers and Turrets upon the Ladies and Knights that lay there asleepe, and so were made masters of all that was within: and slutting all their prisoners into a strong chamber, being bereft of all their armour, they took out the English men that had been taken the yere before and there kept in prison, and after they had relieved them well with meate and drinke, they made them guardens over them that had them in custodie: so they won all the Fortresses of the Castle, unknown to them that were in the Towne, (appointed to oversee the repaying of the broken walles) what had happened to them within the Castle. In the morning they commanded the workemen in the towne to cease from their workes, who thereupon perceiving that the Castle was wonne, straight wales fled, and the new Castilians, suffered the Ladies to depart on horsebacke, with their apparell, willings, and ornaments, where they ought to hold their seas: and the same day there came from Calais to their ayde such persons as they sent for, by whose ayde they kept the Castle: and about thre of the clocke there came two knights, sent from the Earle of Guines, who demanding a truce, willed to know of them that were thus entered the Castle, who they were, to whom they belonged, and by whose authority they kept the Castle so taken in the time of truce, whereunto they answered; that being intruded, they would not declare to any man their purpose, till they had tryed a longer possession: and therefore on S. Matthees day, the Abbot (the King being busie in Parliament,) to the Frenchmen being sent from the sayd Earle of Guines, declared, how in prejudice of the truce, the sayd Castle was taken, and therefore by right of mutuall faith it ought to be restored unto them. The king answered, that without his knowledge that enterprise was made, and therefore he gave commandment to his subieds, that none of them should deteine the castle of Guines, but deliver it unto the lawfull Lords thereof. The messengers being returned home, and reporting what they had done, the Earle of Guines cometh to the Castle, demanding of them within, as at other times, in whose name they kept it. Who constantly affirming that they kept it in the name of John Dancaster, he required to know if the same John were the King of Englands liegeman, or would obey him: who answering that he knew not what messengers had been in England: the Earle offered for the Castle, besides all the treasure found in it, many thousands of Crownes, or possessions for exchange, and a perpetual peace with the King of Fraunce. To this they answered, that before the taking of that Castle they were Englishmen by nation, but by their demerits banished for the peace of the King of England, wherefore the place which they thus held, they would willingly sell or exchange, but to none lower then to their naturall King of England, to whom they said, they would sell their Castle, to obtaine their peace: but if he would not buy it, then they would

leave

An. reg. 26.  
1352.

The getting of  
Guines by the  
English.

cell it to the King of France, or to whomsoever would give most for it.

The Carle being thus shifted off from them, the king of England bought it in deede, and so had that place which he greatly desired. The Fortresse was wont to stop by the passage into the higher Countrey, giuing to some great suerty from the forrangers, that were to issue forth of Caleis. The Countess of fraunce therfore wishing to haue that Castle againe, or to builde another of like vtilitie, for the defence of the Countrey thereabouts, they sent for Geoffrey Charney lately redeemed out of English Captiuitie, with authoritie to build and fortifie as followeth.

To them that traualle from Guisnes to Caleis there was a place on the left hand strong, but decayed, hauing a Church, in which certaine priens were resident, and it was called Lalbassie: this place was so nere to Guisnes, that the Englishmen standing without the gate of their Fortresse might shote to it. This Monasterie of priens might easily be made defensible, for it had high walles like a Castle, and a high towre, and very large for a skaple, and being situate in a marshy ground, it might with small labour be compassed with a ditch. This place the Englishmen had spared for deuotion sake, but till that the foresaid Geoffrey, in breach of truce, with a mightie powre besieged Guisnes, and removed the priens from the Church, making a Castle of the Church, and fencing the walles with rampire and ditch: and this was about Pentecost, in which season the waters not impeaching him, his people might worke in the parish. They with in the Castle therfore being besieged, were vnneth able to come aboade with their boates by the ditches that were full of water, and by the parish impassable and also full of water, neither they of Caleis could victuall them by any manner of meane, by reason of the sieg, and warding that was kept at Lalbassie. They that were thus besieged, oft times sallied out and fought with them of Lalbassie, but due very few, sometime with arrows, and sometime with other weapons: at length, vpon a day appointed, the Calissians, with them of Wyne and Sparkes on the one part, and they within Guisnes on the other, met, set on their enemies, slew many, chased many, and finally burnt by Lalbassie, and dismantling the walles, made all plaine with the ground.

This yeare the Duke of Lancaster going into Spynce, by the aduice and ordinance of the king, his daughter was espoused in England to William Duke of Zeland, eldest sonne to Lewis Duke of Bawire, that intruded vpon the Romaine Emprere.

About the fiftenth of August, Walter Bentley Capitaine, Robert Knolles, and other, in the Marches of Brytaine, valiantly encountered their enemies, where in a fight doubtfull for a good while, were slaine the principall Marshall of France, also the Lord of Quintin, of Curtmoke, of Richmond, of Mount Albion, of Leguel, of Launey, of Pontbech, of Vile Chassel de la March, & other knights, in number 140. and Bachelers, to the number of 500. whose countenances were bought away: the number of commons were not counted. There were taken the Lord of Bulebeke, sonne of the Marshall Beuram, also Tristram de Maleis, the Lord of Spaletret, the Viscount of Cy

Lalbassie fortie  
sed.

Lalbassie burnt  
and rased.

Walter Bentley  
and Robert  
Knolles make  
a bospage into  
France.

Walter Geoffrey de Graues, William de la Vall, Charles Darchefill, John de Bruse, and other knights, with Bachelers, about 130. This armie of the French men, vnder the conduct of the said Marshall, of purpose deuised by him, was so beset on the backe halfe, with the strepenesse of a Mountaine, that the they could not, to the end that hope of flight being taken frō them their courage to fight might the more increase. There were many of those knights surnamed of the Starre, vno in their profession had conspired neuer to turne their seare, full backs vpon their enemies, of which number of knights, there were among them slaine and taken, numbez 45. ffrom that dangerous encounter few escaped unhurt, and among other, the foresaid Walter Bentley Capitaine was so wounded, who commanded thirtie archers to be condemned, for that in the greatest heate of the fight they fled.

The Carle of Stafford also entred into Calcoigne, where encountering with a great armie of the French men that were issued forth of the fortresse of Sagent, he discomfited, toke, and chased them: there was taken that valiant knight Bruse Gaude, and seuen knights of the Starre. Shortly after, died John Dediascles, and Thomas Wale, knights of great valour.

The same yeare, it being heard that Pirats troubled the Seas, there were seuen ships of warre ordeyned, certaine priences attending vpon them: ouer the which were admirals, Thomas Cooke, and Richard Tottelham knights, who scoured the seas about the coast of Picardy and Normandy, but before the feast of S. George, they returned as they wished.

Whilist these things were a doing by Sea and Land, Otto sonne to the Duke of Brunswike, the French Kings sed man, sent letters to the Duke of Lancaster, being returned out of Spynce, by p̄renour wherof he accused him, affirming that as he returned out of Spynce by Colein, he maliciously informed the Coloners, that the said Otto went about by stealth to haue taken him prisoner, and to haue presented him to the French king, adding herunto, that because he neuer ment any such taking of him, he was ready in declaration of his god name, by a singular combat onely in the French Kings Court, to proue the Duke of Lancaster a lyer touching the said article. The letters were not sealed, and therfore, least it might haue ben thought folly to haue given credite to the letter, deliuered by a seruant, the Duke sent vnto Otto two knights to learne the cause of the chalenge, and to demand thereof his letters patents, sealed with his seale of armes, which knights accomplishing the effect of their tourney, and returning with spede, the Duke sent to the French king for a safe conduct for himselfe and his men, and with much adoe obtaining it, he went to Paris, where in the lills, in presence of the French king, the king of Nauarre, and the Duke of Burgoyne, and many p̄eres, and other of the Realme of fraunce, he mounted on his steed in seemely wise, ready in all signes, without default, to trie the combat, and so staid till his adversary was ready, and the voyce of the Herauld and Cantor to be had by their common oath, for the assurance of his word, and to obey the Law. On the contrary part, the said Otto scarcely was set on his horse, and was not able decently to set on his helmet, nor to weilde his speare (or else he sayned)

Knights of the  
Starre.

Otto of Brunswike  
with the chalenge  
goth to combat  
with the Duke  
of Lancaster  
before the  
French King  
at Paris.

whyle



whose unbleness being perceived by the French king, the king of France; and other, the king took the quarrell into his hands, whereupon Ous was commaunded first to depart the lists, and so went his way, but the Duke abode still within them. After this, by commaundement of the French king, Ous swore that he should neuer after that day appeach the Duke of Lancaster of that article: and so from thence the Duke returned home by Zeland.

An. reg. 27.  
1353.

Parliament at Westminster.  
Apparel appointed to Barons.

After the Epiphanie, a Parliament was holden at Westminster, wherein an ordinance was made at the instance of the Londoners, that no knowne whose should weare from thenceforth any hode, except reyes or striped of diuers colours, nor furre, but garments reuerled or turned the wyong side outward, upon paine to forseit the same.

Coyne brought out of Ireland into England.

This yere, the dearth of Coyne by them of Ireland, and the Irish men that brought in coine to sell onto diuers Hauens of the Realme, was allwaged, to the great reliefe of the people.

S. Stephens Chappell at Westminster.  
Ex Carta.

King Edward altered the Chappell, which his progenitors before had founded of Saint Stephen at Westminster, into a college of twelve secular Chansons, twelve Clerics, and other ministers accordingly, and endued it with revenues, to the summe of five hundred pound by yere.

Staples of wool to be kept in England.

The moztow after Saint Machies day began a Parliament, wherein it was ordeined that the Staple of wool before kept in Flaunders at Bruges, should from thenceforth be holden in diuers parts of England, Wales and Ireland, as at Newcastle, Pojke, Lincoln, Canterburie, Ro:wich, Westminster, Chichester, Winchester, Excester, Wiltow, and Carmarven.

The Earle of Northampton went into Scotland with a great compaign of armed men and archers, where he rode through the marches, and enforced the castle of Loghinaban, and other fortreddes to yield, and took the Scots that were laid in ambushes. He also held a treatie of peace with the Scots, who gladly would haue redeemed their king, and made a perpetuall peace with the Englishmen, but yet so as the king of Scots should not hold his land of the king of England.

Treatie of peace.

Innocent the first, for the desire of peace, sent the Cardinall of Bononie to Calcis, to heare the treatie of the final peace betwixt the kingdomes of England and Fraunce, to whom repaired the Counsellors of both Realmes, with full authoritie to treat and constitute the conditions of the same peace, and at length they agreed upon this point, that the king of England should resigne all his right that he had to the Realme of Fraunce, and remit it to the French King, and should haue therfore the Dutchie of Aquitaine, and the Countie of Artops and Guines, for him and his successors king of England, with out that he should hold the same of the French Kings in any manner of vills.

Ann. reg. 28

To these conditions the King of England gaue his consent, and for the aduance of the covenants, Embassadors are sent to the Sea of Rome from eyther Realme. On the King of Englands behalfe went the Bishoppe of Ro:wich, the Duke of Lancaster, the Earle of Arundell, and other Knights, who going to Auinion, there came to them the Archbishoppe of Koban, the Duke of Burgoine, Geoffrey Charney, and other of the French Kings

Counsell

Counsell: all these were receiued in great honour: many Cardinals and Bishops met the duke of Lancaster, who brought him for the space of two miles into Auinion, and to the Popes pallace: at length in the Consistorie of the Pope, he with the Cardinales and Embassadors being present, the causes of their message was declared, and the Embassadors of England requested to haue the covenants confirmed, which had been concluded at Calcis: to whom the Frenchmen answered, that gladly they would haue peace, but touching Aquitaine, and the foresaid Countie, as they said, the French King could not, nor they might giue their assents that the same should be alienated from the entire body of the kingdome, the which, as well the King as they had taken an oth to maintaine, but yet they could be contented that the profitable dominion of the said Dutchy and Countie should be deliuered, and come to the King of England, as his Auncessors had Aquitaine, but so yet as the regalitie of the Crowne of France should ever be reserved. The Englishmen requested that these said dominions should be absolutely, and without any condition reseyed to the King: answered also was made to the reason of the Frenchmen, touching the oth of their King and themselves, whereby they were bound to conserue the integritie of the honour of their kingdome, to wit, that the Pope for the benefite of peace might assolve them from the said oth, and this as to certaine articles permitted, it should be very well done: but yet nothing was done that might be of force to the furthering of the peace. And so the Embassadors without effect returned home, the Bishop of Ro:wich excepted, that deceased, and was buried there, to whom succeeded Thomas Percy.

The King of France through a byawle raised, Aue Charles de Spaine, Marshall of France, whereupon to auoide the displeasure and punishment of the French King, he fled into his owne Countrey, sending his uncle unto the Duke of Lancaster with letters humbly beseeching him that he would come into Normandie to his aide and defence, and to receiue an oth of fidelitie and amitie of him against al men. The Duke therfore getting licence of the King, assembled together a great nauie at Southampton, where when the Duke was ready to haue made saille, his knights that he had sent into Normandy, came backe to vieto the truth of this busines, by which it was notified to the Duke, that the said King of France his cousin was reconciled to the King, and so the Dukes voyage was stayed.

The friers Augustines Church in London was redified by Humphrey Bourne Earle of Hereford and Essex, whose body was buried in the quire of the same Church.

First Augustines Church in London.  
No. 6. Auesbury

A great dissention fell in Oxford, betwixt a Scholler and a Manner, for square of wine, so that the Scholler potwoted the wine on the Manners head, and brake his head with the pot, by reason whereof, a great cruellie was made betwixt the Schollers of the Vniuersitie, and the lay men of the towne, in the which, many lay men were wounded, and about twenty slain: These troubles continued the space of two daies, and then the religious men of the towne labouring to make peace, the lay men pursued a Scholler, who had been slain, yet that day the tumult was appeased, but on the next day the people

as



of the villages about Wyke, being confederate with the lay men of the town came with great force, and erected a blacke banner, whereupon the Schollers fledde to their Colledges, but the Lay men breaking by the doores, slew many of them, and twelue them into their pyntes: they cut and rent their bookes, and bare away what they liked. By this meane the vniuersitie was dissolved, the Schollers (sauing of Sperton Colledge) went vnto their friends, and so continued moze then a yere. Many, both Schollers and Lay men were twited by the kings Justices, amongst the which, foure Burgeses that had ben Mayors of Wyke, were sent vnto the Towre of London.

Citizens of Wyke indited

R. de Auebury

An. reg. 29.  
1355.

Jussing at Woodstocke.

Parliament at Westminster.  
R. de Auebury

Vniuersitie of Wyke restored.

Ex Record.

King Edward sailed into France.

About the twentieth of November, King Edward held a Parliament at Westminster, in the which was granted towards the recouerie of his title in France, fiftie shillings of euery sacke of Woll to be transported ouer the sea for the space of five yeres then next following, by meanes whereof, the King might daily dispend during the said five yeres, moze then one thousand marks sterling, for by the common opinion, there were moze then an hundred thousand sackes of Woll yerely into foraine landes transported, so that during those five yeres, the said grant extended to 150000. pounds sterling.

King Edward held a great Iussing at Woodstocke, for honour of the Quene, who was then married of her sonne Thomas.

After Easter, in a Parliament at Westminster, the king toke the quarrell of Wyke into his hands, and sauing euery mans right, he forgane the schollers all the whole trespass, so that in the summer following, the vniuersitie began againe to flourish, and the king came to the Chancellour of Wyke the quely view of the assise of bread, ale, and wine, and al other victuals, ercluding the Mayor viceroy from that office. The communalitie of the Towne gave to the vniuersitie two hundred and fiftie pounds for amends, sauing vnto them neuertheless the actions which they had vnto euery singuler person of the Towne.

In this Parliament, the proccesse of the iudgement made against Roger Mortimer Earle of March, was reuoked, deemed erroneous & false, so that the young Roger Mortimer, sonne to Edmond Mortimer, sonne and heire to Roger Mortimer, was restored to the title and possessions of the Earledome of March, as cousin and heire to his grandfather.

King Edward being about Sandwich, on his iourney towards France, and the Prince of Wales at Sutton in Devonshire, on his voyage towards Aquitaine, looking for a prosperous wind, by the space of forty dayes or moze, all things else being ready, the french king had his armies diuided in many places about in the bayens of Normandy, and other parts, to impeach the landing of the King and Prince, and so long they lay there, that the frenchmen with their hired condourers did soluly waste their owne Countrey, and consumed so many thousands of Crownes out of the french Kinges coffers vaine, that in the ende he being needie, payde not his people, and so he was forsaken of them, that when King Edward was in France, the french king had not men to encounter him, but fledde before him, as he followed, burning his owne Townes, and destroying his

castles,

castles, that the king should find neither harborough nor meate.

After the moneth of August, the king of England, and the Duke of Lancaster, with seven thousand armed men, and their retinue, entered France, and by the space of nine daies iourney, as they went, waisting all by fire that came in their way, and returning to Calais, the king heard that the Scots entred by health, and had taken the Town of Warwicke, the Baron of Gray, Locke being in the army with the king, to whom the chary of that Towne had ben committed, whereupon the king hasted vnto Warwicke, and with fiftene daies recovered the Towne againe, being deliuered vnto him, life and liberty to depart being giuen vnto them that were found therein.

Warrwicke taken by the Scots.

Warrwicke taken by the Englishmen.

After this he passed through Scotland vnto the Scottish sea, but because victuals failed for his army, the king giuing them licence, they all returned towards England. There followed on the taile of the army, by the space of twelue miles, Robert Herle, Almerike de Saint Edmond, Robert de Hildesley, and other, whom the Scots in the night season found asleep and at rest, doubting nothing of any misadventure, wherfore they gaue a cruell assault vpon them, with an hideous noise and cry, where, after long resistance, Robert de Hildesley, and Iohn Brancester knights were taken prisoners, Robert Herle and Almericke hauing much adoe to escape, so the said knights perceluing the Scots to be too strong for them, thought with themselves, that their Lozges being Barons, of whom they held in fee, would redeme them, and so they withdrauing, deliuered them from the Scots captiuitie.

Henry Duke of Lancaster being appointed chiefe Admirall of the English flote, landed it at Hogges about the feast of Saint Bartholomew, and from thence rode towards Poymandie, being accompanied with Philip, brother to the king of Nauarre, who desired aide of the said Duke, and requested him to come to helpe him. At this season, the french king hauing the king of Nauarre, Geoffrey Harecourt, and diuers other noble men in great suspicion, touching the Realme and Kingdome, hidde them all to a seale, where he toke the said king of Nauarre, and cast him in prison, and murdered the rest of the noble men, sauing, Geoffrey Harecourt, whom he caused to be beheaded with an are.

The king of Nauarre being thus imprisoned, his brother Philip sealed many Castles and holds into his hands which were in Poymandie and there about, strongly fortifying them with men and victuals, through the help of the Duke of Lancaster, being manned as well with Englishmen, as with the men of the same Countrey, to withstand the frenchmen.

The same time when the king passed ouer to Wales and France, his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, hauing with him the Earles of Warwick, Suffolk, Salisburie, and Wyke, toke shipping in the beginning of October at Sutton Haven in Devonshire, and luckily sailed, and landed at Burdeaur, where he was honourably receiued by the Bishop and Clergy being accompanied with all the common people in the first Sunday of that moneth: The Monday following, the Prince going out, lodged two miles from Burdeaur, at the Castell of Gironn. On the next day, he passed through a streight way,

D

and

and so through the middle of the towne of Loogan, sometimes walled, but now defaced: and so passing on a long journey, he lost many horses, and came at length to the strong Castell of Wandzet. On Thursday he came to the Citie of Belas, having in it a Cathedral Church, and a convent of sisters minours. On Friday proclamation was made in the army, that every man should beate the armes of Saint George, and it was said that his enemies bore the same also. On Saturday he passed to the Castell of Pau, where stand three castles of three Lords, wherof one he weth a farre off.

On Friday the twelfth of that month, his army passed the lands of Moysur, which are belonging to the Earle of Flur, this daies journey being long and tedious, he lost many of his horses in the wast ground called the Laundes. Two miles from the towne of Aurule, he displayed his banners, and divided his armies into diuers troupes. In the baward, wherein was three thousand men of armes, were the earle of warlike high Constable, Reignold Cobham, Lord Marshall, Lord Beauchampe, a Somersetshire man, the Lord Clifford, and the Lord Thomas of Hampton, belonging to the Ancients, and with them seven Barons of Calcoigne. In the middleward, wherein were seven thousand men of armes, besides Clerkes and Pages, there was the Prince himselfe with a double Antient, the Earle of Arford, the Lord Bartholomew Burwash, the Lord John de Lile, the Lord Willowby, the Lordle War, the Lord Maurice Barkley, sonne to Thomas Lord Barkley then living, very olde, the Lord John Bourlers, Lord John Rose the elder of Burdeaur, Capitaine de la Busch, the Lord Camount, the Lord Mountferrant, with their antients. In the rereward was foure thousand men of armes, committed to the charge of the Earle of Suffolke, the Earle of Salisburie, and the Lord Pemers, who led the Bernences: In the whole army was of men of armes, Clerks, Pages, Archers, Bigants, and other, about 60000 men, and this day was Ikenes Barefort, and diuers other made knights, and the village of Aurule, with three other villages (wherof William Lord Raymond was Capitaine) were deliuered vp vnto the Prince, wherein he lodged his army, and resting there two daies, as many as would were suffered to go out, and take victuals, and byent these enemies country. On Tuesday, they lodged in the towne of Mount Clere, where the Castell belonging therunto was given vp to the Prince, and after he left it againe to the Frenchmen, by reason of fire which brake vp in the towne, wherupon the Prince went out into the field, and lodged in his tentes, euer after refusing to lie in any towne. This day having taken three townes, and burning them, he made knights Gileus de Straton, and diuers other. Also John de Lile stricken with a quarrell at Ainsage, died. On Wednesday and Thursday he lay still, and on Friday he came before the strong towne of Loegeron, where he lodged in his tents. On Saturday he came by force to Placence, a very faire town, a strong, the inhabitants wherof fled away into the Castell, where the Earle of Arford, and many knights were taken by Capitaine de la Bouch, and the Lord Mountferrant, & de Lonchis, who was that day made knight. On Sunday & Lukes day, they staid at Cluant, and taking the fort of Galian, by force, they set it on fire, and burnt it. On Monday

by casting fire in the towne of Placence, they passed along, leaving the towne of Beal Marchi on the right hand, and lodged before the towne of the Archbishop of Anser, called Le Bafe. On this day Richard Scalford brother vnto the Earle of Stafford, led his men with his Antient towards the towne: and on the next day being Tuesday, the towne was yielded vnto him, and because it belonged to the Church, the Prince would not suffer any man to enter into it, excepting certaine persons appointed of purpose, for the deliuering of victualles. On Wednesday they leaving the faire towne of Escamout, on the left hand, they came before the noble towne of Sperand, belonging to the Earle of Comenge, which was full of armed souldiours, and the Prince lodged in the great monastirie of Sartons, in the which Abbey, there was not so much as one liuing creature found. On Thursday they lay still, doing no harme to the said Abbey. On Friday they went out of the faire and rich countrey of Arminake, and entred the countrey of Austerrike, through the which, the passage was very hard and hilly, and lodged at Sarraunt a towne, they set it on fire, contrary to the commandement of the prince.

All that day, and three daies following, they passed alongst by the high hills of Aragon. On Saturday, they came to the towne of Saint Poze, where the rereward of the army lodged in a great monastirie of blacke monkes, which were all fled away: the middle ward at Wilfranks, and the baward at Ternaine: these villages being very rich, and full of victualles, had no man in them, for all the inhabitants were fled.

Sunday the foure and twentieth of October, they passed a certaine way, and entred into the lands of the Earle of Comenge, which reached vnto Tolouse, but these countries were wasted with fire and sword, and leaving on the left hand the towne called Sannetere in Austrike, they passed by the strong Citie of Wilmbers, where Pope John the two and twentieth removing the blacke monkes, erected a Bishops see, and they were lodged in a great & rich towne called Sotanco, belonging to the Carle dome of Comenge, where was a convent of sisters minours: and burning this towne on Monday they passed through a goodly wide countrey, very plaine, and so came to the towne of Saint Joy, and Saint Liz. On Tuesday they rested: and on Wednesday being the feast of Simon and Jude, the army passed through the riuer of Geronand, being a water very fierce, stony and terrible: and againe the same day, through the riuer of Arage, much more dangerous, and came vnto Tolouse: before that time, neuer durst any horseman passe over these waters, wherfore the people of this countrey being wonderfully made afraid, could not tell what to doe, for being sodainly taken, they could not flee: that night, the prince lodged at Falgard, a little towne, one mile from Tolouse. On Tuesday they came vnto the faire and great town called Mount Olfard, being part of the inheritance of the Lord Almerike de la Fossad, the which town the French king had taken from him, because he was the king of Englands sedeman. Fast by the said towne were twelue windmilles, the which they set on fire all at once. There were taken two espies, they certified the Prince that the Earle of Arminake was at Tolouse, and the Connestable of

France at Mount Haban, foure leagues from Tolouse. On Friday, they passed on towards Aunioin, by the god towne of Balge, and the Towne called Franke, and the whole armie lodged at the great Towne called Aunet, and the middle ward and reuerward lay in one side of the Suburges, and the backward lay on the other side of the Towne, which the townsmen perceiving, fled euerie one.

There were about this towne twentie Windmills, which they set on fire. On Saturday the last of October, they lodged in the great Towne called Clastannanner, where a Church of the Chanons, a couent of Friers Spinors, and another of Carmelites, with an Hospitall, and a village called Les mauns de Pucels, with a couent of Friers Augustines, were all consumed with fire. On Sunday, the feast of Allsaints, the army rested, out of the which armie, certaine going to take bottles, they took a little Towne, the inhabitants wherof to be spared from spoiling, gaue them ten thousand dozens of gold. On Monday they marched along by the townes of S. Spathele Port, and the great Town called Alkapinch, and from thence, they entered the Countrey of Carhalon, & the Prince lodged at a little village called Alfe. On Tuesday they came to Carhalon, a faire Towne, rich & well built, bigger then London. Within the wals, betwixt the towne of Samburge, and the City being double walled, there ran a goodly water, which passed vnder a faire stone bridge, at the foote wherof, were foure couents of religious, of the which, the friers ran not a way, but the other fled into the Citie. The whole armie was lodged in the Towne, which abounded with Huskabel, and all other delicate victualles. This day, the sonnes of the Lord Liber, and Master Bassier, with Rowland Daves, and many other, were made knights.

Carcalon in  
France burnt.

On Wednesday and Thursday, the armie lying still in the Towne, and hauing made a truce, they parlied with them of the Citie concerning a peace, the Citizens offering so; saving the Towne from burning two hundred and fiftie thousand of golden Soules: the Prince answered, he came not for gold, but to take Citie and Townes, together with their inhabitants, and the next day commaunded the Towne to be burnt.

On Friday, the Towne being burnt, the armie departed, leaning on the left hand the Castell of Botenake untouched, passing through the champaign Countrey, burning Townes called la Rustican, and all the countrey thereabout.

On Saturday they travelled through a great wind and dust, leaning on the left hand a great pole of fresh water, being in compasse about xxx. leagues, and is called Calibon. They came to a Towne called Salony, which was yielded to the Prince, and therefore neuer touched: and the Prince was lodged that night at a god towne called Canet. On Sunday the eight day of November, they passed the water of Sandey, partly at the ford called Cha-Well de Terre, and partly over a bridge, and so travelled betwixt high hills, vnto the great Citie of Narbon, wherof that Countrey taking his name is called Gallia Narbonensis. The Citie was verie strong, and well walled, hauing in it a great Cathedraall Church: also a notable Castle, belonging to the

Bishop

Bishop, a verie strong Tower for the Earle of the same Towne. It had also a Suburbe called a Bozough, much bigger, and better built, then the Bozough of Carhalon.

In the Bozough were foure Couents of religious persons. Betwixt the Bozough and the Citie, there runneth a water called Ande, comming from Carcalon, and runneth into the Greeth sea. Betwixt the Citie and the Bozough are two bridges of stone, and the third of timber, built with Tower-houses for diners Merchandises. The prince was lodged in the house of Carmelites friars. On Tuesday the Bozough being set on fire, the armie passing to the waters side, went ouer it in diners places. From thence, they went and lodged at the Towne and Castell of Ambion. On Wednesday they travelled an euill journey, and hurtfull to the horse for lacke of water. On Thursday Theodorike Dale, Woyter of the Princes chamber, was made Knight: thence the armie passed by a good Town called Wilmes: the middleward passed into the good Towne of the Earle of Aile, called Arnle, where they lodged that night. The Prince lay at the Friers Spinors, where was great abundance of Huskabel, being prouided for the Countesse of the Ile, which was all spoiled. This day also, the good Towne of Pipions was destroyed, with the Castle therof called Redote. On Friday, the army passing by a long stonle way, lodged at Laman. On Saturday, returning backe toward Carcalon, and all the journey that they went before, and the reuerward lodged at a good Towne called Abier, and the middleward at Purchiancles, where a Castle being defended, withstood them a season, but at the length was won, and the Prince lay beyond the Bridge, by a saye running water, on both sides wherof, the Countrey was spoiled with fire, together with the god Towne of Besaunce where the backward was lodged that night. On Sunday they travelled a long journey, because the Prince should be lodged in the great Abbey of our Lady de Prolion, where in feuerall Cloysters did live 100. Medicants, inherunto, the Prince was devoutly received. In the day, the armie set on fire the Towne of Lemnis, where there was foure greater Couents of Religious, then at Carcalon. Also, they burnt the faire Towne called Salanges, vnto which Towne belonged one and twentie Windmilles. They burnt also the Townes of Vinard, and Serre, with all the whole Countrey lying thereabouts. On Monday the middleward lodged at the god Towne called Dealpubbon, which long time was defended, but at length gotten by force, the Castell wherof yielded, vnto the which Towne and Castell, the Prince commaunded, that no harme should be done by fire. On Tuesday early passing ouer the river of Weselle, they entered into a countrey which was broad. About one a clocke, they came before a great Abbey called Bourghbon, where the Earle of Flourens with great force resisted the Prince, hee being newly escaped out of prison from Paris, where he had laine by the space of two yers: and the said earle remained from that time faithfull to the Prince. This day they rode in the Lordships and signories of the same Earle, by the townes of Pafel and Chimon, and on the

right hand they passed by the great towne of Saint Canole, and the high Ca-  
stell called Hautripe: but on this day they bent nothing for reverence of the  
foresaid Carle & his vineyards, but passed againe over the water of Arage, lea-  
ving also Tolouse as they did at the first, but then one mile on the left hand,  
and now foure leagues on the right, and the middle ward was lodged in the  
great towne of Hermount, which together with the Castell was bent. On  
Wednesday, they passed by the Castell of the Carle of Flure called Gonn-  
thane, at the fote wherof, all the horsemen passed over the great water Ge-  
round, & there toke the towne and castell of Nozth, then leaving the river of  
Gerond on the left hand, and so passed unto the towne of Sparconaw, which  
they toke: then they returned over the river againe, & toke the strong town  
of Carbone. On Thursday the army rested. On Friday word was brought  
to the Prince that the French were by, and had gathered a great force, which  
they had divided into five great battels, being in the field not farre from them,  
whereupon our me let themselves in battel aray, about one mile from the place  
where they lodged, and being now ready to fight, some one of the souldiers by  
chance start a hare, whereupon a great shout was made, which the enemies  
hearing, they sent out forty light horsemen, to see what was the cause there-  
of, who drawing nigh to the English army, and perceiving them to be set in  
battell aray, returned backe againe, and declared what they had seen: where-  
upon presently the whole army of Frenchmen fled with great feare. The  
same day Bartholomew Burwash, John Chandos, and James de Audley, with 24  
light horsemen, were appointed scouts, and conning to the tale of the  
Frenchmen, they toke prisoners 32 knights and Gentlemen, amongst whom  
they toke the Carle of Romerne, also they slew many Carters, and Wag-  
goners. The Prince lodged in the town of Anwole. On Saturday they mar-  
ched to the Castle of Draby, in which Castle the Prince lodged, and in the  
morning they burnt it. On Sunday the two and twentieth of November,  
about evening, they perceived that their enemies were on the other side of  
the great Will hard by the great town of Gernount, so that the Englishmen  
being benighted, sent out 12 light horsemen, and certaine bowmen unto the  
right hand of the towne called Auremount, where finding 400 men of armes  
of the Constable of France, they chased them out of the town, and slew and  
toke many: the middle ward lodged at Auremount, and the forward at Co-  
limont. Early in the morning the Waggoners being commanded to remaine  
in the towne of Auremount, all the residue being divided into troopes, went  
into the field, waiting for the coming of their enemies, all in vain: for  
the prince taking the towne of Camouat, was told that his enemies fled a-  
way at midnight. On Tuesday the army lodged in the field, and for lacke of  
water, their horse were faine to drinke wine, whereupon it came to passe, that  
the next day their horses were so drunke they could not go right forth, and  
many of them died. On Saint Katherine day, with much adoe they came to  
water, and leaving the towne of Florence on their right hand, they passed to  
the great towne called Sallard, and the middle ward was lodged at a towne  
called Salladunt, which they toke by maine force, & therefore bent it. On

Thursday

Thursday they rested. On Friday they travailed a long journey, by walled  
townes and strong castles, the middle ward lodged at Berde. On Saturday  
they passed over a certaine water with great difficultie, and through woods,  
till they came to a good towne called Melin. On Sunday the prince rested,  
and toke homage and oathes of the townemen. On Monday S. Andrewes  
day travelling along journey, they came to the town of Tolouse, where were  
three Castles. On Tuesday the prince travelled to the castle of Belan, where  
he lodged. On Wednesday the prince came to Regla, where his horses and  
Waggoners passed through the river of Verond. In this towne of Regla, the  
prince appointed divers Barons and such like to winter in divers places of  
the marches, to the intent they should keepe the inland parts of Gascoigne a-  
gainst the Frenchmen.

The prince of Wales touching these matters aforesaid, and for other con-  
siderations also, caused a new coyne of gold to be made in Gascoigne, being  
busied himselfe about the repairing of such things as were decayed & broken  
downe. And in this season, there sprang up a foolish fantasie in the French  
mens heads, that the King of England was come into Gasconny, the cause of  
which rumour rose by, for that the Duke of Lancaster, after that he had forti-  
fied the strong places belonging to the King of France, which were in the Ile  
of Constance & other places, did direct his journey towards Byptaine, whereof  
he was newly made chiefe captaine. Another cause was this, Philip brother to  
the king of France, came into England, and earnestly craved aid of the king  
against the French king, who kept his brother in prison, that hee might by  
force of armes restore all such lands unto him as were wrongfully withhold-  
den from him, whereupon hee offering to do homage and fealtie, had (of the  
kings appointment) Miles Stapleton a man of great integritie, and in mar-  
tiall affaires verie skillfull, bin (I say) the king appointed to be his faithfull  
fellow. These men with two thousand men wel appointed travelling through  
Gasconny, toke townes & fortresses, burning divers of them, passing along  
till they came to a castle nine leagues distant from the Citie of Paris: neither  
did they abake their travell, untill they had forced their enemies to enter in-  
to a pærcely truce. By this meanes a great report and no lesse feare filled the  
hearts of the Frenchmen, which report at length came to the eares of the  
Prince lying at Regla, wherefore hee gathering all the power hee had with  
him in his Dukedome, to the intent to meete his father, which hee must  
doe by travelling through France, hee came at length to Byngnet, where  
he was certified that the Carle of Ardenia, would after his departure  
have spoiled the Countrey, and for that intent had provided a great band  
of men: wherefore hee sent backe to the Gouvernour of Gascoigne unto Bar-  
nard de Librie, and other. From thence the prince went into France through  
the coastes of Bracy and Limon, still encouraging his men against their  
enemies, sending before him John Chandos, James Dawdeley, and other com-  
plices, to trie out the state of their enemies Countrey, least perhaps some  
crafty ambushment might sodainly assault our men, aforesayd they were aware. He  
himselfe removing his campe every day, and now being entred into Picardia,

An. reg. 30.

1356.

his espies brought word that the French king had gathered a great armie, being nobe in Auerlan, who also knew of the princes comming, for he sent out espies to discouer our armie, amongst whom Griffin Micco of Chamblay, peitie capitaine of two hundred men, meeting with other espies, came to his coast: for our espies took thirty of them, and slew the residue, so that there was not one of them left to carry word what was become of their fellows. Our espies proceeded to wards Comerentine, where meeting with the Lord Creane, and Lord Wilsford, they set upon them and slew them, their chiefe Captains being forced to flee to a Castle, and having taken their lodging in a Towne, the prince commanded that on the morning a great assault should be given to them of the Castle.

The day following our men being all armed, passed through the ditches, and came unto the walls of the Castle, some applied to scale the wal with ladders, some burne the gates, and entering, slew a great many of the chiefe men, but the Lords before named fled unto the principall tower of the castle: but the prince determined not to depart, till they that were besieged, were either taken or yielded: at length the Castle being undermined, the men besieged, with all humilitie yielded by the Castle. After this the spies declared that the French king was come down to Warron, to prouoke armies to go against the Prince, of the which tidings the Prince being glad, he pight his tentes against the French king, but could not passe the river of Legers, by reason of great floods, and the French king had broken all the Bridges, to the intent there should be no passage betwixt the Prince & the Duke of Lancaster, whose armies might wel every night perceiue each others fires in the Campes: but the Prince following alongst the river of Legers Castward, he pight his tentes nere unto Warron, where looking for the French king foure daies, hoping to fight with him, for that he was distant but one league off, he understood that the French king was rettyed backe to Blania, ten leagues off: passing ouer by a Bridge the Riuer of Legers at a place ben betwixt two strong Townes, and so toward Woyters. This retiring of the French king certified, the prince returned backe, intending to haue met him in the way, which he could not doe: yet crossing ouer all, as he imagined the nether way, he set upon the taile of his enemies, and cut from them the Carles of Arpyn and Winters, and also the marshal of Burgony, these being taken, died, as was thought, though the great toyle they had taken: night bytuning on, our men gaue themselves to rest in a wood, intending the next day to take their iourney toward Woyters, and by the way they were certified that the French king, with great prouision prepared himselfe to battell, and byew night to our tents: the prince therfore committed the halward of the armie to the Carles of Warwicke and Wroza, the middle ward was guided by the Prince, and the reerward was led by the Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke. In all the whole armie of the Prince there was not aboue foure thousand men of armes, one thousand armed souldiours, and two thousand Archers: The pompous nobility of the Frenchmen byew night, greatly exceeding the small company of the English men, for they had in number eight thousand fighting souldiours, they had also

LEUCA

seven tentents. At this matter a great many of our men murmured, because of late a great part of our army was sent to defend Calcoigne. There was among the Frenchmen a certaine Scot called William Douglas, a man of great force and practise in the warres: this man did the French king make knight, and because he knew he would be a deadly enemy to the Englishmen, he gladly hearkened to his aduices. This William was capitaine ouer two hundred Scots: these men understood well that it was the custome of the English men in these dayes to fight on foote, in which point they followed the Scots, and the Scot also prouoked the French king and other French men to fight in like manner. The French king obeying his foolish counsell, gladly agreed vnto his sayings, whereupon he sent light horsemen into the Cisse, that they should suffer no man to make any chase, but onely 500. horsemen wel appointed to come out against the archers, in the beginning of the conflict, and to run them ouer and to tread them vnder their horse fete: but these performed not that which was commanded them, as it appeared by the sequelle thereof. The armies being set in a readinesse on both sides for to fight early on Monday in the morning which was notable saye, behold there came the Cardinall of Petrargozen, and charged the Prince, in the name of God who was crucified, that it might please him to deferre the warre for a time, both for ecclesiasticall peace, and also for the sparing of Christian blood, and to the end there might be a treatie had of peace, the which he promised should be performed with great honour on both sides. The Prince neither feared nor refused peace but modestly agreed to the request of this Father. All this day now being appointed for the obtaining of peace, the armie of the Frenchmen increased by the number of a thousand men of armes, and also of other. On the morrow after, the Cardinall came againe from the French king, in his behalfe to request a truce, which should endure for one whole yeere, the which the Prince denyes, yet at the importunate sute of that Cardinall, he granted a truce to continue till Christmas next comming. Wherefore the Cardinall returning to the French king, requested him of pledges for the truce, but the Marshall Dawdenam, Geoffrey de Charney and Douglas the Scot, perswaded him that by common reason it could not come to passe that the Englishmen should at that time prouaile, and especially, because they were but fewe, and in a strange country, and wearied out miserably with their toyle in trauell, and therefore not able to endure so great a number of the Frenchmen of France, who stood in defence of their owne land. The Prince of Wales being certified, that the captaines of the French, would haue no kind of peace, but such as they could get by force of armes, and calling his men together, he made to them an oration first in general, and then to his Archers as followeth: your manhood (saith he) hath bin alwaies known to me, in great dangers, which I see with that you are not degenerate from true sonnes of English men, but to be descended from the blood of them which heretofore were vnder my fathers Dukehodie, and his predecessors Kings of England, vnto whom no labor was painefull, no place invincible, no ground unpasseable, no hill (were it neuer so high) inaccessible, no tower unscalable, no army impenetrable, no armed souldiour, or whole host

Prince of  
Wales his  
oration.Battell of  
Woyters.

of men was formidable. Their lively couragiousnesse tamed the Frenchmen, the Cipzians, the Syracuzians, the Calabrytians, & the Palestines, and brought vnder the stiffe necked Scots, & vntuly Irishmen, yea, and the Welchmen also, which could well endure all labors. Occasion, time, and dangers, maketh of fearefull, very strong an hoste, & doth many times of dull witted men make wittie: honour also, and love of the Countrey, and the desire of the rich people of the Frenchmen, doth stirre you vp to follow your fathers steps. Wherefore followe your Antientes, and wholy be intentive to followe the commandment of your Captaines as well in minde as in body, that if victorie come with life, we may still continue in firme frendship together, hauing alwayes one will, and one minde: but if eniuous Fortune (which God forbid) should let vs at this present, to runne the race of all flesh, and that we ende both life and labour together, be you sure that your names shall not want eternall fame and heauenly ioy, and we also with these gentlemen our companions, will drinke of the same cuppe that you shall doe, vnto whom it shall be an eternall glory and name, to haue wonne the nobilitie of France: but to be overcome (as God forbid) is not to be ascribed vnto the danger of time, but to the courage of the men. Having spoken these wordes, he perceived that there was a hill hard by which was planted on the top with hedges and ditches, the inside whereof was very plaine, and a pasture field on the one side thereof, with many rough bushes, and on the other side it was all planted with vines, and the residue was plaine, in the top whereof he did imagine the arme of the French to lye betwixt our men and the Hill. There were great and lowe valleys, and a piece of parish ground. One company of the Prince finding out a narrow passage, entred the valley and toke the hill, where among the bushes they hid themselves, taking the advantage of the place. The felde wherein our men lay, to witte, the barwarde and middlewarde, was deuided from the plaine where the French armie lay, with a long hedge and ditch, the one end whereof did reach down to the parish aforesaid: that of the Hill next the parish, the Earle of Warwicke kept, Captaine of the barwarde. In the upper part of the hedge, toward the hanging of the hill, there was a great gap, from the which a fowles cast stode our rereward, ouer the which the Earle of Salisbury was Captaine. Our enemies perceiuing our Princes Attente to be displayed, and oftentimes to be remoued from place to place, and by reason of the Hill to be sometime quite out of sight, they iudged that the Prince fled: yet Douglas the Scot and Sparthall de Clarimount, said that it was not so, but Sparthall Dawdenam being deceiued in his owne opinion, thought otherwise, crying out still to follow & chase the Prince now fleeing, and with him also Douglas, to the intent to gette preferment and a worthie name of his new warfare: But Clarimount to walsh away the euill opinion which was conceived of him touching his fidelitie, was the more belement to perswade them forward, for vnto them the charge of the barward was deputed: befoze these went out, the fashion was, certaine to chase and to iuste, against whom certaine that were vnder the Hill of our barward came to meete Sparthall Dawdenam, who staying to see the ende of the iusting, kept himselfe from

encountering.

encountering. In the meane time Clarimount thinking to come out by the gap in the hedge, and so to come at the backe of our barwarde, and to compasse them in, met with the Earle of Salisburie, who perceiuing his coming and purpose, suspected his whole intent, and so they which gouerned our rereward, making backe to take the gap, and keepe the enemye from passing that way sustained the first charge of the battell. Then began a terrible meeting betwixt the armed men, who laid on load with swoydes and speares, neither did the Archers slacke their dutie, but lying in safe trenches, sturt vp aboue the ditch and shot ouer the hedge, preuailling moze with their arrowes then they did that fought in armes: thus our rereward slaying the enemies, who came stragling to the gap, and the barward which lay on the hanging of the hill toward the parish being gouerned by the Earle of Warwicke, were alwayes ready and met with the Frenchmen, beating them downe. The Archers of the barward were placed in the parish, out of daunger from the Hostemen, yet for all that they did preuaile there somewhat, for the Hostemen were appointed to no other purpose, but to ouerrunne the Archers. The Earle of Oxford considering the discommoditie that might ensue therof, departed from the Princes warde, and leading with him the Archers, set them on the one side of the Frenchmen, commanding them to shote at the hinder parts of the Hostes, by meanes whereof the hostes being gauld and wounded, fell to tumbling with them that fate on their backes, or els turned backe & ran vpon them that followed after, making great slaughter vpon their owne masters. The Hostemen being thus beaten backe, the Archers retired towards the place from whence they came, shoting & gawling the sides of the French men which fought right ouer against them: by this time the force and beate of the battell began to be in prime, when as the Earles of Warwicke & Salisburie, like fierce Lions, endeuoured of purpose which of them should dunge the land of Popers most with Frenchmens blood. Neither was the Wolfe Counsellor Thomas Darnford of Suffolke idle at that season, who right worthily in all his acts behaued himselfe, being expert and skillfull in activitie. For he continually running from warde to warde, and into all troopes and companies, comforted and stirred them vp with good wordes to doe well, hauing a great regard that the youthfull sort of lustie souldiers being so bolde vpon their god hearts and courage, should not without regard goe out too farre, and placed the Archers at sundry times to great advantages, and oftentimes as lesure would suffer him, he would encourage by the minds of the souldiers. Clarimount was slaine, William Douglas also being wounded fled, hauing with him a selue Scottes of his bande, with Archebald Douglas his brother & our men rettying, put themselves in good aray, and our barward and middle warde ioynded themselves together, by and by there marcheth forth a newe armie of the Frenchmen, the which the eldest sonne of the French King Dolphin of Vienna, brought forth. The order and aray of this armie was more terrible & fierre then the shew of that which was last opposed, yet for all that could it not make our men afraid, who were sharpe set, and very desirous of honour, and also of reuenge, both for themselves, and their fellows, which a

little

little before were slain and wounded. And therefore boldly they goe to it on both sides, making shoutes and noises, crying out, Saint George to harrow, o, Saint Denis be for vs. Within a while they were come to fight man to man, and euery man ready to die fight now to save their liues, neither doth the Lion make the wolfe more afraid, o, Tiger is more terrible to the simple beast, then our lusty gentlemen were to their enemies, who chased them, and slue them like as the wolues chase and kill sheepe. And though that this battell withstood our men more then the first, yet, after they had lost a great many of their men, they had such a beaule, that they feared many, & yet, not by running away, but by a faire retreat, which the Frenchmen are accustomed to be. But our men considering, that the victorie of the fieelde was doubtfull, as long as the French King might be in presence with his armie, who lay there halfe hid in a Walley, they would not afterward, when they had chased any that fled, goe out of the fieelde, but the worthy man Maurice Berkeley, sonne of Thomas Barkley, had no regard thereunto, who so; the space of two houres together with his men, neuer spaced, but would be still in the forefront of the battell, invading his enemies with the first. This Maurice being in the midst of the Dolphins gard sowd blowes among them, first with a speare, then with a sword, and at length being all alone compassed with the multitude, and loosely wounded, he was taken prisoner. In the meane time our men caried those which were wounded of their campe, and laid them under bushes and hedges out of the way, other hauing spent their weapons toke the speares & swordes from them whom they had overcome: and the archers lacking arrowes, made hast to drave them from worse wretches that were but halfe dead: there was not one of them al, but either he was wounded o; quite wearied with great labour, except 400. men who keeping the chiefe standert, were appointed to mete the French King. The Dolphin being thus put to flight, one came to the French King, and said, my Lord, the fieelde is fallen to the Englishmen, and your eldest son hath withdrawn himselfe: unto whom the French King answered with an oth, that he would not that day forsake y<sup>e</sup> field unless he were taken o; slain, and so by that means caried away by force: wherefore the ancient-bearers are commanded to march forwards, after whom followed two great companies of armed men into a wide field, shewing themselves to our men, & strooke a great feare into their heartes, in so much that they were out of hope to conquer any more. The which thing a man of great wisdom standing by y<sup>e</sup> Prince signified with a holow voice, (saying alas we worse wretches are overcome,) but the prince hauing a great trust & faith in Christ, checked him saying, thou likst thou bastards fellow, for thou canst not say that we can be overcome as long as I liue. Capitaine de la Buche, a noble man in all affaires as some as be preferred the armie of the French King, marching forth of their tentes, alking licence of the prince departed away with li. soldiers, & a hundred archers, whom many of our men thought to have fled away, therefore our soldiers (excepting the chiefe Capitaines) being quite out of hope of victorie, committed themselves wholly to the mercy of God. Then the Prince commanded his Ancient beere Sir Walter Woodland, to march forward to march his enemies,

mes, and with a few fresh men he opposed battell with the great armie of the French King: by and by they sounded their trumpets, one giuing answer to another, they made such a noise, that the walles of Bopters sounded with the Echo thereof like a wood, in such sort that a man would haue thought that the hills had bellowed out to the balleis, and that the cloudes had giuen forth a most terrible thunder, to the which there wanted no cruel lightnings, whilst the aire shone on the bright armour & speares dashing againe shining barneis. Then came on the cruell company of crossbowmen making a barneis in the sides with the multitudine of quarrels which they shot, against whom came a worthy company of English bowmen: out lies also darts of Arth which met with the enemye a far off: but the French army being full of braver troupes, and many armed men defending their bodies with their shields, pushed forward against their enemies: wherefore our Archers hauing emptied their quiers in vaine, being armed onely with swordes and targets, are faine to encounter with them that were laden with armour. When he desired himselfe the worthy Prince of Wales, cutting and beuiling the Frenchmen with a sharpe sword. In the meane time Capitaine de la Buche marcheth a compasse about; under the hanging of the hill, which he with the Prince a little before forsake, and pitifully compassing about the fieelde, at the length cometh close vnder the place where the French Campe lay, from thence he ascended to the toppe of the hill that way, which the Frenchmen had beaten with their trauaile, and so suddenly breaking forth vniuersed, and the wing by the ensigne of Saint George that he was our friend, the Prince with great courage giueth a fresh charge on the French armie, being desirous to break their ranks, before the Capitaine also sayde, should set on the side of the battayle. The Prince lustily encountering with his enemies goeth into the huddle of the fighting, and where hee seeth most company, there hee aspieth about him on euery side.

In the meane time on euery side, his friends which serned with Capitaine de la Buche, were at the backes of the enemies, beating downe and killing without pittie, and the Archers also placed for the purpose shot so thicke, wounding the backes and sides of the Frenchmen, in such sort, that the fourme of the battaille was quite spoiled, neither could they put themselves in order or aray any more. This was the courage of the Prince who at the length thrusteth thorow the throngs of them that guarded the French King, then should you see an Antient beginne to nod and stumble, the bearers of them to fall downe, the blood of slanes and Princes ran mingled together into the waters which were nigh. In like sorte the Boze of Cornuall rageth, who seeketh to haue none other way to the French Kings Standard, then by blood onely: but when they came there, they met with a company of Montie men to withstand them, the Englishmen fight, the Frenchmen also lay on: but at length fortune making halfe to turne her wheele, the Prince preacht forward on his enemies, and like a fierce Lion beating downe the pards, he came to the peeling by of the French King. The Frenchmen being scattered abroad in the feloes of Bopters perceiving that the Standard with the

flowedeluce



As they were thus beaten downe, fled with all speede towards the Towne, which was not farre off: the English men perceping them to be fleeing, though themselves were either soze wounded or wearied, followed them in chase even to the gates of Poytiers, where in a great skirnish and very dangerous, they slew a great number of Frenchmen. At the last our men being called backe by retreat with the sound of trumpet, and assembling together, there were diuerse pavillions and tents set up in the fields, and the whole company being thoroughly comforted with this victorie, gaue their whole endeavour to provide for them that were wounded, for the quiet rest of them that were wearied, for safe keeping of them that were taken prisoners, and for the refreshing of the that were almost famished, until they had full understanding who and how many were wanting: Among them which were found halfe dead, was found the Lord James Dawdeley, by reason of his broad buckler, and being caried in the armes of his souldiours, was brought to the Princes lodging, and the Prince himselfe rose from his supper, and came to him, and caused him to be stripped and laid in a soft bed, and being somewhat better com to his remembrance, the Prince comforted him, swearing to him that he had the French King yielded unto him, which newes when the languishing Noble man heard, he straightwayes reuiued. The Prince returning to the French King, willed him not to denie that to be a worthy dede of his that rose from his supper to comfort him that was almost dead, who spared not his owne blood to purchase victory. After that they hauing had some talke concerning the warres which James Dawdeley made, the French King said that amongst all other Route Champions which ballantly that day behaued themselves, he did greatly wonder at the noble dedes of that Knight, and he spake not much more in all his supper, but what he spake to the Prince, who comforted his noble pray. Such like words, it is said that the French King spake: Although it be our chance to fall into an euertlasting sorrow, yet for all that we thought it good to refrain from the same by a kind of measure, for though we be under subiection by law and right of warre under our noble cousin, yet are we not as calves, or faint hearted runne aways, or taken lying hid close in a copse, but after the manner of the helbe by the ende and successe of warre, where we were as ready to dye as live for iustice sake. And in the same field were many rich men taken, whose lives were reserved for ransome, the faithfull hearted and lewd chased away, but the worthiest and stoutest were spoiled of their lincs. This battell of Poytiers was fought on the nineteenth day of September.

The next day after the battell, all the prisoners were numbez, to wit, the French King, also Philip his sonne, the Archbishop of Senon, the Earle of Pontue, the Earle of Longuile, the Earle of Clewe, the Earle of Tankerville, the Earle Daunfer, the Earle of Wendabour, the Earle of Blouancer, the Earle of Malapount, the Earle of Wandome, the Earle of Juyng, the Earle Don Martin, the Earle of Selabuse, the Earle of Salso, Viscount Perbon, the Lord Daubeny, Marshall Daubedenam, the Lord Guinchard de Angle, Marshall de Seintong, the Lord Poyez Maluimier, the Lord Leonard de Col-

pop,

hop, the Senechal of Poytiers, the Lord great Maister, the chiefe Maister of the hospitall of Saigne, the Lord of S. Egre, the Lord Damobd Senechal of Annar, the Lord Tower, the Lord Wars, the Lord Durnall, the Lord of the towne of Ernel, the Lord Maugelcr, the Lord Planke, the Viscount de Wellmount, and the Lord of Sulp: there were also the bodies founde of many that were slaine, as the Duke of Burbon, the Duke Daillnes, the Countesse of France, Marshall de Carimount, the Lord Geoffrey de Charney, the Lord Pounce, the Bishop of Chaloner, the Lord of Landas, the Lord Ripemount, the Lord Chanery, the Lord Jacle, the Lord Jele, the Lord Janger, the Lord de Mount John, the Lord Dargenton, the Lord Gwale, the Lord Knas, the Lord Koehechicheward, the Lord de Willem. The Prince bought all the prisoners and captives of them that kept them, and carried them with him to Burdeaur, there to remaine in safe custodie, during his abode there.

Edward Prince of Wales returning into England with John the French King, Philip his sonne, and many other prisoners, arrived at Wiltmouth on the sixt of May, and the saure and twentieth of May entered London with them, where he was receiued with great honour of the Citizens, and so conueyed to the Kings pallace at Westminster, where the King sitting in his estate in Westminster hall, receiued them, and after conueyed the French King to a lodging, where he lay a season: and after the said French King was lodged in the Chauncy, (which then was a pleasant place belonging to the Duke of Lancaster.) In the winter following were great and royal Jousts holden in Smithfield at London, where many knightly fights of armes were don, to the great honour of the King and Realme, at the which were present, the Kings of England, France, and Scotland, with many noble estates of all those kingdomes, whereof the moze part of the strangers were prisoners.

After this taking of King John of France, Englishmen (which befoze were bearded and the haire of their heads short rounded) then used long haire on their heads, and their beards to be shauen.

Henry Picard Wintner, Mayor of London, in one day did sumptuously feast Edward King of England, John King of France, the King of Cyprus (then arrived in England) David King of Scots, Edward Prince of Wales, with many noble men and other, and after the said Henry Picard kept his hall against all comers whosoeuer, that were willing to play at dice and hazard. In like manner the Lady Margaret his wife did also keep her Chamber, to the same intent. The King of Cyprus playing with Henry Picard in the hall, did winne of him fifty marks, but Henry being very skilful in that arte, set his hand did after win of the same King, the same fiftie marks, and fiftie markes moze, which when the same King began to take in all part, although he dissembled the same, Henry said unto him, My Lord King be not angryed, I cannot not your gold but your play, for I haue not bid you hither that I might geue you, but that amongst other things I might trie your play, and gaue him his money againe, plentifully bestowing of his owne amongst the rest: he also gaue many rich gifts to the King and other nobles and Knights, which done with him, to the great glorie of the Citizens of London in those dayes.

About

As they were thus beaten downe, fled with all speede towards the Towne, which was not farre off: the English men perceping them to be fleeing, though themselves were either soze wounded or wearied, followed them in chase even to the gates of Poytiers, where in a great skirnish and very dangerous, they slew a great number of Frenchmen. At the last our men being called backe by retreat with the sound of trumpet, and assembling together, there were diuerse pavillions and tents set up in the fields, and the whole company being thoroughly comforted with this victorie, gaue their whole endeavour to provide for them that were wounded, for the quiet rest of them that were wearied, for safe keeping of them that were taken prisoners, and for the refreshing of the that were almost famished, until they had full understanding who and how many were wanting: Among them which were found halfe dead, was found the Lord James Dawdeley, by reason of his broad buckler, and being caried in the armes of his souldiours, was brought to the Princes lodging, and the Prince himselfe rose from his supper, and came to him, and caused him to be stripped and laid in a soft bed, and being somewhat better com to his remembrance, the Prince comforted him, swearing to him that he had the French King yielded unto him, which newes when the languishing Noble man heard, he straightwayes reuiued. The Prince returning to the French King, willed him not to denie that to be a worthy dede of his that rose from his supper to comfort him that was almost dead, who spared not his owne blood to purchase victory. After that they hauing had some talke concerning the warres which James Dawdeley made, the French King said that amongst all other Route Champions which ballantly that day behaued themselves, he did greatly wonder at the noble dedes of that Knight, and he spake not much more in all his supper, but what he spake to the Prince, who comforted his noble pray. Such like words, it is said that the French King spake: Although it be our chance to fall into an euertlasting sorrow, yet for all that we thought it good to refrain from the same by a kind of measure, for though we be under subiection by law and right of warre under our noble cousin, yet are we not as calves, or faint hearted runne aways, or taken lying hid close in a copse, but after the manner of the helbe by the ende and successe of warre, where we were as ready to dye as live for iustice sake. And in the same field were many rich men taken, whose lives were reserved for ransome, the faithfull hearted and lewd chased away, but the worthiest and stoutest were spoiled of their lincs. This battell of Poytiers was fought on the nineteenth day of September.

Edward the blacke prince returned with his prisoners into England.

Jousts in Smithfield

Beards of Englishmen shauen.

The mayor of London feasted four Kings.



About hallowin tide, David le Bruce King of Scottes was delivered from the long imprisonment of xi. yeres, in the castle of Dortham, his ransom being set 100000. markes to be payde the next tenne yeres following.

Ann. reg. 32.

1358.

Tho. Walling.  
Robert  
Binolles.

Normandy and Britayne were soze spoiled and wasted by Philip the King of Fraunces brother, Jacob de la Pipe, and Robert Knowles, with many other Englishmen which were capitaines of that company, who raged in warlike sort in these Countreies, the space of thre yeres and moze, contrary to the King of Englands pleasure. This Robert Knowles being a meane man of birth became Capitaine of many souldiours, and did many marvellous acts.

Registrum fra-  
craim minorum.

Isabel daughter to Philip the faire, King of France, and wife to King Edward the second, deceased, apud Rifings iuxta London the xxii. of August, and was buried in the midst of the grey friers quire at London, in a tombet of Alabaster.

Castle at  
Wimburye  
c. 1358.

This yere King Edward began the new building in the castle of Windsor, where he was borne, for which cause he procured to adorne that place with larger and moze beautifull buildings: he appointed surmountour of this towre the William Wicham a proud and discrete man. But the keepe then called the round Table was begonne (as afore is the web) in the 18. yere of his reigne. The same yere died the noble and famous personages, to wit, Sir Roger Mortimer Earle Marshal of the Kings house, and one of his especiallest privie Counsellours in Burgundy, in the towne of Moneray, he was buried at Wigmore, Thomas Earle of Oxford, John le Grey steward of England, Geoffrey de Say, and many other. And in the Kings armie that was beyond the sea there died above a thousand men of account. Also Geoffrey de Northbriggis Bishop of Chichester deceased, and Robert de Stratton succeeded.

Ann. reg. 33.

1359.

John Beauchamp  
died in Paris.

John of Gaunt the Kings sonne (by dispensation) toke to wife Blanch, daughter of Henry Duke of Lancaster his kinwoman, John Beauchamp constable of Moner, warden of the postes, knight of the Garter (sonne to Edward de Beauchampe, Earle of Warwick, and brother to Thomas also Earle of Warwick) deceased, and was buried on the south side of the middle Ile in the body of Saint Pauls Church in London, a faire monument of him remaineth there, by many ignorant people misnamed, to be of Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, who lyeth honorably intombed at Saint Albons.

The French King under colour of peace, offered to King Edward Flaunders, Picardy, Aquitaine, and other lands, which the Englishmen had raged through and spoiled, for the performance whereof, messengers were sent into France, but the Frenchmen would not performe the offer, wherefore King Edward being angry with a naute of ships passed the sea to Caleis, where dividing his army into thre parts he committed one company to Henry Duke of Lancaster, another to Prince Edward, and the thirde he reserved to himselfe, and so passed into Burgundy.

King Edward  
invaded Bur-  
gundie.  
Frenchmen  
arrived at  
Wimburye.

In the Lent season, the Normans with a small naup arrived at Winchester, and partly bent the towne, and slew such as did withstand them: wherefore the Prelates of England assembled from all parts in armour to with-  
stand

stand them, but when they had prepared themselves to battell, the French were gone, leaving behind them two of their ships, which sticke fast in the land, and 200. of their men.

King Edward with his power rode through France, by Picardy, Artois, Norm, Champagne, & so to Britayne, destroying the countrey before him. And here is to be noted, that the 14. day of Aprill, and the morrow after Easter day, King Edward with his host lay before the Cite of Paris, which day was full dark of mist and haile, and so bitter cold, that many men died on their horse backs with the cold, wherefore unto this day it hath bene called the Blacke Monday. The king of Navarre vered soze the marches of Normandy. Thus was the realme of France miserably beset on all sides. At the last, a final peace was concluded on this condition, that King Edward should have to his possession, the countreies of Gascoigne, Guyen, Poitiers, Limosin, Valentia, Crantes, Caleis, Guisnes, and divers other Lordships, Castles, Townes, and all the landes to them belonging, without knowledge of any soveraigntie or subjection for the same. This peace being confirmed by writing and by oath, King Edward came into England, and so straight to the towne for the French king, where he appointed his ransom to be thre millions of flozencs, and so delivered him of all imprisonment, and brought him with great honour to the Sea, who then sailed over into France.

Ann. reg. 34.  
1360.

Peace with  
France.

Tho. Walling.

French king  
released.

Edward the 24. of Januarie began a Parliament at Westminster, where the forme of the agreement was read, and allowed of all estates, where the king on the last of Januarie caused his nobles to sweare to hold and keep the said agreement, especially those as well Prelates as other that were not at Caleis, where he sweare, and other that were there with him.

Ann. reg. 35.  
1361.

And on the first of february following, the king restored to the Prelates all their houses, lands, tenements, &c. as by his patents may appeare: likewise as followeth. Edward by the grace of God king of England, Lord of Irelands, and of Aquitaine, to all by these presents, &c. Although the Priorie of mountacute, in the county of Somerset (by reason of the warres betwene us and France) with all the landes, tenements, fees, advowsons, together with the goods and cattels belonging to the same, hath ben of late taken into our hands, and by us farmed & rented forth, as appeareth by divers patents. Now therefore, since peace is betwixt us and the noble Prince, our most deare brother, the king of France, we for the honour of God, and holy Church, restore to the said Priore, the Priorie, with all the landes, tenements, fees, advowsons: and whatsoever else belonging to the same, to hold the same, in as free manner as they held it before. And withall, forgive and release all arreages of rents which might be due unto us, by reason of any former grants. In witness, &c. the 6. of february the 35. yere of our raigne.

Restitution of  
the Priories  
Record.

The like letters of restitution had the houses (in the patent) undernamed, to wit, Poxtampton, Arundel, Camerlingham, Striton, Wistowel, &c. to the number of one hundred and tenne in England, besides them in Ireland, Poxtmable, and the parts of France. All which houses were cleane suppressed and dissolved, with many moze by King Henry the first.

A great dearth and pestilence happened in England, which was called the second pestilence, in which died Henry Duke of Lancaster in March at London, and was buried at Leicester, in the Collegiate Church which he had founded, with a Deane, twelve Chanons, Prebendaries, as many Clerg, and other ministers accordingly, and one hundred weak and sick persons, fiftie men, and fiftie women, and tenne other women to tend upon them that were sicke and weak, so that the same college and hospitall, at the suppression by king Henry the eight was valued by the yere in lands five hundred ninety and five pounds, seven shillings, and five pence.

Lib. Lichfeld.

There died also Reiginald Lord Cobham, & Walter fitz Warren, balliant and famous knights, and five Bishops, to wit, Reiginald of Worcester, Michael of London, Thomas of Ely, John of Lincoln, and Robert of Cicester. To Worcester was preferred John of Barnet: to London, Simon Sudburie: to Ely, Simon Langham: to Lincoln, John Bokingham: to Cicester, William Linlincere.

Leonell Earle of Ulster by his wife, and sonne to king Edward, went into Ireland to encounter the Irishmen that vexed the Englysh.

Edward Prince of Wales toke to wife by dispensation the Countesse of Kent, daughter unto Edmond Earle of Kent, brother to R. Edward the second: she had bene before wife unto Thomas Holland, and before that, she was wife to the Earle of Salisbury, and divorced from him.

A rout of the great company of the Englyshmen were commaunded to depart out of France, and they discomfited in Auverne the Frenchmen, and toke divers prisoners of the nobles of France that had ben afore taken of the Englyshmen, and there was Blainc Laques de Burbon, and the Countie of Salubry. Also a rout of Brittaines, part of the great company afore said, were discomfited in Almon alias Garret, by Wil. Felton knight of England, and at that time steward of the Countrey for king Edward.

One tempest  
of wind.  
Ann. reg. 32.  
1369.

The king held his Christmas at Windsor, & the x. day following, a sore and vehement South-west winde brake forth, so hideous, that it overthrew high houses, towers, castles, and trees, and so bowed them, that the residue which fell not, but remained standing, were the weaker.

Feasting in  
Smithfield.

The first five daies of May, at London in Smithfield, were Joutes holden, the king and Quene being present, and the most part of the Chivalrie of England and France, and of other Nations, to the which came Spaniards, Cipriets, and Armenians knightly requesting the king of England also against the Pagans that had invaded their confines. The staple of wooles, notwithstanding the oath received of the kind of England, and other great men of the land, is sent to Calais.

First staple of  
wool at Calais

In the feast of the Apostles Peter and Paule, king Edward at Westminster by his Charter, gave to the Abbot of Westminster, and convent, two flags of his benison, yearly to be taken in the forest of Windsor.

Edward the  
king's death.  
Ann. Prince  
of Aquitaine.

Edward Prince of Wales, about the feast of Saint Margarete, at Westminster, in presence of the great men of the Realme, received of his father the Principality of Aquitaine, scallie and homage first made to him, but yet left

left not the Principality of Wales, the Duchie of Cornewall, the countie of Chester and Kent.

Simon Illip Archbishop of Canterbury did ordaine, that moze should not be given to prelates for their yearly stipend, then thre pounds, five shillings, and eight pence, which caused many of them to feale.

The thirteenth day of October, began a Parliament at London, which continued till the feast of Saint Brice, the thirtieth of November, on which day the king was boyne, having now accomplished the fiftieth yere of his age, whereupon, he pardoned such as were guilty of treason to his person, released prisoners, renoked outlaws, and at the petition of the commons, he commaunded pleas to be tried in Englysh, and not in French, as they had continued since the Conquest. He made Leonell his sonne Earle of Ulster, then being in Ireland, Duke of Clarence, and his sonne John Earle of Richmond, he made Duke of Lancaster: and Edmond of Langley his sonne, he made Earle of Cambridge, the Sparquett Juliers before recyted, being dead without issue of his bodye.

In the said Parliament was granted to the king for thre yeres following, five and twentie shillings, and eight pence, of every sacke of wool to be transported beyond the seas.

Joane Quene of Scots, and wife to David Bruce, and sister to king Edward the third, died in the castell of Harfords, and was buried in the grey friers Church at London by her mother.

Sir John Cobham knight, founded the Colledge of Cobham in Kent, valued at the suppressing at eight and twentie pounds the yere.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor.

The French king, the king of Cyprus, and the king of Scots, came all into England to speake with king Edward, who received them with great hono, and gave them great giftes: the kings of Cyprus and of Scotland returned home shortly, but the French king fell sicke at London, whereof hee shortly after died.

A frost in England lasted fro the midst of September, to the moneth of Aprill. This yere, the Castell of Quinborough was builded by king Edward.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor.

The ninth day of Aprill died John king of France, at y. Samoy besides Westminster, though grieve of mind, that the Duke of Angiow one of his pledges had deceived him, and came not into England, according as he had promised and sworn: his corpes was honourably conveyed to Douer, and so to Saint Denis in France, where he was buried.

Charles de Blois with 3600. men of warre fell suddenly upon John de Mountfort, and William Larimer, whilst they lay in siege before the towne and Castell of Duaurie, and had scarcely with him 1600. of Englyshmen, Brittaines and other Nations, and giving battell one to another, without deliberation, there were slaine, on the Dukes side onely seven men, and of Charles part were slaine, Charles himself, the Lord Rochford, and William Vango, and knights and Esquires almost a thousand, there were taken two Castles,

Ge 2

Dicks be-  
cause there  
was lacke  
of living.

Parliament at  
London.  
Wallingham.

The lawes to  
be pleaded in  
the Englysh  
tongue.

Record.

Subside at  
Woolen.

1369.

Cobham col-  
ledge.

Ann. reg. 37.

Three kings  
came into  
England.  
The French  
king sicke.  
1363.

Great frost.  
Adam Marten.  
Cro. col. reg. 20.

Ann. reg. 38.

1364.  
The French  
king died at  
London.

and 27. lozds, and of Scottes vallant men of armes 1500.

An. reg. 39.  
1365.  
Justices your  
wishes.

Prince Edward had a sonne bozne at Angouleme called after his fathers name, Edward, but he liued not long, for he died about the age of seven yeres, and yet not to some, as it was said.

The same yere king Edward arrested his Justices Sir Henry Greene, Sir William Skipwith, and many other, for their enormous vniust dealings, and took of them great fines for their redemption.

Peter pence  
for pence.

He commanded that Peter pence should no moze be gathered nor paid to Rome. S. Peters pence is the kings almes, and all that had 20. peny worth of goods, of one manner cattel in their house of their own proper, should giue peny at Lammastide amounted in all through England to 300. marks of silver.

Wishes  
offer to the  
king.

Simon Skip archb. of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury: this Simon Skip founded a Colledge in Oxford, and called it Canterbury Colledge, Simon Langham B. of Ely was translated to Canterbury. In the first yere of whose translation Pope Urban the first made a decre against the heaping together of many benefices, or spiritual promotions by one man, for the execution wherof, he sent commandement to the archb. of Canterbury, and by him to all his suffragans, to certify in writing the names, number, and qualities of euery Clerke, benefices or liuings within their seuerall diocesse. And it was found, that at that time the clergy of England exceeded all other Nations in bearing of offices about the king and commonweale, in place of Justice and other, as appeareth by one certificate, which the B. of London then made, of many beneficed men at that time abiding within his diocesse, some of them had 3r. benefices with cure, and some moze, and some of them had 11. prebends besides other great dignities. As Wil. Wicham, who that yere at the death of Wil. Edington B. of Winchester was made a generall administrator of spiritual and temporal things pertaining to that Bishopricke, and the next yere was made Bishop of Winchester, this Wicham, besides the archdeaconry of Lincoln, and prouostship of Welles, and the parsonage of Spanham in Devonshire had twelue prebends.

Simon Langham Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England.  
John Barner Bishop of Bath and treasurer of England.

William V. Wicham Archdeacon of Lincoln keeper of the priuie seale.

David Wellar parson of Somersham, master of the Rolles, serving king Edward in the Chancery for 12 yeres and moze.

Tenne beneficed pylates Custians, and masters of the Chancery.

William Mulse Deane of Saint Martins le Grand chiefe Chamberlaine of the Erchequer, receiver, and keeper of the kings treasure and Jewels.

William Askeby Archdeacon of Northampton, chancellor of the Erchequer.

William Dighton prebendary of S. Martins, Clarke of the priuie seale.

Richard Chesterfield prebend of S. Stephens, treasurer of the kings house.

Henry Snatch parson of Auon or Dundall, master of the kings wardrobe.

John Newenham parson of Fenstanton, one of the Chamberlaines of the Erchequer, and keeper of the kings treasury and Jewels.

John Ronchey parson of Hardwicke suruey: and controller of the kings works.

Thomas

Thomas Bricingham parson of Ashey, treasurer to the king for the parts of Gallies and the marches of Caleis.

John Troys treasurer of Ireland, diuers waies beneficed in Ireland. All these were certified in the diocesse of London at that time.

An. reg. 40.  
1366.

John Barns translated from Bath to Ely, and John Harwell made bishop of Bath.

The third of Aprill was bozne at Burbeaur, Richard sonne to Edward the blacke Prince, which Richard was after king of England by the name of Richard the second.

There was then a pylate in England, called William Wicham, who was so great with the king that all things were done by him, and without him nothing was done. And so when the Bishopricke of Winchester was void, the king of England at the desire of the said pylate, wrote to the Duke of Burbon, that he would for his sake, make such sute to Pope Urban, that his chaplein might haue the bishopricke of Winchester, promising the Duke in his doings, to intreat him right courteously for his imprisonment and hostage. When the duke of Burbon saw the B. of Englands messengers and his letter, he was therof right ioyous: and shewed all the manner to the French king, who counselled him to go to the Pope for the same, and so he did, for he went to Auignon to the Pope, who was not as the gone to Rome, and so the duke made his request to the Pope, and beganted him, and gaue him the Bishopricke of Winchester at his pleasure, so that the king of England would be fauourable to him in the composition for his deliuarance, that the foresaid William Wicham should haue the said Bishopricke. When the duke of Burbon returned into France, and so into England, and there treated with the king and his counsel for his deliuarance, or he would shew his buls from the Pope. The king of England loued so well this pylate, that the Duke of Burbon was deliuered quite, and paid 20000. frankes. And so Sir William Wicham was B. of Winchester, and Chancellor of England.

William Wicham  
bishop of  
Winchester.  
John Frofar.

The 4 of May the king made a composition in his Parliament betwene the two Antiuersities of the one part, and the 4 orders of friers mendicants abiding within the same Antiuersities on the other part, which before had continued many yeres in strife, to the great decay of learning, and much other hurt to both parties.

Edward Prince of Wales, taking compassion vpon Peter king of Spayne, who was dyen out of his kingdome by Henry his bassard brother, entred Spayne with a great puissance, and in a battell at Bayers, the 3. of Aprill, put to flight the foresaid Bassard. ouercame his power, and slew 6000. of his men, where there were taken 60. persons of name, and 2000. of the common souldiours, which done, he restored the said Peter to his former dignitie, and returned home with great triumph and victorie, but not long after, Henry the bassard, vnblesed Peter late at a table, sodainly thrust him thorow with a speare, and invaded the land by treason, which by open warre he could not do.

An. reg. 41.  
1367.

Tho Wal.  
The Bassard  
brother dyen  
rich the last  
fall.

The Bassard  
brother mure  
dereth the  
last fall.

The Frenchmen tooke ciuities and castles, in Poytow, that belonged to the king of England, and to the end they might the moze effectually deuote the king of England, the French king sent him word, that hee was ready to

An. reg. 42.  
1368.

pay the residue of his fathers ranſome, & to perſorme the conditions of peace; alſo, he ſent him Wines out of Boheme, and other preſents, in token of loue: But it ſortuned whyles the Ambaſſadors were in the kings preſence, the lamentable newes were brought of the ſorrible inuaſion of the Frenchmen in Poy- tow, which when the king heard, he commanded the Ambaſſadors to get them home with their deſcittall preſents, to their deſcittall Lord, whoſe mockes he would not long leaue vnreruenged. The Ambaſſadors returning home, were met by the men of Caleis, who toke their wines, and other goods from them, and ſent them to the King of France, with a chaine of ronne.

Subletie of  
Frenchmen.

Paulus Iovius.  
Leonell Duke  
of Clarence  
married and  
died.

In the moneth of Aprill, Leonell Duke of Clarence, with a chosen company of the English nobilitie went towards Spillaine, there to marry with Violentis the daughter of Galeasus the second of that name, Duke of Spillaine, of which marriage Paulus Iovius writeth thus, upon the life of the said Galeasus: By the means of peace being obtained, and Barnabe with no lesse earnest endeavour seeking by force and armes to recover the Principedome of Bononie, as taken from him by fraud, and detained by injury, Galeasus desired to justify himselfe with forraign assistance, glorious in deed, in princely payre, but inevent to him and his unfortunate, matching his sonne John Galeasus with Isabelle daughter to Charles the French king, and his daughter with Leonell Duke of Clarence, sonne of the king of England, to whom having received 200000. Florences of gold for a dowry by the marriage of Violentis, the Cities of Monsregalis, and Alba Pompeis submitted themselves. And Isabel which came to spillaine was so troublesome to her father in law, that she cost him 200000. Florences, although the rebelling of the Towne of Pesantes; and the title of that most honourable name had been given to her new husband in part of her dowrie. Whereupon, at the coming of Leonell, such abundance of treasure was in most bounteous manner spent, in making most sumptuous feasts, setting forth stately sightes, and honouring with rare gifts about two hundred Englishmen, which accompanied his sonne in law, as it seemed to surpass the greatness of most wealthy Princes: for in the banquet whereat Francis Petrarch was present, amongst the bestest guests, there were about thirtie courses of service at the table, and betwixt every course, as many presents of wonderous price intermixed, all which John Galeasus, chiefe of the choise youth, bringing to the table, did offer to Leonell.

A most stupendous feat.

**Only gifts  
given.**

Fragment of  
a skull suffi-  
cient to serve ten  
thousand men.

There were in one onely course fencyng goodly hozes, adorned with silke and siluer furniture: and in the other siluer beccles, falcons, hounds, armour for hozes, costly coates of mayle, beaflaffes glittering of massie stele, helmes, and co:lets decked with costly creases, apparrell distinct with costly Jewels,ouldiers, girdles, and lastly certaine gemmes, by curious art set in gold, and of purple, and cloth of gold for mens apparrell in great abundance. And such was the sumptuousnesse of that banquet, that the meate which were brought from the table, would sufficiently haue fedd 10000. men: but not long after, Leonell liuing with his new wife, whilst after the manner of his olde countrey, as forgetting of, or not regarding his change of ayze, he addicted him selfe ouermuch to intymity banquettings, spent and consumed with an ingring sicknesse, died at Alba. Afterward Violantis was married to Ocho

Ono Marques of Mounterrat in Italy, who had no better success than the other, being in the hills of Pauc, stabbed through of a base housekeeper, where he likewise died obscurely.

The third mortality or pestilence was this yere, whereof died Blanch Du-  
chess of Lancaster, and was buried in Pauls Church at London.

This yere was a great dearth of Corne, so that a bushel of wheat at London was sold for two shillings five pence, of Barley twentie pence, of Oates twelve pence.

The 15. of August died Quene Philip, wife to Edward the third at Wind-  
lesore, and was buried at Westminster.

Queensborough, Kingston upon Hull, and S. Botolphs, *alias* Boston, were made Staples by Parliament.

The Kings sonne John Duke of Lancaster, and Humfrey Bohan Earle of Hereford, with a great armie went into Fraunce, where they little perceived, because an huge Army of Frenchmen had pitched their Tents upon the toppes of Chalke hill, nere unto Caleis, so strongly, that they could not be set on without great losse and damage: but shortly after, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwick, arrived at Caleis with a number of cholen souldiers, at whose coming, the French men leaving their tents and bivouals, fled away, neuertheless, hee passed forth, spoiling and waisting the Isle of Calis with fire and sword, but as he returned toward Caleis, he fell sick, whereof he died, and the other captaynes returned without honour.

King Edward borrowed of the Bishops and other, many great summes of money, saying, he would bestow the same in defence of the Church & realme, but about this tyme he led a great army into France, whereof Sir Robert Knowles was generall, a man, who before tyme had fortunately handled the beyond sea wars, so long as they were ruled by his counsell: but towarde winter, the young Lords said they ought not to be subiect to him who was not so noble of birth, as they, and so dividing themselves into diuers companies, Sir Robert Knowles departed into Brittain to his owne callcs which he had conquered: The Lords being so divided, the frenchmen set vpon them, tooke prisoners where they liked, and due the residue.

A great part of Gascoigne fell from the pynce, because of the strange crations he laid vpon them: also sicknesse encreasing vpon him, he returned into England with his wife and his sonne Richard, and resigned into his fathers hands the gouernement of Gascoigne.

The monastierie of Abingdon, five miles from Oxford, was spoiled by them of Oxford, together with the artificers of Abingdon.

In a Parliament at Westminster in the first week of Lent, it was ordained that the great Charter & Charter of the forest, should be kept in all points. Also in the same Parliament, the Clergy of the realme granted to the king an aide for the warres in France, of fiftie thousand pound to be paid in the same p<sup>er</sup>ce, unto the leuening of which summe, Chauntie priestes were taxed, according to the summe that they received by the p<sup>er</sup>ce, also all benefices which were neuer taxed. &c. And the Layes of the Nobles and Commones also

Ge 4

**GRANTED**

An. reg. 43.

1369.

The third pe-  
silence.  
Dearth of com-

## Examples of

An. reg. 44.

1370.

The K. box-  
rowed great  
summes.

An. reg. 45

1371.

Matthew Parker.  
Statutez parli.  
Parliament at  
Westminster,

The common  
opinion report  
and conceits  
among the num-  
ber of parish  
Churches in  
England.

granted to the king the like summe of fifty thousand pound, in aid of the same warres, to be leuied of all the parishes of England, that is to wit, that euery parish should pay 23. shillings 4. pence, the great parishes helping the lesse: supposing (according to the common opinion) that there had been so many parishes in England, that would haue sufficed in such manner to the said summe. By which meanes writs were directed to all the shires of England, to certifie vnto the king of all the Churches in euery shire, which also made the number of Churches to be examined. And it was found that the said summe of fiftie thousand pound, might not be leuied in manner as was thought. Whereupon the king summoned a great councell at Winchester, against the fifth weeke of Easter next following, and there was ordained that euery parish should pay five pound 16. shillings, the greater helpe the lesser. And then also was set downe the names of shires, with the number of Churches in euery shire, and the summe that euery shire should pay as followeth.

Shires.	Parishes.	What euery shire did pay.
1 Kent.	393	2279. pound, 8. shillings.
2 Surrey.	118	684. pound, 8. shillings.
3 Sussex.	284	1647. pound, 4. shillings.
4 South-hampton.	230	1334. pound.
5 Wiltshire.	239	1386. pound, 4. shillings.
6 Somersetshire.	391	2267. pound, 16. shillings.
7 Dorsetshire.	217	1374. pound, 12. shillings.
8 Devonshire.	381	2149. pound, 16. shillings.
9 Cornwall.	194	1125. pound, 4. shillings.
10 Gloucester.	254	1473. pound, 4. shillings.
11 Herefordshire.	144	834. pound, 4. shillings.
12 Shropshire.	114	661. pound, 4. shillings.
13 Staffordshire.	100	580. pound.
14 Wrothshire.	200	1160. pound.
15 Barkshire.	156	904. pound, 16. shillings.
16 Bedfordshire.	121	701. pound, 16. shillings.
17 Buckingham.	200	1160. pound.
18 North-hampton.	303	1757. pound, 8. shillings.
19 Rutlandshire.	44	255. pound, 4. shillings.
20 Warwick.	183	1061. pound, 8. shillings.
21 Leicestershire.	209	1212. pound, 4. shillings.
22 Nottingham.	164	951. pound, 4. shillings.
23 Derbyshire.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
24 Lincolnshire.	627	3636. pound, 26. shillings.
25 Northumberland.	60	348. pound.
26 Westmerland.	32	185. pound, 12. shillings.
27 Cumberland.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
28 Lancashire.	58	336. pound, 8. shillings.
29 Northfolke.	806	3674. pound, 16. shillings.

30 Suffolke

30 Suffolke.	515	2926. pound.
31 Cambridgeshire.	172	997. pound, 12. shillings.
32 Huntington.	62	515. pound, 12. shillings.
33 London.	110	637. pound.
34 Middlesex.	63	365. pound, 8. shillings.
35 Essex.	400	2259. pound, 18. shillings.
36 Hertfordshire.	136	730. pound, 16. shillings.
37 Northfolke.	540	311. pound, 12. shillings.
38 Worcester.	139	806. pound, 4. shillings.
39 Durham.	61	552. pound, 16. shillings.

Summe of all the shires in England, without the City of London, and the Bishoppe of Durham be 37. and of Parish Churches, 8600. and all the money amounted vnto 50181. li. 8. s. 4. d. Of the which was withdrawen 181. li. 8. s. by the reason that Parishes in the Countie of Southfolke payde but 112. shillings, 7. d. ob. And the Parishes in the Countie of Devonshire, payd but 112. shillings, 10. d. farthing, for their great pouerty, and so was the King answered 50000. pound.

Cheshire a Countie Palantine, came not to this Parliament.

In the Citie of Chester are 10. parish Churches, and in the shire without the Citie, are 87. parish Churches, besides chappels.

The Bishops were remoued from the Offices of Chauncelloz, Treasurer, and priue seale, and lay men put in their stead.

This yere deceased the gentle knight Sir Walter de Maine in the Citie of London, wher of all the Barons of England were right soz. for the truth and god counsaile that they had alwayes seene and heard in him: he was buried with great solemnity in the Monastery of Charterhouse Spokes, which he had founded besides London, and at the day of his Obsequie, there was present the King and al his children, with the Prelates, Barons and knights of England. His lands both in England and beyond the sea fell to the Earle of Penbroke, who had to wife the Lady Anne, his daughter and heire. Also the valiant knight Sir William Molineux, who had long serued in France, and was made knight Banneret by the blake Prince, at the battell of Salars, now returning out of France died at Canterbury, about the feast of S. John Baptist. Also Sir John Mandeuille knight, a man worth the memory, bozne in S. Albons, deceased, this man from his tender yeres so addicted himselfe to study, that therein he accounted a great part of his day and felicitie to consist, for he reckoned that his worthipfull parentage little auailed, unless he enabled the same by learned skill, and literature, hauing therefore wel furnished his minde with knowledge in the Scripture, he erected his studie to Philosophie, being an Art very seemely and worthie a gentlemanlike nature, but among all other things, his desire was very great to see Asia, and Aphysica, being two mighty portions or parts of the world, furnishing himselfe therefore, he like an other Vlixe, being knowne of verie fewe of his olde acquaintance set forth.

W. Smith.

Sir Walter  
Many became  
sch.

Sir William  
Molineux was  
created.

Sir John  
Mandeuille was  
created.

I. Bale.

In this his voyage he painefullly visited the Countreies of Syria the greater & the lesser, Armentia, Egypt, both the Countreies of Libya, Arabia, Syria, Media, Mesopotamia, Persia, Grecia, Illyricum, Tartaria, and other kingdomes: finally having attained the knowledge of divers tongues, left the varietie, and wonders of so many and so great things as he had sene with his eyes, and bozne away by memoize, should be bitterly drowned in oblivion, he wrote exactly in the Latine, French, and English tongues, these woakes following, viz. his Itinerarie of thre and thirtie yeeres, of the martuages of the world, and the description of Countreies: being returned into England, and noting the euill abuses of that his age and time, the godly gentleman would say, (in these our times now it may be trulier said then euer afore) that vertue is laid aside, the Church is troden downe, the Cleargie erreth, the deuill reigneth, simony beareth sway, &c.

At length he died at Leiden, the 17 of November, 1371, and was buried in the Abbey of the Williamites, thus farre Bale. To the confirmation whereof Abraham Ortelius in his *Itinerarium*, professing to haue sene the monument of the said Sir Iohn Mandeuill in the citie of Leiden, setteth downe the inscription thus.

Epitaph of Sir Iohn Mandeuill.

Here lieth the Noble man Sir Iohn de Mandeuille, otherwise surnamed Knight at the beard, Lord de Campdi, borne in England, a professor of Philosophie, a very deuout man in prayer, and a most bountifull bestower of his goods on the poore, who after he had traueyled almost ouer the whole world, ended his life at Leiden, the yeere of our Lord 1371, the seauenteenth of Nouember.

This is the inscription in the stone, sayeth Ortelius, in which there is grauen, the Image of an armed man, with a lion at his fete, with a two forked beard, at his head a hand blessing, with these woords in French, Thou that passe by, for charitable say prayers for me.

The shield of his armes was voyde, they said there was within it a plate, and his armes ingrauen therein, to wit, a Lion Argent, with a red crescent at his breast in a blew field, with a bozert indented Or: there was shewed his kniues, his furniture for horse, and his spurres, which he used in his traualles through the world.

Ann. reg. 46  
1372.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and Edmond Earle of Cambridge, returning out of Gascoigne, brought with them two daughters of Peter late king of Spaine, whom after wards they took to be their wiues: the Duke married the elder, named Constance, and from that time wrote himselfe King of Castile.

Battell on the Sea.

The Englishmen fought a battell on the Sea with the Flemings, and tooke fise and twentie ships laden with salt.

Earle of Devon broke taken prisoner.

The Frenchmen besieged Rochell, to the remouing whereof was sente the Earle of Penbrooke, with a number of men of armes, upon whom fell the Spanishe nauie in the Hauen of Rochel, who slew and took the Englishmen, and burnt their Nauie. The Earle and many noble men were caried into Spaine, together with the Kings money. King Edward with a great nauie entred the seas towards Rochel, to haue rescued the same, but the winde being contrarie, with beaue there he returned againe, hauing spent

in this preparation (as it was said) nine hundred thousand pound.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster entred France with a strong power, and passed through the Realme without battell, but in the desertes and mountaines of Auierne, for lacke of victualles, many of his armie died: from thence, he went to Burdeaur, and brought scanty forty hozes backe with him: it was commonly talked that he lost thirtie thousand hozes in that unluckie voyage. It was a great miserie to see the poore state of the men of warre, such as were Knights of great wealth in their Countrey, hauing lost men and hozes, were glad to beg from doze to doze, and found no reliefe, for the Countrey was destroyed, and not manured, by reason whereof, such dearth was in that Countrey, that victuals could scant be gotten for any money: the Duke yet wintered there. The tenth of Aprill following, a day of battell was appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Anjou at Holcoule. In the meane time, truce was taken til the twentieth of May next following, but the King of England knew nothing of it: When the day came, a great power of armed men for the french appeared, the which the Duke of Anjou had assembled, but yet that day passed without battell, to the great shame and reproch of the English, for the frenchmen said, they were ready in fiele the day appointed to looke for their comming, that came not at all, wherefore they spake many reprochfull woords against the Englishmen, calling them false cowards, and heartlesse. And such was the end of that journey.

In a Parliament it was graunted that the cathedral Churches should entoy their elections, & that from thence forth the King should not write against the elected, but should by his letters help towards their confirmation, but this statute took small effect: but the Cleargie granting a tenth, and the laitie a satten, it was paid. Iohn Thurbys Archbishop of Poike deceased, he began the new quire of the Cathedral Church of Poike, vnto the which in the laying of the first stone, he gaue 500. markes, and euery yeere after whilst he liued 200. pound to the same woike. He also adozned the Lady chapel there with a marvellous woike manshipp: he sate one and twentie yeeres, he died at Ehoize and was buried at Poike, vnto whom succeeded Alexander Neuell Canon of Poike. Also Iohn Barne Bishop of Elye deceased at Elyshops Watfeld, and was buried at Elye, vnto whom succeeded Thomas Arundell, sonne to Robert Earle of Arundell. Also William Lynce Bishop of Winchester deceased, vnto whom succeeded Henry Wakefeld.

Parliament

Cathedral church of Poike, repayed by new building.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster with all his traine of Carles, Barons, Knights, &c. returned out of Gascoigne into England in the moneth of July, after whose departure almost all Gascoigne fell from their allegiance, which they had covenanted of with the King of England, sauing Burdeaur and Bapon.

Ann. reg. 46.  
1374.

This yeere died William Wicelsey Archbishop of Canterbury, at Lambeth, and was buried at Canterbury: the sponkes of Canterbury, (by the Kings licence) made their election, but choosing the Cardinall of England, the King was so offended that he meant to outlaue them, and they were forced to purchase his fauour with a great price. When Simon Tibalde, alias Sudburie, (sonne to Nigellus Tibalde Gentleman of Sudburie in Suffolke) Doctor

Douour of both Lawes, Bishop of London, was from thence translated to Canterbury, and William Courcney Bishop of Hereford, was translated to London, and the Bishop of Bangor, to Hereford.

John Duke of Lancaster, William Earle of Salisbury, Reignold Lord Cobham, with Simon Sudbury and other, assembled at Bridges to treat a peace betwene the realmes of England and France, where met with them the Duke of Anjou, and many other nobles of France. This treaty continued almost two yeres, and ended without conclusion of peace, but on a truce, which feantly continued one yere.

The same time Robert Walsfield Bishop of Salisbury died, after whom succeeded Ralph Arguy, Edward le Spencer deceased in the Castle of Cardiffe, and was buried at Wobochurle. Also John Hastings Earle of Penbroke, who was taken of the Spaniards, foure yeres since was deliuered by Henry the bastard King of Spaine unto Bertram Cleyken constable of France, for a certaine summe of money, which the said Henry did owe to the said Bertram, who when he was brought to Paris, and the summe of his ransome was limited to be 6000. franks, the Lombards in Wylages became sureties therfore, and promised payment thereof, but he began to be sicke, so that the Frenchmen fearing least he should die in their hands, or ever they should get his ransome, made haste to bring him to Caleis, notwithstanding he died before he came there, and the Frenchmen were deceived of their purpose.

The Ile of Constantine was deliuered to the french King, to the great detriment of England, for which cause afterward Sir John Anley appeached Thomas Carington of treason. A great heate was in England, so that many both men and women died thereof.

A Parliament commonly called the good Parliament, was holden at Westminster, in the which, when a subsidie was demanded, answer was made by Peter de la More, Prolocutor of the Parliament, that the King needed not the substance of his poore Subiects, if he were well and faithfully gouerned, which he offered to pprove effectually, and promised that if it were found that the King had neede, his subiects should be ready most gladly to helpe him according to their power.

The knights required to haue the Lord Latimer with other, removed from about the King, whom they said did giue him euill counsell, which being done, certaine Prelates, Cardes, and other, were ordained to gouerne the King, who then was an olde man, but this endured not long. The commons also requested to haue removed out of the Kings house, a certaine proud woman called Alice Pierce, who by ouermuch familiaritie that she had with the King, was cause of much mischief in the realme, the exceeding the manner of women, take by the Kings Iustices, and sometimes by the Doctors in the Consistories, perswading and dissuading in defence of matters, and requesting things contrary to lawe and honestie, to the great dishonour of the King.

Also Richard Lions and Adam of Burie, Citizens of London, were accused by the commons, of diners fraudes and deceytes, which they had done to the King: Richard Lions for money did wisely compound and escaped, the

Ann. reg. 49  
1375.

As hot some  
mer.

Good Parlia-  
ment.

1376.

Alice Pierce.

Adam Burp  
late Mayor  
Richard Lions  
late Merchant,  
and others.

the other conueyed himselfe into Flaunters.

The eight day of June, Prince Edward departed out of this life in the Archbishops Pallace in Canterbury, who was in his time the flower of Chivalrie: he was in the scabb of S. Michael the Archangell, with great solemnitie buried at Canterbury in Chilles Church, and then King Edward created Richard sonne of Prince Edward, Earle of Chester, Duke of Cornewall, and Prince of Wales.

This yere in the moneth of June, the seruants and tenants of the Earle of Warlike maliciously rose against the Abbey and Count of Cuelham, and their tenants, doing their worst to destroy the same for ever, beating their seruants, & killing some of them, & committing to the manors of the Sponkes, they brake down the pales of their parkes & burnt them, slew their bere, they brake the hedges of the ponde & fish poles, let out the water, toke the fish, and did many other damages, minding to haue destroyed the house, and ouerthrowen the walls if the King had not sent commandement to the Earle to restrain these malefactours, and troublers of the peace, thus for feare of the King, and mediation of friends, a peace was made, but no sufficient recompence, for the damage was much more then the parties were able to make amends for: because of this presumption of the Earle, the King put him out of his counsell, & would not be gouerned by the other Lords that were appointed therunto by parliament, but he sent for the Duke of Lancaster againe to gouerne the realme, by which occasion all they that before were banished the Court, came againe, as the Lord Latimere, Alice Pierce, and other, whose counsell he followed euen to the end of his life. The forsaide Alice made so familiar with the king, as also her companions, that is to say, the Lord Latimere, and Sir Richard Scire, that at their becke, the King promised all matters of the Realme to be disposed, whereupon they being desirous to be reuenged vpon their accusers, ceased not until by the kings and Dukes authoritie they had gotten Sir Peter de la More, to the kings court, whom without any answer, against all iustice, they sent to the Castle of Newark, there to be imprisoned. The Duke now laboured against William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, taking occasion by al wayes & meanes he possibly could to indomage him, at the last amongst other things that he oblied against him, he charged him to haue been false unto the King, at what time he was Lord chancellor, & although the bishop in declaring of his innocence was ready to bring forth for himselfe both sufficient reasons and witness, yet notwithstanding he caused him to be condemned without making answer, William Skip with being Justice, and by the Kings authoritie toke from him all the tempozall goods of his Bishopricke, and that he might get the peoples fauour, he moued the King to giue the said goods to the Prince called Richard of Burdeaur, and so he used the pong Princes name for his owne helpe. Furthermore, in the Kings name, he forbad the Bishop to presume to come within xij. miles of the Kings presence.

In the meane time the Kings sicknesse increased, and Physicians began to dispayre of his recovery, although the forsaide Alice together with Isabell her daughter did lie by him euery night. The Duke now who determined all matters

Blacks prince  
deceased.  
Adam Merim.

Peter de la More  
imprisoned.

The Duke in-  
domageth the  
Bishop of  
Winchester.

William  
Bishop of  
Winchester  
deprived of his  
tempozall  
goods.

How the earle  
of Warlike a-  
uouched the de-  
ceit of Lan-  
caster.



matters of the Realme, commanded Postimer Earle of Marche to go to Ca-  
leis, where hauing set al things in order, he should diligently view al the other  
Castles nere there about, but the Earle as he was a man of a good wit, consid-  
ered that it was a dangerous time, and that the Duke had an olde hatred a-  
gainst him; more he called to remembrance, how the Duke had vniuersally im-  
prisoned Sir Peter de la More, his steward, and had oppressed the Bishop of  
Winchester whom he had exempted from p'stallage of the kings pardon, and  
desired to doe the like to him, if he could, he chose therefore rather to lose the  
rod, then his life, wherefore he restored the rod of his sparrhalship vnto the  
Duke, saying he would not for a small commoditie wazpe himselfe into so  
great daunger.

The Duke reioycing that he might with some honour reward Sir Henry  
Percie, presently gaue vnto him the rod, and made him Marshall of England,  
and by this meanes Sir Henry Percie was loyded to the Duke, but incurred  
as much hatred of the whole communalte, as he had gotten fauour and love  
of the Duke.

The King kept his Christmasse at Haueking Aboure, where then for the  
great infirmitie of his body in his beanes he lay sicke.

The Duke vsing the kings authoritie, directed warrants to al the Lords, &  
Barons of the Realme, that after Christmas on Monday, 15. dayes after S.  
Hilary, they should come to the Parliament at London, wherein the matters  
of the Realme were to be talked of. So this Parliament came Richard of Bur-  
deau the Prince, with a great number of Noble men, and Knights, whom  
the Londoners at his coming presented with siuers honourable gifts, and  
the Duke of Lancaster also, seemed to honor him above the rest, placing him in  
the Kings seate, & taught him to demaund, that they would giue the King two  
cenths in one p're, or els of al the merchandise sold in the realme of England  
for one p're xii. d. of euery pound, of euery firehouse one peny, and of euery  
knights for one pound of silver, & presently the Duke prosecuted the demaund,  
saying that of necessity one of those popnts ought to be granted, for that the  
enemies had now proclaimed warre, & would invade the realme. The knights  
of the Parliament, whom the Duke had made at his pleasure, desired respect  
they might deliberat: ly answer him, for all the other knights that in the last  
Parliament had stoutly stand with the communalte, he had caused to be re-  
moued, except thoselue whom hee could not remoue, a day was appointed  
them. Of the greater part, master Hungerford was elected to deliuer their an-  
swere, who was a knight very familiar with the duke, and was his Steward.  
Thoselue whom hee had said to haue remained, endeouored that Sir Peter  
de la More might deliuer their answer, and also to answer all objections that  
should be laid against him in presence of the Lords. And further, if he should  
be found faultie, to submit himselfe to the iudgement of the noble men present,  
but the knights prevailed nothing in their sute. For when one of the knights  
b'rged the matter more then other, he was willed to holde his peace, other-  
wise it might cost him his life. Whilste these things were in handling, a sub-  
ble was demaunded for the king of the whole Cleargie, They therefore treat-  
ing

Henry Percie  
made Marshall  
of England

An. reg. 5.

Parliament  
at London.

ing of this matter, first made a common complaint before the Archbishop of  
Canterbury of the injury offered vnto their brother William Wicham Bishop  
of Winchester, which was also injury vnto them al, and to the whole libertie  
of the Church, wherefore they affirmed they would not treat of other matters,  
vntill all the number of the Cleargie were together, for they pityng his fall,  
were moued against the Archbishop, thinking him a great bited man for the  
Duke, and notwithstanding the Archbishop affirmed, the foresaid Bishop to  
be prohibited by the King, not to come nere vnto his presence, yet least he  
should be compelled, he sent a commandment for him, that he should come  
vp to the Conuocation of the Cleargie at London, who making no delay,  
came with a small number of seruants, that before time was thought to excell  
all other in multitude attending vpon him, he was joyfully receiued of his fe-  
low Bishops.

In the meane tyme the Duke ceased not with his fellows to imagine how  
he might bring that to passe, which he had long conceived in his minde: for he  
saw that it would be hard for him to obtaine his purpose, the Church stand-  
ing in his full state, and herse dangerous to attempt publicly to doe those  
things, the lawes and customes of London being in force, wherefore he la-  
boured first to ouerthrow, as well the liberties of the Church, as of the Citie:  
for the which cause, he called vnto him a certaine diuine, who many yeres be-  
fore in all his acts in the schooles, had inuaded against the Church, for that he  
had ben deppriued by the Archbishop of Canterbury from a certaine benefice  
that he vniuersally (as was said) was incumbent vpo within the Citie of Wyford,  
his name was John Wicliffe, who with his disciples, were of the common peo-  
ple called Lollards, they went bare-footed, and basely clothed, to wit, in coarse  
ruste garments down to the heeles, they preached, especially against monks,  
and other religious men that had possessions, &c. Amongst other things, he de-  
priued the bishop to haue authoritie to excommunicate any person, and that any  
Wiclit might absolue such a one as well as the Pope:

That neither the King, nor other secular Lord could giue any things per-  
petually to any person of the Church:

That (as he affirmed) in the time of William Rufus it was practised in Eng-  
land, for whom, as for other Kings of the Realme (notwithstanding he toke  
away the Church goods (the Church of England prayeth, which if she do law-  
fully, then she doth well: and to say she doth it unlawfully, were absurd.

That the temporall Lords (if they had wade) might lawfully take the  
goods of such religious persons, to relieue their necessities, &c. When he had  
taught these and many other, not onely in the Schooles at Wyford, but also  
had preached them publicly in London, that he might thereby get the fauour  
of the Duke and others, whom he had found prone to heare his opinion, not  
onely Lords, but also certaine Citizens of London, (for he was not onely elo-  
quent, but also seemed to contemne temporall goods, for the loue of eternall  
riches, and therefore his conuersation was with those religious that had no  
possessions, and adioyned himselfe vnto the begging Friars, appoyning their  
povertie, and extolling their perfection) The Duke Ray, and Sir Henry  
Percie

The Cleargie  
requereth the  
restitution of  
the Bishop of  
Winchester.

The Duke sent  
for John  
Wicliffe.

T. Walsingham.



Percy, commended highly his opinions, and endeoured to extoll his learning and honestie of life about all other. Who therefore being thus set forth with their fauour, feared not to spread his doctrine, much more then before, going from Church to Church, and preaching his opinions. Whereupon at length, the Bishops awakened their Archbishop, who sent for this John to come and answer to those things that were spoken of him. And the Duke hearing thereof, sent for foure Doctors of Diuinitie, one of euery order of the begging friars, aduertising them, that with a naturall and olde hate, he pursued the religious persons that had possessions, neither was it difficult to compell the willing friars to ayde him in this point.

Discord in  
Saints church  
at London.

John Wickliffe was to appeare before the Bishops on Thursday the nineteenth day of february there to be conuicted, for words that he had spoken, who, after the ninth houre, the Duke, and Sir Henry Percy, and others other officers going before him, was brought forth, not only by common sergeants, but also Sir Henry Percy himselfe, who was chiefe Marshall of England being by the way animated by his fauourers, not to feare the Bishops, neither the concourse of the people, seeing that he was walled in with so many knights and other: he was brought into Saint Pauls Church, where such a multitude of people was gathered together to heare him, that it was hard for the noblemen to passe through & that he might escape death intended him by many Bishops. And first a dissension being raised betwene the noblemen & Bishops, it was thought his answer should haue been deferred. But when the people being gathered round together, stayed to giue place vnto the noblemen, Sir Henry Percy abusing his authority, picked forwarde the people, which the Bishop of London seeing, prohibited him to exercise such authority in the Church, saying, that if he had knowne he would haue used himselfe so there, he should not haue come into the Church, if he could haue letted him. Which the Duke hearing, and being offended, protested, that he would exercise such authority whether he would or not. When they were come into the Ladies Chappell, the Duke and Barons, with the Archbishop and Bishops sitting downe, the foresaid John was also sent in by Sir Henry Percy, and by him willed to sit downe, for because (said he) he hath much to answer, he hath neede of a better seate. On the other side, the Bishop of London affirmed it to be against reason, and also contrary vnto Lawe, that he should sit, who there was cited to answer before his ordinary: hereupon very contemptuous words did arise betwene Sir Henry Percy, and the Bishop, so that the whole multitude began to be troubled, and then the Duke began to reprehend the Bishop with foule words, and the Bishop to turne the like to the Duke againe: whereupon the Duke being angry that he could not in this strise preuaile, swore that he would pull downe both the pride of him, and of all the Bishops in England, and added, thou trustest (said he) in thy parents, who can profite thee nothing. The Bishop answered, I trust not in my parents, nor in the life of any man, but in God, in whom I ought to trust: then the Duke whispering in his eare, said, he had rather draw him forth of the Church by the haire of the head, then to suffer such things at his hand.

The

The Londoners hearing these words, with a loud voice cryed out swearing they would not suffer their Bishop to be thus injured, and that they would rather lose their liues then their Bishop should be dishonestly bled in his Church, or pulled out as was threatened. Their furie was the more increased against the Duke, for that the day before in the Parliament at Westminster, the Duke being president: It was requested in the Kings name that from that day forward there should be no more spaies of London, according to the ancient custome, but a Captaine should be appointed, and that the Marshall of England, as well in the citie as in other places, might arrest such as offended, with many other things, which were manifestly against the liberties of the Citie: which being once heard John Philpot a worthy Citizen arose, and answered, &c.

The morrow after, the Londoners assembling themselves together, took council vpon such deniaunds, as the day before the Lords of Woodstocke, and Sir H. Percy had had concerning the creation of a Captaine in the Citie, and of the use of the Marshalls office, &c. Besides of the iniurie that was offered to their Bishop, and other matters: and whilst there was great adoe and long talke about these things, there entered into the Citie the Lord Fitzwater, and Guido Brian, to whether to know in their minds, or for other wise cause, but the commons scarcely held their hands from beating them that came vnto them, till at the length they had sworne their coming was not for any hurt vnto them or the city. The Lord Fitzwater hauing gotten savor at the Citizens hands, began his Oratyon, the effect whereof was, that he being by ancient inheritance standard bearer to the city, was to take iniuries offered vnto them, as vnto himselfe, & therefore willing them to looke to their defence, they presently took armes, and ranne with great rage to the Marshalls Inn, they brake by the gates, and dore, brought out a prisoner gyles & al, wherein his fate were fastned, intending to burne them in the midst of the city. Sir Henry Percys fought for, the armed men ran by and downe, but all in vaine, for that day he and the Duke were to dine with one John of Eyre, but the Londoners knew it not: for they thought that he and the Duke had been at the Banquet, and therefore with all haste posted thither, but one of the Dukes knights seeing these things, in great haste came to the place where the Duke was, and after he had knocked and could not get in, he saide to Haueland the Porter, I shon loue my Lord and thy life, open the gate, with which words, he got entry, and with great feare he telles the Duke, that without the gate were infinite numbers of armed men, and vnto he took great heed, that day should bee his last. With which words, when the Duke heard them, he leapt so hastily from his officers, that he hurt both his legges against the fourme: wine was offered to his officers, but hee would not drinke for haste, he fledde with his fellowe Sir Henry Percy, no man following them, and entering the Thames neuer stinted rowing until they came to a boule nere the Spanes of Remington (besides Lambeth) where at that time the Princeesse was, with the young Prince, before whom hee made his complaint. The Princeesse hauing heard their talke, comforted them, promising

Council at  
London a-  
gainst the  
Duke.

¶

ing

sing that he would make a final ende of all those matters.

The common people of the Citie not knowing that the Duke was dead, in great fury hastened to the Banquet, and a priest chancing to meete them, asked of some what that busines meant. Whereunto he was answered, that they went to take the Duke and the Lord Percy, that they might be compelled to deliver to them, Sir Peter de la More, whom they uniusly kept in prison: the Priest said that Peter de la More was a traitour to the King, and was worthy to be hanged. With which words they all cried, this is Percy, this is the traitour of England, his speech betwixt him, though he be disguised in apparel: then ran they all upon him, striking who should give him his death wound, after they had wounded him, they carried him to prison, where he died. The Bishop of London, William Courtenay, hearing that the Citizens hastened to the Banquet, left his dinner and met with them, admonishing the to be mindful of the holy time, for it was Lent and for the love of Christ to leave off such scottish doings, affirming that he would bring all things that were done against them to good ende. And doubtlesse had not the Bishop aduised their mad mooves, the Duke and the Lord Percy had that day lost their lives, but by the Bishops means the matter was pacified for the time, and every man got him to his stone house. When were the Dukes armes hanged by reversed in signe of treason, in the most principall streets of the Citie, uncertaine by whom all that were the Dukes signe or colours, were faine to hide them, conveying them from their necks, into their bosome. The Princessse (wife to Edward late deceased) desirous to make peace, sent unto London these knights, Alber de Vere, Simon Burley, and Lewes Clifford, to perswade them, to make peace with the Duke, unto whom the Citizens made answer, that they would doe for her honor, whatsoever she had commanded, but yet they enioyned the knights, to will the Duke, that he should suffer the Bishop of Winchester to come to his answer, and to be tried by his peers, and also to permit Peter de la More to answer for himselfe, after the custome of the lawe; and as for the third, they said they would account a traitor: wheresoever he should be found. The said knights no other wise then they had heard of the Citizens, reported unto the Duke with full mouth, whereby they made the Duke very wofull, for where as they had spoken of a traitor, this (said he) they speake of me, though it be not true.

The Londoners went to the King about their liberties.

John Philpot.

The Londoners having held a council about this matter, sent of their chief Citizens, either to iustifie, or to excuse that which had hapned, who long to come to the kings presence, being kept backe by the duke, at length the duke tolde them that the King was very euill at ease, and that his sickness might be increased, if that he were mooued to anger, by their speech. But the Citizens, whose chiefe man and speaker was John Philpot answered the Duke, that they were not come, by any meane to augment the Kings sicknesse, but rather to mitigate his griefe, that he might be strong to defend them. Moreover, they said they were charged not to communicate those matters which they had in commission from the Citie unto any other then unto their Lord the King. At length having gotten access, they shewed unto the King

how

how it had been published in the Parliament, that it was his will, that contrary to their liberties, the Duke should be deposed, and a Captaine created, and other matters in the Parliament, which sounded against their liberties. Also they excused themselves of diuers things which had been done, during the time of the commotion of the communalitie of the Citie, saying they were not psonable to any such doing, but y amongst so great a multitude, some lewd people had done such things, neither so great a multitude could be mooued by the exhortation of the Duke, when they were once by together. The King being a little cheered up with their comming, answered, that he would not the diminishing of their liberties, no, he was rather ready, if neede were, to augment them, neither did any such resolutions euer come out of his mouth, and therefore, he willed them not to feare, but to returne and appeale the Citizens, and to keepe them in peace.

In the meane space some men ceased not to make rymes in reproch of the Duke, and to fasten them in diuers places of the Citie, whereby the greater fury of the people might be kindled, the Dukes fame blotted, and his name had in detestation. Which thing when the Duke heard, he requested the Bishops to pronounce sentence of excommunication upon all those that by such rymes maliciously did hurt his fame. The Bishop of Bangor therfore (the Aldermen of the Citie assisting him) publickly excommunicated all those that diffamed the Duke, &c.

Differences of the Duke communicated.

A few daies after the Duke went unto the Parliament, that for the causes expressed had been pretermitted: the Duke and noble men being set, they demanded an answer of the knights of the shires, of these things which had bin demanded of them: who answered, that they would to helpe their soueraigne Lord the King graunt, not of every house one penny, but of every person, man or woman above the age of fouretene yeres one groat throughout England, so that the money should be gathered into the hands of certaine Cardes and Barons untill they saw how such a summe should be spent. The cleargie also graunted the like subsidy, for helpe of the King, of every head, as well religious men as women, as secular priests one groate, if they were not promoted, but of every religious person promoted twelve pence.

A great subsidy granted.

The duke hauing obtained as he desired, the tate of all the heads of the whole realme, was not yet quiet, for the injury done against him by the Londoners: whereso he caused the king to send for the Duke, Aldermen and Shireffs of London, who being brought into the kings chamber of presence, (being then at his manour of Shene) they found the king placed in a chaire, not able well to speake, for the griefe of his sickness, & the Archbishop, with other Bishops, the Duke and the Kings sonnes with many Lords & men of honour sitting about him. Where after due reuerence made, and silence commaunded, Sir Robert Aston began an oration, perswading the Citizens to confesse their great and heinous offences against the king, and Duke, & to submit themselves to their mercy. Whereunto the Londoners answered, that they had not conspired against the Duke, neither had there been any shamefull thing spoken or done against him that they did knowe of, or consent unto, which thing they were

Robert Aston speaks for the Duke.

ready to p[ro]ue before their soveraigne Lord the King, and the Duke himself. Yet notwithstanding they affirmed, that they could not stay the folly of the common people, by whom that which had chanced was committed: wherefore the said Citizens requested the King that he would not punish those that were innocent and ignorant of the fact: but they for reverence of the King, promised the Duke, that they would endeavour themselves to bring in the common people, and to compell them by lawe to make due satisfaction; and more (said they) we are not able to doe for the Duke, that may be to his honor. And at this word, with the Kings will, they were dismissed, full merry when they saluted the Court with their backs.

A procession of  
the Citizens  
of London.

After this the King sent unto them, secretly commanding them to call all the Citizens together, and to make one waire Candle or Taper with the armes of the Duke his sonne, in the same Taper, and carry the same in a solemn procession to Saint Pauls Church, there continually to burne before the Image of our Lady, continued at the charges of the citie. The waire Taper therfore being made, the Citizens by voyce of the crier, are generally called together, at which call, they come to heare the cause of their calling, but the communalitie and those of the poorer sort contemned to be present at such a procession, and therefore with indignation every one departed home to his house, only the worshipful and best sorte of the Citizens make the procession, placing the Taper of waire where they were commanded. But the Duke not contented with this satisfaction, he threatened the Citizens, and said, that that which they had done was nothing gratefull unto him, nay said he, it rather reboundeth to my great shame, chiefly, for that while he was alive and well in health, they had in such sort offered his armes wrought in a waire Taper.

1377.

On the other side, the Citizens affirmed that they had exp[re]ssely done that which his father had commanded them, and would have done any thing that might have pleased him. To whome the Duke answered, that they knewe his minde, and were not ignorant howe to make satisfaction: with which wordes the Citizens were much troubled, for (quoth they) amongst themselves, he would have us to proclaim him King: but this shall never be done, and so they departed, wofull friends the they were before. And the Duke ceased not till he had put downe Adam Seaple M[ay]or, in whose place Nicholas Brembor was elected, and on the nine and twentieth of March toke his oth at the Tower of London. Also the Aldermen were deposed and other set in their places.

Mayor and  
Aldermen of  
London dep[re]ssed.

John Min-  
starworth.

Sir John Minstarworth Knight who had trayterously forsaken the English armie, at that time when Sir Robert Knowles was sent to invade Fraunce, was d[ea]th, hanged and quartered on the 12. of Aprill, his head was set on London byldes, and his four quarters were sent to foure principall citis of England.

Al. William  
B. of Winchester  
his recovery  
his imp[er]ial

In the meane time William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, seeing the lawes of the land to be handled, not according to iustice, but as it pleased certain persons, and being destitute of all mens helpe, he turned himselfe to wo-

manhood,

marking, providing not onely for himselfe, but also for the oppression and losses of his Church. Wherefore, knowing that Alice Pierce could do all things that she would, and there was not any man y<sup>e</sup> would in any thing resist her will, he requested her helpe, he offered her money, he promised her great friendship, if she could helpe his Bishopricke forth of such troubles: she promised easily to dispatch his cause, and not refusing that which was offered, went to trie if any sparke of love yet remained in the King. He therfore that long had been taken with her love, enticed with her speech, supposed nothing to be denied her now that she asked: against the Dukes will, he commanded his temporallities to be given unto him againe, and so the Bishop by right and wrong, recovered that which was lost.

ties by means  
of Alice Pierce.

The fourteenth of Aprill died the Lady Mary of Saint Paul, Countesse of Penbroke, a woman of singular example, for living to the honor of God, and gloze of her house, in relieving poore mens necessities, she spent her goods, that to the Dukes and Princes she shewed examples of good workes: and bying, she gave all her substance, either to her servants, or to divers Churches, but especially to poore people: she founded Penbroke Hall in Cambridge, and named it *Anla Maria de Valence* in Anno. 1343.

Countesse of  
Penbroke  
died.

About the same time the Earle of Salisburie, and Sir Richard Anglisson a Porton, the Bishop of Saint Davids, the Bishop of Hereford, Geoffrey Chaucer, (the famous Poet of England,) and other, were sent into Fraunce to treat a peace, or at the least a truce for this yere or more, but they could not obtaine any longer truce, then for one moneth, which they utterly refused. Whereupon they stayed in Fraunce about these things, and some thinking they might safely have passed betwixt Caleis and Douer, about fiftie taking ship, were forthwith intercepted by the Walleses, and were all slain, two men and two women onely excepted, even in the very sight of the Colonell-men of Caleis, they being not able to give them any ayde: Sir Hugh Calveley being at that present time Capitaine of Caleis, toke this so great an iniurie in very enill part, especially for that it was done, whilest they were yet treating of peace, but he could not helpe it, wherefore forthwith he toke with him a number of the best and chosen out men, and purposing to requite this iniurie, made a roade into France, killing a great number of men, and brought backe with him a great boote of artillery and cattell, the messengers returned into England, and brought nothing backe with them, but rumour and waire.

Chaucer and  
other sent into  
France.

Hugh Calve-  
ley Capitaine  
of Caleis.

King Edward foddren (as it were) with the disease of the Annuli (which time Alice Pierce was given him of God to the ble of penitence) had almost sodainly died, neglecting the benefite of time that God had given him, like as he should never have died: trusting the fond fables of the ofte named Alice, when she affirmed, he should recover his health, so that at that time he talked rather of hawking and hunting, then of any thing that pertained to the saving of his soule, onely he granted pardon of death for offences, throughout his Kingdome to the inhabitants. Being now sodainly taken with the day of his death, he began to have manifest signes thereof: what Alice Pierce then did, any man may judge,

Alice Pierce  
leaveth King  
Edward.

ff 3

although

although we set them not downe in wytyng, for allone as the sawe the King had let sette within deatht dore, the bethought her of sight, yet before she went, that all men might perceiue that she loued not the King for himselfe, but for that which was his, she toke the ringes from his fingers, which for the royalte of his Maistie he was wont to weare. Thus parding him such thanks for his benefites, she bade him adieu, and so withiove w her selfe from him.

Death of King  
Edward the  
third.

The King being thus at the point of death, was left not onely of her the said Alice Piers, but of other the Knights and Esquires, who had serued him, allured more with his gifts then his loue. Amongst a thousand there was onely present at that time a certaine Priest, of other of his folkes applying the spoile of what they could lay hands on) who lamenting the Kings misery, and inwardly touched with griefe of heart, for that amongst so many Counsellors which he had, there was none that would minister to him the word of life, came holdely vnto him, and aduonished him to lift vp the eyes, as well of his body as of his heart vnto God, and with sighes to aske mercy of him, whose maistie he well knew he had grievously offended, whereupon the King listning to the wordes of the priest, although he had a little before wanted the vse of his tongue, yet then taking strength to him, seemed to speake what was in his mind, and then what for weaknesse of his body, contrition of his heart, and sobbing for his sins, his voyce and spech fayled him, and scarce halfe pronouncing this word Iesu, he with this last word made an ende of his spech, and pailed by the Ghost at his pamos of shine, (now Richmond) on the 21. day of June, in the yere of our Lord 1377. and the 65. yere of his age, when he had reigned 50. yeres, 4. moneths and odde dayes, whose body was after wards sollemnely buried at Westminster.

This King surpassed al his predecessours, through vertue graunted to him from above, in a certaine excellency of magnanimitie of heart, for he neuer feared any thing, or changed countenance for any misfortunate chancas when they happened, a noble wartier, and fortunate, for as well by land as by sea, in warlike condias he obtained the victorie, gentle, familiar, & courteous as well toward strangers, as his owne countrey men and subiects, deuoute in Gods seruice, for he had the Church and ministers thereof in great reuerence. In worldly cares tractable, prouident in counsel, and discret, in swaite of language affable and meeke, in gesture and manners wel ordered and ripe, hauing compasio of the afflicted: in bestowing of benefites very liberal, in abundance of twentih modest enough, in erecting of buildings marvellous curious, bearing losses patiently, great much to hauing & hunting, to the which, whilst he had time, as the season of the yere gaue, he applied himselfe greatly, he was liberrall in gifts, and prodigall in expences, proper of person, in stature neither such as excelled the meane bygnes of men, nor yet of the tallest sort, hauing a countenance more reuerent, then was commonly in men, but rather like an Angel, in which did shine such a marvellous grace, that such as beamed of him, hoped the day folloving for good lucke, he gouerned his kingdome euentill his old yeres valiantly, wisely, and royally. But yet he did not refraine riotous

lust,

lust, carnall concupiscence, nor motions, of the flesh, euen in his extream age, and so (as was thought) for his intemperancie ended his life the soner.

He had issue by the Lady Philip his wife, seven sonnes, Edward the blacke Prince, William of Hatfield that died yong, Leonel Duke of Clarence, Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley Carle of Cambridg, and Duke of York, William of Windsor, y died without issue, Thomas of Woodstocke Carle of Buckingham, and Duke of Gloucester: and five daughters, Isabel married to the Lord Coucy, Carle of Bedford, Ioane Quene of Spaine, Blanch that died yong, Mary married to Iohn Mountfort Duke of Byptaine, and Margaret Countesse of Pembroke. He founded Westminster, commonly called new abbey here vnto the tower of London, wherein he placed white monks of the order Cisteraux, to the honour of God, and our Lady of grace, according to a vow by him made, being on the seas in great perill, by meanes of a tempest: he founded an abbey for Nunnes at Wertsford in Kent, he founded the kings hall in Cambridg for yonge schollers, (which hall with others was suppressed by K. Henry the 8. for the foundation of Trinities Colledge there) he also founded an Hospitall for the poore, and named it Maison de Dieu, or Gods house, in the town of Caleis, he redified or newly builded St. Steuens Chappell at Westminster, altering the same into a colledge of a Deane, 12. secular Chanons, 12. Vicars, and other ministers & seruants, and indeed it with revenues to the value of 500. pounde by yere. He also redified or almost newly builded the Castle of Winderloz. He also augmenting the Chappell there, which his progenitors kings of Englañd, had before erected of 8. Chanons, he added to them a Deane and 15. Chanons, 24. yonge & impotent knights and other ministers. Quene Mary was the first that brought water to that castle by Conduite, which before was watered by welles. It remaineth of recorde which I haue seene, that tithe hath been paid at Windsor for wine pressed out of grapes, that were wonted to grow in the little parke there.

Issue of King  
Edward the  
third.

Westminster  
founded by  
King Edward  
the third.

## Richard of Burdeaux.



Richard the 2. borne at Burdeaur, the sonne of Prince Edward, being but eleuen yeres old, began his reigne the 21. day of June, in the yere of our Lord God 1377. In beauty, bounty, and liberrallty, he far passed all his progenitors, but was overmuch giuen to rest and quietnes, louing little dedes of armes, and for that he was yong, was much ruled by yong counsell, and regarded nothing the counsels of the sage and wise men of the Realme, which thing turned this land to great trouble, and himselfe to extreme miserie, as is by these verses declared. When this King first began to raigne, the Lawes neglected were, Wherefore good fortune him forlooke, and the earth did quake for feare, The people also whom he polde, against him did rebell. The time doth yet bewaile the woes, that Chronicles doe tell.

Vox clamantis,  
Ioh Gower.

The foolish counsell of the lewde, and yong he did reuee,  
And graue aduice of aged heads he did reiect and leaue,  
And then for greedy thurt of Coyne, some subiects he accused,  
To gaine their goods into his hands, thus he the realme abused.

On the foresaid 21. of June, before the old King was departed, the Londoners hauing certaine knowledge, yf he could not liue any season, sent the chiefest and most worthy citizens of their citie, vnto Kennington, where the prince and his mother remained, to declare vnto the said prince their ready minds, & good will to accept him for their true and lawfull King and Governour, John Philpote being especially appointed to do the message, began his Oracion thus.

John Philpote  
his Oracion to  
the Prince.

We bring newes, most excellent Prince (which without great sorrow we cannot rehearse) of the vndoubted death of our most inuincible King Edward your Grandfather, who hath kept and gouerned vs, and this kingdom (as I may say) a long time in quiet peace; and now by the manifest tokens of death in him, he hath ceased to be our Governour: wherefore we beseech you, on the behalfe of the Citizens, and City of London, that you will haue recommended to your good grace, the City your chamber, whom we knoweledge shortly to be our King, to whose rule we onely submit our selues, and bow to your will and pleasure vnder your dominion to serue in word and dede. And that we recite further our message, your reuerence knoweth, your City to be vnspcakably troubled, for that you haue withdrawne your presence from it, which is knowne to be so much at your deuotion, that the Citizens are not onely ready to spend their goods for your sake, but also to leopord their liues. Wherefore we come to your presence, to beseech you that it may please you to remaine there, both to the comfort of vs your citizens, and also to the surety and solace of your selfe. We further beseech you most noble Prince, that you would vouchsafe to make some good and profitable end of the discord, which lately hath risen throughe the malice of some, and not to the commodity of any, but to the hindrance and discomfort of many, betwixt our Citizens, and the Duke of Lancaster. To these and other like words uttered by the said John Philpote, it was answered by the Prince, and his counsell, that he would doe his endeour to satisfie their desire in all things, and so being sent away, they returned bringing glad tidings to their fellow Citizens.

The next morrow there was sent to London, on the Kings behalfe, the Lord Latimer, Sir Nicholas Bond, Sir Simon Burley, & Sir Richard Adderbery, which in name of the new King saluted the citizens with their message of the new King to wardens, who promised to loue them and their city, & to come to them as they had requested: they also told the citizens, how the King had spoken to the Duke for them, and how the Duke in all things had submitted himselfe to the Kings will, that they also should submit themselves in the same maner; and then the King would endeour himselfe that peace should concluded, to the honor and commodity of the citizens: but the citizens fearing such forme of peace as might happen, answered, that they would not in any wise so doe, especially because they knewe the King to be but yong, and weak to helpe them in such a troublesome businesse, & that their cause should not be discussed by him, but

by their deadly enemies, & so they should be punished at their pleasure, if they consented to the Kings request in that article. At length after talke had vpon this businesse, sixe houres together or more, they light vpon this point, that if the said knights would be bound to the citizens, that their submission should not redound to the temporal loss, or bodily harine of any Citizen, or preiudice of their Citie, they would gladly obey the Kings commaundment. The knights desirous to satisfie the Kings desire, and to prouide for the quietnes of the Citizens, undertooke by othe of fidelitie, and their knighthood, that it should not be to their preiudice, but to their commodity, if they would submit themselves. This surety receiued, the Citizens toke their iourney towards Shene, where they found the new King with his mother, the Duke and the Dukes brethren; there were also many Bishops gathered about the dead bodie of the late King: The coming of the Citizens being knowne to the King, he straight commaunded them to be called before him, the which Citizens as before besought him to restore the peace betwixt the Duke and them, affirming that they were ready in all things to submit themselves vnto his will and pleasure, not as though they confessed they had made any fault against the Duke, but as men that came at this time for the benefit of peace, and honour, alway to the King, as the Duke, to pacifie the hearts, and mitigate the displeasure of both.

The Duke seeing them in this manner to haue submitted themselves to the King, though (as it was said) he had other matters in his head, yet fearing that he should not after ward come to so honorable conditions, if he refused this forme of peace, fell down at the Kings feet, and beseeched him to take the cause in hand vnder the forme that the Londoners had expressed, desiring therewith that they which had been imprisoned for any dishonour offered him, might be with the Kings fauour released and set at libertie: And so he did forgive the Citizens whatsoeuer they had committed against him, and receiued them into his full fauour, in the presence of the King, affirming with an oth that he would be their friend, and as carefull for their commodities as for his owne, and in token of an vnfaigned peace, he kissed every one of them before the King, and so with quietnes, the Citizens returned home praising God, that had brought the Duke to such humilitie, who a little before had demanded in great pride, of the Citizens for his fauour, one hundred hogheads of wine, & an infinite number of precious stones. The Friday next following the Duke and Citizens came to Westminster, where was proclaimed the union and agreement betwixen them.

The yong King desirous at his entring to the kingdom to haue an vnlike amongst his subiects in every place, brought the Duke and the Bishoppe of Winchester to be at one, and wheresoeuer in his Realme he knew any discord and variance to be risen, he toke the quarrels into his hands, promising to make a good and sensfull end for both parties. He also deliuered Peter de la More, (a knight of Herefordshire) out of the Castell of Nottingham, where he had bene long imprisoned, and by his letters patents released him of all things whatsoeuer, in the name of the King might be laid vnto him.

The Duke of  
Lancaster and  
the Citizens of  
London make  
friends.

The King ac-  
cords the  
Duke and the  
Bishop of  
Winchester.

Peter de la More  
set at libertie.

Upon

The French  
men take the  
towne of Rye  
and burn it.

Upon the feast day of Saint Peter and Paul the Apostles in the morning, the Frenchmen with fine vessels, great and small, invaded the towne of Rye, and with small labour took the towne, albeit the towne dwellers upon confidence of strength, had taken order that none should remove their goods from the towne, that at the least wise, for love of their goods, they might with more courage abide the conflicts: yet notwithstanding they turne their backs in the time of battell, whereupon it came to passe, that by their want of heart and courage, the towne was taken with all their goods.

The towne of  
Rye consumed  
with fire.

The Abbot of Battale hearing of so lamentable a report, put his men in armor to defend the villages nigh adjoining, & one of the enemies going forth for forage, being taken by one of the Abbots men, declared that the French men purposed to keepe the said towne for ten daies, whereupon the Abbot remoured with his power to the towne of Winchelsey, which towne (as the prisoner reported) the French purposed to assault, but when they saw the Abbot and his men armed in that towne, dispying of further entrance into that Countrey, they begin to set fire on the towne of Rye, and within five houres brought it wholly into ashes, with the Church that then was there of a wonderful beaultie, conveying away foure of the richest of that towne prisoners, and slaying 66. left not about eight in the towne: 42. hodgheads of wine they caried from thence to their ships, with the rest of their bottie, and left the towne desolate.

King Richard  
crowned.  
Charles created  
knights made.

King Richard was crowned with great solemnity at Westmister by the hands of Simon Sudbury Archbishop of Canterbury, on the 16. day of July. At this coronation K. Richard created foure new Charles, Thomas of Woodstocke, K. Edwards yongest sonne Earle of Buckingham and Northampton, to whom he gaue 1000. markes yearly out of his treasury, till he had provided him land to that value. Thomas Mowbray of Arphelme, earle of Nottingham, Guisard of Gifford Angolme knight of Calcoigne, and master to the king, Earle of Huntington, to whom he likewise gaue 1000. markes yearly out of his treasury, till he had provided him lands to that value. And Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland. He also made nine knights, to wit, Edward sonne to Edmond Earle of Kent, John sonne to Thomas Roos of Hamelake, Robert de Gray of Rotherfield, Richard sonne to Gilbert Talbot, Gerard sonne to Warine de Lisse, Michael sonne to Michael de la Pole, Richard de Poynings, Robert de Harrington, and Thomas de la More.

Michael sonne  
to Michell.

Sir John Burleigh knight, the kings Chamberlaine, Custos of Pottingham castle, was also for terme of life by patent, made keeper of the Forrest of Sherwood. And Simon Burleigh knight his brother, was made Constable of Winchester castle, Wigmore, Gutford, and the Manor of Benington, and also master of the kings shalcons at his Spues, nere Charing-crosse by Westmister, this Sir Simon Burleigh had his house in London in Thames Strate betwixt Barnards castle & Pauls wharfe, which house sometime belonged to the abbe of Fylcamp, & by reason of the wars in France came to the kings hands.

Spues for the  
kings shalcons.

About the same time, Henry Percy marshall of England, and Earle of Northumberland, resigned the rodde of his office, and went home to his countrey,

in whose place John of Arundale, brother to the Earle of Arundale was sent, John balliantly resisted the Frenchmen, when they assailed the towne of South-hampton, and manfully kept them off from entering the towne, being chased to the sea.

About the same time, of a small cause discord rose in the sayde of Rochester, betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, and certaine on both sides being slain, the Scots were put to the worse. Whereupon being turned into a surp, thostly returning to the towne with the Earle of Dunbarre, they entered in the night, due to the townsmen, spoiled their goods, & committed the towne to the fire: which thing being known, the new Earle of Northumberland forsooking inwardly euen at the heart for the death of the slaine townsmen, determined to reuenge their death upon the enemies, & entering into Scotland with 10000 men, he took prizes in the land of the Earle of Dunbarre, for the space of thre daies together, burning vp all that came in his way, & returned with his people.

The towne of  
Rochester  
burned by the  
Scots.

The one and twentieth of August, the French men took the vnbinnable (that I may so call it) Isle of Wight, more by craft, then by force, which Ile had not been taken by any men, if the same had been wel kept with diligent watch, but the euer assured security of the Island men, brought on them their destruction, and to the French vnhoped for victory. In deed the Frenchmen being dyuen on the shore by tempest, attempted to enter the Ile, supposing the Island men had not been aware of their coming: but the purpose of the french was not known to the watchmen, and therefore they suffered them to enter on the land, to the ende, that after so many were come on land, as they supposed they might deale with, the residue should be kept off, but it chanced otherwise then they thought, for as we said, some being entred, when the Wightmen would haue stopped the other, the Frenchmen pressed forward with such force, that they repulsed the Island men from their ground, so that they were dyuen to seeke refuge by hiding themselves.

French men  
took the Isle  
of Wight.

The French therefore hauing thus gotten the Island, did much hurt in slaying the inhabitants, burning certaine townes, and taking the substance from the people: at length comming to the castle, and thinking to haue wonne it with final adoe, they finde there a picke of incredible sharpnes, for Sir Hugh Tirl kaper of the said castle, boldly comming to encounter them, made great slaughter among them, by reason whereof they left from assailing that castle, and from thenceforth thinking it not good to dwell on nere a Serpent, they gathered together what spoyle they might of the Ile, and constrained the Islanders to get of their friends without the Ile, a thousand marks of silver for the sauing of their houses from burning, and for the residue of their goods. Moreover, taking of them an oath of fidelitie, not to resist the for the space of one yere, whensoever it should please the to land there, they departed thence to their galleies, and againe coasted the shore about till they came to the towne of Winchester, where vnderstanding the abbot of Battal was come to defend it, they sent him word to redeme the towne, vnto whom the abbot answered, he needed not to redeme the thing that was not lost, but willed the to desist from molesting the towne vpon paine of that which might follow. The French exasperated

The French  
besiege Win-  
chester.  
The Abbot of  
Battal defend-  
ed it.

asperated with this answer, requested him that if he would not have peace, he would send forth to fight man to man, or more in number if he would to try the matter in view of armes: but neither would the Abbot admit the one request, or the other, saying, he was a religious man, and therefore not to admit such petitions, and that he came not thither to fight, but to defend & preserve the peace of the countrey. These things being heard, the Frenchmen supposing that the Abbot and his people wanted courage, they assaulted the towne with such instruments of warre, as cast forth stones farre off, not ceasing from none till evening, but by the laudable pproves of the Abbot, and such as were with him, the French prevailed nothing, but left it as they founde it.

In the meane time whilst they were busie thus at Winchelsey, they sent part of their company unto Hastings, where finding the towne almost empty, they burnt it.

The same yere the Frenchmen coming by at Raitingdon in Sussex, nere to the towne of Lewes, the Prior of Lewes with a small company met them, and was taken by the Frenchmen, that came upon him, and caried to their ships, with two knights, to wit, Sir Iohn Fallesbey, and Sir Thomas Cheyne, and an Esquier called Iohn Brokas, amongst other a certaine Esquier that had ben long in service with the Prior of Lewes, a Frenchman by nation, fought so manfully against the Frenchmen, that his bowels falling from him to his seate, he yet pursued them. Where was slain in this battell about one hundred of the Englishmen, and the Frenchmen returned home with all their Galleies, which was 37. Galleies, and 8. Caruels of Spaine, and certaine Barkes: straightwaies therefore as they came to land, some of them went unto the sieg, that was about Arde, & by treason which alwaies is familiar to them, the keeper of that castle being an Almaine, to wit, the Lord of Sunney delivered to them the towne, they straight got the castell also, for the which the same keeper being taken by Sir Hugh Calueley keeper of Calais, was sent into England, and committed to prison.

The same time a Parliament was assembled at London, which continued from Michaelmas til St. Andrewes tide. In the which Parliament were almost all those knights, with the said Peter dela More, which so nobly had stood forth in the Parliament, which rightly was called the good Parliament, for the increase of their Countrey, and profit of their kingdom. Thus therefore taking in hand againe the petitions in the same place, as they left them, they earnestly stood in the matter, to have Alice Pierce banished, who contemning the statute of Parliament, and the oath which she had taken, durst take on her to enter the kings court to compell him, and to have of him what pleased her, who although she had corrupted many of the Lords, and all the lawes with money, the which not onely secretly but openly pleaded for her; yet by the diligence and wisdome of the said knights, she being consta by her owne mouth, was banished, and her moveable goods confiscate to the kings use: but in the yere next following, to wit, the second yere of king Richard, the said Alice Pierce then wife to William Windfore knight, was pardoned, and in the

Use of Guns.

The towne of Hastings burnt.

Prior of Lewes taken by French.

Parliament at London.

Alice Pierce banished.

uenth yere of the same king, her goods before confiscate by Parliament, were againe restored and recompenced.

Where was granted to the king of the Cleargie two tenths to be paid that yere, with condition, that from henceforth the king should not extort from his Subjects by such petitions or demands but line of his owne, and continue his warre, for as it was answered there, his owne goods pertaining to the crowne, sufficed both to the finding of his house, and maintaining of his warres, if the same were bestowed by fit ministers, and for the keeping of the money, two Citizens of London were appointed, William Walworth, and John Philpot. The Englishmen hearing of a number of Spanish shippes to remaine at Huce for want of wind, assembling a great companie of armed men, and a great shawe, meant to take the seas: their chiefe Captaines were Thomas of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, the Duke of Bzptayne, the Lord Latimer, the Lord Robert Fitz Walter, Sir Robert Knowles, and many other valiant personages, who being entred the Sea, tasted fortune disfavouable, for by a tempestuous wind that rose, their shippes were scattered in sundry, their masts were broken downe, their sailes rent, and many of the small vessels that were victuallers were drowned; at length the ships got together againe, and arrived in England, and being now rigged are efflonies fraught with men, and to they sea they goe. About the same time, Sir Hugh Calueley making a journey towards Bulloigne, found a barge in the haven of the towne, that bare the name of the towne, and another that was the French kings, & xxvi. other vessels more and lesse, all the which with a great part of the suburbs of Bulloigne, he caused to be dispoiled, taking with him what soever was there to be desired, with certaine prisoners: he dyone afoze him a great bottie of shepe and beasts, which he found pasturing nere the towne, which might well serve to victuall Calais for a great time: he recovered the same day the Castell of Marke, which through negligence before had ben lost. King Richard kept his Christmas at Windlesore.

The English flote whereof we spake, returned without any great good successe, they toke an eight Spanish ships in the Bizitish coasts nere to Bzest, and more had taken if their busines had ben so well done, as was pretended: and therefore the flote returned home, so tossed with stormes and contrarie weather, and after with intestine discorde, that it seemed there wanted among them Gods favour. The Lord Percy (this flote remaining for the mending of his ships, whilst the other were abroad) went now to the sea, with a great ship and some smaller vessels, and meeting with fiftie ships laden with French wares and merchandize, of which some were of Flaunders, some of Spayne, he set on them all, who beholding his bold enterpryse, and thinking that he had some aide at hand gave over to make resistance, and so xxviii. escaping by flight, xvii. yielded themselves to the said Thomas Lord Percy. Sir Hugh Calueley with a power secretly armed, went to the towne of Staple, where the sayre was then, to the which were come many Merchantmen from Bulloigne, Antwerp, Amiens, and Paris, where he falling on them that were unarmed, slew many, toke many to be put to their ransomes, sacked all the goods, and

Two tenths granted by the Cleargie.

Hugh Calueley his journey toward Bulloigne.

1378.

Sir Hugh Calueley spoiled the towne of Staple.

let



set fire in the towne, so that it was wholy consumed, fewe places excepted. This done, he returned to Calais with his men in safety, bringing from that payre wares which returned to the great profite of the Calissians many payres after.

The men of Winchelsey & Rye, gathered a great number of people together, and imbarcked themselves towards Normandy, desirous to requite the losses which befoze they had received, and so in the night arriving in a towne called Peters Hauen, entered the same, slaying so many as they met, and those whom they thinke able to pay ranfome, they carry to their ships: they spoiled the houses with the Churches, where they found many rich spoiles which sometime had ben by the frenchmen fet from Rye, and especially the belles and such like, which they shipped, set the rest on fire, & then they land at Winchelsey, not farre from thence, where they practised the like cheuance, and so with their rich spoyle returned home.

About the same time John Duke of Lancaster requested that the mony granted to the king by the cleargy and laity, might be committed to his custody, affirming that he would keepe the enemies off from the coastes of England, by the space of one yere with that mony, and moreover bying to passe some further great commodity, to whose impoztunate petition the Loyds although against their willes agreed. They appoint therfoze the first day of March to meet in counsell, in which euery of those should goe forth on this iourney: and least the sea should in the meane time want those that should keepe it, there were nine ships hired of them of Salon, to defend the sea and land from incurfions of the french and others. These ships being furnished with sufficient numbers of armed men, within a short time coasting the seas, met the paup and merchandise of the Spanyards, and entring battell with them, in short time toke fourteen of their ships laden with wines and other merchandise, and returned into England topfully: unto sir Robert Knowles Captaine of Wexel, they gaue the first fruits of their pray, 100. tunne of their best wines as they passed by him home wards.

In the meane time Henry the bastard, calling himselfe king of Spaine, hearing that they of Bayon had done such harme unto his people, and that the D. of Lancaster had prepared a great number to enter the sea, he was sore afraid, thinking that hee minded not onely to defend the Sea, but rather to seke his kingdom, which by right of his wife the lawfull inheritor of Spaine, he meant to challenge: wherefoze the said Henry commaunded a paup to be prepared of all his land that he might stay the said Duke from entering his countrey, and if he might, to take him prisoner, which happily they had done, if the king of Portugale with almost an innumerable number had not entred the kingdom of Spaine, the selfe same time that the bastard Henry prepared himselfe against the Duke, deferring his iourney from day to day: they that were appointed Captaines ouer the paule with certaine men of warre, got them to the sea, there to stay for the Dukes comming, esteeming it more glorious to lue on the sea by prayes, taking from the enemies, then to lue by spoyle of their owne countreimen at home.

When

When they had certaine daies wasted by and down the seas, the Spanyards met them with an armed company, so that either part in hope of pray loyned together in fight, but our men hauing the wind and weather contrary to them, lost the victory to their enemies, some escaping by flight, & some being taken, amongst the which sir Hugh Courtney a noble knight was one.

About the same time John Mercer a Scot, gathering together no small number of frenchmen, Scots and Spanyards, set vpon certaine ships of Scarbojow, toke them and led them into Scotland, this he did in reuenge of his fathers insurp, who was befoze taken by the Englishmen, and kept prisoner in the castle of Scarbojow.

John Philpot a Cittizen of London, a man of folly wise, and very rich in substance, considering the want of the Duke of Lancaster & other Loydes that ought to haue defended the realme, & lamenting the oppreffions of the inhabitants, hired with his own money, to the number of a thousand souldiers, the which might take from the said John Mercer both his ships and goods, which he had by roving taken, and defend the realme of England from such incurfions: and it came to passe within a small time, that his hired men toke the said John Mercer with all his ships, which he had violently taken from Scarbojow and fiftene Spanish ships that were laden with much riches, and were with him in ayde at that present. There was great soy made among the people, all men passing that worthy mans bountyfulness & loue to wards the king. The Carles & Barons seeing so laudable an act, atchiewed by John Philpot, toke it grievously, although they knew themselves guilty: first they secretly lie in wait, to do him some displeasure, and after they spake against him openly, saying, it was not lawfull for him to do such things without the counsell of the king and realme: certaine of the Loyds, but the chiefe being Hugh Earle of Stafford, that rehearsed these things thus against him, were answered by the same John Philpot: Sir, know (saith hee) that I neither sent my money nor men to the danger of the seas, that I should take from you, or your fellows, the good renoume of Chivalry, and winne it to me, but being forrowfull to see the peoples misery, in my countrey, which now through your foolishness, of the most noble Lady of Passions, is brought to lie open to the spoiling of euery vilest passion, when there is not one of you that both put his hand to the defence therof. I haue therfoze set forth my selfe and mine, so; the sauing of my passion and Countrey: the Earle had not to answer.

The eleuenth day of August, certaine wicked persons of the kings house being armed, at high passe time entered the Church of Westminster Abbey, and there set vpon two vallant Esquiers, John Schakell and Robert Hawley, which had escaped out of the Tower of London, to the said Abbey, for refuge of Sanctuary: they slew the said Robert Hawley in the quire befoze the Wynds stail, and slew a sponke which intreated them to spare the saide Robert in that place. Sir Ralph Ferreis, and sir Alan Buxle, Captayne of the Tower (some say the Lord Lacimer) were the Captaines of this mischief.

The foresaid two Esquiers, Robert Hawley, and John Schakell, in the battell

The men of Winchelsey & of Rye take into Count. M. dy, and spoyl the town: of Peters Hauen

The men of Rye fetch the belles out of Normandy.

Ro. Knowles.

Mercer a Scot took ships of Scarbojow.

John Philpot of London. Ann. reg. 2.

Murder in the Church of Westminster. T. Wallingha.



battell of *Payers* in *Spain* toke the *Carle* of *Dene* prisoner, who delivered unto them his sonne for a pledge: and because they would not present the said *Charles* sonne to the *king*, who would give them little or nothing for him, the foresaid *Alan* Buxule, with other were sent to do this mischief, who slew the one, and cast the other in prison.

The *Scots* began to rebell, and a squire of theirs, called *Alexander Ramsay*, with fortie persons, in a night toke the *Castell* of *Berwicke*, but the ninth day following, the *Carle* of *Northumberland* reconerred it, & slew the *Scots* that were therein.

The *Merchants* of *London* wickedly slew a rich merchant of *Genoa*, for that he would carry to a better market *spices* that he had promised to bring into this Countrey, the doers whereof were after apprehended, and some for that fact executed, as after shall appeare.

So great a mortallitie of men happened in the North parts of *England*, as neuer had bene seene before, which the *Scots* seeing, raunged through and slew with the sword them that were sicke of the plague, and so pursued them that had not the plague, that they dyone out of the Countrey, almost all the able men.

In a *Parliament* at *London*, it was decreed, that every *Duke* should pay tenn markes to the *king*, the *Archbishops* the like, *Carles*, *Bishops*, and mittered *Abbots* should give fire markes, and every *Monke* fortie pence, no religious person, man or woman, *Parson*, *Wicar*, or *Chapleine* escaped this taxe. *John Mountfort* *Duke* of *Britanie*, returned to his countrey, where he was received with great honour.

A bushell of wheat was sold for fire pence: a gallon of white wine six pence, and a gallon of red wine for foure pence.

*John* of *Arundale* brother to the *Carle* of *Arundale*, was sent to helpe the *Duke* of *Bytaine*, with many other noble *Knights* and *Esquires*, who beginning their voyage from *Wilmington* with spoiling their owne Countrey, smothering *widowes*, and *virgins*, and robbing of *Churches*, were by tempest driven on the rocks of a certaine *Iland* in *Ireland*, where they were all most miserably drowned, with their treasure and provisions which was of inestimable value. *Sir Thomas Banister*, *Sir Roger Trumpington*, *Sir Nicholas Kiriell*, *Sir Thomas Dale*, *Sir John Sentele* and fire other *knights* and many other perished there, besides thre score women, whom they had throwne into the sea to lighten their shippe, and this was done on the vii. of *December*.

In a *Parliament* at *London* was granted to the *king* a tenth of the Ecclesiastical persons, and a fiftenth of the secular, upon condition that no other *Parliament* should be holden from the *Calends* of *March* till *Michaelmasse*.

A combat was fought at *Westminster* in the *king*s presence, between *John Anley* knight, & *Thomas Carlington* *Esquier*, whom the foresaid knight had appealed of treason, for selling the castle of *Saint Saviours*, which the *Lord Chandos* had builded in the *Ile* of *Constantine* in *France*, and the knight ouercame the *Esquier*.

Thomas

*Thomas* of *Woodstocke* *Carle* of *Buckingham*, *Thomas Percy*, *Hugh Calueley*, *Robert Knowles*, *Lord Basset*, *Sir John Harleston*, *William of Winmore*, appeared and tried *knights*, were sent with a great power to appe the *Duke* of *Bytaine*, who were conueyed to *Caleis*, and from thence rode about through *France*, spoiling the countrey, and slaying the people to the borders of *Bytaine*, and entered the same without lode, eyther of man or beast.

In this journey *Sir John Philpot*, Citizen of *London* deserued great commendations, who hyred ships for them of his owne charges, & with his owne money released the armour which the souldiours had gaged for their victuals, more then a thousand in number.

The *Scots* entered *Cumberland*, *Westmerland*, and the *Forrest* of *Engelwood*, slew the inhabitants, dyone away the *Cattell*, and robbed the *Parbet* and *Towne* of *Pereth*, and whiles the *Carle* of *Northumberland* prepared to haue bene reuenged, the *king* sent letters to the contrary. *John Vian* knight with the *French* *knights* *Calles* toke the *Towne* of *Winchelsea*, put the *Abbot* of *Bataile* to flight, and toke one of his *ponkes* that came thither armed.

He also burnt the *Townes* of *Apledox* and *Kye*, *Hastings* and *Doxtesmouth*, about the feast of *Saint Laurence*.

The eight of *September* foure *Calles* of *France* came to *Gravelende*, and burnt a great part of the *Towne*, returned with great spoiles, not relating any hurt.

About this time *saith* *Polidor*, the making of *Gunn*s was found, by a certaine *Almaine*, who hauing the powder of *Blunkone* in a mortar which he had beaten for a medicine, and covered with a stone, as he stroke fire, a sparke chanced to fall into the powder, whereby a flame out of the mortar raised the stone a great height, which after he had perceived, he made a pipe of pyon, and tempered the powder with other, and so finished that deadly engine, as repository *Blondus* and *R. Volateranus*. The first that used shot, to their chafse and profit, were the *Venetians* against the inhabitants of *Genoa*: but sure it was long before this time, as that be shewed in my larger *Chronicle*.

During the *Parliament* at *Northampton*, beginning the first of *November*, was hanged *John Kirby*, that slew the merchant of *Genoa*, whom we spake of before.

In this *Parliament* an exceeding great *Taxe* was demanded, which afterwards was cause of great discurbance: of all religious persons men and women fire shillings eight pence, secular *Wicettes* as much, and every person, man or woman foure pence to the *king*, which was paid. It was also ordained, that every couple wedded should pay two shillings for every score of beast, and also home tilde, but this was neuer asked.

After the feast of *Christmas* a *Councell* was holden at *London*, in the which *Sir Thomas Brantingham* *Bishoppe* of *Exeter* was discharged of the Office of *Lord Treasurer*, and *Sir Robert Hales* *Bypo* of *Saint Johns*

Gg

1379.  
Tho. Walling.  
Berwicke castle taken by the Scots.

Defence of the North.  
Tho. Walling.

Taxe.

Anreg. 3.  
Wheat and wine cheap.  
Tho. Walling.  
Sir John Arundale drowned.

Cromaueris Lon.

1380.  
Parliament at London.

A combat at Westminster.

John Philpot his good service.

Anreg. 4.  
Frenchmen toke Winchelsea.

The towne of Gravelend burnt by the French.

Gunn invented.  
Polidor.  
Schastus Munk.

Blondus.  
R. Volateranus.

Parliament at Northampton.

Great Taxe.

1381.  
Tho. Walling.

Johns Hospital of Jerusalem in England was placed in his robe, a noble and ballant knight & a hardy person, but such an one as pleased not the commons.

About the same time came vessels called Caricks, to South Hampton, fraught with all kinds of spices, wines, and other Marchandizes, which greatly enriched the inhabitants of the whole realme, but especially of them that inhabited thereabout.

The same time John Wickliffe parson of Lutterworth in Leicester-shire, laboured in his preaching to proue that after the consecration in the masse made by the Priest, very bread and wine were there present as before, Christ being there assistant, as in euery place, but more specially, & the same bread not to be more worth then other bread, except onely for the blessing of the Priest, and therefore he affirmed that Christians were deceived in honouring of the said bread, which was a thing without life, for any thing that had life, was better then that which lacked life.

A great army was assembled and sent to the aid of the Duke of Lancaster, against the king of Spayne, for the said Duke affirmed, that it was expedient for this realme, that an host of men, with abundance of money should be sent to the king of Portugale, that he might thereby be bound to aide the king of England, and stop the passage of the straites of Gibraltare, of which the Gallies, that must of necessitie passe by the same straites, to come to infect the Britith, or English Ocean, for so should England be safe, and Fraunce should be deceived: Captaines appointed to this army, were Edmond of Langley, Earle of Cambridge, William Lord Beauchampe, the Lord Botetox, sir Mathew Courney, and many other knights, the which passed the seas, and prosperously came to Lyfhone, and were thankfully receiued of the king, but these were not able to assaile the king of Spayne, yet greatly profiting Portugale, they defended the confines, and stayed the Spaniards that they could not enter the countrey as enemies: our men oft times invaded the Spaniards, and boldly abode in that land untill a greater number of warriors might be sent vnto them out of England.

In this meane time, the realme of England, appointed to be punished for her finnes, was sodainly plagued in such sort, that if God had not sooner suppressed the same, both the gouernment had bene utterly destroyed, and the whole realme made a laughing stocke and scoorne to all nations.

In the last yere (as is afore said) was granted to the king a grieuous tax or tallage of his subiects, both spiritual and tempo: all, through the which was raised in England, a shipwacke of great troubles: for diuers Courtiers desirous to enrich themselves with other mens goods, informed the king & his court, that the tallage was not gathered vp faithfully to the kings vse by the Collectors: whereupon they offered to the king, that they would pay a great summe of money for the farme of that which they would gather ouer and besides that which had bene paid, if they might be by the king thereunto authorized. And some of them getting the kings letters and authority, late in diuers places of Kent and Essex, and handled the people very sore and vncourteously, almost not to be spoken, for the leaping of the said summe of money, which

some

some of the people taking in euill part, they secretly toke counsell together, gathered assistants, and resisted the exactors, rising against them, of whom some they slew, some they wounded, and the rest fled.

The king therefore ordained certaine Commissioners to enquire, howe they were leued, amongst the which, one was sent into Essex to Thomas de Bampton, he sitting one day before Whistontide, at Wentwood, enquiring how the Collectors had leued the subsidy before said, all the people of Fobbing answered, they would not pay one penny more then they had done, whereof they had his acquittance, whereupon the said T. de Bampton, whereupon them, hauing with him two Sergeants at Armes of the kings, whereupon they of Fobbing, of Curringham, and of Samford, assembled to the number of more then one hundred, went to T. Bampton and gave him flat answer that they would neither treat with him, or pay any such money as was demanded: wherefore the said Bampton commaunded the Sergeants to arrest and put them in prison, but the townsmen made them all to fly to wards London to the kings counsell. Whereupon sir Robert Belknap chiefe Justice of the common Pleas was sent downe with commission of Trarphallion, and before him sundry inditeiments of those men; who comming before him called him traitor to the king, and realme, and furthermore compelled him to sweare vpon a booke, that he should no more sit in any such Sessions, and to declare to the names of the Iurers, whose heads they chopped off as they found them, and destroyed their houses, which made sir Robert Belknap in haste to fly his house. This done the Commons assembled before Whistontide to a great number: those toke all the Clearkes of the said T. Bampton and chopped off their heads, which they caried before them on poles. At the same time the great Priore of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem by London, hauing a godly and delectable Manor in Essex, wherein was ordained victuals and other necessities, for the vse of a Chapter Generall, and great abundance of fayne stuffe, of Wines, Arras cloathes, and other prouision for the knights brethren: The Commons entred this Manor, cate by the victuals and prouision of Wine, three tunnes, and spoiled the Manor; and the ground with great damage: then they sent diuers letters into Kent, Suffolk, and Northfolke to rise with them, and departing themselves into diuers companies, committed many outrages: shortly after, to wit, on Monday after Whistunday, a knight of the kings house, named sir Simon Burley, hauing in his company two Sericants at Armes of the kings, came to Grauesend, where he challenged one to be his bondman, for whom, men of the towne did gently intreat him to the w<sup>th</sup> favour, but sir Simon would not take lesse then 300. pound of silver for his manumission, & therefore arrested him, and sent him to Rochester Castell, whereupon the Commons of Kent began to rise, for the which the king sent a Justice of Trarphallion, with Iohn Legge a Sericant of Armes, there to sit, hauing with them many inditeiments, but as they would haue late at Canterbury vpon their committie, they were resisted by the commons, who daily grew to a great multitude, & being without a captain, came to Darford, where they toke counsaile, and appointed that none which

Commissioners sent into Essex to Thomas de Bampton.

Fobbing Curringham and Samford in Essex.

Sir Robert Belknap Justice.

Jurers heads chopped off.

Lord Priore of Saint Iohns his Manor in Essex 1397. 20.

Sir Simon Burley his commission in Kent arrested one of Grauesend, sent him to Rochester Castell. Commons of Kent began to rise.

were dwelling within twelue miles of the sea, should goe with them, but keepe the coast of the sea from enemies, saying there were more hinges then one, which they would not suffer, nor haue any other but king Richard. On the Friday after, they came to Rochester, and there toynd with the Essex rebels, who together strongly besieged the Castle, and deliuered the man of Grauesend with other: then they made Wat Tighler of Spaldstone their Captaine, who with his company on Monday after Trinity Sunday, came to Canterbury, where they commaunded the Bonkes to chuse them an Archbishop, for he that now is, (quoth they) is a traitor, & shal be beheaded. When they swore the Mayor, Bailiffes, and Commons of the towne to be true to king Richard and the lawfull Commons of England. They beheaded thre men of that towne, and then taking with them 500. men of that towne toward London, left the rest to keepe the said towne. This tumult thus begun in Kent, by meane of Sir Simon Burley, was also increased by diuers other actions in other places, amongst the which, as I finde noted in a Chronicle sometimes belonging to the Monastery of Saint Albons one of the collectors of the groates, or polle money, comming to the house of one Iohn Tylar, in the towne of Dartford in Kent, demanded of the Tylars wife, for her husband, her selfe, her seruants, and for their daughter (a young mayden) euery one of them a groate: which the Tylars wiffe denied not to pay, sauing for her daughter, whom she said was but a child, not to be counted a woman: quoth the collector, that will I some wit, and taking the mayden, and turned her by to search whether she were vnder growne with baire or not, (for in many places they made the like triall) whereupon her mother cried out, neighbours came running in: and her husband being at worke in the same towne, tyling of an house, when he heard thereof, caught his lathing staffe in his hand, and came reaking home, where reasoning with the Collector, who made him so bold, the Collector answered with stout wordes, and strake at the Tylar, whereupon the Tylar auoiding the blow, smote the Collector with his lathing staffe, that the baines flew out of his head, wherethrough great noyse arose in the streets, and the poore people being glad, euery one prepared to support the said Iohn Tylar. Thus the Commons being drawne together, went to Spaldstone, and from thence backe againe to Blache heath, and so in short time they stirred all the Countrey, in a manner to the like commotion, and forthwith besetting the waies that lead to Canterbury, arrest all passengers, compelling them to swear: first, that they should keepe their allegiance vnto king Richard, and to the Commons, and that they should accept no king that was named Iohn, for enny they bare vnto Iohn Duke of Lancaster, who named himselfe king of Castile, and that they should be ready whensoever they were called, and that they should agree to no Tare to be leuied from thenceforth in the kingdome, nor consent to any except it were a fiftene.

The same of these doings spread into Sussex, Hertford, Essex, and Cambridgshires, Dorseth, Suffolke, &c. and when such assembling of the common people daily took increase, and that their number was now

made

Rochester Castle besieged, after Easter set out.

The Commons went to Canterbury, and swar the Mayor to the king & them.

Lib. S. Albones.

Iohn Tylar of Dartford slew one of the Collectors of money.

made almost infinite, so that they feared no man to resist them, they beganne to Helpe some such Ades as they had considered in their mindes, and tooke in hande to behead all men of Lawe, as well Apprentices, as Justice, Lawyers and Jurors beheaded. Utter-bariffers and old Justices, with all the Iurers of the countrey, whom they might get into their hands, they spared none whom they thought to be learned, especially if they found any to haue pen and inke, they pulled off his hode, and all with one voice of crying, hale him out, and cut off his head.

They also determined to burne all Court rolles and olde monuments that the memory of antiquities being taken away, their Lordes should not be able to challenge any right on them, from that time forth. These Commons had to their Chapleine or Preacher a wicked Priest, called Sir Iohn Ball, who counsailed them to destroy all the Nobility, and Clergy, so that there should be no Bishop in England, but one Archbishoppe, which should be himselfe, and that there should not be about two religious persons in one house, and their possessions should be deuoted among the laye men, for the which doctrine they held him as a prophet. They going to wardes London met diuers Lawyers, and twelue knights of that countrey, whom they forced to swear to maintaine them, or else to be beheaded: this being knowne to the king, on Wednesday following he sent messengers to demand the cause of their rising. Who answered, that they were gathered together for his safety, to destroy those that were traitors to him and his kingdome: the king by messengers replied, that they should cease their assemblies untill he mought speake with them, and all matters should be amended. Whereupon the Commons requested the king to come and see them on the Blache heath, and the king the third time sent word that he would willingly come to them the next day. At what time the king being at Windsor removed in all haste to London, whom the Mayor met, and safely brought to the Tower, whither the Archbishoppe of Canterbury Chancellor, the Bishoppe of London, the Bishop of Saint Iohn Treasurer, the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Arundale, Warwick, Suffolke, Dorset, and Salisbury, and other of the Nobility, and Gentlemen to the number of ffe hundred did come, and on Corpus Christi eue the Commons of Kent came to blache heath, thre miles from London, to meete with the king, hauing displayed before them two Banners of Saint George, and therefore Penons. The Commons of Essex came on the other parte of the river Thames, to haue also answer from the king, at what time the king being in the Tower, commaunded barges to be made ready, and taking with him his Counsell, and foure barges for his retinue, was rowed to Greenwich, where the Chancellor and Treasurer perswaded the king that it were great follie to goe to a number of men without reason, and thereupon he staid. The Commons therefore sent to him, requiring to haue the heades of Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and fiftene other Lordes, wherof fourtene were present with him in the Tower, to wit, Simon Sudburie Chancellor, Sir Robert Hales Treasurer,

Lib. Eborum.

Sir Iohn Ball a wicked priest, Chaplein to the rebels.

The king sent messengers to the rebels, to demand of them the cause of their rising.

King Richard came to the Tower of London.

The Commons of Kent came to the blache heath.

The commons of Essex came also on the other side the Thames.

Watchword  
of the Com-  
mons.

The Com-  
mons of Kent  
came into  
Southwarke,  
by the by the  
pillows.

The Com-  
mons of Essex  
spoiled the  
Archbishops  
house at Lam-  
beth.

The Com-  
mons of Essex  
burnt the Mon-  
astory of High-  
bury.

The Com-  
mons of Kent  
broke downe  
the Stewards.

The Com-  
mons entered  
the Citie of  
London.

The religious  
were in prayer  
and procession.  
The Commons  
passed through  
the Citie and  
did no harme.  
It saye took  
any with the  
they beheaded  
him, but being  
drunken they  
burnt the Mon-  
astory, but refer-  
red nothing  
to themselves.

sur, the Bishoppe of London, John Fordham Clarke of the priule Seale, Robert Belknap, chiefe Justice, Sir Ralph Perers, Sir Robert Plesington chiefe Baron of the Erchequer, John Legge Sergeant at armes, Thomas Bampton and others, whereunto the king would not assent, but willed them to come to him to Windsor, on Monday next, where they should have sufficient answer to all their demands. The Commons had a watch-word, which was this: With whom should you and the answer was, with King Richard, and the true Commons, and who could not that watch-word, off went his head. The king being warned that if he came to the Commons, he should be carried about by them, & forced to grant them their requests whatsoever, he returned toward London and entered the Tower, about three of the clock: The Commons being certified that the king was gone, they on the same day toward evening came to Southwarke, where they brake down the houses of the Marshalsey, and loosed the prisoners, amongst other they brake down the house of John Inworth then Marshal of the Marshalsey, the Kings Bench, & all the houses of Lawyers, & Duck-mongers, continuing that outrage all the night: At what time the Commons of Essex went to Lambeth a Pannoy of the Archbishop of Canterbury, entered the house, spoiled and burnt all the goods with the books, registers, and remembrances of the Chancery. The next day being Thursday, and the feast of Corpus Christi, or the 13. of June, the Commons of Essex in the morning went to the Pannoy of Highbury two miles from London north, this Pannoy belonging to the Bishop of Saint John of Jerusalem, they wholly consumed with fire. On which day also in the morning the Commons of Kent brake downe the Ale-houses nere London bridge, at that time in the hands of the frowes of Flanders, who had farmed them of the Mayor of London. After which they went to London bridge, in hope to have entered the Citie: but the Mayor, coming thither before, fortified the place, caused the bridge to be drawn up, and fastened a great chaine of yron a crosse, to restraine their entrie. When the Commons of Surrey, who were risen with the other, cried to the wardens of the bridge to let it downe, whereby they might passe, or else they would destroy them all, whereby they were constrained for feare to let it downe, & give them entry, at which time the religious persons were earnest in procession, and prayer for peace: the Commons passed through the Citie, and did no hurt, they take nothing from any man, but bought all things at a full price: and if they found any man with theft, they beheaded him. Now talking with the simple Commons, of procuring them liberty, and apprehending traitors (as they termed them) especially the Duke of Lancaster, they shortly got all the poye Citizens to conspire with them: and the same day, after the sunne was got on some height that it waxed warme, and that they had tasted at their pleasures of diuers wines, whereby they were become as madde, as drunken (for the rich Citizens had let open their cellars to enter at their pleasure) they began to take of many things, amongst the which they exhorted each other, that going to the Savoy, the Duke of Lancasters house, to the which there was none in the

Realme

Realme to be compared in beauty and stateliness, they might set fire on it, and burne it; this talke pleasing the Commons of the Citie, they straight ranne thither, and setting fire on it round about applied their travaile, to destroy that place: and that it might appeare to the communality of the realme, that they did not any thing for covetise, they caused Proclamation to be made, that none on paine to lose his head, should presume to convert to his owne use any thing that there was, or might be found, but that they should brake such plate and vessel of gold and silver, as were in that house in great plenty, into small peeces, and throw the same into the Thames, or into some privies; clothes of gold, silver, silk, & velvet, they should tear; rings, and Jewels set with precious stones, they should use in mortars, that the same might be to no use, &c. And so was it done. Henry Knighton writeth, that when the rebelles burnt the Savoy, one of them (contrary to the Proclamation) took a goodly silver peece and hid it in his bosom, but an other that espied him, tolde his fellows, who forthwith hurled him and the peece of plate into the fire, saying, we be zealous of truth and iustice, and not thieves, or robbers. After this they getting a rich garment of the Dukes (commonly called a Jacke, or Jackquit) setting it on a speares point, for a marke, they shot at it with their bowes and arrows, but when they coule that way doe it little hurte, they took it downe, and laying it on the ground, with their swordes and axes they all toke it. So the number of two and thirtie of those rebels entered a feller of the Savoy, where they dranke so much of sweet wines, that they were not able to come out in time, but were shut in with wood and stones that mured by the doze, where they were heard crying and calling seven daies after, but none came to helpe them out till they were dead.

H. Knighton.

The Commons burnt one of their fellows.

H. Knighton.

Where then the rebels mured up in a feller.

In this meane time the Commons of Kent brake by the Fleet, and let the prisoners goe where they would: they destroyed and burnt many houses, and defaced the beauty of Fleetstrate: from thence they went to the Temple to destroy it, and plucked downe the houses, tooke off the tyles of the other buildings left, went to the Church, took out all the books, and remembrances that were in butches of the prentises of the Lawe, carried them into the high strate, and there burnt them: this house they spoiled for what they bare to the Bishop of Saint Johns, unto whom it belonged: after a number of them had sacked this Temple, what with labour, and what with wine, being overcome, they lay downe under the walles, and housing, and were layne like swine, one of them killing an other for olde grudge and hatred, and others also made quicke dispatch of them. A number of them that burnt the Temple, went from thence toward the Savoy, destroying all the houses that belonged to the Hospitall of Saint John: and after they went to the place of the Bishop of Chester, by the Strand, where John Fordham remained elect of Durham, they entered his feller, ransacking out the tunnes of wine, drinking exceedingly, not dooing any more harme. Then they wente

Tho. Walling. Prison of the Fleet broken up, many houses in Fleetstreet burnt, they spoiled the Temple, and burned the records, or remembrances of the Law.

The rebels murder one another.

The rebels drinke up the wine, at Chesters June by the Strand, and burnt the

houses of  
questmongers,  
made spoyle of  
what their  
fellows had  
in the Sauoy.

The Rebels  
went to Westminster and  
burned many  
houses.

Prison of  
Roger Legat  
broken up.  
Roger Legat  
beheaded in  
Cheape, and  
ruined in  
other places.  
Tower of  
London be-  
gged.

All the houses  
of common in-  
ters burnt.  
Hospital of  
Saint John  
by Smithfield  
burnt.

The kings  
proclamation.

The kings  
charter to the  
Commons.

towards the Sauoy, burning many houses of questmongers. At the last they came to the Sauoy, brake the gates, entered the house, came to the warre, took out all the torches they could finde, which they set a fire, and with them bent all the feather beddes, couerlets (whereof one with armes was esteemed worth 1000. markes) and all other goods that they might finde, with the houses, and buildings belonging therunto, which were left by the Commons of the Citie of London. And (as it was saide) they found thre barrels of gunne powder, which they thought had bene golde, or silver, those they cast into the fire, which moze sodainly then they thought, blew by the Hall, destroyed the houses and almost themselves: from thence they went to Westminster, burned diuers houses, and amongst other the house of John Buterwike vnder Shire of Middlesex, they broke the prison at Westminster, and returned to London by Holborne, and before the Church of Saint Sepulchre, burnt the house of Simon the Hostiler and others, they brake the prison of Fleetgate, let forth the prisoners, &c.

The same Thursday, the said Commons went to Saint Martins le Grand in London, and took from the high Altar in that Church one Roger Legat chiefe sizar (or questmonger) led him into Cheape, and cut off his head: at that time also they beheaded vniu. in diuers places of the Citie. During which time diuers of the Commons went vnto the Tower, there to haue spoken with the king, but could not be heard, wherefore they besieged the Tower on that side towards Saint Bathelines. The other Commons that were in the Citie went to the Hospital of Saint Iohn, and by the way burnt the house of Roger Legat lately beheaded, they burnt all the houses belonging to Saint Iohns. and then bent the saye Prison of the Hospital of Saint Iohn, causing the same to burne by the space of seuen daies after. At what time the king being in a Turret of the Tower, and seeing the mannours of Sauoy, the Prison of Saint Iohns Hospital, and other houses on fire, he demaunded of his counsell what was best to doe in that extremitie, but none of them could counsaile in that case. The king there in a Tower towards Saint Bathelines made Proclamation that all people should depart to their homes peaceably, and he would pardon them all their trespasses: but they with one voice cried, they would not goe before they had the traitors within the Tower, and charters to free them from all seruice, and of other matters which they would demaund: this the king granted, and caused a Clarke to write in their presence as followeth.

Richard King of England and of France, doth greatly thanke his good Commons, because they to greatly desire to see and hold him for their king, and doth pardon to them all manner of trespasses, misprisions, and felonies done before this time, and willetth and commaundeth from hence forth, that euery one hasten to his owne dwelling, and set downe all his gréuances in writing, and send it vnto him, and he will by aduise of his lawfull Lozdes, and good counsell provide such remedy as shall be possible to him, to them, and to the whole Realme. Whereunto he set his signes in their presence, and

sent

sent it vnto them by two knights, one of them standing up in a chaire above the rest, that euery one might heare. During which time the king remained in the Tower, to his great griefe, for when the Commons heard the writing, they said it was but a mockery, and therefore returned to London, proclaiming through the Citie, that all the men of Lawe, all they of the Chancery, and of the Exchequer, and all that could make any writ, or letter, should be beheaded wherefore they might be found. The whole number of the common people, were at that time deuised into three parts, of the which one part was attending to destroy the manors of Wighbery, and other places belonging to the Priory of Saint Iohn: Another company lay at the Piles ende East of the Citie: The third kept at the Tower hill, there to spoyle the king of such victuals as were brought towards him. The company ascended on the Piles end, sent to commaund the king, that he should come to them without delay, unarmed, or without any force, which if he refused to doe, they would surely pull downe the Tower, neither should he escape alive; who taking counsell of a few, by leuen of the Locke the king rode to the Piles end, with his mother in a whirlicote or chariot as we now terme it, & the Carles of Buckingham, Kent, Warwicke, and Driford, Sir Thomas Percie, Sir Robert Knolles, and the Priory of London, with diuers other knights, and Esquires, Sir Aubery de Vere bare the kings sword. Thus with a few unarmed, the king went towards the rebels in great feare: and to the gates of the Tower being let open, a great multitude of them entered the same. There was the same time in the Tower 600. warlike men furnished with armour and weapon, expert men in armes, and 600. archers, all which did quail in stomache. For the basest of the rustickes, not many together, but euery one by himselfe, durst presume to enter the kings chamber, or his mothers, with their weapons, to put in feare each of the men of warre, knights or other: many of them came into the kings priuy chamber, and plaid the wantons, in sitting, lying and sporting them on the kings bed: and that moze is, insulted the kings mother to kisse with them, yet durst none of those men of warre (strange to be said) once withstand them: they came in and out like masters, that in times past were slaues of most vile conditio. Whilste therefore these rustickes sought the Archbishop with terrible noise and fury running by and downe, at length finding one of his seruants, they charge him to bring them where his master was, whom they named traitor, which seruant darning do none other, brought them to the Chappell; where, after Masse had bene said, and hauing receiued the communion, the Archbishop was busie in his prayers, for not knowing of their coming and purpose, he had passed the last night in confessing of his sinnes, and in deuout prayers. When therefore he heard they were come, with great constancie he said to his men, Let vs now goe, surely it is best to die, when it is no pleasure to liue, and with that the tormentors entering, cried, Where is the traitor? The Archbishop answered, behold, I am the Archbishop whom you seeke, not a traitor. They therefore laid handes on him, and drew him out of the Chappell, they drew him out of the Tower gates, to the Tower hill, where being compassed about with many thousands, and being

Proclamation  
by the Com-  
mons in Lon-  
don.

The rebels  
commaund the  
king, and he  
going to them  
on the Piles  
end.  
Whirlicote.

The rebels  
enter the  
Tower

Archbishop  
fetche out of  
the Tower.

Two dayes

woords about his head done in excessive number, threatening to him death, he said unto them thus: what is it here brethren you purpose to doe, what is mine offence committed against you, for which ye will kill me, you were best to take heed, that if I be killed, who am your pastor, there come not on you, the indignation of the iust reuenger, or at the least, for such a fact all England be put under interdictio: he could vnneth pronounce these woords, before they cryed out with an horrible noise, that they neither feared the interdictio, nor the Pope to be aboue them. The Archbishop seeing death at hand, with comfortable woords, as he was an eloquent man, and wise, beyond all wise men of the realme; lastly, after forgiveness graunted to the executioner that should behead him, he kneeling downe offered his necke to him that should strike it off, being striken in the necke, but not deadly, he putting his hand to his necke, said thus, a ha, it is the hand of God, he had not remoued his hand from the place, where the payne was, but that being sodainly striken, his fingers ends being cut off, and part of the arteries, he fell downe, but yet he died not, till being mangled with 8. strokes in the necke, and in the head, he fulfilled most worthy martyrdom. There lay his body vnburied all that Friday, and the morrow till afternone, none daring to deliuer his body to the sepulture, his head these wicked towe, and naples thereon his hwe, they fire it on a pole, and set it on London Bridge, in place where before stood the head of Sir John Minstworth. This Archbishop Simon Tibald alias Sudbury, sonne to Nicholas Tibald gentleman, borne in the towne of Sudbury in Suffolke, Doctor of both lawes, was 18. yeres Bishop of London, in the which time he builded a goodly Colledge, in place where his fathers house stode, and indued it with great possessions, and furnished the same with secular Clerkes and other ministers, valued at the suppression 122. pound. 18. shillings in lands by yere. He builded the upper end of S. Gregories Church at Sudbury. After being translated to the Archbishopricke of Canterbury, in An. 1375. he reuised the walles of that Citie, from the West gate (which he builded) to the North gate, which had been destroyed by the Danes before the conquest of William the bastard. He was slaine as ye haue heard, and afterwards buried in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury. There died with him Sir Robert Hales a most valiant knight, Lord of S. Johns and treasurer of England, and John Legge one of the Kings sericants at armes, and a Franciscan frier, named William Apledore the King's Confessor. Richard Lions also a famous lapidary or goldsmith, late one of the Sheriffs of London, was done out of his house and beheaded in Cheape. There were that day beheaded manie as well Flemings as Englishmen for no cause, but to fulfill the crueltie of the rude Commons: for it was a solemne pastime to them, if they could take any that was not twome to them, to take from such a one his hode with their accustomed clamour, and forthwith to behead him: neither did they shew any reuerence vnto sacred places, for in the very Churches did they kill whom they had in hatred, they fetcht 13. Flemings out of the Augustine Friers church in London, and 17. out of another church, and 32. in the Mintre, and so forth in other places of the Citie, & in Southwarke, al which they beheaded, except

Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
cruelly be-  
headed.

Colledge at  
Sudburie  
found.

Prior of  
Saint Johns  
beheaded.

Jeffrey Chan-  
cer in the tale  
of the Summe.  
Died.

Flemings be-  
headed.

they could plainly pronounce bread and cheefe, for if their speech sounded any thing on by, or cable, off went their heads, as a sure mark they were Flemings.

The King coming to the Spiles end, the place before rected, was soze a strafe, beholding the wood commons, who with scoward countenance required many things which they before had put in writings to be confirmed by the Kings letters patents.

The 1. that all men should be free from seruitude and bondage, so as from thenceforth there should be no bondmen.

The 2. that he should pardon all men of what estate soeuer, all maner actions and insurrections committed, and all maner treasons, felonies, transgressions and extortions, by any of them done, and to graunt them peace.

The 3. that al men from thenceforth might be enfranchised to buy and sell in every Countie, Citie, borough, town, faire, market, and other place within the Realme of England.

The 4. that no acre of land holden in bondage or seruice, should be holden, but for 4. pence, and if it had been holden for lesse aforesaid, it should not hereafter be inhaunfed.

These and many other things they required: moreover they tolde him, he had been euilly gouerned till that day, but from that time he must be gouerned other wise.

The King perceiving he could not escape except he graunted to their request, yielded to the same. And because the Chancelor was beheaded, the King made the Earle of Arundale for the time Chancelor, and keeper of the great seale, and also made diuers Clerkes to write Charters, patents, and protections graunted to the Commons, for the foresaid matters, without taking fine, for the seale, or writing thereof, and so toward euen, the King crawling licence departed from them. The next day being Saturday and the 15. of June, a great number of the Commons came to the abbey of Westminster, and there found John Inworth Sparthall of the Sparthall, and master of the prisoners there, embracing a marble pillar of Saint Edwards shrine for his defence, against his enemies, they plucked his armes from the pillar, and led him into cheape, where they cut off his head. In which time they took out of Bedestre one John Greenfield, led him into cheape, & cut off his head, notwithstanding that the King had at this time made proclamation through the Citie, that euery one should peaceably goe into his countrey, without doing further euill, whereunto they would not assent. The same day after dinner, about two of the clocke, the King went from the wardrobe, called the Royall in London toward Westminster, attended on by the number of 200. persons, to visit Saint Edwards shrine, and to see if the Commons had done any mischiefe there: The Abbot and couent of that abbey, with the Chanons and vicars of Saint Stephens Chappell, met him in rich Copes, with procession, and led him by the charnell house into the abbey, then to the Church, and to the high altar, where hee deuoutely prayed, and offered. After which he spake with the Anchors, to whom hee confessed him selfe, then hee went

Essex men re-  
turned home  
ward.

John Entworth  
Sparthall of  
the Sparthall  
beheaded.

John Green-  
field beheaded

King Richard  
went to West-  
minster, and  
was there re-  
lieued with  
procession.

Our Lady in  
the pewe.  
The King and  
the commons  
was in hither  
side.

to the Chapell called our Lady in the pewe, where he made his prayers: Which being done, the King made proclamation, that all the commons of the countrey, that were in London shoulde mete him in Smithfield, which was done accordingly, and when the King was come with his people, he stode towards the Cast, nere to Saint Bartilmewes priory, and the commons towards the West in foyme of battayle. The King therefore sent to them, to shew them that their fellows the Cler men were gone from thenceforth to live in peace, and that he would graunt to them the like foyme of peace, if it would please them to accept thereof. Their chiefe Captaine named Wat Tyler of Spadestone, he I say being a crafty fellow, of an excellent wit, but lacking grace, answered, that peace he desired, but with conditions to his liking, minding to fede the King with false wordes, till the next day, that he might in y night have compassed his peruerse purpose, for they thought y same night to have spoiled the Citie, the King first being aslaine, and the great Lordes that cleaved to him, and to have burnt the Citie, by setting fire in foure parts thereof, but God that resisteth the proude, did suddenly disappoint him. For where the foyme of peace was in thre feuerall Charters written, and thre sent to him, none of them could please him: wherefore at length the King sent to him one of his Knights called Sir Iohn Newton, not so much to command as to intreate him (for his pride was well nough knownen) to come and talke with him about his owne demands, to haue them put in his charter, of the which demands, I will put one in this Chronicle, that it may the moze plainly appeare, the other to be contrary to reason. First, he would haue a commision for him and his, to behead all Lawyers, elcheters, and other whatsoeuer, that were learned in the law, or communicated with the law, by reason of their office, for he had conceiued in his mind that this being brought to passe, all things after ward shoulde be ordered according to the fancy of the common people: and in dede it was said, that with great pride, he bad but the day before said, putting his hand to his lips, that before 4. dayes came to end, all the lawes of England shoulde procede from his mouth. When Sir Iohn Newton was in hand with him for hispatch, he answered with indignation, if thou art so hasty, thou maist get thee bicker againe to thy master, I will come when it pleaseth me: notwithstanding he followed on horsebacke a slow pace, and by the way there came to him a dublet maker of London, named Iohn Tiler, who had brought to the commons 60. dublets which they bought and warr, for the which dublets he demanded 30. markes, but could haue no payment, Wat Tiler answered him, friend appeale thy selfe, thou shalt be well paid on this day be ended, kepe thy nere me, I will be thy creditor: And therewith he spurred his horse, departed from his company, and came so nere the King, that his horse head touched the crope of the Kings horse, and the first word he said was this, Sir King, sett thou all ponder people: pea trulye gnoth the King, wherefore saist thou so: because said he, they be all at my commaundement, and haue sworn to me faith and truth, to doe all that I will haue them. In god time said the King, I will well it be so. Then said Wat Tiler belouest thou King, that these people, and as many moe as be in London at my commaundement,

Sir Iohn  
Newton sent  
to Wat Tiler.

Wife of Wat  
Tiler.

Wat Tiler his  
answer to the  
dublet-maker.

Wat Tiler his  
words to the  
King.

maundement, shall depart from the thus, without hauing thy letters: no said the King, yet shall haue them, they be ordeyned for you, and shall be belivered to every each of them, with which wordes, Wat Tiler seeing the Knight Sir Iohn Newton nere to him on horsebacke, bearing the Kings sword, was offended and said, it had become him better to be on fete in his presence. The Knight (not hauing forgot his old accustomed manhood) answered, that it was no harme, seeing himselfe was also on horsebacke: which wordes so offended Wat, that he drew his dagger, and offered to strike at the Knight, calling him traitor: the Knight answered, that he lyeed, and drew his dagger likewise. Wat Tiler not suffering such a contumely done to him before his rustiches, made as if he would haue runne on the Knight. The King therefore seeing the Knight in danger, to asswage the rigor of War, for the time, commaunded the Knight to light on fote, and to deliuer his dagger vnto the said Walter, and when his proude minde could not so be pacified, but he would also haue his sword, the Knight answered, it was the Kings sword, and quoth he, thou art not worthy to haue it, nor thou durst aske it of me, if here were no moze but thou and I. My faith said Wat Tiler, I shall neuer eate till I haue thy head, and would haue run on the Knight: and with that came to the King, William Walworth, Mayor of London, and many Knights and Esquires on the Kings side, affirming that it were great shame, such as had not been heard of, if in their presence, they shoulde permit a noble Knight so shamefully to be murdered before his face, wherefore he ought to be rescued speedily, and Tiler to be arrested. Which thing being heard, the King, although he were but tender of pères, taking boldnesse vnto him, commaunded the Mayor of London to set hand on him. The Mayor being of an incomparable boldnesse and manhood, without any doubting, straight arrested him on y head, Wat Tiler furiously strake the Mayor with his dagger, but hurte him not by meane he was armed, then the Mayor drew his bacelar, and greuously wounded Wat in the necke, and gaue him a great blow on the head, in which confusie, an esquire of the Kings house, called Iohn Cavendish, drew his sword and wounded him twise or thise, euen vnto death, and Wat spurting his horse, cried to the commons to reuenge him, his horse bare him about foure score fote from thence where he fell downe halfe dead, and by and by they which attended on the King, inuironed him all about, where by he was not fene of his company, and other thrust him in with their weapons in diuers places of his body, and then they drew him from amongst the peoples fete into the hospitall of Saint Bartilmew: which when the commons perceived, they cryed out that their Captaine was traiterously slaine, and hartening one another to reuenge his death, bending their bowes, the King, shewing both wisdomme and courage, picking his horse with the spurs, rode to them, and said: What a work is this my men, what meane you to do, will you shote at your King: be not quarrelous, nor so y for the death of a traitor and rebel: I will be your King, I am your Captaine and leader, follow me into the field, there to haue whatsoeuer you will require.

Thus the King his, least the commons being set in a bitterness of minde shoulde

Wat Tiler  
to Sir Iohn  
Newton who  
did bear the  
Kings sword.

William Walworth  
Mayor of London  
arrested Wat Tiler  
and would  
kill him.

Li. Mary Eborum.

John Cavendish  
killed Wat Tiler.

Henry Knitton.



Should set fire on the houses in Smithfield, where their Captaine was staine. They therefore followed him into the open felde, and the soldiers that were with him, as yet not knowing whether they would kill the King, or be in rest and depart home with the Kings Charter.

The Spaior of London rayfeth a power, and returne to the King.

In the meane time the Spaior of London onely with one servant, riding speedily into the Citie, began to cry, ye good Citizens helpe pour King, that is to be murdered, and succour me your Spaior that am in the like danger, or if you will not succour me, yet leaue not pour King destitute, when the Citizens had heard this, in those hearts the love of the King was ingrafted, so dauncely, faimely arrayed, to the number of a thousand men fariied in the streets so; some one of the Knights to lead them to the King, and by fortune Sir Robert Knowles, came in that instant, whom they all requested to be their leader, least coming out of order, and not in god aray they might easely be beaten: who gladly brought part of them, Sir Parducafe Daibart, and other Knights brought the rest to the Kings presence. When the Spaior came to Smithfield and did not finde War Tygular, (as he left him wounded) he greatly maruailed, demanding where the traytor was, and it was tolde him that he was carried into the Hospitall of Saint Bartilmewe, and laid in the Masters Chamber, the Spaior went straight thither and made him to be carried into Smithfield, and there caused him to be beheaded, his head to bee set on a pole, and boyme before him to the King then remayning in the field, and the King caused it to be boyme nere unto him, therewith to abash the Commons, greatly thanking the Spaior for that acte.

Record. R. 2.

That Tiler beheaded by commandement of the Spaior.

The King, and those that were with him, Knights and Esquiers, reioycing of the unhoped for, comming of the Spaior, and those armed men, sobainly compassed all the multitude of the Commons.

There might a man haue sene a wonderfull change of Gods right hand, how the Commons did now throw downe their weapons, and fall to the ground, beseeching pardon, which lately before did glory that they had the Kings life in their power, now they gve themselves in canes, ditches, cornefields, &c. The Knights therefore cōueting to be reuenged, besought the King to permit them to take off the heads of an hundred or two of them, but the King not condescending to their request, commanded the charter which they had beheaded, written and sealed, to be deliuered vnto them for the time, to auoyde more mischief, knowing that Essex was not as yet pacified, nor heat stayed, the commons and rusticks of which Countreys were ready to rife agayne, if he satisfied not their pleasure the sooner. The tenour of which Charter, in my larger Chronicle is set downe. The Commons hauing got this Charter departed home, but ceased not from their former cruell doings.

William Walworth of London knighted, the next day.

The rude people being thus dispersed and gone, the King commaunded William Walworth to put a balnet on his head, for feare of that which might follow, and the Spaior requested to know for what cause he should do so, sith all was quieted, the King answered, that he was much bound to him, and therefore

therefore, he should be made knight, the Spaior againe answered, that he was not worthy, neither able to take such estate upon him, for he was but a Merchant, and to liue by his merchandise, not (withstanding at the last, the King made him put on his balnet, and then take a swozd with both his hands, and throngly with a good will strake him on the necke, and the same day he made three other Citizens Knights for his sake in the same place, which were Iohn Philpor, Nicholas Brembar, and Robert Laund Aldermen, and Sir Iohn Candish in Smithfield was knighted. The King gaue to Sir William Walworth 100. pound land, and to the other 40. pound land, to them and their heires for ever: vpon the sand-hill towards Tieldonne were created the Carls Marshall, and Pembroke, and shortly after Nickolas Twiford, and Adam Francis Aldermen, were also made knights. Sir Robert Knowles, for his good seruice in the Citie, was by the Kings commaundement made a free man of the Citie.

Aldermen of London knighted.

Carles created. Aldermen knighted.

The King with his Lords and all his company, orderly entred into the Citie of London with great toy. The King went to the Lady Princesse his mother, who was then lodged in the Towre of Wall called the Quenes Tower, and there she had remayned two dayes and two nights right soze abashed, but when she saw the King her sonne, she was greatly reioyced, and said, As happy sonne, what great sorrow haue I suffered for you this day: The King answered, and said, certainly Madame, I know it well, but now reioyce and thanke God, for I haue this day recovered mine heritage, and the Realme of England, which I had nere hand lost.

The Towre of Wall in London.

The Archbishopps head was taken downe off the Wydge, and War Tilers head was set in that place.

Querlong it were in this booke to set downe the troubles at Saint Albons, by the bond men there against the Abbot, and other, for liberties which they claymed, as the like did in other places, committing many abominable actes, but somewhat to speake of them within the parts of Suffolke and Norfolke.

The Saturday wherof we haue before spoken, that the tempest might seme to be generall, God sent his wrath into the partes of Suffolke and Norfolke, by sending Essex men to moue the people that liued in quietnesse, to raise like commotions, and to turne the hearts of the bondemen or seruants against their Lords. The which making to their Captaine a most vngratious priefe named Iohn Wraw, who had ben at London the day before, and

John Wraw Captaine in Suffolke and Norfolke.

was intruded by War Tiler, easily assembled a multitude of those common people. The which according to the manner of them at London, ouerthrew houses and manors of great men and of Lawyers, slew the Students of the Lawe, and catching Sir Iohn Cauendish a Iustice of the Realme, some say Lord chief Iustice, beheaded him, and set his head on the pilloz in the towne of Bury, Sir Iohn of Cambridge, Bpior of Bury, they caught and stroke off his head, his body was left naked in the field the space of five dayes, none presuming to burie it, for feare of the Iustices, his head was set on the pilloz by the head of Sir Iohn Cauendish. When entred they the Cloyster of the monasterie where Sir Iohn Lakingnith keeper of the Barone, halled him out with great

Sir Iohn Cauendish Lord chief Iustice, the Bpior of Bury and other beheaded by the rebels.

noyle,



noble, in the Market place they stroke off his head with eight strokes, and set it on the Pillory, they compelled the Spokes that remained, (for their Abbot Edmond Bromfield was in prison at Potttingham) to graunt them Charters, &c.

John Litstar  
of Norwich.

Will. Arden  
Earle of Suff.  
fokke, lackey to  
Sir Roger de  
Boys.

So small multitude of Commons being gotte together under the leading of a certaine Dyer of Norwich, called John Litstar, beganne to worke such mallice as in other places had been put in practise, putting their hands into robbery, so that no place might be free from them: they thought to haue got to them William de Vffard Earle of Suffolke, that they might doe their business vnder colour of his authoritie, but the Earle being warned of their coming, sobainely rose from Supper, and taking his journey through Woodes and deserts came to Saint Albons, and from thence to the King, saying himselfe to bee the lackey of Sir Roger de Boys, and bearing a Mallet behinde him. The Commons thus deceived, forthwith sealed upon the houses of other Knights, and finding them, compelled them to be faine to ride through the Countrey with them, which if they had denied they had died for it.

Sir Robert  
Sale, flaine by  
the bondmen.

John Litstar  
King of the  
commons, and  
ruled by  
Knights.

The Knights that were thus compelled, were the Lord Schales, Sir William Morley, Sir Iohn de Brues, Sir Steuen de Hales, Sir Robert de Sale, which Sir Robert blaming their doings, was smitten into the chayne by one of his bondmen. The other percelusing that they must dissemble, or dye a shamefull death, determined to say all things was well. Whereupon being brought in fauour with Litstar, (who named himselfe King of the Commons) chose Sir Steuen Hales (because hee was a comely Knight) to carue before him, and to take the assay of his meates, and to the other he appoynted other of fices.

Boltons of the  
B. of Norwich.

Burley belon-  
ging to the  
Bishop of  
Norwich.

Now the Commons sent two Knights, Sir William de Morley, and Sir Iohn Brewes with three of the Commons in whom they especially trusted, vnto the King at London, or els where, for to purchase of him a Charter of manumission and pardon, the which that it might be more speciall then other, they deliuered vnto the said messengers a great summe of money, which they had receiued of the Citizens of Norwich vnder pretext to saue their citie from burning and murder. The Knights with their companions, when they came to a Towne named Ignigham, not farre distant from Newmarket, they met with the Bishop of Norwich Sir Henry Spencer well armed, so as he was at his manor of Burley, nere to Wcham Castle, not farre from Stamford, he heard of the Norfolke men, and determined to goe against them, he had not at that time past an 8. speares, and a small number of archers, yet beholding the Knights, and some of the Commons, he commaunded them vpon their allegiance to tel him, if there were any of the Kings traytors. The Knights for feare of the Commons, dissembled to answer, the Bishop willed them boldly to goe to, and if there were any of the Kings traytors, to deliuer them to him: the Knights taking courage, answered that two of the chiefe stirrers among the whole company were present, and that the third was gone forth to prouide their dinner, & herewith they shewed the cause of their journey.

journey. The Bishop straightwayes commaunded these two to lose their heads, and the third he himselfe went to seeke, whose head also he caused to be cut off, & their heads were set vp at Newmarket. When the Bishop with the Knights hasted towards Norfolke, meaning to come to a place called South-walsham, where the Commons were determined to stay for the Kings answer.

In passing the countrey the Bishops number increased, for diuers Knights and many gentlemen of the countrey that lay hid for feare of the Commons, seeing the Bishop in armour, they ranne forth and toynd with him. The Bishop therfore when he came to the said place, hauing about him a fowely company, he found that the Commons had entrenched themselves after the manner of warre, and had set vpon the rampier of their trench, windowes, doores, tables, bordes, with pales for their defence: behind them, they had placed their carts, as if they meant not to flee, and forthwith the spartiall Bishop commaunded his trumpets to sound and taking a speare in his hand, set spurs to his horse, and is caried forth vpon them with such a courage, that with swift race he gafe the trench of them, and as he had bin a foming boze robe amongst his enemies where they were thickest, striking this man through, and felling that man downe, and ceased not till the company following hauing got the trench were ready to fight, those of the Bishops retinue therfore fought very sharply, and so likewise did the Commons, till at length the Commons fled, but the Bishop stopped them, knocking them downe, till the chiefe stirrers of the tumult being taken with their King Iohn Litstar, (so many as pleased him being saued alive) he got the full victorie. The Bishop brought the said John Litstar vnto Dyalwing, hanging, and beheading: and so the countrey was in peace.

The end of  
John Litstar.

Thus hauing shewed a few things which were done in Norfolke, I passe ouer to write of the rest done in that and other countries, but what they ment against the King, the confession of Iacke Scraw declareth, who was chiefe amongst them, next to Wat Tyler. This man being taken, when at London he should by iudgement giuen by the Spaior, lose his head; the Spaior spake openly to him thus. Iohn (quoth he) behold thy death is at hand without all doubt, and there is no way through which thou mayest hope to escape, wherefore for thy soules health, without making any lye, tell vs what you purposed amongst you to haue done, to what ende did you assemble the Commons: And when he had sayde a while as doubtful, what to say, deferring his answer, the Spaior added, Thou knowest surely, O Iohn, that the thing which I demaunde of thee, if thou doe it, the same shall rebounde to thy soules health, &c. He therfore animated with fayre promises, beganne as followeth.

Now saith he, It boteth not to lye, neither is it lawfull to vtter any vntruth, especially vnderstanding that my soule is to suffer more traytor formentes if I should so doe, and because I hope for two commodities by speaking the truth, first that these things that I shall speake may profite the common wealth: and secondly, after my death, I trust by your suffrages to be succored, according

Iacke Scraw  
his confession  
at the gallows  
to the Spaior  
and others.

Purpose of the  
Rebels.

according to your promises (which is to pray for me) I will speake faithfully without deceit.

Conspiracy of  
the rebels.

The same time (sayeth he) that we came to Blacke Heath, when we sent for the King, we purposed to haue murdered at the knights, Esquires and gentlemen that should haue come with him, and to haue ledde the King royally beset, by and downe, that with the sight of him, all men especially the common people might haue come vnto vs the more heldey, and when we had got together an innumerable multitude, we would haue sodainly put to death in euery Countrey, the Lords and masters of the common people, in whom might appeare to be either counsell or resistance against vs: and specially we would haue destroyed the knights of Saint Iohns, lastly we would haue killed the King himselfe, and all men that had been of any possession, Bishops, Monkes, Chanons, Parsons, to be briefe, we would haue dispatched: one by begging Friars should haue liued, that might haue sufficed for ministering the Sacraments in the whole Realme, for we should haue made Kings, War Tyler in Kent, and in euery other shire one. But because this our purpose was hindered by the Archbishop, we studied how to bring him shortly to his ende.

Against the same day that War Tyler was killed, we purposed that euening (because that the poore people of London seemed to fauour vs) to set fire in foure corners of the Citie, and so to haue burnt it, and to haue deuised the riches at our pleasures amongst vs. We added that these things they purposed to haue done, as God should helpe him at the end of his life.

After this confession made, he was beheaded, and his head set on London Bridge by War Tilers and many other.

Jacke Straw  
beheaded.

Principall  
Captaines.

The principall leaders of the Commons were War Tyler, the second John Strawe, the third John Kirkby, the fourth Allen Threder, the fifth Thomas Scott, the sixth Ralph Rugge: these and many others were leaders of the Kentish and Essex men. At Mildehall and Bury in Suffolke, was Robert Welbrom, that made himselfe King, and was most famous after John Wraw, who being a priest would not let crowne vpon eroline, but left the name of King and crowne to the said Robert. At Dorset which John Little a dier, exercised the name and power of a King, till he was taken and hanged for his paynes.

War Tyler being killed, Jacke Straw and other their principall Captaines hanged or beheaded, the hope and confidence of the Commons decayed, but because the minnes of the King and nobles was yet wauering, seeing the people ready to mischefe, they graunted to them Charters of manumission and suffered them to depart, the which being done, the King caused an army to be assembled from London, and sent into all Countreies that those who were his friends should make haste to come to him to London, furnished with horse and armour, and it came to passe that within thre daies he had a thousand horsemen about him in seemely fort armed, he mustred them on Blacke Heath, himselfe riding on a great courser, with his standard borne before him: when therefore so mighty an army was assembled, the King was advertised that the Kentish men had effronies conspired, whereupon he forthwith set forward, but

The King raised a great  
power, and  
went into Kent.

but by the mediation of the Nobles and great men of Kent that undertoke for them, he was stayde and pacified with them, and then first Iudices were sent to seeke and inquire of malefactours, and that Countrey became quiet at the sight of them. When the Priors of London sitting in Iudgement, caused the malefactours to be tried, as well of the Citie as also of Kent, Essex, North, Dorset, Suffolke, and Suffolke and other Countreies, that might be taken with in the liberties of the Citie, and all those whom he found guiltie of the fore-said treason, he caused to hoppe headlesse, among the which were Jacke Strawe, John Kirkby, Allen Threder, &c. also John Starling of Essex, that glozied to haue beheaded the Archbishop, was beheaded himselfe.

Prisoners of  
London caused  
malefactours of  
the Citie, of  
Kent, Essex,  
North, Dorset,  
Suffolke, & Suffolke  
that might be taken,  
to hoppe  
headlesse.

The king remained now at London, now at Waltham, with a great army of armed men, considering what was to be done for the commoditie of the Realme. At length the Counsell thought good to send the Kings commission into euery shire, for the resisting of the disquieters of the peace of the Kingdome. These commissions did much comfort the faithfull subiects, and troubled the false, for they were now compelled to seeke corners, that before took upon them to doe all things a brasse, & suppress now durst come forth of their dennes, and those which before fled from the tyrannie of the time, looked for those that now feared iudgement and iustice to be done on them.

The commons being thus feared, but not in all places alike, they of Essex gathering a new multitude together at Billerica, a village nere to Hatfield Generell, decreed either to enjoy liberty gotten by force, or to dye in fighting for the same, they sent to the King then being at Waltham messengers to knowe if hee thought good to permit them to enjoy their permitted libertie, like to their Lords, and that they should not be compelled to come to courts, but only to great Courts twice in the yeare, vnto the which the king answered thus. Oh miserable and hateful both to land and sea, not worthy to liue: doe ye require to be equall to your Lords? Ye were worthy to be put to most shameful death: but sith ye are come as messengers ye shall not die now, to the end ye may declare our answers to your fellowes: declare to them therefore on the Kings behalfe, that as they were husbandmen and bondmen, so shall they remaine in bondage, not as before, but more vile, without comparison farre, vnto this. Whilste we liue, and by Gods sufferance shall gouerne the Kingdome, with witte, strength and gods, we will endeavour our selues to keepe you vnder, so that the duty of your seruice, may be an example for posteritie, and that your matches both present, and that shall succede, may euer haue before their eyes, as it were in a glasse, your miserie, and to you matter to curie, and feare to commit the like. When the messengers were gone, there was sent straightwaies into Essex, Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and sir Thomas Percy brother to the earle of Northumberland, to repress the boldnesse of the said commons.

Commons of  
Essex gathered  
together at  
Billerica,  
sent messengers  
to the  
King.

Answer of the  
King to the  
Commons of  
Essex.

These commons had fortified themselves with ditches and carriages: nevertheless, although there was a great number of them, with small busshes they were scattered into the woods, where the Lords inclosed them, least any of them might escape: and it came to passe, that five hundred of the were slaine,

and eight hundred of their horses taken, the other that escaped this slaughter being gotten together, hasted to Colchester, and began to stir the townsmen to a new tumult, and when they posted not there, they went to Subbury, but the Lord Fitz Water and Sir John Harleston followed them, and slew as many of them as they list, and shut up the rest in prisons. The King came to his manor of Baiering at Bourc, and after to Chelmsford, where he appointed Sir Rob. Trishan his Justice to sit and enquire of the malefactours, wherefore the men seeing the cutis that hung over their heads, there came about five hundred humbly to the King barefooted and bareheaded, beseeching him of pardon and mercie. To whom pardon was granted, with condition, to deliuer the stirrers of the said trouble. It came therefore to passe, that many were committed to warde, upon whom, the Justice charged foure and twentie men of their conscience to say the truth, and many being condemned, were put to execution, by drawing and hanging, nine or tenne being hanged on one beame. The Justices that before had sit in Essex, Kent, London, and other places, for all the multitude that were to be executed, bled to head the Commons, till now it seemed not a kinde of death answerable to so many & manifest crimes. These things were done in Essex, the King being present: the like by his Justices was done in other countries.

The tenth of July John Ball priest being taken at Coventry, and brought to Saint Albons, was there before the King condemned, and had iudgement giuen him by Sir Robert Trishan knight almost skilful Justice, as a traitour to be drawne, hanged, headed and bowelled, whose death was respited untill the sponday at the intercession of William Bishop of London, who being careful for his soules health, obtained that space for his repentance. This man a twentie yeeres together and more, preached in diuers places those things which he knew to be liking to the common people, slaunders as well ecclesiasticall persons, as secular Lords, seeking thereby, rather the bencuolence of the common people, then merite towards God: he taught that tithes were not to be giuen to the church men, except the partie that should giue the same were richer then the Vicar or parson that should receiue it. Also that tithes and oblations were to be withdrawen from Curates: if the parishioners or parishoner were of better life then the Curate. Also that no man was made for the kingdome of God, that was not bozne in matrimony, he taught many other things too long to rehearse, for the which he was prohibited of the Bishops in whose diocesses he had attempted these things, that he should not preach from thenceforth in any Church: he went forth therefore into the streets and wayes, and into fields to preach, & there wanted not of the commons that came to heare him, whom he euer sought to allure to his sermons, by detraiding of the prelates. At the length being excommunicated, and yet not desisting, hee was committed to prison by Simon the Archbishop of Canterbury, and William Bishop of London, where he prophesied that he should be deliuered by twentie thousand of his friends, which came so to passe in the foresaid time of troubles, when all prisons were broken up, and the prisoners set at liberty, and when hee was so deliuered, hee followed them, instiga-

Robert Trishan Justice, sat at Chelmsford.

Sir John Ball taken and brought to Saint Albons.

Doctrine of John Ball by him taught.

ting them to committe much euill, and preaching that so it ought to be done. And that his doctrine might infect the more number of people, at Blackheath, where there were many thousands of the Commons assembled, he began his Sermon in this manner:

When Adam delue and Eue span, who was then a gentleman?

And continuing his beguine Sermon, he sought by the worde of that proverbe which he took for his theme, to introduce, and proue, that from the beginning, all were made a like by nature, and that bondage or seruitude was brought in by iniust oppression of naughty men, against the will of God: so if it had pleased God to haue made bondmen, he would haue appointed them from the beginning of the world, who should haue been slave, and who Lord. They ought to consider therefore, that now there was a time giuen them by God, in the which, laying asse the yoke of continuall bondage, they might, if they would, enjoy their long wished for libertie. Wherefore he admonished them, that they should be wise, and after the manner of a good husband that tilled his ground, and did cutte away all noysome weedes that were accustomed to growe and oppresse the fruite, they should make haste to doe now at this present the like. First, the Archbishop and great men of the kingdome were to be slaine: after, Lawyers, Justiciars, and Questioners: lastly, whomsoever they knewe to be like hereafter hurtfull to the Commons, they should dispatch out of the land, for so might they purchase safety to themselves hereafter, if the great men being once taken away, there were among them equall libertie, all one nobilitie and like dignitie, and semblable authoritie or power. These, and many such mad deuises he preached, which made the common people to esteeme of him in such manner, as they cryed out, he should be Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancelor of the Realme, for he onely deserved the honour. Moreover, he had sent to the borders of the Commons in Essex a Letter full of riddles or darke sentences, exhorting them to procede in their begun enterprises, which Letter was after found in the bonnet of one that should be hanged, the tenour whereof was thus:

John Shepe, sometime Saint Mary Wyest of Poike, and now of Colchester, greeteth well John Namelesse, and John Milner, and John Carrar, and biddeth them that they beware of Gillingbrough, and standeth together in Gods name, and biddeth Pierce Plowman goe to his worke, and chaffice well Hob the rober, and take with him John Trueman, and all his fellows, and no more, John the Miller hath yground small small, the Kings sonne of be, den shall pay for all, beware of ye be woe, know your friend from your foe, haue thy proung, and saith hee, and doe well and better, and fleeth sinne, and sa keth peace, and holde therein, and so biddeth John Trueman and all his fellows.

This letter John Ball confessed himselfe, that he had written and sent to the Commons: where, he confessed to William then Bishop of London, to Walter Lee knight, and John Peibor Notarie, that a certain company of his felis were confederate to go rounde about all England, and to preach these points which he had taught, naming I. W. N. A. L. B. masters of Artes. Whereupon he added, that except remedy were had, they within two yeeres space would destroy the

John Ball his Sermon.

Libell of John Ball.

Sir John Ball  
hanged.

whole Realme, and this confession, vnder a certaine forme was brought into a publike instrument. This Sir John Ball was hanged and headed at Saint Albons, on the 15. of July, the day being present, and his body being quartered, was sent to foure Cities of the Realme: some other Epistles of the said Ball haue I some, which also I thinke good (as afoze) here to insert.

Epistle of  
John Ball.

John Ball Saint-Mary priest, greeteth well all manner of men, and bideth them in name of the Trinite, Father Sonne, and holy Ghost, stand manlike together in truth, and helpe truth, and truth shall helpe you: now reigneth pride in pice, couetise is holden wise, lechery without shame, gluttonie without blame, enuie rageth with reason, and sloth is taken in great season, God do hate for now is time, Amen.

Jacke Miller.

Jacke Miller, asketh helpe to turne his Mill aright, he hath ground small, small, the kings son of beaues shall pay for all: looke thy Mill goe right with foure sailes, and the post stand in steadfastnes with right and might, with skill and will, let might helpe right, and skill before will, and right before might, then goeth our Mill aright: and if might goe before right, and will before skill, then is our Mill misdight.

Jacke, Truce  
man.

Jacke Trewman doeth you to vnderstand, that fallencesse and guile hath reigned too long: and truth hath been set vnder a locke, and fallencesse reigneth in every flocke: No man may come truth to, but he sing, *si dedero*: Speake, spend and spend, quoth John of Bathon, and therefore, Sinne catch as wilde flood, and loueis away that is so good, And clarkes for wealth wretched them wo, God doe boote, for now is time. I leaue out John Carters Epistle, a libell, so named, &c.

A great number of the commons being indited, and hauing iudgement, at Saint Albons sittene of them were hanged, and fourescore imprisoned, and afterward by pardon released, and on the twentieth day of July the king removed to Berkehamstede.

Truce with  
the Scots.

John Duke of Lancaster that a little before these troubles began, was gone southward to beat the day of truce or march, as þ manner was euerie yere, when he heard of the hurling of the commons, in the tyme that they had the upper hand ouer their Lords, he was maruellously amazed, and for calling what might follow, thought it best, with speeche to make peace with the Scots, which was done before those tumults came to the eares of the Scots, and by them confirmed by oth for two yeres truce, that they would faithfully keepe the same.

Will. Courtney  
Archbishop  
of Canterbury.

William Courtney sonne to Hugh Courtney, Earle of Devonshire, Dorset, of Wales, first Bishoppe of Hereforde, since Bishoppe of London, was now translated to the Archbishopricke of Canterbury on the ninth of September. And Robert Braybrooke succeeded in the Bishopricke of London.

Durham Col-  
ledge founded.

Thomas Hatfield Bishop of Durham deceased, he founded Durham Colledge in Wyke, he also builded Durham place, betwixt London and Westminster.

infirmitie. John Fordham Bishop of Elye was translated to the Bishopricke of Durham.

Parliament at  
London.

About the feast of All Saints, a Parliament was begun, which endured long, to small purpose, by reason of contention among the Lords, especially the Duke of Lancaster, and the Earle of Northumberland, whose quarrel in the end was taken up by the King, and then the Lords proceeded to treat of the Kings businesse and the Realmes, but they lingered so long in vaine, that when some effect was thought should haue succeeded, newes came of the coming to Calceys of the new Quene. The King had made his choice before to haue this woman, and had bought her with a great price and much labor, for he gave to the Emperour, 1. thousand pound, beside other great expences, to make this marriage. Although the daughter of Barnabe Duke of Millan was offered vnto him with an inestimable some of golde. This Quenes coming therefore being vnderstood, the Parliament was prorogued, to begin againe after Christmas. There were diuers of the Nobles sent to meete the Queene, and she was conueyed with all the gloze of the world vnto Douer, many both of her Countrey, and also of England, attending on her.

After the feast of the Epiphany, also the Nobilitie of the Realme assembled at London, to be present at the Kings marriage, and to do their seruice according to the custome of euery one in ancient time used. This Virgin named Anne, the daughter of Vclaus King of Boheme, is at Westminster consecrated the Kings wife, & by the Archbishop of Canterbury is crowned Quene. There were iustices kept for the honour of such a solemnization, certaine dayes together, in which, both the Englishmen shewed their force, and the Quenes countymen their prowesse.

1382.

The King  
married.

In this Quenes dayes, began the detestable vse of pliked shoes, tyed to their knes with chaines of silver and gilt. Also noblewomen used high attire on their heads, pliked like hornes, with long trained gownes, and rode on side saddles, after the example of the Quene who first brought that fashion into this land, for before, women were used to ride as ride like men. The solemnity of the marriage being ended, the parliament is now begun againe, in which, many articles are proposed and decreed, to wit, of admitting strangers to sell personally their wares, without impeachment of the merchants of England: of the abrogating of forres, and finer garnishing of girdles &c. of the price of wines, that is, that the tunne should not excede sixe markes, &c.

Pliked shoes,  
high heade,  
and long trained  
gownes, with  
women riding  
side first vices  
in England.

William the first Earle of Suffolk, in this Parliament, being elected by the knights of the shires, to pronounce on their behalfe þ businesse of the realme, the very day and houre in which he should haue executed the businesse he had taken in hand, as he was going by the stairs that ledde into the chamber where all the nobilitie of the realme late, he suddenly fell downe, and among his mens hands that were about to holde him, he pealed by the Ghost, although being very merry, and feeling no paine, a little before, as euen at that instant he had entred Westminster hall, of whose soaine death, not only all the nobles of the realme were greatly amazed, but all the meener sort, for in all his life tyme he had shewed himselfe amiable to all men.

William the  
first Earle of  
Suffolke dyed  
suddenly.

Custom: of  
woolles.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Sporting  
cast: of Parth  
deceased.

John Wrawe  
hanged.

Earthquake.

11th. Aurea.

Sir John  
Burghley, Sir  
Simon Burgh-  
ley, Sir Richard  
Burghley  
knights.

Great floods.

1582.  
Bishop of Pos-  
wich say. co. in-  
to Flanders  
with a great

## Richard the second.

472

After his death the parliament was ended, after the marchants of England had granted to the king a subsidy, and the customes of woolle for foure paires next ensuing, which the Commons called le Maltot.

In this Parliament, the Lords and Commons requesting it, Sir Richard Scrope knight was ordeined Chauncelor: as the man which in excellent knowledge & inflexible iustice, had not his like for his calling in this Realme. Sir Hugh Segraue knight was made Lord Treasorer.

Edward Mortimer Earle of March departed this life in Ireland, after he had brought that land all in manner vnto peace and quietnesse, hauing gouerned it most nobly and wisely.

About the feast of Saint John ante portlane, all the nobles of the Realme were called to London, and other that of custome were wont to be called, although the Lent before there had been an other parliament, as before we haue shewed, in which, by the petition of the knights of the shires, John Wrawe knight, that was leader of them that did rise at Guildenhal and Burp, was ad- iudged to hanging and drawing, though many believed that he would haue been redeemed with money.

The one and twentieth day of May was a great earthquake in England at nine of the clocke, fearing the hearts of many, but in Lent it was most terrible, where it suncke some Churches, and threwe them downe to the earth.

There followed also another Earthquake the xxiii. of May in the morning before the sunne rising, but not so terrible as the first. Sir Richard Scrope is depriued of the chancelorship, which he had gouerned laudably, and Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, is made Chancelor.

There arriued in a great tempest, a ship called a Caricke, at Sandwich, an huge beffell, and so fraught with riches, that she might haue furnished the want of all the land, if the enuie of the inhabitantes would haue permitted, but the marchants of London hauing much old wares, as fruits, spices, oiles, and such like, they compounded with the Genowayes to forsake that haue, and to passe ouer into Flanders, and so for the couetousnes of a few, the whole Realme suffered great hindrance.

King Richard gaue to Sir Simon Burghley his chamberlaine the keeping of his foirest of Wolmore in Southamptonsheire, for tearme of his life: he also gaue to John Burghley, Simon Burghley, Richard Burghley, knights, and Bawd- wine de Radington Esquire, all the manour of Warroke nigh to Cran- end.

About the Feast of Saint Thomas the Apostle, great raynes and inunda- tions of waters chaunced, so that the water rose foure times more in height then before, drowning by Villages and Cattails, destroying Bridges and Milles.

About the moneth of May, the Bishop of Poswich sayled ouer the seas into Flanders with a great power, where he waime the Dolunes of Graueling, Bugh, Dunckerke, & Newport.

Whilist these things are thus doing in Flanders, the king of England and

## Richard the second.

473

and his Quene, with their Bohemians, visited the Abbeyes of this realme, to the which, their coming was very chargeable, for they came with an ex- cessiue number, all which came to take, but not to giue.

The Scots taking occasion of the time, for that a great number were gone ouer with the Bishop of Poswich, entred into Northumberland, & did much hurt to the inhabitants, taking prizes in euery place, and leading away the people prisoners, and carrying them into Scotland: they take the Castell of Marke upon the riuier of Tweed, and bent it.

About the feast of All-Saintes, a Parliament was holden at London, in which, the halfe of a fifteene was granted vnto the king by the Laytie, and shortly after the halfe of a tenth by the Clergy, a portion of which money, the Lords of the North demaunded, because in this Parliament they were ap- pointed to defend those parts against the irruptions of Scots, to whom an- swere was made by sir William Wakeham Bishop of Winchester, that they were made for that cause, of poore men, rich men and Lordes, that they might the more frankly keepe the Scots, and that the king and Lords of the south parts should be the lesse troubled. And because the Scots came not to this Parliament, according to covenant, and beside that did displeasures vnto the inhabitants of the south parts, it was decreed by this Parliament, that vnto faith-breakers, faith should be broken againe, and that a chosen power should be sent thither, forth of England, vnder the leading of Thomas of Woodstocke, to wit, a thousand lances, and two thousand archers, to restraine their attempts.

These things being knowne, the Scots being afraid of themselves, in the ende of the Parliament came, and were desirous to intreat of peace or truce, but the Englishmen hauing treped their falshood so oftentimes, would neither treat, nor compound with them, but commaunded them to returne home, and warned them to saue their heads as well as they might, and to defend their rights. The Scots being returned, the Lords of the North toke vpon them to defend the Countrey, till Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham were ready to come with a greater power.

In this Parliament the king toke the temporalties of the Bishop of Pos- wich into his hands, because he was disobedient to his commaundement when he sent to haue stayed him from his tourney into Flanders, and the knights that went ouer with him were put in prison, till they were redeemed with gold.

King Richard held his Christmas at his Manor of Eltham, and with him his Quene Anne.

After Christmas, John Duke of Lancaster, which before Christmas went ouer into France to treat of peace betwixt the Realmes, returned into England, bringing with him an abstinence of warre till the feast of St. John Baptist, at what time he was to returne to treat againe, and to confirme the peace if it might be agreed vpon betwixt the kings.

The night of the Purification of our Lady, great lightnings and thunder happened, that put men in great feare: and shortly after John Northampton, other wise

power, wan  
Grau-ling,  
Bugh,  
Dunckerke,  
Newport.  
An. reg. 7.  
The Scots  
entred Nor-  
thumberland.

Parliament at  
London.

Thomas of  
Woodstocke  
sent against  
the Scots.

Temporalties  
of the Bishop  
of Poswich  
seised.

1384.

Truce with  
the French.

Lightning and  
thunder.  
John Northam-  
pton alias Com-  
bertowne.

other wise called Combartowne, that had ben the p̄ere before sp̄aioz of London, that with his seditions had filled the Citie full of comber, attempted new troubles, soz in contempt of the sp̄aioz that was elected soz that p̄ere, sir Nicholas Brembar, knight, he went vp and do wne with a multitude of seditions people to guard him, not once, but oftentimes, to the terrour of many. And when the said Brembar sp̄aioz would haue withstāded his attempts, the fauourers of the said John Combetowne were turned into such a fury, that a coler sewer o: thomaier, toke vpon him as it were to be sp̄aioz, and requiered the bayes of the communalte: soz which cause, by the counsaile of sir Robert Knowles knight, he was drawne out of his house, and committed to prison as a firer of insurrection, which ad soz that time stayde the commotion of the Commons, that were said to haue conspired to haue murdered the elect sp̄aioz, and many other worthy men.

John Duke of  
Lancaster  
burnt toward  
Scotland.

When Lent approached, John Duke of Lancaster, with his brother Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, and an innumerable number of knights, Esquires, and Archers, went toward Scotland, but staid in the North untill all the victualles in the Countrey were consumed: he did moze hurt to the inhabitants, then the Scots had done before. At length, about the feast of Easter, he entred Scotland, but did little good.

John Wickliffe  
died.

This p̄ere master John Wickliffe, sometime student in Canterbury Colledge in the Uniuersitie of Oxfozd, parson of Lutterworth in Leicestershire, hauing bene torred with a palsey by the space of two yeres, died, on the last of December, and was buried at Lutterworth. This man whyles he liued, as also long after his death, was greatly fauoured by the students of that Uniuersity, as may appeare by letters testimonial, made moze then twenty yeres after his decease, as follo weth.

Letters testi-  
moniall of the  
Uniuerſitie of  
Oxfozd of the  
life of John  
Wickliffe.

To all children of our holy mother the Church, vnto whom these presents shall come, the Chancelloz, and company of masters of the Uniuersity of Oxfozd, sendeth greeting in our Lord everlasting. For as much as it is not decent to ouerpasse with continual silence, the acts of the balliant, noz the laudes and merits of the god, but that the same should be manifested to the world by true fame for a witness of it selfe, and example of others, soz that also the p̄o: uident discretion of humane nature, weeping mans cruelty, hath ordained this manner of remembrance, and this buckler of defence, against the blasphemous insulting of others, that when a testimonny by word cannot allwaies be ready, a penne to write may supply: thereon it cometh to passe, that we hauing conceived a spectall god minde, and tender care ouer the childre sometime of our Uniuersitie, John Wickliffe professor of holy theologie, according to the deserts of his manners, do testifie with heart, word, and writing, that his condicions, whyle he liued, were commendable, whose honestie of manners, p̄o: funditie of iudgement, and pleasantnes of flourishing fame, we couet so much the moze to bring to the knowledge of faithfull people, as the perfection of his conuersation, and his diligence of his writings might be the moze evidently knowen to tend to Gods gloz, the weale of his neighbour, and profit of the Church, wherfore we publish vnto you by these presents, that his connecti-  
tion

tion from his tender yeres continued, till the tyme of his decease, hath bin here right god and honest, so as there was neuer any motion o: note of sinister suspicion o: infamie cast abroad of him, but in answering, reading, preaching, and soluting, hath behaued himselfe p̄aile worthily, like a stout Champion of the faith, vanquished by sentences of Scripture, like a Catholike man all those blasphemers of Christs religion by their wilful beggerie. And therfore was not the foresaid Dotoz condemned of heretike prauitie, o: yet by our Prelates to be burnt after his burial. God defend therfore that our Prelates should haue condemned to god a man for an heretike, which in Logike, Philosophy, in Theologie, in Moralities, and Speculatiues among all that hath written, (as we thinke) in our Uniuersitie, without p̄ere. All which things we desire to bring to the knowledge of all and singular persons vnto whose hands these presents may come, to the intent that the said Dotozs fame may the oftner be had in remembrance. In witness whereof, we haue caused these our letters testimoniall to be sealed with our common seale.

Given at Oxford in our congregation house the fift day of the moneth of October. Anno. 1406.

All this notwithstanding afterward (being excommunicated by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury) his bones, by a Dotoz of Diuinitie of Oxfozd, named Richard Fleming Bishoppe of Lincoln, were taken vp and burnt, and the ashes thzowen into the next water nere vnto Lutterworth. 41. yeres after his decease in Anno 1425. by commaundement of Pope Martine the fift. Thus much for Wickliffe.

The custody of the castle of Dover being void by the death of Robert Ash-ton was then appointed to Simon Burley, who was made Constable there.

After the quindene of Easter the nobles came together to a Parliament at Salisbury, whither a certain Irish frier of the order of Carmelites, a batcheler of Diuinity named John Latimer, halsted in an euill houre, soz he had written a certain scedul in the which was contained many horrible practices devised (as he said) by the duke of Lancaster, soz it was in that scedul expressed, that the said duke had determined sodainly to oppresse the 3. and to take vpon him the kingdom, there was assigned the tyme, place, & other circumstances y might make euident p̄o:se of the thing. The frier obtaining access vnto the 3. p̄sence, toke y scedule to his own hands, swearing by the sacrament of the body and blood of Christ, which that day he had receiued, that al witten in that scedule was true. The duke therfore being called to the 3. and hauing the scedul deliuered into his hands, desired the 3. that the frier might be put in safe keeping, till the day y he should shew the cause of those things which he had proposed against him, & besought the 3. that sir lo. Holland might haue special charge of him. The 3. lo. Holland, was the 3. brother by his mother, the sonne of the 3. Tho. Holland, who gladly for the loue of his brother the duke did willingly accept the frier into his custody. The night before the day giuen to the frier to make his answere, lo. Holland & another knight, called sir Henry Greene taking the frier, put a cord about his necke, (some say about his armes) & with the same cord tying his cōde, hanged him vp from the ground, laying a stone o: weight.

Simon Bur-  
ley Constable  
of Dover.  
Parliament at  
Salisbury.  
John Duke of  
Lancaster ac-  
cused.

A frier to-  
mentured is  
death.

weight of lead upon his belly of such weight, that it might both torment him by fretting him, as also stop his breath, and brake his back bone, also a great fire was made vnder the soles of his feet, that might end his life, not with one kind, but with diuers kinds of torments, with violence wherof, the frier being overcome, died, but would neuer reuoke what he had said. The morow after, they caused the friers body to be drawne through the towne as a traitor, that they might put away all suspicion, that he were put to death wrongfully: but it is to be wounded at, that neither Esquier, Peman, nor Cromme, or any other of mean estate, would harme the frier, but the knights did it themselves, they were Judges, Officers, and executioners, and this was the fruite of this Parliament, except that the king asked and had of the Lattie halfe a fiftenth, and of the Cleargie halfe a tenth.

Traytors of  
the Scots.  
Adm. reg. 8.

About this time, because the Scots sealed not to do diuers damages to the Northumbres, the Earle of Northumberland Henry Percy, prepareth to invade Scotland, and to requite damage for damage, which enterprise accomplished, the Earle was no sooner returned, and sent home his army, but that the Scottes came againe, and heaped vp damage vpon damage in the countrey.

Sir John  
Philpot decea-  
sed.

John Duke of  
Lancaster go-  
eth into France.

This Sommer, sir John Philpot a most faithfull knight, and noble Citizen of London, that had a long time travelled for the commodity of the Realme more then all other, and both with experiences laid forth, & good affection borne, (for he had oftentimes relieved the king) departed this life, leaving none behind him: his like in good affections.

About the beginning of August, the Duke of Lancaster went into France to treat with the Frenchmen of peace, or els of truce to be had: the Duke with his company of noble men remaining long there, when it was thought that he should haue brought glad and joyfull newes to his Countrey, he returned with knowledge of warres, to follow to the beginning of the next Sommer, the truce to endure but till the first of May, and so he returned, after he had spent 500000. Markes of silver.

John North-  
hampton con-  
uict, and com-  
mitted to per-  
petuall prison.

Many of the Nobles assembled at Reading, to repress the seditious stirres of John Northampton, late Mayor of London, that attempted great and heinous enterprises, of the which he was conuict, his own chaplein offering many things that he went about and had deuised, as well to the hindrance and harme of the king, as of the Citie of London, and when sentence should haue bene pronounced against him, the king being present, the wicked man made a reclamation, and maintained that such iudgement ought not to passe in absence of his Lord the Duke of Lancaster, but yet the iustice vied such wordes, John (saith he) the naughty deeds that are objected against thee, thou oughtest to reuell by battell, or else by the lawes of the land to be drawne, hanged, and quartered. And when he had made, nor would offer one word, it was decreed that he should be committed to perpetuall prison, and his goods to be confiscate to the kings use, and that he should not come within one hundred miles of London during his life, he was sent therefore to the Castle of Flintagell in the confines of Cornwall, and in the meane space the kings servants spoiled

spoiled his goods. John More, Richard Northbery, & other, were like wise there conuict, and condemned to perpetuall prison, and their goods confiscate to the king, for certain congregations by them made against the fish-mongers in the Citie of London.

Parliament  
at London.

About the feast of St. Martine, a Parliament was holden at London in the which nothing was done worth y memoie, but that which stil was in hand, and exacting of money of the Cleargie and common people, to maintaine the men of warre. And besides this, about the feast of Saint Andrew there was a combat fought in listes at Westminster, betwixt an Esquier of England named John Vvelch of Strimelby, & one of France, called Mortleto de Vilenos, that had accused the English Esquier, of treason to the king and Realme, but the effect was, that when he was Captaine of Cherburgh, he forced the wife of this Navarroys, as the said Navarroys being after ward ouercome, and being ready to suffer death, did openly confesse, for the which cause, by the kings iudgement, he was drawen & hanged, although the Quene and many other did make earnest intercession to haue his life saved.

A combat  
tough.

The Parliament was not yet ended, when newes came out of the North of the taking of Berwicke Castell by the Scots, the custodie wherof, the Earle of Northumberland, sir Henry Percy did possesse, by right of his predecessors. The Scots by mediation of money, got entrance into that castell, by one that was put in trust with keeping of it. The Duke of Lancaster that loued not the Earle, was glad of this happe, when he knew it. It came to passe therfore by the Dukes procurement, that the Earle was condemned by iudgement of the Lords there present, the which execution was within a short while after released. The Earle of Northumberland, though the kings fauour restorred to his life and possessions, without any long delates, prepareth al furniture of warre to besiege and win the said Castell of them that were within it, and after he had gathered a mighty army, he suddenly besieged it, and after he had layne about it a certaine time, it was compounded betwixt them without, and them within, that they within should forsake the Castell, and haue their liues and monieable goods, and for surrendering the Castell, they should haue of the Earle two thousand markes of English money, and by this meanes did the Earle recover the Castell forth of the Scottishmens hands. King Richard kept a solemn feast of Christmas at Eltham with Quene Anne his wife, whom he seldom suffered to go from his side, there were at that feast the Bohemians, the Quenes countrymen, that hauing once tasted the sweetnesse of this land, forgetting their owne countrey like vnsheamefast guests, would not go home againe.

Berwicke lost  
and womne  
againe.

1385.

Though certaine young men brought vp with the king, there arose great dissension betwixt him and the Duke of Lancaster, who departed from the Court, and went to his Castell of Pomfret, which he had fortified, but by means of the kings mother, this discord was appeased for a time.

The Walling.

The same time the coniunction of two of the greatest planets chaunced, to wit, of Iupiter and Saturne, in the moneth of May, after the which a great mutation of kingdomes followed.

The



The third of May was an earthquake.

The king entered Scotland.

King Richard with a great armie entred Scotland, but the enemies would not shew themselves, wherefore he burnt the Countrey and returned. The eighteenth of July there was an Earthquake. Sir Iohn de Viennne that serued the French king was sent into Scotland with a great multitude of ships and men of warre, that toyning with the Scots, they might infect all England, and that whilest they might draw the power of this Realme that way forth, the French king, with his Pary and armie, might the more at liberty enter other parts of the Realme, few or none being left at home to prohibite them their entrie. The arrivall of the said Iohn being knowne in England, the king with all the Nobilitie prepared themselves to make a journey thither: there came flocking unto the king such a number of knights, Esquiers, and Archers, as the like had not bene heard of in those daies, in so much, as the number of horses amounted to three hundred thousand, as they were lodged, were large the king rejoyced hereat, as well he might, but the rejoycing was shortly darkened at Poyke, by fiercenesse of Sir Iohn Holland, the kings brother, that slew the Lord Ralph Stafford, sonne to the Earle of Stafford, in the way as he went to the Queene, whose servant of household he was, and greatly insansur with her, and he was no lesse beloued of the king, as he that had bene brought up with him, and bene his playfellow from his tender age, where the king taking great indignation, determined to pursue the said Sir Iohn Holland: hee caused therefore his goods to be confiscate. But Sir Iohn Holland fled to Beverley, to enjoy the libertie of the Church. The Lady Iane the kings mother, sent to intreate him for her other sonne, and his brother, but when the messengers were returned to Wallingfoerde, and that the mother could perceiue no hope of grace to be gotten in that behalfe of the king, she toke it heavily, and fell sicke, and within foure or five daies departed this life, her boole being seized and closed in Lead, was kept at Wallingfoerde, till the kings returne forth of Scotland, then to be buried at Stanfords, in the Church of the Friers Spinozas.

Lady Iane the kings mother died, buried at Stanfords.

Edwards and Denbrough went.

In the moneth of August, the King of England with a mightie power entred Scotland, with whole force the Scots and Frenchmen perceiuing themselves not able to match, they like to get them into the woods and places where they might be out of the way. The English armie, then the which there hath not bene scene alaise, stronger, or greater, rideth through the Countrey, that was destitute of inhabitants, both of Castell, and wanting victuals, for the land was left desolate (as our men confessed) that they sawe not so much as a bird, dwles onely excepted. They found green coine on the ground, very faire and plentifull, which they eyther cate up with their horses, or tread downe with their feete, but the enemies seeing battell, our men did nothing to be accounted of, but burnt the Abbey of Melrois, and the towne of Denbrough, with such houses as they found by the way. When our armie was come to Denbrough, and that victuals failed them, many of them began to waile sicke, & some to die for hunger: whereupon the king returned

ned with his armie into England. While king Richard was in Scotland, the Scots and Frenchmen entred into England, burning Townes, taking spoiles, and leading away many prisoners, returned home into their Countrey.

The Scots spoyle in England.

The souldiers of Calais went secretly forth into France, and got a battell of foure thousand shepe, and three hundred head of great beasts, which they draw to their holdes.

About the feast of Saint Martine, there was a Parliament at London, in which, the Laptie granted to the king a fifthenth and a halfe, with a condition, that the Cleargie should giue a tenth and a halfe. William Courney, Archbishop of Canterbury standing there against, said, the Church ought to be free, and in no wise to be taxed by the laptie, yea, hee would rather put his head in daunger for this cause, then to suffer the English Church to be brought into such servitude: which answer was so much moved the knights and Commons of the thires, with some of the Nobles of the Realme, that they in great rage, made request, that the temporalities might be taken from the Cleargie, and Church-men, saying, that the Church-men were growne to such pride, that it was a darde of charitie, and almes by taking away their temporalities, to compell them to be more make and humble: this they cried out for, this they presented in writing to the King, and such was their labour in this point, that they were in hope to bring it to passe. Here mooght you have seene the knights pleasant and merry, talking of these things, even as the temporalities of the Church had bene assigned to their abusing, this man promising himselfe thus much of that Monasterie, that man of an other, I heard my selfe (saith Thomas Walsingham) one of the knights deeply sweare, that of the Abbey of Saint Albones, hee would have a thousand markes by yere of the temporalities: But to such a mad wish the King consented not, for bearing the inordinate crying out of the one side, and the ill answeres on the other, hee commaunded that bill to be cancelled, and such inordinate petitions to cease, saying that hee would preserve the Church during his time, in as good state as hee found it, or better: with the which answeres, hee so liked the Church-men, that hee was thought worthy of great recompence, and of good paye men also this answeres was much commended. The Archbishoppe therefore, having made the Cleargie paise, went to the King, and declared that hee and his Cleargie of their whole consentes and free willes had pouldred for his life a Lenth, which graunt the King so gladly heard, and thankfully received, that hee openly affirmed, hee had rather have this free graunt, then any other foure times double the value, that was to be contrapned; and so for that time the insatiable covetousnesse of the enemies, to catch other mens goodes, was made frustrate.

Will put against the Cleargie for their temporalities.

The eleuenth of November, Robert Vere, Earle of Orfords, was made Marquess of Dublin in Ireland, and the king gave him lands to the value of a thousand markes by yere, that belonged the Lord Audley; he also made him



Michael de la  
Pole Chance-  
lor, made  
Earle of Suff-  
olke.

Lib. Per. Col.

1386.

The king of  
Ermony came  
into England.

John Duke of  
Lancaster  
King of Spain

Henry Percy  
went to Ca-  
leis.

Lord Justice of Chester, he gave to him the Castell of Flint in Wales, and also he gave to him 1. of Britons sonne and heire to Charles de Bloys a prisoner, for whom he had 20000. pounds. Th. of Woodstocke was made D. of Gloucester, and his brother Edmond Earle of Cambridge, Duke of York. Michael de la Pole Chancellor of England, was made Earle of Suffolk, and had given him by the king a thousand markes by the year. In the Parliament the Earle of March Mortimer, was proclaimed heire apparent to the Crowne, which Earle was shortly after slain in Ireland by the wilde Irish. Also, king Richard at the earnest request of the Bishops, restored to the Bishop of Exeter, which his temporalities which he had holden from him many years. B. Richard with Quene Anne his wife, kept their Christmas at Eltham, whither came to him Lion king of Ermony, under pretence to restore peace betwixt the kings of England and of Fraunce, but what his comming profited, hee only understood, for beside innumerable giftes that hee received of the king & of the nobles, the king lying in the Royal at the Quenes wardrop in London, granted to him a Charter of a thousand pounds by year during his life. Hee was (as hee affirmed) chased out of his Realme by the Tartarians, and for that cause he got great giftes of the Christian Princes. About the feast of Easter, John Duke of Lancaster, with the Lady Constance his wife and a great company of knights, Esquiers, and Archers came to take their leave of the king and Quene, at whose departing the king gave to the Duke a crowne of gold, and the Quene gave another like crowne of golde to the Dutches, moreover the king commanded his people to call them King and Quene of Spayne, and give them kingly honour. And shortly after the Duke preparerth to go into Spayne, which was due to him by the inheritable right of his wife the Lady Constance, daughter sometime to Peter king of Castile and Lion, so that now he meant to challenge it either with consent of the inhabitantes, or by law of Armes. Hee with a great power toke the seas at Plymouth, and landed in Spayne, at the Haven of Grogne, on the evening of St. Laurence, with all his familie in safety.

Hee had with him twentie thousand chosen people, of whom was 2000. armed men, and 8000. Archers. Hee appointed for Admirall of his whole fleet, Th. Percy, sir John Holland brother to king Richard by the mothers side after created Earle of Huntingdon, and had married one of the Dukes daughters, was appointed Constable of the hoste, sir Richard Burghley marshall, and after him sir Th. le Moleneux was marshall, sir John Marmion Chamberlaine, &c.

This year rumours were raised of the French kings purpose to besiege Calais, many valiant men therefore went out of England to resist his force, among whom was sir Henry Percy, a young Gentleman, in whom the promise of all prowesse and chivalry did shine, which after hee had stayed about Calais idly taking indignation, declared that hee hated such idleness, and before this, whilest he was Captaine of Berwick, hee compelled the unquiet Scots to be quiet, for which cause they called him Henry Hotspur: this Henry assembling his companions, maketh invasion upon them about Turwine,

Turwine, and also where in Picardie, taketh prizes, exercising laudable fates, and when he understood that the French king meant not to besiege Calais, but rather to invade England, he returns home, that he might here encounter him.

The Londoners understanding that the French king had got together a great power, assembled an armie, and set his purpose firmly to come into England, they trembling like Leversets, fearful as mice, like starting hoes to hide themselves in, even as if the Citie were now to be taken, and they that in times past bragged they would blowe all the Frenchmen out of England, hearing now a vaine rumour of the enemies comming, they runne to the walles, breake downe the houses adorning, destroy and lay them flat, and do all things in great feare, not one Frenchman yet hauling set foot on shipbord, what would they have done, if the battell had bene at hand, and the weapons over their heads:

About the feast of St. Michael the nobles came to the Parliament at London with great numbers of armed men, to the end they might be ready to withstand the Frenchmen, who were supposed to be comming. Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellor of England, caused to be called almost forth of every part of the Realme men of armes and archers unto the marches about London, that being ready they might beate backe the Frenchmen with their king, if they had come. Rochester bridge was beaten downe by the Londoners, to be the more surer. But being wearied with long waiting they were at the length sent home againe, with great misery for want of money to buy them victuals.

In this Parliament John Fordham Bishop of Durham was discharged of the Treasurership, and in his place was set John Gilbert a frier preacher, Bishop of Hereford. Also Michael de la Pole was put from his Chancellorship, and in his place was set Thomas Arundale Bishop of Ely, by consent of the whole Parliament. This being done, Michael de la Pole was charged with many crimes, & committed to prison in Windsor Castell, from whence hee was some delivred by the king: all the possessions of de la Pole purchased whilest he was Chancellor, to the very value of 1000. pounds, were for ever by judgement of the parliament, confiscate to the kings coffers, & further to restore to the king to the value of 12000. pounds which hee had gained by lingeering his affairs, as they said. They chose also 13. Lords which should have the oversight under the k. of the whole realm. Of which thre were the new officers, to wit the B. of Ely Chancellor, the Bishop of Hereford Treasurer, and sir John Walsham keeper of the priup seale, and 10. other which were, VVilliam Archbishop of Canterbury, Alexander Archbishop of York. Edm. Langley D. of York, Thomas of Woodstocke, Duke of Gloucester, VVilliam VVickham, Bishop of Winchester, Thomas Bishop of Exeter, Nicholas Abbot of Waltham, Richard Earle of Arundell, John Lord Cobham, sir Richard Scrope, and sir I. Courc knights, to these they gave full power to determine causes, from the time of king Edward the third, until that present, as well within the Realme, as without, &c. They granted to the king a tenth of the Cleargie.

An. reg. 10.  
The London-  
ners in great  
feare without  
a cause.

Rochester  
bridge bea-  
ten downe.

13. governors  
of the Realme.

and a fifthenth of the Laptie: they granted him 2 s. of every Tonne of Wine coming into the Realme, and of every pound of merchandise going out: counting in 12. d. wool, leather, and sell, excepted.

The French king in the meane time, staid in Flanders, ready to spoyle the Realme of England, if God had not stopped his purpose: from the first of August, till the Euen of All-Saints, there neuer blew wind for his passage, but onely for a fewe houres of that vntre Euen, the wind rising, they loosed anchor, hopped by sailes, and set forth of the haven, but when all the ships were on the sea 20. miles from the haven, the winde came contrary, & drove them backe, that diuers of their vessels entering the haven of Sluce were broken, by which occasion England was deliuered out of daunger, and the French king returned home. The number of his ships in that Haue were reckoned 1200. Froisart saith, the ships were 1287. he had there with him of Dukes, 16. of Carles, 2.6. of knights, 3600. and of fighting men, 100000. R. Richard with his wife Quene Anne and the Bohemians as he had bene accustomed, kept his Christmas very solemnly at Westminster.

After Christmas, William Beauchampe toke 14. ships of the French king, going toward Sluce, whereof one was laden for the most part with hozes, and an other with toches of ware, and such other necessities, which the French king had prepared for his entrance into England.

In the beginning of this yere, at Leicester an hundred quarters of Warley, were sold for an hundred shillings.

About the beginning of March, according to the detraie of the late Parliament, Richard Earle of Arundell, Admirall of the fleet adioyning unto him, the E. of Devonshire, & Thomas Mowbray E. of Nottingham, went to the sea in a happy houre, for within a small time they met with their enemies on the Wigill of our Lady the Annunciation: a great Haue of Flanders, France, and Spayne, fraught with men of warre, and diuers engins, was discovered: with whom the Carles encountered, & toke of them 100. ships and more, the which contained 210. tunns of wine, which they brought to diuers parts of England, where by wine was then sold for thirteen shillings foure pence the tunne.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland forsoke his wife, a young Lady noble and faire, bozne of the Lady Isabell, daughter to the noble R. Edward, & married an other that came with Quene Anne forth of Boheme: she was called in the vulgar tongue of her countrey Lancercroa, The Lozpes toke indignation herewith, especially the Duke of Gloucester, vncle to the pong Lady that was forsaken. The Duke of Ireland studied how to take the Duke of Gloucester out of the way, Caster was now past, the time in which the Duke of Ireland should haue transpozted into Ireland, but least there should be too much stur in the Realme among the Lozds, the king as it were to bring him to the water side, goeth with him into Wales, as not to leaue him, but there to keepe him, that they might deuise how to take away the D. of Gloucester, the Carles of Arundell, Marlowe, Darby, and Nottingham, with other. There were with them the Earle of Suffolk, Michael de Pole, Robert Trislian Justice, and many other, which no more slowly then the D. of Ireland, conspired the death

The French  
kings com-  
ming into  
England him-  
dred.

1387.

Barley sold  
for xii. d. the  
quart.

Richard wine  
taken.

of the said noble men. After a great time was passed, the king, as if the Duke of Irelands tourney had bene forgotten, returned with him and the other forth of Wales, to the Castell of Nottingham, there to treat of the death of the said noble men: there therfore he sent for diuers from London, whom he knew would be ready to which way soeuer they should be moved: he called thither also al p. sheriffs & Justices of the realme, & there interdicted the Lozds of many crimes which the king had imagined against them. In the mean time the rumour of this doing came to the Lozds eares, whereupon first of all the kings vncle, the Duke of Gloucester, that he might mitigate the kings displeasure, before the Bishop of London, and many other nobles, swearing upon the Euangelists, toke it upon his oath, that he neuer had imagined any thing to the kings hinderance, or done any thing to his displeasure, except that he had not giuen god countenance to the Duke of Ireland, nor would hereafter giue him any, who had dishonestly his kind woman, the which he firmly had determined to reuenge.

The Duke of Gloucester calling together secretly the Carles of Arundell, Marlowe, and Darby, that were in like danger of condemnation, if they proued not the more speedily, he discovered to them the matter: they therfore gathered their armies together, determine to talke with the king upon the premises. Contrarily the king for his party did deliberate how he might take each of them by themselves out of the way, and first he sent to the Castell of Wigate, where the Earle of Arundell lay, the Earle of Northumberland with many other to arrest him, who perceiving a great number of men of warre about him, fearing to doe that he was commaunded, departed without doing his errand for which he came. After whom, there were sent many that by night should haue taken him, or haue slaine him, but a messenger sent from the Duke of Gloucester, prevented their coming, that caused him to ride all night, so that in the morning he was come to Haringey, hauing passed with his army thirtie miles, not without great trauaile, where he found assembled the Duke of Gloucester & the Earle of Marlowe, with a great power of men. The king being enformed of this assembly in Harnesey woode, as is said, demanded of his familiars what was to be done in this case, but in the ende, by the mediation of them that came betwixt them, the matter was brought to this issue, that the Lozds should come to Westminster to receive and were before the king of those things, the bishop of Ely, with many other men of worth, credite, taking an oath for the kings part, that no fraud, deceit, or perill, should be prepared. When the Lozds had prepared themselves according to the covenant, the foresaid mediators for peace sent them word, that treason was deuised by an ambush laid for them, in a place called the Spewes, nere to Charing Crosse, and therfore willed them not to come, but with sure hand, whereupon they staid there: and the king demanding why the Lozds kept not covenant, the Bishop of Ely answered, because (alth he) there is an ambush laid of a thousand armed men or more, in such a place, contrary to the covenant, and therefore they neither come, nor repute you to be faithfull: the king moved forthwith, where he knew of no such thing, and therefore com-

Annot. 11.

maunded the sheriffes of London, that going to the spewes, they should kill, if they found any assembled there for that cause; but Thomas Triuer, and Nicholas Brembar knights, had secretly sent away the armed men to London: the king therfore sent again to the Lordes, who straightwaies came to Westminster with a strong power, against whose coming, the king adorning him selfe with kingly robes, with crowne and scepter, entred Westminster hall, where the Bishop of Ely Lord Chancellor, speaking for the king, demanded the cause of their assembling of such a power, wherunto the Lordes answered, that it was done for the kings profit, and the realmes, to plucke from him the traitors which he kept about him, whom they named to be Robert de Vere D. of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Archbishop of Dorke, Michaell at Pole Earle of Suffolke, Robert Trisilian a false Justice, Nicholas Brembar a false knight of London, and thereupon they threw downe their gloves, swearing that they would prosecute it by battell: nay, saith the king, it shall not be so, but in the next parliament which was appointed to be holden the morrow after the purification of our Ladie, all this was pacified for that time.

Strange like  
mell of fire.  
Henry of Leicester.

A manner of exhalation in likeness of fire, appeared in the night in many places of England, which went with men as they went, and stayed as they did, sometime like a whele, sometime like a barrell, sometime like a timber-logge, but when many went together, it appeared to be farre off.

Battell at  
Rabot bridge

The Lordes departing from the king not withstanding kept together, which seemed great wisdom in them, for the Duke of Ireland in the parts of Chester & Wales, had assembled a great number, whose Captain was the Constable of Chester, Thomas Molencux, a man of great wealth, and hardy. The Duke of Ireland with such a multitude hasted towards London, that joining with the Londoners, he might make them both as it were an invincible army. But the Duke of Ireland riding forth in state and glorious array with the army of 5000 men, thinking none durst haue encountered him: peruerthelike in the vigill of S. Thomas the Apostle, when he came to Radcote bridge in Dorsetshire nere unto Farendon upon Thames, not past foure miles from Chepyng Boston, which bridge, if he could haue passed, he had bene out of danger, so dauntly, as he looked on the one side, he beheld where the host of the Lordes was ready not farre from them farrpling his coming, in the midst of the valley, with which sight his heart straightwaies failed: and he said, sient s I must fly, for a greater puissance seemeth to be ponder against you they haue no quarrell, so that I being misted away, ye shall escape wel enough, and forth with setting spurs to his horse, he fleeth away. Where was then the foresaid Thomas Molencux that prepared himselfe to the battell, for the Lordes were not yet all come to that place, who when he had sought a while, being wearied, entred the river which was there by. Among other, Sir Thomas Mortimer knight exhorted him to come vp, or else he would shote him through in the river: if I doe come by faith Thomas Molencux, wilt thou saue my life: I doe make no such promise (saith he) but either come vp, or thou shalt straight die for it. To whom he answered, suffer me to come vp and let me fight with thee with thee or some other, and die like a man. As he came vp, the knight caught

Thomas Mortimer slain.

caught him by the helmet, and plucked it off his head, and straightwaies with his dagger stracke him into the braines.

The Duke of Ireland fleeing, came to the river of Thames, and forced his horse to enter, in the which being made of an horseman a swimmer, he got to the other side: his horse, helmet, gantlets and breast-plate came to the share of the Lordes, so that he was thought long after to be drowned, but he got ouer into Flaunders.

The Archbishop of Dorke fled, and Robert Trisilian, and Michael de la Poole got him to Calais. The Lordes being returned from the battell, which had bene nere to Warford, fast by Babbellack, made great top for the ouerthrow of their enemies, but much lamented the escape of the Duke of Ireland.

Archbishop of  
Dorke fled the  
Realm.

A head of earth was made at Dorford by Art of Necromantie, that at a time appointed spake these words, *Caput decidetur*. The head shall be cut off: *Caput elenabitur*, The head shall be lift vp: *Pedes elenabitur supra caput*, The feete shall be lift about the head.

Dissention fell at Dorford betwene the Southerne and Welchmen on the one part, and the Northerne Schollers on the other, where-through many were slaine, and the more part went to their countries, wherfore the Chancellor was deposed, and Doctor Nicholas Brightwell Deane of Peterwarke in Leicester was made Chancellor.

Dissention at  
Dorford be-  
twene the  
Southerne &  
Northerne  
Schollers.

The Lordes hasted to London, where the king kept his Christmase in the Tower of London, they hauing assembled an armie of nere hand fortie thousand the morrow after Christmase day came to London, and mustred in the feldes, where they might be seene of them in the Tower: the Londoners were then in great feare, weping diuers perilles as the kings displeasure, if they opened their gates to the Lordes, and if they shut them forth, the indignation of the vniuersite multitude.

1388.  
The Lordes  
came to Lon-  
don.

The Duke of Gloucester with other entred the Tower, and hauing a little talke with the king, they rected the conspiracie, whereby they had bene indicted, and they shewed forth also the letters, which he had sent vnto the Duke of Ireland, that he should assemble an armie to their destruction, &c. in the end the king promised on the next morrow to come to Westminster, and there to intreat at large for reformation of all matters.

The Lordes  
came to the  
king then in  
the Tower of  
London.  
The R. com-  
meth to West-  
minster.

In the morning the king came to Westminster, where, after a little talke, the nobles said that for his honour and commoditie of his kingdome it was behouefull, that the traitors, whisperers, flatterers, and vnprofitable people were removed out of place, and that others might be placed in their rooms.

The king, although sore against his mind, when he saw how the Lordes were bent, and that he wanted power to withstand them, condescended to do what they would haue him, & to conclude, the king at the request of the Lordes commaunded the suspected persons of his court, & family to be awarded to prison, to answer at the next Parliament, which persons were Sir Simon Burghley, Sir William Elmham, Sir Nicholas Dagworth, Sir John Golefare, which was not yet returned out of France, all these being knights, Richard Clifford, and

Sir Simon  
Burghley and  
many other  
committed in  
prison.

Justices called Nicholas Slake Deane of the kings Chappell were appointed to Pottingham Castell. To the Castell of Dover were appointed sir John Beauchampe of Holt Steward of the kings house, sir Thomas Trivet, sir John Salisbury, and John Loncolne. To the Castell of Bristow James Berners, and Richard Medford Clarke. To the Castell of Rochester was appointed Alexander Neuell Archbishop of York, but he was escaped as ye haue heard, and Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolk, which was fled. To the Castell of Gloucester were deputed Robert Trisilian chiefe Justice of England, which was not yet found, and Nicholas Brembar, who sound sureties to stand to the lawes of the Realine.

These were remoued also from the Court, but not sent to prison, John Fordham Bishop of Durham, the Lord Beaumont, Lord William de la Souch of Harnelworth, the Lord Burnell, sir John Louell, the Lord Thomas Camoys, Thomas the sonne of the Lord Clifford, with Baldwin Burfode, Thomas Russhoke a frier, Bishoppe of Chichester the kings Confessor, Aubrey de Vere, Richard Aberbery, John VVorth, the Ladie Maine, the Ladie Pomes, and the Ladie Molineaux, all which were to answere at the next Parliament.

Many persons remoued out of the kings Court.

Parliament that wrought wonders.

The Justices arrested as they sat in Parliament.

The third day of Februarie, the Parliament began at Westminster, which Parliament continued till the 13. of June next following, except from the Wighill of Palmesonday untill the Weekes of Easter, this Parliament was named the Parliament that wrought wonders. The Lords came to this Parliament with a sufficient army for their owne sureties. The first day of this Parliament were arrested as they sat in their places, all the Justices, except sir VVilliam Skipwith, and sir Roger Fulthorpe, sir Robert Belknappe, sir John Carey, sir John Holie, sir VVilliam Borow, and John Aleccion the kings Serieant at Lawe, all these were sent to the Towler, and there kept in severall places.

The cause was, for that where in the last Parliament diuers Lords were made gouernours of the Realine, both by assent of the Parliament, and also by the aduice and counsel of all the Justices, and yet notwithstanding, the said Justices in a counsel holden at Pottingham, did the contrary, whereupon it was now determined that they should make answer to their doings. Afterwards, at the beginning of this Parliament were openly called, Robert Vere Duke of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Archbishop of York, Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolk, sir Robert Trisilian Lord chiefe Justice of England, & Nicholas Brembar, whom the king had oft times made Barons of London against the minde of the Citizens, to answer before Thomas of Woodhocke Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwick, Henry Earle of Darby, & Thomas Earle of Nottingham, upon certain articles of high treason, which these Lords did charge them with: and so far as much as none of the appeared, it was obtained by the whole assent of the Parliament, that they should be banished for euer, and their lands and goods to be confiscated and seized into the kings hands, their landes entailed excepted, which should descend to their heires. The proccesse against those five Lords

compiled

compiled in eight and thirtie articles, I ouerpasse in this place, and haue set them downe in my larger Chronicle.

The foresaid Lords being fled as is aforesaid, Robert Trisilian a Cornishman, Lord chiefe Justice to the king, had hid himself in an Apothecaries house in the Sanctuary nere to the gate of Westminster, where he might see the Lords going to the Parliament, and coming forth thereby to learne what was done, for all his life time he did all things closely, but now his craft being espied was turned to great folly. For on Wednesday the seventeenth of february he was betrayed of his owne seruant, & about cleuen of the clocke befoze none, being taken by the Duke of Gloucester, and in the Parliament presented, so that the same day in the after none he was drawn to Wyborne from the Tower of London through the Citie, and there had his throat cut, and his bodie was buried in the gray friers Church at London. This man had disfigured himselfe, as if he had bene a poore weakeman, in a frize coat, all old and sozne, and had artificially made himselfe a long beard, such as they called a Paris beard, and had defiled his face, to the end he might not be knownen but by his speech. On the morrow, was executed sir Nicholas Brembar, who had done many oppressions, and caused seditions in the Citie, of whom it was said, that whilst he was in full authoritie of Baronsalltie, he caused a common payre of Stocks in euery ward, and a common Are to be made to behead all such as should be against him, and it was further said, that hee had indicted 8000. and more of the best and greatest of the Citie, but it was said that the said Nicholas was beheaded with the same Are he had prepared for other: this man if hee had liued, had bene created Duke of Arroy, or of London by the name of Arroy.

R. Trisilian chiefe Justice taken and executed at Wyborne.

Sir Nicholas Brembar executed.

On the fourth of March Thomas Vske, Undershyue of London, and John Blake Esquire, one of the kings household, were drawn to Wyborne and there hanged and beheaded, the head of Thomas Vske was set by ouer Newgate, to the appoyntment of his parents, which inhabited thereby. The goods of the Bishop of Chichester were confiscate, and on the eleuenth of March the Parliament was proroged vnto the quinden of March.

The fift day of May sir Simon Burghley Constable of Dover, and Chamberlain to the king, an intollerable proud man and a great oppressor of the poore, &c. was condemned of treason, but the king dispensed for his drawing and hanging, so that he was with his hands bound behinde him led through the Citie of London, and had his head stricken off vpon the Towler hill on the fiftenth day of May, his heires were by Henry the fourth restored in blood and inheritance, except the landes giuen to the new Abbey on the Towler hill, to S. Stephens at Westminster, and to the friers at Langley. This man might by inheritance dispend twentie markes by yere, but in few yeres he so grew in seruice of the king, that he attained to the value of 3000. markes of yerele reuerues, of whom it was said that he gaue at Christmasse for liueries of Knights and Esquires, yeomen and others as well of the kings court as of his owne family, sometime for tie clothes, sometime 160. clothes, and sometime 200. of great price, as of Scarlet, &c.

Simon Burghley beheaded.

Rob. de Vere Duke of Ireland the Archbishop of York and other banished.

Also on the twelfth of May John Beauchampe of Holt Lord Steward of the kings house, whom the king had thought to have made Baron of Bodge, north, was condemned to be drawne, and hanged, but by the kings favour, he lost his head on the Tower hill.

Sir John Bernes knight of the kings Court, a lustie young man, was in the same place beheaded. Sir John Salisbury knight was drawne from the Tower to Ebborne, and there hanged.

There were condemned also in the same Parliament these Justices, Sir Ro. Belknappe, Sir John Caire, Sir John Holte, Sir Roger Fulthorpe, and Sir William Brough, John Locon Sericant at the Lawe, Richard Gray Justices, with the Lords befoze fled, were all banished.

There was granted to the king, of the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and of the Laity halfe a fiftenth, and of the merchants twelve pence of the pound, three shillings of the tunne, three and fifty shillings four pence of the sacke of wool. The Duke of Gloucester, and Sir John Cobham, asked pardon of the Abbot of Westminster for violence done in the sanctuary of Westminster, in the taking of the Justice Trissilian. The last saue one of May there were deliuered out of the Tower VV. Elmham, T. Triuer, and Nicholas Dagworth knights. Also the first of June, John Holland the kings brother was created Earle of Huntington.

The third day of June, the king in the Church of Westminster renewed the oath, which he toke when he was crowned, and all the Lords swore homage and fealtie to him, and all the Bishops did excommunicate all those that would goe about to hinder the Statutes of this last Parliament, or the great Charter.

After Whitsonside Richard Earle of Arundale, with a company of valiant men went to the sea, and fought with certaine ships of his enemies, taking, destroying, or burning foure score ships, he entred into the Ile of Beas, which he spoiled and bent.

The same yere the Scots prepared themselves that as soon as the truce was expired they might be ready to invade the south parts, and with a great army entred England, committing great slaughters of people and toke hosties in euery place, and led away many prisoners, and burned Townes, and approached to Newcastell upon Tyne, and pitcht their tentes not farre from thence. There was then in the same towne Sir Henry Percy the younger, and Sir Ralph his brother, both famous of warlike renowne, and fore enemies unto the Scots. This Sir Henry came vpon the on the sodain, & assailed them in the campe, making great slaughter of them. VVilliam or James Douglas, after Froisart, also chiefe Captaine of the Scottes, beholding the thing that a thousand times he had wished, that is, Sir Henry Percy within his campe, rebeth against him, but was slaine by the saide Henry; then cometh the Earle of Dunbarre with an excellent number of Scottes, & toke the saide Henry with his brother Ralph, slaying many Englishmen to the number of 1000. in that place, at the which time there were in number 30000. put to flight, and toke the water at Otterborne: but yet the Scottes lost many

King Richard renewed the oath which he had taken at his coronation.

An. reg. 12.

The Scots invaded the south parts of England.

Battell at Durham.

many of their best men. This battell was at Otterborne, the sorest fought that euer was betwene Englishmen and Scots, saith Froisart.

Thomas Arundell Bishop of Ely, brother to John and Richard Earles of Arundell and soune to Richard Arundell was translated to the Archbishopricke of Yorke. This Thomas Arundell, late Bishop of Ely fouretene yeres, five months, and 18. dayes. He beautifully builded anew the palace at Ely: he like wise builded his manors in diuers places, especially in Wolborne by London, he did not onely repaire, but rather new builded his manor place there; and also augmented it with a very large port, gate-house, or forefront toward the strete or high way: he gave to the Church of Ely, a Table gilt, set with precious stones to the value of 200. markes. John Fordham was translated from Durham to Ely, and Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Bath was translated to Durham, Richard Scope was made Bishop of Chester, Ralph Erkam translated from Salisbury to Bath: and John Waltham Cleerke of the priuie seale was made Bishop of Salisbury.

The ninth day of September a Parliament began at Cambridge, in the which were diuers Statutes ordeined, especially one for laborers.

In the time of this Parliament, to wit, on the first day of October, as Sir Thomas Triuer going with the king to his lodging at Barnwell besides Cambridge, forced his horse too much with the spurre, his horse falleth and breaketh in a manner all the inner parts of his rider, who yet liued untill the next morow, which time was giuen him of God to repentance, if he would accept it, for he was a man of an haughty stomache, and not beloued of the common people.

Alexander Neuell, after his banishment, was by Pope Urban translated to the see of Andrew in Scotland, but serued in Louaine in place of a parish priest, by the space of thre yeres before his death, where in the first yere of his exile he died, and was buried in the Carmelite Friars there.

King Richard kept his Christmasse in solemne maner at Woodstocke with his Queene Anne.

About the beginning of Lent, the Scots entring the west parts of England destroying men, women and children, sucking babes, and such as lay in childe-bed, in the countie of Silbeldan in the dominion of the Lord Dacres, and shutting vp of doores of houses full of people, they bent them by without merrie to the number of two hundred in some one house. Against these was sent Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham with five hundred speares to reuenge their attempts, but for that his power was so small in comparison of theirs, he preuailed little against them.

On the Thursday before Easter, the Lord Beaumont captaine of Carlisle entred Scotland by 40. miles, and spoiled the market of Fowke, praying and spoiling at his pleasure, and led many prisoners into England.

King Richard discharged the old officers of his Court, and also his Counsellors, appointing other at his pleasure: he toke the seale from Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Yorke, and deliuered it to William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, and made him Chancellor: the Bishop of Exeter his Treasurer,

John Belandine, John Maior, John Froisart, Tho. Raudborne.

Bishops translated.

Parliament at Cambridge.

Thomas Triuer slaine by a fall off his horse.

Archbishop of Yorke, translated to Saint Andrews in Scotland.

1389.

Crueitie of the Scottes.

Wickam Chanc. Louer of England.

sur, having taken that office from the Bishop of Hereford, and Edmond Stafford keeper of the privie seale, and made many new officers, putting downe the olde, he remoued from off the Counsell, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earle of Warwike and other worthy men, and put in their places such as pleased him.

A truce was graunted for thre yeres betwixt England and France, Iohn Clanbow knight, and Richard Rowchal clerke taking oth befoze the French King.

A fighting among Gnats at the kings mannour of Shinc, where they were so thicke gathered, that the aire was darkened with them: they fought and made a great battell. Two parts of them being slaine, fell downe to the ground, the thirde part hauing got the victory flew away, no man knewe whither. The number of the dead was such that they might be swept by with be-  
somes and bushels filled with them.

Michael at Poole sometime Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellour of England deceased at Paris in France, whose riches that he had there, came to the hands of his companion Robert de Vere that fled thither with him.

In the month of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Lancaster came from the partes beyond the Seas into England, after he had bidden in Spaine and Gascoigne, thre yeres space, who in Spaine first tasted great misfortunes, yet in the ende brought his matters to very good sale, not with the force of men, but by the fauour of God: for when he came first to the parts of Spaine with an army sufficient ynough, through want of victuals, they first died through hunger, and after through fire, so that 1000. famous knights of his Army dyed miserably, thereloue leauing the Duke, fled to the French Ar-  
mie.

King Richard with his Quene Anne held their Christmasse at Wood-  
stocke, and the Duke of Lancaster in the Castell of Hereford. The same time Iohn Hastings Earle of Pembroke, as he was desirous to Just, he was broken about the priue parts by the knight that ranne against him, called Sir Iohn Saint Iohn, where he died. King Richard caused the Castle of Canterbury to be repaired.

In a parliament at London it was ordained that none should purchase pro-  
uisions at the Popes hands: there was graunted to the King xl. shillings of every sacke of wool, and of the pound fire pence.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster was made Duke of Aquitaine by the roade and bonet, which the King gaue him, and Edward the Duke of Yorkes sonne was made Earle of Rutland, to whom the King gaue the Castle of Wbam. The Earle of Huntington was made the Kings Chamberlaine, &c.

A great pestilence was in the North parts of England, so that in a little space cleuen hundred were buried in the Citie of Yorke.

A merchant of Wiertmouth waged the naule of shippes of the portes of his owne charges, and toke foure and thirtie shippes laden with wine, to the summe of fiftene hundred tunne.

A woollfull variance rose in Drford, for the Welch and Southerne Schol-  
lers

A fight of  
Gnats at  
Shinc.

Michael de la  
Poole deca-  
sed.  
An. reg. 13.

Iohn Duke of  
Lancaster re-  
turned into  
England.

1390.

Record Towre.

Parliament at  
London.

Iohn Duke  
of Lancaster  
made Duke of  
Aquitaine.

An. reg. 14  
A great pesti-  
lence in the  
North.

A variance at  
Drford.

lers assaulted the Portherne, whereby many murders were done on each side, and a field was appointed, but by the helpe of the Duke of Gloucester it was appealed, and the Welchmen banished.

The tenth, cleuenth and twelfth of October the King held a great court at London in the Bishops palace and a great iusting in Smithfield, to the which Court came many strangers forth of France, Almain, Zealanb, and many o-  
ther parts, bringing with them hoxes and armour, in which pastimes there was given first the Badge of the white Hart with golden chaines and crownes. And vpon S. Edwards day the King held his feast in his Regalibus, sitting crowned at masse with his Scepter, &c. and likewise the Quene, and they sate likewise at the table at Benington crowned, at which solemnitie were present the Earle of S. Paul, and his wife, Mawde Courtney sister to the King of England, and the Earle of Ostreuaunt who was made knight of the Garter.

The Duke of Gloucester toke his journey toward Spaine, but being to-  
sed with infortunate stormes, dyen now hither, now thither, was so farre dis-  
sant of hope, that he despaired of life, and at length after he had passed the Bar-  
barous coasts of Denmarke, Porthway and Scotland, he arrived in Porthum-  
berland, and came to the castle of Winmouth where hauing refreshed himselfe  
certaine dayes he toke his journey towards his manner of Plecy, bringing  
great toy to all the kingdome.

This yere on the 9. of July, the Sunne appeared redde through certayne  
thicke and filthie cloudes, giuing as it were no light from none til the Sunne  
setting, & afterwards in manner for the space of 6. weekes, cloudes did abound,  
about none dayes, sometime continuing both day and night, not vanishing at  
all. And the same time such a mortallitie increased in Portholk, and in many o-  
ther Countries, that it was not unlike the great pestilence, for that I may  
kepe silence of other Cities and townes, within thort time in the Citie of  
Yorke, there were 11000. cozples buried.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland was called home from Caleis, and  
was made Warden of the Marches of Scotland, and Robert Mowbreys was  
made Lieutenant of Caleis.

On the Friday next after the feast of all Saints, a Parliament began at  
London, in the which halfe a tenth, and halfe a sixtenth was graunted to the  
King, which money he should haue for the treatie to be had for peace with the  
Frenchmen, which treatie the Duke of Lancaster should procure. Also condi-  
tionally was graunted to the King, a full tenth, and a whole sixtenth, if that  
yere he made any iourney against the Scots, and this was the fruite of this  
Parliament.

This yere passed to poore and meane people very hard and sore for dearth  
of coyne, now almost continued for two yeres, whereby it came to passe, that  
when the time of fruits, as nuts, apples, &c. came, many people through ouer-  
feeding thereof, caught the Filre, and dyed of the same, and the death had  
ben farre greater through famine, if the recommendable diligence of Adam of  
Laune then Mayor of London had not relieved the Commons, who with  
continuall

where the  
Southerne  
and Southerne  
Schollers.

Iusting in  
Smithfield.

1391.

An. reg. 15.  
The Sunne  
appeared red  
like blood.

A great pesti-  
lence.

A Parliament  
at London.

Dearth of  
Coyne, and  
provision made  
by the Mayor  
of London, the  
benefit ther-  
of.

continuall care provided, that from the parts of beyond the Seas, corne was brought to London to the reliefe of the whole realme, whereas otherwise without doubt, neither had the Countrey sufficed the Citty, nor the Citty have holpen the countrey. To the furtherance of this good worke in relieving the poore, the Mayor and Citizens of London toke out of their Dyhanes chest in their Guildes hall two thousand markes to buye Corne and other Victuals, from beyond the Seas, and the Aldermen each of them laid out twentie pounds to the like purpose of buying of Corne, which was bestowed in divers places, where the poore might buy it at an appoynted price, and such as lacked money to pay downe, to put in surety to pay in the yeare following: in the which yeare when Harvest came, the fieldes yielded plentifull increase, and so the price of Corne began to decrease.

Sir Hugh Calucley was made Warden of the Isles of Iernsey, Gernsey, Berke, Aurney, &c.

This yeare a certaine Jewe at London became a Chyistian, and was baptised by the name of William Piers, and had two pence the day for feareme of his life given him by the King, as appeareth of record in the Rolles.

King Richard with Quene Anne his wife, foure Bishops, as many Barons, the Duke of Yorke, many Lords, and fiftene Ladies, held a royall Chyristmasse at Langley nere to St. Albons. The same Chyristmas day a Dolphin came forth of the Sea and played himselfe in the Thames at London, to the Bridge, foretelling happily the tempests that were to follow within a weeke after, the which Dolphin beinge scene of the Citizens, and followed, was with much difficulty intercepted, & brought againe to London, the which was a spectacle to many, of the height of his body, for he was tenne foote in length. These Dolphins are fishes of the sea, that follow the voices of men, and rejoyce in playing of instruments, & are wont to gather themselves at musick. These when they play in rivers, with bassy springings or leaping doe signifie tempest to follow. The seas containe nothing moore swift nor nimble, for oftentimes with their ships, they mount over the sailles of ships.

The King sent to the Londoners requesting to borrow of them one thousand pound, which they stoutly denie, and also evill entreated, beate and mishandled a certaine Lombard that would have lent the King the said summe, which when the King heard, he was marvellously angered, and calling together almost all the Nobles of the land to Stamford on the five and twentieth day of May, he opened to them the maliciousnesse of the Londoners, and complained of their presumption, the which noble men gave counsell, that their insolence should with speed be repressed, and their pride abated. By the Kings judgement therofore was the Mayor of London and the Sheriffs, with other the best Citizens arrested to appeare at Spottingham, where on the eleventh of June, John Hinde Mayor was deposed, and sent to Windsor Castle, the Sheriffs were also deposed, and sent the one to the Castle of Wallingford, the other to the Castle of Wytham, and the other Citizens to other prisons till the King with his Council had determined what should be done with them. And there it was determined, that from thenceforth the Londoners should

A Jew baptised at London.

1392.

A Dolphin of the Sea, came up to London Bridge.

T. Wallingham.

The Mayor of London and Sheriffs deposed, and committed.

should not choose nor have any Mayor, but that the King should appoint one of his knights to be ruler of the Citty: their priviledges were revoked, their liberties dismantled, and their lawes abrogated.

The King then on the one and twentieth of June first appoynted to be Warden of the Citty a certaine knight called Sir Edward de Dalyngrige, but he was quickly deposed by the King, because men said he favoured the Londoners, and Baldwin Radinon was constituted in his place.

In the meane time, through sute of certaine knights, but specially of the Duke of Gloucester, the King is somewhat pacified, and by little and little abateth the rigour of his purpose, calling to minde the divers honours, and the great giftes he had received of the Londoners, whereupon he determineth to deale moore mildly with them, and to call them to some hope of grace and pardon, he sendeth commandement to them to come to Windsor, there to shewe their priviledges, liberties and lawes, which beinge there shewed some of them were ratified and some condemned, but they could not obtaine the Kings full favour, till they had satisfied the King for the injuries which was said they had done. The King at this assembly at Windsor, had got together almost all the Lords, and so great an armie, that the Londoners had cause to be afraid thereof, about the which preparation he was at great charges, for the which it was sure that the Londoners must pay. They therfore, not ignorant that the end of these things was a money matter, submitted themselves to the Kings pleasure, offering tenne thousand pound. They were permitted home to returne againe, uncertaine what satisfaction and summe they should pay.

When the Citizens were returned, and that the Nobles which were gone home: the King hearing that the Londoners were in such a state, and dismayed, he said to his men, I will goe faith he to London, and see what the Citizens, and will not that they any longer despaire of my favour, which sentence was no sooner knowne in the Citty but all men were filled with incredible joy, so that every of them generally determined to make him, and to be as liberal in gifts, as they were at his coronation. The King therfore as he came from Shine in Surrey to London, with Quene Anne his wife, on the 29. of August, the principall Citizens all in one liverie to the number of 400. horsemen rode to meete them at Windsor, where in most lowly wise, they submitted themselves unto his grace, beseeching him of his speciall pardon, in all such things, as they before had offended him, and the Recorder of the Citty, in the name of the whole Citizens, instantlier desired him to would of his great bounty take such paine upon him, as he should see the Chamber of London, to the which request he graciously consented, so on his journey till he came to St. Georges Church in Southwarke, where were received with procession of Robert Braybrooke Bishop of London, and the Clergie of the Citty, who conveyed them through London, the Citizens of London, men, women and children in order meeting the King at London Bridge, where he was by them presented with two faire white Hackes, trapped in cloth of golde, parted of red and white, hanged full of silver belles, the which

An. reg. 16.

The Londoners called him before the King at Windsor.

The King riding towards London, received by the Citizens.



which present he thankfully received, and after he held in his way through the Citty toward Westminster.

And as they passed the Citty the streets were hanged with cloth of golde, silver and silke. The Conduite in Chepe ran with red and white wine, and by a child Angel-like he was presented with a very costly crowne of golde, and the Quene with another. A table of the Trinitie in golde was given to the king, valued worth eight hundred pound, and another to the Quene of S. Anne, because her name was Anne, with divers other gifts, as hoxles, trappes, plate of gold and silver, clothes of gold, silke, velvet, Basons & Towers of golde, also golde in coppe, pectorall stones, and Jewels, so rich, excellent, and beautifull, that the value and price might not wel be esteemed, and so the Citizens reconred their ancient customes and liberties, & then the Kings Bench from Doyke, and the Chancery from Bottingham, was returned to London. And it was graunted to them that they might chose them a Mayor as befoze time they had done. The Londoners believed that by these gifts they had escaped all daunger, and that from thenceforth they should be quiet, but they were deceived, for they were compelled to give the King after this 10000. pound, collected of the commons in great bitternesse of minde; for the which summe, the King became benedolent to the Citizens, and forgave them all trespasses, by his patents dated at Westminster the 28. of February, and so the troubles of the Citizens came to quietnesse; which trouble the Dolphin in Thomas at Christmasse last past did happily signifie a farre off. A fabulous booke compiled by a namelesse author, but printed by William Caxton (and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle) reporteth these troubles to happen through a fray in Fleetestrete, about an hoxse lease which was taken out of a Bakers basket, by a Peoman of the Bishop of Salisburies, and that the same troubles were pacified, and their liberties were againe restozed by means of Richard Graucend Bishop of London, in reward whereof the Citizens repaire to the place of burial in the middle Isle of S. Pauls church, &c. But al is untrue, for at this time Robert Braybrooke was Bishop of London, and Richard Graucend had been Bishop, and deceased in the time of Edward the first, in Anno 1303. almost 90. yeres befoze this time. After whom succeeded in the Bishopricke Ralph Baldoke, Gilbert Segraue, Richard Newport, Steven Graucend, Richard Wentworth, Ralph Stratford, Michael Norbroke, Simon Sudbury, William Courney, and Robert Braybrooke that late Bishop of London from 1381. untill the yere 1403.

Moreover the place of buriall in S. Pauls, whereunto the Spaloz and Citizens of London have repaired, is of William, who was Bishop of London in the time of William Conquerour, who purchased the first Charter of the said King William, for the same Citty, as I have befoze declared.

Robert de Vere, sometime Earle of Oxford, that by many degrees had mounted to the name of Duke of Ireland, died at Rouaine in great anguish of mind, and miserable penury, which yong gentleman was apt to al offices of worth, and in his childehode he had not wanted discipline.

After the feast of Christmasse, a Parliament was holden at Winchester, in the

A great fable  
recounted.

Robert de  
Vere Earle of  
Oxford dyed  
in great mys-  
erie beyond sea.

the which was graunted to the King by the Cleargie halfe a tenth, and by the commons halfe a fiftene, for the expences of the Duke of Lancaster and Gloucester, that were to goe into Fraunce to treat a peace betwene the king-  
domes.

At the which time the French king, whilst that he was dauncing in the hall with 4. Knights of his household, being disguised like a wilde man, having a short garment about him beset with pitch and rosen, that the flaxe which was fastened to his frait coate might the better abide, and the witt selfe more plaine, he had bene sodainly burned to death (if good helpe had not chaunced) through the fallshode of the Duke his brother that did aspire the kingdome, for as the King led the daunce, one that was hired thereto, howling downe his torch, set fire on the towle, which being kindled burnt the frait garment, where finding matter mete to feede on, to wit pitch and rosen, burnt so spitefully, but a Lady seeing such daunger to wards the kings person, ranne to him, and pulled him from the daunce, by which meanes the King was saved, but the foure Knights could not by any meanes be holpen till their skinned and deeth were scolerped, and they yielded up the Ghost.

This yere the Kings Bench and Chancery were removed from London to Doyke, for the Archbishop of Doyke being Lord Chancellour did wish the commoditie of his Citty, but the noveltie lasted not long, for with the same facility that they were removed to Doyke, they were brought backe againe to London.

The same yere Aubery de Vere uncle and better to Robert the late Duke of Ireland was restozed in blood, and created Earle of Oxford. John Deuerois, Knight Constable of Dover, and the Kings Steward, died sodainly, in whose roome, Thomas Percy, that befoze was vice-chamberlain, was made Lord Steward, and Thomas Beaumont was made constable of Dover, and William Scrope was made vice Chamberlaine, who about y same time bought of William Montacute Earle of Salisbury the Ile of Span, with the regality thereof, for the Lord of this Island is called King, to whom it was lawfull to weare a crowne of gold, Thomas Percy the younger was made warden of Burdeaur.

The Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester passed over into France, to make some what of the truce, so to conclude a finall peace betwixt the kingdomes: but it was not so brought to passe, as it was wished, by reason of the French Kings sickness.

In September, lightnings and thunders, in many places of England did much hurt, but especially in Cambridg-shire, the same yere many houses and cozmenere to Colleswoke, and in the towne it bent terribly.

Such abundance of water fell in October, that at Bury in Suffolke, the Church was full of water, & at Newmarket it bare downe walles of houses, so that men and women hardly escaped drowning. The same yere Lord Thomas de Ros, as he returned south of the Holy land, in city of Naplos in the Ile of Cyprus, through intemperancy of the aire departed this life there. In the Octaves of S. Hilary, a Parliament was holden at London, in which a subside was demanded for the King that was minded to go into Ireland, wherefoze

The French  
king in ban-  
gier to be burnt  
by means of  
his traitorous  
brother.

Kings bench  
and Chancery  
removed from  
London to  
Doyke.

An. reg. 17.  
William Scrope  
purchased the  
Ile of Span.

Great thunder-  
ing and light-  
ning.

Great water  
floods.  
1393.

Parliament at  
London.



the Cleargie graunted to him a full tenth if he would passe thither, and if he went not, they graunted him but halfe a tenth. Certaine Lords of Scotland came into England to get woorthip by force of armes. The Earle of Murre challenged the Earle of Spottesingham, to iust with him, and so they rode together certaine courses, but not the full chalenge, for the Earle of Murre was cast both horse and man, and two of his ribbes broken with the fall, so that he was boine out of Smithfield, and conveyed toward Scotland, but died by the way at Porke. Sir William Darrel Knight, the Kings banner-bearer of Scotland, challenged Sir Pierce Courtney Knight the Kings banner-bearer of England, and when they had run certaine courses, they gaue ouer without conclusion of victorie. Then Cockborne Esquire of Scotland challenged Sir Nicholas Hawberke Knight, and rode five courses, but Cockborne was boine ouer horse and man. The seuenth of June Quene Anne died at Shilne in Southery, and was buried at Westminster. The King toke her death so heauily, that he does, cursing the place where she died, he did also for anger throwe downe the buildings vnto the which the former Kinges being wearied of the Citie, were went for pleasure to resort.

Tusting in  
Smithfield.

Quene Anne  
deceased.  
An. reg. 8.

Constance  
Duchesse of  
Lancaster de-  
ceased.

Thus the King, the Duke of Lancaster, and his sonne the Earle of Darbie, were widowers all at one time: for the Lady Constance Duchesse of Lancaster, daughter to Peter King of Spaine, was but lately deceased, whilst the Duke her husband was in France. And the same time also deceased the Countesse of Darby, wife to Henry Earle of Darby. Moreover, this yere deceased Isabel Duchesse of Yorke, that was halfe sister to the Duchesse of Lancaster, being boine of one mother, and she was buried at Langley in the frier Church there by the Kings commandement.

Also this yere deceased that famous Knight, knownen to the world, Sir John Hawkwood, whose deedes (saith Thomas Wallingham) require a speciall treatise. I finde by good record, that this John Hawkwood was boine in Essex in the parish of Wingham Sibell, the sonne of Gilbert de Hawkwood Tanner, in his youth he was bound as an apprentice with a Taylor in the citie of London, and from thence was prest in the masters for seruice of King Edward the third in the warres of France, wherein he serued first as a common souldier in the rowme of an Archer. Afterward he was made a capitaine and had some charge committed vnto him, which he so well performed, as he was aduanced to the order of knighthood, and stood in good possibilitie to haue growne to great preferment by those warres if they had indured: for when the peace was concluded at Brytaine, betwix the Charlers in the yere of Christ 1360, he was then a yore knight, and had reaped small commoditie of those warres. Wherefore he ioynd himselfe with the companies, called the late comers, who assembled in great numbers, a five or sixe thousand English hoisemen, and seeking after better game, made great spoyle of all the East parts of the Kingdome of France, passing through Champaine, Burgondy, and Dampflin, euen to the deep gates of Auignon in Provence, where Clement the seventh, Bishop of Rome, then held his residence and court of Cardinallies: from whence he departed into Lombardy, hauing the leading of that part of the companies

Sir John  
Hawkwood  
his age, life  
and death.

companies, which was called the white bande, with whom he serued valiantly in the warres of John Marques of Montferrato. But when Leonel Duke of Clarence sonne to Edward the 3. King of England came into Italy, to marry the Lady Violent, daughter of Calcaius, Viscount Lord of Millaine, he forsooke that seruice and attended the Duke to that marriage.

At which time Barnabe the brother of Calcaius had great warres with the territorye of the State of Mantua, and obtained of the Duke of Clarence, that Sir John Hawkwood being a Capitaine, and principall man of his retinue might come to ayde him in his warres, for Barnabe being himselfe a warlike Prince, had a great desire to make some triall of the discipline and prowesse of the Englishmen. Sir John Hawkwood therefore hauing in sundrie skirmishes with great courage, and consideration happily taken aduantageable occasions of victorie, and the Englishmen demeaning themselves worthily with their bowes and arrowes, did dyaue Barnabe into that admiration of them, that he commended the discipline of this nation, and greatly regarded the prowes and discretion of Sir John Hawkwood. And in short time after, to wit, the first yere of King Richard, good liking increasing betwene them by entercourse of fauours and courtesies, he desired to haue him his sonne in lawe, and gaue him in marriage the Lady Domnia his daughter, whom he had begotten of a noble woman, named Porra, with the valne of tenne thousand Florenes of pearly prauenew, and after that time he married not any other.

This alliance being made in respect of his valour in warre, was the occasion of the increase both of his pay, and of the renoune of the Englishmen throughout all Italie: What a most puissant Prince in warre, had not without sufficient cause to induce him, conceived so good opinion of the valour of a man that was a stranger, and for this cause his seruice was required by the Princes and free Cities of Italy. For at that time all martiall affaires amongst the Italians were managed by foraine forces and Capitaines.

It fortuned that vpon some displeasure conceived the Englishmen that were left at Alba where the Duke of Clarence dyed, for the alliance past, made a sobaine reuolt from the friendshippe of Calcaius, and Barnabe, and ioynded themselves with their enemies, by which change of affections many of the Townes of Lombardy came to be wasted, by the outrageous spoiles of the Englishmen, amongst other they toke the Towne of Faetra, and Baccanallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Cast for twentie thousand Crownes, and the other he kept, and after that Sir John Hawkwood, hauing both his forces and pay increased, determined to like newe hopes, and newe aduentures. He went first to the ayde of Pope Gregoric the twelfth, and hauing with great commendation recovered the Cities of Prouence that had reuolted from him, for his seruice therein was worthily rewarded with the dominion of five Townes. From him, he went to the Visances, who profered great pay, and from them, not long after to the Milanese, and then againe to the Florentines, vnder whome he serued with such a num-

ber of our nation both hoſte men and ſote men that all Italle feared him, with that ſucceſſe and increaſe of his commendation, and glorious renoume, that he was eaſily reputed to be the beſt ſouldiour of that age, for hee had learned by his long experience in the warres, hauing an exceeding ripe and quick conceipt, to foze occasions, to frame his reſolutions, and to make ſpee- die execution, being alſo as occasion required, both hot in his ſight, and no- table for his delays, in ſo much as ſundry great Captaines, who were afterward highly renowned, proceeded out of his ſchole, as from an exact Maſter of Martiall affaires. The exploitcs that he had achieved, with good ſucceſſe, were accounted for ſure groundes and principles of Diſci- pline, as well amongſt his very enemies, as alſo amongſt his owne fol- lowers.

After infinite victories obtained, and an incomparable renoume amongſt all men for the ſame, he deſeased at Florence being then an olde man, and was moſt honourably buried in the great Church of the ſame Citie, where after his death, the Senate in rewarde of his good deſeruings, beſtowed vpon him the honour of a Tombe, with the Image of a man on horſebacke, as great as a mightie Pillar, for a Monument and teſtimonte of his great prouweſſe in warre, and exceeding fidelitie to their ſtate. Notwithſtanding his erecutors, or other wiſe his friendes here in England, to wit, Robert Rokeden ſenior, Robert Rokeden iunior, and Iohn Coe, rayſed a Monument, or Tombe arched ouer, and ingrauen to the likenesse of Haukes flying in a wode, in the Pariſh Church of Hyngham ſible where he was bozne, and founded there for him a Chantry, and another in the Priory of Hyngham Caſtle, to remem- ber Iohn Haukewood Knight, Iohn Oliuer, and Thomas Newenton Es- quires.

About the moneth of Auguſt Proclamation was made that all Iriſh peo- ple ſhould anoyde the Reame, and get them home before the feaſt of the nati- uity of our Lady, vpon paine of life.

King Richard went ouer into Ireland, and the Duke of Glouceſter with him, and the Carles of March, Salſburie, Arundell, Nottingham and Rut- land. The Iriſhmen being afraid of ſuch preparation as was made, durſt not ſhew themſelves openly, but with ſecret ſauiltings they often troubled the Kings army, yet when the Engliſhmen preualled, many of the Lords of the land ſubmitted themſelves to the king, of which ſome the king held with him, leaſt they ſhould attempt ſome new ſtrife.

The king held his Chyſmaſſe at Dublin in Ireland, and after that feaſt held a Parliament there: alſo the ſame time the Duke of Yorke, the Lord Warden of England called a Parliament at London, to the which came (being ſent forth of Ireland) the Duke of Glouceſter, to the which came the ſtates ſhewed the Kings neede, who had now ſpent his treaſure amongſt the Iriſhmen, ſo that a tenth was granted by the Clergie, and a ſixteenth by the Laity.

The ſame time the fauourers of Wicliffes opinions ſet vp on the gates of S. Pauls Church in London, and on the gates of Saint Peters Church at

Williamſt. Str.

Westminster, beehem acculations of the Cleargie, and conclusions ſuch as had not been heard of, among the which were theſe verses following.

*Plangunt Anglorum gentes crimen Sodomorum,*

*Paulus ferr, horum sunt idola causa malorum.*

*Sargunt ingrati, corrupti semine nati,*

*Mentum prelati, hoc defendere parati,*

*Qui Reges estis, populi quicunque praesitis,*

*Qualiter his gestis gladijs prohibere potestis.*

They were mainteyned in this their doing, by ſome noble men & knights of this land, among which as chiefe were Sir Richard Stury, Sir Lewes de Clifford, Sir Thomas Latimer, Sir Iohn Mountague, which did incigate them to confound if they might, the religious men: whereupon the Archbiſhop of Yorke, the Biſhop of London and other, as meſſengers from the whole ſtate of the cleargie paſſed ouer into Ireland, where to the king they made a grie- nous complaint, beſeeching him that he would returne with ſpeece, to helpe the faith and Church that was now incredibly afflicted by lollardes, (as they termed them) how they might take away all the poſſeſſions of the Church, and that woſe was, how they might take and deſtroy all Canonical ſancti- ons. King Richard hearing theſe things, determined to returne home theſe- ner. And when he was returned, he called before him, and rebuked certaine of the Nobles bitterly, threating them, if they from thenceforth fauoured theſe Lollardes, or in any wiſe did comfort them he would extreamly puniſh them, he toke an othe of Sir Richard Stury, that from thence forth, he ſhould not hold ſuch opinions, which thing being done, the king ſaid, and I ſwear to thee that if thou euer violate thine othe, thou ſhalt die a ſhamefull death, other bea- ring ſuch roaring of the Lion, plucked in their heads and lay cloſe.

About this time Sir Iohn Froiſart Chanon of Chymay in the Carle dome of Heynault, as himſelfe reporteth, came into England, he demaunded of Sir William Little (who had been with the king in Ireland) the manner of the hole that in Ireland is called Saint Patrikes Purgatory, if it were true that was ſaid of it, or not: who answered, that ſuch a hole there was, and that himſelfe and another Knight had been there while the king lay at Dublin, & ſaid they entered into the hole, and were cloſed in at the ſunne ſet, and abode there all the night, and the next morning iſſued out againe at the ſunne riſing: he ſaid, that when he & his fellow were entred and paſt the gate that was called the Pur- gatory of Saint Patrike, and that they were deſcended and gone downe thre or foure paſes, as into a cellar, a certaine wote vapour roſe againſt them, and ſtrake ſo into their heads, that they were ſaine to ſit downe on y<sup>e</sup> ſtaires which were of ſtone: and after they had ſate there a ſeaſon, they had great deſire to ſleepe, and ſo fell into a ſlumber, and ſlept there all night. In the which ſleepe they had maruellous dreames, other wiſe when they were wont to haue in their chambers: but in the morning after they had iſſued out, they had cleane forgot- ten their dreames and viſions.

King Richard ſent meſſengers the Carle of Rutland, the Carle Parſhall, the Archbiſhop of Dublin, the Biſhop of Ely, Lewes Clifford, Henry Beau-

th 2

mount,

Liberts againſt  
the Cleargie.

Iriſh people  
to anoyde Eng-  
land.

King Richard  
went into  
Ireland.

1395.

Parliament at  
London.

Sir Iohn  
Froistart of  
St. Patrick's  
Purgatory.

King Richard  
sent messen-  
gers to treat  
a marriage  
with the  
French Kings  
daughter.

The conquest  
of Ireland by  
R. Richard.

Ireland some-  
what descri-  
bed.

mont, Hugh Spencer, and many other to Charles the French King, to treat with him for a marriage to be had betwene the King of England, and the French King a eldest daughter named Isabella of eight yeeres old, who was already promised to the Duke of Britonsonne, by a treaty that was made at Bourges in Chouraine. This was hard to be broken, for the French King and his vncles had sealed with the Duke of Britaine.

How somewhat of the former boiage of King Richard into Ireland, as the same was reported to Sir John Froilart, by an Esquire of England, named Henry Christall. Sir John (quoth he) It is not in memorie, that ever any King of England made such prouision for any iourney into Ireland, nor such a number of men of armes, nor archers. The King was a nine moneths in the marches of Ireland to his great cost, and charge to the realme, for they bare all his expenses: and the merchant cities, and good townes of the Realme thought it well bestowed, when they sawe the King returne home againe with honour. The number that he had thither, were foure thousand men of armes, and thirte thousand archers, well payed weelke. But to shew the truth, Ireland is one of the euill Countries of the world to make warre vpon, or to bring vnder subiection, for it is closed strongly and wildely with high foyrests, & great waters and marshes. It is hard to enter to doe them of the Countrey any damage: nor ye shall finde no towne, nor person to speake withall. For the men dwale to the woodes, and dwell in Caves or small Cottages, vnder trees and among bushes, like wilde and sauage beasts: and when they knowe that any man maketh warre against them, being entred into their Countries, then they dwale together to the straites and passages to defend them, so that no man can enter into them. And when they see their time, they will some take their advantage on their enemies, for they knowe the countrey, and are light people. For a man of armes, being neuer so well horsed, and runne he neuer so fast, the Irishmen will runne on fote as fast as he, and overtake him, yea, and leape vpon his horse behinde him, and throwe him from his horse: for they are strong men in their armes, and haue sharpe weapons with large blades, two edged, wherewith they will slay their enemy, whom they neuer repute to be dead till they haue cut his throte, and opened his belly, and taken out his heart, which they carry away with them, some say they eat it, and haue great delight therein, they take no man to ransom. And when they see that they be overmatched, then they will depart and hide themselves in bushes, woodes, and caues, so that no man shall finde them: Sir William Windfore, who had most seld the warres in those parts of any other Englishman, could neuer learne the manner of the Countrey. They be hard people, and of rude witte: and they set nothing by tollitie, nor fresh apparell, nor by noblenesse, for though their Countrey be soueraignely gouerned by Kings, wherof they haue many, yet will they abide and continue in their rudenesse.

Truth it is, that foure of the principall Kings, and most puissant after the manner of the country, are come to the obsequance of the King of England, by loue and faire meanes, and not by battell, or constraint. The Earle of Ormond,

mond, who marcheth vpon them, hath taken great paine, and hath so treated them, that they came to Dublin to the King, and submitted them to him, to be vnder the obsequance of the Crowne of England, wherfore the King and all the Realme repute this for a great and honourable ade. For King Edward did neuer so much vpon them, as King Richard did in his boiage. The honour is great, but the profit is but small, &c. The names of the foure Kings were these, first, the great Oncale King of Meth, the second Brinc of Thomond King of Thomond, the third Arthure of Mackquennur King of Ailester, the fourth Conline King of Cheneuo and Draye, they were made knights by King Richard in the Cathedrall Church of Dublin: these foure Kings watched all the night before in the Church, and the next day at high passe time, were made knights, and with them Sir Thomas Orphew, Sir James Pado, and Sir John Pado his cousin.

These Kings sate that day at the Table with King Richard, they were regarded of many people, because their behaviour was strange to the manner of England.

When Sir John Froilart desired to knowe howe it came to passe, that foure Kings of Ireland were so come brought to the obsequance of King Richard, when King Edward the Kings grandfather, who was so valiant a Prince could neuer subdue them: Sir Henry Cristal answered, he could not tell, but as men said, the great puissance that the King had ouer with him, and remaining there nine moneths, abashed the Irishmen. Also the Sea was closed from them on all parts, whereby their merchandises might not enter into their Countries, though they that dwell farre within the Realme cared little for it, yet such as line on the marches of England and by the Sea coast, vse seate of merchandise.

King Edward in his time, had to answere so many warres in France, Britaine, Gascoigne, and Scotland, that his people were distubed in diuers places, wherfore, he could not send any great number into Ireland. But when the Irishmen sawe the great number of men of warre that King Richard had in this last iourney, they aduised themselves, and came to obsequance.

Whereouer there was of olde time in England a King named Edward, who is canonized as a Saint: This King in his time subdued the Danes, and discomfited them by battell on the sea thre times: This Edward the Irishmen loued, and dread him much more then any King of England that had been before. And therefore King Richard this yeere past, when he was in Ireland, in all his armoyces and deuises, he left the bearing of the armes of England, as the Leopardes and flour deluces, and bare the armes of Saint Edward, that is, a crosse patent golde and gules, with foure white Sparcelets in the field, wherof it was said, the Irishmen were well pleased, and the sooner inclined to him, and haue done to him faith and homage in like manner as their Predecessours sometime did to King Edward. Thus haue I shewed the manner howe King Richard had this yeere accomplished his boiage in Ireland.

In this meane space the English Lords rid from Caleis to Amiens, and to  
Rk 3 Claremont

Edward the  
Confessor his  
armes foure  
Sparcelets.

Claremount in Beaufayn, and so to Paris, where they were lodged about the Crosse of Pyreuer, they were five hundred hostes. The French King was lodged at the Crosse of Lowre, and the Quene with her children at the house of S. Paul vpon the riuer Saine. The Duke of Berrey at the house of Belle; the Duke of Burgoigne at the house of Archois, and the Duke of Bourbon in his owne house, the Duke of Orleans, the Earle of S. Paul, and the Lord Cowley at their owne houses.

The King had assembled there all his Councell, to the intent to make the better answer to the Embassadors of England. He commanded euery day to be deliuered to these Embassadors 200. Crownces, for their seruicences, and for their hostes. And the chiefe, as the Earle Marshall, and the Earle of Rutland, were oftentimes with the king and dined with him. These Lords desired euery to haue answer, and hauing ben at Paris. xx. dayes and their charges payd by the French King, a reasonable answer was given them, so that they were put in great hope to bring about that they came for, howbeit the French men said it could not be done shortly, because the Lady was so yong, and also that she was affianced to the Duke of Brittaines eldest sonne, wherefore they must treate to breake that promise, or they could proceed any further, & thereupon the French King should send into England the next Lent, to shew how the matter went. With which answer the Englishmen were contented, they took their leaue & departed from Paris to Calais, and so to England, the King was sorry of their coming, and well contented with their answer.

About Michaellmas the Duke of Lancaster returned out of Calcoigne into England, for that he had not ben receiued in Calcoigne, as he thought he should haue ben, for the people there did utterly reiect him, from bearing gouernement ouer them. The King made him good chere, and all the Minist folowing oft times sent to the French King, concerning the marriage, and was well inclined to haue peace, these pursutes and treaties took such effect, that their matter dyeloe nere to a point, so that such Embassadors as were first sent out of England into France, and were againe lodged in Paris, were in number five hundred, and solourned in Paris more then thre weekes.

This yere England suffered great losse by pirats, that belonged vnto the Quene of Denmarke, who spoiled mariners and merchants, especially the men of Dorsetholke that assembled a multitude together, and took vpon them to fight with them, but the enemies preuailing, many of them were slaine, and very many taken prisoners, were referred for ranstone with the losse of twenty thousand pounds, which they had aboꝛde with them to make their marchandise.

This yere deceased John of Maltham Bishop of Salisbury, Treasurer of England, who had pleased the King so greatly, that (though many murmured at it) he commanded him to be buried at Westminster among the Kings. After him Roger Walden the Kings secretary and treasurer of Calais, was made Treasurer. John de Metford Bishop of Chichester was translated to Salisbury, and the Archbishop of Diuelin to Chichester. Also Thomas Brantingham Bishop of Excester deceased, after whom succeeded Edmond

mond Stafford beauer of the purple Seale. Henry Wakefield Bishop of Worcester deceased, vnto whom succeeded at the Kings request a monke of Chester, called Tideman a Philition.

In the moneth of Nouember King Richard caused the body of his deere frende Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, to be brought from Louane, and after to be buried in the priory of Colne in Essex, with solemae funerals, which he honoured with his presence, and caused the Coffin of Cyprus, wherein his body being embalmed lay, to be opened, that he might behold his face, & touch him with his fingers openly shewing his loue to the dead carcase, which he bare him when he was aliue, there were at the same funerals with the king, the Countesse of Arford, mother of the deceased Duke, the Archbishop of Canterbury, many other Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and other religious men, but yet there were few of the Nobles, for they had not digested the hatred they had conceived against him.

The Embassadors of England being at Paris with the French King, their matters took such effect, that it was fully agreed that the King of England should haue in marriage Isabell the eldest daughter of King Charles, and by vertue of procuratton the Earle Marshall affianced and espoused her in the name of the King of England, & so from thenceforth she was called Quene of England. The Englishmen took their leaue and departed to Calais and so into England. The King was glad of their returne, and so were other, but whosoever was glad of this marriage, the Duke of Gloucester vncle vnto the King made no top thereof, for he saw well, that by reason of that marriage and alliance, peace should be betwene the Kings, and their realmes, which grieved him, & of this matter he would oftentimes speake with his brother the Duke of Yorke, and dꝛoue him as much as he could to his opinions, for he was but a soft Prince. But to the Duke of Lancaster his eldest brother, he durst not speake ouer largely, for he saw well that he was of the Kings opinion, and was well pleased with the Kings marriage.

This yere the King held his feast of Chyristmasse at Langley, whither came to him the Duke of Lancaster, and he receiued the Duke with honour, but not with loue, as was thought, he therefore taking leaue of the King, departed from the court toward Lincoln, where Katharine Swinford then lay, whom after the feast of the Epiphanie, (al men wondering at the strangenesse of the deede) he took to wife. This woman was boꝛne in Henault, daughter to Sir Paine Ruit, a Knight of that Countrey, she was in her youth brought by in the Duke of Lancasters house, and attended on his first wife Blanch the Dutchesse of Lancaster: and in the dayes of his second wife the Dutchesse Constance of Spynie, he kept the said Katharine to be his concubine, who after was married to a Knight of England named Swinford, that was now deceased. Before she was married, the Duke had by her foure children, thre sons, & a daughter, one of the sons hight John Bewford, the second Thomas de Bewford, and the other Henry, who was brought by at Alton in Almaine, pꝛoued a good Lawyer, and was after Bishop of Winchester, and loan a daughter for the lone the Duke had to those his children, he married their mother, the

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland.

Freishe

1399.

John Duke of Lancaster, married Katharine Swinford.

An. reg. 19.

The Duke of Lancaster returned out of Calcoigne.

T. Wallingham. Treas. of Denmarke: rob the English.

Bishop of Salisbury and other deceased.

said Katharine Swinford, being now a widow, as before is said. The great Ladies of England, as the dutchess of Gloucester, the countesse of Darby, the countesse of Arundell, and others descended of the blood royall, greatly disdayned that they should be matched with the Duke of Lancaster, and by that meanes accounted second person in the Realme, and be preferred in roume afore them; and therefore they said they would not come where they should be present, for it should be a shame to them, that a woman of so base birth, that had been concubine to the Duke should goe and haue place before them.

Hector Bessier.

This yere during the peace, many Noble men of England frequented Scotland, and many Scottes frequented England, through the which, oftentimes, many honourable toynements were done betwixt Englishmen and Scottes, in defence of their honours and gloire in armes: Among whom was not a little praised, the honourable victorie gotten by David Crauford on the Bridge at London against the Lord Welles in this manner: The Lord Welles was sent Embassadour into Scotland, concerning certaine high matters betwixt the two Kingdoms of England and Scotland, and when he was at a solemne banquet, where Scottish men and Englishmen were communing of debtes of armes, the Lord Welles said, Let words haue no place, if ye know not the chivalry and valiant debtes of Englishmen, appoint me a day and place when ye list, and ye shall haue experience. Then said David Earle of Crauford, I assent, and incontinently, by consent of either party, a day and place to is assigned. The Lord Welles chose the bridge of London for the place, and Earle David chose S. Georges day for the time. Thus departed the Lord Welles toward London. Afore the day Earle David came with thirtie persons well appointed to London: As soon as the day of battell was come, both the parties were conveyed to the bridge, and soon after by sound of trumpet, the two parties ran basely together, on their barbed horses, with square grounden speares to the death. Earle David notwithstanding the valiant dint of speares broken on his helmet, and visage, sate so strongly, that the people moved with vaine suspicion, cryed, Earle David contrary to the law of armes, is bound to the saddle: Earle David hearing this murmure, dismounted off his horse, and without any support or helpe ascended againe into the saddle. Incontinent they rushed together with the new speares, the second time with burning ire to conquer honour: but in the third course the Lord Welles was sent out of his saddle, with such a violence, that he fell to the ground: Earle David seeing his fall, dismounted basely from his horse, and tenderly embraced him, that the people might understand, he fought with no hatred, but onely for the glory of victorie: and in the signe of more humanitie, he visited him every day, while he recovered his health, and then returned into Scotland.

Froissart.

The same season was sent into England from the French King, Valerian Earle of S. Paul with certaine articles concerning the treaty of the peace. The King receiued him topiously, and heard well his message, and said unto him aparte, Faire brother, as to the treatie of peace betwene me and my

my father of France, I am right well inclined therunto, my brethren, and two vnckles of Lancaster and Bozke incline right well therunto: but mine vnckle the Duke of Gloucester, who is a right perillous man, letteth it as much as he can. Sir, quoth the Earle of Saint Paul, it behoueth you to winne him with faire words, and giue him great gifts. In the name of God (said the king) ye say well, and thus shall I doe. The Earle of Saint Paul said, the French king with his vnckles should come to Saint Omers, and bying with him his daughter, so that the king of England would come to Caleis, and so betwene Saint Omers and Caleis the two kings should mete and speake together, whereby should increase loue and amity: And if they could not conclude on some peace, yet at the least the truce might be prolonged to endure for thirtie or fortie yeres, betwene the two realmes, and their allies: this deuise seemed good.

And so when euery thing was readie, the king and the Earle of Saint Paul passed ouer. And the king of England with his vnckles came to Caleis with many Lords and Ladies: and the Duke of Burgoyne one of the French kings vnckles came to Saint Omers, and from thence to Caleis, to the king of England, and there consulted together on certaine articles of the peace. Whereunto the K. of England lightly inclined. The Duke of Burgoyne and Earle of Saint Paul returned to Saint Omers, &c. And the king of England with his vnckles into Englad, leauing their wiues at Caleis, til their returne.

King Richard  
sailed to Caleis

Ann. reg. 10

William Courtney Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased on the first of August, after he had late Archbishop of Canterbury sixtine yeres & more: this William Courtney upon the dissolution of the Hospital, called *Nouus opus* at Spaldstone, erected there a Colledge secular Priestes, the master to be a Prebend, which Colledge at the general suppression was valued in land by yere at 139. pounds, seven shillings five pence: he builded much at Spaldstone: he gave by testament 1000. markes to wards the ameuement of the body of the Church of Christ in Canterbury, where he was buried. Thomas Arundell brother to the Earle of Arundell succeeded him in the Archbishopprike of Canterbury, he had bene first Bishop of Ely, where he had made much faire building in the palace, he gave to the Church there a table of gold & precious stones valued at 300. markes, he built the great gate-house of his Inne in Holborne of London: he was from thence translated to Bozke, where besides his great building, & rich ornaments giuen, he gave to that Church, of plate two great basons of silver and gilt, two great censers, two other basons of silver, and two cruets, he gave to the vicars a silver cup of great weight, and a bolle of silver of an higher price, for the vse of the Chapter, &c. and was now translated to the see of Canterbury, he forthwith renouced his office of chancellor, whereunto was admitted Edmond Stafford Bishop of Excester.

Courtney  
Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
deceased.

Ye haue heard how the king of England was returned from Caleis into England, & there remained till Michaelmasse, that the Parliament at Westminster should beginne. In the meane season great provision was made at Caleis, and at Guisnes for the king & his Lords sent from the parts of England on that coast, also great provision was had of Flanders, at which came

Parliament at  
Westminster.

by

by sea to Calcis. And likewise for the French king and his brother the Duke of Orleans, and his uncles and other Prelates and Lords of Fraunce, great provision was made at Saint Omers, at Arras, at Tervin, at Arde, Mountoire, and at all other houses and Abbeyes therabout, there was nothing spared on eyther part, especially the Abbey of Saint Bertine was well replenished of all things to receive the kings.

The Parliament beganne at Westminster, at Michaelmasse, and it was ordained to endure eight and forty daies, but it was abridged; for the king would not tarry there more then five daies, wherein he declared the things pertaining to the Realme, especially such matter as touched himselfe, and the cause why he came from Calcis. Which things being dispatched, the king returned againe to Calcis with his Uncles of Lancaster and Gloucester, and other Prelates and Lords of England. The Duke of Yorke tarried still in England with the Earle of Darby to governe the Realme in the kings absence. As soon as the French king knew that the King of England was returned to Calcis, he sent to him the Earle of Saint Paule to shew him what order was taken in Fraunce concerning his marriage, which the king liked well.

When the Duke of Lancaster and his sonne, the Duke of Gloucester and his sonne, the Earle of Rutland, the Earle marshall, Earle of Huntington, the kings Chamberlaine and many other Lords and knights, Esquires and Ladies, rode with the Earle of S. Paule, to S. Omers, where they were well received of the Duke of Burgoyne, and of the Dutchesse, the Duke of Bypytaine and other. All the chere that could be devised was made to the English Lords and Ladies: there was the Dutchesse of Lancaster, her son, and two daughters, there was great gifts given of plate, of golde and silver, nothing was spared, insonuch that the Englishmen had maraile, especially the Duke of Gloucester, who saide to his counsell, I see well there is great riches in the Realme of France, there was much given to him: he took ever all their gifts, but alwaies the rancor abode in his heart: which the Duke of Burgoyne well perceived. When the Lords and Ladies of England had been royally feasted, then was communication had how the two kings should meete and speake together, and how the Ladies should be delivered, whereupon appointment was made, and leave taken on all parts. The English part returned to Calcis to the king, and shewed what chere they had, and what presents had been given them, which newes pleased well the king.

After the French king came to Saint Omers, having the Duke of Bypytaine in his company, where it was ordained that the Dukes of Berry, Burgoyne and Bourbon, should go to Calcis to speake with the king of England, where they were secretly received, and had as good chere as could be devised. The three Dukes had secret communication with the king & his counsell, from whence they returned to Saint Omers to the French king, and shewed how they had sped. When the French king went to the Basse of Arr, the Duke of Burgoyne to Mountoire, the Duke of Bypytaine to the towne of Elque, and the Duke of Berry to Walingham. In every parte about, there were

were pitched by tents and pavilions, and all the countrey full of people, what of Fraunce and of England. The king of England came to Guisnes with the Duke of Lancaster, and the Duke of Gloucester to James.

Thus on the Eve of Simon and Jude, about ten of the clocke in the forenoon, the kings departed out of the tents the which were pitcht not farre asunder, and came a foute the one to the other, and met at a certaine place appointed, on the one side there was arranged 400. knights of Fraunce, armed with their swords & halberds: And on the other part, 400. knights of England in like manner, so the two kings passed thorow them.

The Dukes of Lancaster and of Gloucester ledde the French king, and the Duke of Berry, and of Burgoyne led the king of England, thus came forth the 800. knights, all which knights, when the two kings came fust together, kneeled downe, the two kings met together bare headed, and a little inclined, and took each other by the hands, then the French king led the king of England into his tent, which was noble and rich, and the four Dukes took each other by the hands, and followed the two kings, and other knights after, the frenchmen on the one side, and the Englishmen on the other side: and so they stood regarding each other till all was done. So the two kings hand in hand entered the French kings tent. Then the four Dukes kneeled downe before the kings, and they raised them up and so talked together: then the two kings went a litle apart, & talked a certaine space. In the meane time wine and spices were brought, the Duke of Berry served the French king of spicer, & the Duke of Burgoyne of wine: And the Dukes of Lancaster & Gloucester served the king of England, & other knights & Esquires served the other Prelates and Lords. This busines done, the two kings took leave each of other, & so returned to their tents, & took their horses and rode, the king of England to Guisnes, the Dukes of Lancaster, & Gloucester, to James, & the other to Calcis: the French king rode to Corbry, & the Duke of Orleans with him, the Duke of Berry to Donnam, & the Duke of Burgoyne to Mountoire.

On Simon & Judes day, about 11. a clocke, the king of England & his Uncles and other Lords came to the French king into his tent, where they were received right honourably. When tables were set up, and the two kings sat at one table alone, the French king on the right hand, the Dukes of Berry, Burgoyne & of Bourbon served the two kings. This dinner was taken in the French kings tent, & after wine & spices taken, the young Quene was brought forth accompanied with a great number of Ladies & damoysels, & there she was delivered to the king of England, & every man took their leave to depart. The young Quene was set in a rich litter, and there went no more French Ladies with her but the Lady of Colcey, there were Ladies of England, the Dutchesse of Lancaster, Yorke, Gloucester, the Lady Namure, the Lady Poyninges, & many other, who received the Quene with great joy. Thus the king of England and his young Quene, with their company rode to Calcis the same night. And the French king and his company to Saint Omers.

After the kings returned to Calcis, ere Allhalowne day in sollemne wise, he married the Lady Isabel in the Church of S. Nicholas at Calcis, the Archbishop

Meeting of  
the king of  
England and  
of France.

King Richard  
married Isabel  
the French Kings  
daughter.

of Canterbury doing the office, at the which time there was a great feast, and great larges.

On the next morrow the Dukes of Ayleance and Burbon came to Caleis, to see the King & the Quene, and on the next morrow they took their leave, and departed to S. Omers to the French king, and the same day the King and the Quene took their ship, and had faire passage: for within thre houres they arrived at Dover, notwithstanding by tempest they lost their tents and household stuffe, from Dover they rode to Rochester, to Wertsford, to Eltham, and so to London, whereof the Citizens being warned, made out certaine horsemen well appointed, all in one livery of colour, with devises imbroidered on their sleeves, that every company might be knowen from other, the which with the Mayor and his brethren, clothed in Scarlet, mette the King and Quene on the blacke Heath, and there doing their duties, and attended upon them till they came to Newington, where the king commaunded the Mayor with his company to returne, for that he was appointed to lodge that night at Benington.

Quene Isabel crowned.

The 13. of November, the young Quene was conveyed from Newington, through Southwarke, with great pomp unto the Tower of London, at which time there went such a multitude of people to see her, that upon London bridge nine persons were crowded to death, of whom the Mayor of Wipton in Essex was one, and a worshipful matrone that dwelt in Cornhill was another. The morrow after she was conveyed to Westminster, and there crowned with all the honour that might be desired.

Parliament at London.

1397.

The 22. of January a Parliament began at London, in the which the Duke of Lancaster caused to be made legitimate, the issue which he had begotten of Katherine Swinford, before she was his wife. And the same time John Sonne to the said Duke of Lancaster and the said Katherine, was created Earle of Somerset, and the Duke gave him to surname Sir Bello Forro or Bowfort. It was ordained in this Parliament, that Justices should not have to sit with them any as assistant: there was a tenth granted by the Clergy to the king. At this time King Richard contrary to his oath, reuoked Robert Beke, John Holke, William Brugh knights of the Bath, and Justices, south of Ireland.

This yere when the realme of England seemed to enter the chiefest peace that might be, by reason of the Kings marriage, and the great riches that were heaped by together by the same, and by the reason of the truece of 10. yeres established, and the presence of so many noble men as the like no foraine realme was able to shew, suddenly all things were troubled & brought into a tumult. Whiles the king at Blashy in Essex, upon a sodaine took his uncle the Duke of Gloucester by force of armes, he suspecting no such thing, & caused him to be conveyed to Caleis, there to be kept in prison, & caused the Earle of Warwick to be arrested and imprisoned, the same day that he had bidden him to dinner, notwithstanding that he shewed him very good countenance, & had promised him great friendship: beside that he deceived the Earle of Arundell with fayre words, (who was well able to have defended himselfe, & to have delivered his friends, the Duke of Gloucester & the Earle of Warwick,) and notwithstanding

ding he yielded himselfe quietly, he sent him to the Isle of Wight, there to be imprisoned untill the Parliament. And to the end there should be no commotion among the commons for the imprisoning of the Nobles, he caused to be proclaimed that the apprehensio of them, was not for any old displeasure, but for new transgressions committed against the king, shortly after he caused the said Nobles to be indicted at Pottingham, and suborned such as should accuse them in the next Parliament, to wit, Edw. Earle of Rutland, Thomas Mowbray Earle marshall, Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, John Holland Earle of Huntingdon, John Bewford Earle of Somerset, John Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, & Tho. Spencer, Wil. Scrope the Ch. Chamberlaine. And in the meane season the king assembled together to guard his person, many malefactors of the Countie of Chester which kept watch and ward both day and night about him. When the king caused a great and generall Parliament to be summoned at Westminster, where he caused a great Hall to be builded in the midst of the pallace betwixt the cloke tower, and the doore of the greates Hall: This Parliament beganne about the sixteenth of September, at the beginning whereof Edward Stafford Bishop of Exeter Lord Chancellor, made a proposition or sermon, in the which he affirmed that the power of the king was alone and perfect of it selfe, and those that impeached it were worthy to suffer paine of the law: to this Parliament all the Nobles came with their retinue in armes, for feare of the king: the prosecutors were knights in whom no godnesse at all could be found, but a naturall covetousnesse, insatiable ambition, intolerable pride, and hatred of the truth, their names were John Bushy, William Bagot, and Thomas Greene. These required chiefly to have the Charters of pardons reuoked and disannulled: and Bushy said to the king, because we are charged to say what they be that have committed any offence against your maiesty, and regal authority, we say that Thomas Duke of Gloucester and Richard Earle of Arundell, in the 18. yere of your raigne, have traitorously compelled you, by meane of the new Archbishop of Canterbury then Chancellor, to grant to them a commission to gouverne your Realme, and to dispose of the state thereof, to the prejudice of your maiesty and royaltie. The same day was that commission disannulled with all Articles depending thereupon. Also the generall pardon granted after the great Parliament by them procured, and one speciall pardon for the Earle of Arundell were reuoked.

Parliament at Westminster.

Tho. Walsing. Bushy, Bagot, and Greene.

Also there was a petition made by the commons, John Bushy speaking for them, that the generall pardon procured and got forth, the Archbishoppe of Canterbury then Chancellor procuring it, should be disannulled; and he to be ludged a traitor; for granting to it: whereupon the Archbishop rose and would have answered, but the king said, to morrow, to morrow; but he came not into the Parliament house againe: the king said, that he would deliberate of the commons petition.

Also it was established, that any traitor conspired to stand against the kings regality, should be adjudged worthy to suffer punishment to be appointed for such offence.



Some thousand  
said Archers  
compassed the  
Parliament  
house, ready to  
shoote.

And it was enacted, that criminall causes from thenceforth should be determined in every Parliament, and then licence being had to depart, a great turke was made as is used, whereupon the kings Archers, in number foure thousand, compassed the Parliament house, thinking there had bene in the house some broyle or fighting, with their bowes bent, their arrowes nocked, and drawing, ready to shoote, to the terror of all that were there, but the king herewith comming, pacified them. On the next day, the Prelates were informed, upon paine of losing their temporalities, that they should the same day agree upon some procurator, to consent in their names to all things in that parliament, to be dispatched, & the king had these words: Sir Iohn Bushy, because many desire that I would explaine the fittie persons exempted in the generall pardon, I will briefly: that what man soeuer desireth this, is worthy of death: first, because he dwelt: secondly, because I haue excepted those that are to be impeached in this Parliament: thirdly, because other of their associates hearing them oppressed, would be afraid where no feare is. On the next day, the Archbishop of Canterbury commeth to the pallace to appeare in the Parliament, but the king commaunded him by the Bishoppe of Carlisle that he should returne to his house, and from thenceforth he appeared not. The Prelates made Thomas Percy the kings Steward of household, their procurator, to consent in all things in this Parliament to be done. Also sir Iohn Bushy had these words, our Soueraigne Lord the king, because the second Article in the Parliament is for punishment to be appointed for such as violate the kings royall authoritie, I beseech your grace that you will authorize me by way of appealing, of accusing, or impeaching, with licence to make declaration from one to the rest so often and when to me and my fellowes it may seeme expedient, and it was granted: then Bushy had these words, I accuse Thomas of Arundell, Archbishop of Canterbury, of treason.

First, of the commission in granting the regiment or gouernement of the Realme to Thomas Duke of Gloucester, and to Richard Earle of Arundell at his instance, who rather because he was your Chancelor, should haue refused it.

Secondly, for that vnder pretence of that commission, they traitterously usurping the iurisdiction of your royall authoritie, held a solempne Parliament traitterously in preiudice of your regalitie.

Thirdly, because that by the said usurping, Sir Simon de Burley, and Sir James Barnes Knights, and faithfull Lieges to you, were traitterously murdered, and put to death, of which things, we your Commons demand iudgement, worthy of so high treason, to be terribly pronounced by you, and because the Archbishoppe is a man of great consanguinitie, affinitie, power, and most politike wit, and cruell nature, for the preservation of your estate, and the whole kingdomes, by the petition of this present Parliament, I require that he may be put into safe custody, untill the final execution of his iudgement.

The king hereunto answered, that for the excellence of his dignitie he would take deliberation till the next morrow, and all other that were put into the same

same commission, he pronounced them to be his faithfull liege people, and voided from that treason, and especially Alexander Neuell, late Archbishoppe of Yorke, and then sir Edmond of Langley, Duke of Yorke, Uncle to the king, and sir William Wickham Bishoppe of Winchester, that were put into the same Commission, with teares fell downe on the ground before the king, and gaue him humble thanks for that grace and benefite bestowed on them.

Also on St. Mathewes day, Edward Earle of Rutland, the Carles of Kent, Huntington, Pottingham, Somerset, and Salisbury, with the Lords Spencer and Scope, in a suite of red gownes of silke garbed, and bordered with white silke, and embroidered with Letters of Golde, proponed the appeale by them to the king at Pottingham, before set forth: in the which, they accused Thomas Duke of Gloucester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Earle of Warwick, and Thomas de Mortimer Knight, of the premised treasons, and of an armed insurrection of Haringey Parke, traisterously attempted against the king, and putting in sureties for the prosecuting of their appeale. Richard Earle of Arundell was arraigned in a red Cowen, and a Scarlet hood, and forthwith the Duke of Lancaster said to the Lord Neuell, take from him his girdle and hoble, and so it was done, and herewith the Articles of appeale being to the said Earle declared, with a baliant and a boide minde, he denied that he was a traitour, and required the benefite of the pardon, protesting that he would not go from the fauour of the king and his grace. The Duke of Lancaster said to him, thou traitour, that pardon is reuoked. The Earle answered, truly thou lyest, I was neuer traitour. Also, the Duke of Lancaster said, why diddest thou purchase thy pardon: the Earle answered, to escape the tongues of mine enemies, of whom thou art one, and verely, as farre forth as toucheth treason, thou hast more neede of pardon then I. The king said, make answer vnto thine appeale. The Earle answered, I feele well that these persons haue accused me of treason, shewing the appealements, but truly they all lye, I was neuer traitour, but I aske alwaies the benefite of my pardon, the which your grace granted to me within these sixe yeres not to last past, being of full age, and of your franche god will and proper motion. When said the king, I did so grant it that it should not be against me: then said the Duke of Lancaster, then the graunt auayleth not. The Earle answered, truly of that pardon I knowe lesse then thy selfe, that was then on the further side the Seas. When said Sir Iohn Bushy, that pardon is reuoked by the king, the Lords, and vs his faithfull people: the Earle answered, where be those faithfull people? I knowe the well, and thy company, how we are gathered together, not to deale faithfully, for the faithfull people of the Realme are not here, and therefore the people doe lament for me, and well I know that thou hast bene euer false. And then Bushy and his fellowes cryed out. Behold soueraigne Lord and king, howe this traitour goeth about to raise sedition betwixt vs, and those people that are at home. The Earle answered, ye lye, I am no traitour. When rose the Earle of Darby and said, diddest thou not say thus to me at Huntington, where

Richard Earle  
of Arundell  
arraigned.



where we were first assembled together to rise, that it was the best of all things to take the king. The Earle said to the Earle of Darby, thou speest on thy head, I neuer thought of my Soueraigne Lord the King, but that that was god, and for his honour. When said the king, viddell not thou say to me in time of thy Parliament, in the Barbe behind the White Hall, that Sir Simon de Burley was worthy of death for many causes: and I answered, that I knew no cause of death in him, and yet thou and thy fellows viddell traitorously put him to death, and then the Duke of Lancaster pronounced iudgement against him in this manner: Richard, I John, Steuard of England, iudge thee to be a Traytour, and I condemne thee to be drawn and hanged, to be beheaded and quartered, and thy landes, taylor and not taylor, from thee and from thine heires of thy body descending, to be confiscate: then the king for reuerence of his blood, commanded him onely to be beheaded, and then was he ledde to the Tower hill, and there beheaded: the Augustine Friers in London toke by his body and buried it in their Church, on the South side of their Quire, and after on his graue a sumptuous Tombe was set of marble stone. Also the same day, the king appointed the Lord Cobham (accused by the commons) to be arraigned. Also upon the Saturday, Sir Thomas de Mortimer was summoned, upon paine to be banished as a Traytor, within five moneths to come to be tryed in iudgement: and then said the king, peradventure the Earle of March cannot take him, and therefore I will so long stay for his certificate out of Ireland.

Earle of Arundell beheaded.

Also, a declaration was made, that all benefices or gifts, granted or alienated by those that were already condemned, or after were to be condemned in this Parliament, and other whatsoever, granted thence the tenth yere of this kings raigne, should be revoked. Also, on Monday following, the certificate given in of the Earle of Nottingham, then captaine of Caleis, in whose custody the Duke of Gloucester was, that the same Duke might not be brought to be tried in iudgement, because he was dead in his custody at Caleis, at the petition yet of the said appellants, the same sentence was pronounced against him which had bene pronounced earst against the Earle of Arundell.

Duke of Gloucester condemned to die after he was dead.

Also the Archbishop of Canterbury, first his temporalities being confiscated was banished the realme. On the Tuesday, Rikell one of the kings Justices, borne in Ireland, read certaine confessions drawn in writing upon the said treasons, affirming that the same were the confessions of the said Duke, by him put forth or discovered, and written with his owne hand.

Archbishop of Canterbury his goods confiscated.

Also, the Carle dame of Chester was advanced to the honour of a principality, by annexing thereto the lands of the said Earle of Arundell confiscate.

Also, the same day, John Earle of Salisbury made request to haue a *Scire facias* granted to him against the Earle of March, for the Lordship of Denbigh in Wales, and the king answered therupon that he would take deliberation. Also on the Wednesday, it was ordained, that the lands of the said Earle of Arundell, annexed to the Duchie of Chester, should enjoy the liberties of the same Duchie, excepted that to the Welchmen of those parts, their old lawes and customes should still remaine and be continued.

The

The Castell of Lyons, with the seignioy of Bomfeld, & Pale, to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Chirke with the seignioy of Chirkland to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Swales Street, with the towne well walled with stone, with the hundred, and the eleven townes to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Habel, with the seignioy to the same belonging to the Castell of Dullay, with the appurtenance in the Countie of Shropshire, and the reuerfion of the seignioy of Cloue with their appurtenances, which Edward Earle of Rutland then held for terme of his life. All which Townes, Castels, and Seignioyes aforesaid were belonging to Richard late Earle of Arundell, and which by force of the iudgement given against the said Earle in the said Parliament, forfeit to our Soueraigne Lord the King, and shal be from henceforth annexed to the principality or Dukedome of Chester. Also it was ordained that such as gaue either counsell, ayde, or fauour to the childzen of them that were condemned, or that should be condemned in this Parliament, should be punished as traytors.

1397.  
Ireland.

On Friday, the king appointed a prestred day to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to wit, the third of the first weeke, to depart the Realme.

Archbishop of Canterbury banished the Realme.

Also it was ordained, that all the Lords spirituall and temporall, should sweare inuolubly to obserue whatsoeuer in this Parliament were enacted, and that the censures of the Church should be pronounced by the Prelates against all those that should go against the same.

Also, the Earle of Warwick was arraigned, & his hood being taken off, and the appeale read, as he had ben some miserable old woman, confessed all things conteyned in the appeale, weeping, wailing, and howling, to be done traytously by him, and submitting himselfe to the kings grace in all things, sorrowing that ever he had bene associate vnto the appellants. Then the king demanded of him by whom he was allured to ioyne with them, & he answered, by Thomas Duke of Gloucester, and the Abbot of S. Albons, and a Monk recluse in Westminster, and besought the king of grace & mercy, and the king granted him life to be led in perpetuall prison out of the Realme, his goods moveable & immoveable to be confiscate, as the Earle of Arundels had bene, and the king commanded that he should be had to the Tower of London, and after, to be conveyed ouer to the castel within the Ile of man, vnder the wardship of William Scroope then Lord of the said Ile, to remaine there in perpetuall prison, and on the morrow, the king granted to him and his wife five C. markes yearly during their liues. Also, the writ of *Scire facias* was granted to the Earle of Salisbury, against the Earle of March, for the said Lordship of Denbigh sixtene daies respit being given to put in an answer. Item, it was ordained, that those which ought money to Rochester byidge, should be put in execution for the payment, to the use of the same byidge.

Earle of Warwick arraigned.

Also, Henry Bolenbroke Earle of Darby, sonne and heire to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, was created Duke of Hereford; Edward Earle of Rutland Constable of England, was created Duke of Aumarle; Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Duke of Surrey; the Earle of Nottingham, Duke of Poole. John Holland Earle of Huntington, Duke of Excester. John Earle

Dukes created.

Li

of

Record Tower.

of Somerset, Constable of Dover Castell and the 5. ports, Margues of Dorset: Thomas Lord Spencer, Earle of Gloucester: The Lord of Westmerland named Dan Raby Neuell Earle of Westmerland: Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, Wil. Scroope: Lord Treasurer, Earle of Wiltshire: Sir John Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury. The king added the armies of king Edward the Confessor to his, & bare them together part purpale, and the Parliament was proroged till the octaves of S. Hillary, then to be holden at Shrewsbury.

Record Tower.

Westminster Hall repaired.

King Richard caused the great Hall at Westminster to be repaired, both the walles, windowes, and roffe, with a marvellous worke, and great costs, which he leuied of strangers banished out of their countreys, who obtained licence to remaine in this countrey, by the kings Charter which they had purchased with great sommes of money.

1398.

Parliament at Shrewsbury.

King Richard kept his Christmas at Leitchfield, and then took his journey towards Shrewsbury, where the Parliament lately proroged, began againe, in the which it was ordained, that all Statutes ordained at Westminster in the 11. yere of the kings raigne, should be reuoked and disannulled, and all the Articles of the same, and the heires of them that were adiudged in the saide Parliament, should be reconciled, and restored to all their lands, inheritances, and possessions: excepted, that they should haue no clayme against the withholders of the profits, and reuenues of those lands in the meane time. On the morrow it was ordained that the heires of them which were iudged and convicted in the foure Articles of high treason, should not enjoy the landes, nor any possessions of their progenitors, but should be excluded from all and euery action and clayme for ever.

The first Article of high treason was this, if any man, of what condition soeuer he were, did imagine the kings death.

The second Article was, if any man should haue an imagination to depose the king.

The third, if any man did rise armed within the Realme of England in manner of warre against the king.

The fourth was, if any man disclaymed the kings homage.

Also the same day, the Lord Cobham was arraigned, to make answer vnto the two Articles of high treason.

The first was, that he said Lord Cobham was in counsell to make one commission against the state of the king; and likewise, that he vsed the same commission in doing iudgement against the kings will, and to the prejudice of him.

The second, that he sate in iudgement to iudge Sir Simon de Burley, and James Barnes knights of the Kings; in his absence, and against his will: and vpon this, he was conuict and iudged to perpetuall prison within the Isle of Jersey.

Henry Duke of Gloucester accused Thomas Duke of Norfolk.

On the morrow, Henry Duke of Hereford accused Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk, of certaine words by him spoken, as they rode betwene London and Baynesham, tending to the dishonour of the kings person, which the Duke of Norfolk utterly denied to haue spoken; whereupon a combat was

was granted them by the king to be fought at Conuentry, vpon the tenth of September.

Combat granted at Conuentry.

A sixth and a halfe was granted, and the customes of Woles, fiftie fillings of euery sacke of euery Englishman born, and thre pound of euery stranger.

This Parliament ended, the king visited many places in the West part of England, as Worcester, Hereford, Wyllow, Walsenbury and Bath.

After this also, the king caused a Theatre to be made at Wyllow, for a combat to be fought betwene two Scots, to wit, the one being an Esquire appellant, & the other a knight defendant, and the appellant was overcome and hanged: but after this time, he made a great & marvellous strong Theatre at Conuentry for the combat betwixt the Duke of Hereford, and the Duke of Norfolk, and gaue them day for the fight, the 16. of September, to wit, the feast day of S. Egid, at which day and place, a great concourse and assembly of people was there gathered out of all parts of England. When the saide Champions appeared in the Lifes, ready to fight, the king commanded them to be quiet and not to fight, & then the king sitting in his royall apparrel within his tent girt with his sword, he commanded his decree to be proclaimed, & this was the kings decree, that Henry Duke of Hereford, for his disobedience towards the king should be banished for tenne yeres, and likewise the Duke of Norfolk to be banished for euery out of England, taking of his reuenues a thousand markes by yere, till the towne of Calets were repaired.

Anno reg. 22.

Dukes banished.

At the feast of S. Michael, the king caused seuentene Counties in East England to be indited, and laid to their charges, that they had bene against him, with the Duke of Gloucester, the Carles of Arundell & Warwike, wherefore he sent honourable men to induce the Lords both spiritual and temporal, to make a submission by writing, sealed with their owne hands, acknowledging themselves to be traitors to the king, though they neuer offended him in word or deed. Whereupon he compelled all the religious gentlemen and commons, to set their seals to blankes, to the end he might as it pleased him oppress them severally, or all at once: some of the commons paid 1000. markes, some 1000. pounds, &c.

Blank Chartres.

Also, he ordained through euery prouince in England, that all gentlemen, and men of substance, should be sworn firmly to maintaine according vnto their possible power, all the Statutes, Articles and constitutions ordained in the last Parliament.

Unaccustomed othes.

This yere the king kept a most royal Christmas, with euery day fasting and running at the tilt, whereunto resorted such a number of people, that there was euery day spent xxviij. or xxvi. oxen, & thre hundred sheep, besides fowle without number. Also the king caused a garment for himselfe to be made of gold, silver, and precious stones, to the value of 3000. markes.

1399. Great Joustings and feasting.

On Selwynes day, nere vnto Walsford, a very deepe water which ranne betwixt the townes of Swellstone and Harlewood, stode sodainely still and diuided it selfe, so that by the space of thre miles, the bottom remayned drye, which wonder, many a one thought, did signifie the diuision of the people

people, and falling away from the king, which happened shortly after.

Roger Mortimer Earle of March, and of Visier in Ireland, lying there in a Castell of his, there came on him a great multitude of wild Irishmen to assaile him, and he issuing out, fought manfully, till he was by them helwen to piéces, whose death the king determined to reuenge.

The third of February died Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, at the Shop of Elies Anne, in Holborne by London, and was honourably buried in Saint Pauls Church at London, by Blanch his first wife, his sonne Henry Duke of Hereford being then beyond the seas.

About Whitson tide, king Richard with a floute of 200. ships, sailed from Milford haue, towards Ireland, and arrived at Waterford on the last day of may, from whence, he marched with an army of 30000. to Kilkenny, foure score miles within the countrey, and there remained 14. daies, tarrying for Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, that kept not the right course.

On Whitsomere euen he went from thence towards the countrey of Mackmur, who remayned amongst the woods with 3000. men, right hardy, and such as seemed but little to feare the Englishmen. At the entring of the woods, the king commaunded fires to be vied, so that many a house, and many a village was burnt, & there the king made Henry the Duke of Hereford's sonne knight, who was afterward king Henry the fifth, with tenne other. 2500. pioneers were appointed to fell the woods, and make waies for the Englishmen. The Irishmen feared greatly the shot of the Englishmen, but yet with their darts they assailed, and slew diuers as they caught them at aduantage. The vncle of Mackmur came in and yielded himselfe to the king, with a wythe about his necke, and many other naked and bare-legged, vnder the like, all which, the king pardoned. After this, the king sent to Mackmur, promising him, that if he would come in as his vncle had done, with the wythe about his necke, he should be pardoned: but he utterly refusing, said, he would fight to death in defending his right, for he knew the Englishmen wanted victuals, and more then they had brought with them could not be bought for silver or gold. There was already such scarcity, that there were some foure, some five, that had but a small loafe of bread to liue by the day, and some that eate not a graine in fise daies together. In this estate they remayned eleuen daies, many of their horses were lost for lacke of meate. In the meane season yet came thre ships from Dublin fraught with victuals, for the which was great strife and peale especially for the wine of Alsey and Spayne. The morow after the 13. departed from thence, keeping the bye way toward Dublin, maugre all the noise of the enemies: at what time Mackmur sent a messenger with notice to the king that he would be his friend, & aske him mercy, or els, if it pleased him to treat of peace, to send some noble men to him: whereupon the Earle of Gloucester was sent, who led with him the reuerward whereof he was Capitaine, being two hundred lances, and a thousand archers, betwixt two woods farre from the sea in the declining of an hill they met with the Irish. Mackmur himselfe rode on a white horse without saddle or other furniture, that cost him (as was said) foure hundred a line, which horse he ran down the hill, that beholders reported

Earle of March slain in Ireland.  
Cr. Peecolleds  
Wil. Wilum.

Duke of Lancaster deceased.

King Richard sailed into Ireland.

Ann. reg. 23.

The vncle of Mackmur submitted to Richard.

they neuer had seen there nor were to haue runne so swiftly. In his right hand he bare a Dart great and long, which he threw exceeding well. He was a mightie strong man of personage. There the Earle and he talked a good while, about the murdering of the Earle of March, and after of other things, but agree they could not, and so departed.

The Earle aduertised the king what he had found, which was nothing, but that the enemy would cry mercy, so as he might be sure to haue peace without other griefe, other wise, he would (so long as he liued) defend himselfe: wherefore, the king (in his wrath) not knowing what let might happen, swore, that he would neuer depart Ireland, till he had him eyther alive or dead. The horse dislodged for lacke of victuals, they were a thirtie thousand at their coming ouer, that lay then at Dubline fiftene daies, the king forthwith diuiding his army into thre parts, sent them out to seeke Mackmur, promising an hundred marks to him that could bring him in, which offer was well hearkened vnto, for it sounded well, but he could not be caught: and the same day Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle Constable of England, arrived with an hundred sale, of whose coming, the king was very glad, though he indeed had tarried long, and might haue come much sooner.

They remayned five weekes at Dubline, and heard no newes out of England, the passage was so dangerous, the wind being contrary, and tempests so great, at the length came a ship with heauie newes, how the Duke of Hereford, and now by the deceale of his father Duke of Lancaster, was arrived in England at Hauenspore fast by Birdlington besides Wablington in Poyke shire, and had beheaded William Scroope Earle of Wiltshire, Treasurer of England, Iohn Bushy, Henry Greene, and other, and had caused Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury to preach against king Richard, who also shewed a Bull procured from Rome, promising remission of sinnes to all those which should aide the late Henry, in conquering of his enemies, and after their death to be placed in paradise, which preaching moued many to cleaue to the Duke.

Upon this newes the king being perswaded to make haste ouer, the Duke of Aumarle said, it was better to stay till his ships might be brought together, for there were but an hundred ready to make saile, whereupon Iohn Mountacute Earle of Salisbury was sent with a power, whilst the king going to Waterford might gather his state, who promised within fise daies to haue followed him. The Earle of Salisbury landed at Conwey, where he was soon aduertised, how the Duke had taken the more part of England, and that all the Lords were got to him, with more then threescore thousand men. The Earle of Salisbury caused to summon the Welchmen and them of Cheshire, to come to him, so that (wearing the king had been arrived at Conwey) within foure daies there were come together fortie thousand men, ready to go against the Duke of Hereford, where they stayed fourteen daies, but when they saw the king came not, they stealed away, & left the Earle of Salisbury in manner alone, so that vnnearsh he had an hundred men with him. The Duke of Hereford advanced towards the Earle of Salisbury, who withdrew him

Mackmur a good hoiman.

The Duke of Hereford returned into England.

King Richard  
returned out  
of Ireland,  
and landed at  
Willesford ba-  
ren.

518

## Richard the second.

into Contwey. The king throught euill counsell shalbe after the Carles departure 18 daies, and then arrived at Wilsford haven, with the Dukes of Aumarle, Erceffer, and Surrey, and diuers other of the Nobility, with the Bishops of London, Lincolne, and Carlile, & many other, that he might with an army mete the Duke before he had gotten his assurers together, but after his coming into England, and understanding the Dukes preparation, he let fall his courage to giue battell, knowing for certain that the people assembled against him, would rather die then giue place, as well for the hatred as feare, which they had conceived of him: wherfore leaving his army with the Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, Constable and chiefe gouernour of his army at Wilsford, went from thence priuily about midnight following, disguised like a Pilgrim, for feare to be knowne, with 14 persons only, who went to Contwey, thinking the Earle of Salisbury had there held the field. There were with him the Dukes of Erceffer and Surrey, and the Earle of Gloucester, that continued faithfull vnto the last houre.

There were three Bishops also, of which, two did not like good men, the Bishop of Lincolne, and Saint Davids, but the third continued faithfull, that was the Bishop of Carlile.

He had also two knights, Stephen Scroope, and William Fireby, and Ianico a Gascoigne. The king rode so warily by nights, that he came to Contwey at the break of a day. Great sorrow and lamentation was made by the king and the Earle at their meeting, for that the Carles hoste was dispersed and gone, some to the Duke, and some other waies.

The Duke of Aumarle, Constable and chiefe gouernour of the kings army at Wilsford, immediately when the kings departure was knowne, said vnto the souldiers, let vs shift for our selues masters, for the king is dedde, where vpon euery man trusted and away. Sir Thomas Percy steward of the houlbold, talking with the Constable also departed, and toke their way through Wales.

The Welchmen seeing such disorder, assembled them together, and spoiled the Englishmen of all their goods, & sent them packing in their cubits, with white stauces in their hands, for there rode, here tenne, here twenty, here fifty, here an hundred, and so the Welchmen coming down the Mountaines, the English lost that they had. The king had many hoyses of the beyond sea broode, and great riches in apparell and iewels, which was in the keeping of Sir Thomas Percy, who with the Constable came to Duke Henry of Hereford, and moze then six hundred of their company, all naked, whom the Welchmen had dispoyled, and beaten well.

The king being at Contwey in great discomfort, sent the Dukes of Erceffer and Surrey, to Henry Duke of Hereford and Lancaster, to knowe what his meaning was, himselfe remaining still at Contwey in great perplexity, and with him the Earle of Salisbury, the Bishoppe of Carlile, Sir William Ferebe knight, Sir Stephen Scroope mine author, and another Frenchman, in all but fiftene persons, then was newes brought to the king how his Constable had demeaned him, and likewise his Steward, that had caus-

sed

## Richard the second.

519

sed his riches to be brought a land, and going through Wales with it, the Welchmen had taken it.

The king then by the aduise of the Earle of Salisbury departed from Contwey vnto Beaulmareis, a ten miles off, and from thence, he went to Carnaruan. Beaulmareis was a strong fortresse if it had been manned & victualled. Carnaruan is a fayre towne, and a strong Castell, but these were vnprovided of all things, so that for sixe or seuen nights he lay very hard and bafe, and for vi. daies there was none; wherfore he returned againe to Contwey, where he sore lamented his estate. The Dukes of Erceffer & Surrey entering the City of Chester, which Duke Henry had taken, were brought straight to the Castell to the Duke, who was glad to see them, as he professed, & forthwith asked the Duke of Erceffer what newes, who told him from point to point, what shame and dishonour it would be to him, if he dealt so vnjustly toward his Prince, and that though him he were depofed: he therfore demanded answer with speed; but the Duke of Lancaster was as slowe to dispatch him, and told him he should not go for one weeke from him, and that the king was not well aduised to send him and his fellow, being men of such calling, sith he had other enough of meaner estate to do the message: so they remayned to their great discomfort. The Duke of Erceffer, Duke Henry still kept in his company: but the Duke of Surrey was committed to safe keeping with in the Castell of Chester.

There is a Castell five miles from Chester, called Beeton Castell, builded on a rocke, very strong by situation, therein were an hundred men of armes chosen and able men, but not valiant, or faithfull to king Richard, for they deliuered it to the Duke, where they might well enough haue kept it, the ascending is so steep: it was victualled for sixe yeeres. There was found within it coyne better worth then an hundred thousand markes, beside other iewels, which king Richard caused to be kept, to the value of two hundred thousand markes, all which Duke Henry toke with him, and returned to Chester, and there taking counsell of his friends what was best to be done, the Archbishop of Canterbury toke vpon him to speake, and said: that sith the king was in Wales, which was a countrey strong, by reason of the Mountaines, so that it was impossible for an army to passe with baggage and baggage, he thought it best to send vnto king Richard, & to make him beleue that he sought nothing but peace and a Parliament to be made, wherein, those that had offended in putting to death his uncle the Duke of Gloucester, should be punished, and so from thenceforth the king and the Duke to be good friends, and that it should be at the kings pleasure to appoint the day and place for this Parliament; for without this shift, it should be impossible for the Duke to get him into his hands, for he might depart to sea wher he would, hauing retained at Contwey ships for that purpose.

All the other Lords assenting to this counsell, the Duke appointed the Earle of Northumberland to go to the king with foure hundred launces, and a thousand archers, which Earle, when he came to Flint castell, had it deliuered to his hands: from thence he hasted to Rudland, which was also giuen ouer to him: this Rudland is but tenne miles from Contwey, where the king was, greatly

marualling, that he heard nothing of his brother the Duke of Gloucester, being now eight daies since he was sent to the Duke of Hereford. The Earle of Northumberland laid vnder a rocke, nere to the Castell of Rutland two great ambushments of his people with commandement to kepe that passage. Then he went with five or her in his company and went by the sea coast, till he came before the town of Conwey, and then he sent an Herald to the king for a safe conduct, to come to his presence, to declare his message from the Duke about an agreement, which safe conduct being granted, he passed the water, and entered the Castell of Conwey, where he found the Duke and the Earle of Salisbury, he declared to them that peace would be made if he would be a good Judge & a true, and cause those that should be named, to be tried by Justice at a certaine day of Parliament at Westminster, which he and the Duke should hold together, and that the Duke might kepe his place of high Judge as his father and other ancestors before him had done, for the space of one hundred years. Those that he would haue to be tried by the law, were the Duke of Gloucester, the Duke of Surrey, the Earle of Salisbury, the bishop of Carlisle and Tho. Marke, which five, had given the Duke counsel to put his uncle the Duke of Gloucester to death, and then if it should please him to pardon the Duke his wozath, he would be ready to come to him on his knees to aske him mercy, and so they might go to London together, or the one one way, and the other another. The Earle offered to swear that all this should be performed, and that the Duke had assured him by oath to stand to it. The King liking well that it should be at his liberty to go, either in company with the Duke, or alone vnto London, purposed to take the offer, and so to pretend some excuse for his going alone, after he should meet with the Duke: as lacke of vituals or such like, and so to take a by-way thorow Wales, and there to raise a power, for he promised the Lords neuer to suffer them to come to iudgement, discouraging with them, how he would auoid all the daunger, and surely be reuenged vpon his enemies, namely on Duke Henry of Lancaster, who with the rest should die for it, he accorded to go to the Duke, and then (passing celebrated) the Earle of Northumberland swore vpon the host, that the Duke should hold all that he had told the King. The Earle halted the King for ward to horsebacke, but the King prayed the Earle to go before vnto Rutland, there to prepare dinner. The Earle rode a pace vntill he came where he might see his people vnder the mountaine, whom he much commended for obseruing his commandement.

The King passing the water rode a foure miles before he came to the rocke where when he saw the ambushes he was soze abashed, knowing wel he was betrayed by the Earle, for he was in such a place as he could not escape. The sea beating on the one side, and the rocke keeping him in on the other, and if he should haue fled backe, they would haue caught him, ere he could haue come to Conwey, for he had not past thre and twenty in all of his company. The King descending the rocke, the Earle came, and kneeling down, excused the matter, saying, he had caused those people to come to guard his person, but the King told him, fewer would haue serued, and that it was contrary to his oath,

for he had promised to haue but five in his company, and said therefore that he would goe backe to Conwey, but the Earle answered, that now he sith he had him, he would leade him to the Duke as he had promised. Tenne daies since, and so he caused bread and wine to be brought and offered the King, who durst not refuse it, and after leaping on horsebacke againe they rode to Rutland to dinner, and after to Flint, where they lay that night.

Rutland.  
Flint.

The morrowe being the two and twentieth day of August, the King got him to the Castell walles, where he beheld the Duke with all his hoste of an hundred thousand men comming by the sands: there came before that were departed from the army, the Archbishop of Canterbury, Sir Thomas Percy, and the Earle of Rutland from whom the Duke had taken the office of Constable, more for a colour, then for displeasure, for they bare the Dukes order, and not the hart, which was the Kings, the Archbishop entered first, and after the other with a great traine, they went by to the dungeon, and then the King came downe from the walles, vnto whom they did reuerence lobly on their knees, the King took them vp, and drew the Archbishop apart, and they two talked long together, but the Earle of Rutland kepte him aloofe. They took horse againe, and rode towards the Duke that now was appoaching nere.

The King went by againe to the walles, lamenting soze when he saw the Dukes hoste within two bowe shotes of the Castell, who compased it round about downe to the sea. The Earle of Northumberland went forth to the Duke, who after long talke, concluded, that the Duke should not enter the Castell before the King had dined, for he was fasting: so the Earle returned, and the King was set to dinner, with whom sat his assured friends the Earle of Salisbury, and the Bishop of Carlisle, Sir Stephen Scrope, and Feribe, they ate long and ate little, for they had no haste to rise.

After dinner the Duke entered the Castell all armed, his basenet excepted. King Richard came downe to meete the Duke, who as soon as he sawe the King, fell downe on his knees, and crawing nere vnto him, he knailed the second time with his hat in his hand, and the King then put off his hode, and spake first, faire cousin of Lancaster ye are right welcome. The Duke bowing lowe to the ground answered, my Lord, I am come before you sent for me, the reason why I will shewe you. The common fame among your people is such, that ye haue for the space of twenty or yll. years, ruled them very rigorously, but if it please our Lord I will helpe you to gouerne better. The King answered, faire Cousin of Lancaster, sith it pleasest you, it pleasest me well.

The Duke spake as ye haue heard to the King, he spake also to the Bishop of Carlisle, to Sir Steven Scrope, and to Feribe, but to the Earle of Salisbury he spake not, whereby the Earle perceived that the Duke hated him deadly.

The Duke with a high sharpe booke, had bing forth the Kings horses, and then two little naggies not worth fourtie franks, were brought forth, the King was set on the one, and the Earle of Salisbury on the other: and thus the Duke brought the King from Flint to Chester, where he was deliuered to the Duke.

Chester.  
Duke

Duke of Glocesters sonne, and to the Earle of Arundels sonne that loved him but a little, for he had put their fathers to death, who ledde him straight to the Castle.

The thirde day they went from Chester to Saintwich, and the next day to Newcastle, and there the Earle of Warwick's son met them, and so journeying forth, the next day they came to Stafford, and after they departed to Lichfield, where the King thought to have escaped, slipping downe into a Garden out of a Window of a great Towre, but he was espied and thrust into the Tower againe: from Lichfield the Duke went to Countreie, but before they could come thither, the Welchmen did them much harme and slew many of them, and the Englishmen, when they by great chaunce could take any of the Welchmen, they tied them to their horse tayles, and drew them after them, through wapes full of stones, and caused them to dye miserably.

The Duke passed from Countreie to Weintreie, the next day to Northampton, from thence to Dunstable, and then to Saint Albons, and a five or six miles before his comming to London, the Mayors and the Companies in their liveries, with great noyse of Trumpets met the Duke, doing more reverence to him then to the King, rejoycing that God had sent them such a Prince, that had conquered the Realme within one moneths space.

When the Duke came within two miles of the Citie, the Duke caused the host to stay, and then said to the commons of the Citie: My Masters, behold here your King, consider what ye will doe with him. They answered, they would be bound to Westminster, whereupon he was delivered unto them, and they led him to Westminster, and from thence by water to the Tower of London.

The Duke entered into London by the chiefe gate, and rode through Cheap to Saint Pauls, where he was after lodged in the Bishops pallace five or six dayes, and after at Saint Johns without Smithfield, where he remained fiftene dayes, from thence he remoured to Hertford, where he abode three weekes, and then came backe to London, to holde the Parliament that began the first Wednesday of October in Westminster hall, which they had hung and trimmed sumptuously, and had caused to be set up a roiall chaire, in purpose to chaise a new King, neere to the which the Prelates were set, and on the other side sate the Lords, and after the commons in order, first sate the Duke of Lancaster, then Edmond of Langley the Duke of York, the Duke of Aumarle, the Duke of Surrey, the Duke of Gloucester, and the Marques Dorset, then in order the Earles of Arundale, Northfolke, March, Stafford, Pembroke, Salisburie and Devonshire, the Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland sate not, but went by and downe, and oftentimes knelt as it fell in doing their offices.

The Archbishop of Canterbury made a Sermon and toke for his Theme, *Habui Iacob benedictionem a patre suo*, which Sermon being ended in Latin, a Doctor of the Law, stood up and read an instrument, in the which was contained, that King Richard had by his owne confession disabled himselfe to be worthy to raigne, and that he would resigne the crowne to such a one as was

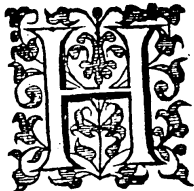
sufficient

sufficient to rule. This instrument being read, the Archbishop perswaded them to proceede to the election of a new King, and perceiving they were all contented, for there were not past foure persons that were of King Richards part (and they durst say nothing) he asked each of them whom they would haue to their King, whether the Duke of York or not: and they answered no: he asked if they would haue his eldest sonne the Duke of Aumarle: and they said no: he asked if they would haue his youngest sonne, and they said no: and so of diuers other: then staying a while, he asked if they would haue the Duke of Lancaster, and then they answered they would none other. This demaund being made thice, they drew certaine instruments and charters, and read them in presence of all that were there. When the Archbishops comming to the Duke, fell on their knees declaring to him how he was chosen King, and willed him to take regard if he would consent thereto. When the Duke being on his knees rose, and declared that he accepted the realme, sith it was ordained by God. When the Archbishop read what the new King was bound unto, and with certaine ceremonies signed him with the crosse, then he kissed the Archbishop, and they toke the ring, with which the Kings be wedded to the Realme, and bare it to the Lord Percy, that was Constable, who receiving it, shewed it to all the assembly, and then put it on the Kings finger, the King then kissed the Constable, and then the Archbishops led him to the Hege Royall, and the King made his prayers on his knees before it, and after spake unto them all, first to the Prelates, and then to the Lords and all other, and so set him downe in the seate: and thus he was inuested, and King Richard put downe, he sate a good while and kept silence, and so did al the rest: for they were in prayer for his prosperitie in his gouernment, and when they had ended, where the offices were boide, the King created the Lord Percy Constable, and toke him the staffe: When was chosen Ralph Earle of Westmerland Marshall, John Scire, or Serle Chancellor, Sir Richard Clifford keeper of the ppytie Seale, and many other officers were newly confirmed. After this the Archbishop spake certaine things in latine, praying for the Kings prosperitie, and the Realmes, and after spake in English vpon this following: *Vir dominabitur in populo reg. 9. &c.* And then exhorting all there present to pray the like, every man sate downe. When the King rose and made his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, then the Lords were sworn to be true to the Prince as before they had done to his father: his second sonne was there made Duke of Lancaster. Thus was King Richard deposed when he had reigned 22. yeres, 3. moneths, and odde dayes, in such sort as ye haue heard, whose royaltie had bin such, that where soeuer he lay, his person was guarded by 200. Cheshire men, he had about him 13. Bishops, besides Barons, Knights, Esquiers, and other more then needed, in somuch that to the household came every day to meate 10000. people, as appeared by the messes told out of the kitching to 300. seruitors, &c. he was murdered on the 14. of February next following, as shall be shewed in place convenient, and was buried first in the Church of the Friars preachers at Langley besides Saint Albans. And after by commandement of King Henry the sixt, remoued to Westminster.

Henry

## Henry the fourth.

Ann. reg. 1.



Record Tower.

Henry Plantagenet bozne at Bolingbroke, in Lincolnshire, sonne to John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, was ordeyned King of England, moze by force then by lawfull succession or election: he began his raigne the 29. of September, in the yere of our Lord God 1399. He forthwith made new officers, to wit Thomas his second sonne Keward of England: Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Countable of England: Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, Par- Hall of England: Sir John Scerle Chancellour of England, Sir Richard Clifford keeper of his priuie seale: John Norbury Esquire Treasurour, Thomas Chaucer Countable of Wallingford Castle, & other officers, and then was crowned at Westminster the 3. of October, by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury: The Dukes of York, Surrey, Aumarle, and the Earle of Gloucester bare a Canopie ouer him. Sir Thomas Dinmocke was champion, and rode thre times about the hall. This was a noble and valiant Prince, and after the ciuill warres were appealed, shewed himselfe louing to his subjects. He made Henry his sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chester, and heire apparant to the crowne of England.

After the solemnitie of the coronation, the Lords and commons straight proceeded to the Parliament. In which it was inquired out of the death of Duke of Gloucester, and howe he had been murdered at Calais by the Duke of Northfolke, vpon the kings commandement. King Henry created his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chester, and Duke of Aquitaine. In this Parliament it was ordeined that the statutes made in the Parliament holden in the 21. yere of King Richard at Westminster, and after proroged vnto Wyke, with all the circumstances to be disannulled, renoked, made voyde, & utterly blotted out. Also that the Parliament holden at Westminster, in the 11. yere of King Richard, be holden firme and stable. Also that the Lords and other persons which were iudged forth in the Parliament holden the 21. yere of King Richard, and their heires that be dead, shoulde be wholly restorred to their possessions without any suing liuerie thereof to be made, excepted that the Lords and other shall haue nothing of the issues receiued in the meane time. The King gaue to the Earle of Northumberland the Isle of Man, to be holde of the king by seruice, to beare the sword with which he entred into England. And to the Earle of Westmerland he gaue the Countie of Richmond. Also iudgement was giuen against the Appellants of the Duke of Gloucester in this manner: The Lords in this present Parliament by the kings assent, iudge that the Dukes, of Aumarle, Surrey, and Gloucester now present and were appellants, shal lose their names of Dukes and honours from hence forth, together with the dignities, of Dukes, and that the Marques Dorset that is present, lose his name of Marques, and the Earle of Gloucester, which

He of North  
folke taken to the  
Earle of North  
umberland.

Dukes lose  
their names  
and honours.

## Henry the fourth.

lose his name for him and his heires, as the aboue named persons doe theirs, and that all the Castles, possessions or manors which they had of them that belonged to those whom they appealed from the day of the arrest of the Duke of Gloucester, and the other Lords, or after at any time, simply and without fauour or mercy, they shall lose them: and that all other Castles, possessions, manors, Lordships, deminions and liberties, which they held of the Kings gift, that day or after shoulde rest in the Kings grace from that houre, and that all letters patents and charters, which they or any of them had of the said names, Castles, Dominions, possessions, and liberties shoulde be surrendred vp into the Chancery, there to be cancelled, and that they stand in state which they had in name and possession before the said day of the said arrest.

The King to shew to all men in all Countries about by what right and title he had taken vpon him the crowne and realme, sent Embassadors to Rome, John Treneuant Bishop of Hereford, John Cheyne Knights, & John Cheyne Esquire. Into France he sent Walter Tricklow Bishop of Durham, Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, and William Heron. Into Spaine John Trenor Bishop of St. Davids, and Sir William Par knight: Into Almaine the Bishop of Bango with other.

The Scottes in time of the Parliament taking occasion by the absence of the Northen Lords, and because the same time the North parts were sore oppressed by a great Rebellion entred as enemies, and took the Castle of Marke, and kept the same a certaine time, but at length spoiled and utterly ruined it, and many other mischiefes they did in the Countrey. Thomas Moubrey Duke of Northfolke, which was exiled, dyed at Venice, in his returne from Jerusalem. Also the Duches of Gloucester dyed, and her sonne and heire Humfrey dyed of the Rebellion when he was sent forth of Ireland.

The King held his feast of Christmasse in his Castle of Windsor, where John Holland late Duke of Excester and Earle of Huntingdon, Thomas Holland late Duke of Surrey & Earle of Kent, Edmond late Duke of Aumarle, and Earle of Rutland, son to the Duke of York, John Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Spencer, Sir Ralph Lumly, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Benedic Cely Knights, with others that fauoured King Richard conspired against King Henry, and appoynted priuily to murder him, vnder the colour of Tasting and other pastimes pretended. And the time appoaching of their purpose, they sent messengers to London with letters to the Duke of Aumarle, that he shoulde not faile to come at that day appoynted with his company, to helpe to doe the feate whereunto he was sworne: but his minde being altered, he bare the letters straight to his father the Duke of York, who caused a number of his men forthwith to carry his son to the King, where he shewing his letters, the King would not beleue them: but the same morning came the Spies of London to the Court, and informed him of the matter, whereupon the King made no tarriance, but got him forth to ward London, in company of the Spies and other: But before the King could gette London on his backe, his enemies came to Windsor, and there eyntred the Castle with an armed band

Messengers  
sent into di-  
uers coun-  
tries, to de-  
clare the cause  
of depoling of  
King Richard.

Castell of  
Marke taken  
by the Scotts.  
D. of North-  
folke deceased.

1400.  
Conspiracy a-  
gainst King  
Henry.



band of 400. men on the fourth of January at night, where understanding that the King was escaped their hands, being sore amazed, they withdrew from Winbloe, into Sunning, a certayne Mannour neare to Reading, where the Quene wife to King Richard then lay, where they perswaded her household, that King Richard was escaped out of Donifret Castell, and they would go to him: from thence they went to Wallingford, and after to Abingdon, moving the people to take armes upon them, and to go meet their King Richard. After this they came to Faringdon, in the Vale of White Horse in Berkshire, and the same day to Cirencester, on the xij. day late in the evening, and there harbozed, with a great number of men of armes and many archers: there they beated that Sir Richard was escaped forth of prison, and that he was there with them, & to make their wordes to haue the moze credite, they had got a Chaplein of Sir Richards called Maudelen, so like to him in all proportion and fauour, that one could byneth be discerned from the other: many times (saith mine author) I haue seene him in Ireland sitte with the King his Master: so faire a Priest and goodly a person, I had not lightly seene. They put him in armour with a crowne on his helmet, so as all men might take him for King Richard. On the morrow being Wednesday, the people of that town mistaking of their proceedings, fought against them, and at length tooke the chiefest of them, and ledde them to the Abbey there, and put them in a faire chamber, vnder safe custody. And on the Thursday the sayd Lordes, fearing the people, imagined how to escape out of their hands, and caused some of their seruantes to sette fire on certayne houses in the Towne, thinking that thereupon the people would depart from them, and seke to stanch the fire: but it chanced contrary, for the people turned into marueylous rage against them, ranne upon them with great violence, and dreyue them into the market place, and there they beheaded Iohn Holland the Duke of Hereford, Thomas Holland the Duke of Surrey, and the Earle of Salisbury, the third day after the Cyprianie: their seruantes that were with them, were by and by taken and as prisoners bound and brought to Oxford, and on Monday following were beheaded in the Castell there, to the number of five and twentie persons. Also Sir Thomas Blunt Knight was beheaded with them. The week next following, was beheaded Tho Spencer Earle of Gloucester at Bristol: not long after was Sir Barnard Brocas beheaded at London, and a Priest named Iohn Maudelen, that was like King Richard, and another Priest called William Fribie. The Bishop of Carlisle was impeached and condemned of conspiracie, but was pardoned.

The first day of Februarie King Henry caused the blanke Charters, made to King Richard, to be burnt, at the Standart in Cheape of London.

King Richard was imprisoned in Donifret Castell, where xvj. dayes and nights they bereed him with continuall hunger, thirst and cold, and finally bereft him of his life, with such a kinde of death as neuer before that time was knownen in England (saith Sir Iohn Fortescue.) He died the xij. day of Februarie, whose body was brought to the City of London, and so through the City to Pauls Church bare faced, where he lieth three dayes for all beholders

and

and had seruice, where King Henry was present. From thence he was caried to Langley, and there buried in the Church of the Friars Preachers. Upon his death the famous and excellent Poet Iohn Gower, wrote certaine verses, which may be englished thus.

O Mirour for the world meete,  
which should't in Golde be sette,  
By which all wise men, by foresight,  
their prudent wittes may whette.  
Lo, God doth hate such rulers, as  
here viciously doe liue:  
And none ought rule, that by their life,  
doe ill example giue.  
And this King Richard witnesseth well,  
his end this plaine doth shewe:  
For God allotted him such ende,  
and sent him so greate woe,  
As such a life deferude: as by  
the Chronicles thou mayst knowe.

The King with a great army went into Scotland, spoiled the countrey and returned to Poike, where two Knights, the one a Frenchman, the other an Italian challenged to fight within lists against Sir Iohn Cornwall, and Iames of Artois, which two strangers were overcome in battaile, and Sir Iohn Cornwall obtaining the Kings fauour, married the Kings sister, that had been wiue to Sir Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington.

The Welchmen taking occasion by the Kings absence when he was in Scotland, began to rebel, by the setting on of Owen Glendowerdew sonne to Griffith Vicham an Esquire of Wales, and so called Glendower, because his dwelling was in a place called Glendowry, for Glyn in Welch is a baile, and Dor is water, because the place was in a dale, at the side of the water or river of Dew in the parish of Corwen, in the countie of Merioneth in Powys wailes. He serued King Richard, at the time of his oppression by Henry Duke of Lancaster at Flint Castell.

The first cause of this stre was about a piece of land in controuersie betwixt him and the Lord Reignold Gray of Ruchine, for when he saw his cause not fauoured, first he began to spole the lands of the said Lord Gray, whereof the King being certified, went with an army into Wales: but the Welchmen fled to the mountaines, the King went the countrey, due the people with whom he met, and returned with a great pray of cattell.

The famous Poet Geoffrey Chaucer esquire, the first Summer of our English language, deceased. This was a worshipfull Gentleman, and of faire possessions, whose abode was chiefly about Woodstocke, (where he had a faire manor) and he was borne in Dorsetshire which also was his, with diuers other manors: he was of times imployed by King Edward 3. as an ambassadoe into France, and into other foreign lands: he had to wife the daughter of Paine Roete alias Guiana King of Armes, by who he had issue Tho. Chaucer, who married Maud daughter

Maudelen a Priest called Richard.

Dukes of Surrey and of Hereford executed.

Maudelen the Priest and other executed. Blanke Charters burnt.

R. Henry invaded Scotland.

1400. Challenge of combat at Poike.

The Welchmen rebel. Owen Glendowerdew.

Chaucer chief Poet of England. New time.



daughter to Sir Bartholomewe Borwash, by whō he had issue Alice Chaucer, first married to Sir John Philips Knight, after to the Earle of Salisbury, and thirdly to William Duke of Suffolke, who at his wives request founded an hospitall called Gods house, by y parish Church of Newelme: which Church be also builded, in this Church lieth buried Tho. Chawcer the last helre male, in an high marble tombe in a faire chappell on the South side of the quire, with this Epitaph, *Hic iacet Tho. Chawcer, armiger, dominus sive ecclesie, qui obiit 18. die mensis Novembris, ann. dom. 1434. Et Matildis uxor eius, quæ obiit 28. die mensis Aprilis ann. dom. 1436.* William Duke of Suffolke was buried at Wingham a Colledge in Suffolke, Alice furnished, and was buried in the parish Church of Newelme on the South side of the high altar in a rich tombe of allabaſter, with an image in the habit of a Dowesse crowned lying over it with this Epitaph: *Ora pro anima sereniss. principis Alice Suffolcie, huius ecclesie patronæ, & prime fundatricis huius elemosynariæ, quæ obiit 20. die mensis Maij, ann. dom. 1475.* Of which Dutches lōke moze in Henry the 6. the 23. of his reigne: but our first named Chaucer the poet, by what occasion I know not, was buried at Westminster, his woorkes for the most part are extant, first published in print by William Caxton, sometime a mercer of London, the man that first brought the Art of printing into this lande, since moze largely collected into one volume by William boreuil, alias Thim. Esquier, chiefe Clarke of the Kitchin, and master of the household to K. Henry the 8. unto whom he dedicated the fruite of that his labour *Anno Christi. 1540.* The which volume was since againe, to wit, in *Anno 1560.* by viewe of diuers witten copies, corrected by my selfe, the author of this history, who at that time also corrected and added diuers woorkes of the said master Geoffrey Chaucers neuer before imprinted, and againe in the yere 1597. further increased with other his woorkes, as also his life, preferment, issue and death, collected out of records in the towre and else where by my selfe, and given to Thomas Spighe to be published, and was performed. Besides the history of Oedipus and Iocasta, with the siege of Thebes, translated and made into English verse, by Don Iohn Lidgate, a disciple of the said Chaucers.

John Gower a famous Poet.

Not long after deceased the like famous Poet Master Iohn Gower, a man not much unlike the other in excellency of wit, learning, or possessions, he builded a great part of St. Mary Querries Church in Southwarke, then new redified. On the South side of the which Church, he prepared for his bones a resting place, where somewhat after the old fashion he lyeth right sumptuously buried in a tombe of stone, with his image also of stone lying over him, y haire of his head alburne long to his shoulders, and curling by, a small forked beard, and on his head a garland or Chaplet of roses red, foure in number, an habite of purple damasked downe to his feete, a Coller of Eſtes gold about his necke, under his head the likenesse of three bones, which he compiled: the first, *Speculum meditantis* in French, the second *Vox clamantis* in Latine, the third *Consolatio amantis* in English, which last named booke is extant in print, y second I have since witten, but the first I have not seene, his tombe arched, was beautified with his armes, and the likenes of Angels with posies in latine. Besides in

the

the wall were painted three virgins crowned, one of the which was written Charitie, and held this deuise. *En toy qui fils de Dieu le pere s'anne soit, qui gisf sous ceſte pierre.* The second Mercie, with this deuise: *O bon Iesu fais ta mercie alme dont le corps gisf icy.* The third Witte, with this deuise, *Pour ta pite Iesu regard, Et mei cest alme in sauegarde.*

All which is now washed out, and the image defaced, by cutting off the nose and striking off his hands, because they were elevated towards heauen.

The Emperour of Constantinople, came into England, to require ayde against the Turkes, whom the King with sumptuous preparation met at Blackheath, upon St. Thomas day the Apostle, and brought him to London, and paying for the charges of his lodging, presented him with gifts woorthy for one of so high degree.

Some after came newes, that the King of Leco had slaine in battel Bassacke the son of the noble Balchazaradan, and destroyed Jerusalem, and all the country round about. And because he had by Gods grace so overcome contrary to his opinion, he became chafened and 60000. men of his sect.

The Emperour of Constantinople hearing this, was very glad, and departed out of England, being honoured by the King with precious gifts. A Parliament was holden at London, after the feast of the Epiphanie, in the which Parliament a statute was enacted for Lollards, that wheresoever they were known to preach their false and corrupt doctrine, (so termed at that time) they should be taken, & delivered to the Bishop of the diocese, before whom, if they would presume stoutly to defend their erroneous opinions, they should be disgraced, & committed to the secular jurisdiction to be executed, which law was first put in practise upon a Priest named Wil. Sawtry, which was burnt in Smithfield, in the presence of many a man. Simon Burley was restored in blood & inheritance, except the lands given to the abbey of Grace by the towre of London, to St. Sephans at Westminster, and the Friars at Langley.

The 8. day of Aprill deceased Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwick, and shortly after deceased Iohn Botellham Bishop of Rochester.

The fine and twentieth day of July Iabel late wife to King Richard, not yet twelve yeres of age, departed from Dover towards Caleis, and so into France to her father, well and honorably accompanied. Where when she was arrived, Hugueucll that had ben sent for her into England, advertised the commissioners then remaying at Bulloigne. She was conveyed from Caleis by the Englishmen that accompanied her to Lallingham, where the Earle of St. Paul mette her, and the French Ambassadors: the alighted from her horse beneath Lollingham, the French Ladies came to her, and brought her to the Chappell, before the Ambassadors of both Realmes, and there Sir Henry Percy protested, that the King of England his mother had sent her to be delivered to her father cleare of all bonds of marriage, or other toſſe, and that he would take it on his soule, that she was found and true, even as she was the same day she was delivered to King Richard, and if any would say to the contrary, he was ready to prove it against him by Combat, but the Earle of St. Paul, saying he believed it to be true, the Lord Percy took her by the hand

Ann. reg. 2.

Emperour of Constantinople came into England.

1401.

Parliament at London.

Iabel late wife to King Richard returned into France.

and deliuered her vnto the Earle, and the Commissioners of France deliuered certaine letters of acquittall.

Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen did much harme to the Englishmen, and returned without receiuing any harme.

There was found in the Kings bed clothes, an yron with 3. sharpe pikes, slender and round standing vpright, laid there by some traytor, that when the King should haue laid him downe, he might haue thrust himselfe vpon them.

This time was vsed exceeding pride in garments, golowes with deepe and broade sleeves, commonly called poke sleeves, the seruants wore the as wel as their masters, which might wel haue bin called receptacles of y deuill, for what they stole, they hid in their sleeves, whereof some hung downe to the kete, and at least to the knees, full of cuts & tagges, whereupon were made these verses.

Now hath this land little neede of Broomes,  
to sweepe away the filth out of the streete:

Sen side sleeues of pennillose groomes,  
will it vp like be it drie or weete.

O England stand vpright on thy feete,  
so foule a waste in so simple a degree

Banish, or it shall sore repent thee.

The Conduit vpon Coznehill in London was made, which before time had been a prison, called the Tanne in Coznehill, whereunto, night walkers that were taken in suspicion of felonye, or other trespasses, were committed.

From the feast of the Epiphany till the midst of Aprill appeared a blazing starre, first betwixt the East and the North, and last of all putting fierie beames toward the North, soe thewling peraduenture the effusion of blood, about the parts of Wales and Northumberland.

Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen, wasted the lands of the Lord Reignald Gray, toke him prisoner, and slew many of his people.

Certaine men affirmed King Richard to be aliue, and that he should shortly shew himselfe openly, and reward them that were faithfull vnto him. But after a certaine priest was taken at Warwicke, who had writtten the names of many, which were the authors of these troubles, both the hope and feare of this conspiracie banished. The Priest was drawen, hanged and quartered. Also Walter Waldoke late Priour of Launde a Priorie in Leicester shire, because he confessed he knew euill against the king and did conceale it, was likewise hanged and beheaded. Spoure certain gray friers were taken, of the which one Richard Frisby, Doctor of Diuinitie, being asked what he would do if King Richard were present, answered, that he would fight in his quarrell against any man, euen to the death, wherefoe he was condemned, drawen, and hanged in his religious habite and weede.

At Danebarie in Essex, vpon Corpus Christi day, the deuill appeared in likeness of a gray frier, who entering the Church, raged insolently, to the great feare of the Parishioners: and the same houre with a tempest of whirlewind and thunder, the top of the Steeple was broken downe, and halfe the Chancel scattered abroad.

Shortly

Shortly after, Sir Roger Claringdon Knight, a bassard sonne of Edward the blacke Prince, and with him a Squire and a Peoman were beheaded, and eyght gray friers hanged and beheaded at London, and two at Leicester, all which had published King Richard to be aliue. All Priories allians with their possessions were reclaimed and seized into the Kings hands, except such houses as were conventuall.

Owen Glendouerdew, with a company of Welchmen invaded all the Shires that bordered nere vnto him, wherefoe Sir Edmond Mortimer with many knights and squires went out to encounter with Owen, stronger then he was of the Countrey: but when it came to martiall affaires, their owne Archers turned their hands against them whom they should haue defended. There were slaine aboue eleuen hundred of our men. Sir Edmond Mortimer was taken, and the Welchwomen, when the battayle was done using the dead carcases to shamefully to be spoken, would not suffer them to be buried without great rancome. This battayle was fought at Melle in Wales. The King was not hasty to purchase the deliuerance of the Earle of March, because his title to the crowne was wel known, but suffered him to remaine in prison.

The King went with a great power into Wales to pursue Owen Glendouerdew, where he profited nothing, but lost much, for the Welchmen conueyed themselves into unknown places: wherefoe the king constrained by necessity, returned into England, after he had spoiled and spent the countrey.

Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Langley, with his byetren, nere vnto his wife daughter to King Peter of Spaine.

The same time the Scottes cruelly entered into England, for they supposed all the Lordes beyond Humber to be occupied in the parties of Wales: but the Earles of Northumberland, Henry Percy, and his sonne Henry with the carle of Dunbarre, (that a good while agoe hauing forsaken the Scottes, had swoyne to be true to the King of England) with a number of armed men and plentie of archers, sodainely came to resist the Scottes, as they would haue returned home, after they had spoiled and spent the Countrey; but now vpon a sodaine their way was soe laid, so that they must needs abide and take a place to fight vpon: they chose therefore a mountaine nere to the Towne of Wollor, called Halydowne hill, in the which they place themselves with their armed men & archers, which when our men beheld, leauing the way in which they stood against the Scots, they clime the hill that stood ouer against the Scots, and without delay of time, our archers placed in the balley, set their arrowes against the Scots battell, that they might by some meanes force them to come downe: on the other side, the Scottish archers let sic at our men, who yet after they felt the grieuous waight, and as it had been a shower of tempest of the arrowes, shot by the Englishmen, they fledde. The Earle Dowglas persecuting his men so to sic, for he was their generall leader, toke his speare, and manfully with a multitude came downe the hill, trusting doubtesse in his armour and armour of his complices that had been three yeres in making, and forced himselfe to runne vpon the archers, which when the archers

R. Henry the  
fourth great  
danger.

Tho. Wal.  
Additions to pol.

Ann. reg. 3.

Tho. Hocclius.

1402.

Conspiracie  
against King  
Henry.

A house frier  
executed.

The deuill ap-  
peared in like-  
ness of a frier.

Owen Glen-  
dowr took the  
Earle of  
Mortimer.

King Henry  
went into  
Wales to pur-  
sue Owen  
Glendouerdew.

The Scots  
entered Eng-  
land.

Warrell at  
Halydowne hill.

chers saw, they stepped backe, and shotte so fiercely, that they pierced the armed mens bodies, strooke through their helmets, rined their speares, and rent their armour with light acoe. Carle Dowglas himselfe was wounded in five places, the residue of the Scottes that were not come before the hill, turning backe from the arrows that flew, strode away, but their sight nothing anayled them whilst the archers followed them: but that they were compelled to perle themselves. Carle Dowglas also was taken, and many drowned in the river of Tweede, whilst they knew not the swordes, to the number of five hundred (as was sayd.) In this battell no Lord, no knight, no esquire, gaue any stroke to the enemies, but onely God gaue the victorie to the English archers, the Lordes and armed men being onely lookers on.

That day the flower of the Scottish Chivalry was taken, to wit, the earle Dowglas, Mardake the eldest son of the Duke of Albanie, that was heire apparent to the Realme of Scotland: the earles of Murray, Angus, and Orkeney, the Lordes Mountgomerie, Erskyn, & Gram, with many other knights to the number of foure score, besides Esquires and yeomen, whose number was not knowne. There were slaine of barons, the Lord Gordon, the Lord John of Swinton that was false to both the Realmes, &c. This battell was fought on the fourteenth of September.

*Ann. reg. 4.* Edmond Mortimer which before was taken by Owen Glendouwerde, now professed to take Owens part against King Henry, and did contract marriage with the daughter of the said Owen.

*a Parliament at London.*

In a Parliament at London, which began the morrow after Michelmas day, and lasted seuen weekes, there was granted to the King a tenth and a half of the cleargie, a tenth of the borough townes, and a fiftieth of the commons through the Realme.

*1403.  
King Henry married the Lady Joan Beaufort.*

The messengers that had bin sent for Joan, late wife to John of Mountford Duke of Bypaine returned with her into England, and landed at Falmouth in Cornewall. The King met with her at Winchester the seventh of February, where they were married in the Church of S. Swichen.

The 26 of February, she was crowned at Westminster.

*Strutious lights at Scutcheon.*

In the summer following, by the Townes of Bedford and Berkeleysward, monsters were seene oftentimes mornings and evenings to come out of the woodes, under divers colours, in the likeness and similitude of men of war, which met one with another, and seemed to fight cruell battels, which although they that were a farre off might see, yet they that were nere hand could not see nor finde, which thing decreed many that coueted to appoach and come nere.

*Warren at Scutcheonbury.*

Henry Percy the younger, did sodainly shewe himselfe to be the Kings enemy, unto whom toynd Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, uncle to the said Henry: and to make their conspracte excusable, they did write unto the King about, that they pretended nothing against the allegiance nor fidelitie which they ought to the king, neither to gather to any other end an armie, but onely for the saving of their persons, and for the better gouernement of the common wealth, because the payments and taskes granted to the king for the safe custodie

die

die of the realme, were put to such uses as they ought not to be, and were unprofitably consumed and wasted.

Whereover, they complained: that because of the euill standers which their enemies had made of them, they durst not personally appeare in the kings presence, untill the prelates and barons had intreated for them, that they might be permitted to purge themselves before the king, and be lawfully iudged by their peeres, so that many that saw these letters, did praise their diligence, and extoll their fidelitie towards the common wealth. But the king being disquieted with these writings, that he might appeale the communalitie, he wrote to them, that he marvelled much, that seeing the Earle of Northumberland, and Henry his son had receiued the most part of the payments and summes granted to him by the cleargie and communalitie, for the defence of the Marches of Scotland, what occasion they had to make such manifest standers &c. But the young Henry Percy putting his confidence in the aide of Owen Glendouwerde, and Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, with the Welchmen, and men of Cheshire, published that King Richard was aliue, and was with them, whom if any man would see, they should without delay come in armour vnto the Castle of Leicester, which declaration made diuers variable motions in the hearts of many, and caused them to waue.

King Henry considering all things wisely, gathered together as many as he could, and came sodainly into the partes where the rebles kept their rage, and when Henry saw vpon a sodaine the kings banner, and was euen ready to haue scaled the towne of Wykeburg, he straightwayes bestid from the assault of the towne, and said to his men, we must now needs turne our weapons vpon them that come against vs: ye see the kings standert, neither can we, though we would, fixe any cartinghole: stand to it manfully therefore, for this day shall either bring vs all to promotion and honor, if we ouercome, or else if we be ouercome, it shall deliuer vs from the kings malice. For it is a woeful thing to die in battell for the common wealth, then after battell to die by the sentence of condemnation by the enemy: and with that, 14000. of the best men that were with Henry, made bolue & promise to stand by him so long as breath would serue, and they took the field that was commodious for them, and the king and his men lay in the field right against them. The boluyn of Henry Percy began the battell, whose arrowes fell not vpon the ground, but vpon the bodies of the kings souldiers, & the kings archers shot as fiercely against their enemies, so that on both sides many were slaine, and many thousands fled, thinking the King had been slaine: but the Earle of Dunbar withdrew the king from the place that he stode in, which was a good turne for him, for the aforesaid Henry Percy, and Earle Dowglas the Scot (then whom was neuer man more stout) raged so, that the kings standert was ouerthrowen, & those about it slaine, among whom was slaine Edmond Earle of Staffo, Sir Walter Blunt the kings standert-bearer, Sir Nicholas Langford, Sir John Coke, Sir John Caluerley, Sir John Massey, Baron of Woodington, Sir Hugh Mortimer, Sir John Clifton, & the two brethren Nicholas and Robert Generals, with many other knights and Gentlemen, and of the commons on both

*Wykeburg bridge.*

*R. Walsingham.*

Time Lina.

ides about five hundred daime. Henry the Prince was wounded in the face with an arrowe. In the meane season Henry Percy whilste he went before his men in the battel, pressing upon his enemies, was sodainly slaine, which being knowne, the kings enemies fled, but the Earle Dowglas was taken, and also Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, with Sir Richard Vernon, and the baron of Linderton, and many other were taken. This battel was fought on Mary Magdalens eue, nere vnto Shrewsbury, in a place called Old field, alias Bull field, not farre from a place called Barwike. On the Monday following, were condemned and beheaded at Shrewsbury the Earle of Worcester, the Baron of Linderton, and Sir Richard Vernon. The body of Henry Percy was deliuered to the Lord of Furniuaile to be buried, but the king caused the same body to be taken vp, and to be reposed betwene two Pillstones in the Towne of Shrewsbury, there to be kept with armed men, and afterward to be beheaded and quartered, commaunding his head and quarters to be carried vnto diuers Cities of the kingdome.

The Earle of Northumberland with a strong power was comming toward his sonne and his brother, (as men thought) or at the least towards the King; but the Earle of Westmerland, and Robert Waterton had gathered a great army, and had entred on their way to meete him sodainely, but the taking none of them both to be his friends, returned vnto the castle of Markwiche.

When all things were set in a stay at Shrewsbury, the King went towards Poike, where, when he was settled, he sent to the Earle of Northumberland, commaunding him to dismisle his company, and to come to him, and the Earle at the Kings commaundement came to him on the morrowe after Saint Laurence day, but the King receiued him not friendly, but as one that sued for pardon, and pardoning him of his life, committed him to safe custodie.

The Britons Amorikes, the Lord of Castels being their leader, invaded the Towne of Blimouth, spoiled and burnt it, and went their way free, but immediately the western naue, vnder the conduct of William Wilford esquire in the coast of Briton, toke fortie ships laden with yron, oyle, sope and tunne of Rochell, to the number of a thousand tunne, and in returning backe againe, he burnt fortie ships, and at Penarch the said William arrived with his men, and burned to wanes and Lordships the space of 6. leagues, and set the towne of St. Matthew on fire, and their shippes about the said towne.

A little before Christmasse, the Frenchmen came into the Ile of Wight, boasting that they would keepe their Christmasse there, and when a thousand of the Frenchmen were entred into the Island, and diuising flockes of Cattell toward the Sea, sodainely there came vpon them a companie of the Islande men, that forced them to leaue their pray behinde them, and to gette them gone (with shame yndough) to their shippes, with no small losse of their men.

In a parliament holden at London after the Idances of the Epiphanie, the Earle of Northumberland was restored to his former estate and dignitie. And in this Parliament was granted vnto the King an vnaccustomed talke, very heauie and painefull for the inhabitants, the manner of which talke the gray

tore

ters thereof would haue to be kept secret for euermore: and vnder that condition only it was granted, that it should not be any example to them that should come after, and that there should remaine no record thereof, but the same forthwith to be burnt.

The Frenchmen about that time came before the Ile of Wight with a great flang, and sent certaine of their men to demand in the name of King Richard, and of Quene Isabell, a tribute or subsidie of the inhabitants: who answered, that king Richard was dead, and the Quene, sometime his wife, was sent home to her parents, without condition of any tribute: but if the Frenchmers minde were to fight, they willed them to come vp, and no man should let them for the space of fye houres to refresh themselves, but when that time was expired, they should haue battell giuen them, which when the Frenchmen heard, they went away and did nothing.

The Lord of Castels in Brytaine, arrived at Blackepole, two mile out of Dertmouth with a great flang, where of the rusticall people, whom he euer despised, he was slaine. There were taken that day thre Lords, and twentie knights of name, and the vplandish people presenting their captiues vnto the King, returned with their purses full of golde.

In the moneth of Aprill, the clergie granted vnto the King a tenth.

All the summer following, Owen Glendowerdew and his Welchmen, rob, burne and destroy the countreies adioyning vnto them: he toke many captiues, and slew many Englishmen: he laid flat certaine Castles that he had taken, and some he kept for his owne defence.

The Flemmings and Brittaines toke certaine shippes of ours laden with merchandises, and slew or hanged all the sparners.

The olde Countesse of Arfozd, mother to Robert de Vere Duke of Irewland (who as we said before died at Bouaine) did cause such as were familiar with her, to bryte throughout all the parts of Chester, that King Richard was aliue, and that he should shortly come and challenge his olde estate and dignitie. She caused many harts of silver, and some of golde to be made for badgers, such as King Richard was wont to bestowe on his knights, Esquires and friends, that distributing them in the Kings name, the might the sooner allure the knights, and other ballant men of the Countrey, to be at her will and desire.

Also, the same and byte which daily was blazed abroad by one William Serle, sometimes of King Richards chamber, that the same King Richard was in Scotland, and tarried with a power of French and Scottiuhmen, caused many to beleeue that he was aliue. This William Serle had forged a priuie scale in the said Richards name, and had sent diuers comfortable letters vnto such as were familiar with King Richard, by which means, many gaue the greater credit to the Countesse, inso much, that some religious Abbots of that countrey did giue credit vnto her tales, who afterward were take at the kings commaundement, and imprisoned, because they did beleeue and giue credit to the Countesse in this behalfe, and the Countesse had all her goods confiscate, and was committed to close prison: and William Serle was byawen from prison.

P m 4

fret.

Blimmouth  
spoiled by the  
Britons.

Ann. reg. 5.

1404.  
Frenchmen  
invaded the Ile  
of Wight.A Parliament  
at London,  
and a great  
taxe.The countesse  
of Arfozd re-  
ported King  
Richard to  
be aliue.William  
Serle forging  
King Richards  
scale was by-  
awen and ex-  
ecuted.

free, through the chiefest Cities of England, and put to death at London.

About the feast of St. John Baptist, at the Kings commandment, the Earls of Northumberland came to Pontrefret, and brought with him his nephews and nephews sons, by which doing he mitigated the mindes of many, which thought that he had given the pong men counsell to rebell. There came also with him William Clifford knight, who brought with him that William Scle King Richards chamberlaine before spoken of, whom by a while he had apprehended, by which doing, the King pardoned him, so that he had kept the castle of Barwik against the Kings will and pleasure.

*Ann. reg. 6.  
The lay mans  
Parliament at  
Conventry.*

*The knights  
and Burges-  
ses, require the  
temporall  
goods to be ta-  
ken from the  
Clergie.*

*Thomas A-  
rundell Arch-  
bishop of Can-  
terburie his  
answere to the  
Burgesses.*

*John Chom-  
ney Speaker of  
the Parliam-  
ent, his  
speech.  
Answere of  
the Archbi-  
shop.*

*The Archbi-  
shop to the  
King.*

About the feast of Saint Faith, the King called a parliament at Conventry, and sent proccesse to the Sherifffes that they should chose no knights nor burgesses that had any knowledge in the Lawes of the Realme, by reason whereof, it was called the Lay mens Parliament. These picked out knights and Burgesses, could devise none other way to release the Kings lacke of money, but to deprive the Clergie of their temporall landes and goods, by this occasion given, arose great alteration and variance betwene the Clergie and the laytie. The knights affirming that they had oftentimes going forth with the King against rebels and enemies, not onely spent largely their goods, with and for the King, but also had set their bodies in great daunger and jeopardies, where in the meane season the Clergies late idle at home, and helped the King neuer a whit. But Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterburie made answer, that the cleargie did alwayes give the King as much as the lay people did, considering that they did oftner give the King tenths, then the laytie gave sixtences. And moreover, that more of their tenants did serve the King in his warres, then of the tenants of the laytie. And besides this, they prayed day and night for the prosperitie of the King, and of all them that faithfully served him.

And when the speaker of the parliament named John Cheyney, said with a loud voice & angry countenance, that he little regarded the payers of the Church, the Archb. of Canterburie answered: Wh (quoth he) now I perceive plainly to what end the fortune of this realme will come, when the Suffrages of the church are excluded and little set by, where with the gobbeart is wont to be appeased: surely that kingdome neuer continueth firme and stable, that is void of prayer and deuotion: not withstanding, thou which settest at naught the religion of the Clergie, thinke not without punishment to take away the possessions of the church, for if the Archbishop of Canterburie live, thou shalt haue euill taking of any thing that is his. When the archbishop considering that the king did thinke at these things, rose vp, and kneled downe before the king, desiring him to consider how graciously, & by Gods fauor, he had attained the kingdome, that he would consider his first promise, which was, that he would procure vnto euery man their right & title so far as lay in him. He also willed him to remember y<sup>e</sup> which he voluntarily made, which was, that he would honor and defend the church, and would cherish and maintaine the ministers thereof: he required him to consider the danger and dishonour of breaking an oath, wherefore he desired him to permit and suffer the church to enjoy the pri-  
uileges

uileges and liberties, which in time of his predecessors it did enjoy, and to feare that king, by whom all things do raigne. When the Archbishop had said these and like words, the king commaunded him to go againe to his seat, and said, that his intent and purpose was to leave the Church in as good state or better then he found it. And then the Archbishop speaking to the knights and burgesses, said: You, and such like as you be, haue giuen such counsell vnto our king, and to his predecessors, to confiscate the goods & landes of the Celles which the Frenchmen and Germans did possesse in England, and said, that by them he should heape vp great riches, as inuaded they were worthy many thousands of golde. Notwithstanding, it is most true that the king at this day is not the richer thereby of halfe a Marke; for you haue extorted, or at the least begged them out of his hands, and haue appropriated the said goods vnto your selues, so that it may be confuted that your request to haue our temporallies, is not for the kings profit, but for your owne couetousnesse: for without doubt, if the king (as God forbid he should) fulfill your wicked purpose, he should not be one farthing the richer the next yere following: and surely, I will sooner let my head be cut off, then that the Church should be destitute of the least right that pertaineth to it.

*Against to the  
knights and  
burgesses.*

The knights of the Parliament hearing this saying of the Archbishop, and seeing the constancie of their Petropolitane, held their peace, but yet persistered in minde to haue their purpose: which the Archbishop perceiving (hauling his eye on erbe side to marke what was done) laboured so to disappoint their doings, that he wanne the fauour of certaine of the temporall Lords to assist him, who constantly auouched by their consents, that the Church should neuer be spoiled of the temporallies. And here they acquite the Archbishoppe and Prelates, one pleasure for another, which they had done for them before. When the commons in this Parliament required that all such landes and reuenues as sometime belonged vnto the Crowne, and had bene giuen away, eithr by the king, or by his predecessors king Edward or Richard, should againe be restored vnto the Crowne. Vnto which request the Archbishop and other the Prelates would in no case condescend: and so it came to passe, that there was no more mention made after wards of any exactions of the temporallies. But contrariwise, the knights of the Parliament, who had thewed themselves so importunate in that errour, confessed vnto the Archbishop their fault and malice, desiring him to forgive them.

Moreover they gave him thanks, for that through his stout courage the Church at that time recovered strength, rectifying the saying of the Scripture, Thou vnder an hard Prince, and an euill time, art bolde to do good. Besides many things that were granted to the king in this Parliament, the lay people granted him two sixtences upon condition, that the Lord Furniwall should receive all the money, and use it to be spent in the kings warres.

*Two sixtences  
granted to  
the king.*

Also the Letters patents that were giuen to sundry persons, for purely reuenues by king Edward, and king Richard, were called in againe, the knights of the Parliament so adiudging it, although it rebounded to the kings dishonour. The Clergie granted the king a tenth and a halfe.

*A tenth and a  
halfe granted  
to the king.*

The

Great water  
floods.

The same time such abundance of water brake over the banks in Kent so daingly as was never sene the like in these parts, whereby were drowned beaſts and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile their losses, but also Zealand, Flanders and Holland, sustained the like by the great exerce of waters.

William  
Wickham Bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester, his  
Colledge in  
Oxford.

This yere died William Wickham bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a notable Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning, where he placed the warden & his company, to the number of lxx. besides children, servants, & ten priests, to keepe daily service, endowing þ said company with sufficient lands.

This Colledge  
at Winchester

He began the foundation of a newe Colledge at Winchester, and in five yeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Schollers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent afterward to his other Colledge at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the Newe Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

Saint Swi-  
thens in Win-  
chester the  
Church for  
the most part  
now builded  
by Wickham.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his body is entered, a very princely worke: neither did he for all this diminish any thing of his ordinary household charges, and so (as the writing engrained on his Sepulchre sheweth) both rich and poor. He deceased at the age of lxxx. yeres. He died rich, for beside that he gave to his kinfolke and to the poore, he gave somewhat to every Church in his dioces. He gave many things to the king, and to his owne servants, and to his Colledges: neither do I doubt but that he that thus lived, is now with God, whom I beseech to raise up many like Bishops in England.

William  
Wickham  
borne at Wilt-  
ham, his pre-  
fence by  
Edward the  
third.

This William Wickham was borne at Wiltcham in Hampshire, of which place he toke his surname, and was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one master Wodale of Wiltcham brought him up at schole, where he learned his Grammar, & to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester Castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Perot, alias Wickham of Wodale and made him his Cleark. Edward the third comming to Winchester Castle, liked Wickham, and toke him to service, and understanding that he had mind to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Martins in London and then Deane of Saint Martins le Grand, and then Archdeacon of Buckingham. He made him also surerpoore of his buildings, as of Windsor, Doublington in Kent, and other places. After this, he preferred him to be bearer of the priuy seale, master of the Wardes and Forests, and Treasurer of the kings revenues in Fraunce, Archdeacon of Lincoln, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancellor, and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of  
Wickham but  
a while.  
His goods  
confiscate and  
very soon after  
restored to  
him again.

Of his banishment out of the Realme wherof some have written, I find no mention thereof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knitton and other Authors at that time living, nor more of his troubles, but onely that by meanes of John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscated, and given to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in Anno. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yere next following, to wit, in Anno 1377. as more at large in those yeres

I have set downe: moreover it is manifest, that if he had sustained the losse of all his goods, and seven yeres banishment (as some have fabled) it would have bene hard for him, or rather impossible to have brought so many great works to perfection, as the world can witnesse to have bene done at his charges. To him in that Bishopricke, succeeded Henry Bewfort, sonne to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his wife Katherin Swinford, he was translated from Lincoln to Winchester, and Philip Reppon Abbot of Leicester, was at the kings request made Bishop of Lincoln.

Henry Bew-  
fort Bishop of  
Winchester.

The king kept his Christmas at Eltham in Kent.

About the feast of Saint Valentine, the sonnes of the Earle of March were taken out of the Castell of Windsor, and led away into Wales to Owen Glendowerdew, but shortly after were recovered againe. The Smith that made the keyes, by the which they that conveyed them, got into them, had first his hands, and then his head cut off.

1405.  
Earle of Mar-  
ches sonnes.

The Lady Spencer sister to the Duke of Poike, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, before executed at Wyktoke, being apprehended and committed to prison, accused her brother the Duke of Poike to be chiefe Author in stealing away of the Earle of Marches sonnes, wherefore the said Duke was kept by Sir John Pelham in the Castell of Pemsey till the next Parliament.

After the feast of the Purification of our Lady, the king assembled his Barons at London, to treat of the government of the Realme, and to have ayde of money to be given him, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his request. In the Lent following therefore, the king caused the Cleargie and the Barons to assemble at S. Albones for the matter aforesaid, but by reason the nobles stood against him, there was nothing done, and so departed on Palm Sunday.

About the 10. of March, in a fight betwixt the Englishmen and Welchmen, the sonne of Owen Glendowerdew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or slaine.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Archbishoppe of Poike, Thomas Mowbray Earle of Marhall, Thomas Lord Bardolph and other, conspiring against King Henry, assembled together the Citizens of Poike, and many other, to stand with them for the commoite of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be the readier unto this business, they set Articles upon the doores of the Monasteries and Churches of the same Citie, written in English against the king, because he had put downe King Richard, offering themselves for; those Articles to live and dye, which caused great number of people to resort to them: but Ralph Nevell Earle of Westmerland that was not farre off, together with John Duke of Lancaster, the kings sonne, being enforced of these things, gathered an army with speede to goe against the Archbishops company, but all was in vaine, for the Archbishops power was farre greater than theirs, whereupon the Earle of Westmerland sent messengers, to enquire of the Archbishoppe the cause of so great an assembly in armour, contrary to the kings peace: wherunto the Archbishop answered, that he toke nothing in hand against the kings peace, and he was in

Conspiracy a-  
gainst King  
Henry by the  
Archbishop of  
Poike & other.

army

armour, and munished with men, onely for feare of the king whom he coulde not safely come unto to speake; but his purpose (he said) was good and commodious both for the king and the Realme, if happily they would knowe it: and then he shewed a Schedule, in which the Articles were contained, which when the Earle of Northumberland had read, hee with word and countenance praised the Bishops holy and vertuous intent, and promised, that hee and his would prosecute the same with the Archbishop.

The Archbishop being glad of this, belied the Earles wordes, and persuaded the Earle Marshall, being unwilling thereunto, to go with him to a place appointed to talke together, to whom they with like number came, and the writing with the Articles was read over: straightway the Earle and they that were with him gave their assent to these articles: then said the Earle being subtiller than the rest, behold the labour that we have taken in hand is come to such ende as we would have it, and the people hath now bene long in armour, let some of your men beare word unto the people to go to their way home, and to lay downe their armour, and every man to fall to his occupation and accustomed labour: in the meane season, we, in token of concord will dinke together, that the people on both sides shall see it, and without delay, after they had taken each other by the bands, a knight was sent on the Archbishops behalfe, to beare word to the people that it was peace, and to command euery man to lay downe their armour, and to go to their owne home.

The people beholding signes of peace, and the Lords drinkeing together, being wearied with the vnaccustomed trauell of warre, turned the reines of their hildes homeward, and so it came to passe, that when the people of the Archbishops side went away, the number of the aduersaries increased, as before it was appoynted, and the Archbishop did not perceiue that he was betrayed, untill such time as the Earle arrested him: hee arrested the Marshall also, and many other with him, to all which it was promised that they should haue no harme, but that promise was not kept, for both the Archbishop and the Earle Marshall were brought to Pontefract to the king, who in the meane while was advanced thither with his power, and from thence he went to York, whither the prisoners were also brought: others say that the king sojourning at Bishops Thorpe, the Archbishop was brought thither, where sir William Fulford knight learned in the lawes, sitting on an high stage in the Hall, gave iudgement that the Archbishop should be beheaded: he was therefore set on an ill fauoured iade, with his face towarde the horse's tale, and carried with great shame and disgrace enough to a feld betwixt Wake and Thirsk: where with five strokes his head was smitten off on the morrow after: with him were condemned and executed the Earle Marshall, sir John Lamplough, and sir Robert Plompton. After the king had ransomed and other wise punished by grievous fines the Citizens of York, he departed from York with an army of 37000, fighting men furnished with all prouision, marching northward against the Earle of Northumberland. At his coming to Durham the Lord Hastings, the Lord Falconbridge, sir John Colville of the Dale, and sir John Griffith, being convicted of the conspiracy, were

Archbishop of  
York beheaded.

were beheaded. The Earle of Northumberland perceiuing the kings intent, got himselfe to Berwik with 300. horse, and from thence into Scotland. The king being bent against the Earle of Northumberland, went to Berwik, from whence the Earle fled into Scotland, and the Lord Bardolph with him, whom Dauid Lord Fleming the Scot receiued into alliance. The king understanding that the Earle was fled, he commaunded them in the Castell to render it unto him, which when they refused to do, the king caused a great Gun to be shot, which ouerthrew part of a Tower, whereupon they of the Castell gaue ouer, and submitted themselves to the king, who caused some of them to be beheaded, and the residue to be sent to prisons. After this, the Castell of Alnwick, and the rest of the Earles Castles were with small adoe rendered to his hands: with which successe the king being encouraged, went straight into Wales, where contrariwise nothing prospered with him, wherefore he returned, losing charets, carts, and wagons, to the number of fiftie, with his treasure, so that coming backe to Worcester, he sent for the Archbishop and Bishops, and declared to them his misfortune, desiring them to helpe him: to whom the Archbishop answered, that he would talke with the Clergie in that matter. In the meane season the Frenchmen came to succor the Welchmen with 140. ships: they landed in Milford haue, hauing lost almost all their horses for lacke of fresh water. The Lord Barkley and Henry Pay burned fiftie of those ships in the same haue. These Frenchmen besieged the town of Carmarthen, and took it, granting to the inhabitants all their moueable goods, and to go whither they would.

The same time the foresaid Lord Barkley, Thomas Swinborne, and Henry Pay took foure and six ships of the French, in the which they took the Lordward of France and eight Captaines more.

The towne of Cruce Kose or Koston in Northfolshire was bent.

This yere all the weares in Thomas from the towne of Stanes in the West, unto the water of Spedway in the East, by the Spaloe and communalitie of London, were destroyed, and the trunks bent, for the which great plea and discorde followed betwixne Thomas Arundell Archbishoppe of Canturbury, and other Lords and knights of the one party, and the Spaloe and communalty on the other party, but the Citizens preuailed by vertue of their charter and statutes. Roger Walden Bishop of London deceased.

The first of March a Parliament beganne, which lasted nigh one whole yere, for after the knights of the Parliament had long delayed to graunt to the king a subsidy, yet in the ende being overcome, they granted the king demanded. The Prioresse and the friers that lined of almes, were forced euery one to pay halfe a Marke. By decre of this Parliament the Wytons that serued the Quene were expelled the Realme, and two of her daughters were also sent with them.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolf, by the counsell of Dauid Fleming fled into Wales, for hee had declared to them, that the Scottes had conspired to deliuer them vnto their owne king, in exchange for other prisoners: and for this doing of Dauid Fleming, the tray-

Frenchmen  
retire the  
Welshmen.

Ann. reg. 7

Koston bent.  
Stanes in the  
West was de-  
stroyed.

1406,

Nicholas Bub-  
wich.  
Parliament.  
A great tax.

terat



The king of  
Scots com-  
and being taken  
on the sea.

ferous Scottes flew him, and raised such a civil warre amongst themselves, that in the end they were constrained to request truce for a yere, which when they had obtained, the Scots sent James the sonne of Robert king of Scots, being but nine yeres olde, towards Fraunce, there to be brought up, and to be instructed in the pleasant eloquence of the French tongue, whom certaine Mariners of Cleve in Suffolke took on the seas, and with him a Bishop, and the Earle of Arkeney, to whom his father had committed him; and they brought him into England, and delivered him to the king, who forthwith burst out into a laughter, and said, Surely the Scots might have sent him to me, for I can speake French. The Bishop escaped and fled, but the Earle of Arkeney, and the said James the young lad, was sent to the Tower of London, where he remained prisoner till the second yere of Henry the first, which was aboute eightene yeres.

Henry Spencer Bishop of Spozwich deceased, to whom succeeded Alexander Bishop of that Church.

The French  
men came to  
help: Owen  
Glendour.  
new.

The Frenchmen came to helpe Owen Glendouerdew with 38. ships, where of eight were taken full of armed men, the rest escaped into Wales, but not long after were taken fiftene ships laden with wine and ware.

Whilste the Parliament yet continued, the Duke of Poike was restored to his old dignitie, whom many men thought to have bene dead in prison.

Ann. reg. 8.

Edmond Holland Earle of Kent, married the Ladie Lucie the Duke of Gloucesters daughter in the Bishoppe of S. Mary Ourey in Southwarke, where he the same day received 100000. markes for her dowry.

Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Durham, after he had sate 18. yeres in that Bishoppe, deceased: he new builded the bridges of Whinkey, Parrow, and Auckland: he bestowed on the cloyster at Durham 600. pounds, on the Dozmitoile 330. markes, and 400. pounds by his testament: he builded the steeple at Wolme, boine downe by force of water rising: he repaired the Church and the Hall of the Manor there: he builded a great part of the steeple called the Lanterne of the Monastery at Poike: he builded a faire Chappell at Swine in Holborne, where he was boine, &c. Thomas Langley succeeded him in the Bishoppe of Durham.

Tho. Walling

Henry Pay, and other with him of the fine ports, with fiftene ships, take an hundred and twenty ships which lay at anchor in the sea of Britaine, laden with yron, salt, oyle, and Roshell wine.

Pesidence.

This summer, through corruption of the ayre, so great a plague was shed upon mens bodies, as was not sene the like in many yeres in this lande, so that men might say:

The south winds warme did blow, with heat pestiferous,  
And pesidence did beare great rule in Cities populous.

For at London in short while it consumed aboue 30000. men and women, and in the countrey to wnes great mortalitie fell among the husbandmen, so that great households died cleane up, and the houses were emptied.

In time of this pesidence the King durst not come nere to the Citie of London, wherefore being at the Castell of Leedes in Kent, he departing from

thence

thence, toke shipping at Quinborough in the Isle of Sheppey, to sayle ouer into Essex, and so to go to Blashey, there to passe the time till the mortalitye were ceased. But as the king was on the sea, certaine French Pirates which lay lurking at the Thames mouth to watch for some pray, got knowledge of the kings passage, and thereupon as he was in the midst of his course, they entred amongst his fleet and toke foure vessels next to the kings shippe, and in one of the same vessels sir Thomas Rampton, the kings vicechamberlaine, with all his chamber suite and apperell. They followed the king so nere, that if his ship had not bene swift, he had landed sooner in Fraunce, than in Essex: But such was his good hap that he escaped, and arrived at his appointed port.

King Henry in  
perill to haue  
bin taken on  
the sea by the  
French.

Henry Bewet Bishop of Bath, was translated to the Archbishoppiche of Poike, and Robert Halom was made Bishop of Saltsbury, Richard Clifford was translated from Worcester to the Bishoppiche of London, and Thomas Powell from Landasse to the see of Worcester.

Bishops trans-  
lated.

About the sixteenth day of August deceased, sir Robert Knowles knight, at his Manor of Sconethorpe in Spozfolke, he was brought to London, and there honourably buried by the Lady Constance his wife, in the white Friars Church which he had newly recedified and builded.

Sir Robert  
Knowles.  
John Leland.

This sir Robert Knowles had bene a most valiant Captaine in the warres of France, during the raigne of Edward the third, and Richard the second, whose force the Realme of France both felt and feared, so did the Duke of Burgundie of Britaine, and all the people from hence to Spayne. Of him in his life were made verses in Latin, which may be englished thus.

Register of  
Becmondley.

O Robert Knowles, most worthy of fame,  
By thy prowess France was made tame:  
Thy manhood made the Frenchmen to yeeld,  
By dint of sword in towne and field.

Utrics.

This sir Robert Knowles founded in the towne of Pontfract a Colledge to the honour of the holy Trinitie, with an Hospitall ioyned thereunto. In the which Colledge was placed a Paister, and six or seven Wykes, and in the Hospitall 13. pore men and women. He was once minded to haue made this Colledge at his manour of Sconethorpe, but at the request of Constance his wife (a woman of meane birth, and sometime of a dissolute life afore her marriage) he turned his purpose, and made it in the very place of Pontfract, where he was boine, endowing the same with 180. pound land by yere. He also builded the faire new great bidge at Rochester, ouer the riuer of Medway, with a Chappell and a Chauntrie at the crosse end thereof. In the which Chappell was sometime a table hanging, wherein was noted the benefactors to that bidge, as followeth.

Colledge and  
hospitall at  
Pontfract.

Sir Robert Knowles founder of the Trinitie Chappell at Rochester bidge,  
Constance wife to Knowles.  
Sir John Cobham Lord, principall benefactor to the making of Rochester bidge: Margaret wife to Cobham.

Rochester  
bidge.



Thomas Boucher Cardinal.  
 John Morton Archbishop.  
 Henry Chicheley Archbishop.  
 Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham.  
 John Langedon Bishop of Rochester.  
 Thomas Arundell Archbishop.  
 Sir John Cornwall Lord Fanhap.  
 Richard Whittington Mayor of London.  
 William Cromer.  
 Geoffrey Boleine Mayor of London.  
 John Darby Draper, Alderman of London.  
 William Middleton Mercer of London.  
 John Martin Justice.  
 Sir William Nottingham chiefe Baron of the Exchequer.  
 William Wangforde.  
 John Buckingham Bishop of Lincoln.  
 John Kempe Bishop of London.  
 Sir William Richall.  
 Sir John at Pole.

All these had given money or lands towards the building and repaying of the said bridge.

Notwithstanding this table, I finde in recoꝝd as followeth: The bridge betwixt the Citie of Rochester, and the village of Strode was in the fourth yere of king Richard the second, soze decayed or broken downe by tempest of weaether, and inundation of the river of Medway, whereupon William Basing Master of the hospitall at Strode, and Nicholas Hering, were licensed by the King to repaire the same. And in the eleventh yere of the same king Richard the second, John Cobham, and Robert Knowles beganne their charge towards the building of the said bridge, and in the eightene yere of the same Richard, the said John Cobham founded a Chantry in the Chappell there of thys Chapleins, and gave lands to the bridge in the 22. yere of Richard the second: and thus much of the recoꝝd have I noted.

Ann. reg. 9.

I find further by John Leiland, that one John Warner a Merchant of Rochester made the new coping of Rochester bridge. And William Warham Archbishop of Canterbury made the pion pikes and barres about the same coping.

Hospitall at  
Rome for  
Englishmen.

This Robert Knowles, was also one of the founders of an hospitall in the Citie of Rome, in manner following: for that there was no pation of the world, but had some kinde of hospitalitie in Rome, save onely the people of England, certaine Englishmen beeing in Rome, procured licence of the Pope to build an hospitall, in place where Thomas Becker Archbishoppe of Canterbury had sometime builded a Chappell of the holy Trinitie. In this hospitall which they builded, was to be releued, a gentleman thys daies, bread, wine, and ware: a commoner eight daies and nightes, meale, drinke, and lodging. And if any woman happen to be nigh her time of

liverance

liverance, so that she dare not take her journey, she to be honestly kept till she be purified: and if she be of power, to take her child with her: if not, to be kept there untill it were seven yeres old.

The founders of this hospitall were, Sir Robert Braybrooke Bishop of London, Thomas Brampton Bishoppe of Rochester, Sir John Philpot and his wife, Sir Robert Knowles, Sir Hugh Calueley, Sir John Haukewood, Sir John Thornam, Knights, John Twiforde, John Shepard and Alice his wife, Robert Cristall and Agnes his wife, Robert Windleront, Walter Whitchers, Robert Pyne, Adam Staple, Henry Line Draper, and other Citizens of London in the yere of our Lord 1380. in the Raigne of King Richard the second; which Hospitall was againe newe rectified and made a goodly house in the yere of our Lord 1449. towards the charges whereof, was money gathered in cuertie Parish in Englande, but that came to small effect, the charges of collecting and conueying was such, that, there came towards the wooꝝke not past one thousande Duckettes in one whole yere.

In November a Parliament being called at London, a tare of money was devised of the whole Realme. Parliament at London.

This yere was a soze and sharpe winter, and such aboundance of snow, which continued December, Januarie, februarye and March, so that almost all small birds dyed through hunger and cold. Whiles the King held a great Councell at London with the Nobles of the Realme, Henry Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Lord Bardolf came againe into England, who after long journeying, when they came to the Towne of Wyke, they caused to be proclaimed, that who so would have libertie, should take by armour and weapon and follow them, whereupon much people resorted to them: but Sir Thomas Rockley Scherife of Northshire, with other Knights of that countrey went against them, and at Biamham soze nere to Daleswold, fought with them a great battell, and slue the Earle, whose head was straight waies cut off. The Lord Bardolf was soze wounded and taken alive, but died shortly after. This battell was fought on the xiiii day of february. The Earles head was put on a stake, and carried openly through the Citie of London, and let on London bridge. The Bishoppe of Bangor was taken with the Lordes, but pardoned of his life, because he was not found in armour. The King went to Wyke, and there condemned such as transgressed, confiscated their goods, pacified the countrey, hanged the Abbot of Wale, who had bene in armour, and returned to the south partes againe.

1408.

Upon the seventh of September there were such floods of rayne, as the sode men of that age had neuer sene before. Edmond Holland Earle of Kent whilsk he besieged the Castell of Wyke in Brittain, he was wounded with an arrow of a Crossbow in the head, notwithstanding he toke the Castell and destroyed it to the ground, and not long after his bzaines rotted, and he died.

Edmond Holland  
Earle of Kent  
wounded to death.

The Countesse of Kent that was daughter to Barnabe Wilcount Lord of  
 A n Apillan,

Ann. reg. 10.

William having no issue by her husband, was now married by the king, after her husbands death to marry with his bastard brother, the Earle of Dorset, but the chole for her husband, Henry Mortimer, a goodly young Bachelor, by whom she had issue Anne married to sir John Aubremond.

About the feast of All-Saints the Cardinals of Burges came into England, being sent from the Colledge of Cardinals, to informe the King and Cleargie of the inconstant dealing of Pope Gregory, as also he had informed the French King and his Cleargy and Realme, to the ende that those two kings might set to their helping handes, to induce the saide Gregory to observe the oath he had made, and that by the magnificence of those two kings, concord might be made in the Church, unto the which businesse the French King had gladly granted, and sent messengers unto Pope Gregory, who notwithstanding was obstinate.

The King of England when he understood the Cardinales message, he commaunded that courtesie and gentle entertainement should be given him, and offered to beare his charges so long as he would abide in England.

The King with his Quene kept their Christmasse at Eltham in Kent.

After the feast of the Epiphany, the Archbishop of Canterbury caused to assemble at London, all the Cleargy of the Realme, to chole personages mete to go to the generall councill holden at Pisa, whereunto were chosen Robert Holam Bishop of Salisbury, Henry Chiseley Bishop of Saint Davids, and Thomas Chillingdon Bishop of Christes Church in Canterbury, and the king had sent before John Coluile knight, and master Nicholas Rixton Clearkes, with letters to be given to them. And in the letter to the Pope it was written.

Most holy Father, our humble recommendations in aliall wise premised. The inscrutable wisdome of the high God doth sometime dissemble in some sort, the finnes of men, if at length they will yet amend, though not through servile feare, but by their aliall conscience moving or picking them. And how much the longer he deferrith his yre in this life, so much the more grievously will he punish in the life to come, as is to be feared. We therefore in our mindes recalving the long, and as it were the intractate schisme now in the Church of God being very hotte, truly we feare, as by likely hode is to be feared, that it ought to be imputed to all Princes of the Christian Religion before God and man, unto a slothfull negligence, the crueltye of such an error, nourished thus long: Therefore specially because the Cleargie of enerie kingdome, eyther feare, or the blindness of avarice causing them, doe cover this wicked schisme under the veyle of devotion, and holinesse, so that those Princes, to whom the materiall sword is committed, for the defence and safegarde of the Church, about this foresaid schisme, to be utterly extirped, they neyther goe about to helpe any great assistance of courteous perswasion, nor to put in practise the sword for the purpose. Whereupon, having heard often-times of many, and understood

now

now a good while agoe by letters of the most reverend in Christ, our fathers the 11. Cardinales of your Colledge, and by the report of the reverend in Christ, the Lord Cardinal of Bourdeaux our friend, worthily beloved on the behalfe of the Colledge, comming to the presence of us, and of our first begotten sonne the Prince of Wales, and of the prelates and priors of our Realme, how that not onely hee, but also the Cardinales of your said Colledge, by occasion of the continuance of this schisme, contrary unto the bolue and othe made by your holinesse, to renounce the papacie, have withdrawn from you all their obedience, and doe determine to holde a generall councill in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady nowe nexte to come at the Citty of Pisa, a place indubde fit, as it is said, and honest, and by your holinesse commended for mete and convenient, as it is affirmed, that this may bee done, especially by force of a certaine obligation for occasion of the schisme to bee extirped by your holinesse, whilset you were yet in minority, of your owne accord, and solemnly entred or made in the conclau with the Cardinales aforesaid, and after that you were reueiled to the papall dignitie, by the subscription of your holy handes, openly renewed and confirmed, as by the viewe of a certaine publike instrument before us and the States abovesaid exhibited it plainly, as hath to us appeared, not knowing how the union of the Church may be come unto by any other way more commodiously. Whereupon the sayde Cardinall hath requested us, upon consideration of the premises, and other reasonable causes by him openly exprest, and in the same letters evidently comprehended, which indubde greatly moued both the consciences of us, and of the said States, that we should take care to employ our counsell and ayde about the premises, to the said Colledge, for the respect of the godlie zeale and loue which thereto we beare, together with other catholike Princes, and that we should send our Ambassadors and prelates of our Realme by themselves, or by procurators to the said councill. We therefore, desirous to shew the zeale and intent which we beare and haue to the same union, and noting with more hede the wholesome and holy intention of the same Colledge in the premises, as other Princes doe note the same, as we here at this present, willing also, so farre as in us lieth to the honour of God, and that we may auoyde the sword edge of his wrath, to doe our partes about the reformation of the same state of the Church, having taken with our said sonne, and also with the prelates and Nobles aforesaid, ripe deliberation, we beseech with all humilitie, and in the bowelles of Iesus Christ, exhorting, doe require your clemencie, whose state and honour upon diuers causes as a devout sonne of the Church, so farre as with God we might, we haue euer embraced, and doe embrace by the expresse and whole assent of the States aforesaid, that as well for the auoyding of the manifest slaughter of the Church, as of the Apostolike see, and for the desirefull conseruation of your estate and honour, and also for the desire of the faithfull procurators that will come to the said place and day together, and with all quietnesse, for the respect of him specially that giueth grace to the humble,

¶ n 2

that

King Henry  
writeth to the  
Pope.

that we will vouchsafe to be present at the day and place before mentioned, in the spirit of humbleness, to fulfill the bolue together, and such manner of effectually, as we trust you will. For we hold for certain, that, as we are informed, the Cardinals of both Colledges have come together in one and the same consonance of minde about the premises, and as it were all the Bishops Christians set forth themselves with glad mindes in their fauour and ayde, howsoever they seeke from els-where starting holes, the same Cardinals by Gods helpe assisting them, shall obtaine the effect of such an union: neyther doth it seeme to vs, or to the inhabitants of our Realme expedient, that we should disagree from other Catholike princes in so holy a purpose in any thing, but rather that we should cause our Ambassadors and Bishops of our Realme by themselves or their procurators, as we beleue that other will do the like, that the vniuersall Church may be nourished with the pleasant taste of a wishfull union. Moreover, most blessed father, if the prouidence of the Apostolicke sea would vouchsafe to attend and marke, what great harme & danger is springing by throughout the whole world, not onely of bodies, but also of soules, redeemed by Christs blood, haue hitherto chanced vnder pretence of the continuation of the said Schisme, and specially the slaughter of Christian people, which aboue the number, as men say, of two hundred thousand are perished by the raging of diuers warres that haue risen in sundry partes of the world, and euen now of late, to the number of thirtie thousand, which (by reason of the dissention had vpon the Bishopricke of Leige betwixt two which doe strue and contende, the one in the authoritie of the true Pope, and the other by the authoritie of the antipope) were in slaughter felde (a lamentable thing to be spoken) slayne and destroyed. Truly, the Apostolicke sea would be in great heavinesse of heart, and would rather so sake the honour of the Apostolicall sea, than then to see from henceforth such wicked slaughter to be committed, and would take example of the true mother, who before King Salomon, rather chose to giue place, than that the child should be cut in peces. And albeit by the creation of the nine Cardinals, against your oath (that we may be other mens words) lastly by you made, of the which Act a vehement cause of admiration is rayed, it may in some wise be presumed, that as is like to be thought, your intention doth not tend to the ende of extirping the Schisme, yet God forbid that your holiness should circumspectly be noted of such unconscience of minde by any manner of person, whereupon the last error may be accounted worse than the first, not onely to be execrated of every Christian soule, but also to be expelled with all indignour. These things which we write, of a pure heart and vnfained faith doe procede: and therefore (benigne father) if it please you, let these things with due consideration be weyed (most blessed father) let him incline your heart, and corroborate the same in this holy worke, happily to be executed, who for peace sake, when he was the King of all, endured the forme of a servant. Written vnder our Signet, in our palace at Westminster, the 12. day of Nouember.

Thus hau I set downe the Epistle which the king sent to the Pope, that it may

may appeare vnto all men how modestly he attempted to induce the Pope to performe his vow and oath, to the end the fault should not appere to be in him, that the unity of the Church was not reformed.

According to appointment the Cardinals of both Colledges, to wit, of Gregory, and of Bennet met at Wisa, effectually to intreat of the reformation of agreement, where almost all the Bishops of the whole Latin world, met together, and honourable men were elected to helpe the Cardinals in this case, who calling for the grace of the holy spirit, agreed in one, and chose one to be head of the Church, refusing the other two, and called his name Alexander the fifth, and reicard both Gregory and Benedick.

This yere was a great play at the Skinners well, nere vnto Clearchenwell besides London, which lasted eight daies, & was of matter from the creation of the world: there were to see the same, the most part of the nobles and gentles in England: and forthwith after began a copall iusting in Smithfield, betwene the Earle of Somersset and the Seneschall of Denalt, sir John Cornwal, sir Richard of Arundel, and the son of sir John Cheyney against other Frenchmen.

Thomas Bewfort knight sonne to Iohn of Gaunt was made Chancellor, and Henry Scroope was made Treasurer.

Owen Glendowerdew, though he was pardoned by the king at the request of David Holbech Esquire: yet being now diuirt to such misery, that in manner despairing of all comfort, he fled into desert places, and solitary cades, where being destitute of all reliefe and succour, byading to thew his face to any creature, and finally, lacking to sustaine nature, for pure hunger miserably pined away and died.

In a Parliament holden at London, in the Lent season, the knights and burgesses presented to the king a bil in this forme: To the most excellent Lord the king, and all the Nobles in this present Parliament assembled, your faithfull commons humbly do shew, that our Soeraigne Lord the king may haue the temporal possessions and lands, which by the Bishops, Abbots, and Priors are proudly spent and wasted in this Realme, which would suffice to find 150. Carles, 1500. Knights, 6000. Esquires, and 100. hospitals more than now be, &c. But when they went about to declare out of what places these great summes were to be leised, whereby the foresaid states should be endowed, they wanted in their account: wherefore the king commaunded them, that from henceforth they should not presume to moue any such matter.

Sir Robert Vnfeulle, Admiral of England annopied the countreys on the sea coastes of Scotland: for comming into the frith with tenne ships of warre and lying there fourtene daies together, landing euery day on the one side of the river, or on the other, taking prizes, spoiles, and prisoners, notwithstanding the Duke of Albany, and the Earle Douglas were ready there with a great power to resist him: he bent the Galliot of Scotland (being a ship of great account) with many other vessels lying the same time at the Blacknes, ouer against Liffie. At his returne from thence, he brought with him 14. shippes, and many other great prizes of clothes, both wollen and linnen,

A great play at Skinners well. Iusting in Smithfield.

An. reg. 11.

Owen Glendowerdew died miserably.

A Parliament at London.

1410. A bill put up against the Clergy to take from them their temporal possessions. Tho. Walling.

Sir Robert Vnfeulle sent against the Scots.

Robin Mend-  
market.

pitch, tarre, wood, meale, wheat and rie, which being sold abroad, the markets were well holden thereby, and therefore he had given him the name of Robin Mend-market: shortly after his returne from the Sea, he made a roade into Scotland by land, hauing with him his nephew, young Gilbert Vmframuile Earle of Angus, being but fourtene yeeres of age, they burnt at that time Jedworth, and the most part of Wpsteadale.

An. reg. 12.

Upon the euen of Saint Iohn Baptill, Thomas and Iohn, the kings sonnes, being in East-cheap at London, at supper, after midnight, a great debate hapned betwene their men, and men of the court, lasting an houre, till the Palatour and Sheriffes with other Citizens ceased the same.

This yeere king Henry founded a Colledge at Battale field in Shropshire, in the place where he ouerran Sir Henry Percy and other, suppressed the second of Edward the first, balaced by the yeere fiftie foure pounds, two shillings and two pence,

1411.

Iohn Prendergast knight, and William Long, kept the seas from Pirates and Kiuers, so that the passage by sea was quiet, but by the ill willers they were accused of theft and robbery themselves, whereupon the knight toke Sanctuary at Westminster, where he could not haue an house or cottage to hide his head, so that the same was forbidden by the king, so that he was forced to lie in a tent which he let up in the Church porch, and to haue men to watch him in the night season, for feare of his enemy: but his fellow William remained on the sea, untill the Admirall had prepared ships ready, and went in person to fetch him, which he could not do, till he promised him by his fidelitie, that he should haue no harme, which promise notwithstanding, William was imprisoned in the Tower of London.

The Realme of Fraunce being disquieted with the two factions of the Duke of Burgoyne, and the Duke of Dilliance, sonne to the Duke of Dilliance lately slaine (at Paris) by the procurement of the Duke of Burgoyne, the kings of Spaurre, and Aragon, the Dukes of Bituria, and Britaine, the Gascoyners, and Aquitaines, the Earles of Hups and Arminake, and many other ayding the Duke of Dilliance therein. The Duke of Burgoyne, whom the French king, and his eldest sonne, called the gouernour of France, favoured, seeing that the contrary part was very strong, sent ambassadours into England, desiring the kings aide against the Duke of Dilliance, and promised many things, amongst the which, he promised his daughter in marriage to the Prince, and a great summe of gold with her. To whom the king answered: we aduertise you not to fight with your enemy in this case, who sufficeth to bere you, for the death of his father by you procured: but as much as you lieth, endeavour your selfe to mitigate the young mans wrath, and promise to make him reasonable satisfaction according to the aduise of your friends. And if then he will not cease from persecuting you, get you to the strongest place of your dominion, and there gather such power as may be able to put off his force. If then after this, he will make warre against you, you shall haue the suffer occasion to fight with him, and in such case, we will shew you such fauour, as ye haue demanded. Thus there were sent

sent ouer to his aide Thomas Earle of Arundell, Gilbert Vmframuile Earle of Angus, the Earle of Arme, Sir Robert Vmframuile knelt to the said Gilbert, Sir Iohn Oldcastle, Lord of Cobham, Sir Iohn Grey, and William Porter with twelue hundred archers, they toke shipping at Dover, and landed at Cluice, from whence they went to Arras, where they found the Duke of Burgoyne, of whom they were ioyfully receiued, and from thence he appointed them to Barlowne, where he assembled a power of his owne subsidies, marched toward Arras, and so to Marquon, where he lodges his Flemings. The Duke of Dilliance had thirty thousand fighting men, drawing towards him, and laide siege about one part thereof, there were many skirmishes, but finally they within the Towne abandoned it, and the Flemings destroyed it. From thence the Duke went to Beolle, and it was destroyed euen as it were in passing by it, from thence they went before Roy in Vermondou, which yielded to them, from thence to Montiden, &c. The Duke of Burgoyne went to Arras, from thence to Roy, from thence to Byetoune, and after to Beaunais, the Earle of Arundell was with him in his ayde with five hundred Englishmen, from thence he went to Poitoulle, from thence to Puilent, and so to Paris. The Duke of Dilliance was lodged at Saint Dionis, and at Saint Clow, with a great power. About the tenth of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Burgoyne issued out of Paris, and went to Saint Clow, where putting his people in order, the Earle of Arundell and his people made a great assault, so that they within were bounden to yield to the will of the English men, wherefore they were bountifully rewarded by the Duke of Burgoyne, and then returned into England.

King Henry created his brother Thomas Bewfort, Earle of Dorset, and his sonne Thomas of Lancaster that was steward of England and Earle of Arundell, he created Duke of Clarence.

A squire of Wales named Riccap Dee, which had long time rebelled against the king, was brought to London, and there halwen, hanged and quartered.

After the feast of All-saints, a Parliament was begun at London. The king caused a new kind of shobles to be made, which were of lesse value then the olde by foure pence in the shoble, so that fiftie shobles should wale a pound Troy weight.

Edward Duke of Poike this yeere began the foundation of the Colledge of Fodringhey in Northamptonshire, for a master, twelue priests, eight Clerkes, and thirtene Choristers, Henry the first gave landes thereunto, of Wypos allans by him suppressed, and mought open d yereley (as was valued at the suppression) foure hundred and nincty pounds, eleven shillings.

Iohn Duke of Burgoyne, hauing now the government, both of the French king and of his Realme, he persecuted the Duke of Dilliance and his complices, that at the last, the same Duke Charles, was forced to fende into Englands certain persons, as his procuratours, to offer in his name unto King Henry, and to his sonnes, certaine conditions, which were

King Henry  
and the  
Duke of Bur-  
goyne against  
the Duke of  
Dilliance.

Hist. Lewis  
Dout.

An. reg. 13.

Parliament  
at London.  
New coyn of  
gold.

1412.  
Colledge at  
Fodringhey.

were concluded the eight day of May. The said Charles Duke of Brittain sought the King of England to send unto him 8000. men to aide him against the Duke of Burgoyne and his complices, which daily procured the French King to make war upon them.

King Henry curiously entertained the messengers, and upon consideration had of their offers, which seemed to make greatly both for his honour and profite, as Duke of Guyen, he took upon him to succour and defend them against all men, as their Lord and soveraigne, and so sending away the messengers, promised to send them aide very shortly.

King Henry  
mind'd a boy-  
age into France.

When said the King to the Archbishop of Canterbury, Lord Chancellor, do you not see howe the Almighty hath disposed for vs, beholde now the acceptable time, let vs goe into France, to winne with small adoe, that which is our right: And surely it was thought he would haue recovered France, at that time, if strength of body had bene answerable to his minde, but being oppressed with great sickness he could not endure, neither to go nor ride, yet he commaunded all those to come to him that held of him by knights service, as if he had meant to go over the sea, but the Lords of the Realme perswaded him to commit that charge unto his second sonne Thomas.

T. Otborne.

In the meane time Henry the Prince, sonne to the King, offended with certaine of his fathers family, which were said to solwe discorde betwixt the father and the sonne, he wrote unto all the parts of the Realme, encouraging himselfe to retell all the practises and imaginations of such detractors, and slanderous people, and to make the matter more manifest to the world, he came to the King his father about the feast of Peter and Paul, with such a number of his friends and wellwillers, as a greater had not bene seen in those daies. He was straightwaies admitted to his fathers presence, of whom this one thing he besought him of, that if such as had accused him might be considered of without accusation, that they might be punished, not according to their deserts, but yet after their lies were pioued against them, they might somewhat taste of that which they had meant, although not to the uttermost: to the which request the King seemed to graunt, but he tolde him, that he must tarry a Parliament, that such might be tried and punished by iudgement of their pères. Thus saith Thomas Otborne. So the same effected (but in more ample manner) writeth the translator of Titus Lilius (who wrote an history of Henry the first, and dedicated it to Henry the first,) as he was informed by the Earle of Wyndesore, an eye witness of the same, as followeth: During the sickness of the King (saith he) some cruel disposed people laboured to make dissention betwixt the King, and the prince his sonne, by reason whereof, and by the Aides of youth which he exercised more then meanely, and for the great recourse of people unto him, of whom his Court was at all times more abundant than his fathers, the King suspected that he would presume to blurge the Crowne. he being alive, which suspicious jealousie was occasion, that he in part withheld his affection, and singular loue from the Prince: but when the Noble Prince was aduertised of his fathers jealousie, and mistrust, by some his secret friends of the Kings counsaile,

Titus Lilius.

counsaile, he disguised himselfe in a gowne of blue satten, or damaske, wrought full of oplet holes, and at every oplet the needle wherewith it was made, hanging still by the like: and about his arme hee wore a dogges collar set full of S.S. of golde, and the tirets of the same also of fine golde. Thus strangely apparelled, with a great company of Lords, and other Noble men of his court, he came to the King his father, who at that time lay at Westminster, where at his comming (by commaundement of him) not one of his company aunced himselfe further then the fire in the hall, notwithstanding that they were greatly and ofte desired to the contrarye, by the Lords and great estates of the Kings Court: and this they did not onely because the weather was colde, but because the Prince had so commaunded them, to give the lesse occasion of mistrust to the King his father, but seee himselfe onely accompanied of the Kings household passed forth to the King his father, to whom (after due salutation) he desired to shew the intent of his minde in secret manner. When the King caused himselfe to be borne in his chaire into his secret chamber (because he was diseased and might not goe) where in the presence of three or foure persons, in whom the King had most confidence, he commaunded the Prince to shewe the effect of his minde: When the Prince kneeling downe before his father, said to him these words, Most redoubted Lord and father, I am this time come to your presence, as your liegeman, and as your sonne naturall, in all things to obey your grace as my soveraigne Lord and father. And whereas I understand ye haue mee suspect of my behaviour against your grace, and that ye feare I would blurpe your crowne against the pleasure of your highnesse, of my conseruation your grace knoweth that if ye were in feare of any man, of what estate soever he were, my dutie were to the endangering of my life to punish that person, thereby to raze that sore from your heart: and then how much rather ought I to suffer death to bring your grace from the feare that ye haue of me that am your naturall sonne, and your liegeman. And to that intent I haue this day by confession of my finnes and receiuing the Sacrament, prepared my selfe, and therefore most redoubted Lord and father, I beseech you in the honour of God, for the easing of your heart, heretofore your knes to lica me with this dagger, and at that worde with all reuerence hee deliuered to the King his dagger, saying, my Lord and father, my life is not so desirous to me, that I would live one day that should bee to your displeasure, nor I couer not so much my life as I doe your pleasure and welfare, and in your thus doing, here in the presence of these Lords, and tosoze God at the day of iudgement I clerely forgive you my death. At these words of the Prince, the King taken with compassion of heart, rask from him the dagger, and embracing the Prince kissed him, & with effusion of teares said unto him, My right deere and hartly beloued sonne, it is of truth that I had you partly suspect, and as I now perceive, undeserued on your partie: but seeing this your humilitie and faithfulness, I shall neither slay you, nor from henceforth haue you any more in mistrust, for no report that shall be made unto me, and thereof I assure you upon mine honour. Thus by his great wisdom was the wrongfull knighting

Henry Prince  
of Wales  
strangely dis-  
guised himselfe  
his father be-  
ing sicke.

nation of his fathers hate bitterly anoyed, and himselfe restored to the Kings former grace and fauour.

T. Oturborne

Tho. Walling.  
King Henry  
gaut aide to  
the Duke of  
Buliance, a-  
gainst the Duke  
of Burgoigne.

John Prendergast with thirtie shippes keeping the sea, took wimes and other victuals from y<sup>e</sup> French, which though it pleased y<sup>e</sup> Noble men little, yet it did great ease to the common people, who had all such things farre the better cheape. About the 19. of August King Henry by determination of the counsell, sent his second sonne Thomas Duke of Clarence, Edward Duke of Yorke, and Thomas Earle of Dorset, and manie valiant men, with a strong power to helpe the Duke of Buliance, against the Duke of Burgoigne, & euer all the other were returned, which a while agoe went ouer with the Earle of Arundell to ayde the Duke of Burgoigne, so that many men marvelled at the sudden change, that in so small a time the Englishmen did aide the two contrary parts: notwithstanding the Nobles went forward and arrived in Normandie, where when the Duke of Buliance did not meete them at the time appointed, they bent his townes, and spoiled the countrie, taking many holdes: at length, though late, the Dukes of Clarence, and Buliance met and talked together, and the matter was so entreated of betwene them, that our men should desist from ranging through the countrie, and refraine from robbetrie, which when our men had graunted, they departed into Aquitaine, to winter there, and the Duke of Buliance went home to his countrie.

An. reg. 14.

About this time the Lord Helle Marshall of Fraunce with manie other Noble men, and men of armes, to the number of 4000. besieged a certaine holde in Aquitaine, which was in the keeping of John Blunt Knight, who with 300. that aided him, put to flight the whole armie of the Frenchmen, and took of them 12. men of name, and other gentlemen to the number of 120. and amongst other the said Monsier de Helle Marshall of Fraunce was one, who was sent ouer into England, and put in the Castle of Wiltshir in Cambridgeshire, but escaping thence, he got ouer into Fraunce, where he serued the Duke of Buliance, at the battaile of Agencourt, and was there slaine.

1413.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at his mannor of Eltham, being so sore sicke, that sometime men thought that he had been dead: notwithstanding it pleased God that he recovered strength a little, and as softly as he could, he celebrated that feast of Christmasse.

A Parliament  
at London.

After Christmasse hee called the Nobles of England to a parliament at London, which began the morrow after Candlemasse day, but he liued not to the ende thereof, for he died shortly after in a chamber belonging to the abbot of Westminster, called Jerusalem, whereby the prophesie was fulfilled, as he said, that he should die there. In the time of whole languishing the King gaue to the Prince his sonne diuers notable ordinances and instructions, that not onely of him, but of euery Prince are to be holden and followed: among the which ordinations one is this: The King lieng grievously diseased, called before him the Prince his sonne, and said unto him: My sonne, I feare me soze, after my departure from this life, some discord shall grow

King Henry  
his counsell to  
his sonne  
Henry.

grow and arise betwene thee, and thy brother Thomas Duke of Clarence, whereby the Realme may be brought to destruction and miserie, for I knowe thou both to be of great stomacke and courage. Wherefore I feare, that hee through his high minde will make some enterpryse against thee, intending to surse upon thee, which I knowe thy stomacke may not abide easily. And for dead bereof as oft as it is in my remembrance, I soze repent mee, that euer I charged my selfe with the crowne of this Realme. To these wordes of the King, the prince answered thus: Right redoubted lord and father, to the pleasure of God your grace shall long continue with vs, and rule vs both: but if God haue so provided that euer I shall succeede you in this Realme, I shall be no; and loue my brethren aboue all men, as long as they be to me true, faithfull and obedient, as to their soueraigne Lord: but if any of them fortune to conspire or rebell against me, I assure you, I shall assuredly execute iustice vpon one of them, as I shall vpon the worst and most simplest person within this your Realme.

The King hearing this answer, was therewith maruellously reioyced in his minde, and said: My deere and welbeloued Sonne, with this answer thou hast deliuered mee of a great and ponderous agony: and I beseech thee, and vpon my blessing charge thee, that like as thou hast sayde, so thou minister iustice equally, and in no wise suffer not them that bee oppressed long to call vpon thee for iustice, but redresse oppressions, and indifferently and without delay, so; no perswasion of flatterers, or of them that be partiall, or such as to haue their hands replenished with giftes, deferre not iustice till to morrow, if that thou mayest do iustice this day, least (peraduenture) God doe iustice on thee in the meane time, and take from thee thine authoritie: remember that the wealth of thy body, and thy soule, and of thy realme, resteth in the execution of iustice; and do not thy iustice so, that thou be called a Tyrant, but vse thy selfe meanelly betwixt iustice and mercy in those thinges that belong to thee: And betwene parties do iustice truly and extreemely, to the consolation of thy poore Subiectes that suffer iniuries, and to the punishment of them that be extortioners and doers of oppressions, that other thereby may take example: and in thus doing, thou shalt obtaine the fauour of God, and the loue and feare of thy Subiectes, and therefore also thou shalt haue thy Realme more in tranquillitie and rest, which shall bee occasion of great prosperitie within thy Realme, which English men naturally desire: so; so long as they haue wealth and riches, so long shalt thou haue obedience: and when they be poore, then they be alwayes ready at euery motion to make insurrections, and it causeth them to rebell against their Soueraigne Lord: for the nature of them is such, rather to feare losing of their goodes and worldly substance, than the jeopardding of their liues. And if thou thus keepe them in subjection mixed with loue and feare, thou shalt haue the most peaceable and fertile Countrey, and the most loving, faithfull, and manly people of the worlde, which shall bee cause of no small feare to thine aduersaries. My sonne, when I shall please God to call me to the way decreed for euery worldly Creature, to thee (as my sonne and heire)

I must leaue my crowne and my Realme, which I would not to take  
bainely, and as a man elate in pride, and reioyced in worldly honour, but  
thinke that thou art more oppressed with charge, to pursue for euery per-  
son within the Realme, than exalted in baine honour of the world. Thou  
shalt bee exalted vnto the crowne, for the wealth and conseruation of the  
Realme; and not for thy singular commoditie and auaile: My sonne, thou  
shalt bee a minister to thy Realme to keepe it in tranquillitie and defend it.  
Like as the heart in the midst of the body is principall and chiefe thing in  
the body, and serueth to couer and desire that thing that is most necessarie  
to euery of thy members, so (my sonne) thou shalt bee amongst thy people  
as chiefe and principall of them to minister, imagine and acquire those  
things that may be most beneficiall for them. And then thy people shall be  
obedient to thee, to ayde and succour thee, and in all things to accomplish  
thy commaundements, like as thy members labour, euery one of them in  
their office, to acquire and get that thing that the heart desireth, and as thy  
heart is of no force and impotent without the ayde of thy members, so with-  
out thy people, thy Realme is nothing. My sonne, thou shalt feare and  
dread God aboue all things, and thou shalt loue, honour and worship him  
with all thy heart, thou shalt attribute and ascribe to him all things where-  
in thou seest thy selfe to bee well fortunate, be it victorie of thine enemies,  
loue of thy friends, obedience of thy subiects, strength and adiuuence of  
body, honour, riches, or fruitfull generations, or any other thing whatsoe-  
uer it be that chanceth to thy pleasure. Thou shalt not imagine that any  
such thing should fortune to thee, by thine aye, nor by thy desert, but thou  
shalt thinke that all cometh onely of the goodnesse of the Lord. Thus  
thou shalt with all thine heart, prayse, honour, and thanke God for all his  
benefites that he giueth vnto thee. And in thy selfe eschew all baine gloire  
and elation of heart, following the wholesome counsell of the Psalmist,  
which saileth, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam*, which is  
to say, Not vnto vs Lord, not vnto vs, but to thy holy name be giuen laud  
and praise. These and many other admonishments and doctrines this  
victorious King gaue vnto this Noble Prince his Sonne, who with es-  
teem followed the same, after the death of his father: whereby hee obtained  
grace of our Lord to attaine to great victories and many glorious and  
incredible conquests, through the helpe and succour of our Lord, whereof  
he was neuer destitute. The King his father dying in his ende, after  
due thanks giuen, and applications made to God, gaue his benediction to  
the Prince his sonne, and so passed to God his spirit, the xx. of March, which  
was then midlent Sunday. Anno 1412. after the account of the Church of  
England, the yere of his age 46. whē he had reigned 13. yeres, five moneths  
lacking 10. Dayes. His body was conueyed by water to feuerham, and  
from thence by land to Canterbury, and there buried by the Lady Mary his  
first wife, in the monastery of Christ Church, vnder a pillar in the south  
Aile. This King Henry, with Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury  
had been great benefactors to this Church, in building a good part of the body  
thereof

thereof another he had thus by Mary daughter to Humfrey Bohune Earle of  
Hereford and Southampton, Henry that succeeded him, Thomas Duke of Clarence,  
John Duke of Bedford, Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, Blanch Countesse of  
Bauerre, and Philip Prince of Denmarke: so by loan his second  
wife he had no issue.

## King Henry the fifth.



Henry the fifth bozne at Monmouth, began his reigne  
the xx. day of March in the yere 1412. This Prince  
exceeded the meane stature of men, he was beauti-  
full of visage, his necke long, body slender and leane,  
and his bones small: neuertheless he was of mar-  
vellous great strength, and passing swift in run-  
ning, insomuch that he with two other of his Lordes,  
without hounds, bow, or other engine, should take  
a wilde bucke or Doe in a large parke: he studied at  
Driford in the newe colledge, vnder the government of Henry Bewford his  
uncle on the fathers side, then Chauncellour of Driford, after Bishop of  
Winchester: hee delighted in songs, meters, and musickall instruments, in-  
somuch that in his Chappell amongst other his pinate prayers, he used our  
Lordes prayer, certaine psalmes of David, with diuers hymnes and canticles,  
all which I haue seene translated into herotcall English meter, by Iohn  
Lydgate Poete of Bury. He liued somewhat insolently, insomuch that  
whilst his father liued, being accompanied with some of his young Lordes and  
gentlemen, he would waite in disguised aray for his owne recreations, and dis-  
tresse them of their money: and sometimes at such enterprises both he and  
his company were surely beaten: and when his receivers made to him their  
complaints how they were robbed in their coming vnto him, hee would  
giue them discharge of so much money as they had lost: and besides that, they  
should not depart from him without great rewards for their trouble and ver-  
ation, especially they should be rewarded that best had resisted him and his  
company, and of whom he had receiued the greatest and most strokes, and  
for example Sir Thomas Eliot writeth thus. The renowned Prince King  
Henry the fifth, during the life of his father, was noted to be fierce, and of wan-  
ton courage. It hapned that one of his seruants, whom he fauored, was for  
reison by him committed, arraigned at the Kings bench, whereof the Prince  
being aduertised, and incensed by tight persons about him, in furious rage  
came hastily to the bar, where his seruant stood as prisoner, and commaunded  
him to be vnbound and set at libertie, whereat all men were abashed, refer-  
red the chiefe Justice, who humbly exhorted the Prince to be ordered accor-  
ding to the ancient lawes of the Realme, or if he would haue him saved from  
the rigor of the lawes, that he should obtaine if he might of the King his fa-  
ther, his gracious pardon, whereby no law or iustice should be derogate.

Ann. 1412.  
Titus Livius.

T. Eliot govern-  
our.

William Gal-  
coigne was  
chief Justice  
of the Kings  
bench, from the  
first of May  
the fourth, till  
the third of  
May the fifth.

158

Henry the fifth.

With the which answer the prince nothing appeased, but rather more in-  
flamed, indurend himselfe to take away his servant. The Judge, con-  
sidering the perillous example and inconueniencie that might thereby ensue,  
with a valiant spirit & courage commaunded the prince upon his allegiance  
to leaue the prisoner, and to departe his way: with which commaundement,  
the prince being set all in a furie, all chased, and in a terrible manner came  
vp to the place of iudgment, men thinking that he would haue slaine the  
Judge, or haue done to him some damage, but the Judge sitting still, with-  
out moving, declaring the maiestie of the Kings place of iudgment, and  
with an assured bold countenance, had to the prince these wordes following:  
Sir, remember your selfe, I keepe here the place of the king your soveraigne  
lord and father, to whom you owe double obedience, wherefore chisones in  
his name I charge you desist off your wilfulness and unlawfull enterpryse,  
I from henceforth giue god example to those which hereafter shall be your  
proper subiects: and now for your contempt and disobedience, goe you to the  
prison of the kings bench, whereunto I commit you, and remaine you there  
prisoner untill the pleasure of the king your father be further knowne. With  
which wordes, being abaied, and also wondering at the marvellous gran-  
tie of that worshipfull Justice, the prince laying his weapon aparte, doing  
reuerence, departed and went to the kings bench as he was commaunded.  
Whereat his seruants disdaining, came & shewed to the king all the whole  
affaire. Whereat hee a while trowping, after, as a man all raniued with  
glories, holding his hands and eyes towards heauen, abrayd with a lowde  
voice: O mercifull God! how much am I bounde to thy infinite goodnes, espe-  
cially for that thou hast giuen me a Judge, who feareth not to minister ius-  
tice, and also a sonne, who can suffer semblably and obey iustice. Some  
(saith Thomas Eliot) were a man may behold thre persons with thy memo-  
ry: first a Judge, who being a subiect, feared not to execute iustice on the el-  
dest sonne of his soveraigne Lord, and by the order of nature his succedour.  
Also a prince, and sonne and heire of the k. In the middelt of his folly, more  
considered his euill example, and the Judges conscience in iustice, than his  
owne estate or wilfull appetite. Thirdly, a noble king and wise father, who  
contrary to the custome of parents, reioiced to see his sonne, and the beire  
of his crowne, to be for his disobedience by his subiect corrected: wherefore  
I conclude, that nothing is more honorabell or to be desired in a prince, or no-  
ble man, than placability, as contrariwise nothing is so detestable, or to be  
feared in such a one as wrath and cruel malignitie. Thus much of his youth-  
fulness: but after the decease of his father (as he that should succeed in the king-  
dome) he called to him a certaine monke of holy conuersation, to whom he  
confessed himselfe of all his offences, trespasses, and insolencies past, and af-  
ter his counsaile in all things, at that time he reioined his life and manners,  
so that after his fathers decease was neuer no youth or wildnes that might  
hane place in him, but all his acts were soone changed into grauitie and  
discretion.

So this noble prince (by assent of the parliament) all the estates of the  
realme

Henry the fifth.

159

realme, after thre daies, offered to doe fealties before hee was crowned or  
had solemnized his oth, well and iustly to gouerne the common weale, which  
offer, before was neuer found to be made to any prince of England.

The king gaue them all generally thanks, for their good minde to wardes  
him, and therewith exhorted them to the zeale of the publike prosperitie and  
honour of the realme. Many man had offended him he pardoned their tres-  
pas, and desired hartly of God, that if he should rule and doe all things well  
to the honour of God and the prosperous communitie of the Realme, that  
then God would suffer him to be crowned: but if his fortune should be to do  
other wise, that then God should take him to his merite, and suffer him rather  
to be buried than to enterpryse the charge of the Realme.

The ninth day of Aprill he was crowned at Westmynster, by Thomas Ar-  
rindel archbishop of Canterburie, after which coronation, he called vnto him  
all those yong lords & gentlemen that were the followers of his yong auncle,  
to euery one of whom he gaue rich and bounteous gifts, and then commaunded  
that as many as would change their manners as he intended to do should a-  
bide with him in his court, and to all that would perseuer in their former light  
conuersation, he gaue expresse commaundement vpon paine of their heads,  
neuer after that day to come in his presence.

Hauing auoyded those yong and suspicious company from his presence,  
he then attended to ghostly and worldly busines. And first he commaunded to  
exche his royal manor that then was called Bohene (and now Richmond) he  
also founded two monasteries vpon the Thames (not far from the said ma-  
nor royall) the one of the religion of the Cartusers, which he named West-  
hem: the other of religious men and women, of St. Brigets order, and that he  
named Sion. In this house there were 60. sisters 13. priests 4. deacons and 8.  
lay brethren, those neuer wore linnen but wollen, which two conents had but  
one church in common, the nuns had their church aloft in the rose, and the bre-  
thren beneath vpon the ground, ech conent severally inclosed, and after their  
profession, might neuer come out, except by the Popes special licence: these  
ought to haue sufficient dowrie to sustaine them without begging, he indow-  
ed them with rents and revenues taken from the priories allians which he  
suppressed.

He by the best aduise ment he could, provided, and ordeined in euery part of  
his Realme, Judges, and other officers, such as he desired to be true and  
just, and others that were knowne or suspect of couetousnes or partialitie, he  
clerely auoided from their former offices & routes. He also (as King Henrie  
his father had done) used for custome euery day, when no state was kept, at  
after dinner, to haue a cushion layd on the tapstowe, and there to leane the  
space of an houre, more to receive his, and heare complaints of what dis-  
uer would come: in those daies if the king late in the chamber, the Resource  
of the household sat alway in the hall vnder the chair of estate, the same being  
raised vp aboue his head, and such Knights sitting with him as at that time  
waited on the king.

He also made the corps of King Richard the second to be taken from the  
earth

Richmond,  
Shrine, and  
Shrine built.

The wal-  
The king  
heareth all  
laurens.

Titus L. u. l.



The bodie of  
Richard the  
second taken  
up, and buried  
at Westmin-  
ster.

T. Clifford.

earth, whom King Henry the fourth had intumulate in the friers Church of Aylesey, and with due obsequies to be from thence translated to the Abbey of Westminster, where, after solemne exequies for him done, he was buried in Saint Peters Church in the said Abbey, on the south side of Saint Edwards shrine, by Quene Anne his wife, as he himselfe in his life had desired, and had prepared his monument in the 8. yere of his raigne. B. and Godfrey of Wyndestræte goldsmiths, made the mouldes & images of King Richard and Quene Anne, laid on them, the charges of gylbing of the merceded 400. markes. King Henry founded perpetually one day every weeke, a memozy to be celebrat for the said R. Richard, and upon each day fire shillings eight pence, to be given to the poore people, and once every yere upon the day of his anniverse 20. l. in pence to be dealt to the poore.

About this time Thomas Duke of Clarence, the kings brother, came from the coasts of Aquitaine, who (as we said befoze) was sent to apde the Duke of Burgoyne against the Duke of Burgoyne.

Part of West-  
minster with  
the friers there  
burned.

T. Helmbam.

A great part of the Citie of Wyndestræte was bzent sodainly with fire, with all the house of the friers preachers and all to them belonging, and also two friers of that house.

Upon Trinitie Sunday, the solemne exequies for King Henry the fourth were celebratd at Canterbury, King Henry his sonne being present at the same.

Tho. Wal.

The same time the fauourers of Wicliffes doctrine, did naye by sedules upon the Church doores of London, which sedules contayned that there was an hundred thousand men ready to rise against al such as could not away with their lea, for indeed (saith Walsingham) they trusted to the force, powder, and wit of a certaine knight called John Olde-castell of Coling in Kent, who for the honour of a marriage, which he had contracted with a kinswoman of a nobleman, the Lord Cobham, obtayned the name of the said Lordship, or seignorie of Cobham: this John was a strong man, and a metely good man of war, but he was a most peruerse enemy to the state of the Church at that time. In a pynode therefore being holden at London, the said Sir John Olde-castell, for diuers points touching the sacrament, befoze the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Winchester and other, was comulcated, and committed to the tower of London, out of the which he brake ouer the wals in the night, and escaped about the feast of Simon and Jude.

1414.  
Conspiracie  
against the  
King.

The King keeping his Christmalle at his manor of Eltham (seuen miles from London) was warned that certaine had conspired against him, either to haue taken, or sodainly slaine him and his brethren on Twelfth day at night, whereupon the King sent word to the Mayor of London, that he should arrest all suspicious persons: the Mayor therefore caused every Alderman in his ward to kepe great watch, and about twine of the clocke at night went himselfe with a strong power, to the signe of the Axe with out Bishops Gate, where they apprehended the man of the house called John Burgate carpenter and seuen other, one of them being an Esquire belonging to Sir John Olde-castell, and sent them to Eltham, where they con-

ferred befoze the King that they were confederate with Sir John Olde-castell, to fight against him and his Lordes in Saint Giles field about Holbozne. On the morrow after the Twelfth day, the King remoued pynly to Westminster, and because he had heard tell that the rude peoples intent was, if they did pvenale, first to destroy the monasteries of Westminster, Saint Albons, and Saint Pauls, and all the houses of friers in London: being minded to prevent such a mischief, contrary to the mindes of all that were about him, went into the field when it was little past midnight, with a great armie, for he was warned that Sir John Olde-castell, and Sir Roger Aston, would be in the same field on the next day following with 25000. people: and the same night were taken more then fourescore men in armor of the same faction, for many that came from far, not knowing the Kings campe to be in the field, were taken by the same and sent to prison, and being demanded whom they sought, made answer the Lord Cobham. The rumour of this, comming to the eares of the capitaines that were the Kings enemies, they were wonderfully discouraged, and that the more, because none came to them out of London, from whence they looked for many thousands, whereupon they fled to saue themselves, and the Kings men following them toke some, and slew other, but where their capitaine was become would not be knowne, notwithstanding that the King by proclamation promised to whomsoever could bring him with a 1000. markes besides liberties to the Citie and townes that would disclose him, but there was not one found that would betray him, so greatly was he favoured. Also the King being tolde of an ambushment gathered in Harengay parke, sent thither certaine Lordes, who toke many, among whom, was one William Mure, a rich maultman, or buyer of Wunstaple, who had his two boyes trapped with golde following him, and a paire of gilt spurs in his bosome, for he thought to haue ben made Knight on the morrow by the hands of Sir John Olde-castell. The xix. of January, 69. of them were condemned of treason at Westminster, and on the morrow after 37. of them were by a lawe from the Tower of London to Belegate, and so to Saint Giles, and there in a place called Fickets field, were all hanged, and seauen of them bzent gallowes and al. The xix. of January, were by a lawe and hanged Sir John Beuerley Byleff, John Burgate carpenter, a terti wyter in Saint Johns Stræte, and a glouer on London Bridge, and thoztyfaster, Sir Roger Aston Knight was taken, who on the tenth of februarye, was by a lawe, hanged, and buried under the Gallowes.

King Henry  
kept the field  
by St. Giles  
without Hol-  
bozne.

The twentieth of februarye, deceased Thomas Arundel Archbishop of Canterbury. Henry Chicheley borne at Wygham ferris in Northampton shire succeeded, being translated from Saint Davids in Wales.

The King taking compassion upon Henry Percie a young man (who by his grandfather Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, was carried into Scotland, after the death of his father, who was slaine in the battell of Sherburne, when this young man was then but a child) commaunded them that were of his kinred, and nearest friends, to sollicite for his reclainging home againe out of Scotland, minding not onely to honour him by cal-

Many men  
hanged, and  
some bzent in  
Fickets field.

ling him home againe, but also to make him Earle of Northumberland.

King Henry kept his Lent in the Castle of Beaulieu, and caused an harber there to be plantid in the marsh, for his pleasure, amongst the thorns and bushes: where a fore had harbored, which fore he killed, being a thing then thought to prognosticate, that he should expell the craftie deceit of the French King, besides which also he there builded a most pleasant place, and caused it to be termed Le pleasant maries, or the pleasant marsh. King Henry the 8. becomed great rest in repairing Beaulieu Castle, caused the said banqueting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set up in the base court at Beaulieu. In this Lent season, whilest the King lay at Beaulieu, messengers came to him from the Dolphin of France named Charles, with a present of Paris balles, for him to play withall, but the King wrote to him, that he would shortly send to him London balles, with the which he would breake downe the roofes of houses.

King Henry, after that all dissentions and commotions in England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales were appeased, so that concord and unitie were made and established in all parts of the Kings dominion, the King deliberated upon the recovery of the Realme of France, which by iust title of inheritance was defended unto him, and at that time was inturiously withheld from him by the French King. And because he would nothing procede against the pleasure of God, he first demanded aduise, and counsell of all the discrete and learned men as well of the spiritualtie in both Uniuersities, as of the temporallie through all his Realme, if he might without offence to God lawfully recover by armes his Realme of France. Who after long deliberation thereupon among them had, of one assent, made report unto the King, that in so iust a quarrell he might lawfully vse armes, if he might by none other wayes attaine his purpose. and right of inheritance: whereupon the King, in all things insuing the aduise of his Counsell, sent Ambassadors into France, there to demand his right in the Counsell of the French, and if peradventure they would deny to accomplish his desire, his Ambassadors should giue them knowledge that he would seke his right by armes. These Ambassadors were honorably receiued in France, and for answer of their message there denounced, they brought with them nothing to report, except that within short time, the Frenchmen would send their Ambassadors into England, to declare their intent to the King of England upon his demand.

Shortly after arrived in England W. Bourcier Archbishop of Bourges, the Earle of Mandosme, Pierce Frennell Bishop of Lieur, the Lords Iury, and of Braquimount, Walter Cole secretarie to the French King, Ambassadors of France, these were men of great authority: amongst them the Archbishop was the chiefe, who in like manner were here receiued with great honor. At a time limited, the Archbishop of Bourges proposed their message, and in the ende, offered to the King lands, and a great sum of money with the daughter of the King their master in marriage, so that he would desist from that warre that he then intended to make in France. After which proposition

and

and offer made, the Ambassadors dined with the King: and at another day limited, the King of England, by the mouth of the Archbishop of Canterbury made to them answer, to this effect: The proffers made, he said, were not sufficient recompence for the Kings rightfull inheritance in France, vniuersally detained from him, wherefore for a small answer, he would demand his right by force of armes in the best manner that he could, and that as briefly as to him were possible. When the Archbishop of Bourges, after licence obtained, said: O King, with reverence be it spoken, thinkest thou vniuersally to depose the most Christian King of France? Thinkest thou that he hath offered to thee these lands and money, with his owne daughter to be thy wife, for any dread he hath of thee: nay not so, but the same our Lord, indued with pittie, as the lover of peace, hath made to thee this offer, to the intent, that innocent blood be not spilt and destroyed: and therefore by the aide of God, he shall at all times defend himselfe, his lands, and subiects, from thy vnjust inuasions. And as to us that be his Ambassadors, we desire thee, to make to us safe conduct without damage through thy realme, and also that thou wisse to our soveraign Lord, this thine answer entirely vnder thy seale, and signe manuell: which request the King granted vnto them, and they returned into France.

In the month of May a Parliament was begun at Leicester, in the beginning whereof, there was a poster of the tower of London, drawn, hanged, and headed, whose head was sent to London, and set ouer the tower gate, for consenting to one that brake out of the tower, named Whillocke.

In this Parliament John the Kings brother was made Duke of Bedford, Humphrey his brother Duke of Gloucester, and Richard brother to the Duke of York was made Earle of Cambridge. The priories allians in England were giuen to the King, all their possessions to remaine to the King and to his heirs for euer, except land graunted to the colledge of Fodinghay, and after all these priories were suppressed to the number of more than one hundred houses. Gold waights were appoynted.

In this Parliament were deuised diuers meanes to gather money of all the commons of England, therewith to sustaine the Kings wars, and to make prouision of all things necessarie for the same, the sum whereof, leuied and gathered of the spiritualtie and temporallie amounted to the sum of 300. thousand markes English. And herewith order was taken to gather a great host of men through all the Kings dominions.

On Mary Magdalens day, in London, John Nianfer Esquire, with nine of his men, set vpon and slue John Tibbey clarke, Archdeacon of Huntingdon, and Chancelor to Quene Ioane, late wife to Henry the fourth, for the which fact, the said Esquire, and foure of his men fled to S. Annes Church within Aldersgate, where they were mured by wish word, and watched day and night till the 21. of August, on the which day, they forswore the land, and passed through the citie towards Calice in their shirts and breeches, each of them hauing a Crosse in his hand, and a purse about his necke, &c.

Our Ambassadors, the Bishops of Durham and Bath, returning not

Y Olmham,  
King Henric  
builded at Beaulieu.

Titus Livius,  
Rogier Walle  
Anno reg.

Answer of the  
Bishop of  
Bourges.

Parliament at  
Leicester.  
Poster of the  
Tower executed.

Priories suppressed to the  
number of 110

The Quene's  
Chancelor  
slane.

Men forswore  
the land.

the second time out of France, declared to the King, that the Frenchmen did but vie fraud and deceits, wherefore the King being stirred up unto anger, and also knowing well the discord betwixt the great Lords of France, whereof hath somewhat been said before, determined to abate their scorninges, and to teach them to understand their folly, in a waking of a sleeping dog: and forthwith, the King commaunded all the prelates, and nobles of the Realme, to come to London, there to treat of weighty affaires concerning the Realme, at the which time, the Archbishop of Canterbury held a great councill, in the which were chosen certaine of the clergie of England, to goe to the generall Councell that should be holden at Constance, a citie of Germany, and so there were sent the Bishops of Salisbury, Bath, and Hereford, and with them the Abbot of Westminster, and the Prior of Worcester, and many other wise men, in company of the Earle of Warwick, whose presence did them much honour.

1415.  
Three schismaticall popes put downe.

In that councell was put dolone thre schismaticall popes, to wit, Balchazar Cossa late Pope, John the 22. of that name: Peter de Luna, called Clement the 13. and Egellus Coraris, called Gregory 12. which being done, one Otto Colombe a noble Roman boyne, was elected to the papacie, and was named Martin the first.

Anno reg. 3.

In the meane space, the King like a prudent Prince thought good to take order for the resisting of the Scots, if according to their old maner, they should attempt any thing in his absence, and therefore he appointed the Earle of Westmerland, the Lord Scrope, the baron Greystocke, Sir Robert Umfraville, and divers other ballant capitaines to keepe the frontiers and marches of Scotland: which Sir Robert Umfraville on the day of Mary Magdalen, fought with the Scots at the towne of Cuderling, having in his company only 300. archers, and 140. men of armes, where after a long conflict, he slew of his enemies 60. and took 360. prisoners, and put to flight 1000. and more, whom he followed in chase about 12. miles, and so laden with preyes and prisoners, returned to the Castle of Roxborough, whereof he was then capitaine. When the king had gathered his naule together, appointed his archers, and men of armes, prepared his engins, and all things necessarie for the wars, he leaning behind him for government of the Realme, the Quene his mother in law, he commaunded all that should goe with him, to be ready against the feast of Saint Iohn Baptiste, and to mete him at Hampton.

The eighteenth day of June, King Henry with many Lords and others rode from London towards South-hampton, the spallors, Aldermen, and craftes of the Citie accompanying him on his way to the towne of Kingsstone upon Thames: whilst the King late at Southampton, where he abode for his retinue and thusse longing to the wars, fastings, prayers unto God, and almes debes of the King, and other supplications of the clergie and commons had before, he mustered his universall hoste upon the sea bankes. In the which muster or view, on the last of Iulie was discovered a great and perillous conspiracie against him by three Lords, in whom of all the rest, hee put greatest trust and confidence, the chiefest of them was

Henry

Henry Scrope, Lord treasurer: the second Richard Earle of Cambridge, brother to Edward Duke of York, and Sir Thomas Grey, a knight of the North, these had made Edmond Earle of March to sweare upon a booke, not to disclose their counsell, and then tolde him that they thought to slay the King, and to make the sayde Edmond King, the which if hee refused to take upon him, they would slay him: whereupon, the Earle prayed them to give him one houres space to take advisement what was best to doe, which being graunted, the Earle went secretly and tolde the King thereof, who caused them forthwith to be apprehended, and brought before him, where they confessed the treason, for the which on the first of August they were arraigned in the Kings presence, and the same day all thre beheaded. The Earle was buried heade and all, but the other heads were sent, the one to York, the other to Newcastle upon Tyne, and there set upon a pole. It is to be noted, that whatsoever hath bene reported of the confession of the Earle of Cambridge, certaine it is that hee was indighted by the name of Richard Earle of Cambridge of Conesburgh in the Countie of York Knight, and with him Thomas Grey of Iyeton in the Countie of Northumberland Knight, for that they the twentieth day of Iulie in the third yere of King Henry the first, at Southampton, and divers other places within the Realme had conspired together, with a power of men to them associate, without the Kings licence to have led away the Lord Edmond Earle of March into Wales, and then to have procured him to take upon him the government of the Realme, in case that King Richard the second were dead: and here with had purposed to set forth a proclamation there in Wales, in the name of the sayde Earle of March, as heire of the crowne, against King Henry by the name of Henry of Lancaster the usurper, to the ende that by such meanes they might have the more number of the Kings liege people unto the sayd Earle. And further to have conspired a banner of the armes of England, and a certaine crowne of Spaine set upon a pallet, and laid in gage to the sayde Earle of Cambridge, by the King together with the sayd Earle of March into the parts of Wales above said. And further that the sayd Earle of Cambridge, and Sir Thomas Gray had appointed certaine of the Kings liege people to repaire into Scotland, and to bring from thence, one Thomas Trumpington, also an other resembling in shape, favour and countenance King Richard, and Henry Percy together with a great multitude of people to fight with the King, and him to destroy in open felde: besides this, that they had meant to win certaine Castles in Wales, and to keepe them against the King, and many other treasons they had contrived, as by the indictment was specified, to the ende they might destroy the King and his brethren, the Dukes of Bedford, and of Gloucester, and other the great Lords and peeres of the Realme. And Henry Scrope of Spalham of flardest, in the Countie of York, was likewise indicted, as consenting to the premises, so that it appeareth their purpose was well enough then perceived, although happily not much divulged abroad, for consultations thought necessarie to have it kept hush.

Indictment of the Earle of Cambridge.

Titus Livius.

Conspiracie discovered.

Roger Wall.  
Titus Livius.

King Henry having assembled his hoste at Southampton, as is aforesaid, to the intent to passe the seas, for conueyance of his bowels and artillery, were prouided and brought thither for his wages out of Holland and Zealand ships, hulkes, and other vessels to such a number, that his whole nauie at his departing from the land amounted to sixtente hundred sailles.

King Henry  
sailed into  
Normandie.

On the xiiii. of August the King took shipping, and entred the sea, and on the xliiii. at night arrived at Bebecaur in Normandie, which is betwixte Herefete and Humfete, of whose conuening, all the Cities, and Castles of those parts being advertised, were stricken with great feare. The King, the Dukes of Clarence and of Gloucester his brethren, the Duke of Poike his uncle, the Carles, Barons, Knights, gentlemen, and souldiers, cast their ankers there, and took lande without any resistance, and the King forthwith falling to the ground upon his knees devoutly prayed to God that to his honor he would giue him iustice of his enemies. He had at his landing in his hoste six thousand speares, and xliiii. thousand footemen, besides gunners, and other engineers, artificers, and laborers, of whom the king had great abundance.

Titus Livius

The King gaue to diuers gentlemen the order of knight-hood, and assigned the bearing of his standards and banners to such men, as he knew to be of great strength and prowesse. All thing being set in good order and array, the King with all his host ascended to the top of an high hill there nigh, and there be rested the next day.

On the 16. day of August, the Duke of Clarence, leader of the forewarde in good ordinance, entred his iourney toward a towne called Herefete, distant from Bebecaur scarcely thre leagues, where he lodged his host in a field before the towne. The King at his coming, lodged himselfe nigh to the first warde, not farre from the towne in a plaine field. The Earle of Suffolke, Michaell de Poole, chiefe taine of the rereward, lodged on the other side before the towne. Other noble men that had the conduct of the two wings, lodged them, one on the right hand, the other on the left hand of the whole hoste. When the King commaunded to be proclaimed through the host, that upon paine of death, all Churches should be kept inuiolate, vnspoyled and vnbarmed, that no man should presume to take any vessel or ornament whatsoever from the Church, that they should not hurt any man of the church, whom they found without armour, nor any woman or childe, and then forthwith were sent to the towne, men of armes in great number, to see the situation thereof, who shortly returned with a great pray of cattell, and informed the King of all his demands.

Proclamation  
in the Kings  
host.

Enguerrant.  
Description of  
Herefete.

Herefete is the key of the sea of all Normandie, and is situated upon the sea side, by the riuer of Seane, betwixt two hills, and through the middle thereof runneth a riuer, which not farre from the same towne entreteth into the Seane, and from thence, both those riuers in one descend into the sea, whereas a great and goodly haven is, belonging to the same towne, which haven is garnished with the defence of two faire and strong towers: and in

the

the same haven a right great nauie of shippes may ride in safetie: and if the inhabitants of this towne inclose and keepe within the towne the course of the foresaid riuer by their sluices, as they may right well doe, then the riuer riseth without the towne so high, that it so encloseth all entrees to the walls, so that no man may approach the towne on that part. This towne is also defended with high and thicke walls and towers, and is also enuironed with broad and deepe ditches. To this towne also belongeth onely two gates for entrees, the one called Calturances, the other Mostrouillier. In this towne, besides the inhabitants thereof, for the defence of the same, were fower hundred men of armes deputed in garrison, amongst whom were these Lords, Lord Discouteuile, chiefe captaine of the towne, Lord Blauile, Lord Haqueuile, Lord Harmanuile, Lord Eancourt, Lord Gailard Bos, and diuers other Lords and men expert in warre. These Lords caused their people to breake downe the causeway betwixt Mostrouillers and Herefete, to impaire and hinder the Englishmens passage. Fewer thelesse the Englishmen at their coming, by the good conduct of their King, were not so fore oppressed, by breaking of the causeway, but that they came so nigh as to lay their siege before the towne. When the King and all his host was come before the towne, all his tents and pavilions were set up in the plaine field, wherewith that part of the towne was intirely inclosed: he also caused his great hall to be set upon an hill, at the backe of his host, to serue as a Church, there to honor and serue God. This done the King commaunding the Duke of Clarence to assaige the towne, he endozed to conuey his people ouer the riuer, in the passage whereof, he had a great skirmish with the inhabitants of the towne, but at the last his aduersaries being put to flight, recoped within the walls. The Duke conueyed ouer the riuer all his ward and companie, and because the riuer diuided the kings camp from the Dukes, they ordained a ready and sure passage ouer the same riuer betwixt both the camps, to the keeping whereof, certaine Gentlemen were appointed, so that their enemies might not endamage them neither by water nor land.

In this meane time befell a great misadventure to the frenchmen that were besieged, for the gun-powder and shot that was sent vnto them by the french King, was incountred vpon the sea by the Englishmen, and taken, to their great displeasure and damage.

Enguerrant.

The King gaue the charge of the fildes to his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester. On the same side the riuer that the King lay, was the Duke of Poike, high Constable of England lodged with his band. When every man was placed, the towne was so strenghtly assaiged, that all entrees and issues of the towne were stopped, so that they of the towne were in dispaire to haue any succour from the Realme of France. Many engines were railed by the English, which in short time should haue been the destruction of the walls, if they of the towne had not the fower stopped the riuer of the same towne within, whereby the water gathered and raised without the towne betwixt the King and the Duke of Clarence, to the semblance of a little

Titus Livius

Enguerant.

Titus Livius.

Rareflecte Gir-  
rendien to  
King Henry.

sea, which caused the Englishmen to withdraw their guns, and other engines, whereby at that time the walls were saved. When the king caused to be made under the water three great mines unto the walls of the towne, which in like manner had been the cause of their ruine, if the inhabitants had not countermined them, and letted their purpose. The inhabitants of the towne perceiving themselves thus straightly assailed, as well by land as by sea, conveyed all their ships within their haven, and bounde them together with chaines, and in the two towers that were made for the defence of the haven, they put certaine garrisons, and armed men, who oftentimes attempted to invade the kings naue, but at all times they were by his ships beaten, and constrained to recule still within their haven: at the last, the captaines and inhabitants considering that by such skirmishes (as well upon the land as upon the sea) they gained nothing, took this appointment with the king, that if they were not rescued by the Frenchmen within certaine dayes limited, they should then deliver into his hands the towne, with thirtie persons of the greatest and most noble within the towne, such as the king would desire, to be ordered at the kings pleasure; and all the residue, as well men of warre, as the inhabitants of the same towne, without armour, and leaving behinde them their goods, should freely goe where they would, for the suretie of which appointment to be kept, they delivered unto the king twelve of their greatest personages for pledges. The captaines and inhabitants of the towne seeing their day of appointment to approach, and themselves utterly desperate of any succours of their people, obtained to performe their covenant at their day prefixed, which was the xxii. of September, on which day came Sir Lionell Braquemount, gouernour of the towne, unto the king, and kneeling before him, said: Most victorious Prince, behold here the keyes of this towne, which after our promise I yelde unto you, with the towne, my selfe, and my companie. When were brought to the king the Lord Coreuile, the Lord Gangcourt, and other, to the number of thirtie, and all the residue, as well souldiers, as inhabitants, were suffered unarmed to depart. When the gates of the towne were opened, and that the king approached unto them, in purpose to enter the towne, he descended from his horse without the gate, and from thence, without horse or shoes in great devotion, he went immediately to the Church of Saint Martin, Metropolitane of that towne, and there he made his prayers, and praised God his creator, for his good fortune: then hee commanded to be brought before him, all those Lords and gentlemen that were yeldest to him for prisoners, whose names he caused to be put in writing, and upon their othes to yelde themselves prisoners at Calice upon Saint Martins day next following, and so they were delivered out of the towne of Harflew, at the which day according to their appointment, they came to Calice, where they were received as prisoners, and after ransomed at great finances. After the deliuey of this towne, the foresaid two towers that defended the haven, and resisted the kings power ten dayes space, at the end whereof, because they were in despaike of succour, yeldest them to the king, and all the souldiers

and

and inhabitants both of the towne and towers were suffered to goe freely unarmed, whither they would. The king constituted Captaine of the towne Sir Thomas Beauford Earle of Dorset his uncle, to whom he also committed two thousand souldiers, chosen men of his host. Then considering that winter drew on, as also the losse of their men, by reason of the sir then raining amongst them, by which infirmities died Michael at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, the Bishop of Exeter, the Lord Beawmont, and others, and of the commons, to the number of two thousand and about. King Henry created the sonne of Michael at Poole, Earle of Suffolke, who lived not long after.

After king Henry had remained at Harflew 15. daies, after the deliuey of the towne, and of the towers, he departed from thence towards Calice, whereof, when his enemies were aduertised, and also by what way he intended to passe, all the people of the countrey, Cities, and Townes were marvellously oppressed with feare, wherefore they hastened them to defensible places, and other that were apt to warre, took them to their houses, and assembled them together in great number, with no small company of footemen, and in all that they might they oppressed the Englishmen.

The kings host kept an easie pace, without making any haste, and when they approached the towne of Ewe, their enemies assailed them in the fields with great force and noise, where on both parties it was foughten sore and vigorously: but the Frenchmen reculed to the towne, where they were in good surety. From thence the king departed, and came to a passage of the riuer of Some, which the Frenchmen call Blanchecheoke, or Blanchetache. This passage, at the coming unto it was fired with sharpe stakes by their enemies, so that they could not passe there, but were constrained to goe further, seeking their passage, untill they came directly to haue the Citie of Amiens and the Castell of Corby on their left side, where they of the said Citie beganne with them a newe fight: but they were sone forced by the English to returne to their Citie againe. The 19. of October the king passed the riuer of Some, at the passage of Wienna, and Bethew-court, and went then to lodge him at Pouche-legach, from whence, he advanced him towards the riuer of Piramont. In the meane time, the French king and the Duke of Guyen his sonne, then Dolphin, purposing to resist the Englishmen, came to Roane, from whence, they sent three heralds to the king of England, to giue vnderstanding that he should not escape without battail: unto whom the said king answered, All things be done at the pleasure of God, I will keepe the right way towards Calice: if our aduersaries doe attempt to disturbe vs in our Iourney, we thinke they shall not doe it without their owne great daunger and perill. From thence, king Henry came unto a village called Forceville, advancing his host towards the riuer of Piramont, and the next day they passed by the Cheue, and the king lodged that night at Bonpers-le-failon. The next day the king remained unto Bangy. The next day late in the night the king came to a village named Agencourt, Enguerant saith Agencelles, where they lodged. At distance from the French host not about two hundred and fiftie spaces.

The

Titus Livius

Enguerant:

Titus Livius:

Enguerant:

Titus Livius

Enguerant.

The battell of  
Agencourt.  
v. elnham.

570

## Henry the fift.

The Frenchmen fired their banners and standerts with the banner royall, whereof the Constable had the Conduict, in the field by them deuised and chosen, which was in the countie of Saint Paule, in the ground of Agencourt, by which the day following, the Englishmen should passe to goe to Cales.

The xrb. of October, after prayers and supplications of the king, his priests and people done with great deuotion, the king of England in the morning very early set forth his host in array: He commaunded that his horses and other carriages should be left in the village where he had lodged. The order of his field was thus: The middle battell whereof the king was conduictor, was set in the midst of the field, directly against the middle battell of his aduersaries. On the right side was the first battell, and therewith the right wing: and on the left side the last battell, and the left wing. And these battells lying nigh together, by the prouidence of God, prouided vnto this king a defensible place for his host, for the village wherein he was lodged before, defended his host from all inuasions on the backe, and the felds wherein he was, was defended on both sides with two small riuers.

This Noble King was armed with sure and right beautifull armour: on his head a bright helmet, whereupon was set a Crowne of golde, repleate with pearle and precious stones, marvellous rich: In his shield he bare the armes both of England & Fraunce. And thus armed, he was mounted vpon a goodly great horse, and after him were ledde certaine noble horses, with their hildes and trappers of Goldsmithes worke, and vpon them also were beate the armes of England and of Fraunce. Thus this victorious king prepared to battaile, encouraged his people to the field that approached at hande.

The night before this cruell battell, by the aduise and counsell (as it is said) of the Duke of Borke, the king had giuen commaundement through his host, that euery man should puruey him a stake sharpe at both endes, which the Englishmen fired in the ground before them in the field, to defend them from the oppression of horsemen. The Frenchmen had such confidence in the great multitude of their people, and in their great horses, that many of their great Princes and Lords leauing behinde them their souldiers, standerts and other ensignes, came towards the Englishmen in right great haste, as if they had bene assured of victorie.

The King of England forthwith aduanced his banners and standerts towards the French host, and he in person with his battaile in the same order wherein he stode, followed, exhorting and encouraging euery man to battell, notwithstanding he went to inuade his enemies, yet kept his accustomed order, that is, that the first battell went before, the second battell followed, and the third came immediately after, he commaunded his priests to abide in prayers, and diuine supplications, and his heraults in their coates of armes to attend to their offices. When euery man fell prostrate to the ground, and committing themselves to God, euery of them toke in his mouth a little peece of earth, in remembrance that they were mortall, and made

of

## Henry the fift.

571

of earth, as also in remembrance of the holy communion. Thus all their carriages and baggages left behinde, onely charged with their barnels, weapons, and stakes, they marched toward their enemies, with great hute and noise. They sounded their trumpets, and stroke by their drummes, which greatly encouraged the hearts of euery man. Their enemies seeing them approach, aduanced themselves also, and met them in the felds, betwixt whom was begunne a marvellous fierce and cruell battell. The battell of the Englishmen was as long as the field wherein they fought, which was greatly to their aduantage, for by that their enemies were letted to come vpon them at the sides and backe of the host. The Frenchmen had ordered their battels with two sharpe fronts, like vnto two horses, which alwayes backward was broader and broader: these sharpe battels set vpon the English middlewarde, intending to haue runne through the whole felds, but the Frenchmen were slaine and wounded by the English Archers, and by the helpe of the stakes, which the Englishmen had fired before them in the ground, whereby the horsemen were constrained to returne, or else to runne vpon the stakes, where many of them were overthrowne and wounded, and many both horses and men slaine. The battell and fight increased maruellously, by the space of thre houres, in all which tyme no man was taken prisoner, but an innumerable number were slaine, vpon whose dead bodies they that followed were throwne and slaine.

Thus after a long and cruell battell, by the demerits of their great prayde, there approached no man of the French to battell, but to death, of whom after that an innumerable company were slaine, and that the victorie surely remayned to the Englishmen, they spared to slay, and toke prisoners of the French, both Princes and Gentlemen in great number. In this most tall battell, the Noble king of England neuer failed his men, for no danger of death, but fought with his enemies with an ardent heart, as a famished Lion for his pray, receiuing on his helmet and on the residue of his armour, many and great strokes.

In this field, as the puissant Prince Humfrey Duke of Gloucester the Kings brother, fought with great courage and force, he was sore wounded in the haumes with a sword, and overthrowne, in somuch, as he lay as balfe dead in the field, his head toward the Englishmen, and his feete towards his enemies: vpon whom the King hauing a brotherly compassion, bestrode him, and with most strong battell and labour, not without his owne great perill, like a brother he defended, and succoured his brother from the enemies, and made the Duke to be boyn out of the field amongst his owne men.

At the last, the victorie obtayned, and the great hoste of the Frenchmen overcome, slaine, wounded, taken and banquished, forthwith an other hoste of Frenchmen, no lesse than the first, supposing the Englishmen to be wearied by their long trauell and fight, disposed them to beginne againe the battell anew. When the Englishmen (which had many more prisoners

prisoners than they were of themselves in number) saw this new field assembled to give them battell againe, fearing in this new field, lest they should fight both against their prisoners, and their other enemies, they put to death many of their said prisoners, both noble & rich men, among whom the Duke of Brabant, who at that field was taken prisoner, was one.

The prudent king of England seeing the resemble of his adversaries sent his heralds unto them, commanding them, either forthwith to come to battell, or else immediately to depart the field, and if they delayde to depart, or to come to battell, both those of their company already taken prisoners, and also all they that should thereafter be taken, without mercie or redemption should be put to death: which message when the Frenchmen heard, fearing the strength of the Englishmen, and also the death, both of themselves, and also of their friends before taken prisoners, with great heavinesse, and with shame, they forthwith departed. When the King of England being assured of the victory, gave the greatest land and praise to God that might be.

In this battell were slaine on the French party, the Noble Dukes of Anjou, of Berry, and Saure, and the Lord Hely, the Lord Laubet chiefe Constable of France, the Archbishop of Saunce, Eight Carles, an hundred and one Barons, fiftene hundred knights, and above tenne thousand of all estates, whereof scarce fiftene hundred were souldiers or labourers, the rest were of coate armour (saily Engueant:) but Thomas Elmham saith, Archbishops, one, Dukes, thre, Carles, fve, Barons, and such like, four score and twelue, Knights, fiftene hundred, of Esquires and Gentlemen, seven thousand, whereof he nameth the Archbishoppe of Saunce, the Dukes of Brabant, Anjou, and of Bawer, the Carles of Flanders, Dauphinart, Parisiens, Grantper, Saunus, and of Dansemontaise, the Lord of Biet, Constable of Fraunce.

In this battell were taken prisoners of the Frenchmen, the Dukes of Orleans, and of Bourbon, Anjou brother to the Duke of Brabant, the Carles of Anaboline, of Cleve, and Richmond, and sir Bomcicaul Parhall of Fraunce, and many other to the number of 1500. Knights and Esquires: And of the English partie were slayne Edward Duke of York, buried at Fordinghep, Michaell de la Poole Earle of Suffolke, buried at new Elme, and to the number of an hundred persons in the vanguard, and of all estates in the English partie were not found dead above fve hundred in the feld. When night approached, the King of England returned with his host into the village, wherein they had harboured the night before, where he found his horses, and other baggages and carriages that he left behinde him there before the feld, to be stolen and caried away by the Frenchmen: where amongst many other Jewels of great price, was stolen away a sword of great balne, adorned with gold and precious stones, which was after given to Philip Earle of Charlois, sonne and heire to Iohn Duke of Brabant.

King Henry having gathered his army together, gave thanks to Almighty

the God for his so happy a victory, causing his Priests and Chaplaines to sing the Psalme, *In Exitu israel de Agypto*, and commanding every man to kneele downe on the ground at this verse, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nominis tui de gloriam*: which being done, he caused Te Deum with certaine Anthems to be sung, giving land and praise to God, not boasting of his owne force or any humane power. This night when the King late at his recreation in the forcast village, hee was served at his boorde, of those great Lions and Prisoners that were taken in the field. That night the King appointed god and sure watchs throughout his host, for feare of sodaine invasions, but the Frenchmen were utterly divided and gone without making or intending any new business, whereby the Englishmen were suffered in peace to take their rest.

On the next day the King with his people entred his journey toward Calice: and as they passed through the fields where they had fought the day before, they found all the dead bodies dispoyle, as well of their barnesse, as of their array, by the inhabitants of the countrey, notwithstanding the bodies that might be knowne for Englishmen of any reputation, the king caused to be entered according to their estates, and so continuing his journey the King came to the Castell of Swines, and from thence he went to his Towne of Calice, with all his host and his prisoners, where he was received of his liege men, with great ioy and due honour. After the kings host was somewhat refreshed with meat, drink and sleepe, the king conferred with his wise counsellors, if it were good now to returne into Fraunce, and to pursue his enterprise begun, or else to return with his host into England, there to refresh his people, among whom it was considered that the number of his people was right small, and many of them beried with the sir, many soze grievd of their wounds which they had received at the field. Moreover, that their long staying at Calice should cause scarcity of victualles there, whereas otherwise in their owne countrey, the people should at more ease refresh themselves, and also be better cured of their wounds: finally, considering the time had not been hitherto unfortunate, but that with honour they might returne with great gaine, which they had conquered, they doubted not, but by the ayde of God the King should right well obtaine his desire in time to come, for which causes they all concurred upon their returne into England.

When with all diligence the shipp was prepared, and by the kings commandement, the Lords and great estates of the prisoners of France unto a great number, were brought into that ship, wherein the King was determined to passe the Sea. At this their passage the Sea was marvellously boisterous and rough, insomuch as two of the English shippes were perished in the floods, by reason whereof the French prisoners were so incombered and beried, that the day of their passage seemed to the no lesse bitter & terrible, than that day wherein they were taken at Agencourt, nor they could not marvell enough, how the king should have so great strengthes, so easily to resist and endure the rage and boisterousness of the Sea, without accompanance and dis-



King Henry  
arrived at Dover.

ease of his stomacke. When the King had passed the Sea, and was come to arrive and to take land at Dover, innumerable people of Religion, Bishops, and Noblemen, and of the commons came running to meete the King in every way: and when he was arrived on the xxiii. day of November, he abode at Dover by certaine daies, to refresh and rest his Lords, and his prisoners, after his troublesome passage, and from thence he took his journey towards the Citie of London, where the Maior of London, with the Aldermen and craftes to the number of foure hundred riding in red, with haires red and white, met with the King on the Black heath coming from Eltham, and so brought him through London to Westminster, with all his prisoners of France.

The gates and streets of the Citie were garnished and apparelled with precious clothes of Arras, containing the victories, triumphes and princely Actes of the Kings of England his progenitors, which was done to the ende that the King might understand, what remembrance his people would to their posterity of these his great victories and triumphes. The Conduits through the Citie ranne none other but good sweete wines, and that abundantly. There were also made in the streets many Towers and stages, adorned richly, and upon the height of them sate small children, apparelled in semblance of Angels, with sweete tuned voices singing psalmes and laudes unto God: for the victorious King would not suffer any ditties to be made and sung of his victorie, for that he would wholly haue the praise given to God: neyther would he suffer to be carried before him, nor shew ed unto the people his helmet, whereupon his Crowne of golde was broke, and depose in the fieldes by the violence of the enemy, and great strokes that he had received, nor his other armour that in that cruell battaile was so sore broken, but as the faithfull constant champion of God, he eschewed all occasions of vaine glorie, and refused the vaine praises of the people. On the next morrow, the Maior, Aldermen and 200. of the commons presented the King with a 1000. l. in two balcons of gold, worth 500. pounds.

The first day of December, by the Kings commaundement, a great number of the bishops and Abbots of the realme, were assembled at London, there to celebrate and keepe the requies for Edward late Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Salisburie, and of other both English and French, which died in partes beyond the sea: unto these solemnities came from Barflewe, the Captaine of the same Towne, the Kings uncle Earle of Dorset, who a little before had made a roade into the borders of the countrey next adioyning, and had put them to flight, and taken prisoners 800.

This yere the King kept his Christmasse at Lambeth.

In the feast of the Purification, seven dolphins of the sea came by the riuer of Thamis, and plaid there whiles foure of them were kille.

In a Parliament begun the 15. of March at Westminster, the halfeprice of Tanna (commonly called Salep halfeprice) were for bid to be used as lawfull payment among the English people.

The

1476.  
Halfeprice  
of Tanna for  
broden.

An. reg. 4.

The first of May, Sigismonde the Emperour landed at Dover, and the twentieth of May, the Maior, Aldermen, and craftes of London receiued him at Blacke-heath, and the King with his Lords met him at St. Thomas Waterings, and so brought him through London to Westminster. The Emperour returned out of England the xvi. of August, after he had laboured, but could make no peace betwene England and France.

John Benet wolman, who had in London scattered seedes full of sedition, was drawne, hanged, and beheaded on Michaelmas day. The viii. day of October, was a parchment maker of Trilwell streets, drawne, hanged, and beheaded, for that he had harboured sir John Old-castell.

Tho. Wolman  
Calloolman  
Trilwell.

King Henry of England, immediately after his returne from Caleis, sent his legats to Constance, where was kept y general counsell, as ye haue heard, which with all other legats, the Emperour being there present, laboured for the vnitie and peace of their mother the Church, and to reform the schisme that had long continued of the Popes, which counsell took effect in this manner. Their first depose all the Popes, by whom the schisme was continued, & they with the Cardinals elected unto the papacy, the Cardinal of Columpne, borne in Rome, and was named Martin the first, whose armes were a pillar of silver crowned with golde, in a field gules. At this counsell, by the assent of all nations there present, it was authorized, and ordained that England should obtaine the name of a nation, and should be said one of the five nations, that owe their deuotion to the Church of Rome, which thing untill that time, men of other nations, for enuy had delayed and letted.

The kingdom  
of England  
one of the five  
nations.  
T. Bimham

In the Parliament at London, Thomas Bewfort Earle of Dorset was made Duke of Excester, and had 1000. l. the yere given him.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Kenelworth, at which time there was treason wrought against him, by a certaine Esquire of the complices of sir John Old-castell.

1477.

The morrow after Christmas day, certaine seditious persons spread abroad poisoned bile, rapping against all estates of the Church, almost in every great house, and hospital of the Townes of Saint Albons, Southampton, Reading, &c. but no man would be knowne to be the author of them: also one by his counterfeited name, called frier Tucke, with many other malefactors, committed many robberies in the countries of Surrey, and Suffre, whereupon the King sent out his writs for their apprehension.

Record frier  
Tucke.

On Easter day in the after-noon, at a Sermon in Saint Dunstons in the East of London, a great trap happened in the Church, where through many people were sore wounded, and one Thomas Petwarden fishmonger, layne out of hande, wherefore the Church was suspended, and the beginners of the trap (which was the Lord Strange, and sir John Tufsell knight, though the quarrell of their two wives) were brought to the Countee in the Waltrie: the Archbishoppe of Canterbury caused them to be recommunicate, as well at Pauls Crosse, as in all other parish Churches of the Citie. The xxi. of April, the said Archbishoppe sate at St. Magnus, to enquire of the authors of that disorder, where he found the fault to be in

An. reg. 5.  
A fray in St.  
Dunstons  
Church.  
Records of  
Cant.

the



The Lord  
Strange and  
his wife doe  
penance.

576

## Henry the fifth.

the Lord Strange and his wife, who upon the first of May following, in Pauls Church before the Archbishop, the Bishop of London, and other, submitted themselves to penance, which was intimated them, that immediately all their servants should in their shirts go before the Parson of Saint Dunstons, from Pauls, to Saint Dunstons Church, and the Lord bare heade, with his Ladie bare footed, Reignold Kenwood Archdeacon of London following them, and at the hallo wing of the Church, the Ladie should fill all the vessels with water, and also offer an ornament of tenne pound, and the Lord Strange should offer a Pire of five pound.

Carle Dowglas of Scotland came into England, and promised amitte to the king, the which he assured by oath and writing sealed, yet notwithstanding he after turned to the French, at the battail of Crecy in Perch fought by the Duke of Bedford as shall be shewed.

Titus Livius.

King Henry prepared his Paule, ordnance, and victuall for his people, and generally all other things necessary for the warres, he assembled together England such men as wel Dukes, Carles, Lords, knights and Gentlemen, and commons as he knew were good both for warre and peace: which being done, upon Saint Markes day the Evangelist, he took his journey towardes Hampton, in purpose, when the winde and sea were favourable, to goe into France: he rode through London, till he came at Pauls, where he alighted and made his offering, and in like manner he offered at Saint Georges in Southwarke, and in all his way he gave the farewell to every man, praying them all to pray to God for him.

In this meane time the Frenchmen made covenant with the Citizens of Ceane (a Citie in Italy) whereby the Italians were bound, at a certaine price for every Caricke limited for the French mens money, to prepare and furnish with armed men, as many of their greatest Carickes as the French should desire, and so prepared they should send them to the ayde of the French men, against the Englishmen, many of these Carickes so prepared, were of marvellous greatnes, yea greater then ever were seene in those parts before that time, they sailed into the mouth of the Seine, where they strongly assailed Herefaste by water, whereof when the king of England was advertised, he desired to goe unto them in his own person to remove them from this siege, but from that purpose he was letted, by the advice of his counsaile, wherefore he gave that journey to the right puissant lohn, Earle of Huntingdon, who entered the Paule, departed from the land, and had such favourable winde, that in short time he was brought unto the enemies, who assailed each other by great bigon and strength. Their ships were grappled and fought together, the more part of a summers day, but at the length the Italians oppressed by the strength of the Englishmen, were bitterly discomfited and overcome, their greatest Caricks, and also the greater part of their men were taken, the residue of the Genowaises seeing their fellows slain or taken, were stricken with feare, & their chaines or cables broken, or beewed alunder, they departed their Caricks from the English ships, and escaped by helpe of the winde and streame. This victory obtained, the noble Earle returned to

Hampton

## Henry the fifth.

577

Hampton, whereof when the king was advertised, he gave laud and praising for this victory unto God: and for the same he intaunted the Earle his nephew, with honour, and also with rewardes, he had fought with nine caricks and taken foure of them, with their patrons, and the Admiral of them all, that was called the Ballard of Warbon, with all the treasure that they all should have bene waged with for a quarter of a pere.

The xxviii. day of July the puissant king Henry (his Paule of 500. ships being prepared) assembled his armie to passe the seas, of his own company and pursuivance 16400. armed men, and besides that number came to him to Dover, 1020s and Gentlemen with their retinues, and the day and place for the same prefixed: first the Duke of Clarence with 240. speares, and 300. archers in his retinue: and the Duke of Gloucester with 100. speares, and 300. archers, and five Carles with 470. speares, and 1410. archers, to wit, the Earle of March 100. speares and 300. archers, the Earle of Warwick 100. speares 300. archers, the Earle of Huntington 40. speares, and 120. archers, the Earle of Suffolke 30. speares, and 90. archers, and the Earle of Salisburie 100. speares, and 300. archers, and after these Carles followed 13. estates of the Realme, with 506. speares, and 1570. archers, that is to say, the Lord Burghaun, the Lord Marquers, the Lord Fitz Hugh, the Lord Clifford, the Lord Grey, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Talbot, the Lord E. Courtney, the Lord Boucher, the Lord Rolle, the Lord Louel, the Lord Ferrers of Chartley, the Lord Harrington.

After came 87. knights, and their retinue, 940. speares, and 2852. archers. Of carpenters and other artificers the king had with him in wages to the number of 1000. and so the kings whole hoste belike labourers & artificers, amounted to the number of 25527. fighting men, of whom every fourth man was a horseman. Those things thus ordered, and the Paup for their connepance ready apparelled, the king entered his Shippe, which was royally and sumptuously adorned: the sayle thereof was of purple silke, right beautifully embordered, both with the armes of England & of France, and this ship they called the Kings chamber. He had also another the second a caricke of like apparell, which by the Kings commaundement they called the Kings hall, and these two he ordered to be the principall of all the Paup. Before he departed the Realme, he constituted lohn Duke of Bedford his brother, to be protector of his Realme of England in his absence.

On the first day of August the whole fleet arrived in Normandie, not farre from the Castell of Torque, where the king dubbed 48. knights, such as were worthe of that order. Now, when all the ships were discharged as their carriages, the king sent them againe into England, except such ships as were deputed for the carriage of guns and other engins and habilliments of warre.

This being done, the king sent men of armes on horsebacke to espye the situation and strength of the Castell of Bundeau, and other nigh unto those parts, which Gentlemen, with many prisoners returned, and great prayes of beastes. Their enemies stricken with feare, every man conveyed their goods and beastes into the Cities, Townes and Castels, not knowing

B p

which

which the king would first besiege: they strengthened their Townes and walles with stones, guns and other things necessary for their defence. The king took his enterprise to assaige the Towne of Tongue, whose Castell was marvellously defensible, the assaige wherof was given to the Duke of Gloucester, chiefe tennant of the kings auant guard, who constrained the frenchmen so sore, what with assaults, with guns and other engines, that within short time, to wit, the fourth day of the siege, and the ninth day of August, they promised to yeeld the Castell to the Duke, if the same were not shortly rescued by the french: but when they heard no word of succour, they yeilded the Castell to the king, and he made sir John Kikeley Captaine there.

Also the Earle of Salisbury conductor of the kings second battell whiles the Duke of Gloucester assailed the Castell of Tongue, wanne the Castell of Amblesbury, and put out the frenchmen thereof, which Castell so taken, with all that belonged thereunto, the king gaue to the same Earle. And thus this Noble Earle was the first that had any land giuen vnto him of the kings liberality in this conquest.

The Earle Marshall was sent to the Castell of Louers, which in short time he subdued, and after it was giuen to him by the king.

King Henry  
besieged Cane

The eighteenth day of August, the king placed himselfe with his army before the Citie of Cane, on the south side nere vnto the Monastery of Saint Stephen, and the Duke of Clarence the kings brother was sent before with one thousand horsemen to keepe the suburbs of the Towne, that the towne men should not burne them, the Duke thus lodged on the north side, by the Monastery of Run of the holy Trinitie: the Earle Marshall lay on the left hand of the king, and the Lord Maltravers hard by him, and by him were placed the Lords Talbot and Vnheulle: and next to them the Lords Neuill and Willoughby. On the right hand of the king lay the Earle of Warwick: and the Lord John Grey, and by them the Carles of Huntingdon & of Salisbury, and the Lord Gren-Cornewall.

The kings army thus placed and set in order: the Abbe of Saint Stephen being manitied with frenchmen, when they sawe themselves to weake to resist the kings force, they took and carried away both vittualles and treasures of the house, and brought them into the Towne next adjoining, and deuised how they might set the Abbey on fire: but a certaine sponke of the place boldly put himselfe in leopordy in the dead season of the night, to creep on handes and fete, till he came to the Duke of Clarence, whom he found lying in compleate harness, in a garden vpon the grasse, with his head vpon a stone, whom he besought to preuent the ruine of his place, which he should be destroyed. For, said he, it doth specially pertaine to you to preferue our Monastery, which are defended of the king which founded our place, builded it, and indued it with possessions, wherefore take mine aduise and I will bring you into the place, and the Duke following the sponkes counsell, took scaling ladders, and came to the doore of the Abbey, which the sponke knewe was not manitied. The Duke hauing by this meanes gotten the place, brought the king into it.

Not

Not farre distant from this place was an other Monastery of women, right strong and defensible, which also that worthy Duke had receiued vnder his tuition.

The fourth day of September, at the breake of the day, the king caused all his trumpets to be sounded, and forthwith the ladders were rayled to the walles of the Towne, they fell to scaling them with great diligence, but many of them were cast backward into the ditch, and their ladders with them: the french cast great stones vpon the Englishmen, they poured on their heades scerching water, molten lead, boiling pitch, and oyle, all which would not make the Englishmen forsake the assault, amongst whom Edmond Springes lately made knight, in his armour went vpon the walles of Cane, and fought very sore, both giuing and receiuing many woundes, and yet at length was overcome and died. Notwithstanding the kings men ceased not to assault and set vpon the enemies so fiercely, on that one side, that they that were on the other side the Towne to keepe and to defend the same, were forced to leaue their standing, and to come to that side that the king assaulted. And thus when that side of the Towne was bove of defence, the Duke of Clarence, in the place which was thought most safe, scaled the wals and came vpon the backs of the frenchmen, which so suddenly assaunted them, that they knew not whether it were better to go on for ward against the king, or to turne backe to withstand the Duke.

Thus great destruction and slaughter was made of the frenchmen, for the king meeting them in their for ward, and the Duke of Clarence coming on the reuerward, took all hope of safegard from them, and thus the king got the Towne, and entred the same by the gates, that the Duke had opened for him. After which entrie of the king, he went to with great deuotion the principall Church of the Towne being of Saint Peter, there to giue landings and praises to the Almighty God, for the obtaining of this so great a victory. All they that intended to prayes were marvellously enriched, for the inhabitants of that Towne were men of great substance: but there was no man so hardy that durst presume to robbe any Church, for feare of the kings iustice, which was extreme in that case, no women in the Towne were rauished by the Englishmen, but shortly after the king commaunded all women and children to be auoyded out of the towne, and so the towne was inhabited of new possessors. The king made sir Gilbert Vnheulle Earle of Hereford, captain there, and sir Gilbert Talbot, and sir John Popham bayliffes. Peruerteblesse the Castell of Cane was not yet gotten, they held it th. & weekes after the taking of the towne. After the taking of this towne of Cane, the siege yet enduring before the Castell, the puissant Prince the Duke of Gloucester, with his battell before Bapour, they of the Towne and Castell yeilded vnto him.

The 11. day of September the Castell of Cane was deliuered by to King Henry: and in short time the Englishmen had taken the Citie of Licur, and the Castell of Hemy: and not long after, all the fortifications, were it towne, Castell or Citie within a great circulte about them, were taken and reduced to the kings obedience.

Cane in Roy-  
mandy worne  
by King Henry.

Tho. Walling.

T. Otterborne

The Scots  
besieging  
Berkeley, & Berke-  
ley, and Berke-  
ley.

Times Livell.

While these things were in doing in Normandie, the favourers of sir John Old-castell beganne to raged in England, who with great pfecters and promise of money, stirred by the Scots to invade the Realme in the kings absence, affirming that the same would be easily wonne, and it was said that sir John Old-castell talked with William Douglas the Scot at Pontfract, promising him a great summe of money, to perswade the people to come with him, and to bring with them, him, who was falsely called king Richard, and to set him out as king. Also indentures, and other writings were found, made betwixt sir John Old-castell, & the Duke of Albany, in the which the Scots were invited to besiege Warborough and Berkeley: whereupon the Duke of Albany besieged Berkeley by water and land on each side: and the Earle Douglas did also besiege Warborough, tarrying there xv. daies, undermining to overthrow the walles, but it happened at the same time Thomas Beauford Duke of Excester, came to Bridlington upon devotion to that place, who straight waies, so soon as he heard tidings thereof, went into these parts, gathering by the way as he went men of armes and archers. On the other side John Duke of Bedford protecced of the Realme, and other Nobles, to wit Ralph Earle of Westmerland, and Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, with 60000. warriors, the Archbishop of York Henry Bevet, which for great age might not incite to ride upon an horse, caused himselfe to be brought to the English host in his chaire, there to comfort & in courage the hearts of the people, that they should more ardently defend their countrey, his Charge being there with him, & other, remoned those sieges: for the Scots in the night leaving their tents, ladders & other engins, with shame returned into Scotland.

When these things were in good suretie toward the North, the Duke of Excester with a chosen company of men of warre, took his ships, and sailed into Normandy, where he landed, & took his journey toward Roane to the king, in the which journey, he wanne the Citie of Chobrien.

King Henry having deputed in all his towns and fortresses, Captaines and governors, into whose hands all the Frenchmen that should recurrence into the kings obedience, should give their othes of true allegiance. The first of October he departed from Cane with his people, leaving behinde him a sufficient garrison, and took his journey to the Castell of Courley, which on the third day after was yielded unto him. The first of October he went to besiege Argentine, which Towne was very defensible and strong, with a Castell of great strength, but the inhabitants of this Towne answered the kings demands, that if they were not succoured by the Frenchmen by a certaine day limited, they would deliver both the Towne and Castell unto the king without condition, to depart with their goods: and when the time limited was come, the Towne and Castell were delivered. After this, daily resorted to the king much people of Normandy, to do fealty unto him, and to live under his Emperre. The Citie of Sees which was right well peopled, and wherein were two Abbies marvellous strong and defensible, yielded unto the king: like wise many other Townes in that prouince yielded them unto the king, without assault or battell. These things thus done, the king took his voyage to

ward

ward Alancon, to receive into his dominion the Towne of Senlue, in which journey he sent a great part of his host to two strong Abbies, whereof the one was called Somolins, and the other Elsey, which if they had made resistance, he commanded to be taken by force, but they submitted themselves to the kings authority. The king came to Alancon on the 15. of October, where he first caused his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester to pitch his tents before the Castell, and the rest of the Towne himselfe assieged. This Towne and Castell was like wise yielded to the king in manner as the rest. The English men after this took the Towne of Bolone, and the Towne and Castell of Freswey: and shortly to recount, all the countrey by a great circuit, Cities, Townes and Castles were brought under the kings subjection. In this time, the Duke of Britaine accompanied with many great estates of his countrey came to king Henry, with whom he accorded a peace from the 17. day of October, untill the last day of September, in the yere following. The Dolphin of France also desired to treat with the king of England for peace, to whose Ambassadors the king appointed the Towne of Longue, whereunto they might safely resort for the same treaty, but there was no good done.

The king being assieged at Chalceps, which the French, to their power resisted right manfully, and made with them many battalles, and skirmishes: but in the ende the inhabitants, seeing the Englishmen more covetous of honour, then wear of paine, they countenanced with the king, that if by the second day of Januarie they were not delivered from the siege, they should freely deliver unto the king their Towne. In this meane time was taken in England sir John Old-castell, in the territory of the Lord Powelle, not without danger and hurt of some that took him: neither could he himselfe be taken before he was wounded. At the which time all the states of the Realme were called to a Parliament at London, therein to provide the king of a subsodie and aide of money, who took great paines beyond the seas. These Lords & other when they heard tell that the publicke enemy was taken, they agreed all, not to dissolve the Parliament untill he were examined, and heard to answer in the same: wherefore the Lord of Powes was sent to fetch him up with power, who brought him to London in a litter, wounded, and also a Clerk with him that was of counsell in all his secrets. As soon as the said sir John Old-castell was brought into the Parliament before the Duke of Bedford, regent and governor of the Realme, and the other estates, his indictment was read before him, of his forcible insurrection against the king in Saint Giles hie, and other treasons by him committed, the question was asked how he would excuse himselfe, and shew why he should not be deemed to die: but he seeking other talke beganne to preach of the mercies of God, and that all mortal men that would be followers of God, ought to preferre mercy above indgement, and that vengeance pertained only to the Lord, and ought not to be practised by them that worship God, but to be left to God alone: with many other wordes to detract the time, untill the chiefe Justice admonished the Regent not to suffer him to spend the time so vainely, in molesting of the Nobles of the Realme: whereupon the Earle of Bedford re-

T. Wallingh.  
Sir John  
Old-castell  
taken.  
Parliament at  
London.

gent commanded him to answer formally unto the matter laid to his charge. He said sir Iohn being thus urged, at the last after deliberation taken, he said, it is the least thing that I account of, to be iudged by you, as of mans iudgement: and againe, he began to talke, but nothing to the purpose, untill the chiefe iustice commanded him againe to answer finally, and to iuryne them if he could, why he should not suffer death. To the which he stoutly answered, that he had no iudge amongst them, so long as his liege Lord King Richard was alive, and in the Realme of Scotland, which answer when he had made, because there needed no further witness, he was commanded to be drawn and hanged upon a gallows, and to be burned hanging upon the same, which iudgement was executed upon him on the xiii. day of December in Saint Giles field. Where when many honourable persons were present, the last words that he spake, was to sir Thomas of Erpingham, aduring him, that if he saw him rise from death to life againe, the third day, he would procure that his feet might be in peace and quiet: he was hanged by the necke in a chaine of iron, and after consumed with fire.

2418.

King Henry kept his feast of the Nativite of Christ at Bataur in Normandie, where when the day limited was come, they of Phalots, with gates open delivered the Towne to the King, and shortly after the Castell was yielded to him also.

The Duke of Clarence with his armed power conquered in this time the Townes and Castles of Harcourt, Fagon, Eivil, Cambysle, Courtton, and divers other, and also the strong Abbey of Whilrom, all which places, the mighty Duke, with assages, assaults, oppressions, and faire promises, especially observed, in short time he subdued, to the kings Empryce.

An. reg. 6.

The Duke of Gloucester was sent to the Ile of Constantine, in the first entrie of which iourney, he obtained the strong Castell of Caudey, from whence he went to the Towne and Castell of Aire, the inhabitants whereof yielded them with all their goods, to live under the kings obedience: the Castell of Roiney yielded to the Duke: the Town of Lew, the Castell of Saint Sauour le Secout, Claisiges, Berckcourt, and also: all these submitted them to the Duke for the king.

King Henry during this time sent of his owne company the Earle of Huntington to forsey certain defendible places, which in short time he manfully reduced under the kings obedience. The king sent also the Earle of Warwicke with another company of men of warre, to assiege the Castell of Montfront, which Castell unto him was delivered on the 22. day of June.

When the Duke of Gloucester (after he had bene with the king) had repaired his iourney towards Harbrough, the Captaine of the same having knowledge of his purpose, and other Noble men that were deputed by the Frenchmen, for the defence of that place, assembled out of all partes the strongest men of warre, in marvellous great number, for the resistance of the Englishmen, and for the defence of the Towne: the Duke approached night unto the Towne, whereunto he laid his siege, but not in all places, for the inhabitantes had broken the bridge without the Towne, whereby the Englishmen

Answer of sir  
Iohn Dolo-  
castell.

Englishmen were deprieved of their passage ouer.

Now to returne to the king, who had persecuted the whole Lent, and also the solemnities of Easter in prayers, fastings, vigils, almesdeeds, and other works of mercy, within the Towne of Bataur: from whence after Easter he went to Cane, where he solemnly kept the feast of Saint George, at the which feast he made 15. knights of the Bath, five of them were, sir Lewes Roblar, sir Roger Saluine, sir Iohn Stewart, sir Iohn Shorebrooke, and sir Iohn Mountgomery, whom he sent to besiege divers places thereabouts. This being done, he delivered to go to Roane, the chiefe and principall City of Normandy, notwithstanding that his company was greatly diminished by the absence of the Duke of Gloucester, that then lay at Harbrough, as is afore shewed, and of the Earle of Warwicke that then besieged the Castell of Montfront. After he left the king departed from Cane the ninth of June, & took his voyage with all his people towards the Citie of Roane: in which iourney, because it was not farre out of his way, he first laid siege to the Towne of Louars, and compelled them within to yield to him upon conditions, on the eleven of Saint Iohn Baptiste.

King Henry  
besieged Lo-  
uars.

When the king on the 22. of June, removed his army towards Montlarche, where he laid his siege on the one side of the Towne, by the middle whereof, the river of Seine bath his course, but could haue no passage over the river to lay siege on the other side, for the bridge which was without the Towne was defended with a strong Tower, and a garrison: but king Henry commanded to make boates of wickers, and those to be closed in beastes skins, by which boates, on the first of July, the Duke of Clarence with his company passed over secretly in great number, and then besieged the other side of the Towne: but because the river of Seine divided his host, whereby if either part should haue neede of other, they could not come together for the river, the king caused to be made so many small square boates of the wicker afore said, that being tyed together, and cast into the river, he made of them a bridge. When the inhabitants and garrisons perceived them thus enuironed in all parts, they agreed with the King, that if within 15. daies they were not deliuered from this siege, they should deliuer to the King the Towne and Castell, and when the day was come, they performed promise: and this was the first bridge over the river of Seine that the King subdued to his power.

Titus Livius.  
King Henry  
besieged  
Montlarche.

After the King had thus obtained that bridge over the river of Seine, and that there was none other river or flood might let his iourney, with all the haste he might, he entred his iourney towards Roane. The Citizens hearing the approach of their enemies, and fearing least they should be lodged in the suburbs, which were much larger than the Citie was within the walls, and was also much replenished with Monasteries, Churches, and Towers, burned the same, and made all even with the ground. So this City on the thirtieth day of July this victorious King approached, against whom came the Citizens with their garrisons and men of warre, where the more part of all that day they continued in battell, and fought soze on both

King Henry  
besieged Roan

partes, but the Frenchmen were forced to seek their succour within the walls of the Citie, whom in their recolle the King pursued still before the Citie, where he ordered his siege in this manner. First, the King with a poble company of young and hardie men lodged himselfe before the gate of Saint Hilarie. The Duke of Clarence with his power was lodged before the gate of Caubr. The Duke of Excester, after he was come to the King, was lodged with his people before the gate of the Castell, called Beauruice. Earle Marshall was lodged before the gate called Markeuile. The Earle of Warwick, after he was come from the Castell of Donfrount, was lodged upon the hill, where the strong Monastery of Saint Katherin was. The Earles of Salisbury and Huntington, were lodged there upon the other side of the riuer of Sène: upon whom their enemies made many assaults: and because the riuer of Sène diuided the English host in two parts, the King caused to be made a strong bydige of timber ouer the same riuer, that when neede should require, they might haue free passage on foote and horse: and because their enemies should not approach vnto it, with their ships or galleies, the king caused to be made a great chaine to be dyatone ouer the riuer, betwixt the Citie and the bydige. At that time the king of Portugale cousin to the king of England, sent a paulte of ships well manned vnto the kings aide, whom the king commanded to lie betwixt the Citie and the Sea, to enclose the Citie from all succours by water. The Towne of Caubekerke fearing the danger of the time, couenanted with the king of England, that when the Citie of Roane were taken and deliuered into the kings obaysance, they in like manner would yelde them to him, without any assault, and vnder the same appointment accorded with the king, foure tene other defensible Townes and Castles that were nigh bordersers vnto Roane. After many cruell battels and assaults, the Citizens fearing at length to be famished, dayly put out of the Citie a great number of poore people and other, but the hunger encreasing, they were forced to eat their horses, dogs, cats, rats, and mice: and when such and other like things were consumed and eaten, then the plague of famine entred the Citie, so that the people for default of reliefe died, that the lining might scarcely burie the dead, whereby that poble Citie was brought into so much misery, that it is not lesse maruel than pitifull to heare.

In this meane time during this siege of Roane, the Duke of Excester besieged the Citie of Enereoy: also about the twentieth of August king Henry had thre maruellous victories in Poymandy. The first was that 100. Englishmen took thre great Lordes at a place called Balbaife, & put to flight 380. persons besides. The second was, 400. of his enemies entred within the suburbs of the Towne of Chyolens, and 11. Englishmen chased them away and took foure of them, and slue 12. and took 40. of their horses. The third was, the enemies would indeed haue taken the Towne which was called Leuers, but the Captaine of the same with an hundred of our men went out against 1000. of them, and ouercame them, and took 180. Gentlemen of the enemies. About this time also Captaine de la Bouche

take

took the town of Pontois by Paris.

When the Citizens of Roane, perceived themselves maruellously afflicted by famine, (as is before shewed) and also to be in dispaire of succor, from the Frenchmen, now after halfe a yeres siege and more, vpon certaine conditions, they deliuered to the King of England their Citie, Castle, towne, abbayes, Churches, houses, citizens, captaines, garrisons, and generallie all things that were within the Citie, whatsoever they were. The xix. day of Januarie, there had died within this Citie (as was said) for default of victuals during this siege mo than xxx. thousand people. This noble King rather to relieue this oppressed Citie, ordeined the same to be the chiefe chamber of all Poymandie, and ordeined his exchequer, his treasure, and his coynage to be kept in the same: he also edified a strong towne behind the Castle. Whildest the King ordered his businesse at Roane, hee sent diuers Lordes with strong puissance of people, to receive the Castles of townes bordering vpon Roane, amongst whom the Duke of Clarence, in short time reduced to the King, the mightie Castle of Galiard, the town of Vernon, the town of Saunt, the Castle of Sandmount, and many other strong places and holds.

The Earle of Salisbury, with the garrison to him assigned took the town of Hounslow, the town of Spounseur de Millers, the town of Cwe, the town of Gurney, the new Castle, & generally all the places in that part.

This yere Quene Ioane mother to the Duke of Britayne, and the Kings stepmother being defamed of some wicked practise, by witchcraft, or sorcerie, that she had deuiled the Kings death, by the counsell of John Randolph Doctor of Diuinitie, of the order of the friars minors, then of the couen of Wyborsbury, hir confessor, forsaketh all hir lands and goods by Parliament, and hauing all her seruants put from hir, was committed to the custodie of John Pellam, and by him sent to the Castle of Leeds in Kent, hee appointed nine seruants to attend hir, and to bring her into the Castle of Wemsey, there to be gouerned vnder his prouidence. Friar Randolph, being apprehended in the Isle of Jersey, was conueyed to Chirbrughe and there imprisoned, and from thence was sent to the towne of London, where at length, to wit, in the yere of Christ 1429. on the first of June, he was slaine by the parson of Saint Peters Church in the tower, falling out at wordes with him, and after Quene Ioane was deliuered of hir imprisonment.

King Henry sent his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, accompanied with the Earle Marshall, and a great power of armed men, to lay siege before the town and Castle of Luoric, which town, after many assaults and battels, the Duke took by force: but the Castle thereof was not yelded, till the 13. of May. The King also sent the Earle of Huntington with a power from Saunt, to the town of Pontois, by which, if it were taken, he might haue the more sure and easie passage to Paris. Those which were sent, at the entrie of the night were come nigh vnto Pontois, where, in a wood they left their horses, and that done, in the darkness of the night, they went on foote to the ditch of the town, which then were drye, where part of them lay on the banks

bankes of the ditches, with their ladders in their hands ready to scale the wals when time would serue, and the residue hid them in the vines where they might be ready to enter the towne at the opening of the gates. At the breake of the day, they of the towne changed their watch, at the which change, the walles were left without watches for the time. But the Englishmen seeing time to accomplish their intent, raised their ladders, and scaled the wals, and by that meanes, entered the towne: where, some of them forthwith brake the gate, and made entrie for the rest of their company, which, when the garrisons of the towne perceived, as men amazed, they turned themselves to flight. But not long after, they armed them, and assailed their enemies, but to the Englishmens great auaille, the Earle of Huntington with his company set spurs to their hories, and hastened them to the succour of their first company, whereby the Frenchmen as all discouraged and in despaire to saue the towne, at the sight of these new rescues that came to the Englishmen, leauing behinde them all their riches and substance endeouored themselves to escape by flight, and so the towne of Pontois, auoided of al frenchmen, was left free to the English. After these enterprises thus atchieued, the King with all his companie came to the towne of Pontois, where he abode a certaine time, from whence he sent the Duke of Clarence with a chosen powder of men to Paris, to view the situation and strength thereof, before which Citie, when he had tarried certaine dayes and had seene all that him liked, and that none of the Frenchmen would issue out of the Citie to fight with him, he returned to the King, and ascertained him of all that he had seene.

Wokimillers  
yielded.

On the viii. of August, King Henry with all his host departed from Pontois. And because the Castle of Wokimillers had done certaine inhumane cruelties to the Kings lanos that bordered thereabout, to the intent to repress their malice, the King lodged himselfe not far from thence, and sent certaine to assault the same Castle, where both the inhabitants and garrisons feared so much the King, that as men desperate of all succours, they yielded both Castle and goods. And then all the townes, Castles, and holdes within a great circuit, without abiding battaile, yielded them to the King: but that strong and mighty towne of Gysois, whereof the Castle is much more defensible than the towne, would not submit to the King, wherefore on the last day of August the King with all his host took his journey thither, and enclosed the towne with his pavilions and tents. Betwixt him and them of the towne, were many sharpe battalles and cruell assaults, but at all times the Englishmen put the Frenchmen to flight, wherefore the inhabitants and garrisons of the towne and Castle deliuered the same to the King in the xxiii. day of September.

Enguerant.

In this meane time the Dolphin assembled a host of 20000. men at Ponfrea and Faulcien, in purpose to fight with the Englishmen, and for the same by his letters he sent to Tropes in Champeigne for the Duke of Burgoyne, desiring him to haue his company in his lozney. At whose request the same Duke incontinent vpon sight of his letters, and vpon the shew of the Dolphins ors, safely to goe and come, came vnto him to the place aforesaid, where notwithstanding his former oath, against both Gods law and mans law,

Titus Livius.

law, the Dolphin caused him at his coming, abhominably and cruelly to be murdered. After whose death the Dolphins seruants disposed him of his arap, and cast his naked body into a vile pit. The Duke being thus murdered, Philip his sonne, who had married the Lady Micquell the Dolphins sister, entered into all his fathers possessions: and shortly after, he toynd in amitie with the King of England, promising him in marriage his sister in law the Lady Katherine, & to be heire to King Charles: King Henry promised to deliuer to him so many of them as were guilty of his fathers murdering, as came into his hands, and the Dolphin should be for ever excluded from all title to the crowne of France. The Earle of St. Paul was gouernor of Paris although he were but xiiii. yeres of age, he gouerned the Citie wisely, to the Duke of Burgoyne befoze, who had put him into that charge. The Dolphin would haue excused himselfe of the murder lately committed, but could not, for he was led and gouerned by them that had committed it. Indee diuers of them had their friends killed, in the murder of Paris, when the Earle of Erminake and the other prisoners were killed there, and therefore to be reuenged on the Duke they cared not in what danger they put the Realme, nor in what blame the Dolphin came, who notwithstanding he put them from him, and they went out of the Realme, all this would not appease the matter, nor reconcile the Dolphin to the Duke Philip.

King Henry with his whole armie returned to Pauits, where of his host he made three battails, whercof the one he deliuered to the Duke of Gloucester, whom he sent to subdue the strong towne called Saint Germayns, which after many battails and skirmishes, in thort time was yielded to him for the King. The second battail he sent to the Castle of Mount Ope, which in like manner fearing the Englishmens puissance, yielded them to the King. And with the third of the said battails the King in his owne person went to assiege Petoilance, which about all other was most strong. The situation of this towne was in a plentifulous Ile, betwixt two armes of the sea, no man might approach nigh to assault it by land, but only by the bydye: and by water no vessel might come nigh vnto it, for the infinite multitude of piles that were fired and hid in the riuers. This towne was also defended with high and strong walles, within it also there were people in great number, as well of the inhabitants as of garrisons of men of war, that were purposely deputed for the defence thereof. Wherefore the King considering the strength, and defence of this place, assembled diuers ships and other small vessels, wherein by right great labour, hee first anoyed and clenched the riuer of the foresaid piles, which being done, he made all those vessels to be fastned together with chaines, and then he commaunded to be made certaine small Castles and towers of timber, which when they were finished, hee entended by strength of men, in those ships to assault the walles of the towne, but the garrisons and inhabitants being feared at the sight of these towers, before they were all finished, they sent their captaines to the King to treat with him for peace, which was granted them vpon condition, that if they were not aided by the last of Nouember, by the Frenchmen, they should deliuer the towne

to the King, and when the day came they according to covenant delivered the towne to the King, and then the King returned to Spaint, and sent the Duke of Excester to besidge the Caste of Gallard, which to him was yielded the 20. of December.

2420.

King Henry solemnized the feast of the Nativite of our Lord in the Citie of Roane: he sent the Earle of Salisburie to take the towne of Freseay, which in short time was delivered to him. The Earle Marshall and the Earle of Huntingdon, weresent to subdue the prouince of Shenen, where the Dolphin had deputed a capitaine with a strong power, which capitaine met the two Carles and gaue them battaile, but the Englishmen remained conquerours, and thus the two Carles subdued the prouince of Shenen, without any great resistance.

Whildest these and many other victories were atchieued, the King continuing in the Citie of Roane, lauding God, the Ambassadors of Charles King of Fraunce, and of Philip Duke of Burgoigne, came to treat of peace, where of the King they were honorably receiued, and hee sent backe with them to the French King, and the Duke of Burgoigne, his Ambassadors with full authoritie to conclude this long sought peace, of which Ambassadors, the principall was the Earle of Warwicke in companie of certaine Bishops and other discrete men, accompanied with a strong power of armed men. These Ambassadors were first brought to the Duke of Burgoigne, because hee was next vnto them, and after they toke their Iourney untill they came to the Citie of Troyes, where they found King Charles of Fraunce, with the Quene his wife, and that beautifull Lady Katherine their daughter. And entering into communication of peace with the Kings Counsell of Fraunce, the way of peace was found betwixt those two Kings by alliance, that is to say, by a marriage to be made betwixt the most victorious King of England, and the Lady Katherine daughter to the King and Quene of Fraunce: but because they perceived that many things might not be done without the presence of the Kings, as well for the appoyntment of their seales for the ratifying of the articles of this peace, as for the solemnization of the matrimonie, and also that King Charles was a man of many yeres, they considered that the King of England at a certaine day amongst them limited should come to the foresaid Citie of Troyes, with as great an armed power as he would: at which day appointed, if he failed to be there, all his communication of peace should bee as void. These things thus concluded and set downe in writing, the Earle of Warwicke with his company returned to the King of England, to whom they declared by order what they had done, who was content in all things to performe their appoyntments, and prepared for his Iourney. He called together knights, men of armes and archers to the number of sixtene thousand, of them the most part were archers: and when the time came that hee would depart towards Troyes (as hee was accustomed) hee divided his people in three parts and battels, and two Ioungs, and in that manner the eight day of May, he entered his Iourney toward Troyes in Campaigne, where hee was met

Ann. reg. 8.

by

by the Duke of Burgoigne accompanied with many noble men, two leagues without the towne, whom hee receiued with great honour and due obseruance. Then this most victorious King accompanied both of English and Frenchmen of euery estate and degree, entered the foresaid Citie of Troyes, the streets whereof without any abiding hee passed untill he came to the Kings Palace, where King Charles and the Quene his wife abode his coming, of whom hee was receiued godly and after a princely manner. When the King of England was thus royally receiued, after the due resolutions on his part made to King Charles and the Quene, hee departed from them, and by the Duke of Burgoigne and other great estates as well of England as of Fraunce, hee was conveyed to his lodges. The Citie was diuided into two parts, whereof the one halfe was assigned to the Frenchmen and Burgonians, and the other halfe to the Englishmen: and because that part assigned to the Englishmen, sufficed not to receive them all within the walles, but that a great part of them must be lodged in the suburbs, the King of England, because his people on that part should haue free concourse together, he caused the wall on that part of the Citie where he was lodged, to be cast downe to the ground. King Charles gaue authoritie and power to Isabel his wife and Quene, to Philip Duke of Burgoigne, and to certaine other of his Counsell plenarily to conclude the peace with King Henry, for him and for his Realme of Fraunce, vnder such conditions as should be decreed, and also to proue, ratifie, and confirme the same, by oth solemnized in the person of King Charles, without fraud, in all things to be observed vnto the said King Henry, his heires and successors, by the said King Charles his heires and successors, &c. On the 21. of May, in the xl. yere of the reigne of King Charles, in the Cathedrall Church of Troyes, the King of England with the Duke of Clarence his brother, and other Dukes, Carles, Bishops, Barons, Lords of estate, and other prelates of England, and Isabel the Quene of Fraunce, with the Duke of Burgoigne, and other of the Kings Counsell of Fraunce, and in that part his especial commissioners, for and in the name of the King of Fraunce, and also for themselves, and in their proper names, in a great assembly of the three estates of France, vulgarly called their Parliament, concluded a peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and Fraunce, and the same ratified and approued with the conditions and articles that in part shall follow, whereupon writings were made, sealed with the boade seale of the said King Charles. When immediately Isabel the Quene and the Duke of Burgoigne, in the name of King Charles, made a solemne oth vpon the holy Euangelists, that the same Charles, his heires and successors should obserue and keepe, without fraud, the peace made betwixt the two Realmes. And the same oth the Quene and the Duke of Burgoigne in their owne names and for themselves, their heires and successors, made vnto the King for him, his heires and successors, and after them as many as were there present both of the Kings Counsell, and also of the Parliament, as Bishops, Lords, knights, and commons, made the same oth to the King. And the 23. and 24. day of May the Chancellor of France, and many other Lords, bishops, prelates,



lates, and noble men gave the like faith and oth to King Henry of England.

The third of June, being present the Councell of King Charles, Isabel Quene of France, the Duke of Burgoigne, and the Parliament of France, and also the Duke of Clarence, with many Bishops, Lords, and Knights of England, with King Henry, the matrimonie was solemnized betwixt the most victorious King Henry of England, and the excellent and glorious Lady Katherine daughter to Charles of Fraunce and Isabel his Quene. The peace that was confirmed betwixt the said two Kings and their Realmes was read as followeth.

King Henry from now forth during the life of King Charles, shall not name or write himselfe King of Fraunce, nor shall not suffer himselfe of his people so to be named or written. After the death of King Charles, King Henry shall be King of Fraunce peaceably with his heires and successors. And because King Charles by reason of his infirmities is unable to governe the common weale, King Henry during the life of Charles, shall rule and governe the Realme of Fraunce, to the profite and honor of the same King Charles. King Charles in all his writings shall name the same King Henry our sonne and heire of Fraunce, during the life of the said King Charles. King Henry shall be written, Henry King of England, and heire and regent of Fraunce, and in the like manner he shall write himselfe in all things that shall be authorized under his owne seale. King Henry shall call King Charles his father, and Quene Isabel his mother, and shall honor them. For King Henry shall not prohibit, with-hold, nor defend King Charles his father of the crowne of Fraunce, nor the issues or revenues thereof. And the Quene his mother at all times during her life, he shall keepe in due estate as belongeth to his mother. &c. with divers other articles which for brevities I set not downe in this place.

After the final end and accomplishing of this marriage, covenants and conditions, ratified in all parts, King Henry accompanied of King Charles and of his counsell, of the two Quenes, Isabel and Katherine, and of the Duke of Burgoigne, departed from Troyes, and toke his journey to Paris, and from Paris not many dayes after they all went to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, which was to them contrary, but before the whole host were settled in their places, the capitaine Citizens and garrisons submitted their bodies and Citie with all that they had to the King. When they halted to Sponstreu, which to wane they toke by force.

On the xv. of July they went to the Citie of Melane, and encircled the same with a strong siege, for there were the Kings of England, of France, and Scotland, the Dukes of Burgoigne, Bavier, Clarence Bedford, and Gloucester, the Carles of Sparch, Marwicke, Huntington, and Somerset, &c. This siege continued 14. weekes and 00. dayes, from the feast of Mary Magdalen, to the feast of All Saints, not without in a manner euery day, a conflict and force skirmish, but at length for want of victuals the besieged, yielded themselves to the Kings of England and France, from whence the foresaid Kings with a great part of their armies went to Paris.

King

Roger Wall.

King Henry  
besieged Sens  
June.  
Tho. Walling.

King Henry kept his Christmasse in the Citie of Paris, in the Castle of St. Anthony. And after he had holden a Parliament there he went to Roane. and there with his Normans, and Englishmen held a Parliament. And then when he had established sure guard for his Realme of France, and Dutchie of Normandie, he passed through Picardy to Calais, and so to Douer, where with his Quene he landed on Candlemasse day.

The fourteenth of Februarie Quene Katherine was crowned at Westminster, unto whom the King assigned to hir dowrie 10000. markes: also he consented to the deliuerie of the King of Scots, who had been long prisoner in England, with condition, that before his departure out of England, he shall take to wife the Duke of Somersetts sister, neece to the cardinal of Winchester.

The xxii. of March being Easter day, Thomas duke of Clarence, the Kings brother, the Lord Roke Sparthall, and his brother Gilbert Vinframuile Earle of Bime, and John Gray made Earle of Tankerull in Normandy, with many other Lordes, were slaine beyond the water of Leire in France, & many Lordes were taken prisoners, of the which were the Earle of Huntington and the Earle of Somerset and his brother, the Lord Fitz Walter, and other, the bastard of Clarence, with strength, got his fathers body, brought it into England and buried it at Canterbury, besides B. H. the fourth his father.

In a Parliament at Westminster it was ordained that no man should proffer gold in payment, but if it held weight, wherefore were obtained balances and weights. The King suppressed the French houses of religious monks and friers, and such like in England, because they thought til of the conquest over France, their lands were given by him and Henry the first, to monasteries and colleges of learned men.

In this Parliament was demanded a subside. The Bishop of Winchester lent the King 20000. pound to restrain the matter. The King hauing disposed all things in order concerning the Realme of England and the wars in Scotland, leauing in England his Quene with a great power, to the number (after Enguerant) of 30. thousand, returned into France, where, after he had visited the King and Quene of France at Paris, he toke the Castle of Beclor by assault. And when hee heard, that his enemies prepared themselves to battaile, he approached the Rood of Loyze, about which flood it was said his enemies were: but against him came no man. Wherefore the King led his host to lay siege to the Citie of Sens, commonly called the Kings new towne, which towne for lacke of victuals yielded themselves and the towne to the King.

John Lord Mortimer brake forth of the tower of London, and being afterwards taken, he was drawn and hanged: as shall be shewed in the second parte of the reigne of King Henry the first.

In the month of October, when King Henry had deliuered the Citie of Paris from all annoyances, hee with his host went to besiege the Citie of Spaul in Wyte, to which Citie nigh adioyning, is a place called the Sparcet of Spaul, betwixt which two places floweth the riuer of Sparne, which

1421.  
Titus Livius.

Ann. reg. 9.

Prisoners all-  
ans in Eng-  
land suppressed

Titus Livius.

Titus Livius.



which also environeth both the same places.

This Citie was besieged all the winter, wherein were so many, and so great stormes and floods of raine, that the Kings host was often annoyed with hunger and cold.

The 6. of December, at foure of the clocke in the afternone, Lady Katherine Quene of England, brought forth his first begotten son in the Castle of Windore, and his name was given him Henry: for there received him at the font, John Duke of Bedford his uncle Lord Warden of England, and Henry the Kings uncle Bishop of Winchester, and Jaquelyn Dutches of Holland that remained then in England. Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canturburie, doing the office of Baptisme.

1422. King Henry held his feast of Christs Nativitee at the siege before Meture, for he would not give over his siege.

An. reg. 10. In the moneth of February the Knights that were in garrison, and the principall of the Citie of Meaux perceiving that the summer coming should cause the siege to be more light, and lesse painfull to the Englishmen, and difficult unto themselves, departed the Citie, and went into that place, that is called the Markete of Meaux, as to the more defensible holde, after whose departing the common people having none abilitie to resist the Kings power, yielded themselves and the Citie to the King. After this in the moneth of May, when the King had sore beaten the foresaid Markete of Meaux, he constrained the Frenchmen that were besieged, to condescend unto certaine covenants, and to deliver the place unto him: and shortly after were delivered to the King the towne of Dreux in Walois, the Castle of Pier Pontmerailaw, Offemount and many others. After the rendring of these townes and Castles, the King sent over into England prisoners 160. which landed at Hampton on the first of July, from whence they were brought in carts to the tower of London, and the King returned to Paris.

Quene Katherine rine fallen into France.

In the moneth of Aprill Katherine Quene of England shipped at Hampton, and sailed over into France with a strong power, under the conduct of John Duke of Bedford the Kings brother, Humfrey duke of Gloucester being appointed Warden of England, in the Duke of Bedfords place: when the coming of Quene Katherine was knowne to King Henry his husband, and to Charles King of France, both these Kings, and with them the Quene of France, accompanied with many great Lords and estates, as well of England as of France, went to meete him at Boys de Viscenne, where he was sorely received of them, as if he had been an Angell sent from God. The xxv. day of May the two Kings of England and France, with their Quenes departed from Boys de Viscenne, and went to Paris: the King of England and his Quene were lodged in the Castle of Louvre, and the King of France and his Quene were lodged in the pallace of St. Paul.

King Henry sickened to the death.

King Henry hearing that the Dolphin with a great power besieged the towne of Guisney, hee determined to goe himselfe to the raising of the siege, and so came to the towne of Corbell, and to Senlis, where he was ward so sicke, of an hot burning ague, with a vehement fire, that hee was constrained

strained

strained to farke and send his brother John Duke of Bedford, Thomas Beauford duke of Excester, the Earles of March, and Warwick, to rescue them of Corne: but the Dolphin raised his siege and departed thence. King Henry his disease increasing, made his testament, appoynted his treasure and jewels to be sold, his debts to be payed, as well to the pleasure of his souldiers as to other unto whom he ought good, either in England or in France: he ordaind his brother John Duke of Bedford to be regent and governour of France and Normandie, and committed the keeping of Henry his sonne to Henry Beaufort Bishop of Winchester, and to Thomas Bewfort, Duke of Excester, he departed this life in the Castle called Boys de Viscenne, not farre from Paris, on the last of August, in the yere 1422. when he had reigned nine yeres five moneths and odde dayes. There was present at his death King Charles of France, and the two Quenes: but before his death this most prudent King disposed the guard of the young Prince his sonne, and the defence of the Realme of England, to his brother Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, but the custodie of the body of this young Prince, the King committed to his uncle the Duke of Excester, to in doctrine him in all good manners: and the revenues of the Duchie of Normandie, he bequeathed to his brother John Duke of Bedford, for the governance of the same Duchie and of the Realme of France: he appointed his debts to be paid out of his treasure, and of his jewels. In his life time he redified the castle of Beaulieuworth, he builded there a most pleasant place, and caused it to be termed le pleasant marish, King Henry the eight, caused the said banquetting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set up in the base courte at Beaulieuworth: he redified his royall manour that then was called Shene, now Richmond: he founded two monasteries upon the Thames not farre from Richmond, the one of Carthusians, which he named Bethlem, the other religious men and women of Saint Bridget, and that he named Shion. He founded Garcar, principall King at armes of all Englishmen, and also the brotherhood of St. Giles without Crecles gate of London. He gave 1000. markes to the workes of Westminster Church, more he gave to the same Church a faire Walter, with another booke called Flores historiarum, both verie faire written, and enlumined, and a royall scepter of gold, for the Quene. The ring that King Richard the second gave unto St. Edwards Wyne, being taken away, this King Henry restorred againe, in the which ring there was a Rubie, esteemed worth a thousand markes in value: he gave to the colledge of Windore, or chappell of Knights, of Saint George and of the garter, an Image of massy siluer to the hono: of our blessed virgin Mary, the mother of Christ. Executors of his testament were Henry Fitz Hugh, Walter Hungerford, Walter Beuchampe, Lewes Roblart, William Porter, and Robert Babthorpe Knights, and John Woodhouse, and John Lauchthorpe Esquiers: his gods, cattels, jewels, and money came to 40000. markes, as appeareth by the record of Henry the sixt, the first yere. Shortly after his departing, his jewels were entered in the Church of St. Boye de Fosses, and his corps well enbaulmed and seared, was closed in lead: and accompanied with all the Lords, estates, and commons of England that

King Henry deceased.

John Rouse.

that were there present, with all many Lords and great estates, as well of France, Fozmandie, Burgondy, and Picardie, was brought with great honour to Paris, and set in the Church of our Lady, where were done so; him right solemne erequies, with distribution of money and great almes to the poore. From thence he was brought to Roame, where he abode long. When all things necessarie were prepared for the conuenance of the dead King into England, his body was laid in a chariot, which was drawen by foure great horses: and about the dead corpes they laid a figure made of boyled hides of leather, representing his person, as nigh to the semblance of him as could be deuised, painted curiously to the similitude of a liuing creature: vpon whose head was set an Imperiall diadem of golde and precious stones, on his body a purple robe furred with ermin, and in his right hand he held a scepter ropall, and in his left hand a ball of golde, with a crosse fixed thereon. And in this manner adorned was this figure laid in a bed in the said chariot, with his visage vncouered toward the heauens: and the couerture of his bed was of red silke beateen with golde: and besides that, when the bodie should passe through any good towne, a canopic of marvellous great value, was borne ouer the chariot, by men of great worship. In this manner accompanied of the King of Scots, and of all Princes, Lords, and Knights of his house, he was brought from Roan to Abeulle, where the corpes was set in the Church of Saint Wiffranc. From Abeulle, he was brought to Iardin, and from thence to Spentrecull, so to Bulloigne, and to Calice. In all this journey were many men about the chariot clothed all in white, which bare in their hands torches burning, after whom followed all the householde seruants in blacke, and after them came the Princes, Lords, and estates of the Kings blood, adorned in vestures of mourning: and after all this, from the said corpes the distance of two English miles followed the Quene of England right honourably accompanied. In this manner they entred Calice, from whence after a few dayes they departed, and continued their iourneys by water and land vntill they came to London, where they arriued about the tenth of November, and so were conueyed by London bridge, through Cheape to the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul: vpon the covering of the foremost of the foure horses that conueyed the chariot, were imbrodered the ancient armes of England: vpon the couerture of the second horse were the armes of England and Fraunce, in one shield quarterly: vpon the couerture of the third horse was imbrodered the armes of Fraunce, without any manner of difference: and on the fourth horse were the armes of King Arthur, which was three crownes golde in a field azure. When his erequies were solemnised at Saint Pauls Church in London, he was brought from thence to be enttered in the Abbey of Saint Peter at Westminster amongst his Noble ancestors, at the feste of King Edward the Confessor, a ropall image of silver and gilt was laid vpon his tombe, which Quene Katherine his wife caused to be made for him; but about the latter end of King Henry the eight, the head of the Kings image being of massy silver, was broken off, and conueyed cleane away, with the plates of silver and gilt that covered his body. Thus this most glorious and renowned

renowned King entred the way decreed for every creature, in the flower and most lustie time of his age, to wit, but five and thirtie yeeres olde, when he had reigned nine yeeres, ten moneths, and od dayes. The first of Henry the first, Quene Katherine had assured for his posterity, Castles, lands, tenements, names and deliuered vnto the summe of 40000. lents, every two lents worth a noble.

## King Henry the sixth.



Henry the first, borne at Windsoze, being an infant of eight moneths old, began his raigne the last of August, in the yeere 1422. Continuing the time of his youth, the gouernance of the Realme was committed to Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, and the gaird of his person to Thomas Duke of Excester: and to Iohn Duke of Bedford was giuen the regiment of France, who right wisely and nobly ruled the same so long as he liued. This Henry was of nature gentle and meke: he loued better peace than war, quietnes of minde than busines of the world: honestie than profit: rest and ease, than trouble and care: all injuries that euer happened to him, which were many, he suffered patiently, and reputed them to be worthily sent of God for his offences.

The 21. of October, Charles King of France passed out of this world, and was buried at Saint Denis in France, after he had been crowned King 46. yeeres. He was greatly beloued of his people all his life time, and therefore was called Le Roy Charles le biew ame: but yet he had a sickness the more part of his raigne, that being out of his witt, he would strike all that came nere him: it took him first in the Citie of Mans shortly after he had been in Flanders to reduce the Flemings to obedience. There was by reason hereof great trouble in France, because those that were nere to him in linage, sought every one to haue the chiefe gouernment in their hands. When he thus died, the Realme was left in vulerable state, for people of each strange nation were gouernours in the Realme. first, the Englishmen had conquered a great part, and sought to haue the rest: and the Duke of Burgoyne, with many other great Lords alied with him, sought to conquer all, for the young King Henry of England, who claimed then to be King of France, and likewise in all the money that was coined, the armes of both Realmes were quartered. The Crownes that were stamped in the time of Charles, and al other money more, were forbidden to be currant, and called to the mint. King Henry caused a peece to be stamped called a Salus, worth two and twenty shillings, and Blans of eight pence a peece, and so in no place of France where King Henry was obeyed, any other money was receiued, but such as had the armes of France and England stamped on it.

Charles Duke of Touraine the Dolphin, sonne to King Charles le biew ame, claiming to be right inheritor to the Realme of France by the ancient

Ann. reg. 1.  
Trot. Lintul.

Historie of  
Lois Duke of  
Bouancet.  
Charles le  
biew King of  
France died.

Henry King of  
England and  
of France.

Dolphin of  
France 190.

Edmond King  
of France.  
The King  
of France  
Henry and  
Charles.

Parliament at  
London.

1423.

The Earl of  
Salisbury  
was taken  
by the King  
of France,  
and  
killed him.

Ann. reg. 2.

Duke of Bed-  
ford married  
the Duke of  
Burgoyne's  
Daughter.  
Phil. Com.

edicts and customs of the said Realme, as was alledged, proclaimed himselfe King after the decess of his father, notwithstanding, by the agreement made at the marriage of his sister to the King of England, it was otherwise concluded (as before is recited); and so there were two Kings in France, Henry and Charles, both which striving for the crowne, the Realme was in way of partition.

A Parliament at London began the ninth of November, wherein was granted to the King a subsidy for thre yeres, five nobles of euery shackle of wool that should passe out of the land.

King Charles of France began now to aduance himselfe into the Duke of Burgoigne lands, and the Constable of Scotland, accompanied with many Lords, and men of war of King Charles side, laid siege to the towne of Carrengis, but the Marshall of Burgoigne assembled men of war to raise the siege, with whom went Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, a valiant man, and now being come together, fought with their enemies, wan the field, took the Constable, whose sonne was slaine in the field. Many of King Charles men were slaine and taken to the number of ten or twelue hundred good men of warre. After which victorie, the Earle of Salisbury laid siege to Montaguillon in Campaigne, and continued there an eight monethes before he could haue it rendred, and then caused the same to be rased and throwne downe. Then the Earle of Salisbury besieged the Castle of Monnes, which at length was yielded to him: this Castle he also rased and beat downe, which was the strongest place in all Champaigne, it was after repaired by King Charles.

About the same time the Duke of Burgoigne gaue his sister the Lady Anne in marriage to the Duke of Bedford, and so the alliance was made more strong betwene the English and the Burgonians.

Philip de Comines writeth, that Iohn Duke of Bedford, regent in France for the Englishmen, his monthly allowance in that office amounting to 20000. crownes at the least.

Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham was made Chancelloz of England.

The Dukes of Burgoigne, Bedford, and Bypayne, met in the towne of Amiens, there was also the Earle of Richmond, brother to the Duke of Bypayne, and many other great Lords, which Earle of Richmond had married Margaret, the Duke of Bypaynes eldest sister, sometime wife to the Duke of Guyen, and Dolphin of France. These thre Dukes were five or six dayes together in Amiens, in great friendship and reuerence ech to other, promising perpetuall amitie to continue. After this, the Duke of Bypayne returned into his country, the duke of Bedford (regent of France) to Paris, and the duke of Burgoigne to Arras; but withina while after, the Earle of Richmond revolted to King Charles, upon some mistaking he had conceived against the Duke of Bedford: King Charles received him ioyfully, and made him Constable of France.

About the same time the Duke of Bedford caused Crotot to be besieged both

both by water and by land, which after foure or five moneths siege, was both towne and Castle deliuered to the Duke, where he obtained Ralph Butler to be captaine. At that time the Duke of Bedford was obeyed as regent in all places through Alimen, Pontieu, and Picardy, from Paris to Reims, Châlons, and Troyes up to the water of Loyze.

About the feast of S. Andrew the captaines of King Charles assembled their forces about le fere, and Jelle, and took by night the towne of Campaigne, and spoiled the inhabitants of all their goods. Shortly after came the Duke of Bedford to Mondisier with twelue hundred fighting men, and requested the Lord of Sannesles to lay siege to Campaigne, and he would finde him men and money to wage them, wherunto he granted, and after fiftene dayes siege had the same deliuered.

In this meane time, to wit, about the xviij. of November, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the pong King was set in his maiestie among his Lords. And the xviij. day of November the King with the Quene removed from Westminster vnto Waltham holy Crosse, and from thence to Hertford, where he held his Christmasse, and the King of Scots with him: and the foresaid Parliament was adiourned vnto the twentieth day after Christmasse. In the which Parliament, among other actes, was ordained that what prisoner that for grand or petit treason was committed to warde, and after wilfully brake or made an escape from the same, it should be deemed petty treason, and the goods of him so escaping should be forfeited to the Lord of the sole that they were found in.

In the moneth of february, James Stewart the pong King of Scots, who was taken by the Englishmen in the eight yere of King Henry the fourth, and had remained in England prisoner till this time, was now according to covenant, deliuered out of Pomfret Castle, upon pledges, to wit, David eldest sonne to the Earle of Athole, Alexander Earle of Crawford, Alexander Lord of Gourdon, Iohn de Lyndesey, Patrick sonne and betre to Sir Iohn Lyon, Andrew Grey of Houlles, David de Ogleby, Sir William de Rochin, Dauid Mognesse, and William Olifant: the same King of Scots was then married in the priory Church of Saint Mary Queries in Southwarke, to the Lady lane the Dutches daughter of Clarence, by his first husband Iohn Earle of Somerset, cosen to King Henry, and they kept their marriage feast in the Bishop of Winchester's place, by the said Church of saint Mary Queries.

The fourteenth day of february, the foresaid Parliament being againe holden at Westminster, for breaking of the foresaid acte of escaping out of prison, Sir Iohn Mortimer was accused, by a peoman named William King of Wilmolton in Alsale, in Poykethire, seruant vnto Sir Robert Scot Knight, lieutenant of the tower of London, of diners points of treason as follo weth: first, that he conselled with the said William King, to the end to breake out of prison, and promised to him for the same ten pound in his purse, an habergeon, and a dublet, the yereley value of fortye pound land, & in procees an Earldome. Also, that the said Mortimer should say, that he would goe into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there he would raise fortye thousand men,

Parliament at  
Westminster.

1424.

K. of Scots  
released of im-  
prisonment.

Mortimer ac-  
cused of trea-  
son for escape  
out of the  
Tower.

and with that power he would enter the land, and strike off the heads of the Lord pottedoz, and of the Bishop of Winchester, to the intent that he might tell o2 play with some of his money. And furthermore he accused him, that the said Mortimer should say, that the Earle of March was but a daw, saue that he was the greatest, noblest, and worthiest of blood, and should be king by right inheritance, and that he himselfe was next rightfull heire to the said crowne after the said Earle of March, wherefore if the said Earle would not take vp on him the crowne and rule of the land, he said that he else would. And ouer this, the said William allured to the said Sir John Mortimer, that he should say, that if he failed of his purpose, and might not ioyne vnto the Earle of Marches, that then he would saile vnto the Dolphin, and aide and take his part, where he wist well he should be accepted, and haue good aide of him to bring about his purpose. All which matter this William would proue vpon the same Mortimer with his body: o2 as the Lordz & commons should alward. Which John Mortimer, after the statute aforesaid escaped out of the tower, and was taken againe vpon the towre wharfe soze beaten and wounded, and on the morrow brought to Westminster, & by the authoritie of the said Parliament, he was after d2awen to tiburne, hanged, and headed, of whose death (saith Hall) no small stander arose: his body was buried in y gray friers church.

Richard Wooduill was created Baron Wooduill: John Sturton Knight Baron Sturton for him and his heires: and Thomas Hoo Knight Baron Hoo and of Hastings.

King Henries people besieging the Castle of Dinry in the marches of Poymandy, they within compounded to yeld at a day assigned, if the Englishmen were not fought withall before the same day by the Frenchmen: whereupon as well King Charles as the Duke of Bedford made great leuies of men to kepe the day appointed, and here with they drew both towarde Perle. But when King Charles heard how the Duke of Bedford was coming towards him with such puissance, he was counselled to draw backe, and so he did towards Cleruele in Perch, whom the Duke of Bedford followed, so that he found his armie nere to Cleruele. And when either armie was in sight of the other, they put themselves in order of battell, and the Englishmen made an hedge of their ho2e behind their battell, because the French should not strike in among them on the backes: and the Frenchmen ordered themselves in battell array, making a great battell of footemen, in the which they put the flower and chiefe men. They appointed their ho2emen to set on the Englishmen a trauesse, the battelles on foote came vpon and iopned, where was a soze fight betwixt them, continuing two houres together, that no man might iudge which way the bidozie would incline: but at length, the men of King Charles began to breake, and then the Englishmen began to thrust in among them, and did so much, that they discomfited their enemies. There were slaine the Earle Douglas Duke of Laran, James Douglas Earle of Wiltton, John Earle of Bougham, with the Viscount Nerbon, & many other, to the number of ten thousand (saith Fabian:) foure thousand saith mine Authoz (a Frenchman) who saith, that the Duke of Bedford bare himselfe most ballantly, fight-

The battell of  
Cleruele in  
Perch.

Rob. Fabian.

ting with an are so fiercely, as he had the passe of all other. The Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke gouerned themselves also right ballantly.

The Lord of Torsy and other Lordz of Poymandy, which before had taken part with the Englishmen, this day turned to the French, hoping that the Englishmen should haue lost the battell. Erre it is, that the Frenchmen would neuer suffer their King Charles to be present in person at any battell, but when they thought to pitch a field, they sent him into some strong towne. By the losse of this battell fought on the seuenteenth of August before Wernole in Perch, King Charles was put to great hindrance, so that he was not able in puissance to giue the Englishmen any battell, hauing enough to do to defend and kepe his townes and fortresses against them.

The Duke of Bedford returned into Poymandy, where he punished many that fled from him in the day of battell. Then went he to Paris, where he found the Duke of Burgoyne, who received him, and the Dutches of Bedford his wife, the said Duke of Burgoynes sister, right ioyfully, and made to them a great feast, at which feast also were the Carles of Salisburie and Suffolke, the olde Quene of France, mother to King Charles, and many other great estates, of diuers nations, amongst the which; the Dutchesse of Bedford was holden for the most gallanteft Lady of all other, and with her, the countesse of Salisburie a very faire Lady. The Duke of Bedford that had neuer iusted before, iusted there.

The Duke of Burgoyne was a very goodly and amiable man of personage, doing excellently wel whatsoeuer he tooke in hand, and especially in daunting and iusting he excelled all other of his countrey. At this feast, he became desirous of the countesse of Salisburie, and some messages passed betwixt them, which came to the Earle of Salisburies eare, whereof he was nothing contented with the Duke, and therefore sought to doe him displeasure after ward. This feast being ended, the Duke of Burgoyne went into his countrey of Burgoyne, and there tooke to wife the Dutchesse of Flanders which had been wife to his vnckle the Duke of Flanders, and had by her two children. She was his sister to the Duke of Bourbon, but she liued not long with him. The Duke of Burgoyne also gaue his sister the yongest, named Agnes, in marriage vnto Charles de Bourbon Earle of Cleremont, for the which, the Duke of Bedford and other Englishmen were wroth, for that he made such alliance with the enemies without their accord.

This yere the Frenchmen repaired the Castle of Houns in Champagne, which had been a little before destroyed by the Englishmen, and now it was well stufed with victuals and men, which began to make soze warre to the country, but shortly after the Earle of Salisburie besieged them, and with him Messire John de Luxemburg, who did so much, that the Castle was yielded to him. The Duke of Bedford with his wife the Dutchesse, lay for the most part in Paris leading there a pleasant life with the Lady whom he greatly lored, and was lodged in the house of the Tournelles nere to the Castle S. Anchoy, where he made faire buildings, and his men still made soze wars against the French towards the riuer of Loze, and other places, vpon bafe Poymandy,

Am. reg. 3.

The Duke of Burgoyne enamoured with the Countesse of Salisburie, whereof came great displeasure and loss to England, by the breach of amitie betwixt the English and the Burgoyngs.

The second cause of breach of amitie betwixt England and Burgoyne.

mandy, and toward the Dutchie of Alanson.

This yere in England Edmond Mortimer Earle of March with many other Lords, and a great retinue, were sent into Ireland, where the said Earle of March ended his life without issue, whose inheritance descended to Richard Plantagenet, sonne and heire to Richard Earle of Cambridge beheaded at Southampton, as is aforesaid.

This yere the warre began in Henault, by reason of Jaqueline Dutchesse of Henault, daughter to Duke William of Henault, uncle to Philip Duke of Burgoyne, and also daughter to Duke John of Burgoyne's sister, wife to the sozenamed William, and so double cousin german to Philip, Duke Philip now living. This Jaqueline was married to John Duke of Brabant his cousin german, and cousin german also to Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and before that, he was married to the Earle of Montfou, sonne to King Charles le bien aine, eldest brother to King Charles now living, but notwithstanding that she was thus married to the Duke of Brabant, yet was she conveyed by Sir Robert-farr Knight, and brought into England to the Duke of Gloucester, and there married to the said Duke of Gloucester: and so she had two husbands aliue at once, Brabant and Gloucester, a thing thought unreasonable, both against God, the world, and the Church, for she had been foure or five yeres in company with the Duke of Brabant, but there had fallen some variance betwixt them, and so she was come from him into Henault.

About the last of Aprill began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein was granted a subsidy of twelve pence in the pound of all manner merchandise coming in, or passing out of this Realme, three shillings of a tunne of wine for the terme of three yeres to be holden. And furthermore it was enacted, that all merchant strangers should be set to an English host, within fiftene dayes of their coming to their port sale, and to make no sale of any merchandise ere they were so lodged: and then within 40. dayes following to make sale of all they brought, and if any remained unsold at the said foure dayes end, that then all such merchandise unsold to be forfeited. Also that all strangers that carried any wools out of this land, should pay three and forty shillings foure pence for a sacke custome, where the English merchants and dealers payed but five nobles, &c.

After the marriage had been solemnised betwixt the Duke of Gloucester, and Jaqueline Dutchesse of Holland, as is aforesaid, within a moneth after the Duke of Gloucester assembled an army of twelve hundred fighting men at the least, all Englishmen, and taking the Dutchesse with him in company, passed over to Calice, and straight from thence to Lens in Artois, and so into Henault, making no outrage as he passed through Duke Philips countries. At their coming into Henault, many towne obeyed them, and other refused to doe: likewise were the Nobles divided.

The Duke of Burgoyne hearing of this, was sore offended for the injury done to his cousin of Brabant, the dishonour of his cousin the Dutchesse Jaqueline, and the cruel dealing of the Duke of Gloucester, and therefore, to avenge the Duke of Brabant he appointed many of his captaines with twelve hundred

Earle of  
March sent  
into Ireland.

Jaqueline  
Dutchesse of  
Henault.

Jaqueline  
married to the  
Duke of Gloucester.

Rob Fabian.  
Parliament at  
London.  
Subsidie  
paid.

All strangers  
to be lodged  
within Eng-  
lish host.

The Duke of  
Gloucester go-  
eth into Hol-  
land.

A third cause  
of the warre  
to be taken  
betwixt Eng-  
land and Bur-

used fighting men Picards, to go against the Duke of Gloucester. The Duke of Brabant was a man but of weake complexion, and therefore by the counsell of Brabant it was ordained, that his younger brother Philip Earle of Saint Pol, should be chiefe Captaine of the warre against the Duke of Gloucester. He had a great army, as the more part of the Nobles of Brabant, of Henault, and of Burgoyne, in all fiftie thousand. Pierre de Luxemburg, Earle of Conuallan, his neere kinsman, had the leading of the army, for himselfe was but young. The Duke of Gloucester had put off his men in garrison within the towne of Braine, in the county of Henault, who made sore warre to the countrey about, but the Earle of S. Pol, and Conuallan did come and besiege Braine, continuing afoze it 12. dayes before they within yielded, compounding to depart with bodie and goods saved. These having won Braine, destroyed it utterly, and that done, took the field with all puissance, which was great: and the Duke of Gloucester likewise came into the field, so that they approached neere together, and the vancourers skirmished, but the battell layed not. The Duke of Gloucester had sent his herault, and written to the Duke of Burgoyne, calling him traitor, and disloyall to the King of England and Fraunce, for that he had sent men in ayde against him in ayde of the Duke of Brabant, and therefore offered him the combat: whereunto the Duke of Burgoyne answered, that he would accept the combat willingly, denying that ever he had sapled of his promise: but contrariwise, that the Duke of Gloucester had done great wrong to the Duke of Brabant, to have bereft him of his wife, contrary to the ordinance of God, and of holy Church, and for other wrongs which the Duke had uttered against the Duke of Burgoyne's honour, he gave him the lie, and so farre the matter went in words betwixt them, that the day was appointed for the combat, and the Duke of Burgoyne chose for Judge of the combat, the Emperour of Almane, and the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Duke of Gloucester a safe conduct, to depart safely into England, to prepare himself of things necessary for the combat, whereupon both the rampes brake by: the Duke of Gloucester went to Mons in Henault, to the Dutchesse his wife (so termed) and gave her to understand that he was desirous to trie the combat with the Duke of Burgoyne, and many other things he tolde her, which he performed not: for within foure dayes after he took all his power with him, and returned into England, doing no hurt by the way to the Duke of Burgoyne's countries, and left the Dutchesse in Mons, finally accompanied with the people of that countrey. Shortly after his departure, the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Lord Lilladam to the towne of Mons to receiue Jaqueline the Dutchesse, who being deliuered vnto him, he conveyed her to Cant, where the Duke and she made great semblance of ioy together, she promising to be governed alwaies by his aduise, but to go to her olde husband the Duke of Brabant she would not: but what semblance soeuer she made, she had an other thought in her head, as it appeared afterward, for when he espied her time, she stole away into her countrey of Holland, where she was well receiued of many Lords, and began forthwith to maintaine warre against Duke Philip of Burgoyne, and sent to

her, and the  
loss of many  
townes in  
Fraunce.

Whereby Duke  
of Gloucester  
challengeth the  
combat with  
Philip Duke  
of Burgoyne.

the Duke of Gloucester for ayde, who sent to her a thousand fighting men, under the conduct of the Lord Fitzwaters, who landed them in a place called Breweys haven. During these troubles in Henault, divers Lordes of the countrey held with the Duke of Gloucester, and therefore had their lands sore wasted. Also Messire Englebert Denguieu held on the party of Philip Duke of Burgondy: and he, when he took any of the Englishmen, would cause one of their throbs to be cut off, and so sent into England.

The Duke of Burgoyne fearing least Laqueline would deliver the countrey of Holland into the possession of the Duke of Gloucester, he assembled his power, and went into Holland, to put the countrey into obedience. At his coming thither, Laqueline accompanied with many Nobles of the countrey, and the Lord Fitzwaters, would have defended his landing, but notwithstanding all the defence they could make, he entered upon them, and there nere to the Towne of Brussells, they fought in battell, the Duke of Burgoyne and his people against the Englishmen and Hollanders, taking the Dutchesse Laquelines part: there was a fierce battell on all sides, but in the ende, the Hollanders and Englishmen were all discomfited, and there died in that place about seven or eight hundred, besides those that were taken prisoners: the Lord Fitzwaters hardly escaped.

1425.

After this battell got by the Duke of Burgoyne, divers townes of the countrey revolted to him against Laqueline the Dutchesse, as Dordrecht, Hericx, and many other. Shortly after, the Duke of Burgoyne leaving garrisons in those townes that obeyed him, to make resistance against the Dutchesse that lay in the Towne of Cant, he returned into his countrey of Flanders and Artois, there to prepare such abillments as were necessary for him to use at the combat appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Gloucester. The Duke of Gloucester like wise in England made his provision of his abillments and furniture, but the Duke of Bedford brother to the Duke of Gloucester, took great paines to make them friends: and also the counsell of the young king of England, were nothing content with this variance, doubting least it might be occasion that the Duke of Burgoyne might withdraw himself from their aid, whereby their busines in France should be hindered. The Duke of Bedford therefore took his journey from Paris to Calice, and so into England, to the end to agree the said Dukes: he took with him the Dutchesse his wife, and not past a foure or five hundred men.

An. reg. 4.

About Michaelmas Peter Duke of Quimbye, Prince of Portugall came into England, and was honourably received and feasted by the Kings uncles, and was also elected into the order of the garter.

Humphrey duke  
of Gloucester  
married Elia-  
nor Cobham.

When Humphrey Duke of Gloucester understood that Pope Martine the first had given sentence, that the first marriage with the Duke of Exeant and Laqueline was good and effectually, and the second espousalles celebrated with the Duke of Gloucester and the said Laqueline to be unlawfull, he beganne to ware weare of her, by whom he neuer had profit, but losse, and took to his wife by a second marriage Elianor Cobham, daughter to Reig-nold Cobham Lord of Seterbozow, which Elianor before was his wanton

paramour,

paramour, to his great reproch, as was then noted.

The morrow after Simon and Judes day, when the Princes of London had bene at Westminster to take his charge, as the custome is, at such time as he was holding his great dinner, he was by the Duke of Gloucester Lord Protector sent for in speedy manner, and when he came to his presence, he came to him commaundment, to sit the Citie were surely watched in the night following and so it was done.

Rob. Fabian.  
Debate be-  
tweene the  
Duke of Glo-  
cester and the  
Bishop of  
Winchester.

On the next morrow about nine of the clocke, certaine servants of the Bishop of Winchester, uncle to the said Protector, would have entred the Citie by the bridge, but the warders or keepers thereof, kept them out by force, as before they were commaunded, wherewith they being grievously discontented, gathered to them a greater number of archers, and men of armes, and assaulted the gate with shot and other means of warre, insomuch, that the commons of the Citie that in their shops, and sped them thither in great number, so that great bloodshed would have followed, had not the wisdom of the Princes and Aldermen stayed the matter in time.

The Archbishoppe of Canterbury with the Duke of Quimbye called the Prince of Portugall and other, took great labour upon them to pacifie this variance betwixt the uncle and the nephew, the Protector and the Bishop, insomuch, that they rode betwixt the uncle and the nephew, ere they might bring them to any reasonable consociation, and lastly they agreed to stand to the rule of the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, or of such as he would assigne, whereupon the Citie was set in more quiet, and the Bishop of Winchester wrote a letter to the Duke of Bedford, Lord Regent as followeth,

Right high and mightie Prince, and right Noble, and after one lewes earthly Lord, I recommend me unto your grace with all my heart: and as ye desire the welfare of the King our soveraigne Lord, and of his realmes of England and of France, and your owne weale, with all yours, haue you hither, for by my troth, and ye farry long, we shall put this land in jeopardy with a field, such a brother ye haue here, God make him a good man. For your wisdom knoweth well, that the profit of France standeth in the welfare of England. Written at London, the last of October.

Bishoppe of  
Winchesters  
letter to the  
Duke of Bed-  
ford.

On the tenth day of January next ensuing, the said Duke of Bedford with his wife, came unto London, and with them also came the said Bishop of Winchester, and the Princes and Citizens received him at Sperton, and conveyed him through the Citie unto Westminster, where he was lodged in the Kings hall, and the Bishoppe of Winchester was lodged within the Abbots lodging. On the morrow following, the Princes presented the Regent with a pair of basins of silver, and over-gilt, and in them a 1000. markes of gold. The 21. of February, began a great councill at St. Albons, which was afterward reioined to Southampton, but for that no due conclusion might be made, on the 15. of March was called a Parliament at Leicester, the which endured till the 25. day of June. This was called the Parliament of Bannes, because men being forbidden to bring swords or other weapons, brought great battes and staves on their neckes, and when those

weapons

1426.  
Parliament at  
Leicester.

The Earle of  
Cambridge  
was made  
Duke of York,  
and the Earle  
of Arundell,  
Duke of  
Surrey,  
folke.

weapons were inhibited them, they took stones and pismires of lead. During this parliament, the variance betwixt the two Lords was debated, insomuch, that the Duke of Gloucester put a bill of complaint against the Bishop, containing five articles, all which articles were by the Bishop sufficiently answered, and finally, by the counsel of the Lord Regent, all the matters of variance betwixt the said two Lords, were put to the examination and judgement, with the assistance of the Lordes of the Parliament, Henry Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Duke of Excester, John Duke of Bedford, Thomas Bishop of Durham, Philip Bishop of Worcester, John Bishop of Bath, Humphrey Earle of Stafford, Raulph Lord Cornwell, and master William Alnewike, then keeper of the pisme scale, which Lords made a decree and awarde, so that either party took other by the hand with friendship and loving words, none having amends of other. Upon Whitsunday following, was a solemn feast holden at Leicester aforesaid, where the Regent dubbed king Henry knight, & then forthwith the king dubbed Richard Duke of York, that after was father to king Edward the fourth, and other to the number of foure.

After the Parliament, the king went to Billingworth Castle.

An reg. 5.  
John Audley  
An earthquake  
during two  
houres.

On Saturday the even of Saint Michael the Archangel, in the morning before day, betwixt the houres of one and two of the clocke began a terrible earthquake, with lightning and thunder, which continued the space of two houres, and was vniuersall through the world, so that men had thought the world as then should haue ended, and the generall dome to haue followed. The burcable beasts roied and dyed to the townes, with hideous noise. Also the fowles of the ayre likewise cried out: such was the worke of God at that time to call his people to repentance.

1427.

On Pelopores day Thomas Beawford the Duke of Excester deceased at Greenwich, and was buried at Saint Edmundsbury in Suffolke. Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwick was made master and gouernour vnto the king during his nonage.

About the purification of our Lady, the duke of Bedford Regent of France, with his wife and family passed the seas vnto Caleis, and so through Picardy into France: but ere he departed from Caleis, to wit, vpon the feast day of the Annunciation of our Lady, the Bishop of Winchester, within the Church of our Lady of Caleis, was created Cardinall, and after the solemnity done, the Regent took him on his right hand, and so conveyed him vnto his lodging.

This yere was vnseasonable weathering, for it rained most part continually from Easter to Michaelmas.

This yere the Duke of Alanson, that before was taken prisoner at the battell of Agincourt in Perch, was deliuered for a rancome of 260000. scuts of gold, which was 50000. markes sterling.

This yere also, the Earle of Salisbury accompanied with the Earle of Suffolk, the Lord Talbot, and other, laid a strong siege vnto the city of Alencon, and held the Citizens very strait, and maugre the Duke of Alencon, and the Marshall of France, the Englishmen won from them diuers strong holds

adjoining

Ro. Gagwine

Ro Fabian.

adjoining to the Citie, and forced them to burne a great part of their suburbs: but one day as the said Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Mountague, rested him at a bay window, a gunne was leuelled out of the Citie, the shot whereof shyned to the bars of the prison grate, that one of the same bars stroke the Earle on the head, bearing away one of his eyes, and the one side of his cheek. Sir Thomas Gargaue was likewise stricken, and died within two daies. The Earle was conveyed to Penn on Looze, where, after eight daies he likewise departed the world, whose body was conveyed into England with all funeral pompe, and buried at Wism in Warshyre by his progenitors, leaving behinde him one onely daughter named Alice, married to Richard Neuill sonne to Ralph Earle of Westmerland. The damage that the Realme of England receiued by the death of this notable man manifestly appeared, in that immediately after his death the prosperous good successe which the Englishmen had had, began to decline. In his place was appointed the Earle of Suffolk to be Lieutenant and Capitaine of the siege, joining with him the Lord Scales, the Lord Talbot, Sir Ion Fastolfe, and diuers other valiant Captaines.

In a Parliament at Westminster was granted to the king a subsidy of euerie tunne of wine three shillings, and of other merchantise, except wool, fell, and cloth, twelue pence of the pound. Also, of euerie parish through the Realme (excepted Cities & Boroughs) the benefice being in value ten marks, ten of that parish should pay six shillings and eight pence, euery man eight pence: and of euery benefice that were ten pound, ten parishioners to pay 13. shillings and foure pence, and so rate and rate-like of euery benefice from the lowest to the highest. And for the inhabitants of Cities and Boroughs euery man being in value 20. shillings about his household stuffe, and the apperrell of him & his wife, should pay foure pence, & so after that rate vnto the richest.

On the first of September the Cardinall of Winchester being returned from beyond the seas, was met by the Duke of York, and his brethren, and certaine Citizens of London on horsebacke without the Citie, and so brought to his palace in Southwarke.

The eight of Nouember the Duke of Suffolk was like to haue bene drowned, passing from Saint Mary Duery itayes through London bidge, betwixt foure and five of the clocke at night, his barge being set vpon the piles ouerwhelmed, so that to the number of thirtie persons were drowned, and the Duke with two or three other that escaped were drowne by with ropes.

King Henry kept his seass of Christs Pasturage at Eltham.

The 21. of february Richard Neuill was made Earle of Salisbury.

King Henry kept his Easter at Hartford.

So it fell out, that in the Lent season, victuall and artillery about Dole began to waiescant in the English campe, wherefore the Earle of Suffolk appointed Sir John Fastolfe, Sir Thomas Ramphome, & Sir Philip Helle, with their retinues, to ride to Paris to the Lord Regent, to informe him of that lacke, who incontinent prouided victuall, artillery and munitions necessary, and loaded therewith many chariots and carts: and for the sure conveyance

An reg. 6.  
Earle of Salisbury  
died.  
1428.

Parliament.  
Subsidie.

An reg. 7

Cardinall of  
Winchester.

Duke of Suffolk  
escaped  
drowning.

1429.



ance of the same, he appointed sir Simon Morbrier prouost of Paris, with the guard of the Citie & other, to accompany sir Iohn Falloph to the army lying at the siege of Dyleance: they were in all to the number of 1500. men: these with great difficulty came to the English camp before Dyleance, where they were joyfully receiued, & commended for their valiant withstanding of enemies by the way, as they marched. The Earle of Suffolke being thus victualled, continued the siege, & euery day almost skirmished with the French men, who at length offered to treat to saue themselves and their City from captiuitie, they submit the City, themselves and all theirs vnder the obedience of the Duke of Burgoin, because he was extract out of the blonde roppall of Fraunce. The Duke with thanks certified them againe, that he would gladly receiue them, if the Duke of Bedfords Lord Regent would therewith be contented. Whereupon messengers were dispatched to the Regent, who thought it neither convenient nor honourable, that a Citie so long besieged by the king of Englands power, should be deliuered to any other forein Prince. Whereupon the Regent answered the Burgonian ambassadores, that sith the King of England had bene at all the charges about the siege and winning of the City, it was not consonant to reason, that the Duke should enioy the fruites of another mans charge: hereof followed a double mischefe to the English proceedings in the Realme of Fraunce, for both the Burgoyne conceiued an inward grudge against the Englishmen, for that he suspected them to enuie his glory: and againe, the Englishmen left the siege of Dyleance, which by this treaty they might haue recouered out of their enemies hands, and put their friends in possession of it.

While this treaty was in hand, Charles of Fraunce studied daily howe to prouide a remedie by the deliuey of his in Dyleance out of present daunger. And euen at the same time, a monstrous woman, named Ioan la pucell de dieu, was presented vnto him at Chinon, where as then he sojourned, of which woman, her birth, qualities, and estate, the French Histories make mention at large, but to be short, so much credit was giuen to her, that she was honoured as a Saint, and so she handled the matter, that she was thought to be sent from God to the ayde of the French King Charles, the seventh of that name. This woman being armed at all pointes like a valiant Captaine, rode from Poitiers to Bloys, and there found men of warre, victual and munitions ready to be conueyed to Dyleance. Here was it knowne that the Englishmen kept not so diligent watch as they had bene accustomed to do, and therefore this Maid with their French Captaines, comming forthward in the dead time of the night, and in a great rayne and thunder, they entered into the Citie with all their victuall, artillery, and other necessaries. The next day the Englishmen boldly assaulted the towne, but the Frenchmen defended the walles so, as no great feate chaunced that day betwene them. The Bastard of Dyleance gaue knowledge to the Duke of Alanfon in what daunger the towne stood without his present helpe, who comming within two leagues of the City, gaue knowledge to them within, that they should be ready the next day to receiue him, which accordingly was accomplished:

for

for the Englishmen suffered him and his armie to enter. On the next day in the morning, the Frenchmen all together issued out of the towne, and wanne the bastell of Saint Loup by assault, and set it on fire. And after they likewise assaulted the Towler at the bridge foote, and took it ere the Lord Talbot could come to the inclosures, in the which William Gladdale also Captaine was slayne, with the Lord Molins and the Lord Poyninges also.

Lord Molins  
slaine.

The Frenchmen with this good lucke, fetched a compasse about toward the bastell, which was in the keeping of the Lord Talbot, the which like a good Captaine, without all feare issued forth against them, and gaue them a sharpe encounter, that they fledde againe into the Citie with great losse of men and small artillery: of Englishmen were kilt in the two battels to the number of six hundred men, or there about. The Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Scales, and other Captaines assembled together in counsell, where it was amongst them determined to leaue their fortresses and battels, and to assemble in the plaine field, there to abide all the day to see if the Frenchmen would issue forth to fight with them. But when the Frenchmen durst not come forth, the Englishmen set fire on their lodgings, and departed in good order of battell from Dyleance. And the next day which was the eight of May, the Earle of Suffolke rode to Jergeaur with 400. men, and the Lord Talbot with another company turned to Melun: and after he had fortified that towne, he went to the towne of Auail, and wanne it together with the Castell.

The siege of  
Dyleance  
spoken of.

Thus when the Englishmen secured themselves into garrisons, the Duke of Alanfon, the Bastard of Dyleance, Ioan le pucell, the Lord Sancerre, and diuers other Captaines of the Frenchmen came on the 12. of June before the towne of Jergeaur: where the Earle of Suffolke and his two brethren sojourned, and gaue to the towne so fierce an assault on three parts, that Poitou de Centrailes perceiuing another part boide of defence, scaled the walles on that side, and without difficulty, tooke the towne, and slue sir Alexander Poole, brother to the Earle, and many other to the number of 200. but the French lost 300. good men. Of the Englishmen were taken 40. with the Earle of Suffolke and his brother Iohn. The Frenchmen as they went to Dyleance, slew their prisoners all sauing the Earle and his brother. Shortly after the same French army came to Mahun, where they took the Towler at the bridge foote, and put therein a garrison: from thence they remoued to Wangeney, and contrayned them in the towne to yield. At this place there came to the Duke of Alanfon, the new Constable Arthur of Britaine, and the Lord Dalbert with other, also the Earle of Wandosme came to them, so that they were now togined to the number of 23000. men, the which shortly after fought with the Lord Talbot, nere to a village in Beaulie, called Batay, at which battell, the L. Talbot was fore wounded at the backe, and taken, & the rest put to flight: in which fight were slaine about 1200. and 40. taken, of whom the L. Talbot, the L. Scales, the L. Hungerford, and sir Thomas Rapon were chiefe. This overthrow did so much abate the Englishmen, that

Alexander  
Poole slaine.  
Earle of Suff.  
taken by  
the French.

hundred

The  
of God  
to cal-  
led by  
the  
French.



immediately thereupon the townes of Januile, Wabun, Foxt, and diuers other returned from the English part, and became French. Charles the French king perceiving fortune to smile vpon him, determined to conquer the City of Reimes that he might be there crowned, in his iourney thitherward he besieged the City of Auerre, and had it. From thence he went before Troyes which was deliuered to him, and then Chalons, &c. In semblable order they of Reimes yielded themselves: in the which towne the said Charles (in the presence of the Dukes of Lozain, and Barre, and of all the noble men of his nation) was sacred king of France, by the name of Charles the seventh.

The Duke of Bedford aduertised of all these doings, assembled his power about him, and hauing together 10000. men, besides Normans, departed out of Paris in warlike fashion, and passing through Bray to Pontfremault Pont, sent by his herald Bedford, letters to the French king, signifying to him, that where he had contrarie to his final conclusion, accorded betwene his brother king Henry the fifth, and king Charles the sixth, by allurements of a diuinely witch, taken vpon him: the name, title, and dignitie of the king of France, and further, had by murder, wealth, craft, and deceitfull means violently gotten, and wrongfully kept diuers Cities and Townes belonging to the king of England his nephew: for proofe whereof he was come downe from Paris with his army, into the countrey of Brie, by dint of sword to proue his writing and cause true, willing his enemies to chuse the place, and in the same he would giue him battell. The new French king being come from Reimes to Champmartine, studying how he might compasse them in Paris, was halfe abashed at this message, but yet to let a good countenance on the matter, he answered the Herauld, that he would sooner seeke his master, than his master should neede to pursue him. The Duke of Bedford hearing this answer, marched toward the king, and pitched his fieelde in a strong place. The French king though at the first he meant to haue abidden battell, yet when he understood that the Duke was equall to him in number of people, he changed his purpose, and turned with his armie a little out of the way. The Duke of Bedford perceiving his faint courage, followed him by Hilles and Dales, till he came to a towne not farre from Senlis, where he found the French king and his armie lodged: wherefore he ordered his battells, setting the Archers before, and himselfe with the Noble men in the maine battell, and put the Normans on both sides for wings. The French king also ordered his battells to the most aduantage. Thus these two armies lay two daies and two nights, eyther in sight of other without any great doing, except a few skirmishes. At length in the dead of the night, as quietly as might be, the French king brake by his campe, and fled to Bray. The Duke of Bedford had much adoe to stay his people in the morning from pursuit of the French kings armie: but for that he mistrusted the Parisians, he would not depart farre from that Citie: and so returned thither againe.

In this season Pope Martine the fifth, meaning to subdue the Bohemians that dissented from the Church of Rome in matters of faith, and religion, appointed

appointed Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of S. Eusebius, to be his legate in an army to invade the kingdome of Boheme, and to bring a power of men with him out of England, and because the warre touched religion, he licensed the Cardinall to take a tenth of the spiritualitie, the Bishop gathered the money, and assembled 4000. men and more. As this Bishop was come to Douer, ready to haue passed the seas into Flanders, the Duke of Gloucester (hauing receiued letters from the Duke of Bedford, containing an earnest request to releue him with men of war) wrot to the Bishop of Winchester, willing him to passe with all his army toward the Duke of Bedford. The Cardinall least he should runne into the note of infamy, if he refused to obey the Regent of France, passed ouer with his power, & brought the same vnto his cosen to the Citie of Paris, where he remained not long, but passed on his iourney towards Boheme, from whence in thoyt time he returned into England.

The first of Nouember, king Henry being about the age of nine yeres was solemnly crowned in Saint Peters Church of Westminster, at whose coronation were made 36. Knights of the Bath, & after solemnization in the Church finished, an honourable feast in the great Hall of Westminster was kept, whereof ye may read a large discourse in Robert Fabian. After which feast great preparations was made for the kings iourney into France.

Richard Duke of York was constituted Constable of England in absence of John Duke of Bedford Regent of France, he was made Constable, for, and because of a battell to be fought betwene John Vpton, and John Downe he was confirmed Constable of England for terme of life, so that he did no waies derogate John Duke of Bedford, that was beyond the sea, dated the 11. of January.

The thirteenth of January a battell was done in Smithfield with in the listes before the king, betwene two men of fiererham in Kent, John Vpton notable appellant, and John Downe gentleman defendant, John Vpton put vpon John Downe, that he and his competers should imagine the kings death, the day of his coronation: when they had long fought, the king toke by the matter and forgaue both parties.

The xxviii. day of Aprill the king toke shipping at Douer, & landed the same day at Calais, hauing in his company the Dukes of York and Gloucester, the Bishops of Bath, Ely, and Rochester, the Carles of Huntingdon, Stafford, Warwick, Oxford, Devonshire, Poitaine of Cleve, and of Devon, and Barons, the Lord Boucher, Beaumont, Typtoft, Fitz water, Roos, Arundale, Audley, Fauconbridge, Gray Corderne, Scroope, and Wels.

Whilest the king remained at Calais many skirmishes were fought betwene the Englishmen and the French in diuers parts of France, and the Frenchmen prevailed greatly by helpe of a woman which they named The mayden of God. So that lastly she with her company came to the towne of Champaigne, to the ende to remoue the siege laid thereunto by the Duke of Burgoyne and other of the English Captaines, and the 23. of May she gaue battell to the Englishmen, and fought with them a long time, but in

the end by the manhood of a Burgonian knight named Sir John Luxembourg, she was taken alive, and her company distressed, she was conveyed to the Citie of Roane, and there kept a season, where she fained her selfe to be with child, but when the contrary was knowne, she was condemned and byent.

Robert Gagwine After this, king Henry by small Iourneyes into France, came to Paris, where he was honourably received of the Cittizens and taken for their soveraign Lord and King, whiles he there remained, (saith Gagwine) the Frenchmen wanne many holdes of the Englishmen, and the Burgonians in the countrie of Bry.

The third of August died Joan countesse of Armonde, and was buried at Saint Thomas of Acres in London.

Ann. reg. 9. John Duke of Norfolkke take againe the towncs of Dampmartine, and the Chace Spengay with divers other towncs. The Earle of Stafford toke the towne of Wygn, Countie Robert, and from thence foraged all the countrey to Sens, and after toke Quency in Bry, Grand Dups, and Hampillon.

1431. Conspiracy at Abington. Some after Easter the Lord Botetort was warned of an assembly of certaine lewde persons, under pretence of religiously minded men, to be assembled at Abington, whereto he sent thither certaine persons, and also rode thither himselfe, and there arrested the baily of the towne named William Mandeuill a weaver, the which was appointed for a Captaine, who had named himselfe Jacke Sharpe of Wigmers land in Wales, who being examined, confessed that he meant to haue done many mischiefes, especially against Wyckes, so that he would haue made their heads as cheape as shypes heads (that is to say) three or a penie, for as some write, ten for a peny: many of his complices were taken and sent to diuers pylsons. Their Captaine was dyawne, hanged, and beheaded at Abington, and his head was sent to London, and set on the bylde: his other fautors were executed in diuers places and countries to the terror of other. Also the 13. of July Richard Russell wolman, was dyawne, hanged, and quartered, so that he would haue made Dukes and Cardes at his pleasure.

An. reg. 10. Richard Robsart Lord Bourcher deceased, and was buried at Westminster.

King Henry remaining still in France, the Earle of Arundale accompanied with 2000. Englishmen, sent a certaine of his company unto a towne, called Bealmount, to prouoke the Frenchmen to issue out of the towne, which small company when Boyssican and Senrales then Capitaines behelde, they with their souldiers gaue them forth to take the said Englishmen, the which by little and little sped backe, till they had tolled the Frenchmen a good space from the towne, and then set upon them with a stout courage, and helde them on hande till the Earle with his companie rescued them: then betwixt them was a cruell fight, but in the ende the Frenchmen were chased, and the said Senrayle with many souldiers of the said towne were slaine.

In the month of November king Henry by small Iourneyes into France, returned

remained from Roan to Montpel, and so to Saint Dionese, & then to Paris, where he was receiued with great honour by the Cittizens, and taken for their soveraigne Lord and King. There were in his company of his owne nation, his uncle the Cardinall of Winchester, John Kempe Cardinall and Archbishop of Poise, the Dukes of Bedford, of Poise, and Norfolkke, the Earles of Warwick, Salisbury, Oxford, Huntingdon, Arundel, Spotaune, and Suffolk. Of Gascoigne there were the Earles of Longueille, and March, besides many noble men of England, Gwine, and Normandie: and the chiefe of the French nation, were the Dukes of Burgoggne, and Lewes of Luremburg Cardinall and Chancellor of France for king Henry: the Bishoppes of Beauvais and Poynes both pères of France, besides the Bishop of Paris, and diuers other Bishops, the Earle of Montemount and other noble men. And he had a guard of 3000. archers, some on horsebacke, some on fote. To speake of the honour, where with he was receiued into the Citie of Paris, what pageants were prepared, and how richly, the gates, streets, and byldes on euery side were hangd with costly clothes of arras and tapestrie, it would be to long a proceste.

On the seventh day of December king Henry was crowned in Paris, by the Cardinall of Winchester, at the which coronation was present, the Duke of Burgoggne, the Duke of Bedford Regent, and diuers other Nobles of France. After the solemnitie of this feast was ended, the king departed from Paris, and so came to Roane, where he held his Christmasse, and that done, he returned to Calais, where when he had sojourned a season, he took shipping and returned into England, and landed at Douer the eleuenth of February, and then riding toward London, he was met on Warham Downe, betwixt Douer and Canterbury, by a great compaignie of Gentles and commons of Kent, all clad in a liuerie with red hodes, the which accompanied him till he came to Blackheath, which was on the one and twentieth day of February, where he was met by the Mayor of London, who rode in a gowne of crimson velvet, his Aldermen in scarlet, and the Cittizens all in white gownes and red hoods, with diuers wozhes or cognissances before, red upon their haues after the facultie of their miseries or craftes: and after due obeysance and saluting of the king, they rode on before him towarde the Citie. And when the king was come to the bylde, there was denised a mighty Giant, standing with a sword dyawne in his hand, hauing written certaine speeches in matter of great reioyng and wel-comming of the king to the Citie, on the middle of the bylde, and in diuers other places of the Citie, were diuers faire and sumptuous pageants replenished with goodly and beautifull personages, the order and speeches whereof, are set downe by Robert Fabian in his chronicle. Thus being conveyed to his pallace at Westminster, the Mayor with the Cittizens returned to London, and on the 24. day of February the Mayor and Aldermen rode to the king, and presented him with a hampire of golde, and therein a thousand pound of nobles.

This pèere by reason of the souldiers of Calais, a restraint was made  
 212 Here

King Henry crowned at Paris.  
 1432.

there of the Welles, for they were not content of their wages; wherefore the Duke of Bedford Regent of France, came down thither in Easter week, at which time many souldiers were arrested: and rode againe to Sirtoine. And hauing not long since buried the Lady Anne his late wife, sister to the Duke of Burgoigne, he married there the Lady Jaquet the daughter to Peter Earle of Saint Paule, and shortly after returned to Calais, where he caused foure of those souldiers to be beheaded, on the xi. of June, and 110. souldiers to be banished the towne, besides 120. that were banished before that time. And upon Midsummer euen the Lord Regent with his new wedded spouse came to London, and remained there till the latter end of August, and then returned againe to Paris.

The Duke of Burgoigne was nothing pleased with this new alliance contracted by the Duke of Bedford, with the house of Lutzenbourg, but the marriage was consummate ere he could finde any meane to prevent it.

The Frenchmen raised a crew, and sodainly toke the towne of Saint Alaire in Bazmandy, nere to the river of Some, and an other army under the leading of Sir Ambrose de Lore, wasted all the countrey about Cane. The Duke of Bedford not minding to be tole, sent the Earle of Arundell, Henry the Earle of Warwickes sonne, the Lord Lisle Adam Parhall of France for King Henry, and 1200. men of warre, with ordnance and munitions to besiege the towne of Salgny upon the river of Garne, the Earle with host of a Canon brake the arch of the bridge, and got from the Frenchmen their bulwarke, and set it on fire, divers assaults were made, but the towne was well defended, by 800. men of armes, besides other souldiers. The Duke of Bedford hereof aduertised, gathered an army of 6000. men wherof were Captains Robert Lord Willoughby, Sir Andrew Ogard, Chamberlaine to the Duke, Sir John Saluaine, balliue of Ronne, Sir John Montgomery, balliue of Caur, Sir Philip Hal balliue of Ternate, Sir Richard Ratcliffe deputy of Calais, Sir Ralph Newill, Sir Ralph Standith, Sir John Handford, Sir Richard Enthin, Sir Richard Haringdon, balliue of Ceneur, Sir William Fulthorpe, Sir Thomas Griffich of Ireland, David Hall, Thomas Strangwith, Leonard Ormstone, Esquires, and Thomas Gerard. The Duke of Bedford with this army came to the siege before Salgny, where he made a bridge of boates, and brought his ordinance so nere the towne, that to al people it seemed not long able to resist: but the ballard of Alliance Earle of Dunoy, with other hardy Captaines valiantly defended it. At the length the french king perceiving this towne to be the key betwene the territories of Burgoigne, English and French, that the losse thereof should turne him to irrecoverable damage, sent the Lord of Rieus, Wapton, the Hirc, the Lord Gaucourt and 6000. men, with plenty of viuals, to the intent, epyther to raise the siege, or at the least victual the towne. The frenchmen framed themselves in order of battell, as though they would doe much, but did nothing in effect: but that whilest part of them maintained a skirmish, an other sort conueyed into the towne thirtie oren, and other viuals. In that skirmish were slaine diuers valiant Frenchmen, and the rest considering how the Englishmen were planted, being now the beginning of August

August, they remoued and went vnto Joze under Verre, where by a bridge made of empty pipes, they passed into the yle of France. The Duke of Bedford not minding to lose the more for the lesse, raised his siege, and returned to Paris, nothing more minding then to trie his quarrell by dint of sword against his enemies, if they would thereto agree. And thereupon he sent Bedford his herault to the Lord Gaucourt & other Captaines of the french armie, offering them battaille within a conuenient time, and where they would appoint. To the which officer at armes the Captaines answered, that battaille they feared not, nor the English force they much regarded, but they saide there was time to gaine, and time to lose, of the which they doubted not, to esple the one of the other, to their gaine or losse.

The 25. of Nouember the Lord Fitzwalter was drowned on the sea, and many other harins were done by tempest.

The Regent, sent Peter of Lurenbozough Earle of Saint Paule, and Robert Lord Willoughby, with a competent number of men to besiege the towne of Saint Alaire, which the Frenchmen a little before had taken, these valiant Captaines enuironed the towne with a strong siege. Within the towne, were Sir Lewes de Vicount, Sir Philip de la Towre, and Sir Reignold de Verseilles Captaines with 200. good fighting men, which by the space of thre weekes, manfully defended the same. But then perceiving the fiercenesse of the Englishmen, and the weakenesse of themselves, and hauing no hope of reliefe, rendered the towne, their horse and barnes onely saved.

After this towne was thus gotten, the Earle of Saint Paule, and the Lord Willoughby returned to the Regent, where they were well welcommed, and after the said Earle departed from Paris, to lay siege to the Castell of Sponcher, but being encamped nere to the towne of Blangy, he by a sodaine maladie finished his daies and departed this life, leauing his seignories to Lewes his sonne and heire.

On the eight day of July, King Henry beganne his Parliament at Westminister, continued it till Lammasse, and then adiourned it untill Saint Edwards tide.

This yere in the south west appeared a blasing starre.

During the raigne of this King Henry the first were Lieutenants ouer the Realme of Ireland, Edmond Earle of March, and James Earle of Desmond his deputie: John Sutton Knight Lord of Dudley, and Sir Thomas Strange his deputie: Sir Thomas Stanley, and Sir Christopher Planket his deputie: Lyon Lord Welles, and the Earle of Desmond his deputie: James Earle of Desmond the kings Lieutenant by himselfe: John Earle of Shrewsbury, and the Archbishop of Duclin Lord Justice in his absence: Richard Plantagenet Duke of Poike, father to Edward the fourth and Earle of Ulster, had the office of Lieutenant by Letters Patents, during the space of tenne yeeres, who deputed vnder him at severall times, the Baron of Duclin, Richard Fitz Eustace Knight, James Earle of Desmond, and Thomas Fitz Morris, Earle

of Millbare: to this Richard then resident in Duellin, was bozne within the Castell there, the second sonne George Duke of Clarence, afterward bowned in a butte of malmesey.

John Lord Talbot gathered a crew of chosen men of warre in England, to the number of 800. and about the beginning of the moneth of March, sailed into Normandy, and passed by Roan towards Paris, and in his way he toke the strong Castell of Teing betwene Beauuots and Gisors, and caused all the Frenchmen within to be hanged on the walles, and after raised the Castell, and came to the Regent Duke of Bedford at Paris. The presence of which renowned Capitaine, so encouraged the hearts of the English nation, that they thought nothing able to resist their puissance, and so discouraged the hearts of the Frenchmen, that they were in doubt whether it were better to fight or to flie, for he was a chosen Capitaine, and in martiall feates fully instructed. When this hardy Baron had communed with the Regent, he departed from Paris with his army, and besieged the Castell of Beaumont upon Aise, whereof was Capitaine sir Amadour de Viguolles, brother to the Pyre: which Castell was sone rendred upon condition. After that he recovered without long siege, the townes of Creille, the bidge of Saint Maxens, the new towne of Emoy, Crispy in Valoys, and Cleramont in Beauuots: and so with great riches and rich prisoners, he returned againe to Paris.

The towne of Saint Denis, which is within two English miles of Paris, was gotten by the practise of one John Notice a knight of Melaunce, from Matthew Gougly, and Thomas Kiriell Captaines, they slew there many Englishmen, and toke many prisoners, but sone after the saide Captaines with strength taken from Paris, laid such strong a siege about Saint Denis, that finally they agreed to deliuer the towne to the Englishmen.

In the very same season the Earle of Arundell toke the Castell of Bome, line, and raised it to the ground, and after toke the Castell of Dole, and from thence came to saint Selerine, where the Lord Ambrose de Lore was Capitaine, which issued out and fought with the Englishmen so eagerly at the first, that he broue them backe an arrow shot: but the Earle so encouraged his men, that they toke new courages to them, and set so fiercely on the Frenchmen, that they slue a great number, and broue the remnant into the towne. After this victory, he besieged Louiers, whereof was Capitaine the Pyre, and his brother, which rendred the towne without stroke. Then the Earle entranced the towne of saint Selerine with a strong siege, when he had lien there almost three moneths, every day attempting somewhat, for the performance of his enterpryse: in conclusion at the three monethes ende, he gave so fierce assault, that by force he entred the towne, and slue John Almaine, and Guillam saint Aubine, the chiefe Captaines, and 800. of their men of warre, and the children of Loire were taken prisoners: he replenished the towne, and made Capitaine sir John Cornewall. When he besieged the strong towne of Sully, and the inhabitants deliuered pledges upon condition, that if the towne were not rescued within thirtie daies, they should ren-

der

der the towne into his possession: which offer was taken, and when the time was expired, the towne was deliuered, where leauing a garrison, the Earle departed to Paris, and in the meane way toke the Castels of Melley and Saint Laurence.

The Lord Willoughby, and sir Thomas Kiriell returning with great victories out of the parties of Burgoigne, toke in their way the towne of Louiers, and furnished it both with men and munitions.

The Earle of Arundell minding to haue besieged the towne of Key, was there slaine with Ralph Standish, the Earle of Arundell was buried at Beauuots, in the gray friers there.

Though a great frost, that lasted from the 25. of Nouember, vnto the tenth of February, the Thames was so frozen, that the merchandise which came to the Thames mouth, was there landed, and carried through Kent to London.

When the Pope Eugenius the fourth, and his Cardinals after long labour could make no peace betwixt king Henry of England and France, and Charles also named king of France, they at length made a peace betwixt the said Charles and Philip Duke of Burgoigne, wherby the said Duke of Burgoigne became bitter enemy to the king of England, and sone after the said Duke began his order of the Lily, and the Golden flier, and ordained certaine knights of that order, and made thereunto many statutes, whereof some of them were like vnto the statutes of the Garter.

This yeere on the 14. of September died John Duke of Bedford Regent of France, a man as polite in peace, as hardie in warre, and yet no more hardy than mercifull when he had the victory, whose bodie was with all funerall pompe, and solemne exequies buried in the Cathedrall Church of our Ladie in Roan, on the north side of the high altar, vnder a sumptuous and costly monument: which tombe when king Lewes the 11. by certaine vndiscreete persons was counselled to deface, affirming that it was a great dishonour, both to the king, and to the realme, to see the enemy of his father, and theirs to haue so solempne and rich memorie: he answered saying, What honour shall it be to vs, or to you to breake this monument, and to pull out of the ground the dead bones of him, whom in his life time, neither my father, nor your progenitors, with all their puissance, were once able to make flie one fote backward: but by his strength, wit, and policie kept them all out of the principal dominions of the realme of France, and out of this Noble Duchie of Normandy: wherefore I say, first, God saue his soule, and let his bodie now lie in rest, which when he was aliuie, would haue disquieted the proudest of vs all: and for the tombe, I assure you is not so decent, nor conuenient as his honour and actes deserved.

After the death of the Noble Prince the Duke of Bedford, the Frenchmen began not onely to withdraue their obedience, which they had by oath promised to the King of England, but also toke sword in hand, and openly defied the Englishmen: but the Englishmen appointed for regent in France Richard Duke of York, sone to Richard Earle of Cambridge (beheaded at Hampton)

Hampton.) This Richard now Regent was so disdained of Edmond Duke of Somerset, being cosen to the King, that by all meanes possible he sought his hinderance, by reason whereof, ere the Duke of Yorke could get his dispatch, he was constrained to linger till the Citie of Paris, and diuers other the chiefest townes in France were gotten by the French king.

1436.

The Duke of Yorke perceiuing his enill will, openly dissembled that which he inwardly minded, and thus either of them wrought things to the others displeasure, till at length, by mostall warre they were both consumed, with almost all their whole lines and offsprings.

A cow for til  
pence, and a  
sheep for a  
pence.

The Normans of the countrey of Caure, being hartened by the death of the Duke of Bedford, beganne a new rebellion, slue diuers Englishmen, robbed many townes that were under the English obedience, and toke the towne of Wardew by assault, and diuers other townes. But the new Lord Regent being aduertised, sent forth the Lord Scales, sir Thomas Kiriell, and the Lord Hoo, which so afflicted those rebels of Caure, that they slue aboute fise thousand persons, and bzent all the townes and Villages in the countrey, not being walled, so that in that part was neither habitation, nor tillage, for all the people fled into Brytaine, and all the beastes of the countrey were brought to Canbebecke, where a good shepe was sold for an English pence, and a cow for twelue pence. Daily was skirmishing in euery part, in so much, that the Lord Scales discomfited at the Wyke beside Roan, the Wyre and 1500. balliant Frenchmen, of the which, aboute thre hundred were taken prisoners, beside seuen goodly saye coursers. Amongst other of the prisoners, were sir Richard Reiginauld de Fountaines, sir Alaine Gerond, Alaine de Moncey, and Gefrey Gram Captaine of the Scots. But yet this victorie and others the like, staied not the Frenchmen from working treason daily, in so much, that diuers townes turned to the part of king Charles, and some were taken by practise, as Wyappe, Boys de Vincent and other.

Here is one chiefe point to be noted, that eyther the disdaine among the chiefe pæres of the Realme of England (as ye haue heard) or the negligence of the kings Counsell, was the losse of the whole dominion of France, betwene the rulers of Sene and Spaine, and in especiall of the Noble Citie of Paris: for here befoze were sent ouer thousands for defence of the holdes and fortresses, now were sent hundredes, yea and scores, some rascals, and some not able to draba bowe, or heare a bill: for the Lord Willoughby, and the Bishop of Terronanne, which had the Gouernment of the Citie of Paris, had in their company not past 2000. Englishmen. Which weaknesse king Charles wel perceiuing, he appointed the Constable Arthure of Brytaine, the Earle of Dunoy, the Lord De la Roch, and Lisle Adam, with other balliant Captaines, and men of warre, as well Burgonians as French, to go befoze Paris, trusting by fauour of certain Citizens, with whom he had intelligence, shortly to be Lord of the Citie, without great losse of battell: so these Captaines came befoze the Citie of Paris, but perceiuing that all things succeeded not according to their expectation, they returned to Spount Martry, and the next day set on the towne of Saint Dionis, where they slue two hundred

hundred Englishmen, and upon composition permitted the other to depart to Paris.

Thomas Lord Beaumont, which of late was come to Paris with 800. men, issued forth of the Citie with 600. souldiers, intending to biewe the doings and number of the French armie, but being espied, he was suddenly compassed about, so that he was discomfited and taken, and with him 80. prisoners, besides 200. which were slaine in the field, and the remnant chased to the gates of the Citie. The Parisians, especially the maister of the hals, and some of the Antueritie, and Michael Lellier, and many other Burgeses of the Citie, perceiuing the weaknesse of the Englishmen, and the force of the Frenchmen, signified to the French Captaines their mindes, willing them with all diligence to come, that they might receiue so rich a pray to them to be deliuered. The Constable delaying no time, came with his power, and lodged by the Charterhouse, and the Lord Lisle Adam appoynting to the walles, shewed to the Citizens a charter, sealed with the great seale of king Charles, by the which he had pardoned them their offences, and granted them their olde liberties, so that they would be to him true and obedient: which being to them declared, they ranne about the towne, crying Saint Denis, slue king Charles. The Englishmen perceiuing this, determined to keepe the gate of Saint Dionis, but the chaines were drawne, and women and children cast downe stones and scalding water on their heades, and the Citizens slue them, the Bishop of Erwine, the Lord Willoughby, and sir Simon Morriher, withdrew to the bastille Saint Anthonic, whilist this rumour was in the towne, the Earle of Dunois, and other scaled the wals, and some passed the river by boates, and opened the gate of Saint James, by the which the Constable with his banner displayed entered. The Bishoppe and the Lord Willoughby defended their fortress some daies, and yielded. Thus was the Citie of Paris brought into the possession of Charles the French king, &c. now when Paris, Saint Denis, Saint Germaine and diuers other townes in France were taken for lacke of succour, the Duke of Yorke Regent of France, came ouer into Normandy with 8000. men, and in his company the Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke, the Lord Falconbridge and other, but this Regent neuer did good in France, as appeareth by the histories.

Paris yielded  
to the French.

The 19. day of Iuly, the Duke of Burgoyne, with a great multitude of Burgonians and Flemmings appeared befoze Calcis, and there fight his Pauillions and Bents, at which season was Lieutenant of Calcis sir Iohn Rastcliffe Knight, and of the Castell was Lieutenant the Baron of Dudley: this siege endured about thre weekes, in which season many knightly actes were done and exercised on both parts.

Calcis besieged  
by the  
Duke of Bur-  
goyne.

On the second day of August the Duke of Gloucester, protectour of England, with 500. sailles, (as some write,) landed at Calcis, and intended by on the third day following to haue issued out of the towne, and to haue giuen battaille to the Flemmings, (but as our English writers testifie,) so lone as the Duke of Burgoyne was aware of the great power of the Lord

Ro Fabian,

Protectour,

Protector, he took with him of his ordinance that he might lightly carrie, and the other that were cumbersome he left behind. When the duke with his host was thus fled, the Lord protector which his people followed him into the countrey by the space of cleven dayes, in which season he bent to two townes of Wopering and Well, and returned to Calcis, and so into England.

An. reg. 15.

This yere was the Castle of towne of Roxburgh in Scotland besieged by the King of Scots, but when he heard that Sir Ralph Gray knight was coming thither with a competent number to remove the siege, anon he departed, leaving some part of his ordinance behind him, to his great shame and dishonour.

1417.  
Quene Katherine  
buried in  
Westminster.

The 3. of January Quene Katherine late wife to Henry the sixt, and mother to King Henry the first, departed out of this transitory life at Bermondsey, and on the eight of February his body was brought to St. Katherines by the tower, from thence to St. Pauls, and so was buried at Westminster in our Ladies chappell, and his corpes being taken up againe in the reigne of King Henry the 7. when he laid the foundation of his new chappell there, she was neuer since buried, but remaineth still above ground in a coffin of boards, behind the east end of the quire. This Quene Katherine (saith Hall) after the death of King Henry the first his husband, being young and lusty, following more his own appetite, than friendly counsell, & regarding more his private affection, than her owne honour, took to husband (saith he) a goodly gentleman, named Owen Tewther, by whom she conceived and brought forth three sonnes, Edmond, Ispar, and another which was a monke of Westminster, and a daughter which lived not long. After whose death, King Henry because they were his brethren, of one wombe descended, created Edmond Earle of Richmonde, and Ispar Earle of Penbroke: which Edmond had by Margaret daughter and sole heire to John Duke of Somerset, Henry, which after was King of this Realme, called King Henry the seventh.

The Dutches of Bedford, sister to Lewes Earle of St. Paul, without counsell of her friends, married a lusty knight, called Sir Richard Woodville, to the great displeasure of his uncle the Bishop of Eburine, and the Earle his brother. This Sir Richard was made baron of Rivers, and after Earle, and had by his Lady many noble sonnes, and faire daughters, whereof one was Lady Elizabeth, after Quene of England, married to King Edward the fourth.

This yere the 14. of January at none, the great stone gate at London by the tower upon it next to Southwarke fell downe in the Thames and two of the farthest arches of the same byrge, and yet no man perished in body, which was a great worke of God,

Colledge of  
S. Dunstons  
in the East.

Ralph Lord Cromwell, and Matild his wife erected the colledge of the Trinitie at Sathall in Lincolnshire, which Colledge at the suppression in the 38. of Henry the eight was valued to dispend yearly 348. pounds, five shillings.

Also this yere on the ninth of July, Jane late Quene of England, and before Dutches of Bypaine, daughter to the King of Navarre, and wife to King Henry the fourth, died in the maner of yawering a Bowe in Essex,  
from

from whence she was removed to Bermondsey, and from thence conveyed to Canterbury, where she was solemnly entered by King Henry the fourth her husband.

This yere the King gave licence to Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, and Eleanor his wife, to build and embattell his maner house at Cranewich, to inclose two hundred acres of ground pasture, wood, and beath, and to unbatell his tower in the same park, &c.

Reconl.  
Tower of  
Cranewich.

In the meane time, John Duke of Somerset accompanied with the Lords of Fauconbridge, Talbot, Sir Francis Surien Arragonois, Mathew Gough, Thomas Pawlet, Thomas Harington, Walter Lymbroke, John Geding, William Watton Esquires, and Thomas Hilton bailife of Roane, with a puissance of the English party, besieged the towne of Harlew both by water and by land. The capitaine within the towne was called Sir John de Scuteville, and Sir Robert his brother, with other, to the number of 600. fighting men. The assailants made trenches, both to assault the towne, and to let the French from succours, that they should neither approach nor aide the townes men besieged: divers assaults were given, and great ordinance was laid before the gate of the towne, which overthrow buildings: the siege endured long, to the great discomfort of them within, whereof they advertised the King, who sent thither the Earle of Devon, the Earle of Dunops, the bastard of Bourbon, the Lord Gaincourt and other, with 4000. men, these passed the river of Some betweene Amias and Corby, came before the towne, and daily skirmished with the Englishmen, but nothing prevailed, and therefore returned. The capitaines of the towne rendred the towne to John Duke of Somerset, who made capitaines there Thomas Pawlet, William Lymbrike, Christopher Barker, and George S. George, which many yeres manfully defended the towne and haven, but after ward when the said Duke was regent, he not onely lost the towne, but also the Citie of Roane, with many other Cities.

This yere was a parliament holden at Westminster in which were divers notable conclusions obtained, aswell for the preservation of peace at home, as for the maintenance of war in outward regions: and as it was made for buying and selling by strangers, very profitable to the publicke weal if it were observed.

Parliament at  
Westminster.  
An. reg. 16.

On the 6. of November the Earle of Warwick as regent of France, passed the sea, after he had been seven times shipped and unshipped, and landed at Harlew with 1000. fresh souldiers, and came to Roan, and then the Duke of Poike returned into England.

The Earle of Warwick hearing that the Duke of Burgoyne besieged the Castle of Croptie, sent the Lord Talbot, the Lord Fauconbridge, Sir Thomas Kiriel, Sir John Montgomerie, Thomas Lymbroke, Thomas Chandos, Dauby Hall, and other knights and Esquires, and in all 5000. men. When the Duke of Burgoyne was informed of the approach of the Lord Talbot, and other, hee with all his power saving 400. left in a battle by him there newly builded, fledde to Abbeville, which battle was soone gained, and the men either slaine or taken. After this the Lord Talbot  
sent

1438.

sent to the Duke of Burgoin, signifying to him, that except he would come forth, and give him battell, he would utterly waste his countrey of Picardy, and according to his promise he went to townes, spoiled, and slew many people in Picardy, but for all this doings, the Duke of Burgoyne appeared not, but got him from Abbeville to Ambois, so that the Lord Talbot abode 20. daies in Picardy and Artois, besetting all afoze him, and returned without impeachment.

Owen Tewtler foully hurtyng his keeper, brake out of Newgate, but was taken afterward by the Lord Beaumont, and brought again to Newgate, and againe escaped. This Owen was thus imprisoned by the Duke of Gloucester, so that he had foure children by Quene Katherine, late wife to Henry the sixt, as is aforesaid. This Owen was many yeeres afterward taken at a skirmish about Wigmore, and brought by Sir Richard Vehan grandfather to great Vehan the sergeant at armes, to Hereford, and there beheaded, and buried: but afterward Jasper sonne to Owen sodainly tooke Sir Richard Vehan in his house, as some say, at Chepstow Castle, and caused his head to be smitten off. In the moneth of June the Earle of Huntington (as steward of Gwine) with 2000. archers, and 400. spears was sent into Gascoigne, as a supply to the countrey and commons of the same. Also Sir Richard Woodville, Sir William Chamberlaine, Sir William Peits, and Sir William Story with 1000. men were sent to suffice the townes in Normandy, which at that time had thereof great neede, for the English Capitaines had small confidence in the Normans, and not to much in some of their owne nation, for bybertie, with civetousnes ranne fast abroad with French crowns, that nineth any creature could hold their hands close, or purses shut.

*An. reg. 17.* This yere the towne of Wilco Malbank, or Saintwich in the countie of Chester was pitifully consumed with fire.

This yere, by reason of great tempests, immeasurable winde and raines there rose such a scarcity, that wheate was sold in some places for two shillings six pence the bushell, wine for twelve pence the gallon, bay salt for fourtene pence the bushell, &c.

In this moneth followed such a frost, and after that so deepe a snow, that all the ground was covered therewith, and all the ditches frozen, which wea-ther put the Englishmen in hope to recover againe the towne of Pontboile, by the French being gotten before, by corrupting with money divers burgeses of the towne, wherefore the Englishmen being clothed all in white, with John Lord Clifford their capitaine, came in the night to the ditch, and passed them without danger, by reason of the frost, scaled the walles, slew the watch, and toke the towne with many profitable prisoners.

After the regaining of the towne of Pontboile Richard Beauchamp Earle of Warwick the Lieutenant generall of France, and of the dutchy of Normandy, died in the Castle of Roan in Normandy on the last of Aprill, the yere of his age 8. And on the fourth of October next following his corpse being honorably conueyed, as well by water as by land, from Roan in Normandy, to Warwicke in England, and was laid with full solemnities in a faire chest made of stone

John Leiland.  
Owen Tew-  
tler prison in  
Newgate, and  
after behead

*An. reg. 17.*  
The towne of  
Saintwich,  
burnt.

1439.  
Rich. Beau-  
champ Earle  
of Warwick  
deceased.

done in the westdoore of the colledge of our Ladies Church, by his noble ancestors, till a chappell by him deuised in his life were made, which chappell founded on the rocke, and all the members thereof, his executors did fully make and apparely, by the authoritie of his said last will and testament: And there after by the said authoritie they did translate the said body into the vault aboue said, where he is intombed right princely and postured with an image armed of copper and gilt, hopped ouer with clauces of copper and gilt, like a chariot.

About the beginning of Lent, John Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with other captaines and men of war, to the number of 2000. marching towards Picardy, passed ouer the riner of Some, and through the towne of Montereul, came before the fortrese of Fulleuill, which the Duke besieged, whilest the Lord Talbot entred farther into the countrey. After that the Duke had mounted his great artillery, and began to batter the hold, the capitaine within being laine with a shot thereof, and the batterie being still continued, the place was yielded, in the which the Duke left a competent garrison of souldiours, which afterward were indamaged the countrey.

This done, the Duke followed the Lord Talbot, who was already entred a good way within the countrey of Sauthois, and now joining their powers together, they came to a fortrese called Liphons in Sauthois, which was also rendred into them, after they had burnt the Church which the countrey people kept against them, and would not yield it, till they were fired out, and burnt, and laine, to the number of 300. The fortrese being by composition deliuered into their hands, the duke with his power lay there about ten dayes, sending diuers troupes of his men abroad into the countrey, which spoiled the same, toke the fortrese of Carbonniers, and the Lord thereof within it, who for his ransome, and to haue his subjects and house saued from spoile and fier, compounded with his takers for 1000. saluz of gold, which he paid to them: finally, after the Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with their power had laine in Liphons about ten dayes, they returned into Normandy without any impeachment.

This yere wheate was sold at London for thre shillings the bushell, malt for thirtene shillings the quarter, otes for eight pence the bushell, which for red men to eate beanes, pease, and barley, more then in an hundred yeres before: wherefore Stephen Browne maior of London sent into Fraunce, and caused to be brought to London many ships laden with rie, which did much good to the people, for bread coine was so scarce in England that poore people made them bread of ferne roots.

In a Parliament at Reading it was ordained, that all merchant strangers should goe to hoell with Englishmen, and to make sale of their merchandises, and buy againe what they would within the space of six monethes, giving their host for euery twenty shillings worth two pence, except the sterlinges, And that euery householder that was alien, should pay to the King 13. pence the yere, and euery seruant alien six pence.

King Henry created Edmond Handen Earle of Richmond, and Jasper de Harkel

*An. reg. 18.*  
Great dearth  
of come in  
England.  
1440.

Parliament at  
Reading.

Dider for  
strangers.



Richard Cliffe  
brent on the  
Tower hill.

Harfield Earle of Pembroke, these were the Kings brethren by the Mothers side, John Sutton Knight was created Baron of Dudley, the last day of the Parliament at Reading. Sir Richard Wich vicar of Hermetworth in Essex, or middlesex, sometime vicar of Dertford in Kent, who had before abjured, was bent on the tower hill the 17. of June. After whose death was great murmur among the people, for some said he was a god man and an holy, and put to death by malice: and some said the contrary, so that many men and women went by night to the place where he was bent, and offered their money, images of wax, and other things, making their prayers, kneeling, and kissing the ground, bare away with them the ashes of his body for holy reliques, &c. This endured eight dayes, till the mayor and aldermen ordained men of armes, to restrain the people, who apprehended many, and sent them to prison, among whom was taken the vicar of Berking Church beside the tower, in whose parish all this was done, who had received the offering of the simple people. And to excite them to offer the more fervently to the fulfilling of his false countenances, he had mingled ashes with the powder of spices, and strewd them in the place where the pyre was bent, and so the simple people were deceived, weening the sweete savour had come of the ashes of the dead priest: all which the said vicar of Berking church confessed in prison. This have I noted the more at large, because some have writt the vicar of Berking to be bent, which is false, for he was not bent, though he better deserved than the other.

The Duke of  
Poike regent  
of France.

After the death of the Earle of Marwike, the Duke of Poike was againe made regent of France, which being accompanied with the Earle of Arfoz, the Lord Bourcher called Earle of Ewe, Sir James of Dymond, the Lord Clinton, Sir Richard Woodville, and diuers other noble men on the fifteenth of May shipped at Portsmouth, and sailed thence into Normandy, before whose arrivall, the French King soze graced with the towne of Ponthois, assembled a great army, and besieged the said towne himselfe in person, environing it with battiles, trenches, and ditches, beating the walls and bulwarks with the shot of great ordinance, giving thereunto diuers great assaults, but John Lord Clifford like a valliant capitaine defended the towne so manfully, that the Frenchmen rather lost than won.

The Duke of Poike at his landing, sent for the Lord Talbot, and a great number of souldiours, and so came nere to the towne of Ponthois, and there incamped himselfe, and sent word to the French King, that thither he was come to give him battell, if he would come out of his strength and battles, but the French King determined not to venture his person with men of so base estate, but meant to keepe his ground, bidding the Lord regent to enter at his perill: and in the meane season did what he could to stop the passage of the river Sise, so that no viadual should be brought to the English army by that way.

The Duke of Poike perceiving that the French King minded not to fight, purposed to passe over the river of Sise, and so to fight with him. Whereupon he removed his campe, and appointed the Lord Talbot and other to make countenance, as they would passe the river by force at the port of Beaumont,

ammont, and appointed another company in boates of timber and lether, and bylges made of cozds and ropes to passe over beneath the abbey. Whilist the Lord Talbot made a crye as though he would assault the gate, certaine Englishmen passed the water in boates, and drew a bridge of cozds over, so that a great number of them were got to the other side, ere the Frenchmen were advised what had hapned. When they saw the chance, they ran like mad men to have stopped the passage, but it was too late, for the most part of the Englishmen were got over, inso much, that they chased their enemies backe, and due Sir Guiliam de Chastell, and diuers other. The Frenchmen seeing their euill hap, returned to their King, and tolde him what had happened, whereupon he doubting to be assailed to his disadvantage, thought not good longer to tarry, but with all speed, removing his ordinance into the battell of Saint Martin, which he had newly made, dislodged in the night from Ponthois, and went to Poyse, leaving the Lord de Cotigni Admirall of France with 3000. men, to keepe the battell. The Englishmen the next day came before the towne of Ponthois, thinking there to haue found the French King, but he was gone, and in his lodging they found great riches, and much stuffe, which he could not carrie away for feare of the sodaine invasion. The Duke with his power entred the towne, repaired the walls, and diuers times assaulted the battell of the Frenchmen. After this the Duke intending once againe to offer the French King battell, left behinde him at Ponthois, Sir Geruais Clifton, Sir Nicholas Burdet, Henry Chandos, and a thousand soldiers, and therewith removing with his whole army came before Poyse, where he left himselfe and his men in order of battell ready to fight. Where issued out some Frenchmen, but to their losse: for diuers of them were slaine, and fower valliant horsemen taken. The Duke perceiving the Frenchmen durst not encounter in field with the English power, dislodged from Poyse, & came to Pount, and from thence to Roan.

When the Regent and the Lord Talbot were returned againe into Normandy, the French King considering how much it should rebound to his dishonour to let rest the towne of Ponthois, in his enemies hands, he effones returning sodainly againe unto Ponthois, he first by assault gat the Church, and after the whole towne, toke the capitaine and diuers other Englishmen, and due to the number of three hundred, amongst the which Sir Nicholas Burdet these butler of Normandy was one.

After this King Henry, and King Charles, agreed to send Ambassadors to commune of peace: King Henry sent Henry Beaufort Cardinall of Winchester, with diuers other noble men to Calcis, with whom was also sent Charles Duke of Millance yet prisoner in England, to the end he might be both author of the peace, and procurer of his owne deliuerance. The French King sent the Archbisshop of Reims, and the Earle of Dunois, and the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Lord de Creue-Cure, and diuers other: all these met at Calcis, where the Duke of Millance courteously received the Earle of Dunois (his ballard brother) thanking him greatly for his paines taking in governing his lands and countrie. During the time of his captiuitie and absence,

Sir Nicholas  
Burdet butler.



abſence, diuers communications were had, as well for the deliuerance of the Duke, as for a ſmall peace, but nothing was concluded, ſaving that another meeting was appointed. The Duke of Orlance was ſet at libertie, paying for his ranſome 300000. crownes.

The 26. of nouember was a challenge in armes done beſore King Henry within liſts, in Smithfield, betwene Sir Richard Wooduile, a Knight of England, and a Knight of Spaine, but the King tooke vp the matter into his hands, after the third ſtroke.

This yere King Henry being of himſelfe alwayes naturally inclined to doe good, and fearing leaſt he might ſeeme vntthankfull to Almighty God for his great benefits beſtowed vpon him, ſince the time he firſt tooke vpon him the regiment of his Realme, determined for his priuar notable worke, to erect and found two famous Colleges in the honour and worſhip of his holy name, and for the increaſe of vertue, the dilation of cunning, and eſtabliſhment of Chriſtian ſaith, whereof the one in Cambridge, to be called his Colledge Royall of our Lady, and Saint Nicholas: and the other at Eaton, beſide Windſore, to be called his Colledge of our Bleſſed Ladie. And for the perſormance of this his deuout purpoſe, he enſcoſſed certaine Biſhops with other noble and worſhipfull perſonages, by his letters patentes, with lands and poſſeſſions, parcell of his inheritance of the Dutchie of Lancaſter, to the clere value of well nere ſower and thirtie hundred pound by yere, which letters patentes he after confirmed by his acte of Parliament, declaring alſo by his will vnto his ſaid ſceſſors, his intent and meaning, how the ſame ſhould be employed vpon the edifications of his ſaid two Colledges, whereof in my iudgement the deuice is ſo excellent, and the buildings ſo princely and apt for that purpoſe, as I cannot omit to ſet forth vnto you the very plat of the whole Colledge in Cambridge, euen as I ſinde mentioned, almoſt Verbatim, in his ſaid will, ſuppoſing, that if the reſt of the houſe had proceeded according to the Chappell already finiſhed (as his full intent and meaning was) the like Colledge could ſcant haue ben found againe in any Chriſtian land. This Colledge was begun in his time, and finiſhed ſo ſarre, that in Anno 1443. (which was the 23. of his raigne) the cemetery of Church yerde, the altar, &c. (as the manner was) were conſecrated by the Biſhops of Salisburie and Lincolne. The words of the Will are thus: As touching the dimensions of the Church of my ſaid Colledge, of our Ladie and Saint Nicholas of Cambridge, I haue deuised and appointed, that the ſame Church ſhall containe in length 288. ſote of aſſie, without any Aleas, and all of the wideneſſe of ſortie ſote. And the length of the ſame Church from the Weſt ende vnto the altars at the Quire doye, ſhall containe 120. ſote. And from the Pronotſs ſtall, vnto the grace called Gradus Chori, 90. ſote, for 36. ſtals on either ſide of the ſame Quire, anſwering to lxx. ſellowes, and ten prebends condaits, which muſt be de prima forma. And from the ſaid ſtals vnto the Caſt ende of the ſaid Church, 62. ſote of aſſie. Alſo a Herodeſſe bearing the rodbloſt, departing the Quire, and the body of the Church, containing in length ſortie ſote, and in breaeth fourtene ſote. The wals of the ſame Church

The Kings  
Colledge in  
Cambridge.

The Chappell.

The body of  
the Church.  
The Quire.

The rodbloſt.  
The light of  
the Chappell.

Church to be in height ninety ſote imbatteled, vanted and Chareroſed, ſuſciently butteraced, and euery butterace ſined with ſiniales. And in the eaſt ende of the ſame Church ſhall be a window of nine dayes, and betwixt euery butterace a window of ſine dayes. And betwixt euery of the ſame butteraces in the body of the Church, on both ſides of the ſame Church a cloſet with an Altar therein, containing in length twentie ſote, and in breaeth ten ſote.

The Eaſt  
window.

The ſine  
Chappell.

And the pauement of the Church to be enhanced ſoure ſote aboue the ground without. And the height of the pauement of the Quire one ſote and a halfe aboue the pauement of the Church. And the pauement of the Altar thre ſote aboue that. And on the South ſide of the Quire a Walkie containing in length ſittie ſote, and in breaeth, twentie two ſote, departed into two houſes beneath, and two houſes aboue, which ſhall containe in height twentie two ſote in all, with an entrie from the Quire vanted. And at the Weſt ende of the Church a Cloyster ſquare, the Eaſt pane containing in length, 175. ſote and the Weſt pane as much. The South pane two hundred ſote, and the South pane as much, of the which the Pambulatoie thirtene ſote wide, and in height twentie ſote, to the Corbill table, with cleare ſtozes and Butteraces with ſiniales, vanted and embatteleed. And the ground thereof, ſoure ſote lower than the Church ground. And in the middle of the Weſt pane of the Cloyster a ſtrong Tower ſquare, containing ſoure and twentie ſote within the walles. And in height one hundred and twentie ſote to the Corbill table. And ſoure ſmall Turrets ouer that ſined with Pyneſes. And a doze into the ſayde Cloyster inward, but outward none. And as touching the dimensions of the houſing of the ſayde Colledge, I haue deuised and appointed in the South ſide of the ſaid Church a Quadraunt, cloſing to both ends of the ſame Church, the Eaſt pane whereof ſhall containe two hundred and thirtie ſote in length, and in breaeth within the wals two and twentie ſote. In the ſame panes middle a tower for a Gatehouſe, containing in length thirtie ſote, and in breaeth two and twentie, and in height ſortie ſote, with thre Chambers ouer the Gate, euery one ouer the other. And on either ſide of the ſame Gate ſoure Chambers, euery one containing in length ſine and twentie ſote, and in breaeth two and twentie ſote. And ouer euery of theſe Chambers, two Chambers aboue of the ſame meaſure of moze, with two Towers outward, and two Towers inward.

The Quire.

The Cloyster.

The Cloyster.

The baſe  
conrt.  
The Eaſt  
pane.

The great  
gate.

The South  
pane.

The Weſt  
pane.

The Library

The South pane ſhall containe in length 238. ſote, and in breaeth two and twentie ſote within, in which ſhall bee ſeuene Chambers, euery one containing in length nine and twentie ſote, and in breaeth two and twentie ſote with a Chamber parcell of the Pronotſſe lodging, containing in length ſine and thirtie ſote, and with a Chamber in the Eaſt corner of the ſame pane, containing in length ſine and twentie ſote, and in breaeth two and thirtie ſote. And ouer euery of all theſe Chambers two Chambers, and with ſine towers outward, and thre towers inward. The Weſt pane ſhall containe in length 220. ſote, and in breaeth within 24. ſote, in which at the ende toward the Church ſhall be a Library, containing in length 110. ſote, and in breaeth

ſf

breaeth

The library.  
The dispensation  
house.

The ward-  
robe.  
The hall.

The pantrie  
and butterie.

The Colledge  
kitchen.

The Dismals  
lodging.

The bake-  
house, and  
breechhouse.  
The wood-  
yard.  
The water  
conduit.

The precinct  
of the colledge.

The water  
gate.

breadth foure and twenty fote. And vnder it a large house for reading and dis-  
putations, containing in length fourtie fote. And two chambers vnder the  
same library, each containing nine and twentie fote in length, and in breadth  
foure and twentie fote. And ouer the said library a house of the same largenes,  
for diners fruite of the said Colledge. In the other end of the same pane a hall,  
containing in length 100. fote, vpon a vault of twelue fote high, ozbalnes  
for the cellar and butterie: and the breadth of the hall fere and thirtie fote, on  
euery side thereof a bay window. And in the neather end of the same hall to-  
ward the middle of the same pane a pantrie and butterie, euery of them in  
length twentie fote, and in breadth seventene fote, and ouer that two  
chambers for officers. And at the neather end of the hall toward the West, a  
goodly kitchen. And the same pane shall haue inward two towers, ozbalnes  
for the wayes into the hall and library. And in euery corner of the said qua-  
drant shall be two corner towers, one inward, and one outward moze then  
the towers aboue rehearsed. And at the upper end of the hall the prouds  
lodging, that is to wit, moze than the chambers for him about specified, a pa-  
lour on the ground, containing foure and thirtie fote in length, and two and  
twentie fote in breadth, and two chambers aboue of the same quantitie. And  
westward closing thereto a kitchen for him, a larder house, tables and other  
necessary housings and grounds. And westward beyond these houses, and the  
said kitchen ozbalnes for the hall, a bakehouse, a brewhouse, and other houses  
of office, betwene which there is left a ground square of fourescore fote in  
euery pane, for wode and such stufte. And in the middle of the said large qua-  
drant shall be a conduit, goodly deuised for ease of the same colledge. And I  
will, that the edification procede in large forme of my said colledge cleane  
and substantiall, setting apart superfluitie of two great curious woorkes, of  
entail and busse moulding. And I haue deuised and appointed that the pre-  
dict of my said colledge, as well on both sides of the garden from the colledge  
to the water, as in all other places of the same precinct, be inclosed with a sub-  
stantiall wall, of the height of fourtene fote, with a large tower at the prin-  
cipall entrie against the middle of the east pane out of the high strate. And  
in the same tower a large gate, and another tower in the middle of the West  
end at the new bridge. And the same wall to be crested, embattelled, and for-  
tified with towers, as many as shall be thought convenient thereunto. And  
I will, that my said colledge be edified of the most substantiall and best ad-  
ding stufte, of stone, lead, glasse, and iron, that may best be had and prouided  
thereto.

Thus much I haue enlarged by occasion of reading this good Kings will:  
the cunning deuise whereof I leaue to the considerate iudgement of such as  
be expert in architecture, heartily desiring almighty God to put into the heart  
of some noble Prince of his land, one day to make perfect this royall woorkes  
charitably begun.

A combat was fought at Wotchill betwene two thieues, the appea-  
ler and defendand, the appealer had the field of the defendand within three  
strokes.

Roger

Roger Bolinbrooke a great astronomer, with Thomas Southwell a cha-  
non of St. Stephens chappell at Westminster, were taken as conspirators  
of the Kings death, so it was said, that the same Roger should labour to con-  
sume the Kings person by woe of peregromancie, and the said Thomas should  
lay passes in the lodge of Harnesley Parke beside London, vpon certain  
instruments, with the which the said Roger should vse his craft of peregro-  
mancie, against the faith, and was assenting to the said Roger, in all his  
woorkes. And the five and twentieth day of Julie being Sonday, Roger Bo-  
linbrooke, with all his instruments of peregromancie, that is to say, a chappe  
painted wherein he was wont to sit, vpon the foure corners of which  
chappe stode foure woorkes, and vpon euery woork an image of copper hang-  
ing, with many other instrumentes: he stode on a high scaffolde in Pauls  
Churchyard, before the crosse, holding a sworde in his right hand, and a  
scepter in his left, arrayed in a marvellous attire, and after the sermon was  
ended by master Low Bishop of Rochester, he abused all articles longing  
to the craft of peregromancie or mistwising to the faith, in presence of the  
Archbishop of Canterbury, the Cardinal of Winchester, the Bishop of Lon-  
don, Salisbury and many other.

On the Tuesday next following, dame Elianor Cobham, daughter to  
Reginald Cobham Lord of Strichough: Dutchesse of Gloucester fled by night  
into the Sanctuary at Westminster, which caused hir to be suspected of  
treason.

In the meane time Roger Bolingbroke, was examined before the Kings  
Counsaile, where he confessed that he brought the said peregromancie at the  
siring and procurement of the said Dame Elianor, to knowe what should  
befall of hir, and to what estate she should come, whereupon the was cited  
to appeere before Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Cantuarie, Henry Beau-  
force Bishop of Winchester Cardinal, Iohn Kempe Archbishop of Yorke  
Cardinal: William Aschothe Bishop of Salisbury, and other in Saint Ste-  
phens chappell at Westminster, there to answer to certain articles in  
number 28. of peregromancie, witchcraft, sorcerie heresie, and treason, where  
when the appeared, the foresaid Roger was brought forth to witness against  
hir, and said, that she was canle and first stirred him to laboz in the said arte.  
Then on the eleventh of August, she was committed to the warde of Sir  
Iohn Steward, Sir William Wolfe Knights, Iohn Stanley Esquire, and other,  
to be conveyed to the Castle of Lodes, there to remaine til three weekes after  
Michaelmasse.

Shortly after a commission was directed to the Carles of Huntingdon,  
Stafforde, Suffolke, and Northumberland, the treasurer Sir Ralph Crom-  
well, Iohn Cornwall, Lord Fanhope, Sir Walter Hungerforde, and to cer-  
taine Iudges of both Benches, to enquire of all manner of treasons, sorceries  
and other things that might be hurtfull to the Kings person, before whom  
the said Roger, and Thomas Southwell, as principals, and dame Elianor as ac-  
cessarie, were indicted of treason in the Guilde Hall of London.

There was taken also Margerie Gurdemaine a witch of Eye besides  
at Westminster

An. reg. 20.  
The witch of  
Evesham.

Westminster, whose sorcerie and witchcrafts the said Elianor had long time used, and by his medicines and bynikes enforced the Duke of Gloucester to love her, and after to wed her, wherefore, and for cause of relapse, the same witch was hient in Smithfield, on the 27. of October.

The one and twentieth of October, in the chappell beforesaid, befoze the Bishops, of London Robert Gilbert, of Lincoln William Alnwyke, of Norwich Thomas Brouns, the sayde Elianor appered, and Adam Molins clarke of the Kings counsell read certaine articles objected against hir of Sorcerie and Pseudomancie, whereof some shee denied, and some shee granted.

The thirde and twentieth of October dame Elianor appered againe, and witnessnes were brought forth and examined: and she was convicted of the said articles: then was it asked if she would say any thing against the witnessnes, whereunto she answered nay, but submitted hir selfe. The 27. day of October shee abjured the articles, and was adioyned to appere againe the ninth of November. In the meane time to wit on the 16. of October Thomas Southwell died in the Towre of London, as himselfe had prophesied that he should never die by Justice of the Lawe.

Elizabet. Col.  
ham v. p.  
maunce.

The 9. of November dame Elianor appered befoze the Archbishop and other, in the sayde Chappell, and received hir penance, which shee performed.

On Monday the 13. of November, she came from Westminster, by water, and landed at the Temple bridge, from whence with a taper of waxe of two pound in hir hande, she went through flatestræte, hoddle (saue a herchese) to Pauls, where she offered hir taper at the high altar. On the Wednesday next shee landed at the Swan in Thamis stræte, and then went through Bridgestræte, Grace church stræte, straight to Leaden Hall, and so to Christ Church by Aldgate. On Friday shee landed at Quene Hise, and so went through Cheape to St. Michaels in Cornhill, in forme aforesaid: at all which times the Hales, Sheriffs, and crafts of London, received hir and accompanied her. This being done shee was committed to the ward of Sir Thomas Stanley, wherein shee remained during hir life in the Castle of Chester, having pærely 100. markes assigned for hir finding, in the 22. of Henry the first shee was removed to Bakenham, there to be safely kept, whose pride, false, couetise, and lecherie, were cause of hir confusion.

The 12. of November Roger Bolingbroke, with Sir John Hum pzeff, and William Woodham Esguier, was attained in the Guild Hall of London, where the said John and William had their charters, but Roger Bolingbroke was condemned, and had iudgement of Sir John Hody, chiefe Justice of the Kings Bench, and the same day he was drawn from the towre to Thobone and there hanged and quartered: and when the said Roger should suffer, he said that he was neuer guiltie of any treason against the Kings person, but he had presumed too far in his cunning, whereof he cried God mercy: and the Justice that came on him iudgement lived not long after.

Henry Beauchampe succeeded in his fathers inheritance, who being

Henry Beau-  
champ Earle  
of Warwick.

kept two yeres in the Kings hands, was restored to all his livings with great glory, for he was crowned King of England, by the Kings owne hands, and nominated chiefe Earle of England.

The Duke of Boffance being delivred (as is afoze shewed) and speaking now better English than French, after his arrival in France, repaired to the Duke of Burgoyne, and according to his promise, married the Lady Mary Cleue in the towne of Saint Omer, on whom he begat a sonne, which after was french King by the name of Lewis the twelfth.

Richard duke of Yorke regent of France and gouernor of Normandy, sent the Lord Willoughby with a great number of souldiers, to destroy the countie of Amiens, and John Lord Talbot was appointed to besiege the towne of Diepe: and the regent himselfe, accompanied with Edmond Duke of Somerset, set forward into the dutchie of Anjou. The Lord Willoughby entered the countie of his enemies upon such a sobaine, that a great number of people were taken ere they could withdraw into any place of safegard. The Frenchmen in the garrisons adioyning, altonied with the clamor and crye of the people, issued out, and manfully fought with the Englishmen, but in the end the Frenchmen slaine in the forefront, they turned their backs and fled, the Englishmen followed and slew many, and such as escaped the sword were robbed by the earle of Saint Pole, which was coming to aide the Englishmen: in this conflict were slaine aboue 600. men of armes, and a great number taken.

The Dukes of Yorke and Somerset entered into Anjou and Maine, and there destroyed the towne, and spoiled the people, and with great prayes and prisoners repaired againe into Normandy, whither also the Lord Willoughby withdrew after his enterpryse achieved. The Duke of Somerset entered into the marches of Bypaine, and toke by assault a towne named la Cerche, appertaining to the Duke of Alanson, spoiling and burning the same, from thence he went to Pontay, where he solozned two moneths, sending forth daily his men of war, to destroy the countries of Anjou, Craonnois, and Chatragonnois. The French King sent the Marshall Loyach with foure thousand men to resist the inuasions of the Duke of Somerset, but the Duke discomfited him, slew 100. of his men, and toke 62. prisoners of the best of them. The Duke after this encounter toke the towne of Beaumont le Comte, and manned all the fortresses on the frontiers of his enemies, and with rich booties and prisoners returned to the Duke of Yorke.

In the meane time the Lord Talbot besieged the towne of Diepe, enuironing it with deepe trenches and rampiers, building also vpon the mount Powlet a strong baste, but at length perceiving the towne to be strongly defended, he delivred the custodie of the baste to his bastard sonne a valiant young man and departed to Roan for aide, money, and munition.

The French King sent his sonne the Dolphin of Vienne, with the Earle of Dunois and 15000. men to raise the siege from Diepe: thre dayes they assailed the baste, in the which 600. Englishmen were inclosed: at length the Frenchmen won it, and toke the bastard Talbot prisoner, with Sir Wil-

liam Poitow, and Sir John Repley, which shortly after were redeemed. The other Englishmen, seeing the battle won by the Frenchmen, stood all a day in order of battaile, and in the night following returned to Rouen.

Whilste these things were in doing, Philip Duke of Burgoigne made harpe war against the Earle of H. Pole, in taking from him his townes and Castles, so that he was constrained to renounce his allegiance, promised and sworne to the King of England, and returned to the French parte.

The 30. of January a challenge was done in Smithfield within liffes, before the King, the one, Sir Philip le Beawfe of Aragon a Knight, and the other an Esquire of the Kings house called John Atley or Atley, these coming to the field toke their tents, and then was the Knights sonne made Knight by the King, and so brought againe to his fathers tent. When the Heraulds of armes called them by name to doe their battaile, and so they came both all armed with their weapons: The Knight came with his sword drawn, and the Esquire with his speare, which speare the Esquire cast against the Knight, but the Knight auoyded it with his sword, and cast it to the ground, then the Esquire toke his are, and went against the Knight sodainly, on whom he stroke many strokes hard and sore upon his balenct and on his hand, and made him lofe and let fall his are to the ground, and blast vp his vnder thre times, and caught his dagger and would haue smitten him in the face, for to haue slaine him in the field: and then the King cried ho, and so they were departed, and went to their tents, and the King dubbed John Atley Knight for his valiant toney, and the Knight of Aragon offered his harness at Windsor.

John Beauford Earle of Somerset, was made Duke of Somerset: and Lord John Talbot for his approued prowes shewed in France, was created Earle of Shrovetbury, & his sonne Lord Talbot, and then with a company of 3000. men sent againe into Normandy, for defence of that Countrie the 25. of May.

The Citizens of Norwich, rose against the Prior of Christs Church, within the same Citie, and would haue fired the priory, they kept the towne by strength against the Duke of Norfolk, and all his power, wherefore the King sent thither the chiefe Judge John Fortescue, with the Earles of Stafford and of Huntington, who indicted many Citizens, and the Prior also. The Liberties of the Citie were seised into the Kings hand, and Sir John Clifton made captaine there, and many of the Citizens fled ouer the seas and into vni knowne places.

John Holland Earle of Huntington, at Windsor was created Duke of Greffier. John Beawford Duke of Somerset deceased, and was buried at Windsor.

Also this yere deceased Henry Chicheley, when he had sate 29. yeres Archbishop of Canterburie. This Archbishop in his life time, to wit in Anno 1425. began the foundation of a goodly Colledge, and hospitall at Higham Ferris in Northamptonshire, of 8. secular priories fellowes, foure clarkes, and 6. Choristes: And an almshouse, or hospitall for poore people, and obtained many goodly benefites and preferments which he gaue to the said towne, which hospitall for the poore by him founded, his nephew Robert Chicheley, and

William

A combat in  
Smi. field.

An. reg. 21.  
Duke and  
Earle created.

1443.  
Coronation  
at Dorchester.

Colledge and  
hospitall at  
Higham  
Ferris.

William Chicheley Alderman of London, augmented with goodly legacies, for the sustentation of the poore: which Colledge at the suppression was valued by the yere in lands 156. pound 2. shillings, &c.

This archbishop also founded two Colledges in Oxford, the one All soules Colledge (vnto the which King Henry the first gaue lands lately belonging to the priors allians, to wit, 4. priories, Albermar in Dorset, Kummer in Kent, Langenith in South Wales, & Medon Winkham in Northamptonshire, and therefore the said is. in the Charter is called founder: ) The other Barnard Colledge since suppressed by King Henry the 8. now by Sir Thomas White againe redified, and named S. Johns Colledge. He also redified the new Library at Canterburie, and furnished the same with bookes, bought a great part of their steeple, repaired their church, and gaue to the convent and Church many ornaments, and rich iewels, he caused his owne tombe in the same Church to be builded during his life, he was the new builder, or especiall repayer of the faire large parish Church of Cradocow, as appeareth by his armes grauen on the wals, steeple, and porch of the same Church.

John Stafford borne at Hoke in the parish of Abbotsbery in Dorsetshire, doctor of lawes, deane of Saint Martins le Grand in London, after Bishop of Bath and Wells, about the 12. of Henry the 6. made Chancellor of England, was by Eugenius the fourth, made Archbishop of Canterburie.

Also Lewes Luishebrughie Bishop of Ely deceased at his maner of Hatfield Anno. Eli. and was buried at Ely. To whom Thomas Bourchar succeeded, being translated from Worcester.

Whilste England was disquieted, and France by spoile defaced, all Christendome lamented the continuall destruction of so noble a Realme, and the effusion of so much Christian blood: wherefore to agree the two puissant kings, all the Princes of Christendome trauailed so effectually by the Orators and Ambassadors, that a diet was appointed to be kept at the Citie of Towrs in Normaine, where, for the 15. of England appeared William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, doctor Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the Kings priuy seale, Sir Robert Ros, and other: and for the French King were appointed Charles Duke of Orleans, Lewes de Borbon Earle of Arundel, great master of the French Kings household, Pierce de Brele Steward of Boudoune, and Bartram Beannan Lord of Bersegni.

There were also sent Ambassadors from the Emperre, from Spaine, from Denmarke, and from Hungarie, to be mediators betwixt the two Princes, many meetings were about this busines, but no finall concord could be agreed vpon, more then certaine truce for eightene months, which after was prolonged to the yere 1449. but in the meane time, poore, as ye shall heare after ward.

In this treatie William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, imagining with himselfe, that the best way to come to a perfect peace, was to moue some marriage, betwene the French Kings kinnesman, the Lady Margaret daughter to Reyner Duke of Aniole, and King Henry of England: this Duke Reyner named himselfe King of Sicill, Naples, and Ierusalem,

of 4

hauling

An. reg. 23.  
All Christian  
Princes labo-  
r to appease  
the troubles in  
France.

1444

having onely the title of those Realme, without any profit. This marriage was at the first made strange to the Earle, and one thing seemed to be agre at let to it, to wit, because the King of England possessed a great part of the Dutchie of Anjou, and the whole countrie of spaine, which pertained (as they said) to Duke Keyner. The Earle of Suffolke condescended, that the Dutchie of Anjou, and the countie of spaine should be delivered to the Duke, demanding with his daughter for his marriage nothing. And to the intent that of this truce might insue a small concord, a day of enteruiew was appointed betwene the King and the Duke, in a place convenient, betwene Chartres and Roan.

Duke, Mar-  
quess and  
Earle crea-  
ed.

When these things were concluded, the Earle of Suffolke with his company returned into England where he declared what an honorable truce he had taken, through which there was great hope of a small peace, by meanes of the honorable marriage which he had concluded. But though this marriage pleased well the King, and diuers of his counsell, yet other some were against it. For the performance of the conclusions, the French King sent the Earle of Wandosme great master of his house, and the Archbishop of Reims first pere of France, and diuers other into England, where they were honorably entertained, and after that the instruments were sealed, and delivered on both parts, the said Ambassadors returned with great rewards.

When these things were done, the King created Humfrey Earle of Staffor'd Duke of Buckingham: and Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwick, King Henry hartily tendering him for his parents sake, bestowed vpon him the Dukedome of Warwick: vnto whom also the King gaue the Castle of Bissolw, with all the appurtenances, which King Iohn had kept in his hands and his successors after him: he gaue vnto him also the Isles of Gernsey and Jarnsey, Serke, Erme, and Arney with all the pylorics aliens in the same. The Earle of Dorset was created and made Marquess of Dorset, and William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke was created Marquess of Suffolke: also Iohn Talbot Knight, the son of Iohn Earle of Shrewsbury, was created Baron Little for him and his heires males on the 26. of July.

Aug. 23.

In the moneth of November William de la Pole marques of Suffolke with his wife and many honorable persons both men and women richly apparelled, sailed into France, for the conuenance of the Lady Margaret, nominated Queen into the Realme of England. This noble company came to the Citie of Rouen in Touraine, where they were honorably received & entertained, both of the French King and of the Duke Reiner, where the marques of Suffolke as procurator to King Henry, espoused the said Lady in the Church of S. Martin. At which marriage were present the father & mother of the bride, the French King which was uncle to the Duke Reiner, and the French Quene aunt to the Dutches his wife: there were also the Dukes of Orleans, of Calabrie, of Anfon, and of Brytaine. 7. Earles, 21. bishops, besides knights and gentlemen. When the feast, triumphs, bankets, and kisse were ended, the Lady was delivered to the marques of Suffolke, which in great estate carried her through Normandy vnto Diepe, where a while they remained.

1445.

On Candlemas euen in diuers places of England, was great weathering of wind, hayle, snow, rapne, thunders with lightning, whereby the Church of Balbocke in Hertfordshire, the Church of Walden in Essex, and diuers other were forseaken. And the skæpe of Saint Pauls in London, about two of the clocke in the afternone, was set on fire in the midst of the shaft, first on the west side, and then on the south, and the people espying the fire, came to quench it in the skæpe, which they did with vinegar, so farre as they could finde, so that when the spaior, with much people came to Pauls, to haue holpen if need had bene, they returned againe euery man to his home, trusting to God all had bene well, but anone after, betwene eight and nine of the clocke, the fire brast againe out of the skæpe, more feruent then before, and did much harme to the lead and timber thereof: but the spaior and much people came thither, and with vinegar quenched the fire that was feruent, so that no man was perished. The skæpe of Waltham in Essex, and of Kingstone in Surrey, was also fired by the same lightnings. The fire at Pauls being quenched, standart of tre being set vp at Leaden-Hall in Cornhill of London, made fast in the midst of the pavement, and decked with holme and Iule, for disport of Christians to the people of the Citie, it was togne and cast downe with such violence that the stones of the pavement, were cast about in the streete, and into diuers mens houses, to the great terror of the people, that neuer had scene so strange a tempest.

The Lady Margaret being transported from Diepe, landed at Dorchester, from whence she was conveyed by water to Hampton, and rested there in a place called Gods house, from thence she went to Southwike, and was married to the King in the Abbey of Richfield on the 22. of Aprill, and from thence she was honorably conveyed by the Lords & estates of this land, which met with her in sundry places with great retinues of men, in diuers lieries with their haies boyled, and some beaten with Goldsmiths worke in most costly manner, and specially of the Duke of Gloucester, who met her with 500. men in a lierie, and so was conveyed to the Blaque Heath, where she was met by the spaior, Aldermen & Sherifes of the Citie in scarlet, and the crafts of the same, all riding on horseback, in blew gownes with boyled haies, and red hoods, on the 28. of May, who conueied her with her train through Southwike, and so through the Citie of London, then beautified with pageants of diuers histories, and other shewes of welcome, maruellous costly and sumptuous, which I ouerpasse, saue onely to name a few. At the bylode foote toward Southwark, a pageant of peace and plenty, *Ingrédimini, & replere terram,* and certaine verses in English. Noes ship vpon the bridge, *Iam non ultra irasci super terram,* verses in English. At Leaden Hall, madam Grace Chancelor de Dieu, verses in English. At the tunne in Cornhill, of Saint Margaret verses in English. At the great conduit in Cheape of the fine wife and fine foolish virgins, verses in English. At the crosse in Cheape of the beauenly Ierusalem, verses. At Pauls gate, of the generall resurrection and iudgement, with verses accordingly, all made by Iohn Lydgare.

On the 30. of May she was solemnly crowned at Westminster. This woman

Ensigne of  
garter crown'd

Woman excelled all other, as well in beauty and favour, as in wit and politie, and was of stomacke and courage not inferior to any: her badge was the daisie flower. This marriage seemed to many both vnsortunate, and vnsprofitable to the Realme of England, and that for diuers causes: first the king had with her no dowry, and for the fetching of her, and other charges about her, the Marques of Suffolke demyanded a whole sixteenth in open Parliament: and also there was deliuered for her the Dutchie of Anion, the Cite of Aunis, and the county of Maine. Furthermore, the Earle of Arundel took such displeasure with the king of England for the marriage, that he became bitter enemy to the Realme of England, and was the chiefe cause that the Englishmen were expelled out of the Dutchie of Aquitaine.

An. reg. 24.  
Parliament.  
1446.

A Parliament was summoned, in the which it was concluded, that by god forceight Normandy might be furnished for defence before the ende of the trefce, that the French king should take no aduantage through want of time: provision: hereupon money was granted, and an army leuied, the Duke of Somerset appointed to be Regent of Normandy, and the Duke of Poike discharged of that office.

The Marquesse of Suffolke the second of June, in the first session of this Parliament, before the Lordes spirituall and tempozall in the high house assembled, eloquently declared his paine and diligence sustained in his legacy, as well for the concluding an abstinence of warre, as in making of the marriage, opening also to them, that the said trefce expired the first of Aprill next coming, except a final peace, or a further trefce were concluded in the mean season: and therefore he aduised them to forsee and provide things necessary for the warres, least happily the French perceiving them vnprepared, would take the aduantage, and agree neither to peace nor amitie. Like wise on the next morrow, he descended into the common house, accompanied with certaine Lordes, and there declared the same matter to the knights, and burgesses, praying the commons for his discharge, that as well all his doings and proceedings in the kings affaires, beyond the sea, as also his aduertisements and counsaile opened to the Lordes and commons now together assembled, might be by the king and them enacted, and enrolled in the recordes of the Parliament. Whereupon on the next morrow William Burley then speaker, and then company of the lower house, repaired to the kings presence then sitting amongst the Lordes, and there humbly required that the request of the Marquesse might be granted, and so likewise the Lordes made the like petition, kneeling on their knees, and the king condescended to their desires, and so the whole matter was enacted and recorded for his acquittall.

In the Tower  
Duke of Clarence  
was beheaded.

Henry Beauchampe Duke of Warwicke, chiefe Earle of England, Lord Spencer and Butgauenie, king of the yle of Wight, and Gernsey and Iarnsey, and Lord of the Castell of Bristow, married Cicely daughter to Richard Nevill Earle of Salisbury, and had issue a daughter named Anne, who died at the age of five yeres, he at the age of 22. yeres died in the Castell of Banley, and was buried at Theowbury.

John

John David appeached his master William Catur, an armorer dwelling in S. Dunstons parish in Fleetstreet, of treason, and a day being assigned them to fight in Smithfield, the master being welbeloued, was so cherished by his friends, and pled so with iurors, that being therewith overcome, was also vnbekely slaine by his seruant: but that false seruant (for he falsely accused his master) liued not long unpunished, for he was after hanged at Tyborne for felony: let such false accusers note this example, and loke for no better ende, without speedie repentance: my selfe haue had the like seruant, that likewise accused me of many articles, he liued yet, but hath hardly escaped hanging since, God make him penitent.

Thomas first Thomas Broke of Kallmaine appeached sir James Butler Earle of Desmond of treasons, which had a day assigned to fight in Smithfield, the lists were made, and the field prepared, but when it came to the point, the king commanded they should not fight, and toke the quarrell into his hands, which was done at the instance of certaine preachers and doctors of London, as master Gilbert Worthington, parson of S. Andrewes in Holborne and other.

Pope Eugenius sent a golden Rose to the king of England, expressing the property and application of the same, with the ceremony that is pærely bled on Palme Sunday, touching the same Rose, exhorting the king against the Turkes. Which Rose Lodouicus Cordona doctor of diuinitie did present to the king in S. Stephens chappell at Westminster vpon Saint Andrewes day, in presence of the Dukes of Poike and Gloucester, Cardinal Kempe Archbishop of York, & John Stafford Archbishop of Canterbury Chancellor of England.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Saint Edmondsburie, and remained there till Easter. In which meane space, to wit on the 10. of february began a Parliament at S. Edmondsburie in Suffolke, at which time for feare of the Duke of Gloucester, all the waies about the same town were kept with armed men both day and night, so that many died with colde and waking. Humfrey Duke of Gloucester being at the Castell of the Wics in Wilshire, came from thence to the Parliament, and was lodged in the hospitall, where shortly after he was arrested by John Lord Beaumont high Constable, the Duke of Buckingham, the Duke of Somerset & other, who appointed certaine of the kings household to wait vpon him: but on the 24. day he died for sorrow, as some said, that he might not come to his answer: his body was shewed to the lordes & commons, and seemed to die of a palsy, or of an impostume: he was honorably buried at S. Albons: 32. of this principall seruants were arrested & sent to diuers prisons, & five of them were arraigned at London, and condemned, whose names were sir Roger Chamberlain knight, Richard Middleton, Thomas Herbert, Arthur Turley Esquires, & Richard Nedam gentleman, which were all fine drawn from the Tower of London to Tyborne, & there hanged, letten down quicke, stript naked, marked with a knife for to be quattered, and then a charter shewed for their liues by the Duke of Suffolke: but the peaman of the crostone had their linelode, & the hangman had their cloths, or wearing apparell. The pardon for liues was obtained through the earnest sute & labour of master Gilbert Worthington, then parson of S. Andrewes

A combat in  
Smithfield.  
A false accuser  
of his master,  
was hanged.

An. reg. 25.

Record, Becket.  
Can.

Parliament at  
Burie.  
1447.

The Duke of  
Gloucester ar-  
rested and loose  
after died.

Five men han-  
ged, and after  
pardoned.

Record, 26. of  
H. 6.

Thomas Will  
his pardon.

Record 16. of  
H. 6.  
Barons crea-  
ted.  
Record, Patin.

Holland Duke  
of Excester, de-  
ceased.  
Baron of S.  
Andrewes in  
Wolborne.  
Ann. reg. 26.  
Baron of  
Aylsholmes in  
Thamys street.

1448.  
John de la  
Poze marquis  
of Suffolke  
made Duke of  
Suffolke.

In Wolborn, a doctor of Divinity, a famous man, and a great preacher in those daies. Thomas Wild of Greenwich Esquire serving the said Duke, being amongst other pardoned, the course of his pardon in the patent runneth to this effect, for being amongst many other traitors against the king with Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, they went about and practised to deliver Elianor, late wife to the Duke from out of prison, and gathered a great power, and number of men, to come to the Parliament at Burgh, and there to have practised the destruction of the king, &c. James Fines knight was created Baron of Say and Sele, John Beauchampe Baron of Powicke, and Richard Woodville Baron, and Lord Rivers at Burgh. Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of the title of S. Eusebij, after he had late Bishop 43. yeres, deceased on the 11. of April, he founded an house of almes (adjoining to the hospitall of S. Croffe by Winchester) with a master, 2. chapleins, 35. poor men, and 3. women, & gave lands thereto, at that time valued 158. pound, 13. shillings, 4. pence, as appeareth by the patten, more he gave the, the hospitall of S. John de Fordingebidge: William Wamfler prouost of Eaton, succeeded in that Bishopricke.

The 5. of August deceased John Holland Duke of Excester, and was buried in the hospitall of Saint Katherine nigh to the Tower of London. About the same time deceased the fozenamed Doctor Gilbert Worthington, parson of Saint Andrewes in Wolborne, a most famous preacher, and greatly noted for his good life. Also about the same time, to wit the 24. of October deceased William Lichfield doctor of Divinity, parson of Allhalowes the Spoke in Thamys street, the which was counted a good and holy man, he made in his daies 3083 sermons, as appeared and was found in his booke of his owne hand writing, besides many booke that he compiled of Divinitie yet extant, especially one in a fine verse intituled, The complaint of God to man, and Answer of the penitent to God, &c.

In this 26. yere of the raigne of this King, I finde no great matter worth the recitall, but that the Marquesse of Suffolke, by great favour of the King and Quene, was created Duke of Suffolke, which dignitie he long enjoyed not: for Richard Duke of Yorke being greatly alied by his wife, to the chiefest yeres and potentates of the Realme, once and besides his owne progenie, perceiuing the King to be a ruler, and not to rule, but the whole burthen of the Realme to rest in the ordinaunce of the Quene, & the Duke of Suffolke, began secretly to allure his friends of the Nobilitie, and privately declared unto them his title to the Crowne, and likewise did he to certaine governours of Cities and Townes, which privately attempt was so politihely handled and secretly kept, that his prouision was ready before his purpose was opened.

John Sturton was made Baron of Starcton.

After the death of Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, the affaires in Fraunce, were neither well looked to, nor the governours of the countrey well aduised, for an English Capitaine, called Sir Frances, surnamed de Aragonys, took a towne named Fogars, upon the borders of Normandie belonging to the Duke of Bypitaine. For the which he complained him to the French

French King, and he at the said Dukes request sent unto the King of England, to alke restitution of the harme. The which messengers were answered of the Kings Counsell, that the dede was right displeasing unto the King, and that Sir Frances Aragon had enterprised the seate of his owne presumption. Whereupon it followed shortly after, that the French by like policie took the Towne and Castell of Montallarche, and after that many other, so that the taking of the foresaid Towne of Foglars by the Englishmen, was the occasion by the which the French after gat all Normandie.

This yere the Frenchmen got many Townes in Normandie out of the possession of the Englishmen. Also the Citie of Roane was yielded to the French, with condition that the Capitaines and garrisons might depart with armour and goods, and not long after was rendered (with the like condition as of Roane) the townes of Harflewre, and Honnlewre. A knight of Fraunce called Sir Lewes de Breyll, challenged an Esquire of England named Ralph Chalons of certaine seats of warres, the which to proue, a day to them was giuen to mete at a Towne in Fraunce named Gaunce, where the French knight at that day was present: but Chalons ranne the French knight through the bodie with his speare, whereof the said Lewes died.

About the same time also, began a new rebellion in Ireland, but Richard Duke of Yorke being sent thither to appease the same, so aduaged the furie of the wilde and savage people there, that he won such fauour amongst them, as could neuer be separated from him and his linage.

John Aiconant Beaumont, was made Chamberlaine of England, Henry de Bromefield Lord Velsy, William Bourcher knight, Lord Bonuile, William Beauchampe Lord S. Amonde, Thomas Percy Lord Egremonde, these were created the 6. of Nouember.

The French king assembled an army royall, and coming before Came, besieged it on all sides, and assaulted the walles, but the Duke of Somerset, and the other Capitaines within the towne, manfully withstood their enemies, beating backe the assailants. The French king with his great ordinaunce shot daily at the wals, and did some hurt, but to the Castell which stood on a rock, and in it a dungeon, vnable to be beaten down, he did no harm at all. Though the Duke of Somerset were the kings lieutenant, yet Sir Dauid Hall, as Capitane of this towne for his master the Duke of Yorke, owner thereof, took by him the chiefe charge, Sir Robert Vere was Capitaine of the Castell, and Sir Henry Radford, Capitaine of the dungeon: daily the shot was great, but more terrible then hurtfull, saving that one day, a stone shot into the towne, fell between the Dutches of Somerset and her children, which being amazed with this chance, besought her husband kneeling on her knees, to haue mercy and compassion of his small infants, that they might be deliuered out of the towne in safetie. The Duke moved with the sorrow of his wife, and loue of his children, rendered the towne, with condition to depart with all their goods. Sir Dauid Hall, with others other departed to Cherbrough, and from thence

An. reg. 27.

1449.  
Roan yielded  
to the French.

An. reg. 28.

Richard Duke  
of Yorke was  
fauior of the  
Irish.

Barons crea-  
ted.

Came deliuered  
to the French.



thence sailed into Ireland, to the Duke of Pojke, making relation to him of all these doings, which thing kindled so great a rancoꝝ in the Dukes heart, that he neuer left persecuting the Duke of Somerset, till he had brought him to his fatall confusion. After the obtaining of this strong towne of Cane, the Earle of Cleremont, besieged, the Citie of Bilsbur, whereof was Captaine Mathew Gowgh, with 300. Englishmen, who in the ende deliuered the towne vpon condition to depart. Then was Salafie besieged, whereof were Captaines, for the Earle of Shrewsbury that was owner, Andrew Trolope, and Thomas Cotton Esquires, which agreed to deliuer it on conditions. The towne of Donfront was likewise rendered, so that there rested now, onely English, the towne of Chirburgh, whereof was Captaine one Thomas Gouille, which as long as victuals serued, defended the towne right manfully, but in the ende, vpon composition yelded the towne, & went to Carleis, where the Duke of Somerset, and many other Englishmen then sojourned. Thus was Poymandy lost cleerly out of the Englishmens hands, after it had continued in their possession the space of 30. yeres, by the conquest of Henry the fift. In which Duchie were an 100. strong townes and fortresses, to be kept, and holden, besides them that were destroyed by the warres, and in the same is one Archbishopssee, and six Bishopssees. Whilst the French made these conquests in the Duchy of Poymandy the common people make exclamations against the Duke of Suffolke, affirming him to be the onely cause of the deliuey of Anlow, and Mayne, the chiefe procurer of the Duke of Gloucesters death, the loss of Poymandy, &c. Whereupon the Duene doubting not onely the Dukes destruction, but also her own confusion, caused the Parliament begunne at Westminster, after Christmas adourned to the blacke Friars in London, then to be adourned to Leicester, thinking there to haue suppressed the malice conceiued against the Duke and her, at which place fewe of the Nobilitie would appeare. Where it was againe adourned to Westminster, where was a full appearance. In the which session the commons of the neather-house put vp to the King and the Lords many articles of treason, nuspition, and euill demeanour against the Duke of Suffolke, as pe may read in Hall. The Duene therfore, doubting some commotion to arise, caused the said Duke to be committed to the Tower, where he remained not past a moneth, but was restored to the kings fauour. This doing so much displeased the people, that in sundrie places of the Realme, they assembled together in great companies, and chose to them a Captain, but were overcome as shall be shewed.

The ninth of January, Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the kings priue seale, through the procurement of Richard Duke of Pojke, was by William Raine at Portsmouth.

The ninth of February Thomas Thany, otherwise called Blew beard a fuller, was taken besides Canterbury, for rayling of a rebellion, who was hanged and quartered.

After this little rage allwaged, about the Duenes of Calcer, the Parliament was adioined to Leicester, whither came the King & Duene in great estate,

Poymandy lost from the English.

Parliament adioined.

1450.  
Bishop of Chichester murdered.  
Blew beard hanged.

estate, and with them the Duke of Suffolke, as chiefe counsellor, where the commons of the lower house brought the King, that such persons as assisted to the release of Anlow, and deliuerance of Mayne, might be duely punished. And to be priue to that fact they accused as principall, the Duke of Suffolke, with John Bishop of Salisbury, sir James Fines Lord Say, Daniel Truillian, and other whom they indicted of treason, and many other matters touching the king and his commons, as it appeareth by the verbid of thre inquestes, to the number of a thirtie persons, wherupon the king to appease the commons, first sequestred the Lord Say, being Treasurer of England, and other from their offices, and romes, and after banished William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, for sine yeres, who taking ship, at Ipswich in Suffolke, on the third day of May, sailed towards France, but was encountered with a ship of warre, appertaining to the Duke of Ercester, Constable of the Tower of London, called the Nicholas of the Tower. The Captaine of which barke, with small fight entered into the Dukes ship, and perceling his person present, brought him to Douer Roade, and there on the side of a cocke boate, caused his head to be stricken off, and left his bodie with the head lying there on the sandes, which corpes being there found, by a chaplaine of his, was conueyed to Tellingfield colledge in Suffolke, and there buried faith Hall: but I otherwise finde him to be buried in the Charterhouse of Kingstene vpon Hul.

Wille de la Pole Duke of Suffolke banished and murdered.

This William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, and Alice his wife, daughter to Thomas Chawcer, sonne to Geoffrey Chawcer the famous Poet, translated and increased the Manors place of Eweline in Dorsetshire: they builded a new the parish Church of Eweline, a comely peece of woꝝke standing on an hill: and also hard adioyning to the west ende of Eweline parish Church, they founded a pyetic hospitall or almes house for two priests chaffe of bodis and deuout in soule, and thirtene poze men to dwell and be sustayned in sozuer, one of the priests to be master of the almes house and almes people, them to instruct as well by his sound doctrine, as god life, the other priest a skole-master, freely to teach the chyliden of the tenants of the said Lordshippe of Eweline and other Lordships pertaining to the said almes house their Grammar, and either of those two priests to haue tenne pound the yere. One of the thirtene poze men to be called ministr, to present the faultes of the other to the master, and to ring their common bel to seruice, and to haue fiftene pence the weeke, the other twelue poze men to haue euery of them fourtene pence the weeke. This house hath to name Gods house, or the house of almes, vnto the which he gaue thre Manors, Kanruge in Hampshire, Conoche in Wiltshire, and Spethe in Buckinghamshire, with their appertenances, all which at the suppression was valued but 20. pound the yere, such large penworth was then made by such as ment to purchase: they also founded the hospitall of Donnington.

Gods house as now Eweline in Dorsetshire

Libers fundacion.

Hospital of Donnington castle.

The death of the Duke of Suffolke brought not the Realme in quiet, soz those that fauoured the Duke of Pojke, and wished the crowne vpon his head procured a commotion in Bent in this manner.



In the moneth of May, the commons of Kent in great numbers assembled, hauing to their Captaine Jacke Cade, who named himselfe Mortimer, cosen to the Duke of York, or as hee was named of some Johnmondall: this Captaine brought a great number of people to the Blackheath, and there kept the field more then a moneth, pilling the countrey about, to whom the Citie of London at that time was full fauourable. And the said Captaine (as I find recorde) sent for such Citizens of London as it pleased him to commaund to repaie unto him, vnder letters of safe conduct, as followeth.

*The safegard and signe manuell of the Captaine of Kent, sent to  
Thomas Cocke draper of London, by the Captaine  
of the great assemble in Kent.*

**B**y this our writing ensealed, we grant and will permit truly, that Thomas Cocke of London draper, shall come in god suretie and in safegard to our presence, without any hurt of his person, and so auaile from vs againe at his pleasure, with all other persons assigned at his denomination with him comming in like wise.

*The commaundement by the Captaine of Kent, sent vnto  
Thomas Cocke abovesaid.*

**F**or your instruction, first ye shall charge all Lumbarbs and strangers, being merchants, Rhenewes, Venetians, Florentines, and other, this day to draw them together, and to ordaine for vs the Captaine 12. harnesses, complete of the best fashion, 24. bygandines, 12. battaileares, 12. glaues, six bowes with saddle and byde completely harnessed, and 1000. markes of readie money: and if this our demand be not obserued and done, we shall haue the heabs of as many as we can get of them.

What answer to this demand was returned I finde not, but like it is the same was granted and performed, for I finde not the said Captaine and Kentishmen, at their being in the Citie, to haue hurt any stranger.

In the meane time the king sent notable men to the said Captaine and his fellowship, to know their purpose and the cause of their insurrection: vnto whom the Captaine answered, that he and his company were assembled there to redresse and reforme the wrongs that were done in the Realme, and to withstand the malice of them that were destroyers of the common-weale, and to amend the defaultes of them that were chiefe counsellors to the king, and shewed vnto them the Articles of complaints touching the misgouernment of the Realme, wherein was nothing containyd but seemed reasonable, whereof a copie was sent to the Parliament holden that time at Westminster, with also one other bill of requestes by them made, of things to be reformed, and to haue answer therof againe, but he had none. The bill of Articles they intituled

*The*

*The complaint of the commons of Kent, and causes of the  
assembly on the Blackheath.*

1 Inprimis, it is openly noyed, that Kent should be distressed with a royall power, and made a wilde foreyst, for the death of the Duke of Suffolke, of which the commons of Kent thereof were neuer guiltie.

2 Item, the king is tirred to liue onely on his commons, and other men to haue the reuenues of the crowne, the which hath caused pouerty in his exchequere, and great payments of the people, now late to the king granted in his Parliament.

3 Item, that the Lords of his royall bloud haue put from his daily presence, and other meane persons of lower nature exalted and made chiefe of his pryuy counsell, the which stoppeth matters of wrongs done in the realme from his excellent audience, and may not be redressed as law wil, but if by lyes and gifts be messengers to the hands of the said counsell.

4 Item, the people of his Realme be not paid of debts owing for stufte and purueiance taken to the vse of the kings household, in vndoing of the said people, and the poore commons of this Realme.

5 Item, the kings meniall seruants of household, and other persons, asked daily goods and landes, of impeached or indited of treason, the which the king graunteth anon, ere they so endaugered be conuict. The which causeth the receders thereof to enforce labours and meanes applied to the death of such people, so appeached or indited, by subtile meanes, for couetise of the said grants: and the people so impeached or indited, though it be vnture, may not be committed to the lawe for their delineraunce, but helde still in prison, to their uttermost vndoing and destruction, for couetise of goods.

6 Item, though diuers of the poore people and commons of the Realme, haue neuer so great right, truth and perfit title to their land, yet by vnture claime of entefement made vnto diuers states, gentles, and the kings meniall seruants in maintenances against the right, the true owners dare not hold claime, nor pursue their right.

7 Item, it is noyed by common voices, that the kings landes in France haue ben aliened and put away from the crowne, and his Lords and people there distressed with vnture meanes of treason, of which it is desired, enquiries through all the Realme to be made how and by whom, and if such traitors may be found guiltie, them to haue execution of law, without any pardon, in example of other.

8 Item, collectors of the 15. peny in Kent be greatly bered and hurt in paying great summes of money, in the Exchequer to sue out a writt called Quorum nomina for allowance of the Barons of the poys, which now is desired, that hereafter in the lien of the collectors, the Barons aforesaid may sue it out for their ease at their owne cosses.

9 Item, the Sherifes, and undersherifes, let to ferme their offices and bayliwikes

*Et*

bayliffes, taking great suretie therfore, the which causeth extortions done by them and by their bailiffes to the people.

10 Item, simple and poore people that be not hunting be greatly oppressed by indiments fained and done by the said sherifes, undersherifes, bayliffes, and other of their assent, to cause their increase for paying of their said forme.

11 Item, they retorne in names of Enquestes in writing into diuers Courtes of the kings not summoned nor warned, where through the people daily lose great summes of money, well nie to the uttermost of their undoing: and make leule of amerements called the Grene ware, more in summes of money than can be found due of record in the kings booke.

12 Item, the ministers of the court of Dover in Kent bere and arrest diuers people through all the shire out of Castell ward passing their bands and liberty used of olde time, by diuers subtile and untrue meanes and actions falsely fained, taking great fee at their last in great hurt of the people on all the shire of Kent.

13 Item, the people of the said shire of Kent, may not have their free election in the chosing knights of the shire, but letters ben sent from diuers estates to the great rulers of all the countrie, the which unbyceth their tenants and other people by force to chole other persons than the common will is.

14 Item, whereas knights of the shire shold chole the kings collectors indifferently without any bybe taking, they haue sent now late to diuers persons, notifying them to be collectors, whereupon gifts and bybes be taken, and so the collectors office is bought and solde extortionously at the knights lust.

15 Item, the people be sore bered in coffes and labour, called to the Sessions of peace in the said shire, appearing from the farthest and uttermost parts of the West unto the East, the which causeth to some men five daies journey, whereupon they desire the said appearance to be diuided into two parts, the which one part to appeare in one place, another part in another place, in relieving of the grievance and intolerable labours and berations of the said people.

*The requests by the Captaine of the great assembly in Kent.*

**I**Nprimis, desireth the Captaine of the commons, the welfare of our soueraigne Lord the King, and all his true Lords spirituall and temporall, by sitting of our said soueraigne Lord, and of all the true Lords of his counsell, to take in all his demaines, that he may raigne like a King royall, according as he is bozne our true Christen king anointed, and who so will say the contrary, we all will lue and die in the quarrell as his true liege men.

2 Item, desireth the said Captaine, that he will auoid all the falsse progeny

and

and assinite of the Duke of Suffolke, the which bene openly knowne, and they to be punished after the custome and lawe of this land, and to take about his noble person the true Lords of his royall blood of this his Realme, that is to say, the high and mightie Prince the Duke of Yorke, late exiled from our said soueraigne Lords presence (by the motion and stirring of the traitorous and falsse disposed the Duke of Suffolke and his assinite) and the mightie Princes and Dukes of Excester, Buckingham, and Suffolke, and all the Barons and Barons of this land: and then shall be the richest King Christen.

3 Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons punishment vpon the falsse traitors, the which contrived and imagined the death of the high and mightie excellent Prince the Duke of Glocester, the which is too much to rehearse, the which duke was proclaimed as traitor. Vpon the which quarrell, we purpose all to lue and die vpon that it is falsse.

4 Item, the Duke of Excester, our holy father the Cardinal, the noble Prince Duke of Warwicke, and also the Realme of France, the Dutchy of Flandrandy, Gascoigne, and Calen, Antoy and Spaine, were deliuered and lost, by the meanes of the said traitors, and our true Lords, knights, and Esquires, and many a good yeoman lost and solde ere they went, the which is great pite to heare, of the great and grievous losse to our soueraigne Lord and his Realme.

5 Item, desireth the said Captaine and commons, that all the extortions used daily among the common people, might be laid downe, that is to say, the grene Ware the which is falsely used, to the perpetuall destruction of the kings true commons of Kent. Also the kings Bench, the which is too greuous to the shire of Kent without prouision of our soueraigne Lord and his true Counsell. And also in taking of wheat and other graines, beefe, mutton, and all other victuall, the which is impossible to the said commons, without the bybe prouision of our said soueraigne Lord, and his true Counsell, they may no longer beare it. And also vnto the statute of labourers, and the great extortions, the which is to say, the falsse traitors, Sleg, Crowmer, lile, and Robert Est.

These Bills when the Counsell had well perused, they did not onely disallow and condemne them and the authors, as proud and presumptuous, but also perswaded the King rather to suppress those rebels by force, than by false promises. Whereupon the king remoued from Westminster vnto Chenevich, from whence he would haue sent certain Lords with a power to haue distressed the Kentishmen, but the men said to their Lords they would not fight against them that labour to amende the Commonweale: whereupon the Lords were dynted to leaue their purpose. And because the Kentishmen cried out against the Lord Say the Kings Chamberlaine, he was by the King committed to the Tower of London. When went the King againe to London, and within two daies after went against the Kentishmen with fiftene thousand men well prepared for the warre, but the falsse Kentishmen fledde the night before his coming into the good countie

At 2

next

King Henry  
went against  
the Kentish-  
men with a  
great power.

neere unto Sennocke, whereupon the king returned againe to London, and sent sir Humfrey Stafford knight, with William Stafford Esquire his kinsman saith Pigot, and other Gentlemen, to follow the Kentishmen, who finding them at Sennocke, set vpon the rebels, and fought with them a long time, but in the end both the Staffords were slaine, with many other of their people. When Iacke Cade had thus ouerrunne the Staffords, he forthwith apparelled himselfe with the knights apparel, and after he had refreshed his people, he returned to the Blacke heath, and there pight againe his field, and lay there from the 29. of Iune, till the first day of Iuly, in which season came vnto him the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Duke of Buckingham, with whom they had a long communication, and found him right discreet in his answers. Whobeyt they could not cause him to submit himselfe and lay downe his people.

King Henry  
power ouer-  
come.

King Henry  
went to Wil-  
lingworth.

Captaine of  
Kent and his  
Kentishmen  
entred the Ci-  
ty of London.

Rob. Fabian.  
Rebels of K<sup>t</sup>  
freight their  
field on the  
25. of Iune.

In the meane while, the King and Quene hearing of the increasing of his rebels, and also the Lords fearing their owne seruants, lest they would take the Captaines part, removed from London to Killingworth, leaving the Citie without ayde, except onely the Lord Scales, which was left to keepe the Tower, and with him a manly and warly man named Matthew Gough. When the Captaine of Kent thus hovering at Blacke heath, to bring himselfe the more in fame, that he kept good iustice, beheaded there a peise Captaine of his named Paris, forasmuch as he had offended against such ordinances as he had established in his host: and hearing that the King and his Lords were thus departed, drew him neere vnto the Citie, so that vpon the first of Iuly, he entred the Borough of Southwarke, then being Whensday, and lodged him there at the Hart, so he might not be suffered to enter the Citie.

And vpon the same day, the commons of Essex in great number pight them a field vpon the plaine of Spiles end.

And vpon the second day of the said moneth, the Palatour called a common counsell at the Guildhall, to puruey for the withstanding of these rebellies, in which assembly were diuers men of sundry opinions, so that some thought good that the said rebelles should be receiued into the Citie, and some other wise. Among the which Robert Horne Stockfishmonger then being an Alderman, spake for against them that would haue them enter. For the which, the commons were so moued against him, that they ceased not till they had him committed to ward. And the same afternoon about fixe of the clocke, the Captaine with his people entred by the bridge, and cut the ropes of the drawne bridge asunder with his sword. When he was passed into the Citie, he made in sundry places thereof Proclamations in the Kings name, that no man in paine of death should robbe or take any thing without paying therfor. By reason whereof, he wanne the hearts of the commons, but all was done to beguile him. After as he came by London Stone, he strake it with his sword, and saide: Now is Mortimer Lord of this Citie, and then shewing his minde to the Palatour for the ordering of his people, he returned into Southwarke, and there abode

as he before had done, his people comming and going at lawfull houses when they would.

On the morrow the third of Iuly, the said Captaine againe entred the Citie, & caused the Lord Say to be set from the Tower to the Guildhall, where he was arraigned before the Palatour and other the Kings Iustices, and Robert Horne Alderman before named should haue bene likewise arraigned, but that his wife and other friends for five hundred markes gat him redreied to his liberty. The Lord Say desiring he might be tried by his peers, was by the rebels forceably taken from the officers, and brought to the standard in Cheape, where they strake off his head, pight it on a pole, and bare it before them, and his body they caused to be drawne naked at a horse taile vpon the pavement from Cheape into Southwarke to the saide Captaines inn.

Also a squire called Crowmer that was then Sherriffe of Kent, that had wedded the said Lord Saies daughter, by commandement of the Captaine was brought out of the flete, that was committed thither for certaine extortion that he had done in his office, and led to Spile end without London, and there without any iudgement his head was smit off, and the Lord Saies head and his were born vpon two long poles vnto London bridge, and there set by, and the Lord Saies body was quartered.

The same day the Captaine went vnto the house of Philip Malpas draper, and Alderman, and robbed and spoiled his house, taking from thence great substance, and returned into Southwarke. On the next morrow he againe entred the Citie, and dined that day in the parish of Saint Margaret Patens at one Gherdis house, and when he had dined, like an vncourteous guest he robbed him, as the day before he had Malpas. For which two robberies, although the poore people drew to him and were partners in the spoyle, yet the honest and wealthy commoners call in their mindes the sequelle of this matter, and feared least they should be dealt with in like manner. When the Palatour and Aldermen with assistance of the worshipfull commoners in safeguard of themselves and of the citie, toke their counsel how they might draw the Captaine and his adherents from the citie, for the performance whereof, the Palatour sent vnto the Lord Scales, and Matthew Gough, then hauing the Tower in their government, requiring their ayde and assistance, which they promised.

On the fifth of Iuly, the Captaine being in Southwarke, caused a man to be beheaded there, and that day entred not the Citie. When night was come, the Palatour and the Citizens, with Matthew Gough kept the passage of the bridge, and defended the Kentishmen which made great force to reenter the Citie. When the Captaine seeing this bickering, went to barnes, & assembled his people, and set so fiercely vpon the Citizens, he drew them backe from the houses in Southwarke, or bridge side, vnto the drawbridge, in defending whereof, many a man was drowned and slaine. Among the which was Iohn Sutton Alderman, Matthew Gough a Squire of Wales, and Roger Holland Citizen. This skirmish continued all night till nine of the clocke

on the moztow, so that sometime the Citizens had the better, and sometimes the other, but ever they kept them upon the brydge, so that the Citizens neuer passed much the bulwarke at the brydge foote, nor the Kentishmen no farther than the draw brydge. Thus continuing the cruell fight to the destruction of much people on both sides, lastly, after the Kentishmen were put to the wast, a truce was agreed for certaine houres, during which truce, the Archbishop of Canterbury, then Chancelloz of England, sent a general pardon to the Captaine for himselfe, & an another for his people, by reason whereof, he and his company went downe them by little and little, and their Captaine put all his pillage and goods that he had robbed, into a barge, and sent it to Rochester by water, and himselfe went by land, and would haue entred into the Castell of Quinborough with a few men that were left about him: but he was there let of his purpose: wherefoze he fled into the wood country beside Ewes in Suffe. The Captaine and his people being thus departed, not long after proclamations were made in diuers places of Kent, Suffe, and Seutchery, that who might take the foresaid Captaine al ue or dead, should haue a thousand markes for his traueil.

*The Copy of the Writ and Proclamation by the King, for the taking of the said Cade and his fellowes.*

**H**ENRICUS Dei gratia Rex Anglie & Francie, & Dominus Hibernie, vniuersis & singulis custodiibus, &c.

For as much as one Iohn Cade bozne in Ireland, which calleth himselfe Iohn Mortimer, and in some wytting calleth himselfe Captaine of Kent, the which Iohn Cade the last yere tofoze his dwelling in Suffe with a Knight, called Sir Thomas Dagre, sue there a woman with child, and for that cause toke the greth of the Church, and after for that cause forswore the Kings land: the which Iohn Cade also after this, was twome to the French part, and dwelled with them, which hath now of late time, (to the intent to enrich himselfe by robbing and dispoysing of the kings lerge men, as it is now openly knowne, to bying himselfe to great and high estate) falsely and vntruly decciued many of the Kings people, and vnder colour of holy and good intents, made them to assemble with him against the kings regaltie and his lawes, and nought setting by the kings Grace and pardons granted, not onely to him, but all the kings subiects, the which by his deceit haue assembled with him, the which he with great reuerence receiued on Sunday last passed, and so did all that were assembled with him: notwithstanding all this, he labourerth now of new to assemble the kings people againe, and to that intent beareth them on hand, that the kings letters of pardon graunted to him and them, be not available nor of none effect without authoritie of Parliament: whereas the contrary is true, as it is openly knowne by that, that the king grants from time to time his Charters of pardon to such as him list, of all manner of crimes and offences both generall and speciall.

The king therefore willeth and commaundeth, that none of his subiects

give faith nor credence to the said false informations of the said false traitors, nor accompany with him in any wise, nor comfort, nor sustaine him nor his with viual, nor with any other things. But will whosoever of the kings subiects may take him, shall take him, and that whosoever taketh him, and byingeth him quicke or dead, to the king or his counsell, shall haue a thousand markes for his labour truly paid him without faile or delay by the provision of the kings counsell. And whosoever taketh any of those that from this day forth accompany with him, shall haue five marke for his reward, truly to be paid in manner and forme abouesaid.

And ouer this, commaunding all Constables, Minsters, and Officers of the said Shire, that none of them on paine of death take vpon them to execute any commaundement by word or wytting sent or made vnto them by the said Cade, calling himselfe Mortimer and Captaine, be it to reare any people, or to any other intent: but to arrest and make to be arrested such as take vpon them to bying any such commaundement by wytting or by word. *Et hoc nullatenus omittatis, Teste me ipso apud Westminister, x. die Iulij, anno regni. 28.*

After which proclamation thus published, a gentleman of Kent named Alexander Eden awaited so his time, that he toke the said Cade in a garden in Suffe. And there he was slaine at Hothfield, and brought to London in a cart, and there quartered, his head set on London brydge, and his quarters sent to diuers places in Kent.

This yere the commons also in diuers parts of England, as in Suffe, Wiltshire, and other places, did much harme to many persons, among the which, on the 29. of June, William Alcock Bishop of Salisbury (after he had said masse at Edington) was by his owne tenants drowne from the altar, in his Albe with his stole about his necke, to the top of an hill, and there by them shamefully murthered: for they cleaued his head as he kneeled on his knees in his prayers, and after spoiled to the naked skin, and then they renting his bloody shirt, toke euery man a peece, and made boast of their wickednesse: and the day before his chariot was robbed of his treasury to the value of ten thousand markes.

Alexander Eden Esquire, Sherife of Kent, for his good seruice against the late rebels, is made Custos or keeper of the castle at Rochester.

In the moneth of September, Treham that was speaker in the last Parliament, was beheaded in Southamptonshire.

After Michaelmas, Richard Duke of Yorke comming out of Ireland, toke Iohn Sutton Baron of Dudley, and Reginald Abbot of Saint Peters at Gloucester, and shortly after he toke Iohn Gargrave keeper of the Kings Bench at London, and sent them to the castle of Abolton.

The first of Nouember began a Parliament at Westminster, and the first of December the Duke of Somerset which was newly come out of France, was put vnder arrest, and his goods by the commons was slowly despoiled and bozne away from the Blackfriars. After which riot, on the next moztow, proclamation was made through the citie by the Duke of Yorke,

and the Duke of Norfolk, that no man should spoyle or rob, upon paine of death: and the same day at the Standard in Cheape was a man beheaded for doing contrary to the proclamation.

King Henry rode into Kent with an army.

The fourth of December, the King and his Lords rode through the Citie of London, with a great armie of men well appointed, and divided into thre battels. Also the Citizens armed stood in the streets of the Citie, where through they passed, which altogether made the greatest shew of armed men that had bene scene in London within the memory of any man then liuing.

1451.  
Rebels in Kent and Sussex executed.

The 18. of January, the King with certaine Lords, and his Iustices rode towards Kent, and there indighted and arraigned many, whereof to the number of 26. were put to death, eight at Canterbury, and the residue in other towncs of Kent and Sussex. And the King returning out of Kent on the 23. of February, the men of that countrey, naked saue their shirts, in great numbers, met him on the Blackheath, and there on their knees asked mercy, and had their pardon. Then the King rode royally through the Citie of London, and was of the Citizens topfully received, and the same day against the Kings coming to the Citie, nine heads of the Kentishmen that had bene put to death, were set on London bridge, and the Captaines head that had there before, was set in the midst of them.

Robert Gargwine

The malice begonne, increased betwene the Lords of the land, and especially against the Duke of Somerset, and other of the Quenes Counsell, for the lesing of Normandy, whereof the chiefe Citie of Rouen was lost: or giuen by appointment, the yere proceeding (as witnesseth Gargwine) upon condition that the Duke of Somerset with his wife and English souldiers, should with such goods as they might carry, depart freely from the Citie: for which free passage he should pay unto the French King 56. thousand Scuttes, which amount to fourtēne thousand markes sterling. And also he was bound to deliuer into the French Kings possession, all Townes and Castles that at that day were in the possession of Englishmen, within the Duchie of Normandy: for the performance of which covenants, the Lord Talbot was sent for one of the pledges, and so by one Floquet all the Towns and Castles were to the French Kings be received, Harflete onely excepted, whereof the Capitaine named Curion, with the assistance of sir Thomas Auringham, in despite of all the French Kings power laid both by sea and land, held the same a full moneth or more, and then for lacke of rescue, gaue it up by appointment.

Richard Duke of Poike pretended title to the Crowne.

Richard Duke of Poike, pretending a title to the Crowne, and heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, came this yere out of Ireland unto London, in the Parliament time, there to consult with his especiall friends, Iohn Duke of Norfolk, Richard Earle of Salisbury, and Richard his sonne, which after was Earle of Warwick, Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, and Edmund Brooke Lord Cobham, &c. After long deliberation and abuse taken, it was concluded, to keepe their chiefe purpose secret, and that the Duke should raise an armie of men, under a pretext to remove diuers counsellors about the

the King, and to renenge the manifest iniuries done to the commonwealth by the same rulers, of the which as principall, the Duke of Somerset was namely accused, both for that he was greatly hated of the commons for the losse of Normandy, and for that it was well knowne, that he would be altogether against the Duke of Poike, in his challenge to be made to the crowne, when time should serue: Wherefore when the Duke of Poike had thus framed his foundation of his long intended enterpryse, he assembled a great host, to the number of 10000. in the marches of Wales, publishing openly that the cause of this his gathering of people, was for the publike wealth of the Realme, for affirming the same to be true, he wrote his letters in forme as followeth:

An. reg. 30.

Sozasmuch as I Richard Duke of Poike am informed, that the King my soueraigne Lord, is my heauy Lord, greatly displeased with me, and hath me in mistrust by sinister information of mine enemies, aduersaries, and euill willers, where God knoweth, from whom nothing is hid, I am, haue ben, and euer will be his true liege man, and so haue I said before this diuers times, as well by mouth as by writing, notified and declared to my said soueraigne Lord. And soz that this notice so comen vnto me of the displeasure of my said soueraigne Lord is to me so græuous, I haue prayed the reuerend father in God the Bishop of Hereford, and my cosen the Earle of Hereford to come hither, and heare my declaration in this matter. Wherein I haue said to them, that I am true liege man to the King my soueraigne Lord, euer haue ben, and shall be to my dying day. And to the very pson that it is so, I offer my selfe to sweare that, on the blessed Sacrament, and receiue it, the which I hope shall be my saluation, at the day of doome: And so for my speciall comfort and consolation, I haue prayed the said Lords to report and declare vnto the Kings highnes my said offer. And to the ende and intent, that I will be ready to doe the same oth in presence of two or thre Lords, such as shall please the Kings highnes to send hither to accept it. In witnes whereof I haue signed this scedule with my signe manuell, and set therunto my signet of armes. Written in my Castle of Abolton, the 9. of January, the 30. yere of the raigee of my soueraigne Lord King Henry the sixt.

Richard Duke of Poike his declaration of truth as he said

1452.

The 16. of february, King Henry accompanied with the Duke of Somerset, and many other Lords, toke towards the marches of Wales, soz as much as he was credibly informed, that the Duke of Poike, assisted with diuers other Lords and men of name, had in those parts gathered a strong power of people, and with them was entring the land, and so held on his iourney towards him: but when the Duke had witting of the Kings great power, he returned from the way which was taken by the Kings host, and hasted towards London. And when he had receiued knowledge from the Citie, that he might not there be receiued, he went ouer Kingston bridge, and so into Kent, and there upon Brent heath nere unto Dartford, he pight his field, whereof the King hauing knowledge, sped him after, and lastly came vnto Blacke heath, and there pight his field. When both the hosts were thus imbatellid,

embattelled, mediastian of peace was made betwene them, for furtherance whereof, to the Duke were sent the Bishops of Winchester and of Ely, with the Carles of Salisbury and Warwicke. To whom it was answered by the Duke, that he nor none of his company intended any hurt to the Kings person, nor to any of his Counsell, being lovers of the commonwealth, and of him and his land; but his intent and purpose was to remove from the Kings few cullid disposed persons, by whose meanes the common people was grievously oppressed, and the commonalte greatly impouertised, of whom he named the Duke of Somerset to be the principall, &c. And further to understand of the Dukes meaning by this his forcible entering of the Realme, (as himselfe pretended) may appere by certaine letters by him written to the King, and also the Kings answers to the same, both which I thinke good here to set downe as I finde them recorded.

Please it your highnesse to conceiue that sith my departing out of this your Realme, by your commaundement, and being in your seruice in your land of Ireland, I haue bene informed that diuers language hath ben said of me to your most excellent estate, which should sound to my dishonour and reproch, and charge of my person: howbeit that, I age haue bene, and euer will be, your true liege man and seruant: and if there be any man that will or dare say the contrarie, or charge me otherwise, I beseech your right-wisenes to call him befoze your high presence, and I will declare me for my discharge as a true knight ought to do, and if I do not, as I doubt not but I shall, I beseech you to punish me as the worst man of your land: and if he be found untrue in his suggestion and information, I beseech you of your highnes that he be punished after his desert, in example of all other. Please it your excellence to know, that as well befoze my departing out of this your Realme, for to go into your land of Ireland, in your full noble seruice, as sith, certaine persons haue lien in await for to hearken vpon me, as sir Iohn Talbot knight at the Castell of Holt: sir Thomas Stanley knight in Cheshire: Pulford at Chester: Elton at Worcester: Brooke at Gloucester: and Richard grame of your Chamber at Beaumarres: which had in charge (as I am informed) for to take me and put me into your Castell of Conuay, and to strike off the head of sir William Oldhall knight, and to haue put in prison sir William Devereux knight, and sir Edmond Mallo knight, withouten enlarging, vntill the time that your highnes had appointed their deliuerance.

Item, at such time as I was purposed for to haue arrived at your haven of Beaumarres, for to haue come to your noble presence to declare me your true man and subiect, as my dutie is, my landing was stopp'd and forbarded by Henry Norres, Thomas Norres, William Bulkley, William Gruit, and Bartholomew Bould, your officers in Northwales, that I should not land there, nor haue bituall nor refreshyng for me and my fellowshipp, as I haue written to your excellence here befoze, so farre forth that Henry Norres deputie to the Chamberlaine of Northwales said vnto me, that he had in commaundement that I should in no wise haue landing, refreshyng, nor lod-

Richard duke  
of York: his  
letter to king  
Henry.

ging, for men nor for horse, nor other thing that might turne to my worship or ease, putting the blame vpon William Say Maister of your chamber, saying and affirming that I am against your intent, and as a Traitor, as I am informed: and moreover, certaine letters were made and deliuered vnto Chester, Shrewsbury, and to other places for to let mine entrie into the same.

Item, about all wrongs and iniuries abovesaid done vnto me of mallice, without any cause, I being in your land of Ireland, in your honourable seruice, certain commissions were made and directed vnto diuers persons, which for the execution of the same, sate in certaine places, and the Iuries impanelled and charged, to the which Iuries, certaine persons laboured instantly to haue me indicted of treason, to the intent for to haue vndone me and mine issue and corrupted my blood, as it is openly published: beseeching your Maistrie to call, of your right-wisenes, to examine these matters, and thereupon to doe such iustice in his behalfe as the cause requirith: for mine intent is fully to pursue to your highnes for the conclusion of these matters.

Colin, we haue seene the bill that ye make vnto us, and also vnderstande the good humble obedience that ye in your selfe shewe vnto vs, as well in word as in deed, wherefoze our intent is, the more hastily to ease you of such thinges as were in your said bill. Howbeit that at our more leisure we might answer to your said bill, yet we let you to wist, that for the causes abovesaid, we will declare you none our intent in these matters: sith it is that a long time among the people hath bene vpon you many straunge language, and in especiall anon after your disobedinate and vnlawfull slaying of the Bishopp of Chester, diuers and many of the untrue shipmen and other, said in their manner, wordes against our estate, making manare to our owne person by your sayings, that ye should be fetched with many thousandes, and ye should take vpon you that, which ye myghter ought, nor as we doubt not, ye will not attempt, so farre forth that it was said to our person by diuers, and especially we remember of one Waines which had like wordes to vs. And also there was diuers of such false people, that went on and had like language in diuers of our Townes of our land, which by our subiectes were taken and duely executed: wherefoze we sent to diuers of our courtes and places, to hearken and to take hede if any such manner comming were, and if there had bene, for to resist it: but comming into our land our true subiecte as ye did, our intent was not that ye, nor lesse of estate of our subiectes, nor none of your seruantes should not haue bene letted nor warned, but in godly wise receiued: howbeit that peraduenture your suddaine comming, without certaine warning, caused our seruantes to do as they did, considering the causes abovesaid. And as to the enditement that ye spoke of, we thinke verily, and holde for certaine, that there was none such. And if ye may truly proue that any person was thereabouts, the matter shall be demeaned as the case shall require, so that hee shall know it is to our great displeasure. Vpon this for the easing of your heart in all such matters, we declare, repute, and admit your

Answer of  
king Henry to  
the duke of  
York.

Richard Duke  
of Yorke to  
King Henry  
againe.

our true and faithfull subiect, and as our welbeloued Cousin.

I praye it your highnes tenderly to consider, that great murmur and grudging is vniuersally in this your Realme, in that Iustice is not duly ministred to such as trespass and offend against your lawes, and in especiall of them that be endited of treason, and other being openly noised of the same, whereby great inconueniencies haue fallen, and great is like to fall hereafter in your said Realme, which God defende, but if by your highnes prouision couenable be made for due reformation and punishment in this behalfe. Wherefore I your humble subiect and true liegeman, Richard Duke of Yorke, willing as effectually as I can, and desiring the suretie and prosperitie of your most royall person, and the welfare of this your noble Realme, counsell and aduertise your excellencie for the conseruation of good tranquillitie and peaceable rule among all other subiects, for to ordeine and prouide, that true iustice be had, against all such that so be endited, or openly named, wherein I offer my selfe, and will put my endeuous for to execute your commaundement in the premises, for the punishing of such offenders, and redresse of the sayde miscarres, to my might and power. And for the hastie execution hereof, like it your highnes to aduersse these letters of priuilege and writs to your officers and ministers, to doe, take, and arrest all such persons so noised and endited, of what estate, degree, or condition soeuer they be, and them to commit to the Tower of London, and to other of your prisons, there to abide without baile or mainpryse, vntill the time they be utterly tried, and determined after the course of your lawes.

Answer of  
King Henry to  
the Duke of  
Yorke.

Cousin, as touching your bill last put vp to vs, we vnderstand well that ye of god hart, counsell and aduertise vs to the setting vp of iustice, and to the speeie punishing of some persons endited or noised, offering your seruice to bee readie at commaundement in the same, sith it is that for many causes mouing vs to haue determined in our soule to establish a sad, and a substantiall Counsell, giuing them moze ample authoritie and power than euer wee did asoie this: in the which wee haue appointed you to bee one. But sith it is not accustomed sure, nor expedient, to take a conclusion and conduct by aduise or counsell of one person by himselfe for the conseruation, it is obserued that the greatest and the best, the rich and the poore, in libertie, vertue, and effect of your voyces be equal: we haue therefore determined within our selfe to send for our Chancelloz of England, and for other Lordes of our Conncell, yea and all other, together within short time ripely to commune these and other our great matters, in the which communication, such conclusion by the grace of God shall be taken, as shall sound to his pleasure, the weale of vs and our land, as well in these matters as in any other.

At length it was agreed by the King, that the Duke of Somerset should be committed to warde there to abide and answer such articles as the Duke of Yorke would lay against him, vpon which promises so made by the King to the Duke, who saue that the people of Kent, and of other places

came

came not to him as they had promised, and that they were not strong enough, for the Kings part was much moze than his, he brake vp his field on the first of March, and yelded himselfe to the King at Dertford, where contrary to promise before made, he found the Duke of Somerset chiefe about the King. When was the Duke of Yorke sent before to London, and holden partly as prisoner, and straighter should haue been kept, but it was noised that Sir Edward Earle of March, sonne to the said Duke of Yorke was coming to ward London with a strong power of Welshmen, which feared so the Quene and Counsell, that the Duke was set at full libertie. And on the tenth of March, the said Richard Duke of Yorke made his submission, and toke his oath to be true, faithfull, and obedient subiect to King Henry the first, King of England, in St. Pauls Church at London, there being present the King and most of his Nobilitie, that is to say, the Dukes of Buckingham, Northampton, and Somerset: the Earles of Warwike, Arundel, Salisbury, Shropshire, Devonshire, Willeshire, Northumberland, Stafford and Dorset: bishoppes of Beaumont and Wells: barons Fitz Warren, Saimmond, Cobham, Douglas, and others: Bishoppes, the Cardinall, Archbishop of Yorke, and Caunterbury, Winchester, Ely, and London, in these wordes following.

I Richard Duke of Yorke, confesse and beknow that I am and ought to be humble subiect and liegeman to you my soueraigne Lord King Henry the first, and owe therefore to beare you faith and truth, as to my soueraigne liege Lord, and shall doe all dayes vnto my liues ende, and shall not at any time will or assent that any thing be attempted or done against your most Noble person, but wheresoever I shall haue knowledge of any such thing imagined or purposed, I shall with all speeie and diligence possible to mee, make that your highnes shall haue knowledge thereof, and ouer that doe all that shall bee possible to mee, to the withstanding and let thereof, to the bittermost of my life: I shall not any thing take vpon mee against your royall estate or obeyfance that is due thereto, nor suffer any other man to doe, as farre forth as it shall bee in my power to let it: And also shall come at your commaundement whensoever I shall bee called by the same, in humble and obedient wise, but if I bee letted by any sickness or impotence of my person, or by such other cause as shall bee thought by you my soueraigne Lord reasonable. I shall neuer hereafter take vpon mee to gather any rowt, or to make any assembly of your people, without your commaundement or licence, or in my lawfull defence, in interpretation or declaration of the which my lawfull defence, I shall reposit mee at all times to your highnes, and if the case require, to my pères, nor any thing attempt against any of your subiects, of what estate, degree, or condition that they bee. But whensoever I finde my selfe wronged and aggraued, I shall sue humbly for remedie to your highnes, and procéde after the course of your lawes, and in none otherwise, saving in mine owne lawfull defence in manner aboue sayde, and otherwise haue to your highnes as an humble and true subiect ought to haue him to his soueraigne Lord. All these things abovesaid I promise you truly to obserue and keepe, by the holy Evangelists

Richard duke  
of Yorke his  
submission and  
oath to Henry  
the first.

uangelists contained in the booke that I lay my hand here vpon, and by the holy Crosse I here touch, and by the blessed sacrament of our Lordes body, that I shall now with his mercie receiue. And ouer I agree me and will, that if I any time hereafter, as by the grace of our Lord God I neuer shall, any thing attempt by way of seate or other wise against your royall Maestie and obedience that I owe thereto, or any thing take vpon me other wise than is above expressed, I from that time forth be vnable, held and taken, as an vntrue and openly forsworne man, and vnable to all manner of worship, estate, and degree, be it such as I now occupie, or any other that might in any wise growe vnto me hereafter. And this I haue here promised and sworn, p̄cedeth of mine owne desire and free volunte, and by no constraining or coaction. In witness of all the which things aboue wyitten, I Richard duke of Yorke aboue wyit subscribe, with mine owne hand and seale.

*An. reg. 31.* This oth he also toke at Westminster, and at Couentre, at sundrie times, although he little esteemed thereof, as by the sequelle may appere.

This yeere deceased Iohn Scalford Archbishop of Canterbury, late Lord Chancellor of England, and was buried at Canterbury. After him succeeded in the archbishopricke Iohn Kemp, bozne at We in Kent, doctor of lawes, first bishop of Rochester, then of Chichester, then of London, then Archbishop of Yorke, Chancellor of England, and Cardinall of S. Albin: and now Archbishop of Canterbury, and Cardinall of S. Rufine, & was intyponised at Canterbury on the 11. of December.

*1453.* On the twelfe day after Christmas, the King holding his Christmas at Westminster with great sollemnitie, made his two byetthen by the mothers side knights.

The Earle of Kendall, and the Lord Lescare came Ambassadors from the cheefes Magistrates of the citie of Burdeaur, which signified to the counsell, that if they woulde send an armie into Gascoigne, the people of the countrie woulde revolt from the French part, and againe become English. This newes soze troubled the heades of the Counsell, which caused them, least inwarde sedition might hinder outward victorie, to let the duke of Yorke at libertie, and permitted him to goe to the castell of Aligmoze in the marches of Wales, by whose absence the duke of Somerset rose in such high fauour, both with the King and the Queene, that his word was once heard and regarded. The Counsell hoping now to haue the citie of Burdeaur, with the countrey round about, appointed Iohn Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury, to go thither with an armie, who arriuing in the Isle of Wyke, passed forth with his power, being scant thre thousand men, and toke the stronge towne of Fronlake, and diuers other towne and fortresses. The inhabitants of Burdeaur hearing of the Carles arriuall, sent to him messengers in the darke night, requiring him with all speede, to come and receiue the citie. The Earle hastened forth, and came before that citie, ere the Frenchmen within understood any thing of the citizens purpose. But when they heard that there was a gate set open for the Englishmen

Burdeaur  
reliued to the  
English.

to

to enter, they thought to haue escaped secretly by a posterne, but they were pursued, slaine, and taken by the Lord de Lescare, and other of the English armie.

After the regaining of Burdeaur, there arriued at Blay, the bastard of Somerset, sir Iohn Talbot Lord Lile by his wife, sonne to the said Earle of Shrewsburie, the lord Molins, the lord Harington, the lord Carnes, sir Iohn Howard, sir Iohn Mountgomeric, sir Iohn Vernon with 2000. men, victuals and munitions.

In the moneth of March, was the towne of Harflew won by the French men, and shortly the citie of Bayons was giuen by appointment, that the soldiers should leane their armour behind them.

When the Earle of Shrewsburie was furnished as is aforesaide, first he fortified Burdeaur with Englishmen, and store of victuals, and artilerie, then he rode into the countrey abroad, where he obtained cities and townes, without stroke, amongst other townes, the towne and castle of Chastillon in Perigot was to him deliuered, the which he fortified.

In the meane time the French King being aduertised of these thinges, raised an armie to resist the inuasion made by the Earle, and first he appointed his capitaines to besiege the towne of Chastillon, to the rescue whereof the Earle hastened forward, hauing in his companie eight hundred bozemen, vnder the leading of his sonne the lord Lile, the lord Molins, the lord Carnes, sir Edward Hull, sir Iohn Howard, and sir Iohn Vernon: hee appointed also five thousand footemen, vnder the conduct of the Earle of Kendall, and the lord de Lescare to follow him with speede. In his way he toke a tower, which the Frenchmen had before taken, and slue all that hee found therein, and after by the way hee met five hundred Frenchmen a foraging, of whom he slue the more part, and chased the other to the campe.

The Frenchmen that lay at the siege, perceiuing by these runners a way that the Earle approached, left the siege, and retired in good order into the place which they had trenched and fortified. The Earle aduertised how the siege was removed, hastened forward toward his enemies, doubting least they would haue been fled, and gone before his coming: but they abode the earles coming, and so receiued him, that though by many courage hee first won the entrie at their campe, yet at length, they compassed him about, and shooting him through the thigh with a hand gun, slue his horse, and finally killed him, lying on the ground. There died also the lord Lile his sonne, & his bastard sonne Henrie Talbot, and sir Edward Hull, and thirte other men of name, the lord Moleins was taken prisoner with threescore others. Wherefore of the English people fled to Burdeaur and other places, of whom in the flight were slaine aboue a thousand persons.

Thus at this battell of Chastillon fought the twentie of June, ended his life Iohn Lord Talbot, & of his progenie the first Earle of Shrewsburie, after that he had valiantly made war in seruice of his prince 24. yeeres, he was buried at Wykechurch in Shropshire.

Iohn Earle  
of Shrewsburie  
slaine.

L. Moleins  
taken.

After



An. reg. 32.

After this, the towne of S. Millan, Liboyne, and all other townes which the Earle of Shrewsbury had conquered, rendered themselves to the French men, Bourdeaux onely excepted. The which Citie being the last refuge of the English people, the French King in person besieged with all his puissance, and in conclusion constrained both the garrison and inhabitants to yelde, so that the Englishmen and Gascoignes might safely depart with all their substance,

Description of  
Aquitaine.

Thus was the Dutchie of Aquitaine, which had continued in the possession of English, from the pere of our Lord. 1155. unto this pere 1453. which is nere hand thre hundred yeres, by the marriage of Alienor, daughter and heire to William Duke of Aquitaine, wife to King Henry the second, finally reduced and brought againe to the French obedience and seruitude. Within that onely dutchie be foure Archbishops, foure and twentie Bishops, fiftene earldomes, two hundred and two barones, and aboue a thousand captainships, and halfe witkes, whereby ye may perceiue what a losse this was to the Realme of England.

The 13. day of October, the Quene at Westminster was deliuered of hir first sonne, who was named Edward.

1454.

When the wars were ended in foraine parts, ciuill dissention began againe to renew within the Realme, being diuided into two seuerall factions: for King Henry descended of the house of Lancaster, claiming the crowne from his grandfather King Henry the fourth; and Richard Duke of Yorke, as heire to Lionell Duke of Clarence, third sonne to King Edward the third, wrestled for the game, by reason whereof, the nobles, as well as the common people, were into many parts diuided, to the bitter destruction of many a man, to the great ruine and decay of this Realme. For while the one partie studied to destroy the other, all care of the commonwealth was set asleepe, iustice and equitie clerely crield.

Dutchie of  
the Duke of  
Yorke.

The Duke of Yorke above all things, first sought meanes howe to prouoke the malice of the people against the Duke of Somerset, imagining that hee being made away, his purpose should shortly come to condusion.

He also practised to bring the King into the hatred of the people, for that he was not a man of stomache sufficient to supply the ryme which he held. Many of the high estates not liking the world, and disallowing the acts and doings both of the King and his counsell, determined to practise how things might come to some alteration: which when the Duke understood, he chafely entertained and won the fauour of the two Neills, both named Richards, the one Earle of Salisbury, the other Earle of Warwick, the first being the father, and the second the sonne. This Earle of Salisbury, was second sonne to Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, whose daughter the Duke of Yorke had married, and the said Richard was espoused to lady Alice the only child, and sole heire of Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, slain at the siege of Orleans, of which woman he begat Richard, Iohn and George, Richard the eldest sonne espoused Anne, the sister and heire of the entire blood to Henry Beawchampe

Beawchampe Earle, and after Duke of Warwick, in whose right and title he was created Earle of Warwick.

The Duke of Yorke with his friends wrought so effectually, and handled his busines so politickely, that the Duke of Somerset was arrested in the Quenes great chamber, and sent to the Tower of London, where he kept his Christmas without great solemnity, against whome, in open Parliament, were laid diuers articles, beginning thus: These articles and points following, giue and minister I Richard Duke of Yorke, your liege man, and seruant unto your highnes, humbly proposing and declaring them, against Edmond Duke of Somerset, for the great welfare, and the common auale and increase of your maiestie royall, and of this your noble Realme, as well to bying to knowledge and vnderstanding the meanes and causes of the great mischieses and inconueniences, which late befell unto this your noble Realme, as in losse of your liuelode beyond the sea, and otherwise in punishment of deserters, and ercule of innocency, and also in putting aside, and eschuing of the great and impotable hurt and psequice which been like, withouten that purueyance he had of remedie, to succedd in short time. To the which articles of enery of them, I the said Duke of Yorke desire of your equall and indifferent right wisesnes, that the said Edmonde answer by his faith, & truth the sacrament of his oth thereupon made duely and truly as law and conscience requirerth, &c. as I haue at large set downe in my larger Chronicle.

The king at that time hauing laine long sick at Clarendon, was conueyed to London, by reason whereof, no finall determination proceeded in this waightie cause, but all was put in suspence, till the next assemble of the high court of Parliament.

This yere wheat, and other graines were in such plenty, that a quarter of wheat was commonly solde for twelue pence, and fourteene pence: a quarter of malt for sixtene pence, and seuentee pence at the most, and not aboue. A certaine farmer dwelling in the towne of Cruse Wolfe, or Wolfe towne in Hartfordshire, wanting money, sold twenty quarters of wheat the best, for twenty shillings.

Iohn Kempe Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury. This Kempe was borne at Wile in Kent, whereupon, when he was Archbishop of Yorke, he made the parish Church of Wile, a Colledge, where the gouernour was a prebend, and the other were ministers for diuine seruice, and to instruct youth in grammer and learning, according to his foundation. Which Colledge, at the suppression the 36. of Henry the eight was valued 93. pound, two shillings by yere. The father of this Archbishoppe Kempe lieth buried in the said Church of Wile, with this Epitaph following,

*Hic siliant ossa Thomae Kempe marmore solida,  
Cuius opus promum se probat esse bonum:  
Dum vixit letum fuit & bonitas crepletum,  
Munificum viguit pauperibus tribui;  
Inuenitur hunc satvis virtutum sponsa Beatatrix.*

Vv

An. reg. 33.  
Edmond duke  
of Somerset  
sent to the tow-  
er, and articles  
put aga inst  
him by the  
duke of Yorke.

Wheat sold for  
twelve pence the  
quarter.

Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
deceased.

*Quæ partitur opes sponte inuans inopes,  
Ex his processit, ut ramus ab arbore crescit,  
Clerici præsidium, dux sapiens omnium;  
Christo lectoris mens cunctis supplices horis  
Vt patris diæta luminet has animas.*

Idem Thomas obiit Anno Domini 1428. 30. die Mensis Maij.

Unto this Iohn Kempe succeeded in the archbishopricke of Canterburie; Thomas Bourcher brother to Henrie earle of Essex, brane of Saint Martins, first bishop of Winchester, then of Ely, and then archbishop of Canterbury, and cardinall of Saint Ciriac, and William Grey was made bishop of Ely: and Richard Neuell earle of Salisburie, was made lord chancelor of Eng-land.

Whilste king Henry lay sicke, Richard duke of Yorke bare all the rule and gouerned as regent, and did now discouer the sparks of his hatred, his under dissimulation, against the Duke of Somerset: but when the king had recovered his strength againe, and resumed to him his princelie gouernement, he caused the Duke of Somerset to be set at libertie, and preferred him to be Capitaine of Calcis, wherewith not onely the Commons, but many of the nobilitie (sauers of Richard duke of Yorke) were greatly grieved and offended, saying that he had lost his manhood, and would lose Calcis.

The duke of Yorke and his adherents, perceiving that their accusing of the duke of Somerset prevailed not, determined to reuenge their quarrel, and obtaine their purpose by open warre: and so he being in Wales accom-panied with his especiall freinds, the earles of Salisburie, and Warwick, the lord Cobham, and others, assembled a power of warlike persons, and marched towards London.

The king being informed thereof, assembled likewise an host, and mean- ing to meete with the duke, rather in the north parts then about London, where it was thought he had to many freinds, with great speede, being ac- companied with Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and Humfrey his eldest sonne earle of Stafford, Edmond duke of Somerset, Henry Percie earle of Northumberland, James Butler earle of Wiltshire, and of Desmond, John Bewford earle of Dorset, Jasper Tewder earle of Pembroke, brother to the king, Thomas Courtney earle of Devonshire, John lord Clifford, the lordes Sudley, Barnes, Rose and others, being in all aboue 2000. men of warre, departed from Westminster the 21. day of May, toward Saint Albons, to meete with the duke of Yorke, the earles of Warwick and Salisburie: the king lodged that night at Watford, or Watford ouer this side Saint Al- bons, and on the morow in the morning earlye he came to Saint Albons. And about the same time, were there assembled Richard D. of Yorke, John D. of Norfolk, Richard earle of Warwick, Richard earle of Salisburie, William Fauconbridge, Edward L. Cobham, and many other knights and esqui- ers, the kings enemies, in a place called Keyfelde, beside Saint Albons.

The

the King bearing of the Dukes coming with the Lords aforesaid, plight his banner in a place called Goselowe, which place was sometimes called Sand- forth in Saint Peters Crete, and commaunded in strong manner to kepe the wards and barriers of the same Towne. The Duke of Yorke knowing the strength made against him abiding in the fiede aforesaid, from seven of the clocke in the morning, untill it was almost ten of the clocke without any stroke smitten on either part, by the aduise of his counsell sent vnto the King vnder these words following.

Please it vnto your excellent Grace, Richard Duke of Yorke, to take him as your true liegeman and humble subiect, and to consider and tender at the reuerence of God, and in the way of charitie, the true intent of my coming, and to be good and gracious Soueraigne vnto me, and all other your true liege men, which, that with all their power and might will be ready to live and die with you in your right, and to do all things as shall like your Maiestie royall to commaund us, if it be to the worship of the Crowne of England, and the welfare of this your noble realme. Your ouer, gracious Lord, please it vnto your Maiestie Royall, of your great goodness and rightwisenesse, to incline your will to heare and seele the rightwile part of us your true subiects and liege men. First, praying and beseeching to our Soueraigne Christ Iesus, of his high and mightie power, to giue the vertue of prudence, and that through the prayer of the glorious Martyr Saint Albon giue you very knowledge of our troubles, and to know the intent of our assembling at this time: For God that is in heauen knoweth, our intent is rightfull and true. And therefore we pray vnto that mightie Lord in these words: Domine sis clypeus defensionis nostræ: where- fore gracious Lord, please it your Maiestie Royall to deliuer such as we will accuse, and they to haue like as they haue deserved. And this done, you to be honourably worshipped as most rightfull King and our true gover- nor. And if we should now at this time be promised, as aforesaid this time is not unknowne haue been promises broken which haue ben full faithfull- ly promised, and thereupon great othes sworn, we will not now cease for no such promises, nor oth, till we haue them which haue deserved death, or else we to die therefore.

The answer by the King to the Duke of Yorke.

King Henry charge and commaunde, that no manner person of what de- gre, estate, or condition fouere he be, abide not, but that they anioide the felde, and not be so hardie to make resistance against me in my own Realme. For I shall knowe what traytors dare be so bolde to arise any people in mine owne land, where though I am in great disease and heavinesse: by that faith I owe vnto Saint Edward, and vnto the Crowne of England, I shall destroy them every mother sonne, and eke they to be hanged, beate, and quartered, that may be taken afterward of them, in example to make all such Traytors to beware, for to make any rising of people within mine

the

mine

Edmond Duke of Somerset: Captain of Cal. is.

1455. The Duke of Yorke raised a power, and marched toward London.

Mobs in West- minster by Duke of York: vnto the King.

mine owne land, and so trayterously to abide their King and gouernour. And so; a conclusion, rather then they shall haue any Lord that here is with mee, at this time, I shall this day for their sake in this quarrell my selfe lue and die.

*The words of the Duke of Yorke to all gentlemen and other assembled with him.*

Sirs, the King our Soueraigne Lord will not be reformed at our beseeching ne prayer, nor will not in no wise vnderstand the intent wherefore we be here assembled and gathered at this time, but onely is in full purpose to destroy vs all, and thereupon a great oth hath made, that there is none other way, but that he with all his power will pursue vs, and if we be taken, to giue vs a shameful death, taking our liuelode and goods, and also our heires shamed for euer. Therefore sirs, now sith it will none otherwise be, but that we shall utterly dye, better it is to vs to dye in the field, than cowardly to be put to an bitter rebuke and shameful death, for the right of England standeth in vs. Considering also in what perill it standeth at this time, and so; to redresse the mischiefe thereof, let euery man helpe to his power this daye, and in that quarrell to quite vs like men, to the Crowne of England, praying and beseeching vnto that Lord the which is eternall, that raigneth in the glorious kingdome celestiall, to keepe and saue vs this daye in our right, and thorough the giftes of his holy grace we may be made strong to withstand the great abhominable and horrible malice of them, that purpose to destroye vs and the Realme of England, and put vs to a shameful death: praye we therefore vnto that Lord to be our comfort and our defendor, saying these wordes, *Domine sis clipeus defensionis nostri*. And when these wordes were saide, the Duke of Yorke, and the Carles of Warwicke and Salisburie, with their host, betwene eleuen and twelue at none brake in, in thre severall places of the saide strate. The King then being in the place of Edmond Westby, Hundreder of the sayde Towne of Saint Albons, hearing of the sayde Dukes coming, commanded his host to slay all manner Lords, knights, squiers, Gentlemen and premen, that might be taken on the partie of the foresaide Duke of Yorke. This done, the Lord Clifford kept so strongly the barriours of the same Towne, that the foresaide Duke of Yorke might in no wise with all the power that he had enter, nor brake into the sayde Towne. The Earle of Warwicke knowing thereof, took and gathered his men together with him, and brake in by the Garden side into the sayde Towne, betwene the signe of the Keye, and the Erchequer in Holywell strate: and anon as they were within the sayde Towne, they blew vpe the Trumpet and cried with an high voyce, a Warwicke, a Warwicke, that maruaile it was to heare. And till that time the Duke of Yorke might neuer haue entrie into the Towne, and then with strong hand they brake vpe the Barriers, and fought a fierce

and

and cruell Battaille, in the which were slaine on the Kinges parte Lordes of name, Edmonde Duke of Somerset, Henry Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Stafford, the olde Lord Clifford, Sir Robert Vere, Barcin Entewell, William Chamberlaine, Richard Fortescue, and Ralph Ferrers knights, Oliuer Maleuory, Oliuer Alterton, Gilbert Scaresbrooke, Iohn Garhe, Thomas Packington, Roger Morecroft, William Tarwin, Iohn Rensfede, Iohn Alford, Reginalde Griffith, Humfrey Acworth, Henric Hawlin the Quenes messenger, Richard Chancler poster to the King, Alexander Breakespeare, Gilbert Hilding, poster to the King, William Souche, Iohn Boteraux, Ralph Babthorpe sewer to the King, and Ralph his sonne, the Kings Attorney, William Coruin, William Cotton of Conington in Huntingdon-shire, receiuer of the butche of Lancaster, Gilbert Faldingar, Iohn Daues, Ellis Wood, Robert Woodward, and Ralph Willoughby squiers, Hawling the Kings poster, and William Butler yeoman, Iohn Apinken, Iohn Daue, Iohn at Herthe, Hughe North, William Porter, Iohn Page, Thomas Barker, Iohn Taylor of Henley, Robert Purton, and Henry Himingley yeoman of the crowne, Nicholas of the pantrie, Iohn Clarke, William fishmonger to the duke of Buckingham, Allen Sutton clerke chaplein, and many other slaine, to the number of 5000. and on the other part was slaine about 600. persons, of them that were slaine, ben buried at Saint Albons eight and forty persons. And at that battell were wounded Lordes of name, the King shot into the necke with an arrowe, Humfrey duke of Buckingham, and the Lord Sudley, in the visages with arrowes, Humfrey Earle of Stafford in the right hand with an arrowe, the Earle of Dorset was so hurt that he might not goe, but was slaine to be caried home in a cart, and Sir Iohn Wenloke knight in likewise hurt and caried from thence in a chaire, and diuers other knights and squiers so hurt, and the substance of the Kings horse despoiled of their harness, at their owne request, made deliuey to the dukes horse for saluation of their liues and fled. The earle of Wiltshire, and Thomas Thorpe, Lord the baron of the Erchequer, with many other fled, and cast away their harness in ditch and woods. This done, the duke of Yorke, the Carles of Warwicke and Salisburie, came vnto the King where hee was, and besought him on their knees, of grace and forgiveness of that they had done in his presence, and besought him of his highnes to take them to grace, and as his true liege men. The King desired them to cease their people, that there should be no more hurt done, and to obey his commandement, did cause to be proclaimed in the Kings name, that all manner of people should cease off their malice, and not to smite one stroke more, and so ceased the battaille. And upon the day next after, the King and the Duke of Yorke, the Carles of Warwicke and Salisburie, came to London, and were lodged in the bishops pallace of London, where they kept their Whitsontide with great ioye and solemnitie, concluding there to hold a Parliament, the same to begin on the ninth of Iulij next following.

This yeere in the moneth of Iune appeared a comet or starre, called *Stella*

U b 3

Cometa

First battell at  
S. Albons.

*Cometa*, betwixt the north and the east, extending his beames towarde the south.

The parliament began at Westminster on the ninth day of July as was appointed, in the which session, the Duke Humfrey of Gloucester, late deceased at Bery in Suffolke, was openly declared to haue bene a true subiect to the King and Realme: besides this it was enacted, that no person should fudge or repoze any point of vntruth of the Duke of Pojke, the Earle of Salisburie, and Warwicke, or of any Knight, Esquire, archer, or other coming in warlike aray against the King at Saint Albones, considering their enterpryse, was only to see the Kings person in safegarde. And all the blame was put vpon the Duke of Somerset, Thomas Thorpe baron of the Erchequer, and William Ioseph Esquier the Kings colaterall companion, because they vpon malicious purpose kept a certaine letter from the Kings knowledge, and would in no wise suffer it to be deliuered vnto him, notwithstanding the same made to the aduancement of some good assured peace, if it had bene throughly and aduisedly read, wayed and considered: in which letter they declared that as humble and faithfull subiects, they onely required that it would please the King, whose honor, health, suretie, and preservation they chiefly wished, not to giue credite to their aduersaries malicious suggestions, till their coming to his presence, vnto the which they humbly besought him that they might be admitted, as his faithfull liege people, to shewe the intent and purpose of their coming, which was to none other end, then to enlarge their libertie, and allegiaunce towarde his most dread person, intending to put themselves with as much diligence, industrie, and trauaile, in all things that might prefer and aduance his honor, suretie, and safeguard, as any subiect he had liuing. The keeping backe of this letter did minister matter sufficient to the parliament, to colour, and iustifie for well done all transgressions, committed in the late battaille at Saint Albones.

In this Parliament was the Duke of Pojke made Protector of the realme: the Earle of Salisburie was made Lord Chancellor, and had the great scale to him deliuered: And the Earle of Warwicke was made Captaine of Calais, and the territories of the same. And thus the rule of the Realme rested in the Duke and Chancellor, and all the warlike affaires remained principallie in the Earle of Warwicke. And so amongst them it was agreed, that King Henrie should still raigne in name and dignitie, but neither indeed nor in authoritie, not minding to destroy him, least they might sodainly prouoke the furie of the common people against them, because that of the common people hee was for his holynes of life, and aboundant Clemencie, much fauoured and highly esteemed.

So that the Duke of Pojke, and his adherentes had wrested the whole rule and government into their hands: all such persons, as either loued or the Quene fauoured, were put beside the priue counsell, and such put in their places as were knowne to fauour the house of Pojke.

Also

Alls all officers were changed throughout the Realme at the will of the Protector, Chancellor, and Captaine of Calais, so that they constituted and ruled all things at their owne wills: but they were noted with an execrable offence, of diners spirituall persons, and namely of the Duke of Gloucester, late out of Banckwarre, and sent to Pontefract Castle. *Ann. reg. 34.*

But Henry Bewford newly inuested Duke of Somerset, and Humfrey Duke of Buckingham, who had lost his sonne in the same battaille, and other Lordes and men of authoritie fauouring the partie of Kinge Henry, and bewayed the vntrue estate of the same King, because they perceived wherunto the cloyed curtisie, and dissembled manner of the Duke of Pojke did haue, thought it necessarie to puruey for a remede ere the mischance happened: hereupon they consulted with the Quene, and by her aduise was a great council called at Greenewich, where the Duke of Pojke was discharged of his Protectorship, and the Earle of Salisburie deprived of his office of Chancelorship, which change amongst the nobilitie, caused sodain alterations, and seditious attempts to spying in the communalitie, especiallie in the Citie of London.

In the Moneth of May an Italians seruant walking through Cheape of London, with a dagger hanging at his girdle, a Merchant seruant that before time had bene in Italie, and there blamed for wearing of the like weapon, chalenged the stranger, howe he durst be so bolde to beare weapon, considering hee was out of his native countrey, knowing that in his countrey no stranger was suffered to weare the like: To the which question such answere was made by the stranger, that the Mercher took from him his dagger and brake it vpon his heade, whereupon the stranger complained to the Mayor, who on the morrowe sent for the yong man to the Gaild-hall: wherfore after his answere made vnto the complaint, by agrément of a full Court of Aldermen, hee was sent to wards: and after the Court was finished, the Mayor, and sherifes walking homewarde through Cheape, were there met by such a number of merchers seruantes and other, that they might not passe, for ought that they could speake or doe, till they had deliuered the yong man that before was by them sent to prison.

And the same daie in the afternoone sodainly was assembled a multitude of lewde and poore people of the Citie, which without heade or guide ranne vnto certaine Italians houses, and especially to the Florentines, Lukelles and Venetians, and there toke and spoiled what they found, and did great hurt in sundrie places, but moose in fowler houses standing in Broadstrate wards, wherof three were in Sainte Bartholomewes Parish the little, and one in the Parish of Sainte Benets Church.

The Mayor, Aldermen and worthyfull commoners of the Citie, with

Ch 4

all

all their diligence resisted them what they coulede, and sent diuers of them to Newgate: and finally, not without shedding of blood, and murther of diuers Citizens, the rumour was appeased. The young man beginner of all this businesse, toke Sanctuary at Westminster, and not long after the Duke of Buckingham with other noble men were sent from the King into the Citty, who there charged the Mayor by vertue of a commission, that inquirie shoulde bee made of this ryot, and so called an open determiner at the Guild-Hall, where sate for Judges the Mayor, as the Kinges lieutenant, the Duke of Buckingham on his right hand, the chiefe Justice on the lefte hande, and many other men of name, where while they were empanelling their inquestes, the other commons of the Citty, many of them secretly put them in armour, and went to haue rung the common bell, so to haue raised the whole force of the Citty, and so to haue deliuered such persons as before for the robberie were committed to ward.

But this matter was discretely handled by the counsell and labour of some discrete commoners, which appeased their neighbours in such wise, that all this furie was quenched: but when word was brought to the Duke of Buckingham, that the communitie were in barmesse, hee with the other Lordes tooke leaue of the Mayor, and departed, and so ceased the inquirie for that day.

Upon the morrowe the Mayor commaunded the common counsell with the Wardens of fellowshippes to appere at the Guild-Hall, where by the Recorder in the Kinges name and the Mayor, was commaunded euery Warden, that in the afternone eyther of them shoulde assemble his whole fellowship at their common Halles, and there to giue streight commandement, that euery man see the kings peace kept within the Citty. After which time the Citizens were brought to such quietnesse, that after that day, the enquire was duelle perused, and thre persons for the said riot put in execution and hanged at Wyborne, whereof two were Sanctuary men of St. Martins le Graund, the other a shipman, for robbing of Anthony Mowricane and other Lombardes.

Ann. reg. 35.

1457.

The french nation hearing of the ciuill dissention within the Realme of England, thought to worke some damage to the English people, in reuenge of olde injuries, whereupon were two franchises appointed to invade the townes standing vpon the riuage of the sea. The Captaine of the one frate, was William Lord Pomyars, and of the other sir Pierce Bressly Captaine of Dope. These two Captaines taking their course out of the mouth of Heyne, secured themselves, the one Westwarde, and the other Eastwarde, which was sir Peter Bressly, this lustie Captaine sayling almost all the coastes of Sussex, and Kent, durst not once take lande till he arriued in the Downes, and there hauing perfect notice that a little before the chiefe Rulers of the Towne, were departed from thence to avoid the plague which then there raigne, entered the Haven with fiftene thousand men, and their shippes all landing at Sandwich, whereof 7000.

entered

Sandwich  
spoiled by the  
french.

entred the land, the space of thre mile, and there kept and defended the town, untill their other company might come to them, at what time they killed the Mayor, the baylives and the other officers of Sandwich, with diuers other Gentlemen of the countrey, and spoiled and robbed the Towne, leading and carrying away carts of furniture and other riches to their ships, and moreouer robbed and spoiled two great galleies of ships laden with merchandise comming to London.

The Lord Pomyars likewise toke his course westward, and by night bent for way and other certaine townes in Denonshire, in the month of August, and with his pillage returned into Britaine.

The volume of  
for way burne.

The Scottes also entred Northumberland, and burned certaine cottages and houses, but hearing that the Duke of Poike was marching thitherwarde with a great Arme, they with all haste returned into Scotlande.

In this yere was a great fraie in the North countrey betwene the Lord Rob. Fabian. Egremonde, and the Earle of Salisburie sonnes, whereby many were maimed and slaine, but in the ende the Lord Egremonde was taken, who was by the kings counsell found in great default, and therefore condemned in great sommes of money, to be paid to the Earle of Salisburie, and in the meane time committed to Newgate.

Not long after this sir Thomas Percie Lord Egremount, and sir Richard Percie his brother being prisoners in Newgate, condemned in a great summe to the Earle of Salisburie as is aforesaid, brake out of prison by night, and went to the king, the other prisoners toke the leades of the gate and defended it a long while against the sherifes and all their officers, insomuch that they were forced to call more ayde of the Citizens, whereby they lastly subdued them.

Register of  
Maison

The Quene secretly thinking the ouerthowse of Richard Duke of Poike, and his faction, perceluing that she could attempt nothing against him nere to the Citty of London, because the Duke was had more in estimation among the Citizens, then eyther the King or Quene, and therefore she caused the King to make a progresse into Warwickshire, for his health and recreation, and so with hauking and hunting came to the Citty of Coeuentrie, where diuers waies were studied to compasse the Quenes desire: for the accomplishing whereof, the Duke of Poike, the Earles of Salisburie, and Warwick, were sent for to Coeuentrie by the kings letters, vnder his priuie seale, to which place the saide Lords resorted: but being admonished by secret friends, what was intended against them, they avoided that danger, and so not saying farewell, they departed from the Court, the Duke vnto Wigmore in the marches of Wales, the Earle of Salisburie to his Castle of Wybleham in the North countrey, and the Earle of Warwick sayled to the Towne of Calice, thus were they separated in bodies, but in mindes and hartes knit together in one, hauing alwaies messengers with letters walking betwixt them, to communicate their deuises.

An. reg. 36.

An

Robert Ponings sometime swordbearer and carrier to Jacke Cade proclamed a traitor.

In this meane thine many were apprehended for raising of seditious fires; among other one Robert Ponings late of Southwarke, in the countie of Surrey Esquire, which was sometime a companion and adherent, to the most horrible wicked and heynous traitor and tyrant John Cade in time of his insurrection, being then his carrier, and sword bearer, what time he bid his robbery and tyranie in the citie of London, and in many other places, the which Robert stirred the greatest part of such as were adherents, &c. For all which doings being pardoned, he hath still persevered in his wickednes, and of late, to wit in the 31. the 32. &c. of our raigne hath assembled numbers of men at South Cray, and Frammingham in Kent, &c. Wherefore we proclaime him to be a traitor, and to be apprehended, &c.

Reginald Pecocke Bishop of Chichester.

Maister Reginald Pecocke Bishop of Chichester, a secular Doctor of Divinitie, that had laboured many yeres to translate the holy Scripture into English, was accused to have passed the bondes of Divinitie and of Christian beliefe in certaine Articles, of the which hee was convict before the Archbishops of Canterbury, and other Bishops and Clerkes, and after utterly abused, reuoked, and renounced those Articles openly at Pauls Crosse in his Mother tong, on the fourth day of December, as followeth, In the name of the Trinitie, Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, I Reynold Pecocke Bishop of Chichester vnwoly, of my owne power and will without any manner coercion or bydra, confesse and knowledg that I here before this time presuming of mine naturall witte, and preferring my iudgment and naturall reason before the new and the olde Testament, and the authoritie and determination of our mother holy Church, haue helde, written and taught otherwise than the holy Romane and Uniuersall Church teacheth, preacheth, or obserueth. And one is against the true Catholike and Apostles faith, I haue written, taught and published many and diuers perilous doctrines, booke, woordes, and writings, containing Heresies and errors, contrary to the faith Catholike, and determination of holy Church: and especially these Heresies and errors following, that is to say:

*In primis quod non est de necessitate fidei credere quod dominus noster Iesus Christus post mortem descendit ad inferos.*

*Item, quod non est de necessitate salutis credere sanctorum communionem.*

*Item, quod Ecclesia vniuersalis potest errare in his que sunt fidei.*

*Item, quod non est de necessitate salutis credere & tenere illud quod concilium generale & vniuersale Ecclesia statuit, approbat, sem determinat, in fauorem fidei, & ad salutem animarum, est ab vniuersis Christi fidelibus approbandum & tenendum.*

Wherefore I miserable sinner which here before long time haue walked in darkness, and now by the mercie and infinite goodnes of God reduced into the right way, and light of truth, and considering my selfe greuously haue sinned and wickedly haue informed and infected the people of God, returne and come againe to the vnitie of our Mother holy Church, and all heresies and errors written and contained in my sayde booke, woordes and writings, here solemnly and openly reuoke and renounce, which heresies and errors

and

and all other spices of heresies I haue before this time before the most honorable father in God, and my good Lord of Canterbury in diuers and lawfull forme iudicially abused, submitting my selfe, being then and also now at this time a very contrite and penitent sinner, to the correction of the Church and of my said Lord of Canterbury.

And ouer this, exhorting and requiring in the name and vertue of almighty God, in the saluation of your soules and mind, that no man hereafter giue faith and credence to my said pernicious doctrines, heresies and errors, neyther my said Booke keepe, hold, or read in any wise, but that they all such Booke, woordes, and writings suspect of heresies, deliuer in all goodly hastes vnto my said Lord of Canterbury, or to his Commissioners and Deputies, in eschewing of many inconueniences and great perils of soules, the which else might be cause of the contrary. And ouer this declaration of my conversion and repentance, I here openly assent, that my said Booke, woordes, and writings, for declaration and cause aboue rehearsed, be deputed vnto the fire, and openly bent in ensample and terror of all other, &c. After this, he was depriued of his Bishopricke, hauing a certaine pension assigned vnto him for to liue on in an Abbey, and sone after he died. His Booke were intituled:

- 1 Of Christian Religion, and a Booke pertainyng thereunto.
- 2 Of Matrimonic.
- 3 Just arising of holy Scripture, deuied into three parts.
- 4 The Donet of Christian Religion.
- 5 The follower of the Donet.
- 6 The Booke of Faith.
- 7 The Booke filling the foure Tables.
- 8 The Booke of Worshipping.
- 9 The Prouoker of Christian men.
- 10 The Booke of Councell.

In the moneth of January died the Earle of Denonshire, in the Abbey of Abington, poisoned (as men said) being there at that time with Quene Margaret, King Henry and his adherents perceiving that the Duke of Poike lay still and stirred not, returned to London, and there called a great councell, openly declaring that the French and Scots, emboldened by the small discord within the Realme, would attempt to annoy the same, as of late they shewed apparant tokens of their malicious meaning, and would not cease vpon occasions to doe further displeasures, till they percelued a perfect concord, and vnfaired amity to be concluded betwene him and his friends, and those of the contrary part and confederacie. And to the intent, he would be the author of peace, he promised so to entertaine the Duke of Poike, and his followers, that all old grudges being not onely inwardly forgotten but outwardly forgotten, should be the cause of perpetuall loue and assured amitie. This deuise was of all men present well taken, and aduinged for the best. Whereupon diuers graue persons were sent to the Duke of Poike, and all other the great estates of the Realme, which since the battell of S. Albons neuer met

King Henry a lover and keeper of peace at the hands of his rebels.

oꝝ communed togither, commaunding them foꝝ great causes to refort to the kings pallace without delay. At whose commaundement came to London, the Earle of Salisbury on the 15. of January with 500. men, and was lodged in his owne house called the Werber: and on the 26. day came Richard Duke of York with 400. men, and was lodged at Barnards Castell being his owne house. Then came the Dukes of Excester and Somerset with 800. men, and were lodged without the walle barre, and the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Egremont, and the Lord Clifford came with 1500. men, and lodged without the Citie. And on the 14. of February came the Earle of Warwick from Calais with 600. men, all in red sackets, embordered with ragged flaves before and behinde, and was lodged at the grey friers. And on the 17. of March, the King and Queen with a great retinue came to London, and were lodged in the Bishops pallace. And because no nozious attempt oꝝ bickering should be begonne betwene any of the parties, oꝝ their retinues, the Mayor of London, Godfrey Boloigne, and Aldermen of the City kept great watch, as well by day as by night, riding about the Citie, by Holboigne and Fleetstreet with 2000. men well armed, to see good order & peace to be kept. The Lords which lay within the Citie held a daily counsell at the blacke friers. The other part sojourning without the walles, assembled like wise in the chapter house at Westminster.

At the length by the diligent trauaile, good exhortation, and prudent aduice of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other learned and vertuous Prelates, both partes were perswaded to come to a communication, where after long debating of their grieuances, they were accorded, promising to forget all olde rancours, and to be friends each to other, and obedient to the king, whereof writings were made and sealed. The principall points whereof, the king being reputed as whole arbitrator, consisteth herein.

First, that at the costes and expences of the Duke of York, the Earles of Warwick and Salisbury five and forty pounds of yearly rent should be given unto the Monastery of Saint Albons, to be employed foꝝ Edmond late Duke of Somerset, Henry late Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Clifford, which being slaine in the late battell of Saint Albons, were buried in the Abbey Church. The same Duke of Somerset, Earle of Northumberland and Lord Clifford, were declared foꝝ true liege men to the king at the day of their deaths, as well as the Duke of York, the Earles of Warwick and of Salisbury. Moꝝe, the Duke of York should giue to Elianor Dutchesse of Somerset, and to Henry Duke of Somerset her sonne, the summe of five thousand markes, &c. The Earle of Warwick should giue unto the Lord Clifford the summe of one thousand markes: Divers other awardes betwixt parties were there made, which I am forced to ouerpasse foꝝ breuities sake.

For the outward publishing of this topfull agreement, there was by our Lady day in Lent, oꝝ five and twentieth day of March, a solemne procession celebrated within the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule in the Citie

Citie of London: at the which the King was present in his habite royall, with the Crowne on his head, before him went hand in hand, the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Salisbury, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Warwick, and so one of the one faction, and another of the other. And behind the King, the Duke of York, and the Queen with great familiarity to all mens sights, whatsoeuer was meant to the contrary, which appeared afterward.

The thirteenth day of Aprill there was a great fray in Fleetstreet, betwene men of court and the inhabitants of the same streete, in which fray the Quenes Attourney was slaine. For this sate, the king committed the principall gouernours of Furniuals, Cliffords, and Barnardes Inne to prison in the Castell of Hertford, and William Tailor Alderman of that ward, with many other, were sent to Windsoꝝe Castell the seventh of May.

On Thursday in Whitsun weeke, the Duke of Somerset with Anthonie Ruers and other foure, kept tussles before the Queen in the Tower of London, against thre Equiers of the Quenes: an in like manner at Greenwich the Sunday following.

On the Trinitie Sunday oꝝ Monday following, certaine shippes appertaining to the Earle of Warwick, met with a flete of Spaniards, and after long and cruell fight took fire of their ships laden with yron & other merchandise, drowned, and chased to the number of 26. not without shedding of blood on both parts, foꝝ of the Englishmen were slaine 100. and many moꝝe wounded and foꝝe hurt.

The King and Queen being at Westminster, the ninth day of Nouember fell a great debate, betwene Richard Earle of Warwick, and them of the kings house, inasmuch, that they would haue slaine the Earle: and onneth he escaped to his barge, and went after to Calais, foꝝ he was not long before made Captaine thereof by authoritie of the Parliament. Some after, the young Duke of Somerset by stirring of them that hated the Earle of Warwick, was made Captaine of Calais, and a priuie seale directed to the Earle foꝝ to discharge him of the Captaine ship: but the Earle, soasmuch as he was made by Parliament, he would not obey the priuie seale, but continued soꝝth in the said office.

James Earle of Wiltshire was made treasurer of England after Walter Hungerford knight.

The noble Science of Printing was about this tme found in Germany at Haguenue by one Lo. Cuthemburgus a knight: one Conradus an Almain brought it into Rome: William Caxton of London brought it into England about the yere 1471. and first practised the same in the Abbey of S. Peter at Westminster: after which time, it was likewise practised in the Abbies of S. August. at Canterbury, S. Albons, and other Monasteries of England.

The Earle of Warwickke Admittall, Captaine of Calais with a fourtene well appointed ships, sailed abroad to strower the seas, and by chance met with five great ships, whereof thre were Carickes of Gene, and the other two were of Spaine, bigger in height and length, than the Carickes. The

The Quenes Attourney slaine.

Tussling in the tower of London.

The Earle of Warwick took Spanish ships.

An. reg. 37.

1459.  
Printing first introduced.

Carle though he were bineth able to deale against them, yet he ballantly encountering them, there was a soze battayle fought betwixt them, soze lasted almost the space of two daies, yet in the ende the English had the victorie: so that two of those shippes being forced to saue themselves by flight, the other three were taken, which the Carle brought to Calcis, with all the marchandise aboord in the same, the value whereof in wine, oyle, ware, pyn, cloth of golde, and other riches was esteemed to the value of tennethousand pound and better, by reason whereof, those wares were solde wonderfull cheape: there were taken a greate number of pylsoners, beside a thousand persons slaine in the fight, and of the Carles part about the number of fiftie.

Now in this meane time, after that the Carle of Marwicke was departed the Realme and gone over to Calcis, the Duke of Poike, and the Carle of Salisburie falling to consultation, it was agreed betwixt them, that the said Carle of Salisburie with a warlike company should march toward the King, and signifie to him by way of complaint, both the manifest iniurie done to his sonne, and also the vncourteous breach of the swozne amitie and late agreement, in which late if he prevailed, he should not then let passe the occasion giuen for reuenge of displeasures to him done, both by the Quene, and her counsell. The Carle of Salisburie therefore removed from Spilsham Castle, with foure or fise thousand men, taking his way through Lancashire towards London.

In the meane season the Quene assisted by the Dukes of Somerset and Buckingham, hauing a diligent eie to al her busines, imagined that the Carle of Marwicke had hindered this aie, to the intent, to set the Crowne on the Duke of Poikes head: wherefore she appointed James Twiche Lord Audley (because his power lay in those parts) to raise an host of men, and to giue battaile to the same Carle, if he saw cause, & place in convenient: she allied him to her all the knights and Esquiers of Cheshire for to haue their fauour: she held open househols among them, and made her sonne the Prince, to giue a liuerie of Swans to all the gentlemen of that countrey, and to many other through the land, trusting through their strength to make her sonne King, making promise meane to some of the Lords to moue the King to resigne the Crowne to her sonne, but she could not bring it to passe.

Owen Tewdar.  
Bar.

King Henry gaue to Owen Tewdar 100. l. the pere out of his Manor of Folkestone, Walton, Banestede with the appurtenances in the shire of Kent, &c.

An. reg. 38.

The 21. day of September Richard Carle of Salisburie hauing gathered a well appointed army, toke his way toward Ludlow, where at that time the Duke of Poike lay, to the intent that they both together would haue ridden to the King to Colshill in Staffordshire, to haue excused them of certaine articles laide against them by malice of their enemies, as they saide. Whereupon those that were about the King, and also the Quene, who lay at Egghall, moued him to assemble a great power, whereof James Twiche Lord Audley was made chiefe, and had the leading of them into the fielde called

called Blozeheath nere vnto Bucklestone, by the which the said Duke and the Carle must needs passe, and there both hostes met and fought a most tall battell, wherein the Lord Audley was slaine with Hugh Venables of Binton, Thomas Dutton of Dutton, Richard Molinoux of Stratton, William Trowbecke, John Legh del Bothes, John Donne of Wiltinton, and John Egerton of Egerton knights, Richard Donne of Croton, John Dukes Esquiers, and many other, in all to the number of 2400. persons, but the greater losse fell to the of Cheshire, that had received the Princes liuerie of Swans: but there were taken prisoners the Carle of Salisburie two sonnes Thomas and John, and sir Thomas Harrington, which were sent to Chester, but sone after deliuered. After this discomfiture at Blozeheath, the Duke of Poike percelusing his destruction to be intended, and his priuite intents throughly disclosed to the King and Quene, he thought god no longer to linger his busines, but with all diligence to display and auance his banner, and therefore sending for the Carle of Salisburie, after long communication, they determined to raise an armie, and by fine force eyther to die, or to winne their purpose. Whereupon were men forthwith assembled, both out of the North, & of the Welch, which all came to the Marches of Wales, determining there to abide their enemies, or to meet them as occasion serued. There came to him from Calcis the Carle of Marwicke, bringing with him a great number of expert men in martiall feats, whereof two were Captaines of great experience, the one called Andrew Trollope, the other John Blunt.

The King hauing aduertisement of the Dukes doing, sent forth Commissioners to giue a power in all parts of the Realme, where he thought to haue any faithfull fauourers, by reason whereof a great number of men were assembled, then the King accompanied with the Dukes of Somerset and Gloucester, and other that fauoured the house of Lancaster, marching toward came vnto Worcester, where he stayed for a time, and sent to his adherentes a messenger, to wit. the Bishoppe of Salisburie Richard Beauchampes, to offer vnto them a free generall pardon for all trespasses whatsoeuer, if they would giue over their enterprise and become true and obedient subiectes. To whom they answered by the mouth of the Carle of Marwicke, in these pointes: First, that as concerning the pardon, they durst not trust vnto it. Secondly, that notwithstanding such pardons, those that were about the King were vncruy, and cared not to breake the Kings commaundment. Thirdly, although such a Lord, being called to the Parliament, ought freely to come, and safely to depart, yet the said Carle of Marwicke, at a certaine counsell holden at Westminster, was in danger of death, if the Lord above had not the better provided for his escape, for the which cause he sith the Kings pardon may be likened to a buckler of glasse, or a flasse of fre, of the which there is no trust: we dare not commit our selues vnto the defence of any such pardons.

The King receiving such an answer was nothing contented therewith, and therefore commaunded his standartes to be advanced: but before became nere to the place where the said Lords were incamped, they wrote a letter

Blozeheath  
field.

Richard 380.  
liuier.



letter to the King, whereof the tenour was thus.

Most Christian King, right high and mightie Prince, and our most dread soueraine Lord, after as humble recommendations to your high excellency as will suffice. Our true intent to the prosperitie and augmentation of your high estate, and to the Commonweale of this Realme, hath bene shewed unto your highnes in such writing as we make thereof. And our that an Indenture signed by our hands in the Church Cathedrall of Worcester, comprehending the p[ro]ofe of the truth and dutie that (God knoweth) we beare to your said estate, and to the preheminent and prerogative thereof, was sent unto your god grace by the Bp[is]hop of the said Church, and diuers other Doctors, and among other, by Maister William Linwoode Doctor of divinitie, which ministered unto vs generally the blessed sacrament of the bodie of Iesus, whereupon we and euery of vs depose for our said truth and duty, according to the tenour of the said Indenture. And sith that time we haue certified at large in writing and by mouth, by Garcarthking of armes, not onely to your said highnesse, but also to the god and worthy Lordes being about your most noble presence, the largenesse of our saide truth and duty, and our intent and disposition, to search all the motions that might serue conveniently to the affirmation thereof, and to our perfect sureties from such inconvenient and dangerous jeopardies as we haue bene put in diuers times here before. Whereof we haue cause to make, and ought to make such exclamation and complaint, not without reason, as is not unknowne to the said worthy Lordes, and to all this land, and will offer vs to your high presence, to the same intent, if we might so doe without said surety, which onely cauleth vs to keepe such fellowship as we doe in our last manner. And hereto we haue sojourne and avoided all thinges that might serue to the effusion of Christian blood, of the dread that we haue of God, and of your royall Maiestie: and haue also eschewed to approach your said most noble presence, for the humble obisance and reuerence wherein we haue, and during our life will haue the same. And yet neuertheless we beare, that we be proclaimed and diffamed in our name unrightfully, unlawfullie, and sauing your high reuerence, untruely, and otherwise (as God knoweth) than we haue giuen cause, knowing certainly that the blessed and noble intent of your said god grace, and the righte iustnesse thereof is, to take, repute and accept your true and lawfull subsidies, and that it accordeth neither with your saide intent, nor with your will or pleasure, that we should be otherwise taken or reputed. And our that, our Lordships and tenants bene of high violence robbed and spoiled, against your peace and lawes, and all righte iustnesse. We therefore, as we suffice, beseech your said god grace to take, repute, and receive thereunto our said truth and intent, which to God is knowne, as we shew it by the said tenour of the same Indenture, and not apply your said blessednes to the great righte iustnesse and quiette wherewith God hath endued your high nobilitie, to the impoyntine impatience and violence of such persons as intend of extreme malice to procede vnder the shadowe of your high might

Doctor Linwoode wrote the glo's upon this constitution of the Church of England.

might and presence, to our destruction, for such inordinate counsaile (whereof God is not pleased) as they haue to our lands, offices, and goods, not letting or sparing therefore, to put such things in all lamentable and to sorrowfull icopardy, as might in all wise take effect, by the mystery of Gods wil power, nor not having regard to the effusion of Christian blood, ne any tendernes to the Noble blood of this land, such as serue to the tuition and defence thereof, ne not waighing the losse of your true liege men of your said Realme, that God defend, which knoweth our intent, and that we haue avoyded therefrom, as farre as we may with our sureties, not of any dread that we haue of the said persons, but onely of the dread of God and of your said highnes, and wil not vse our said defence until the time that we be prouoked of necessity, whereof we call Heauen and Earth unto witness and record, and therein beseech God to be our Iudge, and to deliuer vs according to our said intent, and our said truth and duty to your saide highnesse, and to the said Commonweale. Most Christian King, right high and mightie Prince, and most dread soueraine Lord, we beseech our blessed Lord to preserve your honour and estate in loy and felicity. Written at Ludlow the tenth day of October: R. Yorke, R. Warwicke, R. Salisbury.

After their exclamation contained in this letter sent to the King, they withdrew them, and went into diuers parts beyond the seas, for the more surety of their persons. The Duke of Yorke went into Ireland, where he was honourably received: the Earle of March, Salisbury, and Warwick, not without great icopardy and perill, as well on the land as on the sea, went to Calais, and abode there.

Then was a Parliament holden at Couentry, wherein were attaint of treason, Richard Duke of Yorke, Edward Earle of March his son and heire, Richard Earle of Warwick, Edmond Earle of Rutland, Richard Earle of Salisbury, John Lord Clifford, Lord Clinton, sir Thomas Hasington, sir John Wenlocke, Thomas Neuill, John Neuill sonnes of the Earle of Salisbury, James Pickering, John Conyers, Thomas Par, William Oldhall, and Henry Ratford, Knights, John Bowler, Thomas Cooke, John Clay, Richard Gyron, Robert Browne, Edward Bowler, Thomas Vaughan, John Roger, Richard Grey, Walter Deuereux, Walter Hopton, Roger Kynderton, William Bowes, Foulike Stafford, the Lord Powis, and Alice Countesse of Salisbury, their goods and possessions escheated, and their heires diherited vnto the ninth degree, their tenants spoiled of their goods, beinained and flaine, the towne of Ludlow longing to the Duke of Yorke, was robbed to the bare walles, and the Duchies of Yorke spoiled of her goods.

In this moneth of October, Henry the young Duke of Somerset, Henry Lord Roos, and Lord Audley, with men of armes sailed towards Calais, to the intent the Duke should haue bene Captaine there: but when he came to land, they of Calais would haue taken him, so that he hardly escaped to the Castell of Swines: his souldiers were stripped out of their harnesse, and let go. The Lord Audley was taken into Calais, and the Lord Roos

Parliament at Couentry. D. of Yorke and other attaint.

Ludlow spoiled.

Duke of Somerset fled to Swines. The Lord Audley taken into Calais.

led into Flaunders, and after returned into England.

Not long after, Richard Lord Rivers was sent to Sandwich, to keepe the town and certain great ships which lay there at anchor: but when the Earle of Warwicke saw time convenient, he sent some of his men to Sandwich by night, the which took the Lord Rivers and Anthonie Woodville his sonne in their beds, and led them out to Calais, with all the great ships save one called Grace de Dieu, the which might not be had away because she was broke in the bottome. Sir Baudwine Fulford undertooke on paine of losing his head, that he would destroy the Earle of Warwicke, but when he had spent the King a thousand markes in money, he returned again. Then was the Duke of Grecester Admirall sent to the sea with a great flauy for to distresse the Earle of Warwicke and his flauy, he sailing from Sandwich to Dartmouth, for lacke of victuals and many his souldiers forsooke him there. And betwixt Sandwich and Dartmouth he met the Earle of Warwicke coming out of Ireland that had bene there for to speake with the Duke of Poike, and brought with him his mother that was fled thither for yeece, and led her to Calais: but the Duke of Grecester durst not set vpon the earle of Warwicke, nor the Earle would not distresse him, because he was admirall, and of the Kings blood, but let him passe by.

In the moneth of June yee men were sent to conuert the Duke of Somerset from Swines into England, but abiding the wind in the Port of Sandwich, the Earle of Warwicks men spoiled them of their harnes, killed their Capitaine Mountfort and many other. The Earles at Calais sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and at large to the commons of England certain articles in writing, beginning thus: *Worthy sirs, we, the Duke of Poike, the Earles of March, Warwik, and Salisburie, felow, and offered to haue come vnto the King our seueraigne Lords most noble presence, to haue declared there afore him for our duty to God and to his highnes, and to the prosperity and welfare of his noble estate, and to the common weale of all his land as true liege men, the matters following, that is to say.*

*In primis, the great oppression, extortion, robbery, murder, and other villainies done to Gods Church and to his ministers thereof, against Gods and mans law.*

2 Item, the pouerty and misery that to our great heavinesse our seueraigne Lord standeth in, not having any liuelode of the crown of England, whereof he may keepe his honourable household, which causeth the spoiling of his said liege men by the takers of his said household, which liuelode is in their hands that haue bene destroyers of his said estate, and of the said common weale.

3 Item, how his lawes be partially and unrightfully guided, and that by them that should most loue and tender his said lawes, the said oppression and extortion is most fauoured and supported, and generally, that all righte, onlines and Justice is euiled out of the said land, and that no man dreads to offend against the said lawes.

4 Item, that it will please his said godd grace to liue vpon his owne liuelode,

liuelode, whereupon his noble progenitors haue in daies heretofore liued as honourably and as worthily as any Christian Princes, and not to suffer the destroyers of the said land, and of his true subiects, to liue thereupon, and therefore to lacke the sustentances that should be belonging to his said estate, and since his household vpon his poore commons, without payment, which neither accordeth with Gods nor mans law.

5 Item, how oft the said commons haue bene greatly and maruellously charged with taxes and tallages, to their great empourishing, whereof little good hath eyther growen to the King or to the said land, and of the most substance thereof the King hath left to his part not halfe so much: and other Lords and persons, enemies to the said commonweale, haue to their owne vse, suffering all the olde possessions that the King had in France and Normandy, Amtois and Maine, Gascoigne & Swian, won and gotten by his father of most noble memory, and other his noble progenitors, to be shamefully lost or sold.

6 Item, how they cannot cease therewith, but now begin a new charge of imposition and tallages vpon the said people, which neuer afore was seen, that is to say, euery to wneship to find men for the Kings guard, taking example therof, of our enemies and aduersaries of France, which imposition and tallage, if it be continued to heire, heires, and successors, will be the heaviest charge & worst ensample that euer grew in England, and the foresaid subiects, and the said heires and successors, in such bondage as their ancestors were neuer charged with.

7 Item, where the King hath now no more liuelode out of his Realme of England, but only the land of Ireland, and the towne of Calais, and that no King Christianised hath such a land and a towne without his Realme, diuers Lords haue caused his highnes to write letters vnder his priuy seale, vnto his Irish enemies, which neuer king of England did heretofore, whereby they may haue comfort to enter into the conquest of the said land, which letters the same Irish enemies sent vnto the said Duke of Poike, and marueled greatly that any such letters should be to them sent, speaking therein great shame and villany of the said Realme.

8 Item, in like wise the King by excitation and labour of the same Lords, wrote other letters to his enemies and aduersaries in other lands, that in no wise they should shew any fauour or good will to the towne of Calais, whereby they had comfort enough to proceed to the winning thereof. Considered also that it is ordained by the labour of the said Lords, that no where victuall nor other thing of refreshing or defence should come out of England, to the succour or reliefe of the said towne, to the intent that they would haue it lost, as it may openly appeare.

9 Item, it is deemed and ought greatly to be deemed, that after that the same Lords would put the same rule of England, if they might haue their purpose and intent, into the handes and gouernance of the same enemies.

10 Item, how continually with the piteous, shamefull, & sorrowfull murders

The L. Roos  
led into Fla-  
ndres.  
The L. Rivers  
and the Lord  
Woodville by  
force entred  
from Calais  
into Eng-  
land.

1. 60.  
Sir Baud-  
win Fulford  
lost his head.  
The Duke of  
Grecester sent  
to the sea.

Captaine  
Mountfort  
slaine.

Articles sent  
from the Duke  
of Poike, & the  
Earles, to the  
Archbishop of  
Canterbury  
and to the com-  
mons.

ther to all England, of that noble, worthy, and Christian Prince Humfrey Duke of Gloucester the kings true uncle, at Burgh, it hath been labored, murdered, and conspired, to have destroyed and murdered the said Duke of York and the issue that it pleased God to send me of the royall blood, and also of us the said Charles of Warwick and Salisbury, for none other cause but for the true heart that God knoweth we ever have borne, and beare to the profit of the kings estate, to the commonweale of the same Realme, and defence thereof.

11 Item, how the Carles of Shrewsbury and Wilshire, and the Lord Beaumont, our mortal and extreme enemies, now, and of long time past, hauing the guiding about the most noble person of our said soueraign Lord, whose highnes they haue restrained and kept from the liberty and freedom that belongeth to his said estate, and the supporters and sauourers of all the premises, would not suffer the kings said good grace to receive and accept vs, as he would haue done, if he might haue had his owne will, into his said presence, breaching the charge that would haue bene laid vpon them, of the misfeiring, destruction, and wretchednesse of the said Realme, wherof they be causes, and not the King, which is himselfe as noble, as vertuous, as righteous and blessed of disposition, as any Prince earthly.

12 Item, the Carles of Wilshire and Shrewsbury, and the Lord Beaumont, not satisfied nor content with the kings possessions and his goods, stirred and excited his said highnes to hold his Parliament at Couentry, where an act is made by their prouocation and labour, against vs the said Duke of York, my sonnes March and Rutland, and the Carles of Warwick and Salisbury, and the sonnes of the said Carle of Salisbury, and many other knights and squire, of diuers matters falsely and vntruly imagined, as they will answer afoze Almighty God in the day of doome, the which the said Carles of Shrewsbury and Wilshire, and the Lord Beaumont prouoked to be made, to the intent of our destruction and of our issue, and that they might haue our liuelode and goods, as they haue openly robbed and dispoiled all our places and our tenements, and many other true men, and now proceed to hanging and drawing of men by tyranny, and will therein shew the largenes of their violence and malice as vengeably as they can, if no remedy be prouided at the kings highnesse, whose blessednes is neither assenting nor knowing thereof.

We therefore seeing all the said mischieses, hearing also that the French king maketh in his land great assembly of his people, which is greatly to be dread for many causes, purpose yet againe with Gods grace to offer vs to come again to the said presence of our said soueraign Lord, to open and declare there vnto him the mischieses aboue declared, and in the name of the land to sue, in as reuerent and lowly wise as we can, to his said good grace, to haue pittie and compassion vpon his said true subiectes, and not to suffer the same mischieses to raigne vpon them. Acquiring you in Gods behalfe, and praying you in your owne, therein to assist vs, doing alway the duty of leges men in our persons to our said soueraign Lord, to his estate, prerogative,

gaffe, and prebeminence, and to the surety of his most noble person, wherunto we haue ever bene, and will be as true as any of his subiectes alive, wherof we call God, our Lady Saint Mary, and all the Saints in heauen vnto witnes and record.

In the meane time, the Carle of Wilshire treasurer of England, the Lord Scales, and the Lord Hungerford went to Newbery, which longed to the Duke of York, and there made inquisition of all them that in any wise had fauoured the said Duke, wherof some were found guilty, and were drawn, hanged, and quartered, and all the inhabitants of the towne were spoiled of their goods. From thence the Carle of Wilshire went to Southampton, where vnder colour to take the Carle of Warwick, but especially to scale out of the Realme, as appeared after wards, he armed five great carlickes of Tene, and stuffed them with souldiers, taking victualles of the kings price without payment, and put a great part of his treasure into the said carlickes, and after sailed about in the sea, and at last scale into Dutchland, sending backe againe his souldiers into England. Then were the kings priuy seales directed to all Bishops, Abbots, Priors and other states spirituall and tempore, all to lend the king money, therewith to wage souldiers to keepe the sea coasts: but the commons of Kent breaching the like vengeance to be taken vpon them, as was done vpon them of Newbery, sent prinly messengers to Calais to the foresaid Carle, beseeching them in all haste possible to come to their succour, wherupon the said Carle sent ouer into Kent the Lord Fauconbridge, to know if their deides would accord with their words, and anon the people of Kent and other shires adioyning resorted to the said Lord Fauconbridge in great number, and made long proclamations, containing diuers articles and causes of their assembly, all which here I ouerlasse. When the Carle knew the willing hearts of those people, they prepared to come into this land, against whose coming, a long ballet was fired vpon the gates of Canterbury, made in fauor of the Duke of York and the said Carle, beginning thus: In the day of fast and spiriwall affliction, The celestiall influence of bodies transitorie, &c. The Carles of March, Warwick, and Salisbury, arrived at Sandwich, where met with them Thomas Boucher Archbishop of Canterbury, who with his crosse boyn before him, & a great number of other people, accompanied them to London, into the which City they entred on the second day of July: with them came the Popes legate, to treat of a peace, if need were.

Then was a conuocation of the Cleargy holden in Saint Pauls Church, where the said Carle being present, the Carle of Warwick receyted the cause of their coming into the land, with the misgovernments thereof, and then made open oth vpon the crosse of Canterbury, that they had neuer borne true faith and allegiance to King Henry. When the Carles of March and Warwick, with the Lords Fauconbridge, Clinton, Bourchier called Carle of Ewe, the Prior of Saint Johns, Audley, Burguenny, Say, and Scrope, the Archbishop, the Popes legate, the Bishops of Exeter, Ely, Salisbury, and Rochester, addressed them forth to the King at Poynthampton,

The Carle of Wilshire and other houses Newbery.

The Carle of Wilshire scale ouer the seas Priuie seales, for money.

The men of Kent sent to Calais for the Carle.

The Carles entered into London.

thampton, leaving the Earle of Salisbury to be governour of the Citie in their absence. The Lord Scales and Hungerford, that before the coming of the Carles were in the Citie of London, and would have had the governance thereof, went to the Tower of London, and with them the Lords Velly, Lovell, Delaware, Kendale a Calcoigne: Knights, sir Edmond Hampden, Thomas Brune himselfe of Kent, John Bruin of Kent, Geruais Clifton treasurer of the Kings house, Thomas Tyrell, the Dutches of Excester and many other. Then was the Tower of London besieged both by water and land, that no victuals might come to them. And they that were within the Tower cast wild fire into the City, and shot many small guns, whereby they burnt and slew men, women, and children in the streets: also they of the Citie laid great guns on the further side of the Thames against the Tower, and brake the walles in divers places.

The King lying in the Friars at Southampton ordained a strong and mighty field in the meadows beside the Runny, having the river at his back. The Carles with their power coming to Southampton, sent certaine Bishops to the King, beseeching him to admit the Earle of Warwick to come to his presence, to declare their innocency: which request being denied by the Duke of Buckingham, the Carles sent an herald of armes, desiring to have hostages for his safe coming & going, but he might not be heard. The third time the Earle of Warwick sent word to the King, that at two houres after none he would speake with him, or die in the field. The Bishop of Hereford a white frier, the Kings confessor, incouraged the Kings part to fight, wherefore after the battell he was committed to the Castell of Warwick, where he was long prisoner.

The tenth day of July at two of the clocke after none, the Carles of March and Warwick let crye through the field, that no man should lay hand upon the King, ne on the common people, but on the Lords, Knights and Esquires: then both hosts encountered and fought halfe an houre, the Lord Edmond Grey of Ruthen that was the Kings vaward brake the field and came to the Carles party, and was a great helpe to them in obtaining the victory: many on the Kings side were slaine, and many that fled were drowned in the river, the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle of Shrewsbury the Lord Beaumont, and the Lord Egremont were slaine by the Kings tent, with many knights and esquires: the Kings ordinance of guns might not be shot, there was so great raine that day.

When the field was done, and the Carls had the victory, they came to the King, he being in his tent, and said in this wise: Most noble prince, displease you not though it have pleased God of his grace to grant us the victory of our mostall enemies, the which by their venomous malice have vntuly stirred & moved your highnesse to exile us out of your land, and would have us put to small shame and confusion: we come not to the intent for to vnto quiet ne grieve your high highnesse, but for to please your noble person, desiring tenderly the high welfare & prosperitie thereof, and of al your realme, and to be your true liege men while our liues shall endure.

The

The King with these words was greatly recomforted, and anon was led to Southampton with procession, where he rested thre daies, and came to London the sixteenth day of July, and was lodged in the Bishops palace.

The nineteenth day of July, they that were in the Tower of London, for lacke of victuals perished and came forth, of the which afterward some were by stone and beaded.

The Lord Scales late in an evening entred a wherry with thre persons, and rowing toward Westminster, there to have taken sanctuary, was descried by a woman, and anon the wherry men fell on him, killed him, and cast him aland beside Saint Mary Quertes.

Lord Scales  
murdered by  
wherry men on  
the Thames.

When Quene Margaret heard that the king was taken, she with her sonne and eight persons fled to the Castell of Harbargh in Wales, and was robbed by the way in Lancaster shire of al her goods to the value of ten thousand markes: from thence she went into Scotland.

The tenth of August James king of Scots besieging the Castell of Rochester, was slaine with a gun that brake in his campe.

The 21. of September the Duke of Somerset came from Wales into England.

An. reg. 32.  
Parliament.

The Eight of October a Parliament was begun at Westminster, unto the which came Richard Duke of York, that a little before was come out of Ireland, and being lodged in the palace, the king being there, he brake up the doores of the kings chamber, so that the king seeing him place, took an other chamber. Then the said Duke, as right heire by lineal descent from Richard the second, chalenged the Realme, purposing to have been crowned on Alhallowen day next following, and thereupon sent to the Parliament in writing his said claime, title, and pedigræ. The which claime after diligent deliberation had and approach, by the said Parliament, peace and concord betwene the King and the Duke on the bill of Alhallow was established and concluded, as in articles followeth.

The articles  
betwixt king  
Henry and the  
Duke of York

Blessed be Jesu, in whose hands all bountie resteth, and is the peace and unitie betwixt Princes and the weale of euery Realme: I know by whose direction agreed it is appointed and accorded as followeth: Betwixt the most high and most mighty Prince King Henry the first, King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, on the one party, and the right high and mighty Prince Richard Plantagenet Duke of York, on that other party, by certain matters of variance moved betwixt them, and especially upon the claime and title unto the crownes of England and of France, and royal power, estate, and dignity apperteyning to the same, & lordship of Ireland opened, shewed, and declared by the said Duke, as of all the Lords spiritual and temporal, being in this present Parliament.

First, where the said Richard Duke of York hath declared and opened, as above is said, title and claime in manner as followeth:

That the right noble and worthy Prince Henry king of England the third, had issue and lawfully got Edward his first begotten sonne, bozne at Westminster the fifteenth kalends of July, in the yere of our Lord 12:2.

Ff 4

and

and Edmond his second sonne, which was bozne on Saint Marcells day, in the yeece of our Lord 1245. the which Edward, after the death of King Henry his father, intituled and called King Edward the first, had issue Edward his first begotten sonne, called after the decease of his father, King Edward the second, the which had issue, Edward the third: which Edward the third had issue, Edward Prince of Wales, William of Warfield his second sonne, Lionell the third, Duke of Clarence, John of Gaunt the fourth, Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley the fifth, Duke of York, Thomas of Woodstocke the first, Duke of Gloucester, and William of Windsor the seventh. The said Edward Prince of Wales, which died in the life time of his father, had issue Richard, which succeeded Edward the third his grandfather: Richard died without issue: William of Warfield the second sonne of Edward the third, died without issue: Lionell the third sonne of Edward the third, Duke of Clarence, had issue Philip his daughter and heire, which was coupled in matrimony unto Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, and had issue Roger Mortimer Earle of March her sonne and heire, which Roger had issue Edmond Earle of March, Roger Mortimer, Anne and Elianor: which Edmond, Roger, and Elianor died without issue: And the said Anne coupled in matrimony to Richard Earle of Cambridge, the sonne of Edmond of Langley, the first sonne of Henry the third, and had issue Richard Plantagenet, commonly called Duke of York. John of Gaunt the fourth sonne of Edward, and the younger brother of the said Lionell, had issue Henry Earle of Derby, which incontinent after that King Richard resigned the Crownes of the Realmes and Lordshippe of Ireland, vnrightheously entered vpon the same, then being alive Edmond Mortimer Earle of March sonne to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, sonne and heire of the said Philip, daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of the said King Edward the third, to the which Edmond the right and title of the said Crowns and Lordship by law and custome belonged. To the which Richard Duke of York, as sonne to Anne daughter to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, son and heire of the said Philip daughter and heire of the said Lionell, the third sonne of King Edward the third the right, title, dignity royall, and estate of the Crownes of the Realmes of England and France, and the Lordship of Ireland, pertaineth and belongeth also any issue of the said John of Gaunt, the fourth sonne of the said King Edward. The said title notwithstanding, and without prejudice of the said Richard Duke of York, tenderly desiring the wealth, rest, and prosperity of this land, and to set apart all that might be trouble to the same, and considering the possession of the said King Henry the first, and that he hath for his time been named, taken, and reputed for King of England and of France and Lord of Ireland, is contented, agreed, and consenteth, that he be had, reputed, and taken for King of England and France, with the royal estate, dignity and preeminence belonging thereunto, and Lord of Ireland during his naturall life. And for that time, the said Duke without hurt or prejudice of his said right and title shall take, worthily and honour him for his soveraigne Lord.

Item

Item, the said Richard Duke of York, shall promise and bind him by his sollemne othe, in maner and forme as followeth:

In the name of God Amen: I Richard Duke of York, promise and sweare by the faith and truth that I owe to almighty God, that I shall never consent, procure, or stir, directly or indirectly, in private or apert, neither (as much as in me is) shall suffer to be done, consented, procured, or stirred, any thing that may found to the abridgement of the naturall life of King Henry the first, or to the hurt or diminishing of his raigne or dignitie royall, by violence or any otherwise, against his freedome or libertie: but if any person or persons would do or presume any thing to the contrary, I shall with all my might and power withstand it, and make it to be withstood, as far as my power will stretch thereunto, so help me God and his holie evangelists.

Item, Edward Earle of March, and Edmund Earle of Rutland, sonnes of the said Duke of York shall make like othe.

Item, it is accorded, appointed, and agreed, that the said Richard Duke of York, shall be called and reputed from henceforth very and rightfull heire to the Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship abovesaide, and after the decease of the said King Henry, or when he will lap from him the saide crownes, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the said Duke and his heires shall immediately succede to the saide Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship.

Item, the saide Richard Duke of York shall have by authoritie of this present Parliament, castles, manors, lands and tenements, with the wards, marriages, relases, services, fines, amercements, offices, knowlons, fees, and other appurtenances to them belonging, whatsoever they be, to the yearly value of ten thousand markes over all charges and repyses, whereof five thousand markes shall be to his owne state, three thousand five hundred markes to Edward his first begotten sonne Earle of March, for his estate, and one thousand pound to Edmond Earle of Rutland his second sonne, for his yearly sustentation, in such considerations and such intent as shall be declared by the Lords of the Kings counsell.

Item, if any person or persons imagine or compass the death of the said Duke, and thereof probably be attaint, of open bnde done by folkes of other condition, that it be deemed and adjudged high treason.

Item, for the moze establishing of the saide accord, it is appoynted and consented, that the Lordes spirituall and tempozall, being in this present Parliament, shall make othes to accept, take, worship, and repute the said Richard Duke of York, and his heires, as above is rehearsed, and hepe and obserue, and strength in as much as appertaineth vnto them, all the things abovesaid, and resist to their power, all them that would presume the contrary, according to their estates and degrees.

Item, the said Richard Duke of York, Charles of March and Rutland, shall permit and make other to helpe, ayde, and defend the saide Lords, and surty of them, against all those that will quarrell, or any thing attempt against

The othe of  
Richard duke  
of York.

against the sayde lordes or any of them, by occasion of agreement or consent to the sayde accord, or assistance giving to the Duke and Carles, or any of them.

Item, it is agreed and appointed, that this accord, and every article thereof, be opened and notified by the Kings letters patents, or otherwise, at such times and places, and in manner as it shall be thought expedient to the sayde Richard Duke of Yorke, with the aduise of the Lordes of the Kings Councell. The king understandeth certainly, the sayd title of the sayde Richard duke of Yorke, iust, lawfull, and sufficient, by the aduise and assent of the Lordes spirituall and temporall, and the commons in this Parliament assembled, and by authoritie of the same Parliament declareth, approueth, ratifieth, confirmeth and accepteth the saide title iust, good, lawfull, and true, and thereunto giueth his assent and agreement of his free will and libertie. And ouer that, by the sayd aduise and authoritie declareth, entitleth, calleth, stablisheth, affirmeth, and reputeth the said Richard Duke of Yorke, very true and rightfull heire to the Coronas, roiall estate, and dignitie of the realmes of England and of France, and of the Lordship of Ireland aforesayde, and that according to the worship and reuerence that thereto belongeth, he be taken, accepted, and reputed in worship and reuerence, by all the states of the said realme of England, and of all his subiects thereof, lauding and ordaining by the same authoritie, the king to haue the sayd Coronas, realme, roiall estate, dignitie, and prebeminence of the same, and the said Lordship of Ireland during his life naturall. And furthermore by the same aduise and authoritie will, consenteth and agreeth, that after his deceale, or when it shall please his highnes to take from him the sayd Coronas, estate, dignitie, and lordship, the sayd Richard duke of Yorke, and his heires, shall immediately succede him in the said Coronas, roiall estate, dignitie, and lordship, and them then haue and enjoy, any act of Parliament, statute or ordinance, or other thing to the contrary made, or interruption, or discontinuance of possession notwithstanding. And moreover, by the sayd aduise and authoritie stablisheth, granteth, confirmeth, approueth, ratifieth, and accepteth the sayd accord, and all things therein contained, and thereunto freely and absolutely assenteth, agreeth, and by the same aduise and authoritie ordaineth and establisheth, that if any person or persons imagine or compass the death of the said Duke, and probably be attain of open dede done by folkes of that conditions, that it be deemed and adiudged high treason. And furthermore ordaineth and establisheth by the sayd aduise and authoritie, that all statutes, ordinances and acts of parliament, made in the time of the sayd king Henry the fourth, by the which he and the heires of his body coming of Henry late king of England the first, the same and heire of the sayd king Henry the fourth, and the heires of king Henry the first, were or be inheritable to the sayd Crownes and realmes, or to the heritage of the same, be annulled, repelled, damned, cancelled, void, and of none effect.

And ouer this, the king by the sayd aduise, assent and authoritie, ordaineth

meth and establisheth, that all other acts and statutes made afoze this time by act of parliament, not repelled or annulled by like authoritie, or otherwise bold, be in such force, effect, and vertue, as they were afoze the making of these ordinances, and that no letters patents royall of record, nor acts iudiciall, made or done afoze this time not repelled, reuerced, ne otherwise void by law, be preiudiced or hurt by this present act. Also it was ordained by the same parliament, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, should be called prince of Wales Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Chester, and protector of England.

The Englysh chronicle printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons chronicle, declareth how that in the parliament, while the commons of the realme were assembled in the common house, communing and treating vpon the title of the said Duke of Yorke, suddenly fell downe the crowne which hang then in the midst of the said house, which was the fratre of the abbe of Westminster, which was taken for a prodigy or token that the reigne of king Henry was ended: and also the crowne which stood on the highest tower of the castell of Dover, fell downe the same yere.

The agreement aforesaid being put in articles was engrosed, sealed, and sworn by the two parties, and also enacted in the high court of parliament: for for whereof, the king hauing in his company the Duke of Yorke, rode to the cathedra church of Saint Paul within the citie of London, and there on the day of All Saints, with the crowne on his head, went solemnly in procession, and was lodged a good space after in the bishops palace nere to the said church. And on the saturday next ensuing, Richard Duke of Yorke was by sound of Trumpet, solemnly proclaimed heire apparant to the crowne of England, and protector of the realme.

After this, the parliament kept at Conetrie the last yere, was declared to be a diuinely councell, and only celebrated for the destruction of the nobilitie, and no lawfull Parliament, because they which were returned, were neuer elected according to the due order of the law, but secretly named by them, which desired rather the destruction than the advancement of the common welth. When these agreements were done & enacted, the king dissolved his parliament, which was the last parliament that euer he ended. The Duke of Yorke wel knowing that the Quene would spurne against the conclusions agreed in this parliament, caused both hir and hir sonne to be sent for by the king: but the being a stout woman, by the counsell of the dukes of Gloucester and Somerset, not only denied to come, but also assembled a great army, intending to take the king by force out of the Lords hands.

The 21. of November, such abundance of waters overflowed in the countreies of Huntington, Suffolke, Cambridg, and the yle of Elpe, as the like had not beene sene before: for it ouerthrew the bridge, with a great part of the hospitall and fratre at Whetford in Suffolke, and the briges in Cambridg, running on the wheeles of the water mils there, destroying many houses, and comming in at the windowes of the rest.

The duke of Yorke protecto<sup>r</sup> being at London, assigned the duke of Gloucester,

Great waters  
flowed.

D. of Poike  
went north-  
ward.

Battell at  
Wakefield.

1461.

Richard Duke  
of Poike slain.

folke, and the earle of Warwicke his trustie friends, to be about the king, and he with the earles of Salisburie and Rutland, and a convenient number of men, departed out of London the second of December, and sent to the earle of March his eldest sonne to follow him with all his power. The duke came to the castell of Sandall beside Wakefield on Christmas euen, and there began to assemble his tenants and friends. There came to him vnder a colour of friendship, the lord Neuill, brother to the earle of Westmerland, and required of him a commission for him to raise the people for to chastise his rebels, as he said: but when he had raised to the number of 8000 men, he brought them to the lords of the countrie, that is to say, the earle of Northumberland and the rest.

The Quene ascertained hereof, determined to make with him befoze his power were come together, and so, hauing in his company the prince his sonne, the Dukes of Gloucester and Somerset, the Earle of Devonshire, the lord Clifford, the lord Rose, and in effect all the Lords of the north parts, with an 18000. men, marched from Poike to Wakefield, where they placed themselves euen befoze the castell gates: the duke hauing with him not fully 5000. men (as was sayd) contrary to the minde of his faithfull friends, would needs issue forth to fight with his enemies. The duke of Somerset, and other of the Quenes part, deuised how to take them, and so appointed the Lord Clifford to lye in one skale, and the Earle of Wiltshire in another, and the Duke with other kept the maine battell. The duke of Poike with his people descended downe the hill in good order of aray, and was suffered to passe on toward the maine battell: but when he was in the plaine fildes betwene his castell and the towne of Wakefield, he was environed on euery side, so that he manfully fighting was within halfe an hower slaine, and his whole armie discomfited: and with him died of his trustie friends, his two ballard vnckles, sir Iohn, and sir Hugh Mortimers, sir Dauid Hall, sir Hugh Hastings, sir Thomas Neuill sonne to the Earle of Salisburie, William and Thomas a Parre, byrtzen, a Loyde Harington, Thomas Harington knight, sir Henry Ratford knight, and other, to the number of 2200. whereof many were young gentlemen, and heires of great parentage in the south parts. In this confusid was wounded and taken prisoner Richard Earle of Salisburie and was led by the Duke of Somerset to the castell of Pontefract, and had grant of life for a great ransom, but the common people of the country, who loved him not, took him out of the castell by violence, and smote off his head. There was also taken sir Richard Limbrooke, Ralph Stanley, Iohn Harow, capitaine Hanson, and diuers other. The lord Clifford perceiuing where the earle of Rutland was conueied out of the fild, by one of his fathers chaplaines, and schoolmaster to the same Earle, followed and ouertooke him, and stabbed him to the hart with a dagger as he knelt before him. The same Lord Clifford not satisfied herewith, came to the place where the dead corps of the Duke of Poike lay, and caused his head to be striken off, and set on it a crowne of paper, and fired it on a pole, and presented it to the Quene, not lieng farr from the

the field. The Dukes head with the Earle of Salisburies head were set vpon a gate of Poike. This battell was fought in the fourth fildes of Wakefield, by the faire stone bridge of nine arches, on the last of December. Poike of Wakefield shall be shewed in my larger volume that is to come, God willing.

The Earle of March so commonly called, but now after the death of his father, duke of Poike, lying at Gloucester, was wonderfully pained when the sorrowfull newes of these mishaps came to his vnderstanding: but being comforted by his friends, he remoued to Shrewsbury, & raised thereabout a puissant army to the number of 23000. ready to go against the Quene, & his fathers enemies. But when he was setting forthward, newes was brought him that Iasper Earle of Penbrooke, and James Butler Earle of Desmond & Wiltshire, had assembled a great number of Welchmen and Irishmen, suddenly to take and surprize him: he being therewith quickened, retired backe, and met with his enemies in a faire plaine nere to Mortimers Crosse, beside Ludlow, not far from Hereford east, on Candelmas day in the morning, at which time the sunne (as some write) appeared to the Earle of March like three sunnes, and suddenly ioined together in one: vpon which sight he took such courage, that he fiercely setting on his enemies, put them to flight: and for this cause men imagined he gave the sunne in his full brightness for his badge or cognizance. Of his enemies were slaine to the number of 3800. The Earles of Penbrooke and Wiltshire fled, but Owen Teuther (whome Leiland saith should be called Meredicke) father to the sayd Earle of Penbrooke, which Owen Teuther had married (as was said) Katherine mother to King Henry the first, was there taken and beheaded, and after ward buried in a chappell of the gray friers church in Hereford. There were also taken and beheaded, David Floyd, Morgan ap Reuther, sir Iohn Skidmore, and his two sonnes, Thomas Griffith, Iohn Throkemorton, Thomas fitz Henry, and other. During this season, the Quene encouraged with this late gained victory at Wakefield, with a great number of people out of the north, marched toward London, intending to recover the company of the king her husband, and to vnbode all that had bene done in the last parliament. These northmen people, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent, spoiled and wasted the countrie afoze them Andrew Trollope grand capitaine, and as it were leader of the battell, with a great armie of Scots, Welchmen, and other strangers, beside the northern men, destroyed the townes of Crantham, Stanfords, Peterborough, Huntingdon, Keston, Melleborne, and in maner all the townes by the way vnto Saint Albons, sparing neither Abbets, Priories, or parish churches, but bare away crosses, chalices, bookes, ornaments, and other things, whatsoeuer was worth the carriage, as though they had bene Saracens, and no Christians. At length they came downe to Dunstable, and so to S. Albons, and hearing that the dukes of Northfolke and Suffolke, and the earles of Warwicke and Arundel, the lords Bonville & other whom the Duke of Poike had left to gouerne the king in his absence, had by the

Battell of  
Mortimers  
Crosse.

king



Second battell  
at S. Albons.

kings assent assembled a great host, and were incamped with the king nere to the towne. Those northren lords and other that were with the Quene, made forwarde, and entering into Saint Albons, meant to passe through the towne, and so to cope with their enemies, but finding a sort of archers ranged, nere to the great crosse in the market place to defend their passage, they were received with such a storme of arrowes, which came flying about their eares as thicke as hail, that they were quickly repulsed backe, and with losse bryuen to retire into the west end of the towne, where by a lane that leabeth northwards vp to S. Peters strate, they made their entrie, and had there also a sharpe encounter against certaine bands of the Kings people: but yet after great slaughter on both parts, they got through, and vpon the heath, at the north end of the towne, called Barnard heath, toward a little towne called Synbridge, in a place called Romans land, they had a far greater conflict, with folwer of five thousand of the Kings armie, which gaue the onset so fiercely at the beginning, that the victorie rested doubtfull a certaine time, till at the length through the withdrawing many of the Kentishmen with their Captaine Louelace, that was the backward, King Henries part lost the field: the lords fled, and the King went to Quene Margaret that was come with the northren men (as is afore saide) and her sonne Edward. The Earle of Warwicke went toward the Earle of Sparch, that was comming toward London out of Wales. The lord Bonville would haue withdrawn him, but the King assured him to haue no bodily hurt: neuertheles at the instance of the Quene, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Devonshire, he was beheaded at S. Albons, and with him Sir Thomas Kiriell of Kent. This battell was fought on Shrouetueday, or the 17. of February, in the which battell was slain 1916. persons, of whome no nobleman is remembred, save sir Iohn Gray, which was the same day made knight in company of other twelue in the towne of Colny. The same day Thomas Thorpe baron of the Erchequer was beheaded at Highgate by the commons of Kent.

Now after the noble men were fled, and other were fled, and the King left in manner alone, without any power of men to garde his person, he was counselled by a squire called Thomas Hoo, a man well sene in the lawes, to send some conuenient messenger to the northren lords, aduertising them that hee would now gladly come vnto them (whome hee knew to be his friends, and had assembled themselves together for his seruice) to the ende he might remaine with them, as before hee had vnder the gouernment of the southerne lordes. According to this aduise, the King appointed the same Squire to beare the message, who first went and declared the same vnto the Earle of Northumberland, and returning backe to the King, brought certaine Lords with him, who conueyed the King first into the Lord Cliffords tent, that stood next to the place where the Kings people had incamped. This done, they brought the Quene and her sonne prince Edward vnto his presence, whome hee hospittally received, embracing and kissing them in most louing wise, and vndering heartlie

heartie thanks to almighty God, whome it had pleased to strengthen the forces of the northren men, to restore his dearely beloued sonne againe to his possession. The Quene caused the King to dubbe her sonne prince Edward knight, with thirty other persons, which the day before had fought on her partie.

This done, they went to the Abbey, whereof the Abbot and the monks they were received with hymnes and songs, and so brought to the high altar, and after to the Chynne, and so to the Chamber, in which the king was wont to lodge. The Abbot made sute, that order might be taken to restrain the northren men from spoiling the towne, and proclamation was forthwith made to that effect, but it auailed not, for they maintained that the spoyle of all thinges was graunted them by covenant, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent: and so not regarding any proclamation, they spared nothing that they could lay hands on, if the same were meet for them to carry away.

The Quene hauing thus got the victorie, sent to the Maior of London, commanding him without delay, to send certaine carts laden with Lenten stufte, for the refreshing of hir armie, which the Maior incontinent granted, caused carts to be laden, and would haue sent them forwarde, but the commons of the citie would not suffer them to passe, but staied them at Triple gate: during which controuersie, diuers of the northren horsemen robbed in the suburbs of the citie, and would haue entered at Triple gate, but they were repulsed by the commons, and thye of them slaine, wherevpon the Maior sent the Recorder to Barnet to the Kings Councell, there to excuse the matter: and the Dutches of Bedford, the Lady Scales, with diuers Fathers of the spiritualltie went to the Quene to aduise hir displeasure, conceiued against the citie. The Quene therfore at their humble request by aduise of hir Councell, appointed certaine lords and knights, with 400. tall persons to ride to the citie, and there to viewe and see the demeanour of the people, and diuers Aldermen were appointed to meete them at Barnet, and to conuey them to London, but all these deuises were shortly altered into another forme, because true report came, not onely to the Quene, but also to the citie, that the Earle of Sparch, hauing vanquished the Earles of Penbroke and Wiltshire, had met with the Earle of Warwick, after the last battell at Saint Albons, at Chippingnoztton by Cotesholde, and that they with both their powers were comming towards London. The Quene therfore, hauing little trust in Essex, and lesse in them of Kent, but least of all in the Londoners, with hir husband and sonne, departed from Saint Albons into the north countrie, where their refuge onely consisted.

The Dutches of Yorke, seeing hir husband and sonne slaine, and not knowing what should succede of hir eldest sonne, sent hir two yongest sonnes George and Richard, ouer the sea to the citie of Arrich in Almaine, where they were of Philip duke of Burgoyne well receiued, and so remained there till their brother had got the Crowne.

The

Knights dub-  
bed at S. Al-  
bons.



The Carles of March and Warwike, hauing knowledg that the king and Quene were departed from Saint Albons, rode straight to London, entering the Citie with a great number of men of warre, the first weeke of Lent, or 28. of februarye, where hee was loyally receiued, whole coming thither was no sooner knowne, but that the people resorted to him out of Kent, Essex, and other parts in great numbers to see, aide, and assist this lustie prince in whom the hope of all their toy consisted.

This prudent prince, minding to take time when time serued, called a great Councell both of the Lords spirituall and temporall; and to them declared the title and right that hee had to the Crowne, rehearsing also the Articles concluded betwixt King Henry and his father by their writings signed and sealed, and also confirmed by act of Parliament, &c. Which after the Lords had considered, they determined, that because Kinge Henrie was insufficient of himselfe to rule the Realme, hee should be deprived of all kingly honour and soueraigntie, and incontinently was Edward Earle of March sonne and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke (by the lordes of that Councell assembled) named and elected for King and Governour of the Realme. On which day being Sunday, and the second day of March, the people of the Carles part being in their musters in Saint Johns fielde, and a great number of the substantiall Citizens there assembled to beholde their order, suddenly the lord Fawconbridge, which toke the musters, wisely declared to the people certaine Articles and points that King Henrie had offended in, and then it was demanded of them, whether the sayde Henrie were worthy to raigne still: but the people cried, Nay, nay. When was it asked, if they would haue the Earle of March to be their King, and they sayde, Yea, yea: then certaine Captaines were sent to the Earle of March at Baimards Castell, who told him that the people had chosen him King, whercof he thanked God and them, and by the aduise of the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Excester, and the Earle of Warwike, with other, he toke it upon him. Many wealthy citizens of London, not altogether liking of this doing, conueied themselves out of the city, amongst the which were Philip Malpas Alderman of London, Thomas Vaughan Esquire, master William Asch, with many other, who fearing the Quenes coming to London, shipped them in a shippe of Antwerp, purposing to haue sayled thither: but by the way they were taken by a French ship named the Colmayne, and at length deliuered for great ranfome.

Edward Earle of March, being elected as is aboue sayd, on the next morning went in procession at Paules, and offered there, and after *Te Deum* being song, he was with great royaltie conueied to Westminster, and there in the Hall set in the kings seate with Saint Edwards scepter in his hande, and then asked of the people if they would haue him king, and they cried, Yea, yea. Then after certaine homages by him receiued, he was with procession conueied into the Abbey there, and set in the quire as king, while *Te Deum* was singing: that done, he offered at Saint Edwards shrine, and then returned by water unto Saint Paules, and was there lodged within

Edward earle of March, elected king in S. Johns fielde in London.

Citizens of London fled.

Edward earle of March took on him the kingdom.

the Bishops pallace. Thus toke he possession of the Realme, upon a Tuesday being the fourth of March, and was proclaimed King of England, by the name of Edward the fourth, when King Henry had raigned thirtie eyght yeres, eyght moneths, and odde daies.

## Edward Earle of March.



Edward Earle of March, bozne at Roan, sonne and heire to Richard Duke of Yorke, about the age of eightene yeres, began his raigne the fourth day of March, by the name of Edward the fourth, in the yere 1460. after the account of the Church of England: he was a man of noble courage and great wit: but in his time was much trouble and inquietnes in the realme, as shall be shewed.

The 12. of March, Walter Walker a Grocer that dwelt in Cheape of London, for words spoken touching the title of King Edward when he was proclaimed, was suddenly apprehended, condemned, and beheaded in Smithfield. This Grocer is he, whom master Hall mistaketh to be Burder, of whom ye shall find in the 17. yere of this Kings raigne.

The same 12. day of March in the afternoon, King Edward hauing prepared a great armie, being accompanied with the Duke of Northfolke, the Lord Fauconbridge, the Lord Fitzwalter, Sir John Wenlocke, John Stafford, Henry Ratclife of Framissen, Roger Wolskerstone and others, with great triumph rode through the Citie of London to Bishops gate, and to take his iourney toward the North, where betwixt Shirburne in Elmet, and Lodcaster, all the North partie met him, and on Palme Sunday the 29. of March fought a great battell betwixt Lowton and Sarton, in which were slaine Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Earle of Devonshire, John Lord Clifford, the Lord Belmound, John Lord Beuill, the Lord Willoughby, Leo Lord VVels, the Lord Roos, the Lord Scales, the Lord Grey, Reynolph Lord Wacres, the Lord Fitzhugh, the Lord Molineux, Lord Henry Beekingham: knights, two ballard sonnes of Henrie Holland Duke of Excester, Richard Percie, John Heyron, Geuueys Clifton, Edmond Hamys, Thomas Crakenhorpe, John Crakenhorpe, Villiam Harill, John Ormonde, Andrew Trolope, Roger Mollyn, Radulphe Pigote, Henrie Norboheue, Dauid Trolope, John Burton Captaine of Yorke, and many other Knights and Esquires, whose names were not then noted. The whole number slaine were accounted by some to be 33000. by other some 35091. many of these were first buried in five pits, yet appearing halfe a mile off by North Sarton church in the fielde there. After Bungeate caused them to be brought from thence, and to be buried in the Churchyard of Sarton: the Lord Wacres hath there a meane tombe. Towton villiage is a mile from Sarton, where a great Chappell was begun by Richard the third, but not finished, in which Chappell were buried also

Ann. reg. 1.  
John Rouse.

Walter Walker beheaded for a word speaking.

1461.

¶ y

many

many of the men slain at palmunday feldce. This feldce was as much in Barton Parish as in Wolton, yet it bare the name of Wolton.

The Duke of Excester, the Duke of Somerset, the Lord Roos, the Lord Hungerford, & many other fled to Pojke to king Henric, and then they with the king, Quene, and prince, fled towarde Scotland to Berwikke, and so to Denbrough.

King Edward went to Pojke, where he was with all solemnitie received, there he caused the heads of his father and the Earle of Salisbury with other his friends to be taken down, and buried with their bodies. And then caused T. Courtney earle of Devon. the Earle of Lynce, sir William Hill, to be headed and their heads set up in place. James Butler Earle of Wiltshire was beheaded at Newcastle, &c. and then King Edward went to Durham, and when he had quieted the country, returned southward. The Lord Fitz Walter was drowned at Ferrybridge, sir Thomas Fulford was beheaded at Berham, &c.

The town of Berwikke was delivred to the Scots by King Henry the first on S. Parkes day.

The 26. of June the Maior of London with the Aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in greene, brought K. Edward from Lambeth to the Tower of London, where he made 28. knights, and on the morrow he dubbed fourmo, and on the 28 of June he was crowned at Westminster with great solemnitie of bishops and other tempozall Lords.

And on the morrow after the king was crowned again in Westminster abbey in the worship of God & S. Peter: and on the next morrow hee went crowned in Pauls church in London, in the honoz of God & S. Paule, and there an Angell came downe and censed him, at which time was so greata multitude of people in Pauls, as ever was seene in any dayes. And soon after his coronation, the king made his brother George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, and his other brother Richard Duke of Gloucester: Humfrey Stafford Esquire, Lord Stafford of Southwiche: sir VVilliam Herbert, L. Herbert, and after Earle of Penbrooke: and the said L. Stafford Earle of Devonshire, After this he made Edmond L. Grey of Ruthen, VVilliam Nevill L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent: Henry L. Boucher Earle of Essex: John Stafford, Lord of Buckingham Earle of Wiltshire: sir Thomas Blunt knight, Lord of Monntiop: sir John Howard, L. Howard: VVilliam Hastings, L. Hastings, and after that great Chamberlaine: Richard VVooduile L. Lord Latuers: John Denham esquire, L. Denham, &c. To Henry Lord Boucher before spoken of, Richard Duke of Pojke long before this time, had given his sister Elizabeth in marriage of whom he begat 4 sonnes, William, Thomas, John, and Henry, the which VVilliam being a man of great industrie, wit, and providence, in greave and weightie matters, married the labe Anne VVooduile, descended of high parentage, whose mother Jaquet was daughter to Peter of Lureburgh, Earle of S. Paule, by the which Anne he had Henry Earle of Essex, one daughter named Cicilie, married to Walter L. Ferrers of Chartley, and an other called Isabell, which died unmarried. John Markham was made

Lord

Lord chiefe Justice, and Robert Scillington keeper of the priute seale.

John Dauby had his hand striken off at the handcut in Cheape, because he had smit a man before the kings Judges at Westminster, wherefore the king commaunded him to have the law, in example to others.

This yere in the harvest season King Edward rode to Canterbury, and to Sandwich, & so along by the sea coast to Hampton, & from thence into the marches of Wales, and to Bristow, where he was most royally received, thus he progressed about the land to understand the state thereof.

The 4. of November began a parliament at Westminster, wherein K. Henry, his Quene. and his sonne, were disherited of the crowne: Henry duke of Excester, Henry duke of Somerset, Thomas earle of Devonshire, &c. to the number of 140. were attainted & disherited. Shortly the earle of Derby and Aubrey his son, sir Thomas Tudenham knight, William Tittell, and John Mongomerie esquires, were detest and at severall times beheaded at tower hill, and after that many other.

The 27. of March K. Edward went southward so far as Stamfzorde, where he was enjoined that K. Henry had procured the frenchmen and Scots to enter this land, in resisting whereof K. Edward sent his priute seale through England, to moue men to glue a certaine sum of money, which they granted liberally. The L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent, was appointed to keepe the seas, with the Lord Audley, L. Clinton, sir John Howard, sir Richard Walgraue, and other, to the number of 10000. which landed in Britaine, and wan the towne of Conquet, with the Isle of Reth, &c.

In Michaelmas termeking Edward sat in the kings bench three dayes together in open court, to understand how his lawes were executed.

Quene Margaret wife to Henry the first, landed in the south, where having but small succour and euill fortune, she was forced to take the sea againe, and by tempest of weather was driuen to Berwikke, where she landed, but lost hir ships and goods.

King Edward began his journey toward Scotland, on the feast day of Saint Andrew the apostle, accompanied of dukes, erles, barons, & knights, as foloweth: the dukes of Pojsolke, and Suffolke, the earles of Arundell, Shrewsburie, Gloucester, Kent, Westmerland, and Essex, the barons L. Grey Ruthen, Lord Hastings, Lord Grey Codnar, Lord Grey Wilton, Lord Anthony Seales, Lord Latimer, Lord Herbert, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Lord Stanley, Lord VVenloke, Lord Grestoke, Lord Ogill, Lord Lomley, Lord Clinton, Lord Southwik Lord Barnes, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Dacre of the North, Lord Say Lord Cromwell, Lord Cobham, Lord Leueforth, Lord Henry Buckingham, Lord Mortimer Lord Fitz Hugh, Lord De la VVare, Lord Powes, Lord Scrope of Bolton, L. Dudley, Lord Sturton, Lord Burgaweny, knights, sir Perce Ale, sir VVilliam Stanley, sir VVilliam Storis, sir Thomas Montgomery, sir I. Canias, sir Ralph Pigot, &c. to the number of 59. knights.

In the moneth of December King Edward laide siege to the castles of Bambrough, Dundanburgh, and Alnewike, in the castle of Bambrough was the Duke of Somerset, the Cale of Penbrooke, the Lord Roos, Ralph

Py 2

Perce

King Henric  
fled into Scot-  
land.

King Ed-  
ward crowned  
at Westminster.

States created

John Mark-  
ham chief  
Justice.

Record.  
One had his  
hand striken  
off in cheape.

1462.  
Ann. reg. 2.

King Edward  
sat in the  
kings bench  
in open court.

Dukes 2.  
Earles 7.  
Barons 37.  
Knights 59.

Percy, and three hundred men. At the siege wherof, was the Earle of Worcester, the Earle of Arundale, the lord Ogle, the lord Mountague, & 1000. men. In the castle of Dunstanbrough was sir Richard Tunstall, Thomas Findren, doctor Morton and other with 120. men: and at the siege therof, the lord Wenloke, the lord Hastings, and two other lords with 1000. men. The Castle of Alnewike was held by three estates, and 300. men. Against the which was in siege the Earle of Marwick, the earle of Kent, the lord Powes, the baron of Crepstone, the lord Cromwell, & 10000. men. Henry Bewfort Duke of Somerset, sir Ralph Percie, and others beleied Bambrough on Christmasse euen, and were taken to the Kings fauor. King Edward graunted to the Duke of Somerset a 1000. markes by the yere, wherof he was neuer payde, the Earle of Penbroke, sir Thomas Findern, and others went into Scotland.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Durham. And on Saint Johns day, Dunstanbrough was yielded to King Edward.

On the twelue & enen Peirce le Brasle the great warriour of France came to help the Quene Margaret with Frenchmen, and 20000. Scots, to remoue li. Edwards men from Alnewike siege, & the residue of other castles there. By whose comming li. Edwards men were asfraid of the Scots, as reculing from the siege, & the Scots asfraid of Edwards men, least they had reculed to bring them into a trap. And Henries men issuing out, of too much boldnes, gaue Edwards men oportunitie to enter into the castle: on the morow after the twelf day, the Earle of Marwike made 15. knights: these three castles were committed to the keeping of sir Ralph Grey, And after againe King Henry with his quene and their fellowship entred them and kept them

Parliament at London.

The 29. of Aprill began a parliament at Westmister, in the which was ordained that for the terme of three yeres, that there should no wols be conueied out of the land, except those that were beyond the water of Ede to the staple of Calais, and there to be sold, the one halfe for Wolpon, and the other part for Argent content, and all that other remnant of wols, should remaine within the land to make cloth of, and all clothiers should make a broad cloth no shorter then 24. yards in length, and two full yards in breadth: also that no wine tanner in the citie of London, should sell any Wines Calcopne, white, claret, or redde, above 8. pence the gallon. Item that no man or woman, under the estate of a lord or Lords children, weare any cloth of golde, apparell wrought with golde, furs of fables, &c. That no yeoman, or parson under that degre, weare in their array for their bodies any bolsters of wol, cotton or other stufte, or in their dublet any thing save lining equall to the outside. That no person weare gowne, tacket, or cloake, but of such length, as the same man standing upright, the same should couer his buttocks, no any taylor, or stufte or bolster any garment, or to make him shorter or otherwise then was limited, &c. Also, that no man weare shoes or bootes having pikes passing two inches in length, or shoes mak: to make them about that ype, &c.

Wholy

Shortly after Quene Margaret obtained a great power of Scots and other her friends, and so bringing her husband with her, and leaving her sonne called prince Edward, in the towne of Barwicke, entred Northumberland, took the Castle of Bambrough, and stuffed it with Scottish men, and made therof Captaine, Sir Ralph Grey, and came forward to ward the Bishoppe of Durham. Wherof when the Duke of Somerset understode, he without delaie, resolted from King Edward, and fled to King Henry, so like wise did Sir Ralph Percie, and many other of the Kings friends, but many followed King Henry in hope to get spoyle, for his armie bent and spoiled to wnes wheresoener they came.

About Wholsummer the Scots with many French and Englishmen, laid siege to the Castle of Northham, but were forced to leave it as they found it. The Earle of Marwike wan the towne of Barwicke, where he made five Bannerets, and 22. knights, and went into Scotland, where he burnt Lathgibinaban, Tedwoyth, and Galowey, and many other townes, and returned to Barwicke.

This yere a quarter of wheate was solde for two shillings at London, Price of barley for two and twenty pence, pease for three shillings foure pence, and of otes for 14. pence, and in the countrey of Suffolke, a quarter of wheate was sold for 20. pence, malt for 20. pence, barley and otes for 12. pence.

In the month of Aprill, King Edward made great preparation against King Henry, and on S. Pakes day Ralph Percie li. Hungerford, with a great power purposing to haue distressed sir John Neuill, li. Mountacute, was himselfe slaine with many other.

The 15. of May King Henries power being at Berham, the li. Mountacute with a power came thither, & enclosed them round about. There were taken & slaine many lords that were with li. Henry, but he himself was fled foure dales befoze into Lancashire, where he & other lined in causes full hardly unknowne more than a yere. On Trinity Sunday li. Edward made the li. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland & warden of the Marches. The Earles of Marwike & Northumberland took Bambrough castle, and sir Ralph Grey being taken in Bambrough, for that he had twoze to be true to King Edward, was condemned, and had iudgement giuen upon him by the Earle of Worcester high Constable of England, as followeth.

Sir Ralph Grey, for thy treason, the King had ordained that thou shouldst haue had thy spurs striken off by the hard heeles, by the hand of the master coke, who is here ready to do as was promised thee, at the time that he took off thy spurs, and said to thee as is accustomed: That and thou be not true to the soveraigne Lord, he shall smite off thy spurs with his knife hard by the heeles: and so he shewed him the master coke ready to do his office with his axon and his knife. Whereover sir Ralph Grey, the King had ordeyned, here thou maist see, the kings of armes, and heralds, and thine owne proper coat of armes, which they should tear off thy bodie, and so thou shalt be thuswell be disgraced of thy worthip, nobles, and armes, as of thy order of knightthow. Also here is another coat of thine armes recuried, the which

1464.  
Ann. reg. 4.

Battell at Beram.

Judgement against sir Ralph Grey.

The order of disgrading of a Knight.

Estates of  
great stuffe  
or bolstered  
garments, or  
their gar-  
ments.

thou shouldest haue woyn on thy body, going to thy death wards, for that belongeth to thee after the law: notwithstanding the disgrading of knight, hood, and of thine armes, and noble a, the king pardoneth that, for thy noble grand-father, who suffered trouble, for the kings most noble predecessors. Now sir Ralph Grey this shall be thy penance: Thou shalt go on thy feete into the towines end, and there thou shalt be laid downe, and beauen to a scaffold maue for thee, and thou shalt haue thy head smitten off, thy body to be buried in the friers, thy head where the kings pleasure shall bee. This iudgment was pronounced at Doncaster, against the said Ralph Grey, for rebelling, and keeping of the castle of Bambrough against king Edward.

After this king Edward returned to Poike, where in despite of the Earle of Northumberland, which then kept himselfe in the Realme of Scotland, he created sir Iohn Neuill, L. Mountacute Earle of Northumberland, and in repossesse of Iasper earle of Penbrooke, hee created William lord Herbert Earle of Penbrooke: but after when the Earle of Northumberland was reconciled to his fauor, he restored him to his possessions, name and dignitie, and preferred the lord Mountacute to the title of Marquesse Monntacute, so that in degree he was aboue his brother the Earle of Marwicke, but in power and possessions far vnder him.

The Earle of Marwicke was sent ouer into France, to demand the lady Bona, daughter to Lewis Duke of Sauoy, and sister to the lady Carlot then quene of France, which Bona was then in the french court. The earle of Marwicke coming to the french king, as then being at Towres, was of him honorably receiued, & curiously entertained: his message was so well liked for the aduancement of the lady Bona, that his sister quene Carlot obtained both the good will of the king his husband, and also of his sister the foresaid lady, so that the matrimony on that side was clerely assented to, and the Earle of Dampmartine appointed with other to sayle into England, for the full finishing of the same: but in the meane while, on the first of May, king Edward took to wife Elizabeth, daughter to Iaquet ditches of Bedford, sister to the Earle of S. Paule, late wife to sir John Grey, slaine at S. Albons fiedon on king Henries part, which marriage was kept secret almost halfe a yere.

King Edward took the Chaucelozship from the Bishop of Excester, brother to the Earle of Marwicke, and gaue it to the Bishop of Bath.

In the month of Apr, the duke of Somerset, the L. Roos, the L. Molynes, Talbois earle of Elyne, sir Philip Wentworth, sir Thomas Findem, gathered an hoste in the North countrey, & sir Ioh. Neuill earle of Northumberland with 10000. men came vpon them, whom the comons forsaking, their captaines were taken & beheaded. A. Edward fearing the L. Mountacute, who he had of late made earle of Northumberland, he caused the men of the countrey to desire the rightfull heire Percie son to Henry that was slaine at Poike fiedon: & so Percie was restored, & Mountacute was made a Marques, and his son duke of Bedford, which should haue been the kings eldest daughter, and so by possibility should be king of England, thus was he sed with faire words, but nothing

Armit earle  
of Northum-  
berland, and  
Herbert earle  
of Penbrooke.

R. Edward  
married.

Duke of So-  
merfet and o-  
ther beheaded.

Earle of No-  
thumberland  
made Mar-  
quesse Mon-  
tacute

nothing perfozmed. About Michaclmas the king held a counsell at Reading, where the quene was shewco openly, and receiued as quene. After this wedding known, the earle of Marwicke and A. Edward were neuer friends.

The spinsters of Poike, the temple of Christs church in Pozwich, part of the priory of Christs church in London, the steeple of Saint spary spittle at London with the cloyster, were bent this yere.

This yere the 22. of January, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein it was enacted that no merchandise coming out of Flaunders, or out of any land of the duke of Burgoyne, should be sold within any ground of England. Also king Edward caused a new coyn to be made, which hee gained much, for he made of an old noble a royall, which he commanded to go for 10.s. neuertheless to the same royall was put 8.d. of alay, & so weised the moze by 8.d. being smitten with a new stampe: he likewise made halfo angels of 5.s. and farthings of 2.s. 6.d. anglelets of 6.s. 8.d. and half anglets, 3.s. 4.d. he made silver monies of 3. d. a grote, & so of other coines after that rate, to the great harme of the commons. I finde by recozde, that William lord Hastings the kings Chamberlaine, was made master of the kings mints or monies of gold or silver in the Tower of London, his Realme of England, territory of Ireland, and towne of Calais, with the Marches of the same: the which lord Hastings undertooke to make the same monies vnder for in following, to wit, of gold, a piece for 8. shillings 4. pence sterlings, which should be called a noble of gold, of the which there should be 50 such pieces in the pound weight of the tower, an other piece of gold 4. shillings 2. pence of sterlings, & to be of them 100. such pieces in the pound: and a thirde piece of golde weying the fourth part of the first, for two shillings one peny sterlings, and 200. such pieces in the pound, and enery pound weight of the sayd tower, to be worth 20. pound, 16. shillings 8. pence of sterlings, the which should be 23. Carrets, 3. graines and halfe fine, &c. And for silver, 37. shillings 6. pence of sterlings, the piece of 4. pence to be 112. groates, & 2. pence in the pound weight, &c. thus much out of the recozde.

On the Ascension day king Edward made 48. knightes of the Bath within the tower of London, amongst the which, was of that company sir Thomas Cooke, sir Mathew Philip, and Ralph Ioceline, and sir Henrie Waur Citizens of London made knightes: and vpon the 26. of May, Quene Elizabeth was crowned at Westminster with a great solemnitie: her father also was created Erle of Huiuers, and made high Constable of England, his brother lord Anthony was married to the sole heire of Thomas lord Scales: sir Thomas Grey, son to sir John Grey the Quenes first husband, was created Marquesse Dorset, and married to Cicely heire to the lord Bonville.

King Henry was taken in Cletherwode, beside Hungerley Hypping, stons in Lancastyr, by Thomas Talbot sonne and heire to sir Edward Talbot of Walsall, and Iohn Talbot his cousin of Coleby, which deceived him being at his dinner at Waddington Hall, and brought him towarde London, with his legs bounde to the stirrops, where he was met by the earle of Marwicke, and arrested at Celydon, and forthwith his gilt spurs were ta-

Winter of  
Poike burned.

1465.

Armit 5.  
Coine enbaum-  
sed.

Knightes of the  
Bath.

Quene Elisa-  
beth crowned.

King Henry  
taken.

ken from his fête, doctor Manning Deane of Winsoze, doctor Bedle and young Ellerton being in his companie, with their fête bounde under the horse bellies, were brought through the Citie to the Tower of London, where the king was kept long time.

It was proclaimed throughout England, that the beakes or pikes of shone and bootes shoulde not passe two inches, upon paine of cursing by the clergy, and forfeiting 20. s. to be paid one noble to the king, one other to the Cordwainers of London, and the third to the chamber of London, and for other cities and townes the like order was taken. Before this time and since the yere of our Lord, 1382. the pikes of shoes and bootes were of such length, that they were faine to be tied by to their knees with chaines of silver gilt, or at the least with silke laces.

King Edward concluded an amitie & league with Henry King of Castile and John King of Aragon, at the concluding whereof, he granted licence for certain Cotswold shepe to be transported into y<sup>e</sup> countrie of Spain, which haue there since mightily increased and multiplied, to the Spanish profit, as it is said: but true it is, that long ere this were shepe in Spain, as may appere by a patten of king Henry the second, the 31. of his reigne, granted to the treasurers of London, that if any cloth were found to be made of Spanish wool, mixed with English wool, the makers of London shoulde for it bent.

Besides this, to haue amitie with his ner neighbour the king of Scots, he wished at the losse of Barwicke, and was contented to take a truce for fiftene yeres.

The 11. of februarye Quene Elizabeth was deliuered at Westminster of a daughter also named Elizabeth, who was long after married to King Henry the 7. whose Christening was done in the abbey with the most solemnities that might be, and the more, because the king was assured by his physicians, that the Quene was conceived with a prince, which passed of her wife as ye haue heard.

This yere was the Lord Hungerford, sir Thomas Hungerford knight, sonne to the Lord Hungerford, and Henry Courteney of right Earle of Devonshire, beheaded at Salisbury. The Lord Stafford of Southwicke procured the said Courteney's death, to be made Earle of Devonshire, as in breue he was shortly after.

King Edward though the refusal of the french kings sister in law (as ye haue heard) wan him enemies in France, wherefore in other places he procured him friends, but those friends had stand him in small keede, if fortune had not holpe him to another, euen at his elbow. This was Charles Earle of Charoloy, sonne and heire apparant vnto Philip Duke of Burgoyne, which Charles being then a widower, was counsailed to be a suter vnto King Edward to haue in marriage the Ladie Margaret, sister to the same king, a ladie of excellent beauty, and thought not but w<sup>o</sup>thy to match with the greatest prince of the world.

Anthony the Bastard of Burgoyne, called the earle of the Roche, brother to y<sup>e</sup> said earle Charoloy, a man of great wit, courage, & valiantie, was appointed

pointed by his father Duke Philip to go into England in embassage about this sate, who being furnished for his estate, hauing in his company gentlemen and other expert in all feats of chivalry, and martiall prowes, to the number of 400. horses, toke ship, and arriued in England, where he was of the king and nobles honourably receiued. His message being declared, was toposilly heard of the king, the which by that assintie saw, how they mought be assured of a buckler against the French: the king therefore granted to the bastards request, and the said bastard openly in the kings great chamber contracted the said Ladie Margaret, for, and in the name of his brother the Earle of Charoloy.

Walter Blunt made Baron, and Lord Mountjoy.

The third of June, began a Parliament at Westminster, where in was returned to the kings hands, all manner of gifts that had bene giuen from the first day he toke possession of the Realme, to that tyme, except certaine things then excepted.

Also this yere in diuers places of England, many men were arrested, and treason suspected against them, wherethrough many of them were put to death, and the other escaped for great sums of money: amongst the which sir Thomas Cooke, sir John Plumer knights, Humfrey Heyford, and other Aldermen of London were arrested, and charged with treason, wherof they were acquite, but they lost of their goods to the king, to the value of 4000. markes, or more, as some haue written: and for example, the fornamed sir Thomas Cooke late Mayor of London, was by one named Hawkins apprehended of treason, for the which he was committed to the Tower: his place in London sealed by the Lord Rivers, and his Lady and seruants clerly put out thereof. The cause was this: the fornamed Hawkins, came by on a season vnto the said sir Thomas, requesting to lend him a 1000. markes upon good surety, whereunto he answered, that he would first kno<sup>o</sup> for to whom it should be, and for what intent: at length vnderstanding it should be for the use of Quene Margaret, he answered, he had no currant wares whereof any gift might be made without too much losse, and therefore required Hawkins to moue him no further for he intended not to deale withal, yet the said Hawkins required but one hundred pound, at length, and went without it, or the value of one peny, and neuer came againe to moue him, which so rested two or thre yeres after, till the said Hawkins was cast in the Tower, and at length brought to the stake, called the Duke of Excesters daughter (because he was the deuiser of that torture) by meanes of which paine he thewed many things, amongst the which the motion he had made to sir Thomas Cooke was one, by meanes wherof sir Thomas Cooke was troubled as ye haue heard, and one lury, by meanes of sir John Fogge, indited him of treason: after which, an iury determiner was kept in the Guildhall, in which sate with the Mayor, the Duke of Clarence, the earle of Warwick, the Lord Rivers, sir John Fogge, with other of the kings counsel, to the which place the said sir Thomas was brought, & there arraigned upon life and death, where he was acquitted of the said indictment, and sent to the

Baro Mountjoy.  
Parliament at Westminster.

Lib. Erfwicke.

Sir Thomas Cooke his troubles.

The Duke, or Hache in the Tower called the Duke of Excesters daughter.

Long pikes  
shoes, & bootes.

Shepe  
transported  
ouer sea.

1566

An. reg. 6.  
Hungerford  
and Courteney  
executed.

1467.

An. reg. 7.

counter in Breadstreet, and from thence to the Kings bench: being acquitted, his wife got again possession of his house, the which he found in an euill plight: for the seruants of sir John Fogge and the Lord Rivers had made haueock of what they liked. Also at his place of Stoddy hall in Essex, another sort had destroyed the dore in his park, his conies, and fish, & spared not brasse, pewter, bedding, and all what they might carry: for the which might neuer one penny be gotten in recompence, nor sir T. Cooke be deliuered, till he had paid 8000. pound to the king, and 800. pound to the Quene, and for that sir John Markham knight, chiefe Justice of the pleas, determined somewhat against the kings pleasure (that the offence done by sir T. Cooke was no treason, but misprision, the which was no desert of death, but to be fined at the kings pleasure) the Lord Rivers and the Dutches of Bedford his wife procured that he lost his office afterward in the 12. yere of Edward the fourth.

Lord chiefe Justice lost his office for doing iustice.

Justices in Smithfield.

The marriage aforesaid concluded, the bastard of Burgoigne chalenged the Lord Scales, brother to the Quene, to fight with him, both on horse back and on foot: which chalenge the Lord Scales gladly accepted, the king causing lists to be prepared in west Smithfield of London for these champions, the length of 120. fadlers yards, and ten fote: and in breadth 80. yards and ten fote, double barred, fenc foot betwene the bars, the timber & workmanship wherof cost two hundred markes, besides faire and costly galleries for the ladies and other. At the which martiall enterpryse, king Edward himselfe with his nobility was present. The first day being the Thursday next after Corpus Christi day, they met together with sharpe speares, and departed with equal honour. The next day they turneyed on horse backe, the Lord Scales horse had on his chafron a long sharpe pike of Steele, and as the two champions coaped together, the same horse thrust his pike into the nostrils of the bastards horse, so that for very paine he mounted so high, that he fell on the one side with his master, and the Lord Scales rode about him with his sword downe in his hand, till the king commaunded the marshall to helpe by the bastard, who openly said, I cannot holde me by the cloude, for though my horse faile me, I will not faile my encounter-companion, but the king would not suffer them to do any more that day. The next morning, the two noble men came into the field on foot, with two poleaxes, and fought balliantly, but at the last the point of the pollaxe of the Lord Scales happened to enter into the sight of the bastards helme, and by fine force might haue plucked him on his knees: but the king suddenly cast downe his warder, and then the marshall severed them. The bastard not content with this chance, required the king of Justice, that he might performe his enterpryse: the Lord Scales refused not: but the king calling to him the constable & the marshall, with the officers at armes, after consultation had, it was declared for a sentence definitiue, by the Duke of Clarence then constable of England, and the Duke of Norfolk then marshall, that if he would go forward with his attempted chalenge, he must by the law of armes, be deliuered to his aduersary, in the same state and

like

like condition, as he stood when he was taken from him. The bastard bearing this iudgement, doubted the issue of the matter, and so relinquished his chalenge. Other chalenges were done, and balliantly achieved by the Englishmen, which I passe over. Shortly after came sorrowfull things to the bastard, that his father Duke Philip was dead, and thereupon taking his leaue of king Edward, and his sister the new Dutches of Burgoigne liberally rewarded, returned to his brother the new Duke. This yere diuers persons being common Trowes, such as at Assises were forsworne for rewards, or fauour of parties, were indged to ride from Selwgate to the pillory in Cornhill with miters of paper on their heads, and then againe to Selwgate: and this iudgement was giuen by the Sheres of London.

Charles Duke of Burgoigne desirous to see his new wife, wrote to king Edward, requiring him to send his sister ouer vnto him, according to the commandments passed betwene them.

King Edward on the other side not lacking the matter, first called a Parliament, which began at Westminster on the eight of May, wherein was granted two sixtines and a dismy.

1468.

Falsie Trowes set on the pillory.

An. reg. 8.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 18. of June Margaret sister to king Edward the fourth, beganne her journey from the Wardrobe in London, toward her marriage with Charles Duke of Burgoigne: first she offered in the Church of Saint Paul, and then rode through the City, the earle of Warwick riding beside her, with earles and barons a great number, the Dutches of Norfolk, with other ladies and gentlewomen in great number. And at her entry into Cheap, the Sheres of London and his brethren the Aldermen presented her with a paire of rich basons, and in them an hundred pound of gold, and that night she lodged at the Abbey of Stratford, where the king then lay: from thence she toke her journey to Canterbury. The king riding after to see her shipping, on the first of July she toke the sea at Margate, and there toke leaue of the king her brother, and departed. There returned back again with the king, the Duke of Clarence, the Duke of Gloucester, the Earles of Warwick, Shrewsbury, & Northumberland. And there abode with her in the ship, the Lord Scales, the Lord Daeres chamberlaine, sir John Woodville, sir John Howard, and many other famous Knights and Esquires: she was shipped in the new Ellen of London, and in her naup the John of Spelwicke, the Mary of Salisbury, and many other royall ships, and on the morrow landed at Sluce in flanders, and as soon as her ship and company of ships were entred into the haven, there receiued her sir Simon de Lelien & the water bailly, in diuers boats & barks apparelled ready for her landing. The first estate that receiued her was the Bishop of Stright wel accompanied, & the countesse of Hozne bastard daughter to Duke Philip of Burgoigne, & with her many ladies & gentlewomen, and so proceeding in at the gate of the towne, the same towne was presented to her, she to be soueraigne lady thereof: also they gaue her 12. markes of gold Troy waight, the which was 200. pound of English money, and so she proceeded through the towne to her lodging, every householder standing in the street with a torch in his hand burning.

Lady Margaret receiued the kinges sister married to the Duke of Burgoigne.

On

On the morrow the olde Dutches of Burgoigne came to her, accompanied with many great estates. On the thirde of July came the Duke of Burgoigne to Salace with twentie persons secretly, and was there openly affianced to the Lady Margaret, by the bishop of Salisbury and the Lord Scales, in presence of the Lord Dacre, the Dutches of Norfolk, the Lady Scales, and all the knights, Esquires, and Gentlewomen environing the chamber.

On the eight of July being Saturday, by the Duke of Burgoignes appointment, the Lady Margaret removed by water to the Dame. And on the Sunday in the morning betwixt five and six of the clocke, the marriage was solemnized betwixt them by the Bishops of Salisbury and of Turney, there being present the olde dutches of Burgoigne, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacre, with the knights, Esquires, Ladies and Gentlewomen that came out of England: the great triumphs, feasting, the wes of pagants, with other strange deuises and iustings, were such as I haue not read the like, and would beouer long in this place to set downe.

In the ende of August the Castell of Harlow was won by the assault of the Lord Herbert, the which Castell was one of the strongest holdes in Wales.

This yere many murmurous tales ranne in the City between the Earle of Warwicke and the Quenes blood, the which Earle was euer had in great fauour of the commons of this land, by reason of the exceeding house hold which he daily kept in all countries where euer he sojourned or lay: and when he came to London, he held such an house, that sixe Oren were eaten at a breakfast, and every Lanerne was full of his meat, so: who that had any acquaintance in that house, he should haue had as much sodden and rost as he might carpe upon a long dagger.

This Duke of Clarence went to Calais, and there wedded Isabell one of the daughters of the Earle of Warwicke. Sir Iohn Coniers knight, Robert Hilliard, who named himselfe Robin of Riddale, and other, gathered an host of 2000. men in the North, against whom king Edward sent W. Herbert late made Earle of Pembroke, with 18000. Welchmen, and Humfrey Stafford of Southwicke, late made Earle of Deuon, with 6000. good archers, which two Carles falling out for lodging in the towne of Banbury, Humfrey Stafford departed with his power, whereby G. Herbert and Ric. Herbert his brother were overcome and taken by them of the north, and 5000. (saith Hall) of the Welchmen slain in a plaine called Dances more nere to the towne of Edgercote, thre miles from Banbury, the 26. of July. The men of name slaine of the Welch party, were sir Roger Vaughan knight, Henry ap Morgan, T. ap Richard Vaughan Esquire, W. Herbert of Brecknocke Esquire, Warkin Thomas sonne to Rog. Vaughan, Inan ap Iohn ap Meridick, Dauid ap Iankin ap Limorik, Harrison ap Pikton, Iohn Done of Kidwelly, Rice ap Morgan ap Vllton, Iankin Perot ap Scotres Burg, Iohn Euerard of Pembroke shire, Iohn Courtoir of Hereford. The northren men of name slaine were, sir Henry Latimer sonne and heire to the Lord Latimer, sir Roger Pigot knight, Iames Coniers sonne and heire to sir Iohn Coniers knight,

Harlow Castle won.

Earle of Warwicke his house keeping.  
Rob. Fabian.

1469.  
Robert of Riddale.  
An. reg. 9.

Edgercote field, some call it Banbury field.

Oliuer Audley Esquire, Th. Wakes sonne and heire to W. Mallery Esquire: Richard Woodville Lord Riuers with Iohn his sonne were taken in the forefront of Deane, and brought to Southampton, where they with sir W. Herbert and Richard his brother were all foure beheaded by the commaundement of George Duke of Clarence and the Earle of Warwicke. T. Herbert was slain at Bristow. T. Stafford was by the commons taken at Bidge water and beheaded. King Edward was taken at Alnag, a village beate Southampton, by the Archbishop of Yorke, and brought to Warwicke Castell, and thence to Yorke, from whence by false promises he escaped, and came to London.

The 29. of September, Humfrey Newill knight, and Charles his brother were taken by the Earle of Warwicke, and beheaded at York, king Edward being present. In the moneth of March, the Lord Willoughby, Rich. Lord Wels, sir Robert his sonne, sir Tho. Delaband, sir Tho. Dimocke the kinges Champion, came out of Lincolnshire sir Tho. Burgh a knight of the kings house, pulled downe his place, and toke all his goods and cattell, and with 30000. of the commons, cried king Henry. King Edward gaue Lord Wels his pardon, and sent for him, and hauing him in custody, commaunded him upon paine of death, to cause the Lincolnshire men to lay downe their best, and so he wrote, but all in vaine: whereupon the Lord Wels his head was cut off. King Edward dispersed the Lincolnshire men with his ordinance, and slae many of them: sir Robert Wels, sir Thomas Delaband, & sir Thomas Dimocke were taken and beheaded before Stamford the 13. of March: and the 19. day the Lord Willoughby was beheaded at Doncaster.

King Edward coming to Hampton, caused Iohn Tiptoft Earle of Worcester (and Constable of England for terme of his life) to sit in iudgement upon Clapham, and other Gentlemen taken in the ships, at a skirmish of Southampton, where to the number of twenty persons gentlemen and peomen were hanged, hanged and beheaded: and after hanged by the legs on a gallows of a paire of butts long, and then haining flukes put in their fundaments, their heads were set on those flukes (an horrible spectacle) and so suffered to hang a long time after, to wit, till the 15. of May. The Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwicke fled into France, where they made a marriage betwixt Prince Edward sonne to king Henry the first, and one of the Earle of Warwicks daughters. At this marriage was concluded, that king Henry should raigine againe, and Prince Edward after, and so: lacke of their heires George Duke of Clarence, and his heires, &c.

The 13. day of September, George Duke of Clarence, Iasper Earle of Pembroke, Richard Earle of Warwicke, the Earle of Oxford, with the barons Fauconbridge, and many other arrived at Plymouth, and another host at Dartmouth, of whom the Earle of Pembroke went into Wales, the other toward Exeter, proclaiming in the name of King Henry, that all men betwixt the ages of 16. & 60. should be ready to assist the said Lords on the behalfe of King Henry, against King Edward. Also on the Sunday next after the feast of Saint Michael the Archangell Doctor Godard preaching at Pauls crosse, declared by the reading of bills and diuers other argumens

King Edward took a prisoner.

1470.

An. reg. 10.  
King Edward pardoned, and beheaded the Lord Wels.

Tiptoft Earle of Worcester crucified.

George Duke of Clarence, & the Earle of Warwicke fled into France.

George Duke of Clarence and other landed at Plymouth.

Doctor Godard preached at Pauls crosse against King Edward.



and proves, that Henry was true and lawful king of England, and not king Edward. Moreover, the Marques Mountacute, who had gathered a five thousand men in king Edwards name, and was come hère unto the said Edward, he told them how king Edward had served him: first, making him Earle of Northumberland, and after giving the same earldome to Thomas Percy, made him marques Mountacute, allowing him a pices neck to maintaine it withal: wherefore he would leave to serve him, & take part with the Earle of Marwick his brother. Whereof when king Edward understood, he fled from his host, besides Nottingham, and the third day of October, he with the Lord Rivers, Lord Hastings his chamberlaine, the Lord Say, and other to the number of seven or eight Carles, took shipping at Lin, and sailed to ward the Duke of Burgoigne his brother in law.

The Quene had before that, to wit, on the first of October stole secretly in the night out of the Tower of London by water to Westminster, and there taken sanctuary. This time was great watch kept in the City of London: for the Kentishmen had assembled themselves in great companies, and so had come to the outer part of the Citie, as to Ratclif, Saint Kathrines, Southwarke, and other the suburbs, and many of them were entred the citie, where they robbed the Flemmings at Blanchapleton, and other places, making them to flee out of the citie with sorrow ynough.

On Wendesday following, the tower of London was yielded to the Duke and his brethren the Aldermen, who forthwith entred the same, and delivered king Henrie of his imprisonment, and lodged him in the Kingles lodging. On the Friday following came to London the Archbishop of Yorke, brother to the Earle of Marwick, the lord Bishop of Saint Johns, and other to the number of two thousand men of armes. On the morrow following, came the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Marwick, the bassarde Fauconbridge, with other to the number of foure thousand men. On the first day of October the duke of Clarence, the Earle of Marwick, the archbishop of Yorke, the lord of Saint Johns, with other entred the tower of London, and king Henrie being there prisoner nigh the space of nine yeres, they elected him to be their lawful king, and forthwith rode with him through London to the Bishoppes pallace, where hee rested till the 13. of October, on which day hee went a procession crowned in Pauls Church: the Earle of Marwick bare his traine, and the earle of Orford his sword, &c.

King Edward was proclaimed usurper of the crowne, and John Tiptoft earle of Worcester being found in the top of an high tree in the foreest of Waibridge in the county of Huntington, was brought to London at parliament arrested and condemned to death by sir John Vere earle of Orford, and beheaded at the tower hill, and after buried at the Blackfriars.

Quene Elizabeth wife to Edward the fourth, being in the sanctuary at Westminster, was delivered of a prince on the fourth of November, who was after king Edward the fifth.

King Edward with the Lord Hastings, the lord Say, nine hundred Englishmen, and three hundred Flemmings, would have landed in Essex, but there

King Edward fled beyond the sea.  
Phil. Comine-  
us.

The Quene took sanctuary at Westminster. Kentishmen robbed the Flemmings, and chased them out of London.  
The tower of London yielded to the duke of Clarence.

George Duke of Clarence the Earle of Marwick: a other restored king Edward.

1472.  
Prince Edward borne in the sanctuary.

there the Earle of Orford his brother put them off, and after hee landed soze weather-beaten at Ravenspoyne, within humber on Holderness, and there rose on him Holborne sicke me, whose captaine was sir John Wetterdale a priest, after cast into the Bartholmea at London. As king Edward passed the country, he showed the earle of Northumberland's letters and scale, that sent for him, saying, that he came to claime no title of the crowne, but only his dukedome of Yorke, nor would not have done afoze, but at the erecting of the earle of Marwick, & cried in every place, king Henry, & prince Edward, wearing an Erich leather ynlince Edwards livery. King Edward came to Nottingham, where sir William Stanley, sir William Norris, and divers other brought him men, so that hee had then 4000. or more. Then Edward marched toward Leicester, where the earle of Marwick and marques Mountacute had 4000. men, and would have fought with king Edward, but that hee had received letters from the Duke of Clarence, that he should not fight untill he came. Whereupon hee keeping Leicester still, suffered Edward to march toward London. A little out of Marwick the duke of Clarence with 7000 men meeting with king Edward, agreed to him and bade al the promises made in France. King Edward coming to London, by master Walslake the Recorders means, and others, entred into the bishop of Londons palace by a posterne, and there took king Henry and the archbishop of Yorke, and sent them both to the tower on Saunday thursday.

The Earle of Marwick, the Duke of Excester, marques Mountacute, and the earle of Orford, with many knights, came with their host toward Barnet: wherefore king Edward took king Henry with him, and procured the towne of Barnet all the night: the Earle of Marwick and his retinue remained on the plaine without the towne, shooting guns one at the other. And in the morning being Easter day, and the 14. of Aprill, they fought in a thicke mist from fower of the clove in the morning til ten, and divers times the earle of Marwick's men supposed that they had got the victory of the field, but it happened that the earle of Orford's me had a flag with streames both before and behind on their liveries, and king Edwards men had the sun with streames on their livery: whereupon the Earle of Marwick's men, by reason of the mist not well discerning the badges so like, shot at the Earle of Orford's men that were on their owne part, and then the earle of Orford and his men cried treason, and fled with eight hundred men. The marques Mountacute was piously agreed with Is. Edward, and had gotten on his livery, but one of his brothers the Earle of Marwick's men elpping this, fell upon him and killed him.

The earle of Marwick seeing his brother dead, and the Earle of Orford fled, leapt on a horse to fly, and committing to a towpe where was no passage, two of king Edwards men came to him, killed him, and spoiled him to the naked skin. Sir William Tyrrell knight was killed on the earle of Marwick's part. The Duke of Excester fought manfully and was disloyed, wounded, & left for dead from seven in the morning til fower of the clocke in the after-noon, and then being brought to a servants house of his there by

Edward the fourth landed at Ravenspoyne.  
An. reg. 11.

George of Clarence agreed with his brother Edward the fourth.  
King Henrie a. gaine sent to the tower.

Barnet fight.



by called Ruthland, he had a chirurgion, and after was conveyed into Westminster sanctuary. Whereaine on King Edwards party, Humfrey Boucher Lord Cromwell, Henry Boucher sonne and heire to the Lord Barons both buried at Westminster: sir John Lisle was there slain, also Th. a Par & John Milwater Esquires to R. Duke of Gloucester were there slain: and on both parts to the number of foure thousand, which were buried on the same plaite halfe a mile from Barnet, where after a chappell was builded in memory of them.

John Raill.

The morow after Caffer day, were the bodies of the Earle of Marwick and the Marques Mountacute laid naked in Pauls Church in London, that al men might see them, for the space of thre or foure daies, and then buried at Wislam Priory in Barkshire; the Lord Barons was reverently buried in the friers Augustines Church at London. King Henry with the Archbishop of Poike, were sent to the Tower of London.

Battell of Tewkesbury. Liber Tew. Painter Edward come to Henry the first, cruelly slain.

At this time Quene Margaret, and Prince Edward her sonne had lien on the sea 17. daies licted with foule weather, and on Caffer day at dawn they landed with their french Raup at Weymouth, and so came to Excester, from thence to Tewkesbury, and pitched their field by Seuerne. Edward the fourth being come from London, fought with prince Edward at Tewkesbury on the fourth of May, took Quene Margaret prisoner with prince Edward her sonne, whom cruelly he smote on the face with his gantlet, and after his servants due him, Edmond Duke of Somerset, and sir Hugh Courtney fled from Prince Edward & lost him the field. There was slain Courtney Earle of Devonshire, Lord John of Somerset, Lord Wenlocke, sir Edmond Hamden, sir William Whittingham, sir William Vaus, sir Nicholas Harwic, sir John Deluis, sir William Filding, sir John Leukenor, sir VV. Lirmonth, sir John Viman, sir T. Seamer, sir VV. Rowle, sir Thomas Henry. King Edward entring a Church in Tewkesbury with his sword drawn, a Priest brought the sacrament against him, and would not let him enter untill he had granted his pardon to these that follow: Edmond Duke of Somerset, John Bouge Strother Lord of Saint Johns, sir Humfrey Audley, sir Geruis of Clifton, sir VVilliam Grimesby, sir VVilliam Carie, sir Henry Rose, sir Thomas Trefham, sir VVilliam Newbrough, knights, Henry Trefham, VValter Courtney, John Florie, Lewes Miles, Robert Jackson, James Gower sword bearer to Prince Edward, James Deluis sonne and heire to sir John Deluis: all these, where they might have escaped, carried in the Church (trusting in the kings pardon) from saturday till monday, when they were taken out and beheaded.

About this time sir VValter VVroile, and sir Geoffrey Gates knights, governors of Calais, sent sir George Broke knight from Calais with three hundred soldiers, to Thomas the bassard Fauconbridge, Captaine of the Earle of Marwicks garrison, willing him to raise the countie of Kent, and to go to London, there to take king Henry out of the Tower, and then to go against King Edward.

The fourteenth day of May, Thomas the bassard with a riotous compa-

Thomas the bassard.

ny of shipmen, and other of Essex and Kent, came to London, where being denied passage through the city, he set upon Bishopps gate, Aldgate, London bridge &c. along the Thames side, shooting arrows and guns into the city, fired the suburbs, and burnt more than 60. houses, wane the ballworks at Aldgate, and entered the city, but the porteclose being let down, such as had entered were slain, and then the citizens pursued the rest so far as Stratford and Blackwall, slaying many, and took many prisoners. Thomas the bassard went from London westward, as far as Ivingstone upon Thames, to prosecute B. Edward, but the Lord Scales, with Nicholas Faunt Prior of Canterbury, by faire words caused Fauconbridge to returne to Blackheath in Kent, from whence in the night he stole from the host with 600. horsemen to Rochester, and so to Sandwich, where he abode the kings coming.

The one and twentieth of May king Edward came to London with his tie house and men: and the same night king Henry was murdered in the Tower of London. On the morrow he was brought through Cornhill, from the Tower with a great companie of men bearing weapons as they should have led him to some place of execution, to St. Pauls church in London, in an open coffin bare faced, where he bled: thence he was carried to the Blacke Friers, and there bled: and thence to Chertsey Abbey in a bote, where he was then buried, but since by king Richard the third, in the second year of his reign, removed to Windsor, where hee was buried without the chancel, at the south doore of the quire of Windsor chappell, where he was worshipped by the name of holy king Henric: whose redde hat of velvet was thought to break the head of such as should put it on their heads, there he rested for a time, but now his tombe being taken thence, it is not (commonly) knowne what is become of his bodie.

Thus ended the king his transitorie life, having enjoyed as great prosperitie, as favourable fortune could afford, and as great troubles on the other side, as the frowning could power out: yet in both states hee was patient, and vertuous, that hee made bee a patterne of most perfect vertue, as hee was a worthy example of fortunes inconstancie: he was plaine, upright, farre from fraude, wholie given to prayer, reading of Scriptures, and almesdeeds, of such integritie of life, that the Bishop which had bene his confessor tenne yeres, touched that he had not all that time committed any mortal crime: So continent as suspicion of unchastitie never touched him: and having in Christmasse a flock of young women with their bare braides laid out, presented before him, he immediately departed; with these wordes, sir, for shame, forsooth you bee to blame: before his marriage hee liked not that women should enter into his Court, and for this respect hee committed his two brethren by the mothers side, Jasper and Edmond, to most honest and vertuous Prelates, to bee brought up. So farre hee was from covetousnesse, that when the executors of his uncle the Bishoppe of Winchester, surname the rich Cardinall, would have given to him two thousand pounde, hee plainly refused it, willing them to discharge the will of the departed, and would scarcely condescende at length to accept the same summe of money

King Henry murdered.

Henry the first his exercise.

Continuance of Henry the first.

Henry the first not covetous. Henry Newbold Cardinal gave 2000 pound towards the Colledge.

toward the embowling of his Colledges in Cambridge and Eaton: he was so religiously affected (as the time then was) that on principall holidaies, hee would weare sackecloth next his skinne. Wh he used none, but in most earnest matters these words: forsooth, and forsooth; he was so pittifull, that when comming from Saint Albons, hee saue the quarter of a traitour against his crowne ouer Cripple gate, hee willed it to be taken awate, with these wordes: I will not haue anie Christian so cruellie handled for my sake; manie greate offences hee willinglie pardoned, and recleuing at a time a greate blowe by a wicked man, which compassed his death, hee onlie saide, forsooth, forsooth, yea so folle to smite a king annointed so. Another also which thrust him in the shoe with a sword, when hee was prisoner in the Tower, was by him pardoned, when hee was restored to his state and kingdome: not long before his death, beeing demanded why hee had so long helde the Crowne of Englande vniuersitie, hee replied, my Father was King of Englande, and eitle enioying the Crowne all his Reigne, and his father my Grandfather was also King of Englande; and I, euen a Child in my Cradle, was proclaymed and Crowned King without anie interruption, and so helpe it fortie peeres well nere, all the States dooing homage unto mee, as to my Auncellores; wherefore I maie saie with King David: The Lord is fallen vnto mee in a faire grounde, yea, I haue a goodlie heritage, my helpe is from the Lord which sanctifieth the brighte in heart. Hee reigned eyght and thirtie peeres, ffre monethes and odde dayes. And after his redemption of the crowne nine monethes; he liued 52. yeres, hauing by his wife one onely son, called Edward Prince of Wales, deceased as ye haue heard; hee was of famly stature, of body slender, his face beautifull, of his owne naturall inclination, hee abhorred all the vices as well of the body as of the soule.

And now to returne to king Edward. At his comming to London, the Spaloz, Aldermen and other citizens meeting him one mile without the Citie, to witte, butwist Iffeldon, and soile ditch, in the high way hee made knights the se Aldermen, Sir Iohn Stokton Spaloz of London, Sir Ralph Verney, Sir Richard Lee, Sir Iohn Yong, Sir William Taylor, Sir George Ireland, Sir William Stocker, Sir Mathewe Philip, Sir William Hampton, Sir Thomas Stalbrok, Sir Iohn Crosby, Sir Bartlemew James, Sir T. O. Richard Yrwise, Recorder of London, all the he made knights, in reward of good seruice the Londoners had don to him. On the 24. day of May king Edward after he had made baronets, Sir Thomas Grey, Sir Richard Hastings, Sir Iohn Courtney, Sir Nicholas Latimer, Sir Ralph Hastings, Sir Roger Tegets, Sir Iohn Stanley, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir Iohn Heningham, Sir William Stanley, &c. hee toke his tourney into Kent, with all his army following the bastard, and other his complices to suppress them, if they were in anie place assembled to resist him; but after they were once dispersed, they durst not shew their mielnes again in arms, those onelie excepted that were with: aunc vnto Sandwiche with the bastard, which for the more parte were mariners, an 8. or 9. hundred, with the he kept the town, hauing in the hauen 47. ships great and smal under his gouernment; but the 3. appoynting, they sent to him for pardon, which the king granted, and being

Henry the first  
his o. br.  
Dietalines &  
patience of  
the first.

Taping of the  
first.

Edw the 4. m.  
red London.

Aldermen of  
London made  
knights.

Baronets  
made.

being in the citie of Canterburie, he sent vnto Sandwiche his brother Richard duke of Gloucester, to receiue them to mercie, together with all the shippes, which they deliuered: whereupon king Edward not onlie pardoned the bastard, but made him knight, and Vice-admirall. The Lord Denham and Sir Iohn Fog, with other were left in Kent, to sit in iudgement of the rebels of Kent, Sussex, and Essex, whereof were a greate number punished by the Purse, some 200. marks, some 200. l. some more, some lesse. The king Edward returned out of Kent with much good, and little loue. Nicholas Fant Spaloz of Canterbury (that had serued the earle of Warwicke, and had of late perswaded the bastard to depart from his office, and diuers other of his countrey men) were hanged and quartered, and the heads of Spiling and Quinten were set vpon Albegate of London. On the 4. day of June, George Neuell archbishop of York, and brother to the late earle of Warwicke, and the Marques Mountacute, was deliuered out of the Tower of London, and discharged of his imprisonment.

The 1. of July Edward the son of king Edward, was made prince of Wales, duke of Lancaster, and earle of Cornewall.

In the month of September Thomas the barbarde Fauconbridge, was taken at Southampton by Richard Duke of Gloucester, hee was conueied to the Castell of Middleham in Yorkshire, and there beheaded, notwithstanding that hee had the kings pardon, his head was sent to London, and set on London bridge.

The earle of Penbrooke and of Richmond fled into Brytaine.

The 12. of December the lady Anne the kings sister, was disioined from Henry Holland duke of Excester, by meanes of her owne sute.

King Edward kept his Christmasse at Westminster, where hee with his quene on the same feast daie late crowned, and likewise on the Twelste daie the king was again crowned, and went on procession crowned, but the quene was not then crowned, because she was nere her time of deliuerance, but she went on procession with him; the king kept his estate in the White-hall, with his Prelates and noble estates, where also dwined the Spaloz of London, the aldermen, and manie of the wealthy citizens.

This yere diuers boznes braft out of the earth, signifying great troubles to ensue, as was iudged: amongst the which boznes one was seauen miles, from Saint Albons, at Parkate, the water was called *Woo Mere*, or *Woo Water*, for that the running thereof was interpreted to signifie too to come, as dearth, pestilence, or great battaile; this water had runne against euerie battell before fought, but neuer so much as now this yere, for it beganne on the 19. daie of february, and continued running till the 14. of June in the yere next following. Also diuers other boznes braft out this yere, as at Leuchham in Kent, and at Canterburie, called *Patelbozn*; at Cropdon in Surrey. Also 6. miles besides Duple castle in a place called *Hungeruele*, which last when it betokeneth battaile, ranneeth soule, and troubl water, and when it betokeneth dearth or pestilence it ranneeth clere, but that yere it ran foule. There is also a pit in Langley Parke in Kent, which is alway full of water, be the weather neuer so dry, except against battell, and then it will be dry, and so it was this yere.

Ann 2.

This

Th. the bastard  
lost his head.

1472

Boznes braft  
out of the earth.

An. reg. 12.

Embassadors  
sent into Bur-  
gundy.

This yere were sent Ambassadors from king Edward to the Duke of Burgoigne, who landed at Wylges on the 2. of April, where they were honorably received without the tolene by the lord Grancheuse.

The names of the Ambassadors were, Sir John Scot knight marshall of Caleis, master William Hatcliffe Secretarie to the king, master John Russell Doctor and Archdeacon of Warbshyre, master Richard Maron Archdeacon of London, Sir John Yong knight, and merchant of London, and Sir John Crosby merchant of London: on the 4. of April they were conveyed on horsebacke to the Dukes lodging, &c. They passed from thence to the Duke of Britaine, to haue gotten there the two earles of Penbryake and of Richmont.

Archbishop of  
Dorke spotted,  
and sent to  
prison.

George Neuill Archbishop of Dorke, being at Windsoze with king Edward on hunting, the king promised the Archbishop to come to the Spore (a place in Warbshyre, which the Archbishop had purchased and builded commodiously) there to hunt and make merrie with him, whereupon the Archbishop taking his leaue of the king, went home to his manor of the Spore, and there made great provision for the king, and sent for much plate that he had by, at the time of Barret and Tewkesburie feldes, and besides this, borrowed much of his friends, and puruised for the king for two or three daies meate, drinke, and lodging, as royally as hee coude: but the date before the king had promised to haue come to the Spore, the king sodainly sent for the Archbishop to come to Windsoze, where he was arrested of Treason, that he should helpe the earle of Arfozbe, and so sent to Caleis, and to Wames, where he continued long after prisoner: all which time the king kept the Archbishopricke in his owne handes. In this meane while Sir William Par knight, and Sir Thomas Vaughan Esquire, and other were sent to the Spore to seale all his goods for the king, which came there to the summe of 20000. l. and all other lordships and lands that the said Archbishop had within England, and all his stiffe and riches.

In Edward at this time brake the bishops miter, that had many rich stones, and made thereof a crowne for himselfe. Thomas Bylling chiefe Justice of the kings bench, and so continued till the first of Richard the third.

Also Sir Jo. Vere earle of Oxford, that had withdrawn himselfe from Warre, first into Scotland, after into France, then getting much goods on the Sea, landed in the West Country, and entred S. Michells Mount, with 77. men, the last of September, whereon he was, by the kings appointment, besieged by Bodrigan and other, but with such fauor, that the earle reituailed the Mount. Then was Richard Fortescue Esquire for the boote, and Sheriffe of Cornewall sent thither to continue the sieges, and king Edward sending pardons to the earles men, so long praied with them, that at the last if the Earle had not submitted himselfe to king Edward, he had bene taken of his owne men, and so Fortescue entering the Mount the 15. of februarie, found blood all pynough there to haue serued them till September after: John Vere earle of Arfozbe, the Lord Beaumont, two brothers of the said Earle, and Thomas Clifford were brought prisoners to the king. The earle of Arfozbe was sent prisoner to Swines, where he remained so long as this king reigned. 30 all

To Wers earle  
of Oxford kept  
S. Michells  
Mount.

all which time the Lady his wife might neuer come to him, or had any thing to lye vpon, but what people of their charities would giue her, or what she got by her needle.

In the moneth of September Lewis de Bruges Lord Granthuse, came into Englands from Charles Duke of Burgoigne, and on the thirtieth of October was created Earle of Winchester openlie in the Parliament chamber.

The first of October beganne a Parliament at Westminster by authority, whereby an aide was graunted to the king, towards the charge of his warres, which was leuied of mens landes, as well of Lordes as of other.

1473  
An. reg. 13.  
Parliament at  
Westminster.

The Duke of Burgoigne hauing great warres with the French king, sent Ambassadors into Englands to requyre king Edward his brother in laue to make warre on the French king, vnto the which request king Edward easily granted, because hee wished to be reuenged on the French king, as of his enemy, for aiding the Earle of Warwicke, Anne Margaret and her sonne Prince Edward, and their complices: whereupon he promised and also determined in the beginning of the next yere, to bryng a great armie ouer to Caleis, and to inuade the kingdome of France. And forthwith with all diligence prepared all thinges ready for his iourney, making many thiftes for the provision of money to serue his turne. And because the last yere great summes of money were granted him by the Parliament, he deuised this thifte, to call asoze him a great number of the wealthiest sort of the people of his Realme, and to them declared his neede, and the requisite causes thereof, hee demaunded of euerie of them some portion of money, which they stiked not to giue, and therefore the king willing to thewe that this their liberalitie was verie acceptable to him, hee called this grant of money, a Beneuolence, notwithstanding that many grudged thereat, and called it a Spenuolence: but the king bled such gentle meanes towarbes them for their assistance in his necessitie, that they could not otherwise doe, but frankly yelde and giue him competent sums, therewith he prepared a great armie.

This yere Henry Holland the Duke of Excester was found dead in the sea betwene Dover and Caleis, but howe he came there the certaintie could not be knowne.

King Edward hauing prepared his armie, led the same to Dover, from thence to crosse the seas to Caleis. The force that passed with him at this present was the greatest that euer came into France, most of them being horsemen, all in very good order well armed. All the nobles of the realme were there, a fewe excepted, they were sixtene hundred men of armes very well mounted, and the most of them barbed and richly trapped, after the manner of the French warres, and well accompanied with horsemen of their retinue, they were at the least sixtene thousand archers on horsebacke, and a great number of footemen and others, as well to pitch their tentes, thereof they were well furnished, as also to attend vpon their artillery, and inclose their campe, and

1474

An. reg. 14.

in all their army they had not one pledge. Besides this, were 3000. Englishmen appointed to land in Byspaine.

When king Edward came to Dover, the duke of Burgoyne to helpe his passage, sent 500. Boates of Holland, and Zeland, called cutes, which are flatte and lowe, bulke therie commodiously for transporting of horses: but notwithstanding all this helpe they had from the Duke, and all the king of Englande coulde commande himselte, hee was aboute thre weekes in passing betwene Dover and Calcis, one ship of woe toke 2. or 3. of his small passengers. Before king Edward embarked, he sent from Dover to the king of France one Herault alone called Carter a young man borne, who brought a letter of defiance from the king of Englande, in verie good language, and so excellentlie well penned, that mine Authour was perswaded it was neuer Englishmans drawing. The contentes whereof were, that the King shoulde yelde unto him the realme of France, being his inheritance, to the end he might restore the cleargy and nobility to their ancient libertie, ease them of the great charges they sustained, and deliver them of the miseries they were in, which if he refused to do, he protested what great mischief should ensue thereof, in maner and forme as in such cases is accustomed. The king read the letter softly to himselfe, and afterwards all alone withdelve himselfe into a Wardrobe, and commanded the Herault to be brought to his presence, to whome he made this answer.

First, that he knew well that the king of Englande had not passed the seas of his owne free motion, but by the perswasion of the duke of Burgundie, and the communalitie of England.

Secondly, that the summer was now almost past, and that the duke of Burgoyne was returned from Spain, as a man discomfited and bitterlie vnturned of all things.

Thirdlie, as touching the Constable of France he knew well (he said) that the intelligence with the king of England, because he had married his niece: but would deceiue the king his master as he had him, notwithstanding all the great benefites that he had receiued of him, which hee then rehearsed, adding therunto, that the saide Constable mente to liue in continuall dissimulation, and entertaine euerie man to make his profite of him.

At last of all, he alledged to the Herault diuers reasons to perswade the king his master to peace, and gaue him with his owne hand 300. crownes, promising him a thousand more if the peace were concluded: further openly he gaue him for a present, a goodly peece of crimson velvet of thirtie els. The Herault answered, that he would traue the best he could for peace, and thought the king his master would easilie be wonn therunto: but he willed the king of France, to send an Herault to the English campe to demand a safe conduct for certain Ambassadors, that hee would sende to the king of England, and to direct his letters to the Lord Howard, or to the Lord Stanley, and to himselfe also to conuerie his Herault. At one time in a maner both the king of England landed at Calcis, and the duke of Burgoyne departed from before Spain, who in great haste rid straight to Calcis, to the said king with a very small train, for he had sent his army to spoile the Countrey of Barrois and Lozaine. The king

King Edward  
thre weekes in  
passing betwene  
Dover and  
Calcis.

of England departed from Calcis in company of the duke, and passed through Boloigne, & from thence marched to Peronne, where the duke gaue the Englishmen but cold entertainment, for he caused the gates to be strightlie kept, and woulde suffer but fewe to enter, so that the greatest part of them lodged in the fields. After they were come to Peronne the Constable of France sent to the duke of Burgoyne one of his seruants, by whome he created himselfe for the withholding of S. Quincins, alleging that if he had restored it hee could haue stood him in no stead in the Realme of France, for he should bitterlie haue lost his credite and intelligence, but now seeing the king of England was come and in person, he promised to do hereafter all that the duke should command him, whereof the better to assure him, hee sent him a letter of credite to the declaration of the duke. Furthermore he gaue the duke his faith in writing, to serue and succor him, his friends, and confederates, as well the king of England as others, against all men none excepted.

The duke deliuered the king of Englande his letter, and all the matter of credite, adding somewhat thereto of his owne heade: for hee assured the king, that the Constable woulde deliuer into his handes, both Saynt Quincins, and all his other places, which the king easilie beleued, partlie because hee had married the Constables niece, and partlie because hee sawe him in so greate feare of the king of France, that hee thought hee durst not faile his promise made to the Duke and him: and the Duke beleued it also. But the Constable ment nothing lesse, for the feare hee was in of the French king was not so great that it could force him thus far, but he vied still his wonted dissimulation.

The king of Englande reioycing at this passage sente by the Constable, departed from Peronne with the duke of Burgoyne, towarde Saint Quincins, whereunto when hee approached, a greate bande of Englishmen ranne before, thinking that the Welles shoulde haue bene roong at their coming, and that the Citizens woulde haue receyued them with Trosse and Holle water, but when they drew nere to the Towne, the Artillerie shot, and the souldeors issued forth to the skirmish, both on horsebacke and on foote, so that two or thre Englishmen were slayne, and some taken: and in this state returned they in greate rage to their campe, murmuring against the Constable.

The next morning the duke of Burgondy would haue taken his leaue of the king of Englande to depart to his army in Barrois, promising to doe martialles in his fauor.

The French king sent a seruant of the Loyde Halles in the likeness of an Herault, with a coate made of a Trumpets Banner, to the English campe, where when hee came, hee was brought to a Tent, and after dinner talked with the king: his message was chiefeleie grounded upon the greate desire the king had of long time to bee in peace with the king of Englande, saying further, that since hee was crowned king of France, hee neuer had attempted anie thing agaynst the king of Englande or his Realme.

Secondlie, he excused himselfe, for receiuing in times past the earle of Warwick into his dominions, saying, that he did it only against the duke of Burgoyne and not him.

Further, he declared that the said duke of Burgoyne had for no other cause called him into France, but that by the occasion of his coming, he might conclude a better peace for himselfe with the king: and if happlie anie other furthered the matter, it was onely to amend the broken estate of their owne affaires, and for their owne private commoditie: but as touching the king of Englands good successe, they were altogether careless thereof. He put him also in minde of the time of the pére, alleading that winter approached, and likewise the great charges he sustained.

Lastly hee saide, that notwithstanding a great number in England desired warre with France, yet if the king of Englande incline to peace, the king for his parte would condescende to such conditions as hee doubted not but hee and his Realme would allowe of: Finally, hee demaunded a safe conduct for certaine Ambassadors, to come well enformed of his masters pleasure.

The king of Englande and part of his nobles liking these overtures very well, granted to the Heraulde of France, as large a safe conduct as hee demanded, and gave him foure Nobles of Golde for a rewarde. He also sent an English Heraulde with him to bring the like safe conduct. And in the next morning in a Village nere to Amience, the Commissioners of both Princes met, being these. For the king of France, the barons of Bourbon Admirall of France, the Lord of Saint Pierre, and the Bishop of Cureau, called Heberge: And for the king of Englande, the Lord Howard, one Challenger, and Doctor Morton. Many Articles of peace were treated of, but the last resolutions were these: That the French king should paie to the king of Englande presentlie before his departure out of France, seuentie thousand Crownes, that the Dolphin should marrie king Edwardes eldest daughter, and that she should haue the Duchie of Guien, for her maintenance, or five thousand Crownes yerele to be paid in the Tower of London, the space of nine yeres, which terme expired, the Dolphin should peaceably enjoy the revenues of the whole Duchie of Guien; and then the king of France to be cleerelie discharged of all payementes to the king of Englande. Further it was decreed, that the two Princes should meet together, and bee sworn to the treatie, which meeting was obserued in a Towne called Picquigny, on the 29. of August.

The king of England upon receit of his money, departed toward Calais in great hast, fearing the duke of Burgognes malice, and his subtiles.

At his departure he left for Hostages with the king of France, till his returne into England, the Lord Howard, and the master of his Horse called Sir Iohn Cheyne. King Edward toke Shipping at Calais, and landed at Dover, and was receiued on the Blackheath by the Maior of London and his brethren in scarlet, and 500. commoners, all clad in Spurre, and so conueied to London through the city to Westminster, on the 28 of September.

The

The French king to compasse his purpose for the getting of the Constable into his handes, toke truce with the Duke of Burgoyne for nine yeres, as a contractour in the league, and not as a Prince alle. King Edward of Englande aduertised hereof, sent ouer Sir Thomas Mountgomerie to the French king offering to passe the seas againe the next sommer to aid him, and to make warre on the duke of Burgoyne, so that the French king should paie to him 50000. Crownes for the losse which he should sustaine in his custome, by reason that the wooles of Calais, could haue no vent: and also paie halfe the charges, and halfe the wages of his souldiers and men of war. The French king thanked king Edward for his offer: but hee alleaged that the truce was already concluded, so that hee coulde not attempt anie thing against him, without reproch to his honor: so Sir Thomas Mountgomerie was with plate dispatched. Hee returned with him the Lord Howard, and Sir Iohn Cheyne, which were hostages with the French king, till the English armie were returned into England.

The eighteenth of Aprill, were inhaunted to the honor of knighthood, after the custome of England, in the time of peace, his eldest sonne Edward prince of Wales, Duke of Cornetwall, and earle of Chester, his seconde sonne the Duke of Yorke, and with them the earle of Lincolnes Sonne and heire, the Duke of Suffolke, the Lord Thomas Grey the quenes Sonne, and Richard his brother: the earle of Shrewsburie: the earle of Salisburie, Master Edward Woodville: the Lord Neill: the Lord Barkleys sonne and heire: the Lord Awdeles sonne and heire: the Lord Saint Amand: the Lord Stanley sonne and heire: the Lord Sturtons sonne and heire: the Lord Hastings sonne and heire: the Lord Ferrers of Chartleys sonne and heire: Sir Harbert brother to the earle of Denbome, Master Vaughan chiefe Judge: Littleton one of the Judges of the Common pleas, Master Bodringham, Master Brian Stapleton, Kneut, Pilkinton, Ludlow, Charleton, &c. The same daie the king created the lord Thomas Marques Dorset before dinner, and so in the habit of a Marques above the habite of his knighthood, he beganne the table of knights in Saint Edwardes Chamber. At that time hee ordained that the kings chamberlaine should go with the ancient and well nurtured knight to aduertise and teach the order of knighthood, to the squiers being in the baile. The king himselfe came in person and did honor to al the company with his noble counsell.

King Edward hauing established all things in good order, both within his Realme and without, was yet troubled in his mind, for that the earle of Richmond, one of the blood of king Henry the first on the mothers side, was alive, and at libertie in Bytaine: therefore he sent ouer to Francis duke of Bytaine, one Doctor Scillington, and other Ambassadors laden with no small sum of golde. These Ambassadors declaring their message, affirmed that the king their master, willed to haue the earle of Richmond onlie to ioine with him in alliance by marriage, and so to plucke vp al the remnants of discord, betwixt him and them of the contrary faction. The duke thought at the first, that king Edward would giue to the earle his eldest daughter the lady Elizabeth in marriage, he therefore consented to deliuer him, and receiued of the English quays a great sum of money.

An. reg. 15.

English made by the king.

Littleton.

King Edward paid first a gainst Genet earle of Richmond.

King Edward returning into England, landed at Dover.

money: but ere they were imbarqued with their pray, the Duke being advertised, that the Earle of Richmond was not so earnestly sought for, to be coupled in marriage with king Edwards daughter, as to have his head parted from his bodie with an axe, and therefore caused his treasurer Peter Landoyse to convey the said earle of Richmond into a sanctuary at S. Spalo, where the English Ambassadors then lay, shaping for a convenient winde: who complained that they were evill used to be spoiled both of their money and merchandise: yet because the matter was so handled, that it seemed the earle escaped into sanctuary through their owne negligence, after that they had received him, they were answered that the earle should be safely kept, either in sanctuary, or else as a prisoner in the Dukes house, and thus the king purchased for his money, the keeping of his money for a little time.

The 2. day of November was boine the kings daughter named Anne at Westminster.

1476

King Edward was somewhat displeased with the chance about the Earle of Richmond, but trusting that the D. of B.taine would according to promise keepe him from doing any grievance to him, put all doubts thereof out of his minde, and began to study how to keepe a liberall Princely house, and thereupon stoying his chylles with money he employed no small portion in good house keeping.

John Duke of Suffolke deceased, on the tuesday after the feast of St. Epiphane, the 15. of E. 4.

An. reg. 16.  
Order of Saint  
Georges feast.

This yere King Edward kept the feast of St. George, and order of the Carter at Westminster in most royall manner, first on the saturday before none, the king being Soueraigne with the knightes of the order, entered the chapter within the castle, which Chapter was also continued in the afternoon, in this manner, towards evening time, being all mounted on horsebacke in their habites of blew, rode to the chapter, from whence they went to the quire on foot, where they remained while evening was done, and then rode againe to the Castle (in their habites as afoye) where they had their bolde of spices, &c.

On Sunday morning, the Soueraigne with the knightes rode to maffens, which being ended, they entered the chapter, from whence they went to the Deans house to breakfast, and after to the quire againe every man to his own stall. Then came the Quene with the Lady Elizabeth her eldest daughter, the Dutchesse of Suffolke the kings sister, the Lady Marchionesse of Montague, the Lady Marchionesse of Dorset, the lady Hastings, &c. all in one livery of murrey embordered with garters, except the Marchionesse of Montague, who rode in a gowne of like, and these Ladies were placed in the rowe last. And in the same order and habite came the Soueraigne, and knightes, with the Quene and her Ladies in the after none to evening. The King this day dined in his great chamber, on whose right hand sat Richard Bewchampe Bishop of Salisbury, Chancellor of the order, and on the left hand the D. of Clarence, and the D. of Suffolke. At a side table sat the Marquesse of Dorset, the Carles of Arundale, Northumberland, and Essex, the L. Maltravers, the Earle Douglas,

the Lordes Dudley, Ferrers, and Howard, and Sir John Afceley knight all on one side. And at a table on the other side, sat Master Dudley Deane of Saint Georges chappell, and with him all on oneside, the Chanons of the same chappell in their mantles of murrey, and rundlet of S. George.

On the Sunday the Soueraigne and knightes of the order entered the chapter, where they had a host communication, from whence they went to the quire, where every knight stood before his stall while the king had offered a rich sute of vestments, and certaine coapes of the same sute, which the deane received: that done, the k. went to his stall, and every knight fate him downe in their owne stals, till the offertory, and then the Marques Dorset and the D. of Suffolke offered the sword of John Mowbray late D. of Suffolke deceased, the lords Maltravers and Howard, his helme: which being done, & obediace made, every knight rode before their stals, while the k. had offered, and then every knight offered according to his stall, to wit, the D. of Clarence, the Marques Dorset, the Duke of Yorke, the earle of Arundell, the earle of Essex, and the D. of Suffolke, the Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Douglas, the L. Maltravers, and the L. Howard, the L. Dudley, the Lord Ferrers, Sir John Afceley. The masse being ended, they went to the chapter, and thus the feast was ended, from the which were absent of the order out of the Realme, the k. of Sicely, the king of Portugale, the D. of Burgoigne, the D. of Erbin, the Lord Rivers, the lordes Scrope, the lordes Dursle. Absent within the Realme, the Prince, the D. of Gloucester, the Duke of Buckingham, the lord Hastings, and Sir William a Par.

This yere Charles D. of Burgundy was slaine by the Switzers, before the towne of Nancy in Lozaine, after whose death the French k. won all the townes which the said D. had holden in Picardy and Artois, and because the towne of Boloigne, and county of Bolongnos appertained by right of inheritance unto the L. Bertrane de la Toure Earle of Auvergne, the French king bought of him his right and title in the same, and recompensed him with other lands in the county of Fforest, and in other places. And because the forenamed towne and county were holden of the earldome of Artois, he changed the tenor, and allowed to holde the same towne and county of our lady of Boloigne, and thereof did homage in the great church of Boloigne, offering there an heart of gold, weighing 2000. crownes, obtaining further, that his heires and successors at their entrie into their estates, by themselves or their deputies, should offer an heart of like weight and value, as a reliefe and homage for the same towne and country.

This yere T. Burdet an esquire of Artois in Fflartowshire, son to Sir Nicholas Burdet (who was great butler of Henry in Henrie the sixts daies) was beheaded (as was said) for a word spoken, in this sort. k. Edw. in his progress hunted in T. Burdets park at Artois, and slew many of his dere, amongst the which one was a white bucke, whereof Th. Burdet made great account, & therefore when he understood thereof, he wished the bucks head in his belly that moved the king to kill it. Which tale being told to the king, Burdet was apprehended and accused of treason, for wishing the bucks head bores all in the kings belly.

1477

An. reg. 17.  
Burdet be-  
headed.  
Enguerrans.

Register of the  
grey Friars.

belly. This was the report, and true it is (though some have said the contrary) that there was a park at Arrow; for king Edward the third, in the seventh year of his reign, gave licence to Rob. Burdet to inclose his wood of Arrow into his park (as appeareth by patten in record). And the Record also telleth that the said Thomas Burdet was accused of poisoning, for certe and inchantment, for the which he was attained, by parliament condemned, drawn from the Tower of London to Tiboyne, and there beheaded, and then buried in the Grey Friars church at London. This Thomas Burdet (by licence obtained of Edward the fourth in the twelfth year of his reign) alienated his lands from his eldest sonne, and true heire, to others at his pleasure, whereof he after soze repented him: And being drawn from the Tower toward his ende (as is afore shewed) sleeping his said eldest sonne in west Cheape, over against the hospitall of Thomas Becker, he procured himselfe to be stoned, and there asked his sonne forgiveness, confessing himselfe grievouslie to have offended God, in wronging him of his inheritance, which he toke to be the cause that God had so justly plagued him, by the princes pleasure, to come to such an ende.

Record Tower.

1478

King Edward kept his roiall feast of Christmas at Westminster.

The 15. of January king Edward the fourth solemnized the matrimoniall feast of his son Richard the Duke of Yorke, and the Lady Anne daughter and sole heire to John Mowbray Duke of Norfolk with great solemnitie. By which marriage, the said Richard was created Duke of Yorke and Norfolk, Earle marshall, Warren and Nottingham.

Parliament  
at Westminster.  
At which the  
attendants of  
George D. of  
Clarence.

The 16. day of January began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein George D. of Clarence king Edwards brother, was attained of treason: In the which attainder (which I have read) is declared, that the said George Duke of Clarence, against the king his soveraigne Lord, had caused divers his servants to informe the people, that Thomas Burdet his servant (which was lawfully and truly attainted of treason) was wrongfully put to death. To his servants of such disposition he gave large sums of money, venison, &c. therewith to assemble the kings subjects, to feast them, and then to induce them to beleeve, that the said Burdet was wrongfully executed. He also by such servants, laboured to make the people beleeve that the king wrought by sorcery, magicke, and used the craft to poison his subjects, such as him pleased, to the great dishonour of the king, and incouraging his subjects against him. And over that, the said D. being in full purpose to exalt himselfe and his heires to the regallie and crowne of England, and secretly in opinion to put aside from the same for ever, the king and his heires, upon one the falsest and most unnaturall coloured pretence that man might imagine, falsely and untruly published, that the king was a bastard, and not legitimate to reigne. And to continue this his most malicious and traitorous purpose after this seditious language among the people, he induced divers of the kings natural subjects to be sworn upon the blessed sacrament, to be true to him and his heires, none exception reserved of their allegiance: and after the same oath made, he shewed to many, that the king had taken his kinde from him, and his men were dishonoured,

ted, but he would endeavour to get them their inheritance, as hee shoulde do his owne: hee shewed also, that the king intended to consume him, in like sort as a candle consumeth in burning, whereof hee would in briefe quite him. And over this, the said Duke got an exemption under the great seale of Henry the first late king, wherein was contained, that if the said Henry and Edward his sonne died without issue male, that the said Duke and his heires shoulde be kings, &c. Thus much for his attainder.

An. reg. 18.

And on the 11. of March, after hee had offered his owne masse penie in the tower of London, hee made his ende in a beddell of apoplexie, and was after buried at Ewbury, by his wife sometime daughter to the Earle of Warwick, which being with child died of poison but a little before him.

Duke of Clarence put to death.

This George Duke of Clarence left behind him two young infants begot on his wife, the daughter of Richard earle of Warwick, which children succeeded their ancestors in semblable evil chance: for Edward his heire, whom king Edward had created earle of Warwick, was 14. years after in the time of Henry the 7. attained of treason, and on the tower hill lost his head: And Margaret his sole daughter, married to sir Richard Pole knight, and by Henry the 8. restored to the earldome of Salisbury, was attained 62. years after her father had suffered, and was in the tower beheaded: in whose person died the surname of Plantagenet. This year was a great mortality and death of the pestilence, not onlie in London, but in divers partes of the realme, which began in the latter end of September, in the year last before passed, and continued all this year till the beginning of November, which was about 14. monethes, in the which space died innumerable of people in the said citie and else there.

1479  
Great pestilence.

William Grey bishop of Ely deceased at Downham, and was buried at Ely, betweene two pillars of marble: he gave much money toward the reparation of the great steeple at Ely, John Morton doctor of the civill lawe succeeded him in that Bishopricke.

This year king Edward more then hee was accustomed, began to search for the feitures of penall lawes and statutes, as well of the chiefe of his nobilitie, as of other gentlemen, being proprietors of great possessions; and abundantly furnished with goods, likewise of merchants, and other inferior persons: by reason whereof, it was of all men judged that he would prove hereafter a soze and rigorous prince among his subjects: but this his new invented practise, and comons meaning (by reason of foraine affaires, and ablygement of his daies in this transitory life, which were within two years after consumed) toke some but no great effect.

An. reg. 19.  
Penall lawes & statutes looked to.

This year king Edward began to keepe his feast of Christmas nativitie at Woking, but at five daies end removed from thence to Greenwich, where he kept out the other part, with great roialtie.

1480

The 22. of February, notable theures were put to death at London, for robbing of Churches and other places, especially the Colledge of S. Martinie grand in London, for the which three of them were drawn to the tower hill, and there hanged and bent, the other two were pressed to death.

Church robbers hanged, burned, and pressed to death.

Ambassadors were sent to and fro betwixt the kings of England and of France.

An. reg. 20.



France, and still the French king fed the king of England with faire words, putting him in hope to match his sonne and heire the Dolphin with the Lady Elizabeth daughter to king Edward, according to the conclusions of agreement had and made piously betwixt them, although in very deede hee meant nothing lesse: his embassadours ever made excuses if any thing were amisse, and he vied to send change of Embassadours, so that if those which had bene here afore, and were returned, had saide, or promised any thing (though they were authorized so to do) which might turne to their masters hinderance, the other that came after mought excuse themselves by ignorance of that matter, affirming that they wanted commission once to talke or meddle with that matter, or if he perceived that any thing was like to be concluded contrarie to his minde, for a shift, he would call his Embassadours home in great haste, and after send an other with new instructions, nothing depending on the old. Thus the French king by cloaking his inward determinate purpose, with great dissimulation and large promises, kept himselfe in friendship with the king of England, til he had wrought a great part of his will against the young Dutches of Burgoyne, which is, Edward would not have suffered if hee had put any great doubt in the French kings faire promises, considering that the Crowne of France was in this meane time so much increased in dominions, to the great reinforcement of that Realme.

On the 9. of November was borne king Edwards third daughter, named Briget at Eltham, and was christened in the chappell there by the Bishop of Chichester.

1481

James king of Scots sent into England Ambassage, for to haue the Lady Cicely king Edwards second daughter, to be married to his eldest son James Prince of Scotland, Duke of Rothesay, and Earle of Carlike. King Edward and his Councell, perceiuing that this affinitie should bee both honorable and profitable to the realme, did not onely grant to this his desire, but also before hand disbursed certaine sums of money, to the intent that the marriage should hereafter neither be hindered nor broken, with condition that if the said marriage proceeded not, then the proposall & merchants of the towne of Edenborough, should be bound for repayment of the saide summe againe. But King James was a man wedded to his owne will so much, that he could not abide any that would speake contrary to his fancie, by means whereof, diuers of the Nobilitie of his Realme were greatly troubled, amongst whom Alexander D. of Albany, brother to king James being criled into France, & passing through England, tarried with king Edward, and upon occasion moued him to make warre against his brother the saide king James, for that he forgetting his othe, promise and affinitie concluded with king Edward, caused his subsidies to make roades into the English borders. King Edward set on by the Duke of Albany determined to invade Scotland, with an armie: whereupon all the winter season hee mustred his men, rigged his shippes, and left nothing vnprovided for such a iourney, so that in the beginning of the yeare, all things for the warre was in a readinesse: towards the charges whereof, king Edward had borrowed many great sums of money, amongst other, the Citizens of London

don granted him 5000. markes, which was repaid to them againe in the next yeare following.

This yeare king Edward created William Lord Berkeley Viscount Berkeley at Cranstoch.

King Edward with his Quene kept a royall Christmas at Windsor.

King Edward appointed to be his chiefe taine of his host toward Scotland, and lieutenant generall, Richard Duke of Gloucester, and with him were appointed as associates, Henry Earle of Northumberland, Thomas L. Stanley Lord steward of the kings house, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, and diuers other noble men, and worthy knights. These came to Alnethke in Northumberland about the beginning of the moneth of Iulie, where they marshalled their host: The forewarde was led by the Earle of Northumberland, vnder whose standard were the Lordes Scrope of Bolton, Sir John Middleton, Sir John Dickfield and other, and souldiers to the number of 6700. In the middle ward was the Duke of Gloucester, and with him the D. of Albany, the L. Louel, the L. Graystoke, Sir Edward Wooduile, and other to the number of 5800. The L. Neuil was appointed to follow with 3000. The Lordes Stanley led the wing on the right hand of the Dukes battell with 4000. men. The Lord Fitz Hugh, Sir William a Par, Sir James Harington with the number of 2000. guided the lefts wing. And besides these, 1000. to attend the ordinance. This royall armie came soaile by the water side to the towne of Berwikke, & entered the towne: but Earle Bothwell captaine of the Castle, would in no wise deliuer it: wherefore the captaines planted a strong siege round about it. The two dukes and all the other souldiers (except the Lord Stanley, Sir John Elington treasurer of the kings house, Sir William a Par and foure thousand men left to keepe the siege before the castle) departed toward Edenborough, and in marching bent many towne and castles. King James kept himselfe within the Castle of Edenborough. The Duke of Gloucester entered the towne, and at the speciall desire of the Duke of Albany, saued the towne, and the inhabitants from fire, blood, and spoile, taking onely such presentes as they offered to him and his captaines. The Lordes of Scotland lying at Haddington, on the second of August wrote to the Duke of Gloucester, requiring that the marriage betwixt the Prince of Scotland and H. Edwards daughter might be accomplished, according to the covenants: and further, that a peace from thenceforth might be concluded betwixt both realmes. The Duke of Gloucester answered, that for the marriage hee knew not his brothers pleasure, but hee required restitution of all the money pressed out in loane upon the same marriage: and for peace hee would agree to none, except the Castle of Berwikke might be to him deliuered. The Scots excused the matter touching the repayment of the money, for that the time of the contract of the saide marriage was not yet come: and as touching the Castle of Berwikke, they affirmed it to appertaine to the realme of Scotland as of olde inheritance. The same time the Archbishop of St. Andrews, the bishop of Dunkill, the Earle of Argyle, Lord Cambell, and Andrew Lord of Anandall Chancellor of Scotland, wrote to the duke of Albany a solemn instrument signed and sealed with their seales, concerning a gene-

rall

1482

An. reg. 22.  
Richard D. of  
Gloucester sent  
with an armie  
into Scotland.

An. reg. 21.



call pardon to him and his seruants upon certain condictions to be granted, & reasonable, that the duke of Albany willingly accepted of the same: but before he departed, he promised the duke of Gloucester to do and perforce all whatsoeuer before he had sworn, and promised to king Edward: and for performance hereof, he againe took a coppie; all othe, and sealed a writing at Lewington the third of August.

After he was restored, the Lords of Scotland proclaimed him lieutenant of Scotland: and not long after the castle of Berwick was delivered to the Lord Stanley and other, where the duke of Gloucester made Sir T. Molineux knight banneret. The duke of Albany also caused the prouost and burgesses of Edinburgh to become bound for the repayment of the money lent by king Edward, And then the duke of Gloucester returned to Sherebulton, &c.

King Edward so greatly favored William Harriot Spaloe of London, that he took him with certaine of his brethren the Aldermen, and Commoners of the cite of London, into the forest of Waltham, where was ordained for them a pleasant lodge of greene boughes, in the which lodge they dined, with grates there, and the king would not go to dinner til he saw them served. After dinner they went a hunting with the king, and slew many deere, as well red as fallow, whereof the king gave unto the Spaloe and his company good plenty, and sent unto the Ladie Spaloe and her sisters the Aldermens wives, two harts, six bucks, and a tunne of wine to make them merry with, which was eaten in the Waplers Hall.

King Edward held his feast of the natiuitie of Christ in his manor of Eltham, and kept his estate all the whole feast in his great chamber, and the Quene in her chamber, where were daily more then 2000. persons served.

The same yeere on Candlemas day, he with his Quene went on procession from St. Stephens chappell into Westminster hall, accompanied with the earle of Anguise, the Lord Grey and sir James Liddall Ambassadors from Scotland, and at his proceeding out of his chamber he made sir Richard Wood under treasurer of England, and sir William Catesby, one of the iudices of the Common place, knights.

Although king Edward reioiced much that his businesse was come to good conclusion with the Scots, yet he was not so disquieted in his minde towards the French king, whome hee now perceived to haue dallied with him, as touching the agreement of the marriage to be had betwixt the Dolphine and his daughter Elizabeth: for the Lord Howard being returned out of France, certified the king of his owne knowledge, that he being present, saw the Lady Margaret of Austria daughter to the duke Maximilian, sonne to the Emperour Frederike, receiued into France with great pompe and roialtie, and at Ambros to the Dolphine contracted and espoused. King Edward highly displeased with such double dealing of the French King, called his nobles together, and opened unto them his griefes, who promised him for redresse thereof to be readie with all their powers, to make warres in France at his pleasure and appointment. But while he was busie in hande to make his puruiuaunce for warres thus against France, whether it was of melancholie and anger which hee had taken

with the French kings doings, as it were by anie superfluous caret, to the which he was greatlie giuen, he so dainely fell sicke, and was so grievouslie taken, that he ended his life, as it were euen suddenly, at Westminster on the ninth daie of April, the yeere of Christ 1483. at the age of 41. yeeres, when hee had reigned 21. yeeres, one moneth, and odder daies, and was buried at Westminster, where he had before provided his resting place: for leaving the old chappel or college Church builded by king Henry the first, hee laid a newe foundation from the west end thereof, and builded the beautiful large newe chappell now frequented, almost to the roose, which the Lord Reginald Bray (with some small helpe of the knights of the order) after was finished. King Edward the fourth took from the college of Eaton, and the kings college in Cambridge, which king Henry the 6. had founded (saith sir Tho. Smith) almost 1000. pounds by yeere, and gaue to the colleges of Westminster: hee with sumptuous buildings repaired the castles of Spittingham and Dover, the Tower of London, the house of Eltham, and builded at Westminster.

Philip de Comineus writeth of the death of this king in manner following: Philip Comineus. I haue not sene (saith he) the late king of England Edward the 4. before of the house of York, bitterly destroy the house of Lancaster, under the which both his father and he had liued many yeeres: Further hee said, king Edward having done homage to king Henry the 6. being of the house of Lancaster, did he not afterward hold him prisoner many yeeres in the tower of London, where in the end he was murdered? I haue not sene also, the earle of Warwick, principal governor of all the said king Edwards offices (after he had put to death all his enemies, especiallie the duke of Somerset) in the end became deauble enemy to the king his master, gaue his daughter in marriage to the Prince of Wales son to sir Henry, attempted to set up againe the house of Lancaster, passed with the said prince into England, discomfited in the field and slain, both he and his brethren, and kinsmen, and diuers noblemen of England, who in time past had done the like to their enemies: After all this the children of these, when the world turned, reuenged themselves, and caused in like manner the other to die: which plagues we may be assured hapned not, but by the wrath of God. For after king Edward was quiet in his realme, and receiued payelle out of France 50000. crownes paid him in the tower of London, and was grown so rich, that richer he could not be, he died suddenly, as it were of melancholie, because of the French kings marriage with the lady Margaret the W. of Austries daughter, so in soone as he was aduertised thereof he fell sicke, and began then to perceive how he had bene abused, touching the marriage of his daughter, whome he caused to be called the Lady Dolphine. When also was the pension which he had receiued out of France taken from him, which he called tribute, although it were neither the one nor the other. Thus much out of Comineus concerning the death of Edward the fourth, who also affirmeth, that within his remembrance in the Citie warres of Englande died about 80. persons of the blood royal. King Edward left issue by Elizabeth his wife, two sons, Edward prince of Wales, and Richard duke of York; he, and three daughters, to wit, Elizabeth that after was Q. married to king Henry the seventh, Cicilie married to

king Edward  
deceased.

T. Smith.

the Duke  
succeeded the  
Spaloe and Al-  
dermen of Lon-  
don.

3483

An. reg. 23.

vicount Wels, Briger a Sun at Wertsford, Anne married to Th. Howard after earle of Surrey, and W. of Dorsetholke, Katherine wedded to William A. Courteney, son to the earle of Devonshire; he had also one base sonne knowne to the world, by the name of Arthur, that was after vicount Lisle.

## King Edward the fifth.

Whose Historie was written by sir Thomas Moore,  
as followeth.

1483



**K**ing Edward, of that name the fourth, after that he had liued fiftie and thre yeres (it should bee fortie and one yeres) leauens moneths, and sixe daies, and thre of raigned two and twentie yeres, one moneth, and eight daies, died at Westminster the ninth day of April, the yer of our redemption a thousand foure hundred fourescore and thre, leauing much faire issue, that is to witte, Edward the Prince, of thirtene yeres of age: Richard W. of Boke, two yeres younger: Elizabeth, whose fortune and grace was afterward to be quene, wise vnto is. Henry the seventh and mother vnto the eight: Cicely, not so fortunate as faire: Briger, which representing the vertue of her, whose name she bare, professed and obserued a religious life in Wertsford, an house of close Nuns: Anne, that was after honourably married vnto Thomas then Lord Heyward, and after earle of Surrey: and Katherine, which long time toiled in either fortune, sometime in wealth, ofte in aduersitie, at the last, if this be the last, for then the liued, is by the benignitie of her nephew king Henry the eight, in very prosperous estate, and in this her birth and vertue.

The loue of the  
people.

This noble Prince deceased at his palace of Westminster, and with great funeral honour and beaunetie of his people from thence conueyed, was enterr'd at Windsoze. A king of such gouernance and behauiour, in time of peace (for in war each part must needs be others enemye) that there was neuer any Prince of this land, at attaining the crowne by battell, so heartily beloved with the substance of the people: nor he himselfe so specially in any part of his life, as at the time of his death: which fauour and affection, yet after his decease by the crueltie, mischief, and trouble of the tempestuous world that followed, highly toward him more increased. At such time as he died, the displeasure of those that bare him grudge, for king Henries sake the first, whome he deposed, was well asswaged, and in effect quenched, in that, that many of them were dead in more than twenty yeres of his raigne, a great part of a long life: and many of them in the meane season growne into his fauour, of which he was neuer strange. He was a goodly personage, princely to behold, of heart courageous, politike in counsell, in aduersitie nothing abashed, by prosperitie rather

Description of  
Edward the  
fourth.

topfall

topfall than prosperitie, in peace iust and mercifull, in warre sharpe and fierce, in the field bold and hardy, and in the lesse no further than wisdom would, aduenturous, whose wars were so well considered, bee shall no lesse commend his wisdom where he boynded, than his manhood where he vanquished. He was of visage lovely, of bodie mightie, strong, and cleane made: howbeit in his latter daies with ouer libell diet, somewhat corpulent and bowely, and in the lesse not vncomely: he was of youth greatly giuen to fleshy wantonnesse; from which, health of body in great prosperitie and fortune, without a speciall grace hardly refrained.

This fault not greatly grieved the people: for neither could any one mans pleasure stretch and extend to the displeasure of very many, and was without violence, and ouer that, in his latter daies lesse and well left. In which time of his latter daies, this realm was in quiet and prosperous estate, no feare of outward enemies, no war in hand, nor none toward, but such as no man looked for: the people toward the prince, not in a constrained feare, but in a willing and loving obedience: among the miseries, the commons in god peace. The lords whom he knew at variance, himselfe in his death bed appeared: he had left all gathering of money (which is the only thing that with a wealth the parts of Englishmen from the Prince) nor any thing intended to be taken in hand, by which he should be giuen thereto: for his tribute out of France he had before obtained: and the yere foregoing his death, he had obtained Berwick. And albeit, that all y time of his raigne he was with his people, so benigne, so courteous, and so familiar, that no part of his vertues was more esteemed: yet the condition, in the end of his daies (in which many princes by a long continued soveraigntie, decline into a proud port from debonaire behauiour of their beginning) maruellously in him grew and increased: so far so, that in summer the last that euer he saw, his highnesse being at Windsoze in hunting, sent for the mayo: and aldermen of London, to him for none other errand, but to haue them hunt and be merry with him, where he made them not so statly, but so friendly and so familiar cheare, and sent venison from thence so freely into the city, that no one thing in many daies before, gat him either mo harms or moze harp fauour amongst the common people, which oftentimes moze esteeme and take for greater kindnes, a little courtesie, than a great benefit. So deceased (as I haue said) this noble king, in y time, in which his life was most desired: whose loue of his people, and their entire affection toward him, had bin to his noble children, (hauing in themselves also as many gifts of nature, as many princely vertues, as much goodly towardnes as their age could receive) marvellous forresse and sure armor, if diuision & dissention of their friends had not harmed them, and left them destitute, and the execrable desire of soveraigntie prouoked him to their destruction, which if either kind or kindnesse had holden place, must needs haue bene their chiefe defence. For Richard the W. of Gloucester, by nature their vnckle, by office their protectour, to their father beholden, to themselves by othe and allegiance bounden, all bands broken that binden man and man together, without any respect of God or the world, vnaturally contrived to decrease them, not only of their dignitie, but also their liues.

W b b 2.

But

But forasmuch as this dukes demerito ministereth in effect all the whole matter whereof this Duke shall entreat, it is therefore convenient, some what to shew you ere we farther go, what manner of man this was, that could find in his heart so much unchastite to conceive.

Richard duke of Yorke, a noble man and a mightie, began not by war, but by law to challenge the crowne, putting his claime into þe parliament, where his cause was either for right or fawre so farre forth advanced, that king Henry his blood (albeit he had a goodlie prince) bitterlie reieced, the crowne was by authority of parliament entailed to the duke of Yorke and his issue male in remembrance, immediately after the death of king Henry. But the duke not tarrying so long to tarrie, but intending under pretext of dissention and debate arising in the realme, to prevent his time, and to take upon him the rule in king Henry his life, was with many nobles of the realme at Wakefield slaine, leaving 3. sonnes, Edward, George, and Richard. All three as they were great States of birth, so were they great and sturte of stomache, growp and ambitious of authority, and impatient of partners: Edward reuenging his fathers death, deploied king Henry, and attained the crowne: George duke of Clarence, was a goodlie noble prince, and at all points fortunate, if either his owne ambition had not set him against his brother, or the enuie of his enemies his brother against him. For were it by the queene and lords of her blood which highly maligned the kings kinred (as women commonly not of malice, but of nature hate them whome their husbands loue) were it a proud appetite of the Duke himselfe, intending to be king: at leastwise heinous treason was there laide to his charge, and finally, were he faulty, were he faultles, attained was he by parliament, and indged to death, and therupon hastily brotween in a But of malice, whose death is Edward (albeit he commanded it) when he list it was done, pittiously bewailed, and sorrowfully repented.

Richard the 3. son, of whome we now entreat, was in wit and courage equal with either of them, in body and prowesse far vnder them both, little of stature, ill featured of limbs, crooke backed, his left shoulder much higher than his right, hard favoured of visage, and such as is in states called warrelly, in other men otherwise: he was malicious, wrathfull, enuious, and from afore his birth cruel toward. It is for truth reported, that the dutchesse his mother had so much adoe in her trauell, that she could not bee deliuered of him vncut, and that hee came into the world with the fate for warde, as men bee borne outwarde, and (as the same runneth) also not untouched, whether men of hatred report about the truth, or else that nature chaunged her course in his beginning, which in the course of his life many things unnaturalie committed. So euill Captaine was he in the war, as to which his disposition was more meetly, than for peace: sundry victories had he, and sometimes overthrowes, but neuer in default as for his owne person, either of hardinesse or politike order: free was hee called of dispence, and somewhat about his power liberal: with large gifts hee gat him vniuersall friendship, by which hee was sayne to pill and spoile in other places, and gette him stedfast hatred. He was close and secrete, a deepe dissembler, lowly of countenance, arrogant of heart, outwardly complaisable

where

where he inwardly hated, not letting to kisse whom he thought to kill: dispiteous and cruel, not for euill will alway, but offer for ambition, and either for the surety or increase of his estate. Friend and foe was many what indifferent, where his advantage grew: he spared no mans death, whose life withstode his purpose. He slew with his owne hands king Henry the first, being prisoner in the tower, as men constantly said, and that without commandement or knowledge of the King, which would undoubtedly, if he had intended that thing, haue appointed that butcherly office to some other, than his owne boine brother.

Some wise men also wene, that his dytt couertly conueyed, lacked not in helping forth his brother of Clarence to his death: which he resisted openly, howbeit somewhat (as men deemed) more faintly, than he that were heartily minded to his wealth. And they that thus deme, thinke that hee long time in Edwards life, for thought to be king, in case that the king his brother (whose life he looked that euill died should shorten) should happen to decease (as indeed he did) while his children were yong. And they deme, that for this intent hee was glad of his brothers death the duke of Clarence, whose life must needs haue hindered him so intending, whether the same duke of Clarence had kept him true to his nephew the yong king, or entered passed to be king himselfe. But of all this point, is there no certainty, & who so diuinely upon coniectures, may as well shewe too far as to short. Howbeit this haue I by credible information learned, that the selfe night in which Edward died, one Mistlebrooke long ere morning, came in great haste to the house of one Potter dwelling in red Crosse street without Cripplegate in London: and when he was with haste rapping quickly letten in, he shewed vnto Potter that king Edward was departed. By my truth man, quoth Potter, then will my master the duke of Gloucester be king. What cause he had so to thinke hard it is to say, whether hee being toward him, any thing knew that he had such thing purposed, or other wise had any inkling thereof: for he was not likely to speake it of nought.

But now to returne to the course of this history. Where it that the Duke of Gloucester had of old fore-minded this conclusion, and was now at erst therunto moued, and put in hope by occasion of the tender age of the yong prince his nephew (as opportunity and likelihood of speeche, putteth a man in courage of that he neuer intended) certaine it is, that he contriued their destruction, with the usurpation of the regall dignity upon himselfe. And forasmuch as, he well list, and holpe to maintaine a long continued grudge & hart-burning betwene the queens kinred, and the kings blood, either partly enuying others authority, hee now thought their diuision should be (as it was indeed) a further beginning to the pursute of his intent, and a sure ground for the foundation of all his building, if he might first, vnder the pretext of reuenging old displeasure, abuse the anger and ignorance of the one partie, to the destruction of the other, and then winne to his purpose as many as hee could, and those that could not be won, might be lost ere they looked therefore: for of one thing was hee certaine, that if his intent were perceived, he should soone haue made peace betwene both the parties with his owne blood.

King Edward in his life, albeit that this dissention betwene his friends

B b b 3.

some what

Richard duke  
of Yorke.

Edward.  
George duke of  
Clarence.

The description  
of Richard  
the third.

The death of  
king Henry the  
first.

Reports inter-  
taine as spoken  
of hate, or ac-  
tation.

somewhat liked him: yet in his god health he somewhat the lesse regarded it, because he thought whatsoeuer business should fall betwene them, himselfe should alway be able to rule both the parties. But in his last sickness, when he perceived his natural strength so sore enfeebled, that he despaired al recovery, then he considering the youth of his children, albeit he nothing lesse mistrusted than that that happened; yet wel forseeing that many harmes might grow by their debate, while the youth of his children should lacke discretion of themselves, and god counsell of their friends, of which either party should counsell for; their owne commoditie, and rather by pleasant aduise to win the themselves fauour, than by profitabill aduertisement to do his children good, he called some of them before him that were at variance, and in especiall the Lord Marques Dowlet, the quenes son by her first husband, & William the lord Hastings a noble man then lord Chamberlaine, against whom the quene specially grudged, for the great fauour the king bare him: and also for that she thought him secretly familiar with the king in wanton company. Her hinted also bare him sore, as well for that the king had made him captain of Calais, which office the Lord Riuer brother to the quene claimed of the kings former promise, as for diuers other great gifts which he receiued, that they looked for. When these lords with diuers of both the parties were come in presence, the king sitting by himselfe and vnder set with pillowes, as it is reported, on this wise saide vnto them:

My lords, my deere kinsmen and allies, in what plight I lie, you see, and I feele. By which, the lesse while I looke to liue with you, the more deeply am I moued to care in what case I leave you, for such as I leave you, such bee my children like to find you. Which if they should (that God forbid) find you at variance, might hap to fall the themselves at war, ere their discretion would serue to set you at peace: yee see their youth, of which I reckon the onely suretie to rest in your concord: for if I misseeth not, that all you loue them, if each of you hate other. If they were men, your faithfulness happily would suffice; but children must be maintained by mens authoritie, & disper youth vnderpropped with elder counsell, which neither they can haue, but ye giue it; nor ye giue it, if ye graue not. For where each laboureth to breake that the other maketh, & for hatred of each of others person, impugning each others counsell, there must it needs be long ere any god conclusion go forward. And also while either party laboureth to be chiefe, flatterie shall haue more place than plaines and faithfull aduise, of which must needs ensue the euill bringing by of the prince, whose mind in tender youth infect, shall readily fall to mischief & riot, and dash down with his noble realme to ruine: but if grace turne him to wisdom, which if God send, then they that by euill means before pleased him best, shall after fall furthest out of fauour, so that euer at length euill dists dash to nought, and god plaines waies prosper. Great variance hath been long bin betwene you, not alway for great causes: sometime a thing right wel intended, our misconstruction turneth to toofe, or a small displeasure don vs, either our own affection or euill tongue agreeth. But this not I well, ye neuer had so great cause of hatred, as ye haue of loue: that we be all men, that we be christian men, this shall I leave for preachers to tell you (yet I wot nere whether any preachers words ought

more

more to moue you, than his that is by and by going to the place that they all preach of.) But this that I desire you to remember, that the one part of you is of my blood, the other of mine allies, & each of you with other either of kindred or affinity, which spirituall kindred of affinity, if the sacraments of Christs church beare that weight with vs, that would god they did, should no lesse moue vs to charity, than the respect of fleshy consanguinity. Our Lord forbid, that you loue together the worse for the lesse cause that you ought to loue the better: and yet that hapneth, and no where find we so deadly debate, as among them, which by nature & law most ought to agree together. Such a pestilent serpent is ambition, Ambition. and desire of beinglorie and loweraignty, which among states where he once entreteth, creepeth forth so far, till with diuision and variance hee turneth all to mischief, first longing to be next the best, afterward equally with the best, and at last chiefe and aboue the best. Whiche immoderate appetite of towshtip, and thereby of debate & dissention, what losse, what sorow, what trouble hath within these few yeres growen in this realme, I pray God as well forget, as we wel remember. Which things if I could as wel haue foreseen, as I haue with my more paine than pleasure proued, by Gods blessed lady (that was euer his other) I would neuer haue won the courtie of mens knees, with the losse of so many heads. But such things passed cannot be gainelessly, much ought we the more beware, by what occasion we haue taken so great hurt afore, that we offenes fall not in that occasion againe. Now be those griefes passed, and all is God be thanked quiet, and likely right well to prosper in wealthfull peace vnder your cousins my children, if God send them life, and you loue. Of which two things, the lesse losse were they, by whom though God did his pleasure, yet should the realme alway finde kings, and peraduenture as good kings: but if you among your selves in a childes reign fall at debate, many a god man shall perishe, and happily be to, and ye to, ere this land finde peace againe. Wherefore in these last wordes that euer I looke to speake with you, I exhort you and requite you all, for the loue that you haue euer borne to me: for the loue that I haue euer borne vnto you: for the loue that our lord beareth to vs all, from this time forth ward all griefes forgotten, each of you loue other. Which I verely trust you will, if ye any thing easily regard, either God or your king, affinity or kindred, this realme your owne countrey, or your owne suretie. And the worse all the king no longer induring to sit by, laid him downe on his right side, his face toward them: and none was there present that could reframe from weeping. But the Lords recomforting him with as good wordes as they could, and answering for the time as they thought to stand with his pleasure, there in his presence, as by their wordes appeared, each forgave other, and loyned their hands together, when (as it after appeared by their wordes) their hearts were far asunder. As some as the king was departed, the noble prince his son dash toward London, which at the time of his decease kept his household at Audolove in Wales, which countrey being far off from the law and recourse to iudice, was begun to be far out of god will, and warden to the robbers and reuers, walking at liberty vncorred.

And for this reason the prince was in the life of his father sent thither,

25 b b 4.

to

The motion of  
the king in his  
death by d.

to the end that the authoritie of his presence, should restraîne enill disposed persons to the boldnes of their former outrages. To the gouernance and ordering of this young Prince at his sending thither, was there appointed Sir Anthonie Woodville Lord Rivers, and brother vnto the Quene, a right honorable man, as valiant of hand, as polittike in counsell. Abloined were the re vnto him other of the same party, and in effect euerie one as he was next of kinne vnto the Quene, so was planted next about the Prince.

That blift by the Quene not vnwiselie deuised, whereby her blood might of youth be rooted in the princes fauour, the Duke of Gloucester turned vnto their destruction, and vpon that groundes set the foundation of all his unhappie building. For whome soeuer he percelued either at variance with them, or bearing himselfe their fauor, he brake vnto the, some by mouth, some by writing & secret messengers, that it was neither reason, nor in anie wise to bee suffered, that the young king their master and kinsman, should be in the hands and custody of his mothers kindred, sequestred in maner from their company and attendaunce, of which euerie one ought him as saythfull seruice as they, and manie of them far more honorable part of him then his mothers side. Whose blood (quoth he) sauing the kings pleasure, was full vnmetely to be matched with his: which now to be as who sale removed from the king, and the lesse noble to bee left about him, is (quoth he) neither honorable to his maiestie, nor vnto vs, and also to his grace no suretie, to haue the mightiest of his friends from him, and vnto vs no little propable, to suffer our well proued enill willers to growe in our great authoritie with the prince in youth, namely which is light of belaise & some perswaded. We remember I trow king Edward himselfe, albe it hee was a man of age and discretion, yet was he in many things ruled by the bend, more then God either with his honour, or our profit, or with the commoditie of anie man els, except only the immoderat advancement of himselfe. Which whether they forer thirsed after their owne weale, or our too, it were hard I wote to gesse. And if some folles friendship had not holden better place with the king, then anie respect of kindred, they might peraduenture easilie haue betrapped and brought to confusion some of vs ere this. Why by not as easilly as they haue done some other already, as nere of his roiall blood as we? Vnto our Lord hath wrought his will, and thanks be to his grace that perill is past. Whobbeit as great is groweing, if we suffer this young king in our enemies hande, which without his witting might abuse the name of his commandement, to anie of our vndowing, which thing God and good prouision forbid.

Of which good prouision none of vs hath anie thing the lesse neede, for the late made attonement, in which the kings pleasure had more place then the parties wills: nor none of vs, I beleue, is so vnto ouer soone to trust a new frende made of an old fo, or to thinke of an holwerly kindnes, suddenly contra in one howe, continued yet scant a fortnight, should be deeper settled in their stomach, then a long accustomed malice manie pears rooted. With these wordes and wilkings and such other, the Duke of Gloucester some set a fire them that were of themselves eath to kinde, and in especiall twaine, Edward Duke of Buckingham, and William lord Hastings and chamberlaine, both men of honor and

of great power: The one by long succession from his ancestrie; the other by his office, and the kings fauor.

These two not bearing eath to other so much loue, as hatred both vnto the Quenes part, in this point accorded together with the Duke of Gloucester, that they would utterly amoue from the kings company all his mothers friends, vnder the name of their enemies.

Vpon this concluded, the Duke of Gloucester vnderstanding that the Lords which at that time were about the king, intended to bring him vp to his coronation, accompanied with such power of their friends, that it should be harde to him to bring his purpose to passe, without the gathering a great assemble of people, and in maner of open war, whereof the end hee wold was doubtfull, and in which the king being on their side, his parte should haue the face and name of a rebellion: he secretly therefore by diuers meanes caused the quene to be perswaded and brought in the minde, that it neither were neede, and also should be ieopardous, the king to come vp strong. For whereas now euerie Lord loued other, and none other thing studied vpon, but about the coronation and honor of the king; if the Lords of her kindred should assemble in the kings name much people, they should glue the Lords atwixt whome and them had bene sometime debate, to feare and suspence, least they should gather this people not for the kings safegarde, whome no man impagned, but for their destruction, hauing more regarde to their old variance, then their new attonement: for which cause they should assemble on the other partie much people againe for their defence, whose power shee wold well farre stretched. And thus should all the Realme fall on a rose. And of all the hurt that there of should ensue, which was likely not to be little, and the most harme there like to fall where the least would, all the world would put her and her kindred in the twight, and sape that they had vnwiselie and vntroly also broken the amitie and peace, that the king her husband so prudently made betwene his kin and hers in his death bed, and which the other party faithfully obserued.

The Quene being in this wise perswaded, such wordes sent vnto her sonne, and vnto her brother, being about the king, and ouer that the Duke of Gloucester himselfe and other Lords the chiefe of his bend, wrote vnto the king to reuerentlie, and to the quenes friends there so lovinglie, that they nothing carthlie mistrusting, brought the king vp in a great baffe, not in god spere, with a sober company. Now was the king in his waie to London gone from Bockinghampton, when the Dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham came thither, where remained behind the Lord Rivers the kings vnckle, intending on the morowe to follow the king, and be with him at Stony Stratford, twelue miles thence, early ere he departed. So was there made that night much friendly chere between these two Dukes and the Lord Rivers a greete while: Vnto incontinent after that they were openlie with great curtesie departed and the Lord Rivers lodged, the Dukes secretly with a fewe of their most priuie friends, sette them downe in Counsell, wherein they spent a great part of the night: and at their rising in the dawning of the daie, they sent out priuillie to their seruants in their Innnes and Lodgings about, gluing them commandeement, to make themselves shortly

shortly readable, for their Lordes were to horse backe warde. Upon which messages, manie of their folke were attendant, when manie of the Lord Rivers servants were unreadable. Nowe had these Dukes taken also into their custodie the keyes of the Turre, that none shoulde passe forth without their licence: And once this, in the high waite toward Stony Stratford where the king laye, they had bestowed certaine of their folke, that shoulde sende backe againe, and compell to returne any man that were gotten out of Northampton towardes Stony Stratford, till they shoulde give other licence: For as much as the dukes themselves intended for the shew of their diligence, to bee the first that shoulde that day attend upon the kings highnes out of that Towne: thus bare they folke in hand. But when the Lord Rivers understood the gates closed, and the waies on every side beset, neither his servants nor himselfe suffered to go out, perceiuing well so great a thing without his knowledge not begunne for naught, comparing this manner present, with his last nightes chere, in so fewe holvers so great a change, marvellouslie misliked. Howbeit, sith hee coulde not get awaie, and keepe himselfe close he would not, least hee shoulde seeme to hide himselfe for some secret feare of his owne fault, whereof he sawe no such cause in himselfe: he determined upon the faretie of his owne conscience, to go boldly to them, and inquire what this matter might meane: whom as some as they sawe, they began to quarrell with him, and say, that he intended to set distance betwene the king & them, and to bring them to confusion, but it shoulde not lie in his power. And when he began (as he was a very wel spoken man) in goodly wise to excuse himselfe, they tarried not the ende of his answer, but shortly toke him, and put him in ward: and that done, forthwith went to horsebacke, and toke the waite to Stony Stratford, where they founde the king with his company, ready to leape on horsebacke, and depart forward to leaue that lodging for them, because it was too freight for both companies. And as some as they came in his presence, they alight doونه with all their companie about them: To whom the duke of Buckingham said, go afoze gentlemen, and you men keepe your comers.

And thus in goodlie arraye they came to the king, and on their knees in verie humble wise salued his grace, which receiued them in verie iolous and amiable manner, nothing earthly knowing nor mistrusting as yet: But euen by & by in his presence they picked a quarrell to the Lord Richard Grey, the kings other brother by his mother, saying, that he with the Lord Sparques his brother, and the Lord Rivers his uncle had compassed to rule the king and the realme, and to set variance among the states, and to subdue and destroy the noble blood of the realme: Toward the accomplishing whereof, they said that the Lord Sparques had entred into the tower of London, and thence taken out the kings treasure, and sent men to the Sea.

All which thinges the Duke well wist were done for god purposes and necessarie, by the whole councell at London, saying that somewhat they must say. Unto which words the king answered: What my brother Marques hath done I cannot say: but in god faith I dare well answer for mine uncle Rivers and my brother here, that they be innocent of any such matter. *Hea my Liege,*  
quoth

The Lord Rivers put in ward.

The Lord Grey.

quoth the duke of Buckingham, they have kept their dealing in these matters farre from the knowledge of your god grace. And forthwith they arrested the Lord Richard and Sir Thomas Vaughan knight in the kings presence, and brought the king and all backe unto Northampton, where they toke againe further Councell: And there they sent awaie from the king whom it pleased them, and set new servants about him, such as liked better them then him: at which dealing he wept, and was nothing content, but it boded not. And at dinner, the duke of Gloucester sent a dish from his owne table to the Lord Rivers, paying him to be of god chere, all shoulde be well enough: and he thanked the duke, and praised the messenger to beare it to his nephew the Lord Richard, with the same message for his comfort, as one to whom such aduertitie was strange, but himselfe had borne all his daies in tye the reuolt, and therefore coulde beare it the better. But for all this comfortable curtisie of the duke of Gloucester, he sent the Lord Rivers and the Lord Richard, with Sir Thomas Vaughan, into the North country, into diuers places to prison, and afterwarde all to Pontfract, where they were in conclusion beheaded.

In this wise the duke of Gloucester toke vpon himselfe the order and gouernance of the young king. Whome with much honor and humble reuerence hee conueied toward toward the citie. But anone the tidings of this matter came hastily to the Quene a little before the midnight following, and that in the so rest wise, that the king her son was taken, her brother, her sonne, and other friends arrested, and sent no man with together, to be don with. God wot what. With which tidings, the Quene in great fright and heauines betwalling her gyltes raigne, her friendes mischance, and her owne infortune, damning the time that euer she disturbed the gathering of powder about the king, gate herselfe in all the hast possible with her younger son and her daughters, out of the palace of Westminster, in which she then lay, into the sanctuary, lodging herselfe and her company there in the abbots place.

So came there one likewise not long after midnight from the Lord Chamberlaine, vnto the Archbishop of Yorke then Chancellor of Englarde, to his place not far from Westminster: And so that he thewed his servants that he had tidings of so great importance, that his master gaue him in charge, not to forbear his rest, they letted not to wake him, nor he to admit this messenger vnto his bed side. Of whom he heard that these dukes were gone backe with the kings grace from Stony Stratford vnto Northampton: Notwithstanding sir quoth he my Lord sende thy pour Lordship word, that there is no feare, for he assuredly thou that all shall be well. I assure him, quoth the Archbishop, bee it as well as it will, it will neuer bee so well as we haue saide it: and thereupon by and by after the messenger departed, he caused in all the haste all his servants to be called vpp, and so with his owne household about him, and euerie man beapored, he toke the great scale with him, and came pet before daie vnto the Quene. About whom he found much heauinesse, rumber, haste, and busines, carriage and conuenance of her stuffe into sanctuary, chests, coffers, packes, favets, trusted all on mens backs, no man vnoccupied, some laiding, some going, some discharging, some comming for more, some breaking downe the wals to  
hizing

The death of the Lord Rivers and others.

The Quene taken sanctuary.

bying in the next way, and some yet byelwe to them to helpe to carry a wyong way.

The Quene her selfe late alone alowne on the rushes all desolate and dismayed, whome the archbishop comforted in the best manner he could, shewing her that he trusted the matter was nothing so sore as she took it for, and that he was put in god hope and out of feare by the message sent him from the lord Chamberlaine: Ah too woorthy him (quoth she) for he is one of them that labour to destroy me and my blood.

Spadam (quoth he) be yoe of god chere, for I assure you, if they crowne any other king than your sonne, whom they now haue with them, we shall on the morrow crowne his brother whom you haue here with you. And here is the great scale, whiche in like wise as that noble prince your husband deliuered it vnto me, so here I deliuer it vnto you, to the vse and behaue of your sonne, and therewith he betooke her the great scale, and departed home againe, yet in the dawning of the day. By which time, he might in his chamber window see all the Chamis full of boates of the duke of Glocesters seruants, watching that no man should go to sanctuary, nor none could passe vnsearched: Then was there great commotion and murmur, as well in other places about, as specially in the citie, the people diuersly doining vpon this dealing. And some lordes, knights, and gentlemen, either for fauor of the Quene, or for feare of themselves, assembled in sundry companies, and went flocke meale in harnesse: and many also, for that they reckoned this demeanour attempted, not so specially against the other lordes, as against the king himselfe in disturbance of his coronation. But then by and by the lordes assembled together, toward which meeting, the archbishop of Yorke fearing that it would be ascribed (as it was in dede) to his ouermuch lightnes, that he so so daingly had yelued by the great scale to the Quene, to whome the custodie thereof nothing pertained, without speciall commandement of the king, secretly sent for the scale againe, and brought it with him after the custumable manner. And at this meeting, the Lord Hastings, whose truth toward the king, no man doubted nor needed to doubt, perswaded the lordes to beleue, that the duke of Glocester was fure and fastly faithfull to his prince, and that the lord Rivers and lord Richard, with the other knights, were for matters attempted by them against the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, put vnder arrest for their surety, not for the kings covard: and that they were also in safegard, & there no longer should remaine than till the matter were, not by the dukes only, but also by all the other lordes of the kings counsell indifferently examined, and by other discretions ordered, and either iudged or appeased.

But one thing he aduised them beware, that they iudged not the matter too far forth ere they knew the truth, nor turning their private grudges into the common hurt, irking & prouoking men vnto anger, and disturbing the kings coronation, toward which the dukes were coming by, that they might peradventure bying the matter so far out of ioint, that it should neuer be brought in frame againe. Which strife if it should happen, as it were likely, to come to a felde, though both parties were in all things equal, yet should the authority be

be on that side where the king is himselfe. With these perswasions of the lord Hastings, whereof part himselfe beleued, of part hee with the contrarie, the se commotions were somewhat appeased, but specially by that, that the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham were so nere, and came so shortly on with the king, in none other manner, with none other voice or semblance than to his coronation, causing the same to be blotten about, that these lordes and knights which were taken, had contriued the destruction of the dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, and of other the noble blons of the realme, to the end that they themselves would alone demeane and governe the king at their pleasure.

And for the colourable pious theof, such of the dukes seruants as rode with the carts of their stuffe that were taken, (among which stuffe no maruel though some were harnesse, which at the breaking vp of the household, must needs either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed vnto the people all the boales as they went: Lo here bee the barrells of harnesse that these traitors had pilouly conueied in their carriage to destroy the noble lordes withall.

This deuise, albeit that it made the matter to seeme more unlikely, well perceiving that the intenders of such a purpose would rather haue had their harnesse on their backs, than to haue bound them by in barrells: yet much part of the common people were therewith very wel satisfied, and said it were almes to hang them.

When the king approached nere to the citie, Edmond Shaa Goldsmith then spale, with William White and Iohn Matthew Sheriffes, and all the other Aldermen in scarlet, with 500. hoise of the citizens in violet, receiued him reuerently at Warrney, and riding from thence, accompanied him into the citie, which he entred the fourth day of May, the first and last yere of his raigne.

The king was lodged in the Bishops palace, where was kept a great counsell, and there was sworne to the king, the duke of Glocester, the duke of Buckingham, and all the lords.

But the duke of Glocester bare him in open sight so reuerently to the prince, with all semblance of lowlines, that from the great obloquie in which he was so late before, hee was suddenly fallen in to great trust, that at the counsell next assembled, he was made the onely man, chole and thought most mete to be protector of the king and his realme, so that (were it desirue, as were it folly) the lambe was betaken to the wolfe to keepe. At which counsell also, the Archbishop of Yorke Chancellor of England, which had deliuered by the great scale to the Quene, was thereof greatly repproued, and the scale taken from him, and deliuered to doctor Russell bishop of Lincoln, a wise man and a good, and of much experience, and one of the best learned men vnbondedly that England had in his time. Diuers lordes and knights were appointed vnto diuers romes. The Lord Chamberlaine and some other kept still their offices that they had before.

Now all were it, so that the protector so sore thirsted for the finishing of that he had begun, that thought every day a yere till it were achieved, yet durd he no further attempt, as long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand: well witting, that if he deposed the one brother, all the realme would fall to the other, if

The kings coming to London.

The protector made.

The bishop of Lincoln made lord Chancellor.



he either remained in Sanctuary, or should happily be shortly conveyed to his farther libertie. Wherefore, incontinent at the next meeting of the Lords at the council, he proposed unto them, that it was a hainous deed of the Queene, and proceeding of great malice toward the kings Councellers, that the should keepe in Sanctuary the kings brother from him, whose special pleasure and comforte were to haue his brother with him. And that by her doinge to none other intent, but to bring all the Lordes in obloquie, and murmure of the people: as though they were not to be trusted with the kings brother, that by the assent of the nobles of the land, were appointed as the kings next friends, to the tuition of his owne roiall person. The prosperitie whereof standeth (quoth he) not all in keeping from enemies, or ill bland, but partlie also in recreation, and moderate pleasure, which he cannot in his tender youth take in the companye of ancient persons, but in the familiar conuersation of those that be neither far vnder, nor far aboue his age, naye the lesse of estate convenient to accompany his noble maiestie, therefore, with whom rather, then with his owne brother? And if anie man thinke this consideration (which I thinke no man thinketh that loueth the king) let him consider, that sometime without small things, greater cannot stand. And verily, it reboundeth greatly to the dishonour both of the kings highnes, and of all his that bene about his grace, to haue it ran in euerie mans mouth, not in this Realme onlie, but also in other lands: as euill wordes walke far, that the kings brother should be faine to keepe Sanctuary, for euery man will weene, that no man will so do for nought. And such euill opinion on once fastened in mens hearts, hard it is to wraff out, and many grow to more grieue then any man can here diuine: wherefore me thinketh it were not tooke to send unto the Queene for the redresse of this matter, some honorable trustie man, such as both tendereth the kings weale, and the honor of his council, and is also in fauour and credence with her. For all which considerations, none seemeth me more meete, then our reuerende father here present, my Lord Cardinal, who may in this matter do most good of anie man, if it please him to take the paine, which I doubt not of his goodnesse hee will not refuse for the kings sake and ours, and wealthe of the young duke himselfe, the kings most honorable brother, and after my soueraigne Lord himselfe, my most dére stephen, considered that the rebys shall be ceased the slanderous rumour and oblique now going, and the hurts avoided that thereof might ensue, and much rest and quiet growe to all the realme. And if he be percase to obstinate, and so precisely let upon her own will, that neither his wisde & faithfull aduertisement can not moue her, nor any mans reason content her: then shall we by mine aduise, by the kings authoritie, fetch him out of that prison, and bring him to his noble presence, in whose continuall companye he shall be so well cherished, & so honorably intreated, that all the world shall to our honor and her reproch perceiue, that it was only mallice, forwardnes, or folly that caused her to keepe him there: this is my mind in this matter for this time, except anie of your Lordships anie thing perceiue to the contrary, for neuer shall I by God's grace so looe my selfe to mine owne will, but that I shall be ready to change it upon your better aduises.

Then

When the protector had said, all the Councell affirmed, that the motion was good and reasonable, and to the king and the Duke his brother, honorable, and a thing that should cease great murmure in the Realme, if the mother might be by good meanes induced to deliuer him. Which thing the Archbishoppe of Yorke, whome they all agreed also to bee thereto most conuenient, toke vpon him to moue her, and therein to doo his bitternest deuoure. Howbeit, if she could be in no wise intreated with her good will to deliuer him, then thought he and such other as were of the spiritualty present, that it were not in any wise to be attempted to take him out against her will. For it would be a thing that should turne to the great grudge of all men, and high displeasure of God, if the priuiledge of that holy place should now be broken, which had so many yeres bene kept, which both kings and popes so god had granted, so manie had confirmed, and which holy ground was more then 500. yeres agoe by S. Peter in his own person in spirit accompanied with great multitude of angels by night so specially hallowed, and dedicate to God: for the prouise thereof, they haue yet in the abbey, Saint Peters Cope to shew) that from that time hitherward, was there neuer so burdenout a king, that durst that sacred place violate, or so holie a bishop, that durst it presume to consecrate. And therefore (quoth the Archbys. Shop of Yorke) god forbid that any man should for any thing earthly enterpriue to breake the immunitie and libertie of the sacred sanctuarie, that hath bene the safeguard of so many a good mans life. And I trust (quoth he) with Gods grace, we shall not neede it. But for any manner need, I would not we should doot. I trust that they shall be with reason contented, and all thinges in good maner obtained. And if it happeth that I bring it not so to passe, yet shall I toward it so far sayd do my best, that ye shall all well perceiue, that no lacke of my deuoure, but the mothers dread and womanly feare, shall be the let. Womanly feare, naie womanly forwardnes (quoth the D. of Buckingham) for I dare take it vpon my soule, the well knoweth the needeth no such thing to feare, either for her son, or for his selfe. For as for hir, here is no man that will be at war with women: Would God som of the men of hir kin were women too, and then should all be some in rest. Howbeit there is none of hir kinne the lesse loued, for that they be hir kin, but for their owne euill deseruing. And natheles, if wee loued neither hir nor hir kin, yet were there no cause to thinke that we should hate the kings noble brother, to whose grace we our selues be of kin: whose honour, if wee as much desired, as our dishonor, & as much regard toke to his wealthe, as to her owne will, they would be as loth to suffer him from the King as anie of vs be. For if she haue wit (as would God she had as good wit as the hath shee doth wit) shee reckoneth her selfe no wiser, then she thinketh some that be here, of whose faithfull mind the nothing doubteth, but verily be leue and knoweth, that they would be as loth of his harme, as hir selfe, & yet would haue him from her, if she bide there: and we al (I thinke) content, that both be with hir, if she come thence, and bide in such place, where they may with their honor be.

Now then, if she refuse in the deliuerance of him, to follow the counsaile of them, whose wisdome shee knoweth, whose truth shee well trusteth: it is eate to perceiue, that forwardnes letteth her, and not feare. But go to, suppose that she

Sanctuary.

The



the feare (as who may let her to feare her owne shadowe) the more the feareth to deliuer him, the more ought we feare to leaue him in her hands. For if the call such fond doubts, that the feare his hurt: then will the feare, that he shall be fet by thence. For the will some thinke, that if men were let (which god forbid) vpon so great a mischief, the Sanctuarie would little let them: which god men might (as me thinke) without sinne, somewhat lesse regard than they doe.

Now then, if the doubt, least he might be fetched from her, is it not likelie enough that she shall send him some where out of the Realme: Clearly, I loke for none other. And I doubt not, but she now as she mindeth it, as we the let therof. And if she might happen to bring that to passe, (as it were no great matter, we letting her alone) all the world would say, that we were a wise sort of Counsaillours about a king, that let his brother be cast awaie vnder our noses. And therefore, I enfore you faithfully for my mind, I will rather manage her minde, fetch him awaie, than leaue him there, till her stowardnesse and sonde feare conuince him awaie. And yet will I breake no Sanctuarie the refore. For verely, with the priuiledges of that place and other like haue bene of long continued, I am not he that would be about to breake them. And in god faith, if they were now to begin, I would not be he that should bee about to make them.

Yet will I not saie naie, but that it is a dede of pittie, that such men as the sea, or their euill debtours haue brought in pouertie, should haue some place of libertie, to keepe their bodies out of the daunger of their cruelled tortours.

And also, if the crowne happen (as it hath done) to come in question while either part taketh other as traitors, I will well there be some places of refuge for both.

What as for thienes, of which these places be full, and which neuer fall from the crasse, after they once fall thereto, it is pittie the Sanctuarie should serue them: And much more, manquellers, whome God had to take from the altar and kill them, if their murder were wilfull. And where it is otherwise, there neede were not the Sanctuaries that God appointed in the olde lawe, for if either necessitie, his owne defence, or misfortune draweth him to that dede, a pardon serueth, which either the law granteth of course, or the king of pittie maie.

Then loke me now how few Sanctuarie men there be, whom anie famous necessitie compelled to go thither: and then see on the other side, what a sort there be commonly therein of them, whom wilfull iniquitie hath brought to naught.

What a rabble of thienes, murderers, and malicious hapnons traitors, and that in two places specially: The one at the elbow of the citie, the other in the verte bowels. I dare well now to, weepe the god that they doe, with the hurt that cometh of them, and ye shall finde it much better to lacke both, than haue both. And this I saie, although they were not abused as they now be, and so long haue bene, that I feare me ever they will be, while men be afraid to set

Minister  
and Saint  
Partine.

their hands to the imprisonment, as though God and St. Peter were the patrons of vngations living.

Now vntill this riot, and run in debt, vpon the boldnes of these places, yea, and rich men run thither with poore mens goods, there they build, there they spend, and bid their creditours go whistle them.

The abuse of  
Sanctuaries.

Mens wiues run thither with their husbands plate, and saie, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating.

Thienes bring thither their stolen goods, and there liue thereon.

There deuile they netue robberies, nightly they steale out, they robbe, and reave, and kill, and come in againe, as though those places gaue them not onely a safegard for the harme they haue done, but a licence also to do more. What best, much of this mischief, if wise men would set their handes to it, might be amended, with great thanks of God, and no breach of the priuiledge.

The rethone, sith so long ago I wot neare what poe, and what prince more piteous than politike, hath granted it, and other men since, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it, let vs take a paine the with, and let it a gods name stande in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre forth, as may serue to let vs of the fetching forth of this noble man, to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which he neither is, nor can be a Sanctuarie man.

A Sanctuarie serueth alway to defend the body of that man that standeth in danger abroad, not of great hurt onely, but also of lawfull hurt, for against lawfull harmes, neuer poe nor king intended to priuiledge any one place, for that priuiledge hath euerie place: knoweth any man, any place wherein it is lawfull one man to do another wrong?

What no man lawfully take hurt, that libertie, the king, the law, and beerie nature, forbiddeth in euerie place, and maketh to that regarde, for euerie man euerie place a Sanctuarie.

But where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there needeth be the tuition of some speciall priuiledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries: from which necessitie, this noble Prince is free, whose loue to his king, nature and kindred proueth, whose innocencie to all the world, his tender youth proueth, and so Sanctuarie, as for him, neither none he needeth, nor also none can haue.

When come not to Sanctuarie, as they come to Baptisme, to requirer it by their Godfathers, he must aske it himselfe, that must haue it, and reason, sith no man hath cause to haue it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him saie, neede to require it: what will then hath ponder babe: which and if he had discretion to require it, if neede were, I dare say would now be right angry with them that keepe him there: and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of priuiledge, to be some what more homely with them that be there Sanctuarie men in dede.

For if one go to Sanctuarie with another mans goods, why should not the king leaue his bodie at libertie, satisfie the parties of his goods, euen within the Sanctuarie: for neither king nor poe can giue any place such a priuiledge,

ccc

that

that it shall discharge a man of his debts, being able to paie: and with that, diuers of the cleargie that were present, whether they saide it for his pleasure, or as they thought, agreed plainly, that by the law of God and of the Church, the goods of a Sanctuary man should be deliuered in payment of his debts, and solden goods to the owner, and onely libertie restored him to get his living with the labour of his hands. Clericly (quoth the Duke) I thinke you saie verie trath, and what if a mans wife will take Sanctuary, because shee list to run from her husband: I woulde wene if she coulde alleadge none other cause, bee male lawfullie without any displeasure to Saint Peter, take her out of Saint Peters church by the arme. And if no body may be taken out of Sanctuary, that (saith he) will bide there, then if a child will take Sanctuary, because he feareth to go to schole, his master must let him alone. And as simple as that sample is, yet is there lesse reason in our case than in that: for therein, though it bee a childish feare, yet is there, at the least, wise, some feare, and herein is there none at all. And verily, I haue often heard of Sanctuary men, but I neuer heard earst of Sanctuary children. And therefore, as for the conclusion of my minde, who so may haue deserued to make it, if they thinke it for their libertie, let them keepe it. But he can be no Sanctuary man, that neither hath wisdom to desire it, nor malice to deserue it, whose life or libertie, can by no lawfull processe stand in iopardie. And hee that taketh one out of Sanctuary to doe him good, I saie plainly, that he breaketh no Sanctuary.

When the Duke had done, the temporall men whole, and a good part of the spirituall also, thinking no hurt eathly ment toward the yong babe, concluded in effect, that if he were not deliuered he should be fetched: Howbeit, they thought it all best, in the answering of all manner of rumour, that the L. Cardinall should first assay to get him with her good will. And thereupon, all the counsell came into the star chamber at Westminister, and the L. Cardinall knowing the Protector with the counsell in the darre chamber, departed into the Sanctuary to the Quene, with diuers other lordes with him, were it for the respect of his honour, or that she should by presence of so manie perceiue that this errand was not one mans minde: or were it, for that the Protector intended not in this matter, to trust any one man alone, or else, that if the finalle were determined to keepe him, some of that companie, had happely secret instruction incontinent, maugre her minde, to take him, and to leaue her no respite to conuery him, which she was likely to mind after this matter broken to her, if her time would in any wise serue her.

When the quene, and these lordes were come together in presence, the lord Cardinall shewed vnto her, that it was thought vnto the Protector, and vnto the whole counsell, that her keeping of the kings brother in that place, was the thing, which highly sounded, not onely to the great rumour of the people: their obloquie, but also to the insupportable grieue and displeasure of the kings royall spatesse, to whose grace it were as singular comfort to haue his naturall brother in companie, as it was their both dishonour, and all theirs and hers also, to suffer him in Sanctuary, as though the one brother stood in danger & perill

of the other. And he shewed her, that the counsell therefore had sent him vnto her, to require her the deliuer of him, that he might be brought vnto the kings presence at his libertie, out of that place, which they reckoned as a prison, and there should he be demeaned, according to his estate, & she in this doing should both do good to the realm, pleasure to the counsell, and profit to her selfe, succour to her friends that were in distresse, and ouer that (which he wist well the specially touched) not only great comfort and honour to the king, but also to the yong duke himselfe, whose both great wealth it were to be together, as well for many greater causes, as also for their both disposall, and recreation: which thing the Lord esteemed no sleight, though it seemed light, well pondering, that their youth without recreation and play, cannot endure, nor any stranger, for the consuetude of their both ages and estates, so meely in that point for any of them, as either of them for other.

Appoynted (quoth the quene) I say not naie, but that it were very convenient, that this gentleman whom ye require were in companie of the king his brother: and in good faith, me thinketh it were as great commoditie to them both, as for yet a while, to bee in the custodie of their mother, the tender age considered of the elder of them both, but specially the yonger, which besides his infancie, that also needeth good looking to, hath a while bene so sore diseased, & sicker with sickness, and is so newly rather a little amended, than well recovered, that I dare put no person earthily in trust with his keeping, but my selfe onely, considering that there is (as physicians saie) and as we also finde, double the perill in the reciduation, that was in the first sickness, with which disease, Nature being sore laboured, sore wearied and weakened, warreth the lesse able to beare out and sustaine a new surfeit. And albeit there might be found other that would happily do their best vnto him, yet is there none that either knoweth better how to order him, than I that so long haue kept him: or is more tenderly like to cherish him, than his owne mother that bare him. So man denieth, god & Adam (quod the carbinah) but that your grace were of all folke most necessary about your children: and so would all the counsell not onely be content, but glad that ye were, if it might stande with your pleasure, to be in such place as might stand with their honour. But if you do appoint your selfe to carrie here, then thinke they it more convenient that the Duke of York be with the king honourably at his libertie to the comfort of them both, than here as a Sanctuary man, to their both dishonour and obloquie, which there is not alwaies so great necessitie to haue the child to be with the mother: but that occasion maie sometime be such, that it should be more expedient to keepe him elsewhere, which in this well appeareth, that at such time as your dearest sonne then Prince, and now King, should for his honour, and good order of the countrey, keepe household in Wales, far out of your companie: your grace was well content the reuolt your selfe. Not verie well content, quoth the quene: And yet the case is not like, for the one was then in health, and the other is now sick: In which case, I marvell greatly, that my lord protector is so desirous to haue him in his keeping, where if the child in his sickness miscarrie by nature, yet might hee runne into slander and suspicion of fraude.

Protector.

The quene's answer.

And where they call it a thing to lose against my child's honour, and the less also, that hee bydoeth in this place: it is all their honours there to suffer him byde, where as yet doubteth he shall be best kept, and that is here, while I am here, which as yet intende not to come forth, & leoparde my selfe after other of my friends, which would God were rather here in suretie with mee, than I were there in leoparde with them. Why madam (quoth another lord) know you any thing why they should be in leoparde? I say verily sir, quoth she, no; why they should be in prison neither, as they now be. But it is I trowe, no great marvel though I feare, lest those that haue not letted to put them in durance, without colour, will let as little to procure their destruction without cause. The cardinall made a countenance to the other lord, that he should haue no more upon that string, and then said he to the Quene, that he nothing doubted, but that those Lords of her honorable kinne, which as yet remained under arrest, should upon the matter examined do well enough: and as towa. The her noble person, neither was, neyther coulde be anie manner leoparde. Whereby should I trust that (quoth the Quene) in that I am guiltles? as though they were guiltie, in that I am with their enemies better loued than they? When they hate them for my sake, in that I am so neere of kin to the king: and how far they be off, if that would helpe, as God send grace it hurt not, & therfore as for me, I purpose not as yet, to depart hence. And as for this gentleman's sonne, I mind that hee shall be where I am, till I see farther: for I assure you, for that I see some men so greedy, without anie substantiall cause to haue him: This maketh mee much the more feard to deliuer him. Cruele madame, quoth he, and the fearder that you be to deliuer him, the fearder bene o ther men to suffer you to keepe him, least your causelesse feare might cause you farther to conuey him: and many be there that think he can haue no ptielledge in this place, which neither can haue will to aske it, nor malice to deserue it, and the refoze, they reckon no ptielledge broken, though they fetch him out, which if ye finally refuse to deliuer him, I verily thinke they will. So much dread hath my Lord his uncle, for the tender loue hee beareth him, least your grace should hap to send him away.

The Quene.

A sir (quoth the Quene) hath the protector so tender zeale, that he feareth nothing but least hee should escape him: Thinketh hee that I would sende him hence, which neither is in the plight to send out, and in what place could I reckon him sure, if he be not sure in the Sanctuarie? Whereof was there neuer tyrant yet so distrustful that durst presume to breake. And I trust, God is as strong per se to withstand his aduersaries, as euer he was. But my son can be serued no Sanctuarie, and therefore he cannot haue it. Forsooth he hath found a goodly gloze, by which that place that may defend a chiefe, male not saue an innocent. But he is in no leoparde, nor hath no need thereof: would God he had not. Troth the protector, I pray god he make proue a protector, troweth he that I perceiue not wherunto his painted pocielle doaweth? it is not honorable that I abide here: it were comf; table for them both, that he were with his brother, bicause the king lacketh a platfellow to be sure. I praye God sende them both better platfellows than him, that maketh so high a matter upon such a

trifling

trifling pretext: as though there could none be found to plaie with the king, but if his brother that hath no luste to plaie for sickness, come out of Sanctuarie, out of his safegarde to plaie with him. As though Princes as young as they be, coulde not plaie but with their pères, or chylzen coulde not plaie but with their kinned, with whom for the more part they agree much worse than with strangers. But the childe cannot requite the ptielledge: who told him so? He shall heare him aske it, and he will. Whombeit this is a gaie matter, suppose he coulde not aske it, suppose he would not aske it, suppose hee would aske to go out, if I saie hee shall not: if I aske the ptielledge but for my selfe, I saie hee that against my will taketh him out, breaketh the Sanctuarie. Serueth this li-bertie for my person onelie, or for my goods too? Fee male not hence take my childe from me, and male you take my childe from me: He also is my ward: for as my learned counsell sheweth me, sith hee hath nothing by descent holden by knights seruice, the law maketh his mother his guardian. When may no man I suppose take my warde from mee out of Sanctuarie, without the breach of Sanctuarie. And if my ptielledge coulde not serue him, nor he aske it for himself, yet sith the law committeth to me the custodie of him, I may require it for him, except the law giue a childe a guardian only for his goods and lands, discharging him of the cure and safe keeping of his body, for which only both lands and goods serue.

¶ And if examples be sufficient to obtaine ptielledge for my childe, I neede not far to seeke. For in this place in which he now wee be (and which is now in question, whether my childe male take benefit of it) mine other son (now king) was bozne, and kept in his cradle, and preferred to a more prosperous fortune, which I praye God long to continue. And as all you know, this is not the first time that I haue taken Sanctuarie. For when my Lord my husband was banished, and thrust out of his kingdome, I fled hither, being great with childe, and here I bare the prince. And when my Lord my husband returned safe againe, and had the victorie, then went I hence to welcome him home, and from hence I brought my babe the prince vnto his father, when hee first toke him in his armes. And I praye God that my sons palace may bee as great safegarde vnto him now reigning, as this place was sometime to the kings enemy. In this place I intend to keepe his brother, sith, &c. ¶ Wherefore here intend I to keepe him, since mans law serueth the guardian to keepe the infant. The law of nature bids the mother keepe the childe, Gods law ptielledge the Sanctuarie, and the Sanctuarie my son, sith I feare to put him in the protector's hands that hath his brother alreadie, and were (if both failed) in hereto; to the crowne. The cause of my feare hath no man to doo to eramine: And yet feare I no farther than the law feareth, which as learned men tell me, for bloodeth euery man the custodie of the m, by whose death hee may inherit lesse land than a kingdome. I can no more, but whosoeuer he be that breaketh this holy Sanctuarie, I praye God shortly send him need of Sanctuarie, when he may not come to it: for taken out of Sanctuarie would I not my mostall enemy were.

The Lorde Cardinall perceiving that the Quene waxed euer the longer the farther off, and also that shee beganne to kinde and chafe, and spake more

Ccc 3.

biding

This that is  
deare betwene  
this marke &  
this marke  
was no: wyl-  
ten by him in  
English, but is  
translated out  
of this mystorie  
which he wyote  
in Latine.

biting wordes against the protector, and such as he neither beleued, and was also loath to heare, he said to her for a small conclusion, that he would no longer dispute the matter, but if she were content to deliuer the duke to him, and to the other Lords present, he durst lay his own body and soule both in pledge, not only for his surety, but also for his estate. And if he would giue them a resolute answer to the contrary, he would forthwith depart the twilfth, and shift who so would with this busines afterwards, for hee neuer intended more to moue her in that matter, in which she thought that he and all other also saue herselfe lacked either wit or truth. Wit, if she were so dull that they could no thing perceiue what the protector intended; truth, if they should procure her son to be deliuered into his hands, in whom they should perceiue towardes the child any euill intended.

The Duke with these wordes stood a good while in a great studie: And for asmuch as hir seemed y<sup>e</sup> cardinall readier to depart then some of the remnant, and the protector himselfe ready at hand, so that the verillie thought he could not keepe him there, but that he should incontinent be taken thence; and to conuete him else where, neither hadde shee time to serue her, nor place determined, nor persons appointed, all thinges vntready, this speeche came on her so sodaynelle, nothing lesse looking for, than to haue him sought out of Sanctuaries, which shee thought to bee now beset in such places about, that hee could not bee conueyed out untaken; and partelle (as shee thought) it might fortune, her feare to bee false, so well shee wiske it was either newlesse, or bootlesse: wherefore, if shee should needs goe from him, shee deemed it best to deliuer him. And ouer that, of the Cardinals sayth shee nothing doubted, nor of some other Lords neither, whome shee there saue, which as shee feared leaste they might be deceyued; so was shee well assured they should not bee corrupted: then thought shee it should yet make them the more warlike to looke to him, and the more circumspectie to see to his suretie, if shee with her owne handes brake him to them of trust. And at the last shee tooke the yong Duke by the hand, and said vnto the Lordes: My Lordes (quoth shee) and all my Lordes, I neither am so vnwise to mistrust your wits, nor so suspicious to mistruste your trackes: of which thing I purpose to make you each a prooffe, as if cyther of both lacked in you, might turne both mee to great sorrow, the realme to much harme, and you to great reproch. For so, here is (quoth shee) this gentleman, whome I doubt not but I could here keepe safe, if I would, whatsoeuer anie man saie: & I doubt not also, but there be some abroad so deadly enemies vnto my blood, that if they wist where any of it lay in their owne bodie, they would let it out. Wee haue also experience that the desire of a Kingdome knoweth no kinred: The Brother hath bene the Brothers bane: and may the nephewes bee sure of their uncle: Each of these children is the others defence while they be asunder, and each of their liues lieth in the others bodie. Keepe one safe and both bee sure, and nothing for them both more perillous, than to bee both in one place. For what wisse merchant aduentureth all his goods in one shippe? All this notwithstanding, here I deliuer him, and his Brother in him, to keepe, into your handes, of whome

I shall aske them both afore God and the world: If any shall see be, that tooke I well, and I knowe well y<sup>e</sup> be wisse. Power and strength to keepe him if you like, neither lacke ye of your selfe, nor can lacke helpe in this case: And if ye cannot els where, then may you leaue him here. But onlie one thing I beseech you, for the trust which his father put in you euer, and for the trust I put in you now, that as far as ye thinke that I feare too much, be you well ware that you feare not as farre too little. And therewithall shee said vnto the child, farewell mine owne sweete sonne, God sende you good keeping: let mee kisse you yet once ere you goe, for God knoweth when wee shall kisse together againe: And therewith shee kised him, and blessed him, turned her backe and wept, and went her waie, leauing the child weeping as fasshe. When the lord Cardinall and those other Lords with him had recited this yong duke, they brought him into the Starre Chamber, where the protector tooke him in his armes and kised him, with these wordes: Gode welcome my Lorde, euen withall my verie heart: And hee sayde in that of likelihood as hee thought. Whereupon forthwith they brought him vnto the King his Brother, into the Wythoppes Palace at Paules, and from thence through the city honourable into the Tower, out of the which after that date they neuer came abroad.

¶ When the protector had both the children in his handes, he opened himselfe more boldly, both to certaine other men, and also chieflie to the Duke of Buckingham. Although I know that manie thought that this duke was p<sup>r</sup>sent to all the protectors counsell, euen from the beginning, and some of the protectors friends said, that the duke was the first mouer of the protector to this matter, sending a yong messenger vnto him, straight after his Edwards death. But other againe which knew better the subtil wit of the protector, denie that hee euer opened his enterpryse to the duke, untill hee had brought to passe the things before rehearsed. But when hee had imprisoned the queenes kinfolks, and gotten both hir sons into his owne handes, then hee opened the rest of his purpose with lesse feare to them whome he thought meete for the matter, and specially to the duke, who being woun to his purpose, hee thought his strength more then haile increased. The matter was broken vnto the duke by subtil folks, and such as were their craftes masters in handling of such wicked devices: who declared vnto him that the yong Duke was offended with him for his kinfolks sake, & if he were euer able he would reuenge them: who would pick him for ward the reuente if they escaped (for they would remember their imprisonment) or else if they were put to death, without doubt the yong Duke would be careful for their deatnes, whose imprisonment was grievous vnto him. And that with repenting the Duke should nothing auaille, for there was no way left to redeem his offence by benefits, but he should sooner destroy himselfe then saue the king, who with his brother and his kinfolks he saw in such places imprisoned, as the protector might with a becke destroy them all: and that if there no doubt but hee would do it in dede, if there were anie newe enterpryse attempted. And that it was likelie, that as the protector had promised plain garde to himselfe, so had hee swayed for the Duke, and trapnes to catch him, if hee

of himselfe  
tion.

This that is  
dece betwene  
this marke  
of this marke  
was not  
written by him in  
English, but is  
translated out of  
this English  
which he wrote  
in Latin.

should be against him, and that peradventure from them, whom he least suspected. For the state of things and the dispositions of men were then such, that a man could not well tell whom he might trust, or whom he might fear.

These things and such like, being beaten into the dukes mind, brought him to that point, that where he had repented a way that he had entred, yet would he go forth in the same, and since he had once begunne, he would stoutly go through. And therefore to this wicked enterprise which he believed could not be voided, he bent himselfe, and went through and determined, that since the common mischief could not be amended, he would turne it as much as he might to his owne commoditie.

When it was agreed, that the Protector should haue the Dukes aide to make him king, and that the Protector only lawfull should marrie the dukes daughter, and that the Protector should grant him the quiet possession of the Earldome of Hertford, which he claimed as his inheritance, and could neuer obtaine it in king Edwards time: Besides these requests of the Duke, the protector of his owne mind promised him a great quantitie of the kings treasure, and of his household stuffe. And when they were thus at a point betwene themselves, they went about to prepare for the coronation of the young king as they would haue it seeme: And that they might turne both the eyes and mindes of men from perceiuing of their duties other where, the Lordes being sent for from all parts of the realme, came thicke to the solemnity: But the Protector, and the duke after that, that they had sent the lord Cardinall, the archbishop of Yorke then lord Chancellor, the bishop of Ely, the L. Stanley, and the L. Hastings then lord Chamberlaine, with many other noble men to commune and deuise about the coronation in one place, as fast were they in another place contriuing the contrarie, and to make the protector king. To which Councell, albeit there were admitted very few, and they were secret: yet began there here and there about, some manner of muttering among the people, as though all should not long be well, though they neuer wist what they feared, nor therefore were it that before such great things mens hearts of a secret instinct of nature misgave them, as the sea without wind swelleth of himselfe sometime before a tempest: or were it that some one man happily somewhat perceiving, stirred many men with suspicion, though hee shewed few men what he knewe. Notwith, somewhat the dealing it selfe made men to muse on the matter, though the councell were close. For by little and little, all folke withyrew from the tower, and drew to Crosbies in Bishops gate strate, where the protector kept his household. The protector had the resort, the king in manner desolate.

While some for their businesse made suite to them that had the doing, some were by their friends secretly warned, that it might happily turne them to no good, to be too much attendant about the king without the protectors appointment, which remoued also diuers of the princes olde seruants from him, and set new about him.

Thus manie thinges comming together partly by chance, partly of purpose, caused at length not common people onely, that wound with the winde, but wise men also, and some lordes eke to marke the matter, and mune thereon,

to

so farre forth, that the Lord Stanley that was after earle of Darby, wisely mistrusted it, and saide vnto the Lord Hastings, that he much misliked these two severall Councells. For while we (quoth he) talke of one matter in yone place, little wot we thereof they talke in the other place. My Lord (quoth the Lord Hastings) of my life neuer doubt you: for while one man is there, which is neuer thence, neuer can there bee thing once moued, that should found a misse toward me, but it should be in mine eares ere it were well out of their mouthes.

This meant he by Catesby, which was of his more secret counsell, and whom Catesby. he verie familiarly vsed, and in his most weightie matters put no man in so speciall trust, reckoning himselfe to no man so liefe, sith hee well wist there was no man so much to him beholden as was this Catesby, which was a man well learned in the lawes of this land, and by the speciall fauor of the L. Chamberlaine, in good authoritie, & much rule bare he in all the countie of Leicesters, where the lord Chamberlains power chiefly lay. But sorely great pittie was it, that he had not had either more truth or lesse wit: for his dissimulation onely kept all that mischief by. In whom if the lord Hastings had not put so speciall trust, the lord Stanley and he had departed with diuers other lordes, and broken all the daunce, for many ill signes that he saw, which he nold construe all to the best. So surely thought he, that there could be no harme toward him in that counsell intended where Catesby was.

And of trust the Protector and the Duke of Buckingham made verie good semblance vnto the Lord Hastings, and kept him much in companie: And undoubtedly the protector loued him well, and loth was to haue lost him, fearing for feare least his life should haue quailed their purpose. For which cause hee moued Catesby to proue with some wordes call out a far off, whether he could thinke it possible to win the Lord Hastings vnto their part: But Catesby whether he assayed him, or assayed him not, reported vnto them, that he founde him to fast, and heard him speake so terrible wordes, that he durst no further breake.

And of trust the lord Chamberlaine of very trust shewed vnto Catesby the distrust that other began to haue in the matter: And therefore he fearing least their motion might with the Lord Hastings minish his credence, whereunto onely all the matter leaned, procured the protector hastily to ridde him. And much the rather, for that he trusted by his death to obtaine much of the rule that the lord Hastings bare in his countrey: the onely desire whereof was the allectiue that induced him to be partner and one speciall contriuer of all this horrible treason.

Whereupon some after, that is to wit, on the fridaie the thirtieth daie of June, many lordes assembled in the tower, and there sate in councell, deuising the honorable solemnitie of the kings coronation, of which the time appointed then to nere approached, that the pageants and subtilties were in making daie and night at Westminster, and much victuall killed therefore, that after ward was cast away.

These Lordes so sitting together communing of this matter, the Protector came

Crosby place.

came in amongst them first about nine of the clocke, saluting them courteously, and excusing himselfe that he had bene from them so long, saying merilie, that he had bene a sleeper that day.

And after a little talking with them, he said unto the bishoppe of Glouc: My Lord, you haue very good strawberries at your garden in Holborne, I require you let vs haue a messe of them. Gladly my lord (quoth he) would God I had some better thing as ready to your pleasure as that. And therewith in all the haste he sent his seruant for a messe of strawberries.

The protector let the lordes sit in communing, and thereupon praying them to spare him for a little while, departed thence: And some after one houre, betwene 10. and 11. he returned into the chamber among them all, changed with a wonderfull fower angrie countenance, knitting the browes, frowning and fretting, and gnawing on his lips, and so late him downe in his place, all the lordes much dismayed and soze maruelling of this manner of sudden change, and what thing should him aile. Then, when he had sitten still a while, thus he began: What were they worthy to haue that compasse and imagine the destruction of me, being so nere of blood unto the king, and protector of his rowle all person and his realme? At this question, all the lordes late soze astonished, making much by whom this question should bee meant, of which every man wist himselfe cleere.

Then the lord Chamberlaine, as he that for the loue betwene them thought he might be boldest with him, answered and said, that they were worthy to be punished as hainous traitors, what soeuer they were: And all the other affirmed the same. That is (quoth he) ponder forceresse my brothers wife, and other with her, meaning y<sup>e</sup> queene. At these wordes many of the other lordes were greatly abashed that fauored her. But the L. Hastings was in his mind better content that it was moued by her, than by any other whom he loved better: albeit his hart somewhat grudged, that he was not afore made of counsell in this matter, as he was of the taking of her kinred, and of their putting to death, which were by his assent before decessed to bee beheaded at Pontefract this selfe same day, in which he was not ware that it was by other decessed, that himselfe should be beheaded the same day at London. Then said the protector: Ye shall all see in what wise that forceresse, and that other witch of her counsell Shores kiste with this affinity, haue by their forcerie and witchcraft wasted my body: And therewith he plucked by his doublet sleeve to his elbowe upon his left arme, where he shewed a terribly withered arme, and small, as it was neuer other. And thereupon every mans minde soze misgaue them, well perceiving that this matter was but a quarrell: For they well wist, that the Duke was to wise to go about any such folly: And also if they would, yet would they of all folke least make Shores wife of counsell, whom of all women the most hated, as that concubine whom the king her husband had most loved: And also, no man was there present but well knewe y<sup>e</sup> his arme was euer such since his birth. Nayther lesse the lord Chamberlaine (which from the death of king Edward kept Shores wife, on whom he somewhat doted in the kings life, saying (as it is saide) bee that while forbare her of reuerence toward the king, or else of a certaine kind of

of felicity to his friend) answered and said: Certainly my lord, if they haue so beinously done, they be worthy beinous punishment.

What (quoth the protector) thou seruest me I weene with ifs and with ands, I tell thee they haue so done, and that I will make god on thy bodie traitor: and therewith as in a great anger, he clapped his fist vpon the boord a great rap. At which token giuen, one cried treason without the chamber: There with a doze clapped, and in come there rushing men in harnesse, as many as the chamber might holde. And anone the protector said to the lord Hastings, I arrest thee traitor: What me my lord (quoth he) pea thee traitor, quoth the protector. And another let fly at the lord Stanley, which shynke at the stroke, and fell vnder the table, or else his head had been cleft to the teth: for as thoughtly as he shynke, yet came the blood about his eares. When were they all quickly bestowed in diuers chambers, except the lord Chamberlaine, whom the protector bad speeche and shynke him aspace, for by S. Paul (quoth he) I will not to stirre till I see thy head off.

It boted him not to aske why, but heauilie tooke a piteet at auenture, and made a short thrist, for a longer would not be suffered, the protector made so much haste to dinner, which he might not go to, till this were done, for saving of his oth. So was he brought forth into the greene beside the chappell with in the tower, and his head laide downe vpon a long log of timber, and there stricken off, and afterward his body with the head entered at Windsoe beside the body of king Edward.

A marvellous case is it to heare either the warnings of that he should haue boded, or the tokens of that he could not vobde, for the selfe night next before his death, the L. Stanley sent a trustie secret messenger vnto him at mid night in the haste, requiring him to rise and ride away with him, for he was disposed bitterly no longer to bide, he had so fearfull a dreame, in which him thought, that a boare with his tuskes so rased them both by the heads, that the blood ran about both their shoulders. And for as much as the protector gaue the boare for his cognizance, this dreame made so fearfull an impression in his hart, that he was thoroughly determined no longer to tarris, but had his horse readie, if the L. Hastings would go with him to ride yet so far the same night, that they should be out of danger ere day. A good lord (quoth the lord Hastings to this messenger) leaneth my lord thy master so much to such trildes, y<sup>e</sup> hath such faith in dreames, which either his owne feare fantasisset, or doe rise in the nightes red by reason of his daie thoughts: Tell him it is plaine witchcraft to be leue in such dreames, which if they were tokens of things to come, why thinkest he not that we might be as likely to make them true by our going, if we were caught and brought backe (as friends saile siders) for then had the boare a cause likely to race vs with his tuskes, as folke that steebe for some saluadge: wherefore either is there no perill, nor none there is in deede; or if any be, it is rather in going than biding. And if we should needes coost fall in perill one way or other, yet had I leifer that men should see that it were by other mens falseness, than thinke it were either by our owne fault, or saint heart: And therefore go to thy master man and commend me to him, and pray him to be merry, and

The lord Stanley wounded.

The lord Stanley dreamed.

haue no feare: for I ensure him I am as sure of the man that he wotech of, as I am of mine owne hand. God send grace Sir, quoth the messenger, and went his waie.

Certaine it is also, that in riding towards the towne the same morning in which he was beheaded, his horse tolde of thysle stumbled wth him, almost to the falling: which thing albeit each man wot well daily happeneth to them to whom no such mischance is toward, yet hath it bene of an olde witte and Cuiusdam obserued as a token of tentimes notable foregoing some great misfortune.

Now this that followeth was no warning, but an envious scoone.

The same morning ere he was vp, came a knight vnto him as it were of curtesie, to accompany him to the councell, but of truch sent by the protector: to haue him thitherwards, with whom he was of secret confederacy in that purpose, a meane man at that time, and now of great authoritie.

This knight when it happened the Lord Chamberlaine by the waie to take his horse, and commune a while with a priest whom he met in the Towne street, brake his tale, and said merrilie to him, what my Lorde, I praye you come on, whereto talke you so long with that priest, you haue no need of a priest yet: and therewith he laughed vpon him, as though hee would say, ye shall haue sone. But so little wist the other what he meant, and so little mistrusted, that he was neuer merrier, nor neuer so full of god hope in his life, which selfe thing is often seene a signe of change. But I shall rather let any thing passe me, than the vaine surety of mans mind so nere his death.

Vpon the very towne wharfe, so nere the place where his head was stroke off soon after, there met he with one Hastings a puruant of his owne name: and of their meeting in that place, he was put in remembrance of another time, in which it had happened them before to meet in like manner together in the same place. At which other time the Lorde Chamberlaine had bene accused vnto King Edward by the Lorde Rivers the Quenes brother, in such wise as hee was for the while, but it lasted not long, farre fallen into the kings intiguation, and stood in great feare of himselfe: And for as much as he nowe met this puruant in the same place that he ordeie so well passed, it gaue him great pleasure to talke with him thereof, with whom hee had before talked thereof in the same place, while hee was the rein. And therefore hee saide: Ah Hastings, art thou remembered when I met thee here once with an heauie heart? Yea my Lorde quoth he, that remember I well, and thanked be God, they got no god, nor you no harme thereby. Thou wouldest say so, quoth he, if thou knewest as much as I know, which few know else as yet, and no shall shortly. What meant he by the Lordes of the Quenes kindred that were taken before, and should that daie be beheaded at Pontfrad: which he well wist, but nothing ware that the King ouer his owne head. In faith man, quoth hee, I was neuer so sore, no: neuer stood in so great dread in my life, as I did when thou and I met here: And so how the world is turned, now stand mine enemies in the danger, as thou maist say to beare more hereafter, and I neuer in my life so merrie, nor ever in so great suretie.

A good God, the blindness of our mortal nature, when he most feared, he was in god suretie: when he reckoned himselfe sure he lost his life, and that within two houers after.

Thus ended this honourable man, a good knight and a gentle, of great authoritie with his prince, of lining somewhat discoloure, plaine, and open to his enemy, and secret to his friend, easie to beguile, as he that of good hart and courage fore: studied no perills: a louing man, and passing well beloved: very faithfull and trustie enough, trusting too much. Now stee the same of this Lordes death swiftille through the citie, and so forth farther about like a wind in every mans eare.

But the protector immediately after dinner, intending to set some colour vpon the matter, sent in all haste for manie substantiall men out of the Citie into the towne: And at their coming, himselfe with the duke of Buckingham, stood harnessed in old ill faring Briganders, such as no man should wene that they would vouchsafe to haue put vpon their backs, except that some sudden necessity had constrained them.

And then the protector shewed them, that the lord chamberlaine and other of his confederates had contriued to haue suddenly distressed him and the Duke, yet the same daie in the Councell. And what they intended further was as yet not well knowne. Of which their treason he neuer had knowledge before: at the clocke the same forenoone, which sudden feare diuine them to put on for their defence such harnesse as came next to hand. And so had God holpen the m, that the mischief turned vpon them that would haue done it. And this he requied them to report.

Euery man answered him false, as though no man misdeeded the matter, which of troth no man belieued. Yet for the further appealing of the peoples mind, he sent immediately after dinner in all haste, an Herald of arms, with a proclamation to be made through the Citie in the kings name, containing that the Lord Hastings with diuers other of his traitorous purpose, had before conspired the same daie, to haue slaine the Lorde protector and the duke Buckingham, sitting in the Councell, and after to haue taken vpon them to rule the king and the Realme, at their pleasure, and thereby to pill and spoile whom they like vnccontrolled. And much matter there was in that proclamation, deuised to the slander of the Lord Chamberlaine, as that he was an euill Counsellor to the kings father, enticing him to manie things sightly rebounding to the diminishing of his honour, and to the vniuersall hurt of his Realme by his euill companie, amiser procuring, and vnglacions ensample, as well in manie other thinges, as in the vicious living and inordinate abundance of his bodie, both with manie other, and also especiallie with Shores wife which was one also of his most secrete Councell of this heinous treason, with whom hee late nightlie, and namely, the night last past next before his death, so that it was the lesse maruell, if vnglacions King brought him to an vnhappie ending, which he was now put vnto, by the most breade commaundement of the Kings highnesse, and of his honourable and faithfull Councell, both for his demerites, being so openly taken in his falsly concealed treason.

The description of the Lord Hastings.

The protectors proclamation.

also.



also least the delaying of his execution might haue encouraged other mischievous persons partners of his owne conspiracie, to gather and assemble themselves together, in making some great commotion for his deliuerance: whose hope being now by his well deserued death politickely repressed, all the Malice should by Gods grace rest in good quiet and peace.

Now was this proclamation made within two holwers after that hee was beheaded, and it was so curiouslie indited, and so faire wrytten in parchment, in so well a set hand, and therewith of it selfe so long a processe, that euery childe might well perceiue that it was prepared before. For all the time betwene his death and the proclaiming coulde scant haue sufficed vnto the bare wryting alone, all had it bene but in paper, and scribled forth in haste at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaiming thereof, one that was scholemaster of Pauls, of chance standing by, and comparing the shortnes of the time with the length of the matter, said vnto them that stood about him: Heere is a gale goodlie cast, soule cast awaie for haste: and a merchant answered him, that it was wrytten by prophesie. Now then by and by as it were for anger, not for courtesie, the prelate sent into the house of Shores wiife (for her husband dwelled not with her) and spoiled her of all that euer she had, aboue the value of two or three thousand marke, & sent her bodie to prison: And when he had a while laid vnto her (for the manner sake) that she went about to bewitch him, and that there was of counsell with the Lord Chamberlaine to destroy him: in conclusion, when that no colour could fasten vpon these matters, then he laid heinously to her charge, that thynge that herselfe coulde not denie, that all the while wiff was true, and that notwithstanding euery man laughed at, to heare it then so suddenly, so highly taken, that she was naught of her bodie.

And so, this cause (as a good continent prince, cleane and faultlesse of himselfe, sent out of heauen into this vicious world for; & amendment of mens manners) he caused the Bishop of London to put her to open penance, going before the crosse in procession vpon a sundale with a taper in her hand: In which she went in countenance and pace becomme to womanlie, and albeit there were out of all arais sawe her little onely, yet went she so faire and lowly, namelie while the wondering of the people cast a comely rud in her cheekes (of which she herselfe had most misse); that hir great shame wanne hir much praise, among those that were more amorous of hir body, than curious of hir soule. And many good folke also that hated hir liuing, and glad were to see sin corrected: yet pitied the more hir penance, than relished therein, when they considered that the prelate procured it more of a corrupt intent, then any vertuous affection.

This woman was borne in London, two thysipfully friended, honestly brought vp, and verie well married, sauing somewhat too soone, her husbande an honest citizen, young and godly, and of good substance: But for as much as they were compleere they were well ripe, she not very feruently loued, for whom she neuer longed, which was happily the thing that the more easily made hir incline vnto the kings appetite, when he requyred her. Wherby the respect of his royalty, the hope of gay apparell, ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth, was able some to pierce a list tender hart.

But

But when the king had abused her, anone hir husband (as he was an honest man, and one that coulde his god, not presuming to touch a kings Concubine) left hir vp to him altogether.

When the king died the Lord Chamberlaine took her, which in the kings daies, albeit he was loze enamoured vpon hir, yet he forbore her, either for reverence, or for a certaine fitendly faithfulness: proper the was and faire, nothing in her bodie that you woulde haue changed, but if you woulde haue wished her somewhat higher.

Thus saie they that knewe hir in her youth, albeit some that now see hir (for yet shee liueth) daeme hir neuer to haue bene well visaged, whose iudgement seemeth me somewhat like; as though men should gesse the beautie of one long before departed, by her scalpe taken out of the charnell house: for now is shee old, leane, tolthered, and dyed by, nothing left but riueld skin & hard bone. And yet being euen such: who so well aduise hir visage, might gesse and denie, which parts how filled would make it a faire face; yet belist not men so much in her beautie as in her pleasant behauior. For a proper wit had she, & could both read well and wryte, merry in companie, ready and quick of answer, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without displeasure, and not without sport.

The king would say that he had three Concubines, which in three diuers properties diuerlye excelled. One the merriest, another the wildest, the third the holiest harlot in his realme, as one whome no man coulde get out of the Church lightly to any place, but it were to his bed. The other two were somewhat greater personages, & notwithstanding of their humilitie content to be nameles, and so for bare the praise of those properties. But the merriest was this Shores wiife, in whom the king therefore took speciall pleasure. For manie hee had, but her beloued, whose sake; to saue the troth (for sin it were to telle the diuell) she neuer abused to any mans hurt, but to manie a mans comfort and relesse, where the king took displeasure, shee would mitigate and appeale his mind: where men were out of fauour, shee would bring them in his grace. For manie that had highly offended shee obtayned pardon: & great forfeitures they gat men remission: And finally, in manie weighty suites the Lord many men in great dead, either for none or verie small rewarde, and those rather gale then rich: either for that shee was contente with the dæd it selfe well done, or for that shee belist to bee sued vnto, and to theiue what shee was able to dooe with the king, or for that wanton women and wealthie bee not alwayes content.

I doubt not some shall thinke this woman too lighte a thing to bee wrytten of, and set among the remembraunces of great matters: which they shall speciallie thinke, that happilie shall esteeme hir onely by that they now see her. But mee seemeth the chaunce so much the more woorthie to bee remembred, in howe much shee is now in the more beggerlike condition, vnkinted and come out of acquaintance, after good substance, after as greates fauour with the Prince, after as greates suite and seeking to with all those that those daies had businesse to speere, as manie other men were in their times, which be now.

The L. Chamberlaine kept Shores wiife after the death of Edward the 4.

Shores wiife liued when Sir T. More wrote this history in the reigne of Henry the 8.

Edwards 3. Concubines.

The wretches of London, William Cuthbert & John Bathurst Shores wiife out of hir house, by commandment of the prelate, & led hir throughout the city of London to the Towre, where shee answered certaine points said to her charge, and from thence shee was committed to Ludgate, there to remain prisoner, &c.

The description of Shores wiife.



no lve famous onely by the infamie of their ill dedes. Her doings were not much lesse, albeit they be much lesse remembred because they were not so full. For men die if they have an euill turne, to write it in marble: and who so doth vs a good turne, we write it in dust, which is not too fast pased by her: for at this day the beggett of many at this day liuing, that at this day had begged if she had not bene.

Howe was it so deuised by the Protector and his counsaile, that the selfe daie in which the Lorde Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe same houre, was there (not without his assent) beheaded at Pontfraite, the foremenembred Lodes and knights that were taken from the king at Northampton and from Stratforde. Which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe knight, whole seruice the Protector specially used in that counsell, and in the execution of such lawlesse enterprises, as a man that had been long secret with him, having experience of the world, and a shrewd wit, thot and raide in speech, rough and boysterous of behauiour, bold in iudgement, as farre from pittie as from all feare of God.

This knight bringing them out of the prison to the scaffold, and shewing to the people about that they were traitors, not suffering them to declare and speake their innocencie, least their wordes might haue inclined men to pittie them, and to hate the Protector and his part: caused them hastily without iudgement, processe, or maner of order, to be beheaded, & without other easily guilt, but onely that they were good men, to true to the king, and too nigh to the queene.

Howe when the lord Chamberlaine and the se other lodes and knights were thus beheaded and rid out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men trusted what the matter went, while the lodes of the realme were about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor whome to trust, ere euer they should haue space to dispute and digest the matter and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose, and put himselfe in possession of the crowne, ere men coulde haue time to deuise any way to resist.

But nowe was all the studie by what meane this matter being of it selfe so heynous, might be first spoken to the people, in such wise that it might be well taken.

To this Counsell they toke diuers, such as they thought meetely to be trusted, likely to be indued to that part, and able to stand them in steede either by power or policie.

Among whome they made of Counsaile Edmond Shaa knight then mayor of London, which vpon trust of his owne aduancement, whereof he was of a proud hart highly desirous, should frame the city to their appetite. Of Spirituall men they toke such as had wit, and were in authoritie among the people for opinion of their learning, and had no scrupulous conscience.

Among these had they John Shaa Clearche, brother to the mayor, and Sir Richard Ratcliffe, provinciall of the Augustine Friers, both doctores of Divinitie, both

Shoote wiffe  
begged of them,  
that had begged  
themselves, had  
the not bene  
their friends.

Sir Richard  
Ratcliffe.

The lord Ri-  
uers and other  
beheaded.

Edmond Shaa  
mayor of London.

Doctor Shaa,  
Friar Pinke.

great preachers, both of more learning than vertue, of more fame than learning. For they were before greatly esteemed among the people: but after that neuer. At the first the one had a sermon in praise of the protector before the coronation, the other after, both so full of tedious flattery, that no mans eares could abide them.

Pinke in his sermon so lost his voice, that hee was faine to lerne off and come doونه in the midst. Doctor Shaa by his sermon lost his honestie, and some after his life, for verie shame of the world, into which he durst neuer alter come abroad. But the frier forced for no shame, and so it harmed him the lesse. Howbeit some doubt and many thinke, that Pinke was not of counsaile of the matter before the coronation, but after the common maner, fell to flattery after: namely sith his sermon was not incontinent vpon it, but at Saint Sparie Hospitall at the Easter after. But certaine it is, that Doctor Shaa was of counsaile in the beginning, so farre forth, that they determined that he should first breake the matter in a sermon at Pauls Crosse, in which hee should by the authoritie of his preaching, incline the people to the protectors ghosly purpose.

But nowe was all the labour and studie, in the deuise of some convenient pretext, for which the people should be content to depose the Prince, and accept the protector for king. In which diuers things they deuised. But the chiefe thing and the weight of all that inuention rested in this, that they should alledge Bassardie, either in king Edward himselfe, or in his children, or both. So that he should seeme disabled to inherite the crowne, by the Duke of York, and the Prince by him.

To lay Bassardie in king Edward sounded openly to the rebuke of the protectors owne mother, which was mother to them both: for in that point coulde be none other colour but to pretend that his owne mother was an aduonresse, which notwithstanding, to further this purpose he litted not: but nayther lesse, he woulde that point should be lesse and more favourable handle, not euert subtle plaine and directlie, but that the matter should be touched aloope craftilie, as though men spured in that point to speake all the troth, for feare of his displeasure.

But the other point concerning the Bassardie that they deuised to surmise in king Edwards children, that woulde he should be openly declared, and infused to the uttermost. The colour and pretext whereof, cannot be well perceiued, but if we first repate you some things long before done about king Edwards marriage.

After that King Edward the 4 had deposed King Henry the first, and was in peaceable possession of the realme, determining himselfe to marry, as it was requisite both for himselfe and for the realme, he sent ouer in ambassade the earle of Warwicke, with other noble men in his companie vnto Spaine, to intreate and conclude a marriage betwene King Edward and the kings daughter of Spaine. In which thing the Earle of Warwicke found the parties so towarde and willing, that he speedily according to his instructions without anie difficultie, brought the matter to very good conclusion.

Ed

How

Dame Elizabeth.

So we happened it, that in the meane season there came to make suite by petition to the king Dame Elizabeth Grey, which was after his Duene, at that time a widow, hozne of noble blood, specialtie by her mother, which was Duchesse of Bedford ere she married the Lord Woodville her father. Whobest this Dame Elizabeth her selfe, beeing in seruice with Duene Margaret wife unto king Henry the first, was married onto one Iohn Grey an esquire, whom king Henry made knight, vpon the field that he had on Barnet heath by. Albons against king Edward. And little while enioied he that knightshood, for he was at the same field slaine.

After which done, and the earle of Marlowke being in his ambassade about the afore remembred marriage, this poore Ladie made humble suite vnto the king, that shee might bee restored vnto such small landes as her late husband had giuen her in iointure. Whome when the king behelde, and hearde her speake, as she was both faire and of a goodlie fauor, moderate of stature, well made, and verie wise: he not onclie pittied her, but also wared enamoured of her: and taking her for secrettie aside, beganne to enter in talking more familiarlie. Whose appetite when shee perceiued, shee vertuously denied him. But that did the so wiselie, and with so good manner, and wordes so well set, that he rather kindled his desire than quenched it.

And finallie, after manie a meeting, much toying, and many great promises, she well espyed the kings affection toward her so greatly increased, that she durst somewhat the more boldlie saie her mind, as to him whose heart she perceived more seruientlie set, than to fall off for a word.

And in conclusion, shee shewed him playne, that as shee wisde her selfe too simple to bee his wife, so thought shee her selfe too good to bee his Concubine. The king much maruelling at her constancie, as he that had not bene wont else where to bee so stiffelie sayde naie, so much esteemed her continencie, and chastitie, that hee sette her vertue in steade of possession and riches, and thus taking counsaile of his desire, determined in all possible haste to marrie her.

And after hee thus appointed, and had betwene them twaine ensured her: then asked hee counsaile of his other friends, and that in such manner, as they might then perceiue, it booted not greatlie to saie naie. Notwithstanding the Dutches of Burke his mother was so sore moued therewith, that she dissuaded the marriage as much as she possibly might, alledging that it was his honour, profit, and suretie also, to marrie in a noble pogenie out of his Realme, whereupon depended great strength to his Estate, by the assistance and great possibilitie of increase of his possession. And that hee coulde not wel otherwise do, standing that the earle of Marlowke had so far moued already, which were not likely to take it wel, if all his dotage were in such wise frustrated and his appointments deluded. And the saide also, that it was not princelie to marrie his owne subiect, no great occasion leading therunto, no possessions, or other commodity depending thereupon, but only as it were a rich man that woulde marrie his maide, onlie for a little wanton dotage vpon his person. In which marriage many mo commend the maidens fortune than the matters

wisdomme.

wisdomme. And yet therein shee saide there was moze honestie than honour in this marriage: for as much as there is betwene no merchant and his owne maide so great difference, as betwene the king and this widow. In whose person, albeit there was nothing to be misliked, yet was there (the saide) nothing so excellent but that it mought be found in diuers other that were moze metelie (quoth she) for your estate, and maidens also, whereas the onclie wisdomme of Elizabeth Grey, though she were in all other thinges conuenient for you, shoulde yet suffice, as me seemeth, to restraine you from her marriage, sith it is an vnstitting thing, and a verie blemish and high disparagement to the sacred maiestie of a prince, that ought as nigh to appoynt priest-hood in cleanness as he doth in dignitie, to be defouled with bigamie in his first marriage.

The king then his mother had saide, made her aunswere, part in earnest, part in p'aie mertrie, as hee that wisde himselfe out of her rule. And albeit, hee woulde gladlie that shee shoulde take it wel, yet was at a point in his own minde, tooke shee it wel or otherwise. Whobest somewhat to satisfie her, he saide, that albeit marriage being a spirituall thing, ought rather to be made for the respect of God, where his grace enclineth the parties to loue together, as he trusted it was in his, than for the regard of any temporell advantage: yet notwithstanding, him seemed that this marriage cuen toochelic considered, was not vnprofitable. For he reckoned the amitie of no earthlie nation so necessarie for him, as the friendship of his owne, which he thought likelie to beare him so much the moze heartie fauour, in that hee was disdaind not to marrie with one of his owne land. And yet if outwarde alliance were thought so requisite, he woulde finde the meanes to enter therunto, much better by other of his kin, where all the parties coulde be contented, than to marrie himselfe whome hee shoulde happilie neuer loue, and for the possibilitie of more possessions, leefe the fruite and pleasure of this that he had already. For small pleasure taketh a man in all that euer he hath beside, if he be vsured against his appetite. And I doubt not (quoth he) but there be as ye say other, that be in euerie point comparable with him: and therefore I let not them that like them to wed them: For moze is reason, that it mislike any man, that I marrie where it liketh mee. And I am sure that my Cousin of Marlowke neyther longeth mee so little, to grudge at that I loue, nor is so vnreasonable to looke that I shoulde in chosse of a wife, rather bee ruled by his ele, than by mine owne: as though I were a ward that were bound to marrie by the appointment of a guardian. I woulde not be a king with that condition, to forebeare mine owne libertie in chosse of mine owne marriage.

As for possibilitie of more inheritance by new assistance in strange lands, is oft the occasion of more trouble than profite: and we haue already title by that meanes, to so much as sufficeth to get and keepe well in one mans dates. What she is a widow and hath already children, by gods blessed lady I am a bachelor and haue some too, and so each of vs hath a proofe that neither of vs is like to be barraine. And therefore (madam) I pray you be content, I trust in God she shall bring forth a young prince that shall please you. And as for the Bigamie, let the Bishop hardlie laie it in his tale when I come to take orders: for

Edo 2.

3

The kings answer to his mother.

The kings mother.

I vnderstand it is forbidden a Priest, but I neuer will it yet, that it was forbidden a Prince.

The dutches with these wordes nothing appraied, and seeing the king to let the person, that she could not pull him backe, so highlie she disdained it, that vnder pretext of her dutie to godward, she deuilled to disturb this marriage, and rather to helpe that he should marrie one dame Elizabeth Lucie, whom the king had also not long before gotten with childe. Wherefore the kings mother openlie obieced against his marriage, as it were in discharge of her conscience, that the king was sure to dame Elizabeth Lucie, and her husband before God. My reason of which wordes, such obstacle was made in the matter, that either the bishops durst not, or the king would not proceede to the solemnization of this wedding, till these faime were clearely purged, and the troth well and openlie testified. Whereupon dame Elizabeth Lucie was sent for.

And albeit that she was by the kings mother and manie other put in god comfort, to assure that she was ensured vnto the king: yet when she was solemnly sworne to saie the troth, she confessed that they were neuer ensured, Whosoeuer she saide his grace spake so louing wordes vnto her, that she verily hoped he would haue married her. And that if it had not been for such kind wordes, she would neuer haue shewed such kindnes to him, to let him so kindly get her with childe.

This examination solemnelie taken, when it was clearely perceived that there was none impediment: the k. with great feast and honorable solemnity, married dame Elizabeth Grey, and her crowned queene that was his enemies wife, and manie time had praised full heartily for his losse, in which God loued her better than to grant her her bone.

But when the earle of Warwicke vnderstood of this marriage, he toke it so highly that his ambassage was deluded, that for verie anger and disaime, he at his returning assembled a great poissance against the king, and came to saile vpon him: he could be able to resist, that he was faine to vould the realme, and fle into Holland for succor, where he remained for the space of two yers, leauing his neie wife in Westminster in Sanctuary, where she was belivered of Edward the Prince, of whom we before haue spoken. In which meane time the earle of Warwicke toke out of prison, & set vp againe H. Henry the first, which was before by E. Edward deposed, and that much what by the power of the earle of Warwicke which was a wise man, and a couragious warriour, and of such strength, that for his lardes, his alliaunce, and fauor with all people, that he made king, and put downe kings almost at his pleasure, and not impossible to haue attained it himselfe, if hee had not reckoned it a greater thing to make a king than to be a king. But nothing lasteth alway: for in conclusion E. Edward returned, and with much lesse number than he had at Barnet on the Cofferday field, slew the earle of Warwicke, with many other great estates of that partie, and so stable attained the crowne againe, that he peaceably enjoyed it untill his dying daie: and in such plight left it, that it could not be lost, but by the discord of his very friends, or falsehoode of his fained friends. I haue rehearsed this businesse about this marriage some what the more at length, because

because it might thereby the better appeare vpon how slipper a ground the protector builded his coloy, by which he pretended king Edwards childe to be bastards: But that inuention simple as it was, it liked them to whom it sufficed to haue somewhat to saie, while they were sure to be compelled to no larger proofe than the mislikes left to make.

Now then (as I began to shew you) it was by the protector and his counsell conuincid, that this Doctor Shaa should in a Sermon at Pauls crosse signifye to the people, that neither king Edward himselfe, nor the Duke of Clarence, were lawfullie begotten, nor were not the verie children of the duke of Yorke, but begotten unlawfullie by other persons, by aduourtie of the dutches the mother. And that also dame Elizabeth Lucy was verilie the wife of king Edward, and so the prince and all his children bastards, that were begotten vpon the Quene. According to this deuise Doctor Shaa the Monday after, at Pauls Crosse in a great audience (as a whole assembled greates number to his preaching) he toke for his theme *Spuria uisulamin a non agent radices aliat*. That is to saie: Bastard slips shall neuer take deepe roote.

Thereupon when he had shewed the great grace that God giueth, and secret his inuention in right generation after the lawes of matrimoine, then declared he that commonly those children lacked that grace, and for the punishment of their parentes were for the more part unhappie which were gotten in base, and speciallie in aduourtie, of which though some by the ignorance of the world and the truth hid from knowledge inherited for the reason other mens lands, yet God always is prouident, that it continueth not in their blood long, but the truth coming to light, the rightfull inheritors be restored, and the Bastard slippe pulled vp ere it can bee rooted deepe. And when he had laide for the proofe and confirmation of this sentence certaine exampls taken out of the olde Testament, and other auncient Histories, then beganne he to descend into the praise of the E. H. R. Richard late Duke of Yorke, calling him father to the lord protector, and declared the title of his heires vnto the crowne. to whom it was after the death of king Henry the first entailed by authoritie of Parliament. Then shewed hee that his verie right heire of his whole lawfullie begotten was onlie the Lord protector: for he declared then, that king Edward was neuer lawfullie married vnto the Quene, but was before God husband vnto dame Elizabeth Lucie, and so his children bastards. And besides that, neither king Edward himselfe, nor the duke of Clarence, among those that were secret in the house hold, were reckoned verie surely for the children of the noble Duke, as those that by their famous more resembled other knowne men than him. From whose vertuous conditions he saide also that king Edward was far off. But the Lord protector he said, the verie noble prince, the speciall paterne of knightly prowes, as well in al princely behauior, as in the lineaments and fauor of his visage, represented the very face of the noble duke his father. This is quoth he, the fathers stone figure, this is his stone countenance, the very print of his visage, the very sure vndoubted image, the plaine expresse likeness of that noble duke.

Now was it before decided, that in the speaking of these wordes, the protector

Doctor Shaa  
sermon on this  
day the 19 of  
June.

Elizabeth  
Lucie.

The kings mar-  
riage.

The king fled.

The Prince  
borne.  
H. Henry the  
first set vp.  
Of the earle of  
Warwicke.

The earle of  
Warwicke  
slaine.

teador should haue come in among the people to the Sermon wards, to the end that those meeting with his presence, might haue bene taken among the hearers, as though the holie Ghost had put them in the preachers mouth, and should haue moued the people even the more to erie, king Richard, king Richard, that it might haue bene after sayde, that hee was speciallie chosen by God, and in manner by miracle. But this deuile quailed, either by the Protector's negligence, or the Preachers ouermuch diligence. For while the Protector founde by the waie tarrying, least hee should present those wordes, and the Doctor fearing that hee should come ere his Sermon coulde come to these wordes, hastied his matter thereto, who was come to them, and pacie them, and entred into other matters ere the Protector came. Whome when hee behelde comming, hee todaynelle left the matter with which hee was in hand, and without anie deduction the reunto, out of all order, and out of all frame, beganne to repeat those wordes agayne: This is the verie Noble Prince, the speciall paterne of Knighthlie valours, which as wel in all princely behaviour, as in the lincamentes and fauour of his visage, representeth the verie face of the noble duke of Yorke his father: this is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenance, the verie printe of his visage, the sure vndoubted image, the plaine expresse likenes of the noble duke, whose remembrance can neuer die while he liueth. While these wordes were in speaking, the Protector accompanied with the duke of Buckingham, went through the people into the place where the doctors commonly stand in the vpper choir, where hee stode to hearken the Sermon. But the people were so far from crying king Richards, that they stood as they had bene turned into stones, for wonder of this shamefull Sermon.

Preacher.

After which once ended, the Preacher gat him home, and neuer after durst looke out for shame, but kept him out of sight like an Wolfe. And when hee once asked one that had bene his old friend, what the people talked of him, all yett that his owne conscience well shewed him that they talked no good, yett when the other answered him, that there was in euery mans mouth spoken of him much shame, it so stroke him to the hart, that with in few daies after hee withered and consumed awaie.

The 21. of June.

Then on the Tuesday following this sermon, there came into the Wilde hall in London the duke of Buckingham, accompanied with dukes, lords and knights, more than happilie knewe the message that they brought. And there in the East ende of the hall, where the Chaire kepteth the Hastings, the malor, & all the Aldermen being assembled about him, all the commons of the citie gathered before them: after silence commaunded vpon great paine in the protector's name, the duke stood vp, and (as hee was not ther vnkerned, and of nature maruailously wel spoken) he said vnto the people with a cleare and a loud voice in this manner of wile.

The Duke of Buckingham's Oration.

Friends, for the zeale and heartie fauour that hee beare you, wee bee come to breake vnto you, of a matter right great and ineightrie, and no lesse weightie than pleading to God, and profitable to all the Realme: no; to no part of the realme more profitable, than to you the Citizens of this noble Citie. For whi,

that thing that wee tooke well ye haue long time lacked, and sore longed for, that ye would haue given great good for, that ye would haue gone farre to fetch, that thing wee be come hither to bring you without your labour, paine, cost, adventure, or leoparde. That thing is that: Certes the suretie of your owne bodies, the quiet of your Wives and your Daughters, the safegarde of your gods: of all which thinges in time past ye stood cuer more in doubt. For who was there of you all, that would reckon himselfe lord of his owne goods among so many greins and traps as were set thefore, among so much pilling and polling, among so manie taxes and tallages, of which there was neuer end, and of tentimes no need: or if anie were, it rather grew of riot, and vnreasonable wast, than anie necessarie or honorable charge? So that there was dalleie pilled from good men and honest great substance of goods to be lashed out among suchifists, so farre forth that straitnes sufficed not, nor anie vnsall manner of knowle Taxes: but vnder an easie name of beneuolence and good will, the Commissioners so much of euery man tooke, as no man could with his god will haue giuen: as though that name of beneuolence, had signified that euery man should pay not what himselfe of his owne god will list to grant, but what the king of his good will list to take. Which neuer asked little, but euery thing was hauled about the measure, amercements turned into fines, fines into ranlams, small trespasses into mispission, mispission into treason. Whereof I thinke no man lootheth that we should remember you of examples by name, as though Burder were forgotten, that was for a word spoken in haste cruelly beheaded, by the misconstruing of the lawes of this realme for the princes pleasure; with no lesse honour to Marcam then chiefe Justice, that left his office rather than he would assent to that indgement, than to the dishonesty of those that either for feare or flattery gaue that iudgement. What Cooke your owne woorthifull neighbor, alderman and malor of this noble citie, who is of you either so negligent that he knoweth not, or so forgetfull that hee remembreth not, or so hard harted that he pitteth not that woorthifull mans losse; what speake we of losse? his better spoile and vnderferued destruction, onclie for that it happened those to fauor him whome the prince fauoured not. Wee need not I suppose to rehearse of these anie mo by name, sith there bee (I doubt not) manie here present, that either in themselves, or in their nigh friends haue knowle as well their gods as their persons, greatlie indangered, either by fained quarrels, or small matters agreed with heynous names. And also there was no crime so greates, of which there coulde lacke a pretext. For sith the king presenting the time of his inheritance attayned the Crowne by battell: it sufficed in a rich man for a pretext of treason, to haue bene of kindred or alliance, nere familiaritie, or longer acquaintance with anie of those that were at anie time the Enemies, which was at one time & other, more than halfe the realm. Thus were neither your gods in safety, yett they brought your bodies in jeopardy, beside the common adventure of open war, which albeit that it is neuer the will & occasion of much mischief, yett it is neuer so mischifuous as where a few people fall at distance among themselves, now in none earthly nation, so deadly & so pestilent, as when it hapneth among vs: & among vs neuer so long

T. Burdet Es.  
Quire of Treason  
in 22. Henrie.  
Wilt, 100th.  
A. 1477.

Tym warre.

Enill warre

continued dissention, nor so manie battailles in that season, nor so cruel and so deablie foughten, as was in that kungs daies that dead is, God forgive it his soule. In whose time, and by whose occasion, what about the getting of the realme, keeping it, feeling, and winning againe, it hath cost more English blood, than hath twice the winning of France. In which inward warre among our selues, hath bene so great effusion of the ancient noble blood of this realme, that scarcely the halfe remaineth, to the great enskibling of this noble land, beside many a good to one ransacked and spoiled by them, that have bene going to the helde or coming from thence: And peace long after not much surer then warre. So that no time was there, in which rich men for their money, and great men for their lawes, or some other for some feare, or some displeasure were not out of perill. For whome trusted he that mistruised his owne brother? whome spared he that killed his owne brother? or who coulde perswade lone him, if his owne brother coulde not? What manner of folke he most fauoured we shall for his honor spare to speake of, howbeit, this tooke you well all, that who so was best, bare alwaie least rule, and moze lute was in his daies unto Shores wife, a vile and an abhominable strumpet, than to all the lordes in Englande, except unto those that made her their protecto: which simple woman was well named and honest, till the king for his wanton lust and sinfull affection bereft her from her husbande, a right honest substantiall young man among you. And in that point, which in god faith I am soie to speake of, sauing that it is in vaine to kepe in counsil that thing that all men knowe, the kings greedy appetite was insatiable, and euery where ouer all the realme intolerable: for no woman was there any where, young or olde, rich or poore, whom he set his eye vpon, in whom he any thing liked, either person or fauor, speech, pace, or countenance, but without any feare of God, or respect of his honour, murmur or grudge of the world, he would importunely pursue his appetite, and haue her, to the great destruction of many a good woman, and great dolor to their husbands and their other friends, which being honest people of themselves, so much regard the cleannesse of their house, the chastity of their wiues and their chylren, that they were leauer to lese all that they haue beside, than to haue such a villany done them. And all were it that with this and other impossible dealings, the realme was in euerie part annoted: yet specially pe here the citizens of this noble city, as wel for that amongst you is most plenty of all such thinges as minister matter to such inuories, as for that you were nearest at hand, with that nere beereabout was commonly his most abiding. And yet be ye the people whom he had as singular cause well and kindly to intreat, as any part of his realme, not only for that the prince by this noble city, as his especiall chamber, & the speciall well renowned city of his realm, much honorable fame receiue among all other nations: but also for that ye, not without your great cost, and sundry perils and teopardies in all his wars, bare euen your speciall fauor to his part, which your kinde mindes borne unto the house of York, with be hath nothing twofoldly acquired, there is of that house that none by Gods grace better shall, which thing to thewe you, is the word summe and effect of this our present errand. It shall not, I tooke well, need that

London the  
kings especiall  
chamber.

I hearse to you againe that ye haue already heard, of him that can better tell it, & of whom I am sure ye will better beleue it. and reason is that it so be. I am not so proud to looke therefore, that ye should reckon my wordes of as great authoritie as the preachers of the word of God, namely, a man so cunning and so wise, that no man better wotteth what he should saie, and therto so good and vertuous, that he would not saie the thing which he wold he should not saie, in the pulpet, namely, into the which no honest man cometh to lye, which honorable preacher ye well remember substantiallly declared vnto you at Pauls Crosse, on Sunday last passed, the right and title, that the most excellent Prince Richard Duke of Gloucester, now protecto: of this realme hath vnto the crowne and kingdome of the same. For as the worshipfull man groundly made open vnto you, the chylren of king Edward the 4. were neuer lawfully begotten, for as much as the king (leaving his very wife Dame Elizabeth Lucie) was neuer lawfully married vnto the Quene their mother, whose blood, sauing that he let his voluptuous pleasure be for his honor, was full vnmeetly be matched with his, and the mingling of whose bloods together, hath bene the effusion of great part of the noble blood of this realme. Whereby it may well seme the marriage not well made, of which there is so much mischiefel growne: for lacke of which lawfull accomplishing, and also of other thinges which the false worshipfull doctor rather signified than folliely explained, and which thinges shall not be spoken for mee, as the thing wherein euery man so deareth to say that he knoweth in avoiding displeasure of my noble Loyde protecto:, bearing, as nature requireth, a filiall reuerence to the Dutchesse his mother, for these causes I saie before remembred, that is to wit, for lacke of other issue lawfully coming of the late noble prince Richard Duke of Yorke, to whose roiall blood the crowne of England and of France, is by the high authoritie of parliament entailed, the right and title of the same, is by the iust course of inheritance according to the common lawes of this land, deuolue and comen vnto the most excellent Prince the Lord protecto:, as to the verie lawfully begotten sonne of the foreremembred noble Duke of Yorke. Which thing well considered, and the great knightly prouesse pondered, with manifold vertues which in his noble person singularly abound, the nobles and commons also of this realme, and specially of the north part, not willing anie bastard blood to haue the rule of the land, nor the abusions before in the same bred anie longer to continue, haue condescended and fully determined to make humble petition to the most puissant prince the lord protecto:, that it may like his grace at our humble request, to take vpon him the guiding and governance of this realm, to the wealth and encrease of the same, according to his very right and iust title. Which thing I wrote it well, he will be loath to take vpon him, as he whose wisdom well perceiveth the labour and studie both of minde and bodie, that shall come therewith, to whom neuer so will occupie the roime, as I dare saie he will, if he take it. Which roime I warne you well is no childes office: And that the great wise man well perceived when he said: *Pa regno cuius rex puer est*: Woe is that realme that hath a childe to their king. Wherefore so much the moze cause haue we to thanke

God.

God, that this noble personage which is so righteously intituled thereunto, is of so sad age, and thereunto so great wisdome loyned with so great experience, which albeit he will be loath (as I haue said) to take it vpon him, yet shal he to our petition in that behalfe the more graciouly incline, if yee the worshipfull citizens of this chiefe city of this realme, ioine with vs the nobles in our said request. Which for your owne weale we doubt not but ye will: and naye the lesse I heartily praiſe you so to do, whereby you shall do great profit to all this realme beside, in choosing the m to god a king, and vnto your selfe speciall commoditie, to whom his spaciety shall euer after beare so much the more tender fauor, in how much he shall perceiue you the more proue and beneuolently minded toward his election. Wherein deare friends what minde you haue, we require you plainly to shew vs.

When the Duke had said, and looked that the people whom he hoped that the Spaior had framed before, should after this proposition made, haue cried King Richard, King Richard, all was hush and mute, and not one word answered thereunto: where the Duke was maruelously abashed, & taking the maior nearer to him, with other that were about him privie to that matter, said vnto them softly, what meaneth this, that this people bee so still? Sir (quoth the Spaior) perceale they perceiue you not well. That shall we mend (quoth he) if that will helpe.

And by and by somewhat louder he rehearsed them the same matter againe in other order and with other wordes so wel and ornately, and naye the lesse so evidently and plaine, with voice, gesture, and countenance so comely, and so convenient, that euerie man much marvelled that heard him, and thought that they neuer had in their liues heard so euill a tale so well tolde.

But were it for wonder or feare, or that each looke that other should speake first; not one word was there answered of all the people that stood before; but all was as still as the midnight, not so much as rowning amongst them, by which they might seeme to commune what was best to doe. When the Spaior saw this, he with other partners of that Councell belyue about the Duke, and said that the people had not bene accustomed there to be spoken vnto, but by the Recorder, which is the mouth of the citie, and happily to him they will answer. Whith that the Recorder called Fitz William, a sad man and an honest, which was so new come into that office, that he neuer had spoken to the people before, & loath was with that matter to begin; notwithstanding, therunto commanded by the Spaior, made hearefall to the Commons of that the Duke had twice rehearsed to them himselfe. But the Recorder so tempered his tale, that he shewed euerie thing as the Dukes wordes, and no part of his owne. But all this noting, no change made in the people, which alway after one, stood as they had bene men amazed. Whereupon the Duke rowned vnto the Spaior and said: this is a maruelous obstinate silence, and the rewhy he turned vnto the people againe with these wordes: Deare friends, we come to moue you to that thing which peradventure we not so greatly needed, but that the Lords of this realme, and the Commons of other parties might haue sufficed: saying that we such loue beare you, and so much set by you, that we would not

Fitz William  
Recorder.

not gladlie doe without you, that thing in which to be partners is your weale and honor, which as it seemeth, either you see not, or wey not. Therefore we require you give vs answer one or other whether yee be minded as all the nobles of the realme be, to haue this Noble Prince nowe Protector, to be your King or not.

At these wordes the people began to whisper among themselves secretly, that the voice was neither lowde nor distinct, but as it were the sounde of a swarme of Bees, till at the last in the weather ende of the Hall, a bolyment of the Dukes seruants and halshields, and other longing to the Protector, with some prentises and laddes that thrust into the Hall among the people, began suddenly at mens backs to crye out as lowde as their throates would giue, King Richard, King Richard, and thye to by their caps in token of ioy. And thep that stood before cast backe their heads maruelling therat, but nothing they saide.

And when the Duke and the Spaior saw this manner, they wisely turned it to their purpose, and said it was a goodly crye, and a topfull to beare, euerie man with one voice, no man saying nay. Wherefore friends (quoth the Duke) since that we perceiue it is all your whole minde to haue this Noble man for your king, wherof we shall make to his grace so effectually report, that we doubt not but it shall redound vnto your great weale and commoditie: we require yee that ye to morrow go with vs, and we wish you vnto his noble grace, to make our humble request vnto him in manner before remembred. And therewith the Lordes came downe, and the companie dissolved and departed, the more part all sad, some with glad semblance that were not verie merry, and some of those that came after with the Duke nor able to dissemble their sorrowe, were faine at his backe to turne their face to the wall, while the dolour of their heart burst out of their eyes.

Then on the morrow after, the Spaior with all the Aldermen and chiefe commons of the Citie in their best manner apparelled, assembling themselves together, resorted vnto Baynardes Castle, where the Protector late. To which place they came also according to their appointment, the Duke of Buckingham, with diuers Noble men with him, beside manye knights and other Gentlemen. And thereupon the Duke sent word vnto the Lord Protector of the being the roof of a great and honorable companie, to moue a great matter vnto his grace.

Whereupon the Protector made difficultie to come out vnto them, but if he first knewe some part of their errand, as though he doubted, and partly distrustful the coming of a number vnto him so suddenly, without any warning or knowledge whether they came for good or harme. When the Duke had shewed this vnto the Spaior and other, that they might thereby see howe little the Protector looked for this matter, they sent vnto him by the messenger such louing message againe, and therewith so humbly besought him to be careful, that they might resort to his presence, to propose their intent, of which they would vnto none other person part disclose, that at the last he came forth of his Chamber, and yet not downe vnto them, but stood about in a Gallerie

pace

ouer them, where they might see him, and speake to him, as though he would not yet come too nere them, till hee told what they meant. And thereupon the duke of Buckingham first made humble petition vnto him on the behalfe of them all, that his grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his grace the intente of their comming without his displeasure, without which pardon obtained, they durst not be bold to moue him of that matter. In which, albeit they meant as much honour to his grace, as wealth to all the realme beside, yet were they not sure how his grace would take it, whom they would in no wise offend. When the protector (as hee was verie gentle of himselfe, and also longed soze to wit what they meant) gaue him leaue to propose what him liked, berislie trusting for the good mind that hee bare them all, none of them anie thing would intende vnto him warde, wherewith he ought to be grieved.

When the Duke had this leaue and pardon to speake, then waxed hee bold to shew him their intent and purpose, with all the causes mouing them thereunto, as ye before haue heard, & finally to beseech his grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the realme neuer with his etc. of pille, to behold the long continued distresse and decay of the same, and to set his grations hands to redresse an amendment thereof, by taking vpon him the crowne and gouernance of this realme, according to his right and title lawfullie descended vnto him, and to the laude of God, profite of the land, and vnto his grace so much the more honor, and lesse pain, in that that neuer prince reigned vpon any people, that were so glad to liue vnder his obediense, as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the protector had hearde the proposition, he looked verie strangely thereat, and answered: That albeit it were that he partly knewe the things by them alledged to be true, yet such entire loue hee bare vnto king Edward and his children, that so much more hee regarded his honor in other realmes about, than the Crowne of anie one, of which hee was neuer desirous, that hee coulde not finde in his heart in this point to encline to their desire. For in all other nations where the truth were not well knowne, it shoulde peradventure be thought, that it were his owne ambitious mind and drille, to depose the Prince, and take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamie hee woulde not haue his honour stained for anie Crowne, in which he had euer perceived much more labour and payne than pleasure to him that woulde so be it, as he that would not, were not worthy to haue it: notwithstanding hee not onlie pardoned them the motion that they made him, but also thanked them for the loue and heartie fauor they bare him, praying them for his sake to giue and beare the same to the prince, vnder whom hee was, and would be content to liue, and with his labour and counsell, as farre as shoulde like the king to be him, he woulde do his uttermost diligence to set the Realme in good state, which was already in this little while of his protectorship (the praise giuen to God) well begun, in that the malice of such as were before occasion of the contrary, and of newe intended to be, were now partly by god policy, partly more by gods speciall providence, than mans passion repressed.

Upon

Upon this answer giuen, the duke by the protectors licence, a little rownded, as well with other noble men about him, as with the Mayor and Recorder of London. And after that vpon like pardon desired and obtained, he shewed aloude vnto the protector, that for a final conclusion, by the realme it was appoynted King Edwards line shoulde not anie longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so farre gone, that it was now no suretie to recede, as for that they thought it for the weale vniuersall to take that waie, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the crowne vpon him, they woulde humbly beseech him thereunto. If he woulde giue them a resolute answer to the contrarie, which they would be loath to heare, then must they needs seeke, and shoulde not faile to find some other noble man that woulde.

These wordes much moued the protector, which else as euery man might wit, woulde neuer of likelihood haue inclined thereunto. But when he sawe there was none other waie, but that either he must take it, or else be and his both gone from it, he said vnto the lords and commons: Sith we perceiue well that all the realme is so set, whereof we be very soze that they will not suffer in any wise king Edwards line to gouerne them, whome no man earthly can gouerne against their wills, and we well also perceiue, that no man is there, to whome the Crowne can by iust title appertaine, as to our selfe, as verie right here lawfullie begotten of the bodie of our most deare father Richard late 2d. of Yorke, to which title is now ioined your election, the nobles & commons of this realme, which we of all titles possible take for the most effectual: we be content and agree fauorably to encline to your petition and request, and according to the same, here we take vpon vs the Royall Estate, preeminence and kingdom of the two noble realmes, England and France, the one from this day forward by vs and our heires to rule, gouerne, & defende: the other by gods grace, and your god helpe, to get againe and subdue, & establish for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of England, the advancement wherof we neuer aske of God longer to liue than we intend to procure.

With this there was a great shout, crying, King Richarde, King Richarde. And then the Lordes went vp to the king (for so was hee from that time called) and the people departed, talking diuerslie of the matter, euery man as his fantasie gaue him. But much they talked and marvelled of the manner of this dealing, that the matter was on both partes made so strange, as though neither had euer communed with other thereof before, when that the miselues wist there was no man so dull that heard them, but hee perceiued well enough, that all the matter was made betwixt them. Whereto some criede that againe, and saide all must be done in god order: and men must sometime for the manners sake, not be a knowne what they know: for at the consecration of a bishop, euery man wotteth well by the paying for, his bulls, that he purposeth to be one, and though he pay for nothing else: and yet must hee twise asked whether he will be bishop or no, and he must twise say nay, and at the thirde time take it, as compelled thereunto by his owne will. And in a stage plaie the people know right wel, that he that plaieth the Sowdaine, is perforce a soldier, yet

The protector  
saweth vpon  
him to be king.



yet if one should know so little god, to shew out of season what acquaintance he hath with him, and call him by his owne name while he standeth in his maiestie, one of his tommetoz might hap to breake his head, and too; the, for marring of the play: And so they said, that these matters be kings games, as it were stage plates, and for the more part, played vpon scaffolds: in which page men be the lookers on. And they that wise be, will meddle no further; for they that sometime step by, and play with them, when they can not playe their partes, they disorder the play, and do the miselues no good.

## King Richard the third, borne at Fodringhay:

some say at Barckhamstede.

1483  
An. reg. 1.  
The 25. of  
June.  
This that is  
here betwene  
this marke &  
this marke  
was not written  
by Walter  
Booze in this  
histoie written  
by him in  
Engliss, but is  
translared one  
of this histoie  
which he wrote  
in Latin.



The next daie, the protectoz with a great traine, went to Westminster hall, and there when he had placed himselfe in the court of the kings bench, declared to the audience, that he would take vpon him the crown in that place there, where the king himselfe sitteth and ministrereth the lawe, because he considered, that it was the chiefest duty of a king to minister the lawes. Then with as pleasant an oration as he could, he went about to win vnto him, the nobles, the merchants, the artificers, and in conclusion, all kind of men, but especially the lawyers of this realme. And finally, to the intent that no man should hate him for feare, and that his deceitfull clemencie might get him the goodwill of the people, when he had declared the commodities of discord, and the commodities of concord and unitie, he made an open proclamation, that he did put out of his minde all enmittees, and that he there did openly pardon all offences committed against him. And to the intent that he might shew a pious thereof, he commanded that one Fogge, whom he had long deadly hated, should be brought then before him, who being brought out of the landuarie (for thither had he fled for feare of him) in the sight of the people, he took him by the hand: which thing the common people looked at, and passed, but wise men took it for a banitic. In his returne homeward, whom sooner he met, he saluted: for a mind that knoweth it selfe guiltie, is in a manner delectad to a feruile flatterie.

King Richard, to be sure of all enemies, had sent for out of the north five thousand men to bee at his coronation, vnder the leading of Robert of Ridisdale, these being but meanelly apparrelled, and woofse harnessed, mustered in Finsberie field.

On the fourth of Iuly, hee came to the Tower by water with his wife, and on the fift day he created T. lord Howard duke of Norfolk, sir T. his sonne earle of Surrey, William lord Berkeley earle of Nottingham, Francis lord Lonsell, vicount Lovel and the kings chamberlaine: the lord Stanley was deliuered out of ward, and made steward of the kings shoulde. Also the archbishop of Yorke was de-

liuered,

liuered, but Morton Bishop of Ely was committed to the Duke of Buckingham to be kept in warde, who sent him to his mannor of Brecknocke in Wales, there to be kept. The same night the king made knights of the Bath to the number of seuentee.

On the sixt of Iuly he rode through the Citie of London toward Westminster with great pompe: and on the morrow being the seuenth, he with his wife queene Anne were crowned.

Then he had begunne his raigne in Iuly, after this mockish election, then was he crowned the sixt, or rather the seuenth day of the same moneth. And that solemnitie was furnished for the most part, with the selfe same prouision that was appointed for the coronation of his nephew.

After this were taken for rebels against the king Robert Ruffe sergeant of London, William Daue pardonor of Hounslow, John Smith groomer of king Edwards stirro, and Stephen Ireland wardrober in the Tower, with many other, that they should haue sent writings into the parts of Britaine to the earles of Richmond and of Penbrooke, and the other lords: and how they were purposed to haue set fire on diuers partes of London, which fire, whilest men had bene standing, they would haue stolen out of the Tower, the prince Edward, and his brother the duke of Yorke, Sec. Robert Ruffe, William Daue, John Smith, and Stephen Ireland, were at Westminster iudged to death, and from thence drawne to the Tower hill, and there beheaded, and their heads were set on London bridge.

How fell there mischieses thicke. And as the thing euill gotten is neuer wel kept, though all the time of his raigne neuer ceased there cruell death and laughter, till his owne destruction ended it. But as he finished his time with the best death and the most righteous, that is to wit, his owne, so began hee with the most piteous and wicked, I meane the lamentable murder of his innocent nephewes, the yong king and his tender brother, whose death and small infortune hath naytheles commen so far in question, that some remaine yet in doubt, whether they were in his daies destroyed or no. Not for that onely that Perkin Werbecke by many folkes malice, and moe folkes folly, so long space abusing the world, was as well with princes as the poore people, reputed and taken for the yonger of these two, but for that also that all things were in late daies so covertly demeaned, one thing pretended, and another meant, that there was nothing so plaine and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and covert dealing, men had it euer inwardly suspeced, as many wel counterfeited iewels make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concerning the opinion, with the occasions mouing of the r partie, we shal haue place more at large to intreat, if we hereafter happen to write the time of the late noble prince of famous memorie H. Henry the 7. or percase that his histoie of Perkin in any compendious procelle by it selfe. But in the meane time for this present matter, I shall rehearse you the dolorous end of those babes, not after euery tale that I haue heard, but by such men, and by such meanes, as me thinketh it were hard but it should be true.

King Richard after his coronation, taking his way to Glocester to visite in his newe honour, the to wne of which he bare the name of his olde, pensed as he

Sir Thomas  
Moore against  
in English.

Perkin Werbecke.



he rode to fulfill the thing which he before had intended. And forasmuch as his minde gaue him, that his nephewes liking, men woulde not reckon that hee coulde haue right to the Realme, he thought therefore without delay to ride them, as though the killing of his kinsmen coulde amend his cause, and make him a kinde king. Whereupon he sent one John Greene, whom hee specially trusted, vnto sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the towne, with a letter and credence also, that the same sir Robert should in any wise put the two children to death. This John Greene did his errand vnto Brakenbury, kneeling before our Ladie in the Tower, who plainlic answered, that hee woulde neuer put them to death to by the request: with which answer John Greene returning, recounted the same to king Richard at Marlowe yet in his wake. Wherewith he tooke such displeasure and thought, that the same night he said vnto a secret page of his: Ah whome shall a man trust? Those that I haue brought vp my selfe, those that I had trusted would most surelie serue me, euen those false me, and at my commandement will do nothing for mee. Sir (quoth his page) there lieth one on your pallet without, that I dare well saie, to do you grace pleasure, the thing were right hard that he would refuse, meaning this by Sir James Tyrell, which was a man of right goodlie personage, and for nature giffes two; whie to haue serued a much better prince, if hee had well serued C. D. and by grace obtained as much traeth and good will as hee had strength and wit. The man had an high heart, and fore longed vpwarde, not rising yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered & kept vnder by the means of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, which longing for no more partners of the princes fauor, & namely not for him, whose pride they wile would bear no pare, kept him by secret gifts out of al secret trust, which thing this page well had marked and knowne: wherefore this occasion offered, of verie speciall friendship he tooke his time to put him forward, and by such wise to do him good, that all the enemies he had, except the duell, could neuer haue done him so much hurt. For vpon this pages wordes king Richard arose (for this communication had hee sitting at the draught, a conuenient Carpet for such a counsell) and came out into a pallet chamber, on which hee found in bed Sir James and Sir Thomas Tiels, of person like, and brethren of blode, but nothing of kinne in conditions. Then saide the king merrilie to them, what stes, bee pee in bed so lone? And calling by Sir James, brake to him secretly his mind in this mischeuous matter: in which hee found him nothing strange. Wherefore on the morrow hee sent him to Brakenbury with a letter, by which hee was commanded to deliuer Sir James all the keyes of the tower by one night, to the end hee might there accomplish the kinges pleasure, in such things as he had giuen him commandement. After which letter deliuered, and the keyes receiued, Sir James appointed the night next ensuing to bestroie them, deuiling before and preparing the means. The Prince as lone as the protector left the name, and toke himselfe as king, had it shewed vnto him, that hee shoulde not raigne, but his vnckle shoulde haue the Crowne. At which wordes the prince rose abashed, began to sigh and said: Alas, I would my vnckle would let me haue my life yet, though I leefe my kingdome. Then hee

John Greene.  
Rob. Braken-  
bury Constable  
of the Tower

Sir James  
Tyrell.

Authority for  
ueth no part-  
ners.

that told him the tale, bled him with good wordes, and put him in the best com- fort hee could. But forthwith was the prince and his brother both shut vp, and all other removed from them, onlie one called Black Will, or William Slaughter except, set to serue them and see them sure. After which time the prince neuer tied his points, nor ought thought of himselfe, but with that young babe his brother, lingered with thought and heauines, till this traitorous death deliuered them of that wretchednes: for sir James Tyrell deuised that they shoulde be murdered in their beddes. To the execution whereof, he appointed Miles Forrest, one of the foure that kept them, a fellowe fleshed in murder before time. To him he ioined one John Dighton his owne house-keeper, a bigge, broad, square, strong knaue.

Then all the other being remooued from them, this Miles Forrest, and John Dighton, about midnight (the saile children lying in their beds) came into the Chamber, and sodainlie lapped them by among the clothes, so to bestrapped them and intangled them, keeping down by force the featherbed and pillows hard vnto their mouths, that within a while, smothered and stifled, their breath failing, they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the soles of heauen, leaving to the tormentors their bodies dead in the bed. Whiche after that the wretches perceiued, first by the struggling with the paines of death, and after long lying still, to be thoroughlie dead, they laid their bodies naked out vpon the bed, and fetched sir James to see them, which vpon the sight of them, caused those murderers to burie them at the staire foot, matelie depe in the ground, under a great heape of stones.

Then rode sir James in great haste to his Richard, and shewed him all the manner of the murder, who gaue him great thanks, and (as some say) there made him knight. But hee allowed not as I haue heard, the burying in so vile a corner, saying, that hee would haue them buried in a better place, because they were a kinges sonnes. To the honorable courage of a king. Whereupon the said, that a priest of St. Robert Brakenbury toke vp the bodies againe, and secretly entered them in such place, as by the occasion of his death, which one lie knew it, could neuer since come to light. Where troth it is, and well known, that at such time as Sir James Tyrell was in the Tower for treason committed against the most famous prince king Henrie the seventh, both Dighton and hee were examined, and confessed the murder in manner aboue written, but whether the bodies were remooued, they coulde nothing tell. And thus, as I haue learned of them that much knew, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble princes, these innocent tender children, boine of most redol blood, brought vp in great wealth, likeli long to liue, raigne, and rule in the realm, by traitorous tyranny taken, deppriued of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison, and prailie slain and murdered, their bodies cast God wot where, by the cruel ambition of their unnatural vnckle and his dispiteous tormentors. Which things on euery part well pondered, God neuer gaue this world a more notable example, neyther in what vnfortunate and yet this worldelike woe, or what mischief wrought the proude enterprize of an bie heart, or finally, what wretched ende ensueth such dispiteous cruelty. For first to beginne with the

The young R.  
his brother  
murdered.

C c c

minister,

ministers, Miles Forrest at Saint Marins patermale rotted a waile: Dighton indoe yet walketh on allue in god possibilitie to be hanged ere he die: but sir James Tyrell died at the Tower hill beheaded for treason: King Richard himselfe, as ye shall hereafter heare, flaine in the field, hacked and hewed of his enemies handes, carried on horsebacke dead, his haire in despyght to nye and tugged like a Curie Dogge: and the mischief that he toke was withyn lesse than thye paces of the mischief that he did, and yet all the meane time spent in much paine and trouble outward, much feare, anguish, and sorrow within. For I haue heard by credible report of such as were secret with his chamberlaine, that after this abhominable deed done, he neuer had quiet in his mind. He neuer thought himselfe sure where he went abroad, his eie whirled about, his body pitifully fenced, his hand ever vpon his dagger, his countenance & manner like one alwaies ready to strike againe; he toke ill rest a nights, lay long waking and musing, soze wearied with Care & Watch, rather slumbrd than slept, troubled with fearefull dreames, so dauncie sometime start vp, leapt out of his bed, and ran about the chamber, so was his restless heart continually tossed and tumbled with the tedious impression and doomy remembrance of his abhominable deed.

Now had he outward no long time in rest: for hereupon, some after began the conspiracy, or rather, god confederation betwene the Duke of Buckingham and many other gentlemen against him.

The occasion whereupon the king and the duke fell out, is of diuers folke diuers wise pretended.

This Duke (as I haue for certaine bene enformed) as soone as the Duke of Gloucester, vpon the death of King Edward came to Yorke, and there had solemne funerall seruice for King Edward, sent thither in the most secret wise he could, one Persall his trustie seruant, who came to John Ward, a chamberer of like secret trust with the duke of Gloucester, desiring, that in the most close and coeuet maner, he might be admitted to the presence and speech of his master. And the duke of Gloucester aduertised of his desire, caused him in the dead of the night, after all other folks asloved, to be brought vnto him in his secret chamber, where Persall after his masters recommendation, thewed him, that he had secretly sent to thew him in his new world, he would take such part as he would, and waite vpon him with a thousand good fellows, if neede were. The speller sent backe with thanks, and some secreete instruction of the proteccors mind: yet met him againe with farther from the duke his master, within selue dayes after at Nottingham: whither the Proteccor from Yorke, with many gentlemen of the north country, to the number of six hundred bowes, was come on his way to London ward, and after secret meeting and communication had, estone departed. Whereupon at Portsmouth, the duke met with the Proteccor himselfe with 200. horses, and from thence still continued with him partner of all his deuils, till that after his Coronation they departed, as it seemed very great friends at Gloucester: from whence, as some as the duke came home, he so lightly turned from him, and so highly conspired against him, that a man would maruell whereof the change grew. And surely

the

the occasion of their hartiance is of diuers men diuersly reported. Some haue said (I heard saie) that the Duke a little before the Coronation, among other thinges, required of the proteccor the Duke of Hertfordes lands, to the which he pretended himselfe iust inheritor. And for as much as the title which hee claimed by inheritance, was somewhat entleraced with the title to the crowne, by the line of King Henry before deputed, the proteccor conceived such indignation, that he refused the dukes request with many spitefull and minatory words, which so wounded his hart with hatred and mistrust, that he neuer after could endure to looke aright on King Richard, but ever feared his owne life, so far forth, that when the proteccor rode through London toward his coronation, he fained himselfe sick, because he would not ride with him. And the other taking it in euil part, sent him word to rise, & come ride, or he would make him be carried: whereupon he rode on with euil will, and that notwithstanding on the morrow, rose from the feast, faining himselfe sick, and King Richard said it was done in hatred and despyght of him. And they sayd, that after continuallie each of them liued in such hatred and distrust of other, that the Duke verilie looked to haue bene murdered at Gloucester. From which matter, he in false maner departed. But surely some right secret at that day denie this: and manie right wise men thinke it unlikelye (the deepe dissembling nature of both those men considered, and that neede in that greene world the Proteccor had of the Duke, and in what perill the duke stood, if he fell once in suspicion of the tyrant) that eyther the Proteccor would be gine the duke occasion of displeasure, or the duke the proteccor occasion of mistrust. And verily men think that if King Richard had anie such opinion conceived, hee would neuer haue suffered him to escape his hands. Very troth it is, the duke was an high minded man, and euill could beare the Glozie of another, so that I haue heard of some that saie they saue it, that the duke at such time as the Crowne was first set vpon the proteccors head, his eie could not abide the sight thereof, but wypped his head another waie. But men say, that he was of troth not well at ease, and that both to King Richard well known, and not ill taken, no; any demand of the dukes vncourteously refused, but hee both with great giftes and high behests, in most louing and trustie maner, departed at Gloucester. But some after his comming home to Buckenochie, hauing there in custodie by the commouement of King Richard doctor Morton Bishop of Ely, who (as ye before heard) was taken in the counsell at the Tower, wearied with him familiar: whose wisdom abused his pride to his owne deliuranc and the dukes destruction. The bishop was a man of great naturall wit, verie well learned, and honorable in behauiour, lacking no wise waies to winne fauor. Hee had bene fast vpon the part of B. Henry, while that part was in wealth, and nay, thelesse left it not, no; for sake it in too, but sed the realm with the quene and the prince, while King Edward had the king in prison, neuer came home, but to the field: After which loss, and that part bitterly subdued, the other, for his fast faith and wisdom, not onlie was content to receiue him, but also would fitt to come, and had him from thence forth both in secret trust, and verie speciall fauour, which hee nothing deceyued. For he beeing (as ye haue heard) after

Cee 2.

king

king Edwards death first taken by the tyrant, for his treachery to the king, found the means to set this Duke in his toppes, joined gentlemen together in aide of king Henrie, deniſing first the marriage betwene him and king Edwards daughter, by which his faith, hee declared the good service to both his masters at once, with infinite benefite to the Realme, by the Contention of these two bloods in one, whose severall titles had long unquieted the lande, hee fled the realme, went to Rome, neuer minding more to meddle with the world, til the noble prince king Henry the 7. gat him home againe, made him Archbisshop of Canterburie and Chancelor of England, wherunto the Pope joined the honoz of Cardinall. Thus King manie daies in as much honour as one man might well wish, ended them so goodlie, that his death with Gods mercie well changed his life.

This man the refuse, as I was about to tell you, by the long and often alternate proſe, as well of prosperitie as aduers fortune, had gotten by great experience the vertie mother and mistresse of wisdom, a deepe insight in polittike worldlie drifts. Wherby, perceiving now this duke glad to communicate with him, fedde him with faire wordes, and manie pleasant praises. And perceiving by the proceſſe of their communication, the Dukes pride, now and then balke out a little head of enuie, toward the glorie of the king, and thereby feeling him easie to fall out if the matter were well handled: hee craftilie sought the waies to picke him forward, taking alwaies the occasion of his coming, and so keeping himſelfe so close within his boundes, that hee rather seemed to followe him, than to leade him. For, when the Duke first beganne to praise and boaste the king, and shewe howe much profite the realme should take by his raignt: My Lord Morton answered: Surely my Lord, folly it were for me to lie, for if I would sweare the contrarie, your Lordship would not I thinke beleue, but that if the world would haue gone as I would haue wished, king Henries son had had the crown, & not king Edward. But after that God had ordered him to lose it, & king Edward to raigne, I was neuer so mad that I would with a dead man strive against the quicke. So was I to Edward a faithfull chaplaine, and glad would haue bin that his child had succeeded him. Wholbrif, if the secret iudgement of God haue other wise provided, I purpose not to spurre against a picke, nor labor to let by that god polleth downe. And as for the late Protector and now king. And even there hee left, saying, that hee had already meddled too much with the world, and would from that daie meddle with his booke and his beades, and no further. Then longed the duke sore to heare what he would haue said, because hee ended with the king, and there so sodainelie stopped, and exhorted him so familiarlie between them twaine, to bee bold to say what sooner he thought, whereof hee faithfullie promised, the re should neuer come hurt, and peradventure more good than he would weene, and that himſelfe intended to bise his faithfull secreete advise and counsel, which hee said was the onelie cause for which hee procured of the king to haue him in his custody, where hee might reckon himſelfe at home, and else had hee bene put in the hands of them with whom he should not haue founde the like favour. The Bishop right humble thanked him, and saide: In god

faith

faith my Lord, I loue not to talke much of Princes, as a thing not all out of perill, though the word be without fault, forasmuch as it shall not be taken as the partie meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And euer I thinke on Aelopes tale, that when the Lion had proclaymed, that on payne of death, the re should none horned beaſt abide in that wood: one that had in his forehead a bunch of fleshy, fled awaie a great pace. The fore that saw him run so fast, asked him whether hee made all that haste: And hee answered, in sayth I neither wot, nor recke, so I were once hence, because of this proclaymation made of horned beaſts. What saie? quoth the fore, thou maiest abide well y-nough, the Lion meant not by thee, for it is none hoine that is in thine heade. So marrie (quoth he) that wot I well enough: but what and he call it an horn, where am I then? The Duke laughed merrilie at the tale, and saide, My Lord, I warrant you, neither the Lion nor the Beare shall picke any matter at anie thing here spoken, for it shall neuer come to their eares. In god faith Sir, saide the Bishop, if it did, the thing that I was about to saie, taken as well (as aforesaid God I meant) it could deserue but thanks: and yet taken as I waene it would, might happen to turne me to little good, and you to lesser. Then longed the duke yet much more to wit what it was: whereupon the bishop saide, In god faith my Lord, as for the late protector, sith hee is now king in possession, I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the weale of this realme, whereof his grace hath now the gouernance, and whereof I am my selfe one poore member, I was about to wish, that to those god abilitie wherof hee hath already right manie, little needing my prayse, it might yet haue pleased God for the better soze, to haue giuen him some of such other excellent vertues meete for the rule of a realme, as our Lord hath planted in the person of your grace: and there left againe.

The Duke somewhat maruelling at his sodaine pauses, saide: My Lord, I note your often breatching and sodaine stopping in your communication, so that to my intelligence, your words neither come to anie direct or perfect sentence in conclusion, wherby either I might haue knowledge what your intent is now toward the king, or what affection you beare toward me. For the comparison of god qualities ascribed to vs both, maketh mee not a little to muse, thinking that you haue some other priuy imagination imprinted in your hart which you bee abashed to disclose, and especiallie to mee, which on my honour do assure you to be as secret in this case as the deafe and dumbe person to the finger, or the tree to the hunter. The Bishop being somewhat bold, considering the Dukes promise, but most of all animated, because hee knew the duke desirous to be magnific, & also hee perceived the inward hatred which hee bare toward king Richard, hee opened his stomache to the bottom, and saide: My singular good Lord, sith the time of my captiuitie, which being in your graces custody, I may rather call it a libertie, than a straight imprisonment, in auoiding of tolenes & mother of all vices, in reading bookes & ancient pamphlets I haue found this sentence written, That no man is borne free and at libertie of himſelfe onely: for one part of dutie hee oweth to his parents, and the other part to his friends and kindred: but the native countrie, in the which hee first

This that followeth is abridged out of the ward hall.

tasted this pleasant and flattering world, demandeth a debt not to be forgotten. Which saying causeth me to consider in that case this Realme my native country now standeth, and in that estate and assurance before this time it hath continued: what governe we now have, and what ruler we might have: for I plainlie perceiue (the realme being in this case) must needs decaye, and be brought to confusion: but one hope I haue, that is, when I consider your noble personage, your iustice and indifferencie, your seruient zeale and ardent loue toward your naturall country, and in like maner the loue of your country toward you, the great learning, pregnant witte, and eloquence, which so much doth abound in your person, I must needs thinke this realme fortunate which hath such a prince in it, meete and apt to be gouernour. But on the other side, when I call to memorie the good qualities of the late Protector, and now called king, so violated by tyrannye, so altered by usurped authoritie, so clouded by blind ambition, I must needs say, that hee is neither meete to be king of so noble a realme, nor so famous a realme meet to be gouerned by such a tyrant. Was not his first enterprise to obtaine the crowne begun by the murder of diuers noble personages? Did he not secondarily proceede against his owne naturall mother, declaring hir openly to be a woman giuen to carnall affection and dissolute liuing: declaring furthermore his two brethren and two nephewes to be bastards, and to be borne in adulterie: yet not contented, after he had obtained the garland, he caused the two poore innocents his nephewes committed to him, to be shamefullie murdered, the blood of which little babes daylie crye to God from the earth for vengeance: what sacrifice shall be in this realme to aunte person, either for life or goods vnder such a cruell Prince, which regardeth not the destruction of his owne blode, and then the lesse, the losse of other? But now to conclude what I meane toward your noble person, I say and affirme, if you loue God, your image, or your native country, you must your selfe take vpon you the Crowne of this realme, both for the maintenance of the honour of the same, as also for the deliuerance of your naturall countrey men from the bondage of such a tyrant. And if your selfe will refuse to take vpon you the crowne of this realme, then I assure you by the faith that you owe to God, to denie some way how this realme may be brought to some conuenient regiment, vnder some good gouernour. When the bishop had ended his saying, the duke sighe, and spake not of a greate while, so that night they communed no more. The next day the Duke sent for the bishop to whom he saide, my Lord of Ely, I must needs in hart thinke, and with mouth confesse, that you be a sure friend, a trusty counsellor, and a very louer of your country. And sith at our last communication, you haue disclosed the secrettes of your heart, touching the new usurper of the crowne, and also haue a little touched the aduancement of the two noble families of Yorke and Lancaster, I shal likewise declare vnto you my private intents and secret cogitations: and to beginne, when king Edward was deceased, I then beganne to studie, and with deliberation to ponder in what manner this Realme shoulde be gouerned. I persuaded with my selfe to take parte with the Duke of Gloucester, whome I thought to be as cleane without dissimulation, as tractable without insurie,

and

and so by my memmes hee was made Protector both of the king and Realme, which authoritie being once gotten, hee neuer ceased piallilie to require mee and other Lordes, as well spirituall as temporall, that he might take vpon him the Crowne, till the Prince came to the age of foure and twentie yeres, and were able to gouerne the Realme as a sufficient king: which thing, when he saue me some what sicke at, he then brought in Instruments, authenticke Doctors, proctors & notaries of the law, with depositions of diuers witnesses, testifying I, Edwards Child, to be bastardous: which depositions then I thought to be as true, as now I know them to be fained. When the said depositions were before vs read and diligently heard, hee stood up bare headed saying: Well my Lordes, euen as I and you woulde, that my Nephewes shoulde haue no wrong: so I praye you do me nothing but right, for these witnessses and sayings of famous Doctors be true: for I am onelie the vnbaptized heire to Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, abindged to be the very heire to the crown of this realme by authority of parliament. Which thinges so by learned men for herity to vs declared, caused me and offer to take him for our lawfull and vndoubted prince and soueraign lord: so againe by my aid he of a protector was made a king: but when he was once crowned king, and in full possession of the realm, he cast away his old conditions. For when I my selfe sued to him for my part of the earle of Herefords lands, which his brother king Edw. wrongfully detained from me, and also required to haue the office of the high Constabill of Englande, as diuers of my noble ancestors before this time haue had, and in long descent continued: in this my first suit, he did not only first delay me, and after ward deny me, but gaue me such unkind words, as though I had neuer furthered him, all which I suffered patiently: but when I was informed of the death of the two yong innocents, the Lord my hart inwardlie grudged, in so much that I abhorred the sight of him. I toke my leaue of the court, & returned to Wrecknock to you, but in the iourney as I returned I had diuers imaginations how to depleie this vnnaturall vncle. First I fantasied, that if I list to take vpon me the crowne, now was the way made plain, and occasion giuen. For I saw he was disdained of the Lordes temporall, and accursed of the Lordes spirituall. After diuers cogitations of this matter, as I rode betwene Worcester & Wyndesore, I encountered with the lady Margaret Countesse of Richmond, now wife to the Lord Stanley, which is the very daughter and sole heire to John duke of Somerset my grandfather's elder brother: so that she and her sonne the earle of Richmond, be both betwene me and the gate, to enter into the maiestie of all, and getting of the crowne: and when we had a little communed concerning her son, and were departed, I then began to dispute with my selfe, whether I were best to take vpon me, by the election of the nobility & communalty, or to take it by power. Thus standing in the waivering ambiguitie, I considered first, the office, dutie, and paine of a king, which surely I thinke that no mortall man can fully and truly obserue, except he be elected by God as king David was: but further I remembred, that if I once toke on me the gouernance of the realm, the daughters of king Edward and their allies, being both for his sake much beloued, & also for the great insur-

done to them much pittied, would neuer cease to barke at the one side of mee. Semblably my cousin the Earle of Richmond his aydes and kinnsfolke, will surely attempt either to bite or pierce me on the other side, so that my life and Rule shoulde euer hang in quiet in doubt of death or deposition. And if the sayde two Images of Yorke and Lancaster shoulde toyne in one against me, then were I surely matched. Wherefore I haue closely determined bitterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the crown: for as I told you, the countesse of Richmond in my returne from the new named king, meeting me in the high waie, praised mee first for kindred sake, secondly for the loue I bare to my grandfather duke Humfrey, which was two: a brother to her father, to moue the king to be good to her son Henry earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fauour to returne againe into Englande, and if it were his pleasure so to do, he promised that the earle her son shoulde marry one of king Edwardes daughters at the appoyntment of the king, without any thing demanded for the saide espousalles, but onlie the kings sauior, which request I haue ouerpassed and departed, but after in my lodging I called to memorie more of that matter I am bent, that the earle of Richmond heire of the house of Lancaster, shall take to wife Ladie Elizabeth eldest daughter to king Edward, by the which marriage both the houses of Yorke and Lancaster maie be vnite in one: when the duke had said, the Bishop Morton, which fauored euer the house of Lancaster was woonerous sofall, for all his imagination tended to this effect, and least the Dukes courage shoulde swage, or his mind alter, hee sayde to the Duke: My Lord of Buckingham, sith by Gods p:ouision, and your incomparable wisdom, this noble coniunction is first moued, it is necessarie to consider what persons we shall first make priuy of this politike conclusion. By my troth (quoth the Duke) we will beginne with my ladie of Richmond the earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Britaine: sith you will beginne that waie (sayde the Byschoppe) I haue an old friende with the Countesse, called Reynolde Bray, for whome I shall send ift bee your pleasure: so the Byschop wrote for him to come to Wicheborne: who straight came backe with the messenger, where the duke and the bishop declared what they had deuised for the preferment of the earle of Richmond son to his Ladie and mistress: willing her first to compasse howe to obtaine the good will of Quene Elizabeth, and also of her eldest daughter, and after secretly to sende to his son in Britaine, to declare what high honor was prepared for him, if he would sweare to marrie the Lady Elizabeth as soon as hee was king of the realme. Reinold Bray with a glad hart returned to the countesse his Lady. When Bray was gone, the Byschop tolde the Duke, that if hee were in his Isle of Ely, he could make many friendes to further their enterpryse. The duke knew this to be true, but yet loath to lose the companie of such a counsellor, gaue the bishop faire words, saying, he shoulde shortly depart well accompanied for feare of enemies, but the bishop ere the dukes company were assembled, secretly disguised, in a night departed, and came to Ely, where he found money and friendes, and so sayled into Flaunders, where hee did the Earle of Richmond good seruice. When Reinold Bray had declared his message to the countesse,

countesse, no maruell if she were glad, wherefore she deuised a meanes how to breake this matter to Quene Elizabeth then being in Sanctuary at Westminster, and hauing in her family a certaine Welchman called Lewes learned in physicks, now hauing opportunitie to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come that her son shoulde be ioined in marriage with lady Elizabeth daughter and heire to King Edward: and that king Richard shoulde out of all honour and estate be delected: and required him to go to Quene Elizabeth, not as a messenger, but as one that came friendly to visite her, and as time and place shoulde serue, to make her priue of this deualce. This physician with good diligence repaired to the Quene, and when he saw time convenient, he said vnto her: Adam, although my imagination be very simple, yet for the entire affection I beare to you and to your children, I am so bolde to utter vnto you a secret conceit that I haue compassed in my bzaire. When I remember the great losse that you haue sustained by the death of your louing husband, and the great sorowe that you haue suffered by the cruell murder of your innocent children, I can no lesse do than dailie studie how to bring your hart to comfort, and also to reuenge the quarrell of you & your children on that cruell tyrant King Richard. And first consider what battel and what mischief hath risen by the dissention betwene the two houses of Yorke and Lancaster, which two families if they maie bee ioined in one, I doubt not but that your line shall be againe restored to your great joy and comfort. You know Adam, that of the house of Lancaster the earle of Richmond is next of blood, and to the house of Yorke your daughters now are heires: If wee could inuent the meane how to couple your eldest daughter with the earle of Richmond in matrimonie, no doubt but the usurper shoulde be shortly deposed, and your heire againe to her right restored. When the Quene had heard this friendly motion, she instantly besought him that as he had bene the first inuenter of so good an enterpryse, that now he would not be sliffe to follow the same, requiring him further, that he would relate to the countesse of Richmond mother to the earle Henry, and to declare to her on the quenes behalfe, that all the friends of king Edward her husband shoulde assist and take part with the earle of Richmond his son, so that he would take an oth, that after the kingdome obtained, to espouse the lady Elizabeth her daughter, &c. Master Lewes so spech his busines, that he made a finall end of this busines betwene the two mothers: so the lady Margaret countesse of Richmond brought to a good hope of the preferment of her son, made Reinold Bray chiefe solicitor of this conspiracy, giuing him in charge secretly to inueigle such persons of nobility to ioine with her, and take her part, as he knew to be faithfully.

This Reinold Bray within seten daies brought to his lute, Sir Giles Daubeney, Sir John Cheine, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ram Esquires, and others. In the meane season the countesse of Richmond sent Christopher Wiske into Britaine to the earle of Richmond, to declare to him all agreements betwene her and the Quene agreed: but the remembering that the Duke of Buckingham was one of the first inuencers of this enterpryse, sent Hugh Conway esquire into Britaine with a great sum of money to his son, giuing him in charge

charge to declare to the earle the great loue that the most part of the nobilitie of the realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect so good an occasion offered, but with all speed to settle his mind how to returne into England, giuing him counsell to take land in Wales. When the earle had receiued this fopfull message, he brake to the duke of Britaine al his secrets, aduertising him that he was entred into a sure and stedfast hope to obtain the crowne of England, desiring him of helpe toward the atchieuing of his enterprise, which the duke promised, and after perswaded. Whereupon the earle sent into England Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming shortly into England. In the meane season the chiefe of the conspiracy in England began many enterprises, which being neuer so praiuely handled, yet knowledge thereof came to king Richard, & because he knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and aide of this commination, he thought it most necessarie to pluck him from that part, whereupon he adressed his loving letters to the Duke, to exhort the Duke to come to the Court: but the Duke required the king to pardon him, excusing himselfe that he was not well. King Richard not content with this excuse, directed to the duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay to repaire to his presence. The Duke made to the messenger a determinate answer, that he would not come to his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war against him, and by this means, Thomas marques Dorset came out of Sanduarie, gathered a great band of men in Powke shire, sir Edward Courtenay and Peter his brother bishop of Excester raised another army in Devonshire and Cornwall. In Kent sir Richard Guilford and other Gentlemen raised a companie.

But king Richard in the meane time had gotten together a great strength, with whome he removed from London toward Salisburie, to the intent hee might set on the Dukes armie, the king was scarce two daies journey from Salisburie, when the duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of wilde Welchmen, which in the ende forsooke him. The Duke with his power marched through the foreste of Deane, intending to haue passed the river of Seuerne at Gloucester, and there to haue ioynded in armie with the Courtenies, and other Welchmen men, which if he had done, no doubt but king Richard had bene in great leoparde. But before he could attaine to Seuerne side, by force of continuall raine the river rose so high, that it ouerflowed all the countrey adioining, which rage of water lasted ten daies: by which inundacie the passages were so closed, that neither the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time the Welchmen lingering idle and without money of victuall, suddenly scaled and departed. The Duke thus left almost alone, was of necessity compelled to flie, and conueied himselfe into the house of Humfrey Banister his seruant beside Shyzwbury, whom he had tenderly brought up, which when it was known to his adherents, euerie man wished for himselfe and died. And some of them sayled into Britaine, among the which were Peter Courtenay Bishop of Excester, and sir Edward Courtenay his brother, Thomas marques Dorset, John lord Welles, sir John Bourchier, sir Edmond Woodville brother to queene Elizabeth, sir Robert Willoughby,

3 great water.

banister that betrayed his master, miserably plagued, let the like traitors to their masters looke to, the like, or worse, to them and their, without speeche repentance.

The duke after he had confessed all the whole conspiracie vpon the second of Nouember without arraignment or iudgement, was at Salisburie beheaded. At the same time that the duke of Buckingham was by in the west countrey, there were manie by in Kent, to wit, sir George Browne, sir John Gifford and his sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifforde, Bonting yeoman of the crowne, with manie other, to the number of sixe thousand: these made a fray at Ghaulesend in the saire, where Bonting slewe master Mowbray, with diuers other, but when they heard that the duke of Buckingham was dead they were faine to flie to saue themselves.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

Which these things were thus handled in England, Henry Carle of Richmond prepared an army of sixe thousand Britons, and fortie well furnished ships. When all thinges were prepared, and the daie of setting forward was appointed, which was the twelue of October, the whole armie hopled by sailles and toke the sea, but toward night the winde turned, and so henge a tempest arose, that the shippes were dispersed asunder: some driuen into Normandie, some againe into Britaine. In the morning after when the tempest was abswaged, the earle approached to the south part of England, at the mouth of theauen of Poles in Dorset, where he might see all the banks full of men of war, appointed to defend his arrival, wherefore he gaue charge that no man should land, untill such time as the whole manie were assembled, but after that he perceived none of his ships to appeare, he hoisted up anchor and away, where he arrived safe in Normandy, and returned by land into Britaine, where he was some aduertised that the duke of Buckingham had lost his head, and that the marques Dorset, and a great number of noble men in England had a little before inquired for him there.

In the meane season king Richard apprehended in diuers partes of this realme certaine Gentlemen of the Carle of Richmonds faction, amongst whome sir George Browne, sir Roger Clifford, and seure other were put to death at London the thirde of December, sir Thomas Seneclgar, which had married

sir Giles Daubney, sir Thomas Arundell, sir John Cheinie and his two brethren, sir William Barkeley, sir William Brandon and Thomas his brother, sir Richard Edgecombe, and John Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. proclamation was made, and a thousand pound promised to who so could bring out the duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banister betrayed his guest and master to John Mitton then sheriffe of Shropshire, which with a strong power apprehended the Duke in a little groue adioining to the manors of Humfrey Banister, and in great haste conueied him to the cite of Salisburie, where king Richard then kept his household. This Banister after he had betrayed his master, his sonne and heire waxed mad, and died in a boares stie, his eldest daughter was suddenly stricken with a folie leperie, his second son maruellously deformed of his limbs and made lame, his younger son in a small puddle was drowned, and he himselfe being of extreame age arraigned and found guiltie of a murder, and by his cleargie saved. And as for his thousand pound, sir Richard gaue him not one farthing, saying, that he which would be untrue to so good a master, would be false to all other.

married the Dutchesse of Excester the kings owne sister, and Tho. Ram, with diuers other were executed at Excester.

Fire at Leaden  
hall in London.

1484

The 30. of December was a great fire at Leaden hall in London, where through was burnt much housing, and all the stocks for guns and other like provision belonging to the city.

An. reg. 2.

After this king Richard called a Parliament, in the which he attainted the earle of Richmond, and all other persons, which were fled out of the realme for feare, or any other cause as enemies to him, and to the naturall country, and all their lands and goods was confiscate to the kings use, and yet notwithstanding he laid on the people a great tare.

In this troublesome season, nothing was more maruelled at than that the Lord Stanley had not bene taken, considering the working of the Ladie Margaret his wife mother to the earle of Richmond: but for as much as the enterprise of a woman was of him reputed of no regarde or estimation, and that the Lord Stanley her husband had purged himselfe to bee innocent of all attempts by her committed, it was giuen him in charge to keepe her in some secret place at home, without hauing any seruant or companie, so that from thenceforth she should neuer send letter to her son, or to any of his friends, by the which the king might be molested, which commandment was a while put in execution.

King Henry the  
first remoued  
to Gloucestre.

Record Tower.

This yere king Richard began the high tower at Westminster, which remaineth yet unfinished. Also he caused the bodie of king Henry the first to be remoued from Chertsey abbey in Surrey, and to be buried at Windsor on the twelfth of August.

In these daies were chiefe rulers about the king, the Lord Louel, and two Gentlemen being named sir Richard Ratcliffe, and sir William Catesby, of the which persons was made a seditious rime, & fastned vpon the crosse in cheape, and other places of the Citie, whereof the sentence was as followeth:

The Cat, the Rat, and Louel our dogge:

Rulen all England, vnder an hogge.

Which was to meane these three persons, ruled this land vnder the king, which bare a white Boare for his cognisance. For the deuilers of this rime much searsh was made and sundry accused to their great charges. But finally two Gentlemen, Turbunille, and Collingborne, were for that and other things laid to their charge, arrested and cast in prison, for whom shortly was holden at the Guildhall an open determiner, where the two Gentlemen were arraigned, and that one of them called William Collingborne Esquire, confesse of that crime and other, for the which he was beate vnto the Tower hill, and there full cruelly put to death, as first hanged, and straight cut downe and ripped, and his bowels cast into the fire, the which torment was so speedily done, that when the butcher pulled out his heart, he spake and saide Zelus Zelus. This man was greatly moaned of the people, for his goodly personage and fauour of visage, he had bene sometime, to wit the 15. of Edward the fourth, herisse of Wiltschire, and in the 17. herisse of Somersetshire, and Dorsetshire.

King Richard considering the amities concluded betwene princes are the cause

Collingborne  
executed.

Record.

cause that their realmes are fortified with a double power, that is to say, with their owne strength, and the aide of their friends, practised a league with the king of Scots, which not long before had made diuers incursions and roades into the realme of England, and therefore sued to haue a truce or peace concluded. Wherefore commissioners were appointed, which met at Nottingham, and there in the end concluded for these yeres on certain articles, 15. in number. This peace thus concluded, king Richard now doubting his owne people, was continually vexed with feare of the returne of the earle of Richmond and his complices: wherefore, nothing was for his purpose more, than once againe with plice and paiser, to attempt the duke of Britaine, in whose territory the earle then abode, to deliuer him into his hands: wherefore incontinent he sent certaine ambassadors to the Duke of Britaine, which toke vpon them that king Richard should verely paie and answer the duke of Britaine of all the reuenues, rents and profits of the lands and possessions, as well belonging to the earle of Richmond, as to any other noble or gentleman which then were in the earles companie, if he after that time would keepe them in continuall prison and restraine them from libertie. The Duke furnished with these and other instructions, arriued in Britaine, but could not speake with the duke, by reason that he being weakened by a long and daile infirmittie, began to waue idle of his remembrance, for which cause Peter Landoye his chiefe treasurer, ruled all things at his pleasure, vnto whom the English ambassadors moued to him the message, offering to him the same rewards and landes that they should haue offered the Duke. This Peter faithfully promised to accomplish king Richards request, so that he kept promise with him: but fortune was so fauourable to the publike weale of England, that this deably compact toke none effect, for Iohn Morton bishop of Ely flourishing then in flouers, was of all this craftie deuile certified: wherefore he sent Christopher Wiswike, to declare to the Earle of Richmond all the deceit, giuing him charge in all haste possible with his companie to retire out of Britaine into France. When these newes came to the earle, he incontinent sent to Charles the French king, requiring that he and his might safely passe into France, which desire was granted, & the earle with the rest dispatched as puaile as might be into France, no man suspecting their departure. After this, the Earle toke his journey to Charles the French king, to whom after great thanks giuen, he disclosed the occasion of his accesse to his person. After that he required of him helpe and succor, to the intent he might returne to the nobilitie of his realme, of whom he was generally called to take vpon him the crowne: king Charles promised him aide, and bad him bee of good comfort, for he assured him that he would gladly thetne to him his bountifull liberalitie. Whiles the earle of Richmond was attended on the French Court, Iohn Vere Earle of Oxford so perswaded James Blunt Captaine of Harnes Castle, and sir Iohn Forteskewe porter of the towne of Caleis, that he himselfe was not onely set at libertie, but they also leauing their fruitfull offices condescended to go with him into France to the Earle of Richmond.

In the meane season Sir Richard was credibly advertised that promises and

Truce with  
Scotland for  
three yeres.

1485



and othes the Earle and his confederates had made and swoyne, and howbey the Carles meanes, all the Englishmen were passed out of Brytaine into France. Wherefore being in maner desperate, imagining how to infringe the Carles purpose by another meane, so that by the marriage of ladie Elizabeth his niece, he should pretende no claime to the crowne, there came to his minde a thing not only detestable, but much more cruell to be put in execution, for he closely determined to reconcile to his fauour his brothers wife Quene Elizabeth, and so by that meanes the Earle of Richmond, of the affinitye of his Niece should be bitterly defrauded, and if no ingenious remedie could be otherwise inuented, if it should happen Quene Anne his wife to depart out of this world, then he himselfe would rather take to wife his cousin and niece the ladie Elizabeth, than for lacke of that affinitye the whole realme should run to ruine. Wherefore he sent to the Quene being in Sanctuary, diuers and often messengers which should excuse him of all things before against her attempted, and after should so largely promise promotions, not onely to her but to her son Thomas Marquesse Dorset, that they should bring her (if it were possible) into some wan hope. The messengers so perswaded the quene, that she began somewhat to relent, in so much that she faithfully promised to yield her selfe to the kings will at pleasure. And so she first deliuered vnto king Richards hands her five daughters: Afterward she sent letters to the Marquesse her sonne being then at Paris with the Earle of Richmond, willing him in a nicke wise to repaire into England, where for him were provided great honours, ascertaining him that all offences on both parties were forgiven and forgotten: After that king Richard had thus pleased the mutable minde of Quene Elizabeth, he caused all her daughters to be conueyed into his Palace with solemaun receiving. Now nothing was contrary to his purpose, but that his mansion was not void of a wife: and first he abstained both from the bed and companie of his wife: after he complained to manie of the infortunate barrennesse of his wife. After this, he procured a common rumour to be published among the common people, that the Quene was dead. When the Q. heard tell that so horrible a rumour of her death was sprung amongst the commonaltie, she sore suspected the woode to be almost at an end with her, and not long after, to witte, the 16. of March, in the lent season, howsoeuer it fortuned, the quene departed out of this life, and was with due solemnitie buried at Westminster.

The king thus losed out of the bondes of Matrimonte, began to cast a fauour to lady Elizabeth his niece, making much suite to haue her ioined with him in lawfull Matrimonte: but because all men, and the maiden her selfe most of all detested this unlawfull copulation, he determined to deferre the matter till he were in a more quiet case, for all this season he was oppressed with weightie affaires on euerie side, considering that daily part of the Nobilitie fled into France, other piouslie fauoured the earle of Richmond, amongst the noble men whom he most suspected, these were the principall, Thomas lord Stanley, Sir William Stanley his brother, Gilbert Talbot, and six hundred other, of whose purpose, though king Richard were ignorant, yet he gaue no credence

to anse one of them, and least of all to the Lord Stanley, because he was ioined in matrimonte with the Ladie Margaret mother to the Earle of Richmond, for when the Lord Stanley would haue departed into his countrey, the king in no wise would suffer him to depart, before hee had left as in hostage in the court George Stanley Lord Strange, his first begotten sonne and heire.

While king Richard was thus troubled, sodainly he heard newes that the Castle of Hames was deliuered into the hands of the Earle of Richmond, by the meanes of the Earle of Orford, and that not onely he, but also James Blunt, captaine of the castle, were fled into France to aide the Earle of Richmond.

Henry Earle of Richmond obtaining of king Charles a small crue of men, and borroweing certaine summs of money of him, and of diuers other his private friends, he departed from the French Court, and came to the Citie of Roane. While he tarried there, making provision at Harefleete, in the mouth of the Riuer of Seyne, for all things necessarie for his Raue, tydings were brought to him, that king Richard being without children, and a widower, intended hostile to marrie with Ladie Elizabeth, his brothers daughter, which newes he toke of no small moment, for this thing onely toke awaie from all his companions their hope to obtaine an happy enterprize, by reason whereof, he iudged that all his friends in England would thinke from him, yet notwithstanding, earle Henrie of Richmond, because he would no longer linger & wearie his friends, liuing betwene hope and feare, determined in all haste conuenient to set forward, and carried to his shippes armour, weapons, battell, and all other ordinaunces expedient for warre, which being done, enely accompanied with two thousand men, and a small number of shippes, luyed by his Anchors, and in the kalendes of August, he sailed from Harefleete with so prosperous a winde, that the seventh day after he arriued in Wales in the evening, at a Port called Milford Hauen, and incontinent toke land, and came to a place called Dale, and at the sunne rising remoued to Hereforde west, where he was receiued of the people with great joy.

From thence, he remoued to Cardigan twentie mile from Hereford west, whither came to the Earle Richard Griffith with all his men and powder. After him the same date came John Morgan with his men. Then the Earle advanced forward, making no abode in aie place, and sodainly he was ascertained that Sir Walter Herbert, and Rice ap Thomas, were in harnesse before him, ready to encounter with his armie, and to stop their passage. Wherefore he first determined to set upon them, and either to destroye or take them into his fauour, and after with all his power to giue battaile to king Richard. But to the intent his friends should knowe with what dexterity he attempted his enterprize forward, he sent messengers with letters and instructions to the Lady Margaret his mother, to the Lord Stanley and his brother, to Talbot and to others, declaring to them, that he holpe with the aide of his friends, intended to passe ouer the Riuer of Seuerne at Shrewsbury, and so to passe directly to the Citie of London, requiriting them as his speciall trust was in the hope of their fidelitie,

An. reg. 3.

Henry Earle  
of Richmond  
landed at Mil-  
ford Hauen.



discreetly, that they would meet him by the way with all diligent preparation. When the messengers were departed, he marched forward towards Shrewsbury, and in his passage there met and saluted him Rice ap Thomas with a goodly band of Welshmen, which submitted himselfe wholly to his order and commandement. In the meane time the messengers laden with rewards returned to him the same day that he entered into Shrewsburie, and made relation to him that his friends were ready in all points to do all things for him which they might doe. The earle Henrie continued his tourney and came to a little towne called Ketwout, and pitched his campe on a little hill adjoining, refreshing himselfe there that night. In the evening of the same daie came to him Sir Gilbert Talbot, with the whole power of the young Earle of Shrewsburie, then being in ward, which were accounted two thousand men: and thus his power increasing he arrived at the towne of Stafforde, and there paused. To whom came Sir William Stanley, accompanied with a few persons. After that the Earle departed from thence to Litchelde, and lay without the walls in campe all that night. The next morning he entered the towne and was like a Prince received. A daie or two before, the Lord Stanley having in his band almost five thousand men, lodged in the same towne, but hearing that the earle of Richmond was marching thitherward, gave to him place, dislodging him and his, and repaired to a towne called Abestone, there abiding the coming of the Earle: and this he did to avoid all suspicion, being afraid least if he should be seen openly to be a favourer or aid to the Earle his sonne in law before the daie of battaile, that King Richard which yet did not utterly put in him mistrust, would put to some cruel death his sonne and heire apparent, George Lord Strange, whom King Richard had in hostage. King Richard at this season keeping his house in the Castle of Nottingham, was informed that the Earle of Richmond with such banished men as were fled out of England to him, were arrived in Wales, and that all things necessarie to his enterprise were unpurveyed and verie lacking, nothing mete to withstand the power of such as the king had appointed to resist him, yet notwithstanding hee sent to John Duke of Norfolk, Henrie Earle of Northumberland, Thomas Earle of Surrey, and to other of his trustie friends, willing them to muster and bring all their servants and tenants, and to elect the most courageous and active persons of the whole number, and with them to repaire to his presence with all speed. Also he wrote to Robert Brakenburie Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him with his power to come to his army, and to bring with him his fellows in armes Thomas Bouchier, and Sir Walter Hungerford, and divers other knights and esquires, in whom he had no small suspicion. While he was thus ordering his affaires, tidings came that the Earle of Richmond was passed Severne, and come to Shrewsbury without any detriment or inconvenience. At which newes hee was soe moved, and cried out on them that contrary to their othe had deceived him. And in all haste sent out to victual what waite his enemies kept and passed, it was declared to the king, that the Earle was incamped at the towne of Litchelde. Whereof, when hee had perfect knowledge, hee having continuall repaire of his subjects to him, hee immediately

mently made his battailes to set forward towards the waile, where his enemies as was to him reported, intended to passe, and keeping his arrais, hee with great pompe entered the towne of Litchelde after the sunne set. The earle of Richmond raised his campe from Litchelde to Lamworth, and in the mid-waile passing, there saluted him Sir Walter Hungerford, & Sir Thomas Bouchier knights, and divers others, which submitted themselves to his pleasure. Divers other noble personages likewise resorted to him with all their power. There hapned in this progression to the earle of Richmond a strange chance, for he was not a little afraid, because hee could not bee assured of his father in law Lord Stanley, which as yet inclined to neither partie, wherefore the earle, accompanied with twenty light horsemen, lingering in his tourney behinde his host, in the meane while the whole armie came before the towne of Lamworth, and when hee for darkenesse could not perceive the steps of them that passed on before, and had wandered hither and thither seeking after his companie, hee abode in a little village, about three myles from his army, where hee tarried all night. The next morning in the dawning, hee returned, and by good fortune came to his army, excusing himselfe, not to have gone out of his waite by ignorance, but of purpose: this excuse made, hee privately departed againe to the towne of Abestone, where the Lord Stanley and Sir William his brother with their bands, were abiding: then the Earle came to his father in law, in a little close, where hee saluted him and Sir William his brother, and after consulted how to give battaile to King Richard, if hee would abide, whome they knew not to be farre off with an huge armie. In the evening of the same daie, Sir John Savage, Sir Brian Sanford, Sir Simon Digby, and many other, leaving King Richard, turned and came to the earle of Richmond with an elect companie of men. In the meane season, King Richard marched to a place called Redmore mete for two battels to encounter, by a village called Bosworth, not far from Litchelde, and there hee pitched his field, refreshed his armie, and took his rest. The next daie after, King Richard being furnished with men, and all abillments of warre, bringing all his men out of their campe into the plaine, ordered his foreward in a marvellous length, in which hee appointed both horsemen and footemen, and in the forefront hee placed the Archers.

Where this battell was captaine John duke of Norfolk, with whom was Thomas earle of Surrey his son. After this long vanguard followed King Richard with a strong company of approued men of war, having horsemen for wings on both sides of his battell.

After that the earle of Richmond was returned from the communication with his friends, hee with all diligence pitched his field just by the campe of his enemies, and there hee lodged that night. In the morning betime, hee caused his men to put on their armour, and apparel themselves to fight, and gave Battaille, and sent to the Lord Stanley, requiring him with his men to approach neere to his Armie, and to helpe to sette the shoulder on arrais: hee answered, the Earle should sette his owne men in good order, while hee should come to him in time convenient. The Earle made his foreward

Battell at Bosworth.

some what single and slender, according to the small number of his people. In the front he placed the archers, of whom he made Captaine John Earle of Oxford. To the right wing of the battaile he appointed Sir Gilbert Talbot to be the leader. To the left wing he assigned Sir Io. Savedge, and hee with the aide of the Lord Stanley, accompanied with the Earle of Penbrooke, having a good companie of horse-men, and a small number of foot-men, for all his whole number exceeded not five thousand men, beside the power of the Scanlerys, whereof three thousand were in the fildes under Sir William Stanley: The kings number was double so much, or more. When both these armies were thus ordered, and all men ready to set forward, king Richard called his chieftaines together, perswading them to be valiaunt, &c. But his people were to him unfaithfull in his end, as he was to his nephewes untrue and unnaturall in his beginning. When the Earle of Richmond knew that the king was so nere embattailed, he rode about his armie giving comfortable words to all men, after the which he made to them a pithie Exhortation perswading them to have the victorie, so that they were to fight in a iust quarrell, he had scantily finished his saying, but the one armie espied the other, betwixne both armies there was a great marraish which the erle left on his right hand, and so doing he had the sun at his backe, and in the face of his enemies. When the king saw the earles companie was passed the marraish, hee commanded with all haste to set upon them, the terrible shotte on both sides passed, the armies toynded and came to hand strokes, at which encounter the lord Stanley toynded with the erle.

The earle of Oxford in the meane season fearing least while his companie was fighting, they should bee compassed of the enemies, gaue commandement that no man should goe about tenne fote from the standard, which commandement once knowne, they knitte themselves together and ceased a little from fighting: the enemies sodainly abashed at the matter and mistrusting some fraude, began also to pause. The Earle of Oxford bying all his band together on the one part, set on his enemies freshly: againe the adversaries perceiving that, placed their men slender and thinne before, and thicke and broad behind, beginning againe the battaile. While the two forewardes thus mortallie fought, king Richard was admonished that the Earle of Richmond accompanied with a small number of men of armes was not farre off, and as he approached to him, hee perfectly knewe his personage, and being inflamed with yre, he put his spurs to his horse and rode out of the side of the range of his battaile, leading the vauntgarde fighting, and with speare in weest ranne toward him. The Earle perceived well the king furiously coming toward him, and because the whole hope of his wealth and purpose was to be determined by battaile, he gladly proffered to encounter with him bodie to bodie and man to man: King Richard set on to charpelle at the first hunt that he overthre to the earles standard, and selwe Sir William Brandon his standardbearer, and matched hand to hand with Sir John Cheiney, a man of great force and strength, which would have resisted him, and the saide John was by him manfully overthrowne, and so he making

open

open passage by dint of sword as he went forwarde, the Earle of Richmond withstood his violence and kept him at the swordes point longer then his companions thought, which being almost in despaire of victorie were sodainly recomforted by Sir W. Stanley, which came to succour with 3000. tall men, at which berie instant, king Richards men were driven backe and fledde, and he himselfe manfully fighting in the middle of his enemies was slaine. In the meane season the Earle of Oxford, with the aide of the Lord Stanley after no long fight discomfited the forewarde of king Richard, whereof a great number were slaine in the chase, but the greatest number that came to the field never gaue stroke. In this battaile died on king Richards part, about the number of 4000. men, and on the other side but ten persons, as Sir Gilbert Talbot then wrote from the campe, and of the nobilitie were slaine John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lorde Ferrers of Chartley, Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Sir William Coniers, Sir Richard Claringdon, and Robert Brakenburie, lieutenant of the Tower, and not manie Gentlemen more: Sir William Catesby learned in the lawes of the Realme, and one of the chiefe Counsellors to the late king, with divers other were two daies after beheaded at Leicester. Amongst them that ran a waile were Sir Francis Mount Loel, and Humfrey Stafford with Thomas Stafford his brother, which toke Sanctuary in St. Johns at Gloucester. On the Earle of Richmonds part that was slaine, the principall was Sir William Brandon his standardbearer. This battaile was fought at Bosworth in Leicestershire, the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lorde, 1485. the whole conflict indured little about two houres. When the earle had thus obtained the victorie, he rendered thanks to God, and asser to his souldiers for their fidelity: then the people cried king Henry, king Henry. When the lord Stanley sawe the good will of the people, he toke the Crowne of king Richard, which was found amongst the spoile in the fild, and set it on the earles head, as though he had bene elected king by the voice of the people.

King Henry at this time made knights, as followeth: Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir John Mortimer, Sir Rice ap Thomas, Sir Robert Points, Sir Humfrey Stanley, Sir John Turbanille, Sir W. Willoughby, Sir Hugh Pershall, Sir R. Hegecombe, Sir John Bikenyle, Sir de Baron de Carow.

After this, the whole campe removed to the towne of Leicester, where hee rested two daies. In the meane season, the dead corpes of king Richard was as shamefully carried to the towne of Leicester, as hee gorgeously the day before with pompe departed out of the same towne: for his bodie was naked to the skinne, not so much as one clout about him, and was trussed behinde a Pursuant of armes, like a hogge or calfe, the head and armes hanging on the one side of the horse, and the legs on the other side, and all sprinkled with myre and blood, was brought to the Grey Friars Church within the Towne, and there homely buried, when he had reigned two yeres, two monthes and one day.

He founded a colledge at Wykeham beyond Wyke, and another at London, I. Rouff, don beside the Tower, in a chappell called our Ladys of Barking: he also en-

dowed

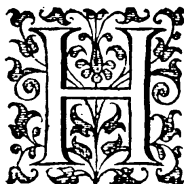
dowed

King Richard  
slaine.

doowed the Quenes Colledge at Cambridge with five hundred markes of yerele rent. He bequested the great field of Wichebourne, betwene Wimbleshoe and Wiltshire, which king Edward the fourth had incorporated before to the forrest, &c.

## Henry Earle of Richmond.

An. reg. 1.



Henry the seventh, borne in Penbroke Castle, began his raigne the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lord God, 1485. He was a Prince of marvellous wisdom, politic, iustice, temperance, and grauitie, and notwithstanding manie and great occasions of trouble and warre, he kept his realme in right good order, for the which he was greatly reuerenced of foraine princes.

Parson of S. Edmunde

On the forenamed 22. of August, was a great fire in Bread-streets of London, in the which fire, was bent the Parson of Saint Edmundes, and one other man in the Parsonage there.

King Henry, before his departure from Leicester, sent sir Robert Willoughby knight to the Baron of Sherrbottun in the countie of Worke, for: Edward Plantagenet earle of Warwike, son and heire to George Duke of Clarence, then being of the age of 15. yeres, and sent him vp to the Tower of London, where he was put under sure custodie.

In the meane season the king remoued towards London, and when he had approached the citie, on the 27. of August, the Maior, Magistrates, and companies, all clothe in blolel, met him at Shoreditch, and with great pompe conuicted him through the citie to S. Pauls church, where he offered his three standards, one of S. George, the second a red Dragon, the third a dun Cow, after his praiers said and Te Deum sung, he departed to the bishops palace where he continued a few son.

The sweating began the 21. of September, and continued till the ende of October: of the which sickness a wonderfull number died, and in London besides other, died Thomas Hill maior, in whose place was chosen William Stocker, who likewise deceased about seven daies after: in which space departed the foure Aldermen, Thomas Ilam, Richard Rawson, Thomas Norland, and John Stocker, and then was chosen maior John Warde, who continued till the feast of Simon and Jude.

On the euen of Saint Simon and Jude, king Henry came from Kenyngton unto Lambeth, and there dined with Thomas Bourchier Archbishoppe of Canterbury, Cardinal of Cinac in Thermis. And after dinner with a godly companie of the estates of this realme both spirituall & temporall, from thence went by land toward London, his nobles riding after the guise of frisks upon small hackneies, two and two upon a horse, and at London bridge end, the

the Maior of London with his brethren and the craftes, met and received the king, and the king proceeded to Chace-church corner, and so to the Tower. On the morrowe being the feast daie of Simon and Jude, king Henrie created Thomas lord Stanley Earle of Darby, Edward Courtney Earle of Devonshire, and Iasper earle of Penbroke was created Duke of Bedford, all at one time in the tower of London. Banerets made at this creation, Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir John Cheinie, Sir William Stonar, Sir W. Truembcke, Sir John Mortimer, Sir Richard Crosby, Sir John Fortescue, Sir Edward Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Cokesley, Sir James Baskenuile, Sir Humfrey Stanley, Sir Richard de la Bere.

On the 30. of October king Henry was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Thomas Bourchier archbishop of Canterbury, and obtained a number of chosen archers, being strong and hardie persons, to giue bailie attendance on his person, whome he named yeoman of the Ward.

The 7. of Nouember began a parliament at Westminster, for the establishing of all things, in the which he caused to be proclaimed, that all men were pardoned of all offenses, and should be restored to their lands and goods, which would submit themselves to his clemencie. After this he began to remember his especiall friends, of whom some he advanced to honour and dignitie, and some he enriched with possessions and goods: and to begin, the lord Chandew of Wyntaine, he made earle of Bath: Sir Giles Daubeney was made lord Daubeney: Sir Robert Willoughby lord Brooke: and Edward Stafford eldest sonne to Henry late duke of Buckingham, he restored to his dignitie & possessions: Sir T. Molineux knight, baneret, he made Constable of Beaumarke, where shortly after he ended his life. The parliament being dissolved, the king redeemed the marques Dorset, and Sir John Bourchier, whom he had left as pledges at Paris, for money there before borrowed: and sent also into flanders for John Morton bishop of Ely.

The eighteenth day of January king Henry married the labie Elizabeth eldest daughter to Edward the fourth, by which meanes the two families of York and Lancaster, which had long bene at great diuision, were united and made one.

King Henrie sent the Lord Treasurer with master Bray and other, unto the lord Maior of London, requesting him and the citizens of a prest of 6000. markes, therefore the Maior with his brethren and commons granted a prest of two thousand pound, which was lent of the companies, and not of the wardes, which prest was repaid againe in the yere next following, euery pennie.

Wheate was solde for thre shillings the bushell, and bay salt at the like price.

In the month of September Quene Elizabeth was deliuered of her first sonne named Arthur, at Winchester.

This yere deceased Thomas Bourchier archbishop of Canterbury, and was buried at Canterbury: John Morton Bishop of Ely, a man of excellent wit, learning, and vertue, was translated, and succeeded him in the archbishopricke of Canterbury, and John Alcock succeeded in the bishopricke of Ely.

Mr Richard Simon, a wily priest, came to Gerald earle of Windsor, and depu-  
ty of Ireland, and presented to him a lad his scholar named Lambert, whom  
he saied to be the sonne of George duke of Clarence lately escaped the tow-  
er of London. And the childe had learned of the priest such princely behaviour,  
that he lightly moved the earle, and many nobles of Ireland, tendering the  
blood to pay of Richard Plantagenet and George his son, as also maligning the  
advancement of the house of Lancaster in Henry the seventh, either to thinke  
or make the world weene, they thought verily this childe to be Edward earle  
of Warwick, the duke of Clarence lawfull son. And although is Henry more  
than halfe married their sport, in shewing the right earle thorough all the  
streets of London: yet the Lady Margaret dutchesse of Burgoyne sister to  
Edward the fourth, John de la Pole her nephew, the Lord Louel, sir Thomas  
Broughton knight, and other captaines of this conspiracie, devised to abuse  
the colour of this young earles name, for preferring their purpose: which, if it  
came to god, they agreed to depose Lambert, and to erect the verie earle in  
his stead, now prisoner in the tower: for whose quarrell, had they pretended to  
fight, they deemed it likely, he should have been made away: wherefore it was  
blazed in Ireland, that the king, to mocke his subiectes, had schooled a boy to  
take upon him the earle of Warwickes name, and had shewen him about in  
London, to blinde the eyes of simple folke, and to deface the lawfull inheritors  
of the Duke of Clarence their countreiman and protector: during his life, to  
whose lineage they also devised a title of the crowne.

1487

In all the haste they assembled at Duellin, and there in Christs church they  
crowned this idoll, honoring him with titles Imperiall, seasing and trium-  
phing, rearing mightie shoutes and cries, carrying him thence to the kings  
castle upon tall mens shoulders, that he might be seene and noted, as he was  
surely an honourable boy to looke upon.

E. Hall.

In this meane time, the earle of Lincoln, and the lord Louel, had gotten  
by the aid of Margaret about 2000. Almshouses, with Martin Swart a German,  
and in martiall acts verie expert, to be their captaine, and so sailing into Ire-  
land, and at the citie of Duellin caused young Lambert to be proclaimed king  
of England, & so with a great multitude of Irishmen, of whom Thomas Ge-  
rardine was captaine, they layed in to England with the new king, and land-  
ed at Fowberry within a dayes of Lancaster, trusting there to be aided with  
money by sir Thomas Broughton, one of the chiefest of this conspiracie.

King Henry not sleeping in his matters, when he had gathered his host to-  
gether, over the which the duke of Bedford, and the earle of Arford were chiefe  
captaines, he went to Coventrie, where he being certified, that the earle of  
Lincoln was landed at Lancaster with his new king, he remoured to Spot-  
tingham, to whom shortly after came George Talbot earle of Shrewsbury,  
the lord Strange, sir John Cheiney, with many other.

Stoke field.

In this space the earle of Lincoln being entered into Wiltshire, direc-  
ted his way to Newburie upon Trent, and at a little village called Stoke,  
three or foure miles from Newburie, high to the king and his armie planted  
his campe.

E. Hall.

The next daie following, the king divided his number into three battalies,  
and after approached nigh the towne of Stoke, where both the armies layed  
and fought eagerly on both parts: but at the length the kings foreward set by-  
on the aduersaries with such a violence, that they slew many, and put the rest  
to flight. For there their chiefe captaines, the earle of Lincoln, and the lord  
Louel, sir Thomas Broughton, Martin Swart, and the lord Gerardine, (or after  
Campion, Morice Fitz Thomas) captaine of the Irishmen, were slaine, and o-  
ther above foure thousand. This battell was fought on the 16 of June: Lam-  
bert and the priest were both taken, to the no small griefe of Margaret Dut-  
chesse of Burgoyne.

Lambert, after that he had bene a turne-broch for a space in the kings kit-  
chen, was at length made one of the kings falconers.

Now when the king had got the upper hande of his enemies (as y<sup>e</sup> have  
heard) he remoured to Lincoln, and there tarried three daies, causing so-  
lemne processions to be made, in rending thanks to God for his fortunate  
victory. Then caused he execution to be don on such as were taken in the field,  
either at the battell, or in the chase. And shortly after he went into Wiltshire,  
and there coasted the countrey, searching out such as had aided his enemies,  
whome hee punished, some by long imprisonment, some by large fines, and  
some by death.

An. reg. 3.

About the midst of August the king came to Newcastell upon Tyne, and  
from thence sent ambassadors into Scotland, Richard Fox bishop of Winchester,  
ser, and Richard Edgcomb knight, controller of his house, to conclude some  
peace, or truce with king James of Scotland. The English ambassadors were  
honorably received, and entertained of the king, who gladly would have con-  
cluded a perpetuall peace, but his people would not agree thereto: but in the  
end concluded upon a truce for seven yeeres.

Truce with  
the Scots.

King Henrie, after the ambassadors were returned out of Scotland, came  
backe from Newcastell toward Wiltshire, and so to London: and in the waie be-  
ing at Leicester, there came to him ambassadors from Charles the French  
king, which declared both the recouerie of certayne townes out of the hands of  
Maximilian II. of Romans, which he had wrongfully detained from the crown  
of France before that time: and also that their master king Charles had now  
boats in hand against Francis duke of Brittain, because that he succoured and  
maintained the duke of Breilance and others that were rebels against him.  
Wherefore his request was that for the olde familiaritie which had bene be-  
twene them, he would now either assist and helpe him, or else stand as neuter  
betwixt them, neither helping or hurting the one or the other. The king an-  
swered the ambassadors, that he would neither spare paine nor cost to set some  
reasonable stay betwixt them. And as the ambassadors were returned home,  
the king sent his Chaplaine Christopher Vriswicke over into France to king  
Charles, as well to helpe, that he was glad of the victory which he had against  
Maximilian, as to declare what a tempestuous forme of civil rebellion him-  
selfe had escaped, and overcome here in England. But the chiefe point of  
Vriswikes errand consisted in this, that he should intimate to the French king,

H. 4.

how

holme his maister king Henry offered himselfe as a mediator betwixt him and the Duke of Wyntaine, to make them friends, and if he perscued the French king to giue eare thereunto, then he should go into Wyntaine to moue the duke there to bee contented, that some reasonable order might bee taken betwixt them.

Whylest Viswike was travelling in this matter, king Henry for the accomplishing of the coronation of his wife Quene Elizabeth, returned toward London, and on the saturday next before the feast of All Saints he began his iournie with the Quene from Warwicke, and in his toale at St. Albons kept the feast of All Saints: and on the next morrow removed to Barnet, where he rested: & on the next morrow as he was comming toward London, in Harneysey parke hee was met by the Spalor, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and principal commoners of the city of London, all on horsebacke, and in one liacrie to attende upon him, where hee dubbed Sir Wil. Horne Spalor of London knight. And betwixt Aldermen and London, hee dubbed Sir John Perciuall alderman knight. Against the kings comming into London, the streets were grauelled, and the crosses in their liueries stood on both sides from Bishopsgate vnto Pauls church. The quene with the kings mother, and manie ladies stood in a house without Bishopsgate nere to the Spittle, and sawe the king with his traine come toward the city: who rode through the citie to Pauls church, whereinto hee was receyued: *Te Deum* song for iole of his vidoye, and then lodged in the Bishops palace. On the morrow he went in procession, and hearde a sermon at Pauls crosse. On the next sundaye, the Quene with her Ladies and other Estates, came from Grænewich to the towber of London, where she was receyued by the king: and on the 25. of November she was crowned at Westminster with great solemnity. And shortly after king Henry beluered lord T. marquis Dorset out of the towber, receiving him againe to his former fauor, because his truth had bene throughly tried.

Christopher Viswike hauing passed from the French king to the Duke of Wyntaine, and backe againe to the French king, returned into England, and shewed vnto king Henry what he had done betwixt them.

Immediatlie after came the Lord Barnard Deaubeney a Scot borne, which in the French kinges behalfe requited king Henry to make some manner of end of those Wyntish wars, whatsoeuer it were. King Henry therefore sent ouer into France Iohn Abbot of Abingdon, Sir Richard Edgecombe knight, and the sayde Christopher Viswike, with commission to buye some agreement betwixt the Frenchmen and the Wyntons. These went first to the French king, and after to the Duke of Wyntaine, with whome they coulde doe no good, and so signified to the king the ir matter. Now in the meane time Edward lord Wooduile uncle to the Quene, iured to king Henry that he might haue a power of men appointed to him, with the which he woulde scale prouillie ouer with out licence or passport, so that every man should thinke that hee were beside the realme, without knowledge of the k. & although this request was outwardly denied, yet the L. Wooduile withdrew himselfe into the Isle of Wight, where as he was made ruler, he there gathered a crew of tall & hardy performages, to the

Quene Elizabeth crowned.

1488

Lord Wooduile altho the duke of Wyntaine.

the number of 400. & arrived in Wyntaine, where he iointed himself with the Wyntons against the Frenchmen. The French k. aduertised hereof, was not well pleased towards the k. of England, till k. H. by messengers recruited himself to be guiltles: & then he was pacified. And so the English ambassadors came to the league & amity betwixt 2. k. for 12. moneths, returned into England.

The king of England forthwith called his high court of Parliament, in the which it was not onely determined, that the duke of Wyntaine shoulde be aided with power of men, but also there were diuers sums of money granted to the furnishing forth of the same.

About the 27. day of July the duke of Wyntaines army gaue battell to the French host nere to a towne called St. Albain, hauing apparelled 1700. of the Wyntons in coates with redde crosses after the English fashyon, although they had but 400. English men with the lord Wooduile. The vidoye in this battell fell to the French, so that almost all the English men were slaine with the lord Wooduile, besides 6000. Wyntons. The Duke of Exceance, and the Prince of Orange were taken prisoners, which were there on the Wyntons part. The French men lost 1200. men, with their balliant Captaine an Italian, named James Galiot. The newes hereof being heard in England, caused king Henry to make haste in sending forth his army, and therefore was the lord Brooke with Sir John Cheynie, Sir John Midleton, Sir Raffe Hilton, Sir Richard Corbet, Sir Thomas Leighton, Sir Richard Laton, and Sir Edmond Cornewall, sent ouer into Britaine with all conuenient spæde, hauing with them 8000. men well appointed, and furnished in warlike sort to aide the duke of Wyntaine. These arrived in Wyntaine, and marched forward til they came nere to their enimies, where they pitched their field. But while this war was thus set forward, Francis duke of Wyntaine departed this life, and then the rulers of that contry falling at dissention amongst themselves, tended not the defence of their country, so that the Englishmen perceiving themselves to be danger, and being in the middell of winter, they returned into Englande within five monethes after their first setting forth, so that finally the French king gat the upper hande of the Wyntons, and did toyne that Dutchie to his Realme of France.

De haue heard holme there was in the last Parliament money granted for the furnishing forth of the armie into Wyntaine, to witte, that euery man shoulde bee taxed to paie the tenth penie of all landes and goods: which money the most of them that dwelled in the Bishopricke of Durhame, and in the parts of Norththrice refused bitterlie to paie, for that they thought themselves overcharged with the same. Wherefore such as were appoynted collectors, complained to Henry earle of Northumberland chiefe ruler of the north parts. The earle forthwith signified to the king all that matter, and the king not willing to pardon one penny, commanded the earle to disresse, or ether wise to leup the money, as he should thinke meetest. The rude people hearing of this answer from the king, by and by with great violence set vpon the earle, by the erecting of one named Iohn a Chamber, whome the earle with faire wordes sought to appease: but they alleaguing all the fault to bee in him, as chiefe Author of that

Parliament.

Lord Wooduile slaine.

An. reg. 4.

J. Skelton, 1489

Earle of Northumberland slain.

farre, furiously due him, and certaine of his household seruantes in a place called Cock lodge by Thurstle, eightene miles from Poike, on the 28. of Aprill. Then the northen men got them to armes, assembling together, chose them a capitaine called sir John Egremont knight: and passing by the countrey, they published that they would bid the king battell, onlie in defence of their liberties. The king sent forth Thomas earle of Surrey, whom not long before he had deliuered out of the Tower, with a crewe of men, to chasten those rebels of the North, who thirminshed with a company of them, whome they did consist, and toke sir I. a Chamber, the first beginner of this rebellion. Then the northen men came to the citie of Poike, where they remained 3. or 4. daies, vnto the time they heard of the comming of the king, and then they fled out of Poike, som one waie, som another: but diuers of them were taken and brought to the king, who caused them that were captaynes to be hanged and quartered. John a Chamber was hanged at Poike, vpon a gibbet set vpon a foure square paire of gallowes, and the other his complices were hanged on the gallowes round about him: but sir John Egremont fled into Flanders to Margaret duchesse of Burgundy. After this the king returned to London, leaving the earle of Surrey to rule the countrey of the north, and appointed sir Rich. Tunstall to gather the subsidy to him due of the people.

James the thirde king of Scots was slain by his rebellious subiects, after they had vanquished him in battell.

About the same time, Adrian an Italian was sent Ambassadoe from Pope Innocent the eight, into Scotland, there to haue taken by the variance betwixt the king and his people: But being arriued in England, he was informed that king James was slain, and therefore remained here certaine moneths, and for that he was a man of excellent learning and humanitie, and commended by John Morton Archbishop of Canturburie, the king made him first Bishop of Hereford, and shortly after, that being resigned, he was made bishop of Bath and Wells.

1490

This yere came ambassadoes from the French king, the Lozdes Francis of Luttenburge, Charles Marignane, and Robert Gagwine, to haue concluded a peace with king Henry, and that the French king might dispose of the young outches of Bytaine, as hee should thinke best: but thereto would not king Henry consent: notwithstanding at length it was agréde, that a forme of league should be drawn with conditions, whereupon the French ambassadoes being dismissed, Th. earle of Dymonde, and Thomas Goldston prior of Chills church in Canturbury were appoynted to follow into France for conclusion of the same league, but they returned without agréeing vpon any league at all.

Parliament at London.

King Henry determining no more with peaceable messages, but with open war to determine all controversies betwixt him and the French king, called a parliament, and therein declared that he was iustly prouoked to make war against the French men, and therefore desired them of their beneuolence of monie, and men toward the maintenance thereof. Certaine men allowed the cause to be iust, & promised his helping hand. The king commended them for their willing and faithfull hearts, And to the intent hee might spare the poorer

lost,

A beneuolence to king Henry.

lost, he thought good first to erase monie of the richest lost, by waie of beneuolence, which kind of leuying monie was first practised by king Edward the 4. king H. following his example, published that by their open gifts he would measure their beneuolent hearts: so that he who gaue most should be iudged to be his most louing friend; and he that gaue little to be esteemed according to his gift. By this meanes king Henry got innumerable great sums of money, with some grudge of the people, for the extremitie shewed by the commissioners in diuers places.

The citizens of London gaue toward this tournie 9682. pound, 17. s. and foure pence. Toward the which sum, manie Aldermen gaue 200. l. the peere, and some of the Commons 100. pounde: the rest was supplied by the poorer lost.

John Twicheat Lord Audley Treasurer of Englande deceased on the 26. of September, he left (sue James Audley married to Margaret, daughter to sir Ric. Darell knight. Which James Audley was beheaded on the twentieth eight of June, Anno 1497.

Henry the kings second sonne was bozne at Crénenwich in Kent on the 22. of June.

Maximilian king of Romans intending to be returned on the Frenchmen, for the manie iniuries done to him, because he was not rich enough to maintaine the warre of himselfe, he sent his ambassadoe James Contibald, a man of great wisedome, to require the king of England to take his part against the French king, making diuers great offers on his owne behalfe, if it would please him so to do.

K. Henry no lesse desirous than Maximilian to put the French king to trouble, and chieflie to aid the Brittons in the extremitie of their business, gladly consented to Maximilian, and promised to prepare an armie with all speed, and to passe the seas to invade the French territories.

The 6. of Aprill the nobles of the realme, Hugh Clopton Mayor of London, his brethren the Aldermen, Sheriftes, and Companies of the Citie in their lieries, assembled in the Cathedral Church of S. Paul, where Doctor Morton Archbishop of Canturburie, Chancellor of England, made to them an oration, declaring how the king of Spaine had won the greates and rich Citie and countrey of Granada from the Moyses: for tole whereof, Te Deum was sung with great solemnitie.

In the moneth of Maye following, was holden a great and valliant iustling within the Kinges Spannoe of Shyne, now called Richmond, in Southwiche, the which endured by the space of a moneth, sometime within the sayde place, and sometime without, vpon the Gréne without the Gate of the said Spannoe. In the which space, a Combate was holden and done betwixt Syr James Parker knight, and Hugh Vaughan Gentleman of War, vpon controuersie for the Armes that Garar gaue to the sayde Hugh Vaughan: but hee was there allowed by the king to beare them, and Syr James Parker was slayne at the first course. The cause of his death was thought to be long of a false helmet, which by force of a Cronacle sayled, & so he was stricken into the mouth, that

1491

An. reg. 7.

1492

The citie of Granada won from the Moyses.

Justing at Shyne.

A combat at Shyne.

his tongue was boyned into the hinder part of the head, and so he died incontinently.

In this season, Charles the French king received the lady Anne of Brittain, and with great solemnitie wedded her, having with her in dotage the dutche of Britaine. Thus was Maximilian in a great chafe toward the French king: wherefore he sent unto king Henrie, desiring him with all speede to passe the seas with his armie, that they might pursue the warre against their adversaries with fire, sword, and blood. King Henry hearing this, and having no mistrust in the promise of Maximilian, with all speede leuied an army, and rigged his name: and when all things were ready, he sent his Almoner Christopher Vriwike, and Sir John Rifeley knight, unto Maximilian, to certifie him that the king was in a readinesse, and would arrive at Calais, as soon as he should be advertised, that Maximilian and his men were ready to joine with him.

These ambassadors coming into Flanders, perceived that Maximilian was neither purvided of men, money, armour, or any other thing necessary for the setting forth of war, save onely that his will was good, but his power was small.

*Ann. reg. 8.*

King Henrie being advertised hereof, was sore disquieted in his minde: but taking counsaile, at length hee determined not to staie his pretended journey, and therefore he so increased his number before he toke shippe, that hee with his owne power might bee able to match with his adversaries.

King Henry  
sailed into  
France.

Then on the 9. of September, king Henry departed from Exentwich toward the sea-side, and on the first of October toke shipping at Sandwich, and the same daie landed at Calais with a great armie. The 15. of October he departed toward Boloigne, the first night he lay at Sandingfield, the next night at Hoxgillon, where he met with the Earle of Arfoide chiefe Captaine of the fore-warde, then come from the beating downe of the Towne of Arde: with the earle of Arfoide came the earle of Shrobsburie, the earle of Devonshire, the earle of Suffolke, the earle of Essex, the lord Grey Codner, the L. Strange, the lord Powelle, the lord Hastings, the lord Audley, the lord Laumer, the baron of Dndley, and divers knights and esquires: these laie that night at Hoxgillon, the next night both the wardes lay at Willinell, and the next night they came before Boloigne, and there laie at siege till the eight of November, at the which time the lord Cordos chiefe Captaine under the French king, in his masters name required peace, which king Henry granted upon conditions. This peace greatly displeased the English men, because they were ready pressed to haue set on their enemies, and brought into great hope to haue bene enriched by the spoile to haue fallen to their lots of their enemies goods, besides the glorious fame of renowned victorie: and namelie for that diuers of the Captaines, to set themselves and their handes the more gorgeouslie forward, had borrowed large summes of money, and for the repayment had mortgaged their landes, &c. The king returned to Calais: there were not manie of the English armie left at this siege of Boloigne, and few men of name

more

more then that ballant captaine Sir John Sauage knight.

King Henry arrived at Dover on the seventeenth of December, from whence he rode to Westminster, where he kept his Christmasse with great solemnitie.

1493

John sprang there by a newe found son to king Edward the fourth in this manner. The Dutchesse of Burgoigne espousing a certaine young man, of his sage beautifull, of countenance demure, of wit subtil, called Perken Werbecke, this young man trauiailing manie Countreies, could speake English, *Perken Werbecke* and diuers other languages: the Dutchesse glad to haue got to meete an instrument for her purpose, as one not unlike to be taken, and reported for the Duke of Yorke, sonne to her brother king Edward, which was called Richard, kept him a certaine space with her priuile, and him with such diligence instructed, both of the secrets, and common affaires of the Realme of England, and of the linage, descent, and order of the house of Yorke, that like a good scholar, he could tell all that was taught him without any staggering or staie in his wordes: and besides that he kept such a princely countenance, that all men in maner did firmly beleue, that he was extracted of that noble familie of the Duke of Yorke: when the Dutchesse sawe her time, she sent this Perken first into Doringale, and so into Ireland, where shortly after his arrivall, he entred so faire in credite with the people, that his wordes were taken to be true.

The French king advertised hereof, sent into Ireland for Perken, who with all diligence sailed into France, and coming to the kings presence, was of him royally receiued, and had a gard assigned, whereof was gouernor the lord Congreshall, and to him being at Paris, resorted Sir George Nevill baron, Sir Iohn Taylor, Rowland Robinson, and a hundred English men: but after that the peace was confirmed betwixt the two kings of England and of France, the French king dismissed Perken.

And so Perken returned to the ladie Margaret, who assigned him a garde, and called him the white Rose of England, the nobility of Flanders did to him all reuerence.

In England the hute of him sore disquieted the people, inasmuch that not onlie of the meaner sort, but also of the Nobles beleued all that was of him reported, and manie passed ouer to him: and some of the Noble men conspired together, purposing to ayde the foresaide Perken. Wherefore they sent messengers to the Ladie Margaret, to knowe when Richard Duke of Yorke might come into England, to the intente they might bee in a readinesse to assist him, at his arrivall. Sir Robert Clifford knight, and William Barley were sent into Flanders, which discovered to the Dutchesse all the secret intent of the friends of the newe founde Duke. The Dutchesse glablie receiued this message, and brought the messenger to the sight of Perken: who so well counterfeited the gesture, and manner of Richard Duke of Yorke, that Sir Robert Clifford beleued that he was the second sonne of king Edward, and thereof wrote into England to his complices.

*Ann. reg. 9.*

The

King Henry  
besieged Bo-  
logne.

1494  
The coaste kept  
against Perken  
Werbeke.

The king perceiuing that this fable was not vanquished, sent certaine knights with competent bandes of souldiours to keepe the sea coastes: he also sent into the Lowe countries certaine persons to learne the trueth of this forged Dukes progenie: where some of them comming to Dozney got knowledge that he was borne in that citie of base linage, and named Perken Werbeke. The king being aduertised hereof, sent sir Edward Poynings knight, and sir W. Warham doctor of the lawes vnto Philip archduke of Burgoyne, to signifye to him that the yong man being with the lady Margaret, had falsely surped the name of Richard Duke of Yorke, long before murdered. The ambassadores hauing done their message, were answered, that to haue the king of Englands loue, the archduke would neither aid or assist Perken, nor his complices, in any cause or quarrell.

After the returne of the ambassadores, the king sent certaine espials into flanders, which should faine the selues to haue fled to the duke of Yorke, and thereby to search out the whole intent of the conspiracie.

Other were sent to intise sir Robert Clifford and William Barley to returne into Englande, promising to them pardon of all their offences, and high rewards, for obeying the kings request. They that were sent did so earnestly applye their busines, that they brought to passe all thinges at their owne desires, for they learned who were the chiefe conspiratours, and perswaded sir Robert Clifford to giue ouer that enterpryse. When the king had knowledge of the chiefe Captaynes of the conspiracie, hee caused them to be apprehended. The chiefe were, Iohn Ratcliffe, Lorde Fitzwaller, Sir Simon Mountforde, Sir Thomas Twares knights, William Dawbeney, Robert Ratcliffe, Thomas Chreslenor, and Thomas Aftewode: Simon Mountforde, Robert Ratcliffe, and William Dawbeney were beheaded, the other had their pardons, the Lorde Fitzwaller was conueied to Calais and layde in hoale, and after lost his head.

King Henry taking displeasure with the king of Romaines, for that he had not kept touch with him against the french king, and partly displeased with the Flemmings, but speciallie with the Ladie Margaret, for keeping and setting forward Perken Werbeke, not onlie banished the Flemmings wares and merchandize out of his dominions, but also restrained all English merchants from their repaire and traffike, into any of the lands and territories of the king of Romaines, or of the archduke Philip son to the king of Romaines, causing the pparte to be kept at Calais, of all English merchandizes and commodities: wherefore the said king and his son banished out of their lands and signories, all English clothes, pearne, tynne, leade, and other commodities of this Realme.

Henry the kings second son was created duke of Yorke, on Alsholme Counten, at which time were made knights the duke of Yorke, the Lorde Harington, Lorde Clifton, Lorde Dacre of the South, Lorde Waren, Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir I. Arundell, Sir Walter Griffith, Sir Geruyes Clifton, Sir Robert Hartcourt, Sir Edward Traforde, Sir Henry Merney, Sir Robert Newbrough, Sir Ralph Ryder, Sir I. Sparke, Sir Humfrey Fullorde, Sir Robert Linton,

Sir

Sir Pierce Edgecombe, Sir Robert Clerc, Sir Thomas Farfax, Sir Richard Knightley, Sir I. Cheke.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, where on the twelue day hee made Ralph Aultry Mayor of London, and William Marston late Mayor, knights.

The morrowe after the Epiphantie, King Henry went to the Towert of London, and there remained till such time, as Sir Robert Clifford was presented, which was done so; a policie, that if Sir Robert accused anye of the nobilitie, they mought be called thither, without suspicion of anye enill, and there attached, and laid fast: now at the comming of Sir Robert Clifford to the kinges presence, he besought him of pardon, and obtained it, and the with opened the manner of the conspiracie, and who were the ayders, fautors, and chiefe beginners of it. Amongst whome he accused sir William Stanley, whome the king had made his chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of his priuate Councell: but now the king caused him to be restrained from his libertie in his owne Chamber, within the Square Tower, and there appointed him by his priuate Councell to be examined, where he himselfe agreed to all thinges layde to his charge, if hee were therein faultie & culpable. The report is, that this was his offence, when communication was had betwene him and the formentioned Sir Robert Clifford, as concerning Perken, Sir William Stanley saide, that if hee certainelie knewe that the yong man was the vndoubted sonne and heire of king Edward the fourth, hee woulde neuer fight nor beare armour against him, wherefore he was charged that he bare no heartie good will toward king Henry. The king hauing thus an hole in his coat, doubted first what he should do with him, for loath he was to lose the fauor of his brother the earle of Darby: but arraigned he was at Westminster and aduinged to die, according to which sentence, he was brought to the Towert hill on the sixteenth daie of February, and there beheaded. This Sir William Stanley was the chiefe and principall helper of King Henry to the Crowne at Bolsworth fieldes, against King Richard: Hee was a man of great power in his Countrey, and also of greates wealth, in so much, as the common fame ran, there was in his castle of Holste, found in ready coine and plate, to the value of foure thousand markes or more, and his land and ses extended to thre thousand pounds by yeare.

The 22. of February were arraigned in Guildhall at London foure persons, to witte, Thomas Bagnall, Iohn Scot, Iohn Heche, and Iohn Kenington, the which were Sanctuary men of Saint Martin le grand in London, and lately before taken thence, for forging seditious libels, to the slander of the king, and some of his Councell: for the which thre of them were aduinged to die, and the fourth named Bagnall, pleaded to be released to Sanctuary: by reason whereof he was replined to the Towert till the next terme, and on the 26. of February, the other thre with a Flemming, and Robert Bikle a peoman of the Crowne, were all thre executed at Tyborne.

Giles Lorde Dawbeney was made the kings chiefe Chamberlaine. The king sent into Irelande, Sir Henry Deane, late abbot of Lanthontie, whome

a. b. forged in  
the Towert.

An. reg. 10.  
Flemmish mer-  
chants with  
their wares ban-  
nished this land

Sir W. Stan-  
ley beheaded.

Sanctuary men  
executed.



whome he made Chancelor of that Ile, and Sir Edward Poinings knight, with an armie of men, whereof when the fauours of Perken heard, they straight fled to the woods and marshes. Sir Edward Poinings with his whole armie marched against the wild Irish, because the other being culpable were fled to them for succour: but when hee sawe himselfe and his power, not able to followe his enemies in the woods, marshes and mountaines, he was constrained to recule backe, soe obliquely agaynst Gerald Earle of Exyloure, being then the Kinges Deputie, whome hee suspected to bee the cause that hee hadde no succours sent him, and therefore sodaynelie hee caused the Earle to bee apprehended, and as a Prisoner brought him into Englande, which Earle so cleared himselfe of all thinges sayde to his charge, that he was dismissed and sent into Ireland agayne, there to bee deputie and Lieutenant as before.

King Henrie beinge nowe in some better successe of his Estate, tooke his progresse into Lancashire about the five and twentieth of June, there to bee merrie with his spouster the Countesse of Darbie, which then lye at Lancaster.

Sir W. Caple  
put in lute.

Sir William Caple Alderman of London, was called in question, and condemned to the king, in twentie seven hundred, and fortie three pennes sterling, for the breach of certayne statutes made before times: for the which he made his end with the king for 16. hundred and 15. pounds, five shillings, eight pence, which he paid.

Perken Werbeke  
here arrived in Kent.

Perken Werbeke being in Flanders, and hoping at length to obtayne the Crowne of England, gathered a power of all nations, some banqueroutes, some thieves, and such as desired to live by rapine, and being thus furnished, he tooke such shippes as his friends had provided for him, and then departing from Flanders, arrived at Deale in Kent, on the third of Julie: he put som of his men to lande, to signifie his arrivall with such a power, that the vidoy must needs incline to his part. The Gentilmen understanding that Perken had none with him to account of, but straungers borne, and bale people, like faithfull laboies determined to fall upon those that were thus nowe come to Lande, and also to trye if they might allure the whole number out of their shippes, so to give them Battayle. But Perken would not sette one foot out of his Shippe, till he sawe all thinges sure: yet he permitted some of his souldiours to go on lande, which beinge trained forth a prettie waile from their shippes, and seeing they coulde have no comfort of the Countrey, they withdrew againe to their shippes: at which withdrawing, the Galloes of Sandwich, with certayne commons of the Countrey bickered with the residue that were upon lande, and tooke allue of them 169. persons, among the which were five Captaines, Mountfort, Corbet, White Belt, Quincyn, and Greame. And on the twelfth of Julie Sir John Pechy Sheriffe of Kent, brought unto London Widge those 169. persons, where the Sheriffes of London, Nicholas Alwine and John Warner received and committed them, rased in robes like horses in a cart, unto the tower of London, and to Newgate, and whollie after to the number of 150. were hanged about the sea coasts in Kent, Essex,

An. reg. 11.

Suffes,

Suffes, and Southfolke: the residue were executed at Exborne and at Wapping in the Whose besides London: and Perken fled into Flanders.

In this season deceased Cicilie Countesse of Poike, mother to King Edward the fourth, in her castle of Warhamstead, and was buried at Fordinghay by her husband.

King Henry being in his progresse north, sent Sir Richard Gullford to command the fidelitie and manhood of the Gentilmen, and also to render to them most partie thanks for the same: he also caused order to be taken for the erecting of bikenings or beacons, and watching of them.

Perken Werbeke sailed into Ireland, trusting there to augment his number: but perceiuing that the hope of vidoye consisted not in naked people without furniture or armor, he toke the sea againe at Cose, and sailed into Scotland, where comming to the presence of King James, hee forged such a painted processe, that the king of Scots began to haue Perken in great honor, and caused him to be called Duke of Poike, and to persuade the world that he was to inuade, he caused the lady Katherine daughter to Alexander Earle of Huntley, his nigh kinsman to be espoused to him.

And shortly after in companie of this Perken, he entered into Englande with a puissant armie, and caused proclamation to be made to spare all those that would submit themselves unto Richard Duke of Poike, and here-with they began to war in most cruell maner, with slaughter of men, burning of townes, and committing detestable enormities, so that all the Countrey of Southumberland, was by them in maner wasted and destroyed. At length when the souldiers were laden with pray, perceiuing that no succour came out of England unto the new Duke, they withdrew backe into Scotlande, enriched with prayes and booties.

When King Henrie was truely certified that the Scottish King was returned home, he caused all the preparations made at that time to goe against him: but yet meaning to be reuenged of the wrongs done to him by King James and his people, hee first called a Parliament, and in that assemblie declared the cause of the instant warre, and how necessarie it should be for to haue the warre pursued against those enemies that had begunne it: to which motion all the Nobilitie wholie agreed, and a subsidie was granted.

Jasper Duke of Bedford Uncle to King Henrie the seventh, deceased on the 18. of December, and was buried in the abbey of Westminster in Gloucestershire.

Jasper Duke  
of Bedford  
deceased.

King Henry prepared a mightie armie to inuade Scotland, and ordeined for chiefeaine, the lord Dawbeney: but as this armie was forward towarde Scotlande, the same was stayed and called backe againe, by reason of a new commotion begun by the Cornishmen, for the payment of the subsidie granted at the last Parliament. Of these people the heade were called Thomas Flamoke, a Gentleman learned in the lawe, and Michael Ioseph a blacke smith, or boyse-farrier of Boomin, men of stout stomackes. They layde the fault of this exaction unto John Morton archbishop of Canterbury, and to Sir

Ggg

Reginald

Beacons set by  
and watched.

1496  
Perken Werbeke  
went into  
Ireland.

Perken spoyleth  
in Northumberland.

Ann. reg. 12.

A parliament  
and a subsidie.

1497

A commotion  
by the cornishmen  
of Cornwall.

Reginald Bray, because they were chiefe of the kinges Council. Flamoke and Ioseph exhorted the common people to put on harness, and to followe them in the quarrell, promising not to hurt anie creature, but onelie to see them punished that procured such exactions to be layde on the people, without anie reasonable cause: so these capitaines assembled a great number of people together, then passing their hardines, when all thinges were ready for their journey, set forthward with their armie, and came to Elington, where they slew the possesse of Martin, which was one of the commissioners of the subsidie, and from thence came to Welles, so intending to go to London, where the king then sojourned. When the king was aduertised of these doings, he was somewhat astonished, he reuoked the lord Daubeney which was going against the Scots, and increased his army. The nobles came to London with as manie men of war as they could put in a readines, to aide the king against his rebelles, if none should be. In the mean time James Twicheat L. Audley, being confederat with the rebels of Cornwall, joined with them, being come to Welles, and took upon him, as their chiefe Captaine and leader: from Welles they went to Salisbury, and from thence to Winchester, & so into Kent, where they hoped to haue had great aid, but they were deceiued: for the earle of Kent, George L. Burgesweny, John Brooke, L. Cobham, sir Edward Poinings, sir Ric. Guilford, sir T. Bourchier, John Peche, William Scot, and a great number of people were ready to defend the countrey, which thing maruellouslie dismayed the Cornish men, so that manie of them fled from their companie. The Capitaines brought their people to black heath, and there ordered their battels, either ready to fight with the king, if he would assaile them, or else to assault the citie of London. The king sent John Earle of Arfordre, Henry Bouchier earle of Essex, Edmonde de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, Sir Rife ap Thomas, and Sir Humfrey Stanley, noble warriors, with a great companie of Archers, and horsemen, to inuiron the hill on either side, to the intent that all by-ways being stopped, all hope of flight should be taken from them: and incontinentlie, hee himselfe being furnished with a grate armie, sette forthward out of the Citie, encamped himselfe in Saint Georges felde, where he lodged that night, and on the next morning sent the Lord Daubeney with a great company to set upon them earlie in the morning, which first gat the bridge of Warrford strait, while the earles set on them on euery side, the lord Daubeney came into the field with his companie, and without long fighting, on the 22. of Iune, the Cornish men were ouercome: but first they took the Lord Daubeney prisoner, but let him go at libertie, without hurt or detriment. There were slain of the rebels about thre hundred, and taken of them about fiftene hundred. There was giuen to them that took them their goods: amongst them the blacke Smith and other their Capitaynes were put to death. And when this battaile was ended, the king wanted of all his number but thre hundred men, which were slayne.

The Lord Audley was drawn from Pelagate to the Tower-hill in a coat of his own armes, painted upon paper, reuerfed and all to towe, and there was beheaded on the 28. of Iune. Flamoke and Ioseph the black-Smith were drawn, beheaded,

Blacke-heath  
Hills.

beheaded, and quartered at Tybourn, and their heads and quarters set up at London and other places: knights and bannerets made at Black-heath, and at London bridge foot, when the king returned from Black-heath, as I haue set down in my larger chronicle.

In the moneth of July L. Henry sent an army into Scotland, under the guidance of the earle of Surrey, and the lord Neuill, which made sharp war upon the Scots: but by the labor of Peter Helias sent from the king of Spaine, a truce was concluded betwixt the two kings of England and of Scotland, with condition that James King of Scots should conuery Perken Werbecke out of his realme and signories.

About the same time king Henry receiued the ambassadoys that were sent to him from the French king. Also the Lord of Camphere, and other orators of Philip Archduke of Austrich, and Duke of Burgoyne, came to him for the conclusion of amitie, and to haue the English Merchantes to resort againe into their Countrey, which request he granted. And so did the English men resort againe into the Archdukes dominions, and were receiued (saith Hall) into Andwerpe with Generall procession, so glad was that towne of their returne.

Perken Werbeck being willed by the king of Scots to depart out of the Scottish dominions, sailed with his wife and familie into Ireland, where while hee remained hee had knowledge from the Cornishmen, that they were ready to renew the war againe. Whereupon he hauing with him some small ships, and not about an hundred and twentie men, sailed into Cornewall, and there landed at Whitefane Bate on the 7. of September, from whence he went to Bodmynne, where hee gathered to him about thre thousand persons. When Perken made Proclamations in name of King Richard the fourth, as son to king Edward the fourth. And by the aduise of his thre Counselliers, John Heron Spencer, a Banquerout, Richard Skelton Tapler, and John Askeley Scriener, determined first of all to assaile the winning of Excester, and so hastning thither, he laid siege to it: The citizens perceiving themselves to be in danger, let certaine messengers downe by ropes ouer the wall, that might certifie the king: And herewith caused saggots to be brought and laid to the inward part of their gates, and set them all on fire, to the intent to keepe their enemies from entering in, and their Citizens from flying out, and that they in the meane season might make trenches & rampers to defend their enemies in stead of gates. Perken set by Ladders to scale the walles: but the Citizens, with helpe of such as were come forth of the countrey to their aid, so valiantly defended the walles, that they slew about 200. of Perkenes souldiours at that assault. The king hastned forth with his Hoste, and sent the Lord Daubeney with certaine bands of Light horsemen to aduertise all men of his coming.

But in the meane season Edward Courtney earle of Denonshire, and William his sonne, accompanied with sir Edmond Carew, sir T. Trinchard, sir William Courtney, sir Tho. Fulford, sir I. Haliwell, sir I. Crokar, Walter Courtney, Peter Edgecombe, W. Snaure, came into the citie of Excester to helpe the citizens,

Ann. reg. 13.  
The earle of  
Surrey went  
into Scotland  
with a great  
power.

Ambassadors  
for an amitie  
with the Duke of  
Burgundy.

Perken Werbecke  
landed in  
Cornwall.

The city of Ex-  
cester besieged.

so that the earle was hurt in the arme with an arrow, and so were many of his men, but selve saine. When Perken sawe he could not winne the cite of Excester, he went from thence to Taunton, and there mustering his men, he perceived them to be diminished, he began to mistrust the remnant: in dede when the people that followed him in hope that no small number of the nobilitie would ioyne with him, sawe no such matter come to passe, they sale awaie from him. When the king heard that Perken was gone to Taunton, he followed after him with all speede, and by the way there came to him Edward Duke of Buckingham, and a great companie of noble men. But as some as Perken was informed that the king was at hand, he with a 60. horsemen fled from Taunton to a sanduary at Wetwoley be the Southamptons. King Henry sent the lord Dawbeney with 500. horsemen after Perken to apprehend him, so that many of his captaynes were taken. Also diuers horsemen rode to Saint Michaels mount, and there toke the lady Gorden wife to Perken, and brought her to the king. At whose beauty and amiable countenance the king much marvelled, and sent her to London to the Queene. The common people submitted themselves to the kings mercie.

After this the king rode to Excester, and there executed diuers Cornishmen: he also caused the sanduary wherein Perken was inclosed, to be insurround with bands of light horsemen, to watch that Perken shoulde not escape, wherefore Perken upon promise of pardon committed himselfe to the king, and then the king returned to London.

The 28. of Nouember, Perken was conceied on horseback through cheape, and Cornhill vnto the Tower of London, & from thence back againe through Candle weke strate to Westminster.

The 2. of December at 9. of the clocke at night, sodainly began a great fier within the kings lodging, then being at his manor of Sythe, which fier continued till midnight, by violence whereof much and a great part of the old buildings of that place was bzent, with hangings, beds, apparell, plate, and manie iewels.

Perken Werbecke endeavouring to feale secretly out of the land, was taken againe by his keepers, and by the kings commandement cast into the tower of London, and after he was shewed in Westminster, and Cheape, stocked on scaffolds to the great wonderment of many people: where he read his confession written with his owne hand.

His yere all the gardens which had bene continued time out of minde without anye gate of London, were destroyed, and of them was made a plaine fiede for archers to shote in. The English merchants were receiued into Antwerpe with generall procession, after they had ben long absent from thence.

This yere was a great drought, by reason whereof, a load of hay which was before time sold at London for five shillings, was this yere sold for ten shillings or twelue shillings more.

This yere one Sebastian Gabato a Genoas sonne, bozne in Bisslow, professed himselfe to be expert in knowledge of the circuit of the world and Ilands

Perken brought  
to London.

The kings man-  
or of Sythe  
bzent.

1498

An. reg. 14

Inclosures a-  
bout London  
pulled downe.

Dyle summer.

Sebastian Ga-  
bato his voyage

of the same, as by his Charts & other reasonable demonstrations he shewed, caused the king to man & victual a ship at Bisslow to search for an Iland, which he knew to be replenished with rich commodities: in the ship diuers merchants of London adventured smal stocks, and in the companie of this ship, sailed also out of Bisslow 3. or 4. small ships fraught with deight and grosse wares, as coarse cloth, caps, laces, points, and such other. Sir Humfrey Gilbert knight, in his booke intituled, A discovery for a new passage to Cathay, toucheth thus: Sebastian Gabato, by his personall experience and trauell, hath set forth and described this passage in his Charts, which are yet to be seene in the Duannes spaciellies piloy gallerie at White hall, who was sent to make this discouerie by H. Henry the 7. and entred the same fret, affirming, that he sailed very far westward, with a quarter of the north, on the north side of Terra de Labrador, the 11. of Iune, vntill he came to the septentrional latitude of 67 ½ degrees, and finding the seas still open, said, that he might and would haue gon to Cathay, if the enimity of the master and mariners had not bene.

The 24. of Februarie, the kings thirde sonne was christened within the Friers church at Greenwiche, by the name of Edward.

A Shoemakers son bozne in Bishops gate strate of London, was hanged at Saint Thomas Waterings on Shrovetuesday, for naming himselfe to bee Edward earle of Marwarke, son to George duke of Clarence: which Edward earle of Marwarke was then (and had bene all the raigne of this king) kept secret prisoner in the tower of London.

The Calcoine wine was sold at London for fortie shillings the tunne, and much left to the shipmen for freight, the plenty was so great. A quarter of wheate foure shillings, and bay salt foure pence the bushell.

Perken Werbecke being in hold, by great promises corrupted his keepers, named Strangwaie, Blewet, Aftwood, and long Roger, servants to sir John Digby lieutenant of the tower (as was affirmed) intended to haue slaine their master, and to haue set Perken and the earle of Marwarke at large: which earle of Marwarke had bene kept in prison within the tower (as we haue heard) from the first yere of this king to this 15. yere, out of all companie of men and sight of beasts, and therefore could not of himselfe seeke his owne destruction, but by the drift of other he was brought to his death, for being made priuie of this enterpryse deuised by Perken and his complices, he assented thereunto: but this deuise being reuealed, Perken and John a Waters, sometime maior of Coyke in Ireland, were arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and on the 23. of Nouember dyed one to Liboyne, where Perken read his former confession, as before he had done in Cheape, taking on his death the same to be true, and so he and John a Water asked the king forgiveness, and toke their deaths patientlie.

Also Edward Plantagenet the forenamed earle of Marwarke, son to George duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, being about the age of foure and twentie yeres, on the one and twentieth of Nouember was arraigned at Westminster, before the earle of Oxford then high Steward of England, of treason, in minding to haue escaped (as they saide) and he was perswaded

Edg 3.

Humfr. Gilbert.

1499

A Shoemakers  
sonne hanged to  
bee the earle of  
Marwarke.

An. reg. 15  
Calcoine, salt, and  
wheate cheape.

Perken Wer-  
becke executed.

Earle of Mar-  
warke beheaded.

to

to confesse, which hee did, and submitted himselfe to the R. merce: upon which confession he had iudgement, and was erected on a scaffold on the tower hill, but buried at Wigham by his ancestors: and shortly after, Walter Blewett and Thomas Astwood were hanged at Tyborne.

This yere was a great plague of pestilence, whereof men died very soze in many places, especiallie in and about London, where died in that whole yere (as it was thought) about the number of 30000 people.

King Henry whether it were to avoid the danger of the sickness then reigning, or to take occasion to commune with the duke of Burgonie, he with Quene Elizabeth his wife sailed over, and landed at Calais on the 8. of May, with him was the duke of Buckingham, the earles of Surrey and of Essex, the Lorde Dawbency Lieutenant of the Tower and Marches of Calais, and others in great number, where they met with the duke of Burgonie, and returned in the moneth of June.

Edward the kings third son died this yere at Bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, and was buried at Westminster.

Also on the morrow after the Ascension day deceased Th. Rotherham Archbishop of York, at his manor of Calwood, at the age of lxxvi. yeres or more, and was buried in the minster of S. Peter at York in a tombe of marble. This Rotherham, other wise called Scot, a man of great wille dome was brought up in Rotherham, after ward a fellow of kings college in Cambridge, then Chaplaine to king Edward the 4. and keeper of the pialie scale, first preferred by the king to the see of Rochester, then translated to Lincoln, where he sat 9. yeres, at length made lord chancellor of England, which office he enjoyed till the kings death: before the which time he was preferred to the see of York: he erected a Colledge at Rotherham in Yorkeshire, dedicated to the name of Iesu, for a prouost to be a preacher in the Diocesse of York, six chancellors, six choristers, three scholermasters, one for song, one for grammar, and one for writing, hee gaue a rich spiter to the church of York (for king Edward the 4. had broken the old) he caused manie great buildings to be made in his manors, as the great kitchen at White-hall by Westminster. At Southwell, the pantry and Bakehouse, and new chambers adjoining to the river. At Bishops Eborace, the pantry, bakehouse, and chambers on the north side toward the towne: he was archb.

Colledge at Rotherham founded.

An. reg. 16. John Alcocke bishop of Ely deceased.

Baynton archbishop of Canturbury deceased.

An. reg. 16. yeres 9. monethes, &c. The bishop of Norwich Tho. Ian. and John Alcocke, bishop of Ely deceased. This John Alcocke did conuert the monastery of S. Radigond in Cambridge, then destitute of gouernment, the ediffices fallen in ruine, and the nuns departing thence, leauing it desolate, into a colledge of Chaplaines and Schoollers in anno Christi 1446. redified all his manors with new buildings from the foundations, he builded a new hal to his palace at Ely, with other faire buildings there. Also in the moneth of October deceased John Morton Archbishop of Canturburie at his manor of Kinole: this Morton had in Berry besides Blenford in the county of Woxset, doctor of lawes, advocate of the archbishop, parson of S. Dunstons in the east of London, bishop of Ely, who passed by the Isle of Ely into Flanders, where he continued a student, till the fall of Ric. the 3. after which time he was called home to his bishopricke,

ricke, and made chancellor of England, and within 3. yeres after archbishop of Canturbury, in the yere 1486. in the moneth of September: this Morton late chancellor and archbishop 13. yeres, and was buried vnder the quier at Canturbury, he repaired and builded a great part of his place at Lambeth, he did the like at Spaldison, at Allington parke, at Charing, at fford, and also at his palace at Canturburie.

Thomas Langton bishop of Winchester deceased, & was buried at Winchester: he gaue to Denbyoke hall in Cambridge, a cup of siluer ouer gilt, which I haue seene, with this inscription: Thomas Langton Winton. episcopus, aule Penbrochia olim socius, dedit hanc cassiam cooperiam eidem aule 1497. qui alienauit anathema sit, 67. ounces. Richard Fox sometime Bishop of Excester, after of Durham, was translated to Winchester. Henry Deane sometime Bishop of Lanthonie, then Bishop of Salisburie, was now translated to the archbishopricke of Canturbury. Richard Redman succeeded in the bishopricke of Ely, and Ric. Nien in the bishopricke of Norwich: Th. Saunge first bishop of Rochester then of London, was now translated to the see of York.

The lord Denham treasurer of Englnd deceased, and on the 30. of Janu- L. Denham de-  
arie was buried in the Grey-friars church at London, on the south side of the ceased.  
quire.

This yere when the R. had finished much of his new building at his manor of Whitehall, & again furnished and repaired that before was perished with fier, in the 13. yere of his raigne, forasmuch as in the time of that hideous fire, many notable and rich feluels, and other things of superabundant value, were perished, by the violence thereof, it pleased him to command it should be called his manor of Richmond, and not other wise. The king also this yere builded anew Batmards castle in London, and repaired his manor of Greenwich.

In the moneth of May the R. kept a rolaist turney and iusts in the tower of London, of his lords, knights, and other.

About this time Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke, son to John Duke of Suffolke, and Labie Elizabeth sister to king Edward the fourth, was indicted of murder, for slaying a meane person in his rage and furie (as it was saide) and he was perfwaded to confesse, but was pardoned by the king, yet because he was brought to the bar afore the kings bench, and arraigned (which he took as a great blemish to his honor) shortly after he fled into Flanders, unto the lady Margaret his suut. After twelues (saith Hal) he returned again, and excused himselfe to the king, so that he was thought to be guiltles of any crime. But after this earle, with his brother Richard fled againe into Flanders. Which departure of the Earle soze vbered the king, who doubted of some new trouble to ensue thereof.

In this meane time the lady Katherin of Spaine was sent by her father R. Ferdinand, with a puissant nauy of ships into England, where she arrived in the haven of Plimmouth, the 2. of October.

The 9. of Nouember prince Arthur with a goodlie companie came through Fleetstreet of London to S. Pauls, and so to the wardrobe by the Black friers, and there was lodged. And the same daie came the Lady Katherine of Arcinthe into

Langton bishop of Winchester.

1501 Richmond and Batmards castle new builded.

Justing in the tower of London.

Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke with his brother Richard fled into Flanders.

An. reg. 17.

Lady Katherin arrived in England.

unto Lambeth, where the with his ladies was lodged, in the archbishops Anne of Canturbury: and upon the Fridaye next following about two of the clock at afternone, the said ladie princes accompanied with many lordes and ladies, in most sumptuous manner apparrelled, came riding from Lambeth into Southwarke, and so to London bridge, where was ordeined a collie pageant of S. Katherine and Saint Virgile, with many virgins; from thence she rode to Grace Church, where was ordeined a second pageant, from thence to the conduit in Cornhill, where was another pageant. The great conduit in cheape ran with Salsorne wine, and was furnished with musick. Against Soperlane end was the fourth pageant. At the standerd in cheape was ordeined the first pageant. At Pauls gate was the 6. pageant: by the which the princeesse rode through Pauls church: past unto the bishop of Londons palace, where she and his people were lodged.

Now within the church of S. Paul, to wit, from the west gate of it unto the uppermost grasse or step at the going in of the quier, was made a pale of tin ber and boards to go upon, from the same west doore unto the foresaid grasse, of the height of 6 foot from the ground, or more; and forerancut the place where the commissaries court is kept within the said church, was ordeined a standing like unto a mountaine, with steps on every side, which was covered ouer with red tussled, and in like wise was all the railles: against which mountaine upon the north side, within the foresaide place of the commissaries court was ordeined a standing for the king, and such other as liked him to haue: & on the south side almost for against the kings standing was ordeined a scaffold, whereupon stood the spaw and his brethren.

Then upon the 14. of Nouember being Sundae, upon the aboue named mountaine, was prince Arthur about the age of 15. yeres, and the lady Katherine about the age of 18. yeres, both clad in white sattine, married by the Archbishop of Canturbury, assisted by 19. bishops and abbots mitred. And the B. the queene, the kings mother, stood in the place aforesaid, where they hearde and beheld the solemnisation, which being finished, the said archbishop and B. shops took their way from the mountaine, upon the same pale covered under foot with blew rep-cloth unto the quier, & so to the high altar, whom followed the spouse and spouses, the lady Cicile sister to the queene bearing his traine, after him followed 100. ladies & gentlewomen, in right costly apparel, then the spaw in a gowne of crimson velvet, and his brethren in scarlet, with the sword borne before the maior, & late in the quier the masse while, the archb. of York late in the beanes place, and offered as chiefe, and after him the D. of Buckingham, &c. Wonderful it was to behold the riches of apparel lincie that daie, with the possant chaines of gold: of which, two were specially noted, to wit, sir T. Brandon knight, master of the kings horse, which that day wore a chain valued at 1400. pound: and the other William de Riuers esquire, master of the B. hauberk, whose chain was valued at a thousand pound: many more were of 200. 300, and so forth, these were not noted for the length, but for the greatnesse of the links. Also the Duke of Buckingham wore a gowne bought of pedle woike, and set upon cloth of tinsie, furred with fables, the which gowne was

The pale in  
Pauls church.

Prince Arthur  
married.

Golden chaines  
of gold.

The Duke of  
Buckingham  
his gowne.

valued at 1500. l. & sir Nicholas Vause knight, wore a gown of purple velvet, pight with peeces of gold so thicke and masie, that it was valued in golde, besides the silke and fur, a thousand pound: which chaines and garments were valued by goldsmithes of best skill, and them that wrought them. The masse being finished, the princeesse was led by Henry duke of York, and a Legate of Spain, by the foresaide pace into the palace, going before her men of honor, to the number of 160. with gentlemen and other. There came unto the spaw: sir Richard Crofts steward of the princes house, which brought him and his brethren the aldermen into the greates hall, and at a table upon the west side of the hall, caused them to be set to dinner, where honorable were they served with 12. dishes to a messe at the first course, 15. the second course, and 18. dishes the third course. In this hall was a cupbord of fine staves height, being triangular, the which was set with plate valued 1200. l. the which was neuer mooued at that day: & in the utter chamber where the princeesse dined, was a cupbord of gold plate, garnished with stone and pearle, valued about 20000. pound. The Tuesday following, the king and queene being all this season at Rainards castle, came unto Bowles, and heard there masse, and then accompanied with many nobles, went into the palace, and there dined with the princeesse. This daie sir Nicholas Vause wore a collar of Gutes which weighed, as the goldsmithes that made it reported, 800. pounds of nobles: And the same daie at afternone, the said prince was conduced with many lordes and ladies unto Bowles wharffe, where the said estates took their barges, and were rowed to Westminster, upon whome the maior attended, with the Aldermen and fellowship in barges, garnished with banners and other deuises, musick, &c. Thus much for that marriage.

The 5. of January at Pauls crosse was declared the assurance of James B. of Scots, and of the lady Margaret eldest daughter to king Henry of England, in reioicing whereof *Te Deum* was sung, and bonifera made through the city, and at 12. of the bonifera were set 12. hogsheds of Salsorne wine, to be drunk of all men frelie.

There was apprehended Will. Courtenay son to the earle of Denonshyre, which had married the lady Katherine daughter to B. Ed. the 4. and William de la Pole brother to the earle of Suffolke, sir James Tyrell, sir John Windham, &c. when the earle of Suffolke before died (as ye haue heard) understood what wait was laid for him in Flanders, he wanted about Germany and France, to purchase succor, if by any meanes he might, but in the end, he submitted himselfe under the protection of Philip archduke of Aulrich, which was to his own destruction, as proued after.

When king Henry had settled things to his contentment and pleasure, there suddenly happened to him a lamentable chance, for in the beginning of the month of Aprill, there died that noble and vertuous prince Arthur the kings eldest sonne, under the age of 16. yeres, in his castle of Ludlowe, and with great funerals obsequie was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Worcester.

On the 2. of May were arraigned in Guildhall at London, sir James Tyrell knight, lieutenant of Guines castle, sir John Windham knight, Welborne

Cupbord of  
plate.

A masse chaine  
of gold worn by  
a knight.

1502  
James king of  
Scots assured  
to lady Margaret  
daughter to  
B. Henry the 7.

Prince Arthur  
deceased.

Sir James  
Tyrell and other  
arraigned.

seruant

seruant to the said sir James, and a ship man, foure persons were indicted of treason for aiding sir Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, they were condemned to be hanged, hanged and quartered.

On the 6. of Maie, sir James Tyrell, and sir John Windham were beheaded on the Tower hill, their bodies and heads were buried in the Augustine friers church of London, and the shipman was hanged at Tiborne.

This yere were brought unto the king thre men taken in the new found Islands by Sebastian Gabaso, before named, in anno 1498. these men were clothed in beastes skins, and ate raw fleshy, but spake such a language as no man could vnderstand them, of the which thre men, two of them were scene in the kings court at Westminster two yeres after, clothed like English men, and could not be discerned from Englishmen.

This yere the chappell of our Ladye, aboue the east end of the high altar of Westminster church, with also a tauern nere adioynning called the white rose, were taken downe: in the which place or plot of ground, on the 24. of January, the first stone of our Lady chappell was laid by the hands of Ioh. Ship abbot of the same monastery, sir Reginald Bray knight of the Carter, Doctor Barons master of the holes, doctor Wall chaplaine to the king, master Hugh Oldham chaplaine to the countesse of Derby and Richmond the kings mother, sir Ed. Stanhope knight, and diuers other. Upon the which stone was engrauen the day and yere, &c. The charges in building this chappell (as I haue bene informed) amounted to the summe of 14000. pounds. The same king Henry made a ship, named the great harric, which shippe with the furniture cost him as much.

King Henry and Quene Elizabeth lying tothin the tower of London, the quene was brought a bed of a faire daughter on Candlemas day, which was there christened by the name of Katherine: and on the 11. day of that moneth the said quene deceased, and was buried at Westminster, whose daughter liued not long after.

The 18. of february Henry duke of Poike the kings only son was created prince of Wales, earle of Chester, and of Flint at Westminster.

The 16. of february Henry Deane archbishop of Canterbury died at Lambeth, when he had late archbishop nigh two yeres, and was buried in Christs church at Canterburie: Wil. Warham Bishop of London was translated to Canterbury.

On the 25. of June at the bishop of Salisburies place in Fleetstreet, was the noble prince Henry, the 2. son of king Henry the 7. assured in matrimonie to the lady Katherine, late the wife of that excellent prince Arthur.

The 5. of August deceased sir Reginald Bray knight, treasurer of the kings wars, and was buried at Windsoze in the new chappell there, whereof he had ben a great builder.

The 8. of August James the fourth king of Scots married Margaret, the eldest daughter of king Henry the seventh at Edenborough.

A drye summer, hauing no notable raine from Whitsontide, to the latter lady day in parcell.

Rob. Fabian,  
Ann. reg. 18.  
Then brought  
out of the new  
found Islands.

1503  
King Henry the  
seuenths chappell at West-  
minster.

Quene Eliza-  
beth deceased.

Margaret the  
kings daughter  
married.

On the 4. of December deceased the lord Strange, eldest son to the earle of Derby at his place in London, beneath Paules chaine, now called Garter place, and was buried within the parish church of S. James at Carlisle-hithre.

The 25. of January began a parliament at Westminster, of the which was chosen speaker for the commons master Edmond Dudley.

A new coine was by parliament appointed, that is to say, groat and halfe groat, which bare but halfe faces: the same time also was coined a groat, which was in value 12. d. but of those were but few coined.

This yere allome, which many yeres before had bene sold for 6 s. an hundred, and lomer, arose to 5. nobles an hundred, and as to 4. markes, &c.

About Christmasse, the more part of the prisoners of the Parthalliey in Southwarke brake out, and manie of them being shortly after taken, were put to execution, specially those which had laine for felony or treason: among the which, two of them being sea rousers were hanged on a tree in the Thames, a little from Whapping in the Weste, and hung there long after.

This yere on S. Georges euen or 21. of April, king Henry with an honorable companie of knights of the order of the Carter, all in their habits, rode through the city from the Tower of London unto Paules church, and there heard euensong, his chappell being there, and hauing role of the quere, and after euensong the king and those knights rode vnto Bainsards castle, there lodged that night: and vpon the morrowe in the same habits came againe to the said church of S. Paul, and went on procession, and after the blaine seruice and offering being done, returned.

The 5. of April a coiner for making of false money was hanged from the Tower vnto Tiborne, and there hanged.

About Midsummer Iohannes Julius the 2. sent to the k. a cap of maintenance, and a sword, as to a defender of the church, the which cap and sword were receiued with many and great ceremonies, which I ouerpaste.

The 5. of January in the night, the kings chamber was fired at Richmond, the which might not be quenched, till many chamberers, carpets, rich beds, and much other stuffe was consumed.

Through great tempest of winde bring at the south-west, which began the 15. of January, & continued till the 26. of the same, Philip king of Castile and his wife were weather beaten, and lanted at Falmouth in England, as the y were passing on the 16. of January out of Flanders toward Spaine, who were honorably receiued by the earle of Arundel at the kings appointment with 300. horses, all by torch light. This tempest was strange to many men, because the violence thereof had blowne downe the eagle of brasse from the spire of Paules church in London, and in the falling, the same eagle brake and battered the blacke eagle which hung for a signe in Paules churchyard, that time being but low houses, where now is the school of Paules.

Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke being sent according to promise made to king Henry) out of the county of Philip king of Castile, through Flanders was brought to Calais on the 16. of March, and so ouer into England & landed at Douer on the 24. of March, conueied by sir Henry Wyat knight, and sir

Ann. reg. 19.

Parliament  
1504  
New coine.

Allume deere.  
Ann. reg. 20.

1505  
Prisoners of  
the Parthalliey  
brake out.

S. Georges day  
the king rode to  
Paules.

A cap of main-  
tenance.

Ann. reg. 21.

1506  
Richmond on  
fire.

The king of  
Castile landed  
in England.  
Francis  
Guicciar.

Weathercocke  
of Paules  
blowne downe.

Earle of Suf-  
folk sent to  
the Tower.

Iohn

On

John Wiltshire knight, controller of the towne and marches of Calais, and 60. souldiers of Calais all in harnesse, where he was receiued by sir Thomas Lowell and other, and conuicted to the Tower of London.

Gallerie at Rich-  
mond built.

In the beginning of the moneth of July, a gallerie newe builded at Richmond, wherein the king and the Prince his sonne had walked not one houre before, it fell sodainlie downe about midnight, but no christian man perished thereby.

Ann. reg. 22.

The 21. of August the weather-cocke of Paules being of copper, ouer gilt, in weight 40. pounds, in length 4. fote, in breadth 3. fote and a halfe, was set vpon the spire of Paules steeple.

King Henry  
sickened.

This yere the king began to be diseased of a certaine infirmittie, which thyle euery yere, but especially in the spring time, sore vcered him.

Also the sweating sickness, which (as ye haue heard) in the first yere of this kings raigne first assailed the people of the realme, now assailed them again, howbeit, by the remedy found at the beginning of it, nothing the like number died thereof, now this second time, as did the first.

1507

This yere in the Lent season, the king deliuered manie prisoners out of sundry prisons, in somuch, that as many as lay in Newgate, and both Counters for 40. shillings and vnder, he redeemed and deliuered: and ouer that he redeemed many that lay for ten pound, and other larger sums as was said.

The kings pro-  
motors.

But true it is, that this yere or rather somewhat soner, sprang much sorrow through the land, for by meane of gracelesse persons, which named themselves the kings Promoters, many forgotten statutes, made hundreds of yeres passed, were nowe quickened, and sharply called vpon, to the great vniquietnesse of many the kings subiects, as well the rich as the other that had competent substance. And albeit that other yeres before passed, since the time of sir William Caple trouble, which was in the 10. yere of this kings raigne, many times were called to sundry reckonings, and were faine to seeke their ends to their charge: yet now, since Emplon and Dudley were set in authoritie, many mo in number were called before them, for many surmised causes, of the which none escaped without paying of fines. And if it were such a matter, as some would abide the trial of the law, then had they false Jurors so fixed vnto them, that they were well assured that they would not passe against their wills, for all was done in the kings name, and yet the most profit came to other mens coffers.

Ann. reg. 23.

Thomas Savage archbishop of Yorke deceased at his castle of Calwod, his body was buried at yorke, his hart at Spackelfield in Cheshire where he was borne, in a chappel by him founded, which he minded to haue made a collegidge: he was not elected after the ancient custome, but by nomination of the B. and fauor of the Pope Alexander. This Th. was daily employed about temporall matters at the kings pleasure, he used hunting, and bestowed much cost in repairing and new building at his castle of Calwod, and his manors of Scroby, he maintained manie tall peomen in his house, and was neuer in stalled, but after a secret maner at Yorke, and by his deputy at Beuerlake, he was the first that brake the custome of solemn feasting at their installing at Yorke, he

he was 7. yers archbishop: and to him succeeded Christopher Bambridge doctor of both lawes, born near to Apleby in Westmerland, first master of the Roles, then deane of Yorke, and after bishop of Durham.

The 25. of Aprill, a great part of the city of Norwich was burnt. And again in the moneth of June on the euen and day of the ascension of our Lord, another part of the same city of Norwich was fired, and sore perished and nere consumed with fire, that began in a French mans house named Peter Johnson a chirurgion, in the parish of Saint George.

1508  
Norwich de-  
stroyed by fire.

This yere amongst manie other was sir W. Caple againe newly troubled, for things done in time of his being maior of London, wher of the report was, for that false money came to his sight, and hee did not due correction vpon the partie that to him was accused to be the coiner of it: but were this the cause or other, truth it is, that in great trouble he was for it, and finally, for he would fall to no agreement, he was by Derby, Simson, and other of their companie, which as then the whole Jurie of them, were fastlie bounde to the girdles of Emplon and Dudley, that as they would, the verdit alwaies passed, and so was he by them indicted, and after by Dudley at the kings commandement put in prison, and so continued long time, and at length, for somuch as he would not agree to paie to the king 2000. l. was by the forenamed Dudley commanded to the tower, where hee laie till it was nere Whitsonside after, before which time king Henry was deceased, and then was he deliuered. Also Thomas Knefworth late Maior of London, with both his theriffs, after great veneration and imprisonment, being accused that they had misused the charge of their offices, were deliuered for great sums of money, as it was said, 1400. l. Christopher Hawis mercer and alderman of London, had bin so long bered by the said promoters, that it shortned his life by thought taking. Sir Laurence Ailmer late Maior of London, and his two Sheriffes were put to their fine of 1000. pounds to the king: but Sir Laurence after great trouble sustained at the handes of Emplon, was committed to prison, and continued prisoner till the said Emplon was himselfe sent to the Tower. This yere was finished the goodlie Hospitall of the Sauoy nere vnto Charing crosse, which was a notable foundation for the poore, done by king Henry the 7. vnto the which he purchased and gaue Landes for the relieving of 100. poore people. This house was first named Sauoy place, by Peter earle of Sauoy the first builder thereof, brother to Boniface archb. of Canterbury about the 29. yere of king Henry the 3. who made the said Peter earle of Richmond. His house belonged first to the Dukes of Lancaster, and at this time being in the kings handes, was converted to an hospitall, retaining the first name of Sauoy. In Henry builded 3. houses of Franciscan friars, which were called Obseruantes, at Richmond, Greenwiche, and Petwarke, and 3. other of the same family of Franciscan friars, called Coentualles, at Canterburie, Newcastell, and Southamton.

False Jurors  
for money.

Ann. reg. 24.

Hospitall of the  
Sauoy,  
1509

This noble Prince king Henry, was long sick ere hee died, in which season he was by well disposed persons, in sermons and other waies informed of the exclamations made vpon Promoters, wherefore of his blessed disposition,

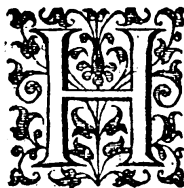
Henry the 7.  
deceased.



ons, he granted to all men generall pardon, certaine excepted, the which pardons were quickly purchased, so that many were had ere he died: he deceased at Richmond on the 22. of Aprill, when he had reigned 23. yeres, 8. monethes, and on the 9. of Maie he was brought to Paules with many nobles, knights & gentlemen, and 1000. torches, and from thence on the next morrow conueyed to Westminster, and there buried in the new chappell, which he had caused to be builded with the charges of 14000. l. on the 11. of Maie: he left issue, Henry prince of Wales, which succeeded in the kingdome, lady Margaret the queene of Scots, and lady Mary promised to Charles king of Castile.

The altar and sepulture of the same H. Henry the 7. where in his bodie now resteth, in his newe chappell at Westminster, was made and finished in the yere of Christ 1519. by one Peter T. a painter of the cite of Florence, for the which he received 1000. pound sterling, for the whole stoffe and workmanship, at the hands of the kings executors, Richard bishop of Winchester, Richard Fitz James bishop of London, Tho. bishop of Durham, John bishop of Rochester, Thomas D. of Norfolk treasurer of England, Edward Carle of Worcester, the kings chamberlaine, John F. knight chiefe iustice of the kings bench, Robert R. knight chiefe Justice of the common place, &c.

## King Henry the eight.



Henrie the eight, borne at Greenewich, second sonne to king Henry the seventh, about the age of eightene yeres beganne his raigne by the decease of his father, on the two and twentieth of Aprill: but was proclaimed on the foure and twentieth, in anno Christi 1509. and the same daie in the after none he was conueyed to the Tower of London, where he lodged for a season. Of personage he was tall and mightie, in wit and memoire excellent, of such mat-

tie and humanity as was comely in such a prince. By the aduise of his grandmother Margaret countesse of Richmond and Derby, diuers graue personages were elected to be of his priuite counsell, whose names were William Warham Archbisshop of Canterbury and Chancelor of England, Richard Foxe bisshop of Winchester, Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey and treasurer of England, George Talborearle of Shrewsbury a lord steward of the kings household, Charles Sommerfet Lord Chamberlaine, Sir Thomas Lovel, Sir Henry Wyat, doctor T. Ruthall, Sir Edward Poinings. These graue counsellors, fearing lest such abundance of riches & wealth as the king to now possessed of, might misse his yong yeres into riotous forgetting of himselfe, got him to be present with them whē they late in counsil, so to acquaint him with matters pertaining to the politike government of the realme, with the which at the first he could not well endure to be much troubled, being rather inclin-

to follow such pleasant pastimes as his youthfull yeres did more delight in.

On the same 24. day of Aprill, the lord Henry Stafford brother to the Duke of Buckingham, was arrested and committed to the Tower: and doctor Ruthall was nominated bisshop of Durham.

The five and twentieth of Aprill was proclaimed the kings consent to the generall pardon granted by his father, and that himselfe was contented to forgive all such persons as had bin vexed for any cause, so that it touchd not felony: treason: and ouer that, in the same proclamation was compised, that all beggones and sturpy beggers should auoid the city of London, and resort into such countreies as they were borne in, upon paine appointed. Also proclamation was made, that if any man could proue himselfe to be depriued of his goods wrongfully by the late commissioners of the sequestrations, he should present his plaint to the king, who was ready to satisfie euery one of all iniuries sustained. After which publication many such as had bene constrained, either by right or wrong to pay any thing for sequestrations of lawes or customes by them transgressed, flocked to the court, and there declared their grieues: the counsell heard euery mans complaint, and such as were found to haue payde any thing without plaine proue of iust cause, such order was taken that they had their money again: but the complainants came in so thicke, that the commissioners and other that had dealt in the sequestrations perceiving that it was hard, and almost impossible to satisfie them all, refused to heare any further complaints or suites for restitution, but thought it best to commit those to prison, by whom the complainants pretended themselves to haue been wronged, and the reupon was Sir Richard Empson knight, and Edmund Dudley esquire, by a politike meane brought into the tower, where they were accused of extortion, and so remained the prisoners, the rest by quiet mens minds, that made such suite to haue their money againe restored. And shortly after were made of their promoters (for so they termed themselves) called to a reckoning, and cast into sundry prisons, as Page, Michell, Canby, Henry Toft, Smith, and sundry others, but Baptiste Grimald the most cruell wretch of them all, went to Westminster, and there registered himselfe a sanctuary man.

The third day of June, king Henry in his closet at Greenewich married the lady Katherine his first wife, who had been late the wife of prince Arthur deceased, and was dispensed with by Pope Iulij.

The 6. of June 10. Derby, Jo. Smith, J. Simson, ringleaders of false inquests in London, rode about the cite, with their faces to the hoxe tails, and papers on their heads, and were set on the pillorie in Cornhill, and after brought againe to Newgate, where they died for very shame.

On the 21. of June king Henry came from Greenewich by land, and so rode to the tower of London, with whom came many well apparelled noble men, but especially the duke of Buckingham, who rode in a gowne of Goldsmiths worke, a thing of great riches: the king rested there from Thursday till Saturday, in which season he made 24. knights of the Bath. And upon Saturday the 24. of June, H. Henry with queene Katherine, and their nobilitie rode from the Tower through the cite in most honourable wise, before whom rode the

Henry, lord  
Stafford arre-  
sted.

Pardon for  
trepasses pro-  
claimed.

Empson and  
Dudley sent to  
the Tower.  
Promoters  
apprehended.

King Henry  
married.

Common-gar-  
moners for  
money set on  
the pillory.

King Henry  
crowned.

His issue.

Sepulture of  
king Henry  
the seventh.

Executors to  
H. the seventh.

An. reg. 1.

Names of the  
kings coun-  
sellors.



saide knightes of the Bath, the Duke of Buckingham rode next before the king, except the Mayor, and certene Sergeants and Heraultes: the which rode in a long gown wrought of needle worke right costly and rich, and bare a little staff of silver in his hand, in token that he was high steward of that feast of coronation, and the said W. had about his neck a broad and flat close chaîne of a new beufe, not before used, set with pretious rubies, and other stones of great value. On the morrow being Sunday, and Whitsommer day, the king and queene were crowned at Westminster in most solemn manner, by the archbishop of Canterbury and other assisting.

Margaret  
countesse of  
Derby deceased

The 29. of June, the most vertuous Princesse of her time knowne to the world, Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby, mother to king Henry the seventh, died at Westminster, and was there buried, whose notable and charitable dedes all her life time exercised, cannot in a small volume be expressed.

About the same time deceased John Vere earle of Oxford, and was buried in the priory of Colne in Essex.

Fifteen yeeres  
appointed to  
wait on the K.

The king ordained fiftie Gentlemen to be speeres, euerie of them to haue an Archer, a Demillance, and a Cistrail, and euerie speere to haue thre great Horses to bee attendant on his person, of the which W. made the earle of Essex was Lieutenant, and Sir John Peche Capitaine, which ordinance continued not long, the charges was so great: for there were none of them, but they and their Horses were appareled and trapped in cloth of golde, silver, and Colours smittes worke.

Dudley arraigned  
and condemned.

The seventeenth of July Edmond Dudley was arraigned in the Guildhall of London, where he was condemned, and had iudgement to be hanged, hanged and quartered, and committed to the Tower againe, where he lay long after, in somuch, that the same went the Queene had purchased his pardon, but that was not so, as after shall appeare. And like as in this while to the comfort of the kings subiects many things were ordered, as general pardons for all the done offences, treason, felony, and debt by specialties, and a few other excepted: so in like manner, to the disturbance of all the forenamed Promoters, was manie and diuers meanes sought and found to bere and trouble them right willicke, that before had bere manie a true man wrongfullie: by meanes whereof, they were dailie taken in diuers counties of England, and brought to the Tower and other prisons, where they remained long. In the which time manie opprobrious rimcs in despite of them were made, whereof I haue seme some, especiallie one against Sir Richard Emplon, made by Cornish of the kings chappell, at the request of the earle of Kent, forsomuch, as the saide Emplon had deceived him of a part of his lande, and in sinister waies had so informed the king of him, that he was long holden vnder, and put to great hinderance, But (saith mine Authour) what cause forer moued the saide Earle another at that time, let no man thinke, that for any cause hee hath receiued, save onelie, that wisse men make, by the sodaine rising and falling of these men, bee well ware howe they guide them, when they bee put in greate authoritie, and especiallie such as this man was, the which

False accusers  
and disturbers  
of good men  
committed to  
prison.  
Earle of Kent  
enraged Emplon.  
Rob. Fabian.

which sodainely rose from pouertie (as being the sonne of a sienne-maker, in Leicester) unto inestimable authoritie and riches. And such other as were of his affinitie, especially Dudley, that at the time of his fall had in possession of lands and fees, with offices, to the pcerely value of 800. pound, and in ready coine 20000. pound, other many more riches, as Jewels, plate, and rich stuffe of household, the which was shortly gathered, for not thirtene yeeres before hee was by laboꝝ of friends brought into the office of vndersecretarie of London, where he continued with fauour of the citisens, by the space of five yeeres or more, after which season he sold his office, and drew him to the kings court, where shortly after he grew in such fauour, that he was chosen speaker of the parliament, in the nineteenth yeere of king Henry the seventh, and sone after the kings president, by reason of which office, he had such authoritie, that the chiefe lords of England were glad to be in his fauour, and were faine to sue to him for many vrgent causes, whereupon the lords and all men, as they durst, had him in disdaine, which was his ouerthrow in the end. Thus much for example may suffice.

On the 29. of July was arraigned in the guildhall of London one Smith for a promotor, and with him were inquired of by inquests, H. Toft, Page, Canby, &c. but for that they laide for themselves, they were seruingmen, and did but as they were commaunded, they were all reprieved to such prisons as they came from, where they remained long after.

In the moneth of October Sir Richard Emplon was conueied into Northamptonshire, and there arraigned, and lastly deemed to be hanged, hanged, and quartered, and then was brought againe to the Tower.

Emplon arraigned.

This yeere A. Henry kept his Christmas at Richmond with great solatitie.

The 21. of January began a parliament, whereof Sir Thomas Ingleby was chosen speaker: in the which parliament, Sir Richard Emplon, and Edmond Dudley were attainted of high treason.

1510  
Parliament.  
Emplon and  
Dudley attainted.

King Henry kept his Shrovetide at Westminster, with great banquettings, dauncings, and other pastimes.

This yeere came ambassadoꝝ not onely from the king of Arragon and Castile, but also from the kings of France, Denmarke, Scotland, and other princes, which were highly welcomed, and royally entertained. And on the 20. of April a peace was proclaimed betwix England and France, during the liues of king Henry the 8. of England, and Lewis the French king.

An. reg. 2.  
Peace proclaimed.

On Whitsommer eue at night, king Henry came priuily into Welscheape of London, being clothed in one of the coates of his guard: and on St. Peters night the king and queene came rofallie riding to the signe of the kings head in Cheape, there beheld the watch of the citie, which watch was set out with diuers goblin shewers, as had bene accustomed.

King Henry  
and Queene  
Katherine be-  
held the watch  
at London.

King Henry riding on his progresse for his disport, there was brought before him and his counsell many grieuous bills of complaints against Emplon and Dudley, wherefore he sent commandement to the constable of the tower, charging him that they shoulde shortly after be put to execution. Whereupon the sherriffes of London were sent for, and commaunded by a speciall writ to see

h h h

the

the said execution performed and done. And they upon that went to the tower and received them on the 17. of August, and from thence brought them unto the scaffold on the tower hill, where their heads were stricken off: which being done, the bodie of Empson was buried in the white friers church, and the body of Dudley in the blacke friers church. This Edmond Dudley in the time of his imprisonment in the tower compiled one notable booke, which he intituled, the Tree of common wealth, dedicated unto King Henry the eight, but never came to his hand. A copie whereof faire written (referringe the originall to my selfe) I gave unto the honorable Lord Robert earle of Leicester, about the yere 1562. At whose request and earnest perswasion I then first collected my summary of the Chronicles of England, and dedicated the same, with the continuacion and encrease thereof, from time to time, to my great charges, to his honor, in reward whereof I alwaies received his hartly thanks, with commendations, and not otherwile, what soever hath bene reported by mine adversary T. S.

On the 22. of August past at Richmond the Quene was delivered of a Prince, to the great reioycing of the whole realme, he was named Henry: but deceased on the 23. of February next following at Richmond, and was buried at Westminster.

In the month of Feb. came ambassadores from the K. of Aragon & Castile, to require an aid of 1500. archers to be sent to the same king, hauing at that time war with the Moyses, enemies to the christian faith: the king granted their request, and because the lord Thomas Darcy a knight of the garter made humble suite to the king to be generall of that crue, the king granted his desire: there were appointed to go with him, the lord Anthony Grey, brother to the marques Dorset, Hen. Guilford, Weste, Browne, and William Sidley Esquires of the kings house, sir Rob. Constable, sir Roger Hastings, and sir Ralph Elderton, with diuers other gentlemen to be captaines.

They departed out of Wiltmouth haven with 4. ships royall, and on the first of June arrived at Cales in south Spaine, where they were honourably receiued by a bishop, and other of the kings counsell: but an abstinence of war being taken, the L. Darcy and the rest were required to returne home againe, money was sent to pay the soldiers their wages, for their conduction againe into England, with diuers gifts given to the Lord Darcy and the other gentlemen, and after returned into England.

During the time that the L. Darcy was in Spaine, the lady Margaret daughters of Scaup, daughter to Maximilian emperor, and governeur of flanders, Brabant, Holland, Zealand, and other the low countries, appertaining to Charles the young prince of Castile, sent in the end of May to the K. of England, requirring to haue 1500. archers to aide her against the D. of Gelders, which sore troubled the countries aforesaid: the king granting her request, appointed sir Edw. Poinings knight of the garter, and controller of his house, a balliant captaine, to be lieutenant and leader of the said 1500. archers, which accompanied with his sonne in lawe the Lord Clinton, sir Mathew Browne, sir John Digby, John Werton, Richard Wetherall, and Shirley Esquires, with

Empson and  
Dudley executed.

Tree of common  
wealth.

1511

Archers sent  
against the  
Moyses.

Ann. reg. 3.

Archers sent to  
aide the lady  
Margaret daughters  
of Scaup.

other gentlemen and yeomen to the foresaide number: they took their ships besides S. and with the eighteenth of July, and landed at Armeis on the nineteenth, from whence they were conduced to Barrois, &c. whither the lady Regene came to welcome them, on the seven and twentieth of July they departed to Rossynale, and on the last of July they came to Bulouke, and the next daie the whole army of Almaine, Flemings and other appertaining to the said lady, met with our Englishmen without Bulouke, where they set forth in order, the lady Regent being there present, which took her leave of all the Captaines, and departed to Bulouke. The army to the number of 10000. before the 1500. Englishmen, passed forward, and the 10. of August came before a little Castle, standing on the higher side of the maye, called Wilmoult, belonging to the baron of Gelderland.

The same night Thomas Hart, chiefe gouernour of the English ordinance, made his approach, and in the morning made battery, so that the assault there, upon being giuen, the fortreffe was won, and the captaine with 80. and odd men were slaine, and six taken, of the which 11. were hanged.

John Morton captaine of an hundred English men, and one Guyet an esquire of Burgolgne, crying, S. George, were the first that entred, at which assault there was but one English man slaine.

On the 14. of August, the armie ferried over the riuer of Maye into Gelderland, the next daie they came to a little towne called Apke, the people were fled, but there was a little castle, raised and cast downe: upon the next daie they bent the saide towne of Apke, and all the countrey about it, and came at the last to a towne called Stranule being verie strong, double diked, and walled, within it were 360. good men of war besides the inhabitants. At the first they shewed good countenance of defence, but when they saw their enemies approach nere vnto them with ramplers and trenches, they yielded by composition, so that the souldiers might depart, but 5. towne men rested prisoners, at the will of the Prince of Castile. And so on S. Bartholmeus day, the admirall of flanders, and sir Edward Poinings entred the towne with great triumph.

The 26. of August the army came before Tenclois and sent an Herault called Arthoys to summon the towne: but they within would not heare, and yet they shot guns at him. Sir Edward Poinings, at this siege had ordinance pertaining to K. Henry as followeth, Serpentine the 11. signes: Armes of England, the Antelope, the Greyhound, the Dragon, the Giffon, the Snake, the Spermales, the Aile, the Pye, the Cocatrice, the Blange, the Anticoine, the Panter, the Hart, the Wynde, the Aleusant, the Falcon, the Sparillon, the Cozenes, the Wyke, the Sonneret, the Richmond, the Sparck, the Roymond, the Rose, the Cales, in all 36. pieces. The army remoued vnto the north side of Tenclois, and part went ouer the water, & made trenches to the water, and besieged the towne, but for all they could do without, they within kept one gate open. At length the English captaines perceiving that they lay there in vaine, considering the strength of the towne, and also how the army was not of number sufficient to inuite on the same on each side, wrote to the king, who

th h 2.

willed

willed them both all speede to returne, and so they did. Sir Edward Poyninges went to the Court of Burgoyne, where he was receiued right honourably of the young Prince of Castile and of his Aunt the ladie Margaree. John Norton, John Fogge, John Scot, and Thomas Lynde were made knights by the Prince. And the lady Margaree, seeing the souldiers coates to be worne, and some both lying on the ground, gave to euery yeoman a coate of wolven cloth coloured white and graine, red and yealow, the white and graine for the king of Englands luerie, the redde and yealowe for the Duke of Burgoyne's luerie, and these foure colours were medled together, this she did to her great commendation: after that sir Edward Poyninges had bin highly feasted, he returned with his crew into England, and had not lost fully one hundred persons.

Andrew Barton a Scottish man, and pyrate of the sea, seeing that the king of Scots had warre with the Portugales, robbed euery nation, and stopped the kings streames that no merchant almost could passe, and when he took Englishmens goods, he bare them in hand that they were Portugales goods, and thus he robbed at euery hauens mouth. The king displeased herewith, sent sir Edw. Howard lord admirall of England, the lord Thomas Howard son and heire to the earle of Surrey, and John Hopton to the sea, which made ready two ships, and taking sea, by chance of weather were seuered. The lord Howard lying in the Solowes, perceiving that Andrew was making toward Scotland, and to fast the said lord chased him, that he overtook him, so there was a foie battell betwixt them, Andrew ever blew his whistle to encourage his men: but at length the lord Howard and the Englishmen did so valiantly, that by cleane strength they entered the maine decke. The Scots fought sore on the hat ches: but in conclusion Andrew was taken, and so sore wounded, that he died there, the remnant of the Scots were taken with their ship called the Lion. All this while was the lord admirall in chase of the barke of Scotland called Jenny Perwin, which was wont to saile with the Lion in company, and he with other did so much, that he laid them aboard, and though the Scots manfully defended themselves, yet at length the Englishmen entered the barke, slew many, and took all the residue. Thus were these two ships taken and brought to Blackwall, the second of August. The Scots taken prisoners were sent to London, where they were kept as prisoners, in the Archbishop of Dorkes place, now called White hall, and after sent into Scotland.

About this season the French king made sharpe warre against Pope Iulij: therefore the king of England wrote to the French king, that he should leaue off to vex the pope in such wise being his friend and confederate: but when the French king learned little to regard that request, the king sent him word, to deliver to him his inheritance, both of the dutchy of Poimanie and Coten, and the counties of Aniole & Pain, and also of his crowne of France, or else he would come with such a power, that by fine force he would obtaine his purpose: but notwithstanding the French king pursued his wars in Italy: whereupon the king of England toynd in league with Maximilian the Emperour,

and

and Ferdinando king of Spaine, and with diuers other princes, resolved by the aduise of his counsell, to make war on the French king and his countries, and made preparation both by sea and land, fitting forth shippes to the sea for sale, and of his merchants.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenwich, with great and plentifull cheer. The 4. of February began the Parliament at Westminster, upon the which date, the king and his lordes spirituall and temporall, with manie of the common house being present in the Parliament chamber, the archbishop of Cantebury then Chancellor of England, made a famous and clearly proposition, grounded on this Text, *Iustitia & pax osculata sunt*, whereupon hee stood well a large houre and an halfe, declaring howe iustice should be ministered, and peace should be nourished, and by what meanes iustice was put by, & peace turned into war. The which hee appoyued by examples of the olde and new testament in right sufficient wise, to his great commendation, & singular comfort of the hearers. On the next morrow began the conuocation in Pauls church: and on the next date sir Robert Sheffield knight, and sometime recorder of London, was chosen speaker of the Parliament, and on the next morrow being the 8. of February, before the king and lordes hee made his proposition, exculing himselfe, and beseeching the king (as the manner is) to be dismissed of that office, for the which proposition he was well allowed and admitted. On the same day the lordes dubbed sir Henry Guilford and sir Charles Brandon knights. In this parliament was granted two fifteenes of the temporalty, and of the clergy two sixties or tenths. During which parliament, a yeoman of the crowne named Newbolt, due within the palace of Westminster a seruant of Master Willoughby, for the which fact, the king commanded to be set by a paire of gallies in the same place where the said seruant lost his life: and upon the same, the said Newbolt was hanged, and remained on the gallies by the space of two daies.

The king of Arragon hauing warre with the French king, wrote to king Henry of England to send ouer an army into Wales, and so to invade France on that side, for the recovery first of his dutchy of Guien, and hee would appoyne them with ordinance, horsemen, beastes and carriages, with other necessaries appertaining to the same.

The 11. of England and his Councell putting their assistance in this promise of king Ferdinando prepared a noble army al of footmen, and final artillery, appointed L. Th. Grey marquis Dorset to be chiefe commander of the same. Whereupon king Henry daily studying to set forward the war which hee had begun against the French li. caused sir Edmond Howard admirall, with all diligence to make ready diuers godly ships, as the Soueraigne and others, to the number of 18. besides smaller vessels, and the rewith hauing in his company Sir Wynton Brown, Griffith Dun, Edward Cobham, T. Windham, T. Lucy, William Perton, Henry Shirborne, Stephen Bull, George Witwage, John Hopton, William Gunstone, Thomas Draper, Edmonde Cooke, John Burder, and diuers other, he took the sea, and scouring the same about the midst of May he came before Portsmouth. About the same time the L. marquis Dorset, & other noble

men

1512  
Parliament.

Ann. reg. 4.  
Henry sent an army into Wales against the French.

men appointed for the journey to Biscay, as the Lord Howard son and heir to the earle of Surrey, the L. Brook, the L. Willoughby, the L. Ferrers, the L. John, the L. Anthony, the L. Leonard Grey, all three brethren to the marques, sir Griffith ap Rice, sir Maurice Barkley, sir W. Sands, the baron of Warford, sir Richard Cornwall brother to the said baron, W. Husle, Jo Molton, W. Kingstone esquires, sir Henry Willoughby, and divers other, with the number of 10000. soldiers, amongst the which were 500. Almaines, all clad in white, under the leading of a Fleming named Gwinc, came to Southampton, & there mustered their bands. The 16. of May they were shipped in Spanish vessels, and landed in Biscay, where they were bidden welcome, but had no such aide sent to them as was promised, whereby they lost the doing of some great exploits against the French men on the frontiers of Gascoigne: after the army had laine 30. daies in the campe, there came from the king of Arragon messengers to desire the marques and his people to take patience for a while, and they should see that such preparation should be made for the furnishing of their enterprise. In the meane time the English men for the most part, were victualled with garlike, and dranke hote wines, and ate hote fruits, which procured their blood to boile in their bodies, whereby they fell sicke, and died more than 800. persons: in the end many promises being made by the king of Spaine, and none performed, the English men embarked, and landed in England in the moneth of December. The king of Spaine seemed to be sore discontented with their departure, affirming that if they had tarried till the next spring, he would in their companie have invaded France.

About the moneth of August the nauiers of England and France meeting at Britaine bay, fought a cruell battell, in the which the Regent or soueraigne of England, and a carlike of West in France, being grappled together, were burned, and their captains with their men all drowned: the English captaine was sir Thomas Kneuer, who had with him sir John Carew, and 700. men. In the French carlike was sir Pierce Morgan, with nine hundred men, were all bent or drowned.

King Henry hearing of the losse of the Regent, caused a great ship to bee made, such a one, as the like had neuer bene seene in England, and named it, Henry grace de Dieu.

By fire this yere a great part of the kings palace of Westminster, and the chappell in the Tower of London, and many other places in England were bent.

In the moneth of November the king called his high court of parliament, in the which it was concluded, that the king himselfe in person with an army should invade France, whereupon notice thereof being given to such as should attend, they made their purueance with all diligence that might be. In this parliament was granted to the king two sixaines, and foure deniers, and had money, of every denier ten markes, an earle due pound, a lord foure pound, a knight foure markes, and euery man valued at 800. pound in goods to paie foure markes, and so after that rate, till him that was valued at forty shillings paid twelue pence, and euery man that toke forty shillings

The Regent  
of England, a  
ship, burned.

Great Harry  
ship made.

Scala temp.  
Kings palace  
at Westminster  
bent.

Parliament at  
Westminster.

Great payment  
to the king.

ings wages twelue pence, and euery man and woman of 15. yeres or upward foure pence.

The king kept his Christmas at Okenwold with great solemnity, dauncing, disguisings, and mummeries in most princely manner.

After Candlemas, the king created sir Charles Brandon, Viscount Lisle.

In the moneth of March was the kings Paule of ships rotall, and other set forth to the number of 42. beside balengiers, under the conduct of the L. Admirall, accompanied with sir Walter Deuereux, L. Ferrers, sir Wolstan Brown, sir Edw. Ichingham, sir Anthony Poinis, sir John Wallope, sir Thomas Windham, sir Steuen Bull, William Fitz Williams, Arthur Plantagenet, William Sidney, esquires, and diuers other valiant capitaines.

These made saile into Britaine, and came to Bartham bay, where they lay at anchor for a time, at length mindung to enter the haven of West on the 25. of April, the L. admirall with a pike of the enemy, was throwen overboard, and so drowned, al the other escaped very hardly away, for if they had touched the tide had failed them, and then al had bin lost. The L. Ferrers and the other capitaines so rowfull of this chance, returned into England. King Henry being sorry for the losse of his admirall, called to him T. Howard eldest brother to the late admirall, and son and heir apparant to the earle of Surrey, whom he made admirall, willing him to reuenge his brothers death. The lord Howard humbly thanked his grace of the trust that he put in him, and so immediately went to the sea, and scoured the same, that no French man durst shew himselfe on the coast of England.

On May euen Edmond de la Pole earle of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his brother Richard de la Pole, called the white Kiole, was afterward laine before the citie of Paule, in anno 1524.

King Henry hauing all his prouisions ready for the warre, and meaning in person to passe the sea, appointed George Talbot earle of Shrewsburie, high steward of his household, to be captaine generall of his foieward, and in his companie were appointed to go Thom. Stanley earle of Darby, lord Docwray pilot of S. Johns, sir Robert Rarchie lord Fitzwater, the lord Hastings, the lord Cobham, sir Rice ap Thomas, sir Thomas Blunt, sir Richard Sacheuell, sir John Digby, sir John Askew, sir Lewes Bagot, sir Thomas Cornwall, and many other knights and esquires, and souldiers to the number of 8000. men, these passed the sea, and came to Caleis about the midd of May. Charles Somerset L. Herbert chamberlaine to the king, in the end of that moneth followed with 6000. men, and so forth.

King Henry hauing sent ouer a great and puissant army into France to besiege the citie of Turuaine, himselfe accompanied with many noble men, and five hundred archers of his garde, all in white gabberdines, toke his shippe at Dover on the last of June in the morning. When the king was shipped and made saile, all his army followed, to the number of foure hundred shippes, and the winde was so, that they were brought the same night into Caleis haven.

On the next morning, being the first of July, Thomas L. Howard, admirall

1513

Many sent to  
the sea.

An. reg. 5.

Edward the  
ward L. admirall  
drowned.

Earle of Suffolke de la Pole  
beheaded.

King Henry  
besieged Turuaine.

of England, landed at Whitland bay, and entred, spoiled, and bent the towne, and returned to his ships.

The 21. of July, the king passed out of the towne of Calcis in goodly array of battell, and toke the field, notwithstanding that the foreward of the kings great army were before Turwine, yet the king of his owne battell made 3. battels: the lord Lisle marshall of the host, was captain of the foreward, and under him 3000. men: sir Richard Carew with 300. men, was the right hand wing to the foreward, & the lord Darcie with 300. men, wing on the left hand. The scorers and fore-riders of this battell, were the Dorsetshire men on light geldings. The earle of Essex was lieutenant generall of the speares, and sir John Pechy was vice-gouernor of the horsemen. Before the king went 800. Almains all in a plume: after them came the standard with the red dragon, next the banner of our Ladie, & next of the Trinitie, under the which were all the kings household. Then went the banner of the armes of England, borne by sir John Gifford, under which banner was the king himselfe, with diuers noble men, and other, to the number of thre thousand men. The Duke of Buckingham with six hundred men, was on the kings left hand. On the right hand was sir Edward Poynings with other six hundred men, equall with the Almains. The lord of Burgainie with eight hundred men was wing on the right hand: sir William Compton with the retinue of the Bishop of Winchester Fox, and master Thomas Wolley, afterward cardinall, of eight hundred, was in manner of a reerward: Sir Anthony Oughtred and sir John Neill with the kings speares that followed, were foure hundred, and so the whole army was eleuen thousand and thre hundred men. The master of the ordinance set forth the kings artillerie, as faulcons, sings, bombardes, powder, stones, bolwes, arrowes, and such other things necessary for the field, the whole number of the carriages were 13. hundred, the leaders and diuers of the same were ninetene hundred men. The king lay the first night betwixt Calkwell and Freidon: the next night before the Castle of Calneis at Focard: the next night he lay before Arde a good way without the English pale, and when he was a little beyond Dernome, there came a great host of French men, that purposed to haue set upon him: but the king with his host kept their ground, and thre their great ordinance, wherewith the aray of the French men was broken.

The 4. of August, the king in good order of battell came before the citie of Turwine, and planted his siege in warlike wise.

The 11. date of August, Maximilian the Emperour came to king Henrie, who was receiued with great triumph betwene Aitre and the campe. The Emperour and his retinue were in blacke, as mourners for the Emperesse lately deceased.

The Emperour and all his seruants were retained with the king of England in wages by the day, euery person according to his degree, and the Emperour as the kings souldier wore a crosse of S. George with a rose, and so he and all his traine came to the kings campe the 13. of August, and there was receiued with great magnificence.

The

The 23. of August, the towne of Turwine was giuen ouer unto the king of England, with condition, that all men in the towne might safely passe with hoyle and harnesse: and so on the 24. of August there came out of the towne 4000. men of war and mo well appointed, whereof 600. were well hoysed, their standards borne before them.

The 26. of August, the king remoued to Singate, and there it was agreed, that the walles, gates, bulwarkes, and towers of Turwine should be defaced, rased, and cast downe: of which conclusion, the Emperour sent word to S. Omers and to Aitre, which being iolous of that tidings, sent thither ploners, and so they and the English ploners brake downe the walles, gates, and towers, and filled the ditch, and fired the towne, except the cathedrall church and the palace, and all the ordinance was by the king sent to Aitre to bee kept to his vse.

After this it was concluded, that the king in person should laie his siege to the citie of Turney, wherefore he set forward thre goodly battels: the first was conducted by the Earle of Shrewsburie: the second battell led the king himselfe, with whom was the Emperour: the reerward was conducted by the lord Harbert, and so the first night they lay in campe before Aitre.

The 14. of September, the king and his army came to Beattwin, and on the morrowe passed forward, and came to a strait where was a fowde, which with great difficultie they passed: and the next day they passed a bridge called fount Anantew.

The one and twentieth day of September the king remoued his campe toward Turney, and lodged within thre miles of the Citie, the which night came to him the Emperour and the Paligrane: the people about Turney were with their gods fledde to the citie, and yet the citie had no men of warre to defend it, but with multitude of inhabitants the citie was well replenished.

The king came in aray of battell before Turney, planted his ordinance round about the citie, diuers trenches were cast, and rampiers made, so that no Citizens coulde issue out, nor no aide come to them. Whereupon at length, to wit, on the nine and twentieth of September the citie was yielded.

Then the king appointed the lord Lisle, the lord Burgeyny, and the Lord Willoughby to take possession, which with six thousand men entred the Citie, and toke the market place and the wals, and then master Thomas Wolley the kings almoner called before him all the citizens, and sware them to the king of England: the number of which citizens were fourescore thousand.

On the 2. day of October the king entred the citie of Turney, and there ordained sir Edward Poynings, knight of the order of the Garter, to be his lieutenant, with captaines, horsemen, archers, and artillery conuenient: he made his almoner Thomas Wolley bishop of Turney, and then returned to Calcis, and sailed from thence to Douer on the 24. of October: from thence he rode post to Richmond, where the Quene lay.

Thomas Wolley  
bishop of  
Turney.

Turwine yielded  
to king  
Henry.

Turwine razed  
and bent.

Henry besieged  
Turney.

Turney yielded  
to H. the eight.

James king of  
Scots besieged  
Norham.

In this meane time, James K. of Scots assembled the whole power of Scotland, wherewith he approached to the borders, and comming to Norham castle, laid siege thereunto, and after he had beaten this castle with his ordinance, by the space of five daies, the same was deliuered vpp into his handes.

And hee (sayeth Paulus Iouius) made the same to be layde scull with the grounde, and from thence marched (walking with fire and sword) to besiege the strong towne of Berwick.

Now had the earle of Surrey, Lieutenant of the north, in absence of king Henry, giuen order to assemble a power of 2000. men, and comming to Alnwick, tarried there till the whole number of his people were come: amongst other, his son the lord admiral with 5000. soldiers and men of war, which had bin at sea, came to his father, wherof he was greatly reioiced. The earle appointed his battels, with wings, and horsemen necessary: first of the foreward was ordained captain the L. Howard admiral, with the L. Clifford, the L. Coniers, the L. Latimer, the L. Scrope, the lord Ogle, the lord Lumley, sir Nicholas Appleyard, master of the ordinance, sir Stephen Bull, sir Henry Sherborne, sir William Sidney, sir Edward Echingham, sir William Bulmere, with the power of the Bishops of Durham, sir William Gascoigne, sir Christopher Warde, sir John Eueringham, sir Th. Metham, sir Walter Griffith, &c. Of the wing on the right hand of the foreward was captain, sir Edmond Howard, knight marshall of the house, and with him Brian Tonstall, Raffe Brearton, John Laurence, Richard Bold Esquires, sir John Bothe, sir Thomas Butler knights, and other. Of the wing on the left hand was captain, sir Marmaduke Constable with his sonnes, sir William Percy, and of Lancashire, a thousand men. Of the reerward was captain the earle of Surrey, the lord Scrope of Bolton, sir Philippe Tilney, sir George Darcie, sir Thomas Berkeley, sir John Rodcliffe, sir Christopher Pickering, Richard Tempest, sir John Stanley, &c. Now the earle of Surrey was informed that king James laye imbatayled vpon a great mountaine, called Flodden, a place of such strength, as was impossible for the Englishmen to come nere them, he sent Rouge Crosse puruant to the king of Scots, to shew him, that where he had contrary to his oth and league, invaded this his brothers realme, and done greates hurt, in casting downe castles, towres, and houses, burning and destroying the same, &c. The said earle would be ready to try the right iudices of the cause with the king in battell, by friday next comming, if by his noble courage would giue him tarrying and abode. Rouge Crosse went and did his message to James king of Scots, as he was appointed: And hereupon king James sent to the earle an herault named Ilay, who deliuered to the earle a letter written by the kings secretarie, as followeth.

James letter  
to the earle of  
Surrey.

As to the causes alleadged of our comming into England, again our band and promise (as is alleadged) thereto to be answered: Our brother was bound as far to vs as we were to him. And when we swore last before his ambassador, in presence of our counsel, we expressed specially by oth, that we would keepe to our brother, if our brother kept to vs, and not else: we sweare our brother brake first to vs, & with his brake, we haue required diuers times him to amend: and lately

lately we warned our brother, as he did not vs or he brake, and this wee take for our quarrel, & with Gods grace shal defend the same, at your assured time, with Gods grace we shall abide.

Right high and mightie Prince, so it is that lately I sent vnto you Rouge Crosse puruant at armes, and by him advertised your grace, that I and other my loueraigne lordes subiects, were come to repell & resist your invasions of this the kings my loueraigne Lordes realme, and for that intent I offered to giue you battell, on this halfe friday next comming: with my message, your grace toke pleasure to heare, as I am informed, and by your herault Ilay, ye made answer, that ye were right iolous of my desire, and would not faile to accomplish the same, and to abide me there, where ye were at the time of my message, so shewed vnto your grace. And albeit it hath pleased you to chaunge your said promise, and put your selfe into a grounde, more like a fortreffe or campe, than vpon any inherient ground for battell to be tried, therefore considering the day appointed is so nigh approaching, I desire you of your grace, that for the accomplishment of your honorable promise, you will dispose your selfe for your part, like as I shall do for mine, to be to morrow with your host in your side of the plain of Millfield, in like wise as I shall do for mine, and that he with the subiects of my loueraigne lord on my side of the plain of the sayd field, to giue you battell betwene twelue of the clock and 3. in the after none, vpon sufficient warning by you to be giuen by eight or nine of the clock in the morning by the said puruant. And like as I and other noble men my company, vnder vs by our writing subscribed with our handes to keepe the same time, to the intent abovesaid: It may like your grace, by your honorable letters subscribed with your hand, to bind your grace for the accomplishment of this our desire, trusting ye will dispatch our said puruant immediately: for the long debate of so honorable a iourny, we thinke should bound to your dishonour. Written in the field in Moller Haugh the 7. day of September, at six of the clock in the after noon. Subscribed, Thomas Surrey, Thomas Howard, Thomas Dacre, Clifford, Henry Scrope, Raffe Scrope, Richard Latimer, William Coniers, John Lumley, R. Ogle, W. Percie, E. Stanley, W. Molineux, Marmaduke Constable, William Gascoigne, W. Griffith, George Darcie, W. Bulmer, Thomas Strange, wais, &c.

Now the time of battell being come, the earle of Surrey diuided his army into three battails: vnto the vanguard wherof, the lord Howard was captain, his brother sir Edmond Howard was ioined as a wing, the earle himselfe led the middle warde, and the reerward was guided by sir Edward Stanley. The lord Dacres with a number of horsemen stood apart by himselfe to succour where nere should appeere to be. The ordinance was placed in the front of these battels, and in places betwene, and in this order they marched forthward.

In the meane time James king of Scottes beholding the behauiour of the Englishmen from the height of the hill, commanded his standards to be raised and spread, and euery man to resort to his place, that they might forthwith encounter with their enemies: And without delay is James putting his horse  
from

Earle of Surrey's  
letter to  
James king of  
Scots.

from him, all other as well Nobles as meane men did the like, that the danger being equall, and all hope of succor taken awaie, they might be the more willing to thewe their manhood: Then was the armie diuided into 5. wardes, to the intent that the battell wherein the king himselfe stood with his standarde, might bee inclosed, as it were, with two winges: their ordnance was lodged in places most conuenient, though by reason they marched downe the hill, their shot did small damage to the Englishmen coming twardes. And heere with Syr Edmonde Howard with his wing was got by on the hill side, with whom the Lord Hume, and the two earles of Lincol and Arglill encountered with such violence, that this Battayle of Scottes with speares on foote beate downe and broke that wing of Englishmen in such wise, that Sir Edmond Howard was in manner left alone, and selled to the earth: but bastard Heron came to his rescue, or else hee had bene slayne. This Bastarde Heron brought with him a strong troupe of horsemen, which hee being of late banished both from Englland and Scotland, had cunninglie trained by in robberies. And on the other side, the Lord Dacres watcing to ayde where neede shoulde happen, came in on the sides of the Scots, and gaue a charge on them with his horsemen, whereby Syr Edmond Howard escaped to the English Channiguard, which was ledde by his brother the Lord Howard, who being now also got aloft on the hill, pressed still forward to renew the battayle and to succour those whome hee saue put to the twoist, whereby they took courage into them and layde about. Here with the Earle of Crawford, and Spountrose came with their battaile of speares, also on foote, and encountering with the sayde Lord Howard, after soze fight on both sides, both the sayde Earles were slayne, besides a great number of other, the whole battayle which they ledde, being put to flight, and chased out of the field. On the left hande, Syr Edward Stanley, and with him Syr William Molineux, Syr Henry Kighile, and other of Lancashire, Cheshire, hauing begunne to encounter with the Scots on that side, forced them to come downe into a more even ground, and brought to that point, with such incessant shot of arrowes, that to anoble that shappe some, the Scottes were constrained to breake their arraie, and to fight one separate from another: which thing when Syr Edward Stanley perceived, forthwith bringing about three bandes which hee had kept in store, he invaded the open sides of his enemies, by a fresh onsette, and put them in funder in such disorder, that they were not able anie longer to abide the violence of the Englishmen, so that taking themselves to flight, and running downe the hill, they escaped to the wood: but the Earles of Arglie and Lenox were slayne in the same place. In the meane time the king, who a little before had toynd with the Earle of Surrey, perceyning that the winges of his Battayles were distressed, and that his enemies beganne to enclose him on each side, heere with rushing forth upon his enemies, a newe battayle beganne to rise, for that battayle being well armed, passed little for the Arrowes of the Englishmen, inasmuch, that perceiving the earles Battayle, they entered well nere so farre within the same, that they were at a poynt to haue ouerthrowen his standardes. The king himselfe on foote, even in the foremost rank, fought

Paulus Iovius.

fought right balliantly, encouraging his people, as well by example as by persuasions to do the best. Neither did the earle of Surrey faile in the dutie of a worthy Generall: but whilst the battell was thus foughten about the standards, with doubtfull chance of victorie, the Lord Howarde and Sir Edward Stanley, hauing banquished the enemies in either wing, returned to the middleward, and finding them there thus occupied, they sette on, in two severall parts, with great violence, and at the same time the lord Dacres came with his horsemen upon the backs of the Scots, so that they being thus assailed behind and before, and on either side, were constrained to fight in a round compass. King James as he beheld Sir Adam Forman his standarde bearer beaten downe, thought surelie there was no waile for him but death: wherefore to deliuer himselfe from the reproch as was like to follow, he rushed forth into the chiefest pyle of his enemies, and there fighting in most desperate manner, was beaten downe and slain, and a little before him, there died with like courage bluer honorable prelates, as the archbishop of S. Andrews, & two other bishops, besides two abbots, 12. earles, & 17. lordes, besides knights and gentlemen: and about 8000. Scots slain, and almost so manie taken, saith Iovius. All their ordnance and stiffe was taken by the English.

Thus on the 9. of September, king James the seventh of that name, king of Scots was slaine at Bannstone upon Biperd hill, and his armie discomfited by the earle of Surrey lieutenant to Henry the 8. king of England: where was taken prisoner Sir William Scot chancello to the said king, and Sir Iohn Forman his ferleant poster, with diuers other. Also in manner all the Scottish ensignes were taken, and 22. peces of greates ordnance, amongst the which were seauen culuerings, berie faire pecers, whome the king for their likenes one unto another, had named the seauen sisters. There was slaine and taken of our men about 1500. men (saith Hall) during the time of the fight, & in the night following, manie Englishmen lost their horses, and such stiffe as they left in their tents, by the robbers of Tindale, & Tuldale: When the field was done, the earle gaue thanks to God, and made knightes to the number of 35. whose names I overpasse in this place. The body of the king of Scots was not found till the next daie, and then being found and knowne by the lord Dacres, there appeared in the same diuers deadly wounds, his throat cut halfe asunder, his left hand in two places almost cut off, and manie other woundes, as well with arrowes, as other wise: his body was bowelled, rebowelled, and inclosed in lead, and kept at Warwicke, till the kings pleasure were knowne. After that the earle of Surrey had taken order, and set the mouth in god quiet, he returned to the quene, with the dead bodie of the Scottish king, which bodie inclosed in lead (as before is shewed) as I haue bene informed, was carried to Shyne, a monasterie in Surrey, founded by king H. the 5. where it remained for a time, in what order I am not certaine, but since the dissolution of that house, to wit, in the raigne of king Ed. the 6. Henry Grey then duke of Suffolke there keeping house, I haue bene shewed the same body (as was affirmed) so lapped in lead, thowen into an old waste room, amongst old timber, stone, led, and other rubble.

James king of  
Scots slaine at  
Bannstone  
field.

When



The kings letters to Sir Will. Molineux of Lancashire.

When King Henry was returned into England, from his conquest made in France, of the Cities of Artois, and Turney, he forgate not the good service of those that hadde bene with the Earle of Surrey, at the Battaille of Marston, wherefore he wrote to them his louing letters, with such thanks and favourable words, that euery man thought himself well rewarded. The tenure of his letter was this. Trustie and welbeloued we grete you well, and inuest and assure by the report of our right trustie cosen and counsailler the Duke of Norfolk, as otherwise, what acceptable service you amongst other lathie did vnto vs, by your valiant towarne in the assisting of our said cosen against our great enemy, the late king of Scotte; and holte contragoulle you as a verie heartie louing seruant, acquitted your selfe, for the ouerthrowe of the sayde late king, and distressing of his malice and powere to our greatesse honour, and the aduancing of your no little fame and people, for which wee haue good cause to fauour and thanke you, and so wee full heartie doe. And assured maie you bee, that wee shall in such effeaw all wise remember your sayde service in aile your reasonable perfitures, as you shall haue cause to thinke the same right well employed, to your comfort, and weale hereafter. Given vnder our signet, at our Castell of Windesore, the 27. of Nouember. To our trustie and welbeloued, William Molineux knight.

Great pestilence.

This yere was a death of the pestilence in England, especiallie about London, so that in one house, to wit, the spinories without Ald-gate, there died of rums professed, to the number of 27. besides other that were late people, and seruants in that house.

221 Smith bish. of Lincoln created.

About the feast of the Natinitie of our Ladie, deceased William Smith bishop of Lincoln, hee founded Wynterholle Colledge in Wysoy, and before that being bishop of Lichfield, he ordeined an hospitall there, for a master, 2. priests, 10. poore men: he set there also a scholemaster, and an other to teach grammar to poore mens children, in a scholl by him erected. In Henry the 7. gaue vnto it an old hospitall called Donhall in Wirshall, in Chester shire, with the lands, &c. Also at Farnworke where the said Smith and his parents had originall, he bestowed ten pounde the yere for ever, to one that shoulde teach a Grammar scholl.

1514 States created

On the day of the Purification of our Ladie, in the archbishops palace at Lambeth, the king created the Earle of Surrey Duke of Norfolk, with an augmentation of the armes of Scotland, and otherwise rewarded him: hee likewise the same day created Sir Charles Brandon Viscount Lisle (son to Sir William Brandon, that bare king Henry the 7. standard at Bosworth field, and was there slaine) duke of Suffolke, and Sir Thomas Lord Howard high Admirall, Earle of Surrey, Sir Charles Somerset, Lord Harbert his chiefe Chamberlaine, Earle of Worcester, and not long after he made Sir Edward Stanley Lord Spounteagle.

An. reg. 6.

In the month of March following, T. Wolsey the Is. almoner, and bishop of Lincen was consecrated bishop of Lincoln.

In the month of May, the Is. & the D. of Suffolke were challengers at the tilt,

tilt, against all commers, in the which tuss were broken 100. and foureteene flours.

The 19. of Maie, was receyued into London a Cap of maintenance, and a Sworde, sent from Pope Iuly the seconde, with a greatesse companie of noble men and Gentlemen, which Cappe and Sworde was presented to the king on the next Sondale, with a greatesse solemnitie in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul. Frenchmen landed with their Gallies and soldis on the borders of Suffe in the night season, and came to Righthamstede and bent it, taking such goods as they there found, but in the morning they were constrained to flic.

The lord Admirall sent Sir John Wollope to the sea, with diuers Shippes, which sayling to the coasts of Normandy, landed there, and bent 21. villages and towne, with diuers Ships in the haven of Traport, Staples, and other places.

In the moneth of Maie Sir Thomas Louell tooke the seas, and landed at Calais with 400. men of warre: also Sir John Pechy, the lord Burgaueny, the lord Clinton, the lord Cobham, Sir Richard Lewes, Sir John Rainsforth, Sir William Scot, Sir John Scot his sonne, Sir Edward Gilford, Sir Henry Gilson, Sir John Norton, Sir John Fogge, Sir Mathewe Browne, and Sir James Dorek, with diuers Equiers and Gentlemen, and men of warre, to the number of 5000. The Lord Burgaueny being chiefe leauer. These were sent ouer to strengthen the Towne of Calais, and other fortresses within the English Pale, for doubt of aile so dayne attempt to bee made by the Frenchmen.

The French king perceyuing what losses hee had sustayned by the warres agaynst Englande, and doubting least one euill lucke shoulde still followe a nother, determined to make suite for peace, and first agreeing with the pope Leo, desired him to bee a meane for the procuring of some agreemente betwixt him and the king of Englande. Whereupon the popes letters, the French king by an Herault at Armes sent to the king of Englande, requiring of him a safe Conduct for his ambassadores, which shoulde come to intreat for a peace to bee concluded betwixt them and their Realmes. Upon graunt whereof attayned, the French king sent a Comumission with the President of Roane, and others, to entreate of peace. And because they vnderstode that the marriage was broken betwene the prince of Castile and the lady Marie, they desired that the sayde Ladie might bee toynd in marriage with the French king, offering a greatesse Dowrie, and suretie for the same, so much was offered, that the king moued by his Counsaile consented vpon condition, that if the French king dyed, then she shoulde, if it cosde with her pleasure, retorne into Englande with her Dowrie and riches. After that they were accorded vpon the peace, and that the French king shoulde marrie this young ladie, &c. And then was the peace proclaimed on the thirtieth of August, &c.

In the moneth of September the ladie Marie was conueyed to Dover, by the king her Brother, and the Queene: and on the second daie of October, she was

Great sailing.

Cap of maintenance.

French bent Righthamstede in Suffe.

Sir John Wollope bent Traport.

Richard Turpin.

Peace with France proclaimed.



was shipped, and such as were appointed to give their attendance on her, as the duke of Norfolk, the Marques Dorset, the bishop of Durham, the earl of Surrey, the Lord de la Ware, the Lord Berners, the Lord Mounteagle, the four brethren of the said Marques, Sir Maurice Barkley, Sir John Pechy, Sir William Sands, Sir Thomas Bullen, Sir John Car, and many other knights, esquires, gentlemen, and Ladies. They set out from Dover with fourtyne great Shippes, and had not sailed past a quarter of their voyage in the sea, but that the winde rose, and severed the Shippes, driving some of them to Calais, some into Flanders, and her Shippe and three other, with great difficulty, was brought to Boloigne, not without great jeopardy at the entering of the Haven, for the spasser ranne the shippe harde on shore, but the Boates were readie, and received the Ladie out of the shippe, and Sir Christopher Garmish stode in the water, and tooke her in his armes, and so bare her to land, where the Duke of Manselme, and a Cardinall, with many other great Estates, received her with great honour. In this voyage King Henries great Shippe with foure tops, called the Labbeke, was broken and lost, a little from Sanguate west toward Calais: there was in her at that time almost five hundred men, soldiers and mariners, whereof more than foure hundred were lost, so there escaped not one hundred of that companie. From Boloigne the Ladie Mary was conveyed unto Abbeile, and there entered the eight of October, and on the next morrowe, the marriage was solemnized betwixt the French king and the said Ladie, with all honour and royaltie: When the feast was ended, the English Lordes returned with great rewardes into England: Before whose departure from Abbeile, the Dolphin of France, Francis duke of Wales, caused sollemne Juries to be proclaimed, to be kept at Paris, in the moneth of November next ensuing: the said Dolphin with his nine aides, to answer all comers, being Gentlemen of name and armes. When this proclamation was proclaimed in England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his four brethren, the Lord Clinton, Sir Edward Neill, Sir William Sidney, Sir Giles Cagle, Thomas Cheyney and other, got licence of the king to go over to this challenge, and thereupon preparing themselves for the purpose, departed toward France, the 20. of October they landed at Calais, all in great Coates and Hodors, because they would not be known. The twentie five of October Sir Henry Guilford landed at Calais, with two servantes at armes, and twentie poemen of the Crowne and Kings guard, they went to the citie of Paris, with tenne or twelve goodlie Horses to bee at the Jakes, at the Coronation of the Quene: they came all to Paris about the latter ende of October. The Dolphin desired the duke of Suffolke, and the Lord Marques Dorset, to bee two of his immediate aydes, which thereto gladly assented. On the first of November being Sunday, the Quene was Crowned with great sollemnitie, in the Monasterie of Dionos: and on the next daie she was received into Paris, with all honour that might bee desired. On the seaventh of November beganne the Jakes, which continued by the space of three daies, in the which were answered three hundred five men of armes, and every man ranne five courses with shap Spears. The Eng

M. Henries  
great ship cal-  
led the Labbeke  
lost.  
Mary sister to  
H. married to  
the French k.

Waiting to be  
holden at Pa-  
ris.

lish lords and knights did as well as the best, not onlie in the Jakes, but also at the Torney and Barriers, namelie the duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his brother the Lord Edward Grey: when the great triumph was done, the lords of England toke their leave, and came into England before Christmasse.

In the mean time, to wit, in the moneth of November, the D. was delivered of a prince, which lived not long after.

Richard Hun, a merchant sailoz of London, dwelling in the parish of Saint Margaret in Aldgate street, who (for denying to give a mortuary, such as was demanded by the parson for his child being buried) had bin put in the Towlards tower about the end of October last before passed, was now the 5. of Decemb. found hanged with his own girdle of silk, in the said tower, and after he was burned in Smithfield.

Richard Hun  
hanged in Lond-  
ons Towre.

This yere died at Rome the archbishop of York and cardinall, called doctor Banbridge, which was the kinges ambassador there, and was poisoned by an Italian, one of his owne household chaplaines, he was there honorablie buried. And king Henry gaue the said Archbishopricke to Thomas Wolsey then Bishop of Lincoln, who shortly after gaue to bee cardinall and Lord Chancellor.

On Newyears euen died the French k. Lewes the 12. after he had bin married to the lady Mary of England the terme of 82. daies. The k. of England being thereof advertised, caused a sollemne obsequie to bee kept for him in St. Pauls church of London, with a costly hearse, at the which obsequie many nobles were present. Then the k. sent a letter to comfort the Quene his sister, requiring to know her pleasure, whether she would continue still in France, or returne into England. And when hee was advertised of her minde, which was to returne into England, the Duke of Suffolke, Sir Richard Wingfield deputie of Calais, and doctor West, with a goodly band of gentlemen, and yemen all in blacke, and comming to Paris, were well entertained of Francis the new French k. to whom they declared the effect of their commission, which was to receive the D. Dowager, according to the commands. The counsell of France by the kings appointment, assigned forth his dowrie, and the duke of Suffolke put in officers, and then was the D. delivered to the duke, who behaved himselfe so towards her, that he obtained his good will, to be his husband. It was thought, that when the k. created him duke of Suffolke, he perceived his sisters good will toward the said duke, and that hee ment then to have bestowed her on him, but that a better offer came in the way, but howsoever it was, now hee was his love, so as by her consent, hee gave to the k. his brother, makelie beseeching him of pardon in his request, which was humbly to desire him of his good will and contentation. The k. after some tute, agreed that the duke should bring her into England unmarried, and at his returne to marry her in England: but for doubt of change, he married her secretly at Paris, as was said.

The 9. of Aprill a new peace was concluded betwixt the k. of England and Francis the new king of France.

1515  
The French  
king deceased.

An. reg. 7.  
Duke of Suffolke married the lady Marie the kings sister.

Castle of Thersary builded.

Wolsey cardinal.

Parliament at Westminster.

The ascending of Thos Wolsey. 1516

An. reg. 8.  
Wolseye of age 15 yeeres olde.

Scholemaster to the margues Wolseye chyl- drens.

Wolsey got a benefice.

After that the Duke of Suffolke had receiued the French Duchene with his Dolye appointed, and all her apparell, reuelis, and household stuffe deliuered, they tooke leaue of the new French king, and so passing through France, came to Caleis on the 25. of Aprill, where they were honorably receiued, from whence on the .1. of Maie, they sailed ouer into England, and the same night landed at Dover, And on the 13. of May, they were solemnely married at Greenwich.

This yere in the moneth of May, were sent out of England, 1200. masons and carpenters, and 300 laborers to the city of Courney, to build a castle there to chastise the city if it chanced to rebel, and thereby to diminish the garison that then late there to the kings great charge.

In the moneth of September 1516. after his returne from progresse in the west, being at his maner of Whing, T. Wolsey comming thither to him, there was brought to him a letter from Rome to aduertise him, that he was cleered cardinal, which he seemed to mislike of, but the K. willed to take it upon him, and from thenceforth called him my K. cardinal.

In the moneth of November, the king assembled a Parliament at Westminster, especiallie for order in apparell. In the end of which parliament, doctor Warham archbishop of Canterbury, and then K. Chancellor, gaue vp into the kings hands his office of chancellor, and deliuered to him the great seale, which seale incontinentlie the K. deliuered vnto the K. cardinal, and so made him chancellor. And here I thinke good to set downe for example to posteritie, some part of the proceedings of this so oft named Thos. Wolsey archbishop, his ascending vnto honozous estate, and soaine falling again from the same, as I haue bene informed by persons of good credite. Truth it is, this Cardinal Wolsey was an honest poore mans son of Ipswich, in the countie of Suffolke, and there borne, and being but a child, verie apt to be learned: therefore by the meanes of his parents, or of his good friends and masters, hee was conueyed to the Vniuersitie of Oxforde, where hee thortlie prospered so in learning, as himselfe reported, as hee was made Bachelor of Art, when hee passed not 15. yeeres of age, and was called most commonly through the Vniuersitie the boy Bachelor. Thus prospering in learning, hee was made fellowe of Spawden colledge, and afterward appointed to be scholemaster of Spawden Schole, at which time, the K. Sparques Doyset had 3. of his sonnes there at Schole, committing vnto him as well their education, as their instruction. It pleased the said K. Sparques against a Christmas season to send as well for the scholemaster, as for his children home to his house for their recreation, in that pleasant and honorabie feast. When being there, the lord their father perceiving the mite be tight well employed in learning for their time, hee hauing a benefice in his gift being at that time void, gaue the same to the scholemaster in rewarde of his diligence, at his departure after Christmas to the Vniuersitie, and hauing the presentation thereof repaired to the Bishopricke for his institution: in which office, being furnished of all his ordinarie instruments, made speed to the benefice to take the of possession, and being there for that intent, one sir Amias Pouler knight dwelling thereabout, tooke an occasion of displeasure against him,

upon

upon that ground I know not, but sir by your leave hee was so bold to set the scholemaster by the eate, during his pleasure, which after was neither forgotten nor forgotten: for when the scholemaster mounted the dignity to be chance- lor of England, hee was not obliuious of his old displeasure cruelly ministered vnto him by sp. Pouler: but sent for him, and after many sharp words, enjoined him to attende vntill hee were dismissed, & not to depart out of London without licence obtained, so that he continued the re within the middle temple the space of 5. or 6. yeeres, who lay then in the gatehouse next the street, which hee reedified verie sumptuously, garnishing the same all ouer yout side with the cardinals armes, with his hat, cognisances, and other deuises in so glorious a sort, that hee thought thereby to haue appeased his old displeasure. Now may this bee a good example and president, to men in authoritie (which will sometime weeke their will without witte) to remember in their authoritie, howe authoritie maie decalle. And whome they doe punish of will, more then of iustice, maie after be aduanced to high honoz and dignities in the Common Weales, and they backe as folow: who will then take the meanes to bee reuenged of such wrongs, which they suffered before? Who would haue thought then when sir Amias Pouler punished this poore scholler, the scholemaster that euer hee should haue mounted to so high dignitie, as to bee Chancellor of England, considering his basenes in euerie degree? These be wonderfull workes of God and fortune. Therefore I would wish all men in authoritie and dignitie to know and feare God in all their triumphes and glozie, considering in all their doings, that authorities be not permanent, but maie slide and vanishe, as Vniuersitie pleasures alter and chaunge. When as all liuing things most of verie necessitie paie the due debt of nature, which no earthlie creature canne resist, hee chaunced the sayde Lord Sparques to departe out of this present life, after whose death, this Scholemaster then considering with himselfe, to bee but a simple beneficed man, and to haue left his fellowship in the Colledge (for I vnderstand, if a fellowe of that house be once promoted to a benefice, hee shall by the rules of the same be dismissed of his fellowship) and perceiving himselfe also to be destitute of his singular good Lorde, and also of his fellowship, which was much of his reliefe, thought not long to bee vnprouided of some other helpe, or spallership to defende him from all such troubles, as hee lightlye was bryed with, and in his trauell thereabout, hee fell in acquaintance with one sir John Naphant, a very graue and ancient knight, who had a greatesome in Caleis vnder K. Henry the 7. this knight hee serued, and behaued himselfe so discretely, that hee obtained the especial fauour of his master, insomuch, that hee committed all the charge of his office vnto his Chaplaine, and as I vnderstand, the office was the Treasureship of Caleis, who was in consideration of his greates age discharged of his some, and returned agayne into England, intending to liue more in quiet, and through his instant labor and good fayour, his Chaplaine was promoted to be the kings chaplaine, and then hee had once cast anchor in the port of promotion, howe hee was brought, I shall somewhat declare. Hee hauing there a iust occasion to be in the sight of the king daily, by reason hee attended and said masse before him in his closet, and that

Wolseye in the books by sir Amias Pouler.

Wolseye imprisoned in the middle temple newe builded.

Sir John Naphant treasurer of Calers, Thos. Wolseye his chaplaine. Thos. Wolseye was chaplaine to K. the 7.

being done, he spent the daie forth in idlenesse, but would attende vpon those whom he thought to heare most rule in the counsell, and to be most in fauour with the king, the which at that time was doctor Fox, bishop of Winchester, Secreterie, and lord of the priuie seale: And also sir Tho. Louell knight, a verie sage counsellor, a wittie man, being master of the Wardes, and constable of the towre: these ancient and graue counsellors in procees of time perceiued this chaplaine to haue a verie fine wit, and thought him a meete person to be preferred to wittie affaires: It chanced at a certaine season that the king had an vgent occasion to send an ambassadoe vnto the Emperour Maximilian, who lay at that present in the low countrey of Flaunders, not far from Caleis. The bishop of Winchester and sir Thomas Louell, whome the king most esteemed as chiefe of his Counsell, the king counselling and debating with them vpon this ambassage, saw they had a conuenient occasion to preferre the kings chaplaine, whose wit, eloquence, and learning they highly commended vnto the king: the king giuing care vnto them, & being a prince of an excellent iudgement and modestie, commanded them to bring his chaplaine, whome they so much commended, before his presence, with whom he fell in communication of great matters, and perceiuing his wit to be verie fine, thought him sufficient to be put in trust with this ambassage, commanding him thereupon to prepare himselfe to this iourney. And for his depeche to repaire to his grace and his Counsell, of whom he should receiue his commission and instructions, by meanses whereof he had then a due occasion to repaire from time to time into the kings presence, who perceiued him more and more to be a verie wise man, and of a good intendment. And hauing his depeach, took his leaue of the king at Richmond about none, and so came to London about foure of the clocke, where the barge of Graues-end was ready to launch forth, both with a prosperous tide and winde, without anie abode he entered the barge, and so passed forth with such happie speede, that he arrived at Graues-end within little more than three houres, where he tarried no longer than his post horses were prouiding, and then travelled so speedily, that he came to Dover the next morning; whereas the passengers were ready vnder saile to Caleis, into the which passenger without tarrying he entered, and sailed forth with them, that long before none he arrived at Caleis, and hauing post horses in a readinesse, departed from thence without tarrying: and he made such hastie speede, that he was that night with the Emperour. And he hauing vnderstanding of the coming of the king of England ambassadoe, would in no wise delaie the time, but sent for him incontinent, his affection to king Henry the seventh was such, that he was glad when hee had anie occasion to shewe him pleasure. The ambassadoe disclosed the whole summe of his ambassage vnto the Emperour, of whom he required speedie expedition: the which was granted him by the emperour, so that the next day he was clerely dispatched, with all the kings requests fully accomplished and granted. At which time he made no longer delay, but took post horses that night, and rode toward Caleis, conducted thither with such persons as the emperour had appointed, and at the opening of the gates of Caleis he came thither, where

C. Wolsey ambassadoe to the emperour.

where the passengers were as ready to returne into England, as they were before at his iourney forward, insomuch, that hee arrived at Dover by ten or eleven of the clock before none, and hauing post horses in a readinesse, came to the court at Richmond the same night, where hee taking some rest until the morning, repaired to the king at his first coming from his bed-chamber to his closet to masse, whome when the king saw, he checked him, so that he was not on his iourney: Sir (quoth he) if it mate please your highnes, I haue already bene with the emperour, and dispatched your affaires, I trust to your graces contentation, & with that presented the king his letters of credence from the emperour. The king heeing in a great confuse and wonder of his speedie returne and proceedings, dissembled all his wonder and imagination in that matter, and demanded of him, whether hee encountered not his pursuant the which he sent vnto him, supposing him not to be scandle out of London, with letters concerning a verie necessarie matter neglected in their consultation, the which the king much desired to haue dispatched amongst the other matters of ambassage: Yes so (quoth the chaplaine) I met with him yester daie by the waie, and hauing no vnderstanding by your graces letters of your pleasure, haue notwithstanding bene so bolde vpon mine discretion (perceiving that matter to be verie necessarie in that behalf) to dispatch the same: and so much as I haue exceeded your graces commission, I most humbly requie your graces remission & pardon: the king reioicing inwarde not a little, said: Wee doe not onlie pardon you the reaf, but also giue you our Mercellie thanks, both for the proceeding therein, & also for your good and speedy exploit, commanding him so that time to take his rest, and repaire againe after Dinner, for the further relation of his ambassage. The king then went to masse, and after a conuenient time went to dinner. It is not to be doubted, but that this ambassadoe hath in all this time ben with his great friends the bishop, and sir Tho. Louell, to whom he hath declared the effect of all his speed, nor yet what they receiued thereof.

The ambassadoe when he saw time, repaired before the king and counsell, where he declared the effect of all his affaires so exactly, with such grantie and eloquence, that all the counsell that heard him, commended him, esteeming his expedition to be almost beyond the capacite of man. The king gaue him at that time the deanery of Lincoln, which was at that time one of the worthiest promotions that he gaue vnder degree of a bishoprick: & thus from thence forward he grew more and more into estimation and authority, and after was promoted by the king to be his almoner.

Where male all men note the chunneces of fortune that followeth some, whome she intendeth to promote, and to some her fauour is cleane contrarie, though they trauell neuer so much with all the possible diligence that they canie deuide or imagine, whereof for my parte, I haue tasted the experience. Nowe ye shall vnderstande that all this tale that I haue declared of the good expedition of the kings ambassadoe, was reported by his owne mouth after his fall, lying at that time in the great park of Richmond, vnto George Candlish his gentleman vsher, taking the occasion vpon diuers communications

C. Wolsey  
Dean of Lincoln

C. Wolsey the  
kings almoner:

cations to tell this journey with all the circumstances, as I haue here before rehearsed.

When death, that fauoureth none estate, had taken king Henry the seventh out of this present life, who for his wisdome was called the second Salomon, what practises and compasses were then vsed about king Henry the eight: and the great prouision made for the funerals of the one, and the costly deuises of the coronation of the other, I omit. After the finishing of these solemnities and costly triumphs, and that our naturall young and lustie courageous prince king Henry the eight, entering into the flower of lustie youth, and taking vpon him the royall scepter and imperiall diademe of this realme, which at that time flourished in all abundance and riches, whereof the king was inestimably furnished, called then the golden woollie, such grace reigned then within this realme.

Howe the almoner hauing a head full of subtil wit, perceiving a plaine waye to walke in toward his journey to promotion, hamled himselfe so politickely, that the founde the meanes to be made one of the kings counsell, and to grow in fauour and good estimation with the king, to whome the king gaue an house at Wyndesore in Fleetstreete, sometime Sir Richard Emplons, where he kept house for his familie, and so daily attended vpon the king, and in his especiall fauour, who had great suite made vnto him, as counsellors in fauour most commonly haue. His sentences and wittie persuasions in the counsell chamber were alwaies so pithie, that the counsell as occasion moved them, continually assigned him to be the expositor to the king in all their proceedings: in whome the king received such a leaning fantasie, and in respect all for that he was most earnest and readie of all the counsell, to aduance the kings will and pleasure, hauing no respect to the cause: the king therefore perceiving him to be a mete instrument for the accomplishment of his deuided pleasures, called him more nere vnto him, and esteemed him so highly, that all the other counsellors were put from the great fauour that they before were in: inasmuch, that the king committed all his will vnto his disposition, which the almoner perceiving, took vpon him therefore to discharge the king of the weightie and trouble some businesse, perswading the king, that he shoulde not neede to spare any time of his pleasure for any businesse that shoulde happen in the counsell: and whereas the other counsellors would diuers times perswade the king to haue sometime recourse into the counsell chamber, there to heare what was done, the almoner would perswade him to the contrary, which delighted him much: and thus the almoner ruled all that before had ruled him: such did his policie and wit bring to passe. What was more in high fauour but master almoner? Who had all the suite but master almoner? And who ruled all vnder the king, but master almoner? Thus hee perswaded in fauour, untill at last in came presents, giftes, and rewardes so plentifully, that I dare saie be lacked nothing that might either please his fantasie, or enrich his cofers: fortune smiled so fauourably vpon him, but to what end she brought him, we shall heare hereafter. Therefore let all men to whom fortune extendeth her grace, not trust to her subtil fauour, and pleasant promises,

Emplon of  
the young coun-  
sell.

misses, vnder colour thereof, she carrieth benemous gall.

This almoner thus proceeding in fortunes blisfullnes, it chanced the wars betwene the realmes of England and France to be open, in so much, as the king being fully perswaded in his most roiall person, to invade his forraime enemies with a puissant army, therefore it was necessarie that this roiall enterprisse shoulde be speedily provided and furnished in euery degree of things apte and conuenient for the same, the expedition whereof, the king thought no mans wit so mete for policie and painfull trauell, as was his almoner, to whome therefore he committed his whole trust therein, and he being nothing scrupulous in any thing that the king would commaund him to doe, although it seemed to other verie difficult, took vpon him the whole charge of all the businesse, and brought all thinges to good passe in a decent order, as all manner of victuals, prouisions, and other necessities conuenient for so noble a voyage and armie.

All things being by him perfected, the king aduanced to his roiall enterprisse, passed the seas, and marched forward in good order of battell, untill he came to the strong towne of Turwine, to the which he laid his siege, and assailed it verie strongly continually with such vehement assaults, that within short space it was yielded vnto his maiestie: vnto the which place, the Emperour Maximilian repaired vnto the king with a great army like a mightie prince, taking of the king his graces wages, which is a rare thing, and but seldeome done, an emperor to fight vnder a kings banner.

Thus after the king had obtained this puissant fort, and taken the possession thereof, and set all things there in due order, for the defence and preservation thereof to his vse, he departed thence, and marched toward the citie of Turney, and there laid his siege in like maner: to the which he gaue so fierce and sharpe assault, that they were constrained of fine force to render the towne vnto his victorious maiestie: at which time, the king gaue the almoner the bishopricke of the same sea towards his paines and diligence sustained in that towne. And when the king had established all things agreeable to his will and pleasure, and furnished the same with noble captaines and men of warre for the safeguard of the towne, he returned againe into England, taking with him diuers noble personages of France being prisoners, as the duke of Longuille, and vicount Clamont, with other, which were taken there in a skirmish. After whose returne, immediately the sea of Lincoln fell boide by the death of doctor Smith late bishop there: the which benefice his grace gaue to his almoner, late bishop of Turney eled, who was not negligent to take possession thereof, and made all the speede he could for his consecration: the solemnization whereof ended, he found the meanes that he gate the possession of all his predecessores goods into his hands. It was not long after that doctor Bambridge archbishop of Yorke died at Home, being there the kings ambassador, vnto the which sea, the king immediately presented his late and new bishop of Lincoln: so that he had thre bishoppicks in his hands in one peece given him: then prepared he for his translation from the sea of Lincoln vnto the sea of Yorke: after which solemnization done, he being then an

Emplon of  
shop of Turney.

Emplon of  
shop of Lincoln.

*T. Malley*  
archbishop of  
Poike.

archbishop *Primas Anglie*, thought himselfe sufficient to compare with Canterbury, and thereupon erected his crosse in the court, and euery other place, as well within the precinct and iurisdiction of Canterbury, as in any other place. And for as much as Canterbury claimed a superiouritie ouer Poike, as ouer all other bishopps within England, and for that cause claimed as a knowledge of an ancient obedience of Poike, to abate the aduancing of his crosse, in presence of the crosse of Canterbury: notwithstanding, Poike nothing minding to desist from bearing the roof in manner as I said before, caused his crosse to bee aduanced, as well in the presence of Canterbury as elsewhere: wherefore Canterbury being moued therewith, gaue unto Poike a certaine checke for his presumption, by reason whereof, there engendered some grudge betwene Poike and Canterburie. Poike intending to proude some such meanes, that he would be rather superiour in dignitie to Canterbury, than to be either obedient or equall to him: wherefore hee obtained to be made priest cardinall, and *Legatus de Latere*: unto whom the Pope sent a cardinall hatte with certaine buls for his authoritie in that behalfe: Yet you shall vnderstand, that the Pope sent him this worthy hat of dignitie, as a ietwell of his honour and authoritie, the which was conueied in a berletes budge, who seemed to all men to be but a person of small estimation.

*T. Malley*  
cardinall.

Wherefore Poike being aduertised of the baseness of this messenger, and of the peoples opinion, thought it mete for his honor, that this ietwell should not be conueied by so simple a person, and therefore caused him to be stopped by the way immediately after his arrivall in England, where he was newly furnished in all manner of apparell, with all kinde of costly filkes, which seemed decent for such an high ambassado: and that done, he was encountered upon Black-heath, and there receiued with a great assembly of prelates, and lusty gallant gentlemen, and from thence conduced through London with great triumph. Then was great and spedy preparation made in Westminster Abbey, for the confirmation and acceptance of this high order and dignitie, the which was executed by all the Bishops and Abbots about or nigh London, with their rich miters and copes, and other ornaments, which was done in so solemne a wise, as had not bene seene the like, unlesse it had bene at the coronation of a mighty prince or king. Obtaining this dignitie, he thought himselfe mete to beare authoritie among the temporall power, as among the spirituall iurisdiction: wherefore, remembering as well the taunts sustained of Canterburie, as having a respect to the aduancement of his worthy honour and promotion, found the meanes with the king, that he was made lord Chancelor of England, and Canterburie which was Chancelor dismissed, who had continued in that come since long before the decesse of Hen. the seventh. Poike being in possession of the Chancelorship, and inuied with the promotions of the archbishoppe, and cardinall *De Latere*, bating power to correct Canterburie, and all other bishopps & spirituall persons, to assemble his conuocation when he would assigne, he toke vpon him the correction of matters in all their iurisdications, and visited all the spirituall houses, hauing in euery diocese all manner of spirituall ministers, as commissaries, scribes, appri-

ritors,

ritors, and all other officers to furnish his courtes, and presented by preuention vnto him he pleased vnto all benefices throughout all this realme. And to the aduancing further of his legantine iurisdiction, and honour, he had masters of his faculties, masters *Ceremoniarum*, and such other to the glorifying of his dignitie.

Then had he his two great crosses of silver, the one of his Archbishopprike, the other of his legacie, borne before him whither soeuer hee went or rode, by two of the tallest priestes that he could get within the realme. And to increase his gaires, he had also the bishopprike of Durham, and the Abbey of Saint Albans in Comendam. And after, when doctor Foxe Bishop of Winchester died, he surrendred Durham into the kings handes, and toke to him Winchester. Then had he in his hand (as it were in farme) the bishoppicks of Bath, Worcester, and Hereford, so much as the incumbents of them were strangers, and made their abode continually beyonde the seas in their owne countries, or else at Rome, from whence they were sent in legation to this realme vnto the king, and for their reward at their departure, King Henry the seventh gaue those bishoppicks: and they being strangers, thought it more mete for the assurance, to suffer the cardinall to haue their benefices for a convenient summe of money paid them yearly where they remained, than either to be troubled with the charges of the same, or to be pearly burdened with the conueiance of their revenues vnto them: so that all the spirituall promotions and presentations of these bishoppicks were fully in his disposition, to preferre whom he listed. He had also a great number daily attending vpon him, both of noble men and worthy gentlemen, with no small number of the tallest yeomen that he coulde get in all the realme, in somuch, that well was that noble man & gentleman, that coulde prefer a tall yeoman to his seruite. We shall vnderstand that he had in his hall continually three hounds, kept with three severall principall officers, that is to saie, a steward which was alwaies a priest, a treasurer a knight, and a controller an equier: also a coferer being a doctor, three marshals, three yeomen vishers in the hall, besides two gromes, and almoners. Then in the hall kitchen, two clearkes of the kitchen, a cleark the controller, a suriour of the brent, a cleark of the spicerie, the which together kept also a continual messe in the hall. Also in his hall kitchen he had of master cookes two, and of other cookes, labourers, and children of the kitchen, twelue persons: foure yeomen of the scullerie, and foure yeomen of the bluer scullerie: two yeomen of the pastrie, with two other pastlers vnder the yeomen. Then in his pvlke kitchen a master coke, who went daily in beluet or in satin, with a chaine of golde, with two other yeomen and a grome: In the scalding house a yeoman and two gromes: In the pantrie two persons: In the batterie two yeomen, two gromes, and two pages: And in the pelowie likewise: In the seller three yeomen and three pages: In his chaunderie two: In the wasfatie two: In the wardrobe of beds, the master of the wardrobe, and tenne other persons: In the laundrie a yeoman, a grome, thirtie pages, two yeomen purueuers, and one grome: In the bake-house a yeoman and two gromes: In the wood-parke

*T. Malley* bi-  
shop of Win-  
chester.

The order of  
the cardinals  
house.

*T. Malley*  
lord Chancelor.

E. Mallory  
Chappell.

yeoman and a groom: In the barne one: In the Garden a yeoman and two grooms: Porters at the gate, two yeomen and two grooms: A yeoman of his barge, and a master of his horse: A Clarke of the stable, a yeoman of the same: the saddler, the farrier: a yeoman of his chariot: a sumpter man: a yeoman of his stirrop: a muleter: fiftene grooms of his stable, curie of them kept foure geldings: In the almshouse a yeoman and a groom: In his chappell he had a deane, a great dialine, and a man of excellent learning: a subdeane, a repeater of the quire: a Gospeller, a psalter, of singing psalms ten: a master of the children: Seculars of the Chappell, singing men twelue: singing children ten, with one seruauit to waite vpon the children: in the theatrical a yeoman and two Grooms, ouer and besides others retainers that came thither at principall feasts. For the furniture of his chappell, passeth my capacite to declare, the number of costlie ornementes and rich iewels that were to be occupied in the same continuallie: there hath bene scene in procession about the hall, 44. vertie rich Coopes of one late woyme, besides the rich Croffes and candlesticks, and other ornamentals to the furniture of the same. There had two croffe-bearers, and two pillar-bearers in his great chamber: and in his private chamber these persons: first the chiefe chamberlaine, and vice chamberlaine: of gentlemen others, besides one in his private chamber, he had twelue daily waiters: and of gentlemen waiters in his private chamber he had six, and of lodes nine or ten. who had each of them six men allowed them to attende vpon them, except the Earle of Warbie, who had allowed five men: then had hee of gentlemen, of cupbearers, caruers, and skimmers both of the private chamber and of the great chamber, twelue Gentlemen daily waiters there, fortye persons: of yeomen others 6, of grooms in his chamber 8, of yeomen in his chamber five and fortye daily: he had also almshouse men, sometime more in number than other sometime.

There was attending on his boord of doctors and chaplaines, besides them of his chappell, fiftene daily: a cleark of his closet: secretaries two: and two clerks of his signet, and foure counsellors learned in the law. And so much as it was necessarie to haue others officers of the chancery to attende vpon him, that is to saie, the cleark of the cronone, a riding cleark, a cleark of the hamper, and a chafer of the way: then a cleark of the cheeke, as well vpon the Chaplaines, as of the yeomen of his chamber: he had also foure footemen, which were garnished in rich running coats, when fouer he rode in any journey: then had he an herault of armes, and a sergeant of armes, a Whistion, an apothecarie, foure mirthels, a keeper of his tents, an armorer, an instructor of his wards, two yeomen of his wardjobe of his robes, and a keeper of his chamber continually in the court: he had also in his house the seruants of Doct, and a cleark of the greene cloth. All these were daily attending, doleue lying, & by rising, & at meales: he kept in his great chamber a continuall boord for the Chamberers and Gentlemen officers, hauing with them a messe of the young Lordes, and another of Gentlemen: and besides all these, there was neuer an Officer, Gentleman, or woman: this person, but he was allowed in the house some 3 some 2, and all other one at the least, which grew to a great number of persons.

persons. Thus far out of the Check rol, besides other officers, seruants, retainers, and luters that most commonly dined in the hall.

After that hee was thus furnished, hee was sent twice in ambassage to the emperor Charles the first, for diuers urgent causes touching the kings State: it was thought, that to so noble a prince (the cardinal) was most meete to be sent: wherefore, being ready to take vpon him the charge thereof, was furnished in all degrees and purposes, most like a great prince: for first he proceeded so; furnished like a cardinal, his gentlemen being very many in number, were clothed in livery coats of crimson velvet of the best, with chains of gold about the ir neckes, and his yeomen and meane officers in coats of fine scarlet, garded with black velvet a hand broad.

Thus furnished, he was twice sent into Flanders to the emperor, then lying in Bruges, whome he did most highlie entertaine, discharging all his charges and his mens. There was no house within the towne of Bruges, where in any gentleman of the cardinals were lodged, or had recourse, but the others were commanded by the emperors officers, that they, vpon paine of their liues should take no monie for any thing that the cardinals seruants did take of any kind of victuall, no although they were disposed to make any costlie banquetts: commanding furthermore their said hosts, to see that they lacked no such things as they honestly required for their honesty and pleasure. Also the emperors officers every night went through the towne from house to house, where as any English gentlemen did repose or lodged, and serued their liuries for all night, which was done in this manner. First, the officers brought into the house a cass of fine manchet, and of silver two great pots with white wine, and sugar to the weight of a pound; white lightes and yellow lightes of wax; a boll of silver with a goblet to drink in, and every night a stalle toych. This was the order of the liuries every night; and in the morning when the same officers came to fetch away their stalle, then would they account with the hosts for the gentlemen's costes spent in the day before.

Thus the emperor entertained the cardinal and all his traine for the time of his ambassage there. And that done, he returned into England with great triumph.

None of his order in going to Westminster Hall daily in the terme; first ere he came out of his private chamber, he heard service in his closet, and there take his service with his Chaplaine; then going againe to his private Chamber, hee tooke his demande, if his seruantes were in a readines, and had furnished his Chamber of presence, and waiping Chamber, being thereof then advertised, came out of his private Chamber about epght of the clocke, apparelled all in redde, that is to saie, his upper garment cypher of fyne scarlet, or else fyne crimson taffeta, but most commonlie of fyne crimson Saten engrayned, his pillion of fyne scarlet, with a necke sette in the inner side with blacke velvet, and a Tippet of Sables about his necke, holding in his hand an Oronge, whereof the substance within was taken out, and filled wythe agayne with the parte of a Spooonge, wherein was Ginger and other confections against the Pestilent Agres, the which hee most commonlie

E. Mallory  
twice ambassa-  
dor to the em-  
peror Charles.

pels:

helde to his nose when he came among anie puelle, or else that hee was pestered with manie suitors: and before him was borne first the Broade Seale of England, and his Cardinals Hatte, by a Lorde, or some Gentleman of woyship, right solemnelle: and as soon as he was once entered into his chamber of presence, his two great Crosses were there attending to bee borne before him: then cryed the Gentlemen Whithers, going before him bare headed, and saide: An before my Lords and masters, on before, make waie for my lords grace. Thus went he borne through the hall with a Scribeant at armes before him, bearing a greete Pace of silver, and two gentlemen carrying two greate pillars of silver, and when hee came at the Hall doore, there was his mule, being trapped all in crimson velvet, with a saddle of the same, and gilt stirrups.

Then was there attending vpon him, when hee was mounted, his two Crosse Bearers, and his Willer bearers in like case, vpon great horses, trapped all in fine Scarlet. Then marched hee forward with a Traine of noble men and Gentlemen, hauing his soterment, foure in number about him, bearing each of them a gilt Sollar in their hands: and thus passed hee forth, untill he came to Westminster Hall doore, and there lighted, and went up after this manner into the Chauncerie, or into the Star Chamber: howbeit, most commonly hee woulde go into the Chauncerie, and stay a while at a Barre made for him beneath the Chancerie on the right hand, & there commune sometime with the Iudges, and sometime with other persons: and that doone, hee woulde repaie into the Chauncerie, and sitting there untill cleuene of the clocke, hearing of suites, and determining of other matters, from thence hee woulde diuers times go into the Star Chamber as occasion serued. There hee neither spared high ne lowe, but indged euerie state according to his merits and desert. Hee vsed also euerie Sundae to reioyce to the Courte, then being for the most parte of all the yee at Greenwich, with his former triumphes, taking his Barge at his owne Staypes, furnished with poemen, flambing vpon the Bayles, and his Gentlemen being withyn about him, and landed agayne at the thre Cranes in the Mintre: and from thence hee rode vpon his Mule, with his Crosse, his Willars, his Hatte and Broad seale carped afore him on Horse-backe through Thamys Streete, untill he came to Billingsgate, and there tooke his Barge again, and so was rowed to Greenwich, where hee was receiued of the lords and chiefe officers of the kings house, as the Treasurer, Controller, and other, and so conueyed into the kings chamber: then the Court was wonderfullie furnished with Noble men and gentlemen: and after dinner among the Lordes, hauing some consultation with the King, or with the Councell, hee woulde depart homeward with the like triumph.

Thus in greate honour, triumphe, and glozie, hee reigned a long season ruling all thinges withyn the Realme appertayning vnto the King. His house was alwaies reioyced to with Noblemen and Gentlemen, feasting and banquetting Ambassadors diuers times, and all other right noble: and when it pleased the king for his recreation, to repaie to the Cardinals house,

as he did diuers times in the yee: there wanted no preparations, or furniture: Banquets were set forth with maskes and mummeries, in so gorgeous a sort, and costly maner, that it was an heauen to behold. There wanted no Dames or Damoels, méte or apte to daunce with the maskers, or to garish the place for the time: then was there all kinde of musicke, and harmony, with fine voices both of men and chyldren.

One time the king came sodainly thither in a maske with a dosen maskers all in garments like Shepheardes, made of fine cloth of Golde, and Crimolin Satten paned, and Cappes of the same, with Tysars of god bishomie, their haire and beards, either of fine golde-wire like, or blacke like, hauing strecte toye-bearers, besides their drums, and other persons with visars, all clothed in Satten of the same colour: and before his entering into the Hall, he came by water to the water gate, without anie noise, where were laid diuers chambers and guns charged with shot, and at his landing they were shot off, which made such a rumble in the aire, that it was like thunder: It made all the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, to muse what it shoulde meane, comming so sodainly, they sitting quiet at a solemne banquet, vnder this sort: First y<sup>e</sup> Hall vnderstande, that the Tables were set in the Chamber of presence (last covered), and the Lorde Cardinal sitting vnder the cloth of Estate, there hauing all his seruice alone: and then was there set a Table with a Noble man, or a Gentleman and a Gentlewoman throughout all the Tables in the Chamber on the one side, which were made and topned as it were but one Table, all which order and deuise was done by the Lorde Sandes then Lorde Chamberlaine to the king, and by sir Henry Guilford Comptroller of the kings Palesies house. Then immediately after the great Chamberlaine, and the saide Comptroller, sent to loken that it shoulde meane, (as though they knewe nothing of the matter,) they looking out of the windowes into the Thamys, returned agayne and shewed him, that it seemed they were Noblemen and Strangers, arrived at his byldge, comming as Ambassadors from some forreine Prince: with that quoth the Cardinall, I desire you, because you can speake French, to take the paines to go into the hall, there to receiue them according to the Estates, and to condux them into this Chamber, where they shall sit vs, and all these Noble Personages, being merrie at our Banquet, desiring them to sit downe with vs, and to take part of our fare. Then went he incognito downe into the Hall, whereas they receiued them with twentie newe Trenches, and conueyed them vpps into the Chamber, with such a noyle of Drummes and Flutes, as seldom had bene hearde the like. At their entering into the Chamber two and two together, they went directlie before the Cardinall where he sate, and saluted him reuerentlie, to whom the Lorde Chamberlaine for them saide: Sir, so as much as they be Strangers, and can not speake English, they haue desired mee to declare vnto you, that they haue vnderstanding of this your triumphant Banquet, where was assembled such a number of excellent Dames, they coulde doe no lesse vnder suppoite of your Grace, but to repaiee thither, to blesse

A maske and  
a banquet.



as well their incomparable beautie, as for to accompanie them at Spinninge, dance, and then to daunce with them: and sic, they requite of your Grace licence to accomplish the said cause of their coming. To whom the Cardinall said, he was very well content they should so doe.

Then went the Masters, and first saluted all the Dames, and returned to the most worthyest, and there opened their great cuppe of golde filled with crownes, and other pieces of golde, to whom they set certaine pieces of gold to cast at.

Thus perusing all the Ladies and gentlewomen, to some they losse, and of some they won: and perusing after this maner all the ladies, they returned to the Cardinall with great reuerence, putting downe all their golde so left in their cup, which was aboue two hundred crownes: At all (quoth the Cardinall) and so cast the dice and wain them, whereat was made a great noise and toy. Then quoth the lord cardinall to the lord Chamberlaine, I pray you (quoth he) that you would shew them, that me seemeth there should be a Nobleman amongst them, who is moze mete to occupie this seate and place then I am, to whome I would most gladly surrender the same according to my dutie, if I knewe him. Then spake the lord Chamberlaine to them in French, and they rounding him in the care, the lord Chamberlaine said to my Lord Cardinall: Sir (quoth hee) they confesse that among them there is such a noble personage, whom if your grace can appoint him out from the rest, he is content to disclose himselfe, and to accept your place: with that the cardinall taking good aduilement among them, at the last quoth he, me seemes the gentle man with the blacke beard should be euen hee: and with that he arose out of his chaire, and offered the same to the gentleman in the blacke beard, with his cap in his hand. The person to whom he offered the chaire was Sir Edward Neuill, a comely knight, that much moze resembled the kings person in that make than any other.

The king perceiuing the cardinall so deccitfull, could not forbear laugh- ing, but pulled downe his visor and master Neuill also, and dashed out such a pleasant countenance and there that all the noble estates there assembled perceiuing the king to be there among them, reioyced verie much. The cardinall estiming desired his Highnesse to take the place of Estate: to whom the king answered, that he would go first and thence his apparel, and so departed into my lord Cardinalls chamber, and there newe appareled him: in which time, the dishes of the banquet were cleane taken vpe, and the Tables spread againe with newe cleane perfumed clothes, euerie man and woman sitting still, untill the king with all his makers came among them againe all newe appareled: then the king toke his seate vnder the cloth of Estate, commaunding euerie person to sit still as they did before: In came a newe banquet before the king, and to all the rest throughout all the Tables, wherein were serued two hundred diuers dishes, of costly denises and subtilties. Thus passed they forth the night with banquetting, dauncing, and other triumphes, to the great comfort of the king, and pleasant regarde of the Nobilitie there assembled. Thus passed this Cardinall his time from date to date,

date, and vnder to pere, in such great wealth, sole, triumph, and glorie, hauing alwaies on his side the kings speciall fauour, untill fortune enuied his prosperous estate, as is to the world well knowne, and shall be partly touched hereafter.

Ladie Marie king Henries daughter was bozne at Greenewich on the 11. of februarye.

Margaret Quene of Scottes, king Henries eldest siller, who had after the death of her first husband (James king of Scots daue at Bhamstone) married Archibald Douglas earle of Anguise, fled into England, for feare of the duke of Albany, that had taken her two sons, the lay at Warbottle, where she was deliuered of a child called Margaret. But shortly after Archibald Douglas her husband went home againe into Scotland without leaue taking: wherefore the king sent for her to London, where she was royally received and lodged at Baynards Castle, and there she tarried a whole yere ere she returned.

The king for the honoz of his siller Margaret quene of Scots, on the 19. and 20. day of May, prepared and kept sollemne Iusts, wherein the king himselfe, the duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, and Nicholas Carew esquire, answered all comers.

This yere the Cardinall caused all those to be called to accompts, that had dealt with the kings money, and had the occupying thereof in the wars, or otherwise. This audit troubled manie, for some were found in arerages, and some saved themselves by polkie, & surely he so punished persturie with open infamie, causing the offenders to weare papers, and so forth, that in his time it was lesse used then in long time before: he punished also lords, knights, and men of all degrees, for riots, for bearing out wyngs, and for maintenance practised in their countries, whereby the poore men liued quietly, and no man durst bte bolstering, for feare of imprisonment. It was a strange matter to see, a man not trained by in the lawes, to sit in the seate of iudgment, to pronounce the law, being aided at the first by such as according to the ancient custome did sit as associates with him: but he would not sticke to determine lawlike causes, neither rightly decided, nor iudged by order of law: and againe such as were clere cases he would some time prohibite the same to passe, call them into iudgement, frame an order in controuersies, and punish such as came with untrue furnises, afore the iudges themselves, which had receiued such furnises, and not well considered of the controuersies of the parties: he ordained by the kings commission, diuers vnder courts, to heare complaints by bill of poore men, that they might the sooner come by iustice: so that iustice men haue reported, neuer to haue seene this realme in better obedience, and quiet, then it was in the time of his authoritie and rule, ne iustice better ministered, with indifferencie.

The duke of Suffolke departed home into his Countrie, and also the duke of Suffolke followed shortly, for he hauing spent liberally in his tourneies into France, as also in the solemnization of his mariage, and in house keeping wh he was married, borrowed great summes of money of the king, which he

Lady Mary the kings daughter bozne.

The Quene of Scots fled into England.

Dealers with the kings money called to accompt.

Persturie and other vices punished.

Courts to heare complaints of the poore created.



hoped should have bene forgiven him: but the cardinall had called him as all other to account.

Henry ninth  
Barlons to war up  
on the French

In the moneth of October, Matthew bishop of Silon or Sitten, a cardinall of the Swisses, came into England from the emperor Maximilian: At the contemplation of which cardinall, the king lent to the emperor a great summe of money: but the greatest matter that moved the king to be so free to Maximilian, was because the same money should bee imployed on men of war against the French king, to whom of late the k. had conceived a grudge. Whereupon was Richard Pace sent first into Germanie with a great sum of money to wage the Swisses, which under the conduct of the emperor Maximilian, invaded the dutchie of Spillaine, but without anie greate gayne returned from thence, leaving Spillaine in the French mens hands at that time. And now for a newe reliefe was this Cardinall sent from Spillaine, at whose instance mony was assigned to be delivered, and certaine Venetwaies undertooke the exchange, which made not payment at the day, although they had received it of the king.

1517

A greave drought  
in winter, and a  
great frost.

This yere was a great drought, for there fell no rain to be accounted of, from the beginning of September, till the moneth of May in the next yere, where through in some places, men were faine to dylve their Catell 3. or 4. mile to water.

Also for a time the Thames was frozen, that men with horse and carts might passe betwixt Westminster and Lambeth.

The number of  
strangers in  
London much  
hgt.

About this season, there grew a great hart-burning, and malicious grudge amongst the Englishmen of the city of London against strangers, and namely the artificers founde themselves soze graved, for that such numbers of strangers were permitted to resort hither with their wares, and to exercise handie craftes, to the great hinderance and impoverishing of the kings liege people: and this malice grew to such a point, that one John Lincolne a Woher, busied himselfe so farre in the matter, that about Palme Sundae of the first of Aprill, this eight yere of the kings raigne, he came to one doctor Henrie Staadish, with these words: Sir I understande that you shall preach at the Spittle on mundaie in Easter weeke, and so it is, that Englishmen, both merchants and other are undone, by strangers, who have more liberty in this land than they, which is against all reason, and also against the common Weale of this Realme: I beseech you therefore to declare this in your Sermon, and in so doing, yee shall deserve greate thanks of my Lorde Mayor, and of all his Welchmen, and here with bee offered unto the sayde Doctor, a Bill, containing the matter more at large: but Doctor Staadish (wile he considering that there might more inconvenience rise thereof, than hee woulde wishe, if hee should deale in such a sort) both refused the Bill, and told Lincolne plainlie, that he ment not to meddle with anie such matter in his sermon. Whereupon the sayde Lincolne went unto one doctor Bell, a Chanon of the foresaide Spittle, that was appointed likewise to preach upon Tuesday in Easter weeke, at the same Spittle, whom he perswaded to reade his sayde bill in the pulpet, which bill in effect contayned the graces that manie founde with strangers

for

for taking the livings astate from artificers, and the entercourse from merchants, the redresse whereof must come from the commons knit in one: for as the hurt touched all men, so must all set to their helping hands: which letter he read, or the chiefest part thereof, comprehending much seditious matter, and then he began with this sentence, *Calum, cali Domino, terram autem dedit filijs hominum*, and upon this text he entreated, how this land was giuen to Englishmen, and as birds defend their nestes, so ought Englishmen to cherish and maintaine themselves, & to hurt and grieue allians for respect of their common wealth: and upon this text, *Pugna pro patria*, he brought in how by Gods law it was lawfull to fight for their countrey: and thus he subtilly moved the people to rebell against strangers: by this sermon manie a light person took courage, and openlie spoke against strangers. And as unhappie would, there had bene divers euill parts plaide of late by strangers, in and about the citie of London, which kindeled the peoples rancor the more furious against them.

The 28. daie of Aprill, divers young men of the Citie picked quarrels to certaine strangers, as they passed by the Straetes, some they did strike, and busketed, and some they threw into the channell: wherefore the Mayor sent some of the Englishmen to prison, as Stephen Sudley Skinner, Stephenson, Bees and other. Then sodainelie rose a secret rumour, and no man could tell how it beganne, that on Maie daie next, the Citie woulde take all the allians, inso much, that divers strangers fledde out of the citie. This rumour came to the knowledge of the kings Counsell, whereupon the Lorde Cardinall sent for the Mayor and other of the counsell of the Citie, giving them to understande what he had heard. The Mayor, as one ignorant of the matter, tolde the Cardinall that he doubted not but so to gouerne the Citie, as peace should be obserued. The Cardinall willed him so to do, and to take god haue that if anie riotous attempt were intended, he should with god policie prevent it. The Mayor comming from the Cardinals house about foure of the clocke in the afternone on Maie daie, sent for his brethren to the Guildhall, yet was it almost seauen of the clocke ere the assemblee was set. Upon conference had of the matter, some thought it necessarie that a substantiall watch should be set of honest Citizens, which might withstand the euill doers, if they went about anie misrule: other were of contrarie opinion, but rather thought it best, that commandement should be giuen to euerie man to shut in his doores, and to keepe his seruants within. Before eight of the clocke the Recorder was sent to the Cardinall, with these opinions, who hearing the same, allowed the latter. And when the Recorder and Sir Thomas More, late vnderheriffe of London, and nothe of the kings counsell came to the Guildhall, halfe an houre before nine of the clocke, and there theyeued the pleasure of the Kings Counsell: whereupon euerie Alderman sent to his ward, that no man shoulde stir after nine of the clocke out of his house, but to keepe his doores shut, and his seruants within till nine of the clocke in the morning. After this commandement giuen, in the evening, as Sir John Mundie Alderman came from his ward, and founde two

An. reg. 8.  
Guill. May  
dag.

3 k k

young

young men in cheape playing at the bucklers, and a great many of young men looking on them (for the commandment was scarce published) he commanded them to leave off, & for that one of the asked him why, he would have sent him to the counter: but the prentices resisted the alderman, taking the young man from him, and cried prentices & clubs, then out at every doze came clubs and other weapons, so that the alderman was faine to flee. Then more people arose out of every quarter, and forth came servingmen, watermen, courtiers and other, so that by 11. of the clocke there were in cheape, 6. or 700. And out of Pauls churchyard came about 300. so out of all places they gathered, & brake by the church, took out the prisoners that had been thither committed by the spallor, for hurting of strangers. Also they went to Newgate, and took out Studley and Peis, committed thither for the like cause: the spallor and Sheriffs were present, and made proclamation in the kings name, but nothing was obeyed. Here with being gathered in plumps, they ran through St. Nicholas shambles, and at Saint Martins gate, there met with the m<sup>r</sup> Thomas More, and other, desiring them to go to their lodgings: and as they were thus entreating, & had almost perswaded the people to depart, they within St. Martins threw out stones and bats, so that they hurt divers honest persons, so much with sir Thomas More, perswading the rebellious persons to cease: in so much as at length, one Nicholas Dennis a Serleant at armes, being there so hurt, in a furie cried downe with them, and then all the misdeed persons ran to the dozes and windowes of the houses within Saint Martins, and spoiled all that they found. After that they ranne into Coorne-hill, and so forth to an house east from Leaden Hall, called the Cyene gate, where dwelt one Mewtas a Pickard or Frenchman, within whose house dwelled divers Frenchmen, whom they likewise spoiled, and if they had founde Mewtas they would have stricken off his head: some ran to Blanchapleton, and there brake by the strangers houses and spoiled them: they continued thus till thre of the clocke in the morning, at what time they began to withdrawe: but by the way they were taken by the spallor and other, and sent to the Tower, Newgate, and Counters, to the number of 300. The Cardinall was advertised by S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Parre, whom in all haste he sent to Richmond to informe the king, who incontinently sent to the Tower and the state of the city, and was truly informed. S<sup>r</sup> Richard Cholmeley lieutenant of the tower during the time of this busines, shot off certaine pieces of ordnance against the citie, but did no great hurt. About five of the clocke in the morning, the Earles of Shrewsbury, and Surrey, T. Dekwrey L. spallor of S. Johns, George Nevill L. Burgawney, and other came to London, with such powers as they could make, to bid the Innes of Court: but before they came the busines was done as ye have heard. Then were the prisoners examined, and the sermon of Doctor Bell called to remembrance, and he sent to the Tower. A commission of Oyre and determiner directed to the Duke of Suffolke, and other lordes, for punishment of this insurrection. The 2. of May the commissioners with the L. spallor, Aldermen, and Justices went to the Guild-hall, where many of the offenders were imbold, whereupon they were arraigned, and pleaded not guiltie, had day given till the fourth

Printed a Frenchman at the Cyene gate by Leaden hall.

fourth of May: on the which date the L. spallor, the Duke of Suffolke, the earle of Surrey, and other came to sit in the Guild-hall. The Duke of Suffolke entered the Citie with 1300. men: the prisoners were brought through the streets tied in ropes, some men, some lads, but 13. or 14. yeeres olde, to the number of 278. persons: that daie John Lincolne and divers other were indicted. The next day 13. were adjudged to be hanged, drawne and quartered, for execution whereof, were set up 10. paire of gallowes in divers places of the citie, as at Aldgate, Blanchapleton, Grace-Street, Leaden-hall, before either counters, at Newgate, S. Martins, at Aldersgate, & at Bishops gate, these gallowes were set on wheeles to be removed from strate to strate, and from doze to doze, thercunto the prisoners were brought, and there executed. On the 7. of May was Lincolne, Shirwin, and two brethren called Bets, and divers other adjudged to die. They were on herdels drawne to the scaffold in Cheape, and first was Lincolne executed, and as the other had the rope about their neckes, there came a commandment from the king to respite the execution, and then were the prisoners sent againe to prison, and the armed men sent out of London. For it is to be noted that thre Quenes, to witte, Katherine Quene of Englands, and by her meanes Marie the French Quene, and Margaret Quene of Scottes, the kings sisters, (the n<sup>o</sup> resident in Englands) long time on their knees before the king had begged their pardon, which by perswasion of the Cardinall Wolsey (without whose Counsell hee would doe nothing) the king granted unto them.

Three quenes obtained pardon to the Londoners.

On the thirteenth of May, the king came to Westminster hall, and with him the Lozde Cardinall, the Dukes of Suffolke and Suffolke, the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Wilshire, and Surrey, with many lordes, and other of the kings counsell, the spallor of London, Aldermen and other chiefe Citizens, were there in their best liveries by nine of the clocke in the morning: Then came in the prisoners, bound in ropes in a ranke one after another in their thirties, and everie one had a halter about his necke, being in number 400. men and 11. women. When they were thus come before the kings presence: the Cardinall laid fore to the spallor and Aldermen their negligence, and to the prisoners he declared how lustily they had deserved death. When all the prisoners together cried to the king for mercie, and therewith the Lozdes besought his grace of pardon, at whose request the king pardoned them all. The generall pardon being pronounced, all the prisoners shouted at once, and cast their halters towards the rofe of the hall. The prisoners dismissed, the gallowes were taken downe, and the Citizens took more heed to their servants.

The 18. of May, Margaret Quene of Scots departed from London towards Scotland, richly appointed and prepared of all things necessary for her estate through the kings gre at liberality. She entered into Scotland the 13. of June and was received at Berwick by Archibald Douglas earle of Angus her half-bro. In the month of June there were with the king divers Ambassadors from foraine parties: In hono<sup>r</sup> of whom, & for their solace, he prepared

Margaret quene of Scotland returned into Scotland.

costly iusts, he himselfe and 12. other, taking upon them to iust with the duke of Suffolke, and 12. of his partakers: there were broken between the parties on both sides 508. speares.

Sweating sick-  
nes.

1518  
Pestilence.

Ann. reg. 10.

Cardinall  
Campeius  
came into  
England.  
Cardinall Wol-  
sey made legat.

About the feast of Lammas began the sweating sickness, of the which many men died suddenly in the beginning thereof, and this plague continued till Michaelmas, many died thereof in the court, as the lord Clinton, the lord Grey of Wilton, and many other knights and gentlemen, by reason of this contagious sickness, Michaelmas terme was adioyned. After this, to wit, in the winter was a greates death of pestilence, almost ouer all Englande in euery towne more or lesse, wherefore the k. kept himselfe with small companie about him, willing to haue no resort to the court for feare of infection.

Trinity terme was begun at Oxford, where it continued but one day, and was againe adioyned to Westminster.

In the moneth of July Laurence Campeius boyn in Soloisne la grace, commonly called cardinal Campeius legat de latere, from pope Leo the 10. to requite and exhort king H. to make war on the Turke.

At the request of the k. of England, and also of the French k. (which sought now to be receiued into friendship with the k. of England) pope Leo constituted cardinal Wolsey his legat in England, ioining him in commission with the foresaid cardinal Campeius,

Where was at the same time other legates sent into other parts of christendome, about the same matter, as into France, Spain, and Germany: but cardinal Campeius bearing that their suit took no place in other parts, left off his suite about it, and returned to Rome.

After long suit made of the French king and his counsel, it was agreed, that the city of Tourney should be deliuered to the French k. he paying 600000. crownes for the city, to be paid in 12. yerres, & 400000. crownes for the castle, the which the k. had builded, (which was not fully perfozmed): and also he should pay 23. thousand pound Tarnels, the which sometime the citizens of Tarnie ought to the king of Englande, for their liberties and franchises. Afore the French king should pay to the Cardinall of England 1000. marke of perrillie pension, in recompence of his Bishopricke of Tournay. It was further agreede, that the poong Dolphin sonne and heire to the French king, should be marrie with the Ladie Marie king Henries Daughter of Englande, if they both should like each other when they came to age. And then Charles Bewforde earle of Worcester, Lord Chamberlaine of England, with the bishop of Ely and other, were sent into France, to make deliuey of the said City of Tournay, which was done on the 10. of February. The captain Sir Richard Leringham was discharged, and the Frenchmen suffered to enter, the Englishmen returned into England fore displeased, for thereby many a tal proman lacked liuing, the which would be not labour after their retorne but fell to robbing, and lewd life.

The 8. of March solemne iusts were holden, the king himselfe and 8. yong gentlemen, taking upon them to answere the D. of Suffolke and 8. other challengers with him.

This

This yeere the Henry held his feast of S. George at Windsor, with as great solemnitie as it had bene the feast of a coronation, where were present all the knights of the order then withyn the realme.

An. reg. 11.

Shortly after certaine gentlemen of the playn chamber, which through the kings lenity inheriting with their lewde, for getting themselves, and the it out towards his grace, in being too familiar with him, not hauing due respect to his estate and degree, were removed, by order taken by the Councell, unto whome the k. had giuen authoritie to vie their discretions in that behalf, and then were foure sad and ancient knights put into the kings playn chamber, whose names were, Sir Richard Wingfield, Sir Richard Ierningham, Sir Richard Weston, and Sir Wil. Kingstone, and besides these diuers officers were changed in other places.

The French k. desirous to continue the friendship lately begunne betwixt him & the k. of England, made means to the cardinal, that they might in some conuenient place come to an enterolow together, that he might haue farther knowledge of King Henry, and the Henry likewise of him. The cardinal the refore breaking with the king of this matter, declaring how honorable, necessary, and conuenient it should be for him to gratifie his friend herein. And thus the k. concluded an earnest desire to see the French k. and thereupon appointed to go ouer to Caleis, and so into the Marches of Guines, to meete with the French king. When were sent unto Guines, Sir Nich. Vaux, Sir Edm. Becknape, Sir Wil. Sands knights of the garter, commissioners to ouersee the making of a palace before the castle gate of Guines: these landed at Caleis on the 16. of March. There were also sent, the kinges master mason, master carpenter, 300. masons, 500. carpenters, 100. joiners, besides many painters, glassers, tailors, smithes, and other artificers, both out of England, and provided in Flanders, in all to the number of more than 2000.

The said palace was begun on the 19. of March, for the which palace the timber was before bought in Holland, and was so long, for the most part, that the same was faine to be bound together and drayne after ships to Caleis, for no ship might receiue it. The other timber and woode was conueied out of England. This palace was framed in diuers places, all the roofes whereof was couered within with canvas curiously painted and also the walls from the second plat downward: it was also glazed with the best and clearest glasse that coulde be gotten, from the ouer plat vnto the second plat of the stone work, and round about were houses of office, as pantry, buttery, cellar, and other. And thus was there builded the goodliest Palace of timber, that euer was wrought in the Westerly parts of the world.

Then was provision made in England and in Flanders for bismall, wine, and all other things necessary for the furniture of feasts and banquetting.

Herewith were letters written to all such lords, ladies, gentlemen and gentlemen, which should giue their attendance on the k. and Quene, which incontinently put themselves in a readines, after the most sumptuous sort. Also it was appointed that the king of England and the French king, in a campe betweene Arde and Guines, with 18. apes, should be in the moneth of June next

kk 3.

next

1520

The palace  
builded before  
Guines, castle.

next ensuing abode all commers, being gentle men, at the tilt, at the tourney, and at barriers. Then came into England Ordance &c. of arms in France, and made proclamation at the court, that the king of England and the French is, in campe betwene Arde and Guisnes with 18. aydes, in June next ensuing, should abode all commers, being gentlemen, at the tilt & tourney, and at barriers. And the like proclamation was made in the court of France, by Clarendius king of Armes of England: also in the court of Burgoyne, in Almain, and Italy. For the furnishing of those tilts there was devided a tilt, and all things necessarie for that enterprise, in a goodly plaine betwene Guisnes and Arde. About the which was cast a great dike in trench, and a costly house of gallery for the kings and quenes, lords and ladies for to stand in and beholde the tilts and other things there done.

King Henry being informed, that his realme of Irel. was out of order, discharged the earle of Eilbare of his office of deputy, and thereunto was appointed the earle of Surrey Tho. Howard lord admiral: wherefore the said earle in the beginning of Aprill, took leaue of the king, and the duke of Norfolk his father, and passed into Ireland with diuers gentlemen, of such as had been of the garrison of Tournay, and had with him 100. pension of the kings guard, and other to the number of 1000. men, and there he continued two yeres and more, in which space he had many battels and skirmishes with the wilde Irish.

Appointed for  
the kings train  
into France.

There were appointed to attend upon the king once sea to Calcis, and so to Guisnes, Thomas Wolsey cardinal, 12. chaplains, 50. gentlemen, 338. servants, 150. horses: the archbishop of Canterbury: the bishoppe of Durham lord pynp scale: the bishop of Ely: Chesser, and Excester: the archbishop of Armacan: the Dukes of Buckingham and of Suffolke: the marques Dowset: the earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Devonshire, Westmerland, Stafforde, Kent, Wiltshire, Worcesterhire, Northumberland, Dorset and Eilbare: besides, ladies, and knights, ladies, and gentlewomen in great number, whose names I haue set downe in my larger Chronicle.

An. reg. 12.

Chalengers against all gentlemen on horse backe and on foote, for all feasts of armes for thre daies.

The King of England	Sir William Kingstone
The duke of Suffolke	Sir Giles Cople
The lord Marques	Sir Nicholas Carew
Sir Richard Ierningham	Sir Anthony Kneuer.

The French king and seuen gentlemen chalengers of France.

For to furnish the daies of iustes, there were appointed bands, and to enserue band a captain.

The earle of Deuonshire captaine to these:

The Lord Harberd	Sir Francis Brian
The Lorde Edmond Howard	Sir Henry Noris
The Lord Leonard Grey	Master Anthony Browne
Sir Edward Neuill	Master Nicholas Haruy
	Sir John Audley

Master

Master John Parker	Robert Ierningham
Master William Palmer	Sir John Neuill
The second captaine of the bands the lord Montague.	
The lord Richard Grey	Sir Geoffrey Gate
The lord John Grey	Sir Rowland Voluele
Sir Thomas Cheiney	Master Arthur Pole
Sir William a Parre	Francis Paines
Sir William Sidney	John Coffin
Sir Griffith Dune	Master Hansard, with a
Sir Ralph Eldarcare	ther.

The summe of these two bands were 128. for the English side. The king gaue to these two bands 1000. markes, to wit, 50. marke a piece.

King Henry with his traine remoued on the 21. of May, from his manor of Greenwich towards the Sea, first to Medford, then to Lodes, then to Sparing, and so on the 25. came to Canterbury intending there to keepe his Whitsondaie.

On the next morrow, the emperoz Charles the first returning out of Spaine, arrived with his nauie of ships at Hythe in Kent, where he was saluted by the vice admiral of England, sir W. Fitz William, with five of the kings great ships, which lay for the safegard of passengers betwixt Calcis and Dover, toward evening the Emperoz entered his boat, and comming toward land was met and receiued of the lord Cardinall. Thus landed Charles the Emperoz at Dover, under his cloth of estate of the blacke Eagle all set on rich cloth of gold, in whose company was the quene of Aragon, with diuers noble estates, and faire ladies of his countrey and bloud, which were receiued at the sea side, by the lord Legate Cardinall and other lords and gentlemen. The Emperoz to accompanied at ten of the clocke at night by torch light, was brought to the castle of Dover, where he rested, and there sir Edward Poynings warden of the fine ports, brought to the Emperoz the keyes of the Castle, who refused them, saying, he knew well that he was out of all danger, and as safe, as if he were at home in his owne realme. The same night about two of the clocke after midnight, the king came to Dover by torch light, and as soone as the emperoz heard of his comming, he arose, and mette with the king at the faire head, where either embraced other in armes, and there they talked together a long time, and alway the king had the Emperoz on his right hand, on the morrow which was Whitsondaie, the king and the Emperoz with all the other estates rode vnto Canterbury, the two:de boine by the earle of Darby, ryding before them both, by the kings commandement, and so the princes rode to Canterbury, and to Chyists Church, where they were receiued with generall procession, by the Lorde Cardinall and other. The k. and the Emperoz went both vnder one canapie vnto Thom. Becketts chynce, where they made their prayers and oblations, and then went to the archbishops palace, where the Quene of England the emperors Aunt, met him going into the great chamber, of whom he was royally receiued and welcomed. The Emperoz and the king took a little recreation, and then went to high masse, where they offered,

T. Wall.  
Charles the first  
Emperoz landed  
at Dover.

B k k 4.

first

first the Emperoz, and then the king, and so returned to their trauerses set a part, and after went to dinner, at which seruice the Emperours trumpetts sounded and not the kings. On Mondai at nine of the clocke at night, was begun a banquet, which endured till the next morning at thre of the clocke, at the which banquet the Emperoz, the king and the Quene did walsh togither, the Duke of Buckingham giuing the water, the Duke of Suffolke holding the towell, next them did walsh the L. Cardinal, the Quene of France, and the Quene of Aragon. At which banquet the Emperoz kept the estate, the king sitting on the left hand, next him the French Quene, and on the other side late the Quene, the Cardinal, and the Quene of Aragon, which banquet was serued by the Emperors owne seruants. On Tuesday these estates departed out of Canterbury: the Emperoz brought the quene his Aunt to horse backe to Dover ward. Then the Emperoz and the king kept company togither till they came to the Downes, where they parted. The emperoz went to Sandwich, and so to his flacte, which were in number great ships with two tops the piece 44.

King Henry  
tooke shipping  
toward Calais.

The king went to Dover, where he rested that night: and on the thursdaie toke shipping to Calais, where he landed about 11. of the clocke, where he remained five daies, and with him the Quene and ladies, and many nobles of the realme. The number of persons on the king and quenes side were 4334. and of horses, 1637. besides the persons on the French Quenes and duke of Suffolke her husbands, and of the Cardinals.

On the fourth of June, the king with all his nobles, as well the Quene with her traine of Ladies as other, with the whole number of nobles removed from Calais to Guisnes, into the most noble and royall lodging before sene, for it was a Palace made quadrant, and euerie quadrant was 328. fote long, which was in compasse 1312. fote about, set on stages with great cunning.

The 7. of June, the kings of England and France met at the campe between Guisnes and Arde, with both their swordes drawn and borne before them.

The tenth of June, the king of England dined with the French Quene in the towne of Arde: and the Fr. king dined the same day with the Quene of England, in the new Palace made before the Castle of Guisnes, which house was the most sumptuous and costly of riches that hath bene sene.

And after this, these two kings met euery daie after at campe, with diuers lords, and there lodged and turneyed 14. daies: and the two Quenes met at Guisnes and at Arde diuers times.

The 24. of June these two kings and Quenes with their retinues, met at campe where the toiles were kept, and there they banqueted and daunced with maskings and disguisings, that the like had not bene lightly sene, almost all the night following, and then toke their leaue and departed: and on the 25. of June, the king of England and the Quene, and all the court, removed from Guisnes to the towne of Calais, where they rested.

On the tenth of July, the K. with a goodly companie rode to the towne of Chaulin

Chaulin in Flaunders, and there met with Charles the Emperoz, and on the next morrow, the Emperoz, and the lady Margaret, the emperors Aunt Dutchesse of Savoy, with many other great estates, came with the K. of England to the towne of Calais, whereby all the lords and states of England were displaced of their lodgings: and for solace against their coming, was builded a Banqueting house 800. fote compasse, like a Theatre, after a goodly beuise, builded in such maner, as I thinke was neuer sene, with sixtene principals made of great masses, betwixt euery mass foure and twenty fote, and all the outsidcs closed with boards and canuas, within the which, and round about were raised scafolds of thre stages high, for men and women to stand upon: and in the midst of the same banquetting house was set vp a great pillar of timber made of 8. great masses, bound together with yron bandes for to holde them togither, for it was 134. fote of length, and cost 6. l. 13. s. and 4. d. to set it vp right. The banquetting house was covered ouer with canuas, fastened with ropes & yron as fast as might be deuised. And within the said house was painted the Heauens, with stars, sunne, moone, and cloudes, with diuers other things made about ouer mens heads: and there were great Images of whichars covered with canuas painted, representing men of diuers strange nations, and diuers reasons were written by them of the countries that they were likened to be of, and the armes of those countries hanging by them. Also there was made as it were manie ships vnder saile, and windmills on the hills binding: especially there was on the one side set out all the armes of the kings of England, with the kings peltre: & on the other side, the Emperors armes and descent, and about the high pillar of timber in the midst was framed diuers stages, for organs and other instruments of musicke to be played, with men, and children, as well to play on them, as for to set forth their muscicall voices, & to haue made as it were, an heavenly noise. But when the Emperoz, the K. of England, & the other states should haue sit downe to their banquet, this house, and all things els in great abundance being prepared for, furnishing thereof, it fortuned, that in the morning of the same day, the winde began to rise, and increasing till the euening, it then on a sodaine blew off all the canuas heauen with planets, &c. and blew out more than 1000. torches and other lights of waxe prepared to haue giuen light to the banquet. The seats which were with great riches prepared for the emperoz and the king were dashed and lost. The same night the K. of England with 15. persons more richly appareled in a maske, went to the Emperors lodging, and in the chamber of presence danced and reuelled, and then he departed.

The twelfth of July, the Emperoz, and the lady Margaret supped with the king and quene of England, at the Orchequer, where the same night were 8. companies of maskers, and in euery company were 12. persons, all in gold, silver and velvet richly appareled. The emperoz & king in this meane time, besides their pastimes, caused the charters before time concluded to be read, all the articles of the league tripartite, agreed betwixt the Emperoz and the king of England, and the French K. were at full declared, to the which the French king had condescended: and for the more exemplifying of the same, he sent

Banqueting  
house in the  
town of Calais,  
Richard Turpin.

Banqueting  
house detached,  
the canuas  
beauen blowing  
downe.

monifex:

monſieur de Roch with letters of credence, to ſignify to the emperor, that in the word of a prince he would obſerve and keepe all the ſame articles, for him, his realme, and ſubjects.

The 8. of July the emperor Charles and the ladie Margaret, departed out of Calcis. The king gave to the Emperor a Baie Courſer, trapped with golde ſmithes worke, ſet with ſtones and pearle, in which place the Emperor alighted from his horſe, and mounted upon the ſaid courſer, wherein he toke great delight, and toke him by with the ſpurs luſilie, and ſo departed ſonnelie from Calcis, and rode to Grauelin. The king remayned at Calcis ſome few dayes, and then tooke ſhipping with the Quene and Nobility, and had ſaile winde to Dover, where hee arrived the ſame night with all his companie in ſafetie.

1521

This yere H. kept his Chriſtmas at his manor of Greenwich, with great ſtialty and open court, & on the 10. of February in his own perſon taſted with all commers.

Order taken as  
gaint incloſed

About this time the king being moved by ſach of his counſell as had regard to the common wealch of this realme, conſidering howe for the ſpace of ſixtie yeres paſt and moze, the nobles and gentlemen of England, being given to praſing of cattell, and keeping of ſhepe, to the great decaye of huſbandrie and tillage, furniſhing the ground with beaſts, ſheep and deer, ſo incloſing the fields with hedges, pales, and ditches, as might ſtand moſt to their own privat commodity: Wherefore the king cauſing ſuch good ſtatutes as had bene deuiled and eſtabliſhed for reformation in this behalfe, to be reuiſed and called vpon, and alſo directing forth his commiſſion unto Juſtices of peace, and other ſuch magiſtrates, that preſentment ſhould be made of all ſuch incloſures, and decay of huſbandrie as had chanced within the ſpace of 50. yeres beſore that preſent time. The Juſtices and other magiſtrates, according to their commiſſion executed their authority: and ſo commandement was given, that the decayed houſes ſhould be built againe, that the huſbandmen ſhould be placed elſewhere in the ſame, and that incloſed grounds ſhould be laiſe open, & ſore puniſhment appointed againſt them that diſobeyed.

D. of Bucking-  
ham accuſed  
and arreſted.

In this meane time Edward Duke of Buckingham was accuſed of high treaſon, wherefore the king directed his letters to the ſaid duke, being at his manor of Eghornebury in Glouceſterſhire, that incontinently he ſhould come to his preſence, which commandement the duke obeyed, and came to London, where he was ſtraightwaies arreſted by ſir Henry Marney captain of the gard, and conueied to the toſſer of London on the 16. of Aprill: before which time ſir Gilbert Parke the dukes Chancelor was taken, which had confeſſed matter of high treaſon concerning the kings perſon. There was alſo attached one Nic. Hopkins a monke of the order of Carthuſians, being of Henton priory in Sommeſetſhire, & 1. de la Court the dukes confeſſor, and other, theſe were priſoners in the Tower.

Am. reg. 13. After the apprehenſion of the D. Inquiſitions were taken in diuers ſhires of him, ſo that by the knights and gentlemen he was indicted of high treaſon for certaine wordes ſpoken by the ſaide duke at Blechingley in Surrey, to George Nevill

Nevill L. Burgauney, and there with was the ſame lord attached for concealement, and ſo he and wife was the L. Montague, and both conueied to the Tower: and ſir Edward Nevill brother to the ſaide L. of Burgauney was forbidden the kings preſence.

Moreouer, in the Guild hall of London, before ſir John Brige knight then ſpeaker of the ſame Citie, by an inqueſt, the ſaide duke was indicted of diuers points of high treaſon, as by the ſame indictment (which I haue ſeen and read) it appeareth, inferring, that the ſaide duke intending to craill himſelfe, and to ſurpe the Crowne, the roiall power, and dignitie of the realme of England, and to deprive the king thereof, that hee the ſaide duke might take vpon him the ſame againſt his allegiance, had the tenth day of March, in the ſecond yere of the kings raigne, and at diuers times beſore, and after, imagined and com- paſſed the kings death and deſtruction at London, and at Eghornebury in the countie of Glouceſter: and for the accompliſhment of the wicked intent and purpoſe, the 24. of Aprill, in the 4. yere of the kings raigne, he ſent one of his chaplaines called John de la Court vnto the priory of Henton in Sommeſetſhire, which was an houſe of Carthuſian monkes, there to vnderſtande of one Nich. Hopkins, a monke of the ſame houſe (who was bachelier reputed by way of reuelation to haue ſoreknowledge of things to come) what ſhould happen concerning this matter, which he had imagined: which monke, cauſing the ſayd de la Court firſt to ſwear vnto him, not to diſcloſe his wordes to any manner of perſon, but only to the duke his maſter, therewith declared that his ſp. the ſaide duke ſhould haue all, willing him for the accompliſhment of his purpoſe to ſeke to win the fauor of the people. De la Court came back with this anſwere, and told it to the duke at Eghornebury the morrowe after, being 25. of Aprill. And on the 22. of July the ſame fourth yere, the duke ſent the ſame de la Court with letters vnto the ſayde monke, to vnderſtand of him further of ſach matters, and the monke tolde to him agayne for anſwere, that the duke ſhould haue all: and being asked as wel now as beſore, at the firſt time, howe he knew this to be true, he ſaid, by the grace of God, and with this anſwere de la Court now alſo returning declared the ſame vnto the D. on the 24. of July at Eghornebury aſoreſaid. Moreouer, the ſaid duke ſent the ſame de la Court agayne vnto the ſaide monke with his letters the 26. of Aprill, in the 5. yere of the kings raigne, when the king was to take his iourney into France, requiring to vnderſtand what ſhould become of theſe warres, and whether the Scottiſh king ſhould in the kings abſence invade this realme or not. The monke among other things, for anſwere of theſe letters, ſent the duke word that the king ſhould haue no iſſue male. Again the ſaid duke the 20. day of Feb. in the 6. yere of the kings raigne, being at Eghornebury, ſpake theſe wordes vnto Ralph Carle of Chicheſterland: Well, there are two dukes created in Englande, but if ought but god come to the king, the duke of Buckingham ſhould be next in blood to ſucceede to the Crowne. After this the ſaid duke on the 16. day of Aprill, in the ſaid firſt yere of the kings raigne, went in perſon vnto the priory of Henton, and there hadde conference with the ſoreſayde monke Nicholas Hopkins, who tolde him, that he ſhould be king: wherevnto the duke ſaid, that if it chanced

hee

he woulde shew himselfe a iust and right wise prince. The monke also tolde the Duke, that he knew this by relation, and willed him in any wise to procure the loue of the Commons, the better to attayne his purposed intention. The Duke the same time gaue, and promised to giue pærelle vnto the sayde ppylorie five pounde, the twelfth to buy a tunne of wyne: and further promised to giue vnto the sayde ppylorie in ready money twentie pounde, whereof tenne pounde he gaue in hand, towards the conuysing of waier vnto the house by a conduit. And to the sayde monke Nicholas Hopkins, he gaue at that present in rewarde thre pounde, and at one other time fo; the shillings, and at another time a marke, and at another time for shillings and right pence. After this, on the twentieth daie of March, in the tenth yere of the kings raigne, he came to the same ppylorie, and ellsones had conference with the sayd monke, to be more fully informed by him in the matters aboue specified, at what time the monke also told him, that he should be king, and the Duke in talke tolde the monke, that he had done verie well to binde his chaplaine Iohn de la Court, vnder the seale of confession, to keepe secret such matters, fo; if the king should come to the knowledge thereof, it would be his destruction. Likewise, the twentieth daie of October, in the seventh yere of the kings raigne, and at diuers other times, as well before as after, the sayde Duke hadde sent his Chancellor, Robert Gilbert, chaplaine vnto London, there to buye certayn clothes of gold, siluer, and beluets, euery time so much as amounted to the value of thre hundred pounde, to the intent, that the sayde duke might bestow the same, as well vpon knightes, esquires, and gentlemen of the kings house, and premon of his gard, as vpon other the kings subiectes, to win their fauours and friendships to assist him in his euill purpose: which clothes the sayde Gilbert did buye, and brought the same to the sayd duke, vpon the 20. day of January, in the said seventh yere, and diuers other daies and yeres before and after, did distribute, and giue the same to certayn of the kings subiectes, for the purpose before recited. Further more, the sayde Duke the tenth of Iulie, in the tenth yere of the kings raigne, and diuers other daies and times, as well before as after, did constitute more generall and particular offices in his castles, honours, lordships and landes than he was accustomed to haue, to the end they might be assistant to him vnder colour of offices, to bying his euill purpose to passe. Moreover, the same duke sent to the king the tenth daie of May, in the ninth yere of his raigne, for licence to retaine any of the kings subiectes, whom it should please him, dwelling within the shires of Hereford, Gloucester, and Somersetshire: and also, that hee might at his pleasure conueie diuers armours, and habiliments for warre into Wales, to the intent to vie the same against the king, fo; the accomplishment of his naughty purpose, which was to deuoie the king, and to vsurpe the Royall gouernement and power to himselfe: which suite for licence to haue Retainers, and to conueie such armours and habiliments of Warre, the sayde Gilbert the twentieth daie of May, in the said ninth yere, and diuers other daies before and after at London, and East Grenewich did followe, laboring earnestlie, both to the king and counsell, for obtaining of the same. And the twentieth day of Iuly, in the said ninth yere,

the

the sayde Duke sent the sayde Gilbert vnto Hertford aforesayde, to vnderstand of the aforesayde Monke Nicholas Hopkins what hee hearde of him: and the Monke sent him word, that before Christmas next there should be a change, and that the Duke should haue the rule and gouernement of all Englande. And moreover, the twentieth daie of February, in the eleventh yere of the kings raigne, at Blechinglie in Surrey, the sayde duke sayd vnto the sayd Robert Gilbert his Chancellor, that hee did expect and tarrie for a time more conuenient to achieve his purpose, and that it might easilie be doone, if the nobles of the realme would declare their mindes together: but some of the mistrasted and feared to helpe their mindes together, and that marred all. He said further the same time vnto the sayde Robert Gilbert, that what soeuer was doone by the kings father, was doone by wrong: and still the duke murmured against all that the king then presentlie raygning did. And further he sayde, that hee knewe himselfe to bee so wicked a sinner, that hee wanted Gods fauour, and therefore hee knewe, that what soeuer hee tooke in hand against the king, had the worse successe. And further more, the sayde duke (to alienate the kings subiectes mindes from duefull obedience, towards him and his heires, the twentieth daie of September, in the first yere of his raigne) being then at London, reported to Robert Gilbert, that he hadde a certayne writing, sealed with the kings great seale, comprehending a certayn act of parliament, in the which it was enacted, that the duke of Somerset, one of the kings progenitors was made legitimate. And further, that the sayde duke meant to haue deliuered the same writing vnto king Henry the 7. but (said he) I would not that I had so doone for tenne thousand pounde. And furthermore, the same duke the fourth daie of November, in the eleventh yere of the kings raigne, at East Grenewich in the Countie of Kent, sayde vnto one Charles Kneuer esquire, after that the king had reproued the duke for retaining William Bulmer knight into his seruaice, that if he had perceiued that he should haue bene committed to the tower, as he doubted he should haue bene, hee would haue so wrought, that the principall doers therein should not haue had cause of great reioycing, fo; he would haue played the part, which his father intended to haue put in practice against Ric. the 3. at Salisburie, who made earnest suite to haue come to the presence of the same king Ric. which suite if he might haue obtained, hee having a knife secretlie about him, would haue thrust it into the body of king Ric. as he had made semblance to knaue doone before him: and in speaking these words, he maliciously laid his hand vpon his dagger, and said, that if hee were so euill bled, he would do his best to accomplish his pretended purpose, swearing to confirm his word, by the blood of our Lord.

And beside all this the same Duke the 10. of May, in the 12. yere of the kings raigne at London, in a place called the Rose, within the parish of S. Laurence Poultrey in Cantwellstreet ward, demanded of the said Charles Kneuer esquire what was the talke amongst the Londoners, concerning the kings towne be- yond the seas: and the sayde Charles tolde him, that many stood in doubt of the journey, least the Frenchmen meant some deceit towards the king: whereunto

the

the D. answered, it was to be feared least it would come to passe, according to the wordes of an holie monk, for there is (saith hee) a certaine Charter holie monk, that diuers times hath sent to mee, willing me to sende vnto him my chancelor, and I did send vnto him Iohn de la Court my chaplain, vnto whom he would not declare any thing, till de la Court had sworne vnto him to keepe all things secret, and to tell to no creature liuing what he should heare of him, except it were to mee, and the said monk tolde to de la Court, that neither the king nor his betres should prosper, and that I should inendeor my selfe to purchase the god wills of the commonalty of England, for I (the same duke) and my blood should prosper and haue the rule of the realme of England. Then said Charles Kneuet, the monk may be deceived through illusion of the deuill, and that it was euill to meddle with such matters, well said the D. it cannot hurt me, and so the D. seemed to reioice in the monks wordes. And further, the same time the D. tolde the said Charles, that if the king had miscaried now in his last sickness, he would haue chopped off the heads of the cardinall, of Sir Tho. Louell knight, and of others: and also said, that he had rather die for it, than to be so siled as he had bene. Moreover, the 10. day of September in the said 11. yere of this R. reign, at Wicheingly in the countie of Surrey, walking in the gallery there with George Neuell knight, lord of Burgauey, the D. murmuring against the kings counsellors, and their gouernment, said vnto the said George, that if the R. died, he would haue the rule of the realme in spite of whoeuer said the contrary, & withall said, that if the said L. of Burgauey would say, that the D. had spoken such wordes he would fight with him, & lay his sword vpon his pate, and this he bound with many great othes. These were the points and articles compelsed in the indictment, and laid to his charge, wherof he was by the inquest found guilty.

D. of Buckingham arraigned,

On the 13. of May, the said D. was brought from the towre by water vnto Westminster hall, before the D. of Norfolk high steward of England, to accomplish the high of appeale of the peer 2: peers of the realme, and to discern and iudge the cause of the peer 2: peers. There were also appointed to sit as peers and iudges vpon the D. of Buckingham, the duke of Suffolke, the marques Dowset, the earles of Worcester, Devonshire, Essex, Shrewsbury, Kent, Oxford, Darby, the lords of S. Johns, de la Ware, Fitz Warren, Willoughby, Brooke, Cobham, Herbert and Morley. There was made within the Hall at Westminster a scaffold for these lords, and a presence for the Iudge, raised, and counterlaid about, and barred with begges. When the lords had taken their place, the D. was brought to the bar, and vpon his arraignment pleaded not guilty, and put himselfe vpon his peer 2: peers. When was the indictment read, which the D. denied to be true, and (as he was an eloquent man) alledged reasons to falsifie the indictment, berie pitifully. The kings attorney against the dukes reasons, alledged the examinations, confessions, and proofes of witnesses. The duke desired the witnesses might be brought forth: and then came before him Charles Kneuet, Sir Gilbert Perke his chancelor, Iohn de la Court his confessor, and Nicholas Hopkins the monk of Winton that had fed his humour with vaine speeches: others presumptions & accusations were laid to him by Charles Kneuet, which

he

he would haue couered. But the depositions being read, and the deponents delivered prisoners to the officers of the towre. Finally, he was found guilty by his peer 2: peers, and hauing iudgment to suffer as in case of treason is vsed, was led again to his barge, and so conueyed by water to the Temple staires, where he was set a land, and from thence by land through London to the towre with the are afore him, Sir W. Sands hauing him by the right arme, and Sir Nich. Vaux by the left arme. And on the 17. of May, being the Friday before Whit Sunday, he was deliuered to the shirifs of London, who led him to the scaffold on the towre hill, about 11. of the clocke, and there he was beheaded, in the presence of Sir Th. Louell and all the people. his body with the head was born by the sisters Augustine to their church, and there buried in the Chappell Church for the close. And now followeth the publication at the disgrading of the said Edw. late D. of Buckingham knight and companion of the most noble order of S. George, named the Garter, which was read and published by Garter king at Armes, at the feast of S. George in the quire of Windsoze Colledge, standing on the high pale at the dore, all the other officers of armes about him, there being also present the L. marques Dowset knight of the same order, then being the kings deputy for the feast, the earle of Essex, the earle of Wiltshire, the earle of Kent, Sir Th. Louell, and the L. le Ware, knights of the said order, with other great audience assembled there on the 8. of June, the 13. yere of Henry the 8. the yere of Christ 1521.

D. of Buckingham beheaded.

D. of Buckingham disgraded.

We it knowe vnto all men, that whereas Edward late Duke of Buckingham knight, and companion of the noble order of Saint George, named the Garter, hath latelie done and committed high treason against the king our soueraigne lord, and soueraigne of the said order of the garter, in compassing and imagining the destruction of the most noble person of our said soueraigne lord the king, contrarie to his othe and due allegiance, and for the which high treason the said Edward hath bene indicted, arraigned, conuicted, and alainted, and for the which detestable offence and high treason, the said Edward hath deserued to be disgraded of the said noble order, and expelled out of the said company, and not worthy that his armes, ensignes, and hachmentes should remaine among other the noble ensignes of other noble, vertuous, and approued knights of the said noble order, nor haue the benefits of the said noble order: therefore our said soueraigne lord the king, soueraigne of the said noble order of Saint George named the Garter, by the aduise of the other knightes of the said noble order, for his said offences, and committing of the said high treason, willet and commandeth that the said Edward duke of Buckingham to bee disgraded of the said noble order, and his armes, ensignes, and hachmentes clarelie expelled, and put from among the armes, ensignes, and hachmentes of the other noble knightes of the said order, to the intent, that all other noble men thereby male take ensample hereafter, not to commit any such heinous and detestable treason and offences, as God for his they should:

God saue the King.

It is to bee remembred, that Sommer set Herault was in the rode lost behind the hachmentes of the said duke Edward: and when Garter spake these wordes,

Disgrading of the knight of the Garter.



woozes, expelled and put from the armes, then the said Somerset violently cast downe into the quire, his creast, his banner, and sword. And when the publication was all done, the officers of armes, spurned the said hachment with their fete, out of the quire into the body of the church, first the sword, & then the banner, and then was the creast spurned out of the said quire through the Church out at the west doore, and so to the bydge, where it was spurned over into the ditch. And thus was the said Edward late duke of Buckingham fully disgraced of the order of Saint George named the Garter.

The duke of Buckingham had begun a great and sumptuous building of his manor of Thorneburie, but left the same unfinished. The foundation of a very spacious base court was there begun, and certaine gates and towers in it cast like. It was of a fowre or five yardes high, and so remained, a token of a noble piece of worke purposed. He made a faire parke hard by the castle, and took much faire ground into it very fruitful of coine, now faire lands for, treading. The inhabitants cursed the Duke those lands so inclosed. There was afore Duke Edwards time a parke at east Wotton, a mile or more off: but Duke Edward at two times enlarged it to the compasse of five miles, not without many curses of the poore tenants.

In this meane while were the Emperour and the French king fallen at variance, so that the warre was renewed betwixt them. For the pacifying whereof Cardinal Wolsey, with the bishops of Ely and Durham were sent over, there went with them the earle of Worcester the lord chamberlaine, the lords S. Iohn, Ferrers and Herbert, the primate of Armacane, sir Th. Bolleigne, sir John Pechy, sir John Husley, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Henry Gildford, and many other knights, esquires, and gentlemen, the se arrived at Calais on the second of August.

The same day came to Calais ambassadors from the emperour: and on the 4. of August came the chancelor of France, and the count de Pallace with 400. horse, by which meanes there met at Calais the lords of England (before named) of Burgoigne, Spaine, Flanders, and France, with the popes nuncio, to make peace betwixt the Emperour and the French king. Cardinal Wolsey would have furthered a league betwixt the emperour, the King of England, the King of France, and the Pope, but the Popes ambassador wanted commission thereto, and therefore were letters sent to Rome, and the French men remained still at Calais till answer came from thence.

The Cardinal Wolsey on the twelfth daie of August rode into Flanders, to speake with the Emperour, which as then laie in Burges: a mile without Burges the Emperour received him, and bid to him as much honor as could be desired: the cheare was great which was made to the English men, and of everie thing there was such plentie, that there was no want of things necessary. The Cardinal, after he had sojourned in Burges by the space of 13. daies, and concluded divers matters with the Emperour, and accomplished his commission, he took leave of the Emperour, and the nine and twentieth day of August returned to Calais, where the ambassadors of France started his coming.

Lij

The first of September the Cardinall Chancelor of England, the Chancelor of France, and the Chancelor of Burgoigne rode from Staple unto their lady church in Calais. The fourth of September the regent of Naples came to Calais, to the great council there: and the 27. of September the Chancelor of Hungarie came to the same council, but in fine nothing was concluded, but only that the shermen of both princes might freely fish in the seas without disturbance, till the second day of February next. Thus, when no conclusion of agreement could be accorded, the cardinall sent to the Emperour the lords of S. Iohns, and sir T. Bolleigne knight, to aduertise him what was done.

During the continuance of the Cardinall at Calais, all writs and patents were there by him sealed, and no sheriffes of shire chosen for lacke of his presence, having there with him the great seale, and full power in things, as if the king had bene there in person. After the returne of the English ambassadors from the Emperour and French king, the cardinall returned into England about the latter end of November, he landed at Calais, and from thence took his journey to Blethingley, where the king welcomed him, and gave him thanks for his great paines.

King Henry wrote a booke against Luther in Germany, and therefore the Pope Leo the tenth, named him Defender of the faith. To the which booke Luther answered verie sharply, nothing sparing his authoritie or maiestie.

Pope Leo died this yere, whereupon Doctor Pace Deane of Pauls was sent to Rome to make friends in the behalfe of Cardinal Wolsey, who was brought into a bad hope, through the kings favour and furtherance, to be elected Pope: but Adrian the first was chosen before doctor Pace could come to Rome, and so that suite was dashed. This Pace was a right worthe man, and one that gave in counsell faithfull advice, learned he was also and endowed with manie excellent good gifts of nature, courteous, pleasant, and delighting in mucke, highlie in the kings favour, and well heard in matters of weight.

This yere was a great death in London and other places of the Realme: manie men of honor and great worship died, and amongst other doctor Fitz James bishop of London, in whose place was elected doctor Tunstall. Also a great death in London and other places, for wheate was sold for twenty shillings the quarter.

The earle of Surrey returned out of Ireland, and came to the court on the 25. of January. Many complaints to the king were made by the merchants of the Frenchmen which spoiled them by sea of their goods, for by reason the seas were open betwixt the emperour and the French king, many ships of war were abroad on both parts, and now and then the English men fell into their hands, and were used as enemies, namely by the French men, whereof the French ambassadors promised restitution, but little was recovered. In the month of Januarie therefore, the king commanded all his ships to be rigged and made ready, which was done with all diligence.

In this meane time grudges and displeasures still grew and increased: the

Lij

King Henry  
writ against  
Luther.

Doctor Pace  
Dean of Pauls.

A great death,  
and death in  
England.

Ships rigged  
to the sea.

twene the king of England and the french king, till at length, the duke of Albany returned into Scotland, contrarie to that which was covenanted by the league. The french king alledged, that he was not prite to his going thither, and wrote to the king, that the said duke was entred Scotland with out his assent. Hereupon the king sent fir ships to the sea well appointed, the admiral wherof was Christopher Coo, an expert sea man, his commission was to safeguard the merchants, and other the kings subjects that were in danger to be grievously spoiled and robbed on the sea by the frenchmen, Scots, and other rangers.

The 8 of febr. the lord Dacres warden of the marches, fore-aneest Scotland entred into Scotland, with 500. men, by the kings commandeiment, and there proclaimed that the Scots should come into the kings peace by the first of March following, or else to stand at their perils: the D. of Albany being then within five miles with a mighty power of Scots.

The eleuenth of february, the lord Burgaweny was brought from the tower to Westminster, and there in the kings bench confessed his indictment of mispicion.

The 11. Montague was about the same time ressojed to the kings favor.

This yere died the lord Brooke, sir Edward Poyneys knight of the gartar, sir John Pechy, and sir Edward Belknappe, valiant capitaines.

A Scottish roner called Duncan Camell, after long fight was taken on the sea by John Arundell esquire of Cornwall, who presented him to the king, and he committed him to the tower, where he remained a long season.

The 6. of March, the french k. commanded all Englishmens goods being in Bourdeaux to be attached, and put under arrest, and retained not onely the money due to be payde, for the restitution of Tourney, but also witheld the french Quenes dowry. The french ambassado: therefore was called afore the councill, and the cardinall laid fore to his charge, that contrary to his promise at all times made on the french kings behalfe, affirming, that he meant nothing but peace and amitte to be observed in all points with the k. of England, yet now the English merchants had not onely their goods staied at Bourdeaux, but also they and their factors were laide in prison in full breach of all peace and amitie afore time concluded. The ambassado: as well as he coulde excused his master, but in the end he was commanded to kepe his house, and the french hostages that were appointed here to remaine for the money to be paid for the delivry of Tourney, were committed to safe keeping: wherewith also all the frenchmen in London were arrested, committed to prison, and put to their fines: but they were after ten daies set at libertie, upon finding sureties to appeare before the maior, or else afore the councill at a certain day, and to pay the fine upon them assessed, which fine the king pardoned to diuers of the poorer sort.

This yere betwene Casser and Spichardmas was made a generall proscription of all the realme of England by taking of musters and otherwise in every countrey, as may appeare by the charge sent to a chiefe Constable.

William Fitz Williams knight, Richard Fitz Lewes knight, Robert Norwich sergeant

Sergeant at the law, and John Tirrell esquire, commissioners assigned for our soveraigne lord the king, to the baillie and chiefe constable of the baillie hundred of Wilt. greeting, where afore this we the said William, Richard, Robert and J. Tirrell, by our late precept to you directed, charged you the high constables of the same hundred, to give monition and charge to all constables of everehamlet parish, and village within the said hundred, personally to appeare afore us the said commissioners on monday next coming, the last day of the moneth of March at Waltham holy crosse, and there to bring with them a certificate in writing of the names of all manner of men above the age of 16. yeres, dwelling within every towne, hamlet and village within the said hundred, and to do further as by the same precept more plainly doth appeare. We now exsiones in the behalfe of the king our soveraigne lord, will and command you, that you duly execute the said precept: and also that ye give knowledge, warning, and commandeiment to all manner of temporall men dwelling, inhabiting, or abiding within any towne, hamlet, parish, or village, within the same baillie hundred, personally to appeare before us the kings said commissioners at Waltham holie crosse afore said, the said monday next coming, furnished and appareled in their best arrap for the warre, that is to say, with bowes, arrowes, bills, harness, or any other weapons, artillery, or harness for the war, which they or any of them have within the townes and hamlets of the said hundred and every of them. And that they also the said last day of this present moneth of March do certifie us in writing at Waltham holy crosse afore said, of all their names, and to whom they belong unto. Also who is lord of every towne or hamlet within the said hundred, and who be stewards. Item, who be parsons of the same townes, and what the benefices be worth by yere. Also who be owners of every parcell of land within any towne, hamlet, parish, or village, within the said hundred, with the verely value of every mans land within the same townes, hamlets, parishes, and villages. And of every stocke and flockes of cattell, or other things that be occupied upon any farme within the said townes, hamlets, and parishes, and who be owners of them. Also what allants or strangers dwell in any towne, hamlet, or parish within the said hundred, and where they were borne, and under whose dominion. Item, what occupation, myserie, or subsistence they be of. Item, the value and substance of every person being of 16. yeres and above, dwelling within your saide hundred, hamlets, and parishes, as well spirituall as temporall. Also what pensions goeth out of any lands there to any religious or spirituall men, and that ye faile not this to doe, as ye tender the kings pleasure, and will anoid the contrarie. At Wentwood, the 27. day of March in the 13. yere of the reign of king Henry the eight.

There were sent to the sea under the conduct of sir William Fitz Williams viceadmirall 28. great ships well manned and furnished for the wars, and 7. other ships were sent toward Scotland, which entred the fouth, and preferred to enter the Scottish ships that lay in the hauens, but the Scots ranne their ships aland, and the English men followed with boates, landes, and set the ships on fire, and at Lythe take certaine prisoners, which they brought into

1112.

England:

An. reg. 14.

England: and till the kings great naue kept the narrow seas: for then was neither peace betwixt England and France, nor open warre.

The king understanding that the Emperour would come to Caleis, so to passe into England, as he went toward Spaine, appointed the lord marques Dosset to go ouer to Caleis, there to receiue him, and likewise the lord cardinal was appointed to receiue him at Douer.

The 20. day of May, cardinal Wolsey rode through the city of London toward Douer, there to meete & receiue the emperour, being accompanied with two earles, 36. knights, 100. gentlemen, eight bishops, ten abbots, thirte chaplaines, all in beluet and saddle, and seven hundred yeomen.

The Marques Dosset, with the Bishop of Chester, the lord de la Ware, and diuers other, at Chaerlein receiued the emperour in the name of the king of England on the firs and twentieth daie of May, and with all hono: brought him to Caleis, where he was receiued with procession, and by the lord Barnes lieutenant of the towne, by the Mayor and merchants of the Staple, in the best manner that might be deuised. On the six and twentieth he took ship at Caleis, and landed at Douer, where the Cardinal with a great number of lordes, knights, and gentlemen of England, was ready to receiue him, and with all the hono: that might be, brought him to the castle, where he was lodged.

On the 28. of May, the king came to Douer, and there with great ioy the emperour and he met, and saluted each other. On the thirtieth of May he rode from Douer to Canterbury, and so from thence by ealie iournies they came to Greenwich, where the Queene receiued her nephew with all the ioy that might be. On the first of June, the king and emperour with all their companies marched towards London, where the citie was prepared for their entrie, after the manner as is vsed at a coronation, so that nothing was neglected that might set forth the hono: of the city, whereinto they were receiued by the mayor, aldermen, and commons: the crosse in Cheape was new gilt, and eleven pageants were deuised on stages very faire and excellent to behold. The emperour was lodged at the Blache friers, and all his nobles in the new builded house of Whitehall.

On Whituesday the eight of June the emperour and the king rode to the cathedrall church of S. Paul, and there heard masse, which was song by the cardinal. The emperour rode to diuers places, being feasted by the king, at Windsor they tarried a whole weeke, where on Corpus Christi day the emperour wore his mantle of the garter, and sate in his hall. The same day both the princes receiued the sacrament, and took their corporall othes to keepe and obserue the league concluded betwixt them. On the morrow after they departed from Windsor, and came to Winchester on the 22. of June.

The first of July, the emperours naue came before Hampton, containing 80. galleys ships. Then the Emperour took leave of the king, of whom he had many gifts and summes of money by waie of loan, and so the first of July he took ship, and made saile towards Spaine, where he arrived in safetie the tenth daie after.

During

During this time, the earle of Surrey lord admirall, bent spoiles in Britaine, and then returned: not long after, he passed ouer to Caleis, entered Picardie, and bent diuers towne and castles. He besieged Hesding, but because winter was neer, he raised his siege, and returned.

The D. of Albany in Scotland began to enter this land with a great army, but hearing that the earle of Shrewsbury was coming he took a truce for six monethes.

In the beginning of this yere, Sultan Soliman Pac, called the great Turke, which was the 8. of the line of Ottoman the first that took upon him to be great capitaine or ruler, and to whome Sultan Solime his father had left the empires of Constantinople, Trapesond, Alexandry, and Babylon, with manie diuers kingdoms & realmes, which Sultan Soliman y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup>er before had gotten y<sup>e</sup> town of Belgrado, being the keie of Hungary, because he saw all the places in Christendome now at discorde, thought it most for his hono: and profit to make war on the Isle of the Rhodes, and to take the same: which Isle had been kept by the space of 224. yeres, by the brethren or knights of the order of S. Iohn of Ierusalem. Diuers things moued him to take this enterpryse, one was because this Isle stood so, that the religious of the same oftentimes tooke and destroyed his shippes as they came with golde, and other riches from Egypt, Saire, and other east parts to Constantinople, so that by them of that Isle he suffered more hurt than by all Christendome, because the sayde Isle stood in the very entrie toward Constantinople. Another motion was, because his father when he dyed, charged him to assay to take the Rhodes, for to be requenged of the shame that they had done to his grandfather Mahomet the greates Turke, which was with dishonour beaten from the siege of the Rhodes. But the greatest occasion of all was the exhortation of a great Counsellor of the Religion called Andrew Amirall boine in Portugale, which knewe the whole estate, and in what case the Towne stood in. The cause why this Andrew Amirall bare malice to his religion was, because after the death of Brother Fabrica de Iaxento lord master of their religion, hee was not elected to that hono:, but one Philip de Villiers de Lile Adame of France was named to bee lord master, wherefore the sayde Andrew prouoked the Turke to come to the Rhodes.

The great Turke seeing so great an occasion offered, and desiring hono:, and also knowing the fortresse of the Rhodes to lacke munitions, for the brethren of the order were both of such wealth and pryce, and also of such wicked life that they took no heed of their owne and solemne profession, nor for the thing to come, and so their towne unfurnished was some surprised. He said Turke provided for 300. saile, in the which he conueyed all his artillery, and other things necessarie. In the which army were 60000. miners and pioners prepared to dig and undermine, the rest of the army came by land to a place called Fisco, which standeth so directlie against the Rhodes, that a fire made bee to one from the one side to the other: from the which place the Turke sent letters to the aboue named Philip de Villiers lord master of the religion, signifying to him, that he would haue the sayde Isle, for the great damage that they had done

Carle of Surrey bent spoiles in Brittain I. Skelton,

The Rhodes besieged.

Why the Turke conueyed the Rhodes.

Three thousand pioners sent to the Rhodes.

to him and his people: and if they would yield to him the said Ile, he promised on his faith, and by Mahomet his first prophet, they should haue no damage nor hurt by him, and that they that would depart should go in safetie, and they that would tarry and serue him, should haue good wages: and if they refused this to doe, he swore that he would subuert the wals of their fortreffe, and destroy them all, and make them slaues, which letter was dated at Constantinople, the first day of June.

The said lord master and his companie were greatly abashed of this letter, but yet like hardie gentlemen they intended to defend them, and made all the preparations that they could doe in so short space, and wrote to all Princes Christian of their distresse. But the Turke knowing the great diuision amongst the christian princes, so that they could send no succour to the Rhodians, sent 200000. Turkes, which arrived in the Ile of the Rhodians on Epiphonie day, which was the festival day of the Rhodians in hono<sup>r</sup> of S. Iohn Baptist, which sudden comming soe abashed the Rhodians, being but 600. knights, & 5000. other men to beare armes: yet of noble courage and trusting in God, they determined to defend themselves against the enemies of God. And on the 28 of July the Turke arrived there in his owne person, which much encouraged his people: he bent his ordinance toward the towne, but did no great harme, wherefore he caused all his pioners to cast earth one banke over another till till they came within a bow shot of the wals: and although that many of the pioners were slaine with ordinance of the towne, they neuer ceased till they had made a banke of earth higher by ten fote than the wall of the towne, and laid there their ordinance, so that no person durst stir on the wals or bulwarke. Thus with mounts of earth was the towne enuironed, and behind the mountaines lay the Balheur and other slaines of the Turke, which were euer ready to take their advantage, and daily they shot into the towne, and beat downe houses and slew the people in the streets, for they upon the mount might easily see into the towne: besides this, the Turke caused so many mines to be made in diuers places, that they within were not able to make countermines for lacke of people, in so much as women were set a worke, to dig and carry by reason whereof a great part of the wals were overthrowen, and if they within had not made countermines, the towne had been gotten within a short space. Also the Turke in the moneth of September gave to the Rhodians 4. great assaults, but the Christians so valiantly defended them, that at every assault they lost ten thousand Turkes and more.

The great Turke seeing the losse of his men at the assaults, sent for Mollah Balhaw, and much blamed him, that he had persuaded him that he might haue taken the towne in 12. daies, or in a moneth at the most; wherefore in his secret he would haue put him to death: but in conclusion the Turke determined clearly to raise his siege, and to depart, and so had done, if that same night Sir Andrew Amirall, and a fewe within the Rhodians had not written letters, and shot them out on quarels into the Turkes army: by which letters the Turke knewe the necessitie of the towne, and febleness of the people, which caused him to change his purpose: but this treason was spied, the traitors taken, and put

The Rhodians  
besieged by two  
hundred thousand  
Turkes.

put to terrible execution. The Turke caused so many mines to be made, that both bulwarke, wals, and towers were overthrowen. And so on S. Andrewes euen he caused a great assault to be given: but yet the Christians so valiantly defended themselves, that they slew 3000. Turkes, and kept them from entering that day: but the citizens of the Rhodians after this assault came to the lord master, and praised him to haue compassion on them, the lord master comforted them with faire wordes: but by chance about the same time the great Turke sent a letter into the Rhodians, willing them to deliuer the towne, and they all should haue their liues and goods, and they that would tarry should remaine quiet. This letter being knowne, the people cried out on the lord master to take the offer, wherefore calling all his counsell, for diuers waies amongst them, they sent to the Turke two of the religion, for the assurance of his promise, who were well entertained, and had writings sealed of all things that they desired. To the which two knights, Aymeck Balshaw Sware, that there were slain at that siege 64000. Turkes, and 40000. head of mortallitie & more. And on Christmas day, the great Turke himselfe entered into the Rhodians, and took possession thereof, and the lord master & all his religion, the first day of January took ship, and sailed to Candy, and so to Rome, and there declared his chance and aduenture. Thus was the towne and the Ile of the Rhodians taken by the great Turke, which was a great succour to all Christian men resisting to the east parts of the world, which chance was much lamented (but to late) throughout all Christendome, and much blame put in princes, because they sent no succour to them of the Ile.

The 20. of February, the lady Alice Hungerford a knights wife, for murdering her husband, was led from the tower of London to Holborne, & there put in a cart with one of her seruants, and so carried to Tiborne, and both hanged: she was buried in the Gray Friers church at London.

Thomas Howard earle of Surrey burned 37. villages in London, disposed the countrey from the east marches to the west, and overthrowe diuers holdes.

Thomas Ruthall Bishop of Durham being deceased, the king gave that bishopricke unto cardinall Wolsey, who resigned the bishopricke of Bath to doo; John Clarke master of the Rolles. And Sir Henry Marney that was vice-chamberlaine, was made lord priuie seale, and shortly after he was created baron Marney at Richmond.

Dodo; Blyth Bishop of Thesler was attached for treason, but he acquitted himselfe.

The 15. of Aprill began a parliament at the Blacke stiers in London, and that day the king came into the Parliament chamber, and there sate in the state roiall, and at his sate on the right side sate the cardinall of Poyle, and the archbishop of Canterbury: and at the table behind stood doo; the archbishop of London, which made to the whole parliament an eloquent oration, declaring the office of a king. First he must be a man of iudgement, according to the saying of the Prophet David, *Dens iudicium in regibus*, &c. Also he must be a man of great learning, according to the saying of the prophet, *Erudimini*.

Prebend of the  
Rhodians to the  
Turkes.

1523

Register of the  
Gray Friers.  
Lady Hungerford  
hanged.

Parliament  
at the Blacke  
stiers.

*qui indicat terram.* According to which saying, he said that God had sent be a prince of great indgement, of great learning, and great experience, which according to his princely duty forgot not to study to set forwards all things, which might be profitable to his people and realme, lest might be laide to his charge the saying of Seneca, *Es rex, & non habes tempus esse rex?* Art thou a king, and hast no time to be a king? Which is as much to say, as Art thou a king, and dost nothing profitable to thy people? Art thou a king, and seest the people haue an insufficient laue? Art thou a king, and wilt not prouide remedie for the mischiefe of thy people? These things haue indeed caused the kings highnes to call this high court of parliament, both for remedie of mischiefs which be in the common law, as recoueries, forren bouders, and corrupt trials; and for making and ordering of new statutes, which may be to the high advancing of the common wealth: wherefore he willeth the commons to repaire to the common house, and there to elect them a speaker, or their common mouth, and to certifie the lord Chancellor of the same, which should there of make report to the kings most noble grace, which should declare his pleasure when he would haue him presented before his person.

This was the cause of the parliament, he saide, but of these things no one word was spoken in the whole parliament, nor any good ad made, except the grant of a great subsidie. The commons chose for their speaker Sir Thomas Moore knight, and presented him the saturday after in the parliament chamber. Where he according to the usage, disabled himselfe, both in wit learning, and discretion, to speake before the king, and brought in for his purpose, how one Phormio desired Haniball to come to his reading, which thereto assented, and when Haniball was come, hee began to reade *Dere militari*, that is, of chualtrie: when Haniball perceiued him, he called him arrogant soile, because he would presume to teach him, which was master of chualtrie in the seats of warre: so the speaker saide, If he should speake before the king of learning, and ordering of the common wealth, and such other like, the king being so well learned, and of such prudence and experience, might say to him as Haniball to Phormio: wherefore he desired his grace that the commons might choose another speaker. The Cardinal answered, that the king knewe his wit, learning, and discretion by long experience in his service: wherefore he thought that the commons had chosen him as the most meetest man of all, and so he did admit him. Then Sir Thomas Moore gaue to the king his most humble thanks, and desired of him two petitions: the one, if he should be sent from the commons to the king on message, and misake their intent, that he might with the kings pleasure resort againe to the commons, for the knowledge of their true meaning. The other was, if in communication and reasoning, any man in the common house should speake more largely than of dutie they ought to doe, that all such offences should be pardoned, and that to be entred of record: which two petitions were granted, and thus began the parliament. And even as there was much ado amongst them of the common house, about their agreement to the subsidie then required, so was there as hard hold for a while amongst them of the cleargie in the conuocation house,

namely,

namely, Richard Foxe bishop of Winchester, and John Fisher bishop of Rochester held soze against it, but most of all Sir Rowland Philips vicar of Crotondon, one of the canons of Pauls a famous and notable preacher in those daies, spake most against that payment. But the cardinal taking him aside, so perswaded the matter with him, that he came no more into the house, willing to absent himselfe, thus he giuing over his hold, the other yielded, and so was granted the halfe of all their reuenues spirituall for one yeere, to be paid in 5 yeeres following. Now on the 29 of Aprill, the cardinal accompanied with diuers lords, as well spirituall as temporall, came into the common house, where he eloquently declared to the commons, how Francis the French king the first called the most Christian king, had oftentimes broken promise with the king of England, and his nephew Charles the Emperour, that the king of his hono; could no longer suffer. For first he declared that the meeting of the said two princes at Calles, the said French king was sworne to keepe all the articles contained in the league, with the which time he hath made war on the emperours dominions, &c. he also hath withhelden his tribute, and other payments which he should pay to the R. of England, for redemption of Turney and Cartwine, &c. Wherefore the king of necessitie was driuen to warre, which in no case could be maintained without great summes of money, and he thought no lesse than 800000 pound, to be raised of the fifth part of euery mans goods and lands, that is to say, foure shillings of euery pound: for he saide that the yeere following, the king and the emperour should make such war in France as had not bene sene.

After that he had declared his matter at length, exhorting the commons to aide their prince in time of necessitie, hee departed out of the common house.

The morrow after, Sir Thomas Moore declared all the cardinals oration against to the commons, and enforced his demand, saying, that of battle men ought not to deny to pay foure shillings of the pound. But for all that it was denied, and proued manifestly, that if the fifth part of substance of the realme were but 800000, and if men should pay to the king the fifth part of their goods in money or plate, it was proued that there was not so much money out of the kings hands in all the realme, for the fifth part of euery mans goods is not in money nor plate: for although due men were well monied, due thousand were not so, the gentlemen of lands hath not the fifth part of the value in coine: the merchant that is rich in silke, wool, tinne, cloth, and such like, hath not the fifth part in money, &c. And then consequentlie, if all the money were brought to the kings hands, then men must barter cloth for victuall, and bread for chese, and so one thing for another. Then consider that after this valuation, the king hath had by the waie of loane two shillings of the pound, which is 400000 pound, and nowe to haue foure shillings of the pound, which amounteth in the whole to 12 hundred thousand pound, which first and last is five shillings of the pound, which is almost the third part of euery mans goods, which in coine cannot be had within the realme: for the proue thereof was alledged, that if there were in England but 15000 parishes, and euery parish

should be

An. reg. 18.

Great subsidie granted.

Oration of Sir  
Thom. Moore.

shoulde give 100. markes, that were but fifteen hundred thousand markes, which be ten hundred thousand pound: and how many parishes be in England one with another, able to spare a hundred markes, out of cities and townes: and where it is written, that in England there be forty thousand parish Churches, it was proued that there were not 13000. parishes. Then account, the whole summe cannot mount above ten hundred thousand pound, and the king demandeth 800000. and he after this valuation hath had 400000. pound, therefore it was thought the sum impossible to bee leas'd: and if all the coine were in the kings hand, howe shoulde men liue? Also the king had of the spiritual men the last yeere, foure shillings of the pound, &c. To conclude, after long debating, the Commons granted two shillings of the pound of currie mans goods and lands that were worth twentie pound, or might dispend 20. pounce by yeere, and so byward, and from forty shillings to twentie pounce, twelue pence of the pound, and vnder forty shillings of currie head sixteen pences and byward, foure pence to be payde in two pences. This Parliament the 21. of May was adioyned to Westminster among the blacke hounkes, and ended in the kings Palace at Westminster the 14. of August, at 9 of the clocke in the night.

Viscount Lisle created.

The 27. of Appill, was sir Arthur Plantagenet, a bastard son to king Edward the 4. at Wyke well created Viscount Lisle, in the right of his wife, which was sometime wife to Edm. Dudley beheaded, sir Mauris Barkley lieutenant of Calais was made L. Barkley, sir William Sands, L. Sands, and sir Nich. Vaux, Lord Vaux.

The R. and Q. of Denmark arrived in England.

Christerne R. of Denmarke and his Quene, arriving at the Downes before Dover the 15. of June, came to London on the 21. of June, and were lodged in the Bishop of Bathes place. The 5. of July, they returned againe to Calais.

D. of Suffolke entered France with a power.

In this season the king having put an army of men in readines, caused the same to be transported euer to Calais, & appointed the duke of Suffolke to haue the leading thereof, and to make a iorney into France. The duke according to his commission came to Calais on the 24. of August, and there abiding the army, caused all things to be prepared for the same, as victualles, munition, and such like. There were appointed to attend him in this iourney, the lord Mountacute, and his brother sir Arthur Poole, the lord Sands, the lord Barkley, the lord Powes, and the Baron of Curson, sir Richard Wingfield Chancelor; of the dutchie of Lancaster, sir John Vere, sir Edward Neull, sir William Kinghorne, sir Richard Westone, sir Andrew Windsor, sir Robert Wingfield, sir Anthony Wingfield, sir Edward Gilforde, sir Edward Grenile, sir Edward Chamberlaine, sir Thomas Lucy, sir Edward Digby, sir Adrian Fortescue, sir Richard Cornwall, sir William Courtney, sir William Sidney, sir Henry Owen, and manie other. The whole armie consisted in 600. Bimiliars, two hundred archers on horseback, 3000. archers on fote, and 5000. Billmen. To these also were adioyned 1700. taken out of the garrisons of James, Swines and Calais, so that in all they were 10500. well armed and appointed for the warre, besides 2600. laborers and pioners. These set out of Calais on the

the 19. of September: The first enterprise that they attempted was the winning of Bell castle, which they beat downe, and sent the Frenchmen prisoners to Calais.

In this season was the duke of Borbon high constable of France, reuolued from the French king to the seruice of the emperor, and the king of England: for after it was knowne that this Duke hadde his minde alienated from the French king, sir John Russell (that was after earle of Bedford) was sent into France vnto the said Duke, which in disguised apparell ordered himselfe so wisely, that in covert manner hee came to the Duke, and so perswaded him, that hee continued in his former determination, and auoyded the Realme of France. The Duke of Suffolke remooued to Arde, and so into Picardis. At Corbie a Village betwene Turbion and Saint Omers, there came to him the Lord of Flession, and with him of Spantards, Almaines, Cleueners, and other, 3000. footemen, and 500. horsemen. The Duke being thus furnished with newe alde, marched forward, sending out diuers companies of his men to take townes, and fetch booties. The Frenchmen were so afrayd of the Englishmen, that they fled out of their houses, and left the Townes and Villages boyde. The Duke passed forth till he came to the Towne of Bray, in the which were 1600. men of warre, vnder the gouernance of Captayne Adrian.

The 20. of October the duke caused his ordinance to be brought afore it, the which is so well applid in making batterie to the walles of the Towne, that the Towne was made assaultable, and then the Englishmen and other made forward, got the ditches, and after entered vpon the Walles, and so into the towne, and so dauidelle the French men fled, and thus was gotten a Towne of Waie. The 21. of October, the army with their ordinance passed the River, and came to a Towne called Knap, all the inhabitants were fled, but they had left good plentie of wine behind them. The duke sent to them of Knap, requiring to haue the towne deliuered to him, which they granted to doe, because they had no garrison of souldiers to defende them: whither was sent sir Richard Cornwall, with 400. men, which receiued the town, and kept it in good quiet, till the duke came thither.

The 25. of October, the duke remooued to a Village called Lyphome, where the souldiers had greate pillage. The next day they went to Dauenhier, and the 27. they came before the towne of Spontendier, in the which were 1000. footemen, and 500. horsemen: but after sir William Scueington had made batterie foure houres, they without yielded the Towne vnto the Duke. The duke remained in Spontendier till the last of October, and then remooued to Knap, where on Albalowne daie the duke made knights, the Lord Herbert, the lord Powes, Oliver Manners, Arthur Poole, Richard Sands, Robert Ierningham, Robert Saliborton, Edmond Benningfield, Richard Corbet, Thomas Wentworth, William Storton, Walter Mantill, George Warham, Edward Seymer. The next morrowe the Armie remooued to a place called Heale. The souldiers being thus ledde from place to place, beganne to grudge, because of the winter season.

Charles D. of Borbon reuolued from the French king.

D. of Suffolke maketh knights.

The 6. of November the whole army came to a village called Wean, & there rested that night, on the morrow they came to a place called Beusford: at this passage the Duke made 10 Dudley, and Rob. Vireight knights.

The 8. of November the duke removed to Mount St. Martine, and the army removed to Bermon, and there rested for a time. The Welchmen murmured that they might not return home: but there were to the number of 1000. persons under the leading of Sir John Walpole, which had little wages or none, and lived as adventurers, & therefore were so called, and of some called Brokers, these by spoiling of townes, taking of prisoners, and other such practices, daily brought to the campe daily horses, victuals, cloth, and other necessaries, which stood them in great stead.

The 13. of November the duke removed to a place within 2. miles of Bognham castle, there the Welchmen set out great shouts and cried: home, home, & as fast the Brokers cried: hang, hang, whereof great business was like to have ensued: the Frenchmen paid the castle of Bognham, and all the Artillerie, which was 76. pièces great and small. The duke brake up his army and returned, and left at Calencenus all the great ordinance, and returned into England the 30 day of December.

In December, at the city of Coventry, Francis Philip schoolmaster to the kings Wenmen, Christopher Pickering clerk to the kings larder, and Anthony Manuile gentleman, intended to have taken the kings treasure of his subsidies, as the collectors of the same came toward London, there with to have raised men, and to have taken the Castle of Billingswoorth, and then to have made battell against the king, for the which they were drawn, hanged, & quartered at Aborn the 11. of February: the other of their conspiracy were executed at Coventry.

The earle of Surrey burnt Jedburgh in Scotland, and took divers holds. The duke of Albany besieged the castle of Warke, and had in a readines a great army to invade England, but when hee heard the earle of Surrey was coming, he fled into Scotland.

The 25. of May, deceased Sir Thomas Louell knight of the Garter, at Endfield, and was buried at Halywell an house of Mans besides London, unto the which house he had been a great benefactor, not only in building of a beautiful chappell wherein his bodie was interred, but in many other goodlie buildings, and endowing the same with lands: And the same moneth deceased Thomas Loyde Howarde Duke of Norfolk, and was honourable buried at Lambeth.

The souldiers of Guines took a faire in the town of Worcester, and Sir Rob. Iernegan with certain disdillances of Calais, took divers French prisoners.

The first of September, docto; Thomas Hannibal master of the rols, was received into London as ambassado; from Clement the 7. Pope, which brought with him a Rose of Golde for a token to the king, which was presented to him at Windsoxe. This tree was forged of fyne gold, and wrought with Bayes, leaves, and flowers, resembling roses, set in a pot of Golde, which pottes

Adventurers & Brokers.

Conspiracy at Coventry.  
1524

Ann. reg. 16.

Sir Th. Louell deceased.

A golden rose sent from Rome to Hall.

had three set of antike fashion, of measure halfe a pint. In the uppermost rose was a faire sapphire loupe pearced the bignes of an Acorne. The tree was of bright halfe an English pard, and in breadth a foot.

It chanced in the yere passed, as partly hath been touched, a grudge to break out betwixen the French king, and the duke of Burbon, inasmuch that the duke for the safeguard of his life fled out of the French kings dominions, whereof the Cardinall Wolley having intelligence, computed in his head, that if the king our soveraigne Loyde coulde obtaine him to bee his generall in the war against the French king, and considering further that the Duke of Burbon was fled unto the Emperour to invite him to a like purpose, wherefore he being this imagination in his head, thought it good to moove the king in the matter, and after the king was once advertised hereof, and concealing the cardinals invention, at last it came to a consultation among the counsell, so that it was concluded that an Ambassage shoulde be sent to the Emperour about the matter, with whom hee was, that the king and the Emperour shoulde toime in those warres against the French king, and that the Duke of Burbon shoulde be our kings Champion and Generall in the fieldes, who had a great number of good souldiers, over and besides the Emperours Armie, which was not small: and that the king shoulde paie unto the Duke monthly wages, both for himselfe and his retinue, inasmuch, as Sir John Russell laie continually beyonde the seas in a secreete place, both to receive monete of the king, and to paie the same monthlie to the duke, so that the duke beganne the wars with the French king in his owne territoire and Dukedome, which the king had consigned in his owne hands, being not perfectly knowne unto the dukes enemies that he had any aide out of England, and thus he wrought the French king much displeasure, inasmuch, as the French king was constrained to prepare a puissant armie, and in his owne person to resist the Dukes power, and with force the king drove him to take Pavie, a strong Towne in Italie, with his hoste, for their securitie, whereas the king encamped him wonderfullie strong, intending to enclose the duke that hee shoulde not issue forth, yet notwithstanding, the duke did many times issue forth and skirmished with the king.

Some let us retorne agayne to the Cardinall Wolley, who seemed to bee sobornely altered, and to bee more French than Emperiall, howsoever it came to passe: but the French king lying in his Campe, sent secretlie into Englande a privie person, a verie wittie man, to treat a peace betwixt the French king, and our king: this person was named John Iokin, who was kept as secretlie as might bee, for hee was no french man borne, but an Italian, a man of no greater estimation in France, and for his subtill witte, elected to entreate of such Ambassage, as the French king had given him in commission. This Iokin was secretlie conveyed unto Richmonde, and there remained, untill the Cardinall resorted thither unto him, where after Easter terme ended, he kept the feast of Whitsonside verie solemnlie, in which season the Cardinall caused divers times this Iokin to dine with him. Thus continued this Iokin in Englande long after, untill at the last, as it shoulde seeme, hee

A policy of cardinall Wolley, that in the end turned agaynst himselfe.

The duke of Burbon champion for the R. of England against the R. of France.  
Sir John Russell

1525

John Iokin messenger from the French R.

brought

brought to pass: the matter that he had in commission. After this, there was sent out immediately a restraint to Sir John Russell, into those parts where he made his abiding beyond the seas, that he should receive that money was given still in his hands, until the kings pleasure were to him knowne, which should have been paid to the Duke of Bourbon, being then with his retinue encamped within the Towne of Paup, for want whereof at his date, the Duke and his men were sore dismayed, when they sawe there was not money brought as it was wont to be: and being in so dangerous a case, and where victuals began to be scant and verie scarce, they imagined many waies that should be the lesse, some sayde this, and some sayde that, so that they mistrusted nothing lesse, then the verie cause thereof, in so much as at the last, what for want of victuals, and other necessities, the Souldiers and Captaynes began to grudge and mutter, and at last, for lacke of victuals were like all to perish. The Souldiers being in this extremitie, came before their Captayne the Duke of Bourbon, and sayde: Spz, wee must be of verie force and necessitie constrained to peeble vs hypp to our enemies, and better it were for vs so to doo, then to starve lyke dogges. When the Duke sawe their extremitie he saide unto them with weeping eyes: Spz (quoth hee) yee are both valiant men, and of noble heartes, who have served mee here right worthily, and for your necessitie (whereof I am participant) I doo not a little lament: but I shall desire you, as you are noble in hearte and courage, so to take patience for a day or twayne, and if succour come not then from the King of England, as I doubt nothing that hee will deceyve vs, I will well agree that wee shall all put our selves and our liues unto the mercie of our Lorde, wherewith they were all agreeable. And tarrying the comming of the R. money, untill the terme of two dayes were past: the Duke seeing no remedie, called his noble Captaynes and Souldiers before him, and weeping sayde: O noble men and Captaynes, I see no remedie in this necessitie, but eyther wee must peeble vs unto our enemies, or else famishe: and to peeble the Towne and our felous, I know not the mercie of our enemies, as for my part I passe not for their cruelties, for I knowe verie well that I shall suffer death most cruelle if I come into their hands: it is not for my selfe therefore that I doo lament, but it is for your sakes, it is for your liues, and safegarde of your persons, for so that yee might escape the daunger of our enemies hands, I would most gladly suffer death, therefore god companions, and most noble Souldiers, I shall require you all to consider the daungerous miserie and calamitie that wee stande in, to sell our liues most chere, rather than to be murdered like bestes: if yee will be agreeable, wee will take upon vs this night to give our enemies an assault, and by that meanes wee maye eyther escape, or else give them an overthrow, and thus it were better to die in the field lyke men, than live prisoners in captivitie and miserie, to the which they all agreed: then (quoth the Duke) yee perceyve that our enemies Campe is stronge, and that there is noe waie to enter upon them but one, and that is so planted with Ordnance and strength of men, that it is not possible to attayne to our enemies that waies to fight with them in Campe: And also

now

now of late you perceyve they have hadde but small doubt of vs, in so much, that they have kept but verie slender watch, therefore my devise shall be this: There shall issue out of the Towne about the deade of the night from us a number of you that be of the moste deliverest to assaulte their Campe, and they shall give the assaulte right secretly, even directly against the place of the entrie which is verie stronge and invincible, your fierce and valiant assaulte shall be to them of the Campe so doubtfull, that they will turne their strength of the entrie that lyeth over against your assaulte, to leave you from your purpose; then will I issue out of the Towne, and come to the place of their strength the which turned, and there or they be aware will I enter, and fight with them in their Campe, and winne their Ordnance, which they have newly turned, and beate them with their owne peeces, and then maye you come and take with me in the field. This device pleased them wondrously well. Then prepared they all that daie for the purpose device; and kept them secretly and close without any noise, or shotte off peeces within the Towne, which gave their Enemies the lesse feare of the assaulte: but at night went to their Tentes, and colowbed quietly, nothing mistrusting that after happened unto them. When the time came that all men were at rest, the assaultantes issued out of the Towne, and there according to their appointmente, they gave so eruel and fierce assault, that they in the Campe hadde as much to doe as was possible to resist them: and even as the Duke declared before to his Souldiers, they within were compelled to turne their shotte that late at the entrie, against their assaultantes. With that issued out the Duke, and with him about fifteene or sixteen thousand men, or more, secretly in the night, his Enemies being not aware of his comming untill hee was entered the field, and at his entrie hee tooke all the Ordnance that late there, and set the Gunners, then hee charged the peeces against his Enemies, and set the them wondrously, hee cutte downe the Tentes and Pavillions, and murdered manie within them, ere they were aware of his comming, suspecting nothing lesse than his entrie, so that hee wanne the field: or ever the King coulde arlie to the rescue; in so much, as the King was taken in his lodging by the Vice-roy of Naples: or ever hee were harnessed, his tentes were robbed and spoiled which were wondrously rich, and in the spoyle and search of the Kings Officers, the Duke of Bourbon found the league under the great Seale of England, newly made betwene the King of England, and the French King, which once perceived by him, beganne to smell the impediment of his monie which should have come unto him from the King, having upon due search intelligence that all the matter was devised by the Cardinall of Englande. The Duke conceived such an indignation hereupon against the Cardinall, that incontinentlie hee went to Rome, and there intended to sacke the towne, and to have taken the Pope, where at the first assault of the waies, the Duke was the first man that was slayne: yet notwithstanding, his Captaynes continued their assaulte, and at the last wanne the towne, and the pope fled unto Castle Saint Angell, where he continued long in calamitie. All this notwithstanding,

French King  
ben prisoner.

Rome sacked,  
the people fled,  
looke more the  
pope



standing, which ye haue heard, when newes was brought into England of the taking of the French king, great triumph was made for; for the reaf on the 9. of March. Another triumph on the 16. of March, for; for that Rich. de la Pole was slain in the battell of Paup. This battell of Paup is at large fet down by Paulus Iovius.

About such time as Cardinall Wolsey was determined to erect his newe colleges in Wynd and Ipswich, he obtained licence and authoritie of Pope Clement the 7. to suppress all the number of fortie Monasteries of good fame, and bountifull hospitalitie, wherein the king bearing with al his doings, neither bishop, nor tempo;al lord in this realme durst say any word to the contrary.

In the executing of this businesse, five persons were his chiefe instruments, who on a time made a demaund to the Prior and couent of the monastierie of Waintrie, for; occupying of certayne of their groundes, but the Monkes refusing to satisfie their requestes, straightwaie they picked a quartell against the house, and gaue information to the Cardinall against them, who taking a small occasion, commaunded the house to be dissolved, and to be converted to his newe college, but of this irreligious robbetrie done of no conscience, but to patch up pride, which private Wealth could not furnish, what punishment hath since ensued at Gods hande (saith mine Author;) partie our selues haue serue, for; of those five persons, two fell at discorde betweene themselves, and the one slew the other, for the which, the slayer was hanged: the third drowned himselfe in a Well: the fourth beeing well knowne, and valued worth two hundred pounde, became in three yeeres so poore, that hee begged till his dying daie: and the fifth called docto; Allane, beeing chiefe executor of these doings, was cruelly maimed in Irelande, euen at such time as hee was a bishop: the cardinall falling after into the like greivous displeasure, was deposed, and died miserably: the colleges which he meant to haue made so glorious a building, came neuer to good effect: the one at Ipswich cleane pulled down, and the other in Wynd unfinished: and pope Clement himselfe by whole authority the se houses were shrowen down to the ground, was after inclosed in a dangerous siege within the castle of St. Angel in Rome by the emperor, the city of Rome was pittifully sacked, and himselfe narrowly escaped with his life, as shal be shewed in anno 1527.

In the month of March, H. sent Cuthbert Tunstall bishop of London, and Sir Ric. Wingfield chancelor of the duchy, and knight of the garter, into Spain, to common with the emperor; for causes, concerning the taking of the French li. and for wars to be made into France on euery side.

The king being thus determined to make warres in France, and so passe the sea himselfe in person, his counsell considering that about al things, great treasure and plenty of mony must needs be provided, deuised strange commissions, and sent commissioners in euery shire, with priuie instructions how they should proceed in the sittings, to order the people to bring them to their purpose, which was, that the first part of euery mans substance, should be paid in money or plate to the king without delay, for; the furniture of his warre: whereof

The first part of all mens goods demanded to aide the king in his wars.

H. Hall. Ambassadors to the emperor; Charles.

followed such cursing, weeping, and exclamation against both king and counsell, that pittie it was to heare. And notwithstanding all that could bee faide by the Commissioners, to perswade the people to this contribution, the same would not bee graunted: but in excuse of their deniall, it was alledged that buying was offered, and the ancient customes and lawes broken, which would not any man to be charged with such payments, except it were granted by the estates of the realme in parliament.

The like answer was made by them of the spirituality, of whom was demanded the fourth part of their goods.

Spouiser de Praie the emperours ambassado; whether offended for admittling of Iokin in the realme, as before ye haue heard, or for some other cause, on the ninth of Aprill departed out of England, not taking leaue of the king, cardinall, or rest of the counsell, and did so much, that he passed through France in posture, and came to the emperor; before the Ambassadors of England came thither, and whether it was by his report, or otherwise, the accustomed fauor that the Emperour and his Counsell shewed to the English men beganne to decay.

In this p;ere (saith Hall) H. following his banke, leapt ouer a ditch besides a kitchen, with a pole, and the pole brake, so that if one Edm. Mody a foleman, had not leapt into the water, and lift by his head, which was fast in the claie, hee had bene drowned.

The emperours ambassado; departed secretly out of England

H. H. in danger of drowning.

The commissioners in al shires sitting for the leuy of the 6. part of all mens goods, as ye haue heard, the barthen was so greivous, that it was denied, and the commons in euery place were so moued, that it was like to haue growne to a rebellion: when this mischief was shewed to the li. he said, that he neuer knew of that demaund, and therefore with great diligence he sent his letters to the city of London, and to other places, in the which hee gently wrote, that hee would demaund no sum certain, but such as his louing subjects would grant to him of their good wills, toward the maintenance of his warres. Wherefore the cardinall on the 26. of Aprill sent for the mayo; of London, the aldermen, with most substantiall persons of the common counsell, and when they were come to the minister, he said: the king our soueraigne lord, most graciously considereth the great love, zeale, and obedience, which you bare unto him, and where like louing subjects, without any grudge, or gaine-saying of your louing minds you haue granted the first part of all your goods and substance, freely to be paid, according to the first valuation, the which louing grant and good mind, he so kindly accepted, that it was maruella to see: but I my selfe do consider the great losses, and other charges that baile hath and doth to you growe, and that notwithstanding, any losse or charge that hath happened to you, yet you neuer with good nor gaine saide any of the kinges demaunders or commissions, as it appeereth now of late, of which dooings I haue highly the king informed, for; the which hee gaue you hartie thanks. Then I kneeled downe to his grace, shewing him both your good minds toward him, and also the charges that you continually sustaine, the which at my desire and petition, he was contente to call in, and abrogate the same Commission. And where hee by

An. reg. 17.

The demaund of all mens goods turned to a beneuolence.

Sp m

reason

reason of your owne grants might haue demanded the said summe as a berie debt, yet he is content to release and pardon the same, and will nothing take of you but your beneuolence: wherefore take here with you the kings letter, and let it be read to the commons, and I doubt not but you will gladly do as louing lubiects should do. The 28. of Aprill, in the common counsell of the city was read the kings letter, according to the effect above rehearsed. Wherefore the citizens sent 4. aldermen, and 12. commoners to Hampton court, to giue thanks to the L. cardinal, which for business as was said, could not speake with him, wherefore they returned not content. Then euery alderman assembled his ward, in their places accustomed, and gently moued them of a beneuolence to be granted to the king, the which they openlie denied, saying: That they had paid ynough before, with many euill wordes. The 8. of May the cardinal againe sent for the maior and his brethren, which shewed him what they had done. Then said the cardinal, You haue no such commission to examine any man, I am your commissioner, I will examine you one by one my selfe: and then I shal know the god will that you beare to your prince, for I wil aske a beneuolence of you in his name. Then was it answered to the cardinal by a counsellor of the city, that by the law there might no such beneuolence be asked, nor men so examined, for it was contrary to the statute made the 1. yeres of is. Richard the thirde. Also some persons comming before your grace, may for feare grant that, that all daies of their life they shall repent, and come to win your fauor: will grant more than they be able to pay of their owne, and so run in other mens debts, so that by deadly full gladnes, and fearefull boldnes, men shall not be masters of themselves, but as men dismayed, shal grant that, that their wiues and children shall soe rewe. The cardinal heard this saying berie patiently, and answered quietly: Sir, I maruell that you speake of Richard the thirde, which was an vsurper, and a murderer of his owne nephews: then of so euill a man, how can the act be good, make no such allegations, his acts be not honozable: And it please your grace said the counsellor, although be did euill, yet in his time were many good acts made not by him only, but by the consent of the bodie of the whole realme, which is the parliament. Then st. William Bailey lord maior, knaked to wne, and besought his grace, that st. it was enacted by the common council of London, that euery alderman should sit in his owne ward for a beneuolence to be granted, which he perceiued to be against the law, that the same act by the same common council might be reuoked, and no otherwise. Well said the cardinal, I am content. What now will I enter into the kings commission: You maior, & you master aldermen, what will ye giue: app. loyde, saide the maior, I pray you pardon me, for if I should enter into anie grant, it might cost me to cost me my life: your life, said the cardinal, that is a maruellous word, for your good will towarde the king, will the citizens put you in leopards of your life, that were strange: so if they would that way, then must the king come with a strong power them to oppresse, wherefore speake no more such wordes, and with that he stabled a little, and said: app. lord maior, let you and your citizens, if you be grieved with any thing, in this demand humbly and after a good fashion come to me, and I

shall

Richard the  
thirde made  
good lawes.

shall so intreat you, that you shall be content, and no displeasure arise, and so I pray you them your neighbors: and so the maior for that daie departed. The maior (saith Hall) did wisely not to assent to grant to any thing, for although he & the aldermen had assented, the common council would neuer haue assented. So on the next morrow it was declared to the common council, that the act that was made, that euery alderman should sit for a beneuolence to be granted, was against a statute law: whereupon the said act was annulled: and then was it declared, that euery man should come to the cardinal, & to grant what he would, with the which saying the citizens were soe grieved: then the maior gently shewed them, how he durst warrant, that they should be intreated gently, and exhorted them to go thither when they were sent for: which saying so offended them, that in their furie they would haue had Richard Gresham and Iohn Hewster mercers, and Richard Gibson sergeant at armes and merchant tailor, banished out of the common council, and so without answer made what they would be, they departed home.

This demand through the realme was bitterly denied, so that the commissioners could bring nothing to passe, and yet they assailed both by faire and foule means. For in Kent the lord Cobham was commissioner, and handled them roughly, and by reason one Ioh. Skudder answered him clabstily, he sent him to the tower of London: for which doing the people muttered against the lord Cobham, and said expressly that they would paie no money, and then they began to account the loanes and subsidies granted, so that they reckoned the kings treasure innumerable: for they accounted that the king had taken of his realme twenty sixtens st. the 14. yeres of his raigne, and in this grudge they euill intreated st. Thomas Bolcine at Spaldstone.

In Essex the people would not assemble before the commissioners in no houses, but in open places. And in Huntingdon shire diners resisted the commissioners, and would be not suffer them to sit, which were apprehended and sent to the skete. The duke of Suffolke sitting in commission about this subiecte in Suffolke, perswaded by curiouse means the rich clothiers to assent thereto: but when they came home, and went about to discharge and put from them their spinners, carders, fullers, weavers, and other artificers, which they kept in woeke afore time, the people began to assemble in companies, whereof when the Duke was aduertised, he commanded the constables that euery mans harness should be taken from them: but when that was knowne, the rage of the people increased, railing openlie on the duke, and st. Robert Drurie, and threatened them to death, and the cardinal also: & brewe with there assembled together, after the manner of rebels, foure thousand men of Lanam, Sudberie, Hadley, and other towne there about, which put themselves in harness, and rang larams to increase their number. The Duke of Suffolke perceiuing this, began to gather such power as hee could, but that was very slender: yet the byldges being broken, those rebels were letted of coming against the duke.

The duke of Suffolke treasurer of England raised a power in Suffolke, & came to the duke of Suffolke, he first sent to the people, to know their grieue.

¶ In m. 2.

The

Thomas Bolcine at Spaldstone  
cont. in Kent.

They answered, that as they had some matters that grieved them, so had they will to spend their lives in the kings service as obedient subjects. When the duke rode to them, and demanded what was the cause of their disquiet, and who was their captain: unto whom one John Greene a man of fiftie yeeres olde answered, that pouertie was both cause and captain. For the rich clothiers spying of Lanam, and other had given ouer occupying, whereby they were put from their ordinarie worke, and lining. The Duke with courteous words willed them to depart home, promising them, that he and the Duke of Suffolke would intreate the king for them, whereupon they became quiet, and returned, and in token of repentance, they came to Saint Edmundsbury in their shirts, and halters about their neckes desiring pardon: the two dukes take a few of them to London, which after some imprisonment were pardoned and deliuered.

When the king at Poysie place, where the cardinall lay, called a great council, in the which he openly protested, that his minde was neuer to aske any thing of the commons, which might sounde to the breach of his lawes, wherefore he willed to knowe by whose meanes the commissions were so straightlye given forth, as to dem in the first part of euery mans goods. The cardinall answered and said, that when it was moued in the counsell, how to leue money to the kings vse, the kings counsell, and namely the Iudges said, that he might lawfullye demand any summe by commission, and that by the consent of the whole counsell it was done, and toke God to witnes, that he neuer desired the hinderance of the commons, but like a true counsellor desired how to enrich the king: and the spirituall men saie, that it standeth with Gods lawe, for Ioseph caused the li. of Egypt to take the fifth part of euery mans goods: but because euery man lately the burthen from him, I am content to take it on me, and to endure the fame and noyse of the people, for my god will toward the king, and comfort of you my lords, and other the kings counsellors, but the eternall God knoweth all. Well said the king, some haue informed me, that my realme was neuer so rich, and that there should neuer trouble haue risen of that demand, and that men would paie at the first request, but now I finde all contrarie: then euery man beid his peace. Then the king said, I will no more of this trouble, let letters be sent to all shires, that this matter maie no more be spoken of. I will pardon all that haue made dentall openie or secretly: then all the lords kneeled downe, and hartlie thanked him. When letters were sent, in the which wete shewed, that the lords and the iudges, and other of the kings counsell, desired that demand, and that the cardinall followed the minde of the whole counsell. And thus was the kings great iourney by to France staied for this time.

This yeere the tower at Greenwich was newlie repaired and builded.

The 18. of June, at Whitehall Henry Fitz Roy, which King Henry the 8. had by Elizabeth daughter to Sir John Blunt knight, was created Earle of Nottingham, duke of Richmond and of Somerset, lieutenant general from Trent northward, warden of the east, middle, and west marches, for ancient Scotland, he was borne in the maner place of Blackhampe in Essex, it was

Great council  
called to Poysie  
place by Cardinall.  
mutual.

Creations at  
Whitehall.

then the Wyloze house of Blackhampe. Henry Courtney earle of Denonshire, colen german to the king, was created marques of Excester: Henry Brandon sonne to the duke of Suffolke, was created earle of Lincoln: Sir Thomas Manners lord Rosse earle of Rutland, Sir Henry Clifford earle of Cumberland, and the lord Fitz Water, Sir Robert Ratcliffe was created Viscount Fitz Water, and Sir Thomas Boleine treasurer of the kings household, was created Viscount Rochford.

In this winter was a great death in the cite of London, so that the terme was abroinded, and the king kept his Christmas at Eltham with a small companie, wherefore it was called the still Christmas.

The cardinall about this time comming to the court at Eltham, toke order for altring the state of the kings house, many officers and other seruants were discharged, and put to pensions. In which number were 64. yeomen of the garb, which before hauing 12. d. the day with cheke, were now allowed 6. d. the day, without cheke, and commanded to go home into the countries. He also made new officers in the house of the duke of Richmond, which was then newly begun. Also at that time he ordained a counsell, and established another household for the lady Mary, then being princeesse of the realme, so that all thing that was done, was done by him, for to him was the charge of all things committed. At this time the false Cardinall gaue to the king the lease of the maner of Hampton court, which he had of the lease of the lord of S. Johns, and on which he had done great cost in building: In recompence whereof, the king licenced him to lie in his maner of Richmond at his pleasure, and so he lay there at certaine times.

On Shrouetue day, there was holden solemne iusts at Greenwich, the king and 11. other on the one part: and the marques of Excester with 11. other on the contrarie part. At these iusts by chance of shiuering of a speare, Sir Francis Brian lost one of his eyes.

The 11. of February, foure merchants of the Stillyard did pennance at Pauls crosse, and an Augustine frier called dodo: Barnes bare a fagot: there was present the lord cardinall, with 11. bishops, John Fisher bishop of Rochester made the sermon, which was against Martine Luther of Germanie, and his doctrine.

A truce was taken betwene England and France for a certaine space, and ambassadors were sent into Denmarke, for restoring of the king: but the Danes would grant nothing thereunto, they did so deadly hate him for his crueltie.

The 28. of April came to the court to Greenwich Pountier Briond, president of Roane, and John Lokin, which president before the king and his nobles made in the Lat in tong a solemne oration, the effect whereof was, how breadfall the wars had bene betwene the realmes of England and France. He declared further of what power the king of England was, and what conquest he might haue made in France, the french king being prisoner, whereof he humbly thanked him of his pitie and compassion that he had on them in their necessitie, that he would consent to peace: To the which oration, Sir Thomas

1526

The cardinall  
leueth an order  
in the kings  
house.

Hampton court  
builded by the  
cardinall, and  
giuen to the  
king.

Iusts at Green-  
wich.

Stillyard mer-  
chants did pen-  
nance.

Ann. reg. 18.  
Peace with  
France.

Moore Chancelor of the dutchie of Lancaster, made answer, saying: that it much reioiced the king, th at they first considered, how by his power he might haue oppressed, and how by his pity he had relieued them; wherefore he would hereafter, that for kindness they should shew him none unkindnes, but inas-  
lablie keepe that league which was concluded.

Proclamation  
against unlaw-  
full games.

In the moneth of Aprill, was proclamation made against all unlawfull games, and commissions awarded into euerie shire, for the execution of the same, so that in all places, tables, dice, cardes, and boules were taken i down: but when yong men were restrained of these games and pastimes, some fell to drinking, some to setting of other mens coies, and scaling of Dart in parties, and other vnchastitutes.

La  
Gold enshams-  
ed.

In this season the angell noble was the first part of an ounce Trophe, so that five angels were full an ounce, which was 40. s. sterling, and the angell was worth two ounces of silver, so that five angels were worth 12. ounces, which was but 40. s. in silver. By reason of the gods weight, and low valuation of the English coine, merchants daily caried ouer great store, because the same was much inhaunted there: so that to mate with this inconuenience (as it was said) proclamation was made in the moneth of September the first day, throughout England, that the angell should go for 7. shillings 4. pence, the royall for 11. s., and the crowne for 4. s. 4. pence. And on the 5. of November following againe by proclamation, the angell was enhaunted to 7. s. 6. d. and so euerie ounce of of golde should be 45. s. and an ounce of silver at 3. s. 9. d. in valew.

1527

Great rain and  
land waters.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenwich with reuels, masks, dis-  
guises, and banquets royall.

In the moneths of November, December, and Iannarie fell such raine, that thereof ensued great floods, which destroyed coine-feldes, pastures, and breads, then was it drie till the twelfth of Aprill, and from that time it rained euerie daie and night till the third of June, whereby Coine failed sore in the yere following.

Ambassadors  
into France.

King Henry sent Thomas Boleine viscount Rochford, and sir Anthony Browne knight, ambassadors into France, which came to Paris to the bish. of Bathe that lay there for the king as legat, and then these thre went to the court, and saw the French king take the oath to keepe the league and amitie, concluded betwene him and the king of England.

Ambassadors to  
the emperor.

Also king Henry sent sir Francis Points knight ambassador to Charles the emperor, and with him Clarencieux king at armes, to demand the one halfe of the treasure and ordinance which was taken at Pavia, for so much as the war was made as well at the kings charge as at the Emperors. Also they were commaunded to demand one of the French kings sons, which lay in hostage with the emperor, that is to wit, the Duke of Orleans to be deliuered to the king of England: and further that he should call backe his army out of Ita-  
lie, and if so were that he refused these requests, then should they in the kings name denounce open war against him.

In this meane time Rome was taken by the emperials, & the pope brought into

E. Hall.  
The cite of  
Rome taken  
and sacked.

into captiuitie, as ye shall heare: Charles duke of Borbon, and the emperors army, which all the last winter liued in great pouertie, without clothes, wages, or wages, so that they were in maner desperate, went toward Parma and Bonony, belonging to the sea of Rome. The pope hearing this, sent messengers to the duke to redeme his townes, so that they should not be spoiled. The duke asked 350000. bushels, for sauing of the popes laue, and if they might haue so much money, they would depart to Naples: but when they saw they could not haue their demand, they turned toward Florence, whereof hearing the Romans they were glad, for they thought that the Florentines would hold good war with them, and then the Romans would giue the looking on: but the chance turned, as ye shall heare.

The duke of Borbon had thought to haue gone to Florence for this cause: there was a gentleman in Florence, called Peter de Saluato, which had a brother that serued the Emperors in his warres, which promised to deliuer the citie, for hee determined to cause the commons to rebel in the citie against the heads, and in the meane season the dukes companie should scale the walles: when this Peter knewe that the Emperors army was come to a place called the Chafe, within twelue miles of the citie, to bring his purpose to conclusion, he which such as he had trained to him, cried in the city, *Liberte a de populo*, that is to say, libertie of the people: with which voice the people stirred, and came to the palace in great number, and there they took the five lords of the counsell, which had the rule of the wealth of the citie, & slue one of them. The familie of Medices, which were the popes kindred, were at this time sore astrait. Thus this Peter de Saluato with the commons, gate that palace, and rang the common bell. In this season was in Florence a capitaine of the French kings called Frederico de Bedlo, he had with him 300. men, and when he sawe this rebellion, he came to the commons and said: Sirs, if you continue in this case, your faire citie is like to be subuerted, for your enemies bee at hand: which notwithstanding that you heare some fauour to the emperor, as appeareth, yet their needinesse and pouertie is such, that without mercie they will rob, murder and slay you, your wiues and children, and set fire on your beautiful city. This Capitaine much staied the citizens, notwithstanding that 20. or more persons were slaine in the ruffie: yet they were well aduised, and suddenlie entered into the city the duke of Urbine, which lay but 6. mile from Florence, and 18. mile from the emperors army, whom he had coalesed: but he thought no aduantage to meddle. This Duke brought with him 5000. footemen, and 600. horsemen, and when he was entered the citie, a crye was made that all things were pardoned, so that euerie man departed home, and deliuered his weapon, and thus the city was appeased the 28. of Aprill. All this doing with, it was unknown to the emperors army, and so for lacke of knowledge this enterprise was lost: which was happie for the Florentines. Soze displeased were the emperors captains when they knew of this chance, and how the duke of Urbine was entered into the city of Florence. And so shortly they departed, and came to the citie of Seines thirtie mile off, and there they lost their great ordinance, and took counsell to go to Rome, notwithstanding the truce  
pp m m 4. concluded

The city of  
Rome sacked  
and bridged.

concluded betwene the pope, and the vice Roy of Naples and Hugo de Moncada, and so much they travelled by night & day, that the 6 of May, with banners displayed they came before the Citie of Rome. The Romans make Bulwarks, rampiers, and other defences, and laid ordinance on the walls, and shot at them fiercely. The Duke of Bourbon wailing that it were not best to lie still and be slain, considering that they were all naked people, and without great ordinance: determined to take the chauce, and to give the assault, and so manfully they approached the walls, betwene the Burgo novo and old Rome, but the Romans valiantly defended them, with hand guns, pikes, stones, and other weapons, so that the enemies were faine to retire. The Romans were glad, set many fair banners on their towers and bulwarks, which seeing the Duke of Bourbon cried to a new assault: then every man with a ladder mounted, and at the first encounter the Romans again put them a little back: which perceiving the Duke, he cried, God and the emperor: then every man set on manfully, there was a sore fight, many a man killed, but at the last the emperials gotte the wall: and betwene every assault fell a mist, so that they with in could not see what part they without would assault, which was profitable to the emperials. At the third assault were slain three hundred Swichers of the Popes garde. In this last assault was the Duke of Bourbon stricken in the thigh with a hand-gunne, of the which he shortly died, in a chappel of St. Syth, whither his Souldiers hadde brought him. And this chauce notwithstanding, the army entered into Rome, and took the popes palace. The same date that these three assaults were made, pope Clement passed little on the Emperors army, for he had accursed them on the Saturday before, and in his curse he called the Almaines Lutherans, and the Spaniards Murders & Heresies. And when he was hearing of masse, so many the Almaines entered the church, and slew his gard, and divers other. He seeing that fled by a private way to the castle Angell: and all they that followed him that way and could not enter, were slain. The cardinals and other prelates fled to the castle St. Angell over the bridge, where many of the common people were overpressed, and drowned as they gave waie to the cardinals, and other states that passed towards the castle for succour. The cardinal of Senes, of Salsarine, of Sabertine, of Jacobace, and of the Tole, tarried so long, that they could not gette to the Castell for multitude of people: wherefore they were compelled to take another house, called the Palace of Saint George, where they kept themselves for a while, as secretly as they might. You must understand, that through the citie of Rome runneth a famous river called Tiber, and on the other side of the river standeth the castle of St. Angell, or the Borough of St. Angell: and the other side is called Burgo novo. This bridge is called the bridge of St. Peter, which lieth directly before the castle. At the end of this bridge was a wonderous strong Bulwarke, well ordinaiced, and well manned. The emperials saw they could do nothing to the Pope, nor to the port of the citie but by the bridge, determined to assaile the Bulwarke: and so as men without feare came to the bridge: and the Romans so well defended them, that they slew almost foure thousand men. That seeing the Prince of Orange, and the Marques of Cinasto, with

all

Rome sacked  
and spoiled.

all spoke gave assault, and notwithstanding that the Romans shot to great ordinaice, hand-guns, Muscets, and all that might be shot, yet the emperials never shanke, but manly entered the bulwarke, and slew, and threw down out at the loopes al the Romans that they found, and after rased the bulwarke to the ground. The Pope in the castle Angell beheld this fight, and with him were three and twenty Cardinals, of which one called the Cardinal Sandorum quarter was slain, and with him were a thousand prelates and priests, five hundred gentlemen, five hundred souldiers: wherefore immediately the Captaines determined to laie siege to the castle St. Angell, and they within might slay out and turne them to damage: wherefore so dauntle a siege was planted rounde about the castle: In the meane season, the Souldiers fell to spoyle, never was Rome so pilled, neither of the Gothes nor Vandals, for the souldiers were not content with the spoile of the Citizens, but they robbed the Churches, brake up the houses of close religious persons, and overthrowe the Cloisters, they spoiled virgins and ransomed widows: men were tormented if they had not to give every new asker or demander: some were strangled, some were tormented by the priuie members, to cause them to confesse their treasure. This woodnes continued a great while, and some man might thinke, that when they had gotten so much, then they would cease and bee quiet, but that was not so, for they played continually at dice, some 500. some 1000. ducats at a cot: and hee that came to plaie laden with plate, went awaie againe almost naked, and then fell to rising againe: Spanie of the Citizens which could not patientlie suffer that veration, drowned themselves in Tiber. The souldiers that laie at the siege daylie made iesses of the pope, sometime they had one riding like the pope, with a whore behind him, sometime he blessed, and sometime he cursed, and sometime they would with one voyce call him Antichrist. They went about to undermine the castle, and to haue throwne it downe on his head, but the water that enuironeth the castle disappointed their purpose. In this season the Duke of Urbine with fifteen thousand men came to aide the Pope: but hearing that Rome was taken, he taried 60. mile from Rome till he heard other word. The Marques of Salace, and Sir Fredericke de Redfo with 15000. footmen, & 1000. horsemen, were at Vitarbe the 10. of May, where they hearing of the city of Rome was taken, also taried: & cardinal of Colome came with an army of Neopolitans to helpe the emperors men: but when he sawe the crueltie of the Souldiers, he did little to helpe them, but hated them much. The Pope of Rome was thus besieged till the eight of Iulie, at which daie he perished himselfe, for necessitie and penurie of all thinges in the castle. And then he was restored to give graces and grant bulls, as he do before: but he taried still in the castle Saint Angell, and had a great number of Almaines and Spaniards to keepe him: but the Spaniards bare most rule in the castle, for no man entered nor came out of the Castle, but by them. When the month of Iulie was come, cozne beganne to faile in Rome, and the pestilence began to waie strong, wherefore the greates armie removed to a place called Parapa 40. mile from Rome, leaving behind them such as kept the Pope. When they were departed, the Spaniards never were contented, till they

they had gotten the Almains out of the castle of S. Angell, and so they had the whole custodie of the Pope. Thus Rome continued in peace till the month of September, that the armie came againe from Naruta: so; then the Almains wrote, that they would set the Citie and all on fire, except the Pope would paie them their wages. The Pope sent to commune with them, two archbishops, two bishops, and two gentlemen, these six persons the Almains took as pledges, contrarie to the Popes meaning, and said they would keepe them there, till they were paid, and so put them in a strong Chamber, in the Palace of S. George: and euerie daie almost they would bring them forth openly, and scold with them, and threat to hang them if they were not paie, and so they kept them imprisoned in a Chamber, and watched them daie and night without the Chamber: and yet for all that, they gaue out at a chimney on S. Andrews euene, and were no more seene of them. The Almains were so wode with this chaunce, that they came to the prince of Orange their generall captaine, and demanded monie of him, in such rigorous manner, that he was faine secretly to flic to Spaine: and then for him they chose Captaine, the Marques of Cinasto, which governed them till februarye, that hee brought them to Naples.

In the meane space, by means of great armies prepared by the kinges of England, of France, and other, for the popes deliuerance, the Emperour sent letters to the pope, and excused himself, that he neither would nor committed such mischief to be done, and straightly commanded his Captaines to deliuer him. The prince of Orange and other captaines of the emperour, hearing his commandement, took agreement with the pope and his cardinals, and so hee and twelue cardinals were bound to performe certain articles to the number of eleven, and then he was deliuered out of the castle S. Angell, the 10. of December, and was conueied to Crupot, where after he had paid certain monie for the souldiers wages, he was put at full libertie, and the Emperours people departed from him, and from thence he removed to Ancona: the Emperours Captaines (fearing the French armie prepared) caused all the Souldiers to departe out of Rome in the beginning of februarye, and so came into the realm of Naples, and fortified certaine towncs as they passed, and so came to a towne called Topp, and there staid. This removing was to them profitable, for if they had taried at Rome, they had bene set on by the Italians on the one side, and the Frenchmen on the other side, that by euerie mans sedgment they shoulde all haue bene slayne or taken. Thus much for the sacking of Rome.

Also about this time, bluers complaints beeing made of Gerald Fitz Gerald earle of Elybarr, late deputie of Irelande, that hee would sell Irelande to the Earle of Desmond, whome he shoulde haue attached by the kings letters, that hee curried acquaintance, and affinity with many Irish Enemies, that hee hanged, & helved rashlie good fabricates, whome he mistruied to leane to the Watlers friendship, wherefore Elybarr was commanded to appeere, which hee did, leaving in his roome Fitz Gerald of Lerslip, whome they thought hee deppued, and choode the Baron of Delun, whome Oconner tooke prisoner,

and

and there the erle of Desmond, to shew his habilitie of seruice brought to Dublin an armie of Irishmen, having Captaines ouer them, Oconner, Omer, and O'carroll, and at S. Marie abbey was chosen deputie by the kinges counsell. In which office being himselfe (same onelie in feates of armes) a simple Gentleman, he bare out his honor, and the charge of gouernment verie wisely, shewinge the singular wisdome of his Countesse, a Labie of such port, that all Estates of the Realme crouched vnto her, so politike that nothing was thought substantially debated without her aduise, manlike and tall of stature, verie rich and bountifull, a bitter enemye, the onelie meane at those daies, whereby her husbands countrie was reclaimed from the Ruttish and vncleane Irish custom, to English habite, bedding, house-keeping, and ciuillite: but to the vertues was yoked such a selfe-lisiking, and spallie about the fence of a table, that for assurance therof the Ricked not to abuse her husbands honor, against her brothers folle: notwithstanding I learne not that she practised his bawding, which infused, and was to her vndoubtedle great heauines, as vpon whom both the blemish thereof, and the sustentance of that whole family depended after, but that she by indirect means coggeled her brother out of credite to aduance her husband, the common voice and the thing it selfe speaketh. Al this while abode the earle of Elybarr at the court, and with much adu sound list to be called before the lordes to answer solemnly, they saie vpon him bluely assested, and in especiall the cardinall R. Chancelor, distiched his cause, comforted his accusers, and enforced the articles obiected, and what else sooner coulde be gathered therof in these words.

I wrote well (my Lorde) that I am not the meekest man at this boode: to charge you with these treasons, because it hath pleased some of your prynces felowes to report that I am a possessed enemye to all nobilitie, and trancly to the Geraldines: but seeing euerie court vowe can faile as much when hee is controlled, and seeing these points are so weightie, that they shoulde not be denied of vs, & so apparant that they cannot be denied of you, I must haue leaue (notwithstanding your false slander) to be the mouth of these honorable at this present: & to trump your treasons in your way, howe soeuer you take me. First ye remember how the lewde earle your kinsman, who passeth not vnder me seruie, might he change his master, sent his confederates with letters of credence to Francis the French king, and hauing but cold comfort there, to Charles the Emperour, profering the helpe of Montere and Connagh towarde the conquest of Irelande, if either of them would helpe to winne it from our king: howe many letters, what precepts, what messages, what threats haue bene sent you to appehende him, and yet not done? Why so: for sooth I coulde not catch him: Hate, male earle, forsooth, you would not watch him. If he be inslie suspect, why are ye partiall in so great a charge? If not, why are ye fearefull to haue him tried? ye sir it toill be shewne and disposed to your face, that for feare of meeting him, you haue winked, wilfully thynned his sight, altered your course, warned his friends, stopped both eares and eyes against his detectors, and whensoever you took vpon you to hunt him out, there was hee sure as a chard to be out of your walke: surely this ingling and false play

Cardinal Wolsey to the earle of Elybarr.

Treasons laid to the earle of Elybarr.

little.

Pope Clement deliuered.

Gerald Fitz Gerald deputie of Irelande accused.

little became either an honest man called to such honour, or a noble man put in such trust: had you lost but a colv or a carran of your owne, 200. henneghes would haue come at your whistle to rescue the prae from the furthermost edge of Cilllar; all the Irish in Ireland must haue giuen you the waie: but in pursuing so needfull a matter as this was, mercifull God how nice, how dangerous, how waywarde haue you bene: One while he is from home, another time he keepeth home, sometimes fled, sometimes in the borders, where you dare not venture. I wis my lord, there be thesed bugs in the borders, for the earle of Elydare, to feare the earle, naie the king of Elydare, for when you are disposed you raigne more like then rule in the land: where you are malicious the truest subiects stand for Irish enemies, where you are pleased the Irish enemies stand for dutifull subiects: harts, and hands, liues and lands, are all at your curtesie, who satoneth not thereon, he cannot rest with in your smel, and your smel is so ranche, that you tract them at your pleasure: whilist the cardinall was speaking, the earle chafed and changed colour, and sundry prolers made to answere euery sentence as it came, at last he brake out, and interrupted him thus.

The earle interrupted the cardinall.

My lord Chancelor, I beseech you pardon me, I am thost twitted, and you I percelue intend a long tale; if you procede in this order, halfe my purgation will be lost for lacke of carriage, I haue no scholre trickes, nor Art of memorie, except you heare me while I remember your words, your second procelle will hammer out the former.

The lordes associate, who for the most part tenderly loued him, and knew the Cardinals manner of taunts so lothsome, as wherewith they were tried manie yeres ago, humbly besought his grace to charge him direaly with particulars, and to dwell in some one matter, till it were examined thorowly: that granted.

Elydare replys to the cardinall.

It is god reason, quoth the earle, that your grace beare the mouth of this chamber, but my lord those mouths that put this tale into your mouth are be rie wide mouths, such as inuad have gaped long for my wacke, and now at length for want of better stufte, are faine to fill their mouthes with smooke: what my cosen Desmond hath compassed as I knowe not, so I be lyeto his naked hart, for holding out so long, if he can be taken by my engins that present lie waste for him, then haue mine aduersaries betrayed their malice, and this heape of belous words shal resemble a man of straw, that seemeth at a blush to carrie some propozition, but when it is felt and poyled, discouereth a banity, seruing onely to fraie crolues. And I verily trust your honours will be the worse, by the thing it selfe, within these foure daies: but go to, suppose he neuer be had, what is Kildare to blame for it more than my god brother of Deserie, who notwithstanding his high prouidles, hauing also the kings power, is yet content to take egges for his money, and to bing him in at lesure: Can not the earle of Desmonde this, but I must be of counsell: can not he be his except I winke? if he be close, am I his mate: if he be friended, am I a traitor: This is a doughie kinde of accusation, which they vse against me, wherein they are stabled and nired, at my first deniall: you would not se him, say the:

1590

who made them so familiar with mine eie sight: or when was the earle in mine equines, or who stood by when I let him slippe, or where are the tokens of my willfull hoodwinke: But you sent him word to beware of you: who was the messenger, where are the letters? Conuince my negatiue: se howe loosely this tale reason gangeth, Desmond is not taken: well you are in fault, why: because you are: who proues it: no body? what coniectures: so it seemeth: to whom? to your enemies: who told it them: they will sweare it: what other ground: none: will they sweare it my lord: why then of like, if they know it, either they haue my hand to thew, or can bing forth the messenger, or were present at a conference, or praiue to Desmonde, or some body betrayed it to them, or the mislures were my carriers, or vicegerents therein, which of these parts will they chuse, so: I knowe them so well, to reckon my selfe comat by their bare words, or headelesse hearfalses, or frantike othes: my letter were soon read, were anie such writing extant, my seruants and friends are ready to be lifted, of my cosen of Desmond the prae lie lewdlie, since no man here can well contrarie them: touching my selfe, I neuer noted in them either so much wit, or so fast faith, that I would haue gaged vpon their silence, þ life of a god house, much lesse mine own selfe. I doubt not, may it like your honours to expose them how they came to know ledge of these matters, which they are so ready to depose, but you shall find their tongues chained to another mans tennch, and as it were knights of the post suborned to sale, sweare, and flate the uttermost they can, as those that passe not what they saie, nor with what face they say it, so they say no truth: but of another thing it grieueth me, that your god grace, whome I take to be wise and sharpe, and who of your own blessed disposition wiseth me well, should be so farre gone in crediting those corrupt informers, that abuse the ignorance of your state and countrey to my perill: little know you my Lord how necessarie it is, not onely for the gouernor, but also for euery noble man in Irel and to hamper his onciwill neighbors at discretion, wherein if they wisited for procelle of law, and had not those liues and lands you speake of within their reach, they might hap to lose their own liues and lands without laber, you heare of a case, as it were in a dreame, and seie not the smart that bereeth vs. In England there is not a mirae subiect that dare extend his hand to philip a pere of the realme: In Ireland, except the L. haue cunning to his strength, and strength to saue his own, and sufficient authority to rake thornes and barlets when they dur, he shall find them swarme so fast, that it will be too late to call for iustice: if you will haue our seruite take effect, you must not tie vs alwaies to these iudiciall proceedings, wherewith your realme thanked be God, is enured. As touching my kingdome my lord, I would you & I had exchanged kingdoms but for one moneth, I would trust to gather vp more crums in that space, then twice the reuenues of my prae earle dome: but you are well and warne, and so hold you, and vphalde not me with such an odious farme: I sleepe on a cabben, when you lie softe in your bed of doine: I serue under the coape of heauen, when you are serued under a canopie: I drinke water out of my scull, when ye drinke wine out of golden cuppes: my counsell is trained to the field, when your genet is taught:

1590



to amble: when you are be-graced and be-loved, and crooked and kneeled to, then find I small grace with our frith boydetters, except I cut them off by the knees.

The cardinall perceived that Spbare was no babe, and rose by a fume from the councill table, committed the earle, deferred the matter, till more direct probations came out of Ireland.

After many meetings, and obsecrations withtill reſelled, they preſſed him ſore with a traiterous err and ſent by his daughter lady of Glane to al his brethren, to Oneale, Oconner, and their adherents, wherein he exhorted them to warre upon the earle of Deſery then deputy, which they accompliſhed, making a wicked conſpiracie againſt the Engliſh of Irelande, and made a bloudie ſtrife. At this treaſon he was found guilty, and replied in the Tower a long time, the gentleman betooke himſelfe to God, and the king, was heartilie loved of the Lieutenant, pittied in all the Court, and ſtanding in ſo hard a caſe, altered little of his accuſomed behav, comforted other noble men Priſoners with him, diſſembling his owne ſorrow. One night when the lieutenant, and he for his diſpoſit were playing at ſhewell groat, ſodainelie cometh from the cardinall, a *Mandat* to execute Spbare on the morrowe. The earle marking the Lieutenantes deſire in reading the bill, by S. Wheloe lieutenant quoth he, there is ſome mad game in that ſcole: but fall out how it will, this ſchool is for a huddle: when the word was told him, now I pray the (quoth he) doe no more but learne aſſurable, from the kinges owne mouth, whether his grace be willing thereto or not: ſo he doubted the Lieutenant, to diſpleaſe the cardinall, yet of very pure devotion to his friend, he poſſeth to the king at midnight, and ſaid his err and, for at all houres of day or night the lieutenant had acceſſe to the prince upon occaſions. King Henry controlling the ſatocines of the prieſt (for thoſe were his termes) took him by the ſignet in token of countermaund, which when the cardinall had ſerene, he beganne to breathe out unſeaſoned words, which the lieutenant was loth to heare, and ſo he left him ſetting. And withtill ſew yeeres after, Sir William Scuington was ſent our deputy, who brought with him the earle pridd and rid from all his troubles. There aroſe about this time a brute in London, that diſpers great clearks had tolde the king that the marriage betwene him and the Lable Katherine, ſometime wiſe to his brother prince Arthur, was not lawfull: whereupon the king ſhould ſee a denoſe, and marrie the dutcheſſe of Alanſon, ſiſter to the french king, the towne of Calcis this ſommer, and thereupon Account Hocheſode had brought with him the picture of the ſame Lable: but the king being offended with the tales, ſent for S. Thomas Seymore ſpallor of London ſecretlie, and charged him to ſee that the people ceaſed from ſuch talke. But whatſoever the commons talked, true it was, that the king hadde minde to depart from Queene Katherine his wiſe, aunt to the Emperour, and daughter to the king of Spaine, for that ſhe was before eſpouſed to his brother, prince Arthur late deceaſed, and that the Pope coulde not diſpence with one woman to marrie with two brothers: but the king was letted by the Emperour and his Miniſters, ſo that hee coulde not well bring the matter about without aſſiſtance

of

of the french king. Upon which reſpect, he granted more than the french is deſired: that is, the 400000. crownes, which was one of the principall ſums of the millions, which ſhould be paid preſently, he lent the ſame to the french la. to repay in 5. yeeres: and the 600000. crownes ſoſet by the emperour, he gave to the french king: and the ſlower deluce, valued at 50000. crownes he gave to his god ſon Henry D. of Bleance. And further with the ſaid Mounſier de Langie, there was ſent Sir Frauncis Brian then one of the Gentlemen of the kinges privie Chamber, as well with the obligations and acquittances, as alſo the ſaid ſlower deluce, to be delivered by the french la. when time ſhould ſerve. And for the ſayde Mounſier de Langie, was a Gentleman greatlie ſoſer, as well in the Univerſities of Italie and Germanie, as in the Univerſities of France, and other to the Cardinall Bellay then Biſhop of Paris, hee was at that time travelled withall to procure the opinions and ſudgements of the Doctors and cheſe learned men, ſubſcribed with their handes, and confirmed with their Seales of the cheſe Univerſities; as of Paris, Bleance, and other of France, and of Padua, Vienna, and Boloma in Italie, declaring by the ſame, that the pope coulde not diſpence with the ſaid marriage, as being by gods law prohibited, which afterwarde was procured by the ſayde Mounſier de Langy, travelling in perſon to ſuerie the ſaid Univerſities with the king of Englands commiſſion, who had the french kinges letters of ſingular commendations to the uttermoſt and therein: whatſoever the commons talked, it was concluded by the R. and his counſell, that the cardinall ſhould paſſe into France as his high ambadoſor, but for what cauſe, no perſon knew but the R. till his return. Gwichardine ſaith hee brought with him treaſure amounting to 300000. crowns, both to furniſh his expences, & to impart with the french R. by way of lone if need were. The cauſe of this boiage was ſaith C. C. this, certain great eſtates, and lordes of the counſel bearing little good will to the cardinall, lying in waite to ſpy a convenient time, and occaſion to take the cardinall in a brake, thought it now were a neceſſary time to cauſe him to take upon him the kings commiſſion to travel beyond the ſea in this matter, and by his wit to compaſſe a perfect peace among theſe great princes and potentates: and encouraging him thereto, alledged that it was more mete for his high wit, diſcretion, and authoritie, to bring ſo weightie a matter to paſſe, then any other within this realm. Their intent was none other, but if they might get him from the king out of the realme, then might they ſufficiently adventure to depaſe him unto the R. highnes, and ſo in his abſence to bring him in diſpleaſure with the king, or at the leaſt to be of leſſe eſtimation: Well what will you moze? this matter was ſo handled, & the cardinall was commended to prepare himſelfe to this journey, which hee took upon him, but whether it were with his good will or no, I am not able well to tel you: but that I knowe he made a ſhort abode after the perfect reſolution therof, but cauſed all things to be prepared onwarde towarde his journey: and everie one of his ſervantes were appoynted that ſhould attende upon him in the ſame. When all things were concluded, and for this noble ambadoſage provided and furniſhed, then was there no moze to do, but advance forward in the name of God.

App.

E. Hall.

Ann. reg. 19.  
A rumo, that  
R. H. would be  
divorced from  
Q. Katherine,  
published.

Gwichardine.

C. Caven.

Cardinal ambadoſor into France.



App. L. had with him such of the lords and bishops, and other worshipful persons, as were not of the council or conspiracy: to wit, the earle of Darby, the bishop of London, L. priap seale: sir Henry Gifford knight of the garter, controller of the kings house, the L. Sands knight of the garter: L. chamberlain of the L. house: docto Tailor, App. of the rolls: sir T. Moore knight, chancelor of the duchy of Lancaster: the bishop of Exeter, the L. Mounteagle, the L. Harnden, sir Joh. Dudley knight, App. Ratcliffe, App. Willoughby, App. Parker, App. Sturton: viscounts and barons, sons and heires, sir Fra. Brian, sir Ed. Seimer, sir Rob. Gernigam, docto Stephen Gardener secretary, docto Peter Vannes secretary: of the privy chamber, master Hennege, master Arundell, master Kneuer, master Alford: Physicians, docto Francis, docto Smith: gentlemen viscers of the privy chamber, App. Walgraue, App. Elles, sir Tho. Denis high chamberlaine, App. Sentclere vicechamberlaine: gentlemen viscers, master Wentworth, master Hanford, master Pemery, mast. Constable, App. Warren of household, App. Cade steward, sir William Calcoigne treasurer, App. Collike controller, master Broughton, master of the horse: docto Allen, docto Bener, docto Duke deane of the Chappell, docto Capon Almoner, the archdeacon of Canterbury, the archdeacon of Carlisle: App. John Sent-John, App. Richard Sandes knights, &c. in all to the number of 900. hoxes. Then marched he forward from his own house at Westminster, through London over London Bridge, having before him of Gentlemen a great number, three in a ranke in velvet coates, and the most of them greates of Colde about their neckes, and all his Proomen followed him with foblemen, and Gentlemens servants, all in Denge tawney coates, with the Cardinals Hatte, and a T. C. for Thomas Cardinal, embroidered upon all the coates, as well of his owne servants, as of all the rest of the gentlemens servants: and his sumpter mules which were 20. or more, with all his cariage of carts, and other of his traine, were passed before. He rode like a cardinal very sumptuously on his mule, with his spare mule and spare horse trapped in crimson velvet upon velvet, and stirrups gilt following him: and before him hee had his two great Crosses of silver, his two great Pillars of silver, the kings broad seale of England, and his cardinals hat, and a gentleman carrying his valence, otherwise called his cloakebag, which was made of fyne scarlet, altogether embroidered very richly with gold, having in it a cloak. Thus passed hee forth through London, and all the while euerie daie in his journey hee was thus furnished, having his harbengers in euery place before, which prepared lodging for his traine.

The first journey that he made, was .x. miles beyond Wertsford in Kent, to sit T. Withshires house, and the rest of his traine were lodged in Wertsfoide, and in the country thereabouts. The next daie he marched to Rochester, where he was lodged in the Bishops palace, and the rest of his traine in the Citie and in Stroude. The third daie he rode to Feuersham, and there was lodged in the Abbey, and his traine in the towne there, and some in the country thereabouts. The fourth daie hee rode to Canterbury, where hee encountered with the worshipfull of the towne and countrie, and lodged in the Bishop of Chyts Church, and all his traine in the Citie, where hee continued three dayes,

iii

in which season there was a great faire in the towne, by reason it was the feast of Thomas of Canterburie. At which date there was a solempne procession, wherein the cardinall then went appareled in his legantine ornaments, with his hat on his head, who commanded the monks and the quere to sing the Litanie after this sort, *Sancta Maria, ora pro Papa nostro Clemente*, the Cardinall kneeling at a stole before the quere doze all the while the monks and the quere stood in the body of the church singing the Litanie: at which time the cardinall was seene to wepe bitterly, for heavines to see the pope in such calamitie and danger of the Lances-knights.

The 11. of Iulie the Cardinall arrived at Caleis, who was received with all the officers and counsell of the Towne, the Spalos of the Towne, and the Spalos of the Staple in procession, and in the Lanterne Gate, he kneeled and made his prayers: that done, they passed on before untill he came to S. Maryes Church, from whence he repayed with a great number of foblemen and gentlemen, being peres of the towne, unto a place called the Checker, where he was lodged, and kept his house as long as he abode in the towne. When all his traine and carriage was landed, and euery thing prepared for his journey, he called all his noblemen and gentlemen, being seruants unto him, into his privy chamber, where they being all assembled before him hee saide: I haue called you hither to the intent to declare unto you, that I consider the duty you beare me, and the god will that I semblably beare to you, seeing your intendment to further the authoritie that I haue by commission, which your diligent seruice I will remember hereafter, and therefore I meane to declare the same directly to the king. Secondly, to shew you the nature of the French men. And thirdly, to instruct you howe and with what reuerence ye shall vse me for the honoz of the kings maiestie, and then to enforme you howe ye shall entertaine and accompanie the French men when ye shall mete at any time.

The first point ye shall vnderstand, that the L. maiestie for certaine weightie affaires, of his graces hath for more advancement of his royall dignitie assigned me to be in this journey his lieutenant, & what reuerence belongeth to the same I will tell you, for my part I must by vertue of my commission and lieutenantship assume and take upon me to be esteemed in all honour and degrees of seruice, as to his highnesse presence is mete and due, and that by me nothing to be neglected, that to his royall estate is due and appertinent. And for my part ye shall see me, that I will not omit one tote thereof. Therefore because that ye shall not be ignorant of your dutie in this case, as one of the chiefe causes of this your assembly, willing you as you will haue my fauour, & also charge you in the kings name, that ye do not forget the same in time and place, but that euery one of you doe obserue your duty unto me accordingly, as ye will at your returne avoid the L. indignation, or obtaine & deserve his highnesse thanks, the which I will fet forth, as each of you shall deserve. Now to the second point, the nature of the French men is such, that at the first meeting they will be as familiar with you as they had bene acquainted with you long before, & commune with you in their French tongue, as

fr nri

though

though ye vnderstand euery word, therefore vse them in like maner, and be as familiar with them as they be with you. If they speake in their naturall tong, speake you again vnto them in the English tong: For, if you vnderstand not them, no more shall they vnderstand you: and speaking merittie to one of the gentlemen there, being a Welchman, said Rice (quoth he) speake you Welsh to them: I doubt not but that thy speach shall bee moze disuile to him, than his French shall be to thee.

And thus quoth he againe to them all, let all your entertainment and behauior be according to the order of all gentlenes and humilitie, that it may be reported after your departure from thence, that ye be gentlemen of right god behauior, and of much gentlenesse, and that ye are men, who knowe your duties to your Soueraigne Lorde, and to your Spasiter, esteeming much your great reuerence. Thus shall ye not onlie obtaine to your selues great commendation and praise for the same, but also aduance the honor of your prince and Countrie. Soke go your waies, breing admonished of all the pointes, and prepare your selues against to morrow, for then we intend (God willing) to set forward. The next morrow, being Mary Magdalens daie, all things being furnished, the Cardinall aduanced out of Calis, with such a number of blake beluet coates, as hath bene seldom seene with an ambassador, all the Speres of Calets and Gules, with all other Gentlemen besides his train, being garnished in blake Tielut Coates and Chaynes of gold. Thus passed hee forward with his Traine of Gentlemen before him thre in a Ranks, which by supposal endured thre quarters of a mile or moze in length, hauing his Crosses and all other his accustomed and glorious furniture carried before him, as I haue before rehearsed, except the Broade Scale, the which hee left in Calets with Doctor Tylour, then master of the Rholes, vntill his returne. Passing thus on his way, and being scantlie ridden a mile, it began to raine so beemently, as lightly had not bene saine the like, which endured vntill they came to Boloigne, & ere they came to Sandwingfield, the cardinall of Lozaine a goodlie young gentleman, encountered the cardinall of Englande, and receiued him with great ioie and reuerence, and so passed forth with the Cardinall in communication vntill they came nigh vnto the saide Sandwingfield, which was a place of Religion, standing betweene the English, French, and the emperors dominions, being a Newter, holding of neither of them. There awaited for him Le Countie Brian Capitaine of Picardie, with a great number of Estradiates or Albenois, standing in arraie in a great peece of greene oates, all in barnes vpon high horses, passing on with the cardinall in a twing vnto Boloigne, and so after through Picardie: for the Cardinall doubted somewhat the Emperors, that he should be late some ambush to betraye him, for which cause the French king commanded them to attende vpon him for the assurance of his person. Thus rode he vntill he came within one English mile of Boloigne, where encountered him the worshipfull citizens of the Towne of Boloigne, hauing a learned man that made vnto him an oration in Latine, vnto the which the Cardinall semblable made answer: And that done, Monsieur de Bees Capitaine of Boloigne with the retinue of

Broode scale of  
England left at  
Calis.

of gentlemen, met with him on horsebacke, and then with all this assemble he rode into the towne lighting at the abbey gate, and from thence conuied with procession into the abbey church there offered, then went hee into the Abbey to his lodging, and all his traine were lodged in the high and base townes. The next morning after, he rode to Mutterell Ser Lemere, where he was in like case encountered with the worshipfull of the towne all in one liuerie, hauing a learned man to make an Oration vnto him in latine, whom he answered also againe in latine. And as hee entred in at the gates, there was a canopy made readie of silke, embroidered with letters, and an hat even as his men had on their Coates, and when that hee was lighted, his footemen hadde the same as a fee due to the office. Soke was there made diuers Pageants for the ioie of his comming, who was called in the French tong there, and in all other places through the realme where hee rode or came, *Le cardinal pacifique*. The next daie hee tooke his iourneie to waendes Aboule, where hee was encountered with diuers gentlemen of the towne and countrie, and so receiued into the towne with pageantes, as hee rode thoro the towne, hauing a like canopy borne ouer him, but moze richer, and so brought to his lodging: in this towne he remained moze than eight daies, where resorted to him daile diuers of the French is. counsell, sitting with him in counsell euerie daie, and continuallie scadding him & other. When the time came of his departing out of the towne, he rode to the castle beyond the water of Some, called *le Chancel de picquy*, abiding to the saide water vpon a Roche, within which there was a Colledge of Priests, the situation whereof was much like to the castle of Windingstoe, and there hee was receiued with solempne procession, conuerging him first into the Church, and after into the castle to his lodging. At this castle sometime vpon the brydge that goeth ouer this water of Some, is. Edw. the 4. met with the French king, as ye maye reade in our Chronicles: when my Lorde was settled in his lodging (saith mine author) I heard that the French is. should come that daie into the towne of Amiens, which was not past the English miles from thence. And being desirous to see his coming thither, toke with me one or two of my is. gentlemen, and rode incontinentlie thither, as wel to furnish me of a conuenient lodging, as to see the is. And when we came thither, being but strangers, toke by our inne at the signe of the angell, discreit against the West doze of the cathedra church *de nostra Dame*. After we had dined there, and taried vntill 3. or 4. of the clock, expecting the is. comming, in came madam Regent the is. mother, riding in a very rich chariot, & with her therein was the Countess of Auance her daughter, furnished with 100. or moze of ladies and gentlewomen following, euerie one riding vpon white palfreys: besides diuers and manie ladies, some in rich horsesters, and some in chariots, who lighted at the next doze with all this train of ladies and gentlewomen, besides her gard, which was not small in number.

Then within 2. houres after the king came in with a great shotte of guns, and diuers pageants made onelie for ioie of his comming, hauing about his person and beside him, beside the wonderful number of noblemen and gentlemen, thre great guards apparelled diuerslie: the first was of Switzers, and

The French  
kings guard.

Burgonians with gunnes and pikes: the second was of French men, some with bowes and arrows, and some with billes: the third guard *pour le corps* was of tall Scottes, which were more comelier persons than all the rest. The French guard and the guard of the Scots had one liuerie, being appparelled with rich coates of white cloth guarded with a rich garde of silver bullions of an h.m.dessull byoad. The king came riding vpon a goodlie gennet, and alighted at the faide great Church, and so conueyed with procession into the Bishops palace, where he was lodged, and also his mother. The next morning I rode againe to Picardie, to attend vpon my Lorde, at which time of my reioyce, my Lorde was reddie to go to horsebacke toward Amiens, and passing on his waie, he was encountred with diuers noble personages, making vnto him diuers orations in latine, to whom he made answer *extempore*. Then was word brought him, that the king was comming to encounter him, wherefore he had none other shift, but to light at an old chappell that stood hard by the his waie, and there he new appparelled himselfe into rich apparell, and so mounted againe vpon a molle verie richlie trapped, with a sote cloth altogether of crimosin beluet vpon beluet, purled with gold, and fringed about with gold fringe verie cosly: his stirrops of silver and gilt, the bolles of the same, and the chokes of his mules bit were all gilt. And by that time that he was mounted againe, after this gorgeous sort, the king was come verie nere, within lesse than a quarter of an English mile, mustering vpon a hill, his guard standing in array vpon the top of the same hill, expecting my lordes comming, to whom my Lord made as much haste as he conveniently might, till he came within a paire of butts lengths, and there he staid. The king perceiving that, hauing two worthy young gentlemen with him, the one called mounier Vadamont, and the other mounier de Guise, both brethren to the Cardinall of Lozaine, and to the D. of Lozaine: also being like appparelled, as the king was in purple beluet, lined with cloth of silver, their coates cut: The king caused mounier Vadamont to issue from him, and ride to my lord cardinall to know the cause of his tarrying: and this mounier being mounted vpon a faire great gennet, took his race with his horse vntill he came euen to my Lord, and there caused his horse to come aloofe twice or thrice, so nigh my Lordes moffe, that he was in doubt of his horse, and with that he alighted, and doing humble reuerence, did his message to my Lorde, and that done he mounted againe, and made his horse to doe the like at his departing, as before he had done, and so repaired againe vnto the king: and his answer ended to the king, the king auanced forwards. That seeing, my Lord did the like: and in the midway they met, embracing each other with amiable countenance and entertainment. Then theye into the place all noble men and gentlemen on both partes, with wonderfull chere made one to another, as though they had ben of old acquaintance. The place was such and so thicke, that diuers had their legges hurt with horses. Then the kings officers cried, march, march, deuant ale deuant. Then the king and the Cardinall on his right hand rode forth towards Amiens, euerie English gentleman accompanied with another of France. The traine of these two princes endured two long

long English miles, they were nobly receined into the Towne of Amiens with shot of guns and collicie pageants, till the k. had brought the cardinall to his lodging, and then departed for that night, the king being lodged in the Bishops palace. The next day after dinner the cardinall rode to the court to the king, at which time the king kept his bed: yet neuertheless, the Cardinall came into his bed chamber, where, on the one side of the bed sat the kings mother, and on the other side the Cardinall of Lozaine, accompanied with diuers other noble men of France, and after a short communication and drinking of a cuppe of wine with the kings mother, he departed to his owne lodging, accompanied with diuers gentlemen and noblemen, where they supped with him. Thus continued the Cardinall and the king in Amiens, the space of a fortnight and more, consulting and feasting eche other diuers times. In Amiens the king and my Lord heard masse, and both of them receiued the sacrament. And vpon our ladie daie the assumption my Lord said masse before the Regent, and the Quene of Spauarre, and gaue them the sacrament. And there the king dyessed a number of sicke folkes. When the k. and the Cardinall remoued to a city called Champain, which was more then 20. English miles from Amiens, they were both lodged in the great castle of the towne, where of the Cardinall had the one halfe assigned him for his lodging, and the king the other halfe. And likewise they denided a long Gallerie betwene them, where was made in the midst a strong wall, with a window and a doore. The king and the Cardinall would manie times mete at the same window and talke: and diuers times they would goe into the other at the said doore. Then came there to my lord Cardinall the lord Chancelor of France, with all the kings counsellors, where they took great paines daile in consultation, insomuch that the Cardinall of England fell out with the Chancelor of France, laying to his charge, that he went about to hinder the league which before his comming was concluded, insomuch, that Adam Regent her selfe and manie nobles of France, with much labor and trauell could scarcele bring the cardinall to his former state of communication, he was in such a way against the Chancelor: by these meanes, he brought other things to passe, that before he could not attaine, which was more for feare than for any affection to the matter, he had the heads of the counsell to binder his girde. The next morning after this conflict he rose earlie about foure of the clocke, and sat him downe to write letters, into Engl and vnto the king, commanding one of his chaplaines to prepare him reddie to saie masse, insomuch that the chaplaine stood in his vestures untill foure of the clocke in the afternone: all which season the Cardinall neuer rose to cate or drinke, nor to make water, but continuallie wrote letters with his owne hand, hauing all that time his nightcap and his hercheefe on his head, and about the houre of foure in the afternone hee made an end, commanding Christopher Gunner the kings seruant, without delaye to ride post into England with those letters, whom he dispatched a waie or euer he dranke, and then went to masse, and said his seruite with his chaplaine, and then went and walked in a garden the space of an houre and more, and said his euensong, and after went both to dinner and supper all at once,

and after supper, making but tarrying, scant an houre, but that he went to bed and toke his rest.

The next night after the cardinal made a great supper for madam Regent, for the Queene of Spanarre and other great estates of Ladies and Noblemen, and at the middelt of the said banquet, the kings of France and of Spanarre, came sodanelie in vpon them vnlooked for, and toke their place in the lowest part of the banquet. The supper and banquet being finished, the ladies and Gentlemen fell to dauncing, and so passed awaie the most of the night ere they departed. There was not only plenty of fine meates, but also much mirth & solace, as wel in mery communication, as with the noyse of my l. minstrels, who plaid there all that night so cunningly, that the king toke therein great pleasure, insomuch that he desired my lord to lende them vnto him for the next night, and after supper their banquet finished, the ladies and gentlemen fell to dauncing, among whom one madam Fountaine a maike had the pryce. And thus passed they the most part of the night ere they departed. The next day the king toke my lordes minstrels, and rode to a noblemans house where was some charge to whom he bowed a pilgrimage, to performe his deuotion. When he came there which was in the night, he daunced, and caused other to do the same, after the sound of my lordes minstrels, who plaid there all night, and neuer rested, so that whether it were with extreme labour of blowing, or with poison (as some iudge) because they were commended by the king more than his owne, I cannot tell, but the player on the Schalme (who was verie excellent in that instrument) died with in a day or two after. When the king returned into Champaigne, and caused a wild Boze to bee lodged for him in the forest of Champaigne, and thither the Cardinall rode with him to see him hunt, where the Ladie Regent with a number of Ladies and Damoysels were standing in Charlots, looking on the tole on the out side, which was pitched there for that purpose: among whom stood the Cardinall to regarde the hunting in Madame Regentes Charlot, and within the tople was the king with diuers minion Gentlemen of France, ready furnished to this high and dangerous enterprise of the hunting of the perillous wilde swine, the king beeing in his dublet and hozen all of sheepes colour cloth, having in his slip a brace of great white Greyhounds, who were armed as the manner there is: and the rest of the kings Gentlemen being appointed to hunt this Boze, were likewise in their dublets and hose, holding each of them in their hands verie sharp boze speares. When the king commanded the keepers to vncooch the Boze, and that euery person being within the tole should go to a standing, among whom were diuers gentlemen and yeomen of England, and incontinent the boze issued out of his den, and followed with an hound, came into a plaine, where being scaled a while, and gazing vpon the people, and incontinent pierced by the hound, hee spied a little bush standing behinde a banke, ouer a ditch (under the which laye two French gentlemen) and thither fled, trailling there to haue defended himself, who thrust his head inslitting into the same bush, which caused the two gentlemen to fly from thence, as from the danger of death. When was the boze by pursuit of hunters and the hound, bytuen from thence, who ran straight to one

of the Cardinales footemen, a berie tall peoman, who hadde in his handes a Javeline, with the which hee was sayne to defende himselfe from the Boze a great while, the Boze continually foyning at him with his Tushes, so that he was sayne at last to pitch his Javeline in the grounde betweene him and the Boze: the which the Boze brake with the force of his foyning, and with that the yeoman dyede his sword, and stood at defence, and there with the hunters came to the rescue, and put him once agayne to flight: with that hee fledde to another young Gentleman of Englands, called Master Henry Rache, who was some and heire to the Lord Fitz Walter, since Earle of Suffre, who had bozowed by chaunce of a French Gentleman, a berie fyne and sharpe Boze speare, wherewith hee thrust the Boze in the mouthe, and so into the throte, whereupon the pastime was ended. In the time of the Cardinales abode in France, manie displeasures were doone against him, for all the payne and trauell he had taken for the qualifying of the French Random: and amongst other this was one: there was no place where hee lodged after hee entred the territoire of France, but that hee was robbed in his private chamber either little or much, insomuch that at Champaigne hee lost his Standish, which was all of Silver and gylte, and there it was elsed, and the partie taken, which was a boile of twelue or fourtene pæres old, a russians page of Paris, which wanted my Lordes lodging without suspition, vntill hee was taken lying vnder my Lordes private Statres, vpon which occasion he was apprehended, examined, and confessed all things that hee had stolen, the russian his master had receyued, maintained, and procured him to doo. The Cardinall revealed this to the counsell, by meanes whereof the russian was apprehended, and set on the Pillorie in the midst of the market place, which was but a small punishment for such an offence. Another displeasure was this: some letwode person hadde ingraued in my Lordes Window vpon the leaning stone there, a cardinales hat, with a paire of gallows ouer it, in derision of my Lord, with diuers other vnkinde dealinges, the which I omit to write, they be so scandalous matters. The Cardinall passing diuers dayes in consultation, and in other matters, expecting the returne of Christopher Gunner, at the last he returned with letters againe, vpon receyt whereof the Cardinall intended to remoue: being then at masse in his Cloiset, hee consecrated the Chauncelloe of Fraunce Cardinall, and put vpon him his habite, his hat and cap of Scarlet, and then toke his iourney, returning againe into England, making such necessary expedition, that hee came to Guilnes, where hee was noblely receiued by the lord Sandes then Captayne there, with all the retinue of the same. And from thence hee rode to Calcis, where hee taried the shipping of his stuffe, horses and train. And in the meane time, he established there a mart for all nations. These things and other, for the weale of the Towne and garrison by him perfect, hee tooke shipping and arrived at Dover the twenty foure of September, from thence hee rode to the Court, the king beeing in his progress at Wyndesore Wyatts house in Kent, hee went immediatlie to him, with whom hee had long talke, & continued two or thre daies there in the court, and then returned to his house at Westminster, where hee remained vntill Michaelmas Terme, which was

Many despites  
doone against  
cardinal Collet  
in France.

in lesse than a fortnight after, and exercised his office of chancelorship as hee was accustomed.

Such scarcitie of bread was in London, & all England, that manie died for default thereof: the king of his goodnes sent to the citie of his owne provision 600. quarters, or else for one week there had been little bread. The bread carts coming from Stratford toward London were met at the Hile end by the citizens, so that the maiors and Sherrifs were forced to goe and release the same carts, and to see them brought to the markets appointed. Wheat was then at fifteen shillings the quarter: but shortly after the merchants of the Stilpord brought from Danke such store of Wheate and Rye, that the same was better cheape to bee solde in London, than in anie other parte of the Realme befores.

After the beginning of the terme the cardinall caused to be assembled in the Star chamber, all the noblemen, Judges, and Iustices of peace that were in Westminster hall at that time present: and there made to them a long oration, declaring the cause of his ambassage into France, and of his proceedings there: among the which he said he had concluded such an amitie, as neuer was heard in the realme before, aswell between the emperor and vs, as between the k. our soueraigne and the French k. with a perpetuall peace, the which should be confirmed in writing, sealed in fine gold: affirming further, that the k. of England should receiue yearly his tribute by that name out of the dutchie of Friesland, with all the costs which he had sustained in the warres. And also, where there was a restraint made in France of the French Dukes dowrie (whome the duke of Suffolke had married) for diuers yeres during the wars, it was concluded, that she should not only receiue it againe, but also the arrerages that were vnpaid. This peace thus concluded, there should bee such an amitie betwix the gentlemen of each realme, and entercourse of merchants, that it should seme to all men both territories to be but one monarch: gentlemen made trauell from one Countrie to another, for their recreation and pastime: the merchants being in either country assured, that they should be assured to trauele about their affaires in peace and tranquillity, so that this realme shall soie and prosper for ever, &c.

The 20. of October were receiued into London certaine ambassadors out of France, about 80. in number, of the most noble and worthy gentlemen in all France: they were lodged in the bishops palace in Pauls churchyard, to whom diuers noblemen resorted, and gaue them diuers presents, especially the maiors of the city of London, as wine, sugar, war, Capons, Wildfowle, beeres, muttens, and other necessarie things in great abundance, for the expences of their house. Then they resorted vnto the court, being at Greenwich, where they were receiued by the king. They had commission to establish the king in the order of France, for whom they brought, for that intent, a collar of fine golde, with the Michaell hanging thereat, and robes to the same order appertinant, the which was of blew velvet richly embroidered. And the king to gratifie the French k. with the semblable he sent a noble man of the order here in England, with Cartar the herault into France, to establish the French king, in the order of the

Cartar,

Cartar, with a semblable Collar, with a Cartar and Robes according to the same.

The ambassadors remaining here untill their returne, all things being concluded concerning the perpetuall peace vpon solemne ceremonies and othes contained in certain instruments touching the same, which was confirmed by receiuing of the Sacrament in Pauls Church of London by the king, and the great master of France, who represented the king his master, and there the instruments were sealed with gold, and the king put his hand thereunto, and the great master did the like: betwixen whome the cardinall diuided the Sacrament. And that done, they departed, the k. rode with the Cardinall to Westminster, and there dined with all the Frenchmen, passing all the day after with consultation of weighty matters, touching the conclusion of the saide article of the perpetuall peace.

The king then departed again by water to Greenwich, at whose departing it was concluded by the kings deuise, that all the French men should resort to Richmond, and hunt in euery one of the parkes there: and from thence to Hampton court, and there to hunt, and the cardinall to make there a Supper or banquet, or both to them. And from thence they should ride to Windsor, and there to hunt: and after to returne to London, and so to Greenwich, and there to banquet with the k. Then was there made great preparation of all things for this great assembly at Hampton court: the cardinall called before him his principal officers, as Steward, treasurer, controller, and cleark of his kitchin, to whom he declared his mind, touching the entertainment of the Frenchmen at Hampton court; his pleasure to them known, they sent out eaters, purueuers, and other, the cookes wrought both night and day in fusticettes, the premon and gromes of the wardrobes were busied in hanging of the chambers, and furnishing the same with beds of silk and other furniture: there were provided 280. beds furnished with all manner of furniture to them belonging, to long particularly to be rehearsed.

The daie was come to the French men assigned, and they readie assembled before the house of their appointment, wherefore the Officers caused them to ride to Hampton court, a place and a Parke of the kings within three miles, there to hunt and spende the daie untill night, at which time they returned againe to Hampton court, and euery of them conueied to their severall chambers, hauing in them great fires and Wine for their comforte, remaying here untill the supper was readie. The chambers where they supped and banquetted, were ordered in this sort: first, the great Wayting Chamber was hangd with rich Arras, as none were better than other, and furnished with tall premon to serue. There were set tables round about the Chamber banquetwise couered, a cupbord was there garnished with white silver plate, hauing also in the same Chamber to giue the more light, foure plates of silver set with great lights, and a great fire of wood and coles. The next Chamber being the chamber of presence, was hangd with verie rich arras, & a sumptuous cloth of estate furnished with many goodly gentlemen to serue the tables ordered in manner as the other Chamber was, saying that the high Table was

remoued

Scarcity of  
bread.

Cardinal Colley in the Star chamber declared what an honorable peace he had concluded.

Ambassadors  
out of France.

Cardinal Colley banquetted the French ambassadors at Hampton court

1528

Ann. reg. 20.

remoued beneath the cloth of estate toward the middell of the chamber covered. Then was there a cupbord, being in length as broad as the chamber, with fire besides of bright, garnished with gilt plate, hauing with lights one paire of candlesticks of silver and gilt, being curiously wrought, which cost three hundred markes, and standing vpon the same two lights of waere burning as big as torches to set it forth. This cupbord was barred round about, that no man could come nigh it, for there was none of all this plate touched in this banquet, for there was sufficient besides. The plates that hung on the wals to giue light were of silver and gilt, hauing in them great prachers of waere burning, a great fire in the chimney, and all other things necessarie for the furniture of so noble a feast. Now was all things in a readinesse. The trumpets were blown to warne to supper: the officers discretely conducted the noble men from their chambers into the chamber where they should sup, and caused them there to sit downe, and that done, their seruice came vpp in such abundance both costly and full of subtilties, and with such a pleasant noise of instruments of musicks, that the French men (as it seemed) were rapt into a heauenly paradise. The Cardinall was not yet come, but they were merrie and pleasant. Before the second course, the Cardinall came in booted and spurred, all boately amongst them, and bade them Proface: at whols comming there was great iole, with rising euerie man from his place. The cardinall caused them to sit still and keepe their courtes, and being in his apparel as he rode, called for a chaire & late in the midd of the high table. Anone came by the second course, with so many dishes, subtilties, and deuises, above a hundred in number, which were of so goodly proportion & costly, that I thinke the Frenchmen neuer saw the like, the wonder was no lesse than it was two the indede. There were castles with images, in the same Pauls church, for the quantity, as well counterfitted, as the Painter should haue painted it on a cloth of wall. There were beasts, birds, and personages, most liuely made and counterfitted, some fighting with swords, some with guns, & crossbowes, some baughting and leaping, some dancing with labies, some on horses in complete harness, iustling with long and sharpe speares, with many more deuises. Among all other was a chesse-boarde made of spiced plate, with men there of the same, and for the good proportion, and because the French men be verie expert in that play, my lord Cardinall gaue the same to a gentleman of France, commanding there should be made a goodly case for the preservation thereof in all haste, that he might conuey the same into his countrey. Then toke my lord a boile of gold filled with hypocrase, and putting off his cap, said: I thinke to the king my loueraigne lord, and next, vnto the king your master, and therewith thanke a god brought: and when he had done, he desired the grand master to pledge him cup and al, the which was well worth 500. markes, and so caused all the boords to pledge these two royall princes: then went the cups so merrely about, that manie of the French men were faine to be led to their beds.

Then rose by the Cardinall, and went into his private chamber to pull off his bootes, and to shift him, and then went he to supper in his private chamber,

and making a verie short supper, returned into the chamber of presence among the Frenchmen, vising them so louingly and familiarly, that they could not commend him too much: and whilst they were in communication and other pastimes, all their liueries were serued to their chambers, euery chamber had a balon and an ewer of silver, a great liuerie pot of silver, and some gilt, yea and some chamber had two liuerie pots, with wine and beere: a silver candlesticke, both white and plaine, hauing in it two sizes, and a staffe torch of waere, a fine manchete, and a cheate loafe. Thus was euery chamber furnished through all the house: and yet the cupbords in the two banquetting chambers not once touched.

Thus, when it was more than time conuenient, they were conueled to their lodgings, where they rested that night.

In the morning they dined with the Cardinall, and so departed to Windsor. After the returne of the strangers from Windsor, which place, with the order thereof they much commended: The day approached that they were by the king invited to the court, where first they dined, and after dancing & other pastimes by them done, the time of supper came on. Then was the banquetting chamber in the tilt yard at Grenewich, to the which place these strangers were conducted by the noblest personages in the court, where they did both sup and banquet. But to describe to you the order, the dishes, the subtilties, and strange deuises of the same, I lacke both a head of fine wit, and also cunning in my bolvels to declare these wonderfull deuises. But this ye shall understand, although it were marvellous sumptuous at Hampton court, yet that notwithstanding this banquet excelled the same, as far as golde doth exceede silver in value of weight for weight, and the beholders professed neuer to haue sene the like.

In the middell of this banquet, there was tourneying at the barriers, with liuely gentlemen in complete harness very gorgeous on horse. Then was there the like on horsebacke. And after all this was the most goodliest disguising or enterlude made in latine, the players being so rich, and of so strange deuises, that it passeth my capacity to expound.

This done, there came such a number of the fairest ladies and gentlewomen that bare any byte of beauty in all the realme, in most richest apparell that might be deuised, with whom the gentlemen of France danced, untill a gorgeous maske came in of gentlemen, who danced and masked with these ladies. This done, came in a maske of ladies: these ladies toke each of them one of the Frenchmen to dance and to maske: these women masters spake good French to the Frenchmen, which delighted them very much to heare these ladies speake to them in their mother tongue.

Thus was this night consumed, from flue of the clocke untill three of the clocke after midnight, and then euerie man departed to their lodgings. After all this solemne chere at a daie appointed, they resorted to the court to take their leaue of the king and other noble men: then came they to Westminster vnto the cardinall, of whom they receiued the kings rewards, the which were these: euery man of honour and estimation had plate, some to the

King Henry  
banquetted  
the French am-  
bassadors at  
Grenewich.

value

value of thre or foure hundred pound, and some more, and some lesse, besides other great gifts received before of the king, as gownes of velvet with rich furs, great chaines of golde, and goodlie horses, with diuers other gifts, and the least of them had a sum of crownes of gold: the worst page amongst them had twentie crownes for his part: and being thus noble rewarded, they departed.

A French Cracer sailed to the Tower wharffe of London.

A French cracer, of 30. tunne, being manned with eight and thirty French men, and a Flemish cracer of seauen and twentie tun, and foure and twentie Flemings, meeting at Hargate, the one chased the other along the river of Chamis to the Tower wharffe of London, where sir Edmond Wallingham lieutenant of the Tower, staied them both, and take both their captaines and men.

The 17. day of June, the terme was adourned to Michaelmas, because of the sweating sickness that then reigned in the city of London, and there was no such watch at Midsummer, as before time had bene accustomed: of this sickness died manie sodainlie in the kings court, namely sir William Compton, sir Francis Pointes, and other, who died with little warning. The king for a space removed almost euery daie till he came to Titenhanger, a place of the abbot of Saint Albons, and there he with the quene, and a small company about them, remained till the sickness was past.

King Denies marriage call'd in question.

Before the cardinals going into France in the preceding page, it was talked among the people, that king Henry (as ye haue heard) was by some perswaded, that his marriage with quene Katherine could not be good nor lawful, wherefore he determined to haue the case examined, cleared and adiudged by learning, law, & sufficient authoritie. The cardinall was by some put in blame for that scruple now cast into the kings conscience, for the hate he bare to the Emperor, and therefore he did not only procure the king of England to ioinc in friendship with the French king, but also (as they said) sought a diuorce betwixt the king and the quene. But howsoeuer it came about that the li. was thus troubled in conscience concerning his marriage, it followed, that to haue the doubt clearly removed, he called together the best learned of the realme, which were of severall opinions, wherefore he thought to knowe the truth by indifferent iudges, lest perauenture the Spaniards and other would say that his owne subiects were not indifferent iudges in this behalfe, and the refore wrote his cause to Rome, as also (as ye haue heard) sent to the Universities of Italie & France for their opinions: and desired the court of Rome to send into the realme a legate which should be indifferent, and of great and profound iudgement to heare the cause debated. At whose request the whole consistorie of the Colledge of Rome, sent thither Laurence Campeius a Priest Cardinall, a man of great wit and experience, which had bene sent hither before in the 10. yere of this king, as ye haue heard, and with him was ioined in commission the Cardinall of Poike, and Legate of England. This cardinall Campeius by long tourneys came into England, and much preparation was made to receiue him triumphantly into London: but he was so fore bereft with the gout, that he refused all such solemnities, and desired that he might without

F. Hall.

Cardinal Campeius came to London.

without pompe be conueied to his lodging for his more quiet and rest: and so on the 9. of October he came from S. Mary Werles by water to the Wilt. of Bathes place without Temple barre, where hee was visited of the cardinal of Poike, & diuers other estates and prelates: and after he had rested him a season, he was brought to the R. presence, then being at Wyndeswell, by the cardinal of Poike, and was caried in a chaire between 4. persons, for he was not able to stand, & the cardinal of Poike & hee satte both on the right hand of the R. throne, and the one Francisco secretary to cardinal Campeius made an eloquent oration in Latine: in which he rehearsed first, with what cruelty the emperors soldiers had molested the pope, what tyrannie they had shewed to the cardinals and priests, what sacrilege and spoile they had committed in S. Peters church, how they had violated virgins, rauished mens wiues, and in conclusion, spoiled, robbed, and tormented all the Romans and inhabitants in the citie of Rome. And further he shewed what friendship the colledge of Rome founde at the R. hands, & the French kings in the time of that tribulation, that if they had not ioined together, the city of Rome with all their gouernors had bin brought to utter ruine: for the which he saide, pope Clement and all his Colledge of Cardinals, and the Senators of the Citie with all the Citizens rendred to the king their heartie thanks, and promised him their loue and fauor, and amitie perpetual.

Oration

To the which Oration Doctor Foxe Brouncker of Cambridge, made a discrete aunswere: and as to the first point, hee declared that the king much lamented to heare his friends; yea, or anie other Chyistian men to be handled with such tyrannie: and as touching the seconde point, hee sayde that the king did but the duettie of a Chyistian Prince to relieue his friends being in captiuitie, for the which hee would that the whole citie of Rome should giue thanks to God, and not to him. After which answere made, the two Legates communed secretlie with the king a long space, and after departed to their lodging. Of the coming of this Legate the people, especially the Women, talked largely, and said, that the king would for his owne pleasure haue another wife, & had sent for this Legate to be diuorced from his Quene, with manie foolish wordes, insomuch, that whosoever spake against the marriage, was of the common people abhorred and reprobud, which common rumour was related to the king. Wherefore he like a prudent prince, willing all men to knowe his intent and purpose, caused all his nobilitie, iudges, and counsellors, with diuers other persons, to come to his place of Wyndeswell on Sonday the 8. of September at afternoone, in his great chamber, and there to them sayde, as neere as I coulde carie awaie (saith Hall) in these wordes following: Our trustie and welbeloued subiects, both you of the nobilitie, and you of a meaner sort, it is not unknowne to you that we, both by gods prouision, and true and lawfull inheritance, haue reigned ouer this realme almost 20. yeres: during which time, wee haue so ordered vs, thanked dee God, that no outward enemy hath oppressed you, nor taken anie thing from vs, nor we haue invaded no realme but we haue had victorie and honor, so that we thinke you may none of your predecessors neuer liued more quietlie, more wealthy, nor

Oration answered.

The R. oration.



in more estimation under ante of our noble progenitors. But when we remember our mortality, and that we must die, then we thinke that all our doings in our little time are clearely defaced, and worthe of no memorie, if we leaue you in trouble at the time of our death. For if our true heire be not known at the time of our death, see what trouble shall succed to you and your children. The experience thereof some of you haue sene, after the death of our noble grandfather Edward the 4. and some haue heard what manslaughter continued in this realme betwene the houses of Yorke and Lancaster, by the which dissension this realme was like to haue bene cleerly destroyed. And although it hath pleased God to send vs a faire daughter of a noble woman and me, begotten to our great comfort, yet it hath bene tolde vs by diuers great clarkes, that neither she is our lawfull daughter, nor her mother our lawfull wife, but that we liue together abominably and detestably in open adultery, insomuch, that when our ambassade was last in France, and motion was made, that the D. of Blyssance should marrie our said daughter, one of the chiefe counsellors to the French king saide: It were well done to know whether she be the king of Englands lawfull daughter, or not: for well knowne it is, that he begate her on his brothers wife, which is direadly against Gods law, and his precept. Thinke you (my lords) that these wordes touch not my bodie and soule: thinke you that these doings doe not daily and hourly trouble my conscience and ber my spirits: Yes: we doubt not but if it were your owne cause, euery man would seeke remedie, when the perill of your soule, and the losse of your inheritance is openly laid to you. For this onely cause I protest before God, and in the word of a prince, I haue asked counsell of the greatest clarkes in christendome, and for this cause I haue sent for this legat, as a man indifferent, only to know the truth, and to settle my conscience, and for none other cause, as God can iudge. And as touching the D. if it be iudged by the law of God, that she is my lawfull wife, there was neuer thing more acceptable to me in my life, both for the discharge of my conscience, & also for the good qualities and conditions which I know to be in her: for I assure you all, that be shee her noble parentage of the which she is descended (as all you know) she is a woman of most gentleness, of most humilitie, and bounties, yea, and of all good qualities appertaining to nobilitie, she is without comparison, as I these 20. yeres almost haue had the true experiment, so that if I were to marrie againe, if the marriage might be good, I would sorely chuse her above all other women: but if it be determined by iudgement, that our marriage was against Gods law and cleerly void, then I shall not only sorrow the departing from so good a lady and loving companion, but much more lament and bewaile my infortunat chance, that I haue so long liued in adultery to Gods great displeasure, and haue no true heire of my bodie to inherite this realme. These be the sorres that bere my minde, these be the pangues that trouble my conscience, and for these grieues I seeke a remedie: therefore I requite of you all as our trust and confidence is in you, to declare to our subjects our intent, according to our true meaning, and desire them to praie with vs that the truth may be known, for the discharge of our conscience, & saving

of our soule: and for declaration hereof I haue assembled you together, and now you maie depart.

To see what countenance was made amongst the hearers of this oration, it was a strange sight, for some sighed & said nothing, other were for to heare the D. so troubled in his conscience: others fauouring the D. much sorrowed, that this matter was now opened, and so euery man spake as his hart serued him: thus much Hall. And thus G. C. The cardinall of Yorke saith he, being prouoked to declare his opinion, and to decide in the aduancement of the kings purpose, who thought it not mete to wade too far alone, or to giue his haste ingement in so weighty a matter, desired of the D. licence to alke counsel of men of famous learning, both in the diuine and ciuill lawes. What obtained, by his legantine authoritie, he sent his commission out for all the bishops of the realme that were learned in either of the said lawes, or had in any high estimation for their prudent counsel and iudgement, in princelie affaires of long experience. Then assembled those noble prelates and notable clarks of both vniuersities of Oxforde and Cambridge, as also of diuers cathedrall churches of this realme accounted learned, and of witty discretion in determination of doubtfull questions. Then was this matter of the kings case consulted of from day to day, that it was to the learned a godly hearing: but in fine the ancient fathers of both lawes, departed with one iudgement, contrary to the princelie expectation. Then was it thought expedient, that the D. should send out his commissioners into all the vniuersities of christendome, to bring with them the definition of their opinions in the same vnder the seale of euery vniuersitie, which they obtained. Having now a sure stasse to stand by, these proceedings declared to the cardinall, he sent againe for the bishops, to whom he declared the trauell of these commissioners. And for assurance thereof, he shewd them the instruments of euery vniuersity vnder their seuerall seales. They went once againe to consultation. It was then concluded, that the king should send to the pope, declaring the opinions of these vniuersities, authorized by their common seales: to the which it was thought that the consent of these prelates of this realme should be necessary to be sent thither, altogether comprised in an instrument, sealed with all their seales annexed to the said instrument. Not long after the ambassadors were assigned to trauell in the matter, hauing certaine instructions, among which one was this, that if the Pope would not giue iudgement definitive in the kings case, to requite another commission to be granted vnder lead, to stablish a court to be kept in England, for that purpose directed to the lord cardinall and legat of England, and to the cardinal Campeius, who was then (though he were a stranger) bishop of Bath (the which the king had giuen him) to determine, and iustly to iudge according to conscience and discretion: To the which, after long suite made, and the good will of the same Cardinall obtained to trauell into England, the pope granted to their suite, and the cardinall arrived in England, as ye before haue heard.

Now after some deliberation and consultation in the ordering and bing of the kings matters, and his commission, and the articles of his ambassade



same and read, and digested, it was determined, that the king and Queene his wife should be lodged at Whitehall. And then in the blacke friars a certayne place was there appointed most convenient for the is. and queenes repaire to the Court, there to bee kept for the disposition and determination of the case, whereas these two legates sate as Iudges, before whom the king and Q. were ascited and sommoned to appeare: which was a strange sight, and the newest deaile that ever was read or heard of before in any region, city, or churche, a king and a Queene to be constrained by proccesse compellatorie to appeere in any court as common persons within their owne Realme and dominion, to abide the iudgements and decrees of their owne subiects, being the royall dignitie and prerogative thereof. Ye shall vnderstande (as I haue sayde before) that there was a court erected in the blacke friars in London, whereas sate these two cardinals for Iudges in the same, in the moneths of Aprill, Maie, June, and Iulie. Nowe will I set you out the manner and order of the same court: first, there was a court platted in Tables and Benches in manner of a Consistorie, one seate rayfed higher for the Iudges to sit on than the other were. Then as it were in the middell of the sayde Iudges aloft about them 3. degrees high, was a cloth of estate hanged, with a Chaire royall vnder the same, wherein sate the king, and besides him, some distance from him sate the Q. and vnder the Iudges sat sate the scribes and other necessary officers for the execution of the proccesse, and other things appertaining to such a court: the chiefe scribe was D. Scuens, after B. of Winchester, and the apparator, who was Caller of the Court, was one Cooke (most commonly called Cooke of Winchester.) Then before the king and the Iudges within the court sate the Archb. of Canterb. D. Warham, and all the other bishops. Then stood at both endes within, the counsellors learned in the lawes, as well the kinges as the Quenes. The doctors of law for the king, were doctor Simpfon that was after bishop of Winchester, and doctor Bell, that was after bishop of Worcester, with divers other, and doctors in the same law on the same side were, doctor Peter, doctor Tregonel, with others. On the other side for the Q. were doctor Fisher B. of Rochester, doctor Scandish, and doctor Ridley, a verie small man of stature, but surelie a great and excellent clarke in divinitie. Thus was the court furnished. The Iudges commaunded the cryer to proclaim silence whilste their commission was read, both to the court, and to the people assembled. What done, the scribes commaunded the cryer to call the king by the name of king Henry of Englande, come into the Court, &c. Whith that the king answered and sayde: Here. Then called hee the Queene, by the name of Katherine Queene of Englande, come into the Court, &c. Whom hee no answer, but rose incontinent out of her Chayze, and because shee coulde not come to the king directlie, for the distance severed betwene them, shee went about by the Court, and came to the king, kneeling downe at his feete in the sight of all the Court and people, to whom shee sayde in effect these wordes, as foloweth: Sp? (quoth shee) I desire you to doe mee iustice and right, and take some pite upon mee, for I am a poore woman, and a stranger, borne out of your dominion, having heere no indifferent Counsell, and lesse advantage of

An. reg. 21.  
The marriage  
argued in open  
court at the  
Blacke friars.

Words of Q.  
Katherine.

friendship:

friendship: Alas sir, what have I offended you, or what occasion of displeasure have I shewed you, intending thus to put me from you after this sort? I take god to my Iudge, I have been to you a true and an humble wife, ever conformable to your will & pleasure, that never contraried or gainesaid any thing thereof, and being alwaies contented with all things wherunto you had any delight or baliance, whether little or much, without grudge or countenance of discontentation or displeasure: I loved for your sake all the whom you loved, whether I had cause or no cause, whether they were my friends or enemies. I have bene your wife these twentie yeeres or mo. and you have had by me divers children, and when ye had me at the first, I take God to be my Iudge, that I was a verie maid, and whether it be true or no, I put it to your conscience. If there be any fault that you can alledge against me, either of dishonestie, or matter lawfull to put me from you, I am content to depart to my shame and rebuke: and if there be none, then I praye you to let me have iustice at your hand. The king your father was in his time of such an excellent wit, that he was accounted among all men for wisdome to be a second Salomon; and the king of Spaine my father Ferdinando has reckoned one of the wisest princes that reigned in Spaine many yeeres before: it is not therefore to be doubted, but that they had gathered as wise counsellors unto them of every realme, as to their wisdomes they thought meete, and as to me surely there were in those daies as wise and well learned in both the realmes, as be at this daie, who thought the marriage betwene you and me good and lawfull: therefore it is a wonder to me to heare, what new inventions are now invented against me that never intended but honestie: and now to come me to stand to the order and iudgement of this court, ye should (as I sayd to me) doe me much wrong, for ye make condemne me for lacke of answer, having no counsell but such as ye have assigned me: ye must consider that they cannot be indifferent on my part when they be your own subiects, and such as ye have taken and chosen out of your owne counsell, whereunto they be partiall, and dare not disclose your will and intent. Therefore I humble desire you in the way of charitie to spare me, untill I may know what counsell and advice my friends in Spaine will advise me to take, and if you will not, then your pleasure be fulfilled: and with that she arose up, making a low courtesy to the king, and departed from thence, supposing that she would have resorted againe to her former place. But she took her way straight out of the court, leaning upon the arme of one of her servants, who was her general receiver, called M. Griffith. The king being advertised that she was ready to go out of the house, where the court was kept, commaunded the cryer to call her againe, who called her by the words, Katherine Q. of Engl. and, come into the court: with that quoth M. Griffith, Spadam, ye be called againe. Wh. on (quoth she) it maketh no matter, it is no indifferent court for me, therefore I will not tarry, go on your waies: and thus she departed without any further answer at that time. On any other, and never would appeare after in any court. The king perceiving she was departed thus, and considering her words which she pronounced before him, said to the audience these wordes in effect: For as much (quoth he)

Do o o

as

as the Quene is gone, I will in her absence declare vnto you all: She hath ben to me as true, as obedient, and as comfortable a wife, as I would wish or desire: she hath all the vertuous qualities that ought to be in a woman of her dignity, or in any other of a baser estate: she is also surely a noble woman borne, her conditions will well declare the same. With that (quoth cardinal Wolsey) Sir, I most humbly require your highnes, to declare before al this audience, whether I haue bene the chiefe and first mouer of this matter vnto your maiestie or no, for I am greatly suspected herein. *Sp. 3.0.0. Cardinal* (quoth the k.) I can well excuse you in this matter: marie (quoth he) ye haue bene rather against me in the tempting hereof, than a setter forward or mouer of the same: the special cause that moued me vnto this matter, was a certaine scrupulositie that picked my conscience, vpon certain wordes spoken at a time when it was, by the B. of Wapton the french ambassadoe, who had been hither sent vpon the debating of a marriage to be concluded betwene the princeesse our daughter the ladie Mary, and the Duke of Orleans, second son to the k. of France, and vpon the resolution and determination of the same, he desired despite to aduertise the king his master thereof, whether our daughter Mary should be legitimate, in respect of this my marriage with this woman, being sometime my brothers wife: which wordes once concluded within the secret bottom of my conscience, engendred such a scrupulous doubt, that my conscience was incontinently accombyed, bered and disquieted, whereby I thought my selfe to be greatly in danger of Gods indignation, which appeared to be (as me seemed) the rather, for that he sent vs no issue male: & all such issues male as my said wife had by me, died incontinent after they came into the world, so that I doubted the great displeasure of God in that behalfe. Thus my conscience being tossed in the waues of a scrupulous conscience, & partly in despaire to haue any other issue than I had already by this ladie now my wife, it behoued me further to consider the state of this realme, and the danger that it stood in for lacke of a prince to succede me, I thought it good in releafe of the weightie burden of my weak conscience, & also the quiet estate of this woorthie realme, to attempt the lawe therein, whether I made lawfull take another wife moze lawfully, by whom God made send me moze issue, in case this my first copulation was not good, without any carnal concupiscence, and not for any displeasure or misliking of the quanes person and age, with whom I would be as well contented to continue, if our marriage may stand with the lawes of God, as with any woman aliu: in which point consisteth all this doubt that we go about now to trie, by the learning, wisdome, & iudgement of you our prelates and pastors of all this our realme and dominion now here assembled for that purpose, to whose conscience and learning I haue committed the charge and iudgement, according to the which, I will (God willing) be right well content to submit my selfe, and for my part obey the same: where- in, after that I perceived my conscience to doubtfull, I moued it in confession to you my lord of Lincoln then ghosly father: and for as much as then you your selfe were in some doubt, you moued me to aske the counsel of al you my lords: whereupon I moued you my lord of Canterburie, first to haue your con-

science,

cence, in as much as you were metropolitan, to put this matter in question, and so I did of all you my lords, to which you granted vnder your seales, and that I haue here to be shewed. That is truth, if it please your grace, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, I doubt not but my brethren here present will acknowledge the same: so fir not so, vnder your correction, quoth the bishop of Rochester, for you haue not mine: so, ah, quoth the king, loke here, is not this your hand and seale, and shewed him the instrument with seales: so forth, quoth the bishop. Howsaie you to that, quoth the k. to the archbishop of Canterburie: Sir, it is his hand and his seale, said my L. of Canterburie. So my lord (quoth the bishop of Rochester) indeed you were in hand with me to haue both my hand and seale, as other of my lords haue done, but then I said again to you, that I would neuer consent to any such act, for it was much against my conscience, and therefore my hand and seale should neuer be set to any such instrument, God willing, with much moze matter touching the same communication betwene vs. You saie truth, quoth the archbishop of Canterburie, such wordes you had vnto me, but you were fully resolu'd at last, that I should subscribe your name, and put to your seale my selfe, and you would allow the same. All which, quoth the bishop of Rochester, vnder your correction my lord, is not true. Well, well (quoth the king) it maketh no great matter, we will not stand with you in argument, you are but one man. And then the king rose vp, and the court was adioyned untill another daie.

The next court daie the cardinals saie againe, at which time the counsell on both sides were there ready to answer: the kings counsell alleged the matrimonic not to be lawfull at the beginning, because of the carnall copulation had betwene prince Arthure and the Quene. This matter being vertie vehemently touched on that side, and to proue it, they alleged manie reasons and similitudes of truth, and being answered negatively againe on the other side, it seemed that all their former allegations were verie doubtfull to be tried, and that no man knew the truth. Yes (quoth the bishop of Rochester) I know the truth: how know you (quoth my L. cardinal) the truth moze than any other person: Yes forsooth my lord (quoth he) *Quia ego sum professor veritatis*, therefore I know the truth: I know that God is truth it selfe, and he neuer saith but truth, and God said: *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet*. And so as much as this marriage was ioued and made by God to a good intent, I saie that I know the truth; and that man cannot beake vpon any lawfull occasion that which God hath made and constituted. So much both all faithfull men (quoth my lord cardinal) know as well as you, yet this reason is not sufficient in this case, for the kings counsell doe alledge diuers presumptions to proue that it was not lawfull at the beginning. Ergo it was not ordained by God, for God doth nothing without a due order, therefore it is not to be doubted, but if the presumptions be true, which they do alledge to be most true; then the conclusion was, we could not be of God. Therefore I saie to you my lord of Rochester, ye know not the truth, unless ye can auoid their presumptions by iust reasons. Then quoth doct. Ridley, it is a shame and a great dishonour to this honorable presence, that any such presumption should be alleged

in this open court, which be to detestable to be rehearsed: what (quoth my lord cardinal) *Dominus doctor magis reuerenter?* No, no, my L. (quoth he) there be although no reuerence to be giuen to this matter, for an irreuerent matter too shold be irreuerently answered: and there they left, and proceeded for th with othe matter.

Thus the court passed from session to session, and daie to daie, that at a certaine daie of their session, the king sent for my L. cardinal to come to him to Wyndesore, who to accomplish his commandement went to him, and being there with him in communication in his private chamber from 11. vnto 12. of the clocke at none and past, my L. cardinal departed from the k. and toke his barge at the Blacke friers, and went to his house at Westminster. The Bishop of Carlisle being in his barge, said vnto him, winding his face, it is a hot daie quoth he: For my L. (quoth the cardinal) if ye had been as well chased as I haue bin within this holmer, ye would saie it were verie hot: and as soon as he came home to his house at Westminster, he went incontinent to his naked bed, where he had not laine full two holwers, but that my L. of Westmire came to speake with him of a message from the k. My Lord vnderstanding of his coming, commanded he should be brought to his bed side, and he being there, shewed him the k. pleasure was that he should incontinent go with the other cardinal vnto the Q. (who was then in Wyndesore in her chamber there) to perswade with her by their wisdomes, and to aduise her to surrender the whole matter into the kings hands, by her owne consent & will, which should be much better to her honour, than to stand to the trial of law, and thereby to be condemned, which should seeme much to her dishonour. So full the kings pleasure, my L. said he was ready, and would prepare him to go thither out of hand, &c. When my L. arose, and made him ready, taking his barge, and went straight to the place to cardinal Campeius, and so went together to Wyndesore, directly to the queenes lodging, & being in her chamber of presence, they shewed the gentleman vsher that they came to speake with the Q. grace. The gentleman vsher aduertised the queen, that the cardinals were come to speak with her: with that she rose vpp, and with a sicke of white sypar about her neck, came into her chamber of presence, where the cardinals were attending, at whose coming, quoth she, Alacke my lords, I am verie soyle to make you attend vpon me, what is your pleasure with me: If it please your grace (quoth cardinal Wolsey) to go into your private chamber, we will shew you the cause of our coming: My lord (quoth she) if ye haue any thing to saie, speake it openly before all these folke: for I feare nothing that yee can say against me, but that I would all the world should heare and see it, and therefore speake your mind openly I praise you. When began the cardinal to speake to her in Latine. Say good my L. (quoth she) speake to me in English, for I can (I thanke God) both speake and vnderstand English, although I vnderstand some latin. Forsooth (quoth the Cardinal) good madam, if it please your grace, we come both to knowe your munde how you are disposed to do in this matter betwene the king and you, and also to declare secretly our opinions and counsell vnto you, which we do only for very zeale and obediens we beare vnto your grace.

My

My lord (quoth she) I thanke you for your good will: but to make you answer in your request, I can not so suddenly, for I was set among my maids at work, thinking full little of any such matter, wherein there needeth a longer deliberation, and a better head than mine to make answer: for I need of counsell in this case, which toucheth me so nere, and for any counsell or friendship that I can find in England, they are not for my profit: what thinke you I praise you my lords, will any English man counsel me, or be friendly to me against the k. pleasure, that be his subiects? nay forsooth: and as for my counsell in whom I will put my trust, they be not here, they be in Spaine in mine owne country: and my lords, I am a poore woman lacking wit to answer to any such noble persons of wisdom as you be in so weighty a matter, therefore I pray you, be good vnto me poore woman, destitute of friends here in a forein region, and your counsell also I will be glad to heare: and therewith she toke the cardinal by the hand, & led him into her private chamber with the other cardinal, where they taried a season talking with the queene: which communication ended, they departed to the king, making to him relation of her talke, and after returned home to supper. Thus this case went forward from court to court, til it came to iudgement, so that every man expected iudgement would be giuen the next day, at which day the king came thither, and set him down in a chaire within a doore, in the end of the gallerie (which opened directly against the iudgement seate) to heare the iudgement giuen, at which time, all their proceedings were openly read in Latine. That done, the kings counsell at the barre called for iudgement, with that (quoth Cardinal Campeius) I will not giue iudgement till I haue made relation to the pope of all our proceedings, whose counsell and commandement in this case I will obserue, the matter is too high for vs to giue any hasty iudgement, considering the highnes of the persons, and the doubtful occasions alledged: and also whose commissioners we be, vnder whose authority we sit, it were therefore reason that we should make our chiefe head a counsell in the same, before we proceed to iudgement definitive. I come not to please for fauor, meede, or dread of any person alive, be he king or other wise, I haue no such respect to the person, that I will offend my conscience, I will not for the fauor or displeasure of any high estate, do that thing that should be against the will of God, I am an old man both weak and sickly, that loke daily for death, &c. And for as much as I do vnderstand, hauing percellurance by the allegations in the matter, the case is very doubtful, and also the party defendant will make none answer, but both rather appeale from vs, supposing that we be not indifferent, considering the kings high dignitie and authority within his owne realme, which he hath ouer his subiects, and we being his subiects, he thinketh that we cannot do iustice for feare of displeasure. Therefore to auoide all these ambiguities and doubts, I will not waite any further in this matter, vntlesse I haue the iust opinion and assent of the pope, and such other of more experience, or as he seeme better in such doubtful lawes, than I am: wherefore I will adioyne the court for this time, according to the order of the court of Rome, from whence semblable iurisdiction is deriued: and if we should go further than our commission doth warrant vs, it were great folie

Ad 3.

and

The Duke of  
Suffolke his  
speech touching  
the cardinals.

and much to our blames, and maie be accounted breakers of the order of the high court, from which (as I said) our authoritie be deriued. And with that the court was dissolved, and no more done. Then slept forth the duke of Suffolke from the king, and spake with an haull countenance these words: It was neuer merite in England (quoth he) while we had any cardinals among vs: which wordes were set forth both with countenance and beheniencie, that all men marvelled what he intended, to whom no man made answer. Then the Duke spake againe in great despight, to the which our Cardinall (perceiuing his beheniencie) soberlie made answer, &c. This matter continued thus a long season, and my Lord Cardinall was in displeasure with the king, for that the matter in his suite toke no better successe to his purpose, not withstanding my L. excused him by his commission, which gaue him no authoritie to proceed in iudgement without knowledge of the pope, who reserved the same to himselfe. At the last they were aduertised by their post, that the Pope would take deliberation in the matter, untill his courts were opened, which should not be before Bartholome wride next. The king considering the time so long ere it should be determined, thought it good to send an ambassado: to the pope to perswade with him, to shew such honorable fauor: vnto his maiestie, that the matter might sooner be ended than it was like to be, docto: Stephen Gardener secretary was thither sent, and there tarried till the latter end of summer. The king commanded the queene to be removed out of the court, and sent to another place: and his highnes rode in his progresse. And when H. Secretarie was returned from Rome, Cardinall Campeius made suite to be discharged, and was admitted to returne to Rome.

Cardinall Campeius toke his iourney towards Rome, with the kings reward, but that it was I am vncertaine: neuertheless after their departure it was reported vnto the king by the counsell, that cardinall Campeius was departed, & caried with him great treasures of my L. cardinals of England, to be conuaid in great sums to Rome, whither they furnished he would secretly repaire out of the realme: inso much as they caused a post to ride after the Cardinall to search him. And when they ouertooke him at Calie (where he was staied untill search was made) here was not found so much money as he receiued of the kings reward, and so he was dismissed, and went his wate.

After that Cardinall Campeius was thus departed and gone, Michaellmas terme drew on, against which time my L. cardinall resorted vnto his house at Westminster: and when the terme began, he went vnto the hall in such like sort and gesture, as he was accustomed most commonly to do, and sat in the Chancerie being then Chancelor: after which date he neuer sat more.

The next daie he tarried at home expecting the coming of the Dukes of Suffolke & Rosse, who came not that daie: but the next day, to wit, the 18. day of October, they came thither vnto him, to whom they declared the kings pleasure, which was that he should surrender and deliver by the great scale vnto the king, and to depart simple vnto either, which was an house situate nigh vnto Hampton court, belonging to the bishopricke of Winchester. The cardinall demanded of them their commission that gaue them such authoritie:

who

who answered againe, that they were sufficient commissioners, and had authoritie to doe no lesse by the kings mouth: notwithstanding he would in no wise agree in that behalfe, without further knowledge of their authoritie, saying: That the great scale was deliuered him by the kings person, to enioy the ministracion thereof, with the ronne of the Chancelor, for the terme of his life, wherof for his surety he had the 2. letters patentes: which matter was greatly debated betwene him and the dukes, with manie great and heinous wordes, inso much that the dukes were faine to depart againe without their purpose, and rode to Windsor to the king, and made report accordingly: but the next day they returned againe, bringing with them the kings letters. Then the cardinall deliuered vnto them the great scale, & was content to depart simply, taking with him nothing but only certaine provision for his house: and after long talke betwene him and the dukes, they departed with the great scale of England, and brought the same to the king. Then the cardinall called all his officers before him, & toke account of them for all such stuffe wherof they had charge, and in his galerie were set diuers tables, wherupon lay a great number of golby rich stuffe, as whole pieces of silke of all colours, velvet, satin, damaske, taffata, grograin and other things: also there lay 1000. pieces of fine Holland cloth. There was laid on euery table books, reporting the contents of the same, and so was there inuentories of all things in order against the kings coming. He caused to be hanged the wals of the gallery on the one side, with cloth of gold, cloth of tissue, cloth of siluer, and rich cloth of bodden of diuers colours: on the other side were hanged the richest sute of copes of his owne provision made for his colleges of Wyndesore and Ipswich, that euer was scene in England. Then had he two chambers adioining to the galerie, the one most commonlie called the guilt chamber, and the other the counsell chamber, wherin were set by two broad and long tables vpon trestles, wherupon was set such a number of plate of all sortes, as was almost incredible. In the guilt chamber were set out vpon the table nothing but guilt plate, and vpon a cupboard and in a window was set no plate but gold, very rich: and in the counsell chamber was all white & parcell guilt plate, and vnder the table in baskets was all old broken siluer plate, and bookes set by them, purporting euery kind of plate, and euery parcell, with the contents of the ounces thereof. Thus was all things prepared, giuing charge of all the said stuffe, with all other remaining in euery office, to be deliuered to the 2. to make answer to their charge: for the order was such, that euery officer was charged with the receipt of the stuffe belonging to his office by indenture. When all things being ordered, as to before rehearsed, my lord prepared him to depart by water, and before his going sir William Gascoine being his treasurer, came vnto him (to whome he gaue among other the charge of the deliuerie of the said goods to be deliuered vnto the king) and said vnto the cardinall (then being his lord and master. Sit (quoth he) I am loy for your grace: for ye shall go straight way to the tower, as I heare say. Is this the good comfort and counsel? quoth my L. cardinall vnto him) that you can giue your master in aduersity? It hath ben alwaies your natural inclination to be very light of credit, & much more light of reporting

Cardinal dis-  
charged of the  
great scale, and  
departed from  
Dukes place  
simple.

Stephen Gar-  
dener the kings  
secretary sent  
ambassado.

ites. I would you should know sir William, and all those reporters, that it is untrue, for I neuer deferred to come there, although it hath pleased the king to take my house ready furnished for his pleasure at this time. I would all the world knew that I haue nothing but it is his of right; for by him, and of him I haue receiued all that I haue: therefore it is of conuenience and reason, that I tender vnto his maiestie the same againe with all my heart: therefore go your waies, and attend well to your charge. And therewithall hee made him ready, and then with his train of gentlemen and yeomen, which was no small number, hee took his barge at his priuie staires, and so went by water vnto Putney: at the taking whereof, there was walking by and down in Chamis as full of boates, filled with people of London, expecting the cardinals departing by water, supposing that he should haue gone to the tower, whereof they ioied verie much. *Wauering and newfangled multitude, is it not a wonder to consider the mutabilitie of this vncertaine worlde, the common people desireth alwaies those thinges for the nouelties sake, which after turneth them to small profit or commoditie? For if the sequele be wel and directly waied and considered, they had small cause to reioice at his fall. What hath succeeded, wise men do knowe, and the common sort themselves haue felt: wherefore to wonder at it were but a follie, to studie the remedie, it profiteth not: for thus it hath euer bene, and will alwaies be, do what wee will to redresse the same it worseth not. I cannot see, but alwaies men in authoritie bee disdained with the common sort of people, and they most of al that do obserue and minister iustice: for where they please some one that receiue the benefit of the law at their hands, according to iustice, they in likewise displease the contrary part, supposing to sustain wrong where they haue right. Thus al iustices be in contempt with the people alwaies, for ministration of their duty, yet most some such bee alwaies elected, and deputed so to do, for else if the world should bee without inquisition and order, there should be too much error and abhominacion. When he was arrived with all his train at Putney, being vpon the land, hee took his mule, and euery man took their horses; and riding not past a paire of butts length, hee espied a Gentleman come ryding in posse downe the hill in the Colone of Putney: And demanding of his Gentlemen about him, what hee was that came ryding downe so fast, forsooth Sir (quoth they) it is master Noris, as it seemeth to vs; and by and by, hee came to my Lorde, saluting him and sayde: Sir, the Kinges maiestie commendeth him vnto you, and commaunded me to theise you, that you bee as much in his fauor as euer you were, and so shall bee: therefore hee would, that you should bee of good cheere, and take no thought, for you shall not lacke. And although hee hath done thus vnkindlie towards you, it is more for the satisfiing of some, than of any indignacion. And yet you knowe well that hee is able to recompence you againe, and restore you to worse so much: and thus hee bad me that I should theise you, and willed me to bid you to take all this matter in patience: and sir for my part, I trust to see you in better estate then euer ye were. But when hee had hearde master Noris report the good and comfortable wordes of the king, hee quicklie lighted from his mule, all alone, as though he had bene the youngest amongst*

*Wauering of  
the newfangled  
multitude des-  
cribed.*

*Cardinal Wol-  
sey arrived at  
Putney, and  
what followeth  
there at that  
tyme.*

his men, and incontinent kneeled downe in the dirt vpon both his knees, holding by his hands for soy of the kings most comfortable message: mass. Noris lighted also, espying him so soone vpon his knees, and kneeled by him, and took him in his armes, and asked him how hee did, calling vpon him to credite his message: *Sp. Noris* quoth he, when I consider the sofull newes that you haue brought me, I could do no lesse than greatly reioice, euery word pierced so my hart, that the sodain joy surmounted my memory, having no regard or respect to the place, but I thought it my duty, that in the same place where I receiued this comfort to laud and praise god vpon my knees, and most humbly to render to my soveraign lord my hartly thanks for the same. And as hee was talking thus vpon his knees to *Sp. Noris*, he would haue pulled off a velvet night cappe which he ware vnder his black hat, and scarlet cap, but he couide not vnboe the knot vnder his chin: wherefore with violence hee rent his laces of his cap, and pulled his said cap from his head, and kneeled bare headed: and this done, hee rose vp, and mounted againe vpon his mule, and so rode sooth by the high waie in the Colone, talking with *Sp. Noris*. And when hee came vpon Putney heath, where *Sp. Noris* should depart from him, master Noris gaue him a ring of golde with a stone, and saide vnto him, that the king sent him the same for a token of his good will, which ring (quoth he) the king saith ye knowe very well. It was the priuie token betwene the king and him, when the king would haue anye especiall thing sped at his hands: then said he to master Noris, if I were lord of the realme, the one halfe thereof were to small a reward to giue you for your paines and good newes: but god master Noris, consider with mee that I haue nothing left me, but my clothes vpon my backe, therefore I shall desire you to take this small reward at my hand (the which was a little chaine of gold made like a flagen chaine, with a crosse of gold, wherein was a peece of the holie crosse, which he continually ware about his neck next his bodie: ) and said farther more: master Noris I assure you, when I was in prosperitie, although it seem but small in balne, yet I would not gladly haue departed with the same for a thousand pounde, therefore I shall require you to take it in good worth, & to weare it about your neck continually for my sake, and to remember me to the king, when ye shall see oportunitie, vnto whose highnesse I shall most instantlie require you to haue me most humbly commended, for whose charitable disposition towards me, I can but praye for the preservation of his royall estate. I am his obedient subiect, his poore chaplain, and bread man, and so will be during my life, accounting my selfe nothing, nor to haue any thing but onelie of him, and by him, whome I haue iustlie and trulie serued to the best of my grosse wit: and with that hee took master Noris by the hand barebreasted, and so departed. And when hee was gone but a small distance, he returned againe, and caused *Sp. Noris* to be called to him: when master Noris was returned, hee sayde vnto him, I am forie (quoth he) that I haue no token to sende to the king: but if ye will at my request, present the king with this poore soole, I trust he will accept him: for he is for a noble mans pleasure, forsooth worth 1000. pounde: so master Noris took the sole, with whome my lord was faine to sende six of his tallest yeomen to helpe him to conuey the sole to

*Each the lord  
cardinals soole  
giuen to the k.*

to

to the court, for the poxe sole toke on like a tirant rather then he would haue departed from my L. but notwithstanding they conuicted him, and so brought him to the court, where the king receiued him verie gladlie.

After departure of Pass. Noris with his token to the king, my Lorde rode strait to Ather, which is an house belonging to the Bishoppe of Winchester, situate in the countie of Surreie, not far from Hampton Court, where my L. and his familie continued the space of thre or foure weekes, without either beds, shertes, table clothes, or dishes to eat their meate in, or wherewith to drinke, howbeit there was good provision of all kinde of viual, and of beere, and wine, whereof there was sufficient, and plentie enough: but my L. was compellid of necessitie to borrowe of master Arundell, and of the bishop of Carleile, plate and dishes, both to drinke in, and eate his meate in. Thus my Lorde with his familie continued in this strange estate untill after his loweltyde.

On Alhalowne daie when the cardinall had finished his seruice, hee returned into his chamber, and called for his dinner, who was serued in his private chamber, and there dined among others his Doctors, among whom master Thomas Cromwell dined: and sitting at dinner, it came to passe that in communication of his gentlemen and seruants true and faithfull seruice, which my Lorde much commended, Master Cromwell tooke an occasion, to tell my Lorde that hee ought in conscience to consider the truth, and good seruice that they had doone him in his necessitie, which did not for sake him in weale nor in tye, and saide: Sir, it shall be well doone for your grace to call them before you, both Gentlemen which be woorthie persons, and also Peomen, and let them vnderstande, that yee right well consider their paines and truth, with their faithfull seruice, and to giue them your commendation, with good wordes, the which shall bee to them great courage, to sustaine your miserie with paines and patience, and to spende their life and substance in your seruice. Alas, Thomas (quoth my Lorde) yee knowe I haue nothing to giue them, and wordes without deedes bee not often well taken, for if I hadde but as I late hadde, I woulde departe with them so frankelie, as they shoulde bee well contente: But nothing hath no fauour: and I am both ashamed and also loze, that I am not able to requite their faithfull seruice. And although I doe releeue, as I maie, to consider the fidelitie that I see in the number of my seruantes, who will not forsake mee in my miserable estate, but bee as diligent, and as seruicable about me, as they were in my great triumph and gloire: Yet doe I lament againe as becommeth the want of substance to distribute among them. Why Sir, (quoth Master Cromwell) haue yee not here a number of Chaplaines, to whom yee haue departed liberallie with spiritual promotions, in somuch, as some maie dispende by your Graces preferment a thousand pounde by yere, and some five hundred Markes, and some more, and some lesse? You haue not a Chaplain within your house, or belonging vnto you, but he maie spend well at the least, by your procurements and promotion, three hundred Markes pcerelie, who haue had all the profite and gaines at your handes: and your other

seruantes

seruantes nothing: and yet haue your seruantes taken much more paines in one daie, then all your sole Chaplaines haue doone in a yere. Therefore if they will not freele and friendelie consider your liberalitie, and depart with you of the same goods gotten in your seruice, nowe in your great indigence and necessitie, it is pittie that they liue, and all the trouble will haue them in indignation and hatred, for their ingratitude to their Master. I thinke no lesse Thomas (quoth my Lorde: ) therefore I praye you cause all my seruants to assemble without in my great Chamber after dinner, and see them stande in order, and I will declare vnto them in my mind. After that the bozys ende was taken vnto, Master Cromwell came to the Gentleman Alher and saide. Hearde you not (quoth hee) what my Lorde said? Yes Sir, quoth hee, I did: why then, quoth hee, call all the Gentlemen and peomen vnto the great Chamber, and so it was doone: the Gentlemen placed on the right side of the Chamber, and the Peomen on the other side, and at the last my Lorde came out in his rochet vpon a violet gowne like a bishop, who went straight to the upper end of the saide chamber, where was the great Windowe, standing there a while, his Chaplaines about him, beholding the goodlie number of his seruants, who coulde not speake vnto them untill the teares ranne downe his cheekes, which few teares perceiued by his seruantes, caused the fountaines of water to gush out of their faithfull eyes in such sort, as it woulde cause a cruel hart to lament. At the last, after he had turned his face to the window, and dried his moistened cheekes, he spake to them in this sort in effect, good faithfull Gentlemen, and true harted Peomen, I do not lament to see you about mee, but I lament in a maner, a certaine ingratitude on my behalfe towards you all, in whom hath bin a great default that in my prosperitie haue not don so much for you as I might haue don either in deed or in word, which laie in my power then to do, but then I knew not the seluel and special treasure I had in my house of you my faithfull seruantes; but now experience hath taught me, and with the eyes of my discretion I do perceiue the same. There was neuer thing that repented me more that euer I did, then both the remembrance of my great and most obliuous negligence, & unkind ingratitude that I haue not promoted, preferred, and aduanced you all, according to your demerits; howbeit, it is not vnknewen vnto you all, that I was not so follic furnished of temporal promotions in my gift, as I was of spirituall preferments; and if I should haue preferred you to anie of the said offices, then shoulde I haue run in the indignation of the Kings seruants, who would not much let to report be hind my back, that there coulde no office in the gift, escape the cardinal & his seruantes; and thus shoulde I haue run in open Rander before all the world. But now it is come to this passe, that it pleased the King to take all that euer I haue, into his handes, so that I haue nothing to giue you: for I haue nothing left mee but my bare clothes vpon my backe, the which are simple in comparison that I had, howbeit, if it might doe you anie good, I woulde not stick to diuide the same among you, but my good Gentlemen and Peomen, my trustie and faithfull seruants, and of whom no prince had the like, I shall require you to take some patience with me a while; for I doubt not, but that the King considering my

suggested

Master Tho.  
Cromwell his  
counsell to the  
Cardinall.

The Cardinall  
wordes to his  
gentlemen and  
peomen.

suggested offence by mine enemies, which is put against me to be of small griefe or hurt, for so great and sodaine an ouerthrow will shortly restore me to my liuing, so that I shall be more able to deuide my substance among you, wherof ye shall not lacke, for whatsoeuer shall chance hereafter to be an ouerplus and superfluitie of my revenues, at the determination of my peerey accourt, it shall be distributed among you: for I wil neuer during my life, esteeme the gods of riches of this world any other wise, then which shall be sufficient to maintaine the state, that God hath, and shall call me to. And if the king doe not so shortly restore me, then will I write for you, either to the king, or to any noble man within this realme to retein your seruice: for I doubt not but the king or any noble man of this realme will credite my letter in your commendation: therefore in the meane time I would aduise you to repaire home to your wiues, such as haue wiues, and some of you that haue no wiues, to take a time to visit your parents in the Countrey. There is none of you all, but once in a yere ye would require licence to see and visite your wife and other your friends: take this time therefore in that respect, and in your return I will not refuse you to beg with you. I consider that your seruice in my house hath bin such, that ye be not apt to serue any man vnder the degree of a king: therefore I would aduise you to serue no man but the king, who I am sure will not refuse you. Therefore I shall desire you to take your pleasure for a month, and then ye may come againe: and by that time I trust the is. will extend his mercy vpon me. Sir (quoth M. Cromwel) there be diuers of these your gentlemen that would be glad to see their friends, but they lacke money: therefore here be diuers of your chaplaines who haue receiued at your hands great benefices, and liuinges, let them shew themselves vnto you as they be bound to do: I thinke their honesty and charity is such, that they will not see you lacke, that may do you good or pleasure. And for my part, although I haue not receiued of your graces gift one peny toward the increase of my liuing, yet wil I giue you this toward the dispatch of your seruants: and therewith deliuered to my lord 5. l. in gold: and now let vs see what your chaplains will do. I thinke they will depart with you much more liberally than I, who be more able to giue you a pound then I a penie, go to masters (quoth he) to the chaplains: Inasmuch as they gaue to my L. liberallie, some 10. l. some 20. nobles, some 5. l. and so some more, & some lesse, as their powers would extend at that time: by means whereof my lord receiued among them, as much money, as paie the pooremen 10. s. a piece towards their quarters wages, and as much money as would paie euery of them for a months bond wages: and then they departed doونه into the hall, where some determined to go to their friends, and some would not depart from my lord, untill they might see him in better estate. My lord returned in to his chamber lamenting the departure from his seruants, making his moane to M. Cromwel, who comforted him the best he coule, and desired my lord to giue him leave, to go to London, whereas he would either make or marre (which was alwaies his common word.) Then after a little communication with my lord in secret, he departed, and toke his horse, and rode to London. At whose departing he said to my lords gentlemen, farewell,

M. Cromwel  
went to London  
to make op to  
the cardinall.

M. Cromwel  
went to London  
to make op to  
marre.

well, ye shall heare hostile of me, and if I speeke well, I will not faile to be here againe within these two daies, and so he rode on his iourneie, Ralph Sadler, since a knight, was then his cleerke, and rode with him. After my L. had supped that night, and all men got to bed, beinge Alhalowne daie about midnight, one of the porters wakened the gentleman vther, & tolde him that there were a great number of horsemen at the gate, that would come in, sayinge that it was Sir John Russell: the gentleman vther had the porter goe doونه, and make a great fire in the looge to dye them, for it had rained al that night most vehemently. The saide gentleman vther rose, cast on his night gowne, and went to the gates, and asked who was there: with that M. Russell spake, and the gates were opened, Sir John Russell went to the fire to dye him, and saide he came from the king on message to my L.orde, Sir, quoth the gentleman vther, I trust your newes be good. Yea I promise you on my fidelitie, and so tel him, that I haue brought him such newes that will please him well. The cardinall was wakened, and told of the iourneie taken by Sir John Russell that trouble some night: I praise God al be for the best quoth my lord: Yea quoth the gentleman vther, he told me it was such newes, as ye would greatly reioice to heare: wel then, quoth he, God be praised, and welcome be his grace, go ye and fetch him to me, and by that time I will be ready to talke with him.

Sir Ralph  
Sadler.

Sir John Russell  
went to the  
cardinall.

When M. Russell was come to my lord he had cast on his night gowne, vnto whom M. Russell made most humble reuerence vpon his knee, whom my L.orde stooped vnto, and toke him vp, and had him welcome: Sir (quoth he) I commendeth him vnto you, and deliuered him a great ring of gold, with a turke for a token, and willed me to bid you be of god cheere, for he loueth you as wel as euer he did, and is sorie for your trouble, whose minde runneth much vpon you: inasmuch that before his grace fate doونه to supper, he called mee vnto him, and desired me to take the pains secretly to visit you, and to comfort you the best of my power. And Sir I haue had the worst iourneie for so little a waite, that euer I had to my remembrance; my lord thanked him for his paines and good newes, and demanded of him if he had supped, and he said nate: wel then quoth my L. cause the cookes to prouide some meat for him, and cause a chamber to be prouided for him, that he make take his rest a while vpon a bedde: ad whilst commendement was fulfilled, and in the meane time my L. and M. Russell were in secret communication, and in the end M. Russell went to his chamber, and said he would tarie but a while, for he would be at the court, at Orenwich againe before daie, and would not for any thing that it were known that he had bin with my L. that night. And so being in his chamber, hauing a small repast, rested him a while vpon a bedde, while his seruantes sopped, and dyed them. And that doونه, incontinent hee rode awate with speeke againe to the court. After this within a while, my lord was redressed to plate, vessel, and household stoffe, of euery thing necessarie some part, so that hee was better furnished than before.

Adue to returne to master Cromwel, to see howe hee hath sped since his departure. The case stood so, that the Parliament should begin in crastino anti-

M. Cromwel  
went to  
make op to  
marre.



Parliament at  
the Blacke  
Friers.

marum, or thereabouts: and hee being within London desired with himselfe to be one of the Burgessees of the Parliament, and chanced to meeete with one Sir Thomas Rush knight, a speciall friende of his, whose sonne was appointed to bee a burgesse, of whome he obtained his rōme, and so put his foote into the Parliament house: so that within two or three dayes after his departure from my lord he came againe to Athere, with a pleasant countenance: and saide, that he had once adventured to put in his foote, where he would be better regarded or euer the Parliament was finished. When talked hee with my Lord, and after his talk, he rode againe to London, because he would not be absent from the Parliament in the morning. There was nothing doone against him in the Parliament house, but he sent to my Lord to knowe what answer hee might make in his behalfe: Insomuch, that there was nothing alleged against my lord, but that he was ready to make answer thereto. Insomuch, that at the length his honest estimation, & earnest behauior in his spassers cause, grew so in euery mans opinion, how that hee was the most faithfull seruant to his spasser of all other, wherein hee was greatlie of all men commended. Then was there brought in a Bill of Articles into the parliament house, to haue my Lord condemned of treasons, against which bill spasser Cromwell inueyed so discretely with such wittie persuasions, and deepe reasons, that the same could take no effect. Then were his enemies constrained to indight him in a premunstre, all which was to intitle the king to his goods and possessions, the which hee hadde obtained and purchased for the maintenance of his Colledges in Wyndesore and Ipswich, whereof hee was then in building, in the most sumptuous wise: wherein when my Lord was demanded by the Judges which were sent vnto him to knowe his minde, and to take his answer therein, hee answered them in this wise: my lordes Judges (quoth hee) the Kings highnesse knoweth, whether I haue offended his spaciellie or no, in using of my prerogatiue legantine, for the which I am indighted. I haue the Kings licence in my Cofters, vnder his hande, and breade Seale, for the exercising and using thereof in the most largeft wise, the which now are in the handes of mine enemies. Therefore because I will not stand in question with the king in his owne cause, I will here presentlie confesse before you the indightment, and put me wholly to the mercie and grace of the king, trusting that he hath a conscience, and a discretion to consider the truth, and my humble submission and obedience, wherein I might right well stand to the tryall thereof by Justice: but thus much you maie saie to his highnesse, that I am wholly vnder his obedience and will, & do submitte my selfe to all things that shall bee his princelie pleasure, whose will and commandment I neuer disobeyed or repugned, but was alwayes contented, and gladd to please him before God, whome I ought most chieftie to haue obeyed, the which now mee repentes: notwithstanding, I most heartilie requyre you to haue mee vnto his royall spaciellie commended, for whome I doe and will during my life, praye to God to sende him much prosperous honour and victorie ouer his enemies, and therewith they tooke their leaue and departed. Shortly after the king sent the duke of Norfolkke vnto him in message,

but

Duke of Norfolkke  
sent to the  
cardinall.

but that it was, was kept secret. My lord being aduertised that my lord of Norfolkke was comming euen at hand, he caused all his gentlemen to waite vpon him downe through the hall into the base court to receiue the duke at the gates, and commanded all his yeomen to stand in order still in the hall: and he himselfe with his gentlemen went to the gates, where he receiued my lord of Norfolkke bare-headed, who embraced each other: and so led him by the arme through his hall into his chamber. And when the duke had passed through vnto the upper end of the hall, regarding the number of tall Yeomen that stood on each side thereof, he turned againe to the Yeomen and saide: Sirs (quoth he) your diligent and faithfull seruice vnto your spasser in this his calamitie, hath purchased you of all men, noble, and ignoble, much honestie, in somuch, that the king commaunded me to saie to you in his name, that for your true and louing seruice that ye haue doone to your spasser, his highnesse will see you at all times furnished with seruices according to your demerites: with that my Lord put off his cappe, and saide to my Lord of Norfolkke, Sir (quoth hee) these men be all approoued men, wherefore it were pittie they should want any seruice: and being sozie that I am not able to doe for them as my heart wisheth, I will therefore requyre you my good Lord, to be good Lord vnto them, and extend your charitie amongst them, where or when ye shall see occasion at any time hereafter, and that ye will prefer their diligence and faithfull seruice vnto the king. Doubt you not my lord (quoth he) but I will do for them the best in my power, & whereas I shall see cause I will be an earnest suitor for them to the king: and some of you I will haue my selfe in seruice for right honest men, and as you haue begun, so continue, untill ye heare more of the kings pleasure, Gods blessing and mine be with you, and so went by vnto the great chamber to dinner, whom my lord cardinall thanked, and said vnto him: yet my Lord of all other noblemen I haue cause to thanke you, for your noble & gentle heart, the which you haue shewed me behinde my backe, as my seruant Th. Cromwel hath reported vnto me: but euen as ye be a noble man in deede, so haue you shewed your selfe no lesse to all men in calamitie, and in especiall to me, whome ye haue brought down from my high estate: but now againe being in this miserable state, ye haue extended your fauour most honourable, with great charitie, &c. The dinner ended, the cardinall and duke went into my Lordes priuie Chamber, where they continued in consultation: and being there, it chanced spasser Shelley the Judge to come thither, who was sent from the king, whereof relation was made to my Lord: which caused the duke and him to breake vp their communication. And as the duke desired to goe to a Chamber, hee mette with spasser Shelley, to whom spasser Shelley resorted. And after hee had made relation of the cause of his comming hee desired my Lord of Norfolkke to tarrie, and to assist him in dosing of his message: whome hee denied, and saide, I haue nothing to do with your message, wherein I will not meddle, and so departed into a Chamber, where hee tooke his rest for an houre or two: and in the meane time my Lord issued out of his priuie chamber, and came to master Shelley to know his message, who after due salutations, did declare vnto him that the kings pleasure was to haue my

Judge Shelley  
sent to the  
cardinall.



my Lordeys house, called Poike place, neere Westminster, belonging to the Bishopricke of Poike, and to possesse the same, according to the lawe of his realme: his highnes hath sent for all the Judges, and for all his learned counsell to know their opinions for the aduarice thereof, whose opinions be fullie resolved that your Grace must make a recognisance, and before a Judge to acknowledge and confesse the right thereof to belong to the king and his successors, and so his highnes shall be assured thereof: wherefore it hath pleased the king to appoint and send mee hither to take of you the same recognisance, hauing in your grace such assistance, as that ye will not refuse so to do. Wherefore I shall desire your grace to know your pleasure therein. *Sp. Shelley* (quoth my Lorde) I knowe that the king of his owne nature is of a roiall stomacke, not willing more than iustice shall lead him vnto by the lawe: And therefore I counsell you, and all other Judges and learned men of his counsell, to put no more into his head than lawe that maie stande with conscience: for when yee tell him this is the law, it were well done ye should tel him also, that although this be the law, yet this is conscience: for law without conscience is not met to be giuen to a king by his counsell, to be ministred by him, ne by anie of his ministers; for euerie counsellor to a king ought to haue a respect to conscience before the rigor of the law. For *Laus est facere quod decet, non quod licet*. The king ought for his roiall dignitie and prerogative to mitigate the rigor of the law, where conscience hath no more force. And therefore in his princely place he hath constituted a chancelor: to order for him the same. And heretofore the court of Chancerie, hath bene commonlie called the court of conscience, because it hath iurisdiction to commaund the law in euerie case to desist from the execution of the rigor of the same, where as conscience had most effect. Therefore I saie to you, that in this case, although you and other of your profession perceiue by the orders of the lawe, that the king maie lawfullie do that thing which yee require of me: how say you master Shelley, may I do it with conscience, to giue that auaile which is none of mine from me and my successors: if this be the lawe and conscience, I praye you shewe me your opinion. For sooth my Lorde (quoth hee) there is a great conscience: but hauing regarde to the kings high power, and to a better purpose, it maie the better stand with conscience: whols sufficient to recompence the church of Poike with double the value. That I knowe wel, but here is no such condition (quoth my L.) but onlie a bare & simple departure with anothers right. For if euerie bishop that maie, should so do, then might euerie prelate giue away the patrimony of their dignities, which should be but smallie to the kings honor. Well I will not stand with you long in this matter. Let me see your commission: to whome master Shelley shewed the same. And that seene, Master Shelley quoth he, ye shall shew the kings highnes that I am his most faithfull subiect, obediencer and head-man, whose roiall commandement and request I will in no wise disobey, but fulfill his pleasure in all such things wherein yee fathers of the lawe saie, that I maie lawfullie do, therefore I charge your conscience to discharge me, howbeit shewe his highnes from mee, that I most humble desire his maiestie to call to his most gracious remembrance, that there is both a heauen and hell. And there withall

he clearketoke and wrote the recognisance, and after some secret talke they departed. When rose the Duke of Suffolke from his repast, and after some communication with my lorde, he likewise departed. Thus continued my lorde at Asher, who receiued daily messages from the court, some good, and some as euill, but mo euill than good: for his enemies procured his disquietnesse that they could, as some daie they would cause the king to sende for foure or fixe of his gentlemen from him to serue the king, and another daie they would take auaile some of his promotions, or some of their promotions whome he had preferred before. Then would they fetch from him some of his poynten, in so much as the king tooke strictene of them at one time into his guard. This was his life for a long time, so that there was not one daie, but euier he went to bedde, he had an occasion greatlie to chafe, and sette the heart out of his bodie, but that he was a wise man, and bare all things in patience. At Christmasse he fell verie soze sicke, most likelie to dye, whereof the king beinge aduertised, was verie soze, and sent Doctor Buis his physician vnto him, to see in what estate he was. Doctor Buis came vnto him, finding him lying verie sicke in his bedde: and perceiuing the danger returned to the king, of whome the king demaunded, saying: Haue ye seene ponder man? Yea sir (quoth he.) How do you like him (quoth the king?) Sir (quoth he) if ye will haue him dead, I warrant him, he will be dead within these foure daies, if he receiue no comfort from you shortly: Marie (quoth the king) God for bid that he should die: I praye you master Buis go againe vnto him, and doe your cure vnto him, for I would not lose him for twentie thousand pound. Then must your grace (quoth master Buis) send him first some comfortable message, as shortly as ye can: euen so I will (quoth the king) by you, and therefore make speeche to him againe, and ye shall deliuer him this ring from me for a token, in the which ring was ingrauen the kings Image, within a rubie, as like the king as coulde bee deuised. This ring hee knoweth right well, for hee gaue me the same, and tell him that I am not offended with him in my heart any thing at all, and that shall he knowe shortly: therefore bid him plucke vpp his heart, and bee of good comfort, and I charge you, come not from him until ye haue brought him out of daunger of death. And so Doctor Buis departed with speeche to Asher, after whome the king sent Doctor Cromer the Scot, Doctor Clement, and Doctor Worton, to consult with master Buis for my lordes recouerie.

After master Buis had bene with my Lorde, and deliuered the kings tokens vnto him, with the most comfortable wordes that he could deuise in the kings behalfe, he reioyced not a little, and aduanced him in his bedde, and receiued the tokens most fayfullie, thanking master Buis for his paines and good comfort: Master Buis tolde him furthermore that the kings pleasure was that he should minister vnto him for his health, and to toyne with him for the better and most assured waies, he hath sent hither doctor Clement, doctor Cromer and doctor Worton. Therefore my lorde (quoth he) it were well done they were called in to visit you, and to consult with them: to this most

Cardinal Roke,  
like to haue  
died.

on my lord was contented to heare their iudgements, and it was not long ere they had brought him out of danger, and within foure daies set him on his seate, and got him a stomacke to meate, all which done, they took their leaue to depart, refusing bitterlie all rewards profered them, saying the king had giuen them especiall commandement that they should take of him nothing, for at their retorne he himselfe would reward them. Thus my lord continued at Asher untill Candlemas, against which feast the king caused to be sent to my lord three or foure cart lobes of stiffe, as bedding, plate, hangings, kitchen stiffe, &c. Then commanded he master Cromwell to make earnefull suite to the king, that he might remove from thence to some other house: which suite at the kings hands master Cromwell obtained, for the king was contented he should remove to Richmond, which place my lord had a little before repaire to his great coses: for the king had made an exchange thereof with him for Hampton court. All this was done without knowledge of the kings counsell: for if they might haue had vnderstanding hereof before, then woulde they haue perswaded the king to the contrarie: but when they knewe of the kings grant and licence, although they dissimuled their minde in the kings presence; yet were they afraid of him, least his might resort to the king might moue the king at some brayde to haue resorted vnto him, and to haue called him home againe, considering the great louing affection that the king daily shewed vnto him: wherefore they doubted his rising vp againe, if they found not a meane shortly to remove him further from the king. Inso-much that they thought it convenient for their purpose to moue the king vpon considerations which they inuented, that it were verie necessarie that my lord should goe some into the north vnto his benefice, where he should be a good state for the countrie, to the which the king condescended. Whereupon my lord of Norfolkke bade master Cromwell to saie to him, that he must goe home to his benefice: who at his next repaire to my lord (then lying at Richmond) declared to him how it was determined that he should goe home to his benefice. Told then Thomas (quoth my lord) we will goe to Winchester. I will (quoth master Cromwell) shewe my lord of Norfolkke what ye saie: and so he did. What should he do there (quoth the Duke?) naie let him goe to his Archbishoppshope of York, where his honor and more charge lieth: and so shew him. The lordes who were not his friends, moued the king to giue my lord a pension of 4000. markes out of Winchester, and the rest to distribute among his nobilitie and seruants, and so in likewise to diuide the reuenues of Saint Albons, whereof some had three hundred markes, and some an hundred pounds, and so some more, and some lesse. And all the reuenues of the lands belonging to his Colledges of Oxford and Ipswich, which the king took into his owne hands: whereof master Cromwell had the receipt and gouernance afore by my lordes assignment. Wherefore it was thought verie necessarie, that hee should haue still, who executed all things the reof so exaltie and swiftly, that he was had in great estimation for his behauiour heretofore, and also for the true and faithfull demeanour towards his lord and master. When it came to passe, that hee to whome the king had giuen anie annuities or fees for terme of life

Cromwell a  
suttler to the k.  
for the cardinal.

The Cardinal  
first builder of  
Hampton court:  
for the which  
house, the king  
gaue him Rich-  
mond in ex-  
change.

Cromwell his  
ring.

by passport, would not be good, but onely during my lordes life, forasmuch as the king had no longer state therein, the which he had by reason of my lordes attainder, in the premunire, and to make these estates good and sufficient for the terme of their liues, there was none other thise, but to obtaine my lordes confirmation of their patents. And this to bee brought about, there was no meane but to sue to master Cromwell to attaine the same at my lordes handes, who they thought the best instrument for the purpose. Then began euerie man, both noble men and gentlemen, who had anie patents of the king out of Winchester or Saint Albons, to make suite to master Cromwell, to sollicite the cause to my lord, to get therein his confirmation, and for his paines therein, both worthily rewarded him, and euerie man to shew him such pleasure as should be at all times in their severall powers, whereof they assured him: wherein master Cromwell perceived an occasion giuen him to helpe himselfe, and to bring to passe that hee long sought for, intending to worke in this matter according to their desires, the sooner to bring his owne enterprise and purpose to passe. Then at his next retorne to my lord he moued this matter to him, and so perswaded with him, that they both wrought together to bring master Cromwell in place where hee might doe good to my lord, and also to himselfe. And now hauing the ordering and disposition of the landes of these Colledges, he had great occasions of suites, besides his continuall accesse to the king, by meanes whereof he grew into the kings fauour, who repayed him to be a verie wise man, and a meete instrument to serue his grace.

Now the lordes thought long to haue the cardinall removed further out of the kings way, wherefore among other of my lordes, the duke of Norfolkke said to Mr. Cromwell: Cromwell (quoth he) me thinke the cardinall thy master ma-  
bitter wordes  
of the duke of  
Norfolkke a-  
gainst the car-  
dinall.

kech no haste to go northward, tell him, if he goe not away, but shall tarrie, I will reare him with my teeth: therefore I would aduise him to prepare himselfe abate as shortly as he can, or else he shall be sent forward. These wordes Mr. Cromwell reported to my lord at his next repaire to him, who then had an occasion to resort to him for the dispatch of the noble and gentlemen's patents. And here I will leaue off this matter, and speake of other things that in this meane time happened.

The lady Margaret dutchesse of Sauoy Ant to the emperor, and the lady Lewes dutchesse of Angoulême, mother to the French king, met at Cambray in the beginning of the month of June last past, to treat of a peace, where were present doctor Tontall bishop of London, and sir Tho. Moore chancelor of the duchie of Lancaster, commissioners for the king of England. At length through diligence of the said ladies, a peace was concluded betwene the emperor, the pope, the kings of England, and of France. This peace was called the wo-mans peace, and was proclaimed by heraults, with the sound of trumpets in the citie of London, to the great reioicing of the merchants, who in time of the wars had sustained much hinderance.

The 26. of October at Oxenwith, sir Th. Moore late chancelor of the duchie of Lancaster, was made lord chancelor of England, and the next daie led

Peace between  
the Emperoz  
and the king of  
England.  
Sir Thomas  
Moore Chan-  
celor of Eng-  
land.

into the chancery by the dukes of *Posfolke* and *Suffolke*, and there shewne.

States created

The 8. of December was Th. Boileyn viscount Rochford created earle of *Wiltshire*: Rob. viscount Fitzwater, earle of *Suffolke*, and George L. Hastings earle of *Warrington* at *Poske* place by *Westminster*.

1530  
The new Testament printed in English.

William Tindall having translated the new Testament into English, and caused the same to be printed beyonde the seas, manie of thm were conuicted into England, and there made sale of, as good merchaundise, for many men desired to haue them, but this translation was forbidden by the *li.* to bee vsed of his subiects: for his counsell, namely the bishops affirmed that the same was not truly translated, and that therein were prologues and p̄fates sounding to heresie, with vncharitable railing against bishops and the clergy. The king therfore commended the Bishops, that they calling to them the best learned men of the *Vniuersities* should cause a new translation to be made, that the people without danger might read the same for their better instruction in the lawes of God.

Am. reg. 22.

Ambassadors to the emperor and pope.

The *li.* understanding that the Emperour and the Pope were appointed to mete at *Banone* or *Bologne*, where the emperor should bee crowned, sent thither an ambassade from him the earle of *Wiltshire*. *Dodo*: *Stokesley*, elected bishop of *London*, and his almoner *dodo*: *Edward Lee*, to declare both vnto the pope and emperor the law of God, the determinations of the *Vniuersities* in the case of his marriage, & to require the pope to do iustice according to truchty, and also to shew to the emperor, that the king did moue this matter, only for discharge of his conscience, and not for any other respect of pleasure or displeasure earthly: these ambassadors comming to *Bonony*, were honorable receiued, and first doing their message to the pope, had answer of him, that he woulde heare the matter disputed when hee came to *Rome*, and according to right he woulde do iustice. The emperor answered, that he in no wise woulde be against the lawes of God, and if the court of *Rome* woulde iudge that the matrimonie was not good, hee woulde bee contented to stand by the dispensation, which he thought to bee of force enough to prooue the marriage lawfull. With these answers the ambassadors departed, and returned homewards, till they came on this side the mountaynes, and then receiued letters from the *li.* which appointed the earle of *Wiltshire* to go ambassado: to the French *li.* which then lay at *Burdeaux*, making gift for money for the redeeming of his sonnes. And the bishop of *London* was appointed to go to *Padua*, and other *Vniuersities* in *Italy*, to know their full resolutions and determinate opinions in the kings case of matrimonie: and the kings almoner was commanded to returne into England.

Sute to Rome forbidden.

Afterwards king Henry upon occasion of delate made by the Pope in his controuersie of divorcement, and through displeasure of such reportes as hee heard had bin made of him to the court of *Rome*, & thirly picked forward by some counsellors, to follow the example of the Germans, caused proclamation to be made on the 19. of September, forbidding all his subiects to purchase any manner of thing from the court of *Rome*, containing matter prejudiciall to the high authority, jurisdiction, and prerogative of all of this Realme,

o)

or to the hinderance and impeachment of the kings maiesties noble and virtuous intended purposes.

Cardinall Wolley having licence of the king (as ye haue heard) to repaire vnto *Richmond*, was there lodged within the lodge of the great park, which was a verie pretie house, there my lord lay vntill Lent with a pretie number of his seruants, for the rest went to board wages. You haue heard tofore, what woordes the Duke of *Posfolke* had to master Cromwell, touching my lordes going vnto his benefice of *Poske*. At such time as master Cromwell tolde the se woordes to my lord: *Spacie Thomas* (quoth my lord) then is it time to be going, if he take it so, therefore I pray you to go to the king, and saie I woulde go to my benefice of *Poske* but for lacke of money, desiring his grace to helpe me with some: for ye maie say that the last money that I receiued from his grace hath bene too little to paie mine olde debts, and to compell me to the painment thereof hath bene too much extremitie, taking my gods from me, wherein I trust his grace will haue a charitable respect: ye maie also shewe my lord of *Posfolke* and other of the counsell, that I woulde depart if I had money. Cromwell went to *London*, and my lord removed out of the lodge into the charterhouse at *Richmond*, where he lay in a lodging with *dodo*: *Collet*, made for himselfe, vntill he removed northward, which was in the *Passion* weeke: and euerie daie resorted to the charterhouse there, and in the after noones hee woulde sit in contemplation with one of the most ancient fathers of that house in their cels, who conuerted him, and caused him to despise the vaine glorie of the world, and gaue him shirtes of haire to weare, the which he wore diuers times after. When master Cromwell came to the court, he shewed my lord of *Posfolke*, that my lord woulde gladly go northward, but for lacke of money, wherein he desired his helpe to the king. Then was the king moued therein as well by master Cromwell, as by the counsell: which matter the king referred to determine and assigne to the counsell, who were in diuers opinions, so that after long debating it was concluded that he should haue by way of p̄sent a thousand markes of his pension out of *Wiltshire*: when this determination was concluded, they declared the same to the king, who straightwaile commanded the same thousand markes to bee deliuered out of hande to master Cromwell, and so it was. The king commanded master Cromwell to resort to him againe, when he had receiued the same summe of money: at whose returne to the king, the king saide: Shew my lord, although our counsell haue assigned no summe of money for to heare his charges, yet ye shall shewe him in my behalfe, that I haue sent a thousand pound of my beneuolence, and tell him that he shall not lacke, and bid him be of god chere. After Cromwell humbly in my lordes behalfe, thanked the king, and therewith departed, and came to *Richmond* to my lord, to whom he deliuered the money, and whereof it was lent, that the counsell sent him, and of the money which the king sent him, adding thereto the kings comfortabable sayings, wherein my lordes got a little reliefe. Then my lord prepared all things for his Iourney, and sent to *London* for liuerie clothes for his seruants that should ride with him: so that all things being furnished towards his Iourney, in the beginning

Cardinall Wolley lay at Richmond.

*Dodo*: *Collet* Dean of *Pauls*.

of passion weeke before Easter he set forward, and rode from Richmond to a place of the abbot of Westminster called Hendon: the next date he removed to a place where Lady Parry lay called the Kite: the next day to Kisson, where he lodged in the priorie: the next date to Huntington, and there lodged in the Abbey. And the next date he removed to Peterborough, and there lodged in the abbey, making there his abode all the next weeke, where he kept his solenne feast of Easter, with all his traine, in number 160. persons, hauing with him twelue cartes to carrie his stiffe of his owne, which he sent for from his Colledge of Wyndesore, that were there provided, beside thre score other cartes of his dailie carriage of necessaries for his buildings. Upon palme sūndae he went in procession with the monkes. And upon maundie thursdae he made his maundie there in our Ladie chappell, hauing 59. poore men, whose fete he washed, and kissed after he had wiped them, he gaue euerie of the said poore men twelue pence in money, thre elles of good canuas to make them shirtes, a paire of new shoes, a cast of red herrings and thre white herrings, and one of them had two shillings. Upon easter date he rose to the resurrection, &c. On thursdae next he removed to master Fitz Williams knight (sometime a merchant taylor of London, and then of the kings counsell, who dwelt within thre or foure miles of Peterborough) where he was ioyfullie receiued, and had honorable entertainment. On mundaie next he removed vnto Stamford, and the next date to Grantham, and was lodged in the house of master Hall. The next night he lodged in the Castle of Newark, where he remained the next date, and from thence rode to Southwell, and there continued the most part of that sommer, not without great reioys of the most worshipfull of the countrey. And diuers noble men hauing occasion to repaire into the same countrey there, thought it good to visit my lord as they travelled, of whome they were most gladly entertained, and had right good chere: whose noble and gentle behauior caused him to haue much loue in the countrey of all kinde of people: he kept there a noble house, where was both plentie of meate and drinke for all commers, and also much almes giuen at his gate vnto the poore of the towne and country. He vsed much charity and clemencie among his tenants and other: he made many agreements betwene gentlemen and gentlemen, and betwene some gentlemen and their wiues, and other meane persons, the which had bene long before a sunder and in great trouble, making for euery of them (as occasion serued) great assemblies & feasts, not sparing his purse where he might make amitie. It chanced vpon Corpus Christi euen, in the night, when my lord and all his household were at rest in their beds, there knoced at the gate two gentlemen, the one named master Brierton one of the gentlemen of the kings priuie chamber, and master Wicherley, who were come from the king in post to speake with my lord. These were let in, my lord was raised, and came to them into the dining chamber: they kring him in his night apparell, did to him due reuerence, whom he took by the hands, demanding how the king his soueraigne lord did. Sir (said they) right well and merry, we must desire to talke with you apart: With a good will (quoth he.) After long talke, they took forth of a little maile a little coffer covered with

The Cardinals  
maundie.

Sir W. Fitz  
Williams al-  
derman of Lon-  
don, and trea-  
surer of the  
kings house.

with greene velvet, and bound with bars of silver and gilt, with a Locke and a gilt key, with the which they opened the chest, out of the which they toke an instrument of writing containing more than a skinne of great parchment, hauing manie leales hanging to the same, whereunto they put more waie for my lordes seale: the which my lord seales, and subscribed his name with his owne hand, and deliuered the same againe vnto them, desiring them to take a bed: for it was somewhat past midnight. But they saide they would straight way ride to the earle of Shrotesburie, to be with him ere he were stirring: so my lord caused them to eate such colde meate as was readie, and to drinke a boile of two of wine: that done, he gaue each of them foure olde souveraignes of fine golde, and so they departed. In this sort and manner my lord late at Southwell vntill about the latter end of grasse time, then he removed to Peterborough, an abbey, to Rufford and Blith abbey, and so to Scroby, where he continued till after Michaelmas, exercising many deedes of charity, & commonly euery sūday he would traueil vnto some poore parish church, and there would say his diuine service, and cause one of his chaplaines to preach vnto the people: that done, he would dine in some honest house of the towne, where should be distributed to the poore a great almes in meate and drinke, as of monie. About the feast of S. Michael, he removed to Catwold castle within 7. miles of Poike, where he lay long after with much honor and loue of the countrey, doing deedes of charitie, and held there an honorable household for all commers, and also built and repaired the castle, hauing artificers and laborers about the number of 300. persons dailie in wages, &c. At length being thereunto persuaded by the doctors of the church of Poike, he determined to be shaled there at Poike minister the next mundaie after Allhalloome day, against which time due preparation was made for the same, but not in so sumptuous wise as were his predecessors. My lord sent his gentleman vther to Poike, to foreshay things there that should bee ordered and provided for the solennitie, which should haue bene as meane as could be. Upon Allhalloome date one of the head officers of the Church of Poike, which should haue the most doolings in all this shalation, was with my lord at dinner at his house of Catwold, and sitting at dinner they fell in communication of this matter, and of the order thereof, saying, that my lord should go on fote from a chappell of Saint Iames, without the gates of the citie vnto the minister vpon cloth, the which should be distributed among the poore after his passage. My Lord hearing this, made answer in this wise: Although our predecessors did go vpon cloth, so we intend to go on fote from thence without any such gloze, for I take God to witness, I do not intend to go thither for any triumph or gloze, but only to performe the rules of the church, to the which I am bound. And therefore I desire you all, and will commaund other my seruants to go as humble thither without any sumptuous or gorgeous apparell, other wise than in decent manner: for I doe purpose to come to Poike vpon Sūndae at night next, and to lodge in the beans house, and vpon munday to be shaled, and there to make but a dinner for you of the close, and for other worshipfull gentlemen that shall chaunce to come thither to the same, and to suppe with some of the residences, and

Cardinal Col-  
ley at Catwold.

Preparation  
for installing  
the cardinal.

the next daie to dine with the Spaiol, and then to prepare home hiser againe. The daie being once knowne unto all the countrie, which coulde not bee bin, the worshipfull Gentlemen and other, as Abbots and Bishops sent in such provision of viualles, that it is almost incredible, as of fat beasts and muttons, wilde fowle, and venison both red and fallowe, and other daintie things such as would haue plentifully furnished the feast. All which things were unknown to my lord, for as much as hee being prevented and disappointed of his purpose, by reason that he was arrested of high treason, as ye shall heare hereafter, so that most part of this Sommer provision, was sent unto Poike that same daie of his arrest, and the next daie following: for his arrest was kept as close and secret from the countrie, because they doubted the common people, which had him in great estimation and loue, for his great charitie and liberality which he vsed daily amongst them. It is appointed by the king & counsell, that Sir Walter Walsh knight, one of the kings priuite chamber, shoulde be sent downe with a commission into the North unto the earle of Northumberland, who was sometime brought vp in house with the cardinal, and the twaine being iointlie in commission to arrest the Cardinall of high treason: Spasser Walsh toke his horse at the court gate about noone vpon Alhalowme daie, toward the earle of Northumberland. And nowe haue I occasion to declare what happened about the same time, which peradventure signified the troubles following to the cardinall. The cardinall sitting at dinner vpon Alhalowm day, hauing at his bowdes and diuers chaplaines sitting at dinner, ye shall vnderstand that the cardinals great crosse stood in a corner at the tables ende, leaning against the hanging, and when the bowdes ende was taken vp, and a conuenient time for the chaplaines to arise, one doctor Augustine a Cenetian, & physician to the cardinall, rising from the table with the other, hauing vpon him a great golwe of boisterous beluet, ouerthrew the Crosse, which trailing downe along the tappet, with the point of one of the crosses, brake doctor Boners head, that the blood ranne downe, the companie there standing, greaue astonished with the chaunce. The Cardinall perceiving the same, demaunded what the matter meant of their lodayne amaze? and they shewed him of the fall of his Crosse vpon doctor Boners head: and hath it, quoth he, by a wone anie blood? Yea forsooth my Lord quoth they: with that he caste his head asid, and saide shaking his heade, *A Salum Omen*, and therewith saide Grace, and rose from the Table, and went to his Chamber. Nowe marke the significacion how the Cardinall expounded this matter at Pomfret after his fall. First ye shall vnderstande that the Crosse which hee bare as Archbyschoppe of Poike, signified himselfe, and Augustine the Physician who ouerthrew the Crosse, was onelie hee that accuseth the Cardinall, whereby his enemies caught an occasion to ouerthrowe him: it fell vpon doctor Boners head, who was Spasser of the Cardinales faculties and Spirituall iurisdiccions, and was then damnyfied by the ouerthrowe of the Crosse: yea, and moreover drawing blode of him, betokened death, which shortly after did ensue. About which time of this mischaunce, the same verie daie and season Spasser Walsh tooke his horse at the Court, as high as coulde bee subged, and so must needes bee taken for a

signe

signe or token of that which followed. Nowe the appointed time by the decree of his staulacion, and sitting at dinner vpon the Friday next before the spon daie, on the which daie hee intended to be stauled at Poike, the Earle of Northumberland and Spasser Walsh, with a great companie of Gentlemen of the earles house, and of the countrie, whom he had gathered together in the kings name, came into the hall at Caluod, the officers being at dinner, and the cardinall not fultie dined, being then in his fruites. The first thing that the earle did after hee had set order in the hall, hee commanded the porter at the gates to deliuer him the keyes thereof, who would in no wise obey his commandement although he were roughly threatened, and straitly commanded in the kings name to make deliuey of them to one of the earles seruants: sir (quoth hee) seeing that ye do but intend to set one of your seruantes in my place to keepe the gates, I know no seruant that ye haue, but I am as able as he to do it, and keepe the gates to your purpose, whatsoeuer it be: and also the keyes were deliuered me by my L. and mast. wherefore, I pray you to pardon me, for whatsoeuer ye shall command me to do in the ministracion of mine office, I shall do it with good will: with that (quoth the earle) hold him a booke, and commanded him to late his hand thereon: thou shalt sweare (quoth he) that thou shalt well and truelie keepe the gates to the kings vse, and to do all such thinges as mee shall command, and that ye shall let passe neither in nor out at the gates, but such as ye be commanded by vs, and with this oth, hee receiued the keyes at the earles hands. Of all these doings knew the cardinall nothing, for they stopped the staires, so that none went vp to the cardinals chamber, and the y that came downe, coulde no more go vp againe: at the last one escaped, who shewed the cardinall that the earle was in the hal: whereat the cardinall marvelled, and woulde not beleue him, but commanded a gentleman to bring him the truth, who going downe the staires, saw the earle of Northumberland, and returned, and said it was very he: then (quoth the cardinall) I am sorie that we haue dined, & I feare our officers be not prouided of anie force of good fish, to make him some honorable cheer, let the table stand (quoth hee) with that hee rose vp, and going downe the staires, hee encountered the Earle coming vp with all his suite, and as soon as the Cardinall espied the Earle, he put off his cap, and said, my Lord, ye be most heartilie welcome, and so embraced each other: then the cardinallooke the earle by the hand, and had him vp into his chamber, whom followed all the number of the Earles seruantes. From thence, he led him into his bed chamber, and they being there all alone, the Earle saide vnto the cardinall, with a soft voice, laying his hand vpon his arme, my L. I arrest you of high treason: with which wordes the Cardinall being marvellously astonished, standing both still a good space, at the last, quoth the Cardinall, what authoritie haue you to arrest mee? forsooth my lord, quoth the earle, I haue a commission so to do: where is your commission, quoth he, that I may see it? saide Sir that you maie not, saide the earle: well then, quoth the cardinall, I will not obey your arrest. But as they were debating this matter betwene them in the chamber, so busie was Sp. Walsh in arresting doctor Augustine at the Doore in the Pallace, saying vnto him, go in traitor, or I shall make thee.

Cardinal arre-  
sted.

Augustine do-  
ctor of physick ar-  
rested of treason

At

Doctor Boners  
head broke.

At the last master Walsh being entered the cardinales chamber, beganne to plache off his hode, and after kneeled downe to the cardinall, vnto whome the cardinall said, come hither gentleman, and let me speake with you: sir here my A. of Northumberland hath arrested me, but by whose authoritie hee theweth not: if ye be iointed with him, I pray you shew me. And so my lord, quoth M. Walsh, hee theweth you the trueth: well then, quoth the cardinall, I pray you let me see it. Sir, I beseech you, quoth master Walsh, hold vs excused: there is annexed to our commission certain instructions which you maie not see: well quoth the Cardinall, I trowe pee are one of the kinges puaie Chamber, your name is Walsh, I am content to yelo to you, but not to my lord of Northumberland without I see his commission: the worst in the kinges puaie Chamber is sufficient to arrest the greatest peerre of the Realme by the kinges commaundement, without anie Commission, therefore put your Commission and authoritie in execution, spare not, I will obeye the kinges will: I take God to iudge, I neuer offered the king in worde nor deed. Then the earle called into the Chamber byers Gentlemen of his owne seruantes, and after they had taken the Cardinales heies from him, they put him in custodie of the earles Gentlemen, and then they went about the house to set all things in an order: then sent they Doctor Augucline awaie to London with as much speede as they coude, who was bounde vnto the houle like a Traytor, but it was Sundae towarde night ere the Cardinall was conueied from Caluod, and lodged that night in the Abbey of Pomfret. The next daie hee remoued toward Danaster, and was there lodged at the Blacke Friers, the next daie he was remoued to Sheffield parke, where the earle of Shrewsbury with his ladie, and a traine of Gentlemen and Gentlewomen receiued him with much honor: And the cardinall being thus with the earle of Shrewsbury, continued there 18. daies after, vpon whome the earle appointed diuers gentlemen to attend continuallie, to see that hee shoulde lacke nothing, being serued in his owne Chamber, as honourable as he had bene in his owne house, and once euerie daie the Earle woulde repaie vnto him, and commune with him. After the Cardinall had thus remayned with the Earle of Shrewsburie about a fortnight, it came to pas at a certain time as he sate at his dinner in his owne Chamber, hauing at his boydes ende a messe of Gentlemen and chaplaines to keepe him companie, toward the ende of his dinner, when hee was come to eating his fruites, his colour was perceyued often to chaunge, whereby hee was iudged not to be in good health: whereupon, one of his Gentlemen sayde: Sir, me seemes you are not well at case: to whome he answered with a loud voise, forsooth no more I am, for I am, quoth he, taken sodainelie with a thing about my stomack, that lieth there along, as colde as a whetstone, which is no more but wind, I pray you go to the Poticarie, and inquite of him if hee haue anie thing that will breake wind bpwarde. Then went he to the earle, and shewed him what estate the cardinall was in, and what hee desired: with that the Earle caused the poticarie to be called before him, and demanded of him if he had any thing that would breake wind bpwarde in a mans bodie, and hee answered hee had such geare. Then, quoth the Earle, fetch mee some: then the

Cardinall lodged at Sheffield with the earle of Shrewsbury.

The cardinall sicketh.

Poticarie fetched a white confection in a faire Paper, and shewed it to the Earle, who commaunded one to giue the same the next before him, and then the same to bee brought to the Cardinall, who receyued it bype all at once into his mouth: But immediatlie after, surelie hee snooded much wind bpwarde. Doe, (quoth hee) pee maie see that it was but wind, and nowe I am well eased, I thanke God, and so he rose from the Table, and went to his prayers: And that doone, there came on him such a loosenesse, that it caused him to goe to his stoole. And not longe after the Earle of Shrewsburie came into the gallerie to him, with whome the Cardinall met, and then sitting downe vpon a Bench, the Earle asked him howe hee did, and hee most lamentable aunswered him, and thanked him for his gentle entertaynement: Sir, (quoth the Earle) if pee remember, pee haue often wished to come before the king, to make your answer, and I haue written to the king in that behalfe, making him priuie of your lamentation that pee inwardlie haue reuelued for his displeasure, who accepteth all your doings therin, as friends bee accustomed to do in such cases: therefore I would aduise you to pluck bp your heart, and be not agast of your enemies, I doubt not but this your iourney to his highnes shall be much to your aduancement. The king hath sent for you that worthyfull knight Master Kingstone, and with him 24. of your other seruants, now of the guard, to the intent pee maie safely come to his maiestie: Sir (quoth the Cardinall) I trow master Kingstone is Consable of the tower: yea, what of that, quoth the Earle? I assure you hee is elected by the king for one of your friends: Well, quoth the cardinall, as God will, so be it. I am subiect to fortune, being a true man, ready to accept such chances as shal follow, and there an end. I pray you where is M. Kingstone? quoth the earle, I will send for him: I praie you so do, quoth the cardinall: at whose message he came, and as soone as the Cardinall espied him, he made haste to encounter him, and at his comming hee kneeled to him, and saluted him in the kinges behalfe, whom the Cardinall bare-headed offered to take vp, and said: I praie you stande vp, kneele not to me, I am but a wretched repleate with miserie, not deserving my selfe but as a vile abiect, betterlie cast awaie without desert as God knoweth. Then saide M. Kingstone with humble reuerence, Sir, the king hath him commended vnto you: I thanke his highnes, quoth the cardinall, I trust hee be in health: yea, quoth M. Kingstone, and hee commaunded me to say to you, that you shoulde assure your selfe that he beareth you as much good will, as euer hee did, and willeth you to be of good cheere, and where report hath bene made, that ye shoulde commit against him certaine heinous crimes, which hee thinketh to bee untrue, yet he can do no lesse than to send for you to your trial, and to take your iourney to him at your own pleasure, commaunding me to be attendant vpon you. Therefore sir I pray you when it shall be your own pleasure to take your iourney, I shall be ready to giue attendance: Master Kingstone, quoth he, I thanke you for your newes, and sir, if I were as lusty as I haue been of late, I would ryde with you in Post, but I am diseased with a sike that maketh mee verie weak: but I shall with all speede make me ready to ryde with you to Worcester. When night came, the Cardinall waxed verie sick with the Aske,

xxx.

the which caused him continually to go to the stole al that night, in somuch, that he had that night 50. stoles: therefore in consideration of his infirmite, they caused him to carrie all that day: and the next daie he took his journey with master Kingstone and them of the guard, till he came to an house of the earle of Shrewsburies, called Harbrike hall, where he lay all night verie euill at ease. The next daie he rode to Nottingham, and there lodged that night more sicke: and the next day he rode to Leicester Abbey, and by the waie wared so sicke, that he was almost fallen from his mule, so that it was night before he came to the Abbey of Leicester: where at his coming in at the gates, the Abbot with all his couent met him with bladders ofches light, whom they honorably receiued and welcommed: to whom the Cardinall said: father abbot, I am come hither to lay my bones among you, riding so still vntill he came to the staires of the chamber, where he alighted from his mule, and master Kingstone led him vp the staires, and as some as he was in his chamber he went to bed. This was on the saturday at night, and then encreased sicke and sicke, vntill sondaie, that all men thought he would haue died. So on Tuesday the 3. Andrewes euen, master Kingstone came to him and bad him good morrow, for it was about fire of the clocke, and asked him how he did: sir, quoth he, I carrie but the pleasure of God, to render vp my poore soule into his hands: not so sir, quoth master Kingstone, with the grace of God, ye shall liue and do better well, if ye will be of god there: nay in god woth master Kingstone, my desire is such, that I cannot liue: for I haue had some experience in phisicke. Thus it is, I haue a sure with a continuall feauer, the nature whereof is, that if there be no alteration of the same within eight daies, either must ensue excoiation of the entrailles, or framic, or else present death, and the best of them is death, and as I suppose this is the eight daie, and if ye see no alteration in me, there is no remedie, saue, though I maie liue a daie or twaine after, but death must ensue. Sir, quoth master Kingstone, you be in such penurians, doubting that thing, that in god saith ye neede not. Well, well, master Kingstone, quoth the Cardinall, I see the matter how it is framed: but if I had serued God as diligentlie as I haue done the king, he would not haue giuen me ouer in my gray haire: but this is the last reward that I must receiue for the diligent paines and studie that I haue had to doe him service, not regarding my seruice to God, but only to satisfie his pleasure: I praie you haue me most humble commended vnto his heauyn maiestie, and beseech him in my behalfe to call to his princelie remembrance, all matters proceeding betwene him and me from the beginning of the worlde, and the progresse of the same, and most especiallie in his weightie matter, and then shall his graces conseruence know whether I haue offended him or no, &c. Master Kingstone answered: I can no more saie, but I wish all things to haue good successe, my time draweth on fast, and euery with that he began to draw his spatch at length, and his tong to faile, his eyes being set, whose sight fayled him, then did they put him in remembrance of Christ his Passion, and caused the yemen of the guard to stand by to see him die, and to witness of his woords at his departure: and incontinently the clocke stroke eight, and then he gaue vp the ghost, and departed

Speech of the  
Cardinall to  
master King-  
stone.

The Cardinall  
died.

departed this present life, which caused him to cal to remembrance how he saide the day before, that at eight of the clocke they should lose their master: One of them looked on the other, supposing that either he knewe or prophesied of his departure.

Here is the end and fall of pride and arrogancy of men exalted by fortune to dignities: for I assure you in his time hee was the haughtiest man in all his proceedings aliuie, hauing more respect to the honor of his person, than he had to his spiritual profession, wherein should be shewed all meeknes, humilitie and charity: the discussing whereof any further I leaue to diuines.

Example of  
pride and arro-  
gance.

After that he was thus departed master Kingstone sent a poste to the king, advertised him of the departure of the cardinall by one of the gard, that saue and heard him die. And when master Kingstone and the abbot had consulted for the order of his buriall, it was thought good that he should be buried the next daie following: for master Kingstone would not farr be the returne of the poste: and it was thought good, that the Apaloz of Leicester and his brethren should be sent for, to see him personallie dead, to auoid false rumors that might happen. In the meane time the body was taken out of the bedde, who had vpon him next his bodie a Shirte of haire, besides his other Shirte of holm: now hauing put vpon his deade corpes, all such ornaments, as hee was possessed in, when he was made Bishoppe and Archbyschoppe, as Mitre, Crosse, Ring, and Pall, with all other things due to his order and dignitie: and lying thus all daie in his Coffin open faced, euery man that would might see him there dead, as the Apaloz, his brethren, and other did. About foure or fife of the clocke at night, he was carried downe into the Church, by the Abbot and canons, and service was sung for the funerals: And about foure of the clocke in the morning master Kingstone and his seruantes came into the Church, and there carried the erecting of bladders cermonies, and then was hee buried in the midd of our ladies chappel, and by that time it was fire of the clocke in the morning. Then prepared euery man to horseback being so. Andrewes day the apostle, & so took their journey to the court. And thus ended the life of this rich cardinall of England, whose history, who list to read with a cleare eye, maie behold the mutabilitie of balne honors, and brittle assurance in abundance, the vncertaintie of dignities, the flattering of fained friends, and the sicke fauor of tooholp princes: whereof this Cardinall had felt and tasted both of the sweet & soure in each degree, as flasting from honors, losing of riches, deposed from dignities, forsaken of friends, and the mutabilitie of princes fauor: of all which things hee had in this worlde, the full felicitie, as long as fortune smiled vpon him, but when hee beganne to frowne, how soone was hee deuiued of all these mundaine iotes, and balne pleasures, which in twentie yeeres with great trauaile and studie hee obtained, was in one yeere and lesse, with great care and sorow lost and consumed. O madness! O sonde desire! O foolish hope! O greedy desire of balne honor, dignities, and riches! of what vncoustant hope and trust is it, in the false fained countenance and promise of fortune, wherefore the Prophet saide full well: *The superbius & ignorat cui congregabit ea.* Who is certayne that hee shall leaue his riches: that hee hath gathered in the

world,



world, unto them whome he hath purposed: The Wilsenman saith: That an other whome peradventure he bated in his life, shall spende it out, and consume it.

The clergy condemned in the premunire.

The Clergie of England, being iudged by the R. learned counsell to bre in the premunire, for maintaining the power legantine of the cardinal, were called by proccesse into the kings bench to answer, wherfore in their conuocation they concluded a submission, wherin they called the king supreme head of the church of England, according to the law of God, and not other wise, and were contented to giue the king 100000. poundes, to pardon their offences touching the premunire.

When the parliament was begun the 6. of Januarie, the pardon of the spiritual persons was signed with the kings hand, and sent to the Lordes, which they consented to, and signed the bill. But when the same came downe to the commons it could not so easilie passe, because diuers froward persons would also that the R. should pardon the laity as well as the spirituality, saying that all men which had dealt with the Cardinal were in like danger: This their saile and bold demand was thought more then reason, for that they would same to enule other mens wealth, and also to restraine the king of his libertie: but at length they seemed to be frowardfull for that they had dealt so unaduisable, and then the king sent them their pardon, for the which they humbly thanked him.

Conclusions as against the kings marriage.

The 30. daie of March the Lordes Chancelor, and diuers other Lordes, both spiritual and Temporal, came into the Common house, and there the Lord Chancelor declared what the king had done, touching the doubt of his marriage, to knowe the opinions of learned men of diuers Vniuersities in Christendome, and there were read the determinations of the same Vniuersities, which they had written and sealed, concluding, that the kings marriage could not be lawfull: there were shewed also diuers bookes diuine, by doctors of foraine nations, which were to the same effect, but were not read, for that the daie was spent.

A Cooke boyled in Smithfield.

The 5. of Aprill one Richard Rose a Cooke, was boyled in Smithfield, for poisoning of diuers persons, to the number of 16. or more, at the Bishop of Exchesters place, amongst the which Benet Curwine gentleman was one, and he intended to haue poisoned the bishoppe himselfe, but hee eate no portage that daie, wherby hee escaped, marie the poore people that eate of them, manie of them died,

An. reg. 23.

King Henry sent unto the Queene diuers Lords of the Counsell, about the last of Maie, the which Lordes in her Chamber at Greenwich, declared unto her the determinations of the Vniuersities concerning the marriage betwixt them two, and demanded of her, whether shee would for the quietnesse of the kings conscience, put the matter to foure prelates, and foure temporal lordes of the realme: but she still affirmed her selfe to be his lawfull wife, and therefore would abide in that point, till the court of Rome had made a finall end there in.

Chanterie priests of London against their bishop.

The chanterie priests of London being called afore the bishop, who would haue

haue had them contributaries toward the payment of the 100000. l. granted to the R. for his pardon of the premunire, kept such a stir, in breaking into the Chapiter where the Bishop sat, that the Bishop was faine with faire wordes to dismisse them for the time: but after vpon complaint made to the Lordes Chancelor, dyuers of them, and of their partakers were arrested and committed to prison, to the number of fiftene priests, and fure laie men, some to the Tower, and some to the Fleet, and to other prisons, where they lay long after.

This yere king Henry tooke into his hands, the Hospitall of Saint Iames, nere vnto Charing Crosse, and all the medelbes to the same belonging, compounding with the Sisters of that house, they to haue pensions during their liues. And then builded in place of the said hospitall, a goodlie mansion, retaining still the name of S. Iames: hee also there inclosed a parke with a wall of bricke, now indifferently seruing to the saide mansion, as also to his place of Whitehall at Westminster.

The R. house at S. Iames builded.

After Christmas the Parliament beganne againe, in the which the Commons declared themselves to be fore agreed, with the crakties of the ordinarie, that called men afore them *ex officio*. At length a booke was drawn of all their griefes, and the same deliuered to the king by the speaker, who humbly beseeched him in the name of the Commons to take such direction therein, as to his highnes might same expedient: wherunto the king answered hee would take aduice, and heare the partie accused speake. In this Parliament was made an act, that bishops should pay no more annuities, or other wise monie for their bulls to the pope, for it was affirmed that there had bene paid for bulls, of bishops and other, sith the fourth of Henry the seueneth, 60000. pounce sterling.

1532 Parliament.

The parliament began againe after Easter, there was a motion made to helpe the king with mony towardes his charges about the edifying of pyles and other fortifications, vpon the borders for eaneuill Scotland, both for better habitation to be hadde there, and also for restraint of the Scottes that fled to make inuasions: there was therefore a siffence granted, but not inacted at this season, because that sodainly began a pestilence in Westminster: wherfore the parliament was proroged.

An. reg. 24.

The 15. of May, sir T. Moore after great suite made by him, was discharged of his chancelorship.

A siffence granted to the king.

The twentieth eyght of Maie, frier Elshowe standing in the Roode losse of the friers Church at Greenwich, contrarying the preacher doctor Curwine, sayde hee lyed, before the king, and was for the same sent to prison. This Doctor Curwine was sometime Drane of Hereford, after Archbyschoppe of Dublin in Irelande, and lastlie Byschoppe of Exrsetre in Queene Maries dayes.

A stout frier told the Drane, wher before he had that he lied.

The 4. of June the king dubbed Tho. Audley knight, made him keeper of the great seale, and not long after lord chancelor.

Lorde Audley made L. chancelor.

The 15. of June, 5. men were hanged and quartered at tower hill, for coining and clipping of the coine.

Coiners and clippers executed.



Christ church  
suppressed.

In the month of July, the king suppressed the priorie of the holie Trinitie commonly called Christ-church in London, he sent the Chanons of that house to other priories, and gave their church, plate, and lands, to sir Thomas Audley, late made keeper of the great seale.

The thye and twentieth of August, William Warham archbishop of Canturburie, deceased after he had late archbishop eight and twentie yeres and thye moneths, he was buried at Canterburie, Thomas Cranmar succeeded in the archbishopschike.

The Tower  
repaired.  
Barchionelle  
of Berwick.

The king repaired the tower of London, namely the White Tower.

The first of September the Lady Anne Bolleine was made Barchionelle of Berwick, and then was given her by the king, one thousand pound by yere, out of the bishopschike of Durham.

King Henry  
landed at  
Calets.

The eleventh of October King Henry landed at Calets, with the Duke of Richmond his bastard sonne, the Duke of Norfolk the Lord Treasurer of England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse of Exeter, the Earles of Darbie, Arundale, Erfoyd, Surrey and Rutland, the Viscount Lisle king Edward the fourth his bastard sonne, the Lord Matrauers, the Lord Sands Lord Chamberlaine of the Kings house, the Lord William Haward, the Lord Bray, the Lord Montague, the Lord Cobham, the Lord Mordant, the Lord Daubney, the Lord Grey, the Lord Clinton, the Lord Vaux, the Lord Mountcagle, the Lord Rocheford, with divers other Lordes: the Bishops of Winchester, London, Lincoln, and Bath: Sir William Fitz William Treasurer of the kings house, Sir William Pawlet Comptroller, Sir William Kingstone Captaine of the Guard, Sir Iohn Page, Sir James Bolleine, Sir Anthonic Browne, Sir Edward Neuill, Sir Thomas Cheiney, Sir Iohn Russell, Sir Richard Page, Sir Ralph Eldereare, Sir Edward Baynton, Sir Edward Santner, Sir Griffith Deane, Sir Iohn Dudley, Sir Iohn Femer, Sir Henrie Long, Sir Anthony Hungerford, Sir Iohn Bridges, Sir Arthur Hopton, Sir Anthony Wingfield, Sir William Paston, Sir Edmond Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Strange, Sir William Hawre, Sir Edward Wotton, Sir William Askewe, Sir Iohn Marleant, Sir William Barington, Sir William Eslix, Sir Giles Strangweis, Sir Edward Chamberlaine, Sir Giles Caple, Sir Iohn Sent-Iohn, Sir Walter Hungerford, Sir William Gascoine, Sir Lionel Norris, Sir Edward Boloine, Sir Thomas Lisle, Sir Iohn Ashton, Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir William Boloine, Sir William Finche, Sir William Pellam, Sir Thomas Rotherham, Sir Iohn Norton, Sir Richard Sands, Sir Iohn Neuill, and thirtie Esquires, with many Gentlemen, and all the straitnes.

Shoulton in  
the towne of  
Calets.

The towne of Calets had at this season 24. C. beds, and stabling for two thousand horses, besides the villages about.

The 21. of October, King Henry rode toward Boloigne, and was by the way at Sandringfield met by the French king, and many nobles of France, who rode all to Boloigne, and were there lodged.

King Henry rode  
to Boloigne.

The twentieth five of October, whilst the king lay thus in Boloigne, the French king called a chapter of the companions of his order called Saint Esphell, of whome the king of England was one, and to be there elected the

Dukes of Beffolke and Suffolke, to be companions of the same order, the being brought to the Chapter had their collars delivered to them, and were sworn to the statutes of the order. The same daie, they departed out of Boloigne toward Calets: without the towne of Calets, about the distance of two miles, the Duke of Richmond the kings base sonne, with a great company of noble men, which hadde not bene at Boloigne, met them, and shewing the French king, embraced him in most honorable and courteous manner. Then they passed forward to Helwenhambridge, and so to Calets, where was such provision made for the receiving of them, as well for lodging, plate, and all such other furniture of household, as also of all sortes of viandes, wines, and other necessaries, it seemed wonderful. The French kings train was 1200. horse or more, among the which was the king of Navarre, the Cardinal of Boloigne, and many Dukes, Bishops, and great Estates of France, Gascoigne, Bypaine, and Normandy: but there was lodging enough in Calets, not onlie for them, but also for many other, so that there were above 8000. persons lodged within the towne at that time. Whilst these two kings lay at Calets, King Henrie made the king of Navarre knight of the Garter. The next daie, the French king, with the king of Navarre, and all the great Lordes of France, rode againe to Boloigne: and King Henry of England rode with them to Sandringfield, where hee made the French king a costly banquet. At this entervile, there was a communication of a joint armie to be made by them both, against the Turke, who hadde at that time a great armie in Hungarie. The two kings should bring into the felde against him fourescore thousand men, whereof 10000. to bee horsemen with artillerie and furniture, but the enemy of peace (the diuell) stirred all christian princes against the Emperour, for that they feared he sought to be monarch of all Italie. Whereupon King Henry of England sent presentlie to the French king, by the Lord of Noerie the French ambassado: 50000. crownes. The king of England feared if the Emperour, for queene Katharine his Aunts sake (whome the saide king had refused to be his lawfull wife) would ioinc with the Pope against him, wherefore hee made great complaints to the French king against the saide Pope, for the wrong hee did him in the matter of deuotise, and namelie in that hee would constrainc him to goe in proper person to Rome, or else to sende thither a Deputie with sufficient prier to answer the lawe, which the saide king helde for rigorous: furthermore hee requested the French king that they two might sende Ambassadors together against the Pope to summon him to a counsell, to see what abuse and great wronges hee had done against Christian Princes, and their subiects, and crating of the clergie of England, and that the same, by the saide counsell, might be reformed. To this the French king agreed, and forthwith willed the king of England to make all sure at home, and let him alone to deale abroad, but not to call the Pope to any counsell, for that by their two powers, hee was otherwise to be dealt withall. Thus was the king of England now bent against the Pope, where of late hee hadde given manerlie threescore thousand angelles, towardes the paie of an army under Mounfier de Foys, for the popes illuery, when he was holden

The pope to bee  
summoned by a  
Counsell.

prisoner in Castle Angel, by the late Duke of Burbons soldiers, and the prince of Orange.

The banquet being ended at Sandringfield, as is aforesaid, the three kings departed like loving brethren in great amitie. Whilste the king of England was in the French kings dominions, he had the upper hand, and likewise had the French king in the dominions of the king of England. And as the French king paid all the English mens charges at Boloigne, so did the king of England pay the French mens charges at Calais.

The fourteenth of November the king returning into England landed at Dover.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenwich, and after Christmas Sir Thomas Audley keeper of the great seale, was made Lord Chancellor of England.

King Henry privately married the Lady Anne Bolaine in his closet at Whitehall, on the five and twentieth day of January being S. Pauls day: Mistress Anne Sauvage bore by Duene Annes traine, and was her self shortly after married to the lord Berkeley, doctor Rowland Lee, that married the king to Duene Anne, was made Bishop of Chester, then Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, and president of Wales.

And then began the parliament, in the which was chosen Speaker Humphrey Wingfield Gentleman of Greys Inn. In this parliament was enacted, that no person should appeale for any cause out of this realme to the court of Rome, but from the Commissary to the Bishop, and from the Bishop to the Archbishop, and from the archbishop to the king, and all causes of the kings to be tried in the upper house of the Conuocation. It was also enacted the same time, that Duene Katherine should no more be called Duene, but Princess Dowager, and the widow of Prince Arthur.

After that the king perceived his new wife to be with childe, he caused all officers necessary to be appointed to her, and so on Easter eue being the 12. day of Aprill, she went to her closet openly as Duene, and was proclaimed Duene of England: and then the king appointed the day of her coronation to be kept on Whitsonday next following, and writings were sent to all Sherifes, to certifie the names of men of forty pound lands, to receive the order of knighthode, or else to make fine for the same. The assailement of which fine was appointed to Thomas Cromwell master of the kings iebell house, who so used the matter, that a great summe of mony was lent to the kings by those fines.

The matter of appeale made by Duene Katherine, whereunto she still sticked, and by no means could be removed from it, was communed of both in the Parliament house, and also in the conuocation, where it was so handled, that many were of opinion, that not onlie her appeale, but also all other appeales made to Rome, were void, and of none effect, so; that in ancient councelles it had bene determined, that a cause rising in one province should not be determined in another. This matter was opened with all the circumstances to the Lady Katherine Dowager, the which persisterd still in her former

opinion, and would by no means reuoke her appeale to the court of Rome. Whereupon the Archbishop of Canterbury doctor Thomas Cranmer accompanied with doctor John Stokesley bishoppe of London, Stephen Gardner bishoppe of Winchester, the bishops of Bath and Lincoln, and divers other learned men in great number rode to Dunstable, which is five miles from Amphyll, where the princeesse Dowager late, and there by one doctor Lee she was assited to appeare before the said Archbishop in case of matrimony in the same towne of Dunstable: but she made default and appeared not, wherefore she was called preumptuously every daie 15. dales together, and at the last for lacke of appearance, by the assent of the learned men there present, she was iudged from the king, and the marriage declared to be void and of none effect.

In the moneth of Pale Pope Clement sent an orator to the king, requiring him to appeare personally at the generall Councell, which was appointed to be kept in the yere following: but when his commission was shewed, at the earnest request of the king, there was neither place nor time certaine specified for the keeping of that councell, and so with an uncertaine answer to an uncertaine demaunde, he departed, but not unrewarded. Shortly after the king understanding that the Pope, the Emperour, and the French king should meet at pise in June following, he appointed the duke of Suffolk, the Lord Rocheford brother to Duene Anne, Sir William Pawlet controller of the kings house, Sir Anthony Browne, and Sir Francis Brian knights, to go in ambassage to the French king, and both to accompanie him to pise, and also to commune with the pope there, concerning his late in the kings divorce. These made their provision ready, and so with the number of eight score horses they went to Dover, and passing over to Calais, toke their waie through France, to accomplish their ambassade as they had charge.

The kings highnesse addrest his letters to the Spalot and communalte of London, signifying unto them, that his pleasure was to solemnise the coronation of his most beare and welbeloued wife Duene Anne at Westminster on Whitsonday next ensuing, willing them to make preparation, as well to fetch her grace from Greenwich to the Tower by water, as to see the Citie garnished with pageants in places accustomed, for the honour of her grace, when the shouds be conueyed from the tower to Westminster. Whereupon a common councell was called, and commandement giuen to the Haberdashers, of which craft the Spalot was, that they shoulde prepare a Barge for the Bachelors, with a wafter, and a fopple, garnished with banners, like as they vse when the Spalot is presented at Westminster, on the morrow after the feast of Saint Simon and Jude. Also all other Craftes were commanded to prepare Barges, and to garnish them, not onely with their banners accustomed, but also to decke them with targets by the sides of the Barges, and to set up all such seemely banniers and Bannets, as they had in their Halls, or could get to furnish their said barges, and euerie barge to haue muskets, according to which commandement great preparation

Katherine Dowager assited.

Katherine Dowager divorced.

King Henry required to appeare in a generall councell.

Preparation for coronation of queene Anne.

1533

King Henry married the Lady Anne Bolaine.

Parliament at Westminster. Sute to Rome forbidden.

Ann. reg. 25.

Men of 40 l. land, knights, or fined. T. Cromwell master of the kings iebell house.

was made for all things necessarie for such a noble triumph.

The nine and twentieth daie of May being thursdaie, the Spaloz and his brethren all in Scarlet, and such as were knights had collars of Eddes, and the residue having great chaines, and the Councell of the Citie assembled with them at Saunt Marys Hill. And at one of the clocke descended to the newe faire to their barge, which was garnished with manie goodly banners and streamers and richly covered, in which barge was Schalmes, Schage, bulcke, and divers other Instruments of musique, which playing continuallie.

After that the Spaloz and his brethren were in their barge, seeing that the companies to the number of fiftie barges were ready to waite upon them, they gave commandement to the companies, that no barge should tow neare to another, than twice the length of the barge, and to see the order kept, there were three wheries prepared, and in every part one of the two officers to call on them to keepe their order.

After which commandement given, they set forth in order, as hereafter is described. First, before the Spalozs barge was a foisse, for a waister full of ordnance, in which foisse was a great red Dragon continually moving and casting wilde fire, and round about the saide foisse stood terrible monstrous and wilde men casting fire, and making hideous noise: next after the foisse a good distance came the Spalozs barge: on whose right hand was the Bachelers barge, in the which were trumpets, and divers other melodious instruments: the decks of the saide barge and saile yardes and the top cables were hanged with rich cloth of golde and silke: at the foreship and the stern were two great banners rich beate[n] with the armes of the King and the Queene: and on the top castle also was a long streamer newly beate[n] with the saide armes: the sides of the barge was set full of flags and banners of the devices of the companies of Haberdashers and merchant Adventurers, and the lastiers of robes were hanged with innumerable penfels, having little bekes at the endes, which made a goodlie noise, and was a goodly sight, waivering with the winde: on the out side of the barge were three dozen Scoutrons in partiall, of the armes of the King and Queene, which were beate[n] upon square Buckram decided, so that the right side had the Kings colours, and the left side the Quenes, which Scoutrons were fastened on the clothes of Golde and silur, hanging on the yokes: on the left hande of the Spaloz was an other foisse, in the which was a mount, and on the mount stood a white Faulcon coloured upon a robe of Golde, enuironed with white roses and red, which was the Quenes device: about which mount sate Virgins singing and playing melodiously: Next after the Spaloz followed his fellowship the Haberdashers next after them the Specters: then the Specters, and so every company in his order, and last of all the Spalozs and Sheriffes officers, every company having melodious instruments by themselves, and goodly garnished with banners, and some covered with silke, and some with arras of such like, which was a goodly sight to behold: and in this order they rowed by Greenwich to the point beyond Greenwich, and there they turned backward in

The companies  
by waister from  
Greenwich.

in an other order, that is to waite, the Spalozs and Sheriffes officers first, and the meanest craft next, and so ascending to the uppermost craft in order, and the Spaloz last, as they go to Pauls at Christmasse, and in that order they rowed downe ward to Greenwich towne, and there cast anchor, making great melodie. At three of the clocke, the Quene apparelled in rich cloth of Golde, entered into her barge, accompanied with divers Ladies and Gentlewomen, and incontinent the Citizens set forward in their order, their minstrels continually playing: and the Bachelers barge going on the Quenes right hande, which she took great pleasure to beholde. About the Quenes barge were many noble men, as the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse Doyet, the Earle of Wiltshire her father, the Carles of Arundale, Warby, Rutland, Worcester, Huntington, Sulter, Erford, and manie bishops and noble men, every one in his barge, which was a goodly sight to behold: she thus being accompanied rowed towards the Tower: and in the meane waite the ships which were commanded to lie on the shoare for letting of the barges, shot divers peales of guns, and ere she landed, there was a marvellous shot out of the Tower, I never heard the like: and at her landing, there met with her the Lord Chamberlaine with the officers of Armes, and brought her to the King, which received her with loving countenance at the posterne by the water side, and kissed her, and then she turned backe againe and thanked the Spaloz and the Citizens with manie goodlie wordes, and so entered into the Tower.

After which entrie the Citizens all this while howred before the Tower, making great melodie, and went not aland, for none were assigned to lande but the Spaloz, the Recorder, and two Aldermen: but to speake of the people that stood on everie shoare to behold this sight, he that saw it not will not belave it.

On Fridaie at dinner served the King all such as were appointed by his highnes to be brights of the Bath, which after dinner were brought to their chambers, and that night were bathed, and thysmen according to the old usage of England, and the next daie in the morning the King dubbed them according to the ceremonies thereto belonging, whose names hereafter ensue nineteen in number.

Knights of the  
Bath.

The marquesse Doyet.

The earle of Warby.

The lord Clifford, sonne and heire to the earle of Cumberland.

The lord Fitz Walter, sonne and heire to the earle of Sulter.

The lord Hastings, sonne and heire to the earle of Huntington.

The lord Mountague.

The lord Vaux.

Sir Henry Parker, sonne and heire to the lord Morley.

Sir William Winfore, sonne and heire to the lord Winfore.

Sir John Mordant, sonne and heire to the lord Mordant.

Sir Francis Weston.

Sir Thomas Arundale.

Sir Iohn Hudlestone.

Sir Thomas Poyneys.

Sir Henry Sauell.

Sir George Fitz William of Lincolnshire.

Sir Iohn Tindale.

Sir Thomas Jerney.

The conveying  
of queene Anne  
thorough the  
city to West-  
minster.

On Saturday the one and thirtieth date of Maie, the Quene was conveyed through London in order as followeth: To the intent that the houses should not stide on the pavement, nor that the people should be hurt by horses, the high strates, where-through the Quene should passe, were all gravelled from the Tower unto Temple barre, and railed on each side, with in which rale stode the crosses along in their order from Grace church, where the merchants of the Stillyard stode untill the little conduit in Cheape, where the Aldermen stode, and on the other side of the strate stode the constables of the Citie, apparelled in velvet and silke with great staves in their hands, to cause the people to give room, and keepe good order: and when the strates were somewhat ordered, the Spaloz in a gowne of crimosin velvet, and a rich collar of eses, with two fustians clothed in white and red damaske, rode to the Tower, to give his attendance on the Quene, on whom the Sherifes with their officers did awaite untill they came to the Tower hill, where they taking their leave rode downe the high strates, commanding the constables to keepe room and good order kept, and so went and stode by the Aldermen in Cheape, and before the Quene with her traine should come, Grace-strate and Cornehill were hanged with fine scarlet, crimosin, and other grained clothes, and in some places with rich arras, and the most part of Cheape was hanged with cloth of tisse, golde, velvet, and many rich hangings which did make a goodly shewe, and all the windowes were replenished with Ladies and Gentlewomen to behold the Quene and her traine, as they should passe by.

The first of the Quenes companie that set forthward, were 12. French men belonging unto the French Ambassadors, clothed in coates of blew velvet, with sleeves of yellow and blew velvet, their horses trapped with close trappers of blew sarsenet pombed with white crosses: after them marched gentlemen, esquires, knights, two and two: after them the iudges: after them the knights of the Bath in violet gownes with hodes purpled with miniver like borders: after them abbots: then barons: after them bishops: the earles and the marquesses: then the lord Chancellor of England: after him the archbishop of Yorke, and the ambassador of Venice: after them the archbishop of Canterbury, and the ambassador of France: after rode two esquires of honor: with robes of estate rolled and woone bauldricke-wise about their neckes, with caps of estate, representing the Dukes of Normandy and Aquitaine: after the m rode the Spaloz of London with his mace, and Garter in his coat of armes, which bare also his mace of Westminster hall: after them rode the lord William Howard with the marshals roode deputy to his brother the Duke of Suffolke marshall of England, which was ambassador then in France,

and

and on his right hand rode Charles Duke of Suffolke for that date high constable of England, bearing the banner of flur appertaining to the office of constableness, and all the Lordes for the most part were clothed in crimosin velvet, and all the Quenes servants or officers of armes in scarlet: next before the Quene rode her Chancellor bare-headed: the sergeants and officers at armes rode on both sides of the lords: then came the Quene in a white litter of white cloth of golde, not covered or bailed, which was led by two paleis clab in white damaske downe to the ground, head and all, led by her footmen: she had on a kirtle of white cloth of tisse, and a mantle of the same furred with ermine, her haire hanging downe: but on her head she had a coiffe with a circlet about it full of rich stones: over her was borne a canopy of cloth of gold with foure gilt staves, and foure silver belles: for bearing of the which canopy were appointed sixtene knights, foure to beate it one space on fote, and foure an other space, according to their owne appointment: next after the Quene rode the Lord Browgh her chamberlaine: next after him William Coffin master of her horses, leading a spare horse with a shoe saddle, trapped downe with cloth of tisse: after him rode seven ladies in crimosin velvet, turned by with cloth of gold and of tisse, and their horses trapped with golde: after them two chariots covered with red cloth of golde, in the first chariot were two ladies, which were the olde Dutchesse of Suffolke, and the olde marchionesse of Dorset: in the second chariot were foure ladies all in crimosin velvet: after them rode seven ladies in the same sute, their horses trapped and all: after them came the third chariot all in white, with six ladies in crimosin velvet: next to them came the fourth chariot all red, with eight ladies also in crimosin: after whom followed thirte gentlewomen all in velvet and silke, in the liverie of their ladies, on whom they gave their attendance: after them followed the garde in coates of Goldsmiths worke, in which order they rode forth till they came to Fran-church, where was made a pageant all of children apparelled like merchants, which welcomed her to the Citie, with two proper propositions both in French and in English: and from thence she rode unto Grace church corner, where was a collic and marvellous cunning pageant made by the merchants of the Stillyard, there in was the mount Parnassus with the fontaine of Helicon, which was of white marble, and foure streams without pipe did rise an ell high and met together in a little cup above the fontaine, which fontaine ranne abundantly with racket keepniss thime till night, on the mountaine sate Apollo, and at his fete sate Caliope: and on euerie side of the mountaine sate foure muses playing on severall sorte instruments, and at their fete Epigramas and poesies were written in golden letters, in the which euerie muse according to her propertie praised the Quene.

From thence the quene with her traine passed to Leaden hall, where was a goodly pageant with a tipe and beaurly hole, and under the tipe was a goodly rose of golde, set on a litle mountaine enuironed with red roses and white, out of the tipe came downe a faulcon all white, and set upon the rose, and incontinent came downe an Angell with great melodie, and set a close

crovne

crowne of gold on the Faulkens head : and in the same pageant sate *S. Anne*, with all hir issue beneath her: and under *Mary Cleopha* sate hir foure chyldren, of the which chyldren, one made a goodly Oracion to the Quene of the fruitfulness of *S. Anne*, and of her generation, trusting, that like fruit should come of her. When she passed to the conduit in *Cornhill*, where were the thre Graces set in a thron, afore whome was the Spring of Grace, continually running wile : afore the fountaine sate a poet, declaring the property of euery Grace: that done, euery Lady by hir selfe according to hir property, gaue to the Quene a severall gift of Grace.

That doone, she passed by the great Conduite in *Cheape*, which was netwlie paynted with Armes and deuises, out of the which Conduite, (by a goodlie fountayne set at the ende,) ranne continually wine, both white and Claret all that afternoone : and so she rode to the Standart, which was richlie paynted with Images of Kinges and Quenes, and hanged with banners of armes, and in the toppe was marueylous sweete Harmonie, both of songs and Instruments.

Crosse in cheape  
netwlie gilt.

When she went forwarde by the Crosse, which was netwlie gille, till she came where the Aldermen stode, and then *Maister Baker* the Recorder came to her with lowe reuerence, making a proper and briefe proposition, and gaue to her, in the name of the cite, a thousand marks in golde, in a purse of golde, which she thankfullly accepted with manie good wordes, and so rode to the little Conduite, where was a rich pageant full of melodie and songs, in which pageant were *Pallas*, *Iuno*, & *Venus*, and afore them stode *Mercurie*, which in the name of y<sup>e</sup> thre goddesses, gaue unto her a ball of Gold, diuided in thre, signifying thre gifts which the thre goddesses gaue to hir, that is to say, wisdom, riches, and felicity.

As she entered into *Pauls gate*, there was a pretie pageant, in which sate thre Ladies richlie clothed, and in a circle on their heade was wrytten *Regina Anna*, prosper, proceede, and raigne. The lady in the middell had a tablet, in the which was wrytten *Veni amica, coronaberis*, and vnder the tablet sate an angell with a clofe crowne. And the lady sitting on the right hand had a tablet of silver, in which was wrytten, *Domine dirige gressus meos*. And the third lady had a tablet of gold, with letters of azure wrytten, *Confido in Domino*, and vnder their feet was wrytten :

*Regina Anna paris regis de sanguine natam,  
Et paries populus antea sacra iuvis.*

And these Ladies cast downe *Wafers*, on the which she sayde two verses were wrytten.

From thence she passed to the East end of *Pauls church* against the scholl, where stode a scaffold, and chyldren well apparellled, which saide to her diuers goodly verses of Poets translated into English, to the honor of the Quene and her, which she highly commended. And then she came to *Ludgate*, which gate was new garnished with gold and bisse, and on the heades of *S. Martins church* stode a goodly

goodly quere of singing men and chyldren, which sang newe Ballets made in praise of her grace.

After that she was past *Ludgate*, she proceeded toward *Flatestreet*, where the conduit was netwlie painted, and all the armes and angels restyled, and the shalmes melodiously sounding. Upon the conduit was made a Tower with foure turrets, and in euery turret stode one of the cardinall vertues with their tokens and properties, which had severall speeches, promising the Quene neuer to leaue her, but to be aiding and comforting her : and in the middell of the tower closely was such seuerall solemne instruments, that it seemed to be an heavenly noise, and was much regarded and passed : and besides this, the conduit ran wine, claret and red all the afternoone, so the with all her company, and the *Spaior*, rode forth to *Temple bar*, which was newly painted and repaired, where stode also diuers singing men and chyldren, till she came to *Westminster Hall*, which was richlie hanged with cloth of arras, and netwlie glazed, and in the middell of the hall she was taken out of her litter, and so led up to the high deske vnder the cloth of estate, on whose left hand was a cupboard of fennelages high, marueylous rich and beautifull to behold, and within a little season was brought to the Quene with a solemne seruise in great standing Spice plates, a boode of Spice, and subtleties, with *Procrast*, and other wines, which she sent downe to her ladies, and when the ladies had drunk, she gaue hartly thanks to the lords and ladies, and to the *Spaior*, and other that had giuen their attendance on hir, and so with her selfe with a few ladies to the White hall, and so to her chamber, and there shifted hir, and after went in hir barge secretly to the king to his manor of *Westminster* where she rested that night.

On *Wednesday* the 1. of June the *Spaior* clad in crimosin velvet, with his collar, and all the Aldermen and Sheriffs in scarlet, and the counsel of the city, took their barge at the crane by seven of the clock, and came to *Westminster*, where they were welcommed, and brought into the hall by *Sp. Treasurer*, and other of the kings house, and so gaue their attendance till the Quene should be come forth: betwene eight and nine of the cloke she came into the hall, and stood vnder the cloth of estate, and then came in the *kinges Chappell*, and the monks of *Westminster*, all in rich coopes, and many Bishops and abbots, in Coopes and spitters, which went into the middell of the hall, and there stode a season, then was there a rap cloth spread from the quenes standing in the hall, through the pallace and sanctuary, which was called on both sides, to the high altar of *Westminster*, after that the rap cloth was cast, the officers of armes appointed the order accustomed. First went gentlemen, then Esquires, then knights, then aldermen of London in their cloakes of scarlet, cast ouer their gownes of scarlet.

After them, the Judges in their mantles of scarlet and coifes: then followed the knights of the Bath, being no lords, euery man having a white lace on his left sleeve: then followed barons and vicounts in their parliament robes of scarlet: after them came *Carles*, *Marquesses*, and *Dukes* in their robes of estate, of *Crimosin velvet*, furred with *Crimin*, pouced according to their degrees.

Exonaton of  
Quene Anne.

Sir John Huddlestone,  
Sir Thomas Poynings,  
Sir Henry Sauell,  
Sir George Fitz William of Lincolnshire,  
Sir John Tindale,  
Sir Thomas Jerney.

The conveying  
of quene Anne  
through the  
city to West-  
minster.

On Saturdai the one and thirtieth daie of Maie, the Quene was conueied through London in order as followeth: To the intent that the hoises should not slide on the pavement, nor that the people should be hurt by hoises, the high strates, where through the Quene should passe, were all grauelled from the Tower unto Temple barre, and railed on each side, with in which raike stode the crasses along in their order from Grace church, where the merchants of the Stillyard stode untill the little conduit in Cheape, where the Aldermen stode, and on the other side of the strate stode the constables of the Citie, apparelled in beluet and silke with great fanes in their hands, to cause the people to giue roume, and keepe good order: and when the strates were some what ordered, the Mayor in a gowne of crimosin beluet, and a rich collar of ekes, with two footemen clothed in white and red damaske, rode to the Tower, to giue his attendance on the Quene, on whome the Sheriues with their officers did awaite untill they came to the Tower hill, where they taking their leaue rode downe the high strates, commanding the constables to keepe roume and good order kept, and to went and stode by the Aldermen in Cheape, and before the Quene with her traine should come, Grace strate and Cornhill were hanged with fine scarlet, crimosin, and other grained clothes, and in some places with rich arras, and the most part of Cheape was hanged with cloth of tisse, golde, beluet, and many rich hangings which did make a godly thewe, and all the windowes were replenished with Ladies and Gentlewomen to behold the Quene and her traine, as they should passe by.

The first of the Quenes companie that set forthwarde, were 12. French men belonging vnto the French Ambassadors, clothed in coates of blew beluet, with sleeves of yellow and blew beluet, their hoises trapped with white trappers of blew sarsenet pouzred with white Croiles: after them marched gentlemen, equities, knights, two and two: after them the Iudges: after them the knights of the Bathe in violet gownes with hodes perled with miniker like doozes: after them abbots: then barons: after them bishops: the earles and the marqueses: then the lord Chancellor of England: after him the archbishop of Poike, and the ambassador of Venice: after them the archbishop of Canterburie, and the ambassador of France: after rode two equities of honor with robes of estate rolled and borne handspike-wise about their neckes, with caps of estate, representing the Dukes of Normandy and Aquitaine: after them rode the Mayor of London with his mace, and Carter in his coate of armes, which bare also his mace of Westminster hall: after them rode the lord William Howard with the marshalls roo deputy to his brother the Duke of Norfolkke marshall of England, which was ambassador then in France, and

and on his right hand rode Charles Duke of Suffolke for that tate high constable of England, bearing the warber of silver appertaining to the office of constableness, and all the Lordes for the most part were clothed in crimosin beluet, and all the Quenes seruants or officers of armes in scarlet: next before the Quene rode her Chancelor bare-headed: the sergeants and officers at armes rode on both sides of the lordes: then came the Quene in a white litter of white cloth of golde, not covered or bailed, which was led by two palestres clad in white damaske downe to the ground, head and all, led by her footmen: they had on a kittle of white cloth of tisse, and a mantle of the same furred with ermine, her haire hanging downe: but on her head she had a coiffe with a circlet about it full of rich stones: over her was borne a canopy of cloth of gold with foure gilt staves, and foure silver belles: for bearing of the which canopy were appointed sixtene knights, foure to beare it one space on fote, and foure an other space, according to their owne appointment: next after the Quene rode the Lord Brough her chamberlaine: next after him William Coffin master of her hoises, leading a spare hoise with a side saddle, trapped downe with cloth of tisse: after him rode seven ladies in crimosin beluet, turned by with cloth of gold and of tisse, and their hoises trapped with golde: after them two chariots covered with red cloth of golde, in the first chariot were two ladies, which were the olde Dutchesse of Norfolkke, and the olde marchionesse of Dorset: in the second chariot were foure ladies all in crimosin beluet: after them rode seven ladies in the same suite, their hoises trapped and all: after them came the third chariot all in white, with six ladies in crimosin beluet: next to them came the fourth chariot all red, with eight ladies also in crimosin: after whom followed thirtie gentlewomen all in beluet and silke, in the liverie of their ladies, on whom they gave their attendance: after them followed the garde in coates of Goldsmiths worke, in which order they rode forth till they came to Fran church, where was made a pageant all of children apparelled like merchants, which welcommed her to the Citie, with two proper propositions both in French and in English: and from thence she rode vnto Grace church corner, where was a coslie and marvellous cunning pageant made by the merchants of the Stillyard, wherein was the mount Parnassus with the fountaine of Helicon, which was of white marble, and foure streams without pipe did rise an ell high and met together in a little cup above the fountaine, which fountaine ranne abundantly with sacke keynish wine till night, on the mountaine sate Apollo, and at his fete sate Caliope: and on euerie side of the mountaine sate foure muses playing on severall sortes of instruments, and at their fete Epigrams and poesies were written in golden letters, in the which euerie muse according to her propriete paased the Quene.

From thence the quene with her traine passed to Leaden hall, where was a godly pageant with a tipe and beauntly Rose, and under the tipe was a godly rose of golde, set on a little mountaine enuironed with red roses and white, out of the tipe came downe a fancon all white, and set vpon the rose, and incontinent came downe an Angell with great melodye, and set a cloie crowne

crowne of gold on the faulken head: and in the same pageant sate *S. Anne* with all hir issue beneath her: and under *Mary Cleophe* sate hir four children, of the which children, one made a goodly Oracion to the *Quene* of the fruitfulness of *S. Anne*, and of her generation, trusting that like fruit should come of her. Then she passed to the conduit in Cornhill, where were the three *Graces* set in a stone, afoze whome was the Spring of *Grace*, continuallie running wine: afoze the fountaine sate a poet, declaring the property of every *Grace*: that done, every Lady by hir selfe according to hir property, gave to the *Q.* a severall gift of *Grace*.

That done, she passed by the great Conduite in Cheape, which was netwlie paynted with Armes and devises, out of the which Conduite, (by a goodlie fountayne set at the ende,) ranne continuallie wine, both white and Claret all that afternoone: and soe she rode to the Standart, which was richlie paynted with Images of Kings and *Quenes*, and hanged with banners of armes, and in the toppe was maruepous sweete Harmonie, both of songs and Instruments.

Crosse in cheape  
netwlie gilt.

Then she went forwarde by the Crosse, which was netwlie gille, till she came where the Aldermen stode, and then *Spallster Baker* the Recorder came to her with lowe reverence, making a proper and bylese proposition, and gave to her, in the name of the cite, a thousand marks in golde, in a purse of golde, which she thankfullie accepted with manie good wordes, and so rode to the little Conduite, where was a rich pageant full of melodie and songs, in which pageant were *Pallas*, *Iuno*, & *Venus*, and afoze them stode *Mercurie*, which in the name of þe three goddesses, gave unto her a ball of Gold, blisded in three, signifying three gifts which these three goddesses gave to hir, that it to say, wisedom, riches, and felicity.

As she entered into Pauls gate, there was a prettie pageant, in which sate three Ladies richlie clothed, and in a circle on their heade was written *Regina Anna*, prosper, proceede, and raigne. The lady in the middell had a tablet, in the which was written *Veni amica, coronaberis*, and under the tablet sate an angell with a clofe crowne. And the ladie sitting on the right hand had a tablet of silver, in which was written, *Domine dirige gressus meos*. And the third lady had a tablet of gold, with letters of azure written, *Confido in Domino*, and under their feet was written:

*Regina Anna parit regis de sanguine natam,  
Et parit populus antea facta suis.*

And these Ladies cast downe *Walters*, on the which she sayde two verses were written.

From thence she passed to the East end of Pauls church against the school, where stood a scaffold, and children well apparelled, which saide to her divers goodly verses of Poets translated into English, to the honoz of the *Q.* and her, which she highly commended. And then she came to Ludgate, which gate was new garnished with gold and blisse, & on the leades of *S. Martins* church stood a goodly

godly quere of singing men and children, which sang newe Ballets made in praise of her grace.

After that she was past Ludgate, she proceeded toward Fleetstreet, where the conduit was netwlie painted, and all the armes and angels refreshed, and the shalmes melodiously sounding. Upon the conduit was made a Tower with foure turrets, and in every turret stood one of the cardinall vertues with their tokens and properties, which had severall speeches, promising the *Quene* never to leaue her, but to be aiding and comforting her: and in the middell of the tower closely was such severall solemne instruments, that it seemed to be an heavenly noise, and was much regarded and praised: and besides this, the conduit ran *Wine*, claret and red all the afternoone, so she with all her company, and the *Spaioz*, rode forth to Temple bar, which was netwlie painted and repaired, where stode also divers singing men and children, till she came to Westminster Hall, which was richlie hanged with cloth of arras, and netwlie glassed, and in the middell of the hall she was taken out of her litter, and so led up to the high becke under the cloth of estate, on whose left hand was a cushion of terrages high, maruepous rich and beautiful to beholde, and within a little season was brought to the *Quene* with a solemne service in great standing Spice plates, a boppe of Spice, and subtleties, with *Spocrasse*, and other *Wines*, which she sent downe to her ladies, and when the ladies had drunk, she gave hartly thanks to the lords and ladies, and to the *Spaioz*, and other that had given their attendance on hir: and so with diverse hirselfe with a few ladies to the White hall, and so to her chamber, and there shifted hir, and after went in hir barge secretly to the king to his mannoz of Westminster where she rested that night.

Exonation of  
Queens Band.

On Whitsundaye the 1. of June the *Spaioz* clad in crimosin velvet, with his roller, and all the Aldermen and Sheriffs in scarlet, and the counsel of the city, took their barge at the crane by seven of the clock, and came to Westminster, where they were welcommed, and brought into the hall by *M. Treasurer*, and other of the kings house, and so gave their attendance till the *Quene* should be come forth: betwene eight and nine of the clocke she came into the hall, and stood under the cloth of estate, and then came in the *Kings* Chappell, and the monks of Westminster, all in rich coapes, and many Bishops and abbots, in Coapes and spitters, which went into the middell of the hall, and there stode a season, then was there a rap cloth spread from the *quenes* standing in the hal, through the pallace and sanctuary, which was railed on both sides, to the high altar of Westminster, after that the rap cloth was cast, the officers of armes appointed the order accustomed. First went gentlemen, then Esquires, then knights, then aldermen of London in their cloakes of scarlet, cast over their gounes of scarlet.

After them, the Judges in their mantles of scarlet and coifes: then followed the knights of the Bath, being no lords, every man having a white lace on his left sleeve: then followed barons and bicomts in their parliament robes of scarlet: after them came *Carles*, *Marquesses*, and *Dukes* in their Robes of Estate, of Crimosin velvet, furred with *Ermin*, powdered according to their degrees.



degrees. After them came the Lord Chancellor in a robe of Scarlet, open before, bordered with lictice. After him came the kings chappell, and the monks solemnly singing, with procession. Then came abbots and bishops mitered, then Sergeants and officers at armes: Then the Mayor of London with his mace, and Garter in his coate of armes: then the marques Dorset in his robe of estate, which bare the Scepter of gold, and the earle of Arundell, which bare the rod of moze with the dove both together: then alone the earle of Wiltshire high Chamberlaine of England, which bare the crowne. After him the duke of Suffolke in his robe of estate, for that day being high Steward of England, having a long white rod in his hand, and the Lord William Howard with the rod of the marshalls ship, and everie knight of the garter had on his collar of the order. Then proceeded forth the Quene in a circote and robe of purple velvet, furred with Ermine in her haire, cosse, and circlet, as she had the Saturday, and over her was borne the Canopie, by foure of the Cinque postes, all in Crimolyn, with points of blew and redde hanging on their sleeves, and the Bishops of London and Winchester bare by the laps of the Quenes robe, and her traine which was verie long, was borne by the old Dutchesse of Suffolke. After her followed Ladies, being Lordes Wittes, which had circotes of scarlet, with narrow sleeves, the head all lictice, with barres of powder according to their degrees, and over that, they had mantles of scarlet furred, and every mantle had lictice about the neck like a neckerchiefe, likewise powdered, so that by the powderings their degrees might be knowne. Then followed Ladies being ladyes wives, in Gownes of Scarlet, with narrow sleeves without traines, onely edged with lictice, likewise had all the quenes Gentlewomen.

When she was thus brought to the high place made in the midst of the Church betwene the quere and the high altar, she was set in a rich Chaire, and after that she had rested a while, she descended downe into the high Altar, and there prostrated her selfe while the bishop of Canturburie said certain collectes over her. Then she rose, and the bishop annointed her on the head and on the breast, and then she was led by againe to her chaire, where after divers orisons said, the archbishop set the crowne of S. Edward on her head, and then delivered her the Scepter of gold in her right hand, and the rod of Moze with the dove in the left hand, and then all the quere sung *Te Deum, &c.* Which done, the bishop took off the crowne of S. Edward being beate, and set on her heade the Crowne made for her, and so went to masse, and when the offering was begunne, she descended downe and offered being crowned, and so ascended uppe agayne and sate in her Chaire till Agnus, and then she went downe and knelt before the high altar, where she receaved of the archbishop the holy sacrament, and then went by to the place agayne. After that Masse was done, she went to S. Edwards shrine, and there offered. After which offering done, she withdrew her into a little place made for that purpose on the one side of the quere. Now in the meane season every Dutchesse put on her bonet a coronell of gold wrought with flowers, and everie marchionesse put on a very coronell of gold, and every countesse a plain circle of gold without flowers, and

and every king at armes put on a crowne of copper and gilt, all which were onne till night.

When the Quene had a little rested her, the companie returned in the same order that they set forth, and the Quene went crowned, and so did the ladies aforesaid: her right hand was sustained by the earle of Wiltshire her father, and her left hand by the Lord Talbot, deputy for the earle of Shrewsbury, & Lord Furnival her father. And when they were out of the sanctuary within the pallace, the trumpets played marvellous freshly, and so she was brought to Westminster hall, and so to her withdrawing chamber: during which time, the lordes, Judges, mayo, and aldermen, put off their robes, mantles, and cloakes, and took their hodes from their neckes, and call them about their shoulders, and the Lordes sate onlie in their circotes, and the Judges and Aldermen in their gownes, and all the Lordes that served that day served in their circotes, and their hodes about their shoulders. All buyers officers of the kings house being no Lordes, had circotes and hodes of Scarlet, edged with miniver, as treasurer, controller, and master of the iswell house, but their Circotes were not gilt.

While the Quene was in her Chamber, every Lord and other that ought to do service at the coronation, did prepare them according to their degree, as the Duke of Suffolke high steward of England, which was richly apparelled, his doublet and jacket set with orient pearle, his gowne crimolyn velvet embrothered, his courser trapped with a close trapper, headed all to the ground with crimolyn velvet, set full of letters of gold of Goldsmithes worke, having a long white rod in his hand. On his left hand rode the Lord William, deputy for his brother, as earle marshall with the marshalls rod, whose gown was crimolyn velvet, and his horse trapper purple velvet cutte on white sattin, embrothered with white Lions. The earle of Wiltshire was high chamberlaine, the earle of Essex carver, the earle of Suffolk sewer, the earle of Arundell chiefe butler, on whom twelve citizens of London did give their attendance at the cupbord: the earle of Darby cupbearer, the viscount Lile panter, the Lord Burgeyn chiefe larer, the Lord Bray almoner for him and his copartners, & the mayo of Wiltshire kept the buttery bar, and Th. Wyat was chosen ewerer for Sir Henry Wyat his father.

When all things were ready and ordered, the Quene under her canopie came into the hall and washed, and sate downe in the midst of the table under her cloth of estate. On the right side of her chaire stood the countesse of Wiltshire widow, and on her left hand stood the countesse of Worcester all the dinner season, which buyers times in the dinner time did holde a fyne cloth before the Quenes face when she like to spitte, or doe otherwise at her pleasures: and at the Tables end sate the Archbyschoppe of Canturburie on the right hande of the Quene, and in the midst betwene the Archbyschoppe and the countesse of Wiltshire stood the Earle of Wiltshire with a white hose all dinner time, and at the Quenes feete under the table sate two gentlewomen all dinner time. When all these things were thus ordered, came in the duke of Suffolke, and the Lord William Howard on horsebacke, and the sergeantes of armes before.

The sitting at  
dinner of  
Quene Anne.



before them, and after them the sewer, and then the knights of the Bath, bringing in the first course, which was eight and twenty dishes, besides subtleties, and ships made of wafer, marvellous gorgeous to behold, all which time of service the trumpets standing in the windowes at the neather ende of the hall, played.

When the was served of two dishes, then the Archbishops service was set downe, whose sewer came equal with the third dish of the Quenes service on his left hand. After that the Quene and the Archbishops were served, the barons of the Ports began the table on the right hand next the wall, then at the table sate the masters and clerkes of the Chancerie, and beneath them other Doctors and Gentlemen. The table next the wall on the left hand by the cupboorde was begunne by the Spaior and Aldermen, the Chamberlaine, and counsell of the Citie of London, and beneath them sate substantiall merchants, and so downeward other worshipfull persons. At the table on the right hand in the middell of the hall sate the lord Chancellor, and other temporall lordes: on the right side of the table in their circotes, and on the left side of the same table sate bishops and abbots in their parliament robes: beneath them, sate the Judges, Sergeants, and the Kings Counsell: beneath them, the knights of the Bath. At the table on the left hand in the middle part sate Dutchesses, Marqueses, Countesses, Baroneses in their robes, and other Ladies in circotes, and Gentlewomen in gownes, all which Gentlewomen and Ladies sate on the left side of the table along, and none on the right side, and when all were thus set, they were incontinent served so quicklie, that it was marvellous, for the servants gave so good attendance, that meat, nor drinke, nor any thing else needed to be called for, which in so great a multitude was marvell. As touching the fare, there could be devised no more costly dishes, nor subtleties. The Spaior of London was served with four and thirtie dishes at two courses, and so were all his brethren, and such as sate at his table. The Quene had at her second course four and thirtie dishes, and thirtie at the third course, and betwene the last courses, the kings of armes crowned, and other officers of armes cried larges in three partes of the hall, and after stode in their place, which was in the behens of the kings bench: and on the right hand out of the cloyster of Saint Stephens Chappell was made a little closet, in which the king with divers ambassadours stode to behold the service, the Duke of Suffolke, and the Lord William rode oftentimes about the hall, chiering the lordes, ladies, and maiors, and his brethren.

After they in the hall had dined, they had toasters and spocasse, and then they washed, and were commanded to rise and stand still in their places before the tables: on the fourmes till the Quene had washed. When she had taken toasters and spocasse, the table was taken up, and the Earle of Rutland brought by the surnape, and laide it at the boordes end, which immediately was drazone and cast by master Reade marshall of the hall, and the Quene washed, and after the archbishop, and after the surnape was withdrazone: then the rose, and stode in the middell of the hall place, to whom the earle of Suffex, in a goodly

spice

spice plate, brought a boide of spice and confectons. After him, the Spaior of London brought a standing cup of gold, set in a cup of assay of gold, and after that he had drunke, he gave the maiors the cup, with the cup of assay, because there was no couer, according to the claime of the Citie, thanking him and all his brethren of their paine.

Then the under her canapie departed to her chamber, and at the entry of her chamber, she gave the canapie with bells and all to the barons of the ports according to their claime, with great thanks: then the Spaior of London bearing his cap in his hand, with his brethren, went through the hall to their barge, and so did all other noblemen and gentlemen, for it was five of the clocke.

On Spundate were the iustices at the tilt before the kings gate, where the Spaior and his brethren had a goodly standing, but there were few speaces by then, by reason the horses would not cope.

On Wednesdate the king sent for the Spaior and his brethren to Westminster, and there he himselfe gave unto them hartie thanks, with manie goodly words.

On Spidsummer even deceased Mary the French Quene, sister to King Henry the eight, and wife to Charles Duke of Suffolke, and she was buried at Saint Edmundsburie.

The fifth of Julie Quene Katherine was proclaimed Prince Archures widowe.

The seventh of July two merchants were murdered on the Thames by one Wolfe and his wife.

It was this yeare enacted, that butchers should sell their beefe and mutton by weight, beefe for a halfe penny the pound, and mutton for three farthings: which being devised for the great commoditie of the realme (as it was thought) hath pleased farre otherwise, for at that time fat oxen were sold for five and twenty shillings and eight pence the peece, fat breatheres for three shillings and four pence the peece, fat calves of the like price, a fat lamb for twelve pence. The butchers of London sold penny pieces of beefe for the reliefe of the poore, every piece two pounce and a halfe, sometime three pounce for a penny: and shirterne, sometime fourtene of these pieces for twelve pence: mutton eight pence the quarter, and an hundred weight of beefe for four shillings and eight pence: what price it hath growen to since it needeth not to be set downe. At this time also, and not before, were foraine butchers permitted to sell their flesh in Leaden hall market of London.

The 7. of September being Sunday, betwene three and foure of the clocke after none, the Quene was delivred of a faire Ladie, for whose good deliverance *Te Deum* was sung incontinently, and great preparation was made for the christning. The Spaior, and his brethren; and foure of the chiefe Councillors were commanded to be at the christning the Wednesdate following. Upon which daie the Spaior Sir Stephen Peacocke in a gowne of crimson velvet, with his collar of essex, and all the aldermen in scarlet with collars and gawnes, and all the counsell of the citie with them took their barge at one of

Birth of Ladie Elizabeth, and her christning.

the clocke, and the Citizens had another Barge, and so rowed to Græntoie, where were many lords, knights, and gentlemen assembled: all the walles betwene the kings pallace and the Friers, were hanged with arras, and all the way strewed with græne rushes. The Friers Church was also hanged with rich arras: the font was of silver, and stood in the midst of the church three steps high, which was covered with a fyne cloth: and dyvers Gentlemen with Rapiers and Towels about their neckes, gave attendance about it, that no fish should come to the Font: Over it hung a square Canopie of Crymson sattin, fringed with Golde, about it was a rayle, covered with redde Sale, betwene the quere & bodie of the church was a close place with a pan of fire to make the Childe reddie in. When all these thinges were ordered, the Childe was brought to the Hall, and then everie man set forwarde: first the citizens two and two, then gentlemen, Esquires, and Chaplaines, next after them the aldermen, and the Spaloz alone, and next the kings counsell, then the kings chappell in coopes, then barons, bishops, earles, the earle of Essex bearing the covered basons gilt, after him the Marques of Excester with a taper of virgin wax, next him the Marques Dorset bearing the salt, behind him the lady Mary of Norfolkke bearing the crisme, which was herie rich of Pearle and Stone. The old dutchesse of Norfolkke bare the child in a Gantle of Purple velvet, with a long traine furred with Ermine. The Duke of Norfolkke with his marshals rodde went on the right hand of the said dutchesse, and the duke of Suffolke on the left hand, and before them went officers of armes, the countesse of Kent bare the long traine of the chilles mantle, and in came betwene the child and the countesse of Kent went the earle of Arundell and the earle of Darby on either side, supporting the said traine in the middelt: over the child was borne a rich canopie by the Lord Rochford, the lord Hussey, the Lord William Howard, and the Lord Thomas Howard the elder. After the child followed many ladies and gentlewomen. When the child was come to the church doore, the Byshoppe of London mette it with dyvers Byshoppes and abbots mitred, and beganne the observances of the Sacrament. The Godfather was the Lord Thomas Archbyshoppe of Canturburie: the Godmothers were the old dutchesse of Norfolkke, and the old marchionesse of Dorset widowes, and the child was named Elizabeth, and after that all thinges were done at the church doore, the child was brought to the font and christened: and that done, Garcar chiefe king of armes cried aloud: God of his infinit goodnes send prosperous life and long to the high and mighty pynesse of Englannde Elizabeth, and then the trumpets blew, then the child was brought by to the altar, and the gospell said over it. After that immediately the archbishop of Canturburie confirmed it, the marchionesse of Excester being Godmother: then the bishoppe of Canturburie gave unto the pynesse a standing cup of golde, the dutchesse of Norfolkke gave to her a standing cup of golde fretted with pearle, the marchionesse of Dorset gave three gilt boles pounted, with a cover, and the marchionesse of Excester gave three standing boles grauen, all gilt with a cover. Then was brought in waters, confectes, and hypocrasse, in such plenty, that every man had as much as he wolde desire: then they set forwarde, the trumpets afoore going

going in the same order toward the kings pallace as they did when they came thitherward, saying that the giftes that the Godfather and godmothers gave, were borne before the child by 4. persons, that is to say, first sir John Dudley bare the gift of the Ladie of Excester, the Lord Thomas Howard the younger bare the gift of the Ladie Dorset, the Lord Fitz Walker bare the gift of the lady of Norfolkke, and the Lord of Worcester bare the gift of the Archbyshop of Canturburie, and all the one side as they went was full of stiffer torches, to the number of four hundredes, born by the gard and other of the kings servants: and about the child were many other proper torches born by gentlemen. And in this order they brought the pynesse to the queens chamber doore, and then departed.

The Spaloz went to the kings chamber, & carried there a table with his brethren the Aldermen, and at the last, the dukes of Norfolkke and Suffolke came out from the king, and reported to the Spaloz and his brethren, that the king thanked them heartilie, and commaunded them to give them thanks in his name, and from thence they were had to the seller and dyanke, and so went to their barge.

About this time the crafty praaises of one Elizabeth Barton, named the holy maide of Kent, came to light, and were discovered, so that shee and her adherents in November following, were brought to the Star chamber, and there before the kings counsell confessed their fained hypocritie and dissimuled holines, traitorous purposes and intentes. The names of those her adherentes, which were presented with her before the lords in the Starre chamber, were as followeth: Richard Master parson of Aldington in Kent, Edward Bocking doctor of divinitie a monke of Canturburie, Richard Dering monke also of Canturburie, Edward Twaites Gentleman, Thomas Laurence Register to the Archdeacon of Canturburie, Henry Golde parson of Alder Sparie in London, Hugh Rich frier observant, Richard Risby, and Thomas Golde gentleman. These were adjudged upon their confession, to stande at Pauls Crosse in the Sermon time, where they with their owne handes shoulde severallie deliver each of them to the preacher a bill declaring their subtil and superstitious doings, which thing they did the Sunday next following, standing upon a stage or scaffold before the Crosse, the bishop of Bangor late abbot of Hyde there preaching, shewed their offences, from whence they were committed to the tower of London.

In this meane time the Scottes were not quiet, but robbed the kinges satellites both by sea and lande, whereupon the king caused them to bee requested, not onlie by the Borderers and other to them associate, which entering the marches, burnt manie of their houses and strong holdes; but also he set forth certaine shippes, which entered into their streames, and fetched out many of those pikes, which they had taken out of their haucns, yet was there no warre proclaimed.

At the suite of Ladie Katherine Dowager, a curse was sent from Rome, which accursed both the king and the Realme. This curse was set up in the towne of Wymherke in flanders (for the byinger thereof durst approach no nearer).

Elizabeth Barton, holy maide of Kent.

The Scottes moored war.

A curse pronounced from Rome.

never where it was taken do tunc by one William Lock a Mercer of London because (as it was said) that the lady Katherin Dowager had procured this cure of the pope, the duke of Suffolke was sent to hir, as then lying at Wyndesore neere Huntingdon, where according to that hee had in commandement, he charged a great sort of her household servants, and yet left a convenient number to serve hir like a pynceesse, which were sworn to serve her, not as a queen, but as pynceesse Dowager: but such as toke that othe thee bitterly refused, and would none of their service, so that she remained with a smal number of servants about her.

1534  
Wholy spallie of  
her attainted.

After Christmasse the Parliament beganne, wherein the forenamed Elizabeth Barton, and other her complices were attaynted of treason, for sundry practises by them put in use, sounding to the bitter reproch, perill, and destruction of the kinges person, his honour, fame, and dignitie, for they hadde put into the heades of manie of the kinges subiects, that to the said Elizabeth Barton was given knowledge by revelation from god and his Saints, that if the king proceeded to the divorce, and married another, he should not be king of this Realme one moneth after, and in the reputation of God, not one day nor houre.

This Elizabeth first through sicknesse, being oftentimes brought as it were into a trance, whereby her visage and countenance became marvellously altered at those times when she was so bereft: at length by the encouraging, procurement and information of the forenamed Richard Master parson of Aldington, she learned to counterfeite such manner of traunces, as in her sickness by force of her disease she had beene acquainted with, so that shee thrust into the people dyvers maruels, and sundry alterations of the scribable parts of her bodie, craftilie uttering in her falsed fained traunces dyvers counterfeits vertues and holie wordes, tending to the rebuke of sin, and reproofing of such new opinions as then began to be spread. And to bring the people the more to beleefe with hir hypocritical doings, she was counselled to say, that she should never be perfectlie whole, till she had visited an image of our Lady at a place called Court at strate, within the parsh of Aldington aforesaide. Whither was she brought, and by the means of the said Richard Master and Edward Bocking there was assembled a two thousand persons at the date appointed of hir thither coming to see the miracle. At which time shee bring thither brought aforesaid all that assemble multitude of people, the falsly fained & shewed in the chapel of our Lady of Court at strate manie alterations of her face, and other outward sensible parties of her bodie: and in those trances she uttered wondrous wordes, as she was before subtiltie induced by the sayde Edward Bocking and Richard Master. And amongst other things she uttered, that it was the pleasure of God, that the said Bocking should be her ghostlie father, and that shee should be a religious woman. And within a while after such fained traunces, she appeered to the people to bee sodaynlye releued from hir sicknesse by the intercession of the image of our Lady being in the said chapel, by reason of which hypocritical dissimulation, the sayde Elizabeth was brought into a marvellous fancy, credite, & good opinion of a great multitude

of

of people of this realme, and to increase the same by the command of the sayde Edward Bocking he became a nunne in the priory of Saint Sepulchres at Canterbury, to whome the said Edward Bocking had commonly his resort: and by conspiracie betwene her and him, she still continued her dissembled trances, alledging that in the same she had revelations from almighty God and his Saints: and among other, that which as before we have mentioned, touching the kings marriage, shee have heard. This matter proceeded so farre, that there was a booke written by her complices, namely, by Thomas Laurence Register to the archdeacon of Canterbury, of her fained miracles, revelations, and hypocritical holinesse. All things were handled so craftilie, that not onely the simple people, but also the wise and learned were deceived by the same: in so much, that William Warham late Archbisshope of Canterbury, and John Fisher bisshop of Rochester, and divers other being informed the proof, gave credit therunto. All which matters and many other had bene traitorously practised amongst the parties many yeres, chiefly to interrupt the divorce, and to destroy the king, and deprive him of the crowne and dignitie reioice of the realme, as in the act of their attainder made more at large doth appeare.

In this Parliament also was made the act of succession, for the establishing of the crowne, to the which everie man was sworn being of lawfull age.

During this parliament, every Sunday at Pauls crosse preached a bisshop, declaring the pope not to be supreme head to the Church. Also in other places of this realme great troubles were raised about preaching, namely, at Wytham where Mr. Latimer preached, and there preached against him one master Hobberton, and doctor Powell, so that there was great part-taking on both sides: insomuch that divers priests and other set by billes against the spallie, and against master Latimer, but the maiors (permitting lay men to preach) caught divers priests to be apprehended and cast into Newgate with bolts upon them, and divers other ran away and lost their livings, rather than come in the maiors handling.

Bisshops preached  
against the  
Pope.

Latimer preached  
at Wytham  
Chron. B. 11. 11.

The 30. of Aprill the parliament was proroged, and every lord and knight and burgeisse were sworn to the act of succession, and subscribed to a schedule fixed to the statute. And then were commissioners sent into all parts of the realme, to take the like oth of all men and women.

The lordes  
sworne to the  
succession.

The 20. of Aprill, Elizabeth Barton a nunne professed, Edward Bocking and John Dering, two monks of Christs church in Canterbury, and Richard Rishby and another of his fellowes of the same house, Richard Master parson of Aldington, and Henry Golde priest, were taken from the tower of London by bridge, and there hanged and headed, the nunnes head was set on London bridge, and the other heads on gates of the city: these as ye before have heard, were attainted by parliament. At which time also were attainted of treason on the same matter, John Fisher bisshop of Rochester, and John Aleson his chaplaine, Thomas Able priest, Thomas Golde gentleman, and Thomas Laurence register to the archdeacon of Canterbury.

Wholy maid of  
her head  
set on London  
by bridge.

*An. reg. 26.*  
Lord Dacres  
of the north ar-  
raigned & quill.

The ninth of July was the lord Dacres of the north arraigned at Westminster of high treason, where the duke of Norfolkke late as Judge and high Sheriff of England, where the said lord Dacres being brought to the barre with the are of the tower before him, after the indyghtment read, so impowred the same, answering everie part and matter therein contained, and so plainly confuted sir Ralph Fenwike, and Musgraue his accusers, who had brought in their false Scottes for witnesses, which were there present ready to vouch their false accusations, that to their great shames and his honour, he was found that date by his peeres not guiltie, to the great reioycing of the people, who made a great shout for joy, when they heard the wordes, spot guiltie pronounced.

*Printed byent.*

The 22. of July John Frich was burned in Smithfield for his opinions concerning the sacrament: at the same time also suffered with him at the same stake one Andrew Hewer a young man, by occupation a Tailor.

*Friers houses  
suppressed.*

The 11. of August were all the places of the observants friers at Greenwich, Canterbury, Richmond, Newark, and Melcombe put downe, and Augustine friers set in their places for the time, and the observants were put in places of the gray friers.

*The Duke by  
Charing crosse  
dyent.*

The 16. of August, was burned the kings stable at Charing crosse, of old time called the Pelwee (for that the kings haukes were there melwed a kepp) wherein was burned many great boies, and great store of hay.

*C. Cromwell  
master of the  
rolles.*

The 21. of September, doctor Tailor master of the rolles, was discharged of that office, and Th. Cromwell twaine in his place, the 9. of October.

*The popes au-  
thoritie abro-  
gated.*

The 3. of November, the Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the Pope with all his authoritie was cleane banished his realm, and order taken that he should no more be called Pope, but bishop of Rome, and the 11. to be taken and reputed as supreme head of the church of England, having full authoritie to reforme all errors, heresies, and abuses of the same. Also the first fruites and tenth of all spiritual dignities and promotions were granted to the king, with a subsidy of the lattie of twelve pence in the pound, with a fifth tenth and a tenth.

*Fish fruites and  
tenth given to  
the king.*

1535

The earle of Illidore died prisoner in the tower of London, and his sonne Thomas Fitz Garret rebelled in Ireland, and took all the kings ordynance, sending to the Emperour, requiring him to take his part. Amongst other he slew doctor Allen bishop of Duelin, and robbed all such as would not obey him: wherefore the king sent thither sir William Skevington with a number of soldiers.

*An. reg. 27.*  
Charter-house  
monks executed

The 29. of April, John prior of the Charterhouse at London, Augustine Webbier, prior of Beual, Thomas Laurence prior of Erham, Richard Reginalds doctor, a monk of Solon, and John Haile vicar of Chisleworth, were all condemned of treason, who were drawn, hanged and quartered at Tyborne the fourth of May, their heads and quarters set on the gates of the citie all save one quarter, which was set on the Charter-house at London.

*Bolles heads  
commanded.*

The eight of May, the king commended all about his court to poll their heads, & to give them example, he caused his owne head to be polled, and from thence.

thenceforth his beard to be notted and no more shaven.

The five and twentieth daie of May, was in St. Dunles church at London examined nineteene men and five women boiue in Holham, whose opinions were: first, that in Christ is not two natures, God and man: secondly, that Christ took neither flesh nor blood of the virgine Marie: thirdly, that children boiue of infidels shall be saved: fourthly, that baptism of children is to none effect: fifthly, that the sacrament of Christs bodie is but bread onely: sixthly, that he who after his baptism sinneth unwittingly, sinneth deadly; and cannot be saved. Fourtene of them were condemned, a man and a woman of them were burned in Smithfield, the other twelue were sent to other towines there to be bent.

*Hollenders  
condemned for  
heresies.*

The eighteenth of June, three monkes of the Charter-house at London, named Thomas Exmew, Humfrey Middlemore, and Sebastian Nidigate were drawn to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered for denying the kings supremacye.

*Charter-house  
monks executed*

The two and twentieth of June, doctor John Fisher Byschoppe of Rochester, for denying the kings supremacye, was beheaded on the tower hill, his head was set on London bridge, and his bodie buried within Warking churchyard.

*Bishop of Ro-  
chester behead-  
ed.*

The first of July, sir Thomas Moore was beheaded on the tower hill, for the like deniall of the kings supremacye: and then the bodie of doctor Fisher bishop of Rochester was taken up and buried with sir Thomas Moore both in the tower.

*Sir Th. Moore  
beheaded.*

Doctor Foxe the kings almoner was made bishop of Hereford: and Hugh Laumer bishop of Worcester: John Hilcey called the blacke frier of Wyke, was made Bishop of Rochester.

In August, the lord Thomas Gerard son to the earle of Arildore, was taken in Ireland, and sent to the tower of London.

In October the king sent master Thomas Cromwell, and doctor Lee, and other, to visite the abbeyes, priories, and nunneries in England: these were ordained to be the principall visiters, who put forth all religious persons that would go, and all that were under the age of foure and twentie yeres; and after closed by the residue that would remaine, so that they should not come out of their places, and take order, that no man should come to the houses of women, nor women to the houses of men, but onely to hear their service in the churches: all religious men that departed, the abbot or prior to give them for their habite a pyell of gowne, and forty shillings of money: the nuns to have such apparell as secular women weare, and to go where they would. They took out of monasteries and abbeyes, their reliques and chiefe treasures to the kings use, they said.

*Abbeies visited*

The 11. of November was a great procession at London of all the religious men, three bishoppes, and foure abbots entered, which was for joy the French king was recovered of his health.

*Procession.*

In the moneth of December, the names of all chauntries were taken, and who had the gift of them.

*Names of  
Chauntries.*

Marthin Dobs-  
ager decalied.

1536

A parliament.  
Rob. Greene.  
Small houses  
suppressed  
Ann. reg. 28.

Justs at Green-  
wich.

The eyght of Iannarie dyed Lady Katherine Dowager at Rymbalton, and was buried at Peterborough.

The twentieth nine of Iannarie, Quene Anne was deliuered of a man Child before her time, which was boyne deade.

In a Parliament begunne in the moneth of februarye, was granted to the king and his betres all religious houses in the realme of Englande, of the value of thio hundred pounds and under, with all lawres and goods to them belonging: The number of these houses then suppressed, were 376. the value of these houses the 32000. pound, and moze by pece, the mouerable goods as they were solde, Robine Hoods pennie twoo;thes, amounted to moze than one hundred thousande poundes, and the religious persons that were in the sayde houses, were cleerlye put out, some went to other greater houses, some went abroad to the world. It was (saith mine author) a pitifull thing to heare the lamentation that the people in the Countreie made for them: for there was great hospitallitie kept among them, and as it was thought moze then tenne thousand persons, maisters and seruantes had lost their livinges by the putting downe of these houses at that time.

On the date was a great Jousting at Greenwich, where were Challengers the Lorde Rochforde and other: and Defenders Henric Norrice and other. From this Jousts King Henric sodaynelle departed to Westminster, havinge oncke with him 6. persons: of which sodayn departure many men marueyled.

On the next morrowe, George Boleine Lorde Rochforde, Brother to the Quene, and Henric Norrice, were brought to the Tower of London prisoners. Also the same date, about five of the clocke in the afternoone, Quene Anne Boleine was brought to the Tower of London by Sir Thomas Audley Lorde Chancellor, the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Cromwell secretarie, and Sir William Kingstone Constable of the Tower. And when they came to the Tower Gate entering in, they fell on her knees before the sayde Lordes, beseeching God to helpe her, as she was not guiltie of that whereof they were accused, and then desired the sayde Lordes to beseech the Quenes grace to be good unto her, and so they left her there prisoner.

On the 15. of Maie Quene Anne was arraigned in the Tower of London on a scaffold for the purpose made in the kings hall, before the Duke of Norfolk, who sat under the cloth of estate as high steward of England, with the Lord Chancellor on his right hand, the Duke of Suffolk on his left hand, with marquesses and lords, &c. and the earle of Surrey sat before the duke of Norfolk his father, as earle marshall of England: The kings commission being read, the Constable of the Tower, and the Lieutenant brought the Quene to the barre, where was made a Chaire for hir to sit downe in, and there her indictment was read, whereunto she made so wise and discreet answeres, that she seemed fully to cleare hir selfe of all matters laid to hir charge, but being tryed by hir peeres, twenty 6. in number, whereof the duke of Suffolk was chiefe, she was by them found guiltie, and had iudgement pronounced by the Duke of Suffolk, to be hanged on the greene in the Tower, or else to have hir head

smitten

smitten off, as the kings pleasure should be further knowen, and so she was conuicted to warde againe: the lady Kingston, and the lady Bolein her Aunt attending on her. And then immediatly, the lord Rochford the Quenes brother was likewise arraigned and condemned: the Spatoz of London, his brethren the aldermen, the wardens, and foure persons moe of euery the twelue principall companies being present.

The seventene date of May, the lord Rochford brother to the Quene, Henric Norrice, Marke Smeeton, William Brierton, and Francis Weston, all of the kings priute Chamber, about matters touching the Quene, were beheaded on the tower hill, the lord Rochfords bodie with the heade was buried in the chappell of the tower, the other foure in the churchyarde there.

On the nineteenth date of May about eight of the clocke in the morning, Quene Anne Bolein was brought to the greene within the tower of London, by the white tower, the lord chancellor, the duke of Richmond, the duke of Suffolk, with the most of the kings counsell, as earles, lords, and nobles of the realme being present, also the Spatoz of London, with his brethren the aldermen, and themselves, and certaine of the principall companies of the citie, &c. All these being on a scaffold made there for the execution, the said Quene Anne saide as followeth: Masters, I here humbly submit me to the lawe, as the lawe hath iudged me, and as for mine offences, (I here accuse no man) God knoweth them, I remit them to God, beseeching him to haue mercie on my soule, and I beseech Iesu saue my Soueraigne and master the King, the most gobildest, noblest, and gentlest Prince that is, and long to raigne ouer you, which wordes she spake with a smiling countenance: which done, she kneeled downe on both her knees, and said, O Iesu Christ I commend my soule, and with that word suddenly the hangman of Caleis smote off her head at one stroke with a sword: her body with the head was buried in the quire of the chappell in the tower.

Rob. Greene.

Quene Anne  
beheaded.

The twentieth of May, the king married lady Jane daughter to sir Iohn Seimour knight, which at Whitsonside was openly shewed as Quene, and on tuesdaie in the Whitson weeke, Sir Edward Seimour was created vicount Beauchampe, and Sir Walter Hungerforde made Lorde Hungerforde.

King H. mar-  
ried lady Jane.

The 8. of June began a parliament, and the cleargie helde a conuocation in Pauls church, where after much disputing and debating of matters, they published a booke of Religion, entituled, Articles deuised by the kings highnes. In the which booke is mentioned but thre sacraments.

Articles of re-  
ligion deuised  
by the king.

On Saint Peters night, the king and Quene stood at the Percers hall, and saw the watch most brauely set forth.

The 29. of June, the king held a great iousting and triumph at Westminster, where were ordained two lighters made like ships to fight upon the water, one of the which was in the midst, whereby some Gates gentlemen, a seru-  
uant of master Kneuers was drowned in his harness. In the other, a gunne  
blast her chamber, and maimed two of the marksmen.

Triumph at  
Westminster.

Act 3.

After

After that the earle of Wylshire and Symond, called sir Thomas Bolein, had deliuered the kings priuie seale, whereof he was *Chifor*, into the kings hands: Thomas Cromwel secretary to the R. and H. of the rolles, was made h. keeper of the said priuie seale. And Christopher Hales the kings attorney, was made master of the Rolles, and maister Baker Recorder of London was made the kings attorney.

The 9. of Iuly, the L. Fitzwaren was created earle of Bath, and the mo; row after T. Cromwel was made lord Cromwel.

The 18. of Iuly, lord Cromwel was made knight, and high vicar generall ouer all the spirituallty under the king, and saie diuers times in the conuocation among the bishops, as head ouer them.

The 22. of Iuly, Henry duke of Richmond and Somerset, earle of Nottingham, a ballard son of h. Henry, borne at Blakmore: in Essex, of the lady Taile boile, that time called Elizabeth Blunt, died at saint James, and was buried at Thetford in Norfolk.

This month of Iuly, lord Thomas Howard, youngest brother to the duke of Norfolk, was sent to the tower of London, for making a priuie contract of matrimonie with the Lable Margaret Dowglas, daughter to the Queene of Scots by the earle of Angus, and neece to king Henry of England: the said lord Thomas was attaint by parliament, and also the said lady Margaret Dowglas was after committed to the tower for the same.

In September, Thomas Cromwel lord priuie seale, and vicegerent, sent out vnder the kings spirituall seale, certaine iniunctions to the prelates and clergie of the realme, charging Curates to preach and to teach their parishioners, the *Ten commandments*, *Aue* and *Credo*, the commandements and articles of the sayd in English, with other articles.

In the beginning of October, at a fise for the Kinges subside kept in Lincolnshire, the people made an insurrection, and gathered nigh twentie thousand persons, who take certaine lords and gentlemen of the country, causing them to be sworne to them vpon certaine articles which they had deuised, and such as refused to sweare, they kept prisoners, and beheaded a priest, who was the bishop of Lincolnes chancelor: Against those the king did send the Duke of Suffolk, the earle of Sheshburie, and the Earle of Rutlande with a strong powner, whereof when the rebelles hearde, they desired pardon, brake by their armie, and departed home, but their Captaynes were apprehended and executed.

The ninth of October, a priest and a butcher were hanged at Windsor, by martiall lawe, for wordes spoken in the behalfe of the Lincolnshire men, the butcher wished the good fellows (as he termed them) in Lincolnshire, to haue the death on his stall, rather than to sell it at such price as hee was offered: the priest standing by, likewise wished them to haue it, for he said they had need of it. Also James Maister doctor of law, late chaplaine to Q. Katherine, for like wordes was executed at Chelmsford in Essex.

The men of Lincolnshire being pacified, within six daies after began an insurrection in Yorkshire for the same causes: there people gathered to the number

T. Cromwel  
lord keeper.

T. Cromwel  
lord priuie seale  
vicar generall.

Henry Duke of  
Richmond.

Lorde Thomas  
Howard sent to  
the tower.

Pater noster,  
creede, and com-  
mandements.

Commotion in  
Lincolnshire.

Commotion  
appealed.

A priest and a  
butcher execu-  
ted.

Commotion in  
Yorkshire.

number of 40000. who take the archbishop of Yorke, and the L. Darcie, and caused them to be sworne to their partie.

Ye shall not enter into this your pilgrimage of grace for the common wealth onely, but for the loue that you do beare to Gods faith and the church militant, and the maintenance thereof, and the preservation of the kings person and his issue, and the purifying of nobilitie, and to the intent to expresse all villaines blood, and euill counsaillers against the common wealth, from his grace, and the priuie counsell of the same. And that ye shall not enter into our said pilgrimage for no particular profit to your selues, nor doe any displeasure to any priuie person, but by the counsell of the common wealth, ne to murder or slep for any enuy, but in your hart to put away all feare from the common wealth, and to take before you the crosse of Christ, and in your hearts his faith, to the restitution of Gods church, and to the suppression of erroneous opinions. God saue the king.

Against those rebelles, the king sent the Duke of Norfolk, the Duke of Suffolk, the Earle of Sheshburie, and the Marquise of Exeter, with a great armie, with whome a battaile was appointed to haue bene fought, on the fene of Saint Simon and Iude: but as God woulde, there fell such raine the night before, that the two armies coulde not meete: Whereupon, they desired the Duke of Norfolk to sue vnto the kings maiestie for their pardon, and that they might haue their liberties, &c. which the duke promised, and rode posse to the king then lying at Windsor, to knowe his pleasure, and so appeared them. Sir Robert Aske, that was chiefe of this rebellion, came to London, and was not onely pardoned, but rewarded with great gifts.

Sir Ralph Eure kept Sharboisow Castle in the North, being sixe weekes besieged by the rebelles, twentie daies whereof he and all his companie (which were his onely friendes, seruants and tenants, and serued for good will to him) were forced to sustaine themselves with bread and water, and yet kept the same safe to the ende of the said rebellion, and so deliuered it to king Henrie, who sent him some after to serue in the bozdures against Scotland, where in great credite he continued his seruice, keeping the Scots without doing hurt to England, and with such obedience of them, as within twentie miles of the bozdures of Scotland fore against him, there was not a Scot but at his commandement, and so continued till he was killed in Anno 1545.

The 13. of Nouember, maister Robert Pagation a graue citizen, and a mercer of London, was slaine with a gun, as he was going from his house, by Soper lane end, to morrowe masse in S. Thomas of Abers, now he called the Spencers chappell in cheape: but the murderer was neuer openly knowne, till by his owne confession made many yeeres after, when he came to the gallies at Banberie where he was hanged for felonye.

The 22. of December, the Thames being frozen, the king and queene Jane rode through London to Chertwoth.

The 3. of February, was Thomas Fitzgarrat, sonne and heire to the earle

Of the re-  
bels in Yorke-  
shire.

Commotion  
appealed.

Sir Ralph E-  
ures his good  
seruice in the  
north.

Robert Pa-  
gation mur-  
dered.

The earle of  
Surrey & his  
of his vncler  
executed.

A new com-  
mition in  
Dyke  
shire.  
Another con-  
spiracie.

Abbot of  
Whalley and  
other hanged.

Lincolneshire  
men executed.

Ann. reg. 29.  
A commotion  
in Sommer-  
setshire.

Cromwell  
knight of the  
Garter.

Prince Ed-  
ward boine.

of Killbore, beheaded, and hie of his vncler dyacon, hanged, and quartered, at Tybborne for treason.

In the same moneth Nich. Musgraue, Tho. Gilby, and other stirred a new rebellion, and beleaged the city of Carlisle, from whence they were dyuen, and manie of them taken and put to death. Also the same moneth, sir Francis Bigot, sir Robert Constable, and other began a conspiracie, and for the same were attainted.

The 10. of March, John Paslew bachelor of diuinitie then being the 25. abbot of the abbey of Whalley in Lincolneshire, was executed at Lancaster, and the same daie with him was hanged, dyacon, and quartered, John Easlegate a monke of the same house, whose quarters were set vp at diuers toiwons in that shire. And on the 13. of March W. Haydoke a monke of Whalley was hanged at Whalley, in the field called Bedeamgates, and there hanged long time after. Also about the same time, the abbot of Sabley in Lancashire, with one Althebe a monke of Cernaur, were executed. Also Robert Hops abbot of Wybozne in Bedfordshire, with the prior of the same house, and the parson of Waddington, were executed at Wybozne.

The 29. of March were 12. men of Lincolne dyacon to Tybborne, and there hanged and quartered, 5. were priests, and 7. were lay men, 1. one was an abbot, a suffragan, doctor Mackerel: another was the vicar of Louth in Lincolnshire, and two priests.

In April, through certaine commissions sent into Sommerfetshire to take vp coigne, the people began to make an insurrection, which was by M. Powel & other alaid, the beginners to the number of 60. were condemned, whereof 14. were hanged and quartered, one of them was a woman.

In June the L. Darcy, the L. Husley, sir Rob. Constable, sir Thomas Percy, sir Francis Bigot, sir Stephen Hamelton, sir John Bulmer and his wife, George Lomley, Nich. Tempel esquire, Robert Aske, W. Thurst abbot of Fountains, Adam Sodbury abbot of Cernaur, the abbot of Kiuers, W. Wold prior of Wyrington, were all put to death: sir Robert Constable at Hull, ouer the gate called Beuerley gate: Aske hanged in chaynes on a tower at Poike: Margaret Cheyney, other wise lady Bulmer, burned in Smithfield: lord Darcy beheaded at Tower hill: lord Husley at Lincolne, and the other sir in number, suffered at Tybborne.

The 26. of August, the L. Cromwell L. priuie seale, vice Roy, and viceroy general, was made knight of the garter.

The 12. of October, about two of the clocke in the morning, was boine at Hampton court prince Edward, and M. Jane his mother left hir life the 14. of October: the 18. of October, the prince was made Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and earle of Chester.

Edward Seymour L. Beauchamp, the Quenes brother, was made Carle of Hertford, and sir William Fitz Willoz admiral, was made Carle of Southampton, and M. William Powel was made treasurer of the kings house, Sir John Russell comptroller of the kings house, M. Henedge, M. Long, M. Kneuc of the kings priuie chamber, M. Coffin, M. Lister, and M. Seymour the quenes brother,

brother, knights.

On Alhalotwene euen, lord Thomas Howard brother to the Duke of Norfolk, died prisoner in the tower of London, and was buried at Wetherford, and then the Ladie Margaret Dowglas was pardoned, and released out of the tower.

The 12. of Nouember, the corps of M. Jane was with great solemnity conueied from Hampton court toward Wimbors, and there buried in the middell of the quire.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oranwich.

The 24. of February being Sunday, the road of Worley in Kent, called the road of Grace, made with diuers vices, to moue the eyes and lips, was shewed at Pauls Crosse by the preacher, which was the bishop of Rochester, and there it was broken, and plucked in peeces.

The 25. of February, sir John Allen priest, and also an Irish gentleman of the Garters, were hanged and quartered at Tybborne.

Doctor Ioh. Forest a stricter obseruant, was apprehended, for that in secret confession he had declared to manie the kings subteties, that the king was not the preame head of the Church, whereas before he had been twoine to the same supremacy, vpon this popit hee was examined, and answered that hee tooke his oth with his outwarde man, but his inward man neuer consented thereto: then being further accused of diuers hereticall opinions, hee submitted himselfe to the punishment of the Church, but hauing moze libertie than before, to talke with whome hee would, when his abjuratioun was sent him to read, hee viterlie refused it. Whereupon he was condemned, and after ward on a paire of new gallows set vp for that purpose in Smithfield, he was hanged by the middle and armo-pits quicke, and vnder the gallows was made a fier, where with hee was brent and consumed, on the 22. daie of Maie: there was a scaffold set vp before the prisoner, whereon was placed sir Richard Gresham Lord Maior of the city, the dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, the lord admiral, the lord priuie seale, and diuers other of the counsell, besides a great number of Citizens and other: also a pulpet was there set, in the which master Hugh Latimer Bishoppe of Worcester preached a sermon, confuting the firste errors, and mouing him to repentance, but all auailed not: so that in the end, when the Bishop asked him what state he would die in, the fier with a loude voice answered and said, that if an angell should come downe from heauen, and teach him any other doctrine then hee had receiued, and beleued from his youth, hee would not now beleue him, and that if his body should be cut ioint after ioint, or member after member bent, hanged, or what paine soeuer might be doome to his bodie, he would neuer turne from his olde profession: moze he saide to the Bishop, that 7. yeres past he durst not to haue made such a sermon for his life. And so hee was hanged and bent, as afoze is shewed: and an huge great image named Daruell Gatherm, hauing bene brought out of Wales to this gallows in Smithfield, was there bent with the saide fier Forest. In the night next following, the road at Saint Margarets Watens by the tower street of London, was pulled downe, and broken in peeces, with his Tabernacle.

1538  
The Howard  
deceased.

1538  
Roode of grace  
shewed at  
Pauls.

Ann. reg. 30.  
Frier Forest  
brent.

Fier in Roode  
lane.

And



And about 3. nights after, to wit, the 27. of May was a great fire in the same S. Margarets parish, not far from the church, the which fire among the basket makers there consumed more then a dosen houses, and nine persons men and women bent to death.

Batle abbey in Suffes, Martine abbey in Surrey, Stratforde abbey in Essex, Lewis in Suffes, and other were suppressed to the kings use.

The images of our ladie of Walsingham and Ipswich were brought by to London, with all the jewels that hung about them, and diuers other images both in Englande and Wales, whereunto anie common pilgrimage was used, for auoideing of Idolatrie, all which were bent at Chelsey by T. Cromwell priate scale.

The ninth of August, Edmond Conesby one of the Cromes of the Kings Chamber, was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the Kings Seale manuell.

The 1. of September being Sunday, one Cratwell Hangman of London, and two other, were hanged at the waxelling place by Clerkenwell, for robbing a both in Bartholomew faire.

The 2. of September, Edw. Clifford gentleman was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the kings priuy signet.

This moneth of September, Thomas Cromwell lord priuy scale, bleegerent to the kings highnes, sent forth intimacons to all bishops and curates thorough the realme, charging them to see that in euerie parish church, the Bible of the largest volume, printed in English, were placed, for all men to reade on: and that a booke of register were also prouided and kept in euerie parish Church, wherein shall bee writtten euerie wedding, christning, and burying within the same parish for euer.

S. Austines abbey at Canterburie was suppressed, and the shize and goods taken to the kings treasury, as also the shize of Thomas Becket in the priuote of Christ church, was likewise taken to the kings use. This shize was builded about a mans height, all of stone, then upward of timber plain, within the which was a Chest of yron, containing the bones of Thomas Becket, skull and all, with the wounde of his death, and the peece cut out of his skull lapde in the same wound. These bones (by commandment of the lord Cromwell) were then and there bent, the timber worke of this shize on the outside, was covered with plates of gold, damasked with golde wire, which grounde of gold was againe covered with jewels of gold, as rings, 10. 02 12. cramped with gold wyer, into the said grounde of golde, many of those rings having stones in them, bowches, images, angelles, precious stones, and great pearles, &c. The people of which shize, in gold and precious stone, filled two great chestes, such as 6. or 8. strong men coulde doe no more, then carrie one of them at once out of the church. The monks of that church were commanded to change their habites, into the apparell of secular priests.

The hospital of S. Thomas of Abers in London, the blacke friers, the white friers, the gray friers, and the charterhouse monks in London, were suppressed, and so all other religious houses immediately after.

Abbeies suppressed.

Hangman hanged.

The Bible in euery church to be read.

Register booke in euery church to be kept.

Tho. Becketts shize.

Tho. Becketts bones bent.

Friers in London suppressed.

In the month of Nouember, John Nicholson, otherwise Lambert, a priest, was accused of heresie, for holding opinion against the bodily presence in the sacrament of the aulter: he appealed to the king, who famously consented to heare him at a day appointed. Against the which day in the palace at Westminster, within the kings hall, there was set up a throne or siege royall for the king, with scaffolde for the lords, and a stage for Nicholson to stand upon. Diuers articles were ministred to him by Thomas Cranmer archbishoppe of Canterbury, Latimer bishop of Worcester and other, but namely the king pressed him sore, and in the end offered him pardon, if he would renounce his opinion, but he would not, therefore he was condemned, had iudgement and was bent in Smithfield.

The 5. of Nouember, Henry Courtney marquisse of Excester, and earle of Denonshire, and sir Henry Poole knight, Lord Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill brother to the lord of Bargaunie, were sent to the Tower, being accused by sir Geoffrey Poole brother to the lord Mountacute, of high treason, who were indigested, for desailing to maintaine, promote and aduance, one Reginald Poole, late Deane of Excester, enemye to the king, beyonde the sea, and to bepryue the king.

The 24. of Nouember, foure anabaptists, thre men and one woman, all dutch, bare sagots at Pauls crosse. And on the 29. of Nouember, a man and a woman dutch anabaptists, were bent in Smithfield.

The first date of December sir Thomas Audley, was made baron Audley of Alden.

The marquisse of Excester, earle of Denonshire, and Henry lord Mountacute, were arraigned on the last of December, at Westminster, before the lord Audley that was lord Chancellor, and for that present high steward of England, where they were found guiltie. The third daie after were arraigned sir Edward Neuill, sir Geoffrey Poole, two priests called Crofts and Colens, and one Holland a marriner, all attainted. And the 9. of January were Henrie marquisse of Excester, Earle of Denonshire, Henry L. Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuill, beheaded on the tower hill. The two priests, Crofts and Colens, and Holland the marriner, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne, and Geoffrey Poole was pardoned.

On Wednesday John Iones, John Potter, and William Manering were hanged in the princes liuerie (because they were the princes seruants) on the south side of Pauls church-yarde, for killing of Roger Cholmeley esquire in the same place.

The 3. of March, sir Nicholas Carew of Bedington, in the county of Surrey, knight of the Garter, and master of the kings horse, was beheaded on the tower hill, for being of counsell with Henry marquisse of Excester, and Henry Poole lord Mountacute.

The 9. of March, the king created sir William Powlett knight, treasurer of his household, lord Saint John, sir John Russell comptroller of his household, lord Russell, and sir John Parre lord Parre.

The 28. of Aprill, began a Parliament, in the which Margaret countesse of

Lambert bent.

Anabaptists bare sagots and were bent.

1529  
Marquisse of Excester and other executed.

Execution in Pauls church-yarde.

Sir Nicholas Carew beheaded.

States created.

Ann. reg. 31.  
of



of Salisbury, Gertrude wife to the marquisse of Cretser, Reginald Poole, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley knight of Saint Johns, and diuers other were attainted: And all the religious houses in England suppressed and vnappressed were granted to the king for euer.

Stoke houses  
built.

King Henry being informed that the pope by instigation of cardinal Poole, had moued and stirred diuers princes and potentates of Christendome to invade the Realme of England, without delay rooe towarde the sea coastes, and sent diuers nobles to suruey all the portes, and places of danger, where a ny more and conuenient landing place might be doubted, as well on the borders of England, as also of Wales, in which dangerous places he caused bulwarkes and forts to be erected: and further he caused the lorde Admirall earle of South-hampton, to prepare in a readinesse his nauie of ships for defence of the coasts: besides this he sent forth commissions to haue generall musters taken through the Realme, to vnderstand what able men he might make account of: and farther to haue the armour and weapons sene and biewed, sir William Forman knight then Mayor of London, was commanded to certifie the names of all the able men within the citie, and liberties thereof, betwixt the ages of 16. and 60. with the number of armors and weapons, whereupon the said Mayor and his brethren, each one in his warde, toke the number accordingly, whereof they aduertised sir Thomas Cromwell lord pryncle seale, who certified the king, and then he commanded a conuenient number of the most able to be mustered.

Great muster  
at London.

The 8. of May, the citizens of London mustered at the Apples ende all in bright harneses, with coates of white silke, or cloth, and chetnes of golde, in three great battailes, the number was 15000. beside bowllers, and other awappers, who in goodly order passed through London to Westminster, & so through the Sanctuary, and rounde about the parke of S. James, and returned home through Holborne.

No watch at Whitsommer.

Dodo: Shakton bishop of Salisbury, and doctor Latimer bishop of Worcester, resigned their bishopricks into the kings hand the first of July.

Witch of Marston  
and other  
executed.

The 8. of July, Griffith Cleake vicar of Walsworth, with his Chapleine and his seruant, and sister Waire, were all foure hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings: whose inbement I haue not heard of, and therefore not able to set downe the cause of their execution.

The 10. of July, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley, were beheaded, for matter whereof ye haue heard.

On Easter daie there were fittie saile discovered, that laie in the Downs, and so that it was neither knowne, what they were, nor what they intended, all the able men in Kent were raised and mustered in armour the same daie.

The 7. of September deceased doctor John Stokesley, Bishop of London, and was buried in our Ladye chappell of Pauls church, on the 14. of September.

The 20. of October, the quire of Pauls went to their chapter house, with the

the bishop of Chichester being then deane of Pauls, who made to them a collation, and then elected there by the kings commission, doctor Edmond Boner, by these wordes: Wee elect Edmond bishop of Hereford now beyond the seas, Bishop of London, and then desired the audience to pray for him, the Bishop beganne, and the quire followed, from the chapter house where the election was made, vp to the quire, &c.

Bishop of London  
elected.

In this meane time, to wit, in the moneth of September came to London, Duke Frederike of Bawier, the Palgrave of Rhine, the Bredhall of Hans, Frederike Prince elector of Saronte, and the Chancellos of William Duke of Cleue, Galtche, Gelderland, and Berghen. These were conducted to Windesore, where epght daies together they were continuallie feasted, and pastimes shewed them in huntenges and other pleasures, so much as mought bee. The Palgrave hostile after departed homeward, and was princelie rewarded: And at that present was the marriage concluded betwixt the king, and the ladye Anne sister to the duke of Cleue, and great preparation was made for the wedding of her.

Abbots executed.

In the moneth of Nouember, Hugh Faringdon abbot of Reading, and two priests, named Rug and Onion, were hanged and quartered at Reading. The same daie was Richard Whiting Abbot of Glasseburie hanged and quartered on Toze Hill, besides his monasterie, John Thorne and Roger James monkes, the one Treasurer, the other Under-treasurer of Glasseburie Church, were at the same time executed. Also hostile after John Bech Abbot of Colchester was executed at Colchester, all for denying the kings supremacy.

The 5. of December, the abbey of S. Albons was surrendered, by the abbot and monks there, by deliuering the couent seale into the hands of T. Pope, D. Peter, master Cauendish, and other the kings vassals.

Abbey of S. Albons  
surrendered.

In the moneth of December, were appointed to waite on the kings person 50. Gentlemen, called Pensioners or Speares, like as they were in the first yere of the king, vnto whom was assigned the summe of fittie poundes the peece yeerelie, for the mayntenance of the themselves, and euery man two horses, or one horse and a gelding of seruice.

Pensioners  
appointed.

The thirde of Ianuarie, was the Ladye Anne of Cleue receyued at Blackheath, and brought to Greenwich with great triumph: and the first daie of the same moneth shee was married to King Henric.

1540  
R. H. married  
lady Anne of  
Cleue.

After Christmasse, the priory Church of Saint Marie Querte in Southwarke, was purchased of the king by the inhabitants of the Borrowe, doctor Gardener Bishoppe of Winchester putting to his helping hand: they made there of a parish church, in place of two small parish churches, the one of Mary Magdalene, in the said priory church, the other of S. Margaret on the hill.

The twelfth of March, Henric Bowcher Earle of Essex, riding a young horse, was cast, and brake his necke, at his mannour in Essex. Hee was the eldest Earle in England.

Earle of Essex  
deceased.

The nineteenth of March, John Vere Earle of Oxford, high Chamberlayne of Englande, deceased at his manour of Hedingham in Essex.

Earle of Oxford  
lord deceased.

The

Princes at Ca.  
lets executed.

Cromwell earle  
of Essex.

Subsidy and  
four fifteens.  
Hospital of S.  
John of Jeru-  
salem in Eng-  
land dissolved

The tenth of Aprill, Sir William Peterfon Wyke, late commissarie of Calais, and Sir William Richardson Wyke of Saint Maries in Calais, were both there hanged, and quartered, in the Market place for the suprema-  
cie.

The 18. of Aprill, Sir T. Cromwell L. priue Seale, was created earle of Essex, and high chamberlaine of England, and his sonne Gregory was made lord Cromwell.

In a parliament which beganne the 18. of Aprill, was granted to the king a subsidie of 2 s. the pound lands, and 12 d. goods, and four fifteens towards the kings great charges in building of blockhouses. Whereupon the corporation of the knights of the shires, or knights of S. John of Jerusalem in England and Ireland, was bitterly dissolved and made void, the king his heires and successors, to have and enjoy all the mansion house, church, and all other edifices, buildings, and gardens to the same belonging, nere to the city of London, called the house of S. John of Jerusalem in England: and also the hospital, church and house of hospital in Ireland, with all castles, honors, manors, meases, landes, tenementes, rentes, reuerfions, seruices, tithes, meadowes, pastures, parkes, warrens, &c. in England and Ireland, with all the goods, catallies, &c. Wil. Weston knight prior of the said hospital of S. John of Jerusalem in England, during his life to have an annuall rent of 1000. pounds, and such reasonable portion of the goods and catallies of the said house as the king shall appoint him. John Raufon knight prior of S. John of Jerusalem in Ireland, 500. marks, with a reasonable portion of goods. Clement West 200. l. T. Pemberton 80. l. G. Ruffel 100. l. G. Ailmar 100. l. John Sutton 200. l. E. Bellengam 100. l. E. Browne 50 l. E. Hufe 100. marks, Ambrose Caue 100. marks, William Tirell 30. pound, John Raufon 200. marks, A. Rogers, Oswald Maffingberd, and other 8. each of them, 10. pound yerelie, with portion of the goods as the king should limite, so that the pensions appointed to the said knights and brethren amounted to 2870. pound the yere out of the lands to that hospitall appertaining, &c.

Ann. reg. 32.

Anabaptists  
byem.

Feeling of cha-  
llengers.

The 24. of Aprill, Tho. L. Audley, L. Chancellor of England, and Sir Anthony Browne of the 13. house were made knights of the garter.

The 29. of Aprill one named Maundeuel, another named Colens, and one other were examined in S. Margarets church, and were condemned for anabaptists, and were on the 3. of May byent in the high way beyond Southwark towards Felwenton.

On Maie daie, was a great triumph of Jousting at Westminster, which Jousts had been proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spaine, for all comers that woulde, against the challengers of England, which were Sir John Dudley, Sir Thomas Seymer, Sir Thomas Poininges, Sir George Carewe knights: Anthony Kingston, and Richard Cromwel squires, which said challengers came into the lists that daie richlie appareled, and their horses trapped all in white velvet, with certain knights & gentlemen ryding afore them, appareled all in white velvet, & white farfenet, and all their servants in hytte doublets, and hosen cut after the Borgonian fashon: and there came to iust against

against them the said day of defendants, 46. the earle of Surrey being the foremost, L. Wil. Heiward, L. Clinton, and L. Cromwell son and heire to Th. Cromwell earle of Essex, and chamberlaine of Englande, with other, which were all richlie appareled. And that daie Sir John Dudley was overthrowen in the field by mischance of his horse, by one Maister Breme defendant, neuer the lesse he brake diuers speares ballantly after that: and after the said iusts were don, the said challengers rode to Durham place, where they kept open household, and feasted the king and queene, with hir ladies, and all the court.

The 2. of May Anthony Kingstone and Ric. Cromwell were made knights at the said place.

The 3. of May, the said challengers did Tourney on horseback with Swords, Tourneying against them came 29. defendants: Sir John Dudley and the earle of Surrey running first, which the first course lost both their gauntlets, and that day Sir Ric. Cromwell overthrowe M. Palmer in the field off his horse, to the great honor of the challengers.

The sixt of Maie, the sayde Challengers fought on foote at the Barriers, and against them came thirtie Defendants, which fought ballantly, but Sir Richard Cromwell overthrowe that daie at the Barriers, Maister Culpeper in the Fielde: and the first of Maie the sayde Challengers brake by their household.

In the which time of their house-keeping, they had not only feasted the king, queene, ladies, and the whole court as is aforesaid, but also on the Tuesday in the Rogation weeke, they feasted all the knights and burgesses of the common house in the parliament: and on the morrowe after they had the spales of London, the aldermen, and all their wives to dinner, and on the Friday they brake up, as is aforesaid.

The 7. of May Sir W. Weston knight, L. prior of S. John of Jerusalem with out Smithfield died, and neuer receiued any part of his pension, and the king took all the lands that belonged to that house, and to that order, into his hands, to the augmentation of his crown: and gave to euery of the challengers above written, for a reward of their ballantnes 100. marks, and a house to dwell in of purely revenues out of the said lands for ever.

The 26. of May, was sent to the tower doctor Wilson, and doctor Sampson bishop of Chichester, for releuing certayne prisoners which had denied to subscribe to the kings suprema-  
cie: for the same offence Richard Farmer Grocer of London, a rich and wealthy citizen, was committed to the marshalsea, and after arraigned and attainted in the premunire, and lost all his goods, his wife and children thrust out of doores. Also the keeper of Newgate was sent to the marshalsea, for giving liberty to Doctor Powell and doctor Abell his prisoners to go under baile.

Richard Farmer in the premunire.

The 9. of July, T. L. Cromwell earle of Essex being in the counsel chamber, was suddenly apprehended, and committed to the tower of London. The 19. he was attainted by parliament, of heresie and high treason, as appereth by the same attainder which I haue seene and read, but forbeare to set downe the same being long.

of Salisbury, a man knight to the marquisse of Cressier Reginald Pole, sir Adrian Arundell, and Thomas Dingley knight of Saint Johns, and others other were attainted: And all the religious houses in England suppressed and unsuppressed were granted to the king for ever.

These houses  
burned.

King Henry being informed that the pope by indignation of cardinal Wolsey, had moved and stirred divers princes and potentates of Christendome to invade the Realme of England, without delay rode towards the sea coastes, and sent divers nobles to survey all the postes, and places of danger, where any might and convenient landing place might be doubted, as well on the borders of England, as also of Wales, in which dangerous places he caused bulwarkes and forts to be erected: and further he caused the lorde Admirall earle of South-hampton, to prepare in a readinesse his naue of ships for defence of the coastes: besides this he sent forth commissions to haue generall musters taken throughe the Realme, to vnderstand what able men he might make account of: and further to haue the armour and weapons sorne and viewed, sir William Forman knight then Mayor of London, was commanded to certifye the names of all the able men within the citie, and liberties thereof, betwixt the ages of 16. and 60. with the number of armors and weapons, whereupon the said Mayor, and his brethren, each one in his ward, took the number accordingly, whereof they aduertised sir Thomas Cromwell lord pryncesse seale, who certified the king, and then he commanded a convenient number of the most able to be mustered.

Great muster  
at London.

The 8. of May, the citizens of London mustered at the Apples ende all in bright harnesses, with coates of white silke, or cloth, and chelines of golde, in these great battailes, the number was 15000. beside muskiers, and other alwayes, who in goodly order passed through London to Westminster, & so through the Sanctuary, and rounde about the parke of St. James, and returned home through Holborne.

So watch at Whitsonmower.

Dodo Shakston bishop of Salisbury, and doctor Latimer bishop of Worcester, resigned their bishopricks into the kings hand the first of July.

Clear of Mans.  
worth and other  
executed.

The 8. of July, Griffith Clarke vicar of Wamsworth, with his Chapleine and his seruant, and siter Waire, were all foure hanged and quartered at St. Thomas Waterings: whose inditement I haue not heard of, and therefore not able to set downe the cause of their execution.

The 10. of July, sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley, were beheaded, for matter whereof ye haue heard.

On Easter daie there were sirie saile discovered, that laie in the Downs, and for that it was neither knowne, what they were, nor what they intended, all the able men in Kent were raised and mustered in armour the same daie.

The 7. of September deceased doctor John Stokesley, Bishop of London, and was buried in our Ladie chappell of Paules church, on the 14. of September.

The 20. of October, the quire of Paules went to their chapter house, with the

the bishop of Chichester being then deane of Paules, who made to him a collation, and then elected there by the kings commission, doctor Edmund Boorer, by these two: the cleard Edmond bishop of Hereford now beyond the seas, Bishop of London, and then desired the audience to pray for him the Bishop being gone, and the quire followed, from the chapter house where the election was made, by to the quire, &c.

In this meane time, to wit in the moneth of September came to London, Duke Frederike of Bawier, the Palgrave of Rhine, the Iorchall of Huns, Frederike Prince elector of Saronie, and the Chancellos of William Duke of Cleue, Salliche, Gelderland, and Berghen these were conducted to Windsor, where eight daies together they were continuallic feasted, and pastimes shewed them in huntines, and other pleasures, so much as might be. The Palgrave hostile after departed homeward, and was princelie rewarded: And at that present was the marriage concluded betwixt the king, and the ladie Anne sister to the duke of Cleue, and great preparation was made for the wedding of her.

In the moneth of Nouember, Hugh Faringdon abbot of Reading, and two priests, named Rug and Onion, were hanged and quartered at Reading. The same daie was Richard Whiting Abbot of Glasseburie hanged and quartered on Toze Hill, besides his Monastrie, John Thorne and Roger James monks, the one Treasurer, the other Under-treasurer of Glasseburie Church, were at the same time executed. Also hostile after John Beck Abbot of Colchester was executed at Colchester, all for denying the kings supremacy.

Abbots executed.

The 5. of December, the abbey of St. Albons was surrendered, by the abbot and monks there, by deliuering the couent seale into the hands of T. Pope, D. Peter, master Cauendish, and other the kings vassals.

Abbey of St. Albons surrendered.

In the moneth of December, were appointed to wayte on the kings person 50. Gentlemen, called Pensioners or Speares, like as they were in the first yeece of the king, unto whom was assigned the summe of fiftie poundes the peere yeerlie, for the mayntenance of the myselfes, and euery man two horses, or one horse and a gelding of seruice.

Pensioners appointed.

The third of Januarie, was the Ladie Anne of Cleue receyued at Blackheath, and brought to Greenwich with great triumph: and the first daie of the same moneth shee was married to King Henrie.

1540  
K. H. married  
ladie Anne of  
Cleue.

After Christmasse, the priory Church of Saint Marie Quere in Southwarke, was purchased of the king by the inhabitantes of the Bozrobie, doctor Gardener Bishoppe of Winchester putting to his helping hand: they made thereof a parish church, in place of two small parish churches, the one of Mary Magdalene, in the said priory church, the other of St. Margaret on the hill.

S. Mary Quere made a parish Church.

The twelfth of March, Henrie Bowcher Earle of Essex, rying a young horse, was cast, and brake his necke, at his manour in Essex. Hee was the eldest Earle in England.

Earle of Essex deceased.

The nineteenth of March, John Vere Earle of Ormonde, high Chamberlaine of England, deceased at his manour of Hedingham in Essex.

Earle of Ormonde deceased.

The

Pricks at Ca.  
lets executed.

Cromwel earle  
of Essex.

Subsidy and  
fourth fifteens.  
Hospital of S.  
John of Jeru-  
salem in Eng-  
land dissolved

The tenth of Aprill, Sir William Peterfon Pryest, late commissarie of Calais, and Sir William Richardson Pryest of Saint Maries in Calais, were both there bygone, hanged, and quartered, in the Market place for the suprema-  
cie.

The 18. of Aprill, Sir T. Cromwell L. Pryue Seale, was created earle of Essex, and high chamberlaine of England, and his sonne Gregory was made lord Cromwell.

In a parliament which beganne the 18. of Aprill, was granted to the king a subsidy of 2 s. the pound lands, and 12 d. goods, and fourte fifteens towards the kings great charges in building of blockhouses. Moreover the copozation of the knights of the shires, or knights of S. John of Jerusalem in England and Ireland, was utterly dissolved and made void, the king his heires and successors, to have and enjoy all the mansion house, church, and all other edifices, buildings, and gardens to the same belonging, nere to the city of London, called the house of S. John of Jerusalem in England: and also the hospital, church and house of hospital in Ireland, with all castles, honours, manors, meares, landes, tenementes, rentes, reuerfions, seruices, Woods, meadowes, pastures, parkes, warrens, &c. in England and Ireland, with all the goods, cattailes, &c. Wil. Weston knight Pryor of the said hospital of S. John of Jerusalem in England, during his life to have an annuall rent of 1000. pounds, and such reasonable portion of the goods and cattailes of the saide house as the king shall appoint him. John Raufon knight Pryor of S. John of Jerusalem in Ireland, 500. marks, with a reasonable portion of goods. Clement West 200. l. T. Pemberton 80. l. G. Ruffel 100. l. G. Ailmar 100. l. John Sutton 200. l. E. Bellengam 100. l. E. Browne 50. l. E. Hufe 100. marks, Ambrose Caue 100. marks, William Tirell 30. pound, John Raufon 200. markes, A. Rogars, Oswald Maslingberd, and other 8. each of them, 10. pound yerelie, with portion of the goods as the king should limite, so that the pensions appointed to the saide knights and brethren amounted to 2870. pound the yere out of the lands to that hospitall appertaining, &c.

Ann. reg. 32.

The 24. of Aprill, Tho. L. Audley, L. chancelor of England, and Sir Anthony Browne of the L. horse were made knights of the garter.

Anabaptists  
byent.

The 29. of Aprill one named Maundeuel, another named Colens, and one other were examined in S. Margarets church, and were condemned for anabaptists, and were on the 3. of May byent in the high way beyond Southwarke towards Fleetenton.

Taking of cha-  
llengers.

On Maie daie, was a great triumph of Jousting at Westminster, which Jousts had ben proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spaine, for all commers that woulde, against the challengers of Englands, which were Sir John Dudley, Sir Thomas Seymer, Sir Thomas Poininges, Sir George Carewe knights: Anthony Kingston, and Richard Cromwel esquites, which said challengers came into the listes that daie richly appareled, and their horses trapped all in white velvet, with certaine knights & gentlemen ryding afore them, apperelled all in white velvet, & white farfenet, and all their seruants in tynne doublets, and hosen cut after the Burgonian fashion: and there came to iust

against them the said day of defendants, 46. the earle of Surrey being the foremost, L. Wil. Heiward, L. Clinton, and L. Cromwell son and heire to Th. Cromwell earle of Essex, and chamberlaine of Englands, with other, which were all richly appareled. And that daie Sir John Dudley was overthrowen in the field by mischance of his horse, by one Maister Brene defendant, neuer the lesse he brake diuers speares valiantly after that: and after the said iusts were don, the saide challengers rode to Durham place, where they kept open household, and feasted the king and quene, with hir ladies, and all the court.

The 2. of May Anthony Kingston and Ric. Cromwell were made knightes at the said place.

The 3. of May, the said challengers did Tourney on horseback with swordes, against them came 29. defendants: Sir John Dudley and the earle of Surrey running first, which the first course lost both ther gauntlets, and that day Sir Ric. Cromwell overthrowe to W. Palmer in the field off his horse, to the great hono: of the challengers.

The first of Maie, the sayde Challengers fought on foote at the Barriers, and agaynst them came thirte Defendants, which fought valiantly, but Sir Richard Cromwell overthrowe that daie at the Barriers, Maister Culpeper in the fiele: and the first of Maie the sayde Challengers brake by their household.

In the which time of their house-keeping, they had not only feasted the king, quene, ladies, and the whole court as is aforesaid, but also on the Wednesday in the Rogation weeke, they feasted all the knights and burgeses of the common house in the parliament: and on the morrowe after they had the Maie of London, the aldermen, and all their wiues to dinner, and on the Friday they brake up, as is aforesaid.

The 7. of May Sir W. Weston knight, L. Pryor of S. John of Jerusalem with out Smithfield died, and neuer receiued any part of his pension, and the king toke all the lands that belonged to that house, and to that order, into his hands, to the augmentation of his crown: and gaue to euery of the challengers aboue witten, for a reward of their ballantnes 100. marks, and a house to dwel in of peryle revenues out of the said lands for euer.

The 26. of May, was sent to the tower doctor Wilson, and doctor Sampson bishop of Chichester, for releuing certayne prisoners which had denied to subscribe to the kings supremae: for the same offence Richard Farmer Crocor of London, a rich and wealthy citizen, was committed to the marshalsea, and after arraigned and attainted in the premunire, and lost all his goods, his wife and children thrust out of doores. Also the keeper of Fleetgate was sent to the marshalsea, for giuing liberty to doctor Powell and doctor Abell his prisoners to go vnder baile.

Richard Far-  
mer in the pre-  
munire.

The 9. of Iuly, T. L. Cromwell earle of Essex being in the counsell chamber, was suddenly apprehended, and committed to the tower of London. The 19. he was attainted by parliament, of heresie and high treason, as appereth by the same at taindo: which I haue seene and read, but forbeare to set downe the same being long.

On the 28. of July, the said Thomas Cromwell was brought to the scaffold on the tower hill, where he spake these words (as was then noted) I am come hither to die, and not to purge my selfe, as may happen some thinke I will, for if I should so doe, I were a very wretch and miser. I am by the law condemned to die, and I thanke my Lord God that hath appointed me this death for mine offences: for sithence the time that I came to piers of discretion, I have liued a sinner, and offended my Lord God, for the which I aske him heartilie forgiveness. And it is not vnknewe to many of you, that I have ben a great traoueller in the world, and being but of a base degre was called to high estate, and sithen the time I came the reuinto, I have offended my prince, for the which I aske him hartily forgiveness, and beseech you al to pray to God with me, that he will forgive me. O father for: giue me, O sonne forgive me, O holy ghost forgive me, O thre persons in one God forgive me. And now I pray you that be here to beare me record, I die in the catholike faith, not doubting in any article of my faith, no no: doubting in any sacrament of the church. Many haue slandered me, and reported that I haue bene a bearer of such as haue maintained euill opinions, which is untrue: but I confesse, that like as God by his holy spirit both instruct vs in the truth, so the diuel is readie to seduce vs, and I haue bene seduced: but beare me witness that I die in the catholike faith of the holy church, and I hartily desire you to pray for the kings grace, that hee may long liue with you in health and prosperitie, and after him that his sonne prince Edward that goodly empe may long reigne ouer you. And once againe I desire you to pray for me, that so long as life remaineth in this flesh, I waue nothing in my faith. And then made he his prayer which was long, and after committed his soule to the hands of God, and so laid him downe, and patiently suffered the strokes of the axe, by the hands of him who lawfully performed his office. At the same time also with the said earle was beheaded the lord Hungerford of Hertsbery, who at the houre of his death seemed so vnguyet, that many iudged him rather frenzie than other wise: he suffered (as it was said) for buggerie.

Thomas Cromwell (as before is shewed) was attainted by parliament, but neuer came to answer. He was borne in Putney a village in Surrey by the Thames side, about 4. miles west from London, and was son to a black smith (in his latter daies a buyer) after whose decease, his mother was married to a sherman in London. This Thomas notwithstanding the baseness of his birth, through a singular excellency of wit, toynd with industrious diligence of mind, grew to such a sufficient ripenes of vnderstanding and skill in ordering of waightie affaires, that he was thought apt and fit to any comth of office wherunto he should be admitted, which being aperceined of the cardinal Wolsey, he took him into seruice, & making him his solicitor, imployed him about businesse of great importance, wherein hee acquitted himselfe with such vertueritie, as answered alwaies the credite to him committed. At the fall of the cardinal he got him to the court, saying he would make or marre, as before ye haue heard: where, being once aduanced into the kings seruice, he behauid himselfe so aduisedly in matters which he took in hand, that in short time

Thomas lord  
Cromwell be-  
headed.

time he rose to the greatest authoritie that might be in this realme, vnder the maiestie of the king, wherein peradventure forgetting the fall of his late master cardinal Wolley (a notable spectacle) he fell himselfe, as ye haue heard.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. day of June, the k. caused the queene to remoue to Richmond, perswading it should be more for her health & pleasure, by reason of the cleere and open aire there. But on the 6. of July, certaine lords came downe into the netter house of the parliament, and expressely declared causes, for the which the marriage was not to be taken lawfull: and in conclusion, the matter was by the conuocation clerely determined, that the king might lawfully marry where he would, and so might she: and thus were they clerely diuorced. And by the parliament it was enacted, that she should be taken no more for Quene, but called the lady Anne of Cleue.

This yere the lord Leonard Gray brother to Thomas marques Dorset, being the kings lieutenant in Ireland, was trauelled home, and vpon his coming to London, was sent to the tower.

The 30. of July were hanged from the tower of London to west Smithfeld Robert Barnes doctor of diuinity, T. Gerard parson of Dunplaine, and William Ierom bicar of Stepeneth, bachelors in diuinity: also Edward Powell, Thomas Able, and Richard Fetherstone all thre doctors. The first thre were drawn to a stake & there burned. The other thre were drawn to a gallows, and there hanged, headed and quartered. The thre first as appeareth in their attainders, were executed for diuers heresies. The last thre for treason, as in their attainders was mentioned, to wit, for denying the kings supremacie, and affirming his marriage with queene Katherine to be good: of the which argument doctor Powell wrote a booke which was printed in quarto, and I haue seene it.

The 4. of August, Thomas Emplon sometime a monke of Welfminster, which had bene prisoner in Newgate more than thre yeres, was brought before the Iustices of goale deliuerie at Newgate, and for that he would not aske the king pardon for denying his supremacie, nor be sworn the reto, his monkes cole was plucked from his backe, and his body repled till the king were informed of his obstinacie. The same 4. of August were drawn to Newgate 6. persons, and one led betwixt twaine, to wit, Laurence Cooke prie of Dancaister, William Home a lay brother of the Charterhouse of London, Giles Home gentleman, Clement Phillip gentleman of Caleis, and seruant to the lord Lisle, Edmond Bromholme prie, chaplaine to the said lord Lisle, Darby Gening, Robert Bird, all hanged and quartered, and had bene attainted by parliament, for deniall of the kings supremacie.

The eight of August, Ladie Katherine Howard daughter to Edmond lord Howard, next to the duke of Norfolk, was shewed openly as Quene at Hampton court.

The latter end of this sommer, was vniuersally through this realme great death by a strange kinde of ague and flure, with some pestilence: in which season was such a drought, that wells and small riuers were dried vp, so that much cattel died for lacke of water.

King Henry di-  
uorced from  
lady Anne of  
Cleue.  
Lord Leonard  
Gray sent to  
the tower.

Size Bibles,  
three burnt,  
and three hanged.

Seauen per-  
sons executed.

Henry mar-  
ried.

Drye sommer.

The twentieth two of December, Ralph Egerton servant to the lord Audley lord chancellor, and Thomas Harman servant to master Fighwood, were executed: the one for counterfeiting the kings seale in leade, where with they had sealed divers Warrants counterfeited and antedated, making strangers denisons, under the names of divers clerks of the chancery: the other for limiting them. One Tuckfield being of their faction, robbed the lord Audleys chappell, of the chalice, pyre, basons and candlesticks of silver, and fled, who being afterwards apprehended at Caleis, whith to wone he would haue betrayed, hee betide himselfe with a bag.

In Aprill, certaine persons beganne a new rebellion in Poweshyre, which were shortly after taken, and put to execution in blactes places: of which, Leigh a gentleman, Tawfall a clothier, and Thornton a peoman, were put to death at London: Sir Iohn Neuill knight, a ten persons or mo were put to death at Powke.

The 27. of Maie, Margaret countesse of Salisburie, sometime daughter and heire to George Duke of Clarence, wife to sir Richard Poole knight, and mother to cardinal Poole, was beheaded in the towre of London, being neuer arraigned nor tried before, but condemned by act of parliament.

The 9. of June, Dampont and Chapman, two of the kings gard, were hanged at Orenetwich for robbery.

The tenth of June, Sir Edmond Knevet knight of Northfolke, was arraigned before the kings Iustices (sitting in the great Hall at Orenetwich master Gage comptroller) of the kings household, master Suthwell, sir Anthonie Browne, sir Anthony Winkfield, spaißer Witley, and Edmonde Pechem confessor of the kings household, for striking of one spaißer Clerc of Northfolke, servant with the Earle of Surrey, within the kings house in the Kenise Court. There was first chosen to go upon the said Edmond a quest of gentlemen, and a quest of peomen, to inquire of the false stripe, by the which inquiry, he was founde guiltie, and had iudgement to lose his right hande: whereupon was called to do the execution, first the sergeant chirurgion, with his instruments appertaining to his office: the sergeant of the Wardpade with the mallet and a Blocke, whereupon the hande shoulde lie: the master cooke for the king with the knife: the Sergeant of the larder to set the knife right on the soyl: the Sergeant farrier with his searing pyons to seare the Veines: the Sergeant of the powderie with a Cocke, which cocke shoulde haue his head smitten off upon the same blocke, and with the same knife: the peoman of the chandry with seare clothes: the peomen of the scullery with a pan of fire to heat the pyons: a chafer of water to cole the ends of the irons: and two fourmes for all officers to set their stufte on: the sergeant of the seller with wine, ale, and beere: the peomen of the etoyie in the sergeantes stede who was absent, with basons, etoyes, & toweles. Thus a curty man in his office ready to do the execution, there was called forth Sir William Pickering knight marshall, to bring in the said Edmond Knevet, and then he was brought to the bar, the chiefe iustice declared to him his trespassse, and the said Knevet confessing himselfe to bee guiltie, humbly submitted him to the kings mercy: for this offence he was not onely

judged

judged to lose his hand, but also his bodie to remaine in prison, and his landes and goods at the kings pleasure. Then the false Sir Edmond Knevet desired that the king of his benigne grace, would pardon him of his right hande, and take the left: for (quoth he) if my right hande bee spared, I maye hereafter do such good seruice to his grace, as shall please him to appoint. At this submission and request, the Iustices forthwith informed the king, who of his goodnes, considering the gentle heart of the said Edmond, and the good report of lordes and ladies, granted him pardon, that he shoulde lose neither hande, lande, nor goods, but shoulde go free at liberty.

The lord Leonard Gray being indicted of certaine pointes of treason by him committed, as was alledged against him, during the season that hee was the Kings Lieutenant in Ireland, to witte, for delivering his nephew to Geralde Fitz Gerarde, Brother to Thomas Fitz Gerarde before executed, and also for that hee caused certaine Irishmen to invade the lawes of the Kings friends, whom hee favoured not: The 25. of June he was arraigned at Westminster in the Kings Bench, and appointed to bee tried by Knights, because hee was a lord by name, and no lord of the parliament, but hee discharged the jury, and confessed the indictment, whereupon he had iudgement, and on the 28. of June being St. Peters euen, he was beheaded at towre hill, where he ended his life very quietly and godly.

This noble man, as he was come of high lineage, so was he a right valiant and hardy personage, hauing in his time don his prince and country good seruice, both in Ireland, France, and other places, greatly to his commendation, although now his hap was thus to lose his head.

The same day that he suffered, there were executed at Saint Thomas Wall, twinges three gentlemen, John Mantel, John Frouds, and George Roidon. They died for a murder committed in Souther (as their indictment imposed) in companie of Thomas Fines lord Dacres of the South. The truth whereof was thus. The said lord Dacres through the lewd persuasion of some of them, as hath bene reported, meaning to hunt in the parke of Nicholas Pelham esquire at Loughton in the same Countie of Souther, being accompanied with the said Mantell, Frouds, and Roidon, John Cheincy, and Thomas Illey gentlemen, and Richard Middleton and Iohn Goldwel peomen, passed from his house of Hurstmanecoy the last of Aprill in the night season, toward the same parke, where they intended to go to hunt, and coming into a place called Wikehay in the parish of Hillingley, they founde one Iohn Busbrig, James Busbrig, and Richard Somener, standing there together; and as it fell out through quarrelling, there ensued a fraye betwixt the false lord Dacre: and his company on the one part, and the false Iohn and James Busbrig and Richard Somener on the other, insomuch that the said Iohn Busbrig received such hurt, that hee died thereof the seconde of Maie next ensuing; whereupon as well the false lord Dacres, as those that were there with him, and diuers other likewile that were appointed to go another waie to mete them at the false parke, were indicted of murder, and the threen and twentieth of June the lord Dacres himselfe was arraigned before the lord Audley of Maloien, then lord chancellor, sitting

The lord Leonard Gray beheaded.

l. Dacres of the South arraigned.

1541  
Ann. reg. 33.  
A new common  
tion in Powke-  
shire.

Countesse of  
Salisbury be-  
headed.

Dampont and  
Chapman be-  
hed.  
Sir Edmond  
Knevet arraign-  
ed for striking  
in the court.

that date as high Steward of England, with other pères of the realme about him, who then and there condemned the said L. Dacres to die for that transgression: and afterwards the nine and twentieth of June being Saint Peters daie, at cleuen of the clocke in the forenoone, the Sheriffs of London accordingly as they were appointed, were readie at the tower to haue receiued the sayd prisoner, and him to haue led to execution on the Tower hill. But as the prisoner should come forth of the Tower, one Heire a gentleman of the lord chancerys house came, and in the kings name commanded to stay the execution til two of the clock in the afternoone, which caused manie to thinke that the king would haue granted his pardon. But neuertheless at three of the clock in the same afternoone hee was brought forth of the Tower, and deliuered to the Sheriffs, who led him on foote betwixt them vnto Tyborne, where he died. His bodie was buried in the church of Saint Sepulchers: he was not past foure and thentie yeres of age when he came thus through great mishap to his end; for whom manie fore lamented, and likewise for the other three gentlemen, Mawtely, Frouds, and Roidon, but chiefly for the said young lord beeing a right towerly gentleman.

The 1. of July, a Welchman a minstrel, was hanged and quartered for singing of songs, which were interpreted to be prophesying against the K. Sir David Genson knight of the Rhodes was drawn through Southwarke to St. Thomas of Watrings, and there executed for the supremacy.

In the month of August, the K. took his progresse toward York, and passed through Lincolnshire, where was made vnto him an humble submission, &c. About this time Westminster and Bishopp were made bishopps.

On Christmas euen at seven of the clock at night, began a great fire in the house sometime named Elsing spittle, then the house of Sir John Williams G. of the kings iewels, where manie of those iewels were byent, and more imbezelled, as was thought.

The Lady Katherine Howarde, whom the King hadde married, for her brashesse being committed with Thomas Culpepper and Francis Derham, was by Parliamente attainted; Culpepper and Derham were put to death at Tyborne the tenth daie of December. Culpepper was headed, his bodie buried at Saint Sepulchers Church by Newgate; Derham was quartered, &c.

The 23. of January the K. was proclaimed king of Ireland.

The 12. of February, the lady Howard, otherwise called M. Katherine, and the lady Jane Rochford for being of her counsell with Th. Culpepper, were both beheaded within the tower of London.

In the beginning of the moneth of March died Arthur Plantagenet viscount Lisle, Bastarde sonne to Edward the fourth, in the Tower of London vntainted, when he should haue been deliuered and set at libertie (as it was said) the occasion of his trouble in the tower, rose vpon suspicion that he should be puaie to a practice which some of his men (as Philpot and Brindholme creew the last yere) had consented vnto, for the betraying of Calais to the French whilste he was the kings Lieutenant there. But after that by due tryall it

was

was knowne that he was nothing guiltie to the matter, the king appointed Sir Thomas Wriothesley his secretarie to go vnto him, and to deliuer vnto him a ring with a rich diamond for a token from him, and to tell him to be of good cheere, sith it was manifestly proued that hee was void of all offence, for hee should thinke that he would make account of him, as of his most true and faithfull kinsman, and not onelie restore him to his former libertie, but otherwise be readie to pleasure him in what he could. After secretarie set forth this message with such effectfull wordes, as he was an eloquent man, that Lorde Lisle took such an immoderate iote thereof, that his heart beeing oppressed therewith, hee died the night following through too much reioicing (as was said.) After whose decease, to witt, the 12. of March, Sir John Dudley was at Westminster created Viscount Lisle, by the right of his mother lady Elizabeth sister and heire to Sir John Gray Viscount Lisle, who was late wife to Arthur Plantagenet viscount Lisle late deceased, as ye haue heard.

The 17. of March, Margaret Daue a maid, was boiled in Smithfield for poisoning of three households that she had dwelled in.

The 28. of March, the Parliament sitting, George Feres Burgess for the town of Blimnouth, was arrested in London vpon a condemnation, whereupon the sergeant at armes of the common house was sent to the counter in Westminster to fetch him, but the clerks would not deliuer him, till the Sheriffs came themselves, who in the end deliuered him: notwithstanding, this matter was so taken in the common house, that the Sheriffs, the clerks, and shue officers, with the party plaintiff, were sent to the Tower, and there late two daies, and were then deliuered by the speaker and common house: the Sheriffs were deliuered from all charges, except twenty pound for their fees.

In May the king took a loan of money, of all such as were valued two; fifty pound or upward in the booke of subsidie.

In the moneth of August, James Earle of Desmond in Ireland, came and submitted himselfe to the king, and so returned.

The first of October, the great Orcale of Ireland was created Earle of Ulster, and his base son Mathew Orcale baron of Donganow, for Shane Orcale the only son of his body lawfully begotten was then little chierie.

The duke of Norfolk entred Scotland the 21. of October, burning and wasting all the marches, and there tarried without any battell proffered by the Scots, vntill the midst of November.

After the departure of our army from Scotland, the king of Scots made a raide into England, and did much harme, but at the last Sir Thomas Wharton and Sir William Musgraue with a few of the borderers, met the Scottes, where they being in number 15000. were ouerthrowne: in which conflict was taken the earle of Cassels and Glencarne, the Lord Maxwell admiral of Scotland and Warden of the West marches, the Lord Flemming, the Lord Somerwell, the Lord Oliphant, the Lord Gray, the Lord Oliuar Sioclere, &c. more then two hundred of the better sort, and more then 8. hundred of meaner persons. They took also foure and twenty peeces of ordnance, 4. cartes laden with speares, and ten pauillions. The king of Scots took such grieue and inward thought

Dill 3:

for

Lorde Lisle died  
in the tower.

A maid boiled  
in Smithfield.

The Sheriffs of  
London sent to  
the tower.

Ann. reg. 34.

The earle of  
Desmond.

The great Or-  
cale.

Duke of Norfolk  
sometime entred  
Scotland.

Scots overthrowne.

Progresse to  
York.

Westminster  
and Bishopp  
made bishopps.  
Fire at Elsing  
spittle.

1542

They king  
of Ireland,  
M. Katherine  
beheaded.



for this overthrow, and also for the murder of an English herald that was slain at Dunbar by one Lech an English man (the which for the rebellion in Lincolnshire was fled into Scotland) that he fell into a fever, and died. Of the prisoners before named 21. of them were brought up to London, and on the 19. of December entered the cite at Bishops gate, and so were conveyed to the tower, where they remained the space of two daies, and upon S. Thomas day the apostle, they were conveyed to Westminster, sir John Gage Constable of the tower riding before them, and the lieutenant of the tower riding behinde them, they rode two and two together, and eight of them being earles and lordes had new gownes of blacke damaske furred with blacke conies, coates of blacke velvet, and doublets of fatten, &c. all newe of the kings charge. Comming thus before the kings counsell in the starre chamber, the lord chancellor declared to them their untrusty and unkindnesse, for the which the king had cause of warre against them, as well as for the deniall of their homages, and also for their traitorous insallions made into his realm without defiance, and also for keeping his subiects prisoners without redemption, contrarie to the lawes of the marches, for the which doings, God as they might well perceive had scourged them. Wholbeit the king more regarding his honor than his princely power, was content to shew them kindnes for unkindnes, right for wrong. And although he might keepe them in dreight prison, yet he was content that they shoulde haue libertie to be with the nobles of the realme in their houses, and so according to their estates they were appointed to dukes, earles, bishops, knights and gentlemen.

The 22. of December came tidings of the king of Scots death. And upon Saint Johns daie in Christmas weeke, the foresaid lords of Scotland were brought to the court then at Greenwich, where they had great chere, and were lodged within the court. And here it is to be considered, that where the king of Scots had left no issue but only one daughter: the king and his counsell perceiving a meane now offered, whereby without warre the two realms might be united: the Scottish lords having first made the motion themselves for a marriage to be had betwixt Prince Edward and their young Quene, the king required them to helpe to the furtheraunce of that matter, which might be such benefite to themselves and their country. This they promised faithfullie to doe, and as well by themselves, as their friends, to bring the same to effect, so much as the king could require, whereupon the king was not onely contented to release them home, but also highly rewarded them with rich gifts.

The 30. of December, they departed from the court, and the morrow after eight of them dined with sir John Coats then lord mayor of London, and the rest with the sheriffes, and had very great chere. On New-yeres day they departed from London homewards toward Scotland, and by the way dined at Cusfield there to behold the prince, whom they highly commended, for the great liking they had of his person, from thence they kept on their journey till they came to the north partes, where they found the Duke of Suffolke the kings lieutenant there, and with him they remained till such pledges were come forth

forth of Scotland, as it was covenanted they shoulde leaue behinde them. The Duke after he had receiued the hostages, permitted them to depart, and so they returned into Scotland, where they were joyfully welcomed home, to their friends. With them went the earle of Angus, who had bene banished Scotland, and having remained here in England a long time, receiued of the kings fee a thousand markes by yere: and likewise his brother sir George Dowglas, who had 500. markes by yere, likewise of the kings gift. They were now both restored home into their country, and that was (as was saide) by the last kings will. The said earle of Angus, and diuers of the lords that had bin prisoners here in England, were made of the privy counsell of the realme, by the earle of Arraine, that was chosen gouernour to the young quene, and of the realme, as next heire apparent. Notwithstanding that, the archbishop of S. Andrewes Cardinall, enemy to the K. of England, had a will (soged as some haue saide) compelling how the king had made him gouernour, as well of the quene as realme, whereupon the said earle, according to his right, as he pretended, with the helpe of his friends took upon him the authoritie of gouernour, and put the said cardinall in prison, and deliuered sir Robert Bowes, and the other English prisoners, by their bondes, according to the custome of the marches.

The 9. of February, a proclamation was made, whereby the people were licenced to eate white meates in Lent, but dreightly forbidden the eating of flesh. Whereupon, shortly after the earle of Surrey with diuers lords, knights, and gentlemen, were imprisoned for eating of flesh in the same Lent, contrary to the said proclamation.

The 8. of May one Lech sometime Baylie of Louth, who had killed Somerset one of our heraults of armes at Dunbar in Scotland, was dyalune to Tybzone and there hanged and quartered. And the 12. of June, Edward Lech his brother, and with him a priest for the same fact, were likewise executed at Tybzone.

King Henry minding wars with France, made great preparation and provision of munitions and artillery as also of brasse ordnance, amongst the which, at that time, by one Peter Bawd a French man borne, a gunfounder, or maker of great ordnance, and one other Allen, called Peter van Collen, a gunsmith, both the kings seed men, who conferring together, deuised and caused to be made, certaine moster pieces, being at the month, from 11. inches unto 19. inches wide, for the vse thereof, the said Peter, and Peter caused to be made certaine hollow shot of cast yron, to be stuffed with fierworke, or wilde fire, whereof the bigger sort for the same, had length of yron to receiue a match to carry fire kindled, that the fierworke might be set on fire, for to breake in small pieces the same hollow shot, whereof the smallest piece hitting any man would kill or spoile him. And after the kings return from Walen, the said Peter Bawd by himselfe, in the first of Edw. the first did also make certaine ordnance of cast yron, of diuers sorts, and formes, as falconets, falcons, spinions, sakers, and other pieces: unto this Bawd, John Iohnson his covenant seruant, serving his master, did likewise make and cast yron

White meate  
licenced to be  
eaten in Lent.

An. reg. 35.  
Somerset an  
herault killed.

Moster pieces  
cast for shooting  
of wilde fire.  
R. Crockhay.

First moster  
pieces cast in the  
first of Edward  
the first.

Shooting of a  
match between  
prince Edward  
and the quene  
at Scots.



ordnance, cleaner and to better perfection, to the great use of this land: his sonne Th. Johnson is yet living, a speciall workeman, in the yere 1595. hee made 42. calf pieces of great ordnance of yron for the earle of Cumberland, Henry Canons weighing 6000. or 3. tunne the piece.

The 3. of June, the Obrine a lord in Ireland, and divers of the wilde Irish, submitted them to king Henry.

In July the said Obrine was created earle of Clawzicarde.

The 12. of July, king Henry married lady Katherine Par, late wife to the L. Latimer and sister to the Marques of Northampton at Hampton court, and then was the proclaimed queene.

This yere in a parliament holden at Westminster a subsidie was granted to the king to be paid in thre yeres, every Englishman being worth in goods 20.s. and upward to 5.l. paid 4.d. of every pound, from 5.l. to 10.l. 8.d. from 10.l. to 20.l. 16.d. from 20.l. and upward of every pound 2.s. strangers, as well denizens as other, being inhabitants, doubled this sum: and every stranger not being an inhabitant that was 16. yeres of age and upward paid 4.d. of every pole. And for lands, fees, and annuities, every one boine within the kings dominions paid 8.d. of the 1. from 20.s. to 5.l. and from 5.l. to 10.l. 16.d. from 10.l. to 20.l. 2.s. and from 20.l. upward 3.s. strangers still doubled the sum. The cleargie granted a subsidie of 6.s. the pound, to be paid of the benefices, and perpetuities in thre yeres, and every priest having but an annuall stipend, 6.s. 8.d. 10. as in the statute.

About the same time the king of England, and the emperor, sent Garter, and Toysonodor kings at armes, to demand the performance of certain articles of the French k. which if he denied, they were commanded then to desie him, but he would not suffer them to come within his Lande, and so they returned. Therefore the k. of Engl. caused the demands to be declared unto the French ambassadoz at Westminster. And in the month of July the k. sent over 6000. men, under the leading of sir John Wallope, accompanied with sir T. Seimer marshall, sir Robert Bowes treasurer, sir Richard Cromwell capitaine of the horsemen, and sir George Carew his lieutenant. There were likewise sir T. Palmer, sir John Rainsforth, sir John Scint-John, and sir John Gascoigne knights, that were capitaines of the footemen: they were appointed to loime with the emperors powder, and so to make war into France: they departed from Caleis the 22. of July. The 3. of August open war was proclaimed betwixt the emperor and the k. of England on the one party, and the French king on the other party, as enemy mortall to them both, and to all other christian kings as he that had confedered himselfe with the Turke.

The armie that was sent over under the leading of Sir John Wallope, passed forth from the marches of Caleis, and keeping alongst betwixt the borders of the French and Burgonians poles, and continuing, and loyning with the emperors forces, Spaniards, Mallons, and Dutch, came at length byfoze Landarsey, a towne lately fortified by the French, within the borders of the emperors dominions, to the which they laid strong siege. At length the emperor having dispatched his wars against the D. of Cleue, who had submitted himselfe

himselfe unto him, came now to the siege of Landarsey, with a mighty power of sundry nations, so that the towne was sore constrained, and in danger to have been lost, if at that present the French king had not likewise with him an huge armie of French men, Swissers, Mantiquits, Italians, and other, came to the rescue, pitching downe his campe, making countenance as if hee ment presently to have given battaile: and verilie it was thought that two such powers as were there at that time so nere together should never have departed without battaile. The Emperour thinking surely to fight, raised his siege, and drew his people into the felds. The Frenchmen thereby espying their advantage, put as well fresh men as veterans, and all kinde of munition necessary into the towne, and in the meane while kept the Emperours men occupied with hottie skirmishes: but now after the towne was thus relieved, which thing the French king onely wished to accomplish, the next daie when the emperor was ready with his army inranged in battailes to have fought with his adversaries, the French king put his armie also in order, but having no minde to come forward, he trilled forth the daie, and in the night following secretly departed with as much haste as possible. When the next morning had discovered the French mens flight, it was no neede to bid divers troupes of the Emperours armie to hie after them: but some made to much haste, for the French king suspecting what would ensue, appointed his eldest sonne Henry the Dolphin, to remaine behinde with the reterward, accompanied with divers noble captaines, which ordered their people in their retire with such swiftnesse, that such of the Emperours campe as adventured over rashly, fell within danger of such ambushes as were by the waie late in places of advantage: and so divers were taken, as sir George Carew, sir Thomas Palmer knight, portier of Caleis, Edward Bellengham and others. Nevertheless a great number of the French men were snappd by, slain, and taken in no small numbers by their enemies that followed them. And this was after Alvalontide, so that nowe by reason the winter was farre entered, the Emperour byake by his campe, and licensed the most part of the people to depart home.

In the meane space, to wit on the 28. of July, Anthony Parson, Robert Testwood, and Henry Filmer, were bzent at Windsor. And a great drath of pestilence was at London, and therefore Michaelmas terme was adourned to Saint Albons.

About Alhalontide, a road was made into Scotland, by the garison there, and Ralph Euars with the men of Tindall and Kilsdale, bzent in the middle marches of Scotland, Thesford with 15. other towne, killed 18. Scots, and toke 300. prisoners, 1500. cattell, and 4000. shepe: Brian Leychener bzent 18. towne, killed 13. Scots, toke 200. prisoners, 600. cattell, 2000. shepe, and 300. geldings. The west borderers with the helpe of the Scots of Lidsdale, bzent 21. towne, killed 8. Scots, toke 160. prisoners, 500. cattell, 1000. shepe, and 100. geldings, sum of the towne bzent, 55. Scots killed 38. prisoners taken 560. cattell taken 3500. geldings 800. shepe 7000. and much household stuffe.

Henry married lady Katherine Par.

Great subsidie.

Going to Landarsey.

Open warre proclaimed.

Terme kept at S. Albons.

A road made into Scotland.

The 18. of December, the archbishop of Canturburies palace at Canturbury was burnt, and therein was burnt his brother in law, and other men.

L. Parre made  
earle of Essex.

The twenty foure of December, William Lord Parre brother to the queen, who had married the daughter and heire of Henry Boucher Earle of Essex, at Hampton court was created earle of Essex, and sir William Parre knight, kni-  
ble to them both, was made Lord Parre of Horton, and Chamberlayne to the  
Quene. And on Newe-yeres daie Sir Thomas Wriothesley, the Kinges  
secretarie, was made Lord Wriothesley of Richibild.

1544.  
Foure eclipses.

This yere chanced foure eclipses, one of the Sunne the fourteenth of Ja-  
nuarie, and thre of the spoone at sundie times.

In the beginning of Lent, Lord Edward Seymer earle of Hertford, was  
made Lieutenant of the North, and sent thither with an armie.

Germaine  
Gardner and  
other executed.

The seaventy of March, Germaine Gardner, and Larke parson of Chelsea  
were executed at Epborne, for denying the Kinges supremacie. With them  
was executed, for other offences, one Singleton. And shortly after, Ashbey  
was likewise executed for the supremacie.

The twelfth of March, Sir John Dudley Lord Lisle, Lord Admirall, with  
a great Flaue, departed towarde Scotland.

House blowne  
up with gun-  
powder.

The fourth of Aprill a Gunpowder house, called the Blacke Swanne  
in East Smithfelde, was blowne vpp, and therein burned five men, a boie,  
and a woman.

Ann. reg. 36.

On Maie euen, dyed Lord Thomas Audley Lord Chancellor of Eng-  
land. After whome succeeded Lord Thomas Wriothesley.

An army sent  
into Scotland.

The third of May, sir John Dudley Countess Lislehigh Admirall of Eng-  
land, arrived with his fleet of 200. saile in the frith of Scotlande, where he  
landed blunders of his men, and toke there blunders vessels. The 4. of May he lan-  
ded the residue of his men at Leth, and from thence marched forward in the  
great battayles, where of the sayde Lord Admirall ledde the Watward, the  
Earle of Shrewsburie the Kerward, and Edward Seymer Earle of Hert-  
ford Lieutenant Generall of the Battayles. Here they founde the Scottes  
to the number of sir thousand hoisemen, besides manie footemen ready to stop  
the ir passage, who at the first, made as they would haue set on the Watward,  
but after certaine shotte on both sides, they sodaynelie, leauing their artillery  
behinde them, fled towarde Edenborough, the foremost in fleeing was the earl  
dinall of Saint Andrewes, the Earle of Huntley gouernor, Murray and Both-  
well, and then the Englishmen entered the towne of Leth, where they found  
such riches, as they thought hadde not bene in anie towne of Scotland. The  
next daie our armie went towarde Edenborough; and when they approached  
nere, the Pronost of the towne with other profered to haue deliuered the  
same, vpon condition, that the people might departe with Bagge and Bag-  
gage, and the towne to bee safe from fire. Whereunto our Lieutenant an-  
swered, that hee was sent thither to take vengeance vpon them for their dete-  
nable falsehoode, and that vnlesse they would preelde vpp the towne simple  
without condition, and cause man, woman, and child to depart into the fields,  
submitting them to his pleasure, hee would put them to the sword, and their  
Colowe

Leth taken and  
spoiled.

Colowe to the fire. The Pronost answered, that it were better for them to  
stand to their defence, and so departed, and forthwith the Lord Lieutenant com-  
manded the Watward to march towarde the towne, which they did so contragandie  
with helpe of the English gunners, that then kept the Scotts from their ordi-  
nance, and so entred Caniegate, and there slew a great number of the Scotts, Edenborough  
burnt.  
and set fire on the Colowe, which continued three daies after burning. Shortly  
after came to the Lord Lieutenant by land, William Lord Earle warden  
of the East March of England, and gouernor of Warwicke, with his sonne sir  
Ralph Earle, and ioined themselues with the armie thus lying in Leth, where  
after their comming they did such exploitess, in riding and wasting the Coun-  
treyp, that within seuen miles euerie ware of Edenborough, they left few pla-  
ces, either pile, billage, or house vnbrent. And besides this, they brought great  
numbers of cattaille daplie into the armie, and not without much god stufte  
which the inhabitants of Edenborough had for safety of the same conuied out  
of the Colowe.

Lord Thurst.

The names of knights made at Leth, by the earle of Hertford generall, on  
the 11. of May: The lord Clinton, the lord Coniers, sir William Wroughton, sir  
T. Holcroft, sir Edward Dorell, sir John Luterell, sir Llenins, sir T. Waterton, sir  
Charles Howard, sir George Blunt, sir Peter Mewtas, sir Ed. Warner, sir Ralph  
Bulmer, sir Hugh Cholmeley, sir T. Lee, *alias* Dodo Lee, sir Richard Legh, sir  
Peter Legh, sir John Legh of Both, sir Laurence Smith, sir Wil. Vaucour, sir Ri-  
chard Shirborne, sir Ro. Stapleton, sir T. Holt, sir W. Deuenporte, sir Ralph Lice-  
ster, sir Humfrey Bradborne, sir T. Maluerie, sir Francis Hothorne, sir I. Masly,  
sir Leonard Beckwith, sir T. Cokayn, sir Peter Freshwell, sir Richard Egerton, sir  
Anthony Neuill, sir I. Neuill, sir W. Radcliffe, sir George Bowes, sir Brian Breres-  
ton, sir William Brereton, sir Roger Brereton, sir E. Waren, sir Bryan Leyton, sir  
Robert Woseley, sir Thomas Talbot, sir Hugh Calueley, sir Thomas Clerc, sir  
Richard Holland, sir T. Venobles, sir John Constable, sir Edmonde Trafford, sir  
John Atherton, sir Richard Cholmeley, sir Philip Egerton, sir Hugh Willough-  
by, sir Robert Constable, sir W. Woodhouse, sir Edmond Saugage, sir Tho-  
mas Gerard.

Earle of Hert-  
ford made  
knights at  
Leth.

The 13. of May the Englishmen brake down the pite of the haueu at Leth,  
and burnt euery dicke of it. This done, and hauing shipped their great artil-  
lery, and picked forth all such Scottish ships as were meet to serue, they toke  
vpon them to retorne home by land. Amongst other ships, they toke out of Le-  
th haueu, there were two of notable fairenes, the one called the Salamaunder,  
the other the Unicorn; the rest of the Scottish shippes beeing taken awaie  
together with their owne ships, were for the most part pestered with the spoile  
and boties of the souldiers and mariners.

The fiftenth of May the armie and fleet departed from Leth, both in one  
houre, the towne being set on fire, and burned to the ground. The english ar-  
my encamped that night at a place called Soton, frauen miles from Leth,  
where they burnt the castle, and spoiled the grounds about it. The same daie  
was Haddington burnt, with an house of Nunnes, and an house of Friers.  
The next night they encamped beside Dunbar, and in the morning burnt the  
Colowe, Leth burned.  
Haddington  
burnt.  
Dunbar burnt.

Towne, and marched forward, and on the eighteenth daie of May they entered into Berwicke, so ending their boiage.

About the same time the Earle of Lenior fledde out of Scotlande into the realme of England, where he was right gladlie receiued by king Henry, and shortly after he obtained in marriage the lady Mary Dowglas, niece to king Henry, and returned with a competent crewe of English men, but finding no such friendship amongst his countrymen as he looked for, he returned without achieving the enterprise which he had taken in hand.

Base money coined.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of May, proclamation was made for the enhaunting of gold to 48. s. and silver to foure shillings the ounce. Also the king caused to bee coined base monyes in great abundance, which was since that time, to wit, in the fift yeere of king Edward the first, called dolone, from twelue pence to nine pence, from nine pence to sixe pence: and in the seconde yeere of Quene Elizabeth called in to hir maiesties mints, and there refined.

Procession in English.

In the moneth of June, the Leticanie or Procession was set forth in English, with commendement by the king to be generallie blessed in euerie parish Church.

An armie into France.

The king tooke order for the leuying of a mightie Armie to passe ouer into France, according to the appointmets made with his confederate friends the Emperour, against the French king. There were therefore appointed three Battailles: The forewarde vnder the leading of the Duke of Norfolkke: the Battaille vnder the Duke of Suffolke, which also was counted the kings Battaille, because hee minded to bee present with the same in person, and the helerwarde was ledde by the Lord Russell, Lord Priuie Seale. Those of the forewarde vnder the Duke of Norfolkke, were apparelled in blew Coates garded with redde, and had rappes and hosen after the same fash, partie blew, and partie redde. The Battaille vnder the Duke of Suffolke in Coates, Cappes, and hosen in like manner, but the colours blew and yeallow. The Duke of Norfolkke, and the lord priuie Seale, accompanied with diuers other noble men, as the Earle of Surrey Marshall of the field, the Earle of Arundell, the Lord Grey of Wilton Lieutenant of Ham, the Lord Ferrers of Chartley, and Sir Richard Deuereux his sonne and heire, they brought with them a great number of Welchmen, Sir Thomas Cheney Lord Warden of the Portes, the lord Mountioy, Sir Francis Bryan knight, Sir Thomas Poyninge Capitaine of Gwines, and diuers other, passed ouer to Caleis about Whitsonde, and from thence forward to France, left Boloigne on their right hand, and keeping forwardes towards Spiterrell, lodged with an Armie which the Emperour hadde raised for that purpose, vnder the leading of the Countie of Buren, Admirall of the lowe Countreys, and so these Armies being vnited in one, came before Mutereil, and there laide Siege to the Towne, being well manned, and furnished with all things necessarie for defence, as well in munition as in bladaill, the chief Capitaine of which Towne, was Mounfirc de Biz, one of the Marshallles of France.

The

The Duke of Suffolke with the kings armie passed ouer, accompanied with the Earle of Arundell marshall of the field, the Lord Seint Iohn, and the Bishpope of Winchester, Sir Iohn Gage, comptroller of the kings house, Sir Anthonic Browne, Master of the kings horse, with diuers other Captaines, the which on the nineteenth of Iuly came before Boloigne, and encamped on the east side of the same Towne, aloft vpon the hill, and after remoued into a valley, where after many sharpe skirmishes, they first entered the base Towne, being lesse and forsaken by the inhabitants, which having set fire on their flying nagges, and other such baggage, vnder couert of the smoke, got them vp into the high Towne, before the English men coude syle them.

After this the old man, a tower standing without the towne for a direction to them that were to enter the haven, and now being kept by 16. souldiers, was yeilded up by them.

The Frenchmen within the towne, being dispoiled of these two places, yet spared not to shote off from their walls and bulwarks, doing what they could, and namely from the Castle, and greene bulwarke, they did much hurt to the Englishmen with their shotte.

The 14. of Iuly k. Henry in person, accompanied with diuers noble men, passed the Seas from Dover to Caleis, and on the 26. of Iuly encamped before Boloigne on the north side, within lesse then three quarters of a mile of the Towne, where he remained till the Towne was surrendered into his hands: the kings liuertie was red garded with yeallow. Besides the trenches which were cast and brought in manner round about the Towne, there was a mount raised vpon the east side, and diuers pieces of artillerie planted aloft the same, the which together with the moister pieces, sore annoyed them within, battered downe the Steple of our Ladie church. To conclude, the batterie was made in most forceable wise in three severall places, and the walls, towers, and castle were undermined, and the towne within so beaten with shotte out of the campe, and from the mount and trench, by the moister pieces, that there were verie few houses left whole therein. The towne thus standing in great distresse, there were 200. Frenchmen and Italians, which enterprised vnder the conduct of Ioncurio to enter the Towne in couert of the night, which exploit they so warily achieved, that by meanes of a piess that could speake the English tong, they passed by the scowlers, and through the watch, so as the most part of them were got ouer the trenches, ere it was knowne what they were: to the number of an hundred and twentie of them got into the towne, but the residue being intercepted, were either taken or slaine. At length when a piece of the castle was blowne vpper, and the breaches made as was thought reasonable, the assault was giuen by the admirall lord Dudley that was come thither by the sea; which he had scoured, after his returne out of Scotland. This assault was conragiously giuen, and also manfully defended, so that when 5. assailants had perished in what estate the breach stood, and what prouision they within had made for defence of their towne, which was great, they were called backe, and retired, but not without

Duke of Suffolke with a possession lay before Boloigne.

King Henry went to Boloigne.

Boloigne was taken.

lost.

losse on both sides, especially of them within: for during the assault, the great artillery did beate still upon them that presented themselves at the breaches to repulse the assailants, and so divers of their valiant captaines and brave soldiers were slaine at this assault: shortly after, the captaines within the towne, doubting to be effronces assaulted, and perceiving themselves in extreme danger to lose the towne by force, if they provided not the sooner, by rendering it, to save themselves: they sent forth two of their chiefe captaines, Mounſier Semblemount, and Mounſier de Veruine, gouverneur of the towne, his request was contented to deliver the towne to his grace, with condition that they might passe with bag and baggage, which request the king granted, and so the next day the duke of Suffolke rode into Boloigne, unto whom, as unto the king the keys of the towne were delivered, and in the afternoon departed all the Frenchmen. The number of all the men of war that were strong, and able to serve were of horse-men 67. of foot-men 1563. of hurt men 87. of women and children 1927. beside a great number of aged and sicke persons, not able to depart with the rest.

Boloigne yielded to Henry

Henry entered Boloigne.

The 25. of September, the king having the sword borne before him by the lord Marquesse Dorset, like a conqueror rode into Boloigne, and the trumpeters on the walls sounding. In the entering, there met him the duke of Suffolke, and delivered unto him the keys of the towne, and so he rode forth to his lodging that was prepared on the south side of the towne, two daies after the king rode about the towne, within the walls, and appointed that our Ladye church of Boloigne should be taken downe, and in place thereof a mount to bee made, for strengthening of the towne: finally, after that he had set things in order for the safe keeping of the town, he appointed sir John Dudley, Lord Lisle, high admiral of the seas, to be his deputy of the same towne, and then taking the seas, he returned into England, landing at Dover on the first of October.

The 9. of October in the night, the French men came unawares upon the Englishmen in base Boloigne, and slew of them a great number: howbeit, they were shortly after chased from thence, and the base towne holden after in good quiet.

Pillies taken.

This yere was taken by the kings shippes of the West countrey, and of the English coast the number of 300. French shippes and more, so that the Grey Friers Church in London was laide full of wine, the Austin Friers and Blacke Friers, were laid full of hearing, and other fish that was taken going into France.

A benevolence demanded.

1545

The king demanded a benevolence of all his subjects, spiritual and Temporal, towards his wars in France and Scotland.

And the twelfth of January the lord Chancellor, the duke of Suffolke, and other of the Kings Councell began to sit at Baynards Castle, where they first called before them the Palor and Aldermen, &c. And because Richard Read Alderman would not agree to pay as they set him, he was commanded upon a great paine to serve the king in his wars of Scotland, who departed from London the thre and twentieth of January, where he was taken prisoner,

and, &c. Also sir William Roche Alderman, for words of displeasure taken by the kings councell, was by them sent to the flate, where he remained till passion Sunday.

Sir William Roche sent to the flate.

The five and twentieth of January, there camped on the West side of Boloigne beyond the haven, an army of French to the number of foureteene thousand, where they lay ten daies, and the first of February, were put to flight, by the earle of Hertford, and sir John Dudley lord Admirall then being deputy of Boloigne.

The 13. of February, a plect was set on the pillorie in Cheape, and burnt in both chokes with the letters F. and A. and a paper on his head, wherein was written for false accusing, which judgement was given by the Lord Chancellor in the Star Chamber, a notable example of Justice: great cause have I to wish the like Justice had been ministered unto him, that after he had defrauded me of my twofold goods, sought to have deprived me of my life, by likewise accusing me of many articles (seaven score and odds) suborned witnesses (detected of perjury, burnt in the hand for felony, and such like) which all could prove neuer one article against me, before the Archbishop of Canterbury, and other her maiesties high commissioners, (as appeareth in their register) by whom I was answered, there was no reimebie against the accuser, by meane of a statute late made, &c. Whereupon the false accuser of his master and eldest brother, sweareth to some, he neuer did any such acte: to other, that all those articles were true, and also largely (to the like effect) libelleth against me.

False accuser set on the pillorie, and marked in the face, as he and other the like have well deserved.

In the beginning of March, a road was made into Scotland toward Edinburgh, by the Englishmen, who at the first got great praise, but they were so greedy, and went so farre, that a great army of Scots met them with three battels, where the Englishmen for the most part were slaine, and taken at Baner Hotwiche, among whom sir Ralph Eure lord Eure, and warden of the East Marches was slaine, and R. Read Alderman of London, with other taken prisoners by the Scots. T. Wriothesley L. Chancellor made knight of the garter.

Alderman of London taken prisoner.

Crinitie terme was adjourned because of the wars.

About the 15. of June was a great tempest of winde in Warbissire, where through trees were over-turned, and divers Churches, chappels, and houses, were uncovered. Also in Lancashire, there fell hailestones as big as mens fists, which had divers prints in them, some like mens faces, some like Can holes, &c.

An. reg. 37.

Hailestones as big as mens heads.

The nineteenth of July, the French kings naule comming out of Fletowen, and Depe, arrived on the coast of England in Sussex, above bright Hamstead, where they set certaine of their soldiers a land to burne: but the Beacons were fired, and the men came downe to thicke, that the Frenchmen fled and did little hurt.

Frenchmen arrived in Sussex.

The 19. of July, by misfortune of shooting a Gun in one of the Hedgehogs a ship, above Westminster, a shiken of gun-powder fired and slew seven men, and the eighth leaped into the Thames, and was drowned.

Seven men in the hedgehogs.

The

Warry Rose  
was drowned.

Frenchmen  
landed in the  
Ile of Wight.

Frenchmen  
landed at  
Newhaven in  
Sussex.

Earle of Here-  
ford sent into  
Scotland.

Lord Admirall  
brent Trecport.

Chautries, col-  
ledges, & hospi-  
tals, given unto  
the king.

E. Hall,  
to Henry his  
Dilection.

The 20. of July the king being at Portsmouth, a gallye shippe of England, called the Warry Rose, with sir George Carrow the capitaine, and manie other gentlemen were drowned in the midst of the haven, by great negligence.

The 21. of July, the French galleies and naue came afoze Portsmouth ha- uen, and landed certayne of their army in the Ile of Wight, at Saint Helens Point, and there burned and encamped about 2000. men: but they were sone driven abacke with losse of their capitaine and manie souldiers. Within fewe daies after, the whole fleet remoued from the Wight to a place in Sussex, cal- led Newhaven, foure miles from Lewes, and there landed manie capitaines and souldiers, who by the balliantnes of the gentlemen and yeomen of Sussex, were slaine and drowned in the haven a great number of them, and the rest hardly recouered their ships and galleies.

In the moneth of August, deceased at Gullforde Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, and lord great master of the Kings householde, who was honozable buried at Windsor.

In August the earle of Hereford was sent into Scotland, with an army of 12000. men, where hee destroyed divers townes, and greatly endamaged the Scots.

The 9. of September sir Iohn Dudley, L. Lisle, L. admirall of England, lan- den with 6000. men at Trecport in Normandy, and there bent the towne and abbey with other houses about it, and 30. ships with a barke that lay in the ha- uen, with losse of 14. Englishmen, and so returned.

The 24. of November began a parliament, wherein was granted to the K. a subsidy of 2. s. 8. d. of the pound in goods, and 4. s. of the pound in lands. Also all colledges, chauntries, and hospitals, were committed to the K. order, to al- ter and transpore, which he promised to do to the glory of god and the common profit of the realme.

The 24. of December the Parliament was prorogued, on the which daie the K. comming into the house to giue his roial assent vnto such acts as were pas- sed, the speaker made vnto him an eloquent oration: to the which, although the custome hath alwaies bin that the Lord chancelor should make the answer, it pleased the K. at this present to make the answer himselfe, which hee uttered as here followeth, set downe by Edward Hall.

Although my chancelor for the time being, hath before this time used verie eloquentlie and substantiallie to make answer to such orations, as hath bin set forth in this high Court of Parliament, yet is hee not so able to open and set forth my minde and meaning, and the secrets of my heart in so plaine and ample maner, as I my selfe am, and can do: wherefore I taking vpon me to answer your eloquent oration. O. speaker, say that where you in the name of our welbelovyd commones, haue both praised and extolled mee, for the no- table qualitties that you haue concluded to bee in mee, I most heartily thanke you all, that you haue put me in remembrance of my duetie, which is to inde- uor my selfe to obtayn and get such excellent qualitties and necessary vertues as a prince or gouernor ought to haue, of which gifts I recognize my selfe both barren and bare: but of such small qualitties as God hath indowd me withall, I

render

render to his godnes my most humble thankes, intending with all my wit & diligence to get and acquite to me such notable vertues and princely qualitties as you haue alleaged to be incorporated in my person: these thankes for your loving admonition and good counsell first remembered, I restles thanke you againe, because that you, considering our great charge, not for our pleasure, but for your defence, not for our gaine, but to our great cosse, which wee haue lately sustained, as well in defence of our and your enemies, as for the conquest of that forreine. which was to this Realme most displeasing, and shall hereafter by Gods Grace bee to our nation most profitable and pleasant, haue freelie of your owne minds granted to vs a certaine subsidie, here in an as specified, which verily we take in god part, regarding more your kindnes, than the profite thereof, as hee that lets more by your louing heartes, than by your substance. Besides this heartie kindnes, I cannot a little reioice when I consider the perfitt trust and confidence, which you haue put in mee, as men hauing vndoubted hope, and vnfaigned beleefe in my god doings and iust pro- cedings for you, without my desire or request haue committed to mine or- der & disposition, all chantries, colledges, hospitals, & other places specified in a certaine act, firmly trusting that I will order them to the glory of god, and the profit of the common wealch: surely if I contrary to your expectation should suffer the ministers of the Church to decaye, or learning, which is so great a we- ll to be minished, or poore and miserable to bee vncultured, you might saie, that I, being put in so speciall a trust, as I am in this case, were no trustie friend to you, nor charitable to mine owne churche, neither a louer of the pub- like wealch, nor yet one that feared God, to whom account must be renderd of alour doings. Doubt not I pray you, but your expectation shal be serued more godly and goodly than ye will wish or desire, as hereafter ye shal plainly per- celeue. Now sithence I finde such kindnes on your part towards me, I cannot chafe but loue and saueur you, affirming, that no Prince in the worlde more knoweth his subiects, than I doe you, nor no subiects or commones more loued and obeyed their Soueraign Lord than I percelue you do me, for whose defence my treasure shall not be hidden, nor if needfull require, my person shall not be vnaduentured: yet although I wish you, and you wish me to be in this per- fitt loue and concord, this friendly amitie cannot continue except both you my lords temporal, and my lords spirituall, and you my louing subiects studie and take paine to amend one thing which surely is amisse, and farre out of order, to the which I most heartily require you, which is. That Charitie and concord be not among you, but discord and dissention beareth rule in euery place: Saint Paul saith to the Corinthians the 13. Chapter, Charitie is gentle, Charitie is not proud, and so forth in the same chapter. Behold the m- what loue and charity is amongst you, when the one calleth an other brethren, and anabaptist, and hee calleth him againe Papist, hypocrite, and Pharisee: bee the tokens of charitie amongst your selues: so, no, I assure you that this lacke of Charitie amongst your selues will bee the hinderance and alwa- ging of the seruient loue betwene vs, as I said before, except this wounde be shued and cleerelic made whole, I must needs iudge the fault and occasion

Itt

of this discord to be partlie by negligence of you the fathers and preachers of the spiritualty: for if I know a man which lieth in adultery, I must iudge him lecherous, and a carnall person: if I see a man boast and bragge himselfe, I can not but deeme him a proud man. I heare daily that you of the cleargie preach one against another, teach one contrary to another, envying one against another, without charity or discretio: some be too stricke in their old *Mumfimus*, other be too busy and curious in their new *Sumpimus*: thus all men almost be in variety and discord, and few or none preach truly and sincerely the word of God, according as they ought to doe. Shall I iudge you charitable persons doing thus? No, no, I cannot so do: alas how can the poore soules live in concord, when you preachers so amongst them in your sermons debate and discorde? of you they looke for light, and you bring them into darknes. Amend these crimes I exhort you, and let forth Gods word, both by true preaching and good example giving, or els I, whom God hath appointed his vicar and high minister here, will see these dissensions extinct, and these enormities corrected, according to my bevy duty, or els I am an unpardonable servant, and untrue officer. Although I saie the spirituall men be in some fault, that charity is not kept amongst you, yet you of the temporalltie bee not cleere and unpotted of malice and envie, for you raille on bishops, speake slanderouslie of prelates, and rebuke and taunt preachers, both contrarie to good order, and christlan fraternitie: if you knowe surely that a Bp. or preacher, preacheth or teacheth peruers doctrine, come and declare to some of our counsel or to us, to whom is committed by god the high authoritie to reforme and order such causes and behaviors, & be not iudges your selves of your own fantastical opinions and vaine expositions, for in such high causes you may lightly erre: and although you be permitted to read holy scriptures, and to haue the word of god in your mother tong, you must understand it is licenced you so to do, only to inform your consciences, and to instruct your children and familie, and not to dispute and make Scripture a railing and a taunting stocke, against prelates and preachers, as manie light persons do. I am verie soie to knowe and heare howe unrequenitlie that most precious tell the word of God is disputed, rymed, sung, and rangeled in euerie Alehouse and Tauerne, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the same: and yet I am euen as much soie that the readers of the same, followe it in dooing so faintly and coltelic: for of this I am sure, that charity was neuer so faint amongst you, and vertuous and godlie liuing was neuer less bled, no: God himselfe amongst christians was neuer lesse reuerenced, honored, or serued: therefore, as I saide before, bee in charity one with another, like brother and brother: loue, deare and serue god, to the which I as your supreme head and soveraigne Lord exhort and require you: and then I doubt not, but that love and league, that I spake of in the beginning, shall neuer bee dissolved or broke betwene us. And to the making of lawes which we haue now made and concluded, I exhort you the makers to be as diligent in putting them in execution, as you were in making and furthering of the same, or else your labors shall be in vain, your common wealth nothing relieved, how to your petition, concerning our roiall assent, to be giuen to such actes as haue passed both the houses,

they

they shall be read openly, that ye may heare them. And so heeing read his grace assented, and so rose and departed.

Many proper feates of armes were exploited and done in this meane while betwixt the English and the French about Boloigne.

In the morrowe after the feast of the Epiphantie, there came a conuoie of victualles towarde the French fort builded besides Boloigne, garded with three or foure thousande Launcequents, under their Coronell, the Reingraue and certaine Frenchmen. The earle of Surrey then lieutenant of Boloigne advertised thereof, made out with such power as hee might conveniently spare out of Boloigne, and the olde man, to cut off those victualles: but coming to encounter with the enemies at S. Etienne he was put to flight, sir Edward Poynings captain of a band called the B. gard of Boloigne was slain in that conflict, with sixtene or thirtene other Captaines, besides officers and common souldiers.

In the latter end of March, the shewes on the banks side of the Thamis, in Southwarke was put downe, by the B. commandement, which was proclaimed by sound of trumpet no more to bee privileged or used as a common boydel, but the inhabitants of those houses, to keepe good and honest rule, as in all other places of the realme.

The 27. of Aprill, being Tuesday in Easter weeke, W. Foxley potmaker for the mint in the tower of London, fell asleep, and so continued sleeping and could not be wakened with plying, cramping, or other wise burning whatsoeuer, till the first day of the next terme, which was full 14. daies, and 15. nights, for that Easter terme beginneth not afore 17. daies after Easter. The cause of his thus sleeping could not be knowne, though the same were diligently searched for by the kings physicians and other learned men, yea the king himselfe examined the said W. Foxley, who was in all points found at his wakening to be as if he had slept but one night, and liued 41. yere after, to wit, till the yere of Christ 1587.

The 18. of May, there were 4. of the B. ships, and 4. pinnaces abroad on the seas afore the haven of Hamble tow, and there came an 8. of the french gallees to set upon them, there was great shooting betwixt them, but at the last one of the galleies was taken, in the which were 280. souldiers, and 140. rowers. The rest of their galleies packed away. Howsoever while the campe lay thus at Hamble tow, it chanced y one day a mautenie rose among the Lansquenets against their captaine, so that they got themselves into order of battell, felled upon the great artillerie, and shewed countenance, as if they would haue set upon the residue of the whole campe. Whereupon every man was commanded to repaire to his ensign, and the Spaniards came and ioined themselves with the Englishmen ready to take such part as they did. At length by the diligence of the christians, and good countenance of the English souldiers & Spaniards, the tumult was staid, and 6. of the principall beginners therof were hanged.

The 21. of May, the french army came and encamped beyond Boloigne at the church on the hill, & the morrowe after the earle of Hertford marched with his power to a place withyn 2. miles of them, and certain horsemen & footemen

Itt 2.

went

1546  
Englishmen  
put to flight by  
the Reingraue.

The shewes put  
downe.

Ann. reg. 38.  
W. Foxley  
slept more then  
14. daies, and  
as many nights  
without wak-  
ing.

A french gal-  
ley taken.

went forth and skirmished with them, and in the mean time the artillery ceased not to shot off, as well from the French Campe, as from Bologne, and the Old-man. This day were slain 14. Frenchmen, and 2. taken prisoners: and 3. of the English part were taken, and so the earle of Hertford returned to his camp, and left the Lancquents upon the hill, encamped before the entrenches, not 2. miles distant from them, in which place a fort was begun to be raised, which was called the fort of Bologne brage.

The 23. of May, the soldiers of Bologn and the Lancquents skirmished with the Frenchmen, and here took of them about the number of 7. score, of the which there were 40. of them in velvet coats, and some with chains.

In this meane while, by the motion of diuers Princes, a meeting was had of diuers Commissioners appointed to treat of some peace, to be concluded betwixt the two kings of England and France, herupon there came to Swines for the Li. of Englaunde, the earle of Hertford, the bishop of Winchester, Sir Iohn Dudley bicount Lisle, baron of Pannas, and high admirall of Englaunde, Sir William Paget the kings Secretarie, and Doctor Nicholas Wotton Deane of Canterburie: for the French king there came to Arde, Monsieur Claude Danebaulte Admirall of France, the Bpshoppe of Carcor, Monsieur Reymond chiefe president of Roane, the Secreterie Boucherell. These mette diuers times betwixt Arde and Swines. After long debating, on the seuenth of June a peace was concluded, which peace was with heraultes and sound of trumpets, proclaimed at London on Whitsonday, being the 13. of June, and the same daie was a general Procession, before the which was borne all the richest silver crosses in London, to wit, of euery church one, then proceeded all the parish clerkes, conboates, quitters, and priests in London, with the Duke of Paule, all of them in their richest coapes, singing: When the companies of the Citie in their best lueries. The Lozde Spaloz, the Aldermen and Sheriffs in scarlet, &c. All these went from Pauls church through Cheape, and Cornhill by to Leaden hall, and so back again to Pauls. And this was the last shew of the richest crosses and coapes in London: for shortly after this, with other their church plate were called into the kings treasury and wardrobe. And the same daie was the same Peace likewise proclaimed in the Citie of Paris, in Roan, & other places: the first article of which peace was, that the French king paying to the Li. of England 800000. crownes, within the terme of 8. yeres, he should haue Bologn again to him restored, which in the mean time should remain in the hands and possession of the king of England.

Afterouer for the full establishing of the peace, and for to receiue the French both, the bicount Lisle L. admirall, with the B. of Durham, and diuers other lords and gentlemen to the number of more than 100. all in velvet coates and chaines of gold, with 45. yeomen (specially appointed, went into France from Bologn, the 10. of July, & came to Spellune, a town beyond Paris, where the French li. lay: by whose, and the Dolphin his son, they were totally receiued, feasted & banqueted: and hauing don that for, the which they came, the said lord admirall Dudley the 1. of August took his leaue of the French li. who rewarded him with a cupbord of plate of gold, valued at 1500. pound. The Lozds

also

also and gentlemen had chaines of gold giuen to them, and yeomen had 1200. crownes bestowed amongst them, and so they returned into England.

The 16. of July were burned in Smithfield for the sacrament Anne Askew the Keme, Io. Lassels, Nicholas Oorden, priest, Io. Adam tailor, and Doctor Shaxton sometime bishop of Salisburie preached at the same fire, and there recanted, persuading them to do the like, but they would not.

The 21. of August came into England Claude de Honnebuld high admirall of France, who brought with him the sacre of Diep, and 12. galleies, he landed at the tower Whitehall, where he was honorably receiued, and brought to the Bishop of Londons palace, where he lodged two nightes, and then rode to Hampton court where the king lay. By the way prince Edward receiued him with a company of 500. coates of velvet, with one liue of cloth of golde, and halfe the coat embrothered with gold: there was in all to the number of 800. houpes. And so the French admirall came to the court, giuing the prince the vpper him and as they rode; and at the entry gate of the court, the L. chanceloz and all the li. counsell receiued him, and brought him to his lodging.

On Bartholomew day the king admitted him to his presence, welcomed him, and in great triumph went to the chappell, where the li. receiued his oath, to performe the articles of the league. I omit to speake of huntings and banquettings, which was wonderfull. But on the 27. of August, he being rewarded with a cupbord of plate to the value of 1200. l. he returned to London, and so to his galleies, and departed homeward: besides the li. gift, he had giuen to him by the city of London two flagons gilt, and two other parcell gilt, valued at 136 l. besides wine, wax, &c.

The 12. of December Th. D. of Norfolk, and Henry Earle of Surrey his son and heire upon certain surmises of treason, were committed to the tower of London, the one by water, the other by land, that the one knew not of the others apprehension.

The 3. day of January, the late dissolved church of the grey Friers in London was opened, and made sung there; and that day preached at Pauls crosse the bishop of Rochester, who declared the kings gift to the city of London, for the relieuing of the poore people, which gift was by Patent under his great seale, S. Bartholomewes Spittle in Smithfield, lately valued at 305 pounce 6. shillings and 7. pence, and surrendered to the king, the church of the said grey Friers, valued at 32. pounce, 19. s. and seauen pence, and surrendered, and two parish Churches, the one of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other Saint Ewine in Pelwgate Market at Martolke lane end, all to be made one parish, in the said church of the Grey Friers: and in lames hie gaue for the maintenance of the same church, with divine seruice, reparation, &c. 500. markes by yere for ever, and this church to be named Christs church, founded by king Henry the eight.

The thirtieth daie of Januarie, the king then lying dangerously sick, the Earle of Surrey was arraigned in the Guild hall of London. before the lord Spaloz, the lord chanceloz, and other lords and iudges being there in commission; some things he flatly denied, weakening the credite of his accusers, by

E t 3.

certaine

Anne Askew & other burnt.

Admirall of France came to London.

D. of Norfolk & earle of Surrey committed to the Tower.

Th. D. his gift to the city of London.

1547  
Earle of Surrey arraigned & beheaded.

Peace proclaimed, and general procession.



certaine circumstances, other bee excused with interpretations of his meanings to proue the same to be far other wise than was alledged against him: the especiall matter, wherewith he was charged, was, for bearing certaine armes that were said belonged to the king and prince: the bearing wherof he iustified, that as he took it, he might beare them, as belonging to his ancestors, and withall affirmed that he had the opinion of the heralds therein, and so to his indictment he pleaded, not guilty. And for that he was no lord of the parliament, he was enforced to stand to the trial of a common inquest of his countrey, which found him guiltie, and thereupon he had iudgement of death: and shortly after, to wit, on the 19. of January he was beheaded on the tower hill.

Tombe for king  
Henry the 8.  
made by cardinall  
Catalley.

The king lying dangerously sicke (as yee haue heard) and in great perill of death, made his last will and testament, dated the thirtieth date of December, the 8. yere of his raigne, &c. Wherein, amongst other things, he appointed his body to be buried in his colledge, or free chappell at Wiltshire, in an honourable tombe prepared, and at that time almost finished for that purpose, which tombe I haue seene, with this inscription cast in the grates or inclosure thereof (being copper) *Henricus octauus rex Anglie, Francie, dominus Hibernie, fidei defensor*: he appointed the tombs of king Henry the first, and of Edward the fourth to be more princely made in the same places they then stood; one thousand marks to be given in almes to the most needy, in as short time as may be after his decease, and to twelue more knights, to each of them 12. pence the day for ever, and every yere to each of them a long gowne of white cloth, with the garter embrodered vpon the breast, with a shield and crosse of S. George, and a mantle of red cloth, &c. He appointed his first heire to the crowne to be prince Edward: the second, lady Mary daughter to Quene Katherine: and the third to be the lady Elizabeth, by Quene Anne Boleine. More, he took order, that during the minority of his sonne prince Edward, his executors should be counsellors and ayders to him in all things, as well concerning private as publick affaires, they were in number sixteene, whose names insue as followeth:

Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.

Thomas Wriothesley lord chancelor.

Sir William Pavlet knight of the order, lord Seint-Iohn, and great master of the household.

Sir John Russell knight of the order, lord pypur scale.

Sir Edward Seimor knight of the order, earle of Hertford, great chamberlaine.

Sir John Dudley knight of the order, vicount Lisley, baron of Spalpas, high admirall of England.

Cuthbert Tunstall bishop of Durham.

Sir Anthony Browne knight of the order, and master of the horse.

Sir William Paget knight of the order.

Sir William Herbert knight.

Sir Edward Mountacute knight, chiefe iustice of the common pleas.

Sir

Sir Thomas Bromely knight, one of the iustices of the kings bench.

Sir Anthony Denny knight.

Sir Edward North knight, chancelor of the Augmentations.

Sir Edward Wotton knight, treasurer of Calais.

Dodot Wotton deane of Canterbury and of Pothe.

And furthermore, for the speciall trust and confidence which the king had in the Earle of Arundell, and the Earle of Essex that then were, Sir Thomas Cheyny knight treasurer of household, Sir Iohn Gage knight controller of household, Sir Anthony Winkefield vicechamberlaine, Sir William Peter knight, one of the principall secretaries, Sir Richard Rich knight, Sir Iohn Baker knight, Sir Ralph Sadler knight, Sir Thomas Seimor knight, Sir Richard Southwell knight, and Sir Edmond Pechem knight: he appointed that they, and every of them should be of counsell, for the appointing and assisting of the forenamed counsellors and executors, &c. He deceased at Westminster on the eight and twentieth day of January, being friday, in the yere of Christ 1547. beginning the yere at Christmas, but after the account of the church of England, in anno 1546. when he had reigned seven and thirty yeres, nine moneths, and odde daies, and was buried at Wiltshire with great solemnitie.

The last of January being munday prince Edward was proclaimed king, blais Sam: by the name of Edward the first, and the same date he came from Caluade to the Tower of London.

## Edward the sixt.



Edward the first bozne at Hampton court (by the decease of his father) began his raigne the 28. of January, and was proclaimed k. of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, and of the churches of England and also of Ireland the supreme head immediately in earth vnder God, &c. on the 31. of last day of January, in the yere of Christ after the Church of England 1546. but after the accompt of them that begin the yere at Christmas 1547. being then of the age of nine yeres. And the same day in the afternone the saide young king came to the tower of London from Hertford, and rode into the City at Aldgate, and so along the wall by the crossed friers to the Tower hill, & entered at the red bullwarke, where he was received by Sir Iohn Gage constable of the tower, and the lieutenant on horseback. The Earle of Hertford riding before the king, and Sir Anthony Browne riding after him: and on the bridge next the warde gate, the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord Chancellor, with other great lords of the Councell received him, and so brought him to his chamber of presence, where they were sworn to his majesty.

An. reg. 1.

Ro. Citena.



Earle of Hertford made lord protector.

The first of February, the earle of Hertford was nominate, elected and chosen, by all the executors, to be protector and chiefe governour of the kings person, untill he came to his lawfull age of 18. yeres, and so was he proclaimed.

King Edward made knight. Lord Protector of London made knight.

The first daie of February the earle of Hertford lord protector in the tower of London, endued King Edward with the order of knight-hood: and then immediately the king standing up, under the clothy of estate, Henry Hobblethorne lord Mayor of London was called, who kneeling downe, the king took the sword of the lord protector and made him knight, which was the first that ever he made. Then the lordes called the iudges and communed with them, and then every of them came before the king, who put forth his hand, and every of them kissed it: then master William Porteman one of the iudges of the kings bench was called forth, whom the king made knight, and then the king removing his cap departed to his private chamber againe.

The 14. of February the corpses of H. Henric the eight, was with great solemnitie and honor conueied unto Syon, and the next day to Windsoze, and there buried in the colledge.

Duke and lordes created.

The 17. of February sir Edward Seimere earle of Hertford, and lord protector was created duke of Somerset: the lord William Parre earle of Essex, was created marquisse of North-hampton: sir John Dudley lord Lisle, lord admiral, was created earle of Warlike and lord Chamberlaine of England: sir Thomas Wriothesley and lord chanclor, was created Earle of South-hampton: sir Thomas Seimer the kings uncle was made lord of Sudley and high admiral: sir Richard Rich was made lord Rich: sir William Willoughby was made lord Willoughby of Parham: sir Edmond Sheffield was made lord Sheffield of Waterlike.

Paules strepse lay at anchor.

The nineteenth of February H. Edward rode from the tower of London, accompanied with his nobilitie through the citie of London towards Westminster, and as he passed on the south side of Pauls churchyard, a man of the nation of Arragosa, came from the battlements of the Steeple of Pauls church upon a cable, being made fast to an anchor by the Deanes gate, lying on his breast, adioing himselfe neither with hand nor foote, but spreading them abroad, and after ascended to the middle of the cable, where he tumbled and played many pretty toies, whereat the king and the nobles had good pastime. He was crowned at Westminster on the twentieth daie of February. And there was the same day proclaimed a general pardon of all manner of persons saving fire, to wit, the duke of Northfolke, Edward L. Courtney eldest sonne to the Marquisse of Excester, M. Foskew, M. Throkmorton, Cardinall Poole, and Doctor Pates.

King Edward crowned.

The 6. of March, the great scale of England was taken from sir Thomas Wriothesley, and on the morrow the same was deliuered to the lord Seimelohn lord great master.

1547

The 11. of Aprill being munday in the Easter weeke, the Complin (being a part of the evening prayer) was sung in English, in the kings Chappell. Also the same month of Aprill, doctor Glazier preaching at Pauls crosse, affirmed there, that the Lent was not ordained of God, to be fasted, neither the eating

eating of flesh to be forboyn, but that the same was a politike ordinance of men, and mought therefore be broken by men, at their pleasures. More on the 15. of May being Sunday, Doctor Smith master of Whittington Colledge in London, doctor of divinitie, and reader of the same in the kings Colledge at Wyford, recanted at Pauls crosse, declaring his former books, and teachings to be erroneous, and hereticall. Also on the nineteenth of June, one Peren did recant in the parish church of S. Andrew Underhaff in London, where he had before (to wit on S. Georges day) preached that it was good to worship the pictures of Christ, and of Saints, but now hee saide he had bene deceived, and was loyke that he had taught such doctrine, &c.

On the same 19. of June was a Dirige sung in every parish church in London, for the French king late deceased (to wit on the 22. of March last before passed) also the church of S. Paul in London, being hanged with blacke, and a sumptuous herse set up in the quire, a Dirige was there sung, and on the next morrow, the archbishop of Canterbury, assisted of eight Bishops, all in rich miters and other their pontificals, did sing a masse of Requiem, and the bishop of Rochester preached there a learned Sermon.

The first of July two priests were arraigned, and condemned in the Guildhall, for keeping of certain reliques, amongst the which there was a left arme and shoulder of a Monke of the Charterhouse, on the which arme, was written, it was the arme of such a monke, which suffered martyrdom under king Henry the eight.

The 9. of July 15. galleies of France, passed through the narrow seas into Scotland, where they destroyed the Castle of S. Andrewes, wherein were certaine Scots, that had in the same Castle murdered the cardinall of S. Andrewes. And on the 8. of August the said galleies returned again into France.

In the month of August, Edward Duke of Somerset lord protector as generall, and John Dudley earle of Warlike lord lieutenant, with a noble army were sent into Scotland, and ner to Edenborough at a place called Spusleborough the Englishmen and Scots met, where betwene them the tenth of September was fought a cruell battell. The victorie whereof fell to the Englishmen, and of the Scots were slaine 14000. and taken prisoners 1500. whereof many were gentlemen, and not about 60. Englishmen slaine: more of this ye may reade in master Patten his booke certant intituled, The expedition into Scotland.

Spusleborough field. Wm. Patten.

The 20. of September the French Galleies, did take a pinnace of the kings, called the Ro, betwene Calcis and Dover.

The lord protector, and the rest of the Councell, sent commissioners into all parts of the realme, willing them to take all images out of their churches, for the avoiding of idolatry, with the m were sent diuers preachers, to perswade the people from their beades, and such like ceremonies: and at that time the going in procession was forbidden to be used: and the Gospell, & Epistle was commanded to be read in English. And the 5. of September the kings commissioners did sit in Pauls church there to resolve, such ceremonies and superstitions. And on the 8. of September the Letanie was sung in English in Pauls

Pauls Church, betwene the quire and the high altar, the singers kneeling, halfe on the one side and halfe on the other side. And the same day, the Epistle and Gospel was read in English at the high masse in Pauls church. And on the 11. of September, Edmond Bonner bishop of London was by the Council committed prisoner in the flate. And on the 25. of September Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester was likewise committed to the flate. And Nicholas Ridley was made bishop of Rochester.

The 24. of October, Richard lord Rich, was made lord chancellor.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 4. of November, the parliament began at Westminster, and that same day masse was sung before the lordes of the parliament in the English tongue. Sir John Baker knight, chancellor of the froites and tenthes was speaker of the common house for the said parliament: In the which was granted to the king, all colleges, chantries, free chappels, hospitals, fraternities, brotherhoods, and guildes. And an acte was made for the receiuing of the sacrament, in both kinds of bread and wine; and the statute of the six articles was repealed.

Colleges, chantries, free chappels, and hospitals given to the king.

The 17. of November was begun to be pulled downe the Image in Pauls church with Mary and John, and all other images in that church, and then the like was done in all the Churches in London, and so throughout England, and verses of scriptures were written upon the walls of those churches against Images, &c. And on the 24. of December the parliament was proroged.

In the 1. of January doctor Latimer preached at Pauls crosse, which was the first sermon by him preached in almost eight yeres before, for at the making of the six articles, he being bishop of Worcester would not consent to them, and therefore was commanded to silence, and gave up his bishopricke: he also preached at Pauls crosse on the 8. of January; where he affirmed, that whatsoever the cleargie commanded, ought to be obeyed, but he also declared that the cleargie are such as sit in Moyles chaire, and beake not their masters communion: adding nothing thereto, nor taking any thing there from: and such a cleargie must be obeyed of all men, both high and lowe. He also preached at Pauls on the 15. and on the 29. of January. And on the 2. of february being the feast of the purification of our Lady, commonly called Candlemasse day, the bearing of candles in the church, was left off throughout the whole Citie of London.

The 12. of february being Shrove Sunday, and the munday, and Tuesday following, was great iusts, and warlike feates done in the park at Greenwich, where was a caddle of 82 feet of turres, besieged and assaulted, to shew the king the maner of wars, wherein hee had great pleasure. The Wednesday following commonly called Ashwednesday, the use of giving ashes in the church was also left.

The 7. of March, being Wednesday was a pulpit set up in the kings private garden at Westminster, and therein doctor Latimer preached before the king, where he might be heard of more then foure times so many people as could haue stood in the kings chappel: and this was the first sermon preached there. And this yere the ceremonie of bearing of palmes on palme Sunday was left off and not used as afore.

About

About the beginning of the month of March, the king sent his commissioners into every shire in England to survey all Colleges, free chappels, and chantries with brotherhoods as faces in the articles of their commission.

1548  
Structures first out.

Also in the said moneth of March, the king sent forth his proclamation, with a booke for the order of receiuing of the holy communion of the body and blood of Christ, under both kinds of bread and wine to be ministered by the priest to all persons at Easter, and at all times after, when the people requires it. Whereupon at Easter following began the communion and confession in English, but no man constrained thereto except he would; but after Easter began the service in English in diuers parish churches, and at Whitsonside at Pauls, by the commandment of doctor W. May Deane of the same Church. Barking chappell nigh the tower of London, and the Colledge Church of St. Martins le Grand nigh the Shambles, were pulled downe. Also the parish churches of St. Nicholas in the Shambles, and Saint Ewines within Newgate, were pulled down, and the parishioners appointed to the late dissolved Grey friers church which is now named Chiffes Church, founded by king Henrie the eight. Also the Parish Church at the Strand without Temple bar was pulled downe, with Strand Inne, and Strandbridge, in place whereof to build the Protectors house.

The watch which had bene accustomed in London at Midsummer of long time laid down, was now againe used, both on the euen of St. John, and of St. Peter, in as comely order as it had bin accustomed, which watch was greatlye brayght by the number of more than 300. demiances and light hoisemen that were prepared by the citizens, to bee sent into Scotland for the rescue of the towne of Haddington and other, kept by Englishmen in Scotland.

Great watch at Midsummer & St. Peters tide.

On St. Peters euen, Edmund Dasley, lieutenant to the French king, and the Kingraue of France, with the number of 10000. French and Almains, besides Scots, besieged the towne of Haddington in Scotland, defended by the Englishmen, unto whose aide shortly after came from Warbrike 1300. hoisemen, which were 700. men of armes and demiances, the Captaines whereof were Sir Robert Bowes, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which hoisemen not long after by the Frenchmen were inclosed, and the most part either slain, or taken with their Captaines before named: neuertheless, our Englishmen defended the towne, often skirmishing with the French, and putting them to the worse, untill the twentieth daie of August, and then came an armie out of England of 16000 of the which 4000. were Almains, the kings lieutenant was the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Generall of the Almains was capitaine Courteney.

The siege of Haddington.

At the coming of this army, the Frenchmen and Scots in peaceable maner departed from before Haddington, giving our captains and soldiers great commendation for their service. Francis earle of Shrewsbury after he had seen the towne beleagued and stored with fresh soldiers and munitions, departed into England, and our men kept the towne of Haddington, oftentimes skirmishing with the Frenchmen and Scottes, till the 20. daie of September, and then came the Earle of Rutlande with 3000. Almains and as many

Haddington razed by English borders.

borderers, who caused the towne to be rased, and so brought their ordinance and carriage to Barlowke, and returned without battell.

On S. Peters day Stephen Gardiner B. of Winchester preached in the palace of White hall at Westminster before the K. for the which sermon he was on the morrow after sent to the tower of London.

The 7. of July a priest was hanged and quartered in Smithfildes, for that hee and other in Cornewall had slaine M. Body, one of the kings commissioners, the others of his societie were put to death in diuers other partes of the Realme.

This yere a great mortality by the pestilence was in London, therefore commandement was giuen to all curates and other hauing to do therewith, that no corpses should be buried before 6. of the clocke in the morning, nor after 6 of the clock at night, and that there should at the buriall of euery corpse, be rung one bell at the least by the space of 3. quarters of an houre.

In September died Quene Katherine, late wife to king Henry, and after married to Sir Thomas Seimer lord admirall; he died of childbirth, being deliuered of a daughter.

The 16. of Januarie, Sir Tho. Seimer knight of the garter, baron of Sudley, lord admirall, brother to the lord protector, and uncle unto king Edward, was arrested, and sent to the tower of London. On the 19. of January Sir William Shepington was also committed to the tower; which Sir William on the 14. of february, was arraigned in the Guild Hall at London, and condemned of treason, for misusing of the kings mint at Wythlow. The lord Th. Seimer uncle to the king was condemned by the Parliament, and neuer came to his answer. This Parliament brake vp on the 14. of March, and on the 20. of March the saide lord Th. Seimer was beheaded on the Tower hill, hee tooke it on his death, that hee had neuer committed or meant anie treason against the king nor realme. The 29. of March doctor Latimer preached before the king at Westminster, and there in his sermon, declaring manie things against the lord Thomas Seimer late beheaded, he affirmed that in time whyles he was prisoner in the Tower, he wrote letters vnto the ladie Mary, and the ladie Elizabeth the kings sisters, that they should make some warre against the lord protector, and reuenge his death.

The 6. of Aprill, proclamation was made for the Masse to bee put downe through the whole realme.

The 20. of Aprill, the cloister of Pauls church in London, called pardon church yerde, by the dance of death, commonlie called the dance of Pauls about the same cloister cosily and cunningly wrought, and the chappel in the middle of the same churchyard, were all begun to be pulled downe. Also the charnil house of Pauls, with the chappel there (after the tombes and other monuments of the dead were pulled downe, and the dead mens bones buried in the fields) were converted into dwelling houses and shops.

About the same time the steeple, and most part of the church of S. Iohn of Zeruusalem, neere vnto Smithfild, most beautifullie new builded, and late destroyed, by the lordie prioz named Docary, was undermined, and ouerthrowne with

B. of Winchester sent to the tower by the L. protector. A p. left of Cornwall executed.

Great pestilence in London.

Quene Katherine died.

Ann. reg. 3.

1549

Dance of Pauls pulled downe.

Charnil house of Pauls.

Church of S. Iohn by Smithfilds blowne by.

with gunpowder, the stone whercof was applied in the building of the L. protectors house at the Strand.

The 27. of Aprill, diuers anabaptists were examined in our lady chappel of S. Pauls church in London, before T. Crammer archb. of Canterbury, Edmond Thurlby first B. of Westminster, D. Cox, D. Smith, D. Maie Deane of Pauls, and D. Cok deane of the arches, and chancelor to the archb. of Cant. these sate on the altar of our ladie in iudgement of these anabaptists, and at their next sitting, there sate with them the sherifs of London; and on the next Sunday being low Sundaye, one of them named Champenes bare a fagot at Pauls crosse, Myles Couerdale preached the rehearsal sermon there: on the next Saturday the said commissioners sate there againe, before whome was brought loan of Kent, alias Ioan Butcher, alias Knel, the was condemned: and a tanner of Colchester named Puno recanted, and on the morrow bare a fagot at Pauls crosse, and after that at Colchester. Also that date stood at Pauls crosse a butcher an anabap. of Mary Magdal. parish in old Smithfild, & againe Sunday after because he made a mock at the first time: thus much of anabap. of that time.

In the month of May, by meanes of a proclamation for inclosures, the commons of Somersetshire and Lincolnshire made a commotion, and brake vp certain parkes of Sir W. Herberd, and L. Sturtons, but Sir W. Herberd slew and executed many of those rebels.

In July, the commons of Essex & Kent, Suffolk & Norfolk, rose against the inclosures, and pulled downe diuers parkes and houses.

Also the Commons of Cornewall and Devonshire rose against the nobles and gentlemen, and required not onely that the inclosures might bee disparched, but also to haue their old religion, and act of five articles restored: the beleaged the citie of Excester, which was ballantlie defended. Against these rebels was sent Iohn L. Russell Lord prioz seale, with a number of souldiers, who entred the city of Excester the 5. of August, where they slew and took prisoners of the rebels more than 4000. and after hanged diuers of them in the towne and country about. The L. Gray was also sent with a number of strangers, Maine and Germaine horsemen, who in diuers condiactions slew manie people, and spoiled the country.

The last of July, Wil. L. marques of Northampton, entred the city of Norwich, and on the next morning, the rebels also entred the towne, burned parte thereof, put the L. marques to flight, and slew the L. Sheffield.

In this meane time diuers persons were apprehended as aiders of the force, said rebels or repaters of their doings, of the which one was the Bailife of Romford in Essex, hanged with in Algate, and an other of Kent, at the bridge sat toward Southwark, both on Mary Magdalens day by martiall law.

The 8. of August the French L. ambassador, did in name of his master the fr. king, make defiance vnto the K. of England, and so the wars to begin with all their force, & the same night following, all Frenchmen were taken prisoners, and their goods registred.

In the beginning of August, the French L. determining to take the Isles of Cornueles and Jersey, did set there landmines vpon our ships with a great number

Commotion in Somersetshire & Lincolnshire.

Commotion in Cornwell and Devonshire.

Rebels subdued.

Commotion at Norwich. Lord Sheffield slaine.

Partiall Law.

The French L. gallies invaded Cornueles and Jersey.

number of galleys, but they were so manfully encountered by the kings navy, that with the losse of a thousand men, and great spoile of their galleys, they were forced to retire into France, and desist from their purpose.

The 16. of August, a man was hanged without Bishopsgate of London, and one other without Aldgate, the third at Tottenham, the fourth at Walltham, and so forth in divers other places, all by marshall law.

French men  
apprehended.

The 8. of August, the French ambassadors gave a defiance to the lord protector, whereupon all French men with their goods being no denizens were apprehended and committed to prison.

The rebels in Norfolk and Suffolke encamped themselves at mount Surrey, in a wood called St. Nicholas wood, nere unto Norwich, against whom sir Io. Dudley earle of Warwicke went with an army, where both he & a great number of gentlemen meeting with the rebels were in such danger, as they had thought all to have died in that place, but God that confoundeth the purpose of all rebels, brought it so to passe, that aswell there as in all other places, they were partly by power constrained, partly by promise of their pardon, persuaded to submit themselves to their prince: the earle of Warwicke entered the city of Norwich the 27. of August, when he had slain about 5000. of the rebels, and taken their chiefe captaine Robert Ket of Wintham Tanner, which might dispend in lawes fifty pound by yeere, and was worth in movables above a thousand markes, when he had put to execution divers of the rebels in divers places about Norwich, he returned.

The Earle of  
Warwicke went  
against the re-  
bels at Nor-  
wich.

Retowanen by  
Boleine wonen  
by the French.

The 28. of August tidings was brought to H. Edward, and the lord protector, that the French men had taken Blacknes, Hamletw and Retowanen by Boleine, and had slain all the Englishmen, and taken the kings ordinance and victuals, which was reported to be begun by one Sturton a ballard son of the lord Sturtons, which had betrayed Retowanen, and went himselfe to the French kings service: hereupon the captaine of Boleine Barke for feare of the French army conveyed all the ordinance, victuals, goods, and men of that fort, to the high towne of Boleine, and after their departing, with gunpowder blew by the fort.

Commotion in  
Norfolke.

About this time also, a commotion began at Semer in the north-riding of Yorke shire, and continued in the east-riding, and there ended: the principall rasyers whereof were William Ombler of east Hyellerton preman, Thomas Dale parish cleark of Semer, and Steuenson of Semer: being prevented by the lord president from rising at Waintringham, they dyed to a place at Semer by the sea coast, and there by night rode to the beacon at Starston, and set it on fire, and so gathered a rude route: then they went to master Whites house, and took him, and Clopton his wines boy, Sauage a merchant of Yorke, and Bery servant to sir Walter Mildmay, which foure they murdered a mile from Semer, and there lefte them naked: their number increased to 3000.

Rebels execu-  
ted at Yorke.

On the one and twentieth day of August, the kings pardon was offered, which Ombler and other refused, who were shortly after taken, and brought to York, where Thomas Dale and other were executed the 21. of September.

The first of September Edmond Boner bishop of London preached a ser-

mon

mon at Pauls crosse, for the which he was accused unto the council by William Latimer, parson of St. Laurence Pountney, and John Hooper, sometime a white monke, and so conveyed before the Archbishop of Canterbury and other commissioners at Lambeth on the thirtieth, the thirtieth, the eightieth, and on the one and twentieth day of that same month he was sent to the sparrhalles in his habite of a bishop, but on the first of October he was de- prived of his bishopricke, for disobeying the kings order in religion.

On the first day of October in the morning, the earle of Warwicke with other lords of the council sent for the lord protector and the Aldermen of London, to his place in Holbozne, where was declared to them by the lord Chancellor and other of the kings counsell, divers abuses of the lord protector, concerning the kings person, and his affaires both in England and also in Scotland, and other his pecces beyond the seas. And that after none was kept a court of the aldermen in the Guild hall, where was shewed a letter, from the king and the lord protector for to have one thousand men of the citie, well armed with weapons for defence of the kings maiesties person. And another letter also from the lords of the council, to have two thousand men to aide them, for defence of the kings person: and also, that the citie should bee well kept with watches both day and night, &c.

And the same first day, the king being at Hampton court, the lord protector caused proclamations to be made in divers towne nere to the court, for men to aide the king against the lords, and also sent letters to divers towne to the same effect: whereupon great assemblies of people were made at Hampton court. And in the night of the same day, he conveyed the king to Windsoze, with a great number of horsemen and footmen.

My lords, we commend vs most hartly unto you: and whereas the kings maiestie was enjoined that you were assembled in such sort as ye doe notve remaine there, was abused by us, and such other of his counsell, as were here about his person, to send master secretary Peter unto you with such a message as whereby might have ensued the suretie of his maiesties person, with preservation of his realme and subsidies, and the quiet both of us, and your selves, as master secretary can well declare unto you, his maiestie, and we of his counsell here, do not a little marvel that you stay still with you the said master secretary: and haue not (as it were) vouchsafed to send an answer to his maiestie, neither by him, nor yet by any other. And for our selfe, we do much more marvel, and are right loy, as we and you haue god cause to be, to see the manner of your doings, bent with force and violence to bzing the kings maiestie and us to those extremities, which as we doe intend, if you will take none other way but violence, to defend us, as nature and our allegiance both binde us to extremity of death, and put it into Gods hands, who giueth victory as pleaseth him. So if our reasonable conditions and offers will take no place, as hitherto none hath bene signified unto us from you, nor we doe not understand what ye doe require or seeke, nor what ye do meane, and that ye speake no hurt of the kings maiesties person: as touching all other priuat matters, to auoide the effusion of christian blood, and to preserve the kings

a letter from  
the lordes at  
Windsoze to  
the lordes at  
London.

maiesties

maiesties person, his realme, and subjects, ye shall finde vs agreeable to any reasonable conditions that you will require. For we do esteeme the tranquillity and tranquillity of the realme more than all other worldly things, yea more than our owne liues. Thus praying you to sende vs a determinate answer herein by your secretary Peter (or if ye will not let him go) by this bearer, we beseech God to giue both you and vs grace to determine this matter as may be, to Gods honor, the preferuacion of the king, & the quiet of vs all, which may be, if the fault be not in you. And so we bid you most hartly farewell. From the kings maiesties castle of Windesore the 7. day of October, 1549.

Your L. loving friends, E. Somerset, &c.

My lord, I cannot perswade my selfe that there is any ill conclusiō in your heart as of your selfe against me, for that the same seemeth impossible, that where there hath ben from your youth and mine so great a friendship and amity betwixt vs, as neuer for my part to no man was greater, now so suddenly there should be hatred, and that without iust cause, what sooner rumours and brutes, or perswasions of others haue moued you to conclude, in the sight and iudgment of almighty God, I protest & affirme this vnto you, I neuer meant worse to you than to my selfe, wherefore my lord, for God sake, for friendship, for the loue that euer hath bin betwixt vs, or that hereafter may be, perswade your selfe with truth, and let this time declare to me and the world your iustness, and perseverance in friendship, the which God be my witness, who hath all harts, was neuer diminished, nor euer shall be whilst I liue. And because my heart and minde shall be more plaine and open than my writings: this bearer master Hobie shall declare vnto you the effect thereof at length, to whom I pray you giue credite, &c. the 8. of October, 1549.

After our hartly commendations vnto your god L. we haue receiued from the same a letter by master Hunnings, dated at London yesterday, whereby you doe vs to vnderstand the causes of your assemble there, and charging the lord protector with the manner of government, require that he will shew himselfe from the kings maiesty, disperse the force which hee hath leuid, and be contented to be ordered according to iustice and reason. And so you will gladly commune with vs, as touching the suretie of the kings maiesties person, and the order of all other things, with such comfort as shall be behalfe as appertaineth, and otherwise you must (as you write) make other account of vs, than you trust to haue cause, and burden vs, if things come to extremities. To the first point we verily deliue, that as brutes, rumors, and reports, that your lordships intended the destruction of the lord protector; induced his grace to flie to the defence which he hath assembled, excuse your lordships, hearing that his grace intended the like destruction towards you, haue ben moued to doe as you haue done, so as for lacke of vnderstanding one of any others right meaning, things be growen to such extremities, as if the saving of the kings maiesties person, and the common weale, take not more place in his grace and your lordships, than private respect of affaires, you see, we doubt not, as we doe, that both our king, our countrie, and also our selues shall as verily as God is God, be utterly destroyed and cast away. Wherefore, might

A letter from the Duke of Somerset to the earle of Warwick.

A letter from the lordes at Windesore to the lordes at London.

If please you, for the tender passion of Iesus Christ, vse your wisdome, and temper your determination in such sort, as no blood be shed, nor crueltie vsed, neither of his graces part, nor of your lordships; for if it come to this point, both you and we are like to see presently with our eyes, that which every beine of all our hearts will bleed to behold. Wherefore, as true subiectes to the kings maiesty, as faithful Counsellors, though unworthy Counsellors to his maiesty, and his realme, and as lamantable petitioners, we beseech your lordships most humble, and from the bottome of our hearts, to take pity of the king and the realme, whereof you be principall members, and to set apart *Summum ius*, and to vie at this time *Tum bonum et equum*; and thinke not that this is written for any private seare or other respect of our selues, but for that vndoubtedly we heare and know more of this point with your fauors, than you there do know; yea, and howeuer it shall please you to account of vs, we are true men to God, to the king, to the realme, and so will we liue and dy where euer we be, and in respect of them thre esteeme little any other person or thing, no not our owne liues; and hauing cleere consciences, as somewhat sooner ill maie followe, vpon the vse of extremities here, that neither now is, nor shall be found fault in vs, and so quieting our selues we rest. Now to that you would haue the lord protector to do, for his part his grace and wee haue communed herein, & much to our comfortes and yours also, if it shall like you to waite the case, who is contented if you will againe for your parts vse equity, to put that now in execution which many times he hath declared by his wordes, that is to saie, so as the king and the realme maie be otherwise well serued, hee passeth little for the place he now hath. Sparye he both consider, that by the kings maiesties with all your aduices, and the consents of the nobles of the realme he was called to the place (as appereth in writing vnder his maiesties great Seale and Signe, whereunto your owne handes also and ours, with all others the lordes of the vpper house in parliament are subscribed): And therefore in this lent sort to be thus thrust out against his will, hee thinkeeth it not reasonable: he is here with the kings person, where his place is to be, and we bee here with him we trust in God for the good seruice of the king, the weale of the realme, and the good acquitting both of his Grace and of your lordships, which we most heartily desire, and so such hope beere thereof, as if you be not too long bent vpon the extremities, as is reported, and as equity canne take no place, my lordes grace maie liue in quiet, and the kings maiesties affaires maintained in such order, as by his maiesties Counsellors shall be thought convenient; marie to put himselfe simple into your handes, hauing hearte as both we and he haue, without first knowledge vpon what conditions, it is not reasonable. Life is sweete my lordes, and they saie, you seeke his blood and his death; which if ye do, and maie haue him otherwise conformable to reason, and by extremitye dyne him to seeke extremitye againe; the blood of him and others that shall die on both sides innocentlie, shall bee by God iustlie required at your handes. And when peradventure you would haue him againe vpon occasion of seruice, you shall see him to haue lost him. Wherefore god my lordes, we beseech you againe and againe, if you haue conceived

W b

any

any such determination, to put it out of your heads, and incline your hearts to kindnesse and humanitie, remembryng that he hath neuer been cruell to any of you, and why shoulde you be cruell to him? as we trust you be not, what so ever hath been said, but will shew your selues as conforinable for your parts, as his grace is contented, for the zeale he beareth to the king and the realme, to bee for his part, as this bearer sir Phillip Hobic will declare unto you, to whom we prae you to giue credite, and to returne him hither againe with an swere hereof. And thus beseeching the liuing God to direct your hearts to the making of a quiet end of these terrible tumults, we bid your lordships most hartlie well to fare. From the kings maiesties castle of Windsor the eight of October, 1549.

These letters notwithstanding, the same eight of October, after a common council in the Guild hal at London, whither all the lords of the counsell came, the lord Chancellor and other declared diuers abuses of the lord protector, desiring the citizens to be ayding and assisting with them, for the preserving of the kings maiesties person, which they greatly feared, being in his aduersaries hands. The lords dined with master Yorke one of the sheriffs, and in the afternoon proclamation was made in diuers places of the citie with trumpets, heraults, and kings at armes, wherein was contained diuers articles touching the euill government of the lord protector.

First they charged him with making inward diuision, whereby the quiet state of the realme left by king Henry the 8. was now disturbed, and thousands of the kings naturall subjects slain.

Item, the losse of his maiesties peeces beyand the sea, which his highnes sauer (not long before his decease) won to the honor of himselfe, and commoditie of the realme, not without the auenture of his owne person.

Item, that in all times of the wars in France and Scotland he hath enriched himselfe, and builded sumptuous and faire houses, leauing the kings poore soldiers unpaid of their wages.

Item, that he hath labored to make himselfe strong in all countries.

That he hath subuerted all lawes, iustice, and good order of the Realme, whereby he hath fearfully shaken the chaire of the kings state.

That he hath little esteemed the graue aduice of the kings good and faithfull counsellors.

That he hath little regarded the order appointed by the late H. Henry the 8. for the government of the king his sonne, his realmes and dominions in his tender age.

That he hath labored to sowe diuision in the realme among the nobles, gentlemen, and commons.

Finally, that it is easie for euery man to see what losse the king and realme have of late suffered by his wilfull negligence, and lacke of prouision and succour of the peeces beyand the sea. Subscribed,

The lord Rich Chancellor.

Lord Saint John lord great master.

Lord Sparquus of South-hampton.

The

The earle of Warwicke lord great chamberlaine.

The earle of Arundell lord chamberlaine.

The earle of Shrewsburie.

The earle of Southampton.

Sir Thomas Cheiney treasurer of household.

Sir John Gage constable of the tower.

Sir William Peter secretarie.

Sir Edward North knight.

Sir Edward Mountague knight, chiefe Justice of the common place.

Sir Ralph Sadler knight.

Sir John Baker knight.

Sir Edward Wotton knight.

Doctor Wotton deane of Canterburie.

Sir Richard Southwell knight.

The tenth of October, by a common counsell at the Guild hall, was granted foure hundred men of the citie, (100. to be horsemen) to be ready on the next morrow: and this day the lords dined with master Turke one of the sheriffs of London.

The 11. of October, the lords sitting at the L. great masters, sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the gard was sent to the king at Windsor, and seuered the L. protector from his person, and caused the garde to watch him till the lords coming. On the morrow, the lord chancelor with the rest of the counsell, rode to Windsor to the king, and that night the lord protector was put in ward into Beauchamps tower in the castle of Windsor.

The 14. of October in the afternoon, the duke of Somerset was brought from Windsor, riding betwixt the earles of Southampton, and of Hunting-ton, through Oldborne in at Petigate, and so to the tower of London, accompanied with diuers lords and gentlemen, with 300. horse: the lord maior, sir Ralph Warren, sir John Gresham, master Recorder, sir William Lock, and both the sheriffs, and other knights sitting on their horses against Cooper lane, and all the officers with halbarbes, and from Oldborne byrge to the tower, certayne aldermen or their deputies on horse-backe in euery streete, with a number of householders standing with bills as he passed. There was with him committed to the tower, sir Michaell Stanhope, sir Thomas Smith, sir John Thin knights, Wolfe of the priuie chamber, and Grey of Reading.

The 17. of October, king Edward came from Hampton court to his place in Southwarke, then called Suffolke place, and there dined, where after dinner he made master John Yorke one of the sheriffs of London knight, and then rode through the citie of London to Westminster.

Now when the duke of Somerset was first apprehended, Steph. Gardener B. of Winchester then being prisoner in the tower (as before ye haue heard) was borne in hand, he shoulde be set at libertie, in hope wherof he prepared him new apparell for that purpose, thinking verily to haue come aboarde within eight or tenne daies: but when he was forgotten, and nothing said unto him, by the space of one moneth after, he thought it good to put the lords in remem-

ber.

byance

Lord protector brought to the tower.

King Edward rode through London.

Proclamation against the lord protector.

Short letters  
of Sir. phen  
Gardner bishop  
of Winchester

byance by his letters, wherein (after commendations had unto them) he wrote as followeth: I have continued here in this miserable prison now one yere, one quarter, and one moneth, this same day that I wrote these my letters, with want of aire to relieue my body, want of booke to relieue my mind, want of god companie, the onely solace of this world, and finally, want of a iust cause why I shoulde haue come hither at all. Whereof this letter came not to my hands, but that the lords took it in good part, laughed herie merrillie thereat, saying, hee had a pleasant head, for towards wherof they gaue him leave to remaine still in prison five or six weekes after, without saying or sending a ny word to him, which when he considered, then hee wrote to them this letter following.

After my due commendations to your good lordships: Howsoeuer the time is stolen from you with the multitude of busineses and varietie of matters, wherewith ye bee traueilled, whereby ye rather want time (as I suppose) than bee gladd with it; yet with mee (being alone comfortles in this miserable prison) the time passeth more sensibly, and as the griefe groweth in length, so it byingeth more encomble and traueil with it. And being now the time of parliament, whereof I am a member in my degree, called unto it by writ, and not out from it by any fault, but only by power kept here: it is a double calamity to be detained in prison by so intolerable wrong, and excluded from this assembly so much against right. I have suffered the like in the late lord protector's time against all reason; which god hath giuen you power now to reforme, And among manie other things which in his time were by the same misse, no one thing (as I suppose) was of worse example, ne more prejudiciall to the good order of the high court of Parliament, which is the direction of all mens liues, lands, and goods in this realme, than to allowe for a president, that any one man being member thereof, might without cause be excluded, and so leited to parle there his minde in publicke matters, for the wealch of the realme, and such other priuate causes as do occur. If the strength of the parliament be not empaiued by wrong in one, because right consisteth not in number, it shall bee at the pleasure of him that ruleth, to do the same in me, whereby others may take more harme then I, as experience hath shewed in such examples. But I know it becommeth me not to reade the strength of that court, ne the order of it: the lawyers of this realme know that, and to their knowledge I submit my iudgment, and take for god that they allow. But this I dare say, when religion is entreated in a generall council of Christendome, if the rulers of the council let any mans repaire thither that hath right to be there. Whatsoeuer is there concluded, is in the lynes of the world abroad taken of no force, by excluding of one member wrongfully that should furnish the bodie, which I write into your lordships, for the good opinion I haue of you, trusting that ye intend not to uphold or followe the late lord protector's doings by wrong, but to fashion your proceedings, as they maie agree with iustice at home, and seem agreeable to reason, to others abroad: being so assured of mine innocence, that when your lordships shall heare what can be said against me: none answer thereunto, there shall appere cause why I shoulde haue had praise, thanks & commendations

from of the late L. protector (if truth, honestie, and due obedience might take therfore) and no cause of trouble or displeasure at all, so wrongfully haue I been tormented in this prison, so boldly dare I speake to you of my cause, with such an opinion and estimation of your wisdoms which I knowe, and reuerence, as I ought not, ne would not vainly hope to abuse you with words: but upon certain confidence of your indifferencies, verily I trust that ye will deeme & take things in such sort, as being plainly and truely opened, shall appere vnto you by-matter indeed. In consideration whereof, I reuew my suit vnto your lordships, instantly requiring you that I may be heard according to iustice, & that with such speed, as I delay of your audience giue not occasion to such as be ignorant abroad of my matter, to thinke that your lordships allowed and approved the detaining of me here. Which without hearing my declaration I trust ye will not, but haue such consideration of me, as mine estate in the common wealch, the passing my former life amongst you, and other respects do require, wherein you shall bind me, and do agreeably to your honours and iustice: the first course whereof, you haue honorably taken vpon you, to make open to the realm without respect, which is the onely establishment of al commonwelths, and therefore the zeale of him was allowed that said, *Fiat iustitia, & ruat munda*: signifying, that by it the world is kept from falling in decaye, although it might seeme otherwise in some respect, and some trouble to arise in doing it. And this I write, because in the late L. protector's time there was an insinuation made vnto me, as though I were kept here by policie, which with the violation of iustice take neuer good effect, as I doubt not of your wisdoms ye can and will consider, and do therefore accordingly: for the effectuall execution whereof I shall not faile to praise almighty God with the preservation and increase of your honours. From the tower. Thus much concerning these letters haue I thought good to set downe, for that I find not the same otherwise constant in larger discourses of the said W. writings.

The 29. of November, Robert Ket and William Ket his brother were delivered out of the tower of London, to Sir Edmond Windham knight, and the rise of Roystholme to be conveyed to Roystwich, where Robert Ket was hanged in chains on the top of Roystwich castle, and William Ket likewise hanged on the top of Windham Steele.

In the moneths of November and December, the Scots took Burthorpe in Scotland, and other holds then possessed by Englishmen, where the Scots slew man, woman, and child, except Sir John Luttrell the captaine, whom they took prisoner.

The lords of the counsell resorted to the tower of London, and there charged the lord protector with sundrie articles, which he confessed, and subscribed vnto them as followeth.

1. First, you did take vpon you the offices of protector and gouernor vpon condition expressedly and specially, that ye would do nothing in the kings affaires publicke or priuate, but by the assent of the late kings executors, or the most part of them.

2. Item, you contrarie to the same condition and promise, of your owne authority

Robert Ket and  
William Ket  
hanged.

holds lost in  
Scotland.



- anþpittie did stalle and let iustice, and subuerted the lawes as well by your letters, as by your commandement.
- 3 Item, you caused diuers persons rested and imprisoned for treason, murder, manslaughter, and felonie, to be discharged and to go at large, against the lawes and statutes of this realme.
- 4 Item, you haue made and ordained lieutenants for the kings armie, and other the kings waighthe affaires, vnder your owne writings and seales.
- 5 Item, you haue communed with the ambassadors of other realmes, discussing alone with them the waighthe matters and causes of this our realme.
- 6 Item, you haue sometimes rebuked, checked, and taunted as well pynally as openly, diuers of the kings most honozable counsellors, for the wrong and declaring their minds: aduices or opinions against your purpose in the kings waighthe affaires, saying sometime to them, that they were not worthy to sit in counsell, and sometimes saying to them, that you need not to open matters to them, and ye will be otherwise aduised, and that ye would if they were not agreeable to your opinions, put them out, and take in other at your pleasure.
- 7 Item, ye had and held against the lawes, in your own house, a court of requests, and thereby did inforce diuers of the kings subiects to answer for their free holds & goods, and determined the same to the subuersion of the same lawes.
- 8 Item, you being none officer, without the aduice of the council, or the more part of them, did dispose the officers for money of the kings gifts, and granted leases and wards of the kings, and gaue presentations of the kings benefices and bishopricks, hauing none authoritie so to do: and further, ye did meddle with selling of the kings lands.
- 9 Item, you commanded multiplication and alchimistrie to be practised, thereby to abate the kings coine.
- 10 Item, you are charged that ye haue diuers & many times both openly and pynally said & affirmed, that the nobles and gentlemen were the only causes of the dearth of things, whereby the people rose & did reforme things themselves.
- 11 Item, you caused proclamations to be made concerning inclosures, whereby the common people hath made diuers insurrections, and leuid open war, and destroyed and spoiled the kings subiects, which proclamation went forth against the wils of all the counsell.
- 12 Item, you caused an intinccion with certayne articles thereunto annexed, to be made out concerning inclosures, commons, highwaies, decaying of cottages, and diuers other things, giuing the commissioners authoritie to heare and determine the same causes, to the subuersion of the lawes and statutes of this realme, whereby much sedition, insurrection, and rebellion haue risen and grown among the kings maiesties subiects.
- 13 Item, you suffered the rebels and traitors to assemble and lie in campe and armor against the kings nobles and gentlemen, without any speaile subduing or appealing them.
- 14 Item, you did comfort and encourage diuers of the said rebels, by giuing to them diuers summes of your owne money, and by promising to diuers of them fees, rewards, and seruises.

15 Item,

- 15 Item, you in fauor of the said rebels did against the lawes, and caused proclamation to be made, that none of the said rebels or traitors should be taken or tured by anye manner of person, for anye of their offences in the said rebellion, to the clere subuersion of the lawes here.
- 16 Item, you haue said in the time of rebellion, that you liked well the doings and proceedings of the said rebellious and traitors, and said that the contentment of gentlemen gaue occasion to the common people to arise: saying that better it were for the commons to die, than for to perish utterly for lacke of liuing.
- 17 Item, you said that the lords of the parliament were loth to incline themselves to reformation of inclosures and other things, therefore the people haue god cause to reforme the things themselves.
- 18 Item, you after the report and declaration of the defaults and laches reported to you by them that did suruey Boloigne, and the peces, you saide you would neuer amend the faults.
- 19 Item, you would not suffer the kings peces beyonde the sea called Flemmen and Blackines, to be furnished with men and victuals, although that ye were aduertised of the defaults therein by the captaines of the said peces, as by others, and was also aduertised by the kings counsell, whereby the French king being the kings enemy was encouraged and comforted to invade and win the said peces to the kings great losse and dishonor.
- 20 Item, also you said, ye would not suffer the noble men and gentlemen to subdue and to repress the said rebellious in time conuenient, neither would you giue any authoritie to the said nobles and gentlemen, to the subduing of the said rebels, but wrote your letters to them to speake faire to the rebels, and to handle them gently.
- 21 Item, you haue caused the first of October last past, at Hampton court for the defence of your owne cause, diuers seditious bills to be written in counterfeited handes, and secretly to be shewen abroad in diuers parties of this realme, thus beguiling the good people, &c. meaning thereby for to stir and raise by the kings subiects into armor and open war.
- 22 Item, when that the kings maiesties pyncate counsellors of their lone and zeale that they did beare vnto the king and the realme, did counsell at London to come to you, to the intent to commune with you charitably, to amend your doings and misgouernance: you hearing of their assembly, did cause to be declared by letters in diuers places, the said lords to be traitors to the king, to the great disturbance of the realme.
- 23 Item, you declared and published vntruly as well to the kings maiestie and other the young lordes attendant vpon his maiesties person, and to the kings subiects at diuers and sundrye times and places, that the said lordes at London minded to destroye the king, and you required the king neuer to forget it, but to reuenge it, and likewise required the said young lordes to put the king in remembrance thereof, to the intent to make sedition and discord betwene the kings maiestie and his lordes.
- 24 Item, you said in the month of October last at Hampton court, and the

the 4.

eight



right of the same month at Windsor, at one of the same places these words: The lords of the council at London do intend to kill me, but if I die, the kingdom shall die, and if they kill me, they shall kill the king.

25 Item, you caused and procured by your owne letters, the kings people in great number to rise, and assemble in armor after the maner of war, to your aid and defence.

26 Item, the 9. of October last, you did of your own head sodainly remove the kings maiesties person late in the night from Hampton court to Windsor, without anye prouision there made for his Grace, whereby his highnes was not onely in great feare, but tooke also such disease as was to his great perill.

27 Item, you caused your owne seruants and friends at Hampton court, and at Windsor to be harressed with the kings armor, the kings graces seruants having none armor nor harness.

28 Item, you caused at Windsor your own person in the night time to be guarded in harness by many persons, leaving the kings maiesties person unguarded, and would not suffer his owne gard or seruants to be next the kings person, but appointed your seruants and friends to keepe the gates.

29 Item, you minded for to fly to Farley or to Wales, and laide posse hoyle and a boote and men for the same intent.

Edward D. of  
Somerset his  
last Submittioun.

I Edward Duke of Somerset, have read and considered these saide 29. articles before specified, and doe acknowledge my saide offences, faultes, and crimes, done and committed in the same, and most humble prostrate on my knees, do folie and wholie submit my selfe to the most abundant mercy and clemencie of the kings Maiestie, for the moderation of my saide offences, having my full trust and confidence, that his Maiestie with the aduise of his highnes most honorable counsaile, will consider mine offences, faultes, wronges, and proceedings, that if anye of my saide offences be by his clemencie, pardoned, remitted, or therwise discharged, that I maie enioie the benefite thereof, although the same be come unknowne. And farther I do most humble beseech all my Lordes and your highnes most honorable counsaile, not onely to be meane to his maiestie, to take alwaie and consider mine offences to have proceeded more of ignorance, negligence, folie, wilfulnes, and for lacke of good consideration, than of anye rankered or malicious hart, evil intent or thought, tending to any treason to his maiesty or realme: but that it may please his maiesty by the charitable aduise of their good lordships to have pity upon me, my wife, and children, and to take some mercifull way with me, not according to the extremity of his lawes, but after his great goodnes and clemencie, whereunto what I shall see. I doe most humbly with all my hart submit my selfe, as I then with mine owne hande the 23. day of December, in the 3. yeere of the raigne of our soveraigne King Edward the 6.

1550  
Bates created

The 12. of January, Sir John Russell lord private seale, was created earle of Bedford, and lord Saue John lord great master, was created Earle of Wiltshire: and Sir William Paget comptroller of the kings house, was made Lord Paget.

The

The same day at night, were murdered by St. Pulchers church against the kings head without felgate of London, two captaines that had served the king at Bolougne and elsewhere, the one was Sir Peter Gambo, the other Filiciga: which murder was committed by Charles Gauaro a Flemming, who came post from Bertholke to do that ad: on the morrow, he with three of his compaignes was taken in Smithfield by the lord Paget, and sent to felgate, and the foure and twentieth of January, they were all foure, Charles Gauaro, Balhafar Gauaro, Nicholas Disaluceron, and Francis Deualasco, had in a Cart to Smithfield, & by the way at the place where the murder was done, Charles Gauaro had his right hand stricken off the cart wheale, and then all hanged in Smithfield.

Peter Gambo  
another cap-  
tain must be  
seen.

Gauaro and o-  
ther hanged.

The 22. of January, John earle of Bedford, William L. Paget, Sir Wil. Peter knight, one of the kings Secretaries, and Sir John Mason knight, chiefe clerk of the Council, were sent into France Ambassadors to the French King.

The 27. of January, Humfrey Arundell esquire, Thomas Holmes, Winflowe and Bery, captaines of the rebels in Denonshire, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Ans. reg. 4.  
Rebels execu-  
ted.

On Candlemas day, William L. Saint-John earle of Wiltshire, L. great master, and president of the Council, was made Lord Treasurer: John Dudley earle of Warwicke, lord great chamberlaine, was made lord great master, William Parre Marques of Southampton, was made Lord great Chamberlaine: Lord Wentworth was made L. chamberlaine of household: Sir Anthony Wingfield captaine of the guard, was made comptroller of the kings house: and Sir Thomas Darcy knight, was made viz chamberlaine, and captaine of the Guard: and the earle of Arundell late lord Chamberlaine, with the Earle of Southampton, were put off the council, and commanded to keepe their houses in London.

New officers

The submittioun of the D. of Somerset prisoner in the tower, made the 2. of February.

I am most fearefull and full of heavinesse my verie good Lordes, to stande at my last letters were not better accepted at your lordships handes, to whome I am bounde during my life, for your most gentle and mercifull dealing with me, that it pleased your goodnes to bying my case to a fine. I trust your lordships neuer thinke that I ever did or would intende to stande against the kings Maiestie and your lordships goodnes, or that I would goe about to iustifie my cause, saving his maiestie and your lordships offereth clemencie, mercie and pardon. Although the fine be to me impossible, yet I doe commit my selfe wholly to his highnes, and your lordships mercies. I pray onely the moderation of it: And did couet to declare to your goodnes mine inability to beare it: And yet referred all to his Maiestie, and your wisdom, goodnes, and discretion. And I most humble desire your lordships not to thinke that I was about to contende with your lordships, when I did speake of my conscience, I might erre, in that I thought I did for the best, as I doe acknowledge and confesse, that neither I am the wisest man in the

Edward D. of  
Somerset his  
second submitti-  
oun.

house,

woylde, nor yet if I were, I shoulde not escape without a most singular grace, but manye times I shoulde offende: But I leave all that, and most humble, simple, whole, and lowlye, I submit my selfe to the kings spaciellie, and to your good lordships: appealing from the rigour and extremitie of his spaciellie lawes, to his maiesties great mercie and clemencie, praying your goodnesse to bee meane to his spaciellie not to bee offended with me, nor to exclude his maiesties mercie and benignitie from me, for my rudenes and lack of discretion, but to accept my god minde as one that faire woulde doo that were well. And when I cannot, or haue not doone that thing I ought to do, I woulde gladlie amende, and am readie at all times, without condition to doo and suffer willingly that thing that your honours will appoint mee, accepting that clemencie or mercie wherewith I obtayne to bee of his spaciellies, and your goodnesse: most humble on my knees praying, his spaciellie and your good Lordships to pardon mine offences, and to order mee for them as to his moste high mercifull clemencie shall appere convenient. And finallye flying from extremitie of iustice, desire mercie, as you be and are called most mercifull counsellours, not imputing my writings, and doings hitherto as of stoutenesse or stubbornnesse, but onlie for lacke of discretion and wisdom. For the which once againe I require pardone fauor: to be shewed. And if it pleased your good lordships to heare me, I trust ye should find me lowly unto your honours, and so conformable unto your lordships orders, that I trust to make amends, and obtaine pardon for my former folly. And thus I most humbly commit your good lordships to almighty God: To whome I shall alwaies pray that he make long continue in hono. From the Towre the 2. of Februarie.

D. of Somerset  
delivered.

The 6 of Februarie the D. of Somerset was delivered out of the towre, and that night he supped at sir Io. Yorks, one of the sheriffs of London.

The 10 of Februarie one Bel a Suffolke man, was hanged and quartered at Tyborne, for moving a new rebellion in Suffolke and Essex.

After diuers meetings of our ambassadors with the Lordes of Fraunce, at Boloigne, a final peace was concluded, upon condition, that the french king paying a certaine summe of monie to the king of Englande, shoulde haue rendered to him the Towne of Boloigne, and all the fortres thereunto belonging, with all such artillerie and munition as was there at the taking thereof by the English: for the performance whereof, hostages were by both parties to be deliuered, so that on the last daie of March a generall peace was proclaimed betwene the kings of England and France, the emperor and the Scotter.

Proclamation  
of peace.

The 8. of Aprill, hostages on either part were deliuered, at a certaine place appointed between Arde & Wisnesse, where at the deliuerance of the hostages of our party, was the L. Cobham deputy of Calcis, sir Io. Wollope knight, captaine of the territory and castle of Wisnesse, sir Maurice Denice knight treasurer of Calcis, and Francis Hall comptroller of the same toln, with diuers Gentlemen and other. And on the french part, were Mounfier de la Raspe, Mounfier Chastillon, Mounfier de Traye, & other. The hostages for the English were

was the duke of Suffolke, the earle of Hertford, the L. Matreuers, the L. Talbot, the L. Strange, and the L. Fitzwater. On the french part, duke de Angyne, Marques de Mayne, Mounfier Memorancie constables son of France, Mounfier a Vieidame de Charters, la Tremoile, Mounfier Haueden, the admirals sonne of France.

The citizens of London, of diuers misteries, and corporations having certain chanterly lands, for priests wages, obits and lights, suppressed into the kings hands by act of parliament, valued by the commissioners to 1000. l. the peers, purchased the said yearly quitrents of the L. for 20000. l. to be paid within 8. daies after, by the counsailes commandement: which caused the saide corporations to sel much of their best lands, far better cheap than they had bought their quitrents, as after 16. or 14. piers purchase, &c.

The King sold  
chantry lands.

Also the Lorde Palat. of London, and the aldermen purchased all the liberties of Southwarke which was in the kings handes, and sold the Citie about 1000. markes.

Liberties of  
Southwarke  
purchased.

The eight of Aprill, the Duke of Somerset came to the court to the kings spaciellie at Greenewich, where hee was honourable received of the King and his Counsaile, and dined with the king, and was sworn of the Privie Counsaile.

D. of Somerset  
sworne of the  
counsaile.

The 12. of Aprill, doctor Nich. Ridley B. of Rochester, was installed bishop of London in St. Pauls church.

Doctor Ridley  
bishop of Lon-  
don.

The 25. of Aprill, the towne of Boloigne was yielded to the french king, and all the marches of the same, and all Englishmen clerike excoiled, which was done by composition, for a sum of money to be paid to the L. of England, and pledges for the same deliuered, as is aforesaid touched. Those pledges, to wit, the D. of Suffolke, and other were redeliuered by the parties aforesaid, at the deliury of the towne.

Boloigne yel-  
ded to the  
french.

The 2. of May, Ioan Knel, alias Butcher, or Ioan of Kent, was bzint in Smithfield for heresie, that Christ took no flesh of the virgin Mary. There preached before him at the stake, to haue converted him from her heresie, M. Story, but hee not regarding his doctrine, said to him he lied like, &c.

Ioan Butcher  
bzint.

Ric. Lion, Goddard Gorran, and Ric. Ireland, were executed the 14. of Maie, for attempting a new rebellion in Kent.

Rebels of Kent  
executed.

Trinity terme was adioyned till Michaelmas, for that the gentlemen should kepe the commons from commotion.

Term adioyned

The 3. of Iune, the L. Lisle son and heire to the earle of Mar toke, was married to the D. of Somersets daughter at Shene, the L. spaciellie being there present.

A marriage.

This yeere Saint Barnabes daie was kept Holydaie, and the same daie at night the high Altar in Pauls Church was pulled downe, and a Table set where the Altar stood, with a Table of stone beneath the Steppes, and on the Sunday next a Communion was sung at the same Table, and hostie after all the Altars in London were taken downe, and Tables placed in their places.

S. Barnaby  
kept holle.  
High altar in  
Pauls pulled  
downe.

The 30. of Iulie, Thomas Lorde Wriothesley Earle of South-hampton, knight

Earle of Southampton be-  
crised.

knight of the garter, and one of the executors to king Henry the 8. deceased at Lincoln place in Wobborne, and was buried in St. Andrews church there.

In the month of August, a miller, servant to the miller at Wattlebylge in Southwarke, was set on the pillorie in west Cheape of London, and had both his eares cut off, for seditious wordes by him spoken against the duke of Somerset, as that he had proclaimed himselfe king in the countrey, which was false.

Also in the month of September, Grig a poulter of Surrey, taken among the people for a prophet, in curing of divers diseases by wordes and psalters, and saying he would take no money, &c. was by commandement of the Earle of Warwick, and other of the counsaile, set on a scaffold in the Towne of Croydon in Surrey, with a paper on his breast, wherein was written, his deceitfull and hypocriticall dealings. And after that on the eight of September set on the pillorie in Southwarke, being then our ladie saies there kept, and the spall: of London with his brethren the aldermen riding through the saies, the saide Grig asked them and all the citizens forgiveness. Thus much for Grig.

Of the like counterfette phisition have I noted (in the summarie of my Chronicles Anno 1582.) to be set on horse-backe, his face to the horse-taile, the same taile in his hande as a byble, a collar of Iordans about his necke, a whetstone on his breast, and so led through the citie of London, with ringing of balons, and banishing. Whereunto I had added as followeth. Such deceivers no doubt are many, who being neuer trained by in reading, or practise of phisicke and Chirurgie, boast to doe great cures, especially upon women, as to make them straight that before were crooked, or cramped in any part of their bodies, &c. But the contrary is true, for some have received gold, when they have better deserved the whetstone. These wordes tending generallie against all such counterfette phisitions, hath bin so hardly taken to hart, by one private person, not of the best, or second sort, (but my common adversary) that he hath largely libelled against me, to my great slander, but to the sol bewraying of himselfe, as one touched more then other, that being wiser, helde their peace. I forbeare to answer his libelling, as I have before borne his false accusing, and other greater matters, still referring my cause to the Almighty: who abhorreth lying lips, and maketh the proud to stumble.

On Saint Valentines daie, at Fewertham in Kent, one Arden a gentle man was murdered by procurement of his owne wife, for the which fact, she was the fourteenth of March byent at Canterburie: Michaell master Ardens man was hanged in chaires at Fewertham, and a maiden byent: Mosbie and his sister were hanged in Smithfield at London: Greene which had fled, came againe certaine yeeres after, and was hanged in chaires in the high way against Fewertham, and Blacke Will the ruffian that was hired to doe that ad, after his first escape, was apprehended, and byent on a scaffold at Finsbury in Zealand.

Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, having been divers times conspired from the Tower of London to Lambeth, (to wit, on the 15. and the 28. of

Bishop of Winchester de-  
ceitfully

December,

December, the 8. the 12. and the 16. of January, the 13. and 24. of February) and at every the said times, examined by the archbishop of Canterburie, and other the kings high commissioners, he was now on the said 14. of February deprived of his bishopricke, and committed againe to the tower: Into his place was translated doctor Poynt, late bishop of Rochester: and master John Scorie was made bishop of Rochester.

The 5. of Aprill, sir Thomas Darcey Vicechamberlaine, and captaine of the garde, was created lord Darcey at Chenevich.

The 24. of Aprill, George of Paris a dutch man was byent in Smithfield an Arrian byent to an Arrian.

The 25. of May about none, was an earthquake at Blechingly, Godstone, Earthquake. Kitley, Rigate, Croydon, Buntington, Alberie, and divers other places in Southerey.

In the month of June, the earle of North-hampton, the bishop of Ely and her, were sent ambassadors into France, who were there honorably received and entertained. And after that came divers lords of France into England, who were lodged at Suffolk place in Southwarke.

The 9. of July, the base monies (copied in the time of king Henry the first fall of the first fall of the eight, and king Edward the sixth) was proclaimed the shilling to go for 9 pence base monies, the groate for 3. pence, which took effect immediately after the proclamation was made.

The 15. of Aprill, the infectious sweating sicknesse began at Shrewsbury, Sweating which ended not in the North part of England untill the ende of September. In this space what number died, it cannot be well accompted, but certaine it is that in London in fewe daies 960. gave up the ghost: it began in London the 9. of July, and the 12. of July it was most vehement, which was so terrible, that people being in best health, were suddenly taken, and dead in foure and twenty houres, and twelue, or lesse, for lacke of skill in guiding them in their sweat. And it is to be noted, that this mortalitie fell chiefly on rather on men, and those also of the best age, as betwixt thirty and forty yeeres, fewe women, nor children, nor olde men died thereof. Sleeping in the beginning was present death, for if they were suffered to sleepe but halfe a quarter of an houre, they neuer spake after, nor had any knowledge, but when they wakened fell into panges of death. This was a terrible time in London, for many one lost suddenly his friends, by the sweat, and their money by the proclamation. Seaven honest householders did slip together, and before eight of the clocke in the next morning, six of them were dead: they that were taken with full stomacks escaped hardly. This sicknesse followed English men as well within the realme, as in strange countries: therefore this nation was much afraid of it, and for the time began to repent and remember God, but as the disease relented, the devotion decayed. The first wake died in London 800. persons.

The 17. of August, the shilling which of late was called by the name. Second fall of pence, was called downe to 6. d. the groate to 2. d. the halfe groate to one penny, the penny to an halfe penny.

The

The last of August, Sir Francis Ingelfield, maister Walgrave, and maister Rochester, being the chiefe of the lady Mary the kings sisters house, were committed to the tower of London.

The 10. of October D. Daie bishop of Chichester, and doctor Hethe bishop of Worcester, which had lien long prisoners in the flete, were depose of their Bishoppicks, by the bishop of London in Paules church, and sent againe to the flete.

Dukes & earles created.

The 11. of October, at Hampton court, lord Marquess Dorset, was created duke of Suffolk: the earle of Marwick was created duke of Northumberland: the earle of Wiltshire was created Marquess of Wiltshire: Sir Wil. Harbert lord of Cardife, maister of the horse, was made L. of Carmarden, and created erle of Pembroke. The king also made William Cecil his secretary, M. John Cheeke one of his chawncellors, M. Henrie Dudley, M. Henry Nevill knights.

D. of Somerset brought to the Tower.

The 16. of October, Edward Seimer Duke of Somerset, the Lorde Gray of Wilton, Sir Ralph Vane, Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir Myles Partridge, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir Thomas Arundell knights, and divers other Gentlemen, were brought to the Tower of London. The next morrowe, the Dutchesse of Somerset was also brought to the Tower. The liberties of the Stileyard were seized into the kings hands for divers causes forfeyted, contrarie to the entercourse.

Liberties of the Stileyard seized.

New coines of gold and silver.

The 30. of October, was proclaimed a new coine both of golde and silver, to wit, a whole soueraign of fine gold of 30.s. Another peece of fine gold called an angel of 10.s. The third peece called an angelet of fine gold of 5.s. Another peece of crowne gold called a soueraign of 20.s. the halfe soueraign of crowne gold of 10.s. the third peece of crowne golde of 5.s. the fourth peece of crowne gold of 2.s.6.pence.

A peece of silver of 5.s. sterling, the second peece of 2.s.6.d. sterling, the third peece a shilling of 12.d. sterling, the 4. peece of 6.d. sterling, of smaller monie a penny of the double rose, not sterling but base, an halfe penny of the single rose, the 3. peece a farthing with a port close.

The Queene of Scottes coming to London.

The Queene of Scotts being lately arriv'd at Portsmouth, coming out of Fraunce, and desiring licence of the king to passe through England into Scotland, was honorably received, and conueied towards London: on the second day of November, the said Q. came by water from Hampton court, and landed at Paules wharfe, from whence she rode accompanied with divers noble men and ladies of England, beside her own train of Scotland, to the bishop of Londons palace, where she received (presented by the chamberlain of London, as a gift of the city) certaine kinds of victuals for her provision, as beeces, muttons, heales, swans, and other kind of poultry meates, with bread, suet, wine, bare, wax, &c. On the 4. of November the said Q. rode to the White hall at Westminster, in her chariot, accompanied with the lady Margaret Dowglas, the dutchesse of Richmond, the dutchesse of Suffolk, the Dutchesse of Northumberland, with divers noble women of England, and Ladies of Scotland, following after her: the Dukes of Suffolke and Northumberland, and the lord

Treasurer

Treasurer receiveth her within the court gate, all the guard standing in each side: and at her entering into the hall, the king stood in the upper end of the hall, the Earle of Marwick holding the sword afore the king, shee kneeling downe, the king took her up, and kissed her, and by the hande led her up into her chamber of presence, and so from thence to the queens chamber of presence, where he kissed all the ladies of Scotland, and so departed for a while. And that day shee dined on the Quenes side with the king, the kings service and hers comming both together, the kings on the right hande, the queens on the left hande, the sitting by the king apart by his cloth of estate: All the great ladies of England, and the ladies of Scotland, dined in the queens great chamber, all most sumptuously served. After dinner, the king shewed unto the Q. his galleries, gardens, &c. and about foure of the clock he brought hir down by the hand into the hall, where he kissed hir, and so she departed to the bishops palace as afore.

The 6. of November the saide Scottish Quene departed towarde Scotland, shee rode from Paules through all the high streetes of the Citie, out at Bishops gate, accompanied with divers noble men and women, to conueie her through the Citie to Shorditch Church, the Duke of Northumberland having of horsemen standing in Cheape-side with faulcons 100. persons, thereof 40. Gentlemen apparelled in blacke velvet, garded with white, with velvet hats, and white feathers, and chaines of gold about their neckes, next them 120. horsemen of the earle of Pembrokes, with blacke faulcons, hats and feathers, next them 100. of the lord treasurers gentlemen and yeomen, with faulcons, which three ranches of horsemen, compased from the crosse in Cheape, to Wychen lane end: and when the said nobles had brought her to Shorditch church, they took their leave and departed; the sheriffes of London had the conduction of her to Waltham townes end, where they left her, and harbengers were sent afore into euerie shire to the borders of Scotland, that euerie therif in euerie shire, accompanied with the gentlemen of the country, should receiue hir, & make provision for lodging and victualing both for hir selfe, family, and horses, till she came to the borders of Scotlande at the charges of the shires.

The earle of Arundell and the L. Payer sent to the tower.

The 30. and last of November, by commandement from the L. counsell, order was taken in London, that euerie household should see to his familie, and keepe his house, hanting in a readinesse that daie a man in harness in euerie house, but not to go abroad till they should be called, if neede were: and further, that on the night following there should bee kept a good and substantiall watch of householders in euerie ward, which was so done.

And on the next morrowe being the first of December, the Duke of Somerset was had from the tower of London by water, and that London bridge at due of the clocke in the morning, and so went to Westminster, where was made ready a great scaffold in Westminster hall, and there the said Duke appeared before the Lords and peeres of the realme, the Lorde William Poulter Marques of Winchester and lord high treasurer of England, that day sitting under

D. of Scotts returned toward Scotland.

D. of Somerset arraigned and condemned.

under the cloth of estate as high steward of England, the indictment of the said duke being read, he was immediately arraigned on the same of felony & treason, and after tried by his peers the nobles there present, which did acquit him of the treason, but found him guilty of the felony: whereupon after their verdict given, he had judgement to be had from thence to the place he came from, and from thence to the place of execution, there to be hanged till he were dead: but the people in the hall supposed he had bene clearely quit, when they saw the axe of the tower put downe, made such a thicke casting vpp of caps, &c. that their crie was heard to the long Ayre beyonde Charing crosse, which made the lords astonished. About five of the clocke at night the said duke landed at the Crane in the Wintrie, and so was had through Canblewaite strate to the tower.

Muster of host  
men before king  
Edward.

The 7. of December, there was a muster before the king in St. James field beyond Charing crosse, the king sitting on horse-backe with his privie counsell about him. First came the kings pensioners riding all in complete harness, foure trumpeters riding before them: then the kings standard, and every pensioner had two men following after them with their speares: then followed a hundred of the lord treasurers men with a trumpet and a standard afore them: next a hundred of the Duke of Northumberland's men, with a trumpet and a standard, foure of them in velvet coats on their harness: next the lord pynale scales men, a hundred, with a trumpet and a standard: next the marques of North-hampton men a hundred with a trumpet and a standard: next the earle of Rutland's men fiftie, with a trumpet and a standard, twenty of them in velvet cassocks on their harness: next the earle of Huntingdon, fiftie with a trumpet, and a standard: next the earle of Pembroke's men, 100. with a trumpet and a standard: next the lord Darcie 50. with a trumpet and a standard: last of all the 11. wardens of the Cinqueports 100. with a trumpet and a standard. All these rode twice afore the king five in a ranke all in complete harness, and well hoised.

The 20. of December, doctor Tunstall bishop of Durham, which had long laine at his house by Colbarbard in Chamis strate, was had from thence to the tower of London.

The 21. of December, the great scale was taken from the lord Rich being then lorde Chancellor of England, by the Duke of Northumberland, and the earle of Pembroke in the afternoon: and on the next morrowe the keeping thereof was committed to doctor Godrike bishoppe of Ely, one of the kings counsell, he was sworne lord chancelor on the 22. of January in the Chancery, the lord treasurer gave him his oth.

The 22. of January, Edward duke of Somerset was beheaded on the tower hill. The same morning early the constables of every warbe in London (according to a precept directed from the counsell to the Mayor) streightly charged every household of the same citie not to depart any of them out of their houses before ten of the clocke of that day, meaning thereby to restrain the great number of people, that otherwise were like to have bene at the said execution: notwithstanding by seven a clock the tower hill was covered with a great

Duke of Somerset beheaded.

1552

great multitude, repairing from all parts of the citie, as well about of the suburbs, and before 8. of the clocke the duke was brought to the scaffold inclosed with the kings gard, the sheriffs officers, the wardens of the tower, & other with halbaros: the duke being ready to have ben executed, suddenly the people were driven into a great feare, & so no more knowing the cause: wherefore I thinke it good to write what I saw concerning that matter.

Great feare  
with small cause

The people of a certaine hamlet, which were warned to be there by 7. of the clocke to give their attendance on the lieutenant, now came through the porters: & perceiving the duke to be already on the scaffold, the foremost began to run, crying to their followes to followe fast after, which suddennes of these men being weaponed with bills and halbaros their running, caused the people which first saw them, to thinke some power had come to have caused the duke from execution, and therefore to crie away, away, whereupon the people ran one way some another, many fell into the tower ditch, and they which carried thought forkepaten had been brought, some said it thundered, some that a great rumbling was in the earth under them, some that the ground moved, but there was no such matter, more than the trampling of their feete, which made some noise.

The 17. of February, on which day was received the books of the reliefe of all the wardens of London towards the new hospitals by the kings commissioners. The counsell dined at St. Cowpers the shrieve, and after dinner master Thomas Courteys alderman came thither to speake with the lord chancelor for a matter he had depending afore him in the chancery, but for his misdeemeanor in words and signes to the lord chancelor at that time, the said St. Courteys was committed to ward in the Fleet.

The 26. of February, Sir Ralph a Vane and Sir Miles Partridge were hanged on the tower hill, Sir Michael Stanhope with Sir Thomas Arundel were beheaded there: all which foure persons took on their death that they never offended against the kings maiestie, nor against any of his counsell.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Sir Ralph a  
Vane and other  
executed.

The last of April, through negligence of the gun-powder makers, a certaine house burners to the Tower of London, with the last of powder, was blown by and burnt, the gun-powder makers being sixtine in number, were all daine.

House blown  
up with gun-  
powder.

The 16. of May, was a goodly muster of hostemen made before the king in the park at Greenwich.

Muster of  
hostemen.

Under the kings banner, his band of pensioners, in number 150. everye pensioner two great houses and a gelding, the lord Bray their lieutenant.

The lorde Marques of Winchester high treasurer, under his banner the halcon, one hundred men.

The duke of Northumberland great master of the kings household, under the white lyon and the ragged staffe, fiftie.

The duke of Suffolk, under the bulcote in the star, an hundred and ten.

The earle of Bedford lord pynale scale, under the goat, an hundred.

The marques of North-hampton high chamberlaine, under the unicorn, an hundred.

372

The earle of Warwick the master of the kings horses, under the white lyon, fiftie.

The earle of Huntington under his banner, fiftie.

The earle of Northampton under the peacocks, fiftie.

The earle of Pembroke under the green dragon, fiftie.

The lord Darcie under the maidens bodie, fiftie.

The lord Cobham under the Daricns head, fiftie.

The lord Clinton lord admirall under the anchor, fiftie.

The lord Warden of the five ports, under the rose in the sunne beames, an hundred.

In the moneth of April before Saint Georges date, Garter the king of armes was sent by the kings maiestie, to the lord Paget prisoner in the towre of London, to fet and take from him the false lord Paget the Garter and George, pertaining to the order of the garter, which garter and George, the said king at armes called Garter took from the said lord Paget in such order as the same was delivered to him when he was made knight of the same order. And the said lord Paget was well content (as it seemed) to part therewith, saying it was the kings pleasure it should be so. The king sent the same garter and George to the Earle of Warwickes sonne and heire to the Duke of Northumberland, who was made knight of the said order, in some and place of the other.

The 26. of July, began the preparing of the Grey friers house in London for the poore fatherlesse chyldren: and also in the latter end of the same month, began the repairing of Saint Thomas hospitall in Southwarke, for poore impotent and lame persons.

The thirde of August, at Spidolton eleven miles from Oxford, a woman brought forth a childe, which had two perfect bodieles from the navel upward, and were so joined together at the navel, that when they were laid in length, the one head and body was eastward, and the other west: the legs for both the bodieles grew out at the midst where the bodieles joined, and had but one ilme for the erectments of both bodieles: they lived eightene daies, and were women chyldren.

The 8. of August, were taken at Quinborough thre great fishes called dolphins: and the weeke following at Blackwall, were five more taken, and brought to London, the least of the m was more than any horse.

This moneth of August began the great poultrie for the poore in London, towards the which every man was contributory, and gave certaine money in hand, and consented to give a certaine weekly.

The 7. of October, were thre great fishes called Whirlepoles taken at Graulend, which were drawn up to the kings bldge at Westminster.

In this moneth of October, the king demanded of the merchant advenurers by way of prest of every broad cloth then shipped to Bataves mart, twentie shillings sterling to be paid at Antwerp for certaine debt there, and they to have the kings hand for the repayment thereof, which did at that time amount to more than 40000. pound.

No. Greene.  
Garter and  
George taken  
from the lord  
Paget by the  
kings appoint-  
ment.

Grey friers in  
London an hos-  
pittall.

W. moulter.

Great fishes.

Great fishes  
taken.

Spent by the  
merchant ad-  
venurers.

The 17. of October, the Sergeants feast was kept at Wykes Inne by Wyboorne, master Robert Brooke recorder of London being the principall of the new Sergeants, and five more besides him: the lord mayor and aldermen being bidden to the same feast, rode from the lords maiors house by Frides gate through cheape, and out at Fleetgate all in their scarlet gobones to the said Wykes Inne.

The first of November, being the feast of all Saintes, the new Service booke called Of common praiser began in Pauls church, and the like through the whole citie, the bishop of London Doctor Ridley executing the service in Pauls church in the forenoon in his rochet onely, without coope or bestment preached in the quire: and at afternoone he preached at Pauls crosse, the lord mayor, aldermen, and crafts in their best liveries being present: which sermon tending to the setting forth the said late made Booke of Common prayer continued till almost five of the clocke at night, so that the mayor, aldermen, and companies entered not into Pauls church as had been accustomed, but departed home by torchlight. By this Booke of Common praiser all carps and bestments were forbidden through England, and prebends of Pauls left off their hoods, the bishoppes left their crosses, &c. as by an act of parliament more at large is set out.

After the feast of all Saintes, the upper quire in Saint Pauls church in London where the high altar stood, was broken downe, and all the quire there about: and the table of the Communion was set in the lower quire where the priests sing.

The 23. of November, the chyldren were taken into the hospitall at the Grey friers called Christs hospitall, to the number of almost foure hundred. And also sick and poore people into the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southwarke, in which two places, the chyldren and poore people should have meate, wyne, lodging, and cloth, of the almes of the citie.

The 7. of December, the Earle of Arundell was discharged of imprisonment out of the towre of London, and went from thence to his place by horse and. On Christmas day in the afternoon, wherethe lord mayor and aldermen rode to Pauls, all the chyldren of Christs hospitall, stood in stay from Saint Dunstons lane in Cheape towards Pauls, all in one kerry of russet cotton, the men chyldren with red caps, the women chyldren with white on their heads, all the masters of the hospitall foremost: next them the Widdowes and foure virgins, and betwene every thre chyldren one woman keeper, which chyldren were in number 340.

The king kept his Christmas with open household at Wyndesore, George Fencers gentleman of Lincolns Inne, being lord of the merrie dispositions all the thirte daies, who so pleasantly and wisely behaved himselfe, that the king had great deliight in his pastimes.

On monday the fourth of January, the said lord of merrie dispositions came by water to London, and landed at the towre wharfe, entered the towre, and then rode through towre strate, where he was receaved by Sergeant Vawce lord of misraile to John Mainard one of the Sheriffs of London, and so conducted through

Sergeants  
hall.

Booke of com-  
mon praiser.

First children  
in Christs  
hospittall.

First entry of  
the children in  
Christs hospitall.

1557  
Lord of merrie  
dispositions.

The sheriffs  
lord of misraile.

through the cite with a great company of young lordes and gentlemen to the house of sir George Barne lord mayor, where he with the chiefe of his company dined, and after had a great banquet, and at his departure, the lord mayor gave him a sharding cap with a cover of silver and gilt, of the value of ten pounds for a reward, and also set a hogthead of wine and a barrell of beer at his gate for his traine that followed him, the residue of his gentlemen and servants dined at other aldermens houses, and with the thicrife, and so departed to the tower wharfe againe, and to the court by water, to the great commendation of the mayoꝝ and aldermen, and highly accepted of the king and counsell.

In the month of January, the king fell sicke of a cough at White hall, which grievously encreased, and at the last, ended in a consumption of the lungs.

The first of March began a parliament at Westmynster, and all the lordes spirituall and tempozall assembled that date in the White hall in their robes, where a sermon was preached in the kings chapel by doctor Ridley bishop of London, and his maiesty with divers lordes received the communion. Which being done, the king with the lordes in order, went into the kings great chamber on the kings stee, which that day was prepared for the lordes house: the king sitting under his cloth of estate, and all the lordes in their degrees, the bishop of Ely doctor Godrike lord Chancellor, made a proposition for the king: which being ended, the lordes departed. This was done, because the king was sickely.

The mayroz after, the burgesse sat in the common house at Westmynster, and chose for their speaker master Diar, one of the late made sergeants at the law.

The 3. of March being good friday, the parliament brake up, and was clerly dissolved at the kings palace of White hall at 7. of the clocke at night.

The 3. of Aprill, being monday after Easter day, the children of Chylles hospitall in London came from thence through the cite to the sermon kept at St. Maris spittle, all clothed in plonket gasses and red caps, and the maiden children in the same hysers, with her chylles on their heads, all which with their matrones and other governess were there placed on a scaffold of eight stages, and there sat the same time, which was a goodly shew.

The tenth of Aprill, the lord mayoꝝ of London was sent for to the court at White hall, and there at that time the king made him give to him, to the commonalties and citizens, for to be a hospice house for the poore and idle persons of the Cite of London, by place of Wyndehell, and seven hundred marks land of the Swanow rents, with all the beds, bedding, and other furniture of the hospitall of the Swanow, towards the maintenance of the said twelve houses of Wyndehell. And the hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southwiche, king Edward confirmed the said gift, by his charter dated the six and twentieth of June next following.

The 11. of Aprill, the lord mayoꝝ was presented to the king in his palace of White hall at Westmynster, and was made knight by his maiesty, and the same day the king removed in the afternone to Wyndehell.

In this month of Aprill and in May, commissioners were directed through England,

England, for all the church goods remaining in cathedrall and parish churches, that is to say, towels of golde and silver, crosses, candlesticks, censors, chalices, and all other such like, with their ready money, to be delivered to the master of the kings jewels in the tower of London, all coopes and vestments of cloth of gold, cloth of tisse, and silver, to the master of the kings wardrobe in London, the other coopes, vestments, and ornaments to be sold, and the more to be delivered to the kings treasurer sir Edmond Peckham knight, reserving to every church one chalice or cup, with table clothes for the communion bazed at the discretion of the commissioners, which were for London the lordes mayoꝝ, the bishop, the lord chiefe Justice, with other.

The 20. of May, by the encouragement of one Sebastian Cabot, thre great ships wel furnished were set forth for the adventure of the unknowne boiage to Polconia, and other east partes by the north seas, divers merchants and other being free of that boiage, yelved towards the charges of the same five and twenty pounds apiece. Sir George Barnes and sir William Garrard being the principall doers therein.

About the same time two other ships were sent to take adventures southwardes.

Whiles king Edward lay dangerously sicke, lord Gilford the duke of Northumberland fourth son, married lady Jane the duke of Suffolks daughter, whose mother being then alive, was daughter to Mary king Henries sister, which was first married to the French king, and after to Charles duke of Suffolke. Also the earle of Pembrokes eldest son married lady Katherine, the said dukes second daughter. And Martin Keies gentleman porter, married Mary the third daughter of the duke of Suffolke. And the Earle of Huntingtons son called lord Hastings, married Katherine youngest daughter to the duke of Northumberland.

King Edward being about the age of 16. yeres ended his life at Wyndehell, on the first of July, when he had reigned six yeres, five moneths, and eode daies, and was buried at Westmynster. He was in this his youth a prince of such towardnes in vertue, learning, and all godly gifts, as seldom hath ben seen the like.

The 8. of July, the lord mayoꝝ of London was sent for to the court then at Wyndehell, to bring with him six aldermen, as many merchants of the staple, and as many merchant adventurers, unto whom by the counsell was secretly declared the death of king Edward, and also how he had obtained for the succession of the crowne by his letters pattents, to the which they were sworn, and charged to keepe it secret.

The 10. of July in the afternone about 3. of the clocke, lady Jane daughter to Francis Dutchesse of Suffolke, (which lady Jane was married to the lord Gilford Dudley, fourth sonne to the duke of Northumberland) was conveyed by water to the tower of London, and there received as Quene. After five of the clocke the same afternone, was proclamation made of the death of king Edward the first, and how he had obtained by his letters pattents, bearing date the 21. of June last past, that the lady Jane (as is aforesaid) should

Jewels and church plate called into the kings hands.

Boiage to Polconia.

Three notable marriages at Durham place.

King Edward deceased.

King Edwards death opened.

Lady Jane proclaimed quene.

An. reg. 7.

A parliament.

Whithorn (given to the cite of London.



be better to the crowne of England, and the better males of his body, &c.

The 11. of July, Gilbert Poore brother to Ninon Saunders vintner, dwelling at St. Johns head within Ludgate, who was accused by the said Saunders his master, was set on the pillory in Cheape with both his ears nailed, and cleave cut off for words speaking at the time of the proclamation of Lacie Jane, at which execution was a Trumpet blowne, and a Herald in his coat of armes read his offence, in presence of William Garrard one of the Sheriffs of London.

About 5. of the clocke the same day in the afternoon, Ninon Saunders master to the said Gilbert Poore and John Owen a gunmaker, and both gunners of the tower, comming from the tower of London by water in a Gallie, and shooting London bridge towards the Black friers, were drowned at St. Mary Lock, and the thirry men saued by their Dyes.

The 12. of July, the lady Mary sent to Norwich to be proclaimed there, which they refused to do, for that they were not certain of the kings death: but on the next day after, they did not only proclaim hir, but also sent hir men and munition to aid her.

The same twelfth of July, word was brought to the Councell, being then in the tower with the ladie Jane, that the ladie Mary, eldest daughter to king Henry the eight, was at Kenninghall castle in Norfolk, and with her the earle of North, Sir Thomas Wharton sonne to the Lord Wharton, Sir John Mordaunt sonne to the Lord Mordant, Sir William Drurie, Sir John Shelton, Sir Henry Beddingfield, Master Henry Ierningham, Master John Sulherde, Master Richard Freston, Master Sargeant Morgan, Mr. Clement Higham of Lincolnshire, and others others, and also that the Earle of Suffolk, and Master Henry Ratcliffe his sonne were comming towards her: whereupon by speedie counsell it was there concluded, that the Duke of Suffolk with certaine other noblemen, shoulde go towards the ladie Mary, to fetch hir up to the tower: this was first determined: but by night of the same date, the said volage of the Duke of Suffolk was cleane dissolved by the speciall meanes of the ladie Jane his daughter, who taking the matter beaullie, with weeping teares made request to the whole councell, that hir father might tarry at home in her company: whereupon the counsell perswaded with the duke of Northumberland, to take that volage upon him, saying, that no man was so fit therfore, because that he had atchieved the viduoy in Norfolk once already, and was therfore so feared, that none durst once lift up their weapon against him: besides that, he was the best man of war in the realme, as wel for the ordering of his campes and souldiers both in battell and in their tentes, as also by experience, knowledge & wisdome, he could both animate his army with witty perswasions, also pacify and lay his enemies pride with his stout courage, or else to distance them if need were, from their enterpryse. Finally said they, this is the short and long, the Quene will in no wise grant, that her father shall take it upon him: wherefore (quoth they) we think it good, if it may please your grace, if such in you to cume by the matter. Well (quoth the duke then) since ye think it good, I and mine will go, not doubting of your fidelity to the queens maiesty

which

which I leave in your custody: So that night he sent for both lordes, knights and other that shoulde go with him, and caused all things to be prepared accordingly: then went the counsell in to the ladie Jane, and tolke her of their conclusion, who humbly thanked the Duke for respecting her father at home, and beseeched him to be his diligence, whereto he answered, that he would do what in him lay.

The morrow following, great preparation was made, the Duke early in the morning called for his owne harnesse, and sawe it made ready at Durham place, where he appointed all his retinue to mete.

The same day carts were laden with munition and artillery, and helde paces were set for ward.

The same forenoon the duke moued the counsell to send their powers after him, as it was before determined, he came to meet with him at Aylesmer, and they promised they would. He said further to some of them: My lordes, I and these other noble personages, with the whole army that now go forth, as well for the behalfe of you and yours, as for the establishing of the rightnes, shall not onelie adventure our bodies and liues amongst the bloudie strokes and cruel assaults of our aduersaries in the open fields, but also we do leave the conservation of our selues, children, and families at home here with you, as altogether committed to your truth and fidelities, whom, if we thought ye would through malice, conspiracy, or dissention leave us your friends in the byers and betraye us, wee could as well send by water forre and provide for our owne safegardes, as any of you, by betraying us, can doe for yours. But now by the onelie trust and faithfulness of your honours, whereof wee thinke our selues most assured, wee be hazard our liues, which trust and promise if ye shall violate, hoping thereby of life and promotion, yet shall not God count you innocent of our bloods, neither acquite you of the sacred and holie oth of allegiance made freely by you to this vertuous lady the queenes highnesse, who by your and our enticement, is rather of force placed therein, than by her owne seeking and request. Consider also, that Gods cause, which is the preferment of his loyde, and feare of papistes entraunce, hath bene (as ye have here before alwaies saide) the originall ground whereupon ye even at the first motion granted your good willes and consentes therunto, as by your handes writing appeareth: and thinke not the contrarie, but if ye meane deceipt, though not forthwith, yet hereafter God will reuenge the same.

I can saie no more, but in this troublesome time with you to be constant heart, abandoning all malice, enuie, and private affections: and therewith, all the first course for the lordes came by, wherefore the duke shut by his talke with these wordes: I have not spoken to you in this sort upon any mistrust I have of your truthes, of which alwaies I have ever hitherto conceived a trusty confidence, but I have put you in remembrance thereof, what chance of variance shewer might grow amongst you in mine absence, and this I pray you, with mee not worle god speake in this journey, than ye would have to your selues. My lord, saith one of them, if ye mistrust any of us in this matter, your

Gilbert Poore  
punished in  
Cheape.

When drowned  
at London  
bridge.

Lady Mary  
proclaimed  
Duke at  
Norwich.

Preparation to  
go against Lady  
Mary.

Duke of Northumberland  
sent against the  
Lady Mary, his  
wombe to the  
Lordes.



grace is far deceiued, for which of vs can wash his hands cleane the reof? and if we should thynke from you as from one that were culpable, which of vs can excuse him selfe to be guiltles? therefore here in your doubt is to far cast, I pray god it be (quoth the duke) let vs go to dinner: and so they ate down. After dinner the duke went in to the D. where his commission was by that time sealed, for his lieutenant Shippe of the army, and then toke his leave of hir, and so did certayne other lordes also.

When as the Duke came through the counsell chamber, hee tooke his leave of the Earle of Arundell, who prayed God bee with his grace, saying, he was forie it was not his chance to go with him, and beare him companie, in whose presence he could find in his heart to spend his bloude, even at his feete: then the earle of Arundell tooke Thomas Louell the Dukes boie by the hande, and saide, farewell gentle Thomas with all my heart. Then the duke, with the L. Sparques of Southampton, the L. Grey, and diuers other, tooke their barge, and went to Durham place, and to White hall, where that night they muſtered their men: and the next daie in the morning, the Duke departed with the number of 600. men, or thereabouts. And as they rode through Shorditch, saith the duke to the Lorde Grey, the people presse to see vs, but not one saith God speake vs.

The same day Sir John Gates and other went out after the duke.

By this time word was brought to the tower, that the Lady Mary was fled to flavingham castle in Suffolke; where the people of the countrey almost wholy resorted to hir; and that William L. Willndor, Sir Edward Hastings, Sir Edmond Pecham with others, were proclaiming Quene Mary in Buckinghamshire, Sir Io. Williams in Orfordshire, &c.

About this time, sixe Ships well manned, that were appointed to lie before Dartmouth, and to haue taken the ladie Mary if she had fled that waie, were by force of weather driven into the Hauen, where one Maister Ierningham was raising powder on the Ladie Maries behalfe, who hearing thereof, came thither, whereupon the captaine tooke a boate and went to the ships, but the Sailers and Souldiers asked Maister Ierningham what he would haue, and whether he would haue their Capitaines or no? and he said yea: marie said they, ye shall haue them, or we will throwe them into the bottome of the Sea, but the Captaine sayde forthwith, that they would serue Quene Marie willingly, and so brought forth their men, and conuersed with them their great Obdinance: Of the coming of these Shippes the ladie Marie was wonderfull ioyous; and afterwarde doubted little the Dukes puissance: but when newes thereof was brought to the Tower, each man there beganne to draw backward, and ouer that, word of a greater mischiese was brought to the Tower, that is to saie, that the shoblemens tenants refused to serue their lordes against quene Marie.

The duke thought long for his succors, and wrote somewhat sharpelie to the counsell at the tower in that behalfe, as well for lacke of men as of munition, but a slender answer had he againe: And from that time forward certayne of the counsell, to wit, the earle of Pembroke, and Sir Th. Cheyne lord Warren,

and other, sought to get out of the Tower to consult in London, but coulde not yet.

The 16. of July, being Sunday, doctor Ridley Bishop of London, by commandement of the counsell preached at Pauls crosse, where he vehemently persuaded the people in the title of the ladie lane, late proclaimed D. and inuicled earnestly against the title of lady Marie, &c.

The same 16. of July, the lorde Treasurer was gone out of the tower to his house in London at night, and forthwith about 7. of the clocke the gates of the tower upon a sodain were shut vp, and the keyes born vp to the lady lane, which was for feare of some packing in the L. treasurer, but he was fetched again to the tower, about 12. of the clocke in the night.

The 18. day, the D. perceiving that the succors promised came not to him, and also receiuing from some of the counsell letters of discomfort, hee returned from Wury backe againe to Cambridge.

The 19. of Iulie, the Councell, partlie moued with the right of the ladie Maries cause, partlie considering, that the most of the realme was wholy bent on her side, chaunged their mindes, and assembled the themselves at Barnardes castle, where they communed with the Earle of Pembroke: And the earle of Shrewsburie, with Sir Iohn Maſon Clerk of the Councell, spake to the lorde Sparke secretly, that he with the Sheriffes and such other of the Aldermen with the Recorder, as he thought best, to maie him and the Councell at Barnardes Castle, within lesse than an houre: which they did, where the counsell declared to the lorde Sparke and his brethren, that hee and they must ride with them into Cheape to proclaim a newe Quene, which was the ladie Maries grace, daughter to King Henry the eight; and they riding from thence to Pauls Church-yarde, and into Cheape, the people were so assembled, that the Lordes coulde not ride by them to the Crosse, where Maister Gatar king at armes in his rich Coate of armes, with a Trumpet beeing readie, the Trumpet was sounded, and then they proclaimed the ladie Mary, Daughter to King Henry the eight and Quene Katherine, Quene of Englands, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender of the faith, &c. Which proclamation ended, the Lorde Sparke, and all the Counsell rode to Pauls Church, where the Canticle of *Te Deum* was sung. And the same night the Earle of Arundell, and the Lorde Pager, rode in posse to Quene Mary with little hoſte with them.

The 20. of Iulie, Iohn Duke of Northumberland, beeing then in Cambridge, and having sure knowledge, that the ladie Mary was by the nobilitie and others of the Counsell remaining at London proclaimed Quene; about five of the clocke the same night, he with such other of the nobilitie as were in his companie, came to the market crosse of the towne, and calling for an Herald, himselfe proclaimed quene Mary, and among other he thetore vpp his own cappe, and within an houre after he had letters from the counsell, by the handes of Richard Rose heratour: Dated at Westminster the 20. of Iune in the same following.

In the name of our Soveraigne Lady Mary the Quene to her declared to the

The counsell assembled at Barnardes castle.

Lady Mary proclaimed Quene.

Duke of Northumberland proclaimed at Wury at Cambridge.

Counsell let-  
ters to the Duke  
of Northum-  
berland.

The duke of Northumberland, and all other of his band of what degree he were they be.

Ye shall command and charge in the Quenes highnesse name, the said Duke to disarme himselfe, and to cease all his men of war: and to suffer no part of his army to doe any villanie, or any thing contrary to the peace: and himselfe to forbear his coming to this citie untill the Quenes pleasure be expressely declared unto him. And if he will shewe himselfe like a good quiet subject, we will then continue as we have begunne, as humble letters to our soveraigne lady the Quenes highnesse for him and his, as for our selves. And if he do not, we will not faile to spend our lines in subduing him and his.

Item, ye shall declare the like matter to the Marquesse of Northampton, and all other noble men and gentlemen, and to all men of war being with any of them.

Item, ye shall in all places where ye come, notifie it, If the Duke of Northumberland do not submit himselfe to the Quenes highnesse, Quene Marie, he shall be accepted as a traytour. And all we of the nobilitie that were counsellors to the late king, will to the uttermost position, persecute him and his to the utter confusion. Thom. Cant. archbishop, Thomas Elic Chancelor, Will. Winchester Marquesse, I. Bedforde Earle, H. Suffolke Duke, F. Shrewsburie Earle, W. Penbrough Earle, Thomas Darcy Loide Cham-berlaine, R. Cotton, W. Peter secretarie, W. Cecill second secretarie, I. C. I. Baker Chancelor of the tenth, I. Mason master of requests, R. Bowes master of the Kells.

Duke of Northumberland  
arrested.

The rumour of these letters was no longer abroad, but every man departed. And shortly after, the Duke was arrested in the Kings Colledge by one master Slegge, Sergeant at armes. At the last letters were brought from the counsell at London, that all men should go each his way: Whereupon the Duke said to them that kept him, Ye doe me wrong to withtake my libertie, se ye not the Counsell letters without exception, that all men should go whither they would. At which wordes, they that kept him and the other noble men, let them at libertie, and so continued they to that night, inasmuch, that the Earle of Warwick was ready in the morning to have rode afoote, but then came the Earle of Arundale from the quene to the Duke into his Chamber, who went out to meete him, and as long as hee sawe the Earle of Arundale, hee fell on his knees: and desired him to be good to him, for the love of God, consider (saith he) I have done nothing but by the consents of you and all the whole Counsell: Wherupon the Earle of Arundale I am sent hither by the Quenes maieste, and in her name I doe arrest you: and I obeye my Lord (quoth he) I beseech you my Loide of Arundale (quoth the Duke) his merche towards mee, knowing the case as it is: my Loide (quoth the Earle) ye should have sought for merche sooner, I must doe according to my commandement, and therewith he committed the charge of him, and of other to the guard and gentlemen that were by.

The

The 15. of July, the Duke with other were brought up to the Tower of London, under the conduct of Henry Earle of Arundale, with a great number of light horse men, bowes and speares, they came into London at bishops gate, all the streets as he passed by standing with men, in hartesse aforesaid many dayes, till hee came to the Tower: where the prisoners names that came in at that time, were the Duke of Northumberland, the Earle of Warwick, the Earle of Huntingdon, the loide Hastings, loide Ambrose Dudley, loide Henrie Dudley, sir Andrew Dudley, sir John Gates, Henrie Gates, sir Thomas Palmer, doctor Sands, but then they came to the Tower, the Earle of Arundale discharged the loide Hastings, and had him a while with him.

On the five and twentieth, the lord Marquesse of Northampton, the bishop of London, the loide Robert Dudley, and sir Robert Corbet were brought from the Quenes campe into the Tower. And thus was the matter ended without bloodshed, which men feared should have brought the death of many thousands.

## Queene Mary.



ary, the eldest daughter of King Henrie the eight, began her raigne the first of July, in the yere 1553. when she dissolved her campe at Framingham, which was to the number of 13000. men, the Earle of Soller being lieutenant of the armie: victuals were of such plentie, that a barrell of beere was solde for five pence with the caske, and foure great loaves of bread for a penny.

The 27. of July, sir Roger Cholmely lord chiefe Justice of the kings bench, sir Edmond Mountague lord chiefe iustice of the common place, were sent to the Tower, on the next morrow Henry duke of Suffolke, and sir John Cheeke were had to the Tower.

On the 30. of July, the lady Elizabeth sister to the Quene, rode from her place at Sittand, (where she had lien the night before) through the city of London, out at Aldgate toward the Quene, accompanied with 1000. horse, of knights, ladies, gentlemen and their servants.

On the 31. of July, the duke of Suffolke was discharged out of the tower, by the earle of Arundale, and had the quenes pardon.

Quene Mary came from Wiltshire in Essex, to London on the 3. of August, being brought in with her nobles very honorably, and strongly, the number of better coats that did ride before her, as well strangers as others were 740. and the number of ladies and gentlewomen that followed, was 180. The earle of Arundale riding next before her, bare a sword in his hand, and sir Anthony Browne did beare by her traine. The lady Elizabeth her sister followed.

Duke of Northumberland  
brought to the  
Tower.

An. reg. 2.

to towne her next, and after her the lord marquisse of Excesters wife. The gende followed the ladies, and after them the lord hamptonshire and Dorsetshire men, and then Buckinghamshire men, and after them the lords servants: the whole number of horse-men were estimated to bee about 1000. The Duke the king without Algate, before the stage, whereon the poore children of the hospitall were placed, and one of them made to her an Oration. Sir George Haines then lord Spaul, with the Aldermen, brought her into the citie, the lord Spaul riding next to the earle of Arundale, with a Scepter or mace in his hand. A great peale of ordinance was shotte off at the Tower of London, wherthe Quene entered the Citie through Algate, up to Leaden hall, then downe Grace streete, Fenchurch streete, Parke lane, Tower streete, and so into the Tower, where Thomas duke of Norfolkke, doctor Gardener late Bishoppe of Winchester, Edward Courtney sonne and heire to Henry marquisse of Excester, the Dutchesse of Somerset, prisoners in the Tower, kneeling on the hill within the same towne, saluted her grace, and she came to them and kissed them, & said, these be my prisoners. On the next morrow, Edward Courtney was made marquisse of Excester, and the other fornamed prisoners pardoned, and discharged in the Quenes chamber.

The 5. of August, Edmond Bonner late Bishop of London, prisoner in the Sparthalsea, and Curbert Tonsall the olde bishop of Durham prisoner in the Kings bench, had their pardons, and were restored to their Sees. Shortly after all the Bishops which had bene deposed in the time of king Edward the first, were restored to their Bishopricks, and the other which were placed in king Edwards time, removed: also all benefited men that were married, or would not forsake their opinion, were put out of their livings, & other known to be of the contrarie part, were set in the same, especially if any were allow, that had of late bene put out of the same, as bishop Daie of Chichester, Heah of Worcester, &c.

Sir Nicholas Hare master of the Kols, was made keeper of the great seale, for the space of a fortnight or thereabout.

The 9. of August, in the afternoon, the Quene helde an Obsequie in the tower for king Edward, the dirge being sung in Latin, and on the morrow a masse of Requiem, whereat the Quene with her ladies offered. The same daie the corpses of king Edward was buried at Westminster, the lord Treasurer, the Earle of Pembroke, and the Earle of Shrewsburie being chief mourners, with others other noble men and other. Doctor Daie Bishop of Chichester preached at the said buriall, and all the service with a Communion was in English.

The 11. of August, certaine gentlemen minding to passe under London bridge in a wherry, were there overturned, and 7. of them drowned, one was master T. Bridges Gunne.

The 13. of August, master Bourne a Chanon of Pauls preaching at Pauls crosse, not onely prayed for the dead, but also declared, that Doctor Bonner bishop of London (late restored, and there in presence) for a sermon by him made in the same place, upon the same Gospel, was about some yeeres

Bishops restored and other displaced.

Buriall of king Edward.

Seven drowned at London bridge.

last, violently cast into the vile prison of the Sparthalsea, and there kept during the reigne of king Edward: which saying so offended some of the audience, that they breshing silence, said the bishop had preached abomination, or for some cries (meaning of the preacher) pulled him out, pulled him out, and some being nere the pulpit, began to cline, wherewith the preacher stepped backe, and one Maister Bradford a preacher of king Edwards time, stepped into his place, and gently perswaded the audience to quietnes and obedience, alledging S. Paul to the Romans: Let every soule submit himselfe to the authority of the higher powers, &c. Where thes master Bourne standing by Maister Bradford, one threw a dagger at him, which hit a flie post of the pulpit, and rebounded back again a great way, whereupon M. Bradford brake off his speech, and forced himselfe with the helpe of Jo. Rogers another preacher, to converse M. Bourne out of the audience, which with great labor they brought into Pauls churche.

a dagger thrown at the preacher.

The 18. of August, John Dudley Duke of Northumberland, William Parre Marques of Northampton, and John earle of Warwicke son and heire to the duke, were arraigned at Westminster hall, before Thomas D. of Norfolkke, high steward of England, where the duke of Northumberland with great reverence to wards the iudges, protested his faith and alleageance to the queen, whome he confessed greedously to have offended, and said, that he meant not to speake any thing in defence of his fact, but requested to understande the opinion of the court in two points. First, whether a man doing any act by authority of the princes counsell and by warrant of the great seale of England, and doing nothing without the same, might bee charged with treason for any thing which he might do by warrant thereof. Secondly, whether any such persons as were equally culpable in that crime, and those, by whose letters and commandments he was directed in all his doings, might be his iudges, or passe upon his triall as his Judges;

Whereunto was answered, that as concerning the first, the great Seale (which he said for his warrant) was not the seale of the lawfull Quene of the realm, nor passed by authority, but the seale of an usurper, and therefore could bee no warrant to him. As to the second, it was alledged, that if any were deeply to be touched in that case as himselfe, yet so long as no attainder were of record against them, they were neuertheless persons able in law to passe by any trial, and not to be chalenged therefore, but at the princes pleasure. After which answer, the Duke used set words, but confessed the indictment; by whose example the other prisoners arraigned with him did the like, and thereupon had judgement.

And when judgement was given the duke said, I beseech you my lordes, all to be humble suiters to the M. maiestie, and to grant mee foure requestes, which are these. First, that I mite have that death which noble men have had in times past, and not the other. Secondlie, that her Maiestie will bee gracious to my children, which mite herre after do good service, considering, that they went by my commandment, who am their father, and not of their own free willes. Thirdly, that I mite have appointed to mee some learned man

Duke of Northumberland and other arraigned.

for the instruction and quiet of my conscience. And fourthlie, that they both send two of the counsell, to commune with mee, to whome I will declare such matters as shall be expedient for her and the common weale: and thus I beseech you all to pray for me.

On the nineteenth of August were arraigned at Westminster, Sir John Gates, Sir Henry Gates, Sir Andrew Dudley, and Sir Thomas Palmer, where without any quest they pleaded guiltie, and submitted themselves to the Queenes mercie, and so hadde iudgement.

The twentieth of August, Doctor Watson, Chaplaine to the Bpghope of Winchester preached at Pauls Crosse, by the Queenes appointment, and for feare of the like tumult, as had beene the Sundae last past, certain lordes of the Counsell repaired to the Sermon, as the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Privie Seale, the Earle of Bedforde, the Earle of Pembroke, the Lord Wentworth, the Lord Rich, and Sir Henrie Gernigam capitaine of the garde, with 200. of the guard, which stood about the Preacher with halberts. Also the spallio had warned the companies of the cite to be present in their liveries, which was well accepted of the Queenes counsell, and the Sermon was quietlie ended.

The twentieth two of August, Sir John Gage Lieutenant of the Tower, delivered to the Sheriffes of London, by Indenture these prisoners following: first Sir John Gates was brought forth, and set at the Garden Gate, then the Duke of Northumberlande, was likewise brought forth, and Sir Thomas Palmer after him: When the Duke and Sir John Gates mette, Sir John saith the Duke, God haue mercie vpon vs, for this date shall ende both our liues, and I praye you forgive me whatsoever I haue offended, and I forgive you with all my heart, although you and your counsell was a great occasion hereof: Well my Lord quoth Sir John Gates, I forgive you, as I would be forgiven, and yet you and your authoritie was the originall cause of all together, but the Lord pardon you, and I praye you forgive me. So either making obelance to other, the Duke proceeded, and when he came vpon the Scaffold, hee putting off his Cowne of Crane coloured Damaskie, leaped vpon the Cast Ileale, and saide to the people: God people, all you that be here present to see mee die, though my death be odious, and horrible to the flesh, yet I praye you iudge the best in Gods workes, for hee doth all for the best. And as for mee, I am a wretched sinner, and haue deserved to die, and most iustlie am condemned to die by lawe. And yet this Acte wherof I die, was not altogether of mee (as it is thought) but I was procured and induced thereunto by other, I was, I saie induced thereunto by other: Howbeit, God for bidde that I shoulde name any man vnto you, I will name no man vnto you, and therefore I beseech you looke not for it. I for my part forgive all men, and praye God also to forgive them. And if I haue offended any of you heere, I praye you and all the worlde to forgive mee; and most chiefele I desire forgiveness of the queenes highnesse, whome I haue most grievously offended. And I praye you all to witness with mee, that I depart in perfect loue and charitie with all the worlde, and that you will assist me with your

prayers

prayers at the houre of death. The rest of his speech almost in euery point, was the like as hee hadde saide in the Chappell of the Tower, in the daie before, saying, when hee hadde made confession of his beleeve, hee hadde the wordes. And heere I doe protest vnto you good people, moste earnestlie, even from the bottome of my heart, that this which I haue spoken is of my selfe, not being required nor moued thereunto by any man, nor for any flatterie, or hope of life, and I take witness of my Lord of Worcester heere, mine olde friende and Chollie father, that hee founde mee in this minde and opinion, when hee came to mee; but I haue declared this onelie vpon mine owne minde and affection, and for the zeale and loue that I beare to my natural Countrye. I coulde good people heare me more euen by experience that I haue of this euill that is happened to this Realme by these occasions, but you knowe I haue another thing to doe, whereunto I must prepare mee, for the time draweth awaie. And now I beseech the Queenes highnesse to forgive mee mine offences against her Maestie, wherof I haue a singular hope, for as much, as she hath already extended her goodnesse and clemencie so farre vpon mee, that where as she might for ought, without iudgement or any further tryall, haue put mee to most vile and cruell death, by hanging, drawing, and quartering, for as much as I was in the field in armes against her highnesse, her Maestie neuertheless of her most mercifull goodness spared me to be brought to my iudgement, and to haue my triall by law, where I was most iustlie and tooorthie condemned. And her highnesse hath now also extended her mercie and clemencie vpon mee, for the manner and kinde of my death. And therefore my hope is, that her grace of her goodnesse will remit all the rest of her indignation and displeasure towarde mee, which I beseech you all most heartilie to praye for, and that it maie please God long to preserve her Maestie to raighe ouer you in much honour and felicitie. After hee had thus spoken he kneeled downe, saying to them that were about him: I beseech you all to beare me witness that I die in the true Catholike faith, and then saide the Psalmes of *Miserere* and *De profundis*, his *Tear noster*, and five of the first Verses of the Psalm, *In te Domine speravi*, ending with this verse: Into thy handes O Lord I commend my spirit; and when hee had thus finished his prayers, the executioner asked him forgiveness, to whome hee sayde: I forgive thee with all my heart, and doe thy parte without feare. And bowing towarde the Blocke, hee saide, I haue deserved a thousand deaths, layde his heade vpon the Blocke and so was beheaded. Whose bodie with the heade was buried in the Tower, by the bodie of Edward late Duke of Somerset, so that there lieth before the high Altar, in St. Peters church two dukes, betwene two queenes, to wit, the duke of Somerset, and the duke of Northumberland, betwene queene Anne, and queene Katherine, all foure beheaded.

At the same time and place also, was likewise beheaded Sir John Gates, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Sir John Gates in that place dyed the 10. like wordes. My comming hither this daie good people is to die, wherof I assure you all I am well tooorthie: for I haue liued as viciouslie and wickedlie

all

Beheaded at  
Pauls Crosse  
guardes.

Duke of Northumberland  
beheaded.

buried in the  
Tower.

Sir Jo. Gates  
and Sir Thomas  
Palmer beheaded.

all the dates of my life as any man hath don in the world: I was the greatest reader of scripture that might be of a man of my degree: And a worse follower thereof not living: for I did not read to the intent to be edified thereby, nor to seeke the glory of God: but contrariwise, arrogantly, to be seditions, and to dispute thereof, and p[er]suade to interpret it after my owne h[um]aine and affection. Wherefore good people I exhort you all to beware howe, and after what sort you come to read Gods holie word: for it is not a trifle, or playing game to deale with Gods holie mysteries: stand not too much in your owne conceits, for like as the bee of one flower doth gather honie, and the spider poison of the same, even so you, except you humble submit your selues to God, and ch[ri]stianitie shall be the same to the intent to be edified thereby, it is to you as poison, and worse: and it were better for to let it alone. And then after hee had asked the Quene's highnes forgiveness, and all the world; he desired the people of the charitie to pray unto God with him for remission of his sinnes, and then refusing the herchefe laide downe his heade, which was stricken off at thre blowes. Sir Thomas Palmer, as soone as he came to the scaffold, take every man by the hand, and desired them to pray for him; then putting off his gown, hee leaned upon the Cast Kyele, and saide these wordes in effect: My Masters (quoth hee) God saue you all: it is not unknowne unto you wherefore I come hither, which I haue toochille well deserved at Gods handes, for I know it to be his dutie or dinance, by this meanes to call mee to his merite, and to teach mee to know my selfe, what I am, and whereunto we are all labored: I thanke his mercifull goodnes, for he hath caused me to learne more in one little darke corner in ponder Tower, than ever I learned by any traueil in so many places as I haue bin, for there (I say) I haue seen God, what he is, how vnscarceable his wonderous workes are, and how infinit his mercies be; I haue seene here my selfe througly, and what I am, nothing but a lump of sin, earth, dust, and of all vilenes most vilest; I haue seene there and knowe what the world is, how vaine, deceitfull, transitorie, and th[us]: it is, how wicked and wretched the workes thereof are in the sight of Gods maiesty, how he neither regardeth the manaces of the proud men and mighty ones, neither despiseth the humblenes of the poore and lowly which are in the same world. If I might, I haue seene there what death is, how nere hanging ouer euery mans head, and yet how vncertaine the time, and how unknowne to all men, and how little it is to be feared; and should I feare death: or be sad therefore? haue I not seene too die before mine eyes? Yea, and with in the hearing of mine eares? No, neither the sprinkling of the blood, or the shedding thereof, nor the bloody death selfe shall make me afraid: and now taking my leaue to the same, I pray you all to pray for me: come on good fellows (quoth he) art thou hee that must be the doer: I forgive thee with all my hart, and then kneeling downe, laying his head on the blocke, said, I will see how meet the blocke is for my necke, I pray thee strike not yet, for I haue a few prayers to saie, and that done, strike on Gods name, good leaue haue thou, his prayers ended, and desiring each man to pray for him, hee laid downe his heade againe, and so the executioner take it from him at one stroke.

The

The 13. of August, the Quene deliuered the great Seale to h[er] Cardener bishop of Winchester, and made him lord chancelor.

First lord  
chancelor.  
Latin service.

The 27. of August the seruice began in Latine to be sung in Pauls church in London.

First to the  
Quene.

The first of September, the Q. demanded a prest of the city of London of 20000. l. to be repayed againe within fouretene daies after Michaelmas next following, which summe was leuied of the aldermen, and 120. commoners.

The third of September, Edward Courtney was created earle of Denonshire at Richmond.

Earle of Denonshire created.

The lord Feters of Chartley, the lord chiefe iustice, sir Roger Cholmley, the L. Mountague, sir Io. Cheeke, and other, were deliuered out of the tower.

New coines.

The 4. of September was proclaimed certain new coines of gold and silver, a foweraigne of gold of 30. s. the halfe foweraigne 15. s. an angel of 10. s. the halfe angel 5. s. of silver, the groat, halfe groat, and penny. All base coines to be currant as before.

Also the same day by proclamation, was pardoned the subsidie of foure s. the pound lands, and two s. eight d. the pound of moueable goods, granted in the last parliament of king Edward the first.

Subsidie pardoned.

The 12. of September the Quene remoued to S. James.

The 14. and 15. of September master Latimer and doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterbury were sent to the tower of London.

The 27. of September, Quene Mary came to the tower by water, accompanied with the Lady Elizabeth her sister, and other ladies, before whose arrival was shot a great peale of guns.

Coronation.

The last of September, Quene Mary rode through the Citie of London towards Westminster, sitting in a chariot of cloth of tinsse drawn with fire horses, all trapped with the like cloth of tinsse. Shee sate in a gowne of purple belnet furred with powdered ermine, hanging on her head a caule of cloth of tinsell, beset with pearle and stone, and about the same upon her head, a round circlet of gold beset so richly with precious stones, that the value thereof was inestimable, the same caule and circlet being so masse and ponderous, that shee was faine to beare by her head with her hand, and the canopy was borne ouer her chariot. Before her rode a number of gentlemen and knights, then iudges, then doctors, then bishops, then lords, then the council: after whom followed the knights of the Bath, thirtene in number, in the first robes, the bishop of Winchester lord Chancelor, and the marquesse of Winchester lord high treasurer, next came the duke of Norfolk, and after him the Earle of Arundell, who bare the sword before her, the mayor of London in a gowne of crimson belnet bare the scepter of gold, &c. after the Quene's chariot, sir Edward Hastings led her horse in his hand: then came an other chariot, having a covering all of cloth of siluer all white, and fire horses trapped with the like, therein sate the lady Elizabeth and the lady Anne of Cleue, then Ladies and Gentlewomen riding on horses trapped with red belnet, and their gownes and kirtles likewise of red belnet: after them followed two other chariots covered

ppp

covered

covered with red saltire, and the horses betrapped with the same, and certaine gentlewomen betwixe every of the saide chariots riding in crimosin sattin, their horses betrapped with the same, the number of the gentlewomen riding were 46. besides them in the chariots. At Church Lane was a costly pageant made by the Gentry: at Grace-church corner there was another pageant made by the Gentry. At the upper end of Grace street there was an other pageant made by the Florentines verie high, on the top whereof there stood foure pictures, and in the midst of them and most highest, there stood an angel all in graine, with a trumpet in his hand, and when the trumpetter who stood secretly in the pageant did sound his trumpet, the angel did put his trumpet to his mouth, as though it had bene the same that had sounded, to the great marvelling of many ignorant persons: this pageant was made with three thousand farces or gates, &c. The conduit in Cornhill ran wine, and beneath the conduit a pageant made at the charges of the cite, and another at the great conduit in Cheape, and a fontaine by it running wine. The standard in Cheape new painted, with the waites of the Cite aloft thereof playing. The crosse in Cheape new washed and burnished. One other pageant at the little conduit in Cheape next to Paules made by the Cite, where the aldermen stood: and when the Quene came against them, the Recorder made a short proposition to her, and then the chamberlaine presented to her in the name of the maior and the city, a purse of cloth of gold, and 1000. marks of gold in it: then the robe forth, and in Paules churchyard against the shole, one Master Haywood sate in a pageant under a vine, and made to her an oration in Latine and English. When was there one Peter a Dutch man stood on the weathercocke of Paules steeple, holding a streamer in his hand of five yardes long, and waving thereof, he stood sometime on the one cite, and shoke the other, and then kneled on his knees, to the great marvell of all people. He had made two scaffoldes under him, one above the crosse, having toches and streamers set on it, and one other over the hole of the crosse, likewise set with streamers and toches, which could not burne the winde was so great: the said Peter had sixteen pound thirte shillings and foure pence given him by the cite for his costs and paines, and all his stuffe. When was there a pageant made against the deane of Paules gate, where the questers of Paules played on viols, and song. Ludgate was newly repaired, painted, and richly hangged, with minstrels playing and singing there: then was there another pageant at the conduit in Fleet street, and the Temple barr was newly painted and hangged. And thus she passed to White hall at Westminster, where she took her leave of the lord maior, giving him great thanks for his paines, and the Cite for their cost. On the morrow, which was the first daie of October: the Quene went by water to the olde palace, and there remained till about eleven of the clocke, and then went on foote upon blew cloth, being raised on either side unto Saint Peters Church, where she was solemnly crowned and annointed by the Bishop of Winchester, which coronation and other ceremonies and solemnities then used according to the olde custome, was not fully ended till it was nigh foure of the clocke at night that she returned

turned from the Church, before whom was then borne three crowns shadded, and one naked. The great service that day done in Westminster hall at dinner by divers noble men, would aske long time to write. The lord maior of London and twelve citizens kept the high cupbord of plate as builders, and the Quene gave to the Maior for his fee a cup of golde with a cover waiping sixteen ounces.

The 5. of October, the parliament began at Westminster, Sir John Yorke, Parliament. and Henry Dudley, were deliuered out of the Tower.

The 25 day of October, the Barge of Charlesende, a Catch running upon water, was overturned, and foureteen persons drowned, and sixteen saved by swimming.

Cardinall Poole, who had long time bene forth from this realme, and now in great estimation in the court of Rome, was sent for by Quene Mary to returne into his countrey of England.

The 2. of November, the weathercocke of Paules was set up, which cocke weighed forty pound, his length from the bill to the taile was foure fote, and his breadth over the wings three fote and a halfe, the which cocke being of copper, was our gilt.

The thirtieth of November, Doctor Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Ladie Jane that was before proclaimed Quene, and the lord Guilford her husband, and the lord Ambrose Dudley, were arraigned at the Guild hall of London, and condemned of treason: Sir Henry Gates was deliuered out of the Tower.

The Parliament was dissolved on the first of December. And on the one and twentieth of December, began throughout England the Church service to be done in Latine, as was enacted by the last Parliament, and as the same had ben left in the last yeere of King Henry the eighth. The Lady Jane had the liberty of the Tower, to walke in the Quenes Garden and on the hill. The lord Ambrose Dudley, and the lord Guilford Dudley, had the liberties of the ports where they were lodged: the Marquesse of Northampton had his pardon and was deliuered.

In the beginning of the month of January, the Emperour sent a noble man called Edmon I., and certaine other Ambassadors into England to conclude a marriage betwene King Philip his son, and Quene Mary of England.

The 14. of January, Doctor Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester, Lord Chancellor of England, in the chamber of presence at Westminster, made to the Lords, Nobility, and Gentlemen, an oration very eloquent, wherein he declared that the Quenes State was partly for unity, and other weighty considerations had, after much suite on the Emperours and Prince of Spaines behalfs made, determined by the consent of the Counsell and Nobility, to match her selfe with the saide Prince in most goodly and lawfull matrimony: and declared further, that she should have for her dowry 30000. ducckets by the yeere, with all the low-countrey of Flanders, and that the issue (if there happened any) betwene them two lawfully begotten, should be heirs as well to the Kingdome of Spaine, as also to the said low-countrey. He said therefore

Latin service in the church.

that they were all bound to thank God that so noble, worthy, and famous a Prince would vouchsafe so to humble himselfe, as in this marriage to take upon him rather as a subject, than other wise, for the Queene and her counsell should rule all things as she did before, and that there should be of the council no stranger, neither to haue the custody of any forts, or Castles, nor haue any rule or office in the quenes house, or else where in all England, with diuers other articles there by him rehearsed, whereof he said the quens pleasure and request was, that like good subiects for her sake, they would most lovingly receiue him with reuerence, loy and hono.

The next day, the Lord maior of London, with his brethren the aldermen, were sent for to the court, and to bring with them fortie of the head commons of the citie, vnto whom before the counsell, the lord chancelor made the like oration, desiring them to behaue themselves like good subiects with all humbles and reioycing.

Robert Dudley sonne to the late duke of Northumberland, was arraigned at the Guild hall of London of high treason, he confessed the indictment, and had iudgement giuen by the earle of Sussex, to be drawne, hanged, botwelled and quartered.

Within five daies after, there was worde brought to the court, how that Sir Peter Carow, Sir Gawine Carow, Sir Thomas Deny with diuers other, were by in Denonshire, in the resisting of the king of Spaines comming thither, and that they had taken the city of Excester, and castle there into their custody.

About the thre and twentieth of iune and twentieth day of January, Sir James a Crofts departed from London toward Wales, as it was thought, to haue raised power there.

Conspiracy

The purpose of the Quenes marriage was so grieuously taken of diuers men, that for this & for religion, they in such sort conspired against the quene, that if the matter had not broken out before the time by them appointed, men thought it would haue brought much trouble and danger.

Commotion in  
went by Sir  
Thom. Wyatt

The 25. of January, Sir John Gage lord Chamberlaine, certified the lord maior of London, that Sir Thomas Wyatt with certaine other rebels, were by in Kent about Spaldeshone, whereupon great watch was kept, and that night the lord maior rode about to peruse the same, and euery night after two aldermen did the like: in the day time the gates of the Citie were warded by substantiall citizens.

The 26. day of January was brought into the tower as prisoners, the lord marquess of Northampton, Sir Edward Warner, and other. And the same night there went out certaine of the gard, and other against the Kentish men. And the city of London began to be straightly kept and watched by harnessed men, by the appointment of the lord treasurer, who had the day before sent for the lord maior and aldermen, and giuen them so in charge for safety of the city. And the same day, or rather on the day before, the duke of Norfolk with his power went dooene toward Grauesend.

About the which time the lord Burgaunoy, by chance, encountered with Sir Henry ile (one of Sir Thomas Wyatts faction) and due 2. or 3. of his men, he say-  
ing

ing with the rest of his company to Wyatts camp.

The 27. of January, the Lord Treasurer came to the Exchange hall from the counsell, to request the citizens to prepare 500. footemen well harnessed to go against Wyatt, which was granted and made ready the same night, and on the morrow were delivered to their captaines, and sent to Grauesend by water.

The 29. of January, the D. of Northfolke lieutenant of the army, and with him the earle of Arundell, Sir Henry Ierningham captain of the garde, with a great number of the guard, and other soldiers, and the captaine and soldiers that were sent from London, minded to assault Rochester Castle, where Wyatt and his people late, so that vpon Spaldeshone they were set in arraie to wardes Rochester brydge, which was kept by Wyatts companie, and furnished with 3. or 4. double cannons: but before the setting forward of these men, the D. sent master Nory an Herault vnto Rochester, with the D. proclamation to all such as would desist from their purpose, who comming to the brydge, would haue gone through into the citie, but they that kept the brydge would not suffer him till that the captaine came, who at the last granted the same to be read in the citie, but holding a dag against him, cried, speake soft, lie, or els they would shot him through, so that they would not suffer the people to be as the D. proclamation: which being ended, each man cried they had don nothing therefore they should need any pardon, and in that quarrel which they had taken in hand, they would lie and die: nevertheless, at the last Sir George Harpar receiued the pardon outwardly, and being receiued under the D. of Northfolkes protection, came on forward against the Kentishmen, and euen as the companie were set in a readines, and marched forward toward the brydge, Bret being captaine of the 500. Londoners, of which the more parte were in the foreward, turned himselfe about, and drawing out his sword, saide these or like words: spakkers woe go about to fight against our nation Countrymen of England and our friends, in a quarrel vnrighful, partly wicked, for they, considering the great miseries which are like to fall vpon vs, if we shall be vnder the rule of the proude Spaniards or strangers, are here assembled to make resistance of the same, for the avoiding of so great inconveniences lieth to fight, not onely vpon themselves, but on euery of vs of the whole realme, therefore I thinke no English hart ought to say against them, much lesse by fighting to withstande them: therefore I and others (meaning such as were in that ranke with him) will spend our blood in the quarrel of this worthy captaine Sir Wyatt, and other gentlemen here assembled: which wordes once pronounced, each man turned their ordinance against their soldiers, and thereupon cried: a Wyatt, a Wyatt, of which so daime noise, the Duke, the captaine of the guard and other, beinge abashed, fled forthwith: immediately he came in master Wyatt and his companie on horsebacke, rushing in amongst as well the guard as the Londoners, and said: so muite as will come and tary with vs shall be welcome, and so muite as will depart, god leaue take they, and so all the Londoners, part of the gard, and more than the parts of the citie, went to the campe of the Kentishmen, where they still remained, and thus distressed, the Duke lost eight hundred of his men, with all other ordinance

The D. of Northfolke sent against Wyatt.

What strength had with the D. ordinance.



and ordinance, and himselfe with fewe other hardly escaped.

The last of January, Wyat and his compaignie came to Wertsford, and the next day they came full and whole to Wrentwith and Depeford, where they remained thurday, friday, and the forenone of satterday. On the friday, which was Candlemas day, the most part of the householders of London, with the maiors and aldermen were in harness, yea this daie and other daies the iustices, sergeants at the law, and other lawyers in Westminster hall, pleased in harness.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25 of January, Henry duke of Suffolke, father to the lady Iane, fleeing into Leicestershire and Cheshire with the lord John Grey, and the lord Leonard Grey and a small compaignie in divers places as he went made proclamation against the queenes marriage with the prince of Spaine, &c. but the people inclined not to him.

The first day of february, proclamation was made at London, that the duke of Suffolke was discomfited, and fled with his two brethren. And also that sir Peter Carow, with his uncle sir Gawine Carow and Gibbes, were fled into France: and further, that the queene did pardon the whole compaignie of the Gentlemen, except Wyat, Harpar, Rudstone, and Isely, and that whosoever could take sir Thomas Wyat, except the false foure persons, should haue an hundred pound lardes to him and his heires for ever.

Wyat came to the Guild hall in London.

The same day in the afternoon being Candlemas euen, the commons of the city assembled in their liberties at the Guild hall, whither the queene with her boyes and ladies came riding from Westminster, and there after behoement words against Wyat, declared, that she meant not other wise to marry than the counsell should thinke both honorable and commodious to the realm, and that she could continue unmarried, as she had done the greatest part of her age, and therefore wished the men truly to assist her, in repressing such as contrary to their parties rebelled. When she had done, understanding that many in London did favour Wyats part, she appointed lord William Howard lieutenant of the citie, and the earle of Pembroke generall of the fleete, which both prepared all things necessary for their purpose.

Lord William Howard lieutenant of the city.

Wyat came to Southwarke.

In the meane season, to wit, the third daie of february, about thre of the clocke in the afternoon, sir Thomas Wyat and the Gentlemen marched forward from Depeford towards London with five hundred, being by estimation about two thousand, which they comming so close as it was perceived, there was shot off out of the white tower five or eight shot, but missed them, sometime shooting over, and sometime shot. After knowledge thereof once had in London, forthwith the water bridge was entte downe, and the bridge gates shut: The maiors and sherifes harnesses, commanded each man to shut in their shops and windows, and to be readie harnesses at their doores, what chance sooner might happen. By this time was Wyat entred into Kent street, and so by saint Georges Church into Southwarke. Himselfe, and part of his compaignie came in good array downe Warmondsey strate, and they were suffered peaceably to enter Southwarke without repaire, or any stroke stricken, either by the inhabitants, or of any other: yet was there many men of

the countrey in the fynes, called and brought in by the lord Wyat, and after, to have gone against the said VVyar, but they all agreed themselves to the Gentlemen, and the inhabitants with their best entertained them. Immediately upon the said VVvars comming, he made proclamation, that no souldier should take any thing, but that he should pay for it, and that his comming was to redde the Spanish king. And standing forth with his uers of his compaignie being Gentlemen (as they saide) went to the Tower place, made haucke of the Bishops goods, (he being lord Chancellor) not onely of his vituals, whereof there was plentie, but whatsoeuer else, not heauing so much as one loche of a doge, but the same was taken off and carried away, nor a booke in his gallerie or librarie burnt, or rent into pieces, so that men might haue gone by to the knes in leanes of bookes, cut out and spoyle under fate.

Bishop of Winchester's library and other his goods spoiled in Southwarke.

At the bridge foote he laid two pieces of ordinance, and began a great trench betwene the bridge and him. He laid one other piece of ordinance at saint Georges, and one going into Warmondsey strate, and an other towards the Bishop of Winchester's house.

On saturdaye the first of february sir Thomas VVyar removed out of Southwarke, toward Kingston bridge, which was done upon this occasion. The night before his departing out of Southwarke, by chance as one of the lieutenants men of the Tower named Thomas Menches, rowed with a sculler over against the Bishop of Winchester's place, there was a waterman of the Tower staires, desired the said lieutenants man to take him in, who did so, which being espied of VVvars men, seven of them with barguebois, called to them to land againe, but they would not, whereupon each man discharged their piece, and killed the said waterman, which forthwith falling downe dead, the sculler with much paine rowed through the bridge to the tower wharfe with the lieutenants man, and the dead man in his boate, which thing was no longer knowne to the lieutenant, but that euen the same night, and the next morning, he bent seauen great pieces of ordinance shurling, and demie-cannons full against the foote of the bridge, and against Southwarke, and the two chaples of saint Oliues, and saint Mary. Besides, he shot all the pieces on the white Tower, one colouring on the black Tower, and thre fauconets on the water-gate: which so done as the inhabitants of Southwarke understood, certaine bold men & women came to VVyar in most lamentable wise, saying, Sir, we are all like to be bitterly budging and distressed for your sake, our houses shall by and by be shewen downe upon our heads, to the bitter spoile of this borough, with the shot of the Tower, all ready bent and charged towarde us, for the love of God therefore take pittie upon us: at which wordes, he being partly abashed stayed a while, and then saide: I praie you my friends be content a while, and I will some ease give you of this mischiefe, for God forbid that you, or the least here should be killed or hurt in my behalfe. And so in most speeche manner he marched away. As he marched towarde Kingstone, he met, by chance a merchant named Christopher Dorell, whom he called, saying, Cousin Dorell, I praie you commend

Wyat removed out of Southwarke.

Wyat marched toward Kingstone.





certaine purposed, and forced with shot to shut the Court Gates against them. In this repulse the said lord chamberlain and others were so amazed, that many cried treason in the court, and had thought that the Earle of Pembroke, who was assaulting the taile of his enemies, hadde gone to Wyat, taking his part against the Queene: there was running and crying out of Ladies and Gentlewomen, shutting of doores and windows, and such a shouting and noise, as was wonderfull to heare. Wyat with his men marched still forward all along to Temple bar, and so through Fleetstrate till hee came to the Bell Sausage an faine high unto Ludgate, without resistance, his men going not in any good order or array. It is saide, that at Strand, certaine of the Lordes treasurers band, to the number of three hundred men, whereof the lord Chiche Powlett his sonne was captaine, met them, and so going on the one side, passed by them on the other side, without any thing saying to them. Also this is more strange, the said Wyat and his company passed along by a great company of harnessed men which stood on both sides the strates, without any thing standing them. And as hee marched for ward through Fleetstrate most with their swordes drawn, some crying, Queene Mary hath granted our request, and given us pardon: other said, the Queene hath pardoned vs. This some of Wyatts men, some say it was Wyat himselfe, came curren to Ludgate and knooled, calling to come in, saying there was Wyat, whome the queene had granted to haue their request, but the lord William Howard stood at the gate, and saide, auaunt traitor, thou shalt not come in here: Wyat a while stood, and tested him vpon a stall ouer-against the Bell Sausage gate, and at the last seeing hee could not get into the citie, and being deceived of the aide hee hoped for, returned backe againe in arraye towarde Charing Crosse, and was neuer stopped till hee came at Temple barre, where certaine boilemen which came from the fildes, mette them in the face, and then beganne the fight againe, till Clarencius an Herault came and sayde to Maister Wyat: Sir, you were best by my counsell to yeelde, you see this bate is gone against you, and in resisting, you canne get no good, but see the death of all these your soldiers, to your great perill of soule: perchance you maye finde the Queens mercifull, and the rather, if ye shalnt to great bloodshed as is like here to be. VVyat here with being somewhat assented (although he saw his men bent to fight) said, Well, if I shall nowde yeelde, I will yeelde me to a gentleman, to whome Sir Maurice Berkeley came straight, and had him leape by behinde him, and an other toke Thomas Cobham and William Kneuet, and so carried them behinde them vpon their horses to the court, then was taking of men on all sides. It is saide, that in this conflict, one pikeman, setting his backe to the wall at Saint James, kept severall of his boilemen off him a great time, and at the last was slaine. The whole number on both sides slaine at this battell passed not fortye persons, as farre as coulde be learned by them that hit toke the fildes, but there were manie sore hurt. The noyse of women and children, when the conflict was at Charing Crosse, was so great, that it was heard to the toppe of the white tower, and also the great shot was well discerned there out of Saint James fildes: there stood vpon the leades the Marques of Hampton,

Captaken.

Hampton, Sir Nicholas Poyntes, Sir Thomas Pope, Maister John Seider, and other.

About five of the clocke, Thomas Wyat, William Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, two brethren named Mancks, and Alexander Bret, were brought by Sir Henry Kermingham by water to the tower prisoners, where Sir Philip Denny received them at the bulwarke, and as Wyat passed by hee saide, go traitor, there was neuer such a traitor in England: to whome Sir Thomas Wyat turned and saide, I am no traitor, I woulde thou shouldest well knowe, thou art more traitor than I, it is not the pointe of an honest man to call mee so, and so went forth: when hee came to the tower gate, Sir Thomas Bridges lieutenant toke in through the wicket, first Manck and saide: Ah thou traitor, what hast thou and thy companie wrought? But hee holding bolone his head saide nothing: then came Thomas Kneuet, whome Maister Chamberlaine gentleman porter of the tower toke in: then came Alexander Bret, whome Sir Thomas Pope toke by the bolome, saying: Oh traitor, how couldest thou finde in thy heart to worke such a villanie, as to take wages, and being traitor ouer a bande of men, to fall to bet enemies, returning against her in battell? Bret answered, yea, I haue offended in that case; then came Thomas Cobham whome Sir Thomas Poyntes toke in, and saide, Alas maister Cobham, what wouldest thou to worke such treason? and hee answered, oh Sir, I was seduced. Then came in Sir Thomas Wyat, whome Sir John Bridges toke by the collar, and saide: Whon blame and unhappie traitor, howe couldest thou finde in thy heart to worke such detestable treason to the Queens spaciouse, who gaue thee thy life and being once already, although thou diddest before this time beare Armes in the fildes against her, and noise to yeelde her battell, to her marvellous troubles fright? If it were not (saith he) but that the law must passe vpon thee, I woulde sticke thee through with my dagger; to the which Wyat holding his armes vnder his side, and looking quernoulte with a grimme looke vpon the lieutenant, saide, it is no matter now, and so passed on. Thomas Wyat had on a shirt of maille, with sleeves very faire, thereon a velvet cascoche, and a pellow lace, with the windance of his dag hanging thereon, and a paire of bootes and spurs on his legs, and on his head a faire hat of velvet, with broad bone worke lace about it.

VVilliam Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, and Bret were the like apperelled.

On the morrow, and next day following were brought into the tower prisoners, George Cobham, Sir VVilliam Cobham, Anthony Kneuet, Hugh Booth, J. Vane, Robert Rudfords, Sir George Harpar, Edward VVyat, Edw. Fog, George Moore, and Curbert Vaughan; which Curbert being a verie handsome man, Sir Thomas Bridges at his entrie into the Tower, did wounde with a rapier him, calling him ranke traitor, and saide that hanging was too good for him: to whom this Vaughan answered with a stout courage saying; I pray God to sende you chaunce, and I would all men knewe it: I am as true a man to the queene and common wealth, as any man that I shall leaue behinde me, and my death, I care not for it.

The tenth of February, the Earle of Huntington, and other Gentlemen, and

Wyat sent to the Tower.

and to the number of 300. horsemen, brought into the Tower as prisoners the W. of Suffolke, and the L. John Grey his brother from Courtenay, where the W. had remained these daies after his taking in the house and custody of Christopher Warren alderman there.

The 11. day Sir Henry Illey, who had fled, was brought into the tower prisoner in an old fustee coat, and old paire of hose, all his apparel not worth 4 s. The same day came in two of the Culpeppers, one Cromer, and T. Rampton the Duke of Suffolks secretary.

The 12. of February being sponday, about tenne of the clocke, there went out of the tower to the scaffold on the tower hill, the L. Guilford Dudley, son to the W. of Northumberland, husband to the lady Jane Gray, daughter to the W. of Suffolke, who at his going out, took by the hands Sir Anthony Browne, M. John Throckmorton and many other gentlemen, praiesing them to pray for him: and without the bulwarke gate M. Thomas Offley one of the Sheriffs of London received him and brought him to the scaffold, where after a small declaration, he knelt down and said his praies, then holding up his eyes and hands to heaven, with teares, at the last he desired the people to pray for him, and after was beheaded: his body being laide in a car, and his head in a cloth, was brought into the chappell within the tower, where the lady Jane, whose lodging was in master Partridges house, did see his deade carcasle taken out of the car, as well as three bid for him before allue going to his death, a sight to his woofle than death.

By this time was there a scaffold made upon the greene, ouer against the white tower, for the lady Jane to die upon, who with her husband was appointed to have been put to death on the Friday before, but was staied till then: his lady being nothing at all abashed, neither with feare of her owne death, nor when approached, neither with the sight of the dead carcasle of her husband when he was brought into the chappell, came forth, the lieutenant leading her, with countenance nothing abashed, neither her eyes any thing moistened with teares (although her gentlewomen Elizabeth Tilney and mistress Helen Woon verduily wept) with a booke in her hand, wherein she praied until she came to the said scaffold, whereon when she was mounted, she was beheaded: whose deathes were the more hastened for feare of further troubles and str for her title, like as her father had attempted.

The same day was brought into the tower as prisoner by the lord chamberlaine and 200. of the gard, Edward Courtney earle of Devonshire, who as hee passed by the lieutenant, being asked the cause of his thither coming, answered, he would not accuse himselfe.

The 14. and 15. of February, about the number of 50. of Wyatts faction were hanged on 20. paire of gallows made for that purpose in diuers places about the citie.

The 17. of February was proclamation made, that all strangers should leaue the realme within foure and twentie daies next ensuing, upon paine of their goods to be confiscate, all free denizens, merchantes, and ambassadors excepted.

The same seventeenth daie of February the Duke of Suffolke was conducted to Westminster by the clearkie of cheeke and the guard, at his going out he went with a cheerefull and a verie froute countenance, but at his returne hee penitens and heaunte, desiring all men to praye for him, the Lord Courtney lying in the Bell tower saw both his going out and returning, hee seeing arraignes, and the earle of Arundell sitting upon him in iudgement, hee saide it was no treason for a peere of the realme, as he was, to raise his powder, and to make proclamation, onely to auoid strangers out of the realme, and the reason he asked the sergeants at law standing by the bar it were or no, but they would say nothing: then was it laid to his charge, hee mette with 200. men in armes, the Queenes lieutenant the earle of Huntingdon, which was treason against the Queene, forsomuch as the lieutenant representeth the prince; to the which he answered, that he knew not the said earle to be such a lieutenant, but quoth he, I met him indeed with 50. men or thereabouts, and would not haue shooke from him if I had had fewer, by which wordes hee was founde to be guilty of treason. Whereupon, he partly accused his brother the Lord Thomas, who had, as he said, perswaded him rather to fly into his country, than to abide, which it was to be feared, he should againe be committed to the tower, where as being in his country amongst his friends and tenants, who durst fetch him? Touching other articles laid to his charge he said he neuer knew of them, saying that one should say at his table once at supper, that he would undertake for need, only with 100. men to set the crowne upon Courtneys head, and so hee was condemned.

The 18. of February, Alexander Bret one of the Captaines of the Londoners that fled to Wyat, and 22. persons more of the Gentlemen, were delivered to the Sheriffe of Kent, to be executed in diuers places of Kent, but for the most part, they were all pardoned. This Bret going out of the tower embraced M. Chamberlaine the gentleman porter, & desired him to commend him to Sir T. VVyat, then praiesing al men to pray for him, he said, I am worthy of no lesse punishment than I now go to suffer, for besides my owne offence, I refused life and grace three times offered, but I trust God doeth all for the best, that I might repent, and thereby obtaine grace.

The 20. of February VVilliam Thomas late clearkie of the counsell, VVilliam Wincer, and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton were sent to the Tower, and on the next morrow were Sir Iames a Crofts and the Lord Thomas Grey sent to the Tower.

The 20. of February certaine of VVyatts faction, to the number of 400. and more were ledde to Westminster, coupled together with halters about their necks, and there in the tiltyard, the W. (who looked forth of his gallery) pardoned them.

The 23. of February Henry Grey duke of Suffolke was beheaded on the tower hill, his wordes on the scaffold were these: Good people, I am come hither to die, being iustly condemned for my disobedience against the W. highnes, of whom I do most humbly aske forgiveness: doctor VVeston answered and saide, my Lord, her grace hath already forgiven you: then saide the Duke,

I beseech you all good people, to let me be an example to you for obedience to the Lord, and the magistrates, for the contrary therof hath brought me to this end. I desire you all to beare me witness, that I die a true christian man, believing to be saved by none other means but by almighty God, through the passion of his son Iesus Christ: and now I praye you to praye with me: then kneeling downe, doctor Weston with him, they said the psalme of *Miserere mei Deus*, and *In te Domine speravi*, the duke one berke, and doctor Weston another, which done, he put off his gowne and dublet, knitt the kerchiefe about his eyes, held up his hands, laid his head over the block, which head at one stroke was taken from him.

The 26. of february William Thomas had almost slain himselfe, by thrusting a knife under his paye.

The 11. of March, Wil. Howard admirall of England, was created baron of Effingham at Westminster.

The 14. of March, the earle of Bedford L. pryncp seale, chiefe ambassador to the prync of Spaine, set forward on his bolege to fetch him hither.

The 15. of March, sir T. Wyat was arraigned at Westminster, of whose arraignment you maie reade in larger volumes, wherein I have becomen my labours.

The 18. of March being Palm Sunday, the lady Elizabeth the Quene, was by the L. treasurer and the earle of Suffe conveyed to the tower of London, from Westminster by water.

The 24. of March, were released out of the tower, the Marques of Northampton, the L. Cobham, sir Wil. Cobham, John Few Williams, Culpepper, Vane, John Harington, Corbet &c.

The 2. of April, the parliament began at Westminster, which was appointed to have bin kept at Wyndesore.

The 5. of April sir I. Williams was created baron of Emsay at St. James.

The 7. of April sir Edw. North was created baron of Charllege by writ at St. James.

The 8. of April, sir John Bridges was created baron Chandois of Sandryat St. James. The same 8. of April, being then Sunday, a cat with his head shaven, and the likenes of a bestment cast over him, with his four feet tied together, and a round peece of paper like a singing cake betwixt them, was hanged on a galloves in Cheape, nere to the crosse, in the parish of St. Mathew, which cat being taken downe, was caried to the Bishp of London, and he caused the same to be shewed at Pauls crosse, by the preacher D. Pendleton. The 10. of April, D. Granmer archb. of Cant. D. Ridley B. of London, and Hugh Latimer once B. of Worcester, were conveyed prisoners from the tower of London to Wyndesore, and after from thence to Wyndesore, there to dispute with the divines and learned men of the contrary opinion.

The 11. of April, sir Th. Wyat was beheaded on the tower hill, and after quartered, his quarters were set up in divers places, and his head on the galloves at Wyndesore nere Wyndesore park, from whence it was shortly after stolen and conveyed awaie. This sir Tho. Wyat before his coming down out of

the tower, was conveyed by the L. chamberlaine, and the Lord Shandos to the tower over the water gate, where the L. Courtney late, and there he remained in talk more than halfe an houre, but what was spoken betwixt them I know not. Then was he brought downe, and at the garden pale, the L. chamberlain took his leave of him, and likewise did master secretary Bourne, to whom sir Thomas Wyat saide, I praye you to pray for me, and be a means to the quene for my poore wife and children, and if it might have pleased her grace to have granted me my wife, I trust to have done her such good service as should have recompensed mine offence: but since not, I beseech God to have mercie on me, to the which master Bourne made answer, and so Wyat came toward the hill betwixt Doctor Weston and the lord Shandos: when he was upon the scaffold, he desired all men to pray for him and with him, and then said in effect the same of the like words: Good people, I come presently here to die, bringing thereto lawfully and lawfully condemned, for I have soze offended against God and the quenes maiesty, I trust God hath forgiven me, and will take mercie upon me: I beseech the Quene maieesty also of forgiveness: She hath forgiven you quoth Doctor Weston: then, quoth he, let euerie man betwixt howe hee taketh any thing in hand against the higher powers, vntil God be prosperable to his purpose it will neuer take good effect or successe, whereof you may now learn of me, and I pray God I may be the last example in this place, for that or any other like. And where it is said and noised abroad, that I should accuse the lady Elizabeth and the lord Courtney, it is not so good people: for I assure you, neither they nor any other now ponder in holde was psonie of my rising but I began, as I have declared no lesse to the Quene's council, and that is most true. When said doctor Weston at those words, marke this my masters, he saith that, that which hee hath shewed to the council in writing of them is true, and so without any more talke sir Tho. Wyat turned him, and put off his gowne, untwisted his points, then taking the earle of Huntington, the L. Hastings, sir T. Strangulish, and many other by the handes, hee plucked off his dublet and waistcoat, and then kneeling downe, laid his head to the block, and raising himselfe againe on his knees after a few wordes spoken, with his eyes lifted up toward heauen, hee knitt the kerchiefe over his eyes, and holding up his handes, Iohannelle laide downe his heade, which the executioner tooke from him at one stroke.

The twentieth of April, were led to the Gaule Hall in London to be arraigned sir Nicholas Throckmorton and sir James a Croft, Robert Winter, and Cuthbert Vaughan being also had thither to witness against them, where that day was no more arraigned but sir Nicholas Throckmorton, who tarried from 7. of the clocke in the morning untill almost due at night was by verdict of the Jurie quit; hee pleaded not guiltie, and that he was consenting to nothing &c. But the Jurie which quit him, was commanded to appeare before the Council at an houre warning, and the losse of five hundred pounds the peece.

On Saint Marks day or the 25. of April, they were before the council in the Starred Chamber, and thence about two of the clocke Thomas Wheelstone Haberdasher

Parliament.

Barons created.

Cat hanged in Cheape.

Disputation at Wyndesore.

Thomas Wyat beheaded.

Row. Lea

Sir Nicholas Throckmorton arraigned.

Haberdasher foreman, and Emanuell Lucar merchant sailer were sent to the tower, and the rest to the Fleet prisoners.

**Lord Thomas Grey beheaded**  
The 27. of Aprill, lord T. Grey, brother to the late duke of Suffolke, was beheaded on the tower hill.

The 29. of Aprill, sir James a Croft knight was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement.

The 9. of May, VVilliam Thomas esquire was arraigned at the same Guild hall, for conspiring the queenes death, was found guilty, and had iudgement of death.

The 14. of May Garrard fitz Garret was created earle of Salisbure, and baron of Wythelney, for him and his heires, at S. James.

**William Thomas executed.**  
The 18. of May, VVilliam Thomas was drawn from the tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, beheaded, and quartered, who said at his death he died for his country, &c.

The 19. of May, lady Elizabeth was conveyed from the tower of London by water to Richmond, from thence to Windsor, and so by the lorde VVilliams to Ricote in Shropshire, and from thence to Woodstocke.

The 25. of May, Edw. Courtney earle of Devonshire was delivered out of the tower by sir Ralph Chamberlaine of Suffolke, and sir Th. Tresham knight, who conveyed him to Fordingay castle in Northampton shire, there to remaine under their custodie.

The 10. of June, doctor Pendleton preached at Pauls crosse, at whose gun was shot, the pellet whereof went very nere him, and light on the church wall. But the shooter could not be found.

The 11. of June, was proclamation made, for bidding the shooting in baynards, and bearing of weapons.

The 15. of July, Elizabeth Croft a wench about the age of 18. yeres, stood upon a scaffold at Pauls crosse all the sermon time, where she confessed, that she being mooued by diuers lorde persons there unto, had upon the 14. of March last before passed, counterfeited certain speeches in a wall of an house without Aldersgate of London, through the which the people of the whole Citie were wonderfully molested, for that all men might heare the voice, but not see her person. Some said it was an angel, a voice from heauen, some the holy ghost, &c. This was called the spirit in the wall: shee had laine whistling in a strange whistle made for that purpose, which was given her by one Drakes, seruant to sir Anchony Neull, then were there diuers companions, one named Myles, cleark of S. Burolophs without Aldersgate, a plaster, a weauer, Hill cleark of S. Leonardes in Foster lane, and other confederate with her, which putting the miselues among the people, took upon them to interpret what the spirit said, exprelling certaine scitious words against the queene, the prince of Spaine, the masse, confession, &c.

The 19. of July the prince of Spaine arrived at Southampton, the 4. day after he came to Winchester in the evening, and there going to church was honorably receiued of the bishop, and a great number of nobles: the next day he met with the queene, with whom he had long familiar talke.

On S. James day, the marriage was solemnized betweene him and queene Mary, at which time the emperours ambassadoz being present, pronounced, that in consideration of the marriage, the emperor had giuen unto his sonne the kingdome of Naples. The solemnitie of this marriage being ended, the king of heeraulds proclaimed their title as followeth: Philip and Mary by the grace of God, King and Queene of England, Fraunce, Naples, Hierusalem, and Ireland, defenders of the faith, princes of Spaine and Sicilie, archdukes of Austria, dukes of Millaine, Burgundy and Brabant, countes of Alspruge, Flanders and Tyrol: which being ended, the trumpets blew, the king and queene came forth hand in hand, and two swordes borne before them. Shortly after king Philip and queene Mary remooued from Winchester to Basing, from thence to Windsor, where on the fifth of August the king was stalked in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the earle of Suffolke was made knight of the garter.

The 11. of August, the king and queene remooued to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the king in one barge, the queene in another, & landed at the bishop of Winchesters stairs next to S. Mary Durres church, and so passed through that place and park into Suffolke place, where they rested that night. And the next day being the 18. of August, they rode through Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision receiued of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the crosse in Cheape new gilt, &c. and passing through Pauls church: past a man came sliding, as it were flying upon a rope, fro Pauls steeple down to the beanes wall.

The second of September, sir Anthony Browne maister of the kings horse, was made vicount Montague for him & his heires males, with the gift of twenty marks the yeare of Surrey, at Hampton court.

In this moneth of September, deceased Thomas Howard duke of Suffolke at Framingham in Suffolke, and was honorably buried amongst his ancestors.

The 2. of October was brought into the tower of London twenty carts laden with 97. chells, each of them a yard and fower inches long, filled with siluer bolton to be coyned, conuoyed by certaine Spaniards, and English men of the kings gard.

The five & twentieth of October, a Spaniard was hanged at Charing crosse for killing of an English man in fight there, he was seruant to sir George Gifford, there was offered for his life by other strangers five hundred crowns, but all that would not stay iustice.

The 4. of Nouember being Sunday, three priests that being married, would not leave their wiues, and two lay men that had two wiues apiece, were punished alike, for they went on procession about Pauls church in white dresses ouer them, and either of them a taper of ware in the one hand, and a rod in the other, and so they late before the preacher at Pauls crosse during the sermon, and then were dysped on the heades with the same rods.

The twelfth of Nouember, the parliament began at Westminster.

The 24. of Nouember, cardinall Poole came out of Brabant into England.

A a a

and

Cardinall  
Poole came  
into England.

A man sliding  
from Pauls  
steeple.

Siluer bolton  
brought to  
the tower.

A Spaniard  
hanged.

Lord Thomas  
Grey beheaded

William Thomas  
executed.

The earle of  
Devonshire  
sent to Fordingay.

A gun shot at  
the preacher.

Ann. reg. 2.  
A spirit in a  
wall.

and was receiued with much honour: he was by parliament restored to his old dignitie that he was put from by king Henry, and shortly after came into the parliament house, where the king, queene, and other states were present. Then he declared the cause of his legacie, first exhorting them to returne to the communion of the church, and restore to the pope his due authoritie. Secondly, he aduertised them to giue thanks to God that had sent them so blessed a king and queene. Finally, he signified, for so much as they had with great gentleness restored him to his honour and dignitie, that he most earnestly desired to see them restored to the heavenly court, and vniuite of the church.

The next day the whole court of parliament drew out the forme of a supplication, the summe whereof was, that they greatly repented them of that schisme that they had lliued in, and therefore desired the king, queene, and cardinall, that by their means they might be restored to the bosome of the church, and obedience of the sea of Rome.

The next day the king, queene, and cardinall being present, the lord chauncel- lor declared what the parliament had determined concerning the cardinals request, and offered to the king and queene the supplication before mentioned, which being read, the cardinall in a large oration declared how acceptable repentance was in the sight of God, &c. And immediately making prayer vnto God by authoritie to him committed, absolved them. When all this was done, they went vnto the chappell, and there singing *Te Deum* with great solemnitie, declared the joy that for this reconciliation was pretended.

The 28. of November, the lord mayor of London, with the aldermen in scarlet, and the commons in their liveryes assembled in Paules church at nine of the clocke in the forenoone, where doctor Chadley one of the prebends preached in the quire in presence of the bishop of London, and nine other bishops, and read a letter sent from the queenes counsell, the tenor whereof was, that the bishop of London should cause *Te Deum* to be sung in all the churches of his diocesse, with continuall prayers for the Queenes maestie, which was conceived and quicke with child: the letter being read, he began his sermon with this Anthetique: *Veneranda Maria, misericordiam gratiam apud Deum*. His sermon being ended, *Te Deum* was sung, and solenne procession was made of *Salve festinades*, all the circuit of the church.

The second of December, cardinall Poole came from Lambeth by water, and landed at Paules wharfe, and from thence to Paules church, with a crosse, two pillars, and two pollaxes of silver borne before him. He was there receiued by the lord chauncel- lor with procession, where he taried till the king came from Whitehall, minister by land at eleven of the clocke, and then the Lord chauncel- lor entered Paules crosse and preached a sermon, taking for his theme these wordes: *Frater, Glebae quia hora est iam nos de somno surgere, &c.* In the which sermon he declared, that the king and queene had restored the Pope to his supremacie, and the three states assembled in the parliament, representing the whole body of the realme, had submitted themselves to the same. The sermon being ended, the king departed towards Whitehall, and with him the lord cardinall, with the crosse and borne before him.

The

The queene  
bruted to be  
with child.

The king &  
the cardinall  
came to  
Paules and  
heard the  
sermon.

The 27. of December, Emanuel Philibert prince of Piemont, and duke of Savoy, with other lords, were receiued at Chauncery by the lord priue seale and other, and so conveyed along the river of Thames vnder London bridge to Whitehall.

Prince of  
Piemont.

The ninth of Januarie, the prince of Orange being receiued at Chauncery, was conveyed along the river of Thames, & landed at the duke of Suffolks place.

1555  
Prince of O-  
range.

The 12. of Januarie, the said prince of Orange with other lords, was conducted by the lord chamberlaine to the tower of London, where was shewed vnto him the ordinance, artillerie, munitions, and armorie, with the munt, &c. and so was brought into the white tower, from whence as he returned through the long gallerie, all the prisoners saluted him, vnto whom the prince said, he was soyle for their captiuitie, and trusted the king and queene would be good vnto them: at his departing from the tower, he gave the gunners ten peeces of Flemish gold at 5 s. the pece, and the warders other ten peeces as a reward.

The 18. of Januarie, the lord chauncel- lor, the bishop of Ely, the lord treasurer, the earle of Shrewsburie, the controller of the Queenes house, secretarie Bourne, sir Richard Southwell master of the ordinance and armorie, came to the tower of London, and there sitting in commission, discharged prisoners as followeth: the late archbishop of York, sir Iohn Rogers, sir Iames Crofts, sir Nicholas Rockmorton, sir Nicholas Arnold, sir Edward Warner, sir George Harper, sir William Sentlow, sir Andrew Dudley, sir Gawin Carew knights, William Gibs squire, Cuthbert Vaughan, Harington, Tremaine, and others.

Prisoners  
discharged.

The fourth of Februarie, Iohn Rogers vicar of Saint Sepulchers was hēt in Smithfield.

Iohn Rogers  
bruted.

The twentieth of Februarie, the lord Strange being married to the earle of Cumberlandes daughter at the court, the same day at night was a goodly passing of luogo de Canne by creslet light.

luogo de  
Can.

The 12. of Februarie, 99. horses, and two carries laden with treasure of gold and silver, brought out of Spaine, was conveyed through the citie to the tower of London, vnder the conduct of sir Thomas Gresham, the queenes merchant, and other.

The 18. of Februarie, Thomas Thurlbe bishop of Ely, and Anthonie lord Montacute with other, took their journey towards Rome, ambassadours from the king and queene.

Ambassa-  
dors sent to  
Rome.

Against Easter, the lord Courtney earle of Devonshire, came againe to the court, and about ten daies after, the lady Elizabeth came likewise to the queene, both at Hampton court, where the queene had taken her chamber to be deliuered of child, but all proved contrarie: for she neither had child, nor great hope to haue any.

Earle of De-  
vonshire de-  
liuered.

The 14. of March, Iohn Russell earle of Bedford died at his house neare Aile bridge by the Sauoy, sometimes the bishop of Carliles house, and on the 22. of the same moneth was conveyed to Chesham in Buckingham shire his chiefe house, and there honorably entred.

On Easter day, a priest sometime a monk of Ely and also of Witter named William Branch alias Flower, with a wood knife wounded another priest as he

William  
Flower bruted  
at Westminster  
was str.

was ministering the sacrament to the people in Saint Margarets church at Westminster: for the which fact, the said William Flower the 24. of April had his right hand smitten off, and for opinions in matters of religion was burned in the lane-ward near to Saint Margarets churchyard.

Am-bas-sadors sent o-  
uer to Ca-  
lais.

A counter-  
feit king Ed-  
ward whip-  
ped.

In May, cardinall Poole, the lord chancelor, the earle of Arundale, and the lord Poyer went ouer sea to Calais, and nere unto Harke treated with the emperours and French kings commissioners, for a peace to be had betwene the said princes, cardinall Poole being present there, who returned againe into England about the midd of June, without any agreement making.

The tenth of May, William Constable alias Fetherstone, a Millers sonne about the age of eightene yeares, who had published king Edward the first to be a-lur, and sometime named himselfe to be king Edward the first, was taken at Clatham in Kent, and conveyed to Hampton court, where being examined by the counsell, he required pardon, and said he wist not what he did, but as he was persuaded by many: from thence he was sent to the Marshalsea, & the 22. of May he was caried in a cart through London to Westminster with a paper on his head, wherein was written, that he had named himselfe to be king Edward. After he had bene caried about Westminster hall before the Judges, he was whipped about the pallace, and through Westminster into Smithfield, and then banished into the North, in which countrie he was bozne, and had bene sometime Lackey to sir Peter Mewtas.

Bradford  
brent.

Ann. reg. 3.

The first of July, John Bradford was burned in Smithfield. This Bradford was a man of very sober and honest life, and therefore the bishops would gladly haue had him recant and aburre his opinions.

The 12. of August, was a terrible fight on the sea betwene the Duchmen & Frenchmen nere to Rumney warth, whereas eleven ships were burnt & sunke.

In this moneth of August, in Suffolke at a place by the sea side, all of hard stone and pibble, called in those parts a shelve, lying betwene the towones of Driford and Alborough, where neuer groweth grasse, nor any earth was euer seen, there chanced in this barren place, suddenly to spring up without any tillage or sowing, great abundance of peason, wherof the poore gathered (as men woged) about an hundred quarters, yet remained some ripe, and some blossoming, as many as euer there were before, to the which place rode the bishop of Exeter, and the lord Willoughby, with others in great number, who found nothing but hard rockie stone the space of three parshes under the rootes of those peason, which rootes were great and long, and very sweet, &c.

The necessi-  
tie of the  
poore by  
God reliev-  
ued.

Disputation  
at Christs  
hospitall, as  
had bene ac-  
customed at  
S. Bartholo-  
mewes in  
Smithfield.

On Bartholomew euen, after the lord maior and aldermen of London had ridden about Saint Bartholomewes faire, they came to Christs hospitall within Fleetgate, where they heard a disputation betwene the schollers of Paules schoole, Saint Anthonies schoole, and the schollers of the said hospitall, for whom was poynted three games, which was three pens, the best penne of silver and gilt, valued at 5. s. won by a scholer of Saint Anthonies schoole and the maister of that schoole had 6. s. 8. penne: the second, a pen of silver parcell gilt, valued at 4. s. won by a scholer of Paules schoole, and his waister had 5. s. in money: the third a pen of silver, valued at 3. s. won by a scholer of the said hospitall, and his maister

ster had 4. shillings, and there were two piess maisters of Jet appointed for iudges, which had each of them a silver rule for their paines, valued at six shillings eight pence the peece. The disputation being ended, the maior and aldermen entered the hall where the chyldren of the hospitall use to dine, and had fruit and wine and so departed.

King Philip tomt ouer seas, and landed at Calais on the fourth of September, where he was honorably receiued by the lord Burie, & the maior of the Staple of Calais, an alderman of London named sir Andrew Luddie, who presented him maister with a purse and a thousand marks of gold in it: that night the king was lodged in Staple inn: & on the morrow he departed from Calais toward Budaids in Babant, to visit the emperor his father: he gaue at his departing among the souldiers of the towne of Calais a thousand crownes of gold, and there accompanied him in his iourney of English lords, the earle of Arundel lord steward of the Quenees house, the earle of Pembroke, the earle of Huntington and others.

King Philip  
went ouer  
into Fladders

On Michaellmas euen, the prisoners that lay in the counter in Breadstreet, were remooued to a new counter made in Woodstreet of the cities purchase and building, the which remoouing was confirmed by a common counsell assembled at the Guild hall for that purpose.

New counter  
in Wood  
street.

On the last of September, by occasion of great wind and raine that had fallen was such great floods, that that morning the kings palace at Westminster & Westminster hal was ouerfloode with water vnto the flaire foot going to the Chancery and Kings bench, so that when the lord maior of London should come to present the sheries to the barons of the exchequer, all Westminster hall was full of water, and by report there that morning, a wherry man rowed with his boat ouer Westminster bridge into the pallace court, and so through the Staple gate, & all the wooll staple into the kings street: and all the marshes on Lambeth side were so ouerfloode, that the people from Newington church could not passe on foot, but were caried by boate from the said church to the pinfold, nere to Saint Georges in Southwarke.

Great land  
waters.

The 16. of October, doctor Ridley & maister Latimer were burnt at Oxford. Ridley and Latimer were burnt at Oxford. In October and Nouember a parliament was holden, in the which the quene yielded vp vnto the spirituall men, the first fruits & tenths of all bishopps, benefices, & ecclesiasticall livinges. In this parliament was graunted to the king & quene a subside of the lattie from 5. pound to 10. pound, 8. pence of the pound, to 10. pound to 20. pound 12. pence of the pound, & from 20. pound vnto 16. s. of the pound, & all strangers double, and the clergy granted 6. s. of the pound.

Ridley and  
Latimer  
brent.

First fruits  
and tenths  
restored to  
the clergy.  
A subside.

Doctor Storie and other were appointed by the cardinall to visite every parish church in London and Middlesex, to see their roodlofts repaired, and the images of the crucifix, with Mary and Iohn thereon to be fixed.

The 12. of Nouember, Stephen Gardener bishop of Winchester chancelor of England deceased at Poyke place, or White hall by Westminster, whose body was from thence conveyed by water to Winchester house in Southwarke, where being inclosed in lead, he was laid in a vault of brick made for that purpose, in Saint Mary Duries church, and there rested for a time, but the pawle of blacke velvet laid ouer his coffine was stolen and so cleane conveyed away, that the

D. Gardener  
deceased.



same was neuer heard of. From thence on the foure and twentieth of February next following, he was translated and caried from the said parish church of *Saint Mary Querie*, through *Southwarke* toward *Winthelseter*, there to be buried in his cathedrall church as he had appointed by his testament, his coyses was set in a chariot couered with blacke, and a picture made like unto him, lying on his coffin, with a mitre on the head, a coape of cloth of gold on the bodie of the picture, gloves on the hands, rings on the fingers, &c. The lord vicount *Montacute*, the bishop of *Ex.* and other his executors riding to the buriall with about two hundred horse of gentlemen and yeomen all in blacke, &c.

1556

On fteu-years day, the Queene gaue the great scale to doctor Nicholas Heath archbishop of Yorke, and made him lord chancellor : He likewise gaue the priuie scale to the lord Peger, and made him lord priuie scale: these were both honours borne.

In this moneth of Februarie, the lord maior of London and the aldermen entered into Bridewell, and tooke possession thereof, according to the gift of king Edward, now confirmed by Queene Mary.

The millers son failing to be king Edward.

The 26. of February, William Constable *alias* Fetherston was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, who had caused letters to be cast abroad, that king Edward was aliue, and to some he shewed himselfe to be king Edward, so that many persons both men and women were troubled by him, for the which edition the said William had bene once whipped and deliuered, as is aforesaid: But now he was condemned, and the 13. of March he was drawne, hanged and quartered at Tyburne.

Blazing Star. A blazing star was seen at all times of the night, the 6. 7. 8. 9. and 10. of March.

The 21. of March, doctor Cranmer archbishop of Canterbury was burned at Oxford: and the same day cardinall Poole sang his first masse at Greenwich in the friers church: on Sunday next he was consecrated archbishop of Canterbury.

The 25. of March, being the feast of the Annunciation of our lady, Cardinall Poole received the pall with the then bled ceremonies and solemnities at Bow church in Cheape.

The 28. of March, at ten of the clocke before noone, a part of Pettingate called Newgate on fire  
 Conspiracy. was made by certaine persons, whose purpose was to haue robbed the Q. exchequer, called the receit of the exchequer, in the which there was of the Q. treasure about 50000. l. the same time, to the intent they might be able to maintain war against the queene. This matter was uttered by one of the conspiracie named White, whereby Vdall, Throckmorton, Peckham, Iohn Daniel & Stanton were apprehended, and diuerse others fled into Fraunce. Sir Anthonie Kingstone was apprehended, and died by the way coming toward London.

The 28. of April, John Throckmorton and Richard Vdall were beawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

The 19. of May, William Stanton was likewise executed.

The 8. of June, William Rossey, John Dedike, and John Bedell were executed at Tyburn.

The 18. of June, one Sands a younger son to the lord Sands, was hanged at Sands haged  
 b. Thomas of Wallerings, for a robbery that he and other had committed on for robbery.  
 Wallerings last of 4000. l'.

The 27. of June, 13. persons being condemned for opinions concerning the Sacrament, were burnt at Stratford the Bow. Thirteen burnt at Stratford

The 8. of July, Henry Peckham cometh to sit Edmond Peckham, and John Daniel were hanged and beheaded on the Tower hill, for being of counsell with the king that should have robbed the queenes treasure of her archtreasurer, and their bodies buried in Barking church.

About this time one Cleber, which sometime kept a schoole at Dys in Dorsetshire, Conspiracie  
folke, with three brethren, whose names were Lincolne pretended an insurrection in Norfolk,  
on, and would haue gathered the people at a marriage, vnto the which the brethren  
promised either of them to bring an 100. horse with men: at which time by them  
appointed, the said Cleber gaue charge to a seruant of his, to watch in a lane neigh  
to the church where they should meete, and alsoone as he saw any horse-man com-  
ming thitherward, to giue him warning with all speed. So it chanced (by the  
will of God) that certaine men riding through that lane to some other place about  
their businesse, came about such an houre as Cleber had appointed, vpon sight of  
which men, his said seruant returned to his maister, and told him that his friends  
were come: & immediately the said Cleber floode vp in the parish church of Parsle,  
and read a traitorous proclamation of purpose prepared, which being ended, and  
saying his part was too weake, for that his mates were not come, began to flye:  
but one maister Shireman pursued and tooke him at a towne called Ope in Suff-  
olke, and was kept in prison untill the next Sessions at S. Edmundsburie, and  
his three mates being brought to him, were there all together drayoned, hanged  
and quartered.

In the last peare began the hot burning fevers, wherof died many old persons, so that in London there died 7. admermen in the space of 10. moneths, whose names were, Henry Herdfon, who decaied the 22. of December, 1555. sir Richard Dobs, late maior, sir William Laxton late maior, sir Henry Hoblethorne late maior, sir Iohn Champneis blind, late maior, sir Iohn Ayleffe late Wyrrife, & sir Iohn Gresham late maior. who decaied the 23. of October anno 1556.

This year, on the 19. of September the role pence being base monies coyned in the reigns of Henry the 3. and Edward the 6. were by proclamation forbidden to be any longer current in England, but in Ireland to passe as before.

The 21. of November, Iohn Fecknam late deane of Paules in London, was made abbot of Westminster, was stalled, and tooke possession of the same: and 14. monkes more receiued the habite with him that day of the order of S. Bennet.

The said 21. of November, a man was brought from Aldermintul hall riding with his face to the horse's tail, and a paper on his head, to the standards in cheape, & there let on the pillorie, and then burned with an hote yron on both his cheeks, with two letters F. and A. for False Accusing one of the court of the common place in Aldermintul of treason: the like iustice I once wished to the like accuser of his master and eldest brother, but it was answered, that in such case could be no remedie, though the accuser himselfe were in the same fault found the prince

3888 4

pull arc.



shall offender: where throughe it follogeth, the accuser neuer shewed signe of shame: the way to Repentance) but terribly curseth, and blasphemously sweareth he neuer committed any such act, though the same be registered before the honorable, the Duceres Maisties high Commissioners: and what horrible slanders, by libelling and otherwise with threats of murder he daily breatheth against me, the knowre of all secrets, God I meane, knoweth, unto whom I refer my cause, being comforted with this sentence of the prophet David: fret not thy selfe with these cursed harmefull men, neither enue angerly these workers of wickednesse, for like grasse anon shall they be cut downe, and like the greene freshly bent of the flower shall they wither away, &c.

Psal. 37.

A stranger  
would haue  
murdered  
the keeper  
of Newgate.

The 16. of December, Gregorie Carpenter, blacke smith, a Frenchman boyne, was arraigned for making counterfeit keyes, wherewith to haue opened the lockes of Newgate, so haue laine the keeper, and let forth the prisoners, at which time of his arraignment, hauing conueyed a knife into his sleue, he thrust it into the side of William Whierens his fellow prisoner, who had giuen witness against him, so that he was in great perill of death thereby, for the which fact he was immediately taken from the barre into the street before the Iustices hall, where his hand being first taken off, he was hanged on a gibbet set up for that purpose: the keeper of Newgate was arraigned and indicted for that the said prisoner had weapon about him, and his hands loose which should haue bene bound.

1557.  
Gun shot in  
to the Court  
at Greene-  
wich.  
Ambassador  
from Russia  
and Musco-  
uia.

The 4. of Januarie, a ship before Greeneuich (the Court being there) shot off his Ordnance, one peece being charged with a bullet of stone, which passed through the wals of the Court, and did no more hurt.

In the yeere 1556. an Ambassadour from the high and mightie Euan Vasiluich Emperour of all Russia, great Duke of Moldenier, Polcoua and Poouogrode, Emperour of Cassan and of Astrachan, &c. sent by the Sea from the port of Saint Nicholas in Russia, his honorable Ambassadour furnished Osep Napea, to the famous and excellent Princes Philip and Marie, King and Quene of England with certaine letters, together with certaine presents and gifts, as a manifest argument of a mutuall amitie to be made and continued betwene their Maisties and subiectes, for the commodities of both Realmes, and people: which Orator was the twentieth of Iulie imbarked in a good English ship named the Edward Bonauenture, belonging to the company of the English Merchants, Richard Chancellor being ground Pilot, and John Bucklande Maister of the said ship. In which was laden, ware, oyle, tallow, fures, felts, yarne, &c. to the summe of twentie thousand pound sterling, together with certaine Russkes: Over and aboue ten other Russkes shipped in an other ship called Bona Speranza, with goods to the value of five thousand pound sterling, which ships in their Iourney towards the coast of England, were by contrarie winds leuered the one from the other, to wit, the said Bona Speranza with two other English ships, the one named the Philip and Marie, the other the Confidentia, were diuinc on the coast of Norway, where the said Confidentia was seene to perill on a rocke, and the Bona Speranza: leuied to winder there. The third being the Philip and Marie, arrived in the

Thamis

Thamisigh London y<sup>e</sup> 18. of April in y<sup>e</sup> yeare 1557. The Edward Bonauenture trauesing the seas four moneths: finally the tenth of November the said yeare 1557. arrived within the Scottissh coastes, where by extreme stormes, the said ship being beaten from her ground, takles, was diuinc upon the rocks on shore, where she brake and split in peeces, in such sort, as the grand pilote, taking the boate, of the said ship, trusting to attaine the shore, and so to saue the bodie of the said ambassadour, and frauen of the companie, the same boate was by darkenight ouerwhelmed and drowned, wherein perished, not onely the said ground pilote, with frauen Russkes, but also diuerse mariners, the ambassadour with a few others with much difficultie saued. In which shipwrecke not onely the said shippe was broken, but also the goods laden in her was by the rude people of the countrie, rifled and carried away. As soone as by letters it was to the company in London knowne of the losse of their pilote, men, goods, and ships: the Merchants obtained the Duceres letters to the Lady Dowager of Scotland, for the gentle entertainment of the said Ambassadoz with y<sup>e</sup> straine, and restitution of his goods, & also adressed two Gentlemen, maister Lawrence Hulle docto<sup>r</sup> of the ciuill Law, and George Gulpin with money, and other requisites into Scotland, to comfort him and his there, and also to conuinc him into England, so that on the 14. of Februarie, the said Ambassadoz left Scotland, comming towards England, hauing attending vpon him the said two English Gentlemen and others, came the 18. day of Februarie to Barwick, where he was honorably receiued by the Lord Wharton, Lord Warden of the east Marches: he prosecuting his voyage untill the 27. of Februarie, approached the cite within 12. miles, where he was receiued with 30. merchants with chains of gold, and goodly apparell, riding, who conducting him to a merchants house some miles from London, receiued there a quantitie of gold, beuets, a silke, with all furniture thereto requisite: the next day being the last of Februarie, he was by the merchants aduenturers for Russia, to the number of 140. persons, and so many or more seruants in one liuerie, conducted towards the cite of London, where by the way he had not onely the hunting of the fore, &c. but also by the Duceres Maisties commandement was receiued by the Viscount Montague, he being accompanied with diuers lustie knights, squiers, gentlemen and women, to the number of 300. horses, led him to the north parts of the Citie of London, where, by 4. merchants richly apparellled, was presented to him a faire richly trapped boyle, together with a footcloth of crimosin beuets, enriched with gold laces, wherupon y<sup>e</sup> ambassadoz mounted, riding towards Smithfield bars, the Lord maiorz accompanied with the aldermen in scarlet did receiue him, and so riding thorough the cite of London, in the middle betwene the lord maiorz and Viscount Montague, a great number of merchants, and notable personages riding before, was conducted into his lodging in Fenchurch street. At his first entrance into his chamber there was presented vnto him on the queenes behalfe, for a gift and present, one rich peece of cloth of silke, a peece of cloth of gold, another peece of cloth of gold railed with crimosin beuets, a peece of crimosin beuets in graine, a peece of purple beuets, a peece of damaske purpled, a peece of crimosin damaske: which he thankfully accepted. In this his beautifull lodging, he abode expecting the kings

Richard  
Chancellor  
drowned.

repare

repaire out of Flaunders into England: whose highnesse arriving the 21. of March, the same ambassador the 25. of March (the day twelue month he tooke his leaue from the emperor his maister) was honorably brought to the king and queene at Westminster, where arriving at the bidge, was there received with 6. lords, conducted into a chamber, where by the lords Chancelor, Treasurer, priuy seale, Admirall, bishop of Ely, and other counsellors, he was saluted, and consequently brought unto the kings and queens presence, sitting under a stately cloth of honor. Where after he had delivered his letters, made his oration, given two timber of sables, and the report of the same made both in English and Spanish, was with much honor, shoones remitted by water to his former lodging, to the which within two daies after by assignement of the king and queene, repaired, and conferred with him two grave counsellors, the bishop of Ely, and Sir William Pecer knight chiefe secretarie, who after diuerse talks and conferences, finally concluding vpon such treaties and articles of amitie, as the letters of the kings and queens maiesties vnder their great seal of England, to him by the said counsellors delivered, both appeare.

A league & articles of amitie confirmed.

The 24. of Aprill, was celebrated the solemnitie of the noble order of the garter at Westminster, the said ambassador was conducted to the court by the lords Talbot & Lunsley, to her maiesties presence, where he tooke his leaue with commendations to the emperor, which being done, he was led vnto a chappell, where was prepared for him a stately feast, wherein he accompanied with the duke of Norfolk, the lords aboue mentioned and other, was present at the whole seruice: the diuine seruice being done, he was remitted and reduced to his barge, and so to his lodging. The merchants hauing prepared foure goodly and well trimmed ships, laden with all kinds of merchandizes apt for Russia, the same ambassador valed downe the riuer of Thamis, from London to Graueland, where he with his traine and furniture, was imbarcked towards his voyage homeward on the 3. of May. It is to be remembred, that during the whole abode of the said ambassador in England, the company of merchants did frankly giue him and his, all manner of colles and charges in victuals, riding from Scotland to London, during his abode there, and vntill setting of saile aboard a ship.

Gifts sent to the king and queene of England by the emperor of Russia, and spoiled by the Scots after the shipwrecke.

First, 6. timber of sables, rich in colour and haire.

Item, twenty entire sables, exceeding beautifull with teeth, eares & claws.

Item, 4. liuing sables with chaines and collets.

Item, 30. lizarnes large and beautifull.

Item, 6. large and great skins, very rich and rare, wrought onely by the emperor for worthines.

Item, a large and faire lersawcon for the wild swan, crane, goose, and other great fowles, together with a drum of silver, the hoopess gilt, bled for a lute to call the said hawke.

Gifts sent to the Emperor of Russia, by the king and queene of England.

First, two rich peeces of cloth of tissue.

Item, one fine peece of scarlet.

Item,

Item, one fine violet in graine.

Item, one azur cloth.

Item, a notable peece of brigandines, with a murian couered with crimolins bluet, and gilt nailes.

Item, a male and female lions.

Gifts given to the ambassador at his departure.

First, a chaine of gold of a 100. pound.

Item, a large bason and ewer of silver and gilt.

Item, a paire of pottle pots gilt.

Item, a paire of flagons gilt.

Charles lord Sturton and his men cruelly murdered maister Argile and his sonne: he caused them to be stricken downe with clubbes, then their throates to be cut, and after to be buried in his owne house 15. foot deepe, for the which he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and after conueyed from the tower of London through the citie, and so to Salisbury, and there hanged with foure of his men seruants, the 6. of March.

Lord Sturte executed.

King Philip returned into England, and landed at Douer on the 18. of March, and the 23. of March passed through London with the queene and nobles of the Realme.

K. Philip returned into England.

Thomas Stafford, and other hauing conspired diuers treasons against the King and Queene, fearing iust punishment for their delicts, fled beyond the seas, and there remayning attempted diuers times to stirre rebellion within this Realme, by sending Bookes, Billes, and letters, written and printed, farred full of vntruthes, and at length the said Stafford, and other English rebels, and some straungers, entered this Realme, on the twer and twentieth of Aprill, and tooke by stealth the Castle of Skarborough in the countie of Yorke, and let out a shamefull Proclamation, wherein he trayterously called and affirmed the Queene to be unrightfull and most vnworthie Queene, and that the King had brought into this Realme the number of twelue thousand Spaniards, and that into their hands were delivered twelue the strongest holdes in this Realme. In which Proclamation the said Stafford named himselfe Protector and gouernor of this Realme, but he with the other his complices, by the good diligence of the Earle of Westmerland and other noble men, were apprehended on the last of Aprill.

T. Stafford tooke Skarborough castle.

The last of Aprill, Thomas Percy esquire, was made baron Percy at Westminster, and on the next morrowe which was the first of May, he was created Earle of Northumberland, and the Queene gaue him all the lands which had bene his ancestors remaining in his hands.

Percy Earle of Northumberland.

The eight and twentieth day of May, Thomas Stafford was beheaded on the Tower hill, and on the morrowe three of his companie, to wit, Stretchley, Bradford, and Proctor, were drawne to Wyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Thomas Stafford beheaded.

The 7. of June, for that the French King had supported the treason of the Duke of Northumberland, and also the trayterous band of War, and not long after when the duell put in the heads of Dudley, Ashton and others their complices,

Warre with France.

complices, to enter into a new conspiracie, the said kings ambassadour was not onely priuie, but receiued them into his house, there to assemble and contriue their malicious and diuelliſh enterprize: & although the said king were aduertised thereof by our ambassadoers, neuerthelesse, Dudley, Atherton, and others flying into France, were both receiued of the king, and also maintained with annuall pensions by him giuen, contrarie to his promise. Also he hath receiued sundrie famous pirates, and notorious enemies, and of late he sent Stafford with other rebels, to besiege the castle of Scarborough: proclamation was made to giue warning to our subjects to forbeare all traffike with any of that Realme, and to repute the French king and his subjects as open enemies, &c.

The last of June, the lord Philip Howard, sonne of Thomas Duke of Norfolkke, was borne in London, at the earle of Arundels house without Temple bar, which house sometime belonged to the bishop of Bath, and shortly after was christened in the queenes chappell at Westminster in about of gold, where Philip king of Spaine, and Nicholas Heath archbishop of Poike, then chancelor of England were his godfathers in proper person, and the lady Elizabeth duchess of Norfolk his great-grandmother, was his godmother. This lord Philip was the onely begotten child of the said Duke, borne of the lady Marie, daughter and heire of Henry six Allen, the last earle of Arundell of that name. To whome the inheritance and dignitie of the said Earle therefore descended.

The 6. of July, the king passed ouer to Calcis, and so into Flaunders, where he made great prouision for warre against the French king. The same moneth, the Queene sent ouer an armie of a thousand horsemen, foure thousand footmen, and two thousand pioneers, to ayde king Philip, wherof the earle of Pembroke was Generall. The lord Robert Dudley maister of the Kings nance.

The 15. of July, died the lady Anne of Cleue at Chelsey, and was buried: at Westminster on the 3. of August.

The 10. of August, were taken of France the chiefest captaines, the Duke of Montmorency Constable of France, and his sonne Monsieur de Merne, the Duke of Montpencier, the Duke of Longuille, the Marshall of Saint Andrew, the Reingraue colonell of the Almains, Roche du Maine, the count de Rochlouscault, the Vicount of Touraine, the baron of Curſon, the prince of Mantua, besides many gentlemen and captaines.

The eightene of August, the towne of Saint Quintines was taken by king Philip, with the helpe of Englishmen, at the siege wherof the lord Henry Dudley, youngest sonne to John late Duke of Northumberland, was slain with a gunne: which Henry Dudley and sir Edward Windſore were the first that aduanced banner on the wall.

This yeare before harvest, wheat was sold for foure marke the quarter, mault at 44. s. the quarter, beanes and rie at 40. s. the quarter, and pease at 46. s. 8. d. But after harvest, wheat was sold for 5. s. the quarter, mault at 6. s. 8. d. rie at 3. s. 4. d. so that the penny wheat losse that wayed in London the last yeare but 11. ounces Troy, waied now 56. ounces Troy, according to the use set down by the

English men  
sent to Saint  
Quintins.

Lady Anne  
of Cleue,  
Anne reg. 5.

Noblemen  
of France  
taken prisoners.

Saint Quintines won.

Deare hand  
plentie.

Wheat at that time: In the country, wheat was sold for 4. shillings the quarter, mault for foure shillings eight pence, and in some place a bushel of rie for a pound of candles, which was foure pence.

The 7. of September, at 7. of the clocke at night, in a blacke rainy cloude it rained, the west was serene a rainebow, the moone in the east risen one houre before, and faire shining, and at the full the day before.

This yeare in Michelmass terme, men might haue scene in Westminister hall at the kings bench barre, not two men of law before the Iustices, there was but one named Foster, who looked about, and had nothing to do, the Iudges looking about them. In the common place, no mo sergeants but one, which was sergeant Boulouie, who looked about him, there was aboue roome enough, which made the lawyers complaine of their iniuries in that terme.

The 20. of Nouember, sir Thomas Trelham knight, receiued the order of the Croſſe, and was made lord prior of S. Iohn of Ierusalem in England.

The first of Ianuarie, the duke of Guise with a great armie of French men, entered a plot of ground, entrenched at Sandgate, and there diuiding his power into two parts, sent the one with certaine pieces of ordnance along the doones towards Rifebanke: and the other with battering pieces to Strewnam bridge, which two forts both at one time they shot at, and soone reconeered without resistance, for there was not a man in them, for they priuily fled into the towne of Calcis. The next day therefore the Frenchmen began a battery from the sandhills, next Rifebanke, against the wall of Calcis, betwixt the watergate and the prison, and continued the same by the space of two or three daies, untill they had made a little breach, but not yet sawtable, neither was it meant, but to make the Englishmen to haue the lesse regard to the defence of the castle, where they were accustomed to haue an easie entrie: so that while the Englishmen travelled to defend that breach, the Frenchmen being passed through the ditch full of water, entered the castle, and thought to haue entered the towne that way: but by the prowes of sir Anthonie Agar knight, and marshall of the towne, they were put backe into the castle, but the same sir Anthonie Agar lost his life, and this was on the first of Ianuarie. The same night William L. Wentworth, deputie or lieutenant of the towne, sent Nicholas Fellowes alias Gwies, and Richard Turpin alias Hams to the castle to demand parle, which they granted, putting forth of the posterne two French gentlemen, and receiued in pledge of them into the castle I. Hiefield, maister of the ordnance, and Edmond Hall a constable of the staple. Hereupon they falling in talk, at length agreed, that the towne with all the artillerie, victuals and munition, should be yielded to the French, the liues of the inhabitants saved, they under safe conduct to pass, whither they would, saving the lord deputie with 50. other, such as the duke of Guise should appoint, to remaine prisoners, & to be put to ransom. The next morning, the Frenchmen entered the towne and possessed it. And forthwith, all the men, women and children were commaunded to leave their houses, and to go into certaine places appointed for them, there to remaine till order were further taken for their sending away. The places appointed for them to remaine in, were chiefly foure, the two churches of our lady, and of Saint Nicholas, the deputies house, and the staple, where they rested part

A small term  
at Westminister.

Lord prior  
of S. Iohns.

1558  
Calcis besieged by the French.

The towne  
of Calcis  
was deliuered to the French on the 5. of Ianuarie.

The French  
men entered  
the towne of  
Calcis on  
the 6. of Ianuarie.

of that day, the night following, and the next day till the afternoon. And while they were thus in these four places, proclamation was made in their hearings, straightly charging them that were inhabitants of the towne of Calcis, having about them any money, plate, or jewels to the value of foure pence, to bring the same forthwith, and lay it on the high altars of the said churches upon paine of death, bearing them in hand they should be searched. By reason of which proclamation there was made a forsworn offering, and while they were at this offering in the churches, the Frenchmen rifed their houses, where they found inestimable riches & treasure: but especially in that towne, ordnance, armour, & other munitions as the Frenchmen write, besides the great riches of gold & silver, coine, jewels, plate, woolls, & other merchandize (which was inestimable,) there were found 30. peeces of brass mounted on wheeles, & as many of yron, with such furniture of powder, pellets, armor, victuals, & other munitions of war scarcely credible. On the next day being the 7. of January in the after noon a great number of y<sup>e</sup> meanest for were suffered to passe out of the towne in safety, being garbed through the army with a number of costly light horsemen, who befide the Englishmen very well & friendly, and after this, every day for the space of 3. or 4. daies, there were sent away diverse companies, till they were all avoided, those excepted that were referred prisoners.

There were in the towne of Calcis, 500. English souldiers in ordinarie pay, & of the towne men about 200. fighting men: & there were in the whole number of men, women & children, as they were accounted going out of the gate, 4200. persons or thereabout. The lord Wentworth deputie of Calcis, Sir Ralph Chamberlaine captain of the castle, John Harlestone capitaine of Kilsbanke, Nicholas Alexander capitaine of Petouan bridge, Edward Grimstone controller, John Rogers surior, with other to the number in all of 50. were sent prisoners into France. The losse of this towne seemed strange to many men of great experience, the same towne being to many yeres so strongly fortified with all munitions that could be devised, should now in so short space be taken of our enemies without fight or slaughter of any man, more then Sir Anthonie Agar, as ye haue heard. The counsell of England had which all expedition raised a great power, to haue bene sent for the defence of that towne, but it was not, for such a tempest of wind arose, as the like in many yeres had not bene scene, whereby no ship could brooke the sea, by means whereof our men were forced to remaine at Dover in a readinesse to haue passed the seas, till news were brought the towne was lost as ye haue heard, and then every man returned to his home. And shortly after, to wit, in the same month of January y<sup>e</sup> strong forts of Calcis and Hancues, though most valiantly defended by the lord Gray of Wilton and others, English men, was wonne by the French, & by them possessed: whereof maister George Ferrers hath written at large, for he collected the whole historie of M. Mary, as the same is set downe under the name of Richard Gratton.

The 18. of Januarie, Edward Hastings knight of the garter, lord chamberlaine to the Q. was created baron Hastings of Loughborough at Westminster.

The 20. of Januarie began a parliament at Westminster.

In the month of March, a p<sup>e</sup>ss was granted to the queene by the citizens of London, of twentie thousand pound, which was leuied of the companies, for the

C. Ferrers  
in the reigne  
of queene  
Mary.

A parliament  
at Westminster  
the queene.

which summe to be repaid againe, the Queene bound certaine lands, and also allowed for interest of the money twelue pound of every hundred for a yere.

The 28. of April, Francis the French kings eldest sonne called the dolphin, was married unto Mary Steuani daughter and sole heire of James the sixt late king of Scotland, in the cite of Paris, with great pompe and triumph.

The losse of Calcis being generally grievous to the whole realm of England, but specially to queene Mary, she could not to trauell with king Philip her husband, as with her owne counsell, & lords of the realm which way should be best to revenge this iniurie, especially now whilst the French king was occupied in wars with king Philip, to endowage some of his countries by way of invasion, & to surpris some of his townes upon a sudden. And amongst sundry devices none was thought to fit to be attempted as an haue towne in Britaine called Bick, a towne as well for the situation the most convenient to receive fresh succours, & victuals out of England by sea, as also for that it was knowne to the queene & her counsell at that present not to be furnished with any garrison of souldiers sufficient to repulse the power of a prince upon a sudden. Wherefore there was immediately order given to Edward lord Clinton then high admiral of England, with all expedition to prepare himself, with all the queens ships of war furnished with souldiers, munition, & victuals, to ioyne with the admiral of king Philip, who had like order to ioyne with y<sup>e</sup> navy of England, for the achieving of this enterprise.

In the meane tyme while M. Philip being absent from the low countries, was occupied with his wars in France, monsieur de Thermes captain of Calcis, being a man very expert in the wars, taking out of Calcis to many of his souldiers as might be spared from thence, adioyned to the all the forces of the French garrisons in Artois, Flanders, & Picardy, whereof together with the souldiers of Calcis being to the number of 700. footmen & 300. light horsemen, there were assembled 14. companies of the French footmen, & 8. companies of Almaines, 4. of 500. men at arms of France, besides the light horsemen Scots, amounting in the whole to the number of 9000. footmen, & 1500. horsemen entered into Flanders with full determination to spoile king Philips countie along the sea coast, & namely a proper haue towne called Dunkerk, & with like purpose to haue surpris the towne of Ghaveling. This captain of pollicie passing by the towne of Ghaveling laid siege to a little towne not far from thence called Berghes, which he won with small resistance. And without long slaying marched on to Dunkerk, & planting a siege there, battered the same to shreds with the cannon, that within lesse then foure daies he won the towne which he like as the other put to sack, & after setting the towne on fire, he with his French men spread abroad, wasted the most fruitful quarter of that part of Flanders almost to destruction, & encamped within halfe a mile of Ghaveling. The countie Fegmont lieutenant generall for king Philip in the low countries assembled all the power as well of king Philips garrisons, as also of men of war in the low country, to the number of 14. M. of more footmen, & 2. or 3. M. horsemen, determining so to affront the French, that either they should passe no further into the country, or at the least to impeach the further siege of Ghaveling: monsieur de Thermes hearing of this power assembled, made all possible hast toward Ghaveling, where he was no sooner arrived, but that he saw his enemies readie raised

Queene of  
Scots married  
into  
France.

Dunkerk in  
Flanders  
burnt.

ranged in the field, by reason whereof his studie was now nothing else but how he might bring home his army in safety to Calcis. The county Egmond slipping the Frenchme bent to march away with the spoile of the countrie, cut betwene the and home, placing his battells in such order, that the Frenchmen had no way to passe, but upon the lands betwene the towne and the sea: whereas by good chance lay a great flecte of M. Maries ships of warre, within the danger of whose gunshot the French men had no shift, but to passe as their journey lay: and so being forced either to fannish or to fight at disadvantage. Monsieur de Thermes without staying any longer, caused his vanguard to passe ouer the riuer somewhat neare the towne to avoid the shot of the English ships, and said upon the further side for the residue of his battells: there came such thicke haile shot of artillerie out of the towne on the one side, and from the English ships on the other side, that there was a full barriere made upon the Frenchmen on all sides, which they neuertheless abode without breaking order for the tyme, when suddenly appeared before them two great troupes of horsemen of 1500. a peece, part swart Rutters, and part Burgonians, whereof the one in front, and the other in flanke, gaue strong charges vpon the French vanguard, who being well backed with their other battells, stoutly repulld those two best troupes. Thus both parties being at a stay, the countie Egmond with 1800. men of armes, and his foote battells following, before the French had well recovered breath, recharged vpon them with all his forces together so terribly, that he shot all their battell, and the number take the to flight, the victorie was soone had, by reason the Spaniards beaten backe with the artillerie, as well of the towne as of the ships, brake their order, and came not to the shoocke, whereby the whole charge of the battell rested vpon the Frenchmens heads. This field was foughten the 13. of July, vpon the sea lands neare to Grauling where besides those that were slaine which were esteemed to the number of five thousand, there were taken prisoners the marshall de Thermes captain of Calcis, monsieur Senerpont gouernor of Boloigne, monsieur Villebon gouernor of Picardie, monsieur Annabaw sonne to the late admirall, monsieur de Moruilliers gouernor of Abvile, monsieur de Channe gouernor of Cozbier, beside a number of gentlemen, capitaines and souldiers, but specially the bandes of Calcis went to wacke, so as very few returned home. The admirals before named knew nothing of this matter, wherefore, following their prescribed course, and joining together at the place appointed, sailed from thence with prosperous wind, and on the nine and twentieth of the same month, with seven score ships of warre appeared before the haven of Conquet in Britaine: at whose arrivall there, they sounded their trumpets, and with a peale of great ordnance gaue a loud salve to the Brittaines: and by eight of the clocke the same morning, the Englishmen manning forth their ship-boates, recovered landing, and within short time became masters of the said towne of Conquet, which they sacked and burnt with a great abbe, & many pretty townes and villages neare therabouts, where our men found great store of pillage.

This being done, the Englishmen withdrew downe to the sea side, where their ships lay readie to receive them. But the Flemmings being covetous of the spoyle, passing farther into the land, before they could recover their ships againe,

Towne of  
Conquet  
brent.

were encountered by the power of the countrie, by whom there were slaine of them to the number of foure or five hundred. The admirall perceiving the power of the countrie greatly to increase, thought it not best to attempt any assault against the towne of Brest, or to make longer abode there, but returned home.

In this meane time, while king Philip and the French king with two most puissant armies skouted each other neere unto the water of Somme, either of them being obstinately bent to drive the other out of the field, for which cause they entrenched their camps: diuers conferences were had concerning peace, and at the last concluded vpon all controuersies, except the restitution of Calcis, required by the ambassadors of Queene Marie, which the French part would in no wise heare of, by reason of which difficultie, this treatie could take no effect, nor come to good conclusion. King Philip thinking himselfe bound to stand in that case with the Queene his wife, did therfore stay a long time before he concluded peace with the French king.

The second of July, the Lord Wentworth and diuerse other that had bene gouernours of Calcis, were attainted of treason being then in France.

The 11. of July, within a mile of Nottingham was a marvellous tempest of thunder, which as it came through two townes, beate downe all the houses and Churches, the bells were cast to the out side of the Church yards, and some webs of lead foure hundred foote into the field, withen like a paire of gloues.

The riuer of Trent running betwene the two townes, the water with the mud in the bottome was carried a quarter of a mile, and cast against the trees, the trees were plucked by by the rootes, and cast euerye score off. Also, a child was taken forth of a mans handes two speares length high, and carried a hundred foote, and then let fall, wherewith his arme was broken, and so died. Five or six men therabout were slaine, and neither flesh nor skin perished: there fell some hailestones that were sixtene inches about, &c.

This yeere in harvest time, the quartaine agues continued in like manner of more vehemently, than they had done the last yeere passed, wherethrough died many olde people, and specially priests, so that a great number of parishes were without, and no curates to be gotten, and much corne was lost in the field for lacke of workemen and laborers.

In the beginning of this yeere, corne rose to foureteene shillings the quarter, and wood wared frant in London, and was sold for thirteene and foureteene shillings the thousand of billets, and coles at ten pence the sacke, by reason of the great death and sickness the last summer for lacke of helpe and carriage.

King Philip being absent out of the realme (as ye haue heard) and Queene Marie being dangerously sicke, ended her life at her manor of Saint James by Charing crosse the seuenteenth of Nouember, in the yeere 1558. when she had reigned five yeeres, foure monethes and odder daies. The same day deceased cardinal Poole at Lambeth, and a little before, two of her physicians, besides diuerse bishops and noble men. Queene Marie was buried at Cheshmire, and cardinal Poole at Canterburie.

A treatie of  
peace about  
the deliuerie  
of Calcis.

Ann. reg. 6.  
Tempest at  
Nottingham

Quartaine  
agues raised  
fore.

Corne and  
wood deare.

## Queene Elizabeth.

Ann. reg. 1.



**L**IZABETH our most gracious and soueraigne Lady, borne at Greenwich, second daughter to king Henry the eight, to the great comfort of England, was with full consent proclaimed Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. on the 17. of November, in the year of our Lord God 1558. Forthwith the posts and haueis were stopped, and none suffered to passe out of the realme without licence. Proclamation was made, forbidding all men to preach, save such as

should be appointed: also to alter any rites or ceremonies used in the church, save as it was in her Graces chappell.

The Queene cometh from Hatfield.

The 19. of November, Queene Elizabeth came from bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, unto the lord Northes house in the late dissolved Charterhouse of London, the Herikes of London meeting her grace at the farther end of Sarney to wone within the shire of Spidleser, and so rode before her, till she came to the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where her grace remained.

The Queene remoueth to the towre.

On monday the eight and twentieth of November, about two of the clocke in the after noone, Queene Elizabeth rode from the lord Northes house along by the Barbican in at Creeplegate, then along by the wall to Bishopsgate, which gate was richly hanged, where the waiters of the city plaide, and ouer against the kings-head fauourine, a scholler of Pauls schoole made a short oration to her maieslie in Latin verses, the company of Sericers standing in their railles next the scholler, & so all the other companies of the city in order from thence to Hart lane end next unto Barking church in tower streete, the lord maior of London riding with maister Garter king at armes, bearing a scepter before her maieslie, which lord maior met her at the Charterhouse gate next Aldersgate, where maister Recorder saluted her grace in the name of the lord maior and the whole city, and so with lords, knights, and gentlewomen richly appareled, brought her to the tower of London: but when her grace entered at Hart lane, a peale of guns began to be shot off at the tower, which continued almost halfe an hour.

The first of December, the Queene remoued by water from the tower to Somerset place neare to the Strand.

Sir Thomas Cheney treasurer of the household and lord warden of the cinque ports, discaled the 8. of December.

Sir Nicholas Bacon Attourney of the court of wards, was made lord keeper of the great seale of England the 20. of December.

The 13. of December, the corps of queene Mary was honorably conveyed from Saint James to the abbey of Westminster, and there placed vnder a rich hearke decked with penons, banners, and scutcheons of the armes of England and Fraunce, where she remained that night, and on the morrow, after the masse of Requiem, and a sermon preached by Doctor Whiche bishop of Winchester was ended, she was buried in the chappell of king Henry the seventh on the north side.

The four and twentieth of December, was solenne obsequie kept in the abbey

Queene Mary buried.

## Queene Elizabeth.

of Westminster for Charles the first late Emperoz, which decreased in Spaine in the moneth of September last past: Queene Maries hearke yet standing, altered with the armes of the Emperoz, and richly hanged with a rich pall-cloty of gold lying on the hearke, the Emperors ambassado: being chiefe mourner, with other peers and Lords of England assistant with him, &c.

The first of Januarie, the lord Maior and Aldermen gaue in commandment to every ward in London, that the parson or curate in every parish church in London, should reade the Epistle and Gospel of the day in the English tongue in the masse time, and the English procession then used in the Quenes chappell, according to a proclamation sent from her maieslie and priuie counsell, proclaimed in the Citie of London the 13. of December, which commandment was that day obserued in most parish churches of the citie.

The ninth of Januarie in the morning, the image of Thomas Becker which stood ouer the doore of the Percers chappell in London toward the street, was found broken and cast downe, and a bill set on the church doore depauiing the letters by thereof.

1559.  
Procession, Epistle, and Gospel in English.

Image of T. Becker thrown downe.

The twelfth of Januarie, the Quenes maieslie remoued from her place of White hall to the Tower by water, the lord maior of London and his brethren the aldermen in their barge, and all the Craftes of the citie in their barges richly decked with targets and banners of euerie mysterie. The batchelors of the anatois companie in their barge, with a foyle, hauing three tops, trimmed and richly decked to waite on them, which shot off guns all the way: all these awaited on her Maieslie, who tooke her barge about two of the clocke in the after noone, the lord maior following after, and euery companie in order with great melodie of muscalle instruments, till her grace was through London bridge, and landed at her priuie staire of the tower wharfe, and then the maior after leave taken and thankses of the queene, returned through the bridge with the shoud, and landed at the three cranes wharfe in the binetree.

The 13. of Januarie were created in the tower of London, these noble men following, Sir William Per knight was created marques of Northampton, Edward Seymour was made viscount Beauchamp a earle of Hertford, lord Thomas Howard viscount of Wyndon, Sir Oliver Saint Iohn knight, lord Saint Iohn of Wiltfall, Sir Henry Carew knight, lord Carew of Hunsdon.

The fourteenth of Januarie, at which time the Londoners had made sumptuous prouision of pageants and otherwise, as hath bene accustomed, the quenes maieslie passed through the city of London to her palace at Westminster: the next day she was crowned by doctor Oglethorpe bishop of Carlisle.

Coronation.

The five and twentieth of Januarie, began a parliament at Westminster, before the staires wherof, doctor Coxo late come from beyond the seas, and sometime schoolmaister to king Edward the first, made a learned sermon.

Parliament.

In this parliament, the first fruits and tenthes were graunted to the crowne, and also the supream gouernment ouer the state Ecclesiasticall.

The first fruits and tenthes graunted to the crowne.

Likewise, the booke of comunon prayer and administration of the Sacraments in our bulgar tongue was restored, to be done as in the time of King Edward the first. Moreover, in the time of this parliament a motion was made by the common

B b b 2 house,

house that the Queenes maiesty might be bidden vnto, to graunt her graces licence to the speaker knights, citizens and burgesses to haue access vnto her graces presence, to declare vnto her matter of great importance, concerning the state of this her graces realme. The which petition being mooued to her grace, she most honourable aged and considered threasures, and alligard a day of hearing: when the day came, the speaker and common house resorted vnto her graces pallace at Westminster called the White hall: and in the great gallery there her grace most honourably shewed her selfe ready to heare their motion and petition. And when the speaker had solemnly and eloquently set forth the message, the speciall matter whereof was, to mooue her grace to marriage, whereby to all our comforts we might enioy the roppall issue of her body to raigne ouer vs. &c.

Motiō made  
to her mai-  
esty for ma-  
riage.

Answer of  
her maiesty.

Alex. Eue-  
fram,

The Queenes maiesty after a little pause, made this answer following. Is it haue good cause to do I giue you all my hearty thanks for the good zeale and louing care you seeme to haue, as to all towards me, as to the whole estate of your country: your petition I pectriue, consider of three parties, and must answer to the same shall depend of need.

And to the first part I may say vnto you, that from my yeares of vnderstanding, sith I first had consideration of my selfe, to be borne a creature of almighty God, I happily chose this kind of life: in the which I yet liue, I assure you for mine owne part hath hitherto best contented my selfe, and I trust hath bene most acceptable vnto God. From the which, if either ambition of high estate offered to me in marriage by the pleasure and appoyment of my Prince, whereof I haue some records in this presence (as you our treasurer well know) or if eschewing the danger of mine enemies, or the avoiding of the perill of death whole messenger, or rather a continual watchman, the princes indignation, was no little time daily before mine eyes, by whose means, although I know, or iustly may suspect, yet I will not now utter, or if the whole cause were in my sister her selfe, I will not now burthen her therewith, because I will not charge the dead: if any of these, I say, could haue drawne or disswaded me from this kind of life, I had not now remained in this estate where in you see me, but so constant haue I alwaies continued in this determination, although my youth and voyes may seeme to some hardly to agree together: yet is it most true, that at this day I stand free from any other meaning, that either I haue had in times past, or haue at this present, with which trade of life I am so thoroughly acquainted, that I trust God, who hath hitherto therein preserved and led me by the hand, will not of his goodnesse suffer me to go alone.

For the other part, the manner of your petition I do well like, and take it in good part because that it is simple, and containeth no limitation of place or person, if it had bene otherwise, I must needs haue misliked it very much, and thought it in you a very great presumption, bring writhing and altogether vnmeet for you to require them that may commaund, or those to appoint, whose parts are to desire, or such to bind a limite, whose duties are to obey, or to take upon you to draw my love to your likings, or to frame my will to your fancies: for a guardon constrained, and gift freely giuen can neuer agree together. Wherefore, if any of you be in suspect, that when soeuer it may please God to incline my heart to another,

another,

another kind of life, you may well assure your selves, my meaning is not to do or determine any thing, wherewith the realme may or shall haue iust cause to be discontented. And therefore put that cleane out of your heads, for I assure you, what credit my assurance may haue with you, I cannot tell, but what credit it shall deserve to haue, the sequels shall declare. I will neuer in that matter conclude any thing that shall be prejudiciall to the realme: for the totale, good and safety whereof, I will neuer thin to spend my life. And whom soeuer my chance shall be to light vpon, I trust he shall be such, as shall be as careful for the realme and you, I will not say as my selfe, because I cannot so certainly determine of any other, but at the leastwise by my good will and desire, he shall be such, as shall be as careful for the preservation of the realme, and you as my selfe. And albeit it might please almighty God to continue me still in this mind to live out of the state of marriage, yet is it not to be feared, but he will to heeke in my heart and in your wisdomes, as good prouision by his helpe may be made in conuenient, whereby the realme shall not remaine destitute of an heir, that may be a fit gouernour, and peraduenture more beneficiall to the realme, then such of-spring as may come of me. For though I be neuer so careful of your well doings, and mind euer so to be, yet may issue grow out of kind, and become perhaps vngenerous. And in the end this shall be for me sufficient, that a marble stone shall declare, that a Queene hauing reigned such a time, liued, and died a virgin. And here I end, and take your comming vnto me in good part, and giue vnto you all commissions my hearty thanks, more yet for your zeale and good meaning, then for your petition.

The twentieth of Februarie, one of the queenes takers of freshly fish, for abusing his authority, was set on the pillory in Cheape, where he stood thre market daies, from nine of the clocke till twelue of the clocke, which punishment with more (whereof I write not) was by commandement of the Queene by her owne mouth, as a good example of iustice.

In the Easter holidays, preached at the Spittle, doctor Bill the queenes almoner, doctor Cox, & maister Horne, the two last came lately from beyond the seas.

On Loh Sunday, the 2. of April, maister Saunple, lately come from beyond the seas, made the recharfall Sermon at Pauls crosse: but when the Lord Mayor and aldermen came to their places in Pauls Churchyard, the pulpit doore was locked, and the key could not be heard of: whereupon the Lord Mayor sent for a smith to open the locke, which was done, and when the preacher should enter the place, it was found very filthy and buelcane: moreover, the Warger that had the key of the place where the bishops and prelates use to stand to heare the sermon, could not be found: whereupon certaine gentlemen, with a forme broke open the doore. This disorder chanced by reason that since Christmase last past, there was not a sermon preached at Pauls crosse, for an inhibition had bene sent, from the counsell vnto the bishop of London, that he should admit no preacher, because of the controuersie betwixt the bishops, and them of the clergy that were newly returned vnto the realme from beyond the seas.

The last of March, the parliament yet continuing, a conference was begun at Westminster, concerning articles of religion betwixt the bishops and other of the

B b b 3

Rob. Greene  
a taker set  
on the pil-  
lorie.

Preachers at  
the Spittle,  
and at Pauls  
crosse.

Conference  
appointed  
betwixt the  
old bishops  
and other  
preachers.



clergy on the one part, and certaine learned preachers, of whom some had bene in dignity in the Church of England, before that time on the other part. The declaration of the proceeding wherein, and the cause of the breaking up of the same conference by default and contempt of certaine bishops, part of the said conference was published in a treatise printed by Richard Iugge and John Cawood, printers to the Queenes maiesty as followeth.

The Queenes most excellent maiesty, hauing heard of diuersity of opinions in certaine matters of religion, amongst sundry of her louing subjects, and being very desirous to haue the same reduced to some godly and Christian concord, thought it best by the aduise of the lordes and other her priuy counsell, as well for the satisfiacion of persons doubtfull, as also for the knowledge of the very truth in certaine matter of difference: to haue a conuenient chosen number of the best learned of either part, to conferre together their opinions and reasons, and thereby to come to some good and charitable agreement. And hereupon by her maiesties commandement, certaine of her priuy counsell declared this purpose to the Archbishop of Yorke (being also one of the same priuy counsell) and required him that he would impart the same to some of the bishops, and to make choyse of eight, nine or ten of them, and that there should be the like number named of the other part: and further also declared to him (as then was supposed) what the matters should be: And as for the time, it was thought meete to be as soone as possible might be agreed vpon. And then after certaine dayes past, it was signified by the sayd archbishop, that there was appointed by such of the bishops to whom he had imparted this matter, eight persons, that is to say, foure bishops, and foure doctours, who were content at the Queenes maiesties commandement to shew their opinions, and as he termed it, render account of their faith in those matters which were mentioned, and that specially in writing, although he sayd they thought the same so determined, as there was no cause to dispute vpon them.

It was hereupon fully resolved by the Queenes maiesty, with the aduise aforesayd, that according to their desire, it should be in writing on both parts, for auoyding of much alteration in words, and that the sayd Bishops should, because they were in authority, of degree superiours, first declare their minds and opinions to the matter, with their reasons in writing: and the other number being also right men of good degree in schooles, and some hauing bene of dignity in the church of England, if they had any thing to say to the contrary, should the same day declare their opinions in like manner. And so each of them should deliver their writings to the other, to be considered what were to be imposed therein, and the same to declare againe in writing at some other conuenient day, and the like order to be kept in all the rest of the matters: all this was fully agreed vpon with the archbishop of Yorke, and so also signified to both parties. And immediately hereupon diuers of the nobility and states of the realme, understanding that such a meeting and conference should be, and that in certaine matters, whereupon the court of Parliament consequently following, some lawes might be grounded: they made earnest meanes to her maiesty, that the parties of this conference, might put and reade their assertions in the English

tongue,

tongue, and that in the presence of them of the nobility, and others of the parliament house, for the better satisfiacion and inhabling of their owne iudgements, to treat and conclude of such lawes as mought depend thereupon. This also being thought very reasonable, was signified to both parties, and so fully agreed vpon, and the day appointed for the first meeting to be the Friday in the forenoon, being the last of March, at Westminster Church, where both for good order, and for honour of the conference: by the Queenes maiesties commandement, the Lordes and others of the priue counsell were present, and a great part of the Nobilitie also: and notwithstanding the former order appointed and consented unto by both parties, yet the bishop of Winchester, and his collegues, alleging they had mistaken that their assertions, and reasons should be written, and so only recited out of the booke, sayd their booke was not ready then written, but they were ready to argue and dispute, and therefore they would for that time repeat in speech that which they had to say to the first proposition. This variation from the order, and specially from that which themselves had by the sayd archbishop in writing before required, adding thereto the reason of the Apostle, That to contend in words is profitable to nothing but to subuersion of the hearer, seemed to the Queenes maiesties counsell somewhat strange, and yet was it permitted without any great reprehension, because they excused themselves with mistaking the order, and agreed that they should not faile but put it in writing, and according to the former order, deliver it to the other part, and to the said Bishop of Winchester and his collegues appointed Doctor Cole Drane of Pauls to be the vtterer of their minds, who partly by speech onely, and partly by reading of authorities written, and at certaine times being informed of his collegues what to say, made a declaration of their meaning, and their reasons to their first proposition, which being ended, they were asked by the priue Counsell, if any of them had any more to be said: and they said no. So as then the other part was licensed to shew their minds, which they did according to the first order, exhibiting all that which they meant to be propounded in a booke written, which after a prayer and imocation made most humble to almightie God, for the enuoying of them with his holy spirit, and a protestation also to stand to the doctrine of the Catholike Church, builded vpon the Scriptures, and the doctrine of the Prophets and the Apostles, was distinctly read by one Robert Horne Bachelor in Diuinitie, late Drane of Duresme. And the same being ended with some likeness, as it seemed, that the same was much allowable to the audience, certaine of the Bishops began to say contrarie to their former answers, that they had much more to say to this matter: wherein although they might haue bene well reprehended for such manner of euasillation, yet for auoyding of any mistaking of orders in this colloquie or conference, and for that they should utter all that which they had to say: it was both ordered and thus openly agreed vpon of both parts in the full audience, that vpon the monday following, the Bishops should bring their minds & reasons in writing to the second assertion, and the last also if they could, and first reade the same, & that done, the other part should bring likewise theirs to the same. And being read, each of them should deliver to other the same writings.



And in the meane time the bishops should put in writing, not onely all that which Doctor Cole had that day uttered: but all such other matters as they any otherwise could thinke of for the same, and as soon as they might possible, to send the same booke touching that first assertion to the other part, and they should receive of them that writing which maister Horne had there read that day, and upon monday it should be agreed what day they should exhibite their answers touching the first proposition. Thus both parts assented thereto, & the assembly quickly dismissed. And therefore upon monday, the like assemble began againe, at the place and houre appointed, and there, upon what sinistre or disordered meaning is not yet knowne (though in some part it be understood) the Bishop of Winchester and his colleagues, and especially Lincolne, refused to exhibite or read, according to the former notorious order on Friday, that which they had prepared for the second assertion. And thereupon by the Lord keeper of the great scale, they being gaily and fauourably required to keepe the order appointed: and that taking no place, being secondly as it behooued, pressed with more earnest request, they neither regarding the authoritie of that place, nor their owne reputation, nor the credite of the cause, utterly refused that to doo. And finally, being againe particularlie curie of them apart dissently by name, required to vnderstand their opinions therein, they all sauing one (which was the Abbot of Westminster, hauing some more consideration of order, and his dutie of obedience than the other) utterly and plainelie denied to haue their booke read, some of them as more earnestly than other, some so also, some other more indiscreetelie, and vnrerentially then others. Whereupon, giuing such example of disorder, stubbornesse and selfewill, as hath not bene seene and suffered in such an honourable assemble, being of the two Estates of this Realme, the Nobilitie and the Commons, besides the presence of the Queenes Maiesties most honorable priue Counsell, the same assemble was dismissed, and the goodly and most Christian purpose of the Queenes Maiestie made frustrate. And afterward for the contempt so notoriously made, the Bishops of Winchester and Lincolne, hauing most obstinately both disobeyed common authoritie and varied manifestly from their owne order, and especially Lincolne, who shewed more folly than the other, were condignly committed to the Tower of London, & the rest (sauing the Abbot of Westminster) stood bound to make dayly and personall appearance before the counsell, & not to depart the citie of London and Westminster, vntill further order were taken with them for their disobedience & contempt.

The three propositions, whereupon conference was determined to haue bene at Westminster.

1 It is against the word of God, and the custome of the ancient Church, to vse a thing vnknowne to the people, in common prayer, and the administration of the Sacraments.

2 Every Church hath authoritie to appoint, take away and change ceremonies and ecclesiasticall rites, so the same be to edification.

3 It cannot be prooued by the word of God that there is in the Masse offered by a sacrifice propitiatorie for the quick and the dead.

The bishop of Winchester.

Doctor Harpsfield.

The

The names  
of such as

The bishop of Lichfield.

The bishop of Chester.

The bishop of Carlisle.

The bishop of Lincoln.

Doctor Cole.

Maister Grindall.

Maister Horne.

Doctor Sands.

Doctor Langdale.

Doctor Chadsey.

Doctor Scory B. of Chichester.

Doctor Cox.

Maister Whithead.

Maister Gell.

Maister Aylmer.

Maister Iuell.

had conference  
in the  
propositions  
aforesaid.

The bishops and doctors sate on the one side of the quier at a table, and the other learned men sate at another table on the other side of the quier. And at the upper end thereof at another table sate the queenes counsell to haue heard some good conclusion of the said conference, but it came to small effect as ye haue heard.

The 5. of April the bishops of Winchester, doctor White, and of Lincoln, doctor Kealon, were committed to the tower of London.

In this meane time a treatie of peace, which had bene in hand the last yeare, betwixt the two kings of Spaine and Fraunce, was now renewed againe, and the deputies were appointed to meete at Chalken Cambes, a five miles distant from Cambray. For the king of Spaine, the Duke of Alva, the prince of Orange, the bishop of Arras, Rigomes de Silua, Earle of Melito, Monsieur Vigilius Zwischen knight, and president of the priue counsell in the Low countries, who was letted by sicknesse, and could not come. For the French king there came the cardinall of Lozayne, the Constable, the Marshall of Saint Andre, the bishop of Saliance, and Claude de Aubespine the said kings secretary. For the Queene of England, the bishop of Elye, the Lord William Howard baron of Effingham, lord Chamberlaine to the said Queene, doctor Nicholas Wotton, deane of Canterburie and Poike. After this treatie had continued long, and now rested nothing to stay them from concluding a generall peace, but onely the article touching Calais, at length that matter was also accorded by a speciall treatie betwixt the Queenes maiestie of England and the French King. The substance of which article was, that Calais should rest in the French mens hands for the terme of 8. yeeres, and at the end of that terme, to render the same to the Queenes highnes, or for default thereof, to forfeite vnto her the sum of 500000. crowns: & for surety herof, to deliuer fower hostages, such as her Maiestie should thinke sufficient. It was concluded also a firme peace betwixt the Realmes of England & Scotland, such fortresses to be rased as had bene built, and made by the Scots and French in the borders towards England. Sir Iohn Mason knight secretary for the French young, was sent ouer in post with instructions vnto the English commissioners, after whose coming, within two or three daies, a generall peace was concluded betwixt all the parties. And so on the 7. of April, the said peace was proclaimed, to wit, betwixt the Queenes maiestie on the one party, and the French king on the other, their Realmes, Dominions & Subiects, and likewise betwixt her Maiestie and the king Dolphin, & Queene of Scots his wife, their Realmes, Dominions and Subiects. This Proclamation was made at London by Carter & Norrey kings at armes accompanied with three other heraults, and six trumpeters, the Lord Marquis and Adormen in their scarlet gownes, being present on horsebacke.

Treatie of  
peace re-  
newed.

Commissio-  
ners for the  
prince.

Guicciardin  
Peace con-  
cluded with  
condition to  
deliuer Cal-  
ais to the  
English.

Peace pro-  
claimed.

The

Lord Wentworth arraigned and quit.

The 22. of April, William Wentworth late deputy of Calais, was arraigned at Westminster upon an indictment of treason found against him, in the late M. Maries daies, for the losse of Calais, but he was acquit by his peers, the lord Marquesse of Portsmouth, sitting that day as chiefe steward of England: so he was deliuered presently unto his house, without returning to any prison.

The 8. of May, the parliament brake vp, in which parliament, besides other things before recited, a subside was graunted to the queene of two shillings eight pence the pound of mooueable goods, and foure shillings of lands to be paid at two seuerall paymētts of euery pson, spirituall and temporell.

Church service in the English tong

The 8. of May being Whitunday, the service in churches began according to the booke of common prayer, set forth and established by this last parliament, correspondent to that of king Edwards time.

Citizens of London mustered at Greenwich.

The 2. of July, the citizens of London had a muster above the Queenes maiestie at Greenwich in the park, of 1400. men, whereof 800. were pikemen, all in fine coiflers, 400. harqueburs, in shirts of mail, with morrys, and 200. halberters in alman cincts, which were furnished and set forth by the companies of the citie of London: they had to euery hundred two wisclers richly appareled, and twelve wardens of the best companies clothed in coates of blacke velvet to conduct them with drums and fifes, and fire ensignes, all in ierkins of white bydgers latten, cut and lined with blacke sarsenet, with caps, hosen, and shakles according, the capitaines Robert Constable and maister Saunders, brought them in battell ray above the Queene, even as they should haue fought, which made a goodly sight before her Maiestie, the emperours and French kings ambassadours being present.

Bishops deputed.

In the moneth of July, the old bishops of England then living, were called and examined by certaine of the queenes maiesties counsell, where the bishops of Poike, Ely, and London with other, to the number of thirteene or fourteen, by refusing to take the oth touching the Queenes supremacie and other articles, they were deppriued from their bishopricks. And likewise were diuerse deacons, archdeacons, parsons, and vicars, deppriued from their benefices, and some committed to prison in the tower, Fleet, Marshalsea, and kings bench.

Commissioners.

Commissioners were likewise appointed for the establishing of religion through the whole Realme. For London were appointed sir Richard Sackville knight, Doctor Horne a Deuine, Doctor Huicke a Civilian, and maister Salvage, who called before them diuerse persons of euery parish, and swore them to enquire and present upon certaine inuincions.

Houses suppressed.

Also the houses of Religion created by queene Mary, as the priorie of S. John of Jerusalem by Smithfield, the nunnies and brethren of Sion and Shene, the blacke friers in Smithfield, and the friers of Greenwich were all suppressed: the abbot and monkes of Westminster were put out, a dean, prebends, and canons placed there, and so named the college of Westminster founded by M. Elizabeth.

Church images burned.

On the euen of Saint Bartholomew, the day and the morrow after, &c. were burned in Paules church yard, Cheape, and diuerse other places of the citie of London, all the roodes and other images of Churches, in some places the coopes, bell-ments, altar clothes, bookes, banners & pulchers, and good lots were burned.

The

The 5. of September there fell a three houers tempest at London in forenoon in the end whereof a great lightning with a terrible clasp of thunder, strake the spire (bring stone) of the steeple of Allhallowes Church in Birdstreete, about a tenn foote beneath the top, out of the which fell a stone that slew a dogge, and ouerthrew a man playing with the same dogge, and not long after the same spire was taken downe by the Church wardens, to saue the charges of repairing. And at the same instant, by the same tempest, one of the south doores of S. Dionys Church in Fenchurch streete, with the doore of the reueltrie of the same Church, were both stricken through and broken.

Churches in London stricken and broken by tempest.

The 8. and 9. of September. a solenne obsequie was kept in Paules Church at London, for Henrie the second of that name King of France, who deccased about the 10. of July last past, of a wound received the 29. of June, in running at tilt in solenne Jukes holden at Paris, in honor of the marriage celebrated betwixt his sister the lady Margaret of France, and Philibert Duke of Savoy. He was stricken on the biler with a lance, as he ranne against the Countre Mount-gomerie: the spillys entering by the sight of his head piece, and piercing through his aie into his head, so pressed his braine, that there was no meane to saue his life. The obsequie for him was kept in very solenne wise, with a rich hearse made like an imperiall crowne, sustented with eight pillars, and covered with blacke velvet, with a balence fringed with gold, and richly hanged with scarions, penons, and banners of the French Kings armes, without any lights. And on the beere was laid a pall of cloth of gold, with a coat armour of the armes of France, and a crest with an imperiall crowne standing upon the beere. Doctor Parker Archbishop of Canterbury elect, Doctor Barlow bishop of Chichester elect, and Doctor Scory bishop of Hereford elect, executing at the dirige of the euenng song in English, they sitting in the Bishops of Londons seate, in the upper quire in surplices, with doctors hoods about their shoulders. The chiefe mourner, was the Marquesse of Winchester Lord Treasurer, assisted with ten other Lords mourners, with all the heralds in blacke, and their coats armours uppermost.

On the morrow being the 9. of September, a Sermon was preached by Doctor Scorie in place of Doctor Grindall Bishop of London. After the Sermon, six of the Lords mourners received the Communion with the Bishops, which bishops were in copes on their surplices, onely at the ministrallion of the said Communion. Which being finished, there was a great dinner kept in the Bishop of Londons palace by Paules, where the mourners appareled them, and so ended the solennitie of the said obsequies.

About the last of September, John Duke of Finland, second sonne to Gustavus King of Sweethen, was sent by his father to treat a marriage for his eldest brother Ericus, with the Queenes Maiestie of England, he arrived at Hartwich in Essex, and was there honorably received and entertained by the Earle of Orford: which said Earle, and the Lord Robert Dudley, with a goodly band of gentlemen and yemen, conveyed him to London, where he was received of diuers knights and gentlemen of the Court, on the 5. of October, and was with his traine of about the number of 50. persons well horsed, conveyed to the bishop

Ambassador from Sweethen.

of Winchester place in Southwarke, where he was lodged during his abode here, and remoued from thence 2. daies before Easter homeward, and sped on his message, as may appaere by that which followeth taken out of *Iohannes Leuenclij. comment. de bellis Belgicis.*

Ericus king of Sweden, sonne of Gustabus late king of the said kingdome, hauing committed to prison his brother Iohn Duke of Finland, whom a little before he had employed into England on an ambassage to the Quenes maiestie, whom he sued to for marriage, and had his sute refused: againe, the second time solicited her maiestie in the same sute, notwithstanding (to his great dishonour, and (as it fell out) his iust disgrace) he attempted the same matter with the youngest daughter of Philip Landgraue van Hessen, at whose hand, hauing the second time bene refused of her Maiestie here the matter being knowne there, he also not onely refused a deniaill, but the lady was by her father bestowed vpon Adolfe Duke Van-Holt, vnkle of Frederike king of Denmarke, then enemy of the said Ericus.

The 22. of December, Chamberlen that was captaine of the castle of Calis, and Hurlstone that was captaine of Wilsbank were condemned of high treason, because they left their charge, when the French men came thither.

In this meane time, through controuersie raised betwixt the Scottish nobilitie, and the queene Dowager of Scotland, which chaunced specially about matters of religion, certaine of the lords there minding reformation therein, and the queene resisting them to her power, diuerse companies of souldiers and men of warre, were sent out of Fraunce into Scotland to aide the said queene, where they were placed in diuerse townes and forts, to the displeasure of the more part of the Scottish nobilitie, who were forced to sue vnto the queene of England for aide to expell the French. Their sute was the better liked of for that it was doubted lest the French men vnder pretence of bringing an armie into Scotland to appease the Scots, might attempt some inuasion here in England, considering that by procurement as was thought of the duke of Guise, vnkle to the queene of France and Scotland, a title should seeme to be pretended by his neece the aforesaid queene, as might be gathered by coniectures. The names of the lords of Scotland that made sute for aide against the French men at this season were these:

Confederate  
Lords in  
Scotland.

The duke of Chatcau le reault.	The earle of Glenton.
The earle of Arraine his sounce.	The earle of Montros.
The lord Iames, prioz of Saint Andrez.	The lord Ruthuen.
The earle of Arguile.	The lord Boyde.
The earle of Glenearne.	The lord Oglesre.
The earle of Rothoull.	The lord Erskin.
The earle of Southerland.	The lord Droonond.
The earle of Pentithe.	The lord Hume.
The earle of Huntley.	The lord Roosle.
The earle of Catnes.	The lord Chreighton.
The earle of Errolle.	The lord Leuingston.
The earle Marshall.	The lord Somerwell.
The earle of Moray.	The Master of Lindsay.
The earle of Callis.	The Master of Marwill.

The

The Quenes maiestie with aduice of her graces counsell, considering of this weightie businesse, and withall, foreseeing the malicious purpose of her aduersaries, and howe the Queene of Scots was in Fraunce married and gouerned. So as she was not able to bte the libertie of her crowne, did thinke it best to prevent such mischiftes as might ensue, if timely remedy were not vied. To displace such dangerous neighbours the Frenchmen, that began to nestle themselves thus strongly sonare at hand. Hereupon was a power raised and sent forth, both by sea and land: the duke of Norfolk being appointed Generall, and sent into the North for the direction thereof. And first maister William Winter appointed vice Admirall of the Quenes nauie, Northwards made saile towards Scotland, and waisting along the coast, in the moneth of Januarie, came into the Forth, and so to the rode of Leth, and there cast anchor, as well to impace such Frenchmen as might happily be sent forth of Fraunce against the Scottish lords of the congregation, as also to keepe them that lay in Fife from victuals: moreover after that the army by land was come together into the North parts and had sojourned a while at Berwick, and thereabout, the Lord Grey of Wilton being appointed Generall of the said armie, departed with the same, and marched to Col-dingham, where they encamped that night.

The 30. of March, sir Iames Croft, & sir George Howard, departed fro Berwick to the armie, with all the lawnces and light horsemen, containing the number of 1250. horses. The number of footmen, more then 6000. The chiefe gouernors of which armie were these: The lord Grey of Wilton lieutenant Generall, sir Iames Croft assistant with him in that charge, the lord Seord lord Marshall, sir George Howard, generall of the men at armes and demulances, maister Barnaby fier Patricke his lieutenant, sir Henry Percie generall of the light horsemen: Thomas Huggens squire, prouost marshall, Thomas Goner maister of the ordnance, maister William Pelham captaine of the Pioners, Edward Randell squire sergeant maior, maister Thomas Barrough, maister Cuthbert Vaughan, maister Williams, and maister Cornewall corporals, this day at night the armie encamped at Dunglas, and thereabout.

The last of March, the army marching by Dunbar, there issued out of the towne certaine horsemen and footmen, offering to skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English lawnces and pistolets, with certaine harquebusiers made forwards, but they kept themselves within their strength, two of the enemies horsemen, and one footman were slaine. This done the army marched on to Linton bigges, where the footmen encamped that night. The horsemen lay at Hadington and in diuerse other small townes, sir Iames Croft lay at Clarkington west of Hadington, at the lord of Cockburnes house. The first of Apill, the camp remoued to Salt Preston, and there encamped: this evening, sir Iames Croft, with diuerse of the captaines in his company, met with the earle of Arraine, the lord Iames prioz of Saint Andrez, the maister of Marwell, sir William Kirklaudy lord of Gange, and diuerse other of the Scottish nobilitie with three hundred horsemen their traine.

After they had saluted each other, they rode together to Salt Preston, where the lord Grey lord lieutenant met them, where they entered into communication, and

Aide given  
to the Scots  
against the  
French in  
Scotland.

1560

and after departed. The 2. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir James Croft, sir George Howard, with other capitaines rode to Muskellborough church, whither came to them the duke Chateau le Reault, with his sonne the earle of Araine, the earles of Arguile, Glenearne, Southerland, Wentithe, and Rothus, the lord James prior of Saint Andrews, the lord Ruythuen *alias* Riuen, the lord Oglesce, the lord Boyde, the maister of Marwell, the L. of Dunsstone, the maister of Lindsey, the bishop of Saliswary, the abbot of Saint Colmes Inch, the abbot of Culros, the lord of Pettitrow, the lord of Cunningham head, sir lord of Gange and other, about 200. hobyers, there they late in counsell and departed for that night.

On the 3. of Aprill, the lord Grey, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, sir Henrie Percy, and diuerse other capitaines and gentlemen, rode into Pinkey, a house of the abbot of Dumfries, where the earle of Araine, and the lord James Steward, with diuerse other noble men of Scotland meeting them, did conuoke them into the said house, where they had long conference together, and after dinner they returned with the lord lieutenant vnto Salt Preston.

The fourth of Aprill, five young gentlemen appointed to passe into England for plidges, their names were, lord Claude Hamilton, fourth sonne to the duke Chateau le Reault, Robert Dowglas, Archibald Cambell, lord of Longhennel, George Gream second sonne to the earle of Wentithe, James Coningham, sonne to the earle of Glenearne.

The sixt of Aprill, the campe raised from Salt Preston and marched forwards, halfe a mile from Westricke, beneath a Cragge called Arhurs seate, the duke of Chateau le Reault, the earle of Araine, the earle of Arguile, the lord James prior of Saint Andrews, and the rest of the noble men of Scotland, accompanied with two hundred horsemen, and five hundred footmen, staid for the coming of the English armie, whereupon the lord Grey, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, sir George Howard, and sir Henry Percy repaired to them, & had conference with the duke, and other the Scottish lords that were in his company.

In the meane while the army staid, but yet at length the horsemen, the bartgard and battell, were commaunded to march forth, who accordingly passed along by the place where the duke and Scottish lords staid, untill they approached neare to Westricke: There came Trombull, the Queene Regents trumpet, to the lord lieutenant, and brought with him a safeconduitt, given vnder the hand and seale, for the safe repaire of sir James Croft, sir George Howard, and sir other to accompany them. Whereupon, they preparing themselves, departed towards Edenborough, where the said Queene as then lay within the castle. There went with them maister Sommerlet, maister Pelham, and foure other gentlemen. Whilst they were in conference with the Queene, the Frenchmen to the number of nine hundred or a thousand shot, backed with five hundred crossers and pikes, and about fiftie horsemen, were come forth of Lieth, vnder conuocation of maister Doylell, and the countie Martignes colonell of the French footmen. The Lord Grey vnderstanding thereof, came by to the hill, appointed an officer at armes called Rouge Crosse: to go vnto them, with commaundement from him, that they should retire their forces forth of the field into the towne of Lieth: for if it were not for the promise which he had made to the queene Dowager, he would

cause them to depart. The herault doing his message, receiued answer, that they were vpon their maister and mistresse ground, and therefore meant not to remove from it. Rouge Crosse returning with this answer, was sent againe, to commaund them eftsoons to go their way backe to Lieth, for if they did not, they should be sent away with a mischief. But vniuers had the herault done this second message, when the French men stepping forth, discharged a whole bolle of their shot into the field against the Lord Grey and his companie. Whereupon, the Englishmen and they fell in skirmish, which continued for the space of foure houres and more, to hot and earnestly maintained on both parts, that the like had not lightly bene scene long time before: yet at the length the Englishmen drove the French footmen ouer the hill, and won the Crag from them, and put them from a Chappell, where they had stood a great while, vsing it for a court from the Englishmens shot. Then the enemies that were in Lieth shot off diuers peeces of their great attillerie out of the Towne against the Englishmen, who on the other part brought forth two field peeces, and covered them with a troupe of horsemen, and hauing planted them to some aduantage, discharged the same among the enemies, who perceiuing that, gaue place, and sodainly the English demulances gaue a charge on them, brake in amongst them, and slue diuerse of them, whereby they were forced to retire backe into Lieth, being followed vnderneath to the gates of the Towne. There were slaine in this skirmish of the French about 140. beside them that remained prisoners. Of the Englishmen there were also diuerse slaine, and many hurt. The same day sir James Croft and sir George Howard returned from the D. Regent, after they had spent a long time in talke with her.

The seventh of Aprill, a new trench was cast beside the Crag, and thereon two peeces of ordinance planted. The eight of Aprill, the Frenchmen shot at the English campe very sore out of Saint Nicholas steeple, where were planted two great peeces of ordinance, although they did no great hurt: but the same night the Englishmen cast a trench beyond the Crag, and placed in the same trench certaine small peeces of attillerie, which went off the next day against the enemies, and they likewise shot off against the English. The twelfth of Aprill, a bullet of a great peece of ordinance, being shot out of Lieth, did light in the campe and slue three men: but they were answered againe with our Canons. The thirtieth day of Aprill, being Easter day, the Englishmen shot off their great Ordinance, and the Frenchmen answered them againe all that day. The footmen also skirmished, so that diuerse were hurt on both parties. The same day the pile of Blackencle was surrendered to maister Winter. The same day, 9. French men apperelled like woomen came forth of Lieth, and counterfeiting some light demaiois, trained one of the English footmen within their danger, whom they took, and chopped off his head, which they set vpon the toppes of one of their Church steeples. The fifteenth day of Aprill, a fiftie horsemen, and about five hundred barquebusiers, who making to the new trenches, were vpon the Englishmen that warred vpon such a sodaine, that they slue and wounded no small number, and possessing the trenches awhile, stopped the touch holes of their peeces of the attillerie, tooke maister Maurice Berkeley prisoner, and his ensigne:

Pile of  
Blackencle  
surrendered  
to the English.

Brian Fitz Williams was sore wounded, &c. The alarme being brought to the campe, sir James Croft and other repaired towards the trench with all expedition, and perceiving the French men to be maisters of one of the trenches, he commanded captain Vaughan with his band to enter the trench, and to releue that that were hardly befit of the Frenchmen, which was done with such manhood, that the enemies were repulsed, and sundrie of them slaine: captain Somerle and captain Reade with their bands followed them as they retired, and master Arthur Grey with certaine demuliers, and charging them with great courage, drave them into the towne, and made of them great slaughter, but Arthur Grey was shot through the shoulder. The 16. of Aprill, a supply of 2000. footmen came to the campe, over whom was captain sir Andrew Corbet, sir Rowland Stanley, sir Thomas Hesketh, sir Arthur Manwering, sir Laurence Smith, master Francis Tunstall, master Edward Littleton, captain Carvell, Philip Shurley, and David Morris. They were garded with 500. horsemen, sir Ralph Sadler, sir Francis Leake, sir John Folter, and sir Nicholas Strange, having charge to see them safely conducted. Who after they had brought the pass all danger of enemies, left the in safety by the way, and were come a day or two before them to the campe.

The 17. of Aprill, Master Winter caused diuers of the ship-boats being well manned, to give a great alarme at the side of the towne towards the water, discharging many balles and harquebusers of croke into the towne, during which time there was a pitious cry made by the women and children within the towne. The 20. of Aprill, many peeces were shot off out of the trenches into the towne. There issued out at the gates one hundred shot, to haile such of the Englishmen as came forth to offer skirmish, the pioneers both Scots and English were occupied in making of a new trench neare to the towne.

The twentieth of Aprill, the Bishop of Calance, accompanied with sir Henry Percy, and three hundred horsemen, came to Kestericke, the Lord Lieutenant, sir James Croft, the lord Scrope, and sir Raffe Sadler, met him at the further end of the ward. After they had received him with salutations, he was conducted by Rouge croffe from the campe vnto Edenborough, and so up to the castle to confer with the Queene Dowager. He was no sooner in the castle, but there issued forth of Litch the number of two hundred Frenchmen, and began a hot skirmish, which continued two hours, at which diuers were slaine on both parts. The same night, nine peeces of ordnance were planted in the new trench, so that the next day the same peeces were shot off toward the steeple of St. Anthonies Church, whereby the peeces of ordnance that lay in the same steeple, were dismounted by them, and likewise those that lay in the steeple of Saint Nicholas Church, where a Gunner was slaine that stood at one of them, the pece and the gunner tumbling downe both together: a great pece of this church was beare downe, and the steeple defaced. The Bishop of Calance after he had talked with the Queene, returned to commune with the Lords of the congregation.

The 23. of Aprill, the Pioneers Scottish and English, were busied in calling of trenches.

On the 24. of Aprill, there issued out of Litch seauenteen horsemen, who offered the skirmish, and under the place called little London, 300. or 400. of their shot were

were placed, at length certaine of the English Lancers gaue a charge vpon their host, who therewith retiring betw the Englishmen within danger of their shot, but the French were forced to retire, without any great hurt done to the Englishmen.

The 25. of Aprill, the Pioneers finished the new fort, named Mount Pelham, to the gard wherof Captain Vaughan was appointed gouernor with 1200. soldiers. This fort was raised on the south side of the towne, the plot wherof was call square with foure bulwarkes at euerie corner, and 12. battering peeces planted in places conuenient. This day, there issued out of Litch on the East side, 70. or 80. horsemen, and 200. harquebusers offering the skirmish, towards whom certaine of the English light horsemen made, and charging them, drave the backe to their footmen, who with their shot received the light horsemen so sharply, that they were forced to retire: in the which retire James Hamilton a Scottish man was taken prisoner. This day captain Perith, and captain Hayes, having charge of a troupe of light horsemen, under sir Henry Percy, and the lord of Brange, were taken prisoners before Dunbar, and to the number of 20. or 30. other were likewise taken of slaine. The same night also 2000. footmen with the pioneers, were sent to the other side of the towne, beyond the Canon milles, where the pioneers cast a trench for the safe lodging of the army, which removed the next day from Kestericke downe into the valley by the said Canon milles, called the red Brades. As the army was incamping, certaine of the enemies horsemen and footmen skirmished with the English Lancers and light horsemen a long time, there were two Frenchmen slaine with their horses also. In time of this skirmish, two Canons were conveyed and planted in the new trench, which discharged diuers shot at the enemies.

The seven and twentieth of Aprill, the great artillerie was planted aloft on the hill aboue the campe, within lesse than a curious shot of the towne walls, and the pioneers were let a worke to call new trenches, from the place where the same ordnance was lodged vnto Mountpelham, draving to weere vnto Litch, as the harquebule might reach them that watched and warded within the great bulwark. The French kept the same day a trench which they had made without the towne, continually shooting at the English men in the campe, but the same night the English men won that trench from them, slue diuers of them therein with their shot, which being done, they gaue a great alarme to the towne both by land and water, the ship-boates shooting off against the towne very hotly, and they within the towne likewise at the English men. The same night was the great ordnance planted, and master Markham hurt. The 28. the said great ordnance went off, and shot continually the more part of the day. The bishop of Calance departed the same day towards Barwicke, and this night sir George Howard, that had bene sent backe to Barwicke, to signifye to the D. of Norfolk the estate of the siege, returned with sir Richard Lee, being conducted with 500. horsemen.

The 30. of Aprill, the great artillerie were shot off very hotly, and the French likewise shot off theirs, and continuing forth of the towne, skirmished with the Englishmen: this night the pioneers made new trenches towards the South bulwark. The last of Aprill, a sodaine fire was raised within the towne, which hugely increased and continued the most part of the night following: at the beginning

when it first appeared, the English ordinance was shot off to the place where the fire was, which shot together with help of the wind that was very great, did marvellously augment the same fire: nevertheless the French at that present time offered a skirmish, & continued the same neare the space of two houres. It was appointed, that certaine bands should make alarme to the towne, in so much that capitaine Vaughan, with diuerse other souldiers of Mountpelham entered the ditch, and approached the walls, but retired without receiving any great hurt. The first of May, the Frenchmen early in the morning let by their may-poles in certaine bulwarkes and 14. ensignes, the which being discovered of them in the campe, they saluted them with a peale of great ordinance, and likewise the French answered them againe, and so continued the most part of that day.

The second of May, the pioneers made the trenches for the artillery to be planted in battery. The night following they placed the artillery in the new trench, and the next morning, the same battery went off, and continued all that day. The night ensuing, the pioneers made a trench by the Citadell, wherein they might lodge some shot, and capitaine Vaughan with diuerse of the bands in Mountpelham gave two fierce assaults to the towne, entered the ditches and victored the flankers: whereupon the French shot off the same flankers and munning their walls, shot off two or three volies of their final artillery, slaying and hurting to the number of twenty Englishmen, among other little Norton was one.

The fourth of May, there were three ensignes appointed to gard the new trenches, and towards night the Frenchmen that were in the trench under the Citadell, made a fallie upon the Englishmen that garded the layd trench, but could not preuaile. The same night the Englishmen conveyed two culverings over the water to scoure the mills, and before the breake of the day they had bent one of the same mills. The sixt of May, 4. souldiers belonging to our great ordinance set fire & bent the other mill. This day also, as French gentlemen came forth to discover the English trenches, capitaine Reade commanded one of his souldiers to shoot at them, but through mislapp his peece burst, and a hurt therof brake the arme of the layd capitaine.

The first of May, the English ordinance on the further side the water began to shoot off against the enemies very hotely. This day the earle of Arguile, and diuerse other noble men of Scotland, came to Edenborough with two thousand horsemen and footemen, who shewed themselves in order of a muster on the hill underneath the castle, which being perceived of the French within Lieth, they shot of three great peeces of artillery at them, but hurt them not. The night ensuing the great ordinance in the English mens trenches and bulwarkes, continued shooting on every side: and herewith commandement was given by the lord lieutenant and the councill, that the whole army should be ready armed by midnight. In the morning by two of the clocke, diuerse bands passed forth towards the towne, and entering the ditches offered to scale, other capitaines with their men approached the bulwarkes, and other were appointed to enter beside the milles. Beside the English bands, there were a thousand Scots ioynd with them, whereof five hundred with capitaine Vaughan and other were commanded to attempt the bulwark next to Mountpelham, and other five hundred went with

such

such English capitaines as were commanded to assault the breach.

Moreover, as well the lances as light horsemen, were assigned to gard the fields: Sir George Howard with the lances keeping betwixt the fort of Mountpelham and the sea westward, and Sir Henry Percy with the light horsemen, betwixt the campe and the sea eastward. The rest of the footmen that went not to the assault, were also appointed to gard the trenches and field, in such wise as was thought expedient, and upon warning given by capitaine Randall sergent major, such as had bin commanded to give the assault in their severall appointed places, pressed with courage, & boldly adventured to climb the walls, and enter at the breaches, but yet their attempt wanted the wished successe: for what through the policy of the french, in stopping the currat of the river that night, & what by reason of the bitterness of the ladders, being too short, the assailants were repulsed, & were forced to retire with the losse of 7. or 8. score englishmen, or more, which were slaine outright, besides those that were wounded, being at the least two or three hundred.

The 8. of May, Sir George Howard and Sir Richard Lee departed toward Bartwike with certaine companies of horsemen for their safe conduction.

The ninth of May, the Frenchmen wrought within the towne to fortifie and repaire the breaches. The same day also the French had manned to the sea-wards a bote fraught with fifty harquebussiers, meaning to compe them out to Inket, but the English ships discouraging them, prepared certaine botes to encounter the, whereof they being aware, returned.

The 10. of May, maister Ingleby, capitaine Pickman, and capitaine Browne came to the campe from Bartwike with a supply of foure hundred & fifty souldiers.

The twelfth of May about midnight, the Frenchmen to the number of two hundred sallied forth of the towne, intending to give a carnado to the Englishmen that kept watch in the trenches at the west side of Mountpelham, but they were detected and repulsed.

The fifteenth of May, Sir Francis Leake came to the campe with a supply of five hundred men from Bartwike.

The one and twentieth of May about seven of the clocke at night, there issued forth of Lieth six horsemen and a hundred footemen harquebussiers, marching toward Mountpelham to offer skirmish: whereupon capitaine Vaughan went forth to them very orderly, and skirmished with them a petty while, in the end the frenchmen were driven to retire. The same night maister Francis Sommeres and other capitaines were appointed to keepe a fort built about the campe, and took the name of him being capitaine thereof, & was called Sommeres mount. The 22. Sir Peter Carew came to the campe, being sent from the court. The 24. of May at night about seven of the clocke, the french sallied forth to the number of 300. footmen and 20. horsemen, meaning, as it appeared, to have worne the trenches from the Englishmen, whereupon a fore skirmish followed, diuers slaine, and many hurt on both parts: yet in the end the french were driven home by force. The same day the Frenchmen of Dunbarre tooke an English hoy laden with beere, hefe and bacon.

The eight of June Sir John Newill with three hundred men, capitaine Bridges, and capitaine Drewry, with other three hundred, set from Bartwike towards the campe,

camp, where they arrived on the 10. of June, on which day the queene Dowager departed this life.

The thirteenth of June, Sir William Cicill principall secretary to the queenes maiesty, with Sir William Cordall, and doctor Worton deane of Canterbury and Pope came to Barwicke, appointed commissioners on her said maiesties behalfe to treat of an accord with the countie de Randon, and the bishop of Valence commissioners sent for that purpose from the French king and his wife Mary queene of Scots.

The fourteenth of June a certaine number of Frenchmen came forth of Lieth to gather cockles on the sands towards Mountpelham, whereof the Englishmen preceiuing, set upon them, slue 70. and tooke 16. of them prisoners.

The sixteenth of June, the forsworned commissioners came to Edenborough, and as maister Secretary and the other passed the English forts and campe, they were saluted with a gallant peale of harquebushers.

The seventeenth of June about eight of the clocke, an abstinence of warre was concluded, warning being given by the discharging of two peeces of ordinance out of the castle, and then the Frenchmen shewed themselves upon their rampiers.

The 22. of June, the abstinence of warre was broken off.

The 4. of July about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, the French came out of Lieth to gather cockles, whereupon the lord lieutenant bring at that present in Mountpelham, sent a drum unto monsieur Doyell, to signifie unto him, that his souldiers had gone further without their bounds then they might do by the order taken by the commissioners of both parts: Doyell answered, that they were no souldiers, but poore people which went to gather cockles for their reliefe and subsistence. The drum layd, that if they kept not themselves within their appointed limits, the lord lieutenant meant to send them backe not greatly to their ease: whereunto Doyell replied, that if he so did, he would do the best he could to ayde the: hereupon the English horsemen and footmen of Mountpelham gave a charge upon them, and slue of them to the number of 50. and tooke certaine prisoners.

The first of July issued put of Lieth fouretene horsemen, and a hundred footmen, which offered themselves, but upon the shooting of the great artillery from Mountpelham, they retired home againe into the towne. The night following about twelue of the clocke, one Scarragood an English man that was a gunner, and had faired himself to flicke from the English campe for manslaughter into Lieth, and was received of the frenchmen, believing that he had meant no deceit, came out of the towne, after he had remained there about seven dayes, in which meane while he had understood fully the state of the towne, and now upon his returne, made relation thereof as he knew.

The first of July, the lord Grey lord lieutenant, Sir William Cicill secretary, and Sir Ralph Sadler, about three of the clocke in the after noone, gave order, that there shold no pece be shot, nor shew of hostility made until seven of the clocke the same night: and herewith sent Gerueys Clifton unto all the souldiers that were in the frenches and bulwarkes on the west side of Lieth, to command them to observe the like order, and Sir John Neuill was sent with like order unto the souldiers that lay in Somerset moune.

The peace now being concluded on the seventh of July, Sir Francis Leake, and Peace concluded in Scotland. Sir Gerueys Clifton, accompanied with two French gentlemen were sent to the towne of Lieth, to signifie unto monsieur Doyell, the bishop of Amiens, Labrosse, Martignes, and other the French lords and captains, that they were comethither by commaundement from the commissioners to cause the peace already concluded, to be proclaimed, which accordingly was done in manner following:

The most mightie princeesse, Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. And the most christian king Francis and Mary, by the same grace of God king & queene of Fraunce and Scotland, haue accorded vpon a reconciliation of a peace and amitie to be inuolably kept betwixt them, their subiects, kingdomes and countries, and therefore in their names it is straitly commaunded to all manner of persons borne under their obediencies, or bring in their seruice, to forbear all hostilitie either by sea or land, and to keepe good peace each with other from this time forwards, as they will answer thereto at their bittermost perils. Immediately after this proclamation was ended Sir Francis Leake, and Sir Gerueys Clifton were brought to monsieur Doyells lodging, where was prepared for them a banquet of thirtie or forty dishes, & yet not one either of flesh or fish, saving one of a powdered horse, as was aduouced by one that auouched himselfe to haue tasted thereof.

Articles of the peace, thirteene in number, were to this effect.

1. First, the French king and queene do not onely relinquish the stile, title and armes of England and Ireland, but do also bind themselves from henceforth to forsake any more to vse or beare the same, and shall forbid their subiects the vying of the same title, in what sort soeuer it be, within any of their countries or dominions, forbidding also as much as in them lieth, the toyning or quartering any manner of waies the armes of England with those of Scotland or France.

2. All such letters patents, or other writings as haue bene heretofore made, wherein the said title is mentioned, or whereunto any stile concerning the said armes is annexed, shall be reformed, and new made, without putting to them the title of armes of England or Ireland, and that all manner of writings or instruments concerning the said title, and being sealed with the said armes, not being renewed or reformed within sixe monthes after the publication of this treatie, shall be void and of none effect.

3. Scotland shall be gouerned by a counsell of twelue of the noblest of that countrey, which nobilitie shall be taken out of foure and twentie, to be first chosen by parliament, by the three estates there, and of those twelue, seven shall be named by the Scottish queene, and sixe by the lords of the parliament.

4. All things passed there since March 25. 1558. shall be quashed and forgotten, and by parliament the surety of the same shall be confirmed, and euerie man released by his office in that realme.

5. No French man shall haue any office in Scotland.

6. Sixe score French men souldiers only shall remaine in Scotland, viz. three hundred in Dunbar, & 300 in Inverkeithing, to be monthly mustered, and payed by the counsell of the realme, and to be iudged by the lawes of Scotland.

7. No mutation nor vicuals shall be brought into Scotland, but from sixe monthes

Articles of peace at the siege of Lieth.



moneths to fire moneths, and then onely for thole places, and for the said number of fire froweoulders..

8 No forraigne Ships or men of warre shall be from henceforth brought into Scotland, but by the consent and will of the Scots.

9 Litch shall be demoltished by the victo of the Quenes maiesties commisioners, and in such sort as they shall thinke convenient.

10 The new buildings of Dunbarre shall also be rased.

11 Matters of religiō in Scotland be overpased in Allice without any alteratiō.

12 The league betwene the Quenes maiestie and the nobilitie of Scotland is also passed over without any revocation.

13 Finally, in the treatie betwene her highnesse, and the said French king and queene, the said king and queene, are by the speciall clause bound to her highnesse to performe and keepe the said covenants that touch the Realme and subiects of Scotland.

After that this peace was then fully established, the French men were embarked at Litch in English vessels, whole onely excepted that were appointed to remaine as pledges with the English men till the Ships came backe againe, and a few other that were permitted to passe through England into their country.

The sixt of July, through shooting of a gunne which brake in the houle of one named Adrian Arden a Dutch man in Crooked lane, and letting fire on a sicken & barrell of gun powder, foure houses were blowne bp, and diuerse other foue shattered, nine men and women were slaine, and diuers other foue wounded.

On Michaellmas euen before noone, was published by proclamation, that the tesson coyned for twelve pence, and in the raigne of king Edward the first called downe to fire pence, should now forthwith (of the best sort marked with the portcullis) be taken for foure pence halfe peny, the second, marked with the greghound for two pence farthing, the third and worst sort, not marked as aforesaid, not to be taken for any value: the greates should be taken for two pence, the two peny pence for a peny, &c. And shortly after, her grace restored to her subiects fine sterling money, for their corrupt and base coin, calling the same to her maiesties mints, according to the rate before mentioned.

The 9. of October the French crowne that went current for 6. Shillings four pence was proclaimed to be fire shillings.

The quenes maiestie made great preparation of armor, munition, and powder, to be in a readinesse to defend her realme, if need should happen.

The one and twentieth of March, a notable grammar schoole was founded by the maister, wardens, and assistants of the worshipfull compaignie of the merchant Tailors of London, in the parish of Saint Laurence Pountney in the same city: Richard Hills late maister of that compaignie having given five hundred pound toward the purchase of an house, called the Hamoy of the Roke sometime the duke of Buckingham, wherein the schoole is kept.

The 10. of April was one William Geffrey whipped from the Wardhalles in Southwarke to Bedlem without Bishops gate of London, for that he professed one John Moore to be Christ our Saviour: on his head was let a paper wherein was writte as followeth, William Geffrey a most blasphemous hereick, denying

Houses  
blowne vp.

The third  
fall of the  
base money.

New coine  
of fine silver.

Ann. reg. 3.

1561  
The mer-  
chant Tai-  
lors free  
schoole.

Will. Geffrey  
whipped.

Christ our Saviour in heaven. The sayd Geffrey being stayed at Bedlem gate, John Moore was brought forth, before whom William Geffrey was whipped till he confessed Christ to be in heaven. Then the sayd John Moore being examined, and answering ouerthwartly, was commanded to put off his coat, doublet and shirt, which he seemed to do very willingly, and after being tied to the cart, was whipped an arrowes woote from Bedlem, where at the last he also confessed Christ to be in heaven, and himselfe to be a sinful man: then was John Moore sent againe unto Bedlem, and William Geffrey to the Wardhalles, where they had laine prisoners nigh a yeare and a halfe, the one for professing himselfe to be Christ, the other a disciple of the same Christ.

This yeare was such a scarcity of wheate and other graine, that Sir Wilham Chesler maior of London, and other the principall magistrats of the city, were byed to make provision for wheate & rie from beyond the seas, to a great quantity, which was a releefe, not only to the citizens, but also to the countries neare adioyning.

On Wednesday the fourth of June, betwene foure and five of the clocke in the afternoone, the steeple of Pauls in London, being fired by lightning, byall forth (as it seemed to the beholders) two or three yards beneath the foote of the crosse, and from thence bent downe the sphere to the stone worke and bels, so terribly, that within the space of foure hours, the same steeple, with the roofes of the church so much as was timber, or otherwise combustible, were consumed, which was a lamentable sight, and pittifull remembrance to the beholders thereof.

The length of Pauls church in London is twelue score Taylors paces, which is seven hundred and twentie foote: the breadth thereof is one hundred and thirty foote: the height of the steeple was five hundred and twentie foote, wherof the stone worke is two hundred and thirtie foote: and the spere which now is burnt, was likewise two hundred and thirtie foote: the height of the body of that church is one hundred and thirtie foote.

After this mischaunce, the Q. maiestie being much grieved for the losse of so beautifull a monument, directed her highnesse letters to the Maior of London, willing him to assemble the citizens, to take some order for speciall ayde & helpe for the repairing againe of the same and the of her most gracious disposition, to giue a comfort unto other, for the furtherance thereof, did presently giue and deliuer in gold 1000. marks, & a warrant for 1000. load of timber to be taken out of her maiesties woods or elsewhere. And the citizens of London granted one beneuolence, & three shillings to be forthwith paid. And the cleargie of England under the prouince of Canterbury granted to giue the fortieth part of the value of their benefices, being charged with first fruits, & not being charged with first fruits, to pay the thirtieth part. And the cleargie of the diocesse of London granted to giue the thirtieth part of their benefices, being in first fruits and the 20. part being out of first fruits. And immediately by the commandment of her maiestie, her priuie counsell took order, that six citizens of London, and two of the cleargie of the church of Pauls, had charge to oversee, and set forward this worke, who made such expedition, that within one month next following the burning thereof, the same was covered with boords and lead, after the manner of a false roofe: and the grates of the worke dispatched in so short time could scarcely be credited of any

A false christ  
whipped.

Pauls steeple  
on fire  
by lightning.

but such as saw the same. And the cause of this great hall, was for feare of raine, which might haue perished the waits, to the destruction of the whole church: and before the said yeare was fully ended, all the side fles of the said Church were framed of new and maine timber, and covered with lead, and fully finished. And the same yeare also the great roofoe of the west end was framed and made of new and great timber in Poykeshire, and brought to London by sea, and set up and covered with lead, and fully finished. And in like manner within the said yeere, the whole roofoe and frame of the east end of the said church was made in Poykeshire, and brought by sea to London, and after set up as the rest of the roofoes, but the roofoes of the north and south endes of the same church remained covered with boordes till 1564. that the bishop as I am informed tooke upon him the charge of repaying them, and for the same laid out 720. pound, and so that woork ceased to proceed any further.

*Ann. reg. 4.*  
*New coines.* The fifteenth of November, the Queenes maiestie published a proclamation by divers finall peeres of silver money to be current, as the six pence, foure pence, thre pence, two pence, and a penny, three half pence, and three farthings: & also forbad all foraine coines to be current within the same realme, as will gould as silver, calling them into her maiesties mints, except two sorts of crowns of gold, the one the French crowne, the other the Flemish crowne: whereupon for the space of half a yeere, was weekly brought into the Tower of London 8000. 10000. 12000. 16000. 20000. 22000. pound of silver plates: & as much or more in pistolets, and other gold of Spanish coines, & one weeke in pistolets and other Spanish gold 26000 pound, all these to be coined with the queenes stamps.

The 26. of December, sir Ambrose Dudley knight, called lord Ambrose Dudley second sonne of John late Duke of Northumberland, was created baron Lisle, and afterward the same day earle of Warwick at Westminster.

1562.  
Monstrous  
birthes.

This yeare in England were many monstrous birthes: in March a mare brought forth a foale with one body, and two heads, and as it were a long taile growing out betwene the two heads. Also a sow farrowed a pigge with foure legges like to the armes of a man child, with hands and fingers, &c. In April a sow farrowed a pigge with two bodies, eight feete, and but one head, many calves and lambes were monstrous, some with collers of skin growing about their neckes, like to the double ruffes of Whirs and necker-thicks then bred. The foure and twentieth day of May, a man child was borne at Chichester in Suffe, the head, armes, and legges whereof, were like an Anatomie, the breast and belly monstrous bigge from the nauill, as it were a long string hanging: about the necke a great collar of flesh and skin growing like to the ruffe of a shirt or neckerchief, conuining up about the eares pleyting and folding, &c.

Declaration  
of her maie-  
stie, causes  
why to arme  
her subiects  
into France.

The realme of France being in great trouble about this season, by means of civil dissension and waerres that rose amongst themselves, the queenes maiestie and her honorable privy counsell being enquired thereof, first published a booke entitled, A declaration of the Queenes Maiestie, containing the causes which have constrained her to arme certaine of her subiects for defence both of her owne estate and of the most christian king Charles the ninth her good brother, and his subiects. The booke followeth thus:

Although

Although the miserable and afflicted estate of the realme of France is to be lamented of all christian princes and nations, and requirith some good remedy, not only for preservation of the king there, with the queene his mother, and the subiects of that realme from danger and ruine: but also for the stay of the rest of christendome in peace, and to be free from the like civil waerre, into the which, as it appeareth by these strange dealings in the said realme, it is meant the same shall fall: yet there is no prince that hath more iust cause to haue regard hereunto, nor that hath more indifferently and earnestly intended the recovery of quietnesse: and accord therein, then the queenes maiestie of this realme of England, both by her owne gracious disposition and by aduise of her counsell. For as the matter is now plainly discovered to the world, and as her maiestie hath proued the same sufficiently by her owne late experience, she is not only touched as other princes ought to be, with great compassion and commiseration for the unnatural abusing of the french king her good brother, by certaine of his subiects, the danger of his person and his blood, the lamentable and barbarous destruction, hauocke and spoile of so many christian innocent people beyond all measure: but her maiestie also euidently seeth before her eyes, that if some good remedy be not by Gods godnesse provided in season, the very fire that is now kindled and dispersed there, is purposely meant and intended to be conveyed and blowne out to inflame this her crowne and her realme. Which great perill, although it be so plainly seene to all wise and prudent men both at home and abroad, that they cannot mislike her care and prouidence to remedy the same in time, yet hath her maiestie thought not butt to notify some part of her dealings herein, so as it shall well appeare how sincerely her maiestie hath both hitherto proceeded with her neighbours, and how plainly and upright she is determined to continue.

First, it hath bene well seene to the world how well disposed her maiestie was men at the beginning of her raigue, to the restitution of peace to christendome, that for loue thereof, was contented to forbear for certaine yeeres the restitution of a portion of her ancient dominion, when all other parties to the same peace, with whom and by whole alliance her crowne sustained losse, were immediately reddey to the most part of their owne in possession: and yet it cannot be forgotten within how short a space, or rather no space after, and by whom, and upon how great evident and iust causes, as well by means of force and armes first taken, as by other open attempts against her selfe, she was constrained to prepare like armes of defence onely, euen for her whole crowne and kingdome, and ioynly therewith by the lastie of her next neyghbors from a plaine tyrannie. And also how sincerely her maiestie proceeded therein: first by sundrie requestes and means made, to forbear their attempts: next, by open declaration of her intent to be onely for defence of her selfe, and by the whole handling of the matter: and lastly, by the euent and issue of the cause, all the world hath cleerely understood.

After which dangerous troubles pacified the M. of Scots at her returne to her country, feeling the great commouitment hereof following, both to her selfe and her realme, & understanding the sincere dealing of the M. maiestie in all her former actions, did by diuers means give signification to her maiestie of a great desire to enter with with her into a straighter kind of amitie: whereunto her maiestie being

The queene  
of England  
nearest touched  
with the  
French  
troubles.

2. April  
1559. The  
peace made  
at Casteau in  
Cambres.  
The towne  
of Calcis to  
be restored  
to the  
queene of  
England.

The proceed-  
ings for the  
quietnesse in  
Scotland.  
20. April  
1560.

1561. An interview accorded by the queene of England, for her & the Queene of Scots.

1. March 1562. The slaughter at Vally.

29. April 1562. Sir Henry Sidney lord president in Wales.

Particular appetite, cause of the common troubles.

Order of the great parliament at Orleans in 1560.

The edit 17. of Jan 1562. The slaughters at Vally, Paris, Sens, Thoulouze, Blois, Tours, Angers, and other places;

by credible estimation reported out of France, to the number of 100000. persons betwixt the 1. of March, and the 20. of Aug. last.

16. July 1562. An Ambassage intended by the queene of England.

of her owne nature much inclined, readily accorded. And how far and prosperously they both proceeded therein by many and sundrie mutuall offices of friendship, aswell the good will shewed by her maiestie to the Queene of Scots brides, the Guisles, and to all her friends and ministers passing and repassing through this her realme, as also the accord of the interview intended betwixt them both this last summer, hath well declared.

But in the midst of these her M. quiet and peaceable determinations, she hath bene to her great griefe bitterly disappointed, and constrained for her owne interest to attend and intermeddle in the pacification of these great troubles in France nere to her realme, the same being stirred up by such as both were her last manifest great enemies, and have also (they know how) continued the cause of mistrust till this day, by manifest arguments of iniustice, which her maiestie is content to conceale, for the great affection that she beareth to the Scottish M. First her maiestie at the beginning, doubting by the increase of these French troubles, that not onely that realme should fall into danger of ruine by division, as it now is, but also, that the rest of Christendome, and specially her owne realme, both for the necessity thereto, and for the respects of them to which were the principall authors and parties in these troubles, should be also disturbed and brought to danger: used all the means that might be by messagers, by solicitations, by advice, yea by a speciall ambassade of a person of good credit, to have some mediation made betwixt these parties being at controuersie. But such was the policy and violence of the one party in hasty proceeding even at the first, as no mediation could be heard of or allowed. And yet could not her M. discontinue her good intent, but seeing the cruelties increase, the bloodshedding and murders continued: yea, which was most perilous, the young king and the M. his mother being sodainly assailed, and found without force, were directed & drayone altogether by the very authors of the troubles, to suffer their name & authority to be abused, even to the killing of the kings owne unarm'd innocent people, the spoiling of his rich townes, the breaking of his best advised Councils, the persecuting of his own blood and his nobilitie, the destroying of his faithfull appoynted servants, with many such other heapes of mischiefs: and all these for no other cause, but for the particular appetites of some, and to break with violence the ordinances of the realme, specially those which were lately devised by the long and great counsell of the realme, both for quietnesse in matters of religion, and for the reliefe of the Kings estate others waies.

And finally her M. understanding very certainly of an open destruction & subuersion there put already in oye, & likewise intended against all states and persons professing the gospell abroad, her maiestie thought it very needfull to thinke of some other means of more efficacy, to induce the authors of those troubles, to give earre to some reasonable motions of accord, & not to adventure the ruine of a realme for their particular appetites: and therefore determined to send a Solemne ambassade of a certain number of personages of her counsell, being of great authority, experience, & indifference to repaire into France, to assay how some way might be reasonably devised for these extremities, by preserving of both parts indifferently, to the service of the K. their soveraigne, according to their estate of birth and calling.

But this manner of proceeding also could no wise be liked nor allowed, neither

could

could answer be had hereunto from the good young king, nor the timorous queene his good mother, without the only direction of that part, which both began and continued the troubles from the beginning.

And whilst her Maiestie was thus well occupied, meaning principally the weale and honour of the king her good brother, and secondly, well towards both the parties being at division, without the prejudice of either: a plaine contrary course and proceeding was bid against her Maiestie, by the which was made manifest what was further meant and intended by them that had so oftentimes refused to heare her Maiestie speake for mediation and accord. All her Maiesties subjects and marchants as well of her cities of London and Exeter, as of other port townes in the west parts of the realme, being at that very time in diuers parts of the countrey of Britaine, restoring thither only for trade of marchandises, and ready to returne to their owne ports, were in the same time apprehended, spoiled, unjustly imprisoned: yea, such as sought to defend themselves, cruelly killed, their ships taken, their goods and marchandise sealed, and nothing sayd nor deuised to charge them, but onely furiously calling them all Hugonots, a word though very strange and foolishly to many of the honest marchants and poore mariners: yet fully sufficient to declare from whence these commandments came, and what their intent is to prosecute, when their time shall serue them: neither were these spoiles small of few, but in value and number great and many: neither done by private fury, but by publike officers, who were also maintained by gouernours of the countrey: yea none of her maiesties subjects were spared that could be taken, though some escaped with great hazard. Well, hercof complaint was made where it ought to be, but therein hath bene as small regard had, as was before for robbing of her maiesties owne messengers with her letters from her ambado, and yet the fact unpunished without any satisfaction for the same: wherein her maiestie surely noteth and pitieth the lacke rather of authority, then of good will in the K. or the queene his mother, or the king of Nauarre his lieutenant: but seeth manifestly by this and by all other proceedings, in what hard termes the estate of the young king is set, that can neither be permitted to preferue his owne people and seruants, his owne lawes and ordinances, neither to answer to other princes and people in foyme of iustice, that which he ought to do.

Upon these and other former dangerous enterprises against her maiestie and her crowne, may it well appeare to all persons of indifferent iudgement, how these violent proceedings in France, conducted at this time by the duke of Guise and his adherents, do touch the queenes maiestie, much nearer for her state and realme then any other prince of Christendome. Wherefore seeing the authority of the king & the queene his mother, with their quiet good counsellors, cannot at this time haue place to direct their affaires neither towards their owne people, nor towards their neighbours, neither can any mediation sought by her maiestie for concord be allowed: but contrariwise, the tender persons of the king and the queene his mother be manifestly abused, and dangerously caried about for the particular pleasures onely of a few persons, and specially those of Guise, to wall the kings countrey, to sacke and spoile his rich and great townes, to kill and murder the multitude of his good and true subjects: and seeing also the quarrell manifestly

30. July. 19. August. 1561. Spoiles of English ships of London, Exeter, and Falmouth & other places committed by the French in Britaine. 20. August. 1562. ambassadors men robbed with the queenes letters.

The principall quarrell is to subuert religion.

Calcis.

1560.  
French armies sent by way of Scotland and other deuises, to claime the crowne of England, &c.

Perill and doubt of the restitution of the towne of Calcis, &c.

manifestly published and persecuted both by writing and otherwise by them, is to subuert the whole possession of true religion through Christendome by force, without mercy, and thereby to stir up a civil bloody lamentable war in all Christendome. Lastly, seeing they which be the authors and maintainers of all these diuisions, are well knowne to the world to be the same, that when time serued them, bent their whole endeouours to offend and diminish the crowne and dignity of this realme of England, and of late time for the exaltation of their particular house, deuised vniuersally to assaile the whole crowne of England by sundry waies, though by Gods goodnesse their practises and counsels turned for that time to their owne confusion: As by the same goodnesse they shall at all times hereafter.

How may her maiestie, without note of manifest unkindnesse to her deare young brother and confederate, of immortallnesse to her next neighbours his subiects, of uncharitablenesse to the common quiet of Christendome: and lastly, which is nearest to her selfe, of inexcusable negligence to the surety of her owne estate, her country and people, suffer these few troublesome men first to despoil and shed the blood of a number of Christian people, whose blood by nearnesse of place to her maiesties realme may be stopped, or some waies saved, next to purpose take such townes and hauens, whereby their former long intended and manifest practises against the crowne of this realme, may be most easily for them, and dangerously for this realme, put in use and execution? Wherefore for these reasonable, evident, urgent, and necessarie considerations, and not without the lamentable and continuall request of the French kings subiects her maiesties next neighbours, crying to her maiestie onely for defence of themselves, their ports and townes from tyrannye and subuersion, during this their kings minority, or at the least during this his inability to pacifie these troubles: Her maiestie hath put certaine numbers of her subiects in order both by sea and land, to saue some part of her good brothers innocent people from this tyranny, slaughter and ruine, and to preserve some speciall townes and ports of importance, for the king her good brother, that they come not into the possession of them: who if they had them, might more easily thereby prosecute their old particular practises against this realme, as in times lately past they did manifestly attempt, whereby of necessitie they must needs endanger the perpetuity of the peace betwixt the French king and her maiestie, and so consequently, though against the meaning of the king, depriue her maiestie of her good right to her towne of Calcis and the members thereof: Whereof it behooueth her maiestie, as things be handled to gaue good regard. And in this sort her maiestie doubteth not, but the sincerity of her doings, tending onely to procure Christian quietnesse by sauing of Christian blood, shall well please almighty God, content the king her good brother, when he shall be in estate and libertie to ponder the same indifferently, and serue also for the iust and naturall defence of her selfe, her peoples and countries: and finally by Gods grace shall establish the continuance of some more assured peace and concord betwixt both their maiesties and countries, so as either of them may quietly enioy and rule their owne. And in the incense time, her maiestie assurcth the sayd king, the queene his mother, the king of Nauarre, and all his good counsellours and subiects, that whatsoeuer any malicious

malicious or discontented person shall sinisterly report of her intent and doings: her M<sup>ty</sup> meaneth nothing herein, but sincerely, & as y<sup>e</sup> necessitie of the time & cause requireth, without blushing any thing, or doing wrong or violence towards any of the French kings subiects, protesting before God and all the world, that her meaning is for a necessarie defence onely of the true and good subiects of the French king, which otherwise apparantly in this troublesome time should be violently killed or destroyed: and so consequently her M<sup>ty</sup> intenseth by all manner of means possible, to keepe and continue good peace with the said king and all his countries, and to neglect no reasonable meanes that may procure libertie to himselfe, & quietnesse betwixt his subiects, which then shall succede when it shall please almighty God to giue to the selfe and chiefe authors of these troubles, grace to content themselves with their owne estates, and to haue within the compasse of their degrees like quiet subiects and sauourers of the common peace and tranquillitie of Christendome. A matter more necessarie at this time to be sought for, rather by consultation of Christian princes and states in briefe of mind and loue of peace and concord, then in this sort by word and fire, by pilate deuises and ferret factions to stir a diuision and ciuill warre in Christendome, vnder the cloke and pretence of religion.

These causes thus published at the request of the French themselves, namely, monieur de Vidame then capitaine of Brethauen, the bailie of Roane, the treasurer of Diepe and other, protesting the foresaid townes whereof they had charge, into her maiestie (if it would please her to further their proceedings of the Gospel, for that her maiestie was true inheritor not onely to those townes, but to all the whole kingdom of Fraunce, as they themselves confessed. In the month of September, her maiestie sent a band of her subiects to the towne of Brethauen in Normandy: who were embarked at Portsmouth, because that haue is most apt by transportation to that place, vpon whose arrivall the townes-men and inhabitants loyally surrendered themselves and their towne into the possession of the Queenes maiestie, which was kept by Englishmen from this month of September in Anno 1562. vnto the 29. of July then next following in the yeare 1563, as moxe at large shall be shewed. For the conduction of such forces as were to be sent over, her maiestie ordained the lord Ambrose Dudley earle of Warwick to be her principall lieutenant, capitaine generall, chiefe leader and gouernour of her said subiects, that should in such wise passe over into Normandy. Whereupon the said earle the 17. of October, tooke shipping at Portsmouth in the haue there, being aboard himselfe in the Queenes ship called the *Acton* barke, and setting forward sailed all that afternoone, and the night following directly towards Brethauen: but in the morning when he was within twentie miles of the towne of Brethauen, the wind suddenly changed contrarie to his course, so that being driuen to returne, about the next midnight he arrived in the Downs, and there remained at anchor till the next morning, and then was let on land by boate at Sandon castle betwixt Deal, and the same day at night came to Dover, and there lay till the 28. of October, and then taking ship againe sailed forth, but finding the wind nothing prosperous to his course, after he had lien all that night and day following, being on the seas, he was constrained backe againe to the haue of Dover, where he

The queenes maiesties intent to procure peace, and to obserue it. They of Guise to liue in their degrees with our superiouritie ouer the king and the rest of his blood.

A free generall counsell by the consent of christian princes meeten then ciuill warre, to bring the Church to vniuite. A band of English soldiers sent to Newhaue.

Earle of  
Warwike  
landed at  
Newhaunc.

Oth of the  
Lord lieuten-  
ant & other

He remained till the 28. of October, and on the 29. he landed at Prewbawen, where he was most hospitably received with a great peale of artillerie. The 30. of October, there came to Prewbawen from Dupe 50. light horsemen Scots, brought by one of maister Killigrewes servants. The last of October, the earle of Warwikes commission was proclaimed in Latin, English, and French, by Blew Manell pursuant to attenes, which being ended, his lordship went unto the church, & there sir Adrian Poinings knight Marshall, gave him his oth, and then my lord gave the estate for Adrian his oth, and after him were sworn Cuthbert Vaughan controller, John Fisher knight porter, William Bromfield master of the ordnance, William Robinson, Walker Bailiffe, and capitaine T. Wood Clarke of the counsell. The second of November, the earle of Warwike with the knight marshall and the controller, rode out of Prewbawen to Hautcuille, and so towards Mondcuille accompanied with all the horsemen English and Scottish, and a thousand footmen. The Scottish men and Montgomeries band passed forth and skirmished with them of Mondcuille, and the Scots brought away with them a boote of 300. sheepe, but in the morning they were returned backe againe by commandement of the earle of Warwike. Maister Controllers souldiers went as far as Warflew, and there skirmished with them of the garrison, but without any hurt to either part. The 4. of November, a barke of Prewbawen belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into the haven of the same towne 4. Buttains laden with Calcoine wine to the quantitie of 200. tuns, which they meant to have brought to the enemies, but was discharged in Prewbawen, and stood the English in good stead. The 6. of November, a great alarme was raised in the towne of Prewbawen, for upon the hills on the north side of the towne, the Keingraue & other showed themselves with 2000. footmen, & 500. horsemen: and therewith the Keingraue sent a trumpet to the towne, to advertise the L. lieutenant, that he was there on the hills, & that if it would please him to promise upon his honour & by the faith of a gentleman that he might come and go safe, he would be glad to come and see him, and talke with him. Whereupon the lord lieutenant taking with him certaine captains and gentlemen, rode forth of the towne, and sent before him sir Adrian Poinings the marshall with Stephen Medcalf her maisties trumpeter, unto the Keingraue, who talking with him, returned and met with the lord lieutenant, who therewith passed forward, and meeting with the Keingraue, they embraced each other, and conferred together: and the Keingraue told the lord lieutenant, that he was come to be his neighbour, with such other merry speech, and after taking leave each of other, they returned. The countie Montgomerie and monsieur Beauvoys had some talke also with the Keingraue, casting out bitter words in reproofe of the duke of Guise, and other whom they hated. The Keingraue coming backe to his army, forsooke all the countrie, and dyue away the more part of all the cattell that they could find, and coming to the church of Hautcuille, where an hundred and fiftie of Montgomeries band lay, they skirmished with them, and in the end Montgomeries souldiers were forced to retire, and abandon the place, & came to Prewbawen: but the next morning they returned, tooke the church, and kept it against the enemies as afoze.

The 11. of November, a proclamation was made in the name of the lord lieutenant,

lieutenant, as well for good orders to be kept by the soldiers against the French inhabitants of the towne, & reforming of certaine greivances wherof the French had made complaint, as also for their coming to church to heare common prayer and preaching at due times, for the avoiding of unlawfull games, &c. The 12. of November, there went out of Prewbawen towards Warflew three bands of French men, containing about five hundred footmen, and suddenly they were beset by the Almains & French men of the garrison of Warflew, so that the French men of Prewbawen were driven to take the village of Graule, where they maintained the skirmish for the space of two howers, till the lord lieutenant sent forth with the controller the number of one thousand footmen, and all the English and Scottish horsemen, and maister Beauvoys with diverse French horsemen, who coming before Warflew, fell in skirmish with the enemies, to whose succour there issued forth of Warflew a great number of the Almains both horsemen and footmen: but the Englishmen behaved themselves so valiantly, that they beat them out of the field into the towne: and the Englishmen returned to Prewbawen with honor, having not lost past right of their soldiers, that were slain, and fire hurt.

The 13. of November, a pinnelle of the French men that belonged to Prewbawen, being gone forth the night before, brought into the haven a ship laden with Rochell wine five and twentie tuns, that was bound to the enemies. The 14. of November, another ship brought with twentie tuns of Calcoine wine was brought in as a prise, taken by a barke of Prewbawen. The 17. of November, a proclamation was made concerning orders taken by the lord lieutenant, that no English man nor French man should shoot off any harquebut within the towne, nor that any French man, except monsieur Beauvoys, or monsieur Briquevaule, or their companies should be out of their lodgings after nine of the clocke at night till the next morning on paine of death, except in alarmes.

The 23. of November, the Keingraue was leine on the north hills of the towne with fower score horsemen, whereupon the Scottish horsemen and three bands of footmen issued out, marched up towards the same hills in hope to meete with the enemies, but they were retired towards Mondcuille, and so nothing was done. The 25. of November, a soldier was hanged in the market place in Prewbawen, and therewith proclamation made that none should take any thing forcibly from the French, on paine of death. The same day came into the haven hopes and boats laden with wine, cider, perrie, wheate, becke, biscet, meale, &c. The same day also there landed at Prewbawen five hundred soldiers under the leading of Aeric Darcie, Reignald Higate, and William Twedie. The same day the Queenes ship called the Hare coming from Portsmouth, arrived at Prewbawen, and in her came sir John Portinorie, a man of great experience in fortification, they were by the way assailed by a French ship of nine tuns and better, but they that were aboard the Hare banquished the enemies, tooke the same ship, and brought her with them, being laden with wines. The same day sir John Moore landed at Prewbawen, bringing out with him five hundred soldiers for amply of the garrison.

The 8. of December, monsieur de Beauvoys, capitaine Francis Somerley, and capitaine

Prises of  
wine broght  
into New-  
haunc.

A soldier  
executed.  
Prises  
brought in  
to Newhaunc.

A present  
from the  
Reingraue  
to the lord  
licutenant.

Castell of  
Tankerville  
taken by the  
of Newha-  
uen.

A skirmish  
before Har-  
flew.

Lord Grey  
of Wilton  
deceased.

County  
Montgome-  
rie gover-  
nor of Diepe  
1563.

The castle of  
Tankerville  
surrendered.

captaine Edward Horley, with diuers other captaines and gentlemen, rode to the Reingraue, lying at a faire house not far from Wondeuille, where they dined with him, had great cheere, and returned to Petowhaen. The Reingraue sent for a present to the earle of Warwicke a great horse, very faire, with saddle and bridle, esteemed to be well woorth an hundred pound. The same day at night, the double Rose with other boats passed out of the haven, Edward Dudley and captaine Iohn Warde, being aboard with other to the number of an hundred good soldiers, sailing downe the river, landed besides Tankerville, and lay close all that night in a wood: in the morning monsieur Bimarre ensigne-brer to the countie Montgomerie, with six or seven French men brained went to the castle gate, & there fell in talke with monsieur Dimece, that was captaine of that fortresse, hauing about him ten soldiers. Whilst they were thus in talke, the English men and French men comming forth of the wood that was there at hand, reared by their ladders at the breach, which was made the summer before, and entering by the same, came downe into the baste court. Whilst thing when the French soldiers that kept talke at the castell gate perceived, the captaine beholding as good as three score armed men within the castell at his backe, he suddenly yielded himselfe, and in this sort was the castell taken, and the captaine brought prisoner to Petowhaen.

The 12. of December, the earle of Warwicke, monsieur de Beauuois & monsieur de Bricquemault, with all the horsemen, and 3000. footmen, passed forth of Petowhaen vnto Harflew, out of which towne issued 700. Reisters of the countie Reingraue, & 300. footmen, who fell in skemish with the French & English very hotly, but the English drave them to the gates of Harflew, & slew them there, and upon the waies of the towne: yet was there not slaine past leuen of the English part. The 17. of December, the countie Montgomerie and sir Hugh Paulet arrived at Petowhaen in one of the Duchesse ships called the Aïde.

Whilst things passed thus in Normandy, there ended his life at home the honourable baron and famous captaine, William lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the most noble order of the garter, at that present gouernor of Warwicke, & warden of the East marches against Scotland, he deceased the 25. of December at Cheshunt in Hertfordshire.

The 26. of December, the county de Montgomerie tooke shipping at Petowhaen rode, accompanied with fower hundred harquebusiers Frenchmen, and sailed to Diepe there to be gouernor of that towne.

The sixt of January, were apprehended captaine Blondell, captaine Moucobel, monsieur de Mainie, and Viraueu, with others, for some conspiracy or traiterous practise which they went about and had contriued.

The same day captaine Edward Horley with 200. souldiers, and captaine Francis Blunt with 100. tooke shipping at Petowhaen rode, and sailed to Diepe, there to remaine with the county Montgomerie.

The ninth of January, a great tempest of wind and thunder happened in the towne of Reister, which brouched 411. baires of houses, and ouerthrew many.

The sixteenth of January, the castle of Tankerville was surrendered to the Reingraue, after he had laie about it eight dayes, with two thousand horsemen

and footmen. The 19. of Ianuarie, there landed at Petowhaen captaine Tremaine with sixtie horsemen very well appointed to serue there. The 24. of Ianuarie, Francis Clarke Frenchman arrived at Petowhaen with two tall ships of his owne, right well appointed for the wars, bringing with him three rich prizes.

The sixt of February, two ships of Britaines laden with Calcoine wine, butter, bacon, salt, and other victuals, were brought into Petowhaen by a shalop of Ballebeuf, that was resiant with other Frenchmen in Petowhaen, and had taken these two vessels as they were going to victual the enemies. The first of February, three mightie ships of war belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into Petowhaen three rich prizes laden with leeks, ballards, sugar, oranges, graines, and other marchandises. This Clarke had not bene forth past six weekes at this time, and yet he had got about 18. prizes well woorth the summe of 50000. pounds. The 7. of February, was Hunsford summoned by an herault sent from the French admirall, monsieur de Chacillon, The 8. of that month, the said admirall came before Hunsford with 6000. horsemen Reisters, and other of his own retinues, beside footmen, and 1000. horsemen of the countries thereabout, and about five of the clocke at night, there was a great peale of ordinance shot off at Petowhaen for a welcome to the said admirall.

The 12. of February, the French galliase of Petowhaen passing forth and waiting about Hunsford to seeke adventures in hope of succie, by reason the lord admirall of France lay thereby at Tonque, roade at an anchor, whilst some that were aboard in her went a land to gaine somewhat of the enemies, but they within Hunsford perceiuing this, made out their great galliase with 50. mariners and soldiers, who comming vpon the galliase of Petowhaen, put her in great danger of taking, but waiping anchor dyed toward the shore, took in the rest of their companie, and stood at their defence, behauing themselves so well, that continuing in fight about a long towre, at length they ouercame their enemies, slew 7. of them, wounded 37. tooke their galliase, and brought her to Petowhaen with thirtene bels, diuers coapes and church ornaments, sterpe, and other spoiles which they had got abroad in the countie, together with 43. prisoners, and the artillerie of the galliase. The fourteenth of February, there came from the lord admirall of France lying then at Tonque, monsieur de Rohen and monsieur de Grandemont a knight of the order, monsieur Telegnie the admirals sonne in law, & diuers other French gentlemen to confer with the lord lieutenant, who received them right gladly, and made them great cheere: they remained there till the 18. and then departed and went to Cane, whither the said lord admirall was remooued, and had entred the towne, preparing to besiege the castell. The same day monsieur Brique-mault and sir Nicholas Throckmorton knight arrived at Petowhaen. The admirall Chacillon kept the castell of Cane besieged, within the which was the marques Dalbeuf, there were sent vnto him from Petowhaen the sixe and twentieth of February, seuen canons, two deny culuerings, and one minion. The sixe and twentieth sir Nicholas Throckmorton, monsieur Brique-mault and monsieur Beauuoys with a thousand souldiers French, and as many English: to wit, captaine Zouch, captaine Twedic, captaine Higate, each of them two hundred, captaine Iohn Warde, captaine Parkenson, captaine Saule, and mar-

Prises  
brought into  
Petowhaen.

Galliase of  
Harflew taken  
by them  
of Newha-  
uen.

Sir Nicholas  
Throckmor-  
ton.  
Aide from  
Newhaen  
to the siege  
of Cane.

Mr Wheeler, capitaine Fisher lieutenant with his band, each of the with his hundred, and capitaine Pelham with the laborers, were embarked in the roade of Strohauen, and sailed forth towards Cane to come to the siege, which the Admirall of Fraunce had layd to the castle there. The same day, as county Montgomerie had embarked at the haven of Dipe in an English vessel and was coming towards Strohauen, there came from his campe three shalops, by the appointment of the Ringraue, which made towards Montgomerie, whose meaning when he perceived, he set upon the strongest of the same shalops so that there followed a sharpe conflict betwixt them, but in the end the victory fell to Montgomerie, the shalops being taken, the capitaine and maister slaine, and three English victualers rescued, which the said shalops had taken. Montgomerie here with arriving at Strohauen, and bringing with him his wife was ioyfully received, & went aboard againe, and sailed to Cane there to conferre with the admirall. The first of March, they began to batter Cane in such wise, that about foure of the clocke in the after noone they within the towne began to parley, but it tooke none effect. And then went off the artillery againe till night, and in the morning, the battery closenes began, and before that two times of the sayd artillery had gone off, they within offered againe to parley, and finally agreed by composition to yeeld, and so that same day the castle was surrendered vnto the French admirall, and the marques Daibeuse and other that had kept that place departed.

The third of March, the towne of Bayeule was yeelded to the admirall, and on the morrow following Falaise, and after Saint Lo, with diuerse other townes and castles yeelded vnto him.

The 10. of March, the great galley and the fopples were sent from Strohauen with a canon, and shot powder, &c. to Hundes, where they met with Monsieur de Mouy, that came thither with a faire company of horsemen, and diuerse footmen, French: and of the Englishmen, capitaine Turcie with his two hundred, and capitaine Fisher with his hundred. The canon was immediately planted, and shot off a fire times. Whereupon they within began to parley, and in the end agreed to yeeld vnto the castle vnto Monsieur de Mouy with condition: and so left the castle vnto Monsieur de Mouy, whereby his souldiers as well English as others gained greatly by the spoile: whereas Monsieur de Beauuoys had by the admirall Chastillon commandement, charged by proclamation all strangers, foreigners, and French souldiers to depart the towne of Strohauen by the 23. of March last past: and that all other, having their wives and families, should depart with them, or within foure dayes after, to giue ayde for the keeping of the townes of Hundes, Cane, Bayeule, Falaise, Saint Lo, and other places, lately brought vnder the obedience and authority of the prince of Conoy, vnder paine for making default, to be taken as good prisoners of warre, to those that should apprehend them. Proclamation was also thereupon made in the lord lieutenants name, the 25. of March, that it should be lawfull to the quieries maistries subiects to apprehend and take as their good and lawfull prisoners, all such as contrarie to the former proclamation should remaine in the towne of Strohauen after five of the clocke after noone of the day next following: those persons only excepted whose names were enrolled, remaining with the lord lieutenants Secretarie.

The

The 5. of April the Ringraue with 400. horsemen, and about 500. footmen, came downe the hill, betwixt Saint Adresses and Englefield, where Sir Hugh Pawler knight met with him, by appointment of the lord lieutenant, accompanied with 40. horsemen, and 1000. English footmen, and after they had talked together, Sir Hugh Pawler returned into Strohauen, and the Ringraue to Houdouille.

On Easter euen, two souldiers that sturied vnder capitaine Parkenson were hanged in Strohauen, for running away to the Ringraue.

The first of May, Gascar king at armes, arrived at Strohauen, bringing with him the garter to Ambrose earle of Marlborne the lord lieutenant, chosen on Saint Georges day last past, to be one of that most noble order.

The 17. of May, proclamation was made, that all manner of furniture and apparell appertaining to ships, within the garrison, haven, or roade of the towne of Strohauen, should be brought in, or a note to be giuen thereof in writing to the lord lieutenant and counsell there.

The 22. of May, about one of the clocke in the morning, the Ringraue with 500. horsemen, and 22. ensignes of footmen, came downe to a village called Zheure, neare vnto the new fort, which by order of the lord lieutenant was lately before begun to be built. The enemies meaning was, to haue taken the same fort by a sudden assault, but the English souldiers gaue intelligence to the lord lieutenant thereof, who incontinently going to the bulwarke Ryall, set out by the postern capitaine Ward with his 100. souldiers, and capitaine Parkenson with his 100. to passe to the fort, there to be an ayde and defence to them that lay in the same. About three of the clocke in the morning the Ringraue suddenly with his bands of horse and footmen, gaue them in the fort a hot alarme, and immediately the earle of Marlborne gaue in charge to capitaines Read, Appleyard, Tutty, Souche, Antwisell, Warde, Morton, and Parkenson, having with them 1000. footmen and 200. horsemen, to set upon the enemies in the village of Zheure, neare adioyning vnto the said new fort, where the English souldiers beat backe their enemies, slue and tooke of them to the number of an hundred, besides thirty faire horses, and an ensigne, and set fire on the towne, because the enemies should not come to encampe therein as their purpose was.

The 26. of May, the Frenchmen in number about three thousand horsemen and footmen, came downe towards the wind-mills, neare to the bulwarke called Saint Adresses, against whom the English horsemen and footmen issued forth of the towne, giuing them a hot skirmish, where were slaine two hundred of the French, besides two hundred and about that were hurt. Amongst the English, capitaine Tremayne and about some twelue persons more were slaine: but the French were driuen to retire. The first of June, at seven of the clocke at night, the Ringraue having layd in the village of Zheure an ambush of six hundred horsemen, and sixteen hundred footmen, there came downe also betwixt the abbey and the village called Englefield towards the towne, the number of a thousand footmen, which began a very hot skirmish, first at the new fort, continuing euen hard to the ditches: where the Englishmen manfully encountered them. Here with also, the Ringraue

Dddd 2

appointed

Alarme giuen to the new fort by Newhaue.

A great skirmish.

Montgomerie takes a shalope, he goeth to Cane.

The castle of Cane surrendered to the admirall.

The French appointed to depart from Newhaue.



Another  
skirmish.

appointed other to come downe and approach the bulwarkes of Saint Annes, Saint Francis, Michael and other, round about the towne, so that there were of them the number of five thousand, that were employed in this skirmish, which was maintained right fiercely, for the space of two houres, till in the end the enemies were forced to giue place, with the losse of five hundred of their men, Almains, Frenchmen and other. Of English men there were hurt, capitaine Ielbere, and capitaine Pelham, and about fiftene other hurt and slaine.

Captaine  
Randoll  
knight mar-  
shall.

Sir Thomas  
Finch.

The 7. of June, the first canon-shot fight within the towne of Newhaun, neare to the bulwarke of Saint Annes. The ninth of June, arrived at Newhaun three Captaines with their bands of an hundred the peece, being of the garrison of Bartwike. Also the same day landed there Edward Randoll, appointed to be knight Marshall. For you must understand that sir Adrian Poinings being knight Marshall, upon his returne into England went not backe againe: and then was sir Thomas Finch of Kent appointed to go over to supply the roomth of knight Marshall, who making his provision ready, sent over his brother Erasmus Finch to haue charge of his band, and his kinsman Thomas Finch to be prouost marshal, whilst he staying till he had euer thing in a readinesse to passe over himselfe, at length imbarqued in one of the Quenes Shippes, called the Grephound, hauing there aboard with him besides three shope and firt of his owne retinue, foure and fortie other Gentlemen, two of them being brethren to the Lord Wentworth, to wit, James Wentworth, and Iohn Wentworth with diuers other, who in the whole (accounting the mariners) amounted to the number of two hundred persons and byword: and as they were on the further coast towards Newhaun, they were by contrarie wind and foule weather driven backe againe toward the coast of England, and plying towards Rie, they forced the capitaine of the shippe a very good sea-man, named William Maline, and also the maister and mariners, to thrust into the haven before the tyde, and so they all perished, seuen of the manner lost onely excepted, whereof three dyed shortly after they came on land. After this mischaunce, Edmond Randoll was appointed knight Marshall.

The 15. of June, the captaines Richard Saunders, and William Saul, with their bands of an hundred souldiers a peece, and capitaine Drurie with two hundred arrived at Newhaun, and the morning after arrived capitaine Roberts with an other hundred souldiers. On the seuenteenth day sir Francis Knowles, chamberlaine to the Quenes maiesties house, landing at Newhaun, sent to vnto the state of the towne.

The 18. of June, two souldiers were executed for beating weapon against their capitaine.

The 28. of June, the French men came downe to the village of Thure, and there very neare to the fort, beganne a skirmish with the English men: there were of them tenne calliges of footmen, and two hundredy horsemen, this skirmish lasted three houres, and yet not past foure persons slaine. The night following, they placed five canons betwixt the Towne and the hill, and likewise other peece of Artillerie at the foresaid Village of

of Thure, so that they shot both into the towne and fort. The first of July about midnight, they filled thirty of their trenches, and skirmished with the English souldiers, drove them vnder the bulwarke of Saint Annes, and there perceiving that the Englishmen had provided to sally out, after a long skirmish they retired. About the third of July, there landed nine hundred souldiers well appointed all in yellow clokes, and blew, Capitaine Sanders was hurt in the legge whereof he dyed. The twelfth of July, about foure of the clocke in the morning, the French laid batterie to the Bulwarke of Saint Annes, continuing the same all that day. They also dismounted the Rime day the Ordnance in the steeple of Newhaun, and beat downe the great bell, cleane defacing the steeple: the same evening, was William Robinson squire, bayliffe of Newhaun, slaine with a shot, and William Bromfield, maister of the ordnance hurt, whereof he died shortly after.

The 14. of July, sir Hugh Pawlet knight landed at Newhaun, bringing with him eight hundred souldiers. The same day came downe the Frenchmen to the number of 3000. euen hard to the gates of the towne, beating the English men out of their trenches, but in the end they were forced to retire, and not past twenty English men slaine, and about an hundred hurt: but the French lost (as was thought) about foure hundred horsemen and footmen. The same day, the little Gallie called the Forc, went out of Newhaun, fraught with sixte men, to flanke alongt the shore, and to beate the French men with her shot, but a linc-broke fell into a barrrell of powder and set it on fire together with the bevell, so that she suddenly sunke, and all that were aboard in her were lost, causing fiftene that saved themselves by swimming.

A Gallie  
of Newha-  
uen brent.

The 21. of July, the Constable of France, and many other lords of France came to the abbey of Grauille, where the marshall Brisac was lodged, who had the generall charge in the army, before the coming of the said Constable.

Constable of  
France came  
to the siege  
of Newhaun.

The 23. of July, the Constable came to the trench that was cast over against the bulwarke of Saint Annes, alongt by the sea side, and sent his trumpet to summon the towne. The Lord lieutenant appointed sir Hugh Pawlet to go forth and make the answer in his name, which was in effect, that the Quenes maiestie had appointed him and others to keepe the Towne, and therefore they meant not to deliuer it to any other person, without her Graces commaundement. The English men were no sooner departed, but that the enemies having planted eight canons in batterie against the castle and bulwarke of the haven, caused the same to be shot off, continuing the batterie till the eight and twentieth of July.

The 28. of July, the prince of Condy, and the duke of Montpensier, came to the campe and alighted at the Constables lodging, went from thence to the trenches to relieue the marshall Montmorancie, and to supplie his roomth, whilst he might in the meane time goe to suppe with his father, and so to take his rest: Monsieur Deslree, and the other that had charge about the planting and ordering of the artillerie, used such diligence, and were so earnestly called upon and encouraged by the prince of Condy, continually remaining in the trenches, that on the 27. in the morning, the artillerie beganne to batter the bulwarke

The prince  
of Condie  
came to the  
campe be-  
fore Newha-  
uen.

of Saint Adressle and other places. This was not done without great daunger of the pionsers and men of warre that guarded them: for as the French desperately made these approaches, they were made by the English gunners to cast the bitter fruit thereof: but such was the multitude of the French men that were now assailed in hope to recover that towne, (which being possessed by the English, cut off all traffique from Rome, Paris and other places) that with their generall ayde, and draving the water downe to the sea, the marshes were made passable and firme ground, which to men of great experience was thought a thing impossible. The Castle, the walls, and other defenses of the Towne, were battered, breaches made, and the trench, which before the coming of the Constable, was but brought to the point over against the bulwarks of Saint Adressle, was now within fower daies advanced nere hand the space of two miles, upon the cauley or breach which was all of stone, without any earth to cover them, so that they were driven to make the best shift they could with wood-ladders, land-bags, baskets, and sagots. Yet all this had never come to passe, without infinite slaughter, and farre more losse of French blood, if the great mortalitie of pestilence (which entered the Towne about the beginning of Sommer) through a venomous infection, had not so greatly increased, that it slue daily great numbers of men, so that the streets lay even full of dead corpses, not able to be remooved, by reason of the multitude that perished. And next the flote of the canon, lying within a fure an twentie paces of the Towne, was so terrible as the like had not bene lightly heard of, and sundrie breaches there were, which were already made, namely, two very great and easie to be entered: All these dangers and miseries notwithstanding the Earle of Warwicke with his Captaines and souldiers, in couragious order, stood at those severall breaches, ready to defend the same, if the enemies had perswaded to have given the assault, which when the Constable perceived, he caused a trumpet to sound the blast of imparley, that talke might be had for the concluding of a composition betwixt both the parties, to avoyd the imminent slaughter and effusion of blood: which offer seeming not unmeet, both parties concluded that parley should be had. The eight and twentieth of July therefore, the Constable came to the end of the trenches next to the towne, where Sir Mawrice Denis, treasurer of the towne, Sir Hugh Pawler, capitaine Horley, capitaine Pelham, capitaine John Shute pponett marshall, and Nicholas Malby Secretary to the lord Lieutenant, came forth and passed over the haven to communicate with him, and during the parley betwixt them, a truce was accorded, and assented to by both parties. But the Constable tooke upon him to have only authority to accept or refuse such conditions as should be offered or agreed upon by the English commissioners in this treatie: and so at length they passed certaine articles in forme as followeth. First, that the earle of Warwicke should render the Towne of Berghaem into the hands of the Constable of France, with all the artillerie and munitions of warre then being in the Towne, belonging to the French king and his subiects. Item, he should leave the ships that were in the Towne at that present, belonging to the king or his subiects, with all

Plague of  
pestilence in  
Newhaem.

A truce ac-  
corded, and  
articles ag-  
reed upon,  
for surren-  
der of New-  
haem.

their furniture, and generally all such marchandise and other things, being at that present within that Towne, as either belonged to the king or his subiects. Item, the said Earle should presently deliver into the hands of the Constable, the great Tower of the said haven, so that the souldiers thereof enter not into the Towne: and that the said Earle should deliver fower such hostages as the said Constable should name. Item, that the next day by eight of the clocke in the morning, the said Earle should withdraw his souldiers from the fort, to deliver it immediately into the hands of the said Constable, or his deputies, at the said houre. Item, that all prisoners should be delivered on either side, without paying any ransom. Item, that the Constable should for his part suffer the said Earle of Warwicke and all those that were in garrison in the said Berghaem to depart, with all things whatsoever that belonged to the queene of England or her subiects. Item, that for the departure atwell of the said Earle, as the remooving of his souldiers and other things: the said Constable agreed to give them six dayes, to begin the twentieth nine of July, during the which they might frankly take and carie away the said things. Item, the said Constable did likewise permit, that all the ships and English vessels appointed for the portage and conveying away of the said things, should safely and freely passe in, to, and fro the said haven, without any stay or impeachment, either by the French or other. The fower hostages were appointed to be maister Oliver Maners, brother to the Earle of Rutland, Capitaine Pelham, Capitaine Horley, and Capitaine Leighton. In witness whereof, the said Lords, the Constable of France, and Earle of Warwicke signed these articles, the eight and twentieth of July. The last of July, the most part of the Englishmen tooke ship and departed homewards: so glad was he that could get soonest out of that unholsome ayre: manye fine persons yet were left behinde, impotent, and not able to helpe themselves a shippe boorde, the miserie whereof Edward Randolph esquier, high marshall of the Towne (who was appointed to tarric and see the uttermost of the composition accomplished) perceiving, moved with naturall pittie of his countreyemen, relinquished without comfort, caused the said sick persons to be caried aboard, not sparing his owne shoulders, at that time feeble and full of the plague, himselfe and his men still bearing and helping the poore creatures on ship boorde: a rare fact, worthy reward, and no doubt in remembrance with God, the true recorder of merittfull deeds. Beside the manner sort of those that died at Berghaem of the pestilence, during the siege, I finde noted as chiefe, Cuthbert Vaughan Comptroller of the Towne, Francis Somerset cousin to the Earle of Worcester, Auerie Darcie brother to the Lord Darcie, John Zouche, brother to the Lord Zouche, Edward Omesby, Thomas Drurie alias Poignard, Richard Croker, John Cockson, Thomas Kemiish, John Prowde, William Saule, Wilfride Antwilell, these of the plague. There were diverse also that were slaine in the fieelde, as both the Iremaynes brethren, Nicholas and Andrew, Capitaine Richard Saunders, with maister Robinson and maister Bromfield, also one Leighton agentman, and divers other.

Edward  
Randolph  
of his pitiful-  
nesse deser-  
ving com-  
mendation.

As yee haue heard the plague of pestilence being in the Towne of Petowham, through the number of soldiers that returned from thence into England, the infection thereof spread into diuers parts of this realme, but especially the cite of London was so infected, that in the same whole yere, that is to say, from the first of Ianuarie, 1562. till the last of December, 1563. there died in the City and liberties thereof containing, 108. parishes of all diseases, 20. M. 3. C. 72. and of the plague, (being part of the number aforesaid) 17. M. 4. C. 4. persons. And in other parishes adioyning to the same cite, being 11. parishes, died of all diseases in the whole yere, 3. M. 2. C. 88. persons, and of them, of the plague, 2. M. 7. C. 32. persons so that the whole number of all that died of all diseases, as well within the Cite and liberties, as in the out parishes, was 23. M. 6. C. and 60. and of them, there died of the plague, 20136.

108. Parishes in London besides 11. in the suburbs.

Tempest at London.

The 8. of July, in the morning, hapned a great tempest of lightning & thunder, wherethrough a woman and three kine were slaine in the Couent garden nere to Charing crosse. At the same time in Essex a man was torne to peeces as he was carrying hay, his barne was boync downe, and his hay bent: both houses and trees were rent in many places.

The counsell of king Philip at Burels commanded proclamation to be made in Antwerp and other places, that no English ship with clothes should come into any places of their low countries: their colour was (as they said) the danger of the plague, which was that time in London, and other places of England: notwithstanding, they would gladly haue gotten our wools: other causes they alleged, as the raising of impostes as well upon goods inwards as outwards, as well upon Englishmen as upon strangers, &c. Also for that in the first parliament of the Quenees maiestie, by a statute therein made, diuers waies and commodities were forbidden to be brought into this Realme out of Flaunders or other places being bought there, which was done to the end to let our subiects a worke here, as by the statute doth appeare, for that no man English or stranger might ship out any white clothes without, being of the price above fower pound, without licence, &c. but the Quenees maiestie through sute of our marchant aduenterers, caused the wools to be discharged, and our cloth trade was sent to Cunden in east Frisland about Easter next following, in Ann. 1564.

Threefold plague to the poore Citizens of London.

Forasmuch as the plague of pestilence was so hot in the cite of London, there was no Terme kept at Michaelmasse: to be short, the poore Citizens of London, were this yere plagued with a threefold plague, pestilence, scarcity of money and dearth of victuals: the miserie whereof were too long here to write, no doubt the poore remember it, the rich by flight into the countries made shift for themselves.

Earthquake.

An earthquake was in the month of September in diuers places of this realm, specially in Lincoln and Southamptonshire.

Ann. reg. 6.

Lightning and chunder.

From the first day of December, till the 12. was such continuall lightning and thunder, especially the same 12. day at night, that the like had not bene seen nor heard by any man then living.

In the month of December, was driuen on the shore at Spynsbur in Lincolnshire, a monstrous fish, in length 19. yardes, his taile fiftene foote broad,

and

and five yards betwene his eyes, twelue men stood upright in his mouth to get the people.

For that the plague was not fully ceased in London, Hillarie Terme was kept at Hertford castell besides Ware.

This yere an honorable & ioyfull peace was concluded, betwixt the Quenees maiestie and the French King, their Realmes, Dominions, and Subiects, which peace was proclaimed with sound of trumpet, before her maiestie, in her Castle of Windsor, then being present the French Ambassadors. Also the same peace was proclaimed at London on the 13. day of April. And shortly after the Quenees maiestie sent the right Honorable sir Henrie Carie lord Hunsdon, accompanied with the lord Strange, besides diuers knights and gentlemen unto the French king, with the noble order of the Garter, who lying then at Lyons, he there presented unto him the said order, and Garter king at armes unckled him therewith, observing the ceremonies in that behalfe due, &c.

The plague (thanks be to God) being cleane ceased in London, both Easter and Midsummer Terme were kept at Westminster.

Through the earnest sute of the Admouers there was on the vigile of S. Peter a watch in the cite of London, which did only stand in the highest streets, as Cheape, Cornhill, and so forth to Aldgate, which watch was to the commons of the cite as chargeable, as when in times past it had bene commendable done.

The 5. of August, the Quenees maiestie in her progresse came to the University of Cambridge, and was of all the students being unckled according to their degrees taken in the Schooles, honourably and ioyfully received in the kings Colledge, where she did lye during her continuance in Cambridge. The daies of her abode were passed in scholasticall exercises of Philosophie, Physicke, and Divinity: the nights in Comedies and Tragedies let forth partly by the whole University, and partly by the students of the kings Colledge.

Abr Hartwell. The quenees progresse thorough Cambridge.

At the breaking by of the Divinity act, being on Wednesday the 9. of August (on the which day she rode through the towne, and viewed the Colledges, those goodly and ancient monuments of the kings of England, her noble predecessours) she made within Saint Maries church a notable oration in Latine, in the presence of the whole learned University, to the students great comfort. The next day she went forward on her progresse to Finchysbooke by Huntington.

The twentieth day of September, arose great floods in the river of Thames, wherethrough the marshes neare adioyning were overflowed, and many cattle drowned.

Great floods in the Thames.

The creation of sir Robert Dudley knight of the garter & maister of the horse to the quenees maiestie, who was created baron of Denbigh, and after earle of Leicester on Michaelmas day at Saint James, with the gift of the manor of Killingworth, and other things thereto him and his heires to the year. by value of foure and twenty pound and better. First, the sayd lord attended on the Quenees highnesse to the chappell, and from the chappell to seruice, and when he was returned to the haberd of presence, the sayd lord with other departed to the lord Chamberlains chamber, and thithered them, the sayd lord Robert in his surcoat with the hood, his manile borne before him by the lord Hunsdon, and led by the lord

Crestion of a baron.

Clinton.

Clinton L. Admirall by the right hand, & the lord Strange on the left hand in their parliament robes, Garrar bearing the patten, and before him the officers of armes, and so proceeded into the chamber of presence, where the queenes highnesse late vnder the cloth of estate with the noble men on each side of her, the embassadors of France was also present with another stranger an Italian and when the sayd lord with the other came in the queenes sight, they made their obeisance three times, the sayd lord kneeled downe, after the which Garrar presented the letters pattenes to the lord Chamberlaine, and he presented the same to the queenes highnesse, who gaue it to sir William Cicill secretary, who read the same with a loud voyce, and at the words of *Creaminus*, the lord of Hunsdon presented the manie to the queenes maiesly, who put on the same, whereby he was created baron of Denbigh for him and his heires, then the patent was read out to the end, after the which he deliuered it to the queene againe, and her highnesse gaue it to the sayd lord, who gaue her maiesly most humble thanks, and he rose vp and departed to the chamber they came from, the trumpets sounding before him. Then he distrid him of those robes, & put on the robes of estate of an earle, and being led by the earle of Sussex on the right hand, and the earle of Huntington on his left hand, the earle of Warwick bearing his sword the pommel upward, and the gold about the same, all in their robes of estate, the lord Clinton lord Admirall in his parliament robes bearing his cap with the coronall, Garrar before him bearing his patten, and the other officers of armes before him, they proceed as aforesaid, into the chamber of presence, where, after they made their obeisance, the sayd earle kneeled downe, and Garrar deliuered his patten to the lord Chamberlaine, who gaue the same to the Queenes maiesly, and her highnesse gaue the same to sir William Cicill Secretary to read, who read the same, and at the words *Cinctorum gladij*, the earle of Warwick presented the sword to the queenes highnesse, who girt the same about the necke of the new earle, putting the point vnder his left arme, and after her maiesly put on his cap with the coronall, then his patten was read out to the end, and then the sayd secretary deliuered it againe to the queene, and her highnesse gaue it to the sayd new earle of Leicester, who gaue her humble thanks for the same, and then arose and went into the counsell chamber to dinner, the trumpets sounding before, and at dinner he sat in his kirtle, and there accompanied him the sayd lord ambassador of France, and the sayd Italian, with diuers other earles and lords: and after the second course, Garrar with the other officers of armes, proclaimed the queenes maieslies stile, and after, the stile of the sayd earle, for the which they had sixtene pound, to wit, for his baron five pound, and for his earle-dome ten pound, and Garrar had his gowne of blacke velvet garned with three gardes of the same, layd on with lace, lined through with blacke taffeta and garned on the inner side with the same, & on the sleeves 38. paire of aglets of gold.

*De tresnoble & puissant seigneur Robert Comte de Leceste, Baron de Denbigh, Cheuiler du tresnoble Ordre de la Jarretiere, & grand Esquier de la Royne nostre Souueraine.*

The second of October in the afternoon, and the morrow in the fore noon, a solemn obsequy was holden in Saint Pauls church in London, for Ferdinand late emperor departed.

The

The 7. of October at eight of the clocke at night, the north parts of the element seemed to be covered with flames of fire, proceeding towards the middle of the firmament, where, after it had staid nigh one houre, it descended west, and all the same night, being the next after the change of the moone, seemed as light as it had bene day. *Ann. reg. 7.*

The 20. of Nouember in the morning, through negligence of a maiden with a candle, the church falling in an hundred pound weight of gun-powder, three houses in Bucklersbury were sore shaken, and the maide died two dayes after.

The one and twentieth of December began a frost, which continued so extraordinarily, that on New-yeres euen people went ouer and along the Thames on the ice from London-bridge to Westminster, some played at foote-ball as boldly there, as if it had bene on the dry land, diuers of the court being then at Westminster, shot daily at prickes set vpon the Thames: and the people both men and women went on the Thames in greater number then in any streete of the city of London. On the third day of January at night it began to thaw, and on the fifth day was no ice to be seene betwene London-bridge and Lambeth, which caused great floods and high waters, that bare downe bridges and houses, and drowned many people in England, especially in Yorkshire, Oues bridge was borne away with other.

The third of February, Henry Steward lord Darnley, about the age of nineteen yeares, eldest sonne of Matthew earle of Lennox (who went into Scotland at Whitsonside before, hauing obtained licence of the queenes maiesly, tooke his journey toward Scotland, accompanied with six of his fathers men, where, when he came he was honorably receiued, and lodged in the kings lodgings, and the morning following, married Mary queene of Scotland.

About this time for the queenes maiesly were chosen and sent commissioners to Buzges, sir Anthony Browne viscount Montacute knight of the honourable order of the garter, doctor Watton one of her maieslies honourable counsell, doctor Haddon one of the maisters of requests to her highnesse, with other: maister doctor Aubrey was for the inarchant adventurers of England. They came to Buzges in Lent, Anno 1565. and continued there till Michaelmas following, and then was the diet prolonged till March in 1566. & the commissioners returned into England.

The two and twentieth of April, the lady Margaret countesse of Lennox was commanded to keepe her chamber at the White hall, where she remained till the 22. of June, and then conueyed by sir Francis Knolles and the gard to the towne of London by water.

On Whitsommon day, Odonell Mac Carrie More chiefe captaine of that name in Ireland, was created baron of Glalancy, and afterward the same day earle of Clanker at White hall.

On Saints Peters euen at night, was the like standing watch in London as had bene on the same night twelue monethes.

The 16. of July about nine of the clocke at night began a tempest of lightning and thunder with showers of haile, which continued till three of the clocke the next morning so terrible, that at Chelmsford in Essex 500. acres of coyne were destroyed, the glasse windowes on the east side of the towne, and of the west & south doors

The Thames frozen ouer.

1565.

Oues bridge borne down.

Henry Stuart married the queene of Scots.

Commissioners sent to Bridges.

Lady Lennox sent to the tower.

Watch at Midsumers.

Tempest at Chelmsford.

Creation of an earle.

does of the church were beaten downe, with also the files of their houses, beside diuerse barnes, chymnies, and the battlements of the church which were ouerthrowne. The like harme was done in many other places, as at Audey, Cranebooke, Douer, &c.

Margraue  
of Baden.

Christopher prince and Margraue of Baden, with Cicely his wife sister to the king of Swethenland, after a long & dangerous iourney, wherein they had traueled almost 11. moneths, sailing fro Stockholm, crossing the seas ouer into Alsland, from whence by land they came about by Poland, Polesy, Pommerland, Hekburg, Frisland, and so to Antwerpe in Brabant, then to Calcis, at the last in September landed at Douer, where they were met and receiued by the lord Cobham with a goodly traine of knights and gentlemen. And at Canterbury the lady Cobham with the like traine of ladies and gentlewomen met them, and at Grauelend the lord Hondon with the gentlemen pensioners met them, and so on the 11. day of September they came to London, where they were met and receiued by the earle of Suffex, the countesse his wife, and their traine, and so brought to the earle of Bedford's place neare vnto Iuic-bydye, where they were lodged, and within foure dayes after, that is to say, the fifteenth of September the traueled in child-bed, and was deliuered of a man-child, which child the last of September was christened in the queenes maiesties chappell of White hall at Westminster, the queenes maiesty in her owne person being godmother, the archbishop of Canterbury and the duke of Norfolk godfathers: at the christening the queene gaue the child to name Edwardus Fortunatus, for that God had so graciously assisted his mother in so long and dangerous a iourney, and brought her so safe to land in that place which she most desired, and that in so short time before her deliuerance.

Marriage  
of the earle of  
Warwike.

The eleuenth of November, the right honorable Ambrose earle of Warwick married Anne eldest daughter to the earle of Bedford: for the honour and celebration of which noble marriage, a goodly challenge was made & obserued at Westminster at the tilt, with each one sixe courses: at the turney twelue strokes with the hood, thre pusses with the punction staffe: and twelues blowes with the knyght at barriers, or twenty if any were so disposed.

Robert Thomas  
slaine.

At ten of the clocke the same day, a valiant seruicable man called Robert Thomas, master gunner of England, desirous also to honour the feast and marriage day, in consideration the sayd earle of Warwick was generall of the ordinance within her maiesties realmes and dominions, made thre traines of great chambers, which terribly perced forth the nature of their voyce, to the great astonishment of diuerse, who at the firing of the second, was unhappily slaine by a peece of one of the chambers, to the great sorrow and lamentation of many.

Ann. reg. 8.

Pauls gate  
blowne open

The foure and twentieth of December, in the morning there rose a great storme and tempest of wind, by whose rage the Thames and seas ouerwhelmed many persons, and the great gates of the west end of Pauls church in London (betweene the which standeth the hyalen pillar) were, through the force of the wind then in the western part of the wood, blowne open.

Order of S.  
Michaell.  
1566.

In January, monsieur Rambuley a knight of the order in France, was sent ouer into England by the French king Charles the ninth of that name, with the

order

order, who at Windsoxe was staled in the behalfe of the layd French king, with the knight hood of the most honorable order of the garter: and the foure and thirtieth of January, in the chappell of her maiesties palace of White hall, the layd monsieur Rambuley inuested Thomas duke of Norfolk, and Robert earle of Leicester with the sayd order of Saint Michael.

The marques of Baden, and the lady Cicely his wife, sister to the king of Swethen, who came into this land the moneth of September last past, as before is declared, bring then by the queenes speciall appointment at their actual hono- rably receiued by the lord Cobham, an honorable baron of this realme, and the lady his wife one of the Queenes maiesties privy chamber, now in the moneth of Apill, Anno. 1566. hauing receiued certaine gifts of the Queenes maiesty, amongst the which one was a cup of gold with a cover waying 123. ounces and a halfe, departed the same againe, the marques a few dayes before his wife, being both conducted by a like personage the lord of Burgawney to Douer.

The mar-  
ques of Ba-  
den retur-  
neth.

Certaine houles in Cornhill, being first purchased by the citizens of London at their charges for certaine thousandes of pounds, were in the moneth of February cryed by the bel-man, and afterwa'd sold to such persons as should take them downe and carry them from thence, which was so done in the monethes of Apill and May next following. And then the ground being made plaine at the charges also of the city (hauing cost them one way and other, more then sixe thousand pound) possession thereof was by certaine aldermen in name of the whole citizens, given to the right worshipfull sir Thomas Gresham knight, agent to the Queenes highnesse, there to build a place for marchants to ass.ble in at his owne proper charges, who on the seuenth of June layd the first stone of the foundation, being bricke and forthwith the workemen followed upon the same with such diligence, that by the moneth of November in the yeare of our Lord 1567. the same was couered with slate.

The Burse  
in Cornhill.

And on the 22. day of December in the yeare of our Lord 1568. the marchants of London, left their meetings in Lombard streete, at such times as they had accustomed there to meete, and this day they came into the new Burse, builded by sir Thomas Gresham, as is afore shewed.

The commissioners before named appointed for the matters of Flaunders, keeping their diet at Bruges agreed to referre the whole matter to the princes on both sides, and if they could not agree, then the marchants to haue forty dayes to repaire home with their merchandise, and in the meane time, all things to stand as they were then. Our commissioners departed from Bruges about the 26. of June.

The 31. of August, the Queenes maiesty in her progresse came from Woodstocke to the Vniuersity of Oxford, and was of all the students, which had looked for her coming thither two yeares, so honorably and ioyfully receiued, as either their loyalty or towarde the Queenes maiesty, or the expectation of their friends did require. Concerning orders in disputation, and other academicall exercises, they agreed much with those, which the Vniuersity of Cambridge had used two yeares before. Comedies also and Tragedies were played in Christs Church, where the Queenes highnesse lodged. Among the which, the Comedie entituled: Palamon.

The queene  
progresse to  
Oxford.

Misfortune  
at Oxford.

Palemon and Arcet, made by maister Edwards of the Quenes chappell, had such tragicall successe as was lamentable: for at that time by the fall of a wall and a paire of stairs, and great peales of the multitude, three men were slaine.

The fifte of September, after disputations, the Quene at the humble sute of certaine of her nobilitie, and the king of Spaines Ambassadors, made a briefe oration in Latine to the Universitie, but so wise and pithie, as England may reioyce that it hath so learned a prince, and the Universitie may triumph, that they haue to noble a patronesse.

The first of September after dinner, her grace coming from Chills Church over Carfax, and so to Saint Maries, the scholars standing in order according to their degrees, euen to the east gate, certaine doctors of the Universitie did ride before in their scarlet gowns and hoores, and masters of Art in blacke gowns and hoores. The Maioz also named maister Williams with certaine of his brethren, to the number of fourteene or fifteene, did ride before her in scarlet to the ende of Wapdalen hydge, where their liberties ended: but the doctors and masters went forward still to Shot-over, a mile and more out of Oxford, because their liberties extended so farre, and thereafter Orations made, her highnesse with thanks to the whole Universitie, bade them farewell, and rode to Ricote to maister Norrice house an eight miles from Oxford.

Souldiers  
transported  
into Ireland.

The valliant captain Edward Randsolfe esquire, lieutenant of the ordinance, and colonell of a thousand footmen, in September last past was with his band embarked at Wyllow, and within few daies after landed at Knockfergus in the North parts of Ireland, and went thence by water to a place called Derry, by which passeth the river of Longfoile: there the said colonell in short space fortified, to the great annoyance of Iohn O'neale, and by great foresight and experience, garded himselfe and his charge, till the said O'neale, (to hinder and disturbe his about there) the 12. of November arrived with a great army of Rame Galatunglasses and bowmen, with whom the said captain Randsolfe encountered, and him there so discomfited, as after that conflict he durst neuer approach the Quenes power, and to his perpetuall shame the said captain by reason of his bold and hardie onset that day lost his life.

Charles James the first of that name, sonne to Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley, and Marie, king and queene of Scots, was borne in Edenborough castle the nineteenth of June last past: and the eighteenth of December, this yere solemnly christened at Strueling, whose godfathers: the christening were, Charles King of France, and Philibert Duke of Savoy, and the Quenes maiestic of England was the godmother, who gave a font of gold curiously wrought and enameled, weighing 333. ounces, amounting in value to the summe of 1043. l. 19. s.

The tenth of February in the morning, Henrie Stewart lord of Darnley before named king of Scots, by Scots, in Scotland was shamefully murdered, the revenge whereof remaineth in the mightie hand of God.

The 22. of February, the lady Margaret Douglas countesse of Lennox, mother to the said king of Scots, was discharged out of the tower of London.

This

Young prince  
of Scots  
christened.  
Ann. reg. 9.

1567.  
K. of Scots  
murdered.

This yere deceased many aged people, so that in London within the space often moneths last past died seven aldermen of London, the first Edward Banks deceased the ninth of July, Anno. 1566. Richard Chamberlaine late Sheriff, Sir Martin Bowes, Sir Richard Malorie, Sir William Hewet, & Sir Thomas White late maiors, then Richard Lambart one of the Sheriffs for that yere, the fourth of April, Anno. 1567.

The 22. of April, by great misfortune of fire in the towne of Olfestrie in Shropshire twelve miles from Shrewsburie, to the number of two hundred houses, that is to say seven score within the wals, and three score without in the suburbs, besides cloth, coyne, cattle, &c. were consumed, which fire began at two of the clocke in the forenoone, and ended at foure, to the great marrelling of many, that so great a spoile in so short time should happen. Two long streets with great riches of that towne were burnt in Anno 1542. And likewise of worse in Anno 1544.

The 24. of April, the Sergeants feast was kept at Graies Inne near unto Holborne, and there were at that time made eleven new Sergeants of the law.

The 27. of May, in the towne of Milnall in Suffolke eight miles from Peterborough, 27. houses, besides barnes, stables, and such like were consumed with fire in the space of two houres.

Shane O'neale, who had most traiterously rebelled against the quenes maiestic in Ireland, and had done many great outrages in the parts of Ulster, was this yere with his great losse manfully repelled from the siege of Dunmalk by the garrison thereof, and afterward through the great valiancy of Sir Henry Sidney knight of the order, and lord deputie of Ireland, he was so discomfited in Sandry confus, with the losse of 3500. of his men that now foreseeing his declination to be imminent, he determined to put a collar about his necke, and disguising himselfe, to repaire to the lord deputie, and patiently to require his pardon to haue his life. But Neil Mackeuer his secretary, who had incited him to this rebellion perswaded him first to trie and treat the friendship of certaine wild Scots that they had incamped in Clan Joby, under the conducting of Alexander Oge and Mec Gilliam Burke, whose father and uncle Shane O'neale had lately killed in raiderthie given by the Scots: neuertheless, he well liking this perswasion, went to the sayd campe the second of June, where after a dissembled entertainment, and quaffing of wine, Gilliam Buske burning with desire of revenge of his fathers and uncles death, and ministring quarrelling talke, issued out of the tent, and made a fray upon O'neales men, & then gathering together his Scots in a throng, suddenly entered the tent againe, who there with their slaughter swords, behead in pieces Shane O'neale, his secretary, and all his company, except a very few which escaped by flight.

The 8. of June, Sir Thomas Sackville knight was created baron of Buckhurst at Westminster in the quenes palace.

On Saint Johns euen at night, was the like flaming watch in London, as had bene on Saint Peters euen in the yere before passed.

The 19. of July, Charles James the young prince of Scotland, after a sermon made by Iohn Knokes, was crowned K. of Scots at Sterling church, where were was certaine commissions with the quenes young scale at them for the establishing

Seven aldermen deceased in London.

The towne of Olfestrie burnt thirle in 30. yeres.

Sergeants feast.

Milnall in Suffolke burnt.

Shane O'neale discomfited.  
Statuta Regni Hibernie.  
Edmond. Campion.

Shane O'neale slaine

Watch at Midsummer.

Coronation in Scotland.

of the same. The first for her resignation of the crowne, and government of the young prince her sonne. The second, to authorize the earle of Murray to be regent during his minority. The third, to give authority and power to favour other, joining with the sayd earle of Murray, in case he should refuse to create the same alone, that is to say, the duke of Chatileroi, the earles of Lennox, Argile, Atholmorton, Glencarne and Harre: the commissions being ended, the bishop of Akeley with two superintendents, proceeded to the coronation, the earle Morton and lord Home tooke oath for the king, that he should rule in the faith, feare, and love of God, to maintaine the religion then preached in Scotland, and persecute all adversaries to the same, with many other particular causes: he was then anointed, and had the royall robe put on him, he had the crowne upon his head, the sword by his side, and the scepter in his hand. At the bringing to him of every of which were prayers made for every particular thing in the Scottissh tongue, wherein the whole ceremony was made and done.

Maximilian  
the emperor  
knight of the  
garter.

Maximilian Emperour the second of that name, being elected into the most honorable order of the garter, the honourable Thomas earle of Suffolk, knight of the same order, was appointed by the Quenees maiesty to go unto the sayd emperor with the sayd order of the garter, who being honorably accompanied with Roger lord North, sir Thomas Mildmay knight, Henry Cobham esquire, one of the pensioners, and others, departed from London the 25. of June unto Dover, and there embarked, landed at Calais and his traine at Dunkerke, and so passed through the Low countries to Antwerpe in Brabant, where he was honorably received by the English merchants and others, there he visited Adam de Parma regent of the said countries, then resident within the sayd towne. And from thence he passed unto Colcin, where his lordship & traine tooke the river of Rheine, passing by the city of Ments unto Oppenheim, and from thence by land through the countrie by the city of Wijnnes and Spierz til he came to Elines, standing on the river Danow, where he arrived on the 21. of July, and the 23. his lordship rode in post to Aulspurg, nine dutch miles from Elines: from thence he departed the 25. of July, & met with his traine at Doncoert, being come downe by the sayd river of Danow. Fro thence he kept his iourne by Ingolstat Reinspurg, by Passaw and other townes, till he came to Linz, where his Lordship staid the first, second and third of August, by reason of high waters, and on the fourth of August passed by Stoaune and Cronz, by the sayd river of Danow, and so arrived at the city of Vienna the first of August, where he was received of the lord Snackomis, having twelve hostes ready with their footclothes for his lordship and the best respect of his traine, and so brought to the Emperour, by whom he was right honourably received, and afterward conducted to his lodging, where all provision was made at the Emperours charges: and here his Lordship continued untill the 14. of January. In the which time of his abode, the Emperour very often had the sayd earle forth with him unto such pastimes of hunting the hart, boare, and such like, as that countrey yeldeth. After this, upon the Quenees maiesties letters brought out of England by maister Henry Brooke *alias* Cobham, one of her maiesties gentlemen pensioners, the sayd earle of Suffolk upon Sunday the fourth of January in the afternoone, presented and delivered unto the

Emperours

Emperours maiesty in his chamber of presence, the habiliments and ornaments of the most noble order of the Garter, sir Gilbert Dethike knight, *alias* Garter principall king at armes, & officer for the said order, and William Dethike then Rouge Crosse also officer of armes giving their attendance in their coats of armes. And the Emperour at his investiture of the said habiliments, gave unto the said Garter his host gotone, and hyber garment, furred throughout with Zuymeres, and then proceeded thence into a great chamber, adorne in forme of a chappell, where as all the other ceremonies belonging to the said order were accomplished, and the same night the said Earle supped with the Emperours maiesty, both being in their robes of the said order. And shortly after his lordship with certain of his companie taking leave of the Emperour, departed from Vienna the fourteenth of Januarie unto Petrolat, and so through the countrey of Swire unto Grantz, the chiefe citie of Carinthie, where he tooke leave of the archduke Charles, and from thence returning, passed those parts of the Alpes, unto Saltzburgh, where he met with the other parts of his traine, and so by iournees came againe into England unto the Quenees maiesty, about the latter end of March.

1568.

After a dyle summer followed a sharpe winter, with such a scarcity of fodder Haie sold by and bale, that in divers places the same was sold by weight, as in Pockshire, and in the Peak, hay was sold for five pence the stone: there followed also a great dearth of cattell, especially of horse and sheepe.

In the month of Januarie, the Quenees maiesty sent into the narrow seas three of her ships, named the Antelope, the Swallow, and the Tide, and one Barke named the Phenix, the which were manured with five hundred men: and her highnesse appointed the charge of those ships and men, to maister William Holstoke esquier, Comptroller of her highnesse ships, who had commandement to slay the subsidies of king Philip, and according to his duty & charge, he used such diligence, that on the 11. of March next following, he met with eleven saile of Flemish Hoies, upon Bologne, which came from Roane, and in them seven hundred and odder Tuns of Calcoigne and French wines, which they intended to have conveyed into Flaunders, but William Holstoke stayed all the said Hoies, and sent them to London, where they made thier discharge, and the Flemings disappointed.

Ships sent  
to the seas  
against the  
subsidies of  
king Philip.

Howeover, on the 28. of March, the said William Holstoke serving in the Antelope at that present admittall, in his companie being William Winter the younger, (at that time Viceadmirall) serving in the Tide, and I. Basing Captaine of the Swallow, and Thomas Geuzley Captaine of the Phenix, met in the narrow Seas with fourtene saile of great hulkes, which were come out of Portugale, and bound to Flaunders, thier chiefe lading being Portingale salt, and yet had good store of Spanish Riads of plate, and also great store of spices, the which fourtene hulkes did maintaine their fight for the space of two houres, and after that they did perceive they could not prevail, the said William Holstoke and his companie tooke 8. of the same hulkes, whereof 6. were sent into the river of Thames, and the admittall and viceadmirall of the said hulkes, being two great ships, which W. Holstoke himselfe did take, were conveyed to Harwich, and there discharged.

Ecce

The

An. reg. 10.



Great  
winds.

The 28. of March, through vehement rage and tempest of winds, many vessels in the Thames, with two Tiltboates before Grauesende were sunk and drowned.

Queene of  
Scots arri-  
ued in Eng-  
land.

In the Month of May, the Queene of Scots escaping out of prison through the means of George Dowglas, brother unto the lord of Lochleiden her keeper, leuied a power of 6000. men through the helpe of the earles of Argyle, Eglington, and Rothes, and Claud de Hamillon, sonne to the Duke of Shetland, and other, which was discomfited in battell by the Countesse the earle of Murray, and 14. Hamillons slaine, and 30. men taken prisoners, among whom were the lords Seton & Bos, the Queene escaped & fled into England.

The 16. of May, Marie queene of Scots, after her escape out of Loughleam, where she had bene imprisoned, arrived at Werkington in England, having in her companie to the number of thirtie persons, besides foure waiters, where she was slaine, Captaine Read with 50. soldiers were appointed to attend upon her, and conueied her to Carlisle, and from thence to Bolton castle, belonging to the lord Scrope, who with sir Ralph Sadler sent downe for that purpose, had the custodie of her, till she was committed to the earle of Shrotonbury.

Archbishop  
of Yorke de-  
ceased after  
he had spoy-  
led his pa-  
lace.

The 26. of June, deceased Thomas Yoong archbishop of Yorke, in the maner of Shetfield, belonging to the earle of Shrotonbury, he was honorably buried at Yorke. This Thomas Yoong pulled downe and destroyed the great hall & palace of Yorke in Ann. 1562. which sometimes had bene sumptuously builded by his predecessor Thomas, furnished the eldred archbishop of Yorke, about Ann. 1090. &c.

Peter Ra-  
mas.  
Cardinal  
Castilion  
came into  
England.

This pette cardinal Eler Castilion, and the bishop Erls flying out of France into England, arrived at the Tower towarke on the 11. of September, and were there receiued by sir Thomas Gresham, and other, and from thence conueyed to sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate street, where they were lodged. On the next morrow in the forenoone the said cardinal in his short cloke, and a rapier by his side, with sir T. Gresham, and other, rode to the French Church, from thence to the Exchange in Connehill, and then to Saint Pauls Church, and so backe againe to dinner. On the twentieth of September the said cardinal rode to the Court, &c. he remained in England till the yeere of our Lord 1570. and then died at Canterburie, and was there buried in Chills Church.

Monstrous  
fishes.

The 11. of October, were taken in Suffolke at Downham bridge, nere unto Ipswich, eightene monstrous fishes, some of them containing eight and twentie foote in length, the other 24. or 27. foote in length at the least.

New Con-  
duit at Wal-  
brooke.

At the costes and charges of the citizens of London, a new Conduit was builded at Walbrooke corner, nere to Downegate, which was finished in the moneth of October, the water whereof is conueied out of the Thames.

An. reg. 11.

The 29. of December, the English merchants and their goods in the towne of Antwerpe, were arrested by commandement of the Duke of Alua.

The 4. of February following, the English merchants of the staple, with their goods, in the towne of Spurge, was also arrested. Whereupon on the twentieth of January it was proclaimed at London that the bodies and goods, of all that were borne under the King of Spaines dominions, throughout England should be arrested, which was done, and the Spanissh Ambassadors was committed

committed to the custodie of maister Barry, M. Keneut, and M. Knowles.

The 17. of Januarie, Philip Melitrell a French man, and two English men, were drawne from Prisoner to Tiborne and there hanged, the French man quartered, who had coined gold counterfeit, the English men, the one had clipped silver, the other cast Telfons of tunc.

1569  
A French  
man execu-  
ted.

The 28. of March, the Prisoners well appointed in armour on horsebacke, mustred before the Quenes maiestie in the park before Westminster.

Mustre of  
Prisoners.

A great Lotterie being holden at London in Pauls Churchyard, at the West doore, was begun to be drawne the 11. of Januarie, and continued day and night till the first of May, wherein the said drawing was fully ended.

The 17. of May, George lord Dacre of Chaylston, sonne and heire of Thomas lord Dacre, being a child in yeres, and then ward to Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norfolk, was by a great mischance slayne at Thetford in the house of sir Richard Palmerstone knight, by meane of a vantage hole of wood, standing within the same house, upon which hole as he meant to haue banded, and the pikes at the fete being not made sure, the hole fell upon him and bryed the haines out of his head.

George lord  
Dacres slau

The 27. of August, Andrew Gregoreuich Sauin, ambassadour from Muscouie, landed at the Tower towarke, and was there receiued by the lord Mair of London, the Aldermen and Sheriffs in scarlet, with the merchants adventures in coats of blacke beluet all on horsebacke, who conueied him riding through the citie to the Muscouie house in Serding lane thre to be lodged.

Ambassadour  
from Muscouie.

The plague of pestilence somewhat reigning in the citie of London, Michaelmas Terme was first adourned unto the 3. of Nouember, and after unto Hilarie terme next following.

Terme ad-  
ourned.

The 11. of October, Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk, was brought sed Burnam beside Windse by land to Westminster, and from thence conueyed by water to the towne of London prisoner, sir Henry Neuill being his keeper.

Duke of  
Norfolke  
sent to the  
Tower.

On Monday the fourteenth of Nouember, Thomas Percie Earle of Northumberland being at Copelise, receiued the Quenes maiesties letters to repair to the Court, and the same day at night, certaine conspirators preincining the said Earle to be wancering and inconstant of promise made to them, caused a seruant of his called Bekewich, (after he was laid in his bed) to builie in, and to knocke at his chamber doore, willing him in hast to arise and shift for himselfe, for that his enemies (whom he termed to be sir Osbold Villrop, & maister Vaughan) were about the park, and had beset him with numbers of men, whereupon he arose, and conueyed himselfe away to his keepers house: in the same instant, they smote the bels of the towne to be rung backward, and so called as many as they could to that purpose.

The Earles  
of Northum-  
berland and  
Westmerland  
rebelled.

The next night, the Earle departed thence to Blankisith, where he met with Charles Neuill Earle of Westmerland, and other their confederates, after which time, by sundrie proclamations, they abusing the Quenes maiesties, commanded them in her highnes name to repair to them in warlike manner, for the defence & safetie of her Maiesties person, sometimes affirming their doings to be with the advice & consent of nobilitie of the realm, who indeed were wholly bent as maiesties

rudely appeared) to spend their lives in dutifull obedience, against them and all other traitors, sometimes pretending for conscience sake to seek to resume religion, sometimes declaring that they were bound to take this matter in hand, lest otherwise foraine Princes might take it upon them, to the great perill of this Realme.

Rebels rent  
the Bible.

The 16. day, they came to Durham, and forthwith went to the Minster, where they tare the Bible, Communion bookes, and other such as there were. The same night they went againe to Spanpith, and on the morrowe Darrington, where they had holl-water, but no Masse for want of bestiments. Frothence they sent their hoshemen to gather together such numbers of men as they could.

Ann. reg. 12

The 18. the earle of Northumberland went to Richmond, then to Northalton, after to Borsow-bridge, and on Sunday the 20. of November, he with his lady countesse of Northumberland, met againe with the earle of Westmerland at Ripon, and there had Masse, where (to get the more credit among the fauourers of the old Romish religion. they had a Crosse with a banner of the five wounds boine before them by Richard Norton, and that night they went to Borsow-bridge, and on the monday to Wetherby, on which day at night some bands of them entered Tabercaster, and tooke a 200 footmen, chaling their captaines which were leading them towards Poike to the earle of Suffer. On tuesday, they mustred on Cliford moore, nigh into Bannham moore, where they were 1600. hoshemen, and a foure thousand footmen, which was the greatest number that euer they were. From thence, they intended to haue marched toward Poike, but their minds being suddely altered, by report they heard that sir George Bowes had mustred within the Bishopricke, and Richmondshire, and leuid great bands.

The number  
of the rebels.

On the Wednesday they returned againe to Wetherby: on Thursday to Northalton: on Friday to Richmond: on Saturday Westmerland went to Rabies his owne house: on Sunday at night the Earle of Northumberland came to him there. On Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, they mustred in all Richmondshire and the Bishopricke, bestowing their footmen in bands under captaines leading: and the same day, which was the last of November, they besieged Barnard or Barne castell upon Tese, builded by Barnard Baylioll, about Anno Domini 1174. which castell was valiantly defended by sir George Bowes and Robert Bowes his brother, the space of eleuen daies. In the meane space, the Earle of Westmerland and his lady went to Durham with seven or eight hundred hoyle, where they remained till the thirteenth of December. in which space, the seventh day of December, sir John Foster Warden of the middle marches, accompanied with sir Henry Percie, did gise to the said Earle a great skirmish.

Bernards  
castell be-  
sieged.

Skirmish  
with there-  
bels.

Bernards  
castell deli-  
uered to the  
rebels.

The earles  
of North-  
umberland and  
Westmer-  
land pro-  
claimed  
traitors.

The first of December, sir George Bowes put forth of the castell two hundred hoshemen, whereof two persons were slaine, and thirte taken by the Rebels. The tenth of December, sir George Bowes belivered the said Castell, under composition to depart with armour, munition, baggage, and baggage, and forthwith marched with his gardien towards Poike. In this meane time, to wit, on the foure and twentieth of November, the queenes Maiestie had caused the said Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland to be proclaimed traitors, with all their adherents and fauourers, and forthwith prepared an armie to be sent out of the South for their suppression. The Lord

Scrope

Scrope Warden of the west-marches, had called vnto him the Earle of Cumberland, and other Gentlemen of the countrey, and they kept the cite of Carlisle. Thomas Earle of Suffer the Quenes maiesties Lieutenant generall in the North, had on the twentieth of November there published the like Proclamation (in effect) as afore was published by her Maiestie against the said Rebels, and also sent out to all such Gentlemen as he knew to be her Maiesties loyng subiects vnder his rule, who came vnto him with such number of their friends, as he was able in five daies to make aboute five thousand hoshemen and footmen, and so being accompanied with Edward Earle of Rutland his lieutenant, the lord Hunsdon Generall of his hoshemen, William Lord Eure, who had the leading of the Rearward of the footmen, and sir Ralph Sadler treasurer, who all came to Poike with their seruants, on Sunday the eleuenth of December, they marched from Poike towards Topcliffe: the twelfth they tarried at Scrag, where sir George Bowes with his power coming from Barnard Castell (as is aforesaid met him, and was made Marshall of the armie: then they went to Northalton, to Smeton, to Cotesbridge, and so to Aclay, on the which day the Rebels fled from Durham (having called their company Christopher Nevill from Hertspole, who were fortifying there) to Erham, where they abode three daies.

The earle of  
Suffer the  
Quenes  
lieutenant  
generall in  
the North  
against the  
rebels.

The Earle of Suffer Lieutenant with his power, went from Aclay to Durham, then to Petercell, and the twentieth of December to Erham, from whence the Rebels were gone the night before to Sparrowth, where counselling with Edward Dacres concerning their owne weaknesse, as also how they were pursued by the Earle of Suffer and his power of seven thousand, euen almost at their heeles: and moreover, that the earle of Warwick, the lord Clinton, lord Dandrell of England, and Walker lord Ferrers, Viscount Hertford, with a farre greater armie of 12000. out of the South, whereof the said earle of Warwick was Generall, was not farre behind them at Borsow-bridge.

The earle of  
Warwicke  
sent against  
the rebels.

The next night, the two Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland, with sundrie of their principall gentlemen, unknowne to their associats, fled to Berlaw in Scotland: the other Rebels were shortly after taken by the Earle of Suffer and his power, without any resistance.

The Earles  
of North-  
umberland and  
Westmer-  
land fled.

The fourth and sixt of Januarie, did suffer at Durham to the number of threescore and six Constables and other, amongst whom, an alderman of the towne named Struthar, and a priest called parson Plumtree were the most notable: then sir George Bowes Marshall, finding many to be faultors in the forsaide rebellion, did let them executed in euery market towne and other places, betwixt Petercell and Wetherby, about 60. miles in length, and 40. miles in breadth, as himselfe reported vnto me,

1570  
Rebels exe-  
cuted at  
Durham.

The one and twentieth of Januarie, a prestie was hanged on a gibbet at the South end of Finch lane in London, (to the example of other) for that he the twentieth of December had stricken his maiestie with a knife, whereof he died.

The two and twentieth of Februarie, Leonard Dacre of Hatfield in the Countie of Poike Esquire, hauing raised a number of people, the lord Hunsdon sent to him with a company of valiant souldiers, the many of his

Leonard  
Dacre fled  
into Scotland

Robels executed at  
Yorke.

Earle of  
Pembroke  
deceased.

The Earle of  
Suffex made  
a journey in  
to Scotland.

Sir Iohn  
Folter with  
a garriſon  
entred Scot-  
land.

people, and forced him to flie into Scotland.

On good Friday, the 27. of March, Simon Digby of Alketot, Iohn Fulthorpe of Fielbecke in the Countie of Yorke Esquires, Robert Peneman of Stokeſley, Thomas Biſhop the younger of Pockinton in the ſame Countie of Yorke Gentlemen, were drauone from the Caſtell of Yorke to the place of execution, called Knaues-acre, halfe a mile without the Citie of Yorke, & there hanged, beheaded, and quartered, their foure heads were ſet on the foure principall gates of the Citie, with foure of their quarters: the other quarters were ſet in diuerſe places of the countrey: Oſolph Glesby was with them drauone to the gallows, and returned againe to the caſtell.

William Harbart Earle of Pembroke, baron of Cardif, knight of the Garter, one of the priuie counſell, and lord ſteward of the Queenes maiesties houſhold, deceased at Hampton Court on the ſixteenth of March, he gaue great gifts to the Queene, to the Earle of Leiceſter, to the houſhold, and diuers other, and was buried in Saint Pauls Church at London the 18. of Aprill: the blacks giuen at his buriall came to the value of 2000. l. and a ſumptuous monument was raiſed for him on the North ſide the quire in Pauls, at the foote of Iohn of Gaunt, duke of Lancaſter.

The 17. of Aprill, the Earle of Suſſer Lieutenant generall in the North, with the Lord Hunſdon Lord gouernor of Barwicke, and Warden of the eaſt marches, and maſter William Drewy high maſtall of Barwicke, with all the garriſon and power of the ſame, began a iourney into Scotland, & the ſame night came to Wlmarke, twelue miles from Barwicke, and ſo the next morning entered into Tindale, and marching in warlike order, they bent, ouerthrew, raiſed and ſpoyled all the Caſtles, Townes, and villages of their enemies, till they came to the caſtell of Hoſle, ſtanding in a ſtrong marſh belonging to the lord of Bucklugh, which likewiſe was raiſed, ouerthrowne and bent, and ſo marched forward and bent the whole countrey before them, till they came to Craling. The ſame day, ſir Iohn Folter Warden of the middle marches, with the garriſon and force of the ſame, entered likewiſe into Tindale upon Expreſſe gate, 16. miles from Wlmarke, where in like order they bent, raiſed, and ſpoyled the countrey before them, till they came to a ſtrong caſtell called Craling, in the poſſeſſion of the mother of the lord Fernherſt, which likewiſe they ouerthrew, raiſed, and bent. There both the armies met, and ſo marched by the riuer of Twite, raiſing, burning, and ſpoyling Caſtles and pyles along the riuer, till they came to Gedwoorth, where they both lodged, and were courteouſly receiued. The next day the lord Cheſford Warden of the middle marches of Scotland, came in with all the principall men of his, kintred to the lord Lieutenant, and did ſubmit themſelves, and were aſſured, for that they had not receiued the Engliſh rebels, ayding or aſſiſting them, neither had made any inuaſion into England. The nineteenth the armie deuided into two parts, the one part wherof paſſed the riuer of Twite, and bent the Caſtell of Fernherſt, and all other Caſtles and Townes belonging to the Lord of Fernherſt, Hunſtall, and Bedrell, and ſo paſſed to Mint, where both the armies met againe, and ſo bent on both ſides the riuer, till they came to a great towne called Batwicke, where they intended

10

to haue lodged, but the Scots had unhatched the houſes, and bent the thatch in the ſtreets, and themſelves fled with moſt part of their goods, but by the induſtrie of the Engliſhmen, the timber was alſo burned with the thatch, ſaving one little houſe of ſtone of Dunlamikes, wherein my lord lay that night. The 20. day, the armie marched forwards to a houſe of the lord of Bucklugh, which they ouerthrew with powder, and then marched Northward to the riuer of Twite, where they bent and ſpoyled ſuch Caſtles, pyles and townes, as belonged to the lords of Fernherſt and Bucklugh, their kindmen and adherents, and that night returned to Gedwoorth. The one and twentieth day, part of the armie went to the riuer of Botwont, under the leading of the ſaid maſtall, where maſter George Heron, keeper of Tindale and Widdale, with them of that countrey, met with him, and ioyning together, rode on, burning and ſpoyling all on both ſides of the riuer, and the other part marched to the riuer of Twite, where they waſhed and bent all on both ſides the riuer, and returned to Bilſey, where the lord Lieutenant lodged of purpoſe to beſiege Wyborne Caſtell in the night, and the Lord Gouernor with his companie went to Wlmarke, to bring the ordinance from thence in the morning, which was diſappointed by the negligence of ſuch as were put in truſt for thoſe matters, who ſuffered the carriage hoſtes to returne to Barwicke the day before, which ſhould haue drauone the ſame, the lacke wherof cauſed the Lord Lieutenant with the whole armie, to returne to Barwicke the two and twentieth of Aprill, in which time there was neuer any ſhew by the Scots made, to reſiſt or defend their countrey.

The lord Scrope Warden of the weſt marches, entered Scotland the eighteenth of Aprill, bent and ſpoyled thoſe parts almoſt to Donſtices, he had diuers conſiſtes, gaue ſundry ouerthrowes, tooke many priſoners, and returned ſafely. During all theſe inuaſions, the marches of England in all places were guarded by the Lord Evers, ſir George Bowes, and other of the Biſhopps, as the Scots durſt not once offer to enter into England, ſo that not one houſe was burned, nor one cowe taken out of England. There were raiſed, ouerthrowne, and bent in this iourney, about ſixtie ſtrong Caſtles and pyles, and about three hundred Townes and Villages, ſo that there be verie few in the countrey, that either haue receiued our Engliſh Rebels, or inuaſed England, that either haue caſtell, pile, or houſe for themſelves or their tenants, beſides the loſſe of their goods. The 26. the lord Lieutenant accompanied with the lord gouernor, the maſtall and diuers luſtie gentlemen, captaines and ſouldiers, to the number of three thouſand, ſet forward to Wlmarke, and ſo to Wyborne Caſtell, which Caſtell they beſieged till the ſame was yeelded, the lord Gouernor, the Maſtall, and diuers other, tooke poſſeſſion for our ſoueraigne Ladie the Queenes maiestie, and expelled the Scots that were therein, to the number of 168. perſons, in their apparell on their backs onely without armor, weapon, bagge or baggage, among whom there were two Engliſhmen, one Hillard the Earle of Northumberland's man, and a bagarant perſon named William Goddſher, which both were carried to Barwicke and there executed the 24. of May. The Lord Lieutenant placed in the caſtell Captaine Wood, and Captaine Pikeman, with 200. ſouldiers, and ſo returned to Barwicke the 29. of Aprill, where he reſted

Ecc 4

Rebels executed at  
Barwicke,

dwy

The lord  
Scrope entered Scot-  
land.

very cullt at ease, having in the frauell taken overmuch cold, wherewith he was quinen into an extreme ague.

Knights  
made by  
the earle of  
Suffex.

The fourth of May, he sent maister Drewry Marshall with the number of fupp thousand, to take Faulst Castell, which at the first coming was delivered to the Marshall, who expelled the Scots in number ten, and placed 14. of our Englishmen against all Scotland, it is so strong a place, and so returned to Barwick. The eleventh of May, the lord Lieutenant made foure knights, viz. Sir William Drewry, Sir Thomas Manners, Sir George Care, Sir Robert Constable. And the same day, Sir William Drewry bring Generall, set forward toward Edinburgh with divers footebands with shot armed pikes, and pieces of great ordnance, to joyne with the earles of Leinor, Hoxton, Glencarne, and Hare, and other of the kings power of Scotland, in pursuing of the English rebels, and such of the Scots as supported them as the Duke Hamilton, and other who were in armes at Lithco, twelve miles from Edinburgh, to defend their cause. The foresaid new knights with their bands came to Edinburgh, the thirtieth of May, and there rested three nights, and departed from thence to Lithco, where the Regent was slain. The 17. the footemen marched to Faulkirk, six miles from Sterling, and Sir William Drewry with the horsemen, marched to Starling to see the King, whom they found so perfect in all things as age and nature could permit. The 18. they departed to the footebands, and so together marched to Glasco, where the lord Hamilton had besieged a house of the kings, but hearing of their coming, he fled with dishonor, and the losse of nine or twentie of his men. The 19. the generall with other horsemen and some shot, passed to Dunbarton, to hit the straites of the castell there, being kept by the lord Fleming, the bishop of Saint Andrews, and other his adherents, to the Queene of Scots use. Our generall sent his trumpet to requite a parley with assurance safely to returne, whereunto the lord Fleming subtilly consented, and minding so to wind him into his danger, conceived certaine shot, and armed men into a secret place, so that our generall coming alone to haue parled, his trumpet returned, they shot at him, meaning to haue slain him, but he bestowed his pistolets as freely at them as they at him, and returned to his companie and so to Glasco: from whence Sir George Care, being marvellous offended with the subtil dealing of the lord Fleming, wrote a letter of challenge to combat with him body for body, which the lord Fleming by his letter of answer refused, whereupon Sir George Care wrote a sharp and pittie reply, &c.

The one and twentieth day, our generall accompanied with the gentlemen and horsemen, went to Dunbarton againe to parley with the lord Fleming, upon his promise that he would meet him three miles from the said castell, but the place of parley being betwixt, was found to be subiect to the shot of the castell, & therefore our generall required another place, which would not be feared by the Fleming.

The 22. the lord of Leinor, the lord Glencarne, & the Lord Simple, with their friends and tenants, came to our generall, & mustered before Glasco, to the number of foure thousand horsemen and footmen.

Hamilton in  
Scotland be-  
sieged.

The 23. our generall with the whole army marched toward the castell of Hamilton, & there had parley with the captaine, whose name was Arthur Hamilton, but

but he would not deliuer the castell, whereupon our ordinance being placed, was shot very close, but did no great harme, for that they were field peeces.

The foure and twentieth day, our generall gave summons to the said castell which would not yeeld, whereupon he sent to Starling for bigger ordinance for the batterie, and so went from thence, accompanied with the earles of Leinor and Hoxton, with the horsemen and certaine shot, marched in the country to a faire house of the Abbots of Kelwing nere adjoining whose name was Gawyn Hamilton, which house they burned, & utterly spoiled, with seuerenteen houses more of good countenance of that name, whereof one was the lord Lanhamps, which had married with the sister of James Hamilton of Bedwiltough, which was the Regent. There was burned seauenteen other faire houses thereabouts, not of that name, but of alie: besides those, there were diuers of their kindred & alie, that came in with humble submissio, & assured themselves promising their obedience to their king, &c.

The 25. of May in the morning, was found hanging at the bishop of Londons palace gate in Pauls church-yard, a Bull which lately had bin sent from Rome, containing diuers horrible treasons against the Quenees maiesty, for the which one Iohn Felton was shortly after apprehended, and committed to the Tower of London.

A Bull from  
Rome hang-  
ed on the  
bishop of  
Londons  
gate.  
The Nor-  
ton executed.

The 27. of May, Thomas Norton and Christopher, of Pockeswre, being both condemned of high treason, for the late rebellion in the South, were drawn from the Tower of London to Tiborne and there hanged, headed and quartered.

The 27. of May, the castle of Hamilton was yeilded to Sir William Drewry generall of our army, and by him presently spoiled and burnt, there was in the house 34. men.

Hamilton in  
Scotland  
yeilded to  
the English.

The 28. Sir George Care with the horsemen came to Lithco, where the whole army met. This day, a very faire house, with the whole towne of Hamilton was burnt. The 29. they burnt an house of the dukes called Keimpell, and another at Lithco, the whole towne, and diuers other faire houses was yeilded to our generall, who returned to Edinburgh, and so to Barwick the third day of June.

A conspiracy was made by certain gentlemen and other in the country of Norfolk, whose purpose was on Whitsonner day at Hartstone faire, with sound of trumpet and drum, to haue raised a number, and then to proclaim their diuinish purpose, under pretence against strangers and other. This matter was uttered by Thomas Kete one of the conspiracy, unto Iohn Kenley, who forthwith sent the same Kete with a Constable to the next Justice, before whom and other Justices, he opened the whole matter, whereupon maister Drewry immediately apprehended Iohn Throgmorton, and after him, many gentlemen of the city of Norwich, and the county of Norfolk, who were all committed to prison (and at the next Sessions of gaile deliuey at the castle of Norwich, the seuerenteen of July, before Sir Robert Carlin knight, Lord chief Justice, Gilbert Gerard the quenees Attourney generall, and other Justices) ten of them were indicted of high treason, and some others of contempt, diuers of them were condemned, and had iudgment the one and twentieth of August, and afterward three of them were hanged, bowelled, and quartered, which were Iohn Throgmorton of Norfolk gentleman, who stood mute at his arraignment, but at the gallows confessed

Conspiracy  
in Norfolk.

confessed himselfe to be the chiefe conspirator, and that Roffe had deserved to die but he, for that he had procured them: with him was executed Thomas Brooke of Rolbie gentleman the thirtieth of August, and George Redman of Cringford gentleman was likewise executed the second of September.

The fourth of August, the duke of Norfolk was remooved from the tower of London to the Charter house neare unto Smithfield.

The same day was arraigned at the Guild hall of London Iohn Felton, for hanging a bull at the gate of the bishop of Londons palace, and also two young men, for coynning and clipping of coine, who all were found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement to be drawne, hanged and quartered.

The 8. of August, Iohn Felton was drawne fro Newgate into Pauls churchyard, and there hanged on a gallies new set up that morning before the bishops palace gate, and being cut downe alive, he was bowelled and quartered. After this, the same morning, the Werkes returned to Newgate, and so to Tiborne with two young men which were there executed for coynning & clipping as is aforesaid.

The 22. of August, the earle of Sussex lord lieutenant generall for the queenes maistie in the north, and the lord Scrope warden of the west marches, and diuers other, marched from Carlisle with the queenes army and force of the North, as well of horsemen as footemen into Scotland, passing ouer the riuers of Esk, Tyne, and Sark, which riuers of Sark parteth England and Scotland, and so to Dornock wood, belonging to Edward Vrone the lord of Bonshaw, and then to Annona, a strong house of the lord Harris, which they rased and ouerthrew with other thereabouts: from thence to Hobhim, which they bent and blew up: from thence to Bannell, a towne belonging to the lord Cowhill, which they bent: from thence to Donifries, which they sacked and spoiled of such paltry as the fugitiues had left, and also rased and ouerthrew a sumptuous house belonging to the queene of Scots, in the keeping of the lord Harris: then passing the riuers of Longer they bent and spoiled Cowhillies and Pototracke, and returned to Donifries, and so to the towne of Bankend, which they bent, with another house pertaining to William Maxwell of the Isles, and so to the castle of Carlawuacke, standing in a marish iust to an arme of the sea, which partlye Buncrall and Calawap, which castle they blew up, and returned homeward, transporting their ordinance ouer quick-sands and bogs, where neuer the like was done before, and so came to Dornock wood.

The 28. of August, they marched towards Carlisle, where by the way they bent and ouerthrew two houses, the one being Arthur Greames alias Carlisle, the other, Rich George, two notable theues. The same day at night after the lords comming to Carlisle, he made knights, Sir Edward Hastings, Sir Francis Russell, Sir Valentine Browne, Sir William Hilton, Sir Robert Scapleton, Sir Henry Curwen, Sir Simon Musgraue.

The fift of October at night, happened a terrible tempest of wind and rain, both on the sea and land, by means whereof many ships and other vessels were drowned, about midnigh the waters ouerflowing, drowned many meadows, pastures, townes, villages, cattail, houses and goods, to the utter bredding of a great number of subiects of this realme: besides the losse of many men, women, and children,

children, some drowned in their beds, some in the waves travelling, &c.

The 23. of January, the queenes maistie accompanied with her nobility, came from her house at the Strand called Sommerfet place, and entered the city of London by Temple barre, Fleetstreet, Chape, & so by the north side of the Burse, to Sir Thomas Greshams in Bishops gate street, where she dined. After dinner, her grace returning through Coynhill, entered the Burse on the south side, and after her highnesse had viewed every part thereof about ground, especially the Pawne, which was richly furnished with all sorts of the finest wares in the city, she caused the same Burse, by an herault and a trumpet to be proclaimed, the Royall Exchange, so to be called from thence forth, and not otherwayes.

The seventeenth day of February, at a place called Kinnaslone, neare Harlech hill in the county of Hereford, was scene the ground to open, and certaine rocks with a peece of ground, remooued and went forward the space of foure dayes, making at the first a terrible noise as it went on the earth: it remooued it selfe betwene five of the clocke in the evening and seven the next morning, forty spaces, carrying great trees and sheperdotes, some sheperdotes with three score sheep in them, some trees fell into the chynkes other that grew on the same ground, grew now as firmly on a hill, and some that stood east, stand west, and those that stood west, stand east. The depth of the hole where it first brake out, is thirty foot, the breadth of the breach is eight score yeards, and in length about twenty score yeards. At ouerthrew Kingstone chappell. Also, two high wayes be remooued nigh one hundred yeards, with the trees of the hedge-rows. The ground in all is six and twenty acres, and where tillage ground was, there is pasture left in place, and where was pasture, there is tillage ground gone vpon it. The ground as it remooued, dyane the earth before it, and at the lower part ouerwhelmed the ground, so that it is growne to a great hill of stonour fadome high. It remooued from saturday till monday at night following, and so staid.

In the moneth of February, Sir Thomas Sackeuile baron of Buckburth was Sir Thomas Sackeuile sent into France. Sir in ambassade for the Queenes maistie to Charles the ninth French king, as well to congratulate for his marriage with the daughter of the emperor Maximilian, as for other weighty affaires. And as his ambassage was great, so was his charge no lesse in furnishing himselfe and his traine accordingly, being both in number and furniture, such in every point as did appertaine: and his receiving and entertainment in France by the king and others, was agreeable thereto, for he was receiued vpon the coast by the gouernours of the fortified townes right honourably, by order from the king. Among other, the Tournouell was one, who being very well mounted and appointed, left not his lordship before he came to the court, and from thence accompanied him backe vntill his embarkement homeward. In the maine countries, he was accompanied with the gouernours and nobles of the places about: and in the good townes where he passed, he was presented by the chiefe magistrates, though his lordships rewards were valued their presents.

At his approach neare to Paris, he was encountered on the way by two Marqueses of Trans and Saluces, this being of the house of Sauoy, and the other of the family of Noir. These wanted not such as accompanied them, euen of the best sort,

The duke of Norfolk remooued. Felton arraigned.

Felton and others executed.

A journey into Scotland by the earle of Sussex.

The queene was informed, he had brent 300. townes and villages, and spoyled 50. stone castles

Knights made by the earle of Sussex.

High waters, which drowned many. An. reg. 13.

Royall Exchange.

A strange kind of earth moving.

fort. At the lord ambassadors first audience, which was at the castle of Maraild-therwise called Boloigne near Paris, where the 15. the lay, the queenes Anne coaches very bravelly furnished, were sent to Paris for him, in one of the which his lordship with the marquess of France rode toward the court, very narrowly escaping from a shrewd turne, by reason the same coach was overthwarted, by the Dutch waggoners their negligence, who in a braverie galloping the said, made an ouer short turne, wherewith the marquis was sore brused. The lord ambassador at his arrivall, was very honorably received, he was banqueted by diuerse, and that very sumptuously, which by him was not inquired, but his reward at the kings hand was onely a chaine, waping one thousand French crownes. At this place, the river of Sayne, that runneth through the city of Paris, was not passable with vessels, by reason of the great frosts, and therby not onely all kind of viuals but also hay and wood was hard to come by, and not to be had but at excessive prices, the countrie therabouts having bene sore harried and spoiled by the civil tumults: by reason wherof, not onely the lord of Buckhurst for the space he remained there, but also Sir Henry Norrice, and maister Francis Wallingham her excellent Ambassadors, sitters successively, were driven to an increase of expences, paying for every thing they bought an higher price then had bene accustomed. After that my lord Buckhurst had bene stalked and banqueted by the king, and others of the French nobilitie, and had accomplished the points of his ambassage, he tooke leave of the king, and departed homewards, arriving here in England a little before Easter.

**A parliament.** The second of April a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to the queenes maiesly (toward her great charges, in repelling the late rebellion in the North, and pursuing the layd rebels and their sallowes, which were fled into Scotland by the cleargy, a subsidy of 6. s. in the l. and by the temporall two sixtences, with a subsidy of 2. s. 8. d. in the l.

**Juries at Westminster** The first, second, and third of May, was holden at Westminster before the Queenes maiesly, a sollemne Just, at the tilt, turney, and barriers. The challenges were Edward earle of Oxford, Charles Howard, Sir Henry Lee, and Christopher Hatton esquier, who all did very valiantly, but the chiefe honour was given to the earle of Oxford.

**Doctor Storie executed.** The first of June, John Storie a doctour of the cannon law, who before had bene condemned of high treason, was dyawne from the tower of London to Tbyorne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, his head set on London bridge, and his quarters on the gates of the city.

**A combate appointed at Tushill.** The 18. of June, in Trinity searime, there was a combate appointed to have bene fought for a certaine Honour and domaine lands belonging therunto, in the Isle of Warrie, adioyning to the Isle of Sheppey in Kent, Simon Low and John Kyme were plaintiffs, and had brought a writ of right against Thomas Paramore, who offered to defend his right by battell, wherupon the plaintiffs after layd, accepted to answer his challenge, offering likewise to defend their right to the same Honour and lands, and to prove by battell that Paramore had no right nor no good title to have the same.

Wherupon the layd Thomas Paramore brought before the Judges of the common place at Westminster, one George Thorne, a bigge, broad, strong set fellow,

and the plaintiffs brought Henry Nailor master of defence, and servant to the right honorable the earle of Leicester, a proper slender man, and not so tall as the other. Thorne cast downe a gauntlet, which Nailor took up. Upon the Sunday before the battell should be tried on the next morrow, the matter was stayed, and the parties agreed, that Paramore being in possession should have the land, and was bound in 500. pound to consider the plaintiffs, as upon hearing the matter the Judges should award. The Queenes maiesly was the taker up of the matter, in this will: It was thought good, that for Paramores assurance, the matter should be kept touching the combate, and that the plaintiffs Low and Kyme should make default of appearance, but that yet such as were sureties of Nailor, their champions appearance, should bring him in, and likewise those that were sureties for Thorne, should bring in the same Thorne in discharge of their band, & that the court should sit in Tushill fields, where was prepared one plot of ground one and twenty yeards square, double railed for the combate, without the west square, a stage being set up for the Judges, representing the court of the common pleas. All the compass without the iusts, was set with scaffolds one above another, for people to stand and behold. There were behind the square where the Judges sat, two tents, the one for Nailor, the other for Thorne. Thorne was there in the morning tinely. Nailor about 7. of the clocke came through London, apparelled in a dublet and galeys galloway breeches, of a cloke crimson latten cut and faced, a hat of blacke velvet with a red feather and band, before him drums and six playing: the gauntlet that was cast downe by George Thorne, was borne before the layd Nailor upon a sword point, and his halson (a staffe of an elle long, made Taper-wile, tipt with horne) with his shield of hard leather, was borne after him, by Askam a yeoman of the Queenes garde: he came into the pallace of Westminster, and staying not long before the hall doore, came backe into the kings Spectre, and so along through the landuay, and Tushill streete, into the field, where he stayed till past nine of the clocke, and then Sir Ierome Bowes brought him to his tent, Thorne being in the tent with Sir Henry Cheiney long before. About ten of the clocke, the court of common pleas remoued, and came to the place prepared: when the Lord chiefe Justice with two other his associates were set, then Low was called sollemnly to come in, or else he to lose his writ of right. Then after a certaine time the sureties of Henry Nailor were called to bring in the layd Nailor champion for Simon Low, and shortly thereupon Sir Ierome Bowes leading Nailor by the hand, entred with him the lists, bringing him downe that square by which he entred, being on the left hand of the Judges, and he about till he came to the next square iust against the Judges, and there making curtelle, first with one leg, and then with the other, passed forth till he came to the middle of the place, and then made the like obersance and so passing till they came to the barre, there he made the like curtelle, and his shield was held up aloft over his head: Nailor put off his neather lockes, and so bare foot and bare legged, having like scamilions on the ankles and his doublet sleeves tied up above the elbows, and bare headed, came in as is aforesayd. Then were the sureties of George Thorne called to bring in the same Thorne, and immediately Sir Henry Cheiney entred at the upper end on the right hand of the Judges, with the like

The quarrell  
of combate  
staid.

order in coming about by his side, as Nailor had before on that other side, and so continuing to the barre with like obediſaunce, held up his shield, proclamation was made in ſoyne a followeth: The Juſtices command in the Queenes maiesties name, that no perſon of what eſtate, degree, or condition that he be being preſent, to be ſo hardy to give any token or ſigne by countenance, ſpeech, or language, either to the proouer or to the defender, whereby the one of them may take advantage of the other: and no perſon remove, but ſtill keepe his place: and that every perſon and perſons keepe their ſlaves and their weapons to themſelves: and ſuffer neither the ſayd proouer nor defender to take any of their weapons or any other thing, that may ſtand either to the ſayd proouer or defender any awaile, upon paine of forfeiture of lands, tenements, goods, chattels, and impriſonment of their bodies, and making fine and ransome at the Queenes pleaſure.

Oſhe of the proouer.

Then was the proouer to be ſwoyne in ſoyne as followeth: This heare, you Juſtices, that I have this day neither eate, drinke, nor have upon me either bone, ſtone, ne graſſe, or any incontinuit, loyterrie, or witchcraft, where-through the power of the word of God might be leaked or diminiſhed, and the diuels power increased: and that my appeale is true, ſo helpe me God and his ſaints, and by this booke.

After all this ſolemne order was finiſhed, the lord chiefe Juſtice rehearſing the manner of bringing the wit of right by Simon Low, of the anſwere made thereunto by Paramore, of the proceeding therein, and how Paramore had challenged to defend his right to the land by battell, by his champion George Thorne, and of the accepting the triall that was by Lowe, with his champion Henry Nailor, and then for default in appearance in Lowe, he adiudged the land to Paramore, and diſmiſſed the champions, acquitting the ſureties of their bands. He alſo willed Henry Nailor to render againe to George Thorne his gantlett, wherewith to the ſaid Nailor anſwered, that his lordſhip might command him any thing, but willingly he would not render the ſaid gantlett to Thorne except he could win it: and further, he challenged the ſaid Thorne to play with him halfe a ſcore blowes, to ſhew ſome paſſime to the lord chiefe Juſtice and the other there aſſembled: but Thorne answered, that he came to fight, and would not play. Then the lord chiefe Juſtice commending Nailor for his valiant courage, commanded them both quietly to depart the field, &c.

A woman brent at Maidſtone.

The ſixteenth of July Rebecca Chamber, late wiſe to Thomas Chamber of Bergettshean, was found culpable of poiſoning the ſaid Thomas Chamber her husband, at the aſſiſes holden at Maidſtone into the countie of Kent: for the which fact (having well deſerved) ſhe was there burnt on the next morrow.

D. of Norfolk leat to the tower, Biſhop of Salisbury deſeased.

The ſeventh of September, the Duke of Norfolk was remooved from the Charterhouſe to the tower at London priſoner.

The two and twentieth of September, deſeased Iohn Iewell Biſhop of Salisburie, in his life a moſt eloquent and diligent preacher, but a far more painefull and ſubulous writer, as his workes remanuing beare witneſſe, whereby his fame ſhall never die.

The chriſtians victory

The ninth of November, great reioycing was made at London with banquetting and bonfires, for loy of the late come newes of a marvellous victorie obtained

obtained by the chriſtian army by ſea, againſt the Turkes, the ſixt of October laſt paſt, wherein were taken and ſunk of the Turkes gallies and brigantines two hundred and thirty, there were ſlaine of the Turkes more then 30000. beſides a great number of priſoners taken, and about twelve thouſand chriſtians that had bene ſlaves with the Turkes, were ſet at liberty. The chriſtians loſt 7. gallies, and were ſlaine about ſix or ſeven thouſand.

againſt the Turkes.

An. reg. 14.

The thirtieth of December, Reynold Grey was by the queenes maiesty reſtored earle of Kent.

Earle of Kent.

The thirtieth of January, deſeased William Peter knight, who for his iudgement and pregnant wit, had bene ſecretary and of privy counſell to ſoure kings and queenes of this realme, and ſeven times lord amballaſſor abroad in ſtraiter lands: he augmented Eſſetex college in Oxford, with lands to the value of an hundred pound by yeare: and alſo builded ten almes houſes in the pariſh of S. Giles, for twenty poore people, ten within the houſe, and ten without the houſe, having every one two pence the day, a winter gowne, and two loads of wood, and among them feeding for ſix kilne winter and ſummer, and a chaplaine to ſay them ſervice daily.

1572.  
Sir William Peter deſeased.

The ſixteenth day of January, the Lord Thomas Howard duke of Norfolk was arraigned in Oldſmiſter hall, beſore George lord Talbot earle of Shrovetbury high ſeward of England for that day, and there by his pccers, to wit, nine earles one biſcount, and ſixteen barons, found guilty of high treaſon, and had iudgement accordingly.

Duke of Norfolk arraigned.

The eleventh day of February Kenelme Barney, and Edmond Mather were drawn from the Tower of London: and Henry Rolfe from the Marſhalles in Southwarke, all three to Thorne, and there hanged, botwelled and quartered for treaſon: Barney and Mather for conspiracy againſt ſome of her maiesties privy counſell, and Rolfe for counterfeiting the Queenes maiesties hand.

Mather, Barney, & Rolfe executed.

The Queenes maiesty hearing credibly by report, that certaine lewd perſons, under pretence of executing commiſſions for inquieries to be made for lands conſealed, contrary to her maiesties meaning, challenging lands, ſtocks of money, plate, &c. letting not alſo to make pretence to the bells, lead, and other ſuch things belonging to pariſh churches or chappels: her maiesty meaning ſpeedily to withſtand ſuch manner of unlaſtful practiſes, commanded, that all commiſſions then extant, and not determined, for inquisition of any manner of concealments, ſhould be by Superſedeas out of her ercheſquer reuoked. And alſo appointed ſpeedy remedy to be had againſt ſuch extortioners, as more at large apparth by a proclamation, ſubſcribing thus: Finally, her maiesty would her Juſtices of aſſiſe to have ſome ſpeciall care, not onely to the preſent, but alſo to the reforming of certaine notorious and inuſious attempts, of diuerſe that of late time by other colour then for her maiesties be, had taſen away the lead of churches and chappels, yea and bells alſo out of ſterles; and other common goods belonging to pariſhes, an example not to be ſuffered unpuniſhed nor unpunished. And ſo her maiesty eſteemes chargeth her Juſtices of her aſſiſe to provide ſeuere remedy, both for puniſhment and reformation thereof. Dated at Oldſmiſter the thirtieth of February, the fourteenth, year of her raigne.

Comeyers of bells, lead, and other Church goods are to be puniſhed to the example of their too many followeth.

The



Sir William  
Powlett lord  
treasurer.

The tenth day of March, deceased Sir William Powlett knight, lord Sene-John earle of Wiltshire, marquisse of Winchester, knight of the honourable order of the garter, one of the queenes maiesties piny counsell, and lord high treasurer of England, at his manor of Basing in Hampshire. This worthy man was boine in the yeare of our Lord 1374. in the fourteenth yeare of king Edward the 4. at Winton de la Hore in Wiltshire on Wiltshire day, and liued about the age of ninety and seauen yeares, in six kings and queenes dayes. He serued six kings and queenes, Henry the seventh, Henry the eight, Edward the first, queene Mary, and M. Elizabeth. All these he serued faithfully, & of them was greatly fauored. This man in his time passed many offices, for in the time of the late R. Henry the 8. he enioyed successiuelly the roones of maister of the wards & liueries, controller, treasurer, lord chamberlaine, and lord steward of the kings household, and lastly, lord treasurer of England in the time of king Edward the first, which he continued about one and twenty yeares: he was aduanced to sundry honours for by the said king Henry the eight he was created lord Sene-John of Basing, and knight of the garter, and by king Edward the first he was aduanced to be earle of Wiltshire, and marquisse of Winchester. Himselfe did see the children of his childrens children growne to the number of one hundred and thre: a rare blessing giuen by God to men of his calling.

Pikemen &  
shot trained  
vp in Londo.

The six and twenty and sixe and twenty of March, by the commandement of the queenes maiesty her counsell, the citizens of London assembling at their leuerall hals, the maisters chose out the most likeli and aduise persons of euery their companies, to the number of thre thousand, whom they appointed to be pikemen and shot, the pikemen were forthwith armed in faire cossets and other furniture, according therunto: the gunners had euery of them his caluer, with the furniture, and murrans on their heads. To these were appointed diuers valiant captaines, who to traime them vp in warlike feates, mustred them thise euery weeke, sometimes in the artillery yard, teaching the gunners to handle their peeces sometimes at the Hiles end, and in Saint Georges field, teaching them to skirmish. In the which skirmish on the Hiles end the tenth day of April, one of the gunners of the goldsmithes company, was shot in the side with a peece of a scowping sicke left in one of the caluers, wherof he died, and was buried the twelfth of April in Saint Pauls churchyard, all the gunners marching from the Hiles end in battell ray, wot of their caluers at his graue.

Muster at  
Greene-  
wich.

On May they mustred at Greenwich before the queenes maiesty, where they shewed many warlike feates, but were hindered by the weather, which was all day stormyng, they returned that night to London, and were discharged on the next morow.

Earles of  
Essex and  
Lincolne  
created.

Barons  
made.

The fourth of May, Water Deuereux, lord Ferrers of Chartley, and viscount of Hereford, was created earle of Essex: And Edward Pines lord Clinton and Say, high Admirall of England, was created earle of Lincoln, at Greenwich.

The eight of May, the parliament began at Westminster: and that same day in the parliament by the Queenes maiesties wits, Sir Henry Compton knight, lord Compton in the Hile, Sir Henry Cheyny knight, lord of Tudington, Sir William Pawlet knight of Basing, and Sir Henry Norrice knight, lord of Kirote,

were

were called barons into the higher house. In this parliament, forsomuch as the whole realme of England was exceedingly pestered with rogues, bagabonds, and sturdy beggars, by means wherof, daily happened diuers horrible murders, theftes, and other great outrages, it was enacted, that all persons about the age of fourtene yeeres, being taken begging, vagrant, and wandring disorderly, should be apprehended, whipped, and bent through the grille of the right rate, with a hot yron of one inch compasse for the first time to taken.

Rogues bur-  
ned through  
the care.

The four and twentieth of May, Martin Bullocke was hanged on a gibbet by the well with two buckets in Billpops gate Street of London, for robbing and most shamefully murdering of a merchant named Arthur Hall, in the parsonage of Saint Martine by the said well. This Martin had procured the said Arthur Hall to come to the said parsonage, to buy of him certaine plate: but after the said Arthur had well viewed the same, he said, this is none of your plate, it hath doctour Gardeners marke, and I know it to be his: that is true said Martin Bullocke, but he hath appointed me to sell it, &c. After this talke, whiles the said Arthur was weighing the plate, the same Martin fetcht out of the kitchen a thicke walling beetle, and coming behind him, strake the said Arthur on the head, that he felled him with the first stroke, and then strake him againe, and after tooke the said Arthurs dagger, and slicked him, and with his knife cut his throat, and after would haue trussed him in a Spanish chell, but the same was too short: wherupon he tumbled him downe a paire of staires, and after thinking to haue buried him in the cellar, his legges being broken with the first fall, and stiffe, he could not draw him downe the cellar staires being winding, wherfore he cut off his legges with an hatchet, and in the end, trussed him with straw in a dyg fat, and saying it was his apparell and bookes, caused the same to be carried to the waters side, and so shipped to Rie. But as God would haue it, there was suspicion gathered against the murderer, wherby he was examined before Alderman Branch one of the Sherifes of London, but seemed so innocent and guiltlesse in that case, that one Robert Gee a cloth-worker, being of good credit, undertooke for his forth-coming: wherupon Bullocke slipt away, first to Westminster, wher taking boat, he was rowed by the riuer westward till he came to Dodingham in the forest 8. miles beyond the towne of Windsoze: from whence (by Gods prouidence) he came backe againe into London, where he lodged at the red lion in Holborne. In the meane time Robert Gee, upon knowledge had that Bullocke was slipt alide, was not only had in suspicion, but also committed to ward, albeit so, as he had libertie to send abroad such as should make sure after Bullocke, & amongst other one of his seruants was sent to Rie, after the dyg fat, & coming thither, the same dyg fat was opened, where the mangled corps of Hall was found, wherby the truth of the matter came to light, & by the will of God, Bullocke was at the very same time discouered at the place in Holborne afore mentioned, & there apprehended, receiued, as ye haue heard, due punishment for his wicked fall.

Martin Bul-  
locke han-  
ged.

The 26. of May, the right honorable earle of Lincoln, departed from London Earle of toward France ambassador, being accompanied with the lords Gregory lord Pines Lincolne lord Dacres, the lord Rob. Rich, the lord Talbot, the lord Sands, and Hen. lord Clinton, Sir Arthur Chambernowne, Sir Ierom Bowes, and Sir Edw. Hastings

ambassadors  
into France,

ffff

knight,

knightes, with divers other gentlemen who taking ship at Dover, cut over to Boloigne, where they were very honorably received, and from thence conveyed by ioyneys to Paris, where they were lodged in a house of the kings named le Chateau de Loure, being attended on by the kings officers. Five daies after, they went to the king at a house called Madyll, where the king with his two brethren, the admirall, and the most part of the nobles of France met them a distance from the place, and brought them into the house, where they dined, and remained till Sunday following, from whence the king and his nobles, with the nobles of England came to Paris: the king, his two brethren, & our ambassadoys riding in one coach together, and the Nobles of England and France being so placed, also in coaches came to the said Castell of Loure, and there dined. After dinner, the king, our Ambassadors, with the Nobilitie of both realmes, went to a Church named Saint Germaine, where the French king, his brethren, and nobilitie heard euen-song, the noble men of England withdrawing them into a chappell, till euen-song was done, where they fetched thence by the nobles of France, to the king and his brethren: and at awarded their coming, where was confirmed the League (which had bene concluded at Blois the nineteenth of April, deputies being there for the French party, Francis Memorency, Reigould Biragne, Sebastian de Lanbespine and Paul de Foix. And for the Queene of England, sir Thomas Smith, and maister Wallingham ambassadoys. This being done, they departed without the walls of Paris, to a garden of pleasure, where they supped: after supper the king departed to his place of Madyll, and the nobles of England to the castell of Loure. On Monday the admirall frasted the Nobles of England. On tuesday the Duke of Anjou the kings brother: and on wednesday the Duke of Brandon his younger brother and so passed in banquetting and frasting, with rich gifts on both parties.

On Friday, the nobles of England tooke leave of the king: and on Sunday came to S. Dennis, and after to Boloigne, where they tooke ship, and returned into England the fourth of July.

The second of June in the morning, betwene the houres of seven and eight of the clocke Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolkke was beheaded on a scaffold upon the Tower hill.

About the ninth of June, Francis Duke of Memorency chiefe Marshall of France gouernor and lieutenant of the Isle of France, generall unto Charles the ninth king of France, and Paule de Foix of the prime counsell to the said king, and Bertrand de Salgencers, lord de la Methesnelon, knights of the order of Saint Michael, ambassadoys for the same king, arrived at Dover.

The 14. day they shor London bridge towards Sunmerst house at the Strand, where they were lodged.

The 15. day being Sunday, the said ambassadoys repaired to the White hall, where they were honorably received of the Quenes maiestie, with her nobilitie, and there in her graces chappell, about one of the clocke in the after noone, the articles of treatie, League, or confederacie and sure friendship (concluded at Blois the nineteenth of April, as is aforesaid) betwixt the Quenes maiestie, and the French king being read, the same was by her maiestie and his ambassadoys confirmed, to be observed and kept, without inuasion or violation, &c. The rest

League with  
France con-  
firmed in  
France.

The Duke of  
Norfolkke  
beheaded.

French am-  
bassadoys.

League with  
France con-  
firmed at  
Westmin-  
ster.

of that day with great part of the night following was spent in great triumph, with sumptuous banquets.

The 18. of June, the feast of Saint George was holden at Wiltindon, where S. Georges the French ambassadoys were royally frasted, and Francis Duke of Memorency feast at Windsor.

The 28. day of June, the aforesaid ambassadoys departed from London to wards France.

The 14. of June, Thom. L. Wharton deceased in his house of Chanon roto at Westminster. 2. baron of his name leaving behind him 2. Philip, his eldest son.

The 12. of July, the Quenes maiestie at White hall made sir William Cecil lord of Burgiley, lord high treasurer of England: lord William Howard baron of Effingham. late lord chamberlaine, lord prime seale: the earle of Suffex lord chamberlaine: sir Thomas Smith principall secretarie: and Christopher Hatton elquire capitaine of the guard. &c.

Thomas Percie earle of Northumberland, late of Copcliffe, who had bene before attainted by parliament of high treason, as being one of the principall conspirators in the late rebellion, since fled into Scotland, as is aforesaid, being there taken, was sent to Warwick in the month of July, and delivered to the lord Hunsdon then capitaine of gouernor of that towne, and was now on the two and twentieth day of August beheaded at Poike, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, on a new scaffold set up for that purpose in the market place.

In this month of August sir Thomas Smith one of the Quenes maiesties prime counsell, carefully tending the reformation of Ireland, sent his sonne Thomas Smith elquire thither, with a colonic of Englishmen, to inhabit the Ires in Ulster.

About the beginning of the month of October, the quenes maiestie sent down to the towne of Portsmouth, the honorable Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, & sir Francis Knowles knight, treasurer of her household, to set in hand with fortifications of that towne and countie neare adioyning, against the inuasion of the French or other, if the same should happen to be attempted by armuall there.

The 18. of Nouember in the morning, was seene a starre northward very bright and cleare in the constellation of Cassiopeia at the backe of her chaire, which with three chiefe fixed stars of the said constellation, made a Geometrical figure lozeng-volce, of the learned men called Rombus: this star in vignette at the first appearing seemed bigger then Iupiter, and not much lesse then Venus when she seemeth greatest: also the said starre neuer changing his place, was carried about with the daily motion of heauen, as all fixed starres commonly are, and so continued (by little and little, to the eye appearing lesse) for the space of almost fixtene moneths, at what time it was so small, that rather thought by exercise of our vision might imagine the place, than any eye could iudge the presence of the same: and one thing is herein chiefly to be noted, that by the learned skill and consent of the best and most expert Mathematicians, which observed the state, proprietie, and other circumstances belonging to the same starre, it was found to haue bene in place celestiall starre above the moon, eitherwise then euer any comet hath bene seene, or naturally can appeare. Therefore it is supposed, that

Lord treasure-  
rer, lord pri-  
uy seale, lord  
chamberlaine  
with other  
officers.  
Earle of  
Northum-  
berland be-  
headed.

English men  
sent to Ulster  
in Ireland.

The towne  
of Portes-  
mouth re-  
paired.

An reg. 15.  
A strange  
starre appea-  
red.

the signification thereof is directed purposely and specially to some matter not natural, but celestiall, or rather supercelestiall, so strange, as from the beginning of the world neuer was the like.

The 24. of Nouember, Edward earle of Darby, lord Stanley, and Strange, of Knocking, Lord and gouernor of the ile of Man, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the Quenes maiesties priuie counsell, deceased at his house called Latham in Lancashire. His life and death deserving commendation, & craving memorie to be imitated, was such as followeth: His fidelitie vnto 2. kings and 2. quenes in dangerous times, and great rebellions, in which time, and aduoyces, as cause serued, he was lieutenant of Lancashire and Cheshire, & lately offered 10000. men to the quenes maiestie of his own charge for the suppression of the last rebellion. His godly disposition to his tenants, neuer forcing any seruice at their hands, but but payment of their rent: his liberalitie to strangers, and such as serued themselves gratefull to him: his famous house-keeping, & 20. in checkroll neuer discontinuing the space of 42. yeares: his feeding especially of aged persons twice a day 60. and 60. besides all comers, thrice a weeke appointed for his dealing dayes, & every Good-friday thre 35. yeares one with another, 2700. with meate, drinke, money, and money worth. There was neuer gentleman of other that waited in his seruice, but had allowance from him to haue as well wages as otherwile for horse and man. His yearly portion for the dispences of his house 4000. pounds: his eunning in letting bones dislocated or broke: his delicacy of his George and scale to the lord Strange, with exhortation that he might keepe it so vnspotted in fidelitie to his priuie as he had: and his ioy, that he dyed in the quenes fauour: his ioyfull parting this world, his taking leaue of all his seruants, by shaking of hands, and his remembrance to the last day. He was buried at Dymchurch on the fourth of December, in most honorable manner.

The 28. of Nouember, John Hall gentleman, and Oswald Wilkinson late of Poike, and gailor of Poike castell (being before arraigned & condemned of treason) were drawn from the tower of London to Tiboyne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

This yeare a great and sharpe frost almost continually lasted from before the feast of all Saints, till after the feast of Epiphany of our Lord, with sometimes great and deepe snowes, and sometimes rains, which freezed as fast as the same fell to the ground, wherewithough at Wrotham in Kent, and many other places, the acmes and boughs of trees, being ouercharged with ice, brake off and fell from the stocks of the same trees: also the wind continued north and east, till after the Ascension day, with sharpe frosts and snowes, whereby followed a late spring.

The twelfth of Januarie, William lord Howard baron of Effingham, lord priuie scale, knight of the noble order of the garter, and one of the priuie counsell, deceased at Hampton court.

The eighteenth of Januarie, William lord Sommer set earle of Worcester, began his journey towards France to the christening of the kings daughter there in head of the Quenes maiestie of England, who sent with him a font of gold for that purpose, weighing 326. ounces. The said earle with many of his company were robbed vpon y sea by pirates of much of their baggage & 3. or 4. of their men slain.

Earle of Dar  
by deceased.

Hall & Wil-  
kinson exe-  
cuted.

Great frost  
and a sharpe  
winter.

1573.  
Lord Priuie  
scale decea-  
sed.

Earle of Wor-  
cester sent  
into France.

slaine. In France he and his traine were honorably received. At the christening he gave the child to name Elizabeth, & returned into England the 27. of February.

In the moneth of February, through sundry haynous complaints, brought to the Quenes maiestie and her counsell, of pirates that kept the narrow seas doing many robberies, as also the robbing of the earle of Worcester (as is aforesaid) her highnesse, by the aduise of her honourable counsell, tooke order with the lord admirall of England, that he should send to the seas ships and men to scoure the narrow seas, and to apprehend so many pyrats ships as might be met with: and for the better doing thereof, it pleased her maiestie to send one of her owne ships named the Swallow, to be the admirall, vnder the charge of William Holstocke of London esquire, controller of her highnesse ships, who had with him the Gillian, the bark Garet, and the bark of Farnmouth, and 360. able mariners, gunners and souldiers in the sayd thre ships, and one bark which forerode the narrow seas, from the northfoze land as farre northwards as Falmouth in Cornwell, and tooke twenty ships and barks of sundry nations, viz. English, French, and Flemings: but all pirates and in fashion of war. He apprehended in those ships and barks to the number of 900. men of all nations, and sent them to ward, to Sandwith, Dover, Wight, and Portsmouth, whereof thre of them that robbed the earle of Worcester, were shortly after executed at Wight: also the sayd William Holstocke did retire and take from the aboutsayd pirates ships fifteen of sundry marchants ships, laden with merchandise, that were their prizes, being of sundry nations, & let at liberty the sayd fifteen marchants ships & goods, which done, he returned to Portsmouth, and there ended his voyage in March.

Peter Ramus in his commentaries of the wars of Fraunce writeth thus. The earle of Worcester passing into France, certaine Frenchmen and Flemings set vpon him, tooke from him one of his ships, and killed certaine of his men: wherevpon the Quene of England taking displeasure, sent the lord Admirall (saith he) wherein he mislooke the matter, for master William Holstocke was sent (as is aforesaid) who set vpon all the ships French and Flemings, took and caried away what so came to hand, so that twenty of Montgomeries ships were lost, who was going to Rochell with the number of sixtie ships well furnished out of England, with money there borrowed (but neuer repayed) thus his naule being diminished of those twentie ships, when he saw the kings naue nere to Rochell, he directed his course another way, landed at Bel Isle, and tooke both the Isle and Castle.

The fourth of March, a man was hanged in chaines in Saint Georges field beyond Southwarke of London, for murdering the gailor of Northam in the same field.

The 17. of March deceased Reinold Grey of Ruthen, earle of Kent at Hertsmey, and was buried at Saint Giles without Cripple gate.

About the same time died Edmond lord Chandois.

The 25. of March being Wednesday in Easter weeke, and the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, George Browne cruelly murdered two honest men nere into Shooters hill in Kent, the one of them was a wealthy marchant of London, named George Sanders, the other John Beane of Woolwich: which murder was

Earle of  
Worcester  
robbed on  
the sea.

Pyrats on  
the West  
seas.

Pyrats exe-  
cuted.

Peter Ra-  
mus.

A man han-  
ged in Saint  
Georges  
field.  
Earle of Kent  
deceased.

George San-  
ders mur-  
dered at Shoo-  
ters hill.

committed in manner as followeth.

On Tuesday in Easter weeke (the foure and twentieth of March) the layd George Browne receiving secret intelligence by letter from mistresse Anne Drewry, that maister Sanders should lodge the same night at the house of one maister Barnes in Woolwich, and from thence go on foote to Saint Mary Cray the next morning, lay in waite for him by the way, a little from Shooters hill, and there slue both him and John Beane, servant to maister Barnes: but John Beane having ten or eleven wounds, and being left for dead, by Gods providence recovered againe and creeping away on all foure, was found by an old man and his maiden, & conveyed to Woolwich, where he gave evident markes of the murder.

Immediately upon the deed doing, Browne sent mistresse Drewry word thereof by Roger Clement (among them called trusty Roger) he himselfe repaired forthwith to the court at Greenwich, and anon after him came thither the report of the murder also. Then departed he thence unto London, and came to the house of mistresse Drewry, where, though he spake not personally with her, after conference had with her servant trusty Roger, he provided him twenty pounds that same day, for the which she layd certaine plate of her owne, and of mistresse Sanders to gage. On the next morrow being Thursday (having intelligence what Browne was sought for) they sent him five pounds more by the same Roger, warning him to shift for himselfe by flight, which thing he foresawed not to do: nevertheless the lords of the queenes maiesties council, caused so speedy and narrow search to be made for him, that upon the eight and twentieth of the same month, he was apprehended in a mans house of his owne name at Rochester, and being brought backe againe to the court, was examined by the counsell, to whom he confessed the deed, as you have heard; and that he had oftentimes before pretended and sought to do the same, by the instigation of the layd mistresse Drewry, who had promised to make a marriage betwene him and mistresse Sanders (whom he seemed to love exceedingly), nevertheless he protested (though untruly) that mistresse Sanders was not privy nor consenting thereunto. Upon his confession he was arraigned at the the kings bench in Oldchamber hall the eighteenth of Aprill, where he acknowledged himselfe guilty, and was condemned as principall of the murder, according to which sentence, he had judgement, and was executed in Smithfield on Monday the 20 of Aprill, at which time also untruly as she herselfe confessed afterward, he laboured with all means to clear mistresse Sanders of committing euill of her body with him, as also of procuring or consenting to the murder of her husband, and then beginning to sing a Psalm, O Lord turne not away thy face, &c. he flung himselfe besides the ladder, and so shoynd his owne life: he was after hanged by in chains neare unto the place where he had done the fact.

In the meane time mistresse Drewrie an her man being examined, as well by their owne confessions, as by falling out of the matter (and also by Brownes apprehendment thought culpable) were committed to ward. And after mistresse Sanders being delivered of child, and churched (for at the time of her husbands death she looked presently to lye downe) was upon mistresse Drewries mans confession, and other great likelihoods, likewise committed to the Tower, and on

George Browne hanged in Smith field.

on Wednesday the six of May arraigned with mistresse Drewrie at the Guild hall, the effect of whose indictment was; that they by a letter written had bene procurers of the layd murder, and knowing the murder done, had by money and otherwise released the murderer: whereunto they pleaded not guilty, howbeit, they were both condemned as accessaries to maister Sanders death, and executed in Smithfield the thirtieth of May, being Wednesday in Whitsun weeke, at which time they both confessed themselves guilty of the fact. Trustie Roger mistresse Drewries man was arraigned on Friday the eight of May, and being there condemned as accessary, was executed with his mistress: at the time and place aforesaid. Not long after, Anthony Browne, brother to the fornamed George Browne, was for notable felonies conveyed from Newgate to Poole, and there hanged.

The tenth of Aprill, seven pirates, which (among other) had bene taken on the north seas, were led from Southwarke to Wapping, and six of them were there hanged: the other two had their pardon at the gallows.

The 17. of Aprill, a chandlers wife without Aldersgate of London, who had passed her husbands death by poisoning and other wayes, was set on the pillory in Cheape, with three other women, who had bene of her counsell, two of them were with her there whipped.

This yeare the Queenes maiesty of England, being moved by the Regent of Scotland, in the behalfe of the young king of Scots her cousin, sent a power of 1500. Englishmen to the siege of Edenborough castle, sir William Drewry knight marshall of Barwicke, to be general of her forces there, with capitaines as followeth, sir Francis Russell knight, capitaine Reade of Barwicke, and these following, also, capitaine Yaxley, capitaine Wood, capitaine Brickwell, capitaine Pike-man, capitaine Gamore, capitaine Cace, capitaine Carew, capitaine Erington, promost marshall, capitaine A Hall, capitaine Serlees capitaine of the pioneers, and capitaine Barton also of the pioneers. Divers other gentlemen also went thither to seeve of their owne free wills, as sir George Care knight, sir Henry Lea knight, maister Thomas Cecil, maister Michaelle Care, maister Henrie Care, maister William Knolles, maister Thomas Sutton, maister Corton, maister Kelway, maister Dier, maister Tiney, maister William Killigrew, maister William Selby, and other. Sir William Drewry with the capitaines, gentlemen, and number of soldiers before mentioned, passed from Barwicke to Litch, from whence on the 25. of Aprill they marched on to Edenborough, entered the towne, and the same day summoned the castell in forme as followeth:

Sir William Kirkauldie, sometime of Change knight, for as much as the Queenes maiesty my soueraine lady; upon the earnest request of her deare cousin the king of Scots, your soueraine lord, made to her highnesse by his regent, nobility, & states of this realme, after all good means used to haue reduced you to dutifull obedience of his authority by treaty, which hitherto you have not duly backed and wits, to the only hindrance of the braverall peace in this realme; by withholding that his highnesse castle, meaning as it seemeth, to reserve the same for a receptacle of foraine forces, to the manifest dangers both of this realme and of my souerainnesse, and therefore necessarie to remove so perillous a daunger to

Anne Sanders, Anne Drewry, and trusty Roger hanged.

Anthony Browne hanged at Yoke

Pirates hanged at Wapping.

Four women on the pillorie.

Aide sent into Scotland against the castle of Edenborough.

Thomas Churchyard.

both the realmes, for which consideration her maiesty hath sent her aide & factors of men ordnance and munition, vnder my charge & leauing for the repugnation & recouery of the sayd castles, to the said kings use and behalfe, and therefore according to her maiesties commandement and commission, this shall be in due manner to waite, requite, and comfort you, that you render & deliuer the sayd castle, with the whole ordnance artillery, munitions, icicles household stuffe, and such other implements within the same, to me & the use and behalfe of the king your soveraigne, & his regent in his name, immediately after this my letter of commissions, or knowledge of the same, shall come to you: which if you obey, as of duty you ought, then shall I in her maiesties name interpose my selfe to traueile with the regent, counsell, and nobility here for the safety of your liues, &c. Otherwise if you continue in your former obduracy, abiding the canon, then no further to looke for grace or fauor, but you and the rest within that castle to be pursued to the uttermost, and holden as enemies to her maiesty, your owne soveraigne and country. Given at Emdenburgh by me Sir William Drewry knight, generall of her maiesties forces now in Scotland, this 25. of April, 1573.

The Lord Grange captaine of the castle, notwithstanding this summons, refused utterly to yeeld the castle, who thereupon receiued such answer from the generall, as stood not to his contentation. Hereupon were the pioneers set in hand to cast trenches, and to raise mounts in places conuenient to plant the ordnance vpon. And then began the siege of the castle in due places, where were erected six mounts. The first was for the regent, called the kings mount. The second for Sir William Drewry generall there. The third was gouerned by Sir George Carie. The fourth by Sir Henry Lea. The fifth by master Thomas Sutton master of the ordnance in the north part of England. There was at this siege as is reported 1500. Englishmen, and of Scots five hundred, or rather 1500. there was also one with another peeces of artillery 30. to wit, 6. canons nine halfe canons, nine culuerings, sixe sakers. They within spared not to bestow such as they had, as well at the pioneers as souldiers, in so much that diuerse were hurt, and some slaine, before the trenches and mounts might be brought to perfection, but they within escaped not free, especially after that the trenches & mounts were brought in state to defend the assailants, who watching and warding in the trenches, answered them within the castle very roughly. On the 17. of May began the battery of the castle, so that there were thirty canons shot off against the same, and so well bestowed at Davids tower, that by the ruines thereof then and after, the force of the English canons were calke to be seene. The 18. 19. and 20. of May, the canons and demy canons were not idle, but the one and twenty the whole battery began on each side the castle from the trenches and mounts very hotly, & still they within ceased not to make answer againe with their artillery, killing and hurting diuers both English and Scots, but such was the diligence of the English gunners, that they displaced the ordnance in the castle, and broke one of their chiefe canons iust in the mouth, whereby the same was broken in peeces. The 26. of May, the assault was giuen at seven of the clocke in the morning to the Spurre, which by the hardy manhood of the assailants was won, and was no sooner entered by the Englishmen, but that the generals ensigne was shewed and spred vpon the front

and

and top thereof, to the great discomfort of them within the castle. In the meantime noblest these were appointed to giue the assault thus to the Spurre, there were certaine English men and Scots commaunded to make a countenance of an assault at the well side of the castle, whereby those that assaulted the Spurre might the more easily obtaine their purpose, but they rashly aduenturing further then they had in commaundement, were beaten backe and repulsed, with 28. or 30. of their company slaine and hurt. The same day toward night, they within the assault at the well side of the castle, which being graunted, with assurance of all hostilitie from that houre vnto the 28. of May, the lord Petteroe was let downe by a rope from the castle, and afterward the lord Grange himselfe captaine of the castle, and Robert Meluin came likewise downe to talke with the Generall, and such other as were appointed to accompanie him: hereupon at length to wit, the said 28. of May, the castle was surrendered into the hands of Sir William Drewry, and so it rested in his possession for the time, and his ensigne was set vp and spread during the same time in sundry places of the castle, and afterwards to the great honour of England, by him it was deliuered vnto the use of the king of Scots, and part of the spoile of the castle was giuen to the souldiers, the canons and artillery, with certaine other instruments, left to the king. If the English men by force had taken it, it was decreed that they should haue had the whole spoile except the artillery, & so should haue enioyed it by the space of three daies.

Causes of deliuerie of the castle were these:

1 Lacke of water: the well within the castle was stopped and defiled by the ruines of the castle: the other well without the castle could not serue them, for that there was a mount made to hinder them. Another water there was which was unknowne to them which were without, and was taken from them when the Spurr of the castle was taken, out of the which they were wont to haue a pint a day for every souldier.

2 Diuerse sickes.

3 Diuerse hurt.

4 Not many to maintaine the castle, which had no space to take any rest they were so pilled and overwaried.

5 Diuerse diuided in opinion.

6 Some were no souldiers.

7 No aide was to be looked for.

The 16. of June, the prisoners were deliuered by the said Sir William Drewry in presence of sundry Scots and Englishmen, vnto the regent, and that done, the same day the said Sir William Drewry with his power departed toward Warwick. The names of the prisoners were these, Sir William Kerkaudie lord of Grange, and Captaine of the castle of Emdenburgh, the lord Hume, the lord Ledington Secretarie, the Lord of Petteroe constable of the castle, the counsellor of Arguile, the laird of Redington, the laird of Changer, with others: in all to the number of men, one hundred thirty foure, women thirty foure, boys ten.

The twentieth of June, betwene the houres of one and two of the clocke in the afternoon,

Edinburgh  
castle yeelded to the  
Englishmen.

Hailie in  
Northamp-  
tonshire.

afternoone, a great tempest of hail & rainie happened at Toller in Northamptonshire, wherethrough the houses in that towne were bozne downe, and fortie more were perished with the waters which rose of that tempest, the halesones were square and sixe inches about: one child was there drowned, and many sheepe and other cattell, which when the water was fallen, many of them were lying on the high hedges, where the waters had left them.

Thomas  
Woodhouse.

The 16. of June, Thomas Woodhouse a priest of Lincolne, who had been long prisoner in the Fleet, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, and there condemned of high treason, who had iudgement to be hanged and quartered, and was executed at Tiborne the 19. of June.

Earle of Essex and the  
lord Rich  
with other  
sailed into  
Ireland.

The 16. of August, Walter earle of Essex, accompanied with Robert lord Rich, and diuers other gentlemen, embarked themselves in severall ships at Liverpool, and the wind sitting very well, tooke their voyage towards Ireland. The earle after many and great dangers on the sea, at length was Copemans Flatts, from whence in a pinuelle of captaine Percies he was brought safe to Knockstragus. The lord Rich with the like daungers landed at castell Balclish, where being met by captaine Maib, maister Smith, and maister Moore prisoners, was conducted to Inch abbey maister Malbies house, where he had in a readinesse on the morrow morning an hundred and sixtie hostemen for their safegard to Knockstragus, beside sixtie kernes which went a foot through the woods: there was amongst these a thirtie bowmen with a baggage, the rest had darts. Sir Brian Mac-Pheh had payed the country, and taken away what was to be carried or dynted, but on the first of September he came to Knockstragus to the earle of Essex, and there made his submission: a number of kine were offered 30. sh. beside sheepe & swine.

After him Ferdorough Macgillastick the blind Scots son, Kozze, Oge, Mac-willine did the like, and diuers other sent their messengers to the earle, to signify that they were at his lordships disposition, as the baron of Dongarrow, Condaniel, Donel, and the captaine of Balinto. The earle of Essex having the countrie of Claniboy and other.

Earle of Essex captaine  
Generall of  
Vlster in  
Ireland.

The Queenes maistrie of England directed her letters to the lord deputie of Ireland, willing him to make by commission the earle of Essex captaine General of the Irish nation in the prouince of Ulster, and to duntie the countrey wdon, Claniboy and elsewhere, &c.

The 11. of October, Peter Burchet gentleman (of the middle Temple) with his dagger, suddenly assailed, cruelly wounded, and meant to haue murdered a seruicable gentleman named John Hawkins squire, as he with Sir William Winter and another gentleman rode towards Westminster, in the high street neare to the Strand beyond the Temple bar of London, for which fact the said Burchet being apprehended and committed to the tower, was after examined concerning the fact, who answered that he tooke the said maister Hawkins for another gentleman, to wit, Sir Christopher Hatton: and being further examined, he was found to hold certayne erroneous opinions, for the which he was sent to the Zollardes tower, from thence being called into the Consistorie of Pauls church, before the right reuerend father Edwin bishop of London, and other, and by them examined, he stood in his opinions, till the sentence of death,

Peter Burchet wounded  
maister  
Hawkins.

Peter Burchet found  
to be an hereticke.

as at heretike was ready to haue bene pronounced against him on the fourth of November: but through the earnest pectuations of diuers learned men, who tooke great paines in that matter, it was said he renounced, forsooke, and abjured his opin on for erroneous and damnable, promising neuer to returne to them, and also willingly to do and performe all such penance as the bishop his Ordinarie should iudge him, but nothing was done, wherefore on the ninth of November by commandement of the Counsell, the said Peter Burchet was removed from the Zollardes tower to the Tower of London, where on the next morrow about noone, whilst one of the turniers that had by appointment kept him company was going downe, and locked the doore after him, leaving the other with him, called Hugh Longworth, who stood at a window reading in the Bible, the said Burchet walking by and downe in the chamber, tooke a billets end out of the fire, and knocked the said Longworth on the head, and left not till he had stricken him stark dead, and then drawing him behinde the chamber doore, he awaited the coming by of the other, likewise to haue dispatched him, but the other opening the doore, and murthering his fellow from the window where he left him; taking good regard, espied him lying behinde the doore, which he clapped to; ran downe for more helpe, and returning found his fellow murdered as is afore shewed. For the which fact on the next morrow, he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and from thence returned to Somersets house at the Strand, where he remained that night. And the next morrow being the 12. of November, he was brought out to a gibbet, set up for that purpose, nigh the place where he wounded maister Hawkins, he had no speech, nor shewed signe of repentance, but was by force and strength of men partly drawn, partly borne and thrust vp to the gibbet, where after his right hand being stricken off, and nayled to the gibbet, he was hanged.

This price about Lammas, wheate was sold at London for three shillings the bushell, but shortly after it was raised to foure shillings, five shillings, sixe shillings, and beside Christmas to a noble and seven shillings, which so continued long after: becke was sold for twenty pence, and two and twentie pence the stone, and all other flesh and white meats at an excessive price, all kinde of salt fish very deere, as sixe herrings two pence, &c. yet great plentie of fresh fish, and oft times the same very cheape: bay salt at three shillings the bushell, &c. All this deartly notwithstanding (thanks be giuen to God) there was no want of any thing to him that wanted no money.

The fourth of Apill being Palme Sunday, there was taken laying of masse in the lord Morleies house within Abgate of London, one Albon Dolman priest, and the lady Morley with her children and diuers others, were also taken hearing the said masse. There was also taken the same day and howe for laying masse at the lady Giffords in Trinitie lane, one Oliver Heywood priest, and for hearing of the said masse the said lady Gifford, with diuers other gentwomen. There was also taken at the same instant in the lady Brownes house in Cow lane for laying masse, one Thomas Heywood priest, and one John Cooper priest, with the lady Browne: and diuers other were likewise taken, being hearers of the said masse. All such persons were for the same offences indicted, committed, and had the

Peter Burchet abjured his hereticke. Peter Burchet submitted himselfe to do penance as it was laid.

Peter Burchet killed his keeper.

Peter Burchet hanged.

An. reg. 16.  
1574.

Deart without  
scarcitie.

Priests laying masse apprehended.

the law according to the statute in that case provided. There was also found in their severall chappels, divers Latine bookes, beades, images, palmes, chollers, crosses, bellinets, piers, pargers, and such like.

Pier Ramus

Countie Montgomerie was taken in Roymanoir in the castle of Donstro, on the 27. of May.

A monstrous fish.

The ninth of July, at six of the clocke at night, in the isle of Chanet besides Ramegate in the parish of Saint Peter under the clift, a monstrous fish, or whale of the sea did shoot himselfe on shore, where for want of water, beating himselfe on the sands, he died about six of the clocke in the next morning, before which time he roied, and was heard more then a mile on the land. The length of this fish was two and twentieth paces, the neather iaw twelue foote the opening, one of his eyes being taken out of his head, was more then sixe hoies in a cart could drayn, a man stood upright in the place from whence the eye was taken, the thickness from the backe whereon he lay, to the top of his belly (which was upward) was fourtenc foote, his taile of the same breadth, betwene his eyes twelue foote, three men stood upright in his mouth, some of the ribs were sixtenc foot long, his tounge was sixtens foot long, his liver two cart loades, into his nostrils any man might haue crept: the oile being boyled out of the head was parmacetic, the oile of his body was whitish, and sweet of tast.

Obsequie at Pauls for the French king.

Peter Ramus Agnes Bridges and Rachel Pinder at Pauls crosse for counterfeiting to be punished.

The sixtenth of August, a solenne obsequie was kept in Saint Pauls church at London for Charles the ninth king of France, who being poisoned, deceased on the thirtieth of May last before passed.

The sixtenth of August being Sunday, Agnes Bridges a maid about the age of twenty yeares, and Rachel Pinder a wench about the age of 11. or 12. yeares, who both of them had counterfeited to be possessed by the diuell, (whereby they had not onely miraculously deluded many people, both men and women, but also diuerse such persons as otherwise seemed to be of good wit and understanding) stood before the preacher at Pauls crosse, where they acknowledged their hypocriticall counterfeiting, with penitent behauiours, requiring forgiveness of God and the world, and the people to pray for them. Also their severall examinations and confessions were there openly read by the preacher, and afterwards published in print, for the further posteritie hereafter to beware of the like deceivers.

The fourth of September in the afternoone, such a storme of raime happened at London, as the like of long time could not be remembered, wherethrough the channells of the citie suddenly rising, ranne with such forcible course towards the common Hoies, that a lad of the age of 18. yeares, minding to haue leapt ouer the channell neare unto Downegate, was borne ouer with the streame, and by the same carried from the conduit thre towards the Chamis, with such a swiftnesse, that no man with slaues or otherwaies could stay him, till he came against a cart wheeles flood in the water gate, afoze which time he was drowned & stark dead.

Michaelmas terme, which had bene adiourned by proclamation, began at Wellminster on the first of Nouember. The same first day in the morning there happened two great tides at London in the Chamis, the first by course, the other within one houre after, which overflowed the marshes, with many baulkes and sellers neare adioyning.

A lad of 18. yeares old drowned in a channell at London.

Terme adiourned. Two tides in one houre.

The fourtenth of Nouember being Sunday, about midnight following, diuine strange impressions of fire and smoke were seene in the aire, to pcedde forth of a blacke cloud in the north towards the South, which so continued till the next morning that it was day light. The next night following, the heauens from all parts did seeme to burne maruclouslly ragingly, and ouer our heads the flames from the boyizon round about rising did meete, and these double and roll one in another, as if it had bene in a cleare furnace.

Fiery impressions.

The eighteenth day at night, were very stormie and tempestuous winde out of the south (I haue not knowne the like out of that quarter) especially after midnight till the next morning that it was day light. These are to be recited as tokens of Gods wrath tradic bent against the world for sinne now abounding, and also of his great mercie, who doth but onely shew the rod wherewith he daily picture to be beaten.

An. reg. 17. Tempest of wind.

This yeare at London after harvest, the price of wheate began by little and little to fall from seuen shillings to three shillings the bushell, at which price it stayed (little or nothing rising or falling all the yeare after, but bay salt was raised from three shillings to foure, flue, and sixe shillings the bushell, the like wherof had neuer bene seene or heard within this realme.

Bay salt deare.

The foure and twentieth of February, the feast of St. Marchie, on which day the faire was kept at Crockelburie, a strange thing happened there, for after a flood which was not great, but such as thereby the medowes neare adioyning were couered with water, in the afternoone there came downe the river of Tuon great numbers of flies and beetles, such as in summer euings use to strike men in the face, in great heapes, a foot thicke about the water, so that to credible mens iudgement, there were seene within a paire of but-lengths of those flies about an hundred quarters. The muls therabouts were dammed by with them for the space of foure daies after, and then were cleared by digging them out with shovels: from whence they came is yet unknowne, but the day was cold and a hard frost.

1575 Flies in February, the number strange.

The 26. of Februarie, betwene foure and sixe of the clocke in the afternoone, great earthquakes happened in the cities of York, Worcester, Gloucester, Bilston, Hereford, and in the countries about, which caused the people to run out of their houses for feare they should haue fallen on their heads. In Crockelburie, Bredon, and other places the houses fell from the cupboards, and the bookes in mens studies from the shelves. In Boxton chappell the people being on their knees at evening prayer, the ground moouing, caused them to runne away in great feare that the dead bodies would haue risen, or the chappell to haue fallen: part of Bisham castle fell downe, with certaine bricke chimnies in gentlemens houses. The bell in the Ware hall of Denbigh was caused to toll twice by shaking of the hall, &c.

Earthquake.

On Easter day, which was the thirde of April, about nine of the clocke in the afternoone, was disclosed a congregation of Anabaptists Dutchmen, in a house without the barres of Algate at London, wherof fuent and twentieth were taken and sent to prison, and foure of them bearing fagots recanted at Pauls crosse on the sixtenth day of May, in forme as followeth:

Anabaptists bare fagots at Pauls crosse.

He Wilheras J. T. R. H. being seduced by the diuell the spirit of erreur, and by false.



false teachers his ministers haue saue into certaine most detestable and damnable heresies, namely:

- 1 That Christ tooke not flesh of the substance of the blessed virgine Mary.
- 2 That infants of the faithfull ought not to be baptized.
- 3 That a christian man may be a magistrate, or beare the sword or office of authority.
- 4 That it is not lawfull for a christian to take an oath.

Now by the grace of God, and through conference with good and learned ministers of Christ his Church, I do understand and acknowledge the same to be most damnable and detestable heresies, and do aske God here before his church, merre for my said former errors, and do forsake them, repent and renounce them, and abjure them from the bottom of my heart, professing that I certainly beleue,

- 1 That Christ tooke flesh of the substance of the blessed virgine Mary.
- 2 That infants of the faithfull ought to be baptized.
- 3 That a christian man may be a magistrate, or beare the sword and office of authority.
- 4 That it is lawfull for a christian to take an oath.

And further I confesse, that the whole doctrine and religion established & published in this realme of England, as also that which is received and preached in the Church here in the city, is sound, true, and according to the word of God, whereunto in all things I submit my selfe, and will most gladly be a member of the said Church, from henceforth utterly abandoning and forsaking all and every Anabaptistical error.

The 17. day of May, about midnight following the right reuerend father in God Matthew Parker, doctour of divinity, archbishop of Canterbury, deceased at Lambeth, and was there honorably buried.

This reuerend father examined thoroughly the English translation of the holy Bibles, wherein he partly used the help of his brethren bishops, and other doctours, and caused the same to be newly printed in the largest volume, for the furniture of many churches then wanting. Also making diligent search for the antiquities of the Britons, and English Barons, to the end those monuments might be carefully kept, he caused them to be well bound and trimly covered, and such whereof he knew very few examples to be extant (among the which was Matthew Paris, Matthew Floribus, Thomas Walsingham & other, all which he received of my hands, he caused to be printed. The famous pallace of his see at Canterbury, first builded by Stephen Langton one of his predecessors, & since by long continuance decayed, and in Thomas Crenmiers time consumed with fire, he renewed builded and fully restored with the charges of more than 1400 £.

He founded a grammar schoole in Northdale in the county of Lancaster.

To Corpus Christi college in Cambridge he procured 12. schollerships, and bare the charges in making and furnishing two chambers for schollers, and the newward library of the same college.

Item he gave to the outward and inward library of the said college, a goodly company of printed booke, and a great number of written booke, of great antiquity and much value.

Item,

Item, he procured to the said college, the patronage of Saint Mary Church in London.

Item he hath founded two fellowships in the said College, and procured one Charter of Dormant to the sum of 100. £. by yeare.

Item he hath given to the same College of silver plate double gilt, 100. ounces, 3. quarters, and furnished to them a lease with the impeachment of 14. £. 8. s. yearly for 17. yeares.

Item 100. £. to the maintenance of a fire in the hall, from Whannas to Candmas and by his last will and testament, 500. £.

Item to diuine schollers chambers within the said College, diuine beddes, with sufficient bedding and bookes to remaine for euer.

Item he hath founded for euer five sermons to be preached in diuine places of Dorsethe euer yeare in rogation weeke, and 40. s. to be deuoted at Dorsethe to the poore and other.

Item to the city of Dorsethe one balon and cower of siluer and double gilt 175. ounces.

Item to the towne of Hasel in Dorsethe for euer an annuity of 50. £. to be deuoted to the poore, with a sermon in Rogation weeke.

Item to Gurnal and Calus College one schollership, with a standing cup & a pot of siluer double gilt 55. ounces 2. quarters, and one nest of goblets with a cover siluer and gilt with a number of good bookes to their library.

Item to Trinity hall one schollership, a standing cup and a pot of siluer & gilt, 55. ounces, a nest of goblets siluer and gilt with a cover, & bookes to their library.

Item to the Chinnerly library siue old ancient written booke, and 50. printed booke &c.

The 21. of May being Whitsun-euen, one man and ten women Anabaptists were in the consistory of Pauls condemned to be burnt in Smithfield, but after great paines taken with them, onely one woman was converted, the other were banished the land.

Anabaptists banished.

The 12. of June flood at Pauls Crosse 5. persons Englishmen of the last term The family of Loue, who there confessed themselves utterly to detest as well the author of that said H. N. as all his damnable errors and heresies.

Five persons of the family of Loue stood at Pauls Crosse.

The 22. of July, two Dutchmen Anabaptists were burnt in Smithfield who died in great heere with roaring and crying. The 20. of July in the afternoon was a great tempest of lightning & thunder, wherethrough both men and beasts miners places were stricken dead. Also at that time fell great abundance of hails, wherof the flowers in many places were found to be 6. or 7. inches about.

Anabaptists burnt. Thunder & hails.

The fourth of September being Sunday about leuen of the clocke in the morning, a certaine glasse house which sometime had bene the Crossed friers hall, near to the tower of London, burst out on a terrible fire, whereunto the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Sheriffs with all expedition repaired, and practised there all means possible by bucket-buckets, hookes, and otherwise to beat quench it, all which notwithstanding, whereas the same house in a litle time before had consumed great quantity of wood by making of fine drinking glasses, now it selfe having within it more than thousand billets of wood, was all consumed.

The glasse house burnt.

to the stone walls, which walls greatly defended the fire from spreading farther, and doing any more harme.

The 26. of September, a Poulsters wife in the parish of Christs church within the Prewgate of London, was delivred and brought to bed of four children at one burden, all females, or maiden children, which were christened by the names Elizabeth, Mary, Margaret, and Dorothy, and the same day moneth the mother was buried, but all the four children living and in good liking were borne to church after her.

The 11. of February, Anne Aueries widow, forswearing her selfe for a little money that she should have paid for five pound of towne, at a shop in Duloodstreet of London, fell immediately downe speechelesse, calling by at her mouth in great abundance, and with horrible sinke, the same matter which by natures course should have bene voided downewards, till she died. a terrible example of Gods iust iudgement upon such as make no conscience of falsly swearing against their brother.

The 15. of Februarie, Edmond Grindale sometime bishop of London, late archbishop of Yorke, was in the Chapter house of S. Paules church at London, elected archbishop of Canterbury.

The 5. of March in the night, through a great stau of wind then in the north-west, a tiltboate with about the number of 31. persons men and women, coming from Grauesend toward London, were all drowned, one boy excepted.

The 30. of May, Thomas Greene goldsmith was taken from Prewgate of London to Tideside, and there hanged, headed and quartered, for clipping of coine both gold and silver.

The 15. of June, Martin Frobisher, being furnished of adventures, with two small barkes and one pinnell departed from Blacke mall, upon his voyage for the discouerie of a passage to Cataya, by the Northwell seas. Upon the 1. of July he had sight (as he iudged) of Friland, but durst not approach the same, by reason of the great ice that lay along the coast: not far from thence he lost his pinnell, & one of his barkes, who mistrusting the danger of tempests returned home, with report that their Generall Martin Frobisher was cast away, which captaine notwithstanding continued his course Northwell beyond any man that heretofore discovered, & the 20. of July had sight of a high land, which he named Q. Elizabeths Foreland: and after that another Foreland with a great passage, deuiding (as it were) the two maine lands asunder, this place he named Frobishers Seanes. After he had passed thre leagues further, he went on shoare, found the same to be inhabited with savage people, caught one of them into his barke, and returned into England in the moneth of August following: one of his company brought from thence a peece of blacke stone, much like to a sea-rolle in colour, which being brought to certaine goldsmiths in London, to make assay thereof, found it to hold gold, and that very richly for the quantity as they affirmed, but other sayd the contrary, and so it is pproved.

The 29. of July, a woman was bent at Tunbridge in Kent, for poisoning of her husband: and two dayes before, a man named Oxley, was hanged at Wadlstone for being accessarie to the same fact.

A strang.

A strange peece of worke, and almost incredible, was brought to passe by an Englishman borne within the city of London, and a cleare of the Chancery named Peter Bales, who by his industry and practise of his pen continued and writ within the compasse of a penny, in Latine, the Lords prayer, the Crede, the ten Commandments, a prayer to God, a prayer for the queene, his polie, his name, the day of the moneth, the yeare of our Lord, and the raigne of the queene: And at Hampton court he presented the same to the queenes maistie in the head of a ring of gold, couered with a Christall, and presented therewith an excellent spectacle by him deuised for the rather reading thereof, wherewith her maistie read all that was written therein, and did weare the same vpon her finger.

Also about the same time Marke Scalior black-smith borne in London, for triall of workmanship, made one hanging locke of yron, Steele, and brasse, a pipe key filed three square, with a pot vpon the shaft, and the beu with two ellcs, all cleane wrought, which weighed but one graine of gold or wheate coine: he made also a chaine of gold of 43. linkes, to the which chaine the locke and key being fastned and put about a bras necke she drew the same, all which locke, key, chaine and flea, weighed but one graine and a halfe, as is yet to be seene vpon Coyne-hill by Leaden hall, at the sayd Marks house.

The moneth of August, many complaints being brought to the Queenes maistie and her counsell vpon the fluslingers, for great spoiles and robberies by them daily committed vpon her highnesse subiects, her maistie gaue order to put four good ships, and two barkes of her owne to the seas, vnder the charge of maister William Ho stocke esquire, comptroller of all her highnesse ships, with 1100. men, victualled for five weekes, in which time was by them taken eight fluslingers ships and barkes, prizes, and 220. sea rourers in them, who were sent on land to sundry prisons.

Walter Deuereux earle of Essex, and earle marshall of Ireland, knight of the order of the garter, falling sicke of a lake on the 21. of August was grievously tormented by the space of 22. dayes, and deccased on the 12. of September at Dublin in Ireland.

The 10. of Nouember, in the city of Worcester, a cruell and unnatural homicide as another Caine, murdered his owne naturall and louing brother, he first smote out his baines with an are, then cut his throte, and after buried him vnder the hart of a chimney, thinking thereby (though wrongly) yet quietly to haue emoyed his brothers goods long before in his possession, but not long after this secret murder coming to light, the murderer was rewarded according to his deserts.

The 17. of March, through a strange tempest which hapned in the North neare to a towne called Richmon, not onely cottages, trees, barnes, and haystackes, but also the most part of a church called Patrick Brumton, was ouerthrowne, with most strange lights in the ayre both terrible and fearful.

The 26. of March, the new Conduit neare vnto Oldborne, and a handball with one cocke at Oldborne bridge, were begun to be founded by William Lamb, sometime gentleman of the chappell to king Henry the eight, now citizen and clothworker of London, the water wherof is conueyed in pipes of lead from

A strange writing with in the compasse of a penny.

Pirates and sea rourers taken, and sent to prison.

A murderer of his brother hanged.

An. reg. 19.

1577. Patrick Brumton ouerturned.

Charitable acts of Maister Lamb. Oldborne conduit built.

Four children at one burden.

An. reg. 18.

1576. God punisheth penury.

Archbishop elected.

Tilt-boate drowned.

Greene hanged.

Frobishers first voyage for the discouery of Cataya.

A stone sayd to be gold, which was a mere deceipt. A woman bent at Tunbridge.

from diuerſe ſprings to one head, and from thence to the ſaid conduit and ſtandart more then 2000. yards in length, all which of his owne coſts and charges, amounting to the ſum of 1500. pounds, was fully finiſhed the 24. of Auguſt in the ſame year: more of his charitable acts, I haue ſet downe in my ſummarie of the Chronicles.

This yeare in the moneth of April, the decayed ſtone houſe, called the tower upon London bridge, was begun to be taken downe, and the heads of traitors being remooued thence, were ſet on the gate at the bidge foot towards Southwacke. And on the 28. of Auguſt next following, ſir Iohn Langley lord Mayor of the citie of London, laid the firſt ſtone of a new foundation of a tower in the ſame place, which tower was moſt beautifully finiſhed in the moneth of September, in the yeare of Chriſt 1579.

The 31. of May, Martin Frobiſher with one ſhip and two barkes furniſhed for that purpoſe, ſailed from Harwich in Eſſex, towards Cataya by the northweſt ſea, & cutted his ſtraits beyond Queene Elizabeths Foreland about 30. leagues, where he went on ſhoare, and finding ſtore of gold ore, as it was truly ſaid, fraught his ſhip and barkes, caught a man, woman and child of that countrie, and then on the 24. of Auguſt returning from thence, arrived at Wiſſford haue in Wales on the 20. of September next following, but neither the man, woman, nor child liued long in this countrie, nor his ore proued gold but dyſſe.

The 4.5. and 6. daies of July, were the aſſiſes holden at Oxford, where was arraigned and condemned one Rowland Ienkes for his ſeditious ſong, at which time there aroſe amonſt the people ſuch a daumpe, that almoſt all were ſmothered, very few eſcaped that were not taken at that inſtant: the Juroys died preſently. Shortly after died ſir Robert Bell lord chiefe Baron, ſir Robert de Olie, ſir William Babington, maiſter Weneman, maiſter de Olie high Sheriffe, M. Dauers, M. Harcourt, M. Kirle, M. Phetep lace, M. Greenwood, M. Foſſier, M. Naſh, Sergeant Baram, maiſter Seeuens, &c. there died in Oxford 300. perſons, and ſickned there, but died in other places 200. and odde from the 6. of July to the 12. of Auguſt, after which day died not one of that ſickneſſe, for one of them infected not another, nor any one woman or child died thereof.

On ſonday the 4. of Auguſt, betwene the houres of 9. and 10. of the clocke in the forenoone, whileſt the miniſter was reading of the ſecond leſſon in the pariſh church of Blithborough a towne in Suffolke a ſtrange and terrible tempeſt of lightning and thunder ſtrake through the wall of the ſame church into the ground almoſt a yard deepe, brane downe all the people on that ſide about twenty perſons, then renting the wall by to the Keneſtrie, clef the doore, and returning to the ſteeple, rent the timber, brake the chimes, and ſed toward Worgey ſixe miles off. The people that were ſtricken downe, were found groueling more then halfe an houre after, whereof a man more then forty yeares, & a boy of ſixtene yeares old were found ſharke dead, the other were ſcathed. The like ſhall of lightning and cracks of thunder rent the pariſh church of Worgey nine miles from Wrothſam, & ſoong in ſunder the wiers and wheelies of the clocke, ſue two men which late in the beſſer when other were at Wrothſam, and ſcathed another which hardly eſcaped.

The 19. of Nouember, the new Sergeants at the law, ſeuen in number, had

Tower on  
London  
bridge taken  
downe.

Second  
voyage to  
Cataya.

Strange  
ſickneſſe at  
Oxford.

Tempeſt in  
Suffolke.

An. reg. 20.  
Sergeants  
ſeſſe.

their ſeal in the Temple at London.

The 30. of Nouember, Cuthbert Mayne was by awne, hanged, and quartered at Lawneſſone in Cornewall, for preferring Romane power.

And here I thinke good to ſet downe a declaration ſent by the Queene's maieſtie of England vnto the King of Spaine, containing a iuſtification of her proceedings with the States of the low countries.

The Queene's maieſtie being giuen to underſtand of diuerſe moſt ſlaunders and falſe brutes giuen out touching her proceedings and dealings with the States of the low countries, tending as it were to make her the author and principall nourisher of the ciuill troubles in the ſaid countries: and doubting that the ſetters and ſpreaders abroad of the ſaid brutes, to ſeek by all means they may to induce her good brother the king of Spaine to beleue the ſaid falſe and malicious ſurmises to be true, with meaning thereby to breed a breach & interruption of the good amitie betwene them: her Maieſtie hauing therefore nothing more in recommendation then her honour, and to be reputed a Prince that deſireth to maintaine and continue good amitie with the Princes her neighbours (whatſoeuer hath bene giuen out maliciously to the contrarie) being able to iuſtifie her whole actions before God and the world, aduocall towards him as other Princes her neighbours, hath thought it very expedient for the earneſt deſire he hath to ſatiſſie the ſaid king, to ſet downe in writing a declaration (ſuch as the will maintaine to be true in the word of a Prince) of her proceedings with the States, to the end the ſaid King bring truly inſoigned therein, ſuch cauſes and ſcruples of ſuſpition, as might any way hinder the good amitie betwene them, might be remooued, and the ſame reſtoꝝed to as great perfection and integritie as hath bene heretofore betwene any their progenitors, which ſaid declaration, tending to that good end aboue mentioned, her Maieſtie alſo hath thought meete to accompany it well with an aduile vnto the ſaid king, what way in her opinion were moſt fit for him to take for the continuance of the ſaid countries vnder his obedience, and the reſtoꝝing of the ſame vnto their former quietneſſe and repoſe, as alſo with her reſolution in thoſe caſes of the ſaid countries, in caſe the ſaid king ſhall not condeſcend to take ſome way of pacification, according to her Maieſties moſt ſincere and friendly aduile.

And firſt touching her proceedings with the States, ſhe doubteth not but that if the king ſhall reſoꝝt to his owne knowledge, and call to remembrance how often ſince the firſt breaking out of the ciuill diſſention in thoſe countries, her Maieſtie hath mooued him by ſumme miniſters, ſent as well vnto himſelfe as vnto his vnder-gouernours in the ſaid countries, for warning both him and them of the miſchiefs preſently then fallen out, and aduiled him to take ſome ſpedie way for the preuention of the ſame, he cannot but in honour and conſcience confeſſe, that her Highneſſe hath therein diſcharged the dutie of a faithfull friend, and good alie in that beſaiſe. Of which aduile if it might pleaſe him to haue taken proſite, thoſe his countries being preſently in a moſt perplext ſtate, had bene ſaved from the ruine and deſtruction they are now apparantly running into, his people and ſubiects preſerued from ſlaughter and bloodſhed, his rich towneſſes continued unpoyſoned, and the whole gouernement kept from perill of alienation: and if herein for her

A declaration  
ſent by the  
Queene to the  
king of  
Spaine.

Cuthbert  
Mayne executed.

Maieslies iustificacion, neither these friendly offices, nor the word and faith of a Prince may suffice, yet her owne accounts themselves may serue to iustifie her in the eyes and sight of all the world: That she hath sought to continue those countreys vnder the Kings obedience, and hath not at any time intended to impatronize her selfe of any part of them, a matter which perhaps other Princes hauing like aduantages offered by some part of his people, would not haue refused, and therefore may thinke her selfe euill dealt withall, in case to rare an example should be so hardly or vnfriendlyly interpreted. And as her Maieslie hath not left any good office vndone towards the King and his ministers tending to pacification, and the perturbations of those countreys vnder his obedience: so on the other side, she hath not omitted by sundrie messengers sent both to the Prince of Orange and the States, aswell to perswade them to cease their ciuill warres, and to take some way of peace and agreement amongst themselves, as also to continue their auncient obedience vnder the said King their naturall Lord and soueraign, being prouoked thereto vpon secret, but yet verie true and certaine aduertisements giuen her of great offers made vnto them by some (whom she forbearth to name for good respects) to haue withdrawen them from their obedience. And herein it becometh many perturbations beset by messengers sent of purpose to aduise them to continue their obedience to the King, her Maieslie had not furnished them in the time of their necessitie with a portion of money, aswell to serue them for the speedy execution of the pacification therin in Tractate betwene Don Iohn and them, as for the keeping of them from a desperate putting off themselves into the hands of other princes, it did manifestly appeare that the pacification and accord had not bene to soone made, and that they for lacke thereof should haue bene diuicid for their defence, to haue deliuered some part of those countreys, to the possession of such as would not haue bene remooued without the spending of many millions, and the losse of many thousand mens liues. Of the true cause of this support, her Maieslie is the more willing to make mention, for that she is informed, that notwithstanding her good and sincere meaning in that behalfe, other wrong and sinister interpretations haue bene made of the same, as the like also hath bene done of other her proceedings. Amongst the rest, her Maieslie hath thought it expedient to answer one calumnie contained in a letter fethered on Don Iohn, and published in a booke lately set out by the States in their Iustificacion, by the which her Maieslie is charged to haue encouraged the Prince of Orange not to stand to the pacification, and withall did for his better encouragement, offer vnto him any assistance she could yeeld (a matter most slanderous and vntrue) for that her Maieslie being giuen to vnderstand by the Viscount of Gaunt, sent vnto her from Don Iohn, how he found himselfe greued with the Prince of Orange, for that (as he affirmed) the said Prince did not obferue the said pacification, her Maieslie did immediatlie dispatch an expresse messenger vnto the said Prince, both to charge him with Don Iohns accusation, as also to aduise (and that most effectually) to obserue duely the said pacification, vnto towards him some threats in case he should seeke to violate the same, wherein she could find no other

other disposition, but that he was most desirous to keepe all the parts of the said pacification, as the onely meane of the ending of the long ciuill warre: The like aduise did she also giue to the States, requiring no lesse continuance of the pacification, being raised first by Don Iohn, and then afterwards by the King, then they to whom the benefit thereof did most properly and peculiarly appertaine. Her Maieslies proceedings and dealings with the Prince and States hauing bene such as hath bene before alleaged, and reduced, she both appeals to the King himselfe, who she thinketh will truly and fully looke into the truth of the matter, and also to all others that shall not be transported with passion, whether the said proceedings are not to be maintained to be both iust and honourable, whatsoever hath bene maliciously giuen out to the contrarie. And herein her Maieslie is perswaded, that hardly any other Prince that hath some waies bene so vnfriendlyly dealt withall, and found so little account made of her abuses giuen both to the King and to his gouernours of those countreys, would haue dealt in such friendly sort as she hath done: notwithstanding the said discouragements, her Maieslie thinketh it honourable for her, and meete for the place she holdeth, being the auncient allye that the Kings progenitors as Dukes of Burgundy haue, to continue still her former course in giuing friendly counsell vnto the King, can not but proceede to the second point aboue mentioned, which is to yeeld her aduise, what way in her opinion, is to be taken for the appeasing of the present troubles, and the continuing of them vnder his obedience.

First, it is apparant that the pacification is broken, and as great hostilitie increased on both sides as may be, wherof she is heartily loyke: the end, if it go on, will be an utter desolation of the countreys, or the losse or alteration of them from the Kings obedience, for helpe wherof her Maieslie thinketh the best and expedient remedies to be, that it would please him to reuere his subjects to his grace and fauour, that he would permit them to continue in their auncient liberties & charters, that he would commaund the due and iust execution of the pacification, and that he would appoint such a gouernour of his owne blood, as might like him and be grateful to them, whereby they with great contentation might yeeld to him all due obedience, continue in their religion according to his pleasure, and do all things accorded in the pacification: which by reason of the great distrust growne on both sides, betwene Don Iohn and them, can neuer take effect, so long as Don Iohn shall remaine gouernour, for it seemeth they haue put on a determination, that rather then they will endure a hard dealing which they think themselves assured they shall receiue by his gouernment, they will throw themselves into the protection of any other prince. They charge him with the breach of the pacification: he on the other side offereth to stand to his iustificacion, charging them with the said breach. Her Maieslie hauing heard the allegations of the ministers sent by her, both from Don Iohn, and the States, meaneth not to be a iudge betwene them, hauing rather a greater desire to reconcile them if she could, & to do them both good, than to discouise the faults & blamings of either party. To reconcile them she findeth it impossible, and therefore for the stay of the troubles and of those mischiefs that otherwise are like to ensue, the onely way of remedie will be to make

choise of some other tied to him by promise of blood to be substituted under him in that government, by which temperate counsels the troubles may well be appeased, the great effusion of blood avoided, and the countries continued under his obedience, which otherwise are like to be alienated from him. If he shall like to follow this advice, we see no disposition in the people to change their king, being dutifully inclined towards him, with intention (in this behalf they may be reckoned) to inuade nothing, but to maintaine, and duly observe the late pacification made at Caunt.

And like as for the contentment of the States and the appeasing of the troubles we wisheth Don Johns restoration: so considering how cruel afflicted he sheweth himselfe towards her, as well by letters intercepted, as by secret practices and dealings with the Queene of Scots, a matter very dangerous to the good quiet of her state, as the bearer can more amply informe him touching diuerse particularities in this behalf: We can not but in respect of the continuance of the good amitie which we wisheth to be betwene the King and her Maiestie, be the more earnest to presse the King therein, looking for no continuance of good amitie and good neighborhood, so long as a minister so cruel afflicted towards her shall reside there, and being desirous that such ministers might be employed on both sides, as would desire rather to increase the amitie than to hinder it.

This her abuse tending to none other end, but to perswade those countries under her obedience, and the continuance of good amitie betwene them, she hopeth the King will accept in no lesse friendly part then it is by her sinceritie meant. And in the meane time untill his minde be knowne in this behalf, her maiestie fearing the great forces prepared by Don Iohn, with the assistance of the French already marching towards him, will drive her ancient friends the states of the low countries, to the one of these two extremities: either to be overcome by foraine forces, and so endangered to foraine seruitude: or else constrained for the withstanding thereof to give themselves out to some other prince, both which can not but be perillous to the king presently, dangerous to her Maiestie hereafter, and an utter destruction to the whole country. Her highnes therefore for the benefit of the said King, & the avoiding of her owne perill (upon promises and assurance given by the said states, to yield the king his due obedience, & make no further innovation in matters of religion, but to observe the pacification of Caunt) hath promised for the causes & respects above mentioned, to yield them a support of money and men, onely to stay them from further danger of alienation, or else their ruine.

Which proceedings of hers, if the King shall not be induced to like of, whereby her Maiestie shall discover that his intention is by force of armes to alter and dissolve the ancient forme of government, and by taking away their ancient lawes and liberties, to make it a land of conquest, and to people it with garrisons of men of warre. And that the end and scope of his intention should tend to that which is disowned by Escobedo's letters, wherein he writeth that the enterprise of England is of more facility then the enterprise of the Isles, whereby her Maiestie shall perceive the disposition of so ill a neighbor to her and her royall estate, then her Maiesties resolution is to employ all the power she shall be able to make for the defence of her neighbors, and preservation of her owne estate.

As on the contrary side, if he shall incline to their reasonable demands, in giving them such a governor as they can better like of, then of Don Iohn, and they notwithstanding shall go on in disobedience against him, & make other innovations contrary to the promises they have given and professed to her, she will turne her force against them, and in assistance of the king yield him the best ayde she can to bring them to reason and conspurate. And in the meane season, untill she may be thoroughly informed hereof, she hath thought good, for avoiding of effusion of christian blood, and for many other good and necessary respects, to deale both with Don Iohn and the States for a surtrance of armes, which if he shall refuse to yield unto, and the States shall be willing, because she seeth it manifestly, that it concerneth the Kings honor, and profite of his country, she will not cease to go on with like offices towards them, as she hath begun. Thereby onely to defend them from foraine tyrannie, to keepe them in the kings obedience from aliening themselves to any other potentate, and to defend her selfe and her dominions from the perils that thereby she seeth manifestly to ensue.

The seventeenth day of Januarie, Simon Pembroke dwelling in Southwarke, being a figure dinger, and vehemently suspected to be a conuicer, by commandment of the ordinarie Judge of those parts, appeared in the parish Church of Saint Saviour, at a court holden there, which Simon being bailed in entering a Proctor, and having money in his hand, leaped his head upon a pew, wherein the proctor stood: which after he had done a certaine space, the proctor began to lift up his head, to see what he ayled, and found him departing out of life, and straightway the said Simon fell downe railing a little in the throat, and next spake words after: this was done even as the Judge came into the church, who said it was the iust iudgement of God towards those that used sorcerie, and a great example to admonish other to feare the iudice of God. After his clothes being opened, there were found about him five diuine Books of conurbation and most abhominable practices, with a picture of time of a man having three dice in his hand, with this writing. Chance Dice fortunately, and diuine papers of such like matters, as he had dealt in for men, such as are mentioned in Leuiticus the twentieth Chapter and the first verse: If any soule turne himselfe after such as worke with spirits, and after soothsayers, to go a whooping after them (saith the Lord,) I will put my face against that soule, and will cut him off from among my people.

The third of Februarie, early in the morning Iohn Nelson, for denying the Quenes Supremacie, and such other traitorous words against her maiestie, was taken from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

The 7. of Februarie, one named Sherewood was taken from the Tower of London to Tyburne, & there hanged, bowelled & quartered for the like treason.

The ninth of March, leauen Pyrates were hanged at Walsapping.

The sixteenth of Februarie, Iohn de Loy a Frenchman, and six English Gentlemen, were conveyed from the Tower of London towards Norwich, there to be arraigned and executed, for copying of money counterfeit.

The tenth of March deceased the Lady Margaret countesse of Lennox, and was honorably buried at Walsminster the thirde of April.

1578.  
Example of  
forerers.

Leuit.ca. 20.

Nelson executed.

Sherewood executed.  
Pirates hanged.

Counterfeiters of coine.

Lady Lennox deceased.

**Prohibitors**  
**third voyage**  
The 1. of May, Martin Prohibitor with 15. saile of good ships, manned, bristled, & other waies well appointed, departed from Harwich in Essex, on his 3. voyage towards Calaya. And on the 31. of July, after many attempts, & sundry times being put backe by Islands of ice in his streights, he recovered his long wished port, & came to anchor in the Harow, newly by her maiesly named Mera In-cognita, where (as in the yeare before) they brought their ships with the like pictured Gold ore out of the mines; & then on the last of August returning thence, arrived safely in England about the first of October, but their Gold ore after great charges proved worse then good stone, whereby many men were deceived, to their bitter bindings.

Ar. reg. 21.

Cassimere  
received.

The 22. of January, about 7. of the clocke at night, John Cassimere Count Palatine of Rhenish, duke of Barre, landed at the Tower of London, was there by diuerse noblemen and others honourably received, and conveyed by candle light and torch light to Sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate street, where he was received with sounding of trumpets, drums, fifes and other instruments of musike, and three both lodged and feasted till Sunday next, that he was by the nobility fetched to the court at Whitehall, where he talked with her maiesly, and after lodged in Sommer set house. In the weeke following, he hunted at Hampton court. On Sunday the first of February, he beheld a valiant Jussling and running at the tilt at Whitehall; on the next morrow he saw them fight at barriers with swords on horsebacke. On Tuesday he dined with the Lord Maior of London: On Wednesday with the Dutches of Suffolke, at her house called the Burgokeing of Barbicane, by the crose streete: On Thursday at the Stillyard, &c. On the 8. of February, the queene made him knight of the garter, by deliuering to him the collar, and putting the garter on his leg at White hall: and on the 14. of February, he departed from London homewards, with great rewards giuen by the queenes maiesly, the nobility, men of honor, the maior, of London and the citizens of that city.

Deepe snow.

The 4. of February, and in the night following, fell such abundance of snow, that on the first in the morning the same was found at London to lye two fote deepe in the Shallowell, and otherwell, being return by the wind, very boisterous in the North east, on banks, an ell or yard and halfe deepe, in the which drifts of snow in the countries, many cattell, and some men and women were overwhelmed and lost: it snowed till the 8. day, and frezed till the tenth. Then followed a thaw with continuall rain a long time after, which caused such high floods, that the marshes & low grounds being drowned for the time, the water rose to high in Whitehall ball, & after the fall thereof, some fishes were found there to remaine.

Great land  
water floods.Lord keeper  
deceased.

The 20. of February, deceased Sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper of the great seale of England, who was honorably buried under a sumptuous monument of tombe (by him in his life time erected in Pauls church of London the 9. of March. He also in his life time gave for 8. scholars, to be found in Bennet Colledge at Cambridge, to each of them: £ 6. 3. and 8. 8. the yeare for ever.

The 14. of April, fell such a snow betwixt the houres of foure of the clocke in the morning, and nine of the clocke before noone, that at London some was found to lye almost one fote deepe.

The

The 25. of April, Sir Thomas Bromley, knight, was made lord Chancellor of England.

The 26. of April, William Kympton Alderman of London was by the lord Chancellor sent to the fleete, about a letter late by him received, from the Clerk of Hables in Huddesford beside Barne. This letter amongst other matters mentioned of a pale pulled downe at Northall, by the commons there, &c. for concealing of which letter the said Alderman was committed as aforesaid. And on the 15. of May, was in the Starred chamber condemned to pay 500. marks fine, and to remaine prisoner at the pleasure of her maieslie.

The 4. of May, were arraigned at Barne in Hartfordshire, certaine men of Northall, Wyms, and the parts thereto adjoining, for pulling downe a pale at Northall, late let up (on the common ground) by the Earle of Arundel, right of them were condemned, two were dyed in the hand, two were hanged betwixt Barne & Whitehall, the other four continued remained prisoners in Hartford. Soe long after many were bound to appeare at the next sise, & such as could not get in baile for their appearing were committed, &c. Mathew Hamond of Northall, by his trade a pilotage bought, three milles from Northall, was concerned before the bishop of Norwich, for he denied Christ to be our Saviour. At the time of his appearance it was objected, that he had published these heresies following.

That the new Testament and Gospel of Christ are but merer foolshewe, a fable of men, or rather a merer fable.

Item, that man is rebeld to grace by the merer merrie of God, without the meane of Christs blood, death and passion.

Item, that Christ is not God, nor the Saviour of the world; but a merer man, a full man, and an abominable Idoll.

Item, that all they that worship him are abominable Idolaters: And, that Christ did not rise againe from death to life by the power of his Godhead, neither that he did ascend into heauen.

Item, that the holy ghost is not God, neither that there is any such holy ghost.

Item, that heptiline is not necessarie in the Church of God, neither the use of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Christ. For the which heresies, he was condemned in the consilorie, and sentence was read against him by the bishop of Norwich, the 14. of April, and thereupon deliuered to the Sherifes of Norwich, and hereafter he spake words of blasphemie against the Queenes maieslie, and others of her counsell, he was by the Hierorder master Sergeant Windham, and the Maior Sir Robert Wood of Norwich, condemned to lose both his eares, which were cut off the thirteenth of May in the market place of Norwich, where he confirmed his blasphemous speeches against our Saviour Iesus Christ, for the which on the twentieth of May he was burnt in the castell ditch of Norwich.

The first of June, deceased Robert Horne Doctor of Divinitie, Bishop of Winchester, at Winchester place in Southwark, & was buried at Winchester.

The 17. of July, the Queenes maieslie, being on the riuer of Thames, betwixt her highnesse Hamour of Greenwich and Wexford, in her private barge, accompanied with the French Ambassadors, the Earle of Lincoln, & maiister Elizabeth, &c. with whom she entered discourse about twaighten affairs: it chaunced, that

An heretike  
brent at  
Norwich.Men hanged  
at Barne for  
a riot made  
at Northall.Bishop of  
Winchester  
deceased.  
Traiterous  
fact of Tho-  
mas Apple-  
tree.

one Thomas Appletree a young man and seruant to maister Henry Cary, with two or three children of her Maisties chappell, and one other being in a boate on the Thames, rowing by and downe betwixt the places afore named, the aforesayd Thomas Appletree had a caluier or harquebuse, which he had thre or foure times discharged with bullet, shooting at random very rashly, who by great misfortune shot one of the watermen, being the second man next unto the bales of the sayd barge, laboring with his oare (which late within fife foot of her highnesse) cleane through both his armes: the blow was so great and grievous, that it moued him out of his place, and forced him to cry and scritch out piteously, supposing himselfe to be slaine, and saying he was shot through the body. The man bleeding abundantly, the queenes maistie shewed such noble courage as is most wonderfull to be heard and spoken of, for beholding him so maimed, she neuer dashed therat, but had him be of good cheere, and sayd he should want nothing that might be for his ease, &c. For the which fact the sayd Thomas being apprehended, and condemned to death: was on the 11. of July brought to the water side, where was a gibbet set up, directly placed betwixt Detford and Greenwich, & when the hangman had put the rope about his necke, he was by the queenes most gracious pardon deliuered from execution.

This yeare John Fox of Widdowbury, William Wickney of Portsmouth, and Robert More of Harwich Englishmen, having bene prisoners in Turkey about the space of thirteene or fourteene yeares with more then two hundred and fiftie other Christians of diuerse nations, by killing their keeper, maruellously escaped, and returned to their native countries.

In September and October fell great winds and raging foulds in summy places of this realme, wherethrough many men, cattell, and houses were drowned. In the towne of Heston the cottages were bozne downe, the coye lost, pasture ground ouerwhelmed, and cattell drowned. In the towne of Sedolp the water came vp to the market place, where cupboards, chests, stools and founnes swam about the houses, their fwell, coye and hay was wrackt and bozne away. Also the towne of Saint Edes in Huntingdonshire was ouerflowne suddenly in the night, when all men were at rest, the waters brake in with such a force, that the towne was almost all defaced, the swans swam downe the market place, and all the towne about, the boats did float. Soymancheller was suddenly suppressed, their houses flouen full of water when men were at their rest, their cattell were destroyed: about the 14. of October, the sea did swell, the marchants lost their goods, many were drowned, which were after found in great numbers.

On Saturday the 21. of Nouember, Sir Thomas Gresham knight Agent to the queenes highnesse (who had in his life time builded the Royall Exchange in London, as is afore shewed) deceased at his house in Bishops gate streete of London, and was buried in the parish church of saint Ellen there. By his last will and testament, dated *An. 1579.* he gaue to 100. poore men, so many blacke goates of 6. s. 8. d. the yere, to 100. poore women the like goates at the day of his buriall. The Royall Exchange and all the buildings thereto belonging, the one mytty to the maior and communalty of London and their successors for 50. yeares, vpon trust that they do performe, as shall be declared, & the other mytty to the merchants

John Fox  
prisoner in  
Turkey.

Foulds.

*An. reg. 22.*  
Sir Thomas  
Gresham  
deceased.

for 50. yeares in like confidence. The maior and communalty to find 4. to reade lectures, of Diuinity, Astronomy, Musike, and Geometry, within his dwelling house (which he gaue for that purpose) in Bishops gate streete, the sum of 50. l. the yere. More 5. l. 6. s. 8. d. unto 8. almes mens in his 8. almes houses in the parish of S. Peter the poore, to euer each 6. l. 13. s. 4. d. To the prisoners in Fleetgate, Ludgate, Kings bench, Marshalsea, and the counter in Widdowstreet 50. l. to wit, to each 10. l. The Mercers to find 2. men to reade lectures of Law, Philosophie, and Rhetorique, within the same his dwelling house of S. Ellen in Bishops gate street, the sum of 150. l. to wit, to euer reader 50. l. More 100. l. for a dinner 4. times in y. yere, to the whole company in y. mercers hall, for euer dinner 25. l. And more, 50. l. to the hospitals of Christ church, S. Bartholomewes, S. Thomas, Seiden, & the Counter in the Poultrey, to each yearly 10. l. And in the said 50. yeares to procure licence, which he trusted would not be denied, considering the goodnesse of the suite, and then to haue all the Exchange, Watene, and house with the appurtenances for euer.

Henry Fits Allen (the last of that name) earle of Arondale, deceased on the 24. of February, and was buried at Arondale on the 22. of March.

On the 28. of March, Francis *alias* Marmaduke Glouer was hanged on a gibbet set up for that purpose, by the Standard in Cheape, for willingly murdering Sirgeant Grace, after he was by him arrested.

The 6. of Aprill being Wednesday in Easter weeke, about 6. of the clocke toward evening, a suddē earthquake hapning in London, & almost generally throughout England, caused such amazement of the people as was wonderfull for the time, & caused them to make their earnest prayers vnto almighty God. The great clocke bell in the palace at Westminster, strake of it selfe against the hammer with shaking, as diuers clockes & bells in the city & elsewhere did the like: the gentlemen of the Temple being at supper, ran from the tables, & out of their hall with their knives in their hands, a peece of the Temple church fell downe, some stones fell fro Pauls church: And at Christs church in the sermon while a stone fell from the top of the church, which killed out of hand one Thomas Grey an apprentice, & another stone also brused his fellow seruant named Mabel Eueret, so that she liued but 4. dayes after: diuerse other were sore hurt with running out of the church: diuerse chimnies in the city, part of the fell downe, the houses were so shaken. The earthquake continued, in or about London not passing one minute of an houre, & was no more felt: but eastward in Kent and on the sea coast it was felt thre times: as at Sandwiche at fire of the clocke, the land not onely quaked, but the sea so foamed, that the ships tottered. At Dover also at the same houre was the like, so that a peece of the cliffe fell into the sea, with also a peece of a cliffe wall there: a peece of Saltwood castle in Kent fell downe, and in the Church of Hode the bells were heard to sound. A peece of Sutfren church in Kent fell downe, the earthquake being there both heard and felt. And in all these places and other in east Kent, the same was felt thre times to mowse, to wit, at Urre, at mine, and at cleun of the clocke.

The 19. of Aprill, the ferry at Lambeth was drowned with five men & foure horses, other two men and five horses swam to land, and were saued.

The first of May, after 12. of the clocke in the night, was an earthquake felt in

1580.  
One hanged  
in Cheape  
for murder.  
Earthquake.

Ferry at  
Lambeth  
drowned.  
Earthquake  
in Kent.



diuerſe places of Kent, namely at Aſhſed, great Chart, &c. which made the people there to ſeek out of their beds, and run to the churches, where they called upon God, by earnest prayes to be mercifull vnto them.

This yeare were many monſtrous birthes, and ſtrange ſights to be ſcene, which I ſhould haue partly touched in my ſummarie.

Francis  
Drake his  
voyage vnto  
about the  
world.

Alſo this yeare maſter Francis Drake returned into England, hauing ſailed round about the world (as is affirmed) thus it was begun: on the 12. of December, in the yeare of Chriſt 1577. he ſet ſaile from Plymouth with a ſtreet of 5. ſhips, to wit, the Pellicane admirall, the Marigold, the Elizabeth, barke Boubliſh, and a pinnace; he ſell with the cape Canbine on the coaſt of Barbary the 25. of ſame moneth, and ſo coaſting along, the 27. of December found an Iſland called Hoghador, lying one mile diſtant from the maine: in this Iſland the generall erected a pinnace, which he had with three other brought ready framed out of England, which being finiſhed he departed the laſt of Decſber. On the 17. of January he arrived at cape Blank, & left the ſame on the 22. of that moneth, & on the 27. fell with cape de Verde: on the 30. of January he fell with an Iſland called Saint Jago: hauing put off cape de Verde in the beginning of February, they ſaw no more land vntill the ſir of April 1578. that they fell with the coaſt of Brazill, in the latitude of 33. degrees beyond the line, and with much ado entered the riuer of Plate: from whence departing he fell with the ſtrait of Magellan the 20. of Auguſt, and paſſed through with three ſhips onely, hauing caſt off the other two as improuident, where after they had bene toiled many daies to and fro, in the night the ſir of October the Marigold, wherein maſter Iohn Thomas was captaine, parted from the generall, and was no more heard of. And ſhortly after, the other wherein maſter Iohn Winter was captaine parted alſo, who hauing loſt his company, came home againe through the ſtraites. The golden Hinde / or Pellicane I thinke held on her courſe to Chily, Lima, Coquimbo, Africa, Panama, & ſo all along the backe ſide of America to the line-ward, and paſſed the line the ſir day of March, and the ſirteenth of March being on land at the Ile of Caones, he paſſed forth north-ward till he came to the latitude of forty ſeuen, thinking to haue come that way home: but being conſtrained by fogges and cold winds to forſake his purpoſe, came backward to the line-ward the tenth of Iune 1579. and ſtayed in the latitude of thirty eight to graue and trim his ſhip, vntill the ſir and twentieth of July: and from thence ſetting his courſe ſouthweſt, he fell the third of October with an Ile 8. degrees from the line northward, and the 4. of November he fell with Ternate one of the Iles of Molucca, where being curteouſly entertained of the king, he took in certaine tun of ſpices, and came homeward to a little Iſland, where he ſtayed to trim his ſhip 20. daies, where he ſupplied himſelfe with wood, and erected a ſmiths forge for to make ſuch yron worke as was needfull for the repairing of his ſhip: and from thence the 12. of December he went toward Malacca, but not able to continue his courſe weſtward for the wind, was conſtrained to recouer towards the north of the Iles of Celebes: after this the ninth of January comming towards Iava maior they ran themſelues vpon ground, and ſtarke all twenty houres, not looking but for death, but eſcaping that danger, they continued their courſe ſill weſt, & came to Iava maior aſo named, and there touching they bent their courſe ſouthweſt to the cape of Sona Sperance, the after they kept

their courſe northweſt, and ſell with the coaſt of China, from thence bending their courſe north northweſt, they came to the line, and then ſwaping their courſe north and by weſt, they came to the height of 30. degrees, where finding the wind weſterly, they came home into England in the yeare 1580. And in the yeare next following, to wit, 1581. on the fourth of April, her maieſty dining at Deptford in Kent, after dinner entered the ſhip which captaine Drake had ſo happily guided round about the world, and being there, a bridge that her maieſty had paſſed over, broke, being vpon the ſame more then 200. perſons, and no man hurt by the fall, and there ſhe did make captaine Drake knight in the ſame ſhip, for reward of his ſervice his armes were given him, the world in a ſhip, which ſhip by her maieſties commandement is lodged in a docke at Deptford, for a monument to all poſterity of that famous and worthy exploit, whereof a worſhipfull gentleman maſter William Borough in his preface to a booke entituled, A diſcourſe of the variation of the compaſſe, or magnetick Needle, hath theſe words: So now at length (ſaith he) our countreyman ſir Francis Drake, for valourous attempt, prudent proceeding, and fortunate performing his voyage about the world, is not onely become equal to any of them that liue, but in ſame farre ſurpaſſing.

On the tenth of October (ſomelay on the ſeventh) appeared a blazing ſtar in the ſouth, buſhing toward the eaſt, which was nightly ſcene diminiſhing of his brightneſſe vntill the 21. of the ſame moneth.

Sir Francis  
Drake  
knighted,  
and his com-  
mendation.

Blazing  
ſtarre.

The 17. day of October were made eight ſergeants at law, to wit, firſt William Fleetwood Recorder of London, the ſecond, Edward Flowerdew, the third, Thomas Snagge, the fourth, William Periam, the fiſt, Robert Halton, the ſir, Iohn Clench, the ſeventh, Iohn Puckering, the eight, Thomas Walmeſley, maſter Snagge was ſicke, and therefore had a wiſe directed to two maſters of the chancery to take his oath, and ſo was ſworne in his chamber at Greys Anne, the other ſeuen were ſworne at Weſtminſter, and held their ſeall in the new Temple at London.

Sergeants  
ſeall.

The 9. of October proclamation was publiſhed at London for the apprehenſion and ſure puniſhing of all perſons ſuſpected to be of the family of Ioue.

There arrived vpon the weſt coaſt of Ireland, certaine companies of Italians and Spaniards, ſent by the Pope to the ayde of the earle of Deſmond in his rebellion, which fortified themſelues ſtrongly neare Smarwicke, in a ſort which they call Caſtle de Ioue, there erecting the popes banner againſt her maieſty, which when the lord Grey of Delifon deputy of Ireland vnderſtood, he marched thitherward, & the 6. of November hearing of the arrivall of the Swiſſe ſure, the Tigar, the Tide, the Merlion, and other of the queenes maieſties ſhips, and alſo of three barres fraughted from Linnzike and Rojke with viſuals, on the morrow after marched towards the ſort, vnto the which he gaue to haue an aſſault, that on the ninth of November the ſame was yeelded all the Iriſh men and women hangd, and more then foure hundred Spaniards, Italians, & Biſcaynes put to the ſword, the coponell, captaines, ſecretary and other (to the number of twenty) ſaued for ranſome. In which ſortreſſe was found good ſtocke of money, beſet, bacon, oile, wine, and diuerſe other prouiſions of viſual, ſufficient for their company for halfe a yeare, beſide armour powder, ſhot, & other ſummitur for 2000. men and upwards.

Proclamation  
againſt  
the family of  
Ioue.  
Victory a-  
gainſt the  
Irish and o-  
ther in Ire-  
land.

The

An. reg. 23.  
Randal han-  
ged for con-  
iuring.

The 28. of November, were arraigned in the kings bench, William Randall, for coniuring to know where treasure was hid in the earth, and goods feloniously taken were become, Tho. Elkes, Thomas Luppon, Rasse Spacy, & Christopher Waddington, for being present: Randall, Elkes, Spacie and Waddington were found guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, Randall was executed, the other were reprieved.

1581.  
Proclamati-  
on against  
felonies.

About the twelfth of Januarie, proclamation was published at London, for the excoication of sundry the Quenes maiesties subsidies remaining beyond the seas, vnder colour of study, and yet living contrarie to the lawes of God and of the realme. And also against the retaining of felons and murtherers, sowers of sedition, and other unreasonable attempts, &c.

Looking at  
Westminster

Parliament  
at Westmin-  
ster.

The 16. day of Januarie, the lords & barons of this realme began to sit in the parliament house at Westminster: and on the twentieth day of Januarie the Quenes maiestie went from White hall to the parliament house by water. Whereas a great challenge of iustice was signified by way of doubt before her maiestie on Twelfth night last past, to haue bene performed the fifteenth day of Januarie, her maiesties pleasure was, for diuers considerations the same should be deferred vntill the two and twentieth day of the same moneth: on the which day the same was most courageously accomplished in the accustomed place at Westminster, where many slaues were broken, but through the great concourse of people thither repairing, many of the beholders, as well men as women, were hurt: some maimed, and some killed by falling of the scaffolds overcharged.

Mice de-  
uour the  
grasse in  
Dancelcy.

About Shaltonide last past, in the marshes of Dancelcy hundred, in a place called Southminster in the countie of Essex, a strange thing hapned: there suddenly appeared an infinite multitude of mice, which overwhelming the whole earth in the said marshes, did scarce and gnaw the grasse by the rootes, spoiling and rading the same with their venomous teeth, in such sort, that the cattell which grazed thereon were snitten with a murther, and died thereof, which vermine by policie of man could not be destroyed, till at the last it came to passe that there flocked together all about the same marshes, such a number of owles, as all the fliue was not able to prey: whereby the marsh-holders were shortly deliuered from the vocation of the said mice.

Banqueting  
house at  
Westminster

This yere (against the coming of certaine ambassadors out of France) by her maiesties appointment, on the five and twentieth day of March in the morning being Easter day) a banquetting house was begun at Westminster, on the south-west side of her maiesties palace of White hall, made in manner and forme of a long square, 322. in measure about, 30. principals made of great masts, being 40. foor in length a peece, standing by right, betwene every one of the masts, ten foor asunder and more, the waile of this house were clost with canuas, and painted all the outsidies of the same most artificially, with a worke called ruslike much like stone. This house had two hundred, ninetie and two lights of glasse. The sides within the same house was made with 1. heights of degrees for people to stand vpon: and the top of this house was wrought most cunningly vpon canuas woorks of iule and holly, with pendants made of wickeat rodde, and garnished with

with Bay, Rue, & all maner of strange flowers garnished with spangles of gold, as also beautified with hanging tofians made of hollic and iule. With all maner of strange fruits, as pomegranates, oranges, pompons, cucumbers, grapes, with such like spangled with gold and most richly hanged: betwixt these woorks of baies and iule were great spaces of canuas, which was most cunningly painted, the clouds with starres, the sunne and sun-beames, with diuers other coats of sundry sorts belonging to the quenes maiesty, most richly garnished with gold. There were of all maner of persons working on this house, to the number of 75. two men had mischances, the one broke his legge and so did the other. This house was made in three weekes and thre dayes, and was ended the 18. of April, and cost 1744. l. 19. s. &c.

On the 16. day of April, arrived at Douer these noblemen of France (some Noblemen of France arrived in England, millioners from the French king to her maiesty) Francis Burbon prince D'Alphine of Auergne, Arthur Collas marshall of France, Lodowic Lusignan lord of Lancor, Trauergins Caercongin county of Tillir, Bertrand Salangueros lord Motheselon, monsieur Manaisour, Barnabie Brisler president of the parliament of Paris, Claude Pinart, monsieur Marchemont, monsieur Verac, these came from Chaucend by water to London, where they were honourably received and entertained, and shortly after being accompanied of the nobility of England, they repaired to the court, and banquetting house prepared for them at Westminster as is aforesayd, where her maiesty received them, and afterward in that place most royally feasted and banqueted them. Also the nobles and gentlemen of the court desirous to shew them all curtesie possible, prepared a triumph in most sumptuous order, vpon Whitson monday and tuesday: the chiefe challengers of which attempts were, the earle of Arundell, Frederike Lord Windesore, Philip Sidney, Foulke Girell, and other: the defendants to the number of one and twenty, all which of them ranne fire courts against the former challengers, who performed their parts valiantly. On the tuesday they went to the tourney, where they did very nobly, and after that to the barriers, where they fought courageously, &c. as more at large I haue set downe, in the continuance of Reine Woolles Chronicle.

Looking, tur-  
neying and  
barriers.

The one and twenty of June in the night, certaine young men, drawing ropes throught the streete, on both sides the cross in Chape, to stop the passage, did then fallen ropes about the lowest Images of the sayd cross, attempting by force to haue plucked them downe, which when they could not do, they plucked the picture of Christ out of his mothers lap, whereto he late, and otherwise defaced her, and the other Images by striking off their armes. Whereupon proclamation was made, that who so would betray the doers should haue forty crownes. But nothing came to light, for every one of them kept others counsell, till their dying dayes.

Crosse in  
Chesape de-  
faced.

Thomas Butcher before (for that he & others on the 27. of June had congregated themselves in west Smithfield of London, and in other places in matter of rebellion) was on the 30. of June whipped from Newgate to west Smithfield, and was there rescued, taken from the broles, and sent away to shift for himselfe:

Men whip-  
ped, and set  
on the pul-  
lory.

for

for the which fast on the 21. of July, other foure, to wit, three shomakers and a brewer, were whipped from Newgate to the middell of west Smithfield, and there set on the pillorie, whercon they stood from ten till twelue of the clocke.

The thirtieth of July, Richard Coxo Doctor of Diuinitie, some time schoole-maister to king Edward the first, drane of Welsminster, and of Chills collidge in Oxford, and since bishop of Elic, deceased and was buried at Elic.

This yeare were to be seene in London, two Duchmen of strange flatures, the one in height seven foot and seven inches, in breadth betwixt the shoulders three quarters of a yard and an inch, the compass of his breast one yard and halfe, and two inches: and about the waist, one yard, quarter, and one inch, the length of his arme to the hand a full yard: a comely man of person, but lame of his legges (for he had broken them with lifting of a barrill of beere.) The other was in height but thye foot, had neuer a good foot, nor any knee at all, and yet could he daunce a galliard, he had no arme, but a flumpe to the elbow or little more on the right side, on the which singing, he would daunce a cup, and after tolle it about three or foure times, and every time receive the same on the said flumpe: he would shoote an arrow neare to the marke, flourish with a rapier, throw a bowle, beate with a hammer, blew with an axe, sound a trumpet, and drinke every day ten quarts of the best beere if he could get it. I my selfe on the seuenteenth of July sawe the taller man sitting on a bench bareheaded, and the lesser standing on the same bench, and having on his head a hat with a feather, was yet the lower. Also the taller man standing on his feete, the lesser (with his hat and feather on his head) went vpight betwixt his legs and touched him not.

The eighteenth of July, Euerard Haunce a seminarie priest, was in the sessions hall in the old Baile arraigned, where he affirmed that himselfe was subiect to the Pope in ecclesiasticall causes, and that the Pope hath now y same authoritie here in England that he had an hundred yeres past, with other trayterous speeches, for the which he was condemned to be drawne, hanged, bowelled and quartered, and was executed accordingly on the last of July.

At the same sessions were brought from the Fleet, the Gate-houle at Welsminster, Newgate of London, and the Counters, sundrie prisoners indicted for refusing to come to the church, all which being convicted by their owne confession, had iudgement accordingly to pay twentie pounds for every moneth of such their wilfull absence from the church.

The thirtieth of October were arraigned at Welsminster hall Iohn Stubbes, Hugh Singleton, and William Page, these were all three condemned to lose their right hands, for writing, printing, and dispersing a libell, which they entituled, the Gaping Gulph, against monsieur Francis Duke of Anio, the French kings brother. And on the thir day of November they were all led to Welsminster, where Iohn Stubbes, and William Page lost their hands by chopping off, but Hugh Singleton had his pardon.

The first of November, monsieur Francis Duke of Anio, the French kings brother, and other nobles of France (having lately arrived in Kent) came to London, and were honorably received, and remained at the court with banqueting and diuers pleasant pleasures and pastimes, &c.

Bishop of  
Ely deceased

Two men of  
strange flatures.

Euerard  
Haunce arraigned  
and executed.

Prisoners  
arraigned  
for not coming  
to church.

Iohn Stubbes  
and William  
Page lost  
their hands.

Monsieur  
D. of Anio.

An. reg. 24.

On the 20. of November, Edmond Campion Jesuit, Ralle Sherwine, Lucas Kerbie, Edward Rishon, Thomas Coelwyn, Henrie Orton, Robert Johnson & Campion James Bosgraue, were brought to the high bar at Welsminster, where they were lawfully and all together indicted upon high treason, for that contrary both to love & duty, they lookede their native country to live beyond the seas under the Popes obedience, as at Rome, Rhyms, and diuers other places, where (the Pope having with other princes practised the death and depriuation of our most gracious prince, and better subversion of her state and kingdome, to advance his most abominable religion) these men having bowed their allegiance to the Pope, to obey him in all causes whatsoever, being there, gave their consent, to aide him in this most traitorous determination. And for this intent & purpose they were sent over to scour the hearts of her maiesties loving subiects, and to conspire and practise her graces death, as much as in them lay against a great day, let and appointed when the generall hauocke should be made, those onely reserved that loyned with them. This laid to their charge, they boldly denied, but by a iurie they were appoynded guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled and quartered.

The first of December, Edmond Campion Jesuit, Ralle Sherwine, and Alexander Brian seminarie priests, were drawne from the Tower of London to the boie, and there hanged, bowelled, & quartered. Looke more in my continuation executed.

The first of February the Queenes maiestie with her whole court, accompanied the monsieur Francis Duke of Anio, from Welsminster to Caisterburie, where, when he had feasted all the French nobilitie, either tooke leave of other, & returneth to the sea, the 6. of the same month the Duke lodged at Sandwich, & on the next morning tooke the sea, being accompanied of the earle of Leicester, the lord Hunston, the lord Howard knights of the garter, the lord Willowby, lord Windfore, L. Sheffield, L. Howard and lord Audley, M. Sidney, sir George Cary, M. John and Robert Carie, all three fornes of the said Duke of Hunston, M. William Howard, brother of the said lord Howard, sir T. Sherley, sir T. Perot, sir Will. Russell, sir Will. Drury and sir George Bowler knights, & a great number of Gentlemen, so as the whole traine that attended on the earle was 100. gentlemen and more than 300. serving men. The lord Hunston had of gentlemen and other to the number of 150. and the lord Howard had as many, all which sailed in sixtie ships to Flushing in Zealand where the prince of Orange, & the States of the low countries received the Duke, and our English nobilitie with great ioy, conducing them from thence to Middleborough, & then to Antwerpe, where before the twentieth day of the same month, the States with great splendour created the said Monsieur Duke of Anio, Duke of Lothar, Brabant, and marquisse of the sacred empire, and prince of the low countries, &c. And our nobilitie returned into England.

Iohn Paine priest, being indicted of high treason for words by him spoken to one Elloe, was arraigned and condemned at Chelmsford on the last of March, and was there executed on the second day of April.

The sixteenth of Maie, about ten of the clocke in the night, a blazing star appeared descending in the north-west, the beard wherof streamed south-west.

1583.  
Monsieur  
Duke of Anio,  
to the sea.

Monsieur  
created  
duke of Lothar,  
Brabant, &c.

Iohn Paine  
executed at  
Chelmsford,  
A blazing  
starre.

*An. Monday.*  
Seminaries  
executed.

On the 28. day of May, Thomas Ford, John Shier, & Robert Johnson pishers, having bene before iudged, arraigned, and condemned for high treason inuenced, as ye haue heard of Canspion and other, were drawn from the Tower to Chelmsford, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

And on the thirtieth of May, Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cortam, & Laurence Richardson, were for y<sup>e</sup> like treason in y<sup>e</sup> same place likewise executed.

Philip Price  
hanged.

The 2. of June, Philip Price was hanged in Fleetstreete of London, for killing a freigrant that had arrested him.

Lord Wil-  
loughby am-  
bassador in-  
to Denmark.

The fourteenth day of July, Peregrine Bartie lord Willoughby of Erby appointed Ambassador to Frederike the king of Denmarke with the garter, embarked at Kingston upon Hull, and prosperously arrived at Elsinore in Denmarke on the twentieth day of the same moneth. On the fourteenth of August the said king received the robes of the order, wore the Garter, Collar, and George: and the lord ambassador returning with his traine, arrived at Bzenholme in Skodfolke on the twentieth of September. Hope at large of this and other, I haue set downe in the continuation of maister Reine Woolfes chronicle.

Lecture in  
Surgerie to  
be read.

This yeare was first founded a publicke lecture in Surgerie to begin to be read in the colledge of Physicians in Knightriders streete of London, in Anno 1584. on the first of May, and so to be continued twice every weeke, to wit, wednesday and friday for ever, by the honorable John lord Loimley, and Richard Caldwell doctors of Physicke: the reader wherof to be Richard Forster doctor of Physicke.

Misfortune  
by gunpow-  
der.

The nineteenth of July, certaine serkins of gunpowder (to the number of fifteen) and as many or more serkins of surgeon, laden in a carre upon Gally way, neare unto the tower of London, some small portion of the same powder being shed on the ground, the horse in the said carre strooke fire with his foote, and fiered all together, wherethrough the surgeon was blowne out of the carre, some into the Charnis, some elsewhere, one serkin was driven through a loamed wall that was boorded ouer, into a house there by. The Crane on the wharfe with the houses neare adioyning were soe broken, many men and horses soe blacked, so that three men and seven horses died thereof.

Tempest in  
Norfolke.

The twelfth of August there rose a great tempest of lightning, thunder, whirlwind and raine, with hailstones fashioned like to the rotuels of spurs, two or three inches about in the countie of Dorsetshire, betwene y<sup>e</sup> townes of north Walsham and Aldeburgh, the towne wherem the making of woyled, commonly called Dorsetch woyled, was first practised and tooke there beginning: which tempest beat the coyne flat to the ground, rent up many great trees, and shivered them in peeces, or wound them like withs. At Hemming, more then a mile from Wolshe, the west doore of the church, weighing more then 300. pound weight, was lifted off the hooks, and throwne ouer the font within one pease of the chancel doore, the top of the church was rinen bp, and the lead as it were blowne cleane away, sixe tobes of lead were ruffled up together, like as they had bene cloths of linnen cloth, and blowne into the skyd without the churchyard. Also at call Kuten were many barnes blowne downe, and houses brouered.

An. reg. 25.  
Termes kept  
at Hartford.

This yeare Michaelmas terme was returned from the Vias thereof, until the fourth returne of the same called Meale Michaelis, & from the said returne until the

the returne commonly called Crastino animarum next ensuing, and then returned from Aldeburgh to the castle of Hartford in Hartfordshire, there to begin in the said Crastino animarum, and to be continued till the end of the said terme, which was done accordingly.

This yeare Peter Morris a Dutch man, but a free denison, having made an engine for that purpose, conveyed Thames water in pipes oiled out the steeple of St Magnus church, at the north end of London bridge, and so into divers mens houses in Charnis streete, into Fish streete, and Fasse streete by unto the north west corner of Leaden hall (the highest ground of the cite of London, where the wall of the first maine pipe ran first this yeare 1582. on Christmase euen: which maine pipe being since at the charges of the cite brought by into a standarde three made for that purpose, and divided into foure seuerall spouters, ranne foure waies plentifully serving to the vse of the inhabitants neare adioyning that will fetch it, and also cleansed the channels of the streets north toward Bishops gate, east towards Abgate, south towards the bridge, and west towards the Stocks market: no doubt a great commoditie to that part of the cite, and would be far greater, if the said water were maintained to run continually, or at the least at euery ffor some reasonable quantitie, as at the first it did.

Now to retorne to Monsieur his successe after the great dignities, authoritties, and titles bestowed on him, as ye haue partly heard (but is set downe at large in a particular treatise thereof, which I haue placed in Reine Woolfes chronicle.) Francis de Valois, the kings onely brother, Duke of Nothere, Brabant, Limbourg, Gelbers, Anio, Brandon, &c. earle of Flanders, Holland, Zeland, &c. maquerle of the sacred empire, lord of Frisland, &c. having now indifferently well (with his good succelles had in the battailing and conuoying the flagges of Cambrey and Lochem, and winning the townes of Alast and Endonan) gotten the hearts of the people, and by that means placed his frenchmen in Dunkerke, Alimerburgh, Wirmide, Wermoud, Alimord, and other places, thought now (being young and small counsell) to make himselfe a more absolute Prince, according to the titles given him, and not to rule with the auides of the States of the countie. Wherefore having come to him out of Francke the Marshall Byron, with great troups of Swissers, and frenchmen, he now causeth them all at one time, to wit, on the seventh of Januarie, to invade so many townes as they might make themselves masters of, which with them tooke effect in the above named townes, but at Bruggelle they were put out. And at Antwerpe on the said lasten day, under the pretence to mulster his army without the towne, bp on the very moone time of the day when the Citizens were at dinner, he causeth two gates (as uncertaine by which he would go) to be opened for him, and the chains ouerthrowt the streets to be unchained, which (for some suspicion had of theutchmen without) were locked: then he issued out with all his Court and a great number of gentlemen, very brare, mounted on great horses about 200. many of them being secretly armed under their garments, and comming to St. James gate, at the bridge without met him certain of his companies of horsemen, and women, who laid themselves on both sides the way, making as if were a lane for the Duke to passe by with a few of his: who being past them, made token to

Francis de  
Valois his  
exploits and  
successe.

The monk-  
cur attempt-  
eth against  
the States  
of Antwerp  
and was o-  
uerthrowne.

the with his cap, to invade y<sup>e</sup> city: whereup his men killed y<sup>e</sup> watch, with y<sup>e</sup> Council Viereendell y<sup>e</sup> stood bare headed, to see their prince passe. Then entered y<sup>e</sup> gate 17. ensignes of footmen, & four coynels of horsemen, the Drummers following, & the duke crying to the march, march, *La vie est gaignee, mais ne pillons point*, being thus strongly entered they tried, *Vallé gaignee, vive la messe*, and tooke in on both sides the Bulwarks, turned the ordinance towards the city, and came by vicaric streets almost to the midst of the city. The citizens at their dinners hearing the alarm, very furiously issued out, with such weapons as fell came to their hands, and set upon them, first by the by lanes, and other lane charyed by the streets, and so barred them from going any further. They turned all against the soldiers that were entered the city with most violent shot. In the meane space the citizens nere, and about the gate with their harquebuses belkew their small shot as thicke as hail out of windowes upon the gate, where first they killed a hoyle, and then diuers men cutting, which troubled the other following, y<sup>e</sup> a great number was cut in the very gate killed, & so heaped one vpon another that the gate was stopped, whereby all that were entered within the city, in lesse then in one houres space were killed, or taken prisoners. Wherein the citizens behaved themselves so valiantly, & so manly, that many for lacke of lead pellets tooke their money out of their purses, bowed it with their teeth, and put it in stead of pellets in their harquebuses. In this skirmish of so little space, were slaine about 1530. French hoysmen, and footmen, told at the burying, and more then 1000. prisoners taken, amongst the which were the earle of Armaugus, the bishop of Constance, and many other notable personages. And amongst the dead were the earle of St. Agnes his son, the earle of Chastcaurouille, the son of the marshall of France Biron, monsieur de Sailonnall gouernor of Alenon, the son of the L. Mirabeau, and others. A marvellous ad of citizens in their defence without any soldiers against old soldiers & tried men of armes, and number of so great nobility. The prince of Orange with others had refused to go forth, and his danger was not small, with other gentlemen more, and lords of the religion. The prince Dolphyn, the earle of Lurall and others were with the duke lookers on, and intercessours for their friends, whom they reckened dead. After that fact, the duke with his campe was forced for lacke of victuals and necessaries, to retire him with his army toward Aquelin, and from thence with great difficulty, passing great waters, with losse of many a man, got to Dornond, where he was kept in by the generall Noris, with 23. ensignes Englishmen and Scots, so that he lacked victuals, and necessaries, whereby he was forced, as also to haue his prisoners released, to enter into a treaty with the states, to surrender all the townes by his men possessed, and to retire him to Dunkirke: where further with the states, by intercession of princes was hoped a reconciliation to be made. But he seeing the country vn-  
willing, and smiting himselfe sick (through melancholie as was thought) retired from Dunkirke toward France. And so, soone as he was retired, the Prince of Spaine for King Philip, caused Dunkirke to be besieged, his Frenchmen left within it. And as the states generall, and the prince of Orange would haue sent thither to reduce the towne, the marshall Biron with his Frenchmen and Drummers, the Flemings, chiefly they of Gaunt, partly for hatred of the French,

Monseuro  
uerthrowne  
at Antwerp,  
his French-  
men slaine,  
and many  
taken pris-  
oners.

Noblemen  
of France  
slaine.

Generall  
Norris with  
23. ensignes.

French, and partly that many now were become Spanissh, would not suffer him to come ouer into Flaunders, whereby Dunkirke was forced to surrender: and this losse being imputed to the Duke, increased his sicknesse, so that he died at Chastreau Thierie the 10. of July, Anno 1583. and was royally buried at Paris, and now to our matters at home.

The thirteenth day of Januarie, in the parish of Armitage, in a place called Blackmoor in Dorsetshire, a peece of ground containing three acres, remooued from the place where it was first planted, and was carried cleane ouer another close, where Alder and Willow trees grew, the space of fortye goads (every goad containing 15. fote) and hath slopt vp a high way that directed towards the market towne of Cerne, and yet notwithstanding the hedges wherewith it was inclosed, inuironed it still, and the trees stand thereon bolt upright, lauing one Cake that is well nigh twenty goads remooued: the place where this ground had been, is left like vnto a great pit.

The same 13. day of Januarie being sonday, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, the old and underpropped scaffolds round about the Beare garden, commonly called Paris garden, on the Southside of the riuer of Chamis ouer against the citie of London, ouercharged with people, fell suddenly downe, whereby to the number of eight persons men and women were slaine, and many others sore hurt and bruised to the shortening of their liues. A friendly warning to such as more delight themselves in the cruetrie of beasts then in the works of merrie, the fruits of a true professed faith, which ought to be the Sabbath daies exercise.

The third of February being sonday, William Bruiſter Haberdasher (a man of more then 60. yeares old) being lodged ouer the southwell porch of Saint Brides church in Fleetstreete, with a woman named Mary Breame (whome the same Bruiſter had bailed out of Bridewell) were both found smothered to death, in manner as shall be shewed. On the same sonday in the morning a wedding being celebrated in that church, a strong saour was smelt, which was thought to be the burning of old shooes, or such like in some gentlemans chamber neere thereabouts, but in the afternoone before euening prayer, the parishioners clipt a smoke to issue out of Bruiſters chamber, and thereupon made hast to his doore, which they found fast locked on the inside, and were forced to breake it open, and yet could not enter till they had ripped vp the lead and rooffe of the chamber, to let out the smothering stench: which being done, they found Bruiſter dead, sitting on a settle by the beds side (in his apparell and close trussed) his right thigh and right arme vp to the elbow bent with the fire of a small pan of coales that stood before him. The woman also lay dead ouer the pan, so that her armes were bent, with the neather part of her bodie before to the brest, and behind to the shoulders, and nothing else in the chamber bent but the bottom of the settle whereon Bruiſter late. Marie Breame had bene accused by her husband to be a nice woman of her bodie, but her husband being a bad man, and having spent faire and large possessions and all whatsoeuer, hauing but two pence left in his purse, hung himselfe on a tree, against a stone wall at Marten abbey in Surrey about Whitsontide, in Anno 1592.

The 16. of Aprill in the morning, Thomas Worth and Alice Shephard were  
hanged

A strange  
kind of earth-  
quaking in  
Dorsetshire.

Eight per-  
sons killed  
by the fall of  
a scaffold at  
the Beare  
garden.

Wil Bruiſter  
and Marie  
Breame smo-  
thered to  
death,  
though some  
fable to the  
contrarie.

Houſes  
blowne vp  
with gun-  
powder.

Alasco of  
Poland.

Thacker  
and Coping  
hanged at  
Bery for  
bookes.

Earle of Suſ-  
ſex deſeased

Archbiſhop  
of Canter-  
burie deſeased.

hanged at Shooe lanes end in Fleetſtreete of London, for killing of an apprentice in the ſame lane. Alſo the ſame day about eight of the clocke in the morning, a gunpowder houſe in Fetter lane, and diuerſe other houſes neare adioyning were blowne vp, with the ſpoile of 1500. weight of powder, and two men and one woman were ſlaine, and diuerſe other perſons as well men as women and children were ſore hurt, ſome blaſted with the flames, ſome bruised with timber that fell vpon them.

Albertus Alasco free baron of Laſco, Vaivoda, or palatine of Siradia in Poland, arrived at Harwich in Eſſex, & on the laſt of Aprill came by water to Willeſhether houſe in Southwarke, where he remained for y<sup>e</sup> moſt part of his abode here.

Elias Thacker was hanged at Saint Edmundsburie in Suffolke on the fourth of June, and Iohn Coping on the ſirſt of the ſame month, for ſpreading certaine bookes, ſeditiouſly penned by one Robert Browne againſt the booke of Common prayer eſtabliſhed by the lawes of this Realme, their bookes ſo many as could be found were burnt before them.

On the 9. of June deſeased Thomas Racheſe earle of Suſſer, lord Chamberlaine to her maieſtie, and knight of the garter, at Bermondſey beſides London, & was on the 8. of July conueyed through the citie of London toward New hall in Eſſex there to be buried: firſt went before him 45. poore men in blacke gownes, then on horſebacke 120. ſeruing men in blacke coats, then 25. in blacke gownes of clokes, beſides the heraults of armes and others, which bare his helme, creſt ſword, coat of armes, and banners of armes, &c. then the deſeased earle in a chariot covered with blacke velvet, borne of foure goodly geldings: next after him was led the earles ſieed covered with blacke velvet, then ſir Henry Racheſe the ſucceeding earle chiefe mourner, and 8. other lords all in blacke, then the lord maior and aldermen of London riding in murrey, then y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen of Greis Lane, and laſt of all the woſhipfull merchant Tailors in their liveryes, for that the ſaid earle was brother of their companie, as many noble men & famous princes kings of this realme before him had bene, as moze at large I haue ſet downe in my ſummarie, the eighteenth year of H. 7. the maior and aldermen, the gentlemen of Greis Lane, and the merchant Tailors accompanied the corpes to the bars with-  
out Aldgate, and returned.

Edmond Grindall biſhop of London, tranſlated to be archbiſhop of Poze, and then of Canterburie, deſeased at Croidon in Surrey on the ſirſt of July, and was there honorably buried vnder a ſane monument for him raiſed. This archbiſhop in his life, and by appointment to be finiſhed after his death, founded a grammar ſchoole at Saint Beghes in the countie of Cumberland where he was borne, with a ſchoole houſe for the maſter and ſcholars to be endued with thierſe pound by yeare, the ſchoolemaſter to haue twenty pound, and a ſcholar to teach as ſcholar 5. marks by yeare, the reſt to be beſtowed according to his ſtatutes. To Queenes colledge in Oxforde twenty pounds by yeare to maintaine one fellow, and two ſcholars to be taken out of his ſaid ſchoole, and to that colledge he gaue the moſt part of his bookes, he forgaue them ſixtie pounds, and gaue them in plate 87. ounces and a quarter. To Perimbroke hall in Cambridge, he gaue 22. l. by yeare, wherof 40. s. for the maintenance of a Grecke lecture, & the other 20. l. for a fellow, & 2. ſcholars

to be likewiſe taken out of his ſchoole: to this colledge he gaue ſome bookes, and plate 40. ounces & halfe. To Dagbolen colledge in Cambridge, he gaue ſine. l. by yeare for one ſcholar to be taken out of his ſaid ſchoole. To Chillys colledge in Cambridge plate 45. ounces. To the 8. little poore almes houſes in Croidon 50. l. to be beſtowed in land for their reliefe. To the citie of Canterburie 100. l. to be employed vpon a ſtocke to let the poore on wooke, which ſtocke (as I am informed) was neuer put to ſo good an uſe.

Bernard Randolpn elquire, ſenior ſergeant to the citie of London, deſeased on the 7. of Auguſt. This man in his life time beſeased 900. l. of good and lawfull money of England to the company of ſilkmongers in London, and bequeathed by his teſtament 1000. pounds moze, all to be employed in charitable actions, as I haue ſet downe in my ſummarie, and in Reigne Woolles chronicle.

In the month of June, were ſent to the ſea a ſhip called the bark Calbot, and a ſmall bark, both manned with 100. men vnder the charge of the woſhipfull W. Borough elquire, cleark of her maieſties nauie, for apprehending of certaine outrageous ſea-rouers, who for y<sup>e</sup> they were many in number & well appointed, ſo boldly beſeased themſelues as y<sup>e</sup> ſhortly after it was confidently bruted, y<sup>e</sup> they had vanquiſhed in fight the ſaid ſhip & bark: but with in ſer days after, beyond all expectation, they were by the ſaid W. Borough & his company diſcomfited & taken to y<sup>e</sup> number of ten ſaile, wherof three were priſes, & ſome of the chiefe pirates, namely, Thomas Walton, alias Purſer, Clinton, Arkinſon, Wil. Eliis, Wil. Valentine, alias Bigh, Tho. Beuen, Iohn Pollard, Edm. Copinger, Ro. Woodman, & Iohn Euans, who on y<sup>e</sup> thirtieth day of Auguſt were hanged at Wlapping in the Wlode beſides London. Walton as he went toward the gallows ſent his vention breeches of crimofin ſaffata, and diſtributed the ſame to ſuch his old acquaintance as ſtood about him, but Arkinſon had before giuen his murrey velvet doublet with great gold buttons, & his like coloured velvet ventionians laid with great gold lace, apparel too ſumptuous for ſea rourers which he had woone at the ſea, and wherin he was brought by priſoner from Coſe caſtell in the iſle of Porbeck to London, vnto ſuch friends as pleaſed him.

On the 17. day of Sept. Iohn Lewes, who named himſelf Abdoir, an obſtinate heretike denying the Godhead of Chriſt, & holding diuerſe other deteſtable hereties (much like to his predeceſſor Mathew Hamond) was burned at Roſwich.

On y<sup>e</sup> 22. of Sep. Albertus de Laſco, palatine of Siradia in Poland, before ſpoken of, when he had well victored y<sup>e</sup> order of our Engliſh court & nobilitie, with other places of this realme, eſpecially y<sup>e</sup> Vniuer. of Oxforde, he returned into Poland.

The 23. of September, Iohn Whitegite doctoꝝ of diuinitie, ſometime maſter of Trinitie colledge in Cambridge, and afterward biſhop of Wlouceſter, was at Lambeth tranſlated to the archbiſhopricke of Canterburie.

The 10. of October, at Caſter in Roſſolke, about two miles from Parnmouth, there was a ſhip by force of y<sup>e</sup> rafterd yew broken on ſhoze, y<sup>e</sup> length wherof was from the necke to the taile 17. yards & a foot, y<sup>e</sup> head was great for the charge of the ſhip taken, laſt was 3. yards & a quarter in length, with ritch of 2. quarters of a yard copalle, great ties, & 2. great holes ouer them to ſpout out water, her taile was 14. foot in breadth, in thickneſſe from the backe to the brille the was 4. yards and an halfe.

Sea rourers  
apprehended  
and executed.

Iohn Lewes  
brent at  
Norwich.  
Palatine of  
Siradia in  
Poland returned.  
Doctoꝝ  
Whitegiſt  
archbiſhop  
of Canter-  
burie.

A monſtrous  
ſhip taken.

Slade and  
Bodie exe-  
cuted.

John Slade schoolemaister, and John Bodie maister of art, being both condemn-  
ned of high treason for maintaining of Romane power, were drawne, hanged,  
bowelled, and quartered: Slade at Winchelsea on the 30. of October, and Bodie  
at Andover on the 2. of November.

An. reg. 26.  
Horse steal-  
ers hanged  
ten at once.

One Ditch a notable horse stealer was apprehended, and at the sessions holden  
at Newgate on the fourth of December 19. times indicted, where he confessed 18.  
who also betwene the time of his apprehension and the sayd sessions, apprehended  
many for stealing of horses, whereof ten were hanged in Smithfield on the first of  
December, being horse market there: he also holpe diuerse men to their horses a-  
gain, and tooke of every one of them 10.s. the peece, of more, whereby he made  
15.l. toward his charges.

Desmonds  
head set on  
London  
bridge.

James earle of Desmond in Ireland, secretly wandering without any succour,  
being taken in his cabine by one of the Irish, his head was cut off, and sent into  
England, where the same, as the head of an arch rebel, was set on London bridge  
on the 12. of December.

The towne  
of Nant-  
wich burnt.

The same 12. of December, through negligence of indiscrete persons byrning  
in the towne of Nantwich, the fire being carelesly left, upon some light matter, &  
so burst forth to the roofes of the house, and in short time increased, that from the  
west end of the towne the flame was disperfed so furiously into the towne,  
that in short space a great part of the towne was burned downe to the ground, &  
there was consumed about the number of 200. houses, besides many houses,  
barnes, stables, &c. in all about 600. houses.

Someruill,  
Arden, and  
other arraig-  
ned.

Someruill,  
strangled in  
Newgate.  
Arden exe-  
cuted.

About this time, John Someruill a furious young man of Essex in War-  
wickshire, of late discovered and taken in his way comming with full intent to  
kill the queenes maiesty, whom God long prosper to raigne ouer vs, confessed the  
treason, and that he was moued therunto in his wicked spirit, by certaine tray-  
terous persons his kinsmen and alices, and also by often reading of certaine sedi-  
tious bookes lately published, for the which the sayd Someruill, Edward Arden a  
squire in Warwickshire, and Hugh Hall piest, being with other before indicted  
at Warwick, were on the 16. of December arraigned in the Guild hall of Lon-  
don, where they were found guilty and condemned of high treason. On the 19. of  
December, John Someruill, and Edward Arden, being brought from the tower  
of London to Newgate of the same city, & there shut by in several places: within  
two houres after, Someruill was found (desperately) to haue strangled himselfe.  
And on the morrow being the 20. of December, Edward Arden was drawne frō  
Newgate into Smithfield, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered: whose  
head with Someruills head was set on London bridge, and his quarters on the  
gates of the city, but the body of Someruill was buried in the Moorfields near  
unto the windmills.

1584.  
Carter exe-  
cuted.

On the 10. of January, at a sessions holden in the Justice hall in the Old bailey  
of London, for gaole deliuey of Newgate, William Carter of the city of London,  
was there indicted, arraigned, and condemned of high treason, for printing a sedi-  
tious and traitterous booke in English, entituled, A treatise of schisme: and was  
for the same (according to sentence pronounced against him, on the next morrow  
drawne

drawne from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.  
And shortly after against slanderous reports spread abroad in seditious bookes, let-  
ters, and libels thereby to inflame our countrey men, and her maiesties subiectes, a  
booke was published, intituled, A Declaration of the famous dealing of her ma-  
iesties commissioners, &c. which booke also I haue caused to be let downe in the  
Continuation of the chronicle, first collected by Reigne Wolfe, and finished by  
Raphaell Hollenshed.

The 22. of January John Watson bishop of Winchester deceased at Wolsley,  
and was buried at Winchester on the 12. of Februarie.

Bishop of  
Winchester  
deceased.  
Seminaries  
executed.

The funeral of Februarie, were arraigned at Westminster John Fen, George  
Haddock, John Munden, John Nutter, and Thomas Hemmerford. all due found  
guilty of high treason, in being made piests beyond the seas, and by the popes  
authoritie, since a statute made in Anno primo of her maiesties raigne, and had  
iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered: which were all executed at  
Tiborne on the 12. of Februarie.

The 21. of May, Francis Throckmorton squire was arraigned in the Guild  
hall of the cite of London, where being found guilty of high treason, he was con-  
demned, & had iudgement to be drawne, hanged, bowelled, & quartered. The  
10. of July next following, the same Francis Throckmorton was conveyed by  
water from the tower of London to the Blacke friers staires, and from thence by  
land to the sessions hall in the Old bailey without Newgate, where he was deli-  
uered to the Sherikes of London, laid on a hurdle, drawne to Tiborne, & there exe-  
cuted according to his iudgement. A discouery of whole treasons, practised & at-  
tempted against the Ducenes maiesty & the realme, were in the moneth of June  
published and printed in a booke intituled, A true and perfect Declaration of the  
treasons practised and attempted by Francis Throckmorton &c. And the same I  
haue set downe in the continuation of Reigne Wolfes chronicle.

Francis  
Throckmor-  
ton arraign-  
ed and exe-  
cuted.

The 19. of July, Robert baron of Denbigh, the only son and heire of Robert  
earle of Leicester, departed this mortal life, being then of the age of three yeares &  
somewhat more, at Walsingham in Essex, whose funeral was there honorably kept  
on the first of August, and after his body was conueyed to Warwick, and there in  
the chappell of Richard Beauchampe earle of Warwick, honorably interred on  
the 20. of October. The 12. of November, the queenes maiesty (returning after  
her progresse) came to her manor of St. James, where the citizens of London to  
the number of 200. the grauest for in coats of velvet, & chaines of gold on horse  
backe, and 1000. of the companies on foote (hauing with them 1000. men with  
torches, ready there to giue light on euery side, for that the night before on received  
and welcomed her. And on the 24. day of the same moneth, her maiesty and the  
lords rode to the parliament, which was that day begun at Westminster.

Baron of  
Denbigh de-  
ceased.

The London-  
ners receiue  
th: queene-  
from her  
progresse.  
An. reg. 27.  
Parliament  
at Westmin-  
ster.

In the moneth of January, deceased Edward Fines lord Clinton, earle of Lin-  
colne and lord admirall of England, knight of the garter, and one of her maiesties  
privy counsell, a man of great yeares and seruice, as well by sea as by land, he was  
buried at Walsley.

1585.  
Earle of Lin-  
colne decea-  
sed.

The 21. of January, Jesuites, Seminaries, & other massing piests to the nu-  
ber of 21. late prisoners in the tower of London, marshalsea, & kings bench, were  
hanged in Old England.

Seminaries  
and other  
priests  
hanged  
in Old England.



Slipped at y<sup>e</sup> tower wharfe to be coueied towards France, & banished this realme for euer, by vertue of a commission from her maiesty, as may more fully appeare by the same commission set downe in my continuation of Reine Woolfes chronicle.

The Earle  
of Darby his  
ambassage  
into France.

Henry earle of Darby, appointed by her maiesty ambassadoe to Henry the 3. french king, and to inuest him with the order of the garter, tooke his leaue of the queenes maiesty at Grenewich the 20. of January, and with him such gentlemen as were present were admitted to kisse her highnes hand, M<sup>r</sup>. Cooke Claenceaux appointed to attend in that boyage in place of Garter whose roome was boyde, and Robert Glouer Somerset herault, likewise appointed to that journey noblemen & gentlemen attending on the earle of Darby, the L. Sands, Frederike Z. Winsor maister Scrope son and heire to the L. Scrope, maister Windfor brother to the L. Windfor, sir Richard Sherborne, sir Ralph Brierton, maister Anthony Cooke maister Gerard son and heire to sir Thomas Gerard, maister Fleetwood, maister Nudigere maister Siallage gentleman vsher, the queenes seruants, maister Crompton, maister Smith, maister Denota, maister Miles maister Thomas Aris steward, maister Fox controller, maister Newton gentleman vsher, maister Philips chaplaine, maister Alexander gentleman of the horse, maister Morecroft phisition: The earles waiting gentlemen, maister Dawnie son & heire to sir John Dawnie, maister Legh son and heire to sir Pierce a Legh, maister Warren, &c. On the 26. of January, the earle with his traine passed from London to Grauesend, where taking post horses, they rid to Sittingborne, and from thence to Dover, where they embarked & landed at Calais on the 1. of february. On the 3. of february, y<sup>e</sup> earle with his whole traine went from Calais to Bologne to bed, where they were very well entertained. On the 4. of february, they rid to Montreuil, on the 5. to Abbeuil, where they were met with 150. shot of harquebussiers. On the 6. they took their journey to Amiens, where of monsieur Creuicure accompanied with 100. gentlemen, & best citizens, they were met half a mile without the towne, y<sup>e</sup> night the sayd Creuicure presented the earle with great store of very large & good fresh water fish, and the towne with wine of diuers sorts, and the day following being Sunday, the sayd Creuicure inuited the earle to dinner: which dinner was highly commended. After dinner, the earle with his traine went to Brethnull to bed, the next night to Cleremount, where he staid tuesday and wednesday: the tenth of february he went to Luzarch. On the 11. to S. Denis, where by the way he was met by sir Edward Stafford, y<sup>e</sup> her maiesties ambassadoe resident with the french king, who brought with him diuerse gentlemen of England, to the number of thirty horse, and so accompanied him to Saint Denis, where they kept company all the day following being Friday. On Saturday, his honor made his entry into Paris about two of the clocke at afternoone, there being of the lord ambassadoes traine more then two hundred horse, and mid way betwixt S. Denis and Paris, there met with them first from the king, the duke of Montpensier a pounce of the blood, the lord of Camignie, le Chapel aux Vrius, countie de Lude, de Piennes, de Malicorn, de la Mothemilon, who had sometimes bene ambassadour ligger in England, Desbrie, Dabin, de Fontaines, de Cormillon, the marquis of Curton, the countie de Grignan, all counsellors to the counsell, and knights of the holy Ghost. The duke of Tremouille, the counties Brillac, de Creance,

Sancerne,

Sancerne, and of Luzure, with a great number of lords and barons, gentlemen of the chamber. These did accompanie the earle of Darbie vnto Hostell de Lengrenuill sometime called the Hostell of Aniou, there was his lordship, with the other lords and gentlemen lodged, where was three tables very sumptuouslie furnished for them, all of the kings cost, the one table in the great chamber, for the lords and gentlemen seruants to her maiesty, the other in the hall for the earle of Darbies gentlemen and the third in a gallerie beneath for gentlemen seruants, besides liuerie into curie chamber, both of ware, wood, wine, and such like, in as great plenty as could be desired. On Sunday the 14. of february, y<sup>e</sup> said earle betwixt the houres of two & thre in the afternoone, went from his lodging by a postierne throug the garden, accompanied with the said lords, De la Moth Fenelon, de Curton, and Grignan, together with other, and found the capitaines of the regiment of the kings garde, making two ranks on either side of the streete, beginning from the postierne to the Louure gate, who welcommed him in the kings behalf. Without the gate of the said Louure, he was receiued by the Lieutenants of the great Brouolt of France, and his archers. At the Louure gate by the tier de Montegnie, capitaine thereof to his maiesty, and his archers, which archers together with those of the great Brouolt made two ranks from the said gate of the Louure, to the foote of the staires: from which foote, his Lordship was receiued by the tier de Perdillon, the french Lieutenant of the Swissers of the Kings guard, which from the foote of the said staires to the doore of the hall made two ranks, for his lordships passage. At the entrie of the hall, his lordship was receiued by the tier de Chasteau Vieux knight of the holy ghost, and capitaine of the archers of the Kings guard, who likewise from the said doore vnto the doore of the antichamber, made two ranks: from the doore of the antichamber, his lordship was receiued by tier de Combault of the holy ghost, chiefe maister de Hostelle to his maiesty, and by his gentlemen waiters: and there in the said antichamber, all the said earle of Darbies officers and gentlemen wearing liuries, were appointed to stay, and the Queenes seruants that proceeded next, went still forward: at the entrie of the chamber of estate, his lordship was receiued by the tier de Licocourt knight of the holy ghost, chiefe esquire of the kings esquire, and the other esquires of the esquire, together with the lieutenant of the hundred, gentlemen of his Maiesty, who made two ranks from that chamber doore to the chamber of audience. euerie of them hauing halbarts in their hands. At the entrance of the antichamber, his Lordship was receiued by the Duke Loieulx, accompanied with the gentlemen of the kings chamber ordinarie, who made two ranks from that chamber doore to the doore of the chamber royall. Into the said chamber royall first entred all the Gentlemen the Queenes Maiesties seruants, the lords that had receiued and accompanied the said earle and Lords: and the said Duke de Loieulx accompanied the said earle of Darby vnto the bars that stood about the hall pare, or mounting floore in the said chamber, where the king stood at his beds fete, accompanied without the said barriers, on his right hand with the Cardinals of Bourbon, Vandosine & Loieulx, & on the left hand with the lords, y<sup>e</sup> princes of Contie, the countie de Soissons, & M. Montpensier, princes of y<sup>e</sup> blood: the dukes of Berry, Delbeuse, de la Tremouille, de Retz, Monsieur Chacellor,

licr

ſter de Vilequier, du Bonchafe, de la Valette, Dantragues, de la Chapelle aux Vriſus, Cauignie, la Vanguion, counte de Mawleurier, Clermont, Dantragues, de Larchant, and other knights of the holy ghoſt, and counſellers of the ſtates in great number. The ſaid earle with the Ambaſſador, ordinat of England, ſolonly entered within the ſaid halpall within the barriers vnto his maiſtie, of whom they were receiued with great curteſie, & as amiable countenance as could be, & the earle deliuered the Queenes maiſties letters vnto the king with great reuerence, & then making rehearſall of that he had in charge to ſay, the ſaid ambadoꝝ preſented vnto the king the lordes Sands and Windſore, and other the Engliſh knights and gentlemen, which all one after another mounted vpon the halpall, kiſſed their hands, & did their reuerence vnto the king. Then the earle tooke his leave, and was conduſted by all the lordes and captaines vnto the place where they had firſt receiued him. Afterward he went to ſalute the queene mother, & at the entrance into her chamber, he was receiued by Monſieur de Lanſac knight of the holy ghoſt, & knight of honor vnto the ſame queene, whom he found accompanied with her neece the princeſſe of Noruay, ſtanding at her beds head, the princeſſe of Conde and Fontie, and the duchies of Picuers ſtanding at the beds fete, the duchieſſes of Dufes, and of Ruz, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number. From thence his lordſhip was ſcayped to the queene regents chamber, at the entrance whereof he was receiued by the countie de Fieſque knight of the holy ghoſt, and her knight of honor, finding her accompanied with the duchieſſes of Montpenſier & Joieulx, who ſtood at her beds fete, the lady of Roinden her lady of honor, and other ladies & gentlewomen in great number, & then returned to ſe ſoyeſaid hoſtel de Longueuille. On monday the 15. of February, the R. by Monſieur le Moſchenelon told the lord ambadoꝝ his niſp, touching the receit of 5000. that he intended to receiue it on Thursday following in the after noone, at 5000. guine ſtricks, which was done accordingly, with a mantle of blew velvet, and a hood, a collar of the order, with a booke of the ſtatutes of the order, which all were inueſted vpon the king, in a place called Maſon de nautalles, but 5000. was miniſtered vnto the king in 5000. ſtricks church, 10000. being ſung. On the 28. of February, the ambadoꝝ with his traine tooke their leave, at whole returne ſeo 5000. court to his lodging, he was preſented 5000. night with a rich cupbord of plate, worth 1200. £. at the leaſt: & vnto maſter Clarenceaux was giue a chaſne of gold, worth 120. £. & better, of 236. linkes, to maſter Somerſet a chaſne of 150. linkes, worth 100. marks, & to Thomas Mill's a chaſne of the ſame value. On Thursday next, the earle with his traine ſet forward homewards from Paris vnto S. Denies, & ſo were lodged all the way, in the ſame lodgings that before they had bene receiued in, and arrived proſperouſly in England, from Boloigne to Douce the thirtieth of March, & on the Thursday following were brought to the queenes maiſties preſence at Greenwich, who graciously welcomed them home.

The 1. day of March William Parry, was dratone from the tower through the city of London to Weſtmiſter, and there in the palace court, hanged, bodelled and quartered for high treaſon, as may appeare by a booke extant, intituled, A true & plaine declaration of the horrible treaſons praſtised by W. Parry, &c. & I haue ſet downe the ſame booke in the continuance of Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

This

William  
Parry executed.

This year ſir Walter Mildmay knight, Chanſelor of the Exchequer, and Emanuel College founded. one of her maiſties priuie counſell, founded a college in the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, vpon the houſe and ground of the late ſir preachers Dominickes, or blacke friers in the preachers ſtrete, and named it Emanuel college.

The 29. of March, the parliament was diſſolved, at the breaking vp whereof, the Queenes maiſtie made an Oration in the Parliament houſe, to ſuch effect as followeth. My Lordes and ye of the lower houſe, my ſilence muſt not inuirt. the owner ſo much, as to ſuppoſe a ſubſtitute ſufficient to reſider you the thanks that my hart yeeldeth you: not ſo much for the ſafe keeping of my life (for which your care appeareth ſo maniſt) as for the negliſhing your priuie future weill, not regarding other way then my preſent ſtate, no prince herein (I couſell) can be ſuſtained or ſafer bound than I am, with the linke of your good will, and cauſe that but yeild a hart and head to ſeeke for euer all your beſt: yet one matter toucheth me ſo neere as I may not ouer ſkip: religion, the ground on which all other matters ought to take roote, and being corrupted may mar all the tree: and that there be ſome fault ſinners with the order of the clergie, which ſo may make a ſcandall to my ſelfe & the Church, whole ouer-looker God hath made me, whole negliſſance cannot be excuſed, if any ſchilines or errors hereticall were ſuffered. Thus much I muſt ſay, that ſome faultes & negliſſances may grow & be, as in all other great charges it happeneth: & what vocation without & all which of your lordes of the clergie do not amend, I muſt depole you, looke you therefore well to your charges, this may be amended without herſies or open clamoratio. I am ſuppoſed to haue many ſtudies, but moſt philoſophicall: I muſt yeild this to be true, I ſuppoſe ſeo 5000. I be no proſtitors haue read more. And I need not tel you I am ſo ſimple & I vnderſtand not ſo forgetfull, I remember not, & yet amongſt my ſtra my volums, I hope gods booke hath not bene my ſeldomeſt lecture, in which we find 5000. which by reaſon (for my part) we ought to be true, I ſeeing ſo great wickednes & grieues in y<sup>e</sup> world, in which we live but as waie-fairing pilgrimages; we muſt ſuppoſe y<sup>e</sup> God would neuer haue made vs but for a better place, & of more comfort than we find here. I know no creature y<sup>e</sup> beareth his whole life ſtandeth bound in moſt perill for it then mine own, who extend not in many ſtate without ſight of manifold dangers of life & crown, as one I had the mightieſt & greateſt to waſte with. Then it followeth, I regarded it ſo much, as I left my ſelfe behinde my care. And ſo you ſee, that you wrong me ſo much, if any ſuch there be: as doubt my volentes in that behalfe: for if I were not perſwaded that mine owne the truth of Gods will: God forbid I ſhould live to quene it to you: What ſhould I ſeek ſtillſt not too true: They that ſtate the hope croſſe, the ſtew ſhall fall beſt. I ſee many our-hold with God Almighty, making too many ſubtil ſoundings of his bleſſed will, as lawyers do with humane ſtatements: the perſuſion is ſo great, as I may not ſuffer it: yet mine I not herſie to amine Romanly, which ſet abouderies they be to mine ſtate, is ſufficiently knowne: nor tollerate y<sup>e</sup> ſame ſingularly. I ſeeme to giue then how by Gods true rule: in both parts be perils, and of the latter I muſt promiſe ſon dangerous to a kingly rule, to haue eueri man according to his owne ſtate: make a doome of the ſtatutes & ſtatutes of his priuie gouernment, with anyon vail & court of Gods word, whole ſollowers muſt not be iudged but by

Parliament diſſolved.

The queenes  
maiſtie her  
Oration.

ynimate mens exposition, God defend you from such a Ruler that to ruill would guide you. Now I conclude, that your love & care neither is nor shall be bestowed upon a carcellle Prince, but such as for your good will passeth as little for this world as who careth least, with thanks for your free libidie: a manifest shew of the abundance of your good wills, the which I assure you, but to be employed to your weale. I could be better pleased to returne then receive. Thus much her Maesties Nation. In this parliament a libidie of 2. s. 8. goods, and 4. s. lands was granted, and two fifteenes by the laitie.

In the month of Aprill about the 14. day, by commandement of her Maestie, the citizens of London appointed out of their companies of the same citie, to the number of 4000. men, with armor, ensignes, drums, fises, and other furniture for the wars, the greater part whereof were shot, the other were pikes, and halberds in faire coslecks: all those to be trayned by under expert capitaines, with sergeants of the bands, misters, and other necessary officers, mustered, and skirmished dayly at the Miles end, and in Saint Georges field: and on the 18. of May (having our night set forward out of St. Georges field) mustered in the park at Greenwich, and skirmished before the Quene's maiestie, who gaue to them great thanks for their assiduitie and paines.

The 15. of Aprill, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was brought prisoner into the tower of London for attempting to have passed y<sup>e</sup> seas without licence, &c.

The 21. of June, Henrie Percy earle of Northumberland, prisoner in the Tower of London, upon vehement suspicion of high treason, was there found dead, and also of his owne diuelish intent, and of his malice before pretended, to have murdered himselfe, as more at large may appere, by inquisition made by a substantiall Jurie, taken before the crowne of London, as followeth *verbatim* with the record.

An inquisition taken at the cite of London, that is, within the Tower of London, in the parish of Alhallowes Barking, in the wards of the Tower of London, on Monday being the 21. day of June, in the yere of the reigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth by the grace of God, Queene of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. the 27. before William Squire Gentleman, Copier to our said Soueraigne Lady the Quene within the Cite of London and the liberties of the same, upon the view of the body of Henrie Percy knight, late earle of Northumberland, late prisoner there within the Tower of London aforesaid, for suspicion of high treason by him supposed to be done, there lying dead, and slaine: by the othes of Nicholas Wheeler, Simon Horlepoole, T. Gardener, William Lesmeson, Owen Morgan, Henry Lodge, William Abraham, William Horne, Thomas Russell, Iohn Porter, Robert Dowe, Anthony Hall, William Curtis, Thomas Wood, Matthew Dolman, Thomas Martin, Richard Slesford, Iohn Trot, Philip Smith, Thomas Talbot, and Henrie Bowdler, of good & lawfull men of the same wards, and of three other wards to the same ward next aforesaid, as the manner and custom is in the cite aforesaid, to inquire how, in what manner, and when the said Henrie Percy late earle of Northumberland came to this death. Whiche Jurie do say upon their othes, that on the 21. day of this instant moneth of June, in y<sup>e</sup> yere of the reigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth by the

4000. Londoners trayned vp with shot, &c.

Earle of Arundell sent to the Tower. Earle of Northumberland found to haue murdered himselfe.

Copie of the inquisition by the crowne.

Verdict of the Jurie.

grace of God queene of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. The 27. aforesaid, and long before the aforesaid Henrie late earle of Northumberland prisoner in the tower of London aforesaid in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesaid, in the ward of the tower of London aforesaid, for suspicion of high treason aforesaid, by him against our Soueraigne Lady the Quene supposed to be committed, and the aforesaid earle so remaining prisoner, and being placed in a certain chamber within the tower of London aforesaid, there prisoner remaining imagining and intending himselfe diuelishly and feloniously to kill a maner before the aforesaid 21. day of June: that is to say, the 16. day of June in the 27. yere aforesaid, did prepare a certaine bag of iron & Steele of the value of 10. s. with certaine bullets of lead, & a certaine quantity of gunpowder, contained in a small box, & caused the aforesaid gun, the bullets of lead, and the gunpowder to be brought into the aforesaid chamber unto him the said earle of Northumberland, & to be delivered to the same earle then and there by the hands of James a Price proman to execute his diuelish and felonious purpose and intention, which bag aforesaid, the aforesaid earle caused secretly to be hidden in a certaine matresse under the bolster of his bed in the chamber aforesaid, and then and there, the aforesaid 21. day of June in the 27. yere aforesaid, betweene the houses of twelve and one in the night of the aforesaid 21. day of June, thinking and intending to prosecute and follow his diuelish intention and purpose aforesaid, did bolt the doore of the aforesaid chamber, and the inner part of his said chamber towards himselfe, lest any man should force or withstand his diuelish, felonious, and malicious intent: and the said doore of his aforesaid chamber being so bolted, the same earle then and there into his bed himselfe did lay, and upon this afterward, that is to say, the aforesaid one and twentieth of June, in the seven and twentieth yere aforesaid, about the houses aforesaid, within the tower of London aforesaid, situate and being in the parish of Alhallowes Barking aforesaid, in the ward of the tower of London aforesaid, not having the almighty God or his fear before his eyes, but being moued and seduced by the instigation of the diuell, of his malice aforesaid pretended, did take up into his handes the aforesaid bagge of yron and Steele, then and there made ready, charged with gunpowder, and three bullets of lead, and the aforesaid bagge to the left part of his brest heart unto the pappe of the same part of his brest, then and there feloniously and diuelishly did put, and upon the same part of his brest the aforesaid bagge did discharge, by reason of the violence of which gunpowder, and of the aforesaid three bullets of lead, the aforesaid earle into his body and heart, and through his chine bone, even into his right shoulder, himselfe then and there with the aforesaid bullets of lead, feloniously and voluntarily did strike, giuing unto himselfe then and there one mortall wound of the depth of twelve inches, and of the breadth of two inches: of which mortall wound aforesaid, the aforesaid earle within the tower of London aforesaid, the day and yere parish and ward aforesaid, instantly died. And so the Jurie doth say upon their othes aforesaid, that the aforesaid earle, the day and yere, and place above written, of his diuelish intent aforesaid, and of his malice before pretended, feloniously and voluntarily himselfe did kill, and murder in manner and

forme

some assayd, against the peace of our soveraigne, ~~saye~~ the queene, her crowne and dignity. But what goods and chattels the ~~sayd~~ earle in the time of the ~~sayd~~ and murder of himselfe assayd committed had; or as yet hath, the King knoweth not. ~~as in~~ witness whereof, &c. This was the verdict of the Jurors, whereby it remained to provide for the bestowing of his wretched carcase, which on the 23. day of June was buried in St. Peters church within the sayd towne of London. This was the end of that earle, the manner of whose murder, and part of his treasons articulated, as the same was publicly delivered in the Star-chamber, and after published in a booke intituled: A true and summarie report of the declaration of some part of the earle of Northumberlands treasons, deluded, &c. And are set downe in my continuation of Haillier Reine Woolfes Chronicle.

Entertainment of the deputies for the States of the Low countries.

On the 26. of June arrived at London, deputies for the States of the Netherlands, of Low countries, who were lodged about the tower streete, and had their diet for the time of their abode here very worshipfully appointed (all at the charges of her maiesty) in the clothworkers hall in Wyndhouse lane, neare to the sayd tower streete. Thise on the 29. of June, being the feast of the Apostlic Peter and Paul, repaired to the court, then at Greenwich, where by vertues of their commissions from the united countries, they presented to her maiesty the sovereignty of those countries, to wit, of Brabant, but the commission (for the siege of Antwerpe not full authorized, of Guelder, of Flandres, of Holland, of Zeland, of Utrecht, and of Friseland; for Brabant, Jacques de Grise great baillie of Bruges, counsellor of the Franckes; for Guelder Roger of Barlow gentleman; for Flandres, Noël de Garlie lord of Spounewalle; for Holland, John Wandersdoel, lord of Houtwike; Josse de Menin pensionarie of Woerden, John of old Bamevelt, pensionarie of Rotterdam, and W. Francis Maello: for Zeland, Jacob Dales counsellor and pensionarie of Tergoest; for Utrecht, Paulus Buis, W. of the latines; for Friseland, J. Fritzmans gentleman, H. Ansons president of Friseland, and Lads Jangema gentleman. All these falling on their knees before her maiesty, and so remaining for a long space, one of them, to wit, Josse de Menin counsellor and pensionary of Woerden, one of the commissioners for Holland, made to her maiesty this oration in french: Madame, les Estares des Provinces Unies des pais, &c. as I have set downe in Reine Woolfe, with also the same in English thus: Madam, the States of the united provinces of the Low countries, most humbly thanks your maiesty for the good affection and favour, which it hath pleased you to shew to the sayd countries in their necessity, and to confirme the same with so many testimonies, and that lastly after the execrable assault committed upon the person of the late prince of Orange, at what time it pleased your maiesty to let the sayd States understand by your Ambassadors master Davison, what care you had of our defence and preservation, and also by Seigneur de Cnif, the great displeasure which your maiesty conceived, to see the States frustrated of the hope which they had founded upon the treaty of France. But since the care which your maiesty hath alwayes had our good and conservation is not thereby any whit diminished, but hath more plentifully increased according as the necessity

The deputy oration to her maiesty.

the necessity of our affaires required, for which the said countrie in generall, and every of us in particular remaine perpetually bound to your Maiesty, and acknowledge the same with all fidelitie and obedience. And as the said States (Madame) did consider that since the decease of the Prince of Orange, they have sustained the losse of divers of their holdes and good towres, and that for the preservation of the sayde Countrie it is needfull for them to have a Prince and soveraigne ruler, which may warrant and defend them against the tyrannie and uniuersall oppression of the Spaniards and their adherents, which daily more and more inforce themselves, by their sinistre power, and all other means to destroy and overthrow the sayde Countries, and reduce this poore people into perpetuall seruitude, worse then that of the Indians, under the importable yoke of the detestable Inquisition of Spaine. Considering also that the bodie of the Townes and Communalties of the aforesaid Countries have a firme hope that your Maiesty will not see them perish, according to the desire of their enemies, which make this long and cruell warre, all which outrages, the States of the sayd Low countries (following the diligence and band which they owe to the Burgeses and citizens) are to sustaine, repell, and to turne from them, by reason of the manifest tyrannie and seruitude, which the Spaniards attempt to bring in and to lay upon the poore people, thereby to preserve their liberties, rights, priuiledges, and franchises, with the exercise of the true Christian Religion, whereof your Maiesty by good right carrieth the title of Protectrice and Defendresse, against which the said enemies, and their associates already haue and still do make many leagues, devise many subtilties, treasons, and ambushes, not ceasing daily to practise and imagine them against the person of your Maiesty, and to the priuidge of the rest of your realmes and states, whom the good God hath preserved untill this present, for the wealth of the Christians, and sustentation of their Churches. Wherefore (Madame) it is so, that for causes, reasons, and other considerations, the said States haue assembled and concluded vpon a good and firme resolution, to haue recourse vnto your Maiesty, sith it is an ordinarie matter amongst all people, and oppressed nations, in their calamities and oppressions to craue support, and fauour against their enemies, of Kings and Princes neare vnto them, but especially of those who be endued with magnanimity, pietie, iustice, and other princely vertues, to which effect the States haue appointed vs to come vnto your Maiesty, to present vnto the same, the Principallitie, Soueraignty, and iust government of the said Provinces, under certaine good and equal conditions, chiefly concerning the preservation of the exercise of the reformed Religion, and of the ancient priuiledges, liberties, franchises and customes, and next of the administration of the affaires, pollicie, and iustice of the warres in the said countrie. And although that these countries haue sustained much hurt by these long and continuall warres, and that the charge hath taken diuers strong places and fortres in the same countries: yet there is besides the same in the countries of Brabant, Gelderland, Flandres, Halines, and Dueret, many good towres and places, which defend themselves against the force of the enemy, and the countries, of Holland, Zeland, Utrecht, and Frise, be yet thanks be to God, entire

and whole: in which there be many great and strong towtines and places, faire riuers, and deepe Ports and hauens of the sea, out of which your maiestie and your succellours may receiue diuerse good seruices, fruites and commodities, wherof it is needlesse here to make any long recitall. Onely this amongst other matters deserveth good and especiall consideration, that the uniting of those countries, of Holland, Zeland, Frisie, and the towines of Sluze, and Ostend in Flaunders, into the Realmes of your Maiestie, importeth so much as the absolute government of the great Ocean sea, and by consequence, and assurance, and perpetuall felicitie for the subiects of your worthie Maiestie: which we most humbly beseech, that it will please the same to condescend unto vs in the said pointes and conditions, and in that which followeth, which is, that you will for you and your lawfull succellours in the crowne of England, be protectours of the reformed religion, as the principall iusticer and soueraigne gouernour of the said countries: and consequently to receiue the people of the same as your most obedient subiects vnder the protection and continuall safeguard of your Maiestie, they being a people assuredly so faithfull and louing to their princes and lords (be it spoken without vaunting) as any other nation is throughout Christendome. In doing wherof, Madame) you shall preserve many goodly churches, which it hath pleased God to assemble in these latter times in the same countries, at this present in many places grievously afflicted, and you shall deliuer the same countrie and people (of late before the brutish deeds of the houle of Spaine) very rich and flourishing, through the great commoditie of the sea, ports, hauens, riuers, traffique, and marchandise, wherof they be naturally endued: you shall I say (Madame) deliuer them from ruine and perpetuall bondage of bodie and soule, being a wofull right royall and most magnificient, acceptable to God, profitable to all Christianitie, worthie immortall commendation, amenable to the magnanimitie and heroicall vertues of your Maiestie, and ioyned with the assurance and prosperitie of your dominions and subiects. Whereupon we present vnto your Maiestie the said articles and conditions, reuerently praying the King of kings to preserve your maiestie from your enemies, to increase your glorie and felicitie, and for euer to keepe you in his holy protection.

This oration ended, and the summe thereof considered, it pleased the Queenes maiestie, by direction of her wise and politicke Counsell, to incline her heart to the ease and reliefe of the said oppressed people. And because her owne subiects should not be utterly vnacquainted with her highnesse doings in that case, there was published by authoritie a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes moouing the Queene of England to giue aide to the defence of the people afflicted and oppressed in the Low countries. Dated at Richmond the first of October 1585, and the 27. yeare of the reigne of our soueraigne ladie the Queene. This booke was printed in the Latine, Italian, and English tongue. And I haue let downe the same in Reigne Woolles chronicle.

The fourth of July, Charles lord Howard late lord Chamberlaine was made lord Admirall, and Henry lord Hunsdon was made lord Chamberlaine of household.

Charles lord  
Howard L.  
Admirall.

The

The fift of July, Thomas Awfield a lemnarie priest, and Thomas Welley aulfield and Welley executed. were arraigned at the sessions hall in the Old baile, found guilty, condemned, and had iudgement as felons to be hanged: for publishing of bookes containing false, seditious, and slanderous matter, to the defamacion of our soueraigne lady the Queene. these were on the next morrow executed at Tiborn accordingly.

On the 16. of July, by the sudden fall of a bricke wall in Charus street of London neare vnto Downgate, five persons were overwhelmed and slaine, to wit, a man and his wife (the wife being great with child) and two children, the one their owne, the other a nurse child, and a poore man that liued by charitie, having no knowne dwelling place.

On the same sixteenth day of July, was sir Francis Russell knight, lord Russell, third sonne to Francis Russell earle of Bedford, slaine with a dag in the borders of Scotland before Barwik, by a Scot borne in those parts, as they met upon a truce day. And on the next morrow, to wit, the 17. of July, Francis Russell earle of Bedford, knight of the garter, and one of her Maiesties privie counsell (father to the late named sir Francis lord Russell slaine on the borders of Scotland) deceased, and was honorably buried at Chieines in Bedfordshire, on the eight of September next following.

On the thier and twentieth of July, certaine souldiers were pressed in the several wards of the cite of London, which souldiers being furnished for the wars, and clothed in red coates, all at the charges of the companies and citizens, set forth toward the seas on the thirtieth of August, and were transported over into Holland, Zeland, &c. as other the like souldiers out of other parts of the realme, before had bene transported to serve for the defence of the Low countries vnder general Norris, and other approued captaines.

On the 4. of August, betwixt the houres of four and five of the clocke in the morning, at the end of the towne called Pottingham in Kent, eight miles from London, in a lane not farre from the houlles, the ground began to sinke, thre great clines being swallowed by, the tops falling downward into a hole with the roots byward, turning round in the falling, and diuen into the earth past mans sight: and before ten of the clocke that present day, the ground and trees were sunke so low that neither the one or other might be discerned, the hole being sometimes filled with water, and other whiles neither bottome, trees, or water may be perceived. The compasse of this hole was then about fourescore paces, and being sounded with a lead and line of silke sadumers, cannot therewith find of little any bottome.

This yeare on the fourteenth of September, sir Francis Drake knight, General, Edward Winkar, Martine Frobisher, Francis Knowles, with diuerse other gentlemen, captaines, and two thousand three hundred souldiers and sailers in five and twentie ships and pinnesses departed from Plimmouth, and passing by the Isles of Bayon and the Canaries, arrived at Saint Iago, which city they took and burned: after they sailed to Saint Domingo, which they spoiled and ransomed: from thence to Carthage, which they also with great valour and especiall daunger took, spoiled, and ransomed: and retiring homewards

Aulfield and  
Welley executed.

Five persons  
slaine by fall  
of a wall.

The earle of  
Bedford and  
his sonne  
deceased.

Souldiers  
transported  
into the Low  
countries.

Ground and  
trees sunke  
& swallowed  
vp.

Sir Francis  
Drake his  
voiage to  
Domingo  
and Carthage.

raced, and burned the fort and citie of Saint Augustine in Terra Florida: and the tenth and twentieth day of July in Anno 1586. arrived at Plimmouth.

Seminarie  
and massing  
priests ban-  
nished.

On the 15. day of September, to the number of two and thirtie Semina-  
rics, massing priests, and others late prisoners in the Tower of London, Har-  
malles, Kings bench, and other places, were embarked in the Marie Martine of  
Colchester, on the southside of the Thames right over against S. Katherines, to  
be transported over into the coastes of Ffomandie, to be banished this realme for  
ever, by vertue of a commission from her maiestie before specified. These being  
safely transported over to Boloigne, wrote their certificate thereof as followeth:

Certificate  
returned by  
the banished  
men.

Wherreas upon your Honours commission directed unto Anthonie Hall, and  
Thomas Stocker, for the transporting of vs whose names are under written, in-  
to the coastes of Ffomandie, who accordingly tooke vs into a barke called the  
Marie Martine of Colchester, on the southside of the Thames, right over against  
that part of Saint Katherines next to London bridge, the fifteenth day of Sep-  
tember 1585, according to the computation of England: our will is to testifie  
unto your good honours, that they the said Anthonie Hall and Thomas Stocker  
have generally to well used vs in all respects, that we cannot but acknowledge  
our selues much beholding to so courteous and loving officers: neuertheless com-  
muning along the sea, and meeting with her Maiesties Admirall in the Dotonnes,  
who promising that we should not be disturbed in our course into the Ffomance  
of Ffomandie, according to your Honours sayde commission, we had not from  
him departed two leagues, when as a fluslinger with his people suddenly en-  
tered upon vs, being peaceably stowed under hatches, and in our quiet rest, with  
their drawne swords, their calivers and their matches fired in their hands, to  
our great terrour and discomfort, the most of vs being very sore sea-sicke, ex-  
pecting at that instant nothing but either the rigorous dint of the sword, or bullet  
of the caliver. Howbeit, perceiving being had by our commissioners with them,  
they departed, after which time, we considering the generall danger on the seas,  
besought with one consent your Honours commissioners to let vs on land at  
Calice: but they in no wise yielding thereunto, at last by reason of our im-  
portunitie in such danger and weakenesse, yielded to let vs on shore at Bo-  
loigne, partly by reason of the feare we werethen put in, and partly for that we  
feared afterward more unreasonable measure, but specially the greatest number  
of vs so sore sicke, that very tedious unto vs it seemed to beare so long and dan-  
gerous a passage. In witness whereof to this our certificate we have all sub-  
scribed our names, the nineteenth of September, 1585. William Gimlet, R. Fen,  
John Nele, Christopher Small, &c.

Fredericke lord Windsor died at Westminster upon the second of Decem-  
ber.

In the moneths of November and December, many helles and men were  
hipped at the tower wharfe, to be transported over into the Low countries.  
And on the first of December, the right honorable Robert Dudley earle of  
Leicester, lord Lieutenant generall (after he had taken his leave of her Ma-  
iestie and the court) with his traine (which was great) entered the towne  
of Colchester in Essex, where the bailiffs and brethren in scarlet gounes  
and

and multitudes of people met him, & so with great solemnitie entered the towne,  
where he lodged that night, and on the next morning set forward to Harwich in-  
to the which towne he was accordingly received and entertained. On the eight  
of December, the said earle accompanied with the earle of Essex, the lord North,  
the lord Audley, sir William Russell, sir Thomas Sherley, sir Arthur Bassett, sir  
Robert earle of Leicester  
transported  
over sea to  
Flushing.  
Walser Waller, sir Geruais Chiscon, & other knights, squires and gentlemen,  
to the number of five or six hundred horse bravely appointed, all voluntaries  
and of his friends, followers and servants, Captaines and souldiers, with his  
traine, to the number of fiftie sailes of ships and busses, set forward towards  
Flushing, with sound of trumpets and drummes, shoutes and prayers of the  
people for happie and fortunate successe. On the tenth day he arrived at Flus-  
The earles  
garden.  
hing, where with his whole traine guarded in his owne person by fiftie archers  
with bowes and arrows, fiftie halbarders, and fiftie gunners, he was with  
the intertainment of souldiers, and shot of the Towne and his noble com-  
panie before him, entertained by sir Philip Sidney gouvernor under her Ma-  
iestie of the same towne, by Graue Maurice second sonne to the deceased prince  
of Orange, by her Maiesties ambassadoe lighter there, and by the Statues  
of the towne, passing honourably entertained, with ringing of bells, and making  
of bon-fires after their manner, which is to fire greates pitch barrels on the  
tops of high poles, and then to fire them. He was there feasted and lodged  
in the Ambassadors house, where according to his accustomed disposition he  
 demeaned himselfe so humbly, that he purchased to himselfe no lesse love and  
good liking than among the English. The next day after a Sermon had, and  
dinner ended, he tooke shipping, and sailed toward Middleborough: in the  
and way betwixt Flushing and Middleborough standeth a strong fence of  
Ramkens, furnished with English men, at the which he with some of his  
speciall traine landed, and viewed the same, who returning againe to their  
ships, were presented on the top of the walls in the front of the sea with fiftie  
pike men very bravely furnished, having their English ensignes displayed,  
with triumph of shot, sound of trumpets and drums nere two houres together.  
In the which honorable triumphes, the whole flocke having good winde and faire  
weather, sailed along to Middleborough, where on the shore close at the lan-  
ding place, were, under nine ensignes displaid with great show of shot, the  
best Statues of the countrie attending my lords landing: Over the gates by the  
port was painted the red Crosse of England, her maiesties armes, & the Statues,  
through which gates the earle and his traine entering, he was thus from his  
landing to his lodging garded through a lane of musket shot with the ensignes  
borne before him, with trumpets and drums very royally, almost a quarter of a  
myle. In the middle of the market place were the English ensignes advanced,  
and belouered unto him, with the which and the rest borne before him he  
came to his lodging, where at the intreatie of the Statues, he staid more than  
two houres at the gate to see the souldiers marching and their strengthes: after  
which, because it was nere night, he entered and made his dinner and supper all  
one. Three of those nine ensignes were new: In the first were her maiesties and  
the Emperors armes quartered: In the second the earle of Leicesters and the  
Three en-  
signes among  
the rest.  
prince

prince of Oranges armies together : In the third were the seven provinces yedded unto her maiesty, all very excellently embleasoned. In a large table hangd over the gate of the English house in Spidelsborough, were embleasoned the armies of her maiesty along about the rest, next under that the lord lieutenants armies on the one side at large, hard by the which was set out the armies of the States and their houses : all which artificially by a chaine were linked together, and fastened to the English armies, under which was written at the foot of this frame, *Quos Deus conuincit, homo non separat*. Thus with great joy a continuall triumph was he entertained on their Christmas eue, after the Romish computation, which they in Zealand and Holland observe in that order.

On Christmas eue, the States of the towne in the States house, which standeth in the midst of the towne of market place, feasted him sumptuously : In the first course of which feast throughout the table was nothing but boiled meates, all flesh most excellent dainty : In the second course was all roast meates that could be thought, pigs served on their feete, and wild foule part in the feathers : In the third course was all kind of baked meates, as fowles in pies with their heads and tails unplucked all beset with pendants of her maiesties, the lord lieutenants, the countries, and diuerse English mens armies on the same. The fourth and last course was a rare banquet of incredible workmanship, as a castle of cristall founded on a rocke of pearle, about the which flowed silver streames, in which lay foules, fishes, and beasts of all kinds, some hurt, some slaine, and some gasping for breath, on the top of the which was a faire virgin lady leaning, and giuing her hands ouer the castle to succour them, very wonderfully wrought. There was wine in abundance, musike of all sorts, variety of all things, and wonderfull welcomes. This feast began at eleven of the clocke before noone, and continued till five in the after noone.

The Lord lieutenant feasted the States on Christmas day.

The next day being Christmas day, the earle to requite the States coll, invited them all, whom he feasted very royally after the English fashion. On Saint Stephens day he feasted the widowe pynesse of Orange, with her second sonne countie Maurice, and their traines so sumptuously as befecmed his and their honours. Here dispatching his weighty affaires he continued seven dayes, after which he determined to saile towards Dort, which by iudgement of the countie is not past ten houres sailing at the most. On the 17. of December after the account of England) with faire wind and weather, the whole fleet of Dutch hoies hoised vp saile toward Dort, but on the sudden, being onward on their iourney, the ayre was so ouercast with mists, that they knew not how to saile for succour, neither backward nor forward : the reason was this : The river they had to saile through, was none other then an ouerflowing country, full of old foundations of houses, churches, and castles, so that the clearest aire did no more then safegard the hoies from daunger. The 20. day, my lord with some other landed at Williamstede of Hag on hill, where he dined, and went aboard againe. On the one and twentieth of December, diuers ships of men of war and others, with the States of Dort in them, met our fleet on the water, where betwixt their ships and ours was at the meeting of the earle great triumphs with shot, in which came many small scouts of succour to hasten the traines to shore, where in good time they entered

Dort

Dort very royally and triumphantly. On the port to gard his person was set his own guard of archers, shot and halbards. And ouer the gate of entrance was her maiesties, the earles and the States armies embleasoned. When he was landed, & conducted by the States, he passed from the port through a lane of musket shot, all Dutch, brave and well appointed, with 8. ensignes displayed before him in the midst whereof was the English ensigne advanced, whence with 300. li of he was brought to his lodging. After whole entrance they & the great shot continued triumphing an hour and more : here he continued a day and two nights with singular entertainment, and verses which I ouerpasse. On the 23. of December, the earle tooke scouts to passe to Rotherdame by a riuer of fresh water very narrow, where the boats or scouts are come by men, some by hoies dragged along the riuer : but in his passage the night being cleere, suddenly there arose so great a tempest, that it put the small vessels in great daunger, but after an hour the weather waned calme, and the night cleere, only a Dutch captaine and three or foure of his men were drowned : toward night he dyed neare to the towne of Rotherdame, where on the water he was met with three barges of pleasure, in euery of which was 12. sailers, the first all in blew ierkins and bennetians, with red caps and whole cyppes white satire like. In the second 12. all in buffe. In the third 12. all in flag thymmed silke very braue, with their oares red and white : in these boats were great store of fire workes and rockets to cast into the aier, and at the same of euery one were cressets, which towards night were lighted, and on the water made an excellent shew. Thus with trumpets sounding all the way, was he brought to Rotherdame by water to his lodging in the middle of the towne. On the other side of them, on the banks stood rankes of soldiers all with musket shot betwixt euery foure of them was placed a torch or cresset burning : & thus he entered his lodging, where the States accompanied him to supper that night. Here the inhabitants were ioyfull of the English mens coming, making much of the traine. The townes men had made very memorably in the middle of the market place, the whole proposition of Erasmus in a pulpit as though he were preaching, holding a booke of the paraphrasis on the Gospels in his hand, under whom was written Erasmus Rotherodame. The earle made halt towards Delph, being from thence accompanied with the States, his barges of pleasure, & whatsoever was thought honorable. They came late to Delph, somewhat dark, but lighted by cressets along the narrow riuer, on the which many rockets & fire workes were shed. On the landing port stood great store of musket shot, with many new ensignes like a lane for him to passe through, all which brought him to his lodging, which was the house wherein the prince of Orange was slaine, ouer the gate of which house were beets which I ouerpasse. On the 25. of December, the earle was feasted of the States very royally, and on the next morrow the earle feasted them amongst whom was the pynesse of Wes, with a company of honorable ladies and gentlewomen : at the table was dutch muske of all kinds. And it is to be noted, that the further the earle went up into Holland, the blamer the countrey was, and the better was his lordship welcommed, as appeared by his excellent entertainment : from thence he remooued on the 27. of December to Donoyge, where he determined to keepe his standing court. In the evening

Lord lieutenant entered Rotherdame

The Lord lieutenant entering Delph.



Lieutenant  
entrench Dun-  
boge.

the carle by crested light, torches, and deuises of fire worke, entered into the towne of Dunboge with his traine of English men, besides the states of Rothesdame and Delph, with those of Dunboge that met him on the water, with musket shot very many. At the entrance of my lord by water on the river met him certaine fisher men, which presented Peter, James, and John at their harborow: by them Christ walking on the water, who commaunding them to cast out their nets the second time, they dyed in abundance, wherewith they made shew of presentment to the carle. for the which with thanks he passed by. Further on the river late the representation of Mars and Bellona, who uttered speeches vnto him as he passed. At his landing met him a troupe of horsemen, furnished and trapped antike in colours, before whom hauing fetched many courses, they rode away. At the entrance of the fairest streets, there were on each side of the same galleries, raised a mans height each against other, all hung with blacke baies, on both which galleries on each side stood sixene virgins all clad in white, with branches of palme or bare wreathed about, wore candles light in their hands, every of which did reverence vnto the carle, these stood a space of length distant each from other. Betwixt every one hung a looking glasse, and betwixt every glasse vpon a pretty antike perch stood a ware candle burning, and at each end of the galleries stood a champion, and a blacke Moore, the one supporting the armes of England, and the other the armes of Holland. This shew was very proper: all the way as the carle passed through were artificially made gates raised of ragged staves, and vpon every shagge stood a small ware candle burning, by which hung the armes of diuerse craftes men of the towne. The streets all the way were hangd with broad clothes, vpon the which were placed store of red robes on sheets of paper painted. At the next turning he was entertained with this shew. Over a gate vpon a very high scaffold was a conceiued battell fought betwene the English souldiers and the Spaniards, the English men still prevailing: vnder which were written verses to that effect. Passing forward, was a lofty scaffold very faire builded, with her maiesties armes at large placed: on the top stood seven virgins, representing the seven provinces, every virgin holding a spere, and the armes at large embellished, which promise she did signify, in the midst of them stood Minerva armed, incompassed about the body with the armes of England, vpon whom all the rest seemed to relie. All which were represented vnto her maistie by necessity, an old Champion. The next was on the like scaffold, seven persons representing the seven liberal sciences in their kinds, yeelded to the carle by defect: out of every window hung lanterns and candles, and every street was furnished with crested torches, and linkes light: one deuice that hung in the midst of the street contained eight and thirty lanterns and seuerall lights burning. Besides these, against my lords gate, a bar-bar had on a wall placed thre score or more basons of bright copper, and in the midst of every one a ware candle burning was placed, in the midst of all was painted a Rose and a Crowne, this made a faire shew. At the entrance of the court gate was placed aloft vpon a scaffold, as if it had bene in a cloud, Arthur of Britaine, whom they compared to the carle, vnto were hobbys, cornes, and diuers kinds of muske: And thus they brought him to his lodging, and after he

was entered in a great hall of that house, they discharged such bolies of shot as was woodfull to hear. In y night they used fire works of rockets, squibs, whistles, and balls of fire, with a dragon that continued calling out fire an houre, murtherfull artificially made. The next day, on the river aduoyning to my lords lodging, they deuised a running as it were at the tilt in boats, which was thus: From each end of the river came aboate running, with fire oares, in the stern of which on the top stood a man armed in a red wallcoate, with a blasse in his rest, having a but end of crooke: now each meeting other with these flames both fell into the water, where spere boates were ready to succour them, for away went these hopes: this sport with fresh men they continued till the carle was weary of it.

On the third day of January, the carle with three hundred heltes in thier furniture very brauely with his retinue entered Leiden, where by the way he was met by the bell of the towne, first by twelue Burgomasters clad in long blacke gownes, and on their shoulders was the towne name in large letters of silver: next then twelue of the chiefe of the city, and then many on horsebacke, all in blacke velvet. At his entrance into the city, all over his head and about to the ground on each side, was hangd with bagges of diuers colours to his lodging, himself with a canopy caried over his head was brought to his state, against the which was a stage, on the which stood two men like poets, who presented seuerall speeches as first a woman representing the towne, then famine assailling her then sickness, then Spanish seruitude, then hope to be succoured by her promise, and at the last, liberty, victory, and triumph, besides yet. And after the lord lieutenant had bene there feasted and banqueted, on the 5. of January he came from Leiden to Dunboge. The 10. he mustered part of his household, to the number of 500. more, then pointed them into seuerall companies, to seuerall gouernours the carle of Essex was y day made generall of the hostes. The 11. day, the lord lieutenant came from Dunboge to Leiden. The 12. a generall fast was proclaimed through Holland, Seiberland, and Friesland, which was kept with great zeale, the lord lieutenant spent that day till night with hearing of psalms, reading, and singing of psalms: neither he nor his earing any thing till night. The 19. of January, he came from Leiden to Dunboge.

The 24. of January, the prince of Portingale came to Dunboge. The day after the lord lieutenant was installed and sworn, a list of all the States (come to the gouerne. The manner of y installing was thus: At Dunboge is a marvellous faire hall, at the upper end wherof are five or six large steps descending, next to a faire chamber, at the upper end wherof on high was placed a colody of state, in the midst wherof were the armes of England; and against them my lord was seated, on each side of him two steps descending, late sheweth the principal States, and below them late the residue, to the number of twenty might be my lord, but foure of five steps descending. On the right hand of my lord did stand the prince of Portingale, next him the lord Morley, next another Nobis gouernour of Munster, next William Russell, and Sir Robert Gifford, with diuerse men of great account. On the left hand of my lord did stand the Duke Maurice, next the carle of Essex, Sir William Stanley, Sir Robert Stapleton, Sir Parr, with diuerse other of great account. Thus being placed, a watchman made

1586.  
Lord heuere-  
nant enureth  
Leiden.

A generall  
fast proclai-  
m'd.

The prince  
of Portingale  
came to the  
lord lieute-  
nant.  
The carle of  
Leicester in-  
stalled, and  
the States  
sworne to  
the queene.  
Persons of  
honour and  
warship.

A shew of  
barbers bar-  
fons.

a large oration in Dutch, declaring the causes of the matter in hand, with thanks to the Queenes Maiestie, and the lord lieutenant. Then was read in Latine the covenants betwene the States, the Queene and my Lord: this done, the covenants were delivered to my Lord, which he delivered to the States, and the States delivered an other unto him: then was my Lord demanded to bothe the same by oath, who holding his hand to heaven did sweare to the covenants. The like did the States, holding up their hands bothe to performe. Then againe were the States sworne to the Queene and my L. her lieutenant in those affaires. This done my Lord gave to them severall thanks, and they severally did give him the like, which being done, my Lord passed through to his chamber, the trumpets all sounding before him. This day my Lord feasted all the States most sumptuously, so that they had their fill both in their bellies, and heads. This day after dinner the soldiers of the Towne, which were three companies, came into the court furnished, and did there shew themselves with drum and fife: at night were about an hundred fets burnt about my Lords house. The eight and twentieth of Januarie, companies mustred by T. Digs, master maister generall in Guelder, Friseland, and Holland, were as followeth: Master Norris colonell gentleman, 256. colonell Morgan, three hundred & ninete, Captaine Wotton a hundredth thirtie five, Captaine Powle a hundredth and fawentye, Captaine Baskenfeld fourscore, Captaine Yorke fourscore and six, Captaine Hunninges a hundredth and eleven, Captaine Vdall fourtie seven, Captaine Powell ninetie four, Captaine Hart threescore and eight, Captaine Price a hundredth twentie three, Captaine Wilson, a hundredth forty five, Captaine Blunt a hundredth twentie seven, Captaine Burrowes a hundredth and ten, Captaine Harlow, a hundredth twentie four, Captaine Shawe, fourscore & four, Captaine Enge threescore and nine, Captaine Sir Walker Wallar a hundredth thirtie seven.

The second of Februarie, Captaine Willowby died at Hage, and was three honorable buried: On the third of Februarie, all the yeomen of the guard, took their oath, whom committing to the conscience of their charge, we purpose now to touch the preceptible authoritie committed to the said Lord lieutenant, by common consent of the States, and so by degrees to descend to other occurrences concerning these Nether-lands.

A placard containing the authoritie given by the States of the Lowe Countries, unto the mightie prince, Robert Earle of Leicester, Baron of Denbigh, &c. for the government of the said Lowe Countries: translated out of Dutch into English as followeth.

The generall Statute of the united Provinces of the Lowe Countries, to all those which shall see or heare these present writings, health and dilection. Euen as it hath pleased her Maiestie of England mercifully to lead ouer into these Countries the high and mightie prince and Lord, Robert Earle of Leicester, Baron of Denbigh, and one of the privie counsell, knight of the noble order of the Garter, and not onely to admit and institute his Excellencie, as episc head above all militarie souldiers, on horse or foote, which her Maiestie hath sent, or shall send ouer hereafter into these Countries, and to the end to assist us

The lieutenant feasted the States.

Captaines with their companies mustred.

Captaine Willowby died.

Tide & State of Excellencie given to the earle of Leicester.

with counsell and aduise, according to his great experience, police and wisdom, in the direction of publike affaires of the land, as well touching the feates of warre, as otherwise, in conseruation of all that which most tendeth to the prosperitie of the foresaid land, to bringe backe and reduce the same into such good order and rule as it hath bene in times past, to the ende that so much the better and orderly, he may resist the force and tyrannie of our enimie, and to frustrate all his practises: but also beside this, to honor and enrich his foresaid Excellencie, with greater authoritie, might and commandement, above all her maiesties Admirals and Viceadmirals, and ships of warre, to command them all, and to employ them to the service of these Countries, and in such order as his Excellencie shall finde needfull for the same Countrie: and that his Excellencie following her Maiesties commandement, delicious to them the effect of the good will and affection which he beareth to these affaires, and to the preservation of the same, and also of the true Christian Religion, and hath employed himselfe to willingly in the foresaid matters, that his Excellencie for that onely cause hath left and abandoned his native Countries and goods, and transported himselfe hitherward amongst vs: so that her Maiestie and his Excellencie could neuer have done or effected vnto vs a greater benefite than this. Therefore are we resolved with good and ripe deliberation, to certifie all men by these presents, that we haue desired, accepted, and authorized the foresaid mightie and honorable Prince Lord Robert Earle of Leicester, &c. to be our gouernor and generall Captaine ouer all the united Provinces, and associate Cities and members of the same. And we giue vnto his Excellencie, besides the authoritie of his Maiestie giuen vnto him, the highest and supreme commandement, and absolute authoritie above and in all matters of warfare by sea and by land, to execute and administrate the same to the resistance of the enimie, euen as his Excellencie shall thinke most commodious to the preservation of those Countries: and so further, to do all such things as appertaine to the office of a generall Captaine. And furthermore, we commit the administration and yle of policie and iustice ouer the foresaid united Provinces, and associate Cities and members of the same into his hands, to execute and administrate the same with such power and authoritie, as haue had in times past all the other gouernors of these Lowe Countries before him, and especially, as haue bene exercised, and lawfully administrated in the time of Charles the first, vnto onely the Lawes and priuiledges of the foresaid Countries: also with speciall power to collect profits, and rectiue, and administrate all the contributions, which are agreed and condescended, or shall hereafter be consented or agreed, to the maintenance of the warres: and also, that which is or shall be delivered hereafter into his Excellencies hands: and this all according to the vertue of other letters and writings written more at large touching the same agreement. All which former charge and commission, his Excellencie through our earnest desire hath accepted, and hath delivered solemnly to the same hands: first of all, for the preservation of the true Christian Religion, and maintenance of the priuiledges and rights of these lands and Provinces, members, and Cities of the same. All the which we ordaine and com-  
maund

maunders all gouernours of Prouinces and cities, all Admirals, and Viceadmirals, all officers, Colonours, Captaines, their officers and souldiers by sea and land, and furthermore all other counsellors, officers, treasurers, receivers, bailiffs, Burgomasters, Marshalls, magistrates, gentlemen, burgiers, and other inhabitants and subjects of these lands; of what qualitie or condition soeuer, that they and euery of them do acknowledge his foresaid Excellence in the qualitie of gouernour and capitaine generall ouer the foresaid united prouinces, to be no; respect, and obey him as they ought to do, without making any difficultie in doing the same, upon paine of, falling in the displeasure and anger of his Excellence, and to be punished according to the heauynesse of the fault, and as reason shall require. And to the end that no body should pretend ignorance, we command expresse to make knowne these ordinances, to proclaime and publish them, where as men are accustomed to proclaime all publications, proceeding, and commaunding to proceede with rigor against all disobedients and neglectors of the same, according to the order of punishment before mentioned, without any fauour or dissimulation to the contrary, because we haue thought the same to be expedient for the preservation of the Countie. Given in our congregation and assemble in the Hage, the 6. day of Februarie, 1586. by ordinance of the foresaid generall States.

This placard thus passed, the Lord lieutenant did appoint certaine special men naturs borne, of the counsell, to the intent that such affaires as regarded to occur, might by them be conveniently managed: the names of which counsellors with the places of their charge I ouerlasse.

Having thus far discoursed of the lord lieutenant's passing from place to place, and the manner of his entertainment: the obseruation of time doth byge us we proceede any further, to deliuer a peece of seruice done by cornell Skinke, and then to proceede in the commemoration of the lord lieutenant's entertainment in other places.

On the 21. day of Februarie, Skinke not lying still from indomnaying the enemy, did take the towne of Warle, and the castle thereto belonging, the manner wherof was thus: himselfe lying in Wendelo, a towne in part belleged, left his men with the Graue Maurice, charging the not to depart till such time as they heard from him, whiche they fulfilled: he came with two or three men from Wendelo to his men, no man knowing his enterprise, caused them in the morning to be ready, and so passed on till mid day, at whiche time they were not far from Warle: Skinke slipping a thirtie wagons, clad certaine of his men in the houses apparent, sent them into the towne to sell the victuals, which they followed, and one of them brake his wagon in the gate, so that the gate could not be closed: One of them shooting off a bagge gave Skinke warning, and he suddenly entered the towne without resistance, and took both it and the Castell. This towne is thought not so strong as profitable, yet beie strong. In it are diuers saltpits which do make great store of salt, which salt doth serue a great part of the countie to Cullen, and further altogether serued the enemy of salt, which now he wanteth. About the first of March he left the Towne, burning it and spoiling the Countrey, the cause was this. There was an armie comming to stay his passage,

Skinke took  
the towne of  
Warle.

whiche he hauing 300. horses did assaile, slue 1000. souldiers, tooke fine ensignes and sent to the lord lieutenant. Thus did ballaunt Skinke, whom we will leave and returne to matter of delight.

On the first of March, the lord lieutenant came from Hage to Leiden, and the third of March from Leiden to Harlem, whose entertainment there was with orations, representations, verses, shewes, &c. not inferior to those of other totnes. On the fourth of March the Lord lieutenant, saw the Earle of Essex coronell, and sir William Russell coronell muster and trayne by Harlem, to the number of two hundred horse. He was there feasted and banketted. And on the tenth of March he came from Harlem to Amsterdam, and by the way was met with diuers men of warre well shipped, which brought him by a long riuer that went into the Towne, ouer the which riuer were three strong bridges, placed full of armed souldiers, on the first bridge was planted ten or twelue peeces of ordinance, which after his honor was past, were shot off, the souldiers on euery bridge discharging by volles in braye manner: being past these bridges, he was met with two great pageants in this manner: two boates were made in monstrous greatnesse, on the one the Image of a horse swimming, on the other the likeness of a fish, on each of them a man riding, signifying the god Neptune: both these, one on the one side, and the other one the other side, did accompanie him to his landing, which was at the market place, where were planted great numbers of armed men with shot. Right before him where he landed was a scaffold, wheron was placed diuers shewes and representations, with verses, &c. The day and night following fire works, and afterward banketting, &c. The 20. of March, the Lord lieutenant came from Amsterdam to a castle called Mullen, 4. miles from Sporden, and there did dine, and from thence he came to Sporden to supper and to bed. On the 22. he came from Sporden to Utrecht, where his receiving was nothing inferior to most of the rest.

On the 25. of March, the Earle of Essex went to Leger with his hostmen, where he began a new worke. The 28. the Earle was feasted by Graue Maurice, on the which day in the morning there was charge giuen to all the English souldiers in the towne, that they should march from thence to Hage, which for that they wanted pay they refused, and raised a mutinie, for the which one of capitaine Polles men was taken and put in wards, whereupon the rest of his followers seeing this, came to the gaole, burst the locks of the doores, and tooke out the prisoner, for the which there was fine apprehended, and three of them were hanged. On the same day was hanged the secretarie to the Countie Hollooke, which secretarie was a counsellor to the betraying of the Towne of Graue. The 30. of March, the Earle feasted the Nobilitie and Bourgeses of Utrecht, where there wanted nothing that might fill their bellies or their heads.

About the first of April, Generall Norris tooke the sence called Lte. On the fourth of April, was a fore combat betweene the Male-contents & the English, the enimies being foure thousand were vanquished by Generall Norris with one thousand men, wherof he lost a great number. And slue 1200. Spaniards. The letter of Generall Norris to the Lieutenant I haue set it downe in maister Reine Woolfe and Holinshed.

The Lord  
lieutenant  
came to  
Harlem.

The Lord  
lieutenant  
going to  
Amsterdam.

The Lord  
lieutenant  
came to  
Utrecht.

A mutinie  
among the  
souldiers.

Generall  
Norris tooke  
a sence at  
Lte.

Fest of S.  
George ob-  
serued at  
Vtrecht.

W. Scager.

The three and twentieth of Aprill, the Earle of Leicester lieutenant, and gouernour generall of her maiesties forces in the Low countries of the united provinces, making his residence at that time in Vtrecht (a great and goodly towne upon the frontiers of Holland) kept most honourably the feast of Saint George therein, the proceedings whereof being so princely performed to the honour of our nation in the view of so many thousand strangers, I could not chuse (having gotten the true and faithfull description, by one William Scager alias Porteloise, an officer at armes in that seruice) to make some briefe remembrance of the manner thereof, to wit: The streets of Vtrecht being large and faire, were tankt and set with eight ensignes of Burgesses, richly appointed, wearing scarfes knit like roses white and red upon their armes, betwene whom from the court of my Lord unto the cathedrall Church called the Dome, the proceeding was in hoyle backe. First rode the trumpetters appaerled in scarlet, layd with silver lace, sounding their trumpets most royally, their banner roles being displayed, and richly lined with my Lords armes: then followed the Gentlemen, Captaines, Colonels, and her Maiesties twoyne men to the number of forty horse, richly adorned in cloth of gold, silver, and likes of all colours. After came five Knights, foure Barons, with the counsell of Estates, the earle of Essex accompanied with the Bishop of Cullen Prince Bishop, and the Prince of Portingale rode by himselfe: next proceeded the Captaine of the garr, the treasurer, and controller of the house hold, bearing their white staves: after whom followed two Gentlemen officers, and Porteloise herault in rich coate of the armes of England: then came my Lord most princelike, inuested in his robes of the order, guarded by the principall Burgers of the towne, which offered themselves to that seruice, besides his owne garr, which were a fiftie halbarders in scarlet clothes, guarded with purple and white velvet. He being thus honourable brought vnto the Church, after due reuerence done vnto the Quenees Maiesties state, which was there erected on the right hand, he tooke his owne stall on the left, by certaine degrees lower: then began prayers, and a Sermon made by maister Knowstubs my Lords chaplaine, after which, my Lord proceeded to the offering, first, for her Maiestie, and then for himselfe, the which he performed with such reuerence and princely behaviour, that all generally spake most honourably of him. These solemnities being done, his Lordship returned as he came, leaving behind him the Earle of Essex, and certaine Gentlemen to accompany the Princes and the Ladies of the court. His court was a faire and large house, belonging in times past to the knights of the Rhodes, in which was a very great hall, richly hung with tapistrie: at the upper end whereof was a most sumptuous cloth and chaire of estate for the Quenees Maiestie, with her armes and shies thereon, and before it a table covered with all things so requisite, as if in person she had bene there: on the left hand, almost at the tables end, was my Lords trencher and booke, for he would haue no chaire. The tables being covered, and all degrees assembled, my Lord before the state of her Maiestie, knighted a Dutch Gentleman, called Martin Skinke, for his manifold seruices done to his countrie, the which

Martin  
Skinke  
knighted,

done,

done, the officers marshalled the feast. At the table on the right side of the hall sat the young Prince of Portingall, the Prince eldest, and his wife, the Princes Simeie, the Earle of Essex, the Graue Mures and his Lady, and betwixt euerie Lady was an English Lord, or knight placed. On the left side sat the States and chiefe Bourgers of the towne, and the graund prior of Amsterdame, (who came to see the feast) was by my Lords appointment placed uppermost at that table. Then began the trumpets to sound in the seruice which was most prince-like and abundant, serued on the knee, carued and tasted to her Maiesties trencher. The side tables being furnished all in silver plate, and attended on by Gentlemen, sundrie sorts of newes, continued the miring of the first course, which done and aduoyded, the trumpets sounded in for the second, which was all baked meates of beasts, and fowles, the beasts, as lions, dragons, leopards, and such like, bearing plaines of armes, and the fowles, as peacocks, swans, pheasants, turkie cocks and others in their naturall feathers spread as in their greatest pride, which sight was both rare and magnificent. This seruice being placed on her Maiesties boord, the bealls on the one side, a fowles on the other, the lion lying couchant at her highnes trencher, the officers cried, a hall, which being made, with much a doo (by reason of the multitude) they brought vp betwene them, with three reuerences to the state, Porteloise herault, inuested with the armes of England, who in Latine, French, and English, pronounced the Quenees Maiesties vsuall Aile of England, France, and Ireland, defendesse of the faith, &c. crying three times, largesse. Then began the trumpets to sound, and the Dutch men to carouse to the health of her Maiestie, the welfare of my Lord, and to the prosperities of the united provinces, and nothing wanted wherewith either estate, magnificence, or ioy might be expressed. To be briefe the feast ended, and tables voyded, there was dauncing, vaulting, and tumbling, with the forces of Hercules, which gaue great delight to the strangers, for they had not seene it before, and thus they passed the time, till morning and then departed. At supper being all assembled againe, great was the feast, and plentifull the cheere: and after supper began the barriers betwene challengers & defendants men of armes, wherein the Earle of Essex behaued himselfe so valiantly, that he gaue all men great hope of his noble prowess in armes. The barriers done, and either part retyred with equall praise, (though not with equall blowes) there was a most sumptuous banquet prepared of sugar meates for the men of armes, and the Ladies: which banquet being finished, my Lord wishing them all good rest, tooke his leaue, and so this honourable feast brooke vp about twelue of the clocke at midnight.

On the 24. of Aprill our English men that were in the enterpryse before Graue H. Archer, retired, having let Graue in sufficient both of victuals and munition, and in their retreat let vpon a sconce called Knols sconce, which was yerled vpon command. The next day our men of some part of them came before Canple sconce, and presently towe it without the losse of any man.

The 26. of Aprill, the lieutenant of Sir Martin Skinke, his maister being with my Lords Excellence, knowing of a companie of footemen Spaniards, he with certaine of his horse laid themselves in ambush, let vpon them, killed thirtie of them,

who promised to shew Porteloise 70. ensignes that he had won in the field.

A sumptuous feast, and full of deuices.

H. Archer.

Knols sconce won, & Canple sconce.

them and took 8. and caried them to their garrison.

The 4. of May, his Excellency did biete all his hoysmen being in number about thirtie of fourtine hundred by Newburke, on a great heath betwene Newburke & Amersford. And this day his Excellencies gard being sent to Newburke to keepe the towne, took a fowenty booges, that were purposed to have spoiled Newburke. The fowenty of May, his Excellencie remoued from Amersford to Arname, and passed through Reine, and Wagonet. Reine is a papper strong towne, situate on the riuer of Reine, pleasant and defensible, roundly compassed together. Wagonet standeth by a creek of water comming to the Reine, and within twentie sepe years of it: Reine, this towne is a strong towne, and stands most pleasant, wanting nothing but peace. Arname is a faire towne, strongly enuironed with wals, rampiers, and other matter of strenght, it also standeth on the riuer of Reine, on the one side of the towne the ground is most fertile and pleasant, on the other side is a great heath most barren, all the countrey is spoiled, abbeyes, faire houses, and doypes are all wasted, neither any house standing, nor any man there dwelling. Out the Reine against this towne is a foote, onely by defence of the booges, if the enemy come to destroy and take from them their cattell, to which fownt both the booges runne, and also buye their cattell. Within one mile of this towne is the fownt of Arname, which our Englysh men won the last yeare, this fownt is wondrous strong, being compassed with such rampiered wals, and deepe ditches, that it is almost inuincible. It standeth on the one side of the Reine. At this fownt was capitaine Henings, a hyane gentleman slaine at the winning of it, and there is buried: of other towne I leaue farther to describe, and turne to the accidents. The 9. of May, the Prince of Parma with others, came to view the towne of Graue, which a canonier saw, and discharged his canon, wherewith he took away the hinder part of his hoys, and missed the prince but a little, so that he hurted him sore. The same day they of Graue shot fire bales into the greatest fownt of the enemy, and by good lucke one of them lighted among the powder in the fownt, set it on fire, which with such violence brake forth, that it blew up the Spaniards most terribly, and layd the fownt flat. About this time the enemy battered the balle towne of Graue, and presently upon the battery entered, which the souldiers of the towne suffered, but in fine they set on them, slue 400. and purged the towne againe.

The 12. of May, sir Martin Skoike obtained a little peece of ground enuironed with water, neare unto Penegan, where he intrenched himselfe, so that the towne could not hurt him, and his ships of warre comming downe to him, nothing could passe by the riuer of Reine to the towne but he commanded it. The 14. of May, our men lying at Penegan fownt, there revolted to them out of the towne two boyes. The fowteenth his excellency passed from Arname to the campe at Penegan: this day the castle of Leuon was yeilded him, and the same day came fowre boyes to our men from Penegan. The eighteenth of May, the enemies entring Graue, lost 50. men.

Herman, for his yeilding of Graue, comming to Bomell was there apprehended and caried to Utrecht, adiudged to dye, and was executed with two o- ther captiues.

The 20. of May, early in the morning the strong foyt of Penegan was yeilded to his Excellencie in this foyt, to depart like souldiers, which was granted, and they to the number of 150. souldiers very hyane passed by his Excellencies lodging at Wynterpart: there was in all at the siege of this fownt of Penegan slaine about fowre souldiers and pioniers, and twenty hurt. Now to returne to o- ther accidents, such as in the meane time happened in England.

This yeare the Quenes maiestie tooke order for the peopling and inhabiting of the countries, late belonging to the earle of Desmond and his rebellious companions, to which end diuerse honorable and worshipfull gentlemen provided to be undertakers of signories there, whercof some went into the said countrey, others according to order taken, sent their people, amongst which were sir Christopher Hatton, sir Walter Rawlie, sir William Courtney, sir Richard Molinux, sir George Bourcher, sir Edward Fitton, sir Valentine Browne, sir Walter Lulon, John Popham, her maiesties attorney generall and other.

The 19. of Iamurie, Nicholas Deuorox was condemned for treason, in being made a Seminarie priest at Rhemes in France, since the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, in Anno primo of her Maiesties reigne, and in remaining here after the terme of fowrte daies after the session of the last Parliament.

Nilo Edmond Barbar being made priest as aforesaid, and comming into this realme after the said terme of fowrte daies, was likewise condemned of treason, and both dyatone to Woborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered on the 21. of Iamurie. And on the same day a woman was buried in Smithfield for poisoning of her Aunt, and mistresse, and attempting the like to her uncle.

On the feast day of the purification of our blessed Lady, Doctor Iohn Whitegilt archbishop of Canterbury, William lord Cobham, warden of the flue Ports, and Thomas lord Buckhurst, were chosen and taken to be of her Maiesties privie counsell.

The 11. of Februarie, Thomas Louelace was brought prisoner from the Towert of London to the starre chamber, against whom her Maiesties attorney do informe, that the same Louelace, upon malice conceived against Leonard Louelace, and Richard Louelace his cousin germanes, had falsely and diuellishly contrived and counterfitted a very trayterous letter in the name of Thom. Louelace (another brother of the said Leonard and Richard then resident beyond the seas) purporting, that the same Thomas should thereby incite and provoke the said Leonard to persure the said Richard to execute her Highnesse destruction with other circumstances of treason. This letter he call in an open high way, pretending thereby, that upon the discouerie thereof, his said kinsmen Leonard and Richard should be dyatone in question for the treasonable matter against her Maiesties attorney prayed, that the said Thomas then prisoner, might receive condign punishment. Whereupon the court adiudged that he should be carried on horsebacke about Welschmunder hall, with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his backe wherein to be written: For counterfetting of false and treacherous letters against his owne kinred, containing most trayterous matter against her Maiesties person. And fro thence to be carried in prison, & set on y pilgry in the palace

The strong foyt of Penegan yeilded to his Excellencie.

Desmond in Ireland peopled of the English nation.

Seminarie priests executed.

Archbishop of Canterbury called to be of the privie counsell. T. Louelace lost his cares for traicte-rously pra-ising to en-joy the goods and lands of his nearest kinne. Praise wor-ship justice, the like whereof is to be wished to the like treacherous pra-ctiser, and li- beller a- gainst his el-dest brother, after he had defrauded him of his goods and lcales.

them and tooke 81. and caried them to their garrison.

View of  
horsemen  
at Newkirke  
and boores  
taken.

Reyne.

Wagonit.

Arnam.

The 4. of May, his Excellency did view all his horsemen, being in number about thirtie or fourtie hundred by Newkirke, on a great heath betwixt Newkirke & Amersford. And this day his Excellencies gard being sent to Newkirke to keepe the towne, tooke a fowenty booyes, that were purposed to have spoiled Newkirke. The seventh of May, his Excellencie removed from Amersford to Arnam, and passed through Reine, and Waggonit. Reine is a papper strong towne, situate on the riuer of Reyne, pleasant and defensible roundly compact together. Waggonit standeth by a creeke of water comming fro the Reyne, and within twentie score yeards of the Reyne, this towne is a strong towne, and stands most pleasant, wanting nothing but peace. Arnam is a faire towne, strongly enuironed with wals, rampiers, and other matter of strength, it also standeth on the riuer of Reyne, on the one side of the towne the ground is most fertile and pleasant, on the other side is a great heath most barren, all the country is spoiled, abbeyes, faire houses, and doozes are all wasted, neither any house standing, nor any man there dwelling. Quet the Reyne against this towne is also, onely for defence of the booyes, if the enemy come to destroy and take from them their cattell, to which sence both the booyes runne, and also buye their cattell. Within one mile of this towne is the sence of Arnam, which our English men won the last yeare, this sence is wondrous strong, being compacted with such rampired wals, and deepe ditches, that it is almost invincible. It standeth on the one side of the Reyne. At this sence was capitaine Henings a hyaue gentleman slaine at the winning of it, and there is buried: of other townes I leaue farther to describe, and turne to the accidents. The 9. of May, the Prince of Parma with others, came to view the towne of Graue, which a canonere saw, and discharged his canon, wherewith he tooke away the hinder part of his hoyle, and missed the prince but a little, so that he buyed him lose. The same day they of Graue shot fire balls into the greatest sence of the enemy, and by good lucke one of them lighted among the powder in the sence, set it on fire, which with such violence brake forth, that it blew up the Spaniards most terribly, and layd the sence flat. About this time the enemy battered the bafe towne of Graue, and presently upon the battery ended, which the souldiers of the towne suffered, but in fine they set on them, due 400. and purged the towne againe.

Prince of  
Parma in  
great dan-  
ger.  
A great  
sence fired.

Enemy re-  
pulsed out  
of Graue.

The 12. of May, sir Martin Skinke obtained a little peece of ground enuironed with water, neare unto Pennegan, where he intrenched himselfe, so that the towne could not hurt him, and his ships of warre comming doونه to him, nothing could passe by the riuer of Reyne to the towne but he commanded it. The 14. of May, our men lying at Pennegan sence, there revolted to them out of the towne two hoyses. The sixteenth his excellency passed from Arnam to the campe at Pennegan: this day the calke of Lenow was yielded him, and the same day came five hoyses to our men from Pennegan. The eighteenth of May, the enemies entring Graue, lost 50. men.

Henart, for his yielding of Graue, comming to Bonnell was there apprehended and caried to Utrecht, adiudged to dye, and was executed with two of their captaines.

The

The 20. of May, early in the morning the strong fort of Pennegan was yielded to his Excellency in this sort, to depart like souldiers, which was granted, and they to the number of 156. souldiers very brave passed by his Excellencies lodging at Brankbark: there was in all at the siege of this sence of Pennegan slaine about fowtie souldiers and pioners, and twenty hurt. How to returne to the accidents, such as in the meane time happened in England.

This yeare the Quenes maiestie tooke order for the peopling and inhabiting of the countries, late belonging to the earle of Desmond and his rebellious companions, to which end diuerse honorable and worshipfull gentlemen provided to be undertakers of signories there, whercof some went into the said countrie, others according to order taken, sent their people, amongst which were sir Christopher Hatton, sir Walter Rawle, sir William Courtney, sir Richard Molinex, sir George Bourcher, sir Edward Fitton, sir Valentine Browne, sir Walter Lulun, John Popham, her maiesties attorney generall and other.

The strong  
fort of Ne-  
megan yel-  
ded to his  
Excellencie.

Desmond in  
Ireland pro-  
vided of the  
English na-  
tion.

The 19. of Iamarie, Nicholas Denorox was condemned for treason, in being made a Seminarie priest at Rhemes in Fraunce, since the feast of Saint John Baptist, in Anno primo of her Maiesties raigne, and in remaining here after the terme of fowtie daies after the session of the last Parliament.

Also Edmond Barbar being made priest as aforesaid, and comming into this realme after the said terme of fowtie daies, was likewise condemned of treason, and both dyatone to Tbozne, and there hanged, botwelled and quartered on the 21. of Iamarie. And on the same day a wench was burned in Smithfield for poisoning of her Aunt, and mistresse, and attempting the like to her uncle.

On the feast day of the purification of our blessed Lady, Doctor John Whitegill archbishop of Canterburie, William lord Cobham, warden of the Exchequer, and Thomas lord Buckhurst, were chosen and taken to be of her Maiesties priuie counsell.

Seminarie  
priests exe-  
cuted.

Archbishop  
of Canter-  
burie called  
to be of the  
priuie coun-  
sell. T. Louelace  
lost his cares  
for traite-  
rously pra-  
ctising to en-  
ioy the goods  
and lands of  
his nearest  
kinne.

The 11. of Februarie, Thomas Louelace was brought prisoner from the Tower of London to the starre chamber, against whom her Maiesties attorney did informe, that the same Louelace, upon malice conceived against Leonard Louelace, and Richard Louelace his colin germanes, had falsly and diuinely continued and counterfetted a very trayterous letter in the name of Thom. Louelace (another brother of the said Leonard and Richard then resident beyond the seas) purporting, that the same Thomas should thereby incite and prouoke the said Leonard to procure the said Richard to execute her Highnes destruction with other circumstances of treason. This letter he call in an open high way, pretending thereby, that upon the discouerie thereof, his said kinsmen Leonard and Richard should be dyatone in question for the treasonable matter against her Maiestie in that bill contained, even in the highest degree, for which offence her maiesties attorney prayed, that the said Thomas then prisoner, might receiue condign punishment. Whereupon the court adiudged that he should be carried on horse backe about Westminster hall, with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his backe wherein to be written: For counterfetting of false and trayterous letters against his owne kindred, containing most trayterous matter against her Maiesties person. And fro thence to be carried in the same manner, set on y pillory in the palace

for traite-  
rously pra-  
ctising to en-  
ioy the goods  
and lands of  
his nearest  
kinne.

Praise wor-  
thie iustice,  
the like  
whereof is to  
be wished for  
to the like trea-  
cherous pra-  
ctiser, and li-  
beller a-  
gainst his el-  
dest brother,  
after he had  
defrauded  
him of his  
goods and  
lives.

At k k k

at

at Wellminster, and there to have one of his eares cut off: also to be carried in like manner into London, and set on the pillorie one market day in Cheape, with the like paper. After that carried into Kent, and at the next assise there to be set on the pillorie with the like paper, and his other eare to be cut off. Also to be set on the pillorie one market day at Canterburie, and an other at Rochester in the like manner: and at every the foresaid places, this order taken touching his offence to be openly read, the sentence whereof was duly executed in the pallace at Wellminster, in Cheape, &c.

*Straunge  
sickness  
and death  
at  
Excester  
through  
stench  
of the  
prison.*

The 14. of March, at the assises kept at the citie of Excester in Devonshire before sir Edmond Anderlon, lord chiefe Justice of the common pleas, sergeant Floriday, one of the barons of the exchequer, and other Justices, there happened a strange sickness, first amongst the prisoners, and then amongst other persons, and besides the prisoners, many of all degrees died thereof, namely sergeant Floriday, sir John Chichester, sir Arthur Bailer, and sir Barnard Drake knights, Thomas Carew, R. Carie, John Fortescue, John Waldren, and Thomas Rildone squires, and Justices of peace: of the common people died very many, Constables, Rues, Tithingmen, and Jurors, and namely of one Jude, they being twelve in number, there died 11. of them. This sickness was imputed to certaine Doytingals then prisoners in the said goale. For not long before, one Barnard Drake equire had bene at the seas, and meeting with certaine Doytingals come from new found land, and laden with fish, he took them as a good prise, and brought them into Doythmouth haven, and from thence they were sent, being in number about 38. persons, unto the goale of the castle of Exon, and there were cast into the drepe pit and sinking dungeon. These men had bene before long time at the seas, having no change of apparell, nor lpen in bed, and now lying on the ground without succour or reliefe, were loone infected, and all for the most part were sick, and some of them died, and this sickness very loone after dispersed it selfe among all the residue of the prisoners in the goale, of which disease many of them died, but all brought to great extremities and very hardly escaped. These men when they were to be brought before the foresaid Justices for their triall, many of them were looke weak and sick, that they were not able to go nor stand, but were carried from the goale to the place of indgement, some upon handbarrowes, and some between men leading them, and so brought to the place of iustice. The sight of these miserable cases, being thought to be hunger starved, rather then otherwise diseased, moved many to pite them, &c.

*A strange  
worm found  
in the heart  
of an horse.*

The seventeenth of March, a strange thing happened, the like whereof before hath not bene heard of in our time. Master Dorington of Spaldwicke in the countie of Huntingdon equire, one of her maiesties gentlemen pensioners, had a horse which died suddenly, and being ripped, to see the cause of his death, there was found in the hole of the heart of the same horse a strange worme, which lay on a round heape in a hall of skinn of the likenesse of a toade, which being taken out, and layed abrode, was in forme and fashion not easie to be described, the length of which worme divided into many graines to the number of fiftie (spced from the body like the branches of a tree) was from the snout to

the end of the longest graine 17. inches, having foure issues in the graines, from the which dropped forth a red water: the bodie in bignesse round about was fyer inches and an halfe, the colour wherof was very like a makarell. This monstrous worme found in manner aforesaid, crawling to have got away, was killed in with a dagger and died, which after being dyed, was shewed to many honorable persons of the realme.

The eighteenth of April, in the assises holden at London in the Justice hall, William Thomlon alias Blackborne made priest at Rhemes, and Richard Lea alias Long made priest at Lions in Fraunce, and remaining here contrarie to the statute, were both condemned, and on the 20. day of April dyatone to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The first of May, deceased sir Henry Sidney knight of the garter, lord president of Wales, and was honorably buried at Penhurst in Kent on the one and twentieth of June.

The eight of May being Monday, in the afternoon, Henry Ramelius chancelor for Germanie, ambassadoz from Fredericke the second king of Denmarke, unto the Queene maiedtie of England, came into the riuer of Chamis with his ships so farre as blacke wall, where he was received by Gilbert lord Talbot, and by him conveyed by water along to Greenwich, and so to the tower wharfe, where he arrived and was honorably received of the lord Cobham, and other great Estates, and by them conveyed through the Tower streete, Fanchurch streete, and Grace streete into Bisshopsgate streete, to Crobby place, where he was lodged, and remained till he had finished his ambassade at the Queenes charges, and returned on the 30. of May towards Denmarke.

The seventeenth of May, Philip earle of Arundell was conveyed from the Tower of London to Wellminster, and there in the Starre chamber, by the counsell condemned to pay 10000. pound fine for his contempt, and to remaine in prison at the Queenes pleasure.

A commission was directed from her Maiestie, tending to the ratifying of a league league of amitie betwene her Maiestie and James king of Scots, which league being articulated, commissioners were appointed, Edward earle of Rutland, William lord Evers, and Thomas Randolph equire, who with their traine came to Berwicke on the 19. of June, where the ambassadoz of Scotland being present, they accomplished the matter according to the commission, the articles of the said league in all and every part sufficiently confirmed on the first of July: which being done, the said earle of Rutland with his traine returned home, master Randolph went into Scotland to take his leave of the king, and returned into England about the 15. of August.

The 18. of June, Henry Elks clearks and batchelor of art, for counterfeiting a sign manual to the presentatio of the parsonage of Allaints in Haddings, binded to the archbishop of Canterburie, or to his commissarie generall (the diocess of Chichester being void) that he might be instituted parson there, was dyatone to Tyborne and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

A lottery for marvellous rich and beautifull armor, was begonne to be dyatone at London in S. Pauls churchyard, at the great well gate (an house of timber &

*Seminarie  
priests ex-  
ecuted.*

*Sir Henry  
Sidney de-  
ceased.*

*Ambassador  
from the  
king of De-  
marke.*

*Earle of A-  
rundell con-  
demned to  
pay 10000.  
pound.  
League with  
the Scots.*

*Elks execu-  
ted for coun-  
terfeiting  
the queenes  
seale.*

*A lottery at  
London for  
rich armor.*



boord being there w<sup>th</sup> d for that purpose) on S. Peters day in y<sup>e</sup> morning, which lotterie continued in drawing day and night, for the space of two or three daies.

Thomas  
Candlish his  
voiage about  
the world.

This yeare M<sup>rs</sup> Thomas Candlish (hawing of his owne proper charges new built from the keele, and furnished with all things necessarie for 2. yeares provision) a braue ship called the *Delice* of 140. tuns, and a lesse of firtie tuns named the *Content*, ioyning therunto a barked of firtie tuns named the *Hugh Gallant*, (in which small fleet were 127. men) set saile from Plimouth on the 21. of July, and began his famous voyage round about the globe of the earth, entering in at the streight of Magellan, and returning by the cape Bona Speranza, which voyage he finished in the space of two yeares, and lesse then two moneths, arriving at Plimouth the 9. of September in Anno 1588. of the which voyage & other ye may reade at large in a booke intituled, *The principall navigations, voiaiges, and discoveries of the English nation made by sea, or overland to y<sup>e</sup> furthest distant quarters of y<sup>e</sup> earth*, published by R<sup>ichard</sup> Hakluyt maister of Art in Anno 1582.

SerVICES in  
Ireland by  
sir Richard  
Bingham  
against the  
Burkes.

This yeare (as in the last proceeding) full great troubles in Ireland in Connaght, which because they are memorizable, and no lesse happily then valiantly appealed, I will set downe the causes and foundations thereof, with all the particular services and successes, as I have received them. concerned under the hands and testimonies of ourse capitaines and gentlemen employed in the said service.

In the moneth of September, in Anno 1585. at a sessions holden at Doonemony in the county of Mayo, within the province of Connaght by sir Richard Bing. knight, chiefe commissioner and gouernour of the said province (sir Nichol. White Maister of the robes then being present, and employed with him for the perfecting of the last composition made within y<sup>e</sup> said province) the countie of Mayo, and the whole countie stood then in generalitie, through the good and politike gouernment, and the iust and vpright dealing of the said sir Richard Bingham on peaceable and quiet termes, without any face of alteration. And the most part of y<sup>e</sup> gentlemen and freeholders of that countie resorted to the said sessions before: neuertheless, when now by means of this composition & agreement betwene her M<sup>ty</sup>. and them, they perceived y<sup>e</sup> names, titles and superiorities of their chiefe L<sup>ds</sup>. and specially of M<sup>rs</sup>. W. the chiefe of the septes of that countie should cease, continuing, & for euer after be determined: it did not a little grieve them, although some of them not long before had expostulated y<sup>e</sup> like reformation. The plot of this composition was deuised by sir R. of purpose, to take away the greatnesse of the Irish lords, with their names of Macs & Ocs, that the inferiour subiect might be freed from their Irish customes, cuttings and unreasonable exactions, & (by knowing what was their owne) be able to depend euer after vpon the state, & not on those Irish lords or gentlemen: which also might not only much auail her Ma<sup>ty</sup> in fine of any stirs or reuolts: by drawing the common people from following the great & chiefe lords, but also bring a more certaine yearly rent or reuenuer into her highnes coffers then formerly was accustomed. When the people perceived these their old customes & vlags like to take end, they deuised with themselves for the preventing thereof, and according to their old custome manner, euer by them vsed in all their discontentments, they tooke by their weapons, armed them against the state, thinking by stirs and broyles to winne the reuocation of this leied and determined resolution, and so to be left againe in their old customes and vlags.

A wife and  
politic de-  
uise of sir R.  
Bingham to  
strengthen  
the govern-  
ment and  
weaken the  
Irishrie.

The Irish  
into rebellio  
when they  
are discon-  
tent.

This their purpose appeared in one Thomas Roe Burke, a chiefe gentleman of Thomas that sept, who at this very instant, during the sayd sessions at Doonemonie, kept himselfe within a strong castle of his, standing in an Island on Loghe make, euen within the sight of the gouernour and the other commissioners, refusing to come at them, albeit they had severall times sent for him. Sir Richard Bingham perceiving that the coales of troubles were now layd together, and would shortly after kindle and become an angry fire, if the same were not politikelly and warily prevented; dissimbling the matter as if it were of no moment, he beihought him of the best and last remedie to meete with this inconuenience. And knowing well that those Burkes had euer bene very bad and loose people, such as very hardly continued themselves two yeares together with, in a due course of compasse of obedience, he saw that the onely way to stop this gap, was either to cut off or to apprehend and lay vp in durance as pledges two or three of the best of that sept, such as were most dangerous for the inciting of stirs, and the drawing of others into action. And therefore vpon his returne out of that countie to Roscomon, he dealt with the sherie of the county of Mayo for the apprehension of the sayd Thomas Roe. The sherie not long after sent his subsherie to put this matter in execution, who being resisted and hurt by the sayd Thomas Roe, and not otherwise able to apprehend him, wounded him in such sort as he thereof died. This Thomas Roe, being thus slaine was not much lamented, no not euen of his owne kindred, for he was an oppressor of them, and doubtlesse it was thought by wile men that the death of this man, and the hanging of two others of that surname at Roscomon, which had deuised for the drawing of Scots into the province, had prevented the stirs and troubles that after ensued, and at that time seemed to haue a be- giuning, had not some men depending on the state through enuy and malice to sir Richard Bingham & his good and happy gouernment, persuaded diuers others of that sept of the Burkes to haue a care of themselves to be vpon their keeping, & to trust no officer, nor to come to any such till their pardons should be by them procured from the lord Deputy. These mens names I forgoare to remember, because they haue since that time made it knowne before the lord Deputy and counsell of the realme, that in giving such cautes to y<sup>e</sup> Burkes, they meant nothing lesse then to hartten them into rebellion against the state, and to attempt such bad actions as afterwards they did. Of this counsell y<sup>e</sup> Burkes, which of themselves were scititious enough, in whose minds did sit sicke the abolishing & taking away of their M. W. with their old Irish customes & cuttings, tooke hold and converted the same to an apt & conuonious occasion offered them, for their better assembling together into a conuenient number. And more effectually to win the hearts of many men to follow this their intended enterprise, they made the Clandonnells, the loies, & most of the countie beleue, that sir R. Bingham hauing already taken from them their ancient customes & liberties, would also deliuer the like measure to them, & take from them also their liues, if they did not well looke vnto themselves. By this means they drew many vnto them, persuading themselves that they might safely assemble together in companies without feare of interruption for by the friends of their forsayd counsellors which were in Dublin, their assemblies should be thought as a thing by the done for their defence & safety. They also knew that

Sir Richard  
Binghams  
care to pre-  
uent a mis-  
chiefe.

Thomas  
Roeburke  
resisting the  
sherie is  
slaine.

These two  
were Moy-  
ler Oge  
Burke and  
Thebot  
Keoghe.  
Bad officers  
vled by men  
depending  
on the state.

The Burkes  
turne the  
counsell of  
sir Richard  
Binghams  
backe friends  
to serue their  
purpose.  
Slanderous  
lies to set  
forwards re-  
bellion.  
The simple  
Irishrie are  
more wiser  
then we take  
them to be.

Privy tray-  
tors do more  
hure then o-  
pen rebels.

The rebels  
desire to  
make the  
action ge-  
nerall.

Castle Ne-  
calley main-  
tained and  
kept by the  
Burks.

Mahowne  
Obrian be-  
sieged in ca-  
stle Clano-  
wen by sir  
Richard  
Bingham.  
Mahowne  
Obrian slain  
and Clano-  
wen won  
and raised to  
the ground.  
Sir Richard  
Bingham  
offereth  
mercy to the  
Burks, but  
they refuse  
it.

Castle Ne-  
calley be-  
sieged by  
Richard  
Bingham.

that sir Richard Bingham being restrained from following them in this or other their actions without direction from Dublin could not stop or prevent them in their first beginning, by reason whereof they would in short time draw together & ioyne to them the greatest part of the country, whereof some should be drawn to assist them in open hostility, and some others in secret and under-hand dealing, of which sort the latter should still seeme subsidies & iove as neare as they could in y<sup>e</sup> bolome of the state. And to make themselves the stronger, and to draw the whole province into action with them, they gaue it forth, y<sup>e</sup> their case was every mans case within the same. And that as their ancient customes & liberties were infringed, and their liues fought to be taken away, so should it also fare with the rest of the said province. And here for an entrance into this rebellion, the sons of Edmona Burke of castle Barry being many (which Edmond was an old man, one of the competitors of y<sup>e</sup> M. Whelaniship, & a most bad affected member to the state, and his wife as bad as himselfe, together with Edmond Kerragh Burke, Riccard Burke y<sup>e</sup> Duels Hookes sonne, Moyler Oge Burke, Walter M. Danie Bane, Cahir M. Connell, and diuers others, associating unto them many idle persons, entered into a castle in Logg-maske called castle Pecalley, and manured the same together with Thomas Roes castle, whereof mention is made before, which castle after Thomas Roes death, was now in the possession of his brother Riccard Burke called the Pall of Ireland: which castles they kept in rebellious manner against the state, refusing to come at any of her maiesties officers. About this time sir Richard Bingham lay at the siege of Clanowen in Thomond, a strong pile, manned and kept against her mainly by Mahowne Obrian a most dangerous enemy to the state, a chiefe champion of the popes, and a great practiser with foreign powers, for the invasion of this realme of Ireland. At this siege sir Richard Bingham had but 100. English souldiers, and some few kerne of the country, by reason whereof he was diuident to no small paine in skirmishing, watching, and warding with so few men: nevertheless, within seven dayes after he won the castle and slue the sayd Mahowne Obrian & the ward within, and raised the said castle, without the furtherance of any great ordinance. After y<sup>e</sup> sir R. marched from this castle to castle Pecalley, within the which the traytors were and inclosed themselves. At his first coming thither he parled with them, aduising them to remember the obedience which they owed to her maiesty, and to yield themselves to her maiesties mercie, assuring them that in so doing they should find that fauour in all respects that other her highnesse subsidies did. But they (numbing nothing lesse then to submit themselves, on any such conditions) sayd they would not do any hurt, but keepe themselves there in safety, for that they were fearfull to trust any Englishman, alledging many frivolous and impertinent causes moouing them to stand vpon their guard. Hereupon sir Richard proceeded to besiege them in the sayd castle, which was a strong round battelle crested farre within the Loghie, vpon a small compass of ground, so faunted by the wall, that leaue a fauouring place was left vnto it. The siege was all by water in boates, and could not otherwise be attempted. Insomuch that sir Richard going about to burne a boate of two of theirs that they had docted and layd by vnder the castle wall, to the end they might not escape away, and that also he might watch and ward them with few

men, having but a small company there, and those also sore wearied, busied with stones and galled with shot at the siege of Clanowen: he was forced by the sudden rising of contrary weather, which much fauoured the enemy, to leaue the assault with the losse of his boates, and two of three of his souldiers, himselfe and others being in the sayd boate, hardly escaped by the helpe of other boates, which other boates came not in time to his succour, through the negligence of such as he had put in trust with them and appointed to come, and ioyne with him. The boate which he lost the enemies got, in which and in another boate of their owne (before sir Richard could returne to charge them with a fresh supply from his camp lying on the shoare) they shipped themselves, and with great celerity escaped into the woods, fearing that at the next charge, sir Richard would haue won the castle. Captaine Mordant and others had the chase of them by water. These traytors being thus escaped to the woods and mountaines out of the castle Pecalley, their accomplices also fled out of the other castle. Both which and one strong pile of farrowe M. Donnels, sir Richard raised to the ground, so that they were not fit or stood seruicable to be kept by the English, and were very dangerous to be in the possession of the Irish. Richard Burke alias the Pall of Ireland a man of no small account among his sect, and all the ill affected Irish repaired to sir Richard at his first coming to castle Pecalley, bringing in deed the chiefe of their confederacy. This man vnder colour of dutifull subiection, intended to haue betrayed sir Richard and all his company: but (intelligence hereof being giuen, and many apparant proofes had of his treperous intentions and designs) this Pall of Ireland was soone executed by marshall law: this man was assuredly the most dangerous member in all the county of Mayo, especially for the drawing in of Scots, a thing which sir Richard euer doubted, and which the Burkes undoubtedly intended.

After this the gouernour sir Richard Bingham tooke order for the following of those Burkes to the woods and mountaines, which were now growne to be some fourscore twoodes he leuied some forces on the country, and with them and his owne company of an hundred souldiers, he so hunted them from bush to bush, and hill to hill, that in short time no newes was to be heard where any of them were. After this the gentlemen of the country which had not combined with them, seeing the rebels to be diuident to their holes and fastnesse in hiding manner, by means whereof the souldiers could do nothing vpon them, offered to sir Richard that if he would draw his forces out of the country, they would undertake the service against the rebels, and either kill them, or banish them at their owne cost and charge, without abating any penny of the composition rents due to her maiesty by them in lew thereof: hereunto sir Richard assented, finding it a good policy to let one of them against another. But here, hauing these bad Burks at a great advantage, & in a hard distressed case, when they were thus at y<sup>e</sup> lowest able, sir Richard receiued speciall and strait charge and commaundment from the lord Deputy to protect them, & he receiued also a protection ready signed by the lord Deputy to that end, which thing, though the matter and manner of it much grieued him, he handled it in the best sort he could to saue the credit of the state, and wrought deuises to diuine them to seek their protections, which when they did,

¶ k k k 4

Sir Richard  
Bingham  
frustrated  
of his pur-  
pose.

The tray-  
tors fle out  
of castle Ne-  
calley.  
Traytors of  
Ireland are  
cunning in  
running a-  
way.

Three ströc  
castles occu-  
rthence by  
sir Richard  
Bingham.  
Sir Richard  
Bingham  
in danger  
to haue bin  
betraid.  
Richard  
Burke the  
Pall of Ire-  
land han-  
ged.

The Burks  
were so hun-  
ted in the  
woods and  
mountaines  
that no newes  
could be  
heard of  
them.

The gentle-  
men of the  
country of-  
fer to pursue  
the traytors  
at their own  
charge.

The Burks  
are comfort-  
ed and re-  
prieved by  
a protection,

he

Things  
closely had-  
led among  
the English,  
are neuer-  
theless  
knowne to  
the Irishie.

The Burks  
rebell the  
second time.  
The loyes in  
Yrconnaght  
murder her  
maiesties  
officers.  
The leuying  
of men to  
send into the  
Low coun-  
tries, caused  
many idle  
persons to  
resort to  
the rebels.

The Burks  
stood vpon  
vnrasonable  
termes.

The gover-  
nour willing  
to haue  
drawne the  
Burks to  
peace.

he granted it vnder his owne hand, and the scale of the prouince, as formerly was accustomed, and in such caules ought to be done. But although this was closely handled by the gouernour sir Richard Bingham, yet the Burks had intelligence that the lord Deputy had protected them, and commaunded the gouernour to perforce it, which, as is to be gathered, they had learned from some wel-willers of theirs out of Dublin: this made the gentlemen very high and haughty minded, and was to them a soueraigne preparatiue, for to vnderstande new and greater stirres and boyles then before they had begun. For the peace being such as the state offered it, and they sought it not, continued but a small time, although they had giuen in a simple pledge for the performance thereof. After the Burks were thus protected, sir Richard Bingham repaired to his dwelling house and from thence, vpon occasions to Dublin, where he had not long staid when the Burks revolted againe now the second time, ioyning vnto them the Clangibbons, the Clandonnells, and the loyes in farre greater number then before, which sayd loyes, the more to manifest their bad and trayterous intentions, and the better to assure their complices of their fast dealing in this combination, murdered certaine of the officers of Yrconnaght and their men, to the number of fiftene or sixtene. About this time order came from the lord Deputy for the leuying of me within this prouince for the seruice in the Low countries. The burse thereof and the repaire hither of Francis Barckley sent by the lord Deputy for the leuying of the sayd men, caused many idle men who had no zeale to serue beyond the seas, to ioyne themselves with the sayd Burks then in action against her maiesty. And thus these Burks hauing had an interuall of peace and a pausing time to gather head againe and increase their forces, stood on very lofty termes, and sayd they would haue a M. William, or else they would go into Spaine for one: also they would haue no sherie within that countie, nor be subiect to answer in apparance at any assise or sessions. These points and termes they stood on, and articulated the same accordingly, with many other vnrasonable demands which they would haue to be granted, or otherwise they would in no wise yeld to haue peace with the state. At the beginning of this second revolt, for that the gouernour was willing to haue drawne them to peace (if by any reasonable meanes he might haue done the same without any indignity to the state) he sent vnto the commissioners, viz. the L. archbishop of Tuam, the L. Bremingham baron of Athlery, T. Dillon esquire chiefe iustice of the prouince, Gerald Comerford esquire attorney of the same, & others to parley with them, and to examine the cause of those their insolent attempts: vnto whom they answered in effect, as is aforesaid, declining them the sayd articles in waiting. And euen during the time of the commissioners abode in the countrey, they did not forbear to burne and spoyle the same. All which notwithstanding a time of peace was granted vpon conditions in a list to their liking for eight dayes by the sayd commissioners, that in the meane time the lord Deputys pleasure might be signified to the gouernour how he would haue them to be proceeded withall, and direction sent accordingly. But (after this also was granted them) the commissioners were no sooner departed out of those parts, then they began to breake downe diuers castles, and to burne many towines in the plaine and champagne baronies. And the more to make knowne their trayterous and wicked purposes

purposes, they proceeded against her maiesty in most obious and vndisfull speeches, saying: What haue we to do with that Calaghe, how butwise are we, being so mighty a nation, to haue bene so long subiect to a woman? the Pope and the king of Spaine shall haue the rule of vs, and none other Sir Richard (notwithstanding all this) did forbear to raise forces, and to serue vpon them generally to his disadvantage) for that he had receiued many and earnest cautions from the lord Deputy to forbear the beginning of any warre against them. But in the meane time the rebely grew to be very strong, and were now increased to the number of seuen or eight hundred men, and had also sent Edmond Keragh Burke, and Iohn Ickleau brother to Walter Kiragh Burke to practise with the Scots, and to draw them into the prouince to their succour and aide, aduertising the Scots by the sayd messengers, that the time was then to subdue Connaght, for the queene had few or no souldiers in the realme, they were all imploied into the Low countries. This fire kindled and flamed in such sort that now it was high time to take in hand the quenching thereof: neuertheless sir Richard of humilitie durst do nothing against them for that he was awaked and willed by the lord Deputy to do nothing in that case without his lordships aduise & direction, which (when he had long looked for) at length he receiued, although somewhat late, the effect whereof was, that the sayd lord Deputy & the counsell concurred in opinion with sir Richard, that the conditions which the Burks required were so vnrasonable, as neither subiect ought to demand them, yet the state without great indignity, could yeld vnto them, and therefore resolved and willed sir Richard to prosecute them with such forces as he had or could leaue, except he could find them to stand on more butfull termes then aforesaid. Whereupon the gouernour leuiued such forces as he thought might suffice to answer the seruice both effectually and speedily, for he found and saw that lingering seruice could not but greatly charge her maiesty, and inuch encourage the enemy: (a lost kind of warre that hath bene too too long vsed in this realme.) First, hauing taken order for the assurance of the countrey behind him, he marched towards the countie of Mayo, the 12 of July 1586. with his owne garrison forces which were 100. footemen and 50. horsemen, and came to Ballinroba the 14. day of the said moneth: here he spent sir Richard's sauen daies, as well in parling with the said Burks, as also in gathering of his whole forces together, hither came to him the earle of Clarickard with 30. horsemen and one hundred kearne, also many gentlemen of the countrey came hither, namely the L. Bremingham lord baron of Athlery, sir Hubbert M. Dany knight, Teig Okelley, and diuers others: hither also came in the supply of forces which he had leuiued within the prouince, viz. a hundred footemen of captaine Morclanes, a hundred footmen vnder captaine Merriman, and a hundred footmen vnder captaine Mollean, besides diuers companies of light kearne to the number of six or seuen hundred: & then hauing imploied the earle of Clarickard, the archbishop of Tuam, the bishop of Balinore, the lord Bremingham, Thomas Dillon iustice of the prouince and others in parling with the Burks one day, and finding that no reasons nor perswasions might win them to peace, he executed certaine of their pledges, which they before had put in for their loyaltie and good behauiour (for it appeared to this politike and wise gentleman sir Richard Bingham,

They giue ill  
speeches of  
her maiesty.

Sir R. great  
patience &  
discretion,  
more desirous  
of peace than  
warre.  
The Burks  
were grown to  
seuen or  
eight hun-  
dred men &  
sent for Scots  
to aid them.

The much  
abridging of  
provincials  
doth hinder  
the seruice.

The L. depu-  
tie & coun-  
sell directed  
sir R. to pro-  
secute the  
Burks.

Sir R. soone  
perceiued  
the commodi-  
ties of lin-  
ging wars.

Sir Richard  
Binghams  
forces draw-  
eth to him.

The gover-  
nour desirous  
to win the  
rebels by  
faire means.  
Sir Richard  
executeth  
the pledges  
of the  
Burks.

The English  
forces deu-  
ided into two  
companies.

Dangerous  
news spread  
in the campe  
by a Moun-  
taine messen-  
ger.

The lying  
messenger  
hanged.  
Four or  
five thou-  
sand head of  
cattell taken  
from the  
crautours.  
The booke  
wisely con-  
verted to a  
good vse by  
the gover-  
nour.

The Rebels  
are brought  
lowe, and of-  
fer to sub-  
mit them-  
selues.

Bingham, that the sparing of rebels pledges heretofore had done no small hurt in this realme, by encouraging the to ill actions, trusting upon the accustomed mercy shewed to the like pledges and then he marched to the Abbey of Ballinrubber, the two and twenty ieth of July : and from thence he sent his forces of footmen and kearne into the mountaines and woods to seek the rebels in their fastnesse, which aforesaid forces was led by Captaine John Bingham, who had the charge of the garrison band, which behaved himselfe so well therein, that within the space of five or seven weekes they all submitted themselves to the State : himselfe with the earle of Clanrickard, and the hoshmen kept the champaine and plaine country, as well for the defence of her maiesties good subiectes in those parts, as also to keepe the enemies from elapsing away from the forces sent into their said fastnesse. About this time there came anephiall out of Mountster, being sent, if it were as he said, as a messenger from those parts to Francis Berkeley prouost marshall of Connaght. This espiall the more to encourage the traitors, and to animate others to loyne with them, gaue it forth, that the earle of Leicester was slaine in the lowe Countries, and the most of the English forces ouerthrowne there : that there were 2. great armies of Spaniards landed in England, and that there was a great nauy of Spanissh ships in Baltimore, that the king of Scots was in armes against her maiesty, and that her highnesse was sicke, and in great danger of death : vpon which vniuice seditious rumour and report, sir Richard caused the Author and messenger therof being a bad ruminage to be executed by martiall law. And now the footmen within the mountaines, and himselfe in the champaine, so hunted the Burkes and their accomplices from place to place, that within the space of three weekes they began to be tamed and they had taken from them in that time the number of foure or five thousand head of cattell, wherof sir Richard Bingham referred towards the defraying of the extraordinary charges of the iourney the number of one thousand. All the rest were bestowed on the captaines and their companies, and the officers of the field as bootie, according to the custome in this country seruices. Of else giuen to the kearne and light footmen as a consideration of their entertainments, which thereupon were discharged and dismissed from that seruite. Besides the depauiing these rebels of their cattell, as aforesaid, there were slaine of them about the number of five or six score of all sorts. The rest in short time after diuided themselves, flying from caue to caue, and from one groue of wood to an other, where they might best hide themselves, sending in messengers to the gouernour to beseech him of mercie and pardon, and offering to submit themselves with all humblesse. Hereupon it was when they were thus broken, that the gouernour discharged the kearne he had, as aforesaid, together with all Irish hoshmen of severall parts of the prouince, contenting all of them, either with some portion of the praies and booties gotten, or else with his owne money, his owne hoshmen and footmen, and the three bandes of supplies aforesaid he laied from the seruite for a space, as well to refresh them, as also to giue time and leaue to the enemies to come in freely without feare, which otherwise would haue possessed them, had the forces bene still by and dooing in the woods. This being done they submitted themselves one after an other in sort following : Videlicet,

Ewster

Ewster M. Donnell chiefe of the Gallowglasses came in, submitted himselfe, & put in his sonne pledge for himselfe and his sept, the next Edmond Burke M. Richard Euerrine one of the strongest amongst them sonne to the last M. William saue one, came in and submitted himselfe, giuing in his sonne as pledge : after whom William Burke alias the Blind Abbot the chiefe of that surname, Edmond Burke of Castle Barry being dead, which claimed to be M. William, submitted himselfe very humbly, offering one of his sonnnes as pledge. But (for that sir Richard liked not the sonne that he offered, but demanded his eldest sonne whom he knew to be a good pledge) he departed againe, yet within two dayes after, when he saw the gouernour would haue sent in his forces amongst them againe, he came to him, submitted himselfe, and brought his eldest sonne for a pledge : Moyler Oge Burke submitted himselfe. The loies did in like maniere submit themselves, and also Riccard Burke alias the Duels Hookes sonne, all these gaue in good pledges for the obseruation of the peace. These men upon their submission were so pined away for want of foode, and so ghaisted with feare within leuall of eight weekes, by reason they were so roundly followed, that out any interine of rest that they looked rather like to gholles then men. Edmond Burkes sonnnes of castle Barry prestid still in the action. Their father was the man whom they sought to haue made M. William, till he was executed by course of the common law. This man was very old, yet was he put to death for these causes ensuing : he was a notable traitor, and the encourager of his sonnnes to this action, during whose life, both they, and he, had a hope he should be M. William. To the end therefore they should be carried away no longer with the deceitfull toying of this baire hope, and so the sooner by waye to submission, he was indicted, arraigned, condemned and executed, as in like cases is accustomed. The gouernour might haue hanged him by martiall law, but rather made choise to haue it orderly done, as aforesaid, to the end her maiesty might haue his lands by cheque upon his attainer (for he had a good quantitie of land.) After this the said sonnnes of Edmond Burke (seeing their father, and in him all their hope dead) offered to submit themselves, so as they might haue enjoyed their fathers lands. But herein the gouernour referred them to the resolution of the lord Deputie and counsell : to be further heard in that point, which they somewhat liked of, and then they offered the eldest brothers sonne as pledge : but the gouernour refused to take any child or other pledge, sauing one of those byethen, which were in number five or sixen : but that they utterly denied to do : whereby it was well perceived they caried very bad intentions. At this time, whilst these men stood thus vpon the pinch of submitting them, news came to the gouernour, that 2000. Scots came out of priuet of Kiarne toward Sligo with Edmond Kerragh Burke and so, Irelcaue, who were sent by the Burkes their kinsmen, as you haue heard before, to draw in those Scots for y better defence of their quarrell, which Scots were promised by the Burkes that they should inhabit the country, so as they would banish out the Englishmen, and dispo of the said traitors. These news hindered a thorough pacification within the countie of Mayo : neuertheless this prouident & circumspect gouernour sir Richard Bingham, hauing already reduced and brought things there to so good a state, as before is said, dispatched the earle of Clanrickard

The rebels  
were to fol-  
lowed, that  
they looked  
more like  
gholles then  
men.

Edmond  
Burkes sonn-  
es of Castle  
Barry prest-  
ided still in  
the action.  
Edmond  
Burke of  
Castell Barry  
hanged.  
The cause  
why the go-  
uernor did  
do this exe-  
cution.

The gover-  
nors purpose  
in hanging  
of Ed. Burke  
tooke good  
effect.

News came  
that the  
Scots were  
entering into  
the prouince  
which re-  
ports hin-  
dered a per-  
fect and fi-  
nall pacifi-  
cation.

With

Sir R. raised himselfe to seele all things in the safest manner. Newes brought to the gouernor that the Scots were come downe nere to Roscomon. The gouernor then great iournes for feare his complices & the Scots should meete before his coming. Sir R. comes to Sligo. Sir Ar. O'neale, and Hugh Mac Gwier aided the Scots. The Scots were of all sortes betwene 3. or 4. thousand. The cause why the Sc. raised about the Earne. The Scots would not come into champaigne ground. The Scots were the bolder to passe forward into the countrey, because Sir R. wanted supply of English forces.

with thirtie or fortie horsemen, and two bands of footmen, sending also presently after them another band of footmen, all which ioynd with George Bingham, (squire, brother to the said Sir R. who was then shirfe of the countie of Sligo, and leuied there some shot, and horsemen before the coming of the said forces. These companies being thus united, stood upon guard and defence of the borders of the province, which caused the Scots not to make so much and so great hast to come forwards, as otherwise they would haue done. Sir Richard raised in the countie of Mayo a small time after the sending away of his said companies, of purpose to order things there more effectually for the defence of the countie, & for the prosecution of those few bad Burkes which yet continued in action against her Maiestie: which being done in such good sort as the danger and necessity of that time could afford, he then let forwards towards Sligo, with a hundred footmen and five and twentieth horsemen that were remaining with him: but upon his setting forth, he had newes brought him, that the Scots were drawn through O'Rowkes countie into the Hawghery of plaines by Roscomon to pray and spoyle the same, by means whereof he rode a great daies iourney, and came that night nere to Roscomon, and lay that night four miles from it, from whence (understanding contrarie that the Scots were betwene Sligo and Boudois) he rode the next day to the towne of Sligo, being well-nigh three score English miles, but the footmen he left to march away after him with as much convenient speed as they might. His highway was to passe by the abbey of Roile, where he found Sir Thomas Lettrange, and other the ridings out of the countie, whom he had appointed to lie there for the defence of the countie of Roscomon, he left them there for that time, and so came to Sligo the eight and twentieth of August. At his coming thither he was giuen to understand that the Scots lay still encamped at the Earne, some on the one side, and some on the other side, to the number of so many as he was before advertised, with some increase of horsemen and footmen, for Sir Arthure Oneale, and Hugh M. Gwyer had added them with some forces, so as their forces was now about 2000. as it was said, of able men, besides women, boyes, and churles, whereof they had great store. I take it nere as many more, with great store of carriages. The coming of Sir Richard soooke to Sligo, and the newes of the pacification within the countie of Mayo, made them stay long about the Earne and Boudois, either to expect more forces to come and ioyne with them, or some new boyles to be raised in the countie behind the gouernor, by their confederates, which might cause him to deuide his forces, which were then four hundred English and Irish, and about three score horsemen, besides the ridings out of the countie which were about a hundred horsemen and two hundred earne: A force far too weak to haue encountered with the Scots, except they might haue bene gotten in a champaigne ground. To which like place of disadvantage they had no intention to come. For of the 400. the Gouernor had 300. which were Irish, and for the most part men but newly trained. He wrote to the L. Deputie to send him 2. other bands of 50. horsemen, for that there was no trust in the Irish horsemen, which horsemen & footmen (if they had come sooner than they did) had either cleane discouraged or sufficiently withstood the Scots from coming into the province at all. Sir Richard lay at Sligo, & the

foote

looke of the Curlewes with his said forces fronting the Scots, and withstanding their entrie into the countrey (expecting still a supply from the Lord Deputy) the space of fourteene daies: the Scots drawing on by little and little through O'Rowkes countrey upon mountaines, woodes and bogs towards the Curlewes, with intention to passe that waies into Mayo, encamped euer in such fastness as he could not by any means come at them, without great disadvantage. At the length although Sir R. kept the passage straightly upon them (for the watching of which he was bound to diuide his companies into sundry places far distant from each other) yet in an exceeding foule, & pestilous & darke night, they deceiued him, for after he had watched & waited for their coming till 10. of the clocke at night, hearing before night & they had remooued their campe, & were rather going backe againe then coming towards him, he left to watch abroad any longer, & bestowed himselfe and his companies in places of succor, which he did, supposing that (by reason of the abundance of raine which fell that evening, their long absence till that time of the night, and the words of O'connor Sigo. which assured him that the said Scots had incamped themselves againe for that night. But shortly after this, when the Scots, by reason of some epials of their owne, or some traitorous intelligence out of the gouernors camp had understanding that Sir Richard and his companie had reposited themselves to rest, stole towards the bridge of Kilbowney, nere to which at a castell not far off Sir Richard for the defence thereof had placed his footmen, and some Irish horsemen, and so being come priuily to the bridge 3. or 4. hundred of them gate ouer the same before the English footmen came at them: who, as soone as they came in, beat the Scots backe and toan the bridge. But here the Irish horsemen did no seruice at all: when the alarm was, Sir Richard himselfe was at a place called Knockmulllyn about a mile from the bridge, being also an other passage, where it was thought the Scots would sooner haue passed ouer than at the bridge. At this place the bridge was the onely straight and passage that Sir R. knew the Scots could find to passe ouer into the countrey by: but they contrarily waded ouer at a foord not far from the bridge, neuer before knowne by any of the countrey that had or would confesse the same to the English: Sir Richard and the horsemen, upon the alarm hastened with great speed to the bridge, and rode ouer the same without danger both of the enemy and his owne companie; for the night was exceedingly darke: and the bullets and arrowes flew to and fro, without regard of any man that might march or ride betwixt them, and hauing passed the bridge (although the ground were ill for horsemen to serue on) yet he charged the Scots, and killed and drowned about 40. or 50. of them. The most part of his horsemen here failed him, some, because they were far off, and the said Irish forces he remooued with his owne ordinary companies into the baronie of Tyeragh, which he chose to do for to saue the pray of that countrey which was great: he left the great mountaines of Slowgany on the left hand, which were before on his right, and marched downe 8. miles into the said baronie consisting of plaine ground with some bog in it of twenty miles in length, lying all along by the sea. In the same he came to a towne or village called Ardglash, where he camped the second night, & hauing intelligence by epials that the enemy lay on y other side of the mountaines, not far from an Abbey called Baunodon

The Scots encampe in O'Rowkes countrey.

Sir Richard reposeth him and his company to rest in a fore pestilous night, the cause why.

The Scots come by Sleish to the bridge of Kilbowney. The English beate backe the Scots from the bridge. Sir Richard lay at an other straite or passage. The Scots find an unknown foord to passe ouer. Dangerous seruice. Sir Richard charged the Scots. Sir Richard doth remoue into Tyeragh to saue the pray of the countrey.

A politike  
deuile off Sir  
Richard to  
bring the  
Scots into  
security.

The supplies  
sent by the  
lord Depu-  
ty.

Sir Richard  
in some di-  
stresse for  
want of vi-  
tuals.  
The scarcity  
of the campe  
supplied by  
captaine  
Woodhouse.

Edmond  
Mac Costel-  
logh a gen-  
tleman of  
the country.  
The Scots  
proclaime  
themselves  
lords of the  
country.

in marcellous fast and strong ground, he tooke with him good guidship, he pas-  
sed the sayd mountaines with his forces, and encamped that night at Deconon a  
towne of the bishop of O Harres. At his being here he gaue it forth in policy, that  
the enemy was marching up through Gallen toward the inner and civile coun-  
tries, as the lord Bretingham countrey, and the county of Roscommon. And there-  
upon he halled by great dayes march to a castle called Moygarry, which stood  
in a freight, and in a fit and apt place to answer the service upon them, if they had  
passed into the sayd countries. Sir Richard did this, to draw the Scots into an  
assured beleefe of their owne security, to win such advantage of ground of them, as  
afterwards was gotten, for upon the newes of Sir Richards returning backe, they  
grew somewhat carelesse, and perswaded themselves (as also they were infor-  
med) that he was returned home to Roscommon, and durst not by reason of his  
small forces encounter with them, as after shall appere well. Lying at Moygar-  
ry, the monday at three of the clocke afternoone, newes was brought him from his  
brother George Bingham, that an hundred footmen of maiester vicepresident,  
vnder the conduct of lieutenant Hunt, had passed the Courlews, whereupon the  
gouernour dispatched messengers to them: whereupon they came onto him the same  
night. The morrow after being tuesday, he remooued to a castle called Moye,  
in the barony of Cossellogh 5. miles from Moygarry, and a place as commodious  
to answer the service as the other was. Here came in to him 100. footmen of Sir  
William Scarsles, vnder the conduct of lieutenant Jaques, & 50. of Sir George Bow-  
shers footmen vnder the leading of lieutenant Day, with 25. horsemen of Sir Hen-  
ry Haringtons, & 15. of maiester Wingfields. These men were brought in by cap-  
taine Gren Omoloy, whom he had sent forth for that purpose five of seuen dayes  
before. Lying here, Sir Richard & his company were in some distresse for want of  
victuals, but he was supplied by captaine Woodhouse, who brought him some  
beecus out of the plaine and champion countries. At this place Sir R. B. with his  
companies lay tuesday and wednesday till noone, for it was long before the beecus  
was killed and made ready to sustaine them. By that time the espials which were  
before sent forth to discover the enemy, returned, bringing newes that at their last re-  
mooue from Clamary, they tooke their way toward Ardnary, a castle neare  
to Tirawly, and standing on the river of Moine, thinking to passe that way into  
the barony of Tirawly. This being knowne, Sir Richard dealt with his guide  
to bring him the nearest way he could thither. At 12. of the clocke at noone vpon  
wednesday aforesaid, he remooued fro castle Moye, & marched towards the abbey of  
Baunoe, all vnder the high woods & mountaines, through a place called the Witter,  
in the barony of Cossellogh, & came to the sayd abbey two houres within night.  
This abbey stands two miles from the woods in a plaine and open place: here  
the guide whose name was Edmond Mac Costellogh found out a priest which  
had that day broken from the Scots, with whom he had bene prisoner. The  
priest the sayd Edmond brought to the gouernour, of whom he learned most as-  
surably, that the Scots were all encamped at Ardnary, and had there proclaimed,  
that all the country was theirs, that Sir Richard was returned to Roscommon,  
and that all his forces had forsaken him, and therefore whosoever would willingly  
come into them, should be friendly receiued to their fauour, and haue no hurt.

Sir

Sir Richard dealt with this priest to be his guide to bring him where the Scots  
were: but the priest durst not undertake it, except a couple of horsemen of the O  
Harres which he named might be sent with him: the gouernour willed him to fetch  
those two gentlemen of the O Harres, which he did, and returned to him againe an  
houre after midnight. These two gentlemen sent away two espials to discouer  
the Scots more certainly, and about three of the clocke in the morning when the  
moone gaue light, Sir R. arose, and adorning himselfe and his company, marched  
towards Belclare 4. miles from the Abbey in the highway towards the enemy:  
here one of the espials came in, bringing newes, that the Scots lay still encamped  
at Ardnary, which was 12. miles from the aforesaid Abbey of Baunoe, and 8.  
miles from the Abbey of Belclare. At his marching from hence the night for-  
sooke him and his companie, and they forsooke the highway and marched ouer  
the mountaines both horsemen and footmen, with all their carriages, carrying  
themselves in a heate altogether, keeping the bottoms and low places by cir-  
cumferent waies, with as great silence as was possible. This mountain was  
in breadth 4. or 5. miles, which Sir R. with his forces pass about nine of the clocke.  
And after he had marched a mile into the hard ground, and were not about two  
miles from the enemy, he made alre to draw all his forces together, & there gaue  
order & direction for the fight. From whence himselfe with his horsemen rode to-  
wards the enemy, and left the footmen to come after, with a speedy march. Sir  
R. with his horsemen being now come within halfe a mile of the Scots campe, sent  
out halfe a dozen horsemen as scouts aforesaid to discouer them, & the manner  
of their campe, which horsemen came euen amongst their cabbins, & gaue them a so-  
daine & fearefull alarum, & so retired to Sir R. who that time came to the top of the  
hill neare to them, where he might take view of all the ground betwixt him & the  
castle where the Scots lay. Now he sent away post after post for the battell, and  
the loose shot to come in to him, for the enemy was risen and arrayed in battell,  
and made head towards him in their greatest haurence: Sir Richard entertained  
them with skirmishing to vaine time, and draw them by higher to the hard  
ground till the footmen might come in, who appoched with such silence that  
the Scots neuer suspected any such companies to be at hand: but when the  
shot began to appoach them, Sir Richard charged them roughly, and thoughtly  
with his horsemen, beate backe their loose wings to their battell, drave them to a  
little bogue, and killed many of them. After which he againe retired, and caused  
some of his shot on horse-backe to alight from their horses, and therewithall en-  
tained them with a second charge, about which time his loose shot, and the  
whole battell of footmen came in, and then the footmen charged them in the  
forward, and himselfe with his horsemen in the flanke, in such sort, that they  
sone discomfited and ouerthrew their whole force, and drave them to the riuer  
side, where he and his companie slue and beheaded them all saving 80. or there-  
abouts, which stripped themselves, and by swimming oer the river of Moine  
into Tirawly, saved themselves, leaving their weapons & apparell behind them.  
There were no more saved of all their forces, and of all loots of them but these,  
and a 100. and od that went the day before into Tirawly for a pray with some of  
the Burkes. But such as swam oer the river, as aforesaid were afterwards killed

Sir R. march-  
ed toward  
the Scots.

He giueth  
direction for  
the fight.  
A scout  
sent to disco-  
uer the  
Scots.

Sir Richard  
commeth  
within view  
of the Scots.  
He skimmeth  
with them.  
He killeth  
some with  
his horse-  
men.

The Scots  
killed and  
drowned.  
11.



Scots killed in the country of Sligo by master George Bingham esquire, and the gentlemen of the country. Some of the Scots slain by their old friends. Scots slain and drowned 3000. Two of the Englishmen slain. The names of the captains imployed. The number of the English forces.

The great troubles and cares taken by Sir Richard,

The good husbandry of Sir Richard for the queene. Helped not his owne party to further the service. Sir Richard forced to buy his powder. The overthrow of the Scots.

in their returne and flying towards the north in the county of Sligo by George Bingham esquire brother to the gouernour, being then chiefe of the county of Sligo, together with the helpe of the gentlemen of the countrey, diuerse also of them which were absent for this last pray whilest the battell was fought, and certaine of their hostiemen, which were then also foraging abroad for housemate, were afterwards slain in their returne and flying homewards, euen by some such as when they came first towards and were strong. Were their great friends. The number of fighting men slain and dyed, as hath bene well knowen and tried out, were fourtente of sixtene hundred, besides horse and foote boyes, women, churles, and children were as many more, so as in the whole there died of them that day and the day after in their flying homewards, thre thousand persons, and of the English companies were not slain past two persons and those also through their owne folly in being too far towards for the people, but many men and horses were hurt and galled. This day the chieffest leaders of them, Iames Mac Connells son, 12. Daniel Gocum, 12. Alexander Carrogh were slain, together with all the rest of their leaders, and the chieffest burks which dyed them into the prouince. In this seruice was imployed vnder Sir R. Iohn Bingham capitaine of 100. footemen, Nicholas Mordant capitaine of the like number, capitaine Merryman of the like company, William Moitean capitaine of the like number, besides the lieutenants & souldiers rehearsed sent from the lord Deputy, and certaine leaders of hostiemen. And besides capitaine Woodhouse, capitaine Greene, which had no charge, and master Newton, and capitaine Betaghe, which had charge of some hostiemen, the whole company were in name about 600. footemen, and by poll about 500. besides 90. hostiemen, whereof fifty were of the garrison of the prouince, and the other forty were sent by the lord Deputy. This ouerthrow was great, and the paines and policies therein taken and vnder great, but the seruices in this, the watching & trauels at the streights before the Scots came into the countrey was much more greater: but the wonderfull care and industry of Sir Richard in those seruices, which continued out in it 13. or 14. weekes together, not once comming home to his house in that time, and fasting hardly, and lying on the ground and on straw a great part of the sayd time was to be noted, and in him highly commended. For our and about all this, although he rested thre seuerall companies of footemen, each of them consisting of a hundred men with their officers, and certaine hostiemen which continued in pay during all the sayd time, besides five or six hundred kearne, which also had pay our and about her maiesties allowance, yet he so handled the matter, with the goods of rebels, which by strong hand he got from them, and with 3. or 4. hundred pound of his money, he defraied the extraordinary expences of the sayd seruices, not charging her maiesty with any one groate thereof, or any of the subsidies of the countrey either for victuals or any other thing, other then some small matter, which the risings out brought, or which souldiers in comming to him or going from him ate, where they came for a night in a place: yea he charged himselfe in this case, that being granted of powder from her maiesties store in Dublin he was driuen to furnish himselfe thereof, for his ready money in Galway. Lastly, this seruice was such as dyed and cut off all the old beaten Scots which used to haunt Ireland, in somuch that now, (it is sayd) there are not forty such to beare

such to beare by head in all that realme of Ireland to the great behoofe and comfort of the same, to the great ease and benefite of her Maiesty, and to the eternall commendations of this worthy gentleman Sir Richard Bingham for cure.

In the month of July diuerse traiterous persons were apprehended, and detected of a most wicked and detestable conspiracie against her Maiesty, and also of minding to haue stirred up a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: for ioy of whose apprehension, the citizens of London on the 15. of the same month at night, and on the next morning caused the bells in the churches to be rung, and bonfires in their streets to be made, and also banquetted euery man according to his abilitie, some in their houses, some in the streets with singing of psalmes & praising God, for preserving her Maiesty and people of this land, which doings of the citizens were so well accepted of her Maiesty, as by her letters to them directed may appeare, the copie whereof being read openly in a great assembly of the commons in the Guild hall of that cite the 22. of August, before the reading whereof master James Dalton one of 5. Councillers of that cite, in the presence of the Recorder, made this speech hereafter following. But first her Maiesties letters.

Our right trustie and welbeloued, the lord Mayor of our cite of London and his brethren the aldermen of the same.

Right trustie and welbeloued, we greet you well, being giuen to vnderstand how greatly our good and most louing subjects of that cite did reioyce at the apprehension of certaine diuellish and wicked minded subjects of ours, that through the great and singular goodwille of God haue bene detected, to haue most wickedly and vnnaturally conspired, not onely the taking away of our owne life, but also to haue stirred up (as much as in them lay) a generall rebellion throughout our whole realme: we could not but by our owne letters witnesse vnto you the great and singular contentment we receiued vpon the knowledge thereof, assuring you, that we did not so much reioyce at the escape of the intended attempt against our owne person, as to see the great ioy our most louing subjects tooke at the apprehension of the contriuers thereof, which to make their loue more apparent, they haue (as we are to our great comfort informed) omitted no outward shew that by any externall act might witnesse to the world the inward loue and dutifull affection they beare towards vs. And as we haue as great cause with all thankfulness to acknowledge Gods great goodwille towards vs, through the infinite blessings he layeth vpon vs, as many as euer prince had, yea rather, as euer creature had: yet do we not for any worldly blessing receiued from his diuine maiesty so greatly acknowledge the same, as in that it hath pleased him to incline the hearts of our subjects euen from the first beginning of our reigne, to carrie as great loue towards vs as euer subjects caried toward prince, which ought to moue vs (as it doth in very dede) to seeke with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian prince, the conservation of so louing and dutifull affected subjects: assuring you that we desire no longer to liue, then while we may in y<sup>e</sup> whole course of our gouernment carpe our selfe in such sort, as may not onely moue and continue their loue and good will towards vs, but also increase y<sup>e</sup> same: we thinke meete, that these of our letters should be communicated in some generall assembly to our most louing subjects the commons of that city.

Great reioicing for apprehending of traitors.

By the Queene to the Lord Maior of London, her letters.



Given vnder our signet at our castell of Windsor the 18. of August 1586. in the 28. yeare of our raigne.

Maister  
James Dal-  
ton his ora-  
tion.

Right worshipfull, my good countrie men and citizens of this most noble citie of London: Since the late bruite and report of a most wicked and traitorous conspiracie, not onely to take away the life of our most gracious Soueraigne, (whome God graunt long to liue and raigne ouer vs) but also to stirre vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole realme: the great and vniuersall ioy of you all of this citie, vpon the apprehension of bluerie of that most wicked conspiracie of late declared and testified by many outward acts and shewes, hath wrought in the Quenees most excellent maiestie such a gracious contentment, that it hath moued her Highnesse by her letters signed with her owne hand, to signify vnto my lord maior of this citie and his brethren, her most noble and princely acceptation thereof, and that in such sort as thereby may appeare, that her Highnesse hath not more, no not so much reioiced at the most happie escape of the wicked mischiefe intended against her owne person, as at the ioy which her louing subiects, and namely you of this citie of London tooke at the apprehension of the practisers of that intended treason. By occasion whereof her highnesse brought to a thankfull remembrance and acknowledging of Gods infinite blessings bestowed on her, comparable with any prince or creature in the world, no worldly thing more or like accounteth of, then of the heartie loue of her louing and faithfull subiects many waies and many times before now, but especially by this our great ioy in this sort at this time, and vpon this occasion shewed.

And that her exceeding great loue and acceptation of our reioicing may the more appeare vnto you, it hath pleased her Highnesse in the same letters to declare, that the desierth not longer to liue among vs, then she shall maintaine, continue, nourish and increase the loue and good will of her subiects towards her. And this her Highnesse hath willed to be made knowne vnto you all, with this, that she will not faile with all care, and by all good means that appertaine to a Christian prince, to seeke the conseruation of you all so louing and dutifully affected subiects. This her maiesties pleasure in part now declared, and more to be made knowne to you by her owne letters, which you shall heare read: my lord maior and his brethren haue required me to declare vnto you all, that they do highly reioice and thanke God for the happy day of the good acceptation of this your great ioy, and my lord himselfe hath willed me to giue you all heartie thanks in his name, for that in the time of his seruice your dutifull behauiours haue gotten to the citie so noble and worthy a testimony of dutie and loyaltie of so noble and worthy a Quene. Now for as much as Gods blessings wonderfully abound, and one ioy comes vpon another, let vs not be vnthankfull to God, but acknowledge his goodnesse, and attribute the same (as indeede we ought) to the sincere religion of Almighty God, most goodly established by the Quenees most excellent Maiestie, which hath taught vs to know God aright, our dutie to our Soueraigne, and to loue our countrie, and hath made vs dutifull and obedient subiects, reioicing at all good things happening to her Maiestie, her realme, or to any in her noble service, the true effects of a true and good religion: whereas the contentment thereof, and immoderate affects of the Romish religion, and superstitions,

tions, being bodie of the true knowledge of God, haue declined from God, their allegiance to their prince, their loue to their countrie, and haue become inuents of mischiefs, hunters and spreaders abode of false and seditious rumours, such as ioy at no good thing, but contrariwise reioyce at every euill successe, the badges and marks of their profession. who haue before this, in this realme and in other her highnesse dominions, stirred vp rebellion, foraine inuasion, and many times practised the very death and destruction of the Quene her selfe, the ruine and subuersion of the whole realme, the proper effects of their Romish religion. We haue beheld all these things, and seene in our daies the rutie and mischiefs inuented against others, fall vpon the inuentours themselves: and haue knowne the wicked and violent hands of diuels of them, diuellishly to kill and murder themselves, when most traitorously they would, and most happily they could not slay the Lords annointed. As we haue knowne all these things, so God be thanked, that by a better religion, hauing bene better taught, we haue bene no partakers of their wicked deuils, but haue put to our helping hands as occasion hath serued, and euer ready to ouerthrow the authours and deuilers thereof. And I haue no doubt, but we of this noble citie, who hitherto haue bene alwaies ready dutifully and faithfully to serue her Maiestie vpon all occasions (her Highnesse now so graciously accepting onely of our reioicing at the apprehension of her enemies, euen the least part of the dutie of a good subiect to so good a Quene) will be ready euerie one with all that he can make, and with the utmost adventure of all our liues, specially to be reuenged vpon all such as shall diuellishly and traitorously attempt or put in bye any mischiefe to her noble person, and in the meane time will haue a better eye and care to all suspicious and discontented persons, to their sayings and doings, to their fauours and reports, to the places and corners of their haunt and resort, to their hauboyers, companions, aiders and maintainers.

God uphold and continue his religion among vs, and increase our zeale therein, which hath made vs so louing and loyal, and so beloued and acceptable subiects to so worthy a prince, and roote out that wicked and Romish religion, that hath made so many dysloyall and traitorous subiects: to whom is both odious and irksome the long life and prosperous raigne of our most noble Quene Elizabeth. God conserue all such traitors, and preserve her Highnesse long to liue and raigne ouer vs.

The 7. of September, certaine of these diuellish and wicked subiects were indicted: first, for intending treason against the Quenees owne person: secondly, for stirring ciuill wars within the realme: and thirdly, for practising to bring in foraine power to inuade the realme: seven of them appeared at Walsingham on the 13. of September, who all pleaded guiltie and were condemned, but had indulgent on the next morning. On the 15. of September, other seven were likewise arraigned, who pleading not guiltie, were found guiltie by a Jury, and had judgment.

These traitors 14. in number, were executed in Wincolnes Anne steeles on a stage of scaffold of timber strongly made for that purpose, euen in the place where they had been to marte and to conserue of their traitorous practises, there were they hanged, hewed, and quartered, seven of them on the 20. of September, to wit,

J. Ballard yeuell, Anthony Babington esquire, J. Savage gentleman, Rob. Barnwell gentleman, Chidiock Tichborne esquire, Charles Tunney esquire, Ed. Abington esquire. The other seven were likewise executed on the 21. of September, to wit, Thomas Salisbury esquire, Henry Dun gentleman, Edward Jones esquire, John Trauerse gentleman, John Charnocke gentleman, R. Gage gentleman, Leonard Bellamie gentleman, &c. as I haue more at large set downe in Reign Wolls and Holinsheads chronicle.

The merchants of London being of the corporation for the Turtke trade, intending onely a merchants borage, provided and furnished with all things belonging to the seas, five tall and stout ships appertaining to London, to wit, p<sup>r</sup> Merchant Royall, the Tobie, the Edward Bonauenture, the Willem and John, the Sulan: these five departing from the coast of England in the moneth of Nouember, 1585, kept together as one fleet, till they came as high as the isle of Sicilie within the Neuant, where each ship tooke leaue of the rest, and separated themselves to particular ports, wherunto they were bound, one for Trepolis in Syria, and other for Constantinople, and the rest to other places: but before they departed themselves they agreed, after the lading of their goods at their severall ports, to meete at Zante an island neare to the maine continent of the west part of Africa. These accordingly (their businesse first performed, failed not to keepe promise, and arrived at Zante within the compass of the time afore limited, here they staid in this port till the necessities of each ship were supplied, and nothing wanted to let out for their returne. In this port the newes was first of two severall armies and fleets lying in await to intercept them, the one consisting of thirtie strong gallees, and that fleet hovered about y<sup>e</sup> straits of Gibraltar. The other army had in it twentie gallees, whereof some were of Sicily and some of the island of Malta, under the charge of Iohn Andreas Dorea a capitaine serving y<sup>e</sup> king of Spaine. The Merchant Royall was appointed admirall of the English fleet, & the Tobie vice-admirall, by whose orders the rest promised to be directed, and each ship vowed not to breake from the other. Thus in good order they left Zante, & committed themselves to the seas, and proceeded in their course without sight of any enemy, till they came neare to Pantalarea an island betwene Sicilie and y<sup>e</sup> coast of Affrike, into the sight wherof they came the 13. of July, and the same day they detected thirtie gallees, 11. gallees, and two frigates lying in wait for them. As soone as the English ships had espied them, they made themselves ready to fight, the gallees more, and more approached them, and in their banners the armes of Sicilia & Malta: they sent their frigates to our admirall, demanding of him whence they were: wherupon answered, of England: they asked why they delayed to send or come to Don Pedro de Luna their Generall, to acknowledge their dutie to him in the name of the Spanissh king lord of those seas: our men replyed, y<sup>e</sup> they ought no such dutie to him, nor would acknowledge any, &c. Wherupon in the end the fight began betwene them, and continued very hot for the space of sixe hours, what slaughter was made among the Spaniards the English men were uncertaine: but they supposed the same to be so great, y<sup>e</sup> they waited men to continue y<sup>e</sup> charging of their peeces: wherupon with shame they withdrew themselves, and the Englishmen contented in respect of their deepe lading, rather to continue their borage

The Royall Merchant and other four ships of London their victory against 13. gallees of Castile and Malta.

borage then to follow the chase, cradled from further blowes, with the losse onely of two men slaine and one other hurt in the arme, whom maister Edward Wilkenon captaine of the admirall, with his good word did so comfort, that he nothing esteemed the smart of his wound in respect of the honore of such a victorie, and themselfe repulse of the enemy. The English ships proceeded in their navigation as high as Algier, a port towne upon the coast of Barbarie, where they refreshed themselves, and tooke such supply of fresh water and victuals as they needed, and put to the sea looking to meete with the second arme of the Spanissh king, which waited for them about the mouth of the streight of Gibraltar, which they were of necessity to passe: but coming neare to the said streight, it pleased God to raise a very darke fog, so that one ship could not discern another, by means wherof, together with the faire calmer time that then blew, they passed with great speede through the streight: but yet the Spanissh gallees had a sight of them when they were come within three English miles of the towne, & made after them in all hast possible, but in vaine: they shot off their ordinance in the sea, as if they had bene in the midst of them. But thus it pleased God to deride and delude all the forces that the king of Spaine had provided to distress the English, who notwithstanding passed through both his armies: in the one little hurt, and in the other nothing touched, and arrived at Cith the 18. of September, in the year of our lord, 1586.

Now to returne to the service in the Low countries done by his Excellencie & other under his charge, after the yielding of the strong fort of Pemegan, which was on the 20. of May, as ye haue heard before: it followeth, that on the 21. of May, his Excellency returned to Arnem, and there sojournd. On the 22. of May, there passed towards Barrikes hoofe 11. or 12. hundred men most bravely furnished of our English nation. The 25. of May, was brought before Barrikes hoofe thence two canons, which shot at the sconce that day, & on the next morning in the morning was the same sconce yielded to his Excellencie, the soldiers putting themselves to his mercie, who pardoned them, & let them passe with life onely. In this sconce were found alme about 50. persons, the rest were slaine in the siege. At the yielding of this sconce Count Hollocke found one of his colins, which when he beheld, he said, *Ha* villain, art thou become a traitor to thy country & his excellencie? I answer, y<sup>e</sup> thou art none of my blood, & with his capier thrust him in & slue him.

The 24. day of May, the enemy played before Graue with their ordinance, and presently assailed it, but they of the towne being led by the Count Embrigh did repulse them so sufficiently, that the enemy lost neare a thousand men.

On Whitsunday, Peregrine Barrie, lord Willoughby of Erdbie lying at Berganapome, understanding of a great conuoy that was coming to Antwerp, set upon it, and took it, there were of wagons 480. laden with victuals, oyle, salt, and wine taken, which had to draw those wagons a thousand mares and horses, there were 200. men slaine by our horsemen and footemen and 400. taken prisoners that were sent with the conuoy to haue the defence thereof. The Lord Willoughby took a threescore wagons into his towne of Berganapome, and burned the rest, and for the salt, oyle, and wine, he brake up the heads of the vessels, and let them be spoiled.

H. Arher, Service in the Lowe countries by his Excellencie, Berke hoofe woon.

County Hollocke.

An over-throw given to the enemy at Graue. Lord Willoughby took a conuoy at Antwerp.

Bariks hoofs  
sconce ouer-  
throwne.

The 30. of May, Sir John Norrie was sent to take order for the overthrowing of Bariks-hoofs sconce, which was done, for that it was thought not meete to be kept with men, his Excellency hauing the sconce at Spanegam that kept the riuer of Wall, and the sconce made by Skinke at Chelhoule kept both the riuer of Wall and the Reine, for that this sconce standeth at the entrance of these two great riuers: And for that his Excellency had Aniam sconce at the ioyning together of Hill Keyne and Dorelborough riuers. In this meane time, to wit, on the 26 of May, the enemy spared no kind of shot to annoy the towne of Graue, but thundered with canons at it as it had bene mulket of caluier. He had at it .8. canons, 20. smaller peeces, as culuerings, and deny canons, &c. The Graue of Embryckelseeing the assault to be so hot, and fearing the event (although he had written to his Excellency that he should not care for Graue, but go about his other business) on the 27. of May entred parley with the enemy, and presently let in his soldiers, which seeing certain English men and others more faithfull then the rest, straight tooke a place of strength, and kept without victuals three dayes in despite of the enemies, and after seeing no way to be releued, they departed by composition. And thus was the strong towne of Graue lost by the countie Embrough, who after came to Huldon, sent for foure of the burgesse of the towne, for what purpose was not knowne, but thought to perswade them to betray the towne, but 3. of them refused, the fourth not found, but thought to be with y<sup>e</sup> prince of Parma. As for the countie Embrough as he was walking with 3. or 4. other capitaines of Graue, he was with 4. other capitaines surprised by some of our sould, & brought to his Excellency on the 2. of June to Spunkhurst, & were committed to prison.

Graue lost  
to the ene-  
my.

His Excel-  
lency remou-  
eth from  
Aremew to  
Nemegan.

The last of May, his Excellency with his whole companies of souldiers and gentlemen passed from Aremew to the campe before Spanegam, where his pavilion was pitched, and presently he sent a 2000. men toward Tille, to keepe the wa-ter from the enemies passage.

Tille and the  
Amon ther-  
of, his strange  
dealings  
with the ene-  
myes.

The fourth of June, his Excellency first hauing sent Skinke and captain Williams, with diuers other colonets of hoyle and gentlemen, towards Wendolo (for that the prince of Parma had begun to besiege it) came from the legat at Spanegam to Tille where he rested that night. The gouernour of Tille, called the Amon being a man of great courage, and a protestant, vsed the prince of Parma in this sort, the prince lending a trumpeter to parley with him, he straight wayes without any talke hangd him vp. The prince wondering he heard not of his trumpeter, sent a drumme to know what was become of him, vnto whom the Amon answered, your trumpeter is hangd, and thou shalt be drowned, so it was done without any more words. This towne is situate in the Betto, whose ground is the most fertile of any place of fertility in Guelderland. The towne is strong: the one side the Amon may at his pleasure drowne, the other is so strong with rampiers, walls, and fortres, that the Amon protesteth that he regardeth no prince or princes power in the world. He hath halfe a score ships of war at his appointment, whereby he commandeth all the waters about him, he hath alwayes liued a singular loue to our nation, especially to his Excellency, in such way that he desired to keepe the towne to his life, so long as he liued.

The 5th of June, his Excellency passed from Tille to Somell, there was the castle

castle of the Warneborough, and for that he took part with the prince of Parma, his house was burnt and spoiled. The beauty of the towne of Somell is in two streets, crossing one the other, very large and faire, at the crossing of which streete, there is a very faire market place, the towne is strong though little, and sufficiently appointed with ordnance and munition. It standeth in an Island very fertile and sweete, hauing such store of orchards, gardens, and other pleasures, as it passeth all others: on the top of the steeple of the church in this towne, the country lieth so plaine about it, that one may see all these townes following, Spanegam, Wagening, Aniam, Keyne, Ulrick, Colindborough, Ulrick, Alana, Curcom, Huldon, Fatinghamballe, Graue, Tille, Paole castle, and Baryn castle.

The towne  
of Somell.  
Warnebo-  
row castle  
spoiled.

The 9. of June, his Excellency came from Somell to Garcome to towne the riuer Wallle, leauing at Somell a garrison of three hundred Dutchmen, with those of the towne, who at the first could hardly brooke the garrison, till they were perswaded by countie Hollocke passing toward the towne. There was fire of seuen engines of his Excellencies souldiers on the banke of the riuer, which did discharge braue bolles of shot, then was there on each side the riuer a mightie sconce full of souldiers, which gaue their bolles of shot, then the ordnance of the towne went off: and entering the towne, he was entertained by the Burgesse, and passing through the towne, on both sides were placed souldiers in great number. On the next morrow his Excellency went into the castle of the towne, which is marvellous strong. This towne is very rich, for there are many rich merchants, which passe to all parts of the world vsuall. The riuer Wallle runneth through the midst of this towne, and the riuers of Reine and Haze on each side. The towne is very strong, for that round about the country may be drowned. His Excellency with his whole traine were here marvellously welcommed, and well used, for victuall, lodging, &c. There is by this towne, another towne of great force, called Worcome, by the castle of Zallen, this Worcome is in greatnesse but a village, but in situation and strength, a thing of great importance: it standeth in the same Island that Zallen standeth in. It is Graue Maurice his towne, and kept his garrison of souldiers.

Garcome.

Worcome.

The 10. of June, a post came to his Excellency, from colonell Skinke and captain Williams, with letters: the effect wherof were, that the sayd Sir Martin Skinke, and captain Williams, slaying not farre from Ulenlo (which the duke as then besieged) and longing to shew the zeale they had to the service of her maiesty of England, set out with their hostemen in the night, all the Dutch men for the most part forsaking them, so that with him was not about 160. hostes, with these he let forward, killed the kill watch, & passing farther killed also two courtiers of gard fully appointed, and entering by force the quarter that the prince of Parma was in, they killed a number of noblemen and gentlemen: but in the returne the enemy well appointed set on our men, and scattered them, to some losse, but the greater sort escaped: the skirmish being ended, and our men retiring. Captaine Williams was one of the hindmost of them all, and he cried (being yet in the enemies campe) to wher is Williams, wher is Williams, and another answered, he-fore, before, and thus he escaped.

The 13. of June, his Excellency went to Dort with a small traine, where being come about five of the clocke in the afternoon, the Burgers made him such great chere, as was thought to haue bene impossible for so short a time of prouision. The 14. he tooke ship towards Ulrike from Dort, being waisted with an hope full of souldiers of the towne.

The 22. of June, the enemy attained Venlo, a towne of great importance and strength: there was in this towne, not only the wife of Skinke, and his children, but also the treasure, horse, and (for the most part) the furniture that Skinke had, this towne had in it of souldiers, to the number of five or six hundred, all of Skinks men well appointed and braue souldiers.

The 23. of June, his Excellency passed to Colindborough about nine english miles from Ulrike, only to visite the Graue of Colingborough, where hee dined, viewed the towne, and returned to Ulrike, taking with him the laide Earle of Colingborough.

The 29. of June his Excellency passed from Ulrike to Dort. The 30. of June, he removed from Dort, to Williams state of Wagon hill. The same day Count Hollocke ouerthrow a cornet of horse belonging to Breda, with the helpe of Master Robert Sidneyes cornet, sir Philip Sidneyes cornet and other. The said Count Hollocke promised to haue a conuoy passe from out of Spabant, to Berganaplonie, which y enemy being warned of by spies, that this conuoy was guarded but with some sixteen or twenty horse, the gouernour of Breda sent out his cornet of strength of horse to this exploit: but some few of them, being either afraid to meddle with our men, or doubting the true occasion that happened, staid behind the rest. Captaine Welch an english man, which a great time had serued y enemy, had y leading of y horse at Breda, but passing to this exploit, count Hollocke with maister Robert Sidneye beset them round, which the enemy no sooner perceived, but yielded, so there was taken captaine Welch and a thirty horse, & as many men. The 31. of June his excellency early in the morning passed from Williams state to Berganaplonie, & about three of the clocke in the afternoon he arrived there, and presently passed to the strong castle of old Wlawa: this towne is in the entrance of Spabant, 20. english miles from Antwerpe, upon the same riuer that Antwerpe standeth. It is a towne now almost ruined, though before in the prosperity of it it was not much inferior to Antwerpe, there are few people but souldiers, the Burgers forsaking their goodly builded houses, are gone to other places. This towne is subiect in two places to hills of firme ground, which are the places that make this towne far stronger then otherwise it would be, yet wonderfully rased with bulwarks, wals, and flanders in all places. The X. Willoughby hath wonderfully enlarged the strength of this towne: further he hath made two very strong bulwarks in two places of the towne, at the haue of the towne, and from the towne a slight shot or more, are 2 mighty sconces, which stand by the riuer side, which indeed are of more strength then the towne, & they are to command the towne: a 2. english miles from the towne standeth a ruined towne in an Island, & by this riuer whole situation is such, as for strength it might be made a braue place, for fire & otherwise, this towne is called Roma: toward against the which standeth a strong sconce, and to along the riuer to the towne standeth diuerse the

Berganaplonie.

Romans ward.

Venlo lost to the enemy.

like, to command the riuer and passage to the towne: the castle before named, that his Excellency went to view at his arrivall at this towne, is also such as no reasonable force can win, alwayes once a yeare victualled and manned afresh, this castle regardeth not the canon shot, it is so rampered. The 1. of July, his Excellency passed from Berganaplonie to Suricksea, a towne in Zeland, and in an Island so called. In this Island also is another towne called Breders haue, a very strong towne, this Island is most fertile. The 2. of July his Excellency passed to Dort. And the same day passed from Berganaplonie 3000. men that were there newly arrived to Stenberg, a towne greatly noxious to the garrison of Berganaplonie, for when they passed into Spabant upon any exploits, they were letted by the souldiers of this towne: this iourney was so closely kept, that our men shot at the wals of Stenberg ere any of that towne knew for what cause so great a number of men were gathered.

The 3. of July, there entered into Flaunders, the Graue Maurice, the prince of Oranges sonne, and sir Philip Sidney, lord gouernour of Flushing, with other, to the number of foure thousand footemen, and three thousand horsemen. The fourth of July, Graue Maurice took on him to cut the bankes of the sea, to drowne the land of Wasse, hauing with him two thousand men, the rest of the army passed with sir Philip Sidney into Flaunders, and surprised the towne of Arell, there were slain of souldiers of that towne three hundred, besides the Bourgers that made resistance, which were likewise slain. This done, they came to Drope, or Drope, a towne of great importance, this they entered and took in it five hundred boozes, which were kept to do seruite, and to be ransomed. Graue Maurice with his two thousand men so plied the bankes, that in short time he had made it sufficient for the water, not onely to enter, but to drowne all the country, but the wind stood so contrary, that no water to the purpose entered at that time, onely the bankes lay open. In the meane time our men took five sconces, and put all to the sword that they found in them, and this was their entrance into Flaunders. The towne of Arell is not farre from Antwerpe, and about the same distance from Caunt, and not five english miles from either, the land of Wasse wherein this towne standeth, is the onely paradise of those lands, and most fertile place of all other. The eight of July, Graue Maurice returned to Middleborough, leauing all occasions to sir Philip Sidney gouernour of Flushing. The tenth of July, rodonell Yorke brought to his Excellency to Dunbage, five ensignes of the menims, all which were taken from the enemy in the towne of Arell, and the sconces.

In this meane time, to wit, on the ninth of July was Paulus Buce a great state and a politike man taken at Ulrike and put in prison, and very shortly after was taken another named Peter Fullistine, and likewise committed to prison. The 14. of July, his Excellency commanded the gates of Ulrike to be enclosed, and all the bridges to be drawne, all the men both English and Dutch souldiers to be in armes, and further proclaimed that all men that loued the queene of England, should presently be armed to the uttermost, which being done, the English souldiers were placed on the wals, with commandement, that no Burger whatsoeuer should come theron, but presently they should take from them their upper gar-

Suricksea.

Stenberg.

Sir Philip Sidney entered Flaunders. Axell surprised by the English.

Drope.

Five sconces taken by the English.

Strike in armes by commandement of his Excellency.

garments, which if they refused, they should be straight slain. Also a straight search was made in the Towne for suspicious persons, and there were taken three which were committed to prison. The cause of this stir was this, it was reported, that there were come into the towne 500. of the enemies, in bootes appeared to betray the towne, but it was not so.

About this time, Sir Philip Sidneyes cornet at Houlbon, and certaine Dutch cornets, to the number of a hundred horse or more, with a two companies of footemen, entered into Brabant, taking booties, and spyinging the country, which being knowne to the enemies, they sought to intrap our men, and with a three hundred horse, and certaine companies of footemen, they set upon our horse, put them to retreat, and pursued them far: but our men, by swimming, and goodnesse of their horses, escaped for the most part, only a cornet of Dutch & one other officer of them were slain, our footemen brought their bootie into such straights and fears, that the enemies could not indamage them, so that they brought their booties safe to Houlbon.

The 15. of July, Sir Philip Sidney, Lord gouernor of Flushing, the Lord Willoughby, with those powers they had received from the garrison of Arel, considering the coming in of the water into the land of Waale, which might sufficiently defend that countrie, remooued the campe. The lord Willoughby to Bergenaploone, where he was gouernor, Sir Philip Sidney passed the sea with a three thousand men: whose enterprise shall be shewed hereafter. This Sir Philip Sidney, at or before the taking of Arel, within an English mule of the Towne, called to many of his souldiers together as could heare him, and there made a long Oration, wherein he declared what cause they had in hand, as Gods cause, and for whom they fought, for her Maiestie; whom they knew so well to be so good unto them, that he needed not to shew, against whom they fought, men of false religion, enemies to God and his Church: against Antichrist, and against a people whose unkindnesse both in nature and in life did so excell, that God would not leave them unpunished: further, he perswaded them that they were Englishmen, whose valour the world feared and commended, and that now they should not, either feare death or perill whatsoever, both for that their seruice, they ought to their Prince, and further, for the honor of their Countrey, and redde to themselves. Again, the people whom they fought for were their neighbors, allies friends, and well-willers to Englishmen. And further, that no man should do any seruice worthy the nothing, but he himselfe would speake to the bittermost to perswade him to his wished purpose. Which oration of his did so like the minds of the people, that they desired rather to dye in that seruice, then to live in the contrary.

The 14. of July, Sir William Pellam, lord marshall of the field, came to Dunhage. The 16. of July, his Excellency remooued from Dunhage to Brill, in which passage he took to crosse the water at the booke of Sluce to called, being passed the water, he entered the land betwene two sconces, a quarter of a mile or more from the towne, where he was entertained with all the sconces shot both of great ordinance and smaller shot, passing by land he came to the towne, where the gouernour Sir Thomas Ciffell entertained him both with cheere and otherwise, most honorably.

Sir Philip  
Sidney his  
oration.

Brill.

honorably. This towne is on the mouth of Haze, where the water is in breadth foure miles English. The Island of Brill is great, more than twentie miles out, in it are Dorps not so well built as rich. On the 19. his Excellency returned from the Brill to Dunhage.

In this meane space, to wit, on the 16. of July, the enemy entered Peuce, after a long assault, in which assault, he lost three thousand men. This Towne of Peuce was fourthly burned downe to the ground by the lackies and boyes belonging to our souldiers, there remained whole but eight houses.

The 22. of July, his Excellency made a banquet to diuers great personages of those Countreies, as the lady Bredo, lady of Wiana, the Pallgrauces wife, the countie Egimouns daughters, the prince of Oenges daughter, with a number more. In which banquet wanted not what might be had to augment their cheere, either in musike, dauncing, fire works or otherlike.

The 22. of July, the garrison of Surtin issued out, to the number of foure two hundred, and came to Arnam, tooke some cattell and other things, and returned, whereupon master Anthony Sherley came to captain Willon gouernor of Arnam, and required that he and his company might issue out and reuenge this iniurie, which at length was granted: then master Sherley chose out to the number of fourescore footemen, and 20. horsemen and sent them out, which the enemy seeing, to intice our men forward, let the bootie not far from Surtin, on a hill, and laide a fourescore of their men in an ambush, betwene Arnam and the bootie, the twenty horsemen came to them, which they let passe in a sleight, but no sooner past but they discharged on them and seeing no more thought to slay or take them all, but no sooner had they charged the horse, but master Sherley charging them behinde, the horsemen returned, and so what on the one side, and on the other, they slue of them the number of 80. & tooke 13. prisoners, which with the bootie, they brought againe to Arnam having lost but one man, and two men hurt.

About this time, master Butlers cornet, lying at Deuentrie, issued out and tooke from Suthfield or Surtin, of cattell to the number of foure hundred Cows, and sixtene Hares of great price, in this manner. Those of Suthfield had by the river side a great marish, all so ditched in, that no horse could passe over by any possible means: but they of Deuentrie and Campyn consulting together, did one night at a lowe water passe into the marish ouer by the doe of the Towne, and brought without losse of any man of our part, foure hundred and oppe Beastes, and sixtene Hares, most of them sold for foure pound a Hare, amongst the souldiers. This exploit with others did greatly pinch those of Suthfield, for that the milke of those beastes were to them a great reliefe.

The 28. of July, master Robert Sidneis cornet, lying at Bertrienberge passed with some of countie Hollockes horse, to the number of an hundred, and passed on purpose onely towards Breda, but being within sight thereof, they spied a number of cattell issuing forth of the Towne (for feare of our garrisons in those parts) by towards high Brabant, having to conuey them some 200. shot, and a 10. or 12. lances, our men seeing to fit a bootie overlooked of their part, charged and put to flight the shot and horse, cut betwene the Towne and the cattell, and

Nuce burned by the English boyes.

Of Surtin.

Robert Sidney took a bootie.

and tooke from them five hundred oren, seauen hundred sheepe, & threescor mares, and some boares, all which they caried to Gertenberge, to the great reliefe of the souldiers there.

**Mountford.** The second of August his Excellencie passed from the Hage to Utrike, he dined at Tergowde, from thence he came by Den water, & from thence to Mountford, a strong towne, at night he came to Utrike, where by the Lord North he was received with great shew of shott.

**Mewes yeelded to the enemie.** In this meane time, to wit, on the 29 of July, the enemy lying part before Berke, the residue came before Skinke, which towne was no sooner summoned, then it yeelded to the enemie, and on the next day they tooke a little towne called Alpyne both these townes belonged to the Graue Maurice.

**Berke.** The second of August, the enemy having passed by Berke as before, diuerts of his company were cut off as straglers, and further a great sort of horse, the men that were taken were hanged: amongst whom a yong lad which was taken, confessed to Skinke that as the prince passed by Berke, on a hill made this speech, My souldiers (quoth he) you may see here this towne, neither great nor strong, but so manned, that assure your selues you shall receiue blowes enough, and no wealth, wherfore we may now passe with no dishonor, but if we stay here long, it will be dishonor to passe away, therefore say what you minde to do, and presently they were all contented to depart, and so they passed from the towne. The third of August, the prince seeing he could not passe any thing by water, but Berke letted it, besides he had a convey of vendon, wine, &c. which was by them of Berke taken away with sicke men that had the conveying thereof, the prince noting that the principall men that annoyed him, were there where the prince saw the towne wreake, he returned to it againe: for Skinke had no sooner taken the sicke men, and others, but asking them whole men they were, and they answering the prince, they were straight waies hanged, which doings of Skinke caused the prince to returne his army to Berke, on the said third of August, on which day he passed with three cohorts of horse from Alpyne where his munition lay, to Nyon, a towne of the Duke of Cleus, a small league from Berke, and came with certaine to besiege the towne of Berke, which Skinke perceiving, straight issued out of the towne with certaine horse and foote, and charged the prince which had three cohorts of horse, and five hundred footemen, yet Skinke put him to the retraite to Alpyne to his quarter there.

The fourth day he came with his maine battell, and passed on the south side of the towne, though often times he were charged, and lost many of his men, yet he abode there.

**The Lord Marshall and other entered Brabant.** On the third of August, the Lord Marshall, the General of the Horse, &c. with some thousand horse and footemen passed in the night farre into Brabant, and came early in the morning to the great Dorpe Dell Stilluoyngbank, let it on fire, and burned it to the ground: There was with the Lord Marshall two hundred kernes, who shewed their courages, for none were so ready to burne, nor so ready to kill all that came in their danger, so that few escaped them. Continuing further they came to a Dorpe more like a good towne, not

not farre from Sattlingambulle, wherein is a castle, and a strong sconce, but the wild Irish kernes, neither fearing shot nor thecat, came by the sides of the sconce, took it presently, and put to the sword all in it, and took the provision to themselves. The hole of the towne had crossed the way with trees in such sort, as the horsemen could not passe to the towne but with great labour, but the Irish entered the towne onely, and burned it to the ground, leaving none that came to their hands, so our men returned to Gertenberge, not looking for of their Irish men.

The sixt of August, his Excellency passed from Utrike to Tergowde, where Tergowde

he stayed till the seventh, being honorably entertained: this towne is very strong, situate so, that all the country round about may speedily be destroyed. About this towne is the greatest number of fruites that men there present had euer seen, and by them thought sufficient to serve many countries, with trees of all sorts, but pears specially. The ground about Tergowde of a 14. foye broad, is nought else but the most brave trees that can be seen. This towne hath the most faire market place that hath bene scene of many in the world wherof standeth a faire State house, in the which his Excellency did eate and was lodged. The 7. of August, his Excellency passed from Tergowde to Utrike, by the which he must passe through Odonwaters, by the Burgers of which towne, he was honorably received, all the towne throughout our head was hanged with garlands of flowers for his welcome. The 12. he passed from Utrike to Keyne, and there stayed all night.

The next day he passed to Arnam. About this time a ship was sent from the bishop of Cullen to the prince, laden with cannon shot, and powder, the master of which ship, either mistaking the bishop, the prince, or their religion, so soon as he came where he might well recover Berke, where Skinke and his force lay, he by one means or other, so opened the ship that the water entered, so that he and the rest were forced by that means to retire to Berke. In this ship was a commissary of good account with the Prince, whom the master of this ship did convey to Skinke, who was no sooner come, but Skinke entered judgement with him, and he desiring to be used like a gentleman, Skinke answered he should be hanged with his face toward the enemies campe, for sayth he, I know you desire to see your friends, and so it was done. This losse of provision made the prince want of his wall for battery of the towne, onely planting five canons in two places. Further, at the same time, there came newes to his Excellency, that the horse and footmen of Gelder had often put the enemy to losse, and had taken 150. horses from them, besides a number of them slaine.

The 17. of August, Sir John Norris passed over Wall by Arnam sconce (a bridge of boates being there made) with some 3000. english footmen, and 600. 7. hundred horse. And about the same time, the prince remooved some part from Berke to Alpyne, a Dutch mile from Berke. The 21. of August, the lord Marshall passed over the riuer by Arnam sconce, with 2000. footmen, and 600. horse toward the legat. The 23. of August, his Excellency passed over the water by Arnam sconce with 2000. or more footmen, and 100. or more lances. The Irish kernes were no sooner come to the campe, but that they passed neare the chiefe, and

A ship sent to the prince but came to Skinke.

Sir Martin Skinke hanged a commissary.

Irish kernes.

Elham,

and brought from them a 120. colvres. The 24. of August, the leiger rose, and passed to Eltham: there is neather Eltham, and upper Eltham, both have bene houses of religious women, most sumptuously built: the neather standeth neare the Reyne: the upper standeth an English mile from the Reyne upon an high hill, and in such a place, as few the like for prospect: where a man standing may behold 100. parish churches. This cloister was of such credit and estimation, that none came there by the order of the place, but she was a barons daughter at the least. The lady Anne of Cleve was brought by in this cloister. The 27. of August, his Excellency passed from Arnam to the campe at Eltham. The 28. he caused all the English to be marshalled into squares, and two preachers made to them 2. sermons in the field by the hill side of Eltham cloister. The 30. of August his Excellency passed from Eltham to Dowdrough with all his army, except only those that the night before were sent to lye about the towne. On the north side was an Island, to the which was sent the Scots regiment, which by night with their pioneers did intrench within 80. yards of the north part: On the west side came the regiment of Sir T. Sherley. On the east side was the regiment of Sir William Scandley & Sir L. marshall: on the south side was his Excellency with the regiment of the L. Audley. All the residue, as Sir John Norris, Sir Digby, and diuers other regiments as well English as Dutch, were placed betwene these quarters, every one in part intending to intrench neare the ports, so that the same night, though with some alarmes from the towne, were the whole ports of the towne intrenched, so that none could issue without danger. The same night also that his Excellency came before Dowdrough, himselfe in person with the lord marshall in the night, with their gards, went from their tents to view the south trench, being neare the towne, there was a bafe shot at them, which though all were together, yet rebounding amongst them all, hit Sir lord marshall on the belly, pierced his buffe jerkin, his dublet, and hurt him somewhat: this shot missing his Excellency, made the returne. The last of August, there was nothing but intrenching, and some volleys of each side, for that the ordinance was not come. The first of September came our ordinance, which being landed, & drawn neare the places of battery, some of the demy canons discharged, to displace the ordinance of the towne, which was in part done, but againe in other places mounted. This day his Excellency remooved from the east of south side to the west side into an Island, the river Illall running by it. The 2. of September halfe an houre before sun-rising, began the battery of Dowdrough, & was so thoroughly plied, & with 9. battering peeces a marvellous breach was made. In time of which battery capitaine Williams was shot through the arme, yet in this siege not 20. men lost, and a 20. hurt. About one of the clocke they agreed to parley, all our battels being ranged in squares before the towne to assault. The souldiers had made the breach more strong then before with scather-bosses, dung, timber, &c. & made in the inside a great fight, but fearing an assault, which they knew would be furious, they (as was said) agreed to parley: the conditions were, that the souldiers should passe away with their lures onely, the Burghers should have all they had at his Excellencys mercy: these things being agreed, about foure of five of the clocke in the after noone, all the souldiers with their wives passed over the breach away. The women that passed with the souldiers, it was a grievous

The English men marshalled. Dowdrough besieged by his Excellency.

His Excellency in danger, and Sir William Pellam lord marshall was hurt.

Dowdrough yielded to his Excellency.

was thing to see how they were ransacked, till the earle of Essex and diuers other gentlemen came downe the breach, & by limiting & beating the souldiers, made them leave off rising them: his Excellencys expresse commandment was, that none should take ought from the towne, but that was not observed, for much of the goods was spoiled. Capitaine Borowes was appointed to keepe the towne, whose ensignes with capitaine Prides colors was set in the breach. The capitaines & souldiers that were sent to save the towne from spoile, did to the contrary, for they made havoc and most horrible spoile, where with his Excellency was greatly displeased. The first of September his Excellency went into the towne, and there dined, and after viewed the towne. The same day maister Anthony Sherley and other capitaines came to the campe, and declared that the enemye came to Well, and with a peece of ordinance brake backe our ships wherewith our men were, and killed some of them, & further beate them betwene the river. The towne of Dowdrough standeth by the river Well, an arme or issuing of the Reine by Arnam lconce, & runneth along through the country of Quar Well, it runneth also by Southfield, and is in the prouince of Southfield and five English miles from Southfield, and five miles or more from Arnam. It standeth in a most fertile soile, pleasant & fruitfull ground. It is of reasonable strength, having high walls, not rampired but in certaine places, having a water running round about it, it is about the bignesse of Arnam, nigh an English mile & a halfe compass. The order of the assault of this towne (as it was determined) Sir John Norris had the honor given him to enter the great breach, Sir William Stanley with his regiment had the sounding of Sir lo. Norris, county Hollocke had given him the small breach with his regiment. These ranged themselves in the most bravest manner, but his Excellency offered partly as ye haue heard. The 9. of September word came, that Sir Martine Skinke was gotten freed out of Berke, & the 11. the same Skinke, capitaine Thomas with some other braue souldiers lances came to the camp before Dowdrough. The 12. of September his Excellency with all his forces came from Dowdrough, & that same night incamped himselfe before Southfield, but he for want of a bidge could not go over the water, this night he intrenched himselfe very neare in diuers places, and on the morrow he made a bidge, which passed over to the other side. The 15. of September his Excellency, leaving Sir Martine Skinke in his absence passed to Deuentry, but shortly returned, for that he was informed that the prince with his whole force was marching towards Southfield. This towne of Southfield is very strong, being in diuers places parted, in all which places is such strength, as all must be woon ere the towne be woon. It standeth a good distance from the river Well, but hath a lconce on Well of incredible strength, for Hollocke with all his force, and our English men a two peeces since lay at it three quarters of a peece, but could not win it: but now his Excellency began to besiege it, and for that his forces were not sufficient to incampe it round about, he framed himselfe to do his best to win the lconce, for by that meanes he might the more easily win the towne. The first night our men intrenched at a Church beside the Towne, but for that they thought after it was not so commodious, they passed not for it, and therefore went on the other side of the water to inlconce the lconce, for that out of it there

His Excellency incamped before Southfield.



there issued both horse and footmen, which did greatly annoy our camp, for none could passe or repasse from Decentrie, or otherwise stir from the strength of the camp, but they were taken or in danger, if not rescued. The 18. of September, Skinke took on him to make a sconce neare the enemies sconce, which the same night he began, though the towne shot loze at him, & also the sconce, yet he followed his way, & so fortified it, that it was sufficient for great multitude to hold men to keepe it, and sufficient for strength to hold out what the enemies shot could do against it, & this sconce Skinke kept on y<sup>e</sup> side the water, that passage could not so well come to the sconce, but he did strike their boats. His Excellencie the next night caused another sconce to be made iust by the enemies sconce, so that y<sup>e</sup> enemy was by these two sconces to kepe in, that they were kept from issuing out for their pleasure. The 20. of September, the enemy lying not far off at Langham a towne of ours, distant from Southfield an 8. or 9. miles English, sent in the night into Southfield certaine companies of horse, which were suffered to enter by our men, and further to passe away againe to the enemies campe, they brought nothing into the towne to relieue it: moreover all the whole English camp lay on the other side of the towne ouer the water, so that readily a sufficient power could not be made.

The 22. of September, was the most brave fight performed of our side that could be. The enemy this night put into Southfield some hundred wagons with viuals, which being perceived, straightwaies sir William Stanley went with his owne compaign, which were some 200. to stand as a bulwark, sir John Norris overtook him being sent to the service, & said to sir W. Stanley: There hath bene said he, some words of displeasure betwixen you and me, but let all passe, for this day we both are employed to serue her Maiestie, let vs be friends, and let vs die together in her Maiesties cause. Anoth<sup>r</sup> sir William Stanley, if you see me not this day by Gods grace serue my prince with a valiant and faithfull courage, account me for ever a coward, and if needs be I will die by you in friendship. Thus the long quarrell begun in Ireland was here ended, with such friendship as made all men reioyce: both of them serued so forwardly this day, that the one could not tell how much to commend the other, onely the one serued with footmen, the other with horse: sir W. Stanley marched with his footmen, but the enemy was come to the Church where our men had at the first placed themselves, there was of the enemies 2200. muskets, and 800. pikes, which were in to ward the place of their refuge. (to wit, the intrenched Church.) The Lord Audley with some hundred and fiftie men, by great suite made to his Excellencie, attained at length to go, whom made so great haste, that he overtook sir William Stanley ere the skirmish began, which was hot, but the Lord Audley and sir William Stanley not liking the too vollics of musket shot, pressed neare the enemy, and themselves at the push of the pike with their men, put the whole compaign of the enemy to retreat to the holde, which done, they retyred a little backe out of the musket shot, and there made a stand: the Earle of Essex Lord generall of the horse, the lord Willoughby, sir William Russell, and sir John Norris with their regiments came to charge the enemy. There were of the enemy fiftie companies, of which five or six were Albanys, the rest were Spaniards or Italians. The Albanys issued, which our men charged so furiously, that

A fight before Southfield.

Sir William Stanley and sir John Norris came thence that before were enemies.

it was thought at the first shewe there were a thirtie or forty of the enemies overthrowne, then our men went to the curtain, which they so furiously plyed, that the enemy after some three quarters of an houre retreated to their pikes, losing of foot and horsemen, as the prisoners since taken confesse, besides hurt, an hundred men of their bracke, amongst which was the countie Anceball, also captain George the commander of all the Albanys was taken prisoner, besides near twenty commanders some captaines, some ensigne bearers, lieutenants and other officers: but to sir John Norris he gave the first charge, who with his pistol in his hand offered to discharge it on a brave man, but his pistol would not go off, which he seeing, broke it on the head of his enemy and overthrow him. The lord Willoughby with his lance in his right hand captaine George and unhorsed him, so that he fell into a ditch, and cryed to the Lord Willoughby, I yield your prisoner, for that you be a seemely knight, (this he spake in French:) the lord Willoughby came not to take prisoners but passed on with his curtain in his hand, & his whole regiment after so furiously, that it was wonder to see, y<sup>e</sup> lord Willoughby was so forward, that oftentimes, but twice especially he was like to be taken prisoner, his halles were pulled off from him, but rescued by our side. When y<sup>e</sup> skirmish was done & all retreated, captaine George being in his Excellencies tent, would not graunt to be prisoner to any but to him who unhorsed him, whome he knewe if he saw him in his armor, the Lord Willoughby came in armed, this is the knight that I am prisoner to, & I yield to him said he, to the Lord Willoughby had y<sup>e</sup> prisoner adjudged to be his. The 3. the earle of Essex charged with his regiment, who so encouraged his men, for the honor of England said he, my fellows follow me, & with that he threwe his lance in his rest, and overthrow the first man, & with his curtain he behaved himselfe that it was wonder. Sir William Russell with his regiment charged so terribly, that after he had broke his lance, he with his curtain to playd his part, that the enemy reported him to be a dincell & not a man, for where he saw fire or shewen of the enemies together, thither would he, and so behave himselfe with his curtain, that he would separate their friendship. Among the rest sir Philip Sidney so behaved himselfe that it was wonder to see, for he charged the enemy thise in one skirmish, and in the last charge he was wounded with a musket shot through the thigh, to the great griefe of his Excellencie and of the whole campe, who being brought to my lord lieutenant, his Excellencie said: O Philip, I am sorry for thy hurt, and sir Philip answered: O my lord, thus haue I done to do your honor and her Maiesties service. Sir William Russell comming to him, kissed his hand, and said with tears: O noble sir Philip, there was neuer man attained hurt more honorably then ye haue done, nor any serued like unto you. He was conveyed to Trium, where he continued till his end in such kind of godly behaviour, that both the preacher did wonder at it, and the churche of godly admirers, the one seeing his wise godlinesse, the other his valiant courage with patience to abide all kind of paines. The regiment of sir Philip Sidney was at this time at Decentrie, upon this occasion, his Excellencie feared Decentrie, for that it had often bene in question of retreating, but the prince of Parma hauing occasion to be employed other waies, could not come that way: now (as is aforesaid) his Excellencie fearing that while he were winning one waye he might lose another, the

Sir Philip Sidney had his death wound.

prince being so neare, sent Sir Philip Sidneyes cornet, his owne cornet, and maister Robert Sidneyes cornet all into Deuentic, and offsoote folke captaine Flud with his souldiers, and captaine Ward with his: this was the cause Sir Philip Sidney was alone without his cornet at this seruice. Sir Thomas Parrar also was at this seruice, and serued most brauely. All the time this skirmish was with these cornets, so our footmen were in fight with the enemy, and by fine force made them once againe retire to their safetie. The enemy being retired to his strength, at our hoise made a stand by the mulker shot, which played on them long, and bawed the enemy, bidding him come softly if he durst, but he would not: which Sir I. Norris seeing, rode to his Excellencie, and bad him be merry, for said he, you haue had this day the honorablest day that euer you had, for a handfull of youemen haue driven the enemy three times to retreat this one day. Further he willed his Excellencie either to send for more strength, or else to sound the retreat, which last request he graunted, for that his strengths were otherwise employed, and so the retreat being sounded both by drum and trumpet, our capitaines came backe in good order, euerie man to his quarter with great praise and honour. Vale lost men of account at this fight, captaine Martine, and captaine Thomas Welch is thought to be dead, he came with Skinke from Berke in hope now to be in more safetie: we lost of foote and hoise, dead, about forty.

The 25. of September our men seeing þ great aduantage that a certaine ysland lying in the riuer betwene the sconce and the towne, would do them, and further that there was therein some souldiers of the enemy, which greatly annoyed them in shooting as they passed any way, our men therefore set upon it, skirmished with the souldiers, and put them to flight, many of them leaping into the riuer were drowned, some were killed, but in fine our men inforced there, and the towne shot at them, but did them little hurt.

The 28. of September, his Excellencie with a great part of his campe removed to the other side of the towne, and there began to intercity: leaving the sconces well manned, it was thought the towne was neuer so well victualled, for by his Excellencie the prouant was cut off, and euerie soldier had halfe a crowne a week, which greatly contented them, and this was paid to them truly, so that a souldier might by this means be able to pay the victualler, & that made many resort to the campe. Further, Deuentic was so neare, that by that means victuals were brought the more fully to the campe, for at Deuentic is great plenty of victuals. The hoysmen had foure shillings the weeke loane, to find them and their hoise, which was better then the prouant: his Excellencie knighted maister William Hatton and maister Henry Vmpton, who were then sent for to returne into England to their friends.

The 29. of September, our men set upon the lope sconce of the enemy, which with some difficultie they obtained, but after thinking to win another sconce, there were many of them slaine, as well as on the other side was the like of woyle: there were of our men slaine and hurt about an hundred. In this lope sconce as was reported, there were five fights, which were woon that night, and certaine trenches of the enemy, and further intrenched almost round about the great sconce, so as they of þ same could now hardly issue out, or any come in to th.

The

The second of October, in the night there passed into Zutphen five thousand of the princes folke, a foure thousand footmen and a thousand hoysmen, these passed into the towne all in order but troubled of our campe: these companies brought no carriages into the towne, but all the wagoners were to come after. The victuals which the princes power had gotten in Dent and Twent was conveyed into Zutphen permitted by his excellencie, for that his men were otherwise employed, those of Longham did cut off some straglers of the princes power as they passed by them. The fourth of October, they of the sconce at Zutphen called for a parley, which was graunted, and countie Hollocke for that he spake Dutch kept out of our sconce, and parlied with them, and after long talk, one of the souldiers shot a musket, which as countie Hollocke was speaking, shot into his mouth, and out by his eare, so that it smote away the ietwell hanging at his eare. The fifth of October came to Deuentic many of our hoises, and about midnight, taking all the garrison of hoises in the towne, passed from thence to Langham, where they also tooke the hoises of the garrison, and went about an exploit, which was, they hearing of a conuoy of victuals comming to Southfield, they determined to haue cut it off, but they could not meete with it. There was of our men at this exploit pretended a five or six hundred hoise, the leader whereof was Sir William Russell. The same fifth of October, early in the morning our canons being placed against the lesser sconce, they played at it till three or foure of the clocke, at which time maister Edward Stanley leader of Sir William Stanleyes companie came to assault the breach, but before he came to the breach, the enemy had a fight of trench full of souldiers placed there for to offend vs, and defend the sconce, which souldiers all at once discharged their muskets, killing onely one man. Edward Stanley entered the trench with all his men, killing some of the enemies, and the rest fled. In this trench he stayed till our canons had made the breach cleare, then maister Edward Stanley before his men, climbed by the breach, but a braue man of great stature captaine of the sconce stood alone in the breach with a pike, and thrust at him, which pike with the one hand he defended, and with the other caught hold to get by, till at the last he was throwne downe by a bullet throwne out of the sconce: the second time he assaulted the breach, but this captaine so defended it, and kept him downe as was wonderfull: and although our men with the canon did play on the breach, yet he still fought, and did not stirre till at the last a canon out of the Island stroke the ground from vnder him, so that he fell out of the breach into the sconce: but in fine this braue leader of our men led them by the breach, and first entered the same, then was the fight in the sconce, where at the first our men killed four or five, at the second the like, at the length, they hauing made a traine, three or foure of our men were bent, but the souldiers of the sconce fled out at a little wicket, which our souldiers chaunced to light on, and killed to the number of thirtie, so our men possessed the lesser sconce, with the losse of three or foure of our men, and five or six hurt. This seruice being done, his Excellencie seeing the valour of maister Edward Stanley, gave him thanks, and calling captaine Reade knighted them both. This taking of the lesser sconce greatly

County Ho-  
Locke shot  
into the  
mouth.

The smaller  
sconce woon  
of our men,  
and five or  
six hurt.  
This seruice  
being done,  
his Excellen-  
cie  
E. Stanley &  
captaine  
Reade knight-  
ed.

M m m 2

terrified them of the greater sence. The next night the countie Williams men lying neare them, they with a fore bolle of shot did discharge at them, and had them hance by, for said they, you will play but as countie Hollooke did, spend powder and shot, and lose your men, and hance by when you haue done. This sudden bolle of shot put Graue Williams men in doubt that they would issue, wherefore they had thought to haue given alarme, but finding them so quiet after, they stayed their enterprise, and listened what would follow, and hearing no noise of shot of souldiers, they passed neare the sence to see the event, at length they might see a fire in the sence which made them to peasse: neerer, and at length entered the sence, where they found a ten of twelve men, which fled (as was thought) into the water and were drowned. Thus had the cowardly praters made a fire, and ranne away by the light thereof. Thus was the great sence which was so well manned, so well provided of powder and shot, what they wanted none, yet without assault or charge, breach of any thing to dismay them, they ran away, to their utter infamy and reproch.

They of the great sence ran away in the night.

The fourth of October his Excellencie passed to Arnam, there to visite Sir Philip Sidney lying of his hurt received as is afore shewed, before whose going he made knights these captaines and gentlemen following: Sir Henry Gooderic captaine of the guard, Sir Henry Norris, Sir John Borowes, Sir John Winkfield, Sir Roger Williams, Sir Robert Sidney, Sir Philip Bauler. Those were knighted, Sir Henry North, Sir Thomas Dennis, Sir William Knowles, Sir George Farmer, Sir George Digby, Sir Steward, Sir Bewford: besides these, were made knights baronets these following: the earle of Essex, the lord Willoughby, the lord Audley, the lord North.

Knight's made.

A souldier throwne from an high tower into the river of Reine.

There was saith my cousin Henry Archer a strange thing happened at Berk in the time of Skinkes government there, which I thought good to impart. As the souldiers were repairing and working to make the towne strong, a souldier coming by said, you worke and worke, but the enemy will haue the towne within this week: which words being both noted and taken grievously that he should so discourage the souldiers, he was taken and carried to Skinke, who without any circumstances condemned him to be throwne off the great steeple of the towne into the Reine, which was accomplished. But he falling off from a monstrous height, light in the water, and rising againe, as the nature of the water is, to raise one up from of thize, he had both life and memorie, such as he offered to swim, and scrawling got out of the water: but Skinke had taken such an hatred against him, that he caused him to be bound hand and foote, to haue bene cast againe into the river of Reine, saving that colonell Morgan being there, so perswaded him, that the poore mans life was saved.

The ninth of October countie Hollookes cornet of horses lying at Langham, tooke a fire waggons, which had carried the convey before spoken of, into Southfield, and a fiftene of them being laden with hurt men that were wounded in the sence, he put them all to the sword, and tooke the wagons into Langham.

The 15. of October, his Excellencie passed from Deuentry to Arnam to visit

Philip

Philip Sidney there lying sick, as is afore shewed.

On the 17 of October, the said Sir Philip Sidney, knight, a most valliant and towardly gentleman, sonne and heire to Sir Henry Sidney (late afore deceased) of his hurt received at Zutphen in Gelderland deceased, upon whose departure he bestowed his mind and tooing, that the preacher that came to instruct him in his extreme, might rather learne of him than teach him his assurance in the premises of Christ. From thence he was brought by water to Flushing, where he was kept eight daies, on the first of November he was brought to the sea side by the English garrison, which were twelve hundred, marching three and three, shot, halbarbs, pikes, & ensignes all trailing, the burgers of the towne following: his body being imbarcked the small shot gaue him a triple bolle, then the great ordnance, &c. On the first of November he was landed at the Tower wharfe, and conveyed to the Admiralls without Ald-gate, on the east side of the citie of London, from whence on the thirteenth of February next following, he was conveyed to Saint Pauls Church in London, in order marshalled by Ro. Cooke alias Clarenceaux king at armes. Inprimis poore men in blacke gownes 32. for he was so many years old, fargants of the band, fife and drum, ensigne trailing, lieutenant of footmen, the corporals, trumpets, Gwidon trailing, lieutenant of his horse, conductors to his servants, the standard borne by a gentleman, his gentlemen and pomen servants 60. physicians and chirurgion, Steward of house, esquires of his kindred and friends 60. knights of his kindred and friends 12. the preacher & chaplains, the persons of his armes borne, the horse for y<sup>e</sup> field led by a footman, a page riding with a broken lance, the barbed horse led by a footman, a page riding carrying a battle-axe the brad downward, pomen vishers to the heraults, the great banner borne by a gentleman, Portcote bare the gilt spurs, Blewman tell the gauntlets, Rouge Dragon bare the helme and crell, Richmond the shield of armes, Sommer set the coate of armes, Clarenceaux king at armes, gentleman visher to the corps, two bannerols, the corps covered with a pall belcut, carried by 14. yemen, 2. bannerols following, Sir Robert Sidney chiefe mourner, mourners a fiftent, 4. knights, two gentlemen vishers to the noblemen, y<sup>e</sup> earles of Huntingdon, Leicester, Pembroke, and Essex, barons, Willoughby and North, States of Holland sent, all these in blacke, the wood bearer of London riding on horsebacke, the lord Mayor and aldermen on horsebacke in murrey: the company of the Grocers of London in their luerie 120. Citizens of London clad in armes 300. marched three and three in the foremost, the captaine, lieutenant, and three targets, muskettiers foure ranks, drums and fife, small shot 20. pikers 20. ranks, halbarbs foure ranks, chiefe officers of the field, drums, fife, and ensigne. In y<sup>e</sup> rearward, halbarbs three ranks, pikers fiftene ranks, drums and fife, small shot 15. ranks, muskettiers three ranks, &c. And when his corps was thus conveyed into Saint Pauls church, where he was honorably enterred, they honoured him with a double bolle of shot and so departed.

Sir Philip Sidney deceased at Arnam.

Sir Philip Sidney buried at London.

The 18. of October, his Excellencie passed with great sorow, for the losse of his nephew Sir Philip Sidney to Ulrike: and on the same 18. and 19. dayes of October, Sir William Scandley gaue in charge to his officers, chieftaines & commanders, as also to his souldiers, that they should go into Deuentry by 15. by tenne, by Marshall

Sir Philip Sidney free of the Grocers in London.

A polike exploited, at Deuentry, attatched by Sir W. Pelham lord by Marshall.

by fire and by thee, which commandment they did fulfill, so that for the most part they got them into the towne, being nothing mistrusted of the Burgers, they got into harbours and close places, that they were not espied. Also other captaines layd to their souldiers, if you will go fur of fire, or somewhat more of security to recreate your felices, take with you store of powder and shot, for feare of the enemy, which liberty they were ready to take and performed accordingly, so that there was by this means gotten into the towne well knowne 1200. english souldiers: on the 19. day in the morning came sir William Stanley with some troupe of his men, and in the afternoone sir William Pelham lord marshall, likewise with his troupe. The counsell of States with master Killegre, master Kiely, and other were debating of matters all this day with the Burgomasters, nothing mentioning of the garrison that there should be placed: further those of Southfield in disbaire, did tel those that passed by their towne to Dewent, that they should hie them, or the gates would be shut. The lord marshall being come to his lodging, sent for all the Burgomasters, which were in the counsell as before, who being come, he told them, that his Excellencie, both for their owne safety, and suppression of the enemy, was fully determined to put in a garrison of men there, and for that before time he had found them strange in granting, he had sent him thither, for that the campe was now ready to breake up, to knowe in their their determination, whether they would receive a garrison or not, and for that his haste required no long stay, they to give him answer on the next morning by 8. of the clocke, that he might send word to strike to his Excellencie, which the Burgomasters promised to answer according to his request: now all this night, did sir William Stanley and others, with the lord marshall take counsell what were best to do, which was agreed that all the souldiers secretly should on the morrow at 7. of the clocke, be in the market place with their furniture: this order being taken, all with quiet rest, but the Burgers which made that night a double watch, and chained all the streets, made fast all passages, and further did make and maine all the ports most strong.

In the morning early, by 6. of the clocke, all the Burgomasters were assembled in the state house, to agree of this purpose. About 7. of the clocke the Lord Marshall came to the state house, with divers gentlemen, and others, who knocked and were let in, straight sir W. Stanley also entered with his traine all appointed for the purpose, by this time were all our Englishmen assembled in the market place, which the townes men seeing were in pitious feare, the women crying out for feare to be spoiled. The lord Marshall asked them a direct answer, whether they would have a garrison or not, give me quoth he, a direct answer, for I must to have it. One of the principal Burgomasters rose softly, & stole away, which being told the lord Marshall, he said: fetch me presently him that is gone, or before the living God, before whom I stand, you shall all die for it, and delay not sayd he but do it, straight was he fetched againe. Then demanded he for what cause, that this night over all other, they had made so strong a watch, wherefore they had chained their streets, &c. but they answered not: well sayd he, curie one of you let his hand to this bill, and deliver our poore authority, to those whom his Excellencie hath set downe, or before God you shall all die, you have not to deale with a nation

simple,

simple, or foolish, or such as will be used in this or the like sort, consuming hither to spend their goods, toile their bodies and venture their lives, and now be accounted such as your subtilty should outreach. They forthwith at his command (being sore afraid) let their hands to the bill, and gave their authority over to others, all portellants, appointed by his Excellencie: well said he, send one of you straight to all those Burgers that are on the walls and rampiers, and command them to passe to their dwellings, and to let them forthwith be unarmed, which was presently done. Then he commanded them, to bring to him the keyes of all the ports or gates, upon the like paine before spoken of, which was also done, with swearing both the old and new officers to the queene of England. This being done, all that before were suspected to be enemies to the Englishmen, were turned out of their places of authority. There was a 4000. souldiers, all Burgers in this towne, which for the most part watched and warded, before a number others, as too rich for such paines, boozs, which are all counted to be a 1200. fighting men, wherefore it requirith great care and wisdom to deale in this sort. The campe at this time brake for the most part up, to the garrisons, and all those companies that were appointed to the sconce went from Utrecht on the 22. of October.

The 23. of October the States of those parts came from Drenth to Utrecht, where with his Excellencie they sat in counsell, of determining all the 24. day from morning till night. The 26. early in the morning, his Excellencie passed from Utrecht, and came that night late to Rotterdam: On the 29. his Excellencie passed from thence to the Hauge, where he staid some small time. The 8. of November he went to Delph, where he was banqueted, & went that night to Dunhage. On the 16. he passed from Hauge to Rotterdam: and on the 17. to Dort. On the 18. he took shipping to passe from Dort to Flushing, and being passed a seven English miles from Dort, the yee was so great, and so oppressed his ships that it indamaged the most strong ship in the fleet, so that perforce his Excellencie was forced to land at Dyppe, a poore village, and in a wagon to passe by land to Rotterdam, and there prepared ships, and when the wind served he passed towards Flushing, but calmness of the wind caused his ship against the Isles of Alcopo wherein Flushing standeth, but in the morning he landed at Camper, and thence in a wagon he passed to Middleborough, and from thence to Flushing, where he took shipping towards England.

The 23. of November, the honorable lord Robert earle of Leicester, lieutenant generall of all her maiesties forces in the united provinces of the Lowe countries, returning from thence, arrived at London, & went late that night to the Court at Richmond, where he was not so suddenly come, as forwarde welcome of her maiesty, and the rest: and thus leaving the service done in those united provinces, the Lowe countries of Netherlands (whereof thus far I had retreived adventures from my good friend, and neare kinsman Henry Archer, one of his Excellencies gard) I returne to matters at home.

The 8. of October last before passed, I. Low, T. Adams, and Richard Dildale, Seminary being before condemned for treason, in being made priests by authority of the bishop of Rome, were drawne to Cyboigne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The earle of Leicester returned from the Low countries, and arrived in England.

Lord Marshall his courage at Dewentry.

Ludgate of London new builded.

Parliament at Westminster.

An. reg. 29.

Proclamation against the queene of Scots.

Douer haven repaired.

One of the best gates of the city of London, commonly called Ludgate, was this yeare new builded, at the charges of the citizens of the same city, amounting to sixtene hundred pound or more.

The 29. of October, the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord treasurer, and the earle of Darby, representing the queenes maiesties person, began the high court of parliament by prolocution, which session of parliament was at this time assembled, for trial of matters concerning Mary the queene of Scots, &c.

The 2. of December, the session of parliament brake up, and was proroged until the 15. of February, the substance of matter handled in the same session concerning the queene of Scots, is set downe at large in a letter learnedly penned, and published in print, directed to the honorable the earle of Leicester, and as I haue set downe in my continuation of H. Reigne Woolfe and Holmsheds Chronicle.

The 6. of December, the lord mayor of London, assisted with diuers earles, barons, the aldermen of London in their scarlet, the principall officers of the city, the greatest number of the gentlermen of the best account in and about the city, with the number of 80. of the most grauest and worshipfulllest citizens in coats of velvet, and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, in most solenne and stately manner, by sound of foure trumpets, about ten of the clocke in the forenoonne, made open and publicke proclamation, and declaration of the sentence lately giuen by the nobility against the queene of Scots, under the great scale of England, bearing date at Richmond the fourth of December, being openly read by maister W. Sebrigh, Towne clerke of London, and with loud voyce sollemnly proclaimed by the sergeant at armes of the sayd city, in foure severall places, to wit, at the crosse in Cheape, at the end of Chancery lane in Fleet-streete ouer against the Temple, at Leaden-hall corner, and at St. Magnus corner neare London bridge, during which time, like solenne proclamations were made with great sollemnity in the county of Middlesex, namely in the palace at Westminster, without Temple bar, and in Bothwyl, by the sherikes of London and Middlesex, assisted with sundry noblemen and gentlemen of good account, and the Iustices of peace of the sayd county, to the great and wonderfull reioycing of the people of all sorts, as manifestly appeared by ringing of bells, making of bonfires, and singing of psalmes in every of the streets and lanes of the city.

The queenes maiesty granted to the towne of Douer toward the repairing of their haven, the free transportation of 30000. quarters of wheate, 10000. quarters of barley and malt, 4000. tun of beere, without paying custome or impost, this licence or pattennt was sold to a couple of marchants of London, named John Burd, and Thomas Wats, after the rate of thre shillings and foure pence the quarter of wheate, and 2. s. 8. d. for every quarter of barley or malt. And the licence for beere being sold to diuers, amounted to 4000. markes at the least: more there was granted by parliament Anno. 23. Elizabeth, that for every bellie or rayer whereof her subiects were owners or partners, being of burden twenty tuns or upward, loading or discharging within this realme, or passing too or fro any foreign countrey during the space of 7. yeares then next ensuing, there should be paid for every such voyage by the maister or owner of all such bellies, &c. thre pence for every tun of the burthen of such ship, which grew to 1000. pounds yearly at the least.

The

The queenes maiesty foreseeing the generall dearth of graine, and other victuals, growne partly through the vnseasonablenesse of yeeres past, partly through the bucharitable greedynesse of such as be great comie maisters, but especially through the vnlawfull and overmuch transporting of graine into foreign countreies, under colour of licence granted, by the aduile of her honorable counsell, published a proclamation and booke of orders to be taken by her iustices for relief of the poore, notwithstanding all which, the excreasue prices of graine still increased, so that wheate was sold at London for 8. s. the bushell, and in some other parts of the realme, for 10. s. 12. s. 13. s. &c.

The 8. of February, being wednesday (according to sentence lately giuen by nobility) Mary Steward queene of Scots, about ten of the clocke before noone, was executed, and suffered death, by beheading vpon a scaffold set vp for that purpose in the great hall of the castle of Fotheringhay, in presence of George Tabor, earle of Shrewsbury, Henry Grey earle of Kent, principall commissioners, and others the gentlermen of the countrey neare adioyning, to the number of about 300. He was as appertained to a queene) royally buried at Peterborough on the first of August next following.

The 15. of February, the parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to her maiesty towards her charges for the defence of this realme, a subsidy by the cleargy of 6. s. the P. and of the temporality 2. s. 8. d. goods, & 4. s. lands, with 2. shillings, &c. The 20. of February, a strange thing happened, a man hanged for felonie at St. Thomas Waterings, being begged by the Chirurgions of London, to haue made of him an Anatomy, after he was dead to all mens thinking, cut downe, stripped of his apparell, layd naked in a chest threfoote into a cart, and so brought from the place of execution through the Borough of Southwarke ouer the bridge, & through the city of London to the Chirurgions hall neare unto Crutchelegate: the chest being there opened, and the weather extreame cold, he was found to be aliue, and liued till the 23. of February, and then died.

The same 23. of February, a gun powder house at Radoise, was blowne up, about ten of the clocke before noone.

The 12. of Aprill, sir Thomas Bromley knight, lord Chaunceler of England deceased, and was honorably buried at Westminster on the second of May. About the same time deceased sir Ralphe Sadler, Chancelor of the Duchie of Lancaster, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell. Also on the 16. of Aprill, deceased the Dutches of Somerset, at Hanworth, and was buried at Westminster. Hoze, Edward earle of Rutland, baron Boes of Hamlake, lord of Trulbut and Beauvoire, knight of the honorable order of the garter, departed this life at London, on the 14. of Aprill, and according to his desire was honorably conueyed from thence to his castle of Beauvoire, and buried in the parish church at Bedford, the 5. of May, where many of his noble ancestors and parents are honorably interred.

The 29. of Aprill, sir Christopher Hatton knight, captain of the gard, vice-chamberlaine, and one of her maiesties priuy counsell, was made lord Chaunceler of England at Croydon, in the archbishop of Canterbury house, where he remained the great scale in the gallery there. And the third of May, being the 1. day of the terme, he rode from the place in Oldborne, to Westminster, there to take his oath,

1587.  
Proclamation for graine.

Queene of Scots beheaded.

Parliament at Westminster.  
A man hanged begged for dead, and liued three dayes after.

Gun powder house blowne vp.  
Lord Chan. Sadler deceased.  
Chancelor of dutchie deceased.  
Dutches of Somerset deceased.  
Earle of Rutland deceased.

Sir Christopher Hatton Lord Chan. celer of England.

oath, before whom went about the number of forty his gentlemen in one lincie blew, and chaines of gold, diuers pensioners, and other gentlemen of the court, upon foot-clothes, the officers and clerks of the Chancery, and then the Lord Chancellor, having on his right hand the Lord Treasurer, and on the left hand the Earle of Leicester, after whose rode certaine of the Nobilitie, the Judges of the realme, many knights, and lastly a great troupe of their retinue.

In this meane time, the most fortunate seruite for England, performed by sir Francis Drake in Calis the 19. of Aprill with his latest exploits in Cape S. Vincent, and Cape-laker, done the 21. of May, written by a gentleman of his companie, was such as followeth.

We hauing discovered (by aduise of 2. Ships of Middleborough that came from Calis, with whom he met in 40. degrees the 16. of Aprill) and by them vnderstanding that there was great prouision in Calis, and thereabout, appointed to come for Lishborne, he with all speed possible did bend his force thither, to cut off their power and prouision: so as the 19. of Aprill, an houre before sun setting, he entered the harbour of Calis, & his fleet: there checked with him at the entering the harbour the towne, 6. galleies: but they in short time retired vnder their fortresses. There fled some 20. French ships to port Royall, & some Spaniards, which could not be hindered of the flight, by reason of the shields. There were sunke by sir Francis, at his coming in with shot, one argosie of 1000. tun, furnished with 30. peccers of brasse, & richly laden. There were to the number of 38. ships undertaken before night, & victors of the Rod: 30. hulks Hollanders confiscated to the king, and their goods sold to the kings vse, 24. of them were fired, the other 6. were at port Royall laden with wines & brack, & to be presently full laden for Lishborne. One carrike of 1400. tuns appertaining to the Marquis of S. Cruse, fired. Five great Biskies fired, 4. of them lading and taking in of victual for the kings prouision for Lishborne, the fifth a ship of 1000. tun, bound for Lishborne, hauing in hir great stoe of pipes, much yron nailes, spikes, yron hoops, and such like, fired. One Shatter laden with wines, of 250. tuns, for the kings prouision, which the English brought to sea, and discharged part of her wines for prouision of the fleet, and then fired her. These three boates of about 400. tuns laden with bisket, wherof they fired one, & kept the other two. Ten barks more laden with wines, raisins, figges, oyle, wheate & such like: they fired, by supposition 38. ships & barks fired, sunke & brought away, amounting in iudgement to 13000. tun of shipping, &c. this was for the first exploit. The second was as followeth, about the 21. of May, they assaulted the castle of Cape-laker, and three other strong holds, all which they tooke, some by force and some by submission. They tooke at several times of shipping, barks, & caruels about 100. laden with hoops, gaily oares, pipe stauces, timber, and other prouisions of the king of Spaines, for the furnishing of his forces intended against England, which they burned, and consumed all the better boats, and nets thereabouts, to their great hindrance. Thence they came before the haven of Lishborne, anckoring neare vnto call Calis, where the Marquess of S. Cruse was with his galleies, and seeing them chase his ships a shoie, to take and carry away his barks and caruels, was content to suffer them there quietly to tarrie, and likewise to depart and neuer charged them with Cannon shot.

The

The 18. of June Robert earle of Leicester, was made Viceroy of household, & R. Duercux earle of Essex, was made M. of her maiesties house. The 25. of June, Robert earle of Leicester tooke shipping at Margate in Kent towards the Low countries, where he remained not long, but returned. This yeare was a late spring and a cold summer so that at midsummer present in the coes at London: where they be most forward, were sold for 8. d. the pecke, yet afterward great plenty, & sold for 3. d. the bushell, or better cheape, no chieftie ripe till S. James tide, or Lammias, & then such plenty, that they were sold for a peny the p. and not above. The month of September becommen cold, white frosts, winds boisterous in y. north sometime hail, snow and fleete, and yet a reasonable good harvest for corne praised be God.

The 7. of September, sir Thomas Hineage was made vicechamberlain. The queenes maiesty hauing diuers waies vnderstood the great and diligent preparation of the king of Spaine, in diuers parts both by land and sea, nor onely of the strongest ships in all places within his dominions, but also of all sorts of prouision and munition necessarie for a mighty fleet, which was to come from Spaine and Portugal, for the furnishing & better direction wherof he had drawne together into the places aforesaid, the most principall and ancient captaynes and souldiers, aswell of the kingdomes of Naples, and Sicilie, as of Lombardy and other parts of Italy, and the more remote parts of India, as by euery one was long before very evidently perceived, by reason that the preparation of these things together with the ships, mariners, and souldiers, the diuers sorts and quantities of victual, the great number and diuers kinds of artillery, with the summe of euery seuerall kind, were sufficiently specified vnto all countries by certaine pamphlets, laying forth at large the whole intent, the which pamphlets were printed and published in Spaine and Portugal, and other prouinces of Christendome, with this title: The most puissant and most happie Fleet of the King of Spaine, against the Realme of England: her Maiesty, I lay, hauing in this manner receiued so open and manifest information herof, as also certaine intelligence of hostemen, and footemen, sent in so great number, that they were sufficient for the furnishing of diuers rampes in the Low countries, vnder the gouernement of the duke of Parma his lieutenant generall for those prouinces, and withall knowing the multitude of the ships of war, and the possibility that the sayd king had, to transport his souldiers out of Flanders, & land them in England, not sparing to giue out thereupon open and free report, that all that prouision was for the inuasion & conquest of England: Her maiesty therefore furnished her selfe by sea with a mighty fleet, & by land with no lesse diligence to resist such great forces as by all nations were reported to come against her: for it was neuer knowne in the memory of man, that so great preparation was euer heretofore at one time made out, either by King Philip himselfe, or yet by the Emperour Charles the last his father, although his power were much more, and his occasions of warre farre greater. The diligence therefore of the Englishmen, auerorable vnto the care of the Prince, was such, and so great, that her Maiesty was provided of a mighty fleet to defend her by sea from the enemy, betwene the first of Nouemb. & in this yeare 1587. and the 20. of December next ensuing, a time very short for such a prouision, most excellently furnished of all things necessary for such a purpose. The charge

T. Fenner,  
Seruite of  
sir Francis  
Drake at  
Calis, and  
Cape S.  
Vincent.

Earle of  
Leicester L.  
Steward of  
household.  
Earle of Leicester  
went into the Low  
countries.  
A very cold  
spring, summer,  
and harvest.

The earle of  
Leicester  
A nau. to  
the seas pre-  
pared and  
furnished.

charge of which name was commended unto the right honorable Charles Lord Howard, baron of Effingham, lord high Admirall of England, who for his place and office, noble courage, experience in martiall affaires, and nobilitie of blood and descent, was thought most fit to be employed in that service: he had in his company a sufficient number of honorable, worshipfull, and valiant personages, desirous to serve their prince and countrey in such a cause as this: likewise of sea-faring men and private souldiers, so competent a number, as might be answerable unto the power of so great a prince in so weightie a cause. The lord high admirall therefore with those forces keeping for a season the narrow seas, & channell between England and Flaunders, Sir Francis Drake knight, was by the advise of the lords of the counsell, & his honor so commanding it, sent towards the west parts with certaine of the Quenees ships and others, from certaine ports of England thereabout, being in all about the number of sixtie saile of all sorts, there to attend the lord high admirall his coming with greater forces if occasion should require. In the meane season the lord admirall, with his viceadmirall the lord Henry Seyner, kept the narrow seas accompanied with 20. ships more, very well furnished at the charges of the citizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side the realme, that lieth from the towne of Dover vp to the north-ward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the wars.

1588.

Now to speake somewhat more particularly of this preparation, made as well by land as by sea, to withstand the inuasion intended, (& after attempted) by the Spanish Armado against this realme. The generall forces of the realme were appointed to be mustered, trained, & put in a readines in the severall shires, for the defence of the land: there was also a leuie made of a severall armies, the one to make the body of a camp to reside at Tilbury in Essex, to encounter with the enemy if he should attempt to land in any place in that countrey, whercof the right honorable lord Robert earle of Leicester, & steward of her Maiesties household, was appointed lieutenant generall, as also of all the armies leuied against foraine inuasion: the other to be employed for the gard of her Highnes person, under the charge and government of the right honorable the V. Winton, Lord Chamberlaine to her Maiesty, and appointed by her Highnes lieutenant of the said armie.

A campe at  
Tilbury in  
Essex.

The campe of Tilbury under the charge and government of the right honorable the earle of Leicester, was consisting both of horsemen and also of footmen, which were raised out of all the shires following.

Horsemen.			Footemen.	
Lances.	Light horse.			
Bedford shire	17.	40.	Bedford	500.
Buckingham	18.	83.	Buckingham	500.
Hartfordshire	25.	60.	Hartford	1000.
Kent	50.	100.	Surrey	1000.
Suffolke	50.	200.	Barkshire	1000.
Essex	50.	100.	Oxford	1000.
Middlesex	35.	83.	London	1000.
Surrey	8.	98.	Suffolke	500.
			Essex	500.
			Kent	500.
			Norfolke	3000.
Summe	253.	769.	Summe	11000.

This

This number of foote men was allotted for the campe at Tilbury, but the number assembled amounted only to 16500.

The army for the gard of her Maiesties person under the charge of the Lord Chamberlaine, consisting both of horse and foote leuied out of these shires following.

Horsemen.			Footemen.	
Lances.	Light horse.			
Glocester	20.	100.	Glocester	2500.
Somerset	50.	100.	Somerset	4000.
Suffex	20.	100.	Suffex	2500.
Wilton	25.	100.	Wilton	2300.
Barkshire	10.	85.	Cambridge	700.
Oxford	23.	103.	Northampton	600.
Cambridge	13.	40.	Leicester	500.
Northampton	20.	80.	Warwicke	500.
Leicester	9.	70.	Huntingdon	400.
Warwicke	17.	76.	Dorset	1000.
Huntingdon	6.	26.	Suffolke	3000.
Dorset	120.	0.	Hartford	500.
Suffolke	70.	230.	Surrey	500.
Norfolke	80.	321.	Barkshire	500.
			Oxford	150.
Summe	481.	1431.	Worcester	400.
			Southampton	2000.
			Deuon	2000.
			London	5000.
			Middlesex	1000.
			Summe	34050.

The Lordes and other of her Maiesties privy counsell, and sundry others of the nobilitie of the realme, being appointed to repaire unto the court, to attend upon her maiesties person, of their free and voluntary disposition, furnished, arrayed, and put in very comely order their troupes both of horsemen and footmen, and presented the same unto her maiesties view at her manoir of Saint James.

The navy set forth and armed to the seas (as ye haue heard) consisted partly of her maiesties ships, partly of the ships of her subsidies, which were furnished out of the port townes wherunto they belonged. Of this navy the chieft and greatest part was under the charge of the lord Charles Howard lord Admirall, the rest of the ships in great number were assigned unto the lord Henry Seimier, admirall of that fleet, to gard the narrow seas and to impeach the issuing forth of the ships and vessels prepared for the duke of Parma at Dunkirk, &c. to iorne in the enterprise of the Spanish Armado.

The states also of the united provinces in the Low countries sent about the number of 40. ships out of Holland and Zeland, well appointed and furnished in war.

The Navy  
to the seas  
against the  
Spanish  
Armado.



marlike manner, which ioyned with the English fleet, under the charge of the late lord Henry Seimer, playing upon the coast of Durkirk and Flanders.

*Ships under the lord Admiralls charge.*

Her maiesties Ships, from Dumborough toward Plimouth  
in the moneth of January last past, under  
sir Francis Drake.

The Reuenge,  
The Hope,  
The Nonperill,  
From Dumborough toward Plimouth the 16. of May under the L. Admirall.  
The Beare,  
The Triumph,  
The Elizabeth Ionas,  
The Victory,  
The Arke,  
The Bonaventure,  
The Lion,  
The Mary Rose,  
The Dread nought,  
The Foresight,  
Tho Swallow,  
The White Lion.

Pinnaces,

The Charles,  
The Moore.

*Other ships of the best sort.*

The Galeon Leicefter,  
The Royall Marchant,  
The Roe Bucke sir W. Rawley,  
The Edward Bonaventure,  
The Golden Noble,  
The Hopewell of London.

By the Londoners of their charge  
ships 16.

The Hercules,  
The Toby,  
The Senturion,  
The Minion,  
The Margaret and Iohn,  
The Assention,  
The May Flower,  
The Primrose,  
The Red Lion,  
The Tygar,

The Swiftsure,  
The Aide.

The Gift of God,  
The Barke Burre,  
The Royall Defence,  
The Golden Lion,  
The Braue,  
The T. Bonaventure.

Pinnaces foure:

The Diana,  
The Passport,  
The Moore-shine,  
The Reliefe.

Of Bristolow.

The Minion,  
The Unicorn,  
The Handmaid,  
A pinnace.

Of Barstable.  
The Galeon Dudley.  
The God saue her,  
The Tyger.

Of Excester.

The Bartholomew,  
The Rose,  
A Pinnace.

Of Plimmouth.

The Minion Elkon,  
The Sparke,  
The Hope,  
The T. Drake,  
The Barke Bond,  
The Barke Bonnar,  
The Barke Talbot,  
The Flie-boate,  
The White Lion, the Lord Admirall,  
A Pinnace,

A pinnace, the lord *Sheffields*.

A pinnace, sir *William Winters*, and sundrie others of the West parts.

*Ships under the lord Henry Seimers charge.*

Her maiesties Ships.

The Rainbow,  
The Vantgard,  
The Antilope,  
The Bull,  
The Tyger,  
The Scowr,  
The Tremontany,  
The Achates.

The Sunne,  
The Merlin,  
The Signet,  
The Spie,  
The Fancie,  
The gally Bona,  
The Brigandine,  
The George a hoy.

Other English Ships there were from the ports of the North parts of the realme, besides Flemish Ships of Holland and Zealand, in number fortye. As also in Ships of war, by the Merchants adventurers of England, at their owne proper costes and charges set out of the citie of London, under the charge of capitaine Henry Bullenham (ouer and aboute the other sixtente Ships, and foure pinnaces, set out at the cities charges) to wit,

The Pansie,  
The Rosclion,  
The Anthony,  
The Salamander,  
The Providence,

The Dolphin,  
The Jewell,  
The Antelop,  
The Toby,  
The George noble.

The lord high Admirall with his forces keeping for a season the narrow seas & channell betwene England and Flanders, sir Fran. Drake knight, mentioned here also in honoz of his decess, was by the aduise of the lords of the councell, & his honoz so commanding it, sent towards the west parts, with certaine of the M. Ships, and others fro the ports of England (as is aforesaid) being about 54. or 56. saile of all sorts, there to attend the L. high Admirall his comming with greater forces, if occasion should so require. In the meane season the L. Admirall with his vice-admirall the Lord Henry Seimer kept the narrow seas, accompanied with twentie Ships more, very well furnished, at the charges of the citizens of London, besides many other from diuers parts on that side of the realme, that lieth from the towne of Douer vp to the northward, which met altogether in good order, and well appointed for the warres.

And here the L. high Admirall vnderstanding for a certaintie, that the fleet of the enemy was already lancht & at the sea, he voyed ankze, and leauing the lord Seimer with sufficient forces of the Quenes Ships, & other vessels to watch what the Duke of Parma would do, & was able to undertake by sea, and parting from thence the 21. of May to the westward with her maiesties navy, and 20. Ships of London, with some others, be arriued at Plimmouth the thre and twentieth of the same moneth, where sir Francis Drake with more than fifty saile which he had vnder his charge, met with the Lord Admirall in very good order. And then the two nauies being ioyned together into one, the Lord Admirall made

*Pinnace  
P. Baldine.*

The Lord  
Admirall  
kept the nar-  
row seas.

for Francis Drake his viceadmirall: he that had seen these together, would haue commended it to haue bene a most royall fleet, about two hundred saile, adding nine voluntaries, of aduanciers, furnished by the gentlemen of Vendebare and fifteene victuallers from London, the least being of one hundred and twentie tun, all very well furnished for the fight, and a number of goodly men that were faine to returne home for lacke of entertainment, for there was choise both of mariners and souldiers.

Arriuing at Plimmouth (as is said) his lordship presently gaue order for provision of victuall for the whole navy, that it might want nothing that should tend to the necessary seruise ensuing.

This provision being complete, he resolved with himselfe to put forth to the sea againe about the 30. of May aforesaid, but the winde not seruing his turne, he kept kept himselfe aboard, sailing by and done within the streete betwene Wissant and Billy, attending some light or report of the enemies fleet: where hauing waited a certaine time, sometimes drawing neare to the coast of France, and sometimes to the coast of England, he returned, being thereto enforced by a great tempest with his whole navy into the port of Plimmouth about the sixt of June, to refresh his company there.

In the meane season there were discouered betwene Wissant and Billy certaine ships of the Spanishe fleet, not about the number of fourteene, which were knowne to be secured from the whole fleet by violence of the aforesaid tempest: but before they could be encountered withall by any of the English naue, the wind came about, wherby they had opportunitie to returne backe againe, saving themselves from all perils in their haven called the Groine, into the which also the rest of the Spanishe fleet was put to provide themselves a new of other things which they wanted, and specially of fresh water. Of this thing the Lord Admirall had intelligence and aduertisement from sundry parts, as also that the Spanishe fleet was by great fortune dispersed and secured into diuerse places, through penury of many and those necessarie things, through diseases and mortalitye of men, although the report hereof could not afterwards be verified, whereof the certaine truth was, that being troubled with tempest, they were commanded to come a Shore at the Groine.

The lord Admirall therefore seeing the coast of England and France cleare and free from all danger, as by diligent search it was understood, resolved by the aduice and opinion of his counsell, to take the advantage of the next winde that should blow from the South, that passing to the coast of Spaine he might find the enemies fleet so dispersed in the Groine, and in other parts of Galicia where they had dyuen by the storme.

This was put in execution betwene the 8. and 10. of the moneth of July, the winde being then at the South, which within a while changing vnto the South, after that he was come within 40. leagues or thereabout, of the coast of Spaine, made him to call a doubt of that which afterwards happened indeed. For laying this before him as his principall care, according to the charge laid vpon him by her maiestie, to be diligent and carefull for the defence of the coast of England, and considering

considering that with the wind which was now changed & very good to make for England, the enemy might set out & passe for England without discouery of his fleet, he returned backe with the whole naue, & the 12. of the same month he arriued at Plimmouth there accordingly to provide himselfe of all that was necessarie.

The 19. of July, his honor had intelligence by a barke or pinnace, whose captaine was Thomas Fleming, amongst other beying in the streete for discouerie, that the Spanishe fleet in number by estimation 158. sailes, was discouered neare vnto the Lizard, the wind being then south & by west. And therefore albeit that by reason of the great number of English ships which were in Plimmouth, it was with that wind very hard to bring them forth from thence: as the militarie art of the sea, and the condition of their affaires required) yet was there such diligence used by the L. admirall and the rest by his example, as they induroured therein with such aduise and earnestnesse, that many of the ships at the length warped out of the haven, as if the wind had bene wholly favourable vnto them: which thing could not haue fallen out, but through the long and certaine skill which the English maisters generally haue in marine discipline. To the which reason this may be added, that they were all of one nation, of one tongue and touched with a grievous and equall hatred toward their enemies, being mightily perswaded of their forces. Wherupon we may in such cases assure our selues of what importance it is in seafaring matters, for a fleet of any prince whatsoever, inuading any soveraine state or kingdome, to encounter with a fleet ready for defence in such manner as the English naue was, for so much as the fleet inuading being provided diuersly of maisters and officers, differing one from another in custome, language & conceit, cannot in any measure giue any assured hope of certaine victorie how honorable soeuer the commander be: many of these ships therefore came forth, by reason that the men were moued in the foresaid respects to labor diligently, & so much the rather by how much the captains & chiefe officers both by counsell and hand, shewed themselves more diligent & industrious. By this means the 20. day of July the L. admirall accompanied with 54. ships, came forth with the same wind & the enemy had from the south west, which thing certainly was not esteemed a small thing to be done, in regard as well of the wind as of the narrownesse of the place it selfe. The Spanishe fleet being manifestly discouered about 140. miles from Eddison, & clearly seen & seuerely one toward the west, & so far off from Joy as the English fleet was, that is, 25. English miles. The next morning being the 21. of July, all the ships which were now come out of the haven, had got the wind of the Spaniards, & approaching somewhat nearer, found the their navy was placed in battell ray, after the manner of a moone crescent, being ready with her horns & her inward circumference to receive either all, or so many of the English navy as should giue her the assault, her horns being extended in widenesse about the distance of 8. miles as was informed. The reason of their arranging in this order, arose vpon the foresight of the D. of Medina Sidonia generall of the Spanishe fleet, who approaching the coast, sent out a small ship to spy somewhat concerning the English fleet, & hearing by certaine fishermen taken prisoners, the our fleet was in Plimmouth he prepared himselfe as aforesaid, for the auoyding of all such chances as might after befall: wherupon about 9. of the clock before noone, the L. Admirall commanded his pinnace called the Disbaine,

The Spanishe fleet discouered.

to giue the defiance vnto the duke of Medina: after which he himselfe in the ship called the *Arce* went foremost, as was conuenient, & began hotly to fight with a great ship which was admirall of the Spanishe fleet, in which ship he thought by reason of certaine likely coniectures, the duke of Medina to be, considering also the ship was so well accompanied by others. The fight with her continued so long and so hot, that diuerse other ships, yea the most part of the Spanishe fleet came to her succour.

In the meane season the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake, with maister John Hawkens, & maister Martin Frobisher, fought with a galeon of Portugal, to whom they thought Don Martin de Ricaldes the vice-admirall to be. This fight was so well maintained for the time it continued, that the enemy was enforced to leaue his place, and to giue way gathering toward the east. In the which point of remooring, a great galeon wherein Don Pedro de Valdes went for captaine, falling foule with another ship of their fleet, was deuioured of her fore-mast, so that she could not follow the body of the fleet that forsooke her, to the great maruell of the Englishmen themselves, whereby Don Pedro became prisoner, as after shall be declared. Furthermore also there was at this time a great ship of Wiscape about 800. tuns in burthen sore battered in fight, by casualtie of their owne powder, was set on fire, part thereof blowne vp and their people slaine, and so left to aduantage with the people that remained, so that being utterly vnabie at night to helpe her selfe, she was recoured by y galliasses, & for y time laund in y body of the fleet.

But to returne to our purpose: This first skirmish continued not about two houres, because the lord Admirall considering that he wanted as yet for his ships, which could not so readily come forth of the haue, thought he should do better serue if he stayed their coming before he proceeded any further, beeing behind vpon the enemy, lest he should bring the rest too much in hazard, and therefore he thought it not profitable too much to embolden and pricke those forward that he had with him, in a matter that was not greatly conuenient, either for the honour of the realme, or his owne person, neither did the militarie discipline of the English nation purchased by long experience at the sea, giue him leaue to do it. And therefore he put forth his flag to call the other captaines to counsell who agreeing vnto his determination, received instructions concerning the order that they were to keepe in following the Spanishe fleet. Then hauing giuen libertie to euery man to returne to their charge, he gave order likewise to his vice-admirall sir Francis Drake to appoint the watch for that night, and to beare out the light.

The same night the Spanishe fleet lay about 14. miles off from the fleet.

The next day following early in the morning it was under the wind not so farre off as heretofore.

In the meane time the English fleet wanting light, because the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake leauing his place to follow five hulkes, which were discovered in the evening very late, it came to passe that all the other ships stayed behind, not knowing that they were to follow, or whither to direct themselves: so that there might haue followed some great inconuenience, had they had to do with an enemy more practised in our seas: but as it seemed by report, y said vice-admirall was moued to do this by means of a certaine curious diligence, and a

militarie

militarie suspicion, growing in his mind vpon certaine and very probable coniectures, grounded on circumstances of matter considered in his mind: and therefore he gaue them the chase, thinking that they had bene enemies. But being overtaken and their officers examined, and being knowne to be friends, or at the leastwise not enemies, he permitted them to go their way, returning himselfe vnto the fleet the day following.

The lord Admirall notwithstanding accompanied with the *Beare*, and the *Marie Rose* comming a little behind his fleet, by reason of the clearnesse of the aire, followed the enemy all y night within a Caluerin shot. By occasion whereof the rest of the fleet was cast so farre behind, that the morning after the nearest part thereof could hardly descrie the tops of the other ships, and many of them were cleane out of sight, so that with all the force of their saile they could hardly come al together the whole day following vntill the evening.

The next day the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake being in the *Queenes* shippe called the *Revenge*, hauing also the *Roe-bucke*, and a pinnace or two in his company, tooke Don Pedro de Valdes, who, as was said before, had lost the fore-mast of his ship: and hauing receiued the said Valdes as his prisoner, and certaine other gentlemen of most account that were therein, he sent the ship together with y prisoners vnto Dartmouth, vnder the conduct of the *Roe-bucke*, & he himselfe made toward the lord Admirall, vnder whose lee he came that night. This ship or galeon of 150. tuns, in which Don Pedro de Valdes Generall of the ships of the army of Andalusia was, had in it three hundred and foure souldiers, one hundred and eightene mariquers, yea ordinance fire and forsie peeces, shot and bullet 2. thousand and three hundred, powder one hundred and fourteene quintals, lead for the muskets two and twenty quintals, match nineteene quintals, and for euery ship in the fleet according to his burthen had the like provision, as is set downe in a booke extant in the Spanishe tongue, which booke I haue seene at the hands of the woodchipfull maister Anthony Radcliffe alderman of London.)

The same day being the 22. of July, a little before the vice-admirall sir Francis Drake was returned vnto the fleet, the Spaniards forsooke the ship which the day before was spoiled by fire: to the which ship the lord Admirall sent the *L. Thomas Howard*, and with him maister John Hawkens, who being in the cock-boat of the *Discoie*, went aboard her, and there found a lamentable sight, for all the uppermost deckes of her being torne and spoiled by the fire, there were in her fifty men miserably bent with the powder. The sunke in her was so great, and the ship it selfe so silitie, that the lord Howard departed presently from her: and returning with maister John Hawkens to the lord Admirall, they informed him of that they found and saw there: for which cause there was presently commaundement giuen, that the little pinnace of captaine Fleming should conduct her vnto some port of England, where they might most commodiously helpe themselves: whereupon it was carried to Weymouth the next day following. For all the mishap that befell this ship they understood that the Spaniards had taken out of her all the best things that they could, raising off the bulke of her, together with certaine grosse stuffe therein, as for that time altogether vnprofitable.

The night last before mentioned there befell a great calme and thereupon foure

Runn 2

Spanishe

A great galeon with Don Pedro

A carack taken and sent to Weymouth.

Spaniſh gallies ſeuered themſelves from y<sup>e</sup> reſt of their fleet. This thing made the Engliſhmen to doubt, that that night they had reſolved to give the onſet upon ſome of their leſſer ſhips. imagining that they might annoy them the rather, for that they were the rearward of the fleet, but afterwards the gallies (whatſoever the occaſion was) entertained nothing, either for that they ſaw they could not ſafely do it, or elſe becauſe their minds were not thoroughly ſet upon that which before they thought to do.

The morning following being the 22. of July, the wind was at northweſt, whereupon the Spaniards came backe upon the Engliſhmen with the advantage of the wind, directing their courſe toward the land: the which courſe was not preſtable for the Engliſhmen. Therefore to take the advantage of the enemy, they call about towards the weſt with a reaſonable compaſſe, their ſhips being very good both of ſaile and ſtirrage, that they might bring about their purpoſe. Now y<sup>e</sup> Spaniards to hinder their intent after they perceived it, offered to come neere aboard to fight with them truſſing in the huge greatneſſe and height of their ſhips: the which offer of theirs the Engliſhmen ſkidd not, but began preſently to bring themſelves in battell aray, which the enemy perceiving, he alſo did the like. In this caſe the Arke, the Lion, the Beare, the Elizabeth Jonas, the Chitroie, and certaine other ſhips were content to follow the ſhip called the Pompangia.

In the mean ſeaſon the Triumph with other five ſhips of London, namely, the Mercant Royall, the Centurion, the Margerie Joan, the Mary Roſe, and the golden Lion were ſo far to the rearward, and ſo far ſeuered from the reſt of the fleet, that the gallies undertooke to give them an hard aſſault: but they were well entertained by the ſhips for the ſpace of an houre and an halfe, untill at the length ſome of the Queenes ſhips coming to ſuccour the Triumph and the Londoners, dealt ſo well in the matter, that the gallies were obliged to retire. The wind came about at this preſent to the ſouthweſt, and afterwards to the ſouthweſt and by ſouth, at which time a certaine number of ſquadron of the Queenes, together with other Merchants ſhips gave aſſault unto the Spaniſh fleet, and that ſo furiously to the weſtward of them, that the Spaniards were all enforced to give them way: for which cauſe the lord admirall conſidering both the diſcommoditie and danger whereinto the Triumph and the other 5. ſhips were come, he called other of the Queenes ſhips that were not far off, and gave them ſtraight commandment to follow him, and to charge the enemies which were to the weſtward with all their force, giving further order to them all, not to diſcharge any one peece of ordinance before they ſhould come within a muſket ſhot of the enemy, in as much as that was the onely way to ſuccour the ſhips of their friends with the great damage of the enemy. This was well performed by the Arke, the Elizabeth Jonas, the Galcon Lieutell, the golden Lion, the Chitroie, the Mary Roſe, the Bead nought, and the Swallow: which thing the duke of Medina perceiving, he alſo came ſooth with ſixtene of his beſt galcons, to hinder and inſperch the Engliſh men in the defence of the Triumph, ſeeming in this caſe to pretend that the reaſon of y<sup>e</sup> fight did ſo require, whereas the regard of his honor did moſt enforce him unto it becauſe it ſeemed inconvenient y<sup>e</sup> he ſhould in every thing be inferior to y<sup>e</sup> Engliſhmen, therefore he made large promiſes unto thoſe by whole meanes y<sup>e</sup> Chitroie

Chitroie could be gotten: ſo that the Spaniards in the end were enforced to give place and to retire unto their aray of battell. In this conflict our William Cox capitaine of a little pinnace called the Chitroie, belonging to ſir William Wimer, behaved himſelfe very valiantly againſt the enemy in the greateſt brate of this encounter: but within a little while after he loſt his delight, whereunto he was not very well acquainted, and his life, by a great peece of ordinance.

Now the evening ſcore of five Spaniſh ſhips came out from the reſt of the fleet from the ſouthweſtward, againſt whom certaine of the Engliſh ſhips came, and namely the Mary Roſe of London, which diſcharged certaine peeces upon the enemy with a very honorable declaration of the marine diſcipline, & being accompanied by other ſhips that were there found, they all behaved themſelves no leſſe diligently, which thing was not at y<sup>e</sup> firſt hoped for. ſhewing their deſire tempered with a touch of other company. The conflict continued from the morning unto the evening, the Lord Admirall being at all times ready and vigilant in all adventures that might fall out: and thereupon he was ſometimes moze, and ſometimes leſſe eager in the conflict, as neceſſitie required, giving thereby evident example how others ſhould behave themſelves. It might well be ſaid, that for the time, it was not poſſible to ſee before this battell in this ſea, ſo hard a conflict, nor ſo terrible a ſpoile of ſhips, by reaſon of the pellets that flew ſo thicke every way: to conclude there was never ſcene ſo vehement a fight, either ſide endmoying through an head ſtrong and deadly hatred the others ſpoile and deſtruction. For albeit the muſquetiers and harquebuziers were in either fleet many in number, yet could they not be diſcerned or heard, by reaſon of the moze violent and roaring ſhot of the greater ordinance, that followed ſo thicke one upon an other, & played ſo well that day on either ſide, that they were thought to be equall in number to common harquebuziers in an hot ſcramiſh. The battell was not onely long, but alſo neare at hand, within halfe a muſket ſhot, and that to the great advantage of the Engliſh men, who with their ſhips, being excellent of ſaile and ſtirrage, yet leſſe a great deal than the Spaniſh ſhips, and therefore moze light and nimble, fought not at all, (according unto their manner otherwiſe) to boord them, but keeping themſelves aloofe at a reaſonable diſtance, continually beat upon the hull and tacklings of their enemies ſhips, which being a great deal higher, could not ſo conveniently beate the Engliſh ſhippes with their ordinance.

This long conflict being finiſhed, and every one retiring unto his part, the next day following which was the 24. of July, was paſſed without any thing done, becauſe, by reaſon of the fight the day before, there was ſpent a great quantity of powder and ſhot: whereupon the lord Admirall ſent diuerſe barkes and pinnaces to the ſhoze for a new ſupplic of ſuch munition. For her Maieſtie providently foreſeeing each thing neceſſarie for her men, ordained that there ſhould be ſufficient proviſion made, according as ſhould be needfull, as well of victuals as of munition. It ſeemed moze courteous that day, that the Spaniſh fleet was nothing grieved with that dayes reſpite, but were all of them in diſcontent and glad of that breathing, in as much as thereby they had good opportunity to looke to their leaks, whereof, no doubt, they had a great number, for they had caried away

many Spanish stripes from their enemies, their hurts being of great likelihood so much the more, in that the Spaniards were pent up in a narrow roome.

The English fleet divided into four squadrons.

This day the lord Admirall for certaine convenient reasons divided the whole body of the fleet into four squadrons, by means of which division the enemy might be greatly, and more continually troubled. The first squadron he kept for himselfe: the second he assigned unto Sir Francis Drake his viceadmirall: the third to maister John Hawkins: the fourth to maister Martin Frobisher, and after noone he gave order, that in the night five of the merchants ships in each squadron should charge the Spanish fleet, in as many parts at once & the same time, & at midnight the enemy might be kept occupied. This order taken as it was very likely might have had as good effect as it was wisely given: but by reason of a great calme which fell out, no part of this aduise ment could be accomplished, fortune interrupting good counsell.

The next day being the five and twentieth day of July or Saint James day, there was a great Spanish galcon left behind her company to the southward neare to the squadron of maister John Hawkins, so that the barkes belonging vnto the great ships, were within musket shot of her: by reason hereof three of the galliasses and another ship that was in manner of a galcon, and well appointed, came from the Spanish fleet to succour this galcon. Against whom went out the lord Admirall in the Arke, and the lord Thomas Howard in the golden Lion, and drew to neare being towed by their boates, that they did them much harme, where-by one of them requirring the helpe of the rest, being succoured by them, returned vnto the fleet. And from another, by means of a shot coming from the Arke, there was taken away her light and thronone into the sea: the third lost her becke, whereby these two ships, the Arke, and the golden Lion declared this day to each fleet, that they had most diligent and faithfull gunners, desirous as well of the common good, as of the private honour of their leaders the lord Admirall, and the lord Thomas Howard which went in them: which commendation might rightly be imparted with them concerning this happy event, because the calme was so great, that albeit the two fleets were well able to behold the fortune of each of their friends, yet notwithstanding they could not helpe them at all: at the length the wind beginning somewhat to rise, the Spaniards tooke the opportunity thereof, and put themselves forward to helpe those of their side, and succoured them honorably. After this time the galliasses, in whose puillance the greatest hope of the Spanish fleet was founded, were neuer scene to fight any more, such was their entertainment that day.

The two fleets notwithstanding approaching nigh one vnto another began a conflict, but they continued it but a while, except one ship called the *Non-pariglia*, and another called the *Mary Rose*, which hauing taken in their topkales slaid themselves there, to make as if there a certaine experience of their manhood vpon the Spanish fleet, behauing themselves honorably for a season. In which time the triumphing to the northward of the Spanish fleet, was so farre off, that doubting that certaine of the Spanish ships would assault her to the westward, they succoured her with diuers boates that got the wind easily: for the Beate and Elizabeth Jonas, euen at one instant hauing knowledge of the danger wherewith

the

the other were, drew neare vnto them, desiring both in regard of the honor of their common wealth, and also for the preservation of their friends and countrymen, to be partakers of the like danger and difficulty.

Wherupon each ship doing her duty, they ioynely sauced the triumph from all harme, and recovered the wind. And thus this dayes worke ended: wherof I may say that the conflict was no whit shorter then the day it selfe.

At this present the Englishmen considering the great waste of powder and shot that had heretofore bene made, the lord Admirall determined not to assault the enemy any more, vntill he were come nigh vnto Douer, in which place he should find the fleet vnder the charge of the *V. Scimor*, & Sir William Winter, who were ready to ioine with him, that thereby he might both fortifie himselfe with a great number of ships, and in this manner provide themselves of munition from that part of the realme. Vpon Friday therefore being the 26. of the moneth of July, ceasing from fighting, the lord Admirall (as well for their good deserts and honorable seruice, as also to encourage others to like bold) was desirous to aduance certaine personages to the degree of knighthood, for that behauing themselves manfully, as well with their ships as their good aduise, they were worthy that degree of honour: and so much the more worthy, in that being farre separated from all courtly fauour, which many times imparteth the chiefest honours vnto the least deserving men, they declared their valour in the eyes of either fleet.

Therefore the two lords, viz. the lord Howard, and the lord Sheffield, Roger Townesend, John Hawkins, and Martin Frobisher, were called forth, and the order of knighthood given them by the lord Admirall, & their generall.

Knights made for seruice.

This day there came to the seruice of her maiesty in her fleet diuers gentlemen, honourable both by blood and place, but much more in respect of their courage and vertue, for that in these publike affaires, and so necessary seruice of the warres, they willingly offered their seruice in the defence of their country, and honour of her Maiesty.

This day also, and the next, being the leuen and twentieth, the Spaniards followed their course quietly before the English fleet. In which time the earle of Sussex the lord Buckhurst, Sir George Care knight, & the capitaines of the forts and castles thereabout, sent their men with powder, shot, and victuals, to the lord Admirall to assist and helpe the army. The same 27. day towards the evening, the Spaniards drew nigh to Calcis vnder the coast of Picardy, and there suddenly cast anker almost right against the left hand of the hauen to the westward, a little lesse then five miles from Calcis Clennes: the English fleet also cast anker with in a culuerin shot of the enemy to the westward.

The Spanish fleet lieth, and is chased by the English.

In the meane season the lord Scimor, and Sir William Winter ioyned with the Admirall, whereby the English fleet increased to the number of 140. ships of all sorts: but the Spaniards with all speed sent things vnto the duke of Parma of their arrivall, who at this present was at Bruges, who hauing retained with him at his sealing in many dayes before to this purpose, yet proceeded no further in the matter for that time, although for such time as the king had limited him, he for his part tooke as much care as might be looked for at his hands: for hauing

already imbarcked a certaine number of souldiers, he was carefull in like manner to dispatch the rest as soone as they should be ready, that they might take opportunity to come forth, furnishing them abundantly with victuall and munition. But in the meane time such a chance fell out as made frustrate, not only his, but the conceipt also of the duke of Medina and wholly ouerthrew their enterprise, for the lord Admirall hauing by certaine notice vnderstood, that the duke of Parma had prepared a great number of tuns of water, and 10000. chosen footmen to be imbarcked for the toyning with the fleet, which could not be auoided, if the duke of Medina were not compelled to auoid that place, knowing also the euident perill that was to be feared, if the Spanish fleet should be suffered to refresh it selfe, and to be furnished with so many souldiers, he applied his wits so in the deliberation of these matters of weight and importance, hauing the consent of others more practised, that no time might be lost for the furtherance of this seruice, and so much as the forces of the enemy were not yet united and ioyned together, therefore the 28. of this moneth at midnight, he provided 8. small ships dressed with artificiall fire, to the intent to burne the saue upon the Spanish fleet. This thing was diligently & effectually brought to passe vnder the charge of capitaine Yong & capitaine Powle, two valiant and courageous men: by reason hereof the enemy was not only enforced to breake his sleepe, but the fire coming so suddenly vpon him, to cut his cables, to let slip his anchors and to heape vp sailes as the onely way to saue his fleet from so imminent and unexpected a mischance. Furthermore, by means of this tumult & confusion, the chiefe gallie fell forie with another ship, vpon the cable of whose anker her sterne was set so fast, that they could not loose her all the night long, so that the next day following she was enforced with her oares to make toward the land, & to draw nigh to the hauius mouth of Calris, to saue her selfe in that place: but not knowing that warre, and hauing no profitable and convenient counsel for the time, she fell vpon a Shelfe. This thing being in good time espied by the Lord Admirall, he sent thither his greatest boate vnder the charge of Amiens Preston his lieutenant, and together with him Thomas Gerard, sonne and heire to sir Gilbert Gerard master of the Bowles, & master Harry two of her maiesties gentlemen & seruants, and others of the court and of his owne seruants, who fought with her, but vnequally, for that the ship being grauelled could with her force preuaile but little. In this conflict it chanced by a mischance that Hugo de Moncada chiefe captaine of the gallie, a noble & valiant man, in the head of the which mischance layned with the difficulty of liuing themselves in their defence, bred such a desperate & very man, that the greater sort leapt into the water to saue themselves by swimming into the sea, although many of the perished in the water. By this disorder of the enemy, the Englishmen being more secure, tooke her, and sacked her to their great commodity, about 100. men being entred into her, and their company increasing more and more, vnder vpon monsieur Gordon gouernor of Calris, a man of good estimation in respect of his prerogative in that place, sent his nephew to give the Englishmen to vnderstand, that they should content themselves with the ordnance spoyle, & that they should leaue behind them the great ordnance, as a thing belonging vnto him by vertue of his office: the which message being sent the second time vnto men more intencue vnto their pray, then other mens reason, made the gentle-

gentleman to be cully entertained by our men, in such sort, that they would haue forcibly taken from him some things about him, thinking him to be a Spaniard: whereat M<sup>r</sup>. Gordon being offended, caused certaine peeces of ordnance to be discharged from the towne, and then the Englishmen departed, leauing the gallie at his pleasure, after the losse of some souldiers, hauing notwithstanding sacked 22000. duckets of gold, appertaining vnto the king, and 14. coffers of mouables of the duke of Medina, with some other money and mouables of other particular men, and some prisoners, among whom was Don Rodrigo of Mendoza, and Don Iohn Gonzales de Soliz, also vnder-captaine of the gallie.

During the time of surprizing of which gallie, sir Francis Drake vice-admirall being in the ship called the Revenge, accompanied with Thomas Fennor captaine of the Bonpariglia, with the rest of that Squadron, set vpon the Spanish fleet, giuing them an hote charge. Within a while after, sir John Hawkins in the Victory, accompanied with Edward Fenton captaine of the Mary Rose, with George Beeton captaine of the Dread nought, and Richard Hawkins in the Swallow, with the rest of that Squadron, put themselves forward and brake through the middell of the Spanish fleet, where there began a vehement conflict continuing all the morning, wherein euery captaine did very honorable seruice: among the rest captaine Beeton deserved speciall praise. Unto this fight came the Lord Admirall, accompanied with the earle of Cumberland, the lord Thomas Howard, the lord Sheffield, and in that place where the fight was made, and the victory was gotten, they were publickly commended. Not farre from this place there was a great Spanish galeon scene, which was set vpon on the one side by the earle of Cumberland, and George Nimmo in the Bonauenture, and on the other side by sir Iohn Scimor, in the ship called the Rainbow, and sir William Winter in the Clantgard, yet she saued her selfe valiantly, gathering into the body of the fleet, although with ill successe, for she was so beaten and so terribly rent and toyne with our great ordnance, the night following, in sight of her owne fleet she sunke, her men (as it was thought) being saued. After this, captaine Fenton in the Mary Rose and a Spanish galeon met together, being east and west one of another yet no nigher then that their shot might play safely, and fir betweene them without any great hurt. Captaine Fenton notwithstanding, and those that were with him, were worthily commended for their seruice begun and accomplished with such prosperous boldnesse. The same day the deeds of sir Robert Southwell were scene and worthily commended. Also was praised Robert Crosse captaine, who in the ship called the Hope, gaue a signe of valour to be in him.

It fell out also the same day, that the Lord Henry Scimor, & sir William Winter did so thoroughly beate two Spanish galeons, although they were of the chiefeest of them, and best provided, that they were enforced to withdraw themselves to the coast of Flanders, where as much as they were in a very cull taking, as well in respect of the mar, her of their men, as the manifold leakes of their ships, they were surprised, and without fight rided by the Zealanders, and with all the men in them caried as prisoners vnto Flushing. Among these chiefeest was Don Diego Pimentelle, a man very famous among this countrey people. It seemeth hereby, that in these conflicts many of the Spanish ships perished. After this battell

battell which was made the 29. of the moneth of July, the Lord Admirall the 30. day ordained, that the lord Seimor and sir William Winter should returne with their fleet vnto their appointed office in the chancell, which was to keepe the coast from the danger that the Duke of Parma seemed to threaten. The which Duke had already lost the oportunitie of being able to do any thing for the accomplishing of the common intention of the Spaniards: because the sodaine and vnlooked for departure of the Duke of Medina with the whole fleet from the coast of Wales caused the whole care of the aforesaid Duke that he tooke vpon the maine land, to become void, so that he did not imbarke the rest of his men to ioyne with the Duke of Medina.

The Lord Admirall therefore determined to followe the Spanish fleet onely, so long vntill they might be shot vp to the northward, whither the Spanish fleet directed her course, but to what end, it was not knowne. And that he with the same would might come to the Frith, which is vpon the coast of Scotland, if so be he sawe the enemy passe those parts. Vpon which he thought moreover, that it was good to stay his fleet from attempting ought vpon the Spaniards, vntill he should haue good intelligence of their purpose, thereby to worke a meane vnto the discomfit and ouerthrow of them. But the Spaniards kept their course about the Islands of Shetland, declaring thereby, that they minded to returne that way into Spaine along by the north coast of Scotland, which as skillfull men considered would be to their euident danger, as it fell out afterward: perceiving therefore the purpose of the enemy when he was shot vp 55. degrees & 13. minutes to the north ward, and 20. leagues off from Newcastle, the Lord Admirall resolved with himselfe to let the Spanish fleet keepe on her way. The Spanish fleet therefore as for her owne welfare it was requisite, hauing gone on so far before, the lord Admirall resolved to put into the Frith in Scotland, as well to refresh himselfe with new victuals, as also to dispatch certaine other matters which he thought necessary. But the wind bring much westward & against him, the day following he changed his course, and turned into England with the whole fleet the 7. of August, although by reason of a tempest part of the ships put into Douer, part to Harwich, the rest into Portsmouth. And thus much of the seruice by sea, wherein God hath giuen to the English a wonderfull victorie.

The Spanish fleet passing as aforesaid into those seas which for y<sup>e</sup> most part are quiet & calme enough, whether it were diuine or and fro in their contrarie winds, or by some other fatal accident that fell out it continued therein tossed vp and downe vntill the end of September, with fearefull successe & deadly shipwracke along the whole coast of Ireland: so that the Duke of Medina Sidonia was enforced to leaue there behind him about the number of 17. good ships, besides 15. that were thought to be lost in the moneths of July and August, & so to returne into Spaine. The persons lost in Ireland were esteemed to be about 5500. so that all being accounted together, it is certainly auaunched that all the ships that were lost amount to the number of 32. & the men accounted one with an other, arise to the number of 13500. or more. The prisoners also of all sorts in England, Ireland, and the low Countries, arise to the number of 2000. and more. As for the losse of the ordnance, & the common or private treasure, or whether the

Spaniards  
ouerthrowen  
in Ireland.

the Duke after he was preserved from the former fearefull & mostall dangers, lost any more ships, or no, or last of all, how many he brought home with him againe into Spaine, I know not, and therefore leaue any further to write of that matter.

Now as you haue heard before, the campe in the meane tyme, being kept at Tilbury in Essex, vnder the charge of the earle of Leicester &c. the 9. of August, her maiestie repaired thither where all the whole campe being set in order of battell, both horse and footmen, she passed through euery rank of them, to their great comfort and reioicing, and was lodged that night and the night next following, in the house of maister Edward Rich, a Justice of that shire in the parish of Hounston. On the next morrow being the tenth of August her maiestie returning to the campe, beheld the same, they being all trained in the best order that might be, and on the eleventh of August returned to Saint James, and shortly after the campe was dissolved.

And on the 20. of August, M. Nowell deane of Pauls at Pauls crosse, in presence of the lord Maior and Aldermen in scarlet, the companies in their best linceries preached a sermon, mouing them to giue laud & praise vnto Almighty God, for the great victorie by him giuen to our English nation, by the ouerthrow of the Spanish fleet and our enemies.

The 26. of August at the Sessions hal without Petersgate of London were condemned fire persons, for being made priests beyond the seas and remaining in this realm contrary to a statute thereof made: foure temporall men for being reconciled to the Romane church: and foure other for relecting and abetting the others. And on the 28. W. Deane and H. Webber were hanged at the Whites end, W. Gunter at the Theatre, R. Mooton and Hugh Moore at Newgate. Some soldiers, T. Adon at Clarkentwell, T. Felton and James Clarkin betweene Saint Dunstons & Hounston. And on the 30. of August, R. Flower, Ed. Shelley, R. Leigh, R. Martine, I. Roch and Margaret Ward, gentlewoman (which Margaret had conuicted a royd to a priest in Biddewell, whereby he let himselfe downe and escaped, were hanged at Tibborne.

The 4. of September, deceased Robert Dudley earle of Leicester, lord steward of her Maiesties household, lieutenant generall and marshall of all England, at Courtbury in Oxford shire, from whence he was conuicted to his castle of Kenilworth, & from thence to Warwick. where he was honorably entered. In which towne of Warwick, he had in his life tyme, of an olde guildie giuen him by the towne men for that purpose, founded an hospitall for 12. poore men, indowning the same with lands to the yearely value of 200. l. and better, and 52. loads of wood ready cut and made out of Kenilworth wood, &c.

The eight of September, the preacher at Pauls crosse moued the people to giue God thanks for the ouerthrow of our enemies the Spaniards, and there were shewed cleuent ensignes or banners taken in the Spanish ships by our men, these ensignes were set vpon the lower battlements of Pauls Church, before the preacher and the audience, (which was great) all sauing one streamer, wherein was an image of our Lady, with her sonne in her armes, &c. and this was held in a mans hand ouer the pulpit. And the same banners were on the next morrow hanged on London bridge towards Southwarke, where

Her maiestie  
went to the  
camp at Til-  
bury in Essex.

Camp at Til-  
bury dissolved.

Sermon of  
thanksgiving  
at Pauls.

6. Semina-  
ries and 18.

Robert earle  
of Leicester  
deceased.

Ensignes ta-  
ken from the  
Spaniards, &  
shewed at  
Pauls  
crosse.



where then was kept our Lady faire, for all beholders to their great reioycing. The 21. of September, a seminarie priest named Flowe, was hanged, headed, and quartered at Kingstone.

*Seminarie priests executed.*  
The first of October, I. Weldon, and W. Hartley, made priests at Paris and remaining here contrary to a statute, were hanged the one at the Pillis crade the other nigh the Theatre, & Robert Sutton for being reconciled to the sea of Rome, was hanged at Clarksnewell.

*An. reg. 1.1.*  
The 17. of November being Sunday, D. Cooper bishop of Winchester preached at Pauls crosse at the which sermon her maiesty appointed to haue bene present, for whose receiving great piousness was made, but her highnes comming thither was put off till the Sunday next following. The 10. of this moneth being Tuesday, was this yeare kept holy day throughout the Realme, with sermons, singing of Psalmes, bone-fires, &c. for joy, and a thanks giving vnto God, for the overthrow of the Spaniards our enemies on the sea, and the citizens of London assembled in their lueries, had that day a sermo at Pauls crosse tending to y end.

*Her maiesty came to Pauls, and there heard the sermon.*  
The 24. of December being Sunday, her Maiesty hauing attendant vpon her the priuie counsell and nobilitie, and other honorable persons as well spiritual as temporall in great number, the French Ambassadors, the Judges of the realme, the heralds, trumpeters, & all on horse-backe, did come in a chariot-the one made with foure pillars, behind to haue a canapie, on the top whereof was made a crowne imperiall, and two lower pillars before, whereon stood a lion and a dragon, supporters of the arms of England, borne by two white horses fro Semmerket house to the Cathedral church of Saint Paule. her Courtiers and Pensioners about her: next after rode the earle of Essex maister of her horse, leading her Maiesties horse of state richly furnished: after him a great number of Ladies of honor, on each side of them the garde on foote in their rich coates and halberds in their hands. At what time before she came at the Temple bar, Edward Schiers Coruinus an officer of her priuie chamber, gaue her maiestie a scutell containing a Crapon, or Toade stone set in golde, which she graciously accepting, said, it was the first gift she had receiued that day. The same day also her highnes receiued a booke entituled, the Light of Britaine, by the gift of Henrie Linc of Littlecote gentleman the author thereof.ouer the gate of the Temple bar were placed the waites of the citie. And at the same barre the Lord Maior and his brethren the Aldermen in scarlet, receiued and welcommed her Maiesty to her cite and chamber, deliuering to her hands the scepter, which after certaine speeches had, her highnesse reduced to the Maior, and he againe taking his horse, bare the same before her. The companies of the citie in their lueries stood in their raires of timber, covered with blew cloth, all of them saluting her highnesse as she proceeded along to Pauls church, where at the great west doore, she dismounting from her chariot-throne betwixte the houses of twelue and one, was receiued by the Bishop of London, the Drane of Pauls, and other of the Cleargie, to the number of more than fiftie, all in rich coapes, where her highnesse on her knees made her hartie prayers vnto God: which prayers being finished, she was vnder a rich canapie brought through the long west Ile, to her Trauers in the quire, the cleargie singing the Letanie: which being ended, she was brought to a closet, of

purpose

purpose made out of the north wall of the church, towards the pulpit Crosse, where she heard a Sermon made by doctor Pierce bishop of Salisbury, and then returned through the church to the bishops palace, where she dined, and returned in like order as afore, but with great light of torches, to Sommerlet house.

Seminarie priests, in the moneth of December, recanted at Pauls crosse, to wit, William Teder and Anthony Thiel.

The 10. of January at night, a great wind in the northeast, butled many houses, overturned trees, and other wise did great harmes both by land and seas

The 20. of January, the queenes maiesty came from Richmond to Chelsey, & so to Westminster, and was receiued by the maior, aldermen, and commoners of her city of London, in coates of velvet and chaines of gold, all on horsebacke, with the captaines of the city to the number of forty, betwixt fixe and fixe of the clocke by torch-light.

The fourth of February began the parliament at Westminster. In this moneth of February, diuers sculdiers for abusing their captaines for the Low countries were punished at London, and else where in other places, some were set on the pillory with their carres nailed, some their tongues pierced with an aule, some hanged on trees, &c. without the city for crumple to other.

About this time Francis Ket maister of Art of Colindaleham in Norfolk, was conuicted before Edmond bishop of Norwich for holding diuers detestable opinions against Christ our Saviour, and was burnt nere to the city of Norwich.

The 29. of March being Easter eue, the parliament brake vp at Westminster, in the which parliament was granted to her maiesty 2. subsidies of 23. s. d. the 1. and four subsidies, and a tenth.

The 14. of Aprill, Philip Howard earle of Arundell was arraigned at Westminster of high treason, and was found guilty by his peeres, and had iudgement accordingly.

The relation of the whole fleet vnder the charge of sir Iohn Norris and sir Francis Drake, in the moneth of Aprill, for the enterprise of Spaine and Portugale, diuided into five squadrons, as followeth.

The first squadron,	The Greyhound of Plimmouth.
The Reuenge of her maiesty.	The Adauce of her maiesty.
The Tygre of London.	Dutch ships.
The barke Reynolds.	The red Lion of Elmore.
The Prudence of Portsmouth.	The blacke Eggle of Hamborough.
The Vineyard of London.	The Abraham of Olbroke.
The Gift of God of Harwich.	The Tobias of Wolspe.
The Daniell of Yarmouth.	The three Kings of Amsterdam.
The Centurion of London.	The Crab of Memlicke.
The Thomas of Plimmouth.	The Cat of Memlicke.
The Swilt of Dover.	The Bonuocce of Hern.
The Primrose of Portsmouth.	The Swart Horne of Fieand.
The Emanuell of Dartmouth.	The Ilager of.
The Mary flower of Bricklesley.	The Ilager of Hussen.
The Diana of Hampton.	The Robert of Memlicke.

*Seminarie priests recanted.*  
1589.  
Tempest of wind.

*Parliament at Westminster.*

*Francis Ket burnt at Norwich.*

*Parliament dissolved.*

*Earle of Arundell arraigned.*

The

The Fortune of.  
 The Greyhound of Bassé.  
     The second Squadrons.  
 The Nonparelle of her maiestie.  
 The Samaritan of London.  
 The Roger & Katherine of Newcastle.  
 The James of Ipswich.  
 The William of Ipswich.  
 The May-flower of Yarmouth.  
 The Golden Noble of London.  
 The Fortune of Plimmouth.  
 The Mary Iarmans of Linne.  
 The Godspeed of Hampton.  
 The Gift of Hampton.  
 The William of Linne.  
 The Golden Hind.  
 The Phenix of Dartmouth.  
 The red Lion of Ipswich.  
 The Gregory of London.  
     Dutch ships.  
 The yong Froe of Hamborough.  
 The Sea rider of Hamborough.  
 The Ilager of Hussen.  
 The Grondzell of Grotebroke.  
 The red Lion of Campned.  
 The Fortune of Waterland.  
 The Nightingale of Alcumer.  
 The grey Horle of Copeman hauen.  
 The Yegre of Fleland.  
 The Buronight of Bergho.  
 The Mermaien of Amsterdam.  
 The Yegar of Horne.  
 The Angell of Amsterdam.  
 The Fortune of Bassé.  
     The third Squadron.  
 The Dread nought of her maiestie.  
 The Edward Bonadventure.  
 The Toby of Harwich.  
 The Tyger of Plimmouth.  
 The Pellicane of Alborough.  
 The William of Wels.  
 The Crescent of Dartmouth.  
 The Salomon of London.  
 The Susan of Blackney.  
 The Bartilmew of Exmouth.

The William and Iohn Linne.  
 The Antilope of Plimmouth.  
 The Nightingale of Portsmouth.  
 The white Lion.  
 The Reliefe of Portsmouth.  
 The Mary Katherine, a hoy.  
     Dutch ships.  
 The Murion of Hamborough.  
 The white Falcon of Hamborough.  
 The Bassé of Horne.  
 The blacke Rauen of Memlicke.  
 The Ilager of Fleland.  
 The Vnicorne of  
 The Browne fish of Horne.  
 The Fortune of Palmerin.  
 The red Hart of Waring.  
 The Hope of Seclueling.  
 The Mole of Horne.  
 The white Fish of Grotebroke.  
     The fourth Squadron.  
 The Swiftsure of her maiestie.  
 The Toby of London.  
 The Hopewell of Orford.  
 The Gift of Dartmouth.  
 The Greyhound of Alborough.  
 The Charity of Newcastle.  
 The Minion of Foy.  
 The Free gift of Linne.  
 The Valentine of Blackney.  
 The Barke Slegar.  
 The Antilope of Linne.  
 The Iohn of Grelany.  
 The George Bonauen, of Blakney.  
 The Handmaid of Bristow.  
 The Handmaid of Chichester.  
 The Emanuel of Harwich.  
     Dutch ships.  
 The Fortune of Hamborough.  
 The blacke Rauen of Waterland.  
 The Olephant of Menlicke.  
 The Iarman of Encusen.  
 The red Lion of Edam.  
 The Pellicane of Hem.  
 The blacke Rauen of Edam.  
 The Angell Gabriell of Horne.

The

The Saint Peter of Encusen.  
 The William of Encusen.  
 The Crab of Horne.  
 The Yagre of Horne.  
 The red Lion of Amsterdam.  
     The fift Squadron.  
 The foresight of her maiestie.  
 The Marchant Royall.  
 The Elizabeth of Yarmouth.  
 The Minion of Plimmouth.  
 The May-flower of Linne.  
 The Stephen of Dartmouth.  
 The barke Bonner of Plimmouth.  
 The Robin of Douer.  
 The Vnicorne of Bristow.  
 The Francis of Ric.  
 The barke Hawkins of Plimmouth.  
 The William of Plimmouth.

The Barke Parnell of Brikelsey.  
 The Hart Anne of Charton.  
 The Iohn of Newhauen.  
 The William of Ipswich, a hoy.  
     Dutch ships.  
 The Hope of Hamborough.  
 The Bonner of Grotebroke.  
 The Chistmaker of Skauant.  
 The Foxe of Elcomoke.  
 The flying Hart of Horne.  
 The red Lion of Oldbroke.  
 The Rose of Haster.  
 The Fortune of Menlicke.  
 The Popenger of Dongerdan.  
 The Minion of Warring.  
 The Iudith of Campin.  
 The swart Rutter of Amsterdam.  
 The Mill knape of.

## Principall officers of the Flaue.

The two Generals: sir Iohn Norris, sir Francis Drake.  
 The Admirall capitaine Thomas Fenner.  
 Colonels of the five Squadrons, sir Francis Drake, sir Iohn Norris, capitaine Thomas Fenner, sir Roger Williams, sir Edward Norris.  
 The Rearadmirall capitaine William Fenner.  
 The Lieutenants colonels of the Squadrons, capitaine Thomas Drake, capitaine Sackfield, capitaine Garcon, capitaine Gorn, capitaine Winter.  
 The Secretarie of the Flaue.  
 The Surucior generall of the victuals, Marmaduke Dorrell.  
 The Vice-treasurer of the nauy, maister Scallenge & Surucior capitaine Flicke.  
 The Capitaine generall of the watch, capitaine Bowyer, Lieutenant of the ordnance, capitaine Lancaster, the Prouoll maister, capitaine Cripe, Hulster maister, capitaine Delibars, the maister of the discoueries, capitaine Foxcroft, Transporter capitaine Musgrave.  
 The Corporals of the Squadrons, capitaine Yoong of the Reuenge, capitaine Seger of the Ponperilla, capitaine Baker of the Dreadnought, capitaine Wilde of the Swiftsure, capitaine Cripe of the Foresight.  
 Captaines of the watch, capitaine Wall of the Reuenge, capitaine Champnell of the Ponperilla, capitaine Gifford of the Dreadnought, capitaine Norwood of the Swiftsure, capitaine G. Drake of the Foresight.  
 Clarke of the scope, maister Iohn Audley.  
 Principall maisters, Th. West, Rob. Wignoll, Iohn Bennet, Rob. Hart, Roger Tallent, Richard Burnell.  
 The 18. of April, sir Iohn Norris and sir Francis Drake Generals, with sixe Voiage for of her Maisties ships 20. ships of war, and 140. fit for burden, having in them a Portingale. choise

choise companie of knights, captains, gentlemen and soldiers, departed from Plimmouth, and on the 23. of the same moneth arrived at the Gwine. The 26. they tooke the lower towne by assault, together with great store of ordnance, victuals, cables, ropes and other furniture for shipping.

About the first of May they fought with the Spaniards at Puente de Burgos Bridge, where the enemy fled with losse of 700. men.

The seventh of May, the lower towne of Gwine was burned, and on the ninth our fleet set saile, the 12. the earle of Essex, with maister Walter Deuereux his brother, sir Philip Butler, sir Roger Williams and sir Edward Wingfield met with our fleet. The 16. the whole naue arrived at Penicha in Portugal, where in despite of the enemies, our people were set aland, and the same day wan both the towne and castell of Penicha. After this they diuided the armie, whereof part marched with sir John Norris by land to Lisbon, the rest with sir Francis Drake passed by sea to Callicales. The 24. our men entered the suburbs of Lisbon, where they obtained rich spoiles, and plenty of every good thing. The 27. the armie being victored, was found to be weak, and of small force to sustaine so great a siege as that was like to be, besides the want of powder, and some other necessities: for which causes, after counsell taken, they left Lisbon, and came to Callicales, without any great fight or skirmish, where they tooke the castell, and thence returned for England. There followed them nine gallies, who fighting with two English merchants ships, by consuming of the Queenes ships, discharging but one peece at them, they retired, so our ships came safely to Vigo, where landing our men the towne was taken, & the countrey wasted, &c. Now at large this matter is published in print both in Latine and in English.

The 21. of June, sir Francis Drake arrived at Plimmouth, and on the third of July, sir John Norris with the rest of the fleet arrived there also.

Great lightning and thunder.

The first of August at night, was the greatest lightning and thunder that had at any time bene scene and heard about London, in the memorie of any man living, and yet thanks be given to God little hurt heard of.

Sir John Norris & sir Francis Drake being returned, as ye have heard, many of their sailors and soldiers, shortly after their landing, fell sick, and died of a stanch bred amongst them on ship-boord, other some of the so rudely behaved themselves about the countrey, about the court, & elsewhere, that many men misliked of their doings, and divers of them being apprehended, on the 27. of August one was hanged on the end of a signe at an Inne doore in the towne of Kingstone upon Thames, for a terror to the rest. The 29. of August, two more were hanged in Smithfield, two at the Tower hill, two besides Westminster, 1 on at Tiborne.

About the 21. of September, the citizens of London furnished a thousand men to be sent over into France, to the aiding of Henry late king of Navar, then challenging the crowne of France, as rightfull inheritor: by lawfull succession. Also divers shires in England sent into France to the same aide, some three a thousand, as Kent and other shires, and some shires less, &c. All which companies were sent over into France, under the conductin of Peregrine Barrie lord Willoughby and Erskly.

The last of November, Ledwike Griuell of Wilcoke in the countie of Warwick

Wharthe esquire, was brought from the Tower of London to Westminster, and there at the kings bench bar, being accessory to murder, whereof hee was charged, was arraigned and found guiltie: but standing mute, hadde judgement to be pressed to death, and was accordingly executed in the gaole of the kings bench in Southwarke on the 14. of November, on the which day for committing the murder, as principall, his man was hanged in the Palace court at Westminster.

Ledwike Griuell pressed to death.

In this moneth of November, the Citizens of London were sundry times frighted by casualltie of fire about Jew fishstrate, three times in one weeke, the Citizens called, lightes hanged out at every doore, and every man labouring for his owne safety, as more at large appeareth in my Summarie of the Chronicles.

An. reg. 32. Citizens of London fired by fires.

The 5. of January, about five of the clock in the evening, before the Twelfth day, began a great and terrible tempest of wind in the south west, which continued with great vehemencie till about 11. of the clocke of the same night. This in the citie of London blew the tiles off mens houses, overthrowe many chimneies, and caused many men feare the overthrowe of their houses: one of the three west gates of Saint Pauls Church, to wit, that next to the Byshoppes palace was broken, with the bolts, bars, and lockes of the same gate, so that it was blowne over. In the countreie, houses and barns were bozne over, and some of them blowne far from the places wherein they stode, besides trees in great numbers blowne up by the rotes. On the Seas, no man can tell what hurtures were done, by ships and barkes cast away. About Southampton the ships and barkes riding at anchor, were driven a land and sunke, the like was neuer scene thereabouts.

Tempest of wind great and violent.

South west gate of Pauls blown open.

In this moneth of Januarie, Nicols one of her maiesties purveyors was hanged, for that hee converted to his owne use certaine provision taken of her subsidies for her maiesties use.

Purveyor hanged.

The 21. of February, Ambrose Dudley earle of Warwike deceased at his house in Strande strate nere unto Duc bridge, towards Westminster, and was honorably buried at Warwike.

Ambrose earle of Warwike deceased.

Christopher Bales made priell beyond the sea, was convicted of treason, for remaining in this Realme contrarie to a statute. Also Nicholas Home and Alexander Blage, convicted of felonie, for relieving of Bales, contrarie to the like statute, those were all executed on the fourth of March. Bales was hanged, bowtled, and quartered in fiftethstrate, at Jewlar lane ende, Home hanged in Smithfelde, and Blage hanged at Grales Inne lane ende.

Bales and others executed.

The first of March, a Trench was burned in Saint Georges fildes twise, out Southwarke, for poisoning of her maiesties and other.

The sixte of Aprill about midnight, deceased Sir Francis VValsingham Knight, principall Secretarie to her Maiestie, and Chancelor of the Duchie of Lancaster, at his house in Sebring lane of London, and was about twene of the clocke in the next night following, buried in Pauls church twise out solemnly.

1590 Sir Francis Walsingham deceased.

This peere on the wednesday in Easter weeke, by shooting of a gunne in the towne

*Moffrins  
thampton byent*

*An. reg. 33.  
Ambassadors to  
the princes of  
Germany.*

to toun of Wolfrunhampton in Staffo;shire about the number of 80. houses were byent.

The viscount of Turcine, now Duke of Bullion by the late marriage of his wife, was sent in ambassage from Henry the 4. now King of France, unto her maiestie, to intreate her to interpose her credite with the princes Protestants of Germany, for the raising and sending of an Armie of Keisers, or horsemen unto the aide of the saide French King his Maister, against those of his owne Subiectes, &c. that do oppose the miselues against him, vnder the name of the Holie League: whereupon her Maestie adoynted Sir Horatio Paluicino Knight, with commission to ioint with the saide Princes touching those preparations. In the performance of which Ambassage was spent all the Winter season with such good successe, that thereupon this army of the Almaine horsemen was leued and sent into France about the ende of the summer following.

*1591  
When sent into  
Britaine.*

In the moneth of Aprill, three thousand footemen were sent from hence into Britaine in France, vnder the conduction of Sir John Norris Knight, to ioint with the prince Dombes, sonne of the Duke Montpensier, and generall of the French kings forces in that prouince: which companies haue since bene from time to time supplied.

*Coppinger and  
Arthington  
beached on a  
cart in Chrape*

The 16. daie of Iulie in the morning, Edmond Coppinger and Henry Arthington gentlemen, repaired to one Walkers house nere unto Broken wharf of London, where conferring with one of their friend, named William Hacket of Dunbale in the County of Northampton yoman, they offered to annoint him king, but Hacket taking Coppinger by the hand, said: You shall not neede to annoint mee, for I haue bene already annointed in Heauen by the Holie ghost himselfe. Then Coppinger asked him what his pleasure was to be done. Go your way both (said he) and tell them in the city, that Christ Iesus is come with his fan in his hand to iudge the earth. And if any man aske you where he is, tel them he lies at Walkers house by Broken wharfe; and if they will not beleue it, let them come and kill me if they can: for as truly as Christ Iesus is in heauen, so truly is hee come to iudge the worlde. When Coppinger saide it should be done forthwith: and thereupon went forward, and Arthington followed, but ere hee could get downe the staires, Coppinger had begun be low in the house, to proclaime newes from Heauen of exceeding great meracie: that Christ Iesus was come, &c. with whom Arthington also cried the same words aloud, following him along the staires from thence by whatling streete, and did change toward Chrape, they both adding beyond their commission these words: Repent England, repent. After they had both thus come (with a mightie concourse of the common multitude) with an brisome crie into Cheape nere unto the crosse, and there finding the throng and prease of people to encrease about them, in such sort as that they could not well passe further, nor be convenientlie hearde of them all as they desired: therefore they gotte them vpon into an emptie cart which stood there, where in they stood not onely vpon the wordes of their former crie, but they reading something out of a paper, went more particularlie ouer the office and calling of

Hacket,

Hacket, how he represented Christ, by partaking a part of his glorified body, by his principal spirit, and by the office of securing the god from the bad with his fan in his hand, and of establishing the Gospell in Europe, &c. telling also the people, where they saw him, where he late and remained: that they were two Prophets, the one of Mercie, the other of Judgement, sent, and extraordinary called by God to all. I him in this great worke, and were witnesses of these things, &c. And thereupon the one of them pronounced Mercie, great comfort, and unspeakable hopes to all that should repent presentlie, be obedient, and embrace this acceptable message, and oportunitie offered: And the other denounced terrible Judgement if they repented not, which should even presentlie (also) fall vpon them, and especially vpon the City of London: affirming, that all that beleued them not, were condemned bodie and soule: with other matter against her Maestie, and some of her honorable Primate Counsaile, which I ouer passe. And whereas they had purposed to haue gone with the like Crie and Proclamation, through other the chiefe partes of the Citie, the prease was so great, as that they were forced to go into a Tauerne in Chrape, at the Signe of the Spertmaybe, the rather because a Gentleman, being of his acquaintance, plucked at Coppinger, whyles hee was in the Carte, and blamed him for his deuicand; and speeches. From thence they went by back lanes, but yet crying (as afore) Repent England, repent, &c. to VValkers house at Broken wharfe. This strange accident being quickly blowne through the citie, all was in a buzze, and a kind of astonishment, what to thinke of the matter: and being speedilie brought to his maiesties eares, two of his honorable counsaile were presentlie dispatched vnto London, to take further notice of the whole matter: so that about one of the clocke in the afternoone, Coppinger was sent for, whyles Hacket and Arthington were brought before those honorable counsellors and others at the Lords Palaies to be examined; whose examinations I ouer passe: but in the ende it was thought good, that Hacket should come to trial: so that on the twentieth daye of Iulie, hee was brought from Wobdelwell to the Sessions House, nere to Fleetgate, before the Lord Palaies; and other Iustices, where being arraigned, hee was by two severall inditeiments founde guiltie; as to haue offered and spoken dyuers most false and traitorous words against her maiestie, to haue raised and defaced her Maesties Armes; as also a certaine Picture of the Queenes Maestie, and did maliciouslie, and traitorously thrust an yron Instrument into that part of the sayde picture that did represent the Brest and heart of the Queenes Maestie, &c. He had judgement, and on the 28. of Iulie, he was brought from Fleetgate towards the place of execution after ten of the clocke in the morning, albeit by reason of the incredible multitude then in the streets, but especially in Cheape. All the while that hee was dragged vpon the hurdle, hee continued his counterfeit baie; one while crying out, Iehouah, Messias; Iehouah, Messias: another while crying out thus, loke, loke, howe the heauens open wide, and the sonne of God cometh downe to deliuer me: when hee came vnder the gibbet (which reached hard by the Crosse in Cheape) hee was exhorted to alke God and the Queene forgiveness, and

*Hacket arraigned.*

*Hacket hanged  
in Chrape.*

to fall to his prayers: but he in stead thereof, set to railing, and cursing of the M. maiesty, most villanously, and then began a most blasphemous and execrable prayer, against the diuine maiesty God. They had much adoe to get him by the ladder, where he was hanged and after bowelled and quartered.

Copplinger be-  
ed in Wyderwell.

On the next daie, being the ninth and twentieth of Iulie, Edmond Copplinger, hauing wilfully abhoynded from meate (as was sayde) dyed in Wyderwell. And Anthington longe after in the Countie in Woodstreete, was referred in hope of perfect repentance. More of this yee male read in a Booke eyntaunte, intituled, Conspiracie of pretended Reformation, &c.

Carle of Essex  
sent into  
France.

In the moneth of Iulie, Robert Carle of Essex, Maister of her maiesties horse, a yong nobleman of great valour and expedition, was by her highnesse appointed to haue the charge & conduction, as her maiesties lieutenant general, of 4000. footemen, and some number of horsemen, and pioneers, sent into France, for the assistance of the French king, against the confederates of the league. In which expedition his Lordship was also honourably accompanied, with sundrie Gentlemen and soldiers that voluntarie followed him in this seruice. During the time that the Carle intended these French warres, Walter Deuereux a yong gentleman, and forward in martiall actions; and brother to the earle, was slaine with a small shot before Roane in Romaniae.

Proclamation  
against Jeli-  
ties and Semi-  
narie.

In the moneth of October, a proclamation was published, containing a declaration of the manifest troubles pretended against the crowne and estate, by Seminaries and Jesuites, (aborned by the pope and king of Spaine, to infect her maiesties subiects with the poison of the irredition religion, and vnder color thereof, to traine them vnto their pretended treasons, so) the betraying of this estate vnto the Spanishe tyranny and inuasion. For the better preuenting of which imminent dangers, a speciall charge was thereby given vnto all her Maiesties officers and ministers, vigilantlie to looke vnto their severall charges of the forces appointed to be in the readines, for the necessary defence of the realme. And for the better repressing of the fraudulent attempts of those Jesuits, the very deuicers of all treasons and rebellions, disguising themselves in their habit and apparrell, sometimes like gentlemen, and sometimes like serving men, and so inuoluing themselves into the families and seruices of noblemen, ladies, and gentlemen, to couer themselves from suspicion and apprehension: It was by the said proclamation provided, that speciall commissioners should be appointed in all Shires, Cities, and port Townes of this Realme, to inquire out this viperous broode, and such as male bee reconciled by their enchantment, thereby farther charging all manner of persons of whatsoeuer degree or condition, to retain none into their houses, without due examination of their conditions, manner of life, & conformitie in the religion, and to keepe thereof a Register, to be shewed vnto the said Commissioners, if they shall demaunde the same, vpon suspicion of the disloyaltie of any such persons.

Not long after the publishing of this proclamation, her maiesty adioyned commissions

commissions vnder the great seale of England, generally into all parts and diuisions of the Realme, for the purposes aforesaid: The faithfull execution whereof, according to the orders prescribed, with in time discouert and vnmasking these Jesuiticall hypocrites, and diminishing the our great swarmes of them, spreading their secret poison into the hart and bowels of this politicall bodie, in dangering the sense, feeling, and life thereof.

Commissions  
for inquisition  
to be made of  
suspected per-  
sons.

Bren O Roirke  
of Ireland ar-  
raigned.

In the moneth of October, to wit, on the 28. day, Bren O Roirke, a great man of Ireland, was arraigned at Westminster, where he was found guiltie of high treason, and after for the same executed at Tyborne on the 3. of November, as hereafter more at large insineth.

The articles contained in the indictment against Bren O Roirke, Lord of a great territory and countie in Ireland, named Breny I Roirke, who accounted himselfe to haue descended of one of the Monarches that were in Ireland heretofore: at his arraignment at Westminster on St. Simon and Iudes day, Maister Iohn Ly of Keshpide a gentleman out of Ireland, being assigned by the lordes of the counsell and commissioners to enterpret betwixt the Judges, and the said O Roirke, who did expounde and declare in Irish the Articles ensuing, and also all speeches uttered by the Judges, and the said O Roirke, to the good liking of all the said Judges and others that were present.

That the said Bren O Roirke sought the deprivation of his maiesty from her regal seat, the destruction of his person, and the overthrow of his realme of Ireland, at Downabur and other places in Ireland, the 2. of July, in the 28. yere of his maiesties raigne.

That the said O Roirke stirred up, and procured Alexander Mac Connel, and Denell, Mac Connel being enemies to her Maiesty and her said Realme of Ireland: to raise forces against her Maiesty in Ireland, and after that reliued and succoured them the second of August, the twentieth eight of her Maiesties raigne.

That the said O Roirke at Downabur aforesayde, caused the picture of a woman to bee made, setting to her Maiesties name, and caused it to be fixed to an hoyle tape, and to bee drawn through the mire in derision of his maiesty. And after caused his Galliglasses to be towne the same in peeces with their axes, uttering diuers traitterous and rebellious words against her maiesty.

That the said O Roirke, when Sixtus the fift of that name was Pope, and Philip the Spanishe King had bent their forces against Englande, and after dispersed by her Maiesties aete, till they came about Scotland, and so to Ireland, and arriving there, the sayde O Roirke did entertaine, releeue, and succour, at Downabur aforesayde, and other places, diuers of the said Spaniards, which were employed to this intended inuasion. And after proclamation being given by the Lord Deputy vpon paine of death, that no man should haue any of the said Spaniards, but they to bee sent to his Lordshippe, by a daie limited: yet the sayde O Roirke kept the sayde Spaniards till the sayde Lord Deputy went with her Maiesties forces to the South, at

which time, the saide O Royke conveyed them through the March with a Spanisht frer, and an Irish frer in their companie, and so to Spaine, without making the saide Loide Deputie of Ireland acquainted therewith: and after received letters by the frer from the saide King of Spaine, gratulatory for the entertainment he gave to the saide Spaniards anno 30. of her maiesties raigne.

That the saide O Royke procured and caused one Thady O Harte and his frer, with diuers others to enter into aduall rebellion against his maiestie, so that the said Thady and others did burne Ballymote and other places, and after that done, the saide O Royke did relieue and succor the saide traitors, that were entered into the said rebellion.

That the saide O Royke did enter and burne Ballingasse with diuers other villages in the county of Wolscoman, and murdered O Kena at Collier, Christopher Caddell, and others others of his highnes loiall subiectes, and spoiled and carried away the prizes of the said towne.

That the saide O Royke did violently enter into the Towne of Kynocke, Mullin, and diuers other villages in her maiesties realme of Irelande, in the barony of Epyrell in the county of Sligo, and burned the saide Towne, and murdered one Chencin Wood a gentleman, with diuers others of her maiesties loiall subiectes within the said Barony of Epyrell, and so continued his outrages, untill he was constrained by her maiesties forces to fly into Scotland.

That the saide O Royke being fled into Scotland, did stir by certaine Scots there to insurrection, and to ioyne with himselfe their forces against his maiestie in the Realme of Irelande. And also offered at Glasco vnto the King of Scots, if he would maintaine him and suffer his subiects to go and ioyne with him, that he would bying the realme of Ireland to his subiection: contrarie to his duty, and in contempt of his maiesties lawes, the 9. of Aprill, anno 33. of his maiesties raigne.

Also it did appere by the saide Bren O Royke his speeches made in the towne, where he said, that if the Spaniards had first come into Irelande, as they did into Englande, that Ireland had better their owne, and that he would do them a peece of seruice: which speeches were sufficient proue of his traitorous mind towards his graces maiestie.

To conclude, the saide O Royke, after manie speeches by the Judge and him bitter, being at the barre, saide, that hee would not consent that any inquest or Iurie shoulde passe vpon him, vnlesse hee might haue a weekes respite to be giuen him, and all those writings sent by William Fitz Williams, Rylen, Bingham, and others in Ireland to be deliuered him, and a good man of lawe to be assigned vnto him, and the same man of lawe to be sworne to deale as truelie for him, as hee would do for the Maiesties hitte apparant, if hee were in his place. And besides this, that hee would haue the Maiesties maiestie to be one of the Iurie to passe on him. This his refusal to be tryed was entered, at the request of her maiesties learned Councell. And after entrie so made: the saide John Ly, being interpreter, was willed by the lord

chefe

chefe Justice to tell him that the lawe was, if hee would refuse to be tryed by twelue men, then iudgement must be giuen according to the quality of those Articles of treason wherewith hee was charged, and being obstinate therein, was guiltie of his owne death, yet that notwithstanding, hee refused to yrayll. When the saide John Ly expounded vnto him his iudgement, which was as ensueth.

That the saide Bren O Royke shoulde be taken from thence to the place from whence hee came, there to be laide vpon an hurdle, so to be drawne to the place of execution, there to be hanged untill hee were halfe dead, then to be let downe, and his members and bowels to be taken out and byent in the fire, his heade to be stricken off, his bodie to be quartered, and his head and bodie to be disposed at her maiesties direction. This being expounded to him by the said Ly, he answered nothing, but said, if that were their will, let it be so.

Vpon Wednesdaye the 3. of November, Bren O Royke was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, his members and bowels burned in the fire, his heart taken out, and holden by by the hangman, naming it to be the archtraytors heart, and then did he cast the same into the fire, then was his heade stricken off, and his bodie quartered. But before this was done: the saide O Royke yet standing vpon the cart, spake John Ly aforesaid, willed him in Gods behalfe to remember the filthy and odious treasons that hee committed against her maiestie, with many other good exhortations, to draw him to repentance, and to aske her maiestie and all the world forgiveness; and he to forgiue all the world: yet he obstinately answered that he would not, but said, that if the M. would haue granted him space, and all such writings, as the officers in Irelande, viz. William Fitz Williams, and Dicke Bingham sent against him, to be giuen him to make answer to them, and also to giue him his life, that then he would aske her forgiveness, and from henceforth serue her truelie. And further saide, that hee did thinke little that the King of Scottes would haue sent him to the quene without safety and good assurance of his life, and remittall of his offences.

The saide John Ly did further hyge and entreat the saide O Royke to repent, and to aske forgiveness (as aforesaid) and likewise to forgiue, and that, that was the onely way for him to come to the heavenly kingdome: and also told him that all the standers by, requested and prayed him so to do: he answered and willed them to make meanes for themselves to come to God, and that hee would make meanes for himselfe, but no more could hee haue of him, but fell to his prayers. The saide Ly told him againe, if he could not lawfully pray being so obstinate, hard hearted, and to die without repentance, but it would not be, and so the cart went from him. Also Meylens the Lord archbishop of Cashell in Irelande being present, was willed by the standers by, to counsaile the saide O Royke, and the saide Archbyschoppe requested him to call to God, with other good exhortations: The saide O Royke turned vpon him and sayde, hee had more neede to looke to himselfe, and that hee was neither heere nor there.

Bren O Royke executed at Tyborne.

Ann. reg. 34

Christopher  
Watson Esq  
Chanc. l. of  
counsell.

The twentieth of November, Sir Christopher Hatton knight, lord Chancellor of England, deceased at his house in Holborne, comwallie called Ellis house, because it belonged to the Bishopp of Ely. On the sixteenth of December, hee was honourable buried in Saint Pauls Church at London, one hundred poore people having gobones and cappes giuen them, going before him, of Gentlemen and yeomen, in gownes, cloakes, and coates, more than three hundred, with lordes of the counsell, and other, besides foure score of the gards that followed, a most sumptuous monument is since for him raised in Pauls Church.

Write taken for  
the enrolling of  
writings in ab-  
sence of a Lord  
Chanc. l.

After whose death, none being elected to succeed him in that office and dignity, her Maiestie committed the charge of the enrolling of all Writings with the great Seale of England (whereunto it shall be requisite to haue the same manner) unto the Lord Burghley Lord Treasurer of England, the Lord Hunsdon Lord Chamberlaine of her highnes household, the Lord Cobham Lord Warden of the Cinque Portes, and the Lord Buckhurst, being all lordes of her privy counsell. And for administration of justice, during the time of this vacancie of the office of the Lord Chancellor, her Maiestie likewise authorised by speciall commission, under the great Seale of England, Gualter Clinche, and Gualter Francis Gawdy, two of the Justices of the bench, and Gualter Windam, and Gualter Piriam two of the Justices of the Court of the Common Pleas, to sit as chiefe Judges for the determining of causes in the Court of the Chancery, and to continue their times successelie during the terme time, according to the order prescribed in their commission.

Seminaries &  
their abettors  
executed.

The 10. of December, 3. Seminary priests for being in this realmes contrary to the Statute, and 4. other, for relieving them, were executed, two of them, to wit, a Seminary named Ironmonger, and Swichen Wells gentleman, in Greies Innelie, on the south side of Holborne, Blakton and White Seminaries, and three other their abettors at Whiteborne.

John L. Burke  
murdered.

The fourteenth of January, Capitaine Arnold Cosby an Irishman, did forcible sit upon John Lord Burke (also an Irishman) nere to the Colone of Warrsworthy in the Countie of Surrey, and there bypon a bloudie and malicious intent (for they had fallen out twelve monethes before, and fought at Greenwich, but were made friends) did sollicite him there, giuing him one mortal wound with a Rapier, by meanes whereof, the said Lord Burke fell downe, and after that the said Arnold Cosby with a bagge gaue unto the said Lord Burke, one and twentieth or more greuous and severall woundes, of the which said great woundes, the said Lord Burke died within two houres after, for the which fact, the said Cosby was hanged on a gibbet nere unto Warrsworthy, where hee had committed the said murder on the 27. of January.

Arnold Cosby  
hanged.

Tho. Pormort  
executed.

The eighteenth of February, Thomas Pormort was convicted of severall high treasons, the one for being a Seminary Priest, and remaining in this Realme, and the other, for reconciling John Barwys a Papist against the forme of the Statute. The sayde John Barwys was then likewise

convicted

convicted of high treason, for being so reconciled, and also of felonie, for relieving the said priest, against the forme of the statute.

Thomas Pormort was executed in Pauls church yarde, on the west ende towards Ludgate, on the 20. of February in the afternoon.

In the month of February, Sir Edmond Yoike knight, conducted over into France two thousand footmen well appointed, sent from hence for service of the French King, which bypon their arrivall, remained under the charge of Sir Roger Williams, being then generall of the English companies there.

Souldiers sent  
into France.

The 30. of March, certaine saylors, five in number were hanged on the Colver wharfe, for stealing of gunpowder, pertayning to her Maiesties service.

1592

Sailors executed  
on the Colver  
wharfe.  
Sir John Parnat  
arraigned.

The 27. of Aprill, Sir John Parnat knight was arraigned at Westminster, found guilty of treason, and had judgement in the same place on the 16. of June, he was returned to the Colver, wherein he fell sicke and died.

The fourth of Maie, a tiltboate of Chaulsemd having in the same boate about the number of fortie persons was overrun by an boy, so that the greater part of those people were drowned over against Greenwich, the court then being there.

Tiltboate  
drowned.

The fourth of June, Sir John Puckering being made lord keeper of the great seale, rode to Westminster and was there swoone.

Sir Jo. Puckering  
l. keeper.

The 21. of June, one Kerby a gentleman in countenance, but a counsoner in quality was set on the pilloie without Aldergate, and lost one of his eares there, and on the 23. of June he was on the pilloie in cheape.

A counsoner on  
the pilloie.

In this month of June, a young man was hanged in Smithfield, and a woman there burned, both for poisoning of her husband a goldsmith.

A woman burnt  
in Smithfield  
for poisoning of  
her husband.

The merchant Taylors in London did this yere founde and builded faire almes houses of hycke and timber, covered with slate, upon a plot of ground nere unto East Smithfield by the Colver of London, which plot of ground was giuen to them by Richard Hils sometime master of that companie, as also one hundred loades of timber by Anthony Ratcliffe of that societie, alderman: In those almes houses, fouretene charitable men byethen of the said merchant taylors yet living, haue placed fouretene poore aged sole women, which receive euerich of them of their founder, sixtene pence or better weeklie, besides eight pound sixtene shillings yearly paid out of the common treasure of the said companie.

Almes houses  
founden by the  
merchant Taylors.

The fourth of September, a woman was burnt in Smithfield, for poisoning of her husband.

A woman burnt  
in Smithfield  
for poisoning of  
her husband.

Wednesday the first of September, the wind well and by south, as it had been for the space of two daies before verie boisterous, the river of Thamisa was made so wide of water, by forcing out the fresh, and keeping backe the salt, that then in divers places might go 200. paces over, and then sing a song to the wind. A Collier on a mare, rode from the north side to the south, and backe againe on either side of London bridge, but not without perill of drowning both waies.

River of Thamis  
made wide  
of water.



The terme kept  
at Hertford.

An. reg. 35.

A butchers  
daughter whipp-  
ed for asser-  
ting her selfe  
to be a kings  
daughter.

One hanged  
for murdering  
his master.  
Parliament.  
Barrow and  
Greenwood  
arraigned.

1593

Parliament  
broke up.

Oration of her  
maiesty to the  
parliament  
new.

This yere Michaelmas terme was kept at Hertford in Hertfordshire 20. miles from London, and began on *Crastina animarum*.

The thirde of November at night, deceased Sir John Parrat prisoner in the Tower of London.

The 12. of December, a certaine gentlewoman by the Countells commandement was whipped through the city of London, for affirming her selfe to be the daughter of Philip King of Spaine, as she had bene perswaded by some accounted sophisters, after proued liars, for she was knowne to be a butchers daughter in Cud cheape.

The 17. of February, a boy was hanged in Sten-church strete, for murdering of his master.

The 19. of February, the Parliament began at Westminster.

The 21. of March, Henry Barrow gentleman, John Greenwood Clarke, Daniell Studley girdeler, Saxio Billor gentleman, Robert Bowley Fishmonger, were indicted of felony at the Sessions hall without Newgate before the ma- for, the two lordes chiefe Iudices of both benches, and sundry of the Iudges and other commissioners of Oyer and determiner: the said Barrow and Greenwood for twitting sundry seditious bookes, tending to the slander of the Quene and State: Studley, Billor, and Bowley, for publishing and setting forth the same bookes, and on the 23. they were all arraigned at Newgate, found guiltie, and had iudgment. On the last of March Henry Barrow and John Greenwood were brought to Tyborne in a carry, and there fastened to the gallows, but being dead and returned for the time, they were there hanged on the 6. of Aprill.

The 10. of Aprill the Parliament brake up at Westminster, for the time, wherein was granted thre subsidies of 2.s. 8.d. the pound goods, and foure s. lands, and 6. shillings.

My Lordes, and you my commons of the lower house, were it not that I know no speeches presented by any other, nor wordes deliuered by any substitute, can be so deeply imprinted into your mindes, as spoken by her selfe, whose order and direction was but followed and deliuered by the lord Keeper, I could be content to spare speech, whom silence better pleased then to speake. And because much hath bene spoken, much lesse shall I now neede to speake of mine owne disposition of nature, and small desire in priuate respect to be enriched by you present, which wordes shall not witnesse, but dedes by your former experience, hauing expended what I haue receiued, to the preferment on and defence of your selues. And thus much I dare assure you, that the care which you haue taken for my selfe, your selues, and the common weale, that you do it for a Prince, that neither careth for any particular, no, nor for life, but so to liue, that you may flourish. For before God and in my conscience, I protest, wherunto many that know me can witnesse, that the great experience of my time, the labour of my studies, and the trauell of my thoughts, chiefly tendeth to Gods seruice, and the gouernment of you to liue in a flourishing and happy state, God forbid you should knowe any change the contrary better princes than my selfe you haue had, but one only excepted whom

in

In the duty of a child I must regard, and to whom I must acknowledge my selfe farre (shallow) I may truly say, none whose loue and care can be greater, or whose desire can be more to fashome dayer for prevention of danger to come, or resisting of dangers, if attempted towarde you, shall euer be found to erre de my selfe: In loue I say towarde you, and care ouer you, you haue heard in the beginning of this parliament, some doubt of danger, more then I would haue you to feare: Doubt only should be, if not prevented, and feare, if not prouided for, For mine owne part, I protest I neuer feared, and what feare was, my heart neuer knew. For I knew that my cause was ever iust, and if it standeth vpon a sure foundation, that I should not faile God assisting the quarrell of the right wise, and such as are but to defende. Glad mought that king my greatest enemy be, to haue the like advantage against me, if in truth for his owne actions, he might truly so say. For in ambition of glorie I haue neuer sought to enlarge the territories of my land, nor thereby to abanance you. If I haue bled my forces to keepe the enemy farre from you, I haue thereby thought your safetie the greater, and your danger the lesse. If you suppose I haue done it in feare of the enemy, or in doubt of his reuenge, I know his power is not to pteuaile, nor his force to feare me, hauing so mighty a protector on my side. I would not haue you returning into the countrey to strike a feare into the mindes of any of my people, as some vpon the arrival of the late nauie, dwelling in a Spaniane thirde fled for feare farther into the middle of the land, but if I had bene by him, surely I would haue taught him to haue shewed so base and cowardly a courage, for euen our enemies holde out nature resolute and ballant, which though they will not outwardly shew, they inwardly knowe. And whensoever the malice of our enemies shall cause them to make any attempt against vs, I doubt not but we shall haue the greater glorie, God fighting for those which truly serue him, with the iustnesse of their quarrell. Only let me in know to be wary, and not to be found sleeping, so shall they shew their owne valour, and frustrate the hopes of the enemies. And thus farre let me charge you that be lieutenants, and you that in thires haue the leading of the most choise and seruicable men vnder your hands that you see them sufficiently exercised and trayned, so oft as neede shall require, that the wantes of any of them be supplied by others to be placed in their rowmes, and that all decates of armour bee presently repaired and made sufficient. The enemy finding your care such, and so great to provide for him, will with the lesse courage thinke of your disambance. To conclude, that I may shewe my thankfull minde, in my conscience neuer hauing been willing to draw from you, but what you should contentedly giue, and that for your selues, and hauing my head by vares, and experience better stated, what soeuer any shall suppose to the contrarie, then that you make easily beleue that I will enter into any idle expences. Now must I giue you all as great thanks, as euer pietye gaue to louing subjects, assuring you that my care for you, hath, and shall erre de all my other cares of worldly causes, what soeuer.

About the same time Perry a Welchman, a principal printer and publisher

Perry appo-  
banded 4 pages.  
at

of books, intitled Martin marre prelate, was apprehended at Stebenbergh, by the vicar there, and committed to prison. In the month of Maye, he was arraigned at the kings bench at Westminster, condemned of felonie, and after wards sodainly in an afternoon, conveyed from the Gaile of the kings bench to Saint Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, with a small audience of beholders.

Court of assise kept in Saint Georges field for feare of the plague.

The 19. of July, the court of assise for Surrey was holden and kept in S. Georges field, a tent being set up for that purpose, many prisoners were there arraigned, condemned and had indgement, nineteen were bent in the hand, but none executed. This assise was ended the same day, which was thought would haue bene three daies worke, for the Justices (all duties being paid) made haste alwaies for feare of being infected with the pestilence by repaire of people thither.

No Bartholmeu sake at London.

Number of the plague died in London.  
Ann. reg. 36.

This yeare also, no Bartholmeu sake was kept at London, for the auoyding of concourse of people, whereby the infection of the reft. or plague might haue increased, which was then verie hot in that citie, so that on the thye and twentieth of October, deceased sir William Roe then lord maior: The first of November, William Elken alderman: The sixt of December, sir Rowland Howard alderman, and the ninth of January, sir Wollstone Dixie alderman. The whole number decaying this yeare in the citie, liberties, and suburbs adioyning, as well of the plague as of other diseases, from the nine and twentieth of December in the yeare 1592. untill the twentieth of December 1593, was as followeth: within the wals of all diseases 8598. where of the plague was 5390. without the walles, and in the liberties 9295. of the plague 5385. so that within the Citie and liberties of all diseases died 17893. where of the plague was 10675.

A seminary executed.

Rodericke Lopez arraigned.

The 18. of February, one named Harington a seminary priest, was drawn from Peligate to Tyborne, and there hanged, cut downe alive, strugled with the hangman, but was botwelled and quartered.

The last of February, Rodericke Lopez a Doctingale (as it was saide) professing physicke, was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, found guilty, and had indgement as of high treason, for conspiring her maiesties destruction by poison.

An Irish man executed.

Great windees overthrown trees.

The first of March an Irish man was arraigned at Westminster, and on the next morning earlie hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

In this month of March was many great stormes of winde, which overthrew trees, steeple, barns, houses, &c. namely in Wiltshire, in Beauliey forest many oakes were overthrowen. In Hoxton wood of the said shire, more then 1500. oakes were overthrowen in one day, namely on the thurs day next before Palmesunday. In Stafford shire the steeple in Salsford towne was rent in pieces along through the midst, and throwen vpon the church, where with the said towne is broken, 1000. l. will not make it good. Houses and barnes were overthrowen in most places of those shires. In Canke wood more then 3000. trees were overthrowen, many steeple more or lesse above 50. in Stafford shire were perished, or blowen downe.

The

The 11. of Aprill, a raine continued very sore more then 24. houres long and withall, such a winde from the north, as pearced the wals of houses, were they neuer so strong.

The 14. of Aprill, a woman was bent in Smithfield for murdering of her husband.

A woman bent in Smithfield.

The 16. of Aprill, Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased at Latham, whose strange sickness and death, gathered by those who were present with him at the time thereof, was such as followeth: his diseases apparant, were vomiting of sober or rustie matter with blood, the yealow jaundies: melting of his fat, swelling and hardnesse of his spleene, a beement hiccokche, and foure daies before he died, stopping of his water.

Ferdinando earle of Darby deceased.

The causes of all his diseases were thought by the physittians, to be partly a surfeit, and partly a most violent discompering himselfe with beement exercise, taken foure daies together in the Easter weeke.

The 5. of Aprill about sixe of the clocke at night he fell sicke at Lutholby, where he vomited thyece.

The 6. he returned to Latham, and feeling his health to sinke more & more, sent to Chester for a doctor of physicke.

The 7. before the coming of the doctor, he had cast 7. times, the colour of his vomits was like to southe or rustie pyon: the substance verie grosse and fattie: the quantitie above seven pintes, the smell not without offence, his waters were in colour, smell, and substance not unlike his vomits. The same night he toke a glister to drawe the course of the humours downeward, which wrought five times and gave some ease.

The 8. he toke a gentle infusion of Rhabarb and Spanna in a draught of chicken broth, which wrought very well nine times.

The 9. because of his continuall bleeding by mouth with his vomits, he was instantly intreated to be let blood, to direct and stay the course thereof, but by no meanes he could be perswaded thereunto, wherefore that daie only for mentations, oyles and plaisters were outwardly applyed, to stay and comfort his stomache.

The 10. he toke one other glister, which wrought well five times.

The 11. he toke one other purge which wrought with great ease 9. times vpon the humours. The same night he toke a little diacordium with the syope of limons and scabions water, which somewhat staid his stomache and gave him some rest.

The 12. because his vomiting continued still, hee was moued to take a vomit, that thereby the bottome of his stomache might be scoured and cleaved from so vile and lothsome matter wherewith he was troubled: but by no perswasion he would yeelde thereunto, notwithstanding the same daie he toke a medicine to procure sweate, but perceiuing not, the very saunc night his water staid vpon a sodaine, to the astonishment of all.

The thirtieth, all meanes were offered to pouchoke water as glister drinks, fomentations, oyles, pulvises, plaisters and stirrings, but nothing happelie succeded.

The

The 14. and 15. was vied an instrument called a *Catheter*, which being conueied into his bladder, was strongly sucked by the Chirurgion but no water followed.

The 16. day about five of the clocke at night, he most deuoutly yielded his soule to God.

In all the time of his sickness, he often took Bezars Stone, and Unicoines boyne, his pulse was ener good, his strength indifferent, the number of his vomites were 52. and of his stoles 29. his physicians were doctor; Canon, doctor; Ioyner, doctor; Barre, doctor; Caie.

A true report of such reasons and coniectures, as caused many learned men to suppose him to be bewitched.

The first of Aprill being the mondaie before his hono<sup>r</sup> fell sicke, a woman offered vnto him a supplication, or petition, wherein her request was, that it would please him to giue, or assigne her a dwelling place nere vnto himselfe, that she might from time to time reueale vnto him such thinges with speeche, which God reuealed vnto her for his good. This petition was thought vaine and therefore refused.

On the fourth of Aprill, he dreamed that his ladie was most dangerously sicke to death, and in his sleepe being sore troubled the reuith, he wept, sobainly cried out, started from his bedde, called for helpe, sought about the chamber, betwixt sleeping and waking, but being fully awaked was comforted, because he found her well: here we omit strange dreames, or diuinations of diuers graue men, which happened before or about the time of his sickness.

On the fifth of Aprill, in his chamber at Ironsley about five of the clocke at night, there appeared sodainly a tall man, with a gasly and threating countenance, who twise or thise seemed to crosse him, as he was passing through the chamber, and when he came vnto the same part of the chamber where this shadow appeared, he presently fell sicke, and there vomited thise. After Gorbome one of his secretaries attending then vpon him sawe nothing, which more amazed him. The same night he dreamed that he was in fighting, and twise or thise stabbed to the heart, and also wounded in manie other places of his bodie.

The 10. of Aprill about midnight, was founde in his bed chamber by one master Hallfall, an Image of ware with haire, like vnto the haire of his hono<sup>r</sup>s head, twisted through the belly thereof, from the navel to the secrets: This Image was spotted, as the same master Hallfall reported vnto master Smith, one of his secretaries, a daie before anie paine grew, and spots appeared vpon his shes and bellie. This Image was hastily cast into the fire by master Hallfall, before it was viewed, because he thought by burning thereof, as he said, he should relieue his lord from witchcraft, and burne the witch who so much tormenteth his lord, but it fell out contrary to his loue and affection, for after the melting thereof, he more and more declined.

The 12. of Aprill, one Iane a witch demanded of master Gorbome, whether his hono<sup>r</sup> felt no paine in the lower parts, and whether he made water as yet

or

or no: and at that verie time notwithstanding all helpes, his water bitterlie stopped, and so remained till he died.

Sir Edward Filton, who with other Iustices examined certaine witches, reporteth, that one of them being bidden to saie the lords prayer, said it well, but being confured, in the name of Iesus, that if she had bewitched his hono<sup>r</sup>, she should not be able to saie the same, she could neuer repeate that petition. For-giue vs our trespases, no not although it was repeated vnto her.

A homely woman, about the age of fiftie yeres, was found mumbling in a corner of his hono<sup>r</sup>s chamber, but what God knoweth. This wise woman (as they termed her) seemed often to ease his hono<sup>r</sup> both of his vomiting and hickocke, but so it fell out, which was strange, that when so long as hee was eased, the woman her selfe was troubled most vehemently in the same manner, the matter which she vomited, being like also vnto that which passed from him. But at the last, when this woman was espyed by one of the doctors tempering and blessing (after her manner) the iuice of certaine herbes, her pot where into she streined the iuice, was tumbled downe by the said doctor, and she rated out of the chamber, notwithstanding she did still saie that she would not cease to ease him, although she could not perfectly helpe him, because hee was so strongly bewitched. All physike wrought verie well, yet had he none or little ease thereby, his diseases were many and his vomits, with stopping his water grieuous, yet ever his pulse remained as good and perfect as euer it did in time of his best health, till one quarter of an houre before he died. He himselfe in all the time of his sickness cried out that the doctors laboured in vaine, because he was certainly bewitched. He fell twise into a trauince, not able to moue, hand, head, or foote, when he would haue taken physike to doe him good. In the ende, he cried out often against all witches and witchcraft, reposing his onely hope of saluation vpon the merites of Christ Iesus his Saviour.

One excellent speech, can not be omitted amongst many in the time of his sickness, especially the day before he departed, at which time he desired one of his doctors, whom he especially loued, to perswade him no longer to liue, because (saith he) although out of thy loue, thou wouldst stirre by hope of life, and doest imploie all thy wit, arte, and traualle to that ende, yet knowing for a certaintie that I must now die, I pray thee cease, for I am resolu'd presently to die, and to take awaie with me onely one part of my armes, I meane the Eagles winges, so will I flie swiftly into the bosome of Christ my onely saviour. And with that he lent for his Ladie, and gaue her his last Vale or farewell, desiring her to take away and lone his doctor, and also to giue him some iewel, with his armes and name, that hee might be remembered: the which thing, immediately after his death was most honorably performed. His spirituall physicians, were the bishop of Chester, and master Ecc his chaplaine.

In the moneth of May, namely on the second day, came downe great water floods, by reason of sodaine thowzes of haile and raine that had fallen, which bare downe houses, pyon milles, the prouision of coales prepared for

Great water  
floods.

the

the said milles, it bare alwaie cattell, &c. in Suffe and Surrey: to the great losse of manie.

The second of May the new sergeants at law in number tenne, held their dinner of feast (as it hath bene tearmed) at the newe Temple in Fleet-strate.

**B. of London deceased.**  
The third of June, deceased John Elmer bishop of London at Fulham, and on the 26. of June, was solemnly entered in his cathedrall Church of Saint Paule, before S. Thomas chappell.

**Doctor Lopez and other Portugales executed.**  
The 7. of June, Rodericke Lopez, with two other Portugales, were conveyed from the Tower of London by the lieutenant, unto the olde swan, and from thence by water to Westminster, where being brought before the kings bench barre, the lieutenant was called to bring in his prisoners, which were there deliuered, and was discharged of them. Then was it by the court declared unto them, how they had bene charged with high treason against her maiestie, had bene tried, found guilty and had receiued iudgement; wherefore it was demanded of them, what they could say for themselves, and should not suffer death accordingly: whereunto one of the Portugales began in his language to tell a long tale, but was willed to be short, which he answered could not be done without circumstance, &c. whereupon he was willed to holde his peace. The second answered by writing in his language, which being read by an interpreter, the Duennas at tournehabd saie, for it was not true. Rodericke Lopez in English made his submission, and affirmed bee neuer thought harme to her maiestie, &c. Then was called the marshall of the kings bench, and appearing, hee was charged with the prisoners, to conuaine them to the prison of the kings bench, and there to deliuer them to the Sheriffes of London, with a writte to see them executed: so were they conuained by water from Westminster to the bishoppe of Winchester staires in Southwarke, from thence to the kings bench, there laide on hurdles, and conuained by the Sheriffes of London ouer the bridge, vnto Leaden hall, and so to Tyborne, and there hanged, cutte downe alive, holden downe by strength of men, dismembred, bowelled, headed and quartered, their quarters set on the gates of the citie.

**Ships sent to the seas by the citizens of London.**  
The 15. of July, by a common counsell in the Guild hall was granted (according to precept from her maiestie) that five shypes, and two pinnaces should be set forth to the seas at the charges of the citizens, the same to be ready with men, munition, and victuals for three monthes, by the last of July. More, on the 17. of July the same common counsell according to another precept, granted 450. men on foot to be likewise set out by the citizens, towarde the charges whereof, a suttaine was raised, and collected.

**Great raines.**  
This yere in the month of May, fell many great shewres of raine, but in the monthes of June and July, much more: so it commonly raised euery day, or night, till S. James day, and two daies after together most extreemly, all which, notwithstanding in the month of August there followed a faire weather, but in the month of September fell great raines, which raised high waters, such as staled the carriages, and bare downe bridges, at Cambridge, Ware,

Ware, and elsewhere, in many places. Also the price of graine grewe to be such, as a strike of bushell of Rye was sold for five shillings, a bushell of wheat for five, seven, or eight shillings, &c. for still it rose in price, which dearth happened (after the common opinion) more by meanes of ouermuch transporting, by our owne merchants for their private gaine, than through the vnseasonable lenesse of the weather passed.

This yere Beuis Bulmar Gentleman, set vpp an Engine at Broken-wharfe, thereby, from thence to conuaine Spaine water vp into the Citie, sufficient to serue the whole west part thereof, being conuained into mens houses by pipes of lead.

The same gentleman on the 18. of October came vnto sir Richard Martine then lord Mayor of the city of London, and to the citie for ever, one cup of silver with a silver waighing 137. ounces of fine, better then the sterling, the silver of which cup, with other, was by his meanes digged out of the Spine in England, in the month of August last before passed.

The 30. of December a woman was hient in Smithfield, for coyning of money.

The same 30. day Doctor Fletcher Bishop of Worcester, in Paules church was cleard bishop of London.

The 26. of Januarie, the Earle of Darby married the Earle of Orfords daughter at the court then at Greenwich, which marriage feast was there most royally kept.

The tenth of February two Souldiers or Captaines named Yorke and Williams, were executed at Tyborne.

The 20. of February, Southwell a Jesuit, that long time had laine prisoner in the Tower of London, was arraigned at the kings bench barre: he was condemned, and on the next morrow dyane from Fleetgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

The 20. of Aprill being Easter day in the afternone about five of the clock, it thundered and lightened sore, with some raine, notwithstanding the weather very colde, and so continued the rest of that month, and also the month of May.

This yere by meanes of the late transporting of graine into foraine countries, the same was here growen to an excessive price, as in some places from foureteene shillings to foure markes the quarter, and more, as the pore did feele, for all thinges els, that fouer was sustenance for man, was likewise raised without all conscience and reason. For remedie whereof, our merchants brought backe from Danke much Rye, and some wheate (not of the best) but passing deare, yet serued the turne in such extremitie, some prentises and other young people about the citie of London, being punished of their victuals, more then they had bene accustomed, tooke from the market people in Southwarke, butter for their money, paying for the same but 3. d. the pound, whereas the owners would haue had 5. d. for the which disorder, the said young men, on the 27. of June were punished by whipping, setting on the pillorie and long imprisonment.

Price of graine great, when God sends plenty.

Spaine water conuained into the citie of London.

A silver Spine found in England.

An. reg. 37. A woman hient

D. Fletcher B. of London.

Earle of Darby married.

Yorke & Williams executed.

Southwell executed.

1595 Great thunder and lightning.

Dearth of corn & other victual.

Disordered youths punished.

Coyners hang-  
ed.

Barbly youths  
on the tower hill  
apprehended.

After the same time certaine men for coining were hanged: Also a scrue-  
ner in Holborne was hanged, bowelled and quartered, for counterfeiting of a  
new patent, and setting to the seale of an olde.

The 29. of June, being Sunday in the afternoon, a number of barbly  
youths on the tower hill, being blamed by the wardens of Tower street ward,  
they w at them stones, and drawe them backe into Tower street, being barte-  
ned thereunto by sounding of a trumpet, but the trumpeter hauing been a sol-  
dier, and many other of that companie were taken by the Sheriffs of London  
and sent to prison. About 7. of the clocke the same night, Sir John Spencer lord  
maior rode to the tower hill, attended by his officers and others, to see the hill  
cleared of all tumultuous persons, where, about the middle of the hill, some  
wardens of the tower, and lieutenants men being there, tolde the maior, that  
the sword ought not in that place to be borne vp, and therefore two or three of  
them catching hold of the sword, some bickering there was, and the sword  
bearer with other hurt and wounded: but the lord maior, by his wise and dif-  
crete pacification, as also by proclamation in her maiesties name, in short  
time, cleared the hill of all trouble, and rode backe, the sword bearer bearing  
up the sword before him.

The Quenes maiestie being informed of these, and sundry other disorders  
committed in & about her city of London, by unlawful assemblies: And some  
at tempting to rescue but of the hands of public officers such as had bin law-  
fully arrested, where by the peace had bin violated and broken: Her maiestie,  
for reformation thereof, by proclamation dated the 4. of July, straightly char-  
ged all her officers, both in the city, and places nere adjoining in the counties  
of Middlesex, Kent, Surrey and Essex, that had authority to preserve the peace,  
and to punish offenders, more diligently, to the best of their powers, see to the  
suppression of all offenders against the peace, upon paine to be not only re-  
moued from their offices, but to be also punished as persons maintaining or  
comforting such offenders. And because the late unlawful assemblies & routs  
were compounded of sundry sorts of base people, some prentices, and some o-  
thers wandring, idle persons of condition Rogues & vagabonds, and some  
colouring their wandring by the name of soldiers, her maiesty, for better ex-  
ecution to her officers of Justice, and inquisition to be made, notified her plea-  
sure to her counsell, to prescribe orders to be published, and straightly obser-  
ued, and for that purpose a Honorable marshall with sufficient authority to ap-  
prehend all such as should not be readily reformed and corrected by the ordina-  
rie officers of Justice, and that without delay to execute upon the gallows by  
order of marshall law. The orders prescribed, were the same day also by pro-  
clamation published. Sir Th. Willford knight, was appointed hono-  
rable marshall for the time, he rode about, and through the City of London daily, with a num-  
ber of men on horsebacke, armed, with their scales of pistols. &c. His marshall  
apprehended many bagrant and idle people, brought them before the iustices,  
who committed them to diuers prisons. On the 22. of July were arraigned in  
the White hall of London 5. of those barbly youths that were apprehended on  
the Tower hill, they were condemned of high treason, had iudgement to be  
drawn,

Proclamation  
for shaping of  
unlawfull as-  
semblies.

Sir Thomas  
Willford pro-  
vost marshall  
for London.

Tumultuous  
youths execu-  
ted on the tow-  
er hill.

drawne, hanged, and quartered, and on the 24. of the same moneth they were  
drawne from Spetogate to the tower hill, and there executed accordingly.

In this time of dearth and scarcity of victuals, at London, an hens egg was  
sold for a penny, or three eggs for two pence at the most, a pound of sweet butter  
for 7. d. and so the like of fish or flesh, exceeding measure in price, such was  
our sins deserving it.

The 17. of November, a day of great triumph, for the long and prosperous  
reigne of her maiestie, at London, the palpet Crosse in Bowles church parke  
newe repaired, painted, and partie inclosed with a wall of hickie: Doctor  
Fletcher bishop of London preached there in praise of the queene, and praye for  
her maiestie, before the lord maior, Aldermen, and citizens in their best liue-  
ries. Which sermon being ended, upon the church leades the trumpets sound-  
ed, the cornets wound, and the quiriters sung an anthem. On the steeple  
many lightes were burned: The tower shot off her ordinance, the belles were  
ringing, bonfires made, &c.

The 5. of February, two marshals were chosen and appointed in the citie  
of London, for the apprehending of bagrant and other disordered persons.

The 20. of February five men for colosing and counterfeiting of comman-  
ons, were set on the pillory in west Cheape, some of them had their eares na-  
ked and cut off, other that had before lost their eares, were nowe burnt in their  
shakes and foreheads.

This yere a certaine Winace was made by an house Carpenter, in the  
great green parke of the Leaden hal in London, it was of burthen about some  
5. tun: this was made to be taken a sundre, & set together with vices: the same  
was finished, and launched out of the Leaden hall on the 12. of March in the  
night, being drawne by strength of men, and of horses on a sled, with wheles  
made for that purpose, towards Algate, where against the parish church of St.  
Katherine Christs church, the wheles taking fier on the areliries, were broken  
about one of the clocke in the morning, where it staid till the next night, and  
then was drawne to the Tower hill, where the same was calked and pitched.  
And on the 20. of March drawne and launched into the river of Thames at the  
water gate by the tower, and from thence by water drawne to Radecliffe, and  
there tackled.

The 9. of April being good friday, in the afternoon, the lord maior and alder-  
men of London being in Bowles church parke, bearing the sermon at Bowles  
crosse, were suddenly called from thence, and forthwith by a precept from  
her maiestie and counsell, pressed 1000. men, which was done by 8. of the clocke  
the same night, and before the next morning they were purvided of all maner  
of furniture for the wars, ready to haue gone towardees Downe, and so to the  
aide of the French in Calais against the Spaniards, but in the afternoon of  
the same Saturday they were all discharged: not without mourning on the 11. of  
April being Easter day, about terme of the clocke before none, came a newe  
charge, so that all men being in their parish Churches ready to haue receiued  
the Communion, the aldermen, their deputies, constables, and other officers,  
were faine to close by the Church doores, till they had pressed to manie men to  
be

dearth of vic-  
tuals.

Ann. reg. 38.

Two marshals  
at London.

Consoners set  
on the pillorie.

A winace made  
in the Leaden  
hall of London.

1595  
Soldiers pres-  
sed and dis-  
charged.

Soldiers  
pressed on Ea-  
ster day.

be soldiers, that by twelue of the clocke, they had in the whole little 1000. men, and those, forthwith furnished of armour, weapons and all things necessary, were for the most part that night, and the rest on the next morning sent abwaie towarde Dover, as the like out of other partes of the Realme: but about a weeke after they returned backe againe, for the French had lost Calais.

Souldiers sent to Dover to haue bin transported to Calais.

Lord keeper deceased.

A Declaration of causes why the Queene sent her navy to the seas.

The last of Aprill at night, deceased Sir Iohn Puckering Lord Keeper of the great Seale, he died of a dead palsey, wherewith hee had bene taken on the fire and twentieth of Aprill at night, and was buried at Westminster.

About this time was published a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Quenes maiestie of England, to prepare and sende a Flotte to the seas, for the defence of her Realmes against the King of Spaines forces, to be published by the Generalls of the saide Flotte, to the intent that it shall appeare to the world, that her maiestie armeth her Flotte onely to defende her selfe, and to offend her enemies, and not to offend any other, that shall so beate to strengthen her enemy, but to blesse them with all lawfull fauours.

To all Christian people, to whom this declaration shall come to be read, as heard greeting. We Robert Earle of Essex, and Sir, Viscount Hereford, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Voordgeher and Louane, &c. and Charles Lord Howard, Baron of Effingham, Lord high Admirall of England, &c. hauing the charge of a Royall nanie of ships, prepared and sent to the seas, by the most excellent Princeesse, the late Elizabeth, Quene of England, France and Ireland, &c. doe giue all men knowledge that the saide nanie vnder our charge is by her maiestie prepared and sent to serue on the seas, for defence of her maiesties realmes, dominions, and subiects, against such mightie forces, as we are aduertised from all partes of Christendome, to bee already prepared by the King of Spaine, and by further provisions of men and ships daily sent for, are to be mightily increased, to invade her maiesties Realmes: as heretofore in the yeare of our Lord 1588, was attempted (even when there was a Treatie continued by both their Commissioners for a Peace) with a greater Army then euer before in his time was set to the seas: though by Gods goodness, and the valour and wisdom of her Noble and faithfull Subiects, the same was notably made frustrate. And because her Maiestie hath good intelligence of perforce amitie with all Kings and Princes of Christendome, fauoring with the King of Spaine, who hath this manye yeeres most brauidly professed openly, great enmitie by diuers actions, both against her Royall person, and her people, and Countries, without anye iust cause first giuen on her Maiesties part. Therefore the saide the Earle, and Lord Admirall, doe ascertaine all persons, that we are most straightly commanded by her excellent Maiestie to forbear from offending in this our Voyage of anye manner of persons of what Nation soeuer, except the saide Kings naturall Subiects, or such others borne Strangers, as shall giue to the saide King manifest ayde, with men, ships, Artillerie, Munition, and other warlike provisions for invasion

tion of her Maiestie. Which her Maiesties commandement we meane dutifull to obserue: and doe therefore giue straight charge to all persons that shall serue in this Flotte underneath vs, vpon paine of extreme punishment to obserue the same, &c.

R. Essex. C. Howard.

The 6. of Spate, Sir Thomas Edgerton master of the Holes, was made Lord Keeper, and had deliuered unto him the great seale. The 11. he rode (accompanied of the nobilitie and others in great number) to Westminster, and there took his place.

After Lord keeper.

On Sundae the eight of August, great triumph was made at London, for the good successe of the two Generalls, and compaigns in Spaine, the winning, sacking, and burning of the famous towne of Cadix, the overthrow and burning of the Spanish Flotte, and other accidents, as here followeth.

Triumph at London for good successe at Cadix.

Anno Domini 1596. her Maiestie sent a great flote to the seas consisting of 17. or 18. of her Royall shippes, and three of the L. Admirals, and of merchants shippes and men of warre, and victualers above 100. and to these the States added foure and twenty: so that the whole flote being assembled at Plimouth, was about 150. saile.

An Abstract of the expedition to Cadix 1596. by the Duke of Devonshire. of Commentaries written at large thereof, by a Gentleman who was in the voyage.

This Royall flote was commanded by the most noble and fortunate in all his adventures, the L. C. Howard (now Earle of Nottingham) high Admirall of England in the Arke Royal, wherein by Gods fauour & her maiesties auspices he defeated the great Spanish fleet in the yeare 1588. And by the right honorable and renowned Lord, Robert D'Eureux earle of Essex and Elm, and master of her maiesties horse and ordinance: both jointly her maiesties Lieutenants generall for this expedition by sea and land; theire authoritie and power being equall, sauing that the one had the precedence at sea, the other at land: the Earle was shipped in a newe built and very warlike shippe called the Du repulse. The Vice admirall of the whole flote was the L. Thomas Howard second sonne to the duke of Norfolk in the Spirance. The Vice admirall was Sir Walter Rawleigh Captaine of her maiesties garde and lieutenant of Cornwall in the Massacre, both new ships. The Admirall of the fleet of the States was Ion van Duvenvoord Lord of Warmount, in the Septimus a ship of 400 tonnes.

This whole fleet was diuided by the L. Generalls into foure squadrons, euerie one of these Chiefs aforesaid had their particular squadron, and Vice admirall. The first squadron was lead (as it was his right) by the Lord high Admirall of England: the second by the earle of Essex: the third by the Lord Thomas Howard: the fourth by Sir W. Rawleigh: the fifth by Mounier Du vennoord: And straite commandement was giuen throughout all the fleet that euery shippe should waite vpon the Admirall of his squadron. The Vice admirals of these squadrons were, Sir Robert Southwel (son in law to the Lord admirall of England) in the Lyon, to the Lord Admirall: Sir Francis Vere Lord Marshall in the Rainbolt, to the earle of Essex: Sir Robert Dudley son to the earle of Leicester in the Bonaparte, to the L. Th. Howard: Captain Robert Crosse in the Swifshire, to Sir Walter Rawleigh: and Ion Gerbramson in the P. of Holland, vice admirall of the Hollanders.

The four squadrons with their Admirals and Vice admirals.

The lords Generals while they lay at Plimmouth (to arme or furnish the m-  
selves with euerie thing necessarie for so great an army) gouerned their  
charge with verie good iustice and marshall discipline: and for instance hereof  
briefly this I obserued: Two souldiers were hanged vpon the wyld with pa-  
pers vpon them shewing their offences: vpon the one paper was written:  
For drawing his sword, and raising mutinie against his Commander. Vpon the  
other, For running away from his Colours.

His name was  
HARRISON.

There was also a lieutenant that had taken fiftie pounds to discharge  
men that were pressed in Wales, he was disarmed by proclamation, and ad-  
judged to repay the money and banished the army.

A souldier also in a dutch regiment that had killed one of his companions,  
was by order of marshall law tied to the partie murdered, and so throwen  
both into the sea: And in ffaroe afterward an English souldier was shotte to  
death by other souldiers, for killing a dutch sea Captaine. The lords Gen-  
erals at Plimmouth also published a declaration of fust causes which moued  
her maiestie to set forth this flæte against the king of Spaine: admonishing  
also the subjects of all other princes and states, of their danger if they ayded  
the said king with shippes, victuals or munition, which was translated into  
Italian, French, Dutch and Spanish, and dispersed.

The souldiers were mustred at Plimmouth and trained euery day by their  
Captaines, Colonels and Commanders. The chiefe Commanders and offi-  
cers of the army by land (besides the earle of Essex, and the lord admirall ioint  
Generals as aforesaid) were, sir Francis Vere lord marshall, sir John Wink-  
field Campmaster general, sir Coniers Clifford sergent maior, sir George  
Carew master of the ordnance, master Ashley secretarie, captaine John Buck  
princeps marshall, captaine Oliuer Lambert quarter master. The Colonels  
of the regiments of the army were, the earle of Sussex, sir Christopher Blunt,  
sir Thomas Gerrat, sir Richard Winkfield, and sir Edward Winkfield of the vo-  
luntaries: besides the regiments of both the generals, whose lieutenants co-  
lonsels were, sir Mathew Morgan, and sir VVill. Woodhouse, of equal rankes  
with colonsels: and besides the regiments of the lord Marshall, of the Camp-  
master, of the Sergeant maior, and of the Dutch, commanded or to haue  
bene commanded by the Count Lodowicke, and all these regiments contain-  
ed not aboue 10000. men.

The Queenes  
Prayer.

And in this meane time of all these businesse at Plimmouth, the Queenes  
gratefull (well considering that the lord of hostes blesteth the hostes and for-  
ces of godly princes, and giueth victorie to the faithfull armies) made a ve-  
rie deuout prayer to Almighty God for the good successe of the flæte, and sent  
it by Captaine Ed. Conway to the Generals, commanding that it should be  
daily saide throughout all the flæte. And here also they receiued instructions  
for appointing their priuate counsell for this expedition, viz. the lord Thomas  
Howard, sir W. Rawleigh, sir Francis Vere, sir George Carew, and sir Coniers  
Clifford: and here they ordered that there should be two flags tied to be hanged  
in the steeles of the lord Admiralls shippe about counsell causes, the one a  
flagge of the armes of England with a warning piece to call the select coun-  
sell,

sell, and the other the flagge of S. George hanged in the same place to call the  
common counsell of all sea captaines and masters of shippes, and besides that  
euerie shippe in the flæte should hang vpon their misen yarde a white pen-  
dant foure elles long.

And they sent to euerie shippe certaine instructions sealed vp, with strait  
commandement to the Captaine the reed not to open them untill such time  
as they were come to the South cape, whilste they layed in the meane time  
to bee secured from the flæte by storme, or other misfortune: and if they hap-  
ned to be taken by the enemy, then to burne them so sealed ouer board. But for  
breuitie sake I passe ouer thus these and other like preparatiues to this iour-  
ney: and come to the matter.

By these inst-  
ructions the day  
of Cadiz was  
appointed the  
Reiducus.

The first date of June all the souldiers and mariners being embarked,  
and the winde comming to the South-west and by north, the lord Admirall of  
England being aboard the Arke, commanded his master gunner to shote off  
a piece to giue warning to all the flæte to weigh anchor, and set sailes: which  
they did incontinent, and thus being vnder saile (the lord Admirall leading)  
they sayled the same date and night as farre as a promontorie in Cornewall  
called Wodmans point: but the winde scanting they were faine to returne  
againe, the greater shippes into the sound of Plimmouth, and the lesser shippes  
into Canslon bay by speciall caution of the lords Generals, least anye mar-  
iners should returne againe to Plimmouth: which they also prevented by sen-  
ding commandement to the maior of Plimmouth that they should  
suffer no boates from the flæte to come ashore.

The next date following being the 3. of June we set saile againe, and in a  
good houre, for from that time till wee came to Cadiz, we had faire weather  
and the winde prosperous: but we neuer came within sight of Spaine till  
we came to the cape of S. Vincent, and thereabout vpon the 18. date of  
the same moneth the L. Admirall take an Irish Barke that came but a date or  
two before from Cadiz, of this Irish man the lord admirall enquired what for-  
ces were in Cadiz, what shipping in the Bay, what netues of the English  
flæte: to whom the Irish man answered, that in the towne were no forces  
more then ordinarie, but in the Bay there were 20. gallies and about 50. saile  
of shippes, whereof foure or fife were of those Gallions of the kings which are  
called the twelue Apostles, & two great Gallies, thre fregates, thre Le-  
uanticas or Argosies, two great Whiskines, the rest were merchants shippes  
rich, and most of great burden, and the lading of these shippes was munition,  
coine, wine, oyle, silkes, cloth of gold, gold lace, chicke silver and aboue 1500.  
quintals of ware, and diuers other rich merchandise: and some were bounde  
for the Indies, some for Britaine, some for Lisbon, and some for other pla-  
ces: and that there was no speech (that he heard) of the coming of any Eng-  
lish flæte thither. By this time the Earle of Essex was come aboard the Arke,  
and there was a flagge of the armes of England hanged in the steeles,  
and after consultation, and euery man returned to his owne shippe, the lords  
Generals battered their course to Cadiz, and vpon the 20. day of this mo-  
neth being sundae early in the morning we came all to anchor within halfe a

They of Cadiz  
had aburrtille-  
ment from S.  
with the day be-  
fore we came  
thither, of 80.  
saile of English  
shippes sent off of  
Lagos, as D. Pa-  
rada reported.



league of S. Sebastian a frierie at the west end of Cadiz.

The Generalls attempted presently to land nere to this Frierie at a descent called the Calietta, they filled many boates and barges with souldiers, and leaders, but the weather was verie fowle, and the water went so high that two boates with some 80. souldiers armed sank, whereof some were drowned, the others by helpe of other boates were saued, and set aboord their owne ships againe. This mischance did not happen as anie token that God was displeased with our enterpryse (as the sequell shewed) but that we mischose the daie attempting so great a worke upon his daie of rest. And it was also a mercie of Almighty God: for we could not haue landed there without great difficulty and much losse, for besides that the place was strong of it selfe, the Spaniards had brought all the strength that they could to it.

The next daie being monday early in the morning, the Spanishe fleet which rode at our coming before the towne vnder the fortres and bulwarks thereof (by the aduise of Diego Soto master of the S. Phillip the Admirall ship) shot with the tide within the point of the maine land, and Castle of Puntall in the straites of the Bay: immediately after the English fleet weighed, and came to anchor nere the same place where the Spanishe fleet rode before, and there the fast S. Phillip and the rest plaide vpon our ships with their great ordnance, and the Gallies were very busie: but by the Generalls commandement sir John Winkfield in the Vanguard hauing some other lesser shippes joined to him, took them to task, and so lanced them that they were glad to seeke to saue themselves: they crept by the shore, first to the Puntall, and from thence into the Bay, and so to the Bridge called Puente de Suaco, where striking their masses and by helpe of certaine engines vpon the Bridge (contrarie to the expectation of the Generalls) they went rounde about the Ile of Leon, and came to Rota. But the eye and care of the lords generalls was chiefly fired vpon the Gallions and other great ships before mentioned: whereupon they resolved to send that most noble Gentleman and great sea Captaine the lord Thomas Howard to encounter with them in the Ponparcille, adioyning to him some fewe ships of the Quenes (for the place was so narrow that hardly ten ships could come to fight.) The other that were employed in this enterpryse with the lord Thomas, were sir Walter Rawleigh, sir Robert Southwell, sir Francis Vere, captaine Robert Crosse (aboord whom the Earle of Sussex was), sir George Carew in the Mary rose, and Captaine Alexander Clifford in the Dreadnought and the Alcedo of London. And although it were agreed in counsell that the lords Generalls should not hazard their shippes of greatest burthen and of most charge in those straites and thees; yet the earle of Essex could not endure to be onely a looker on in so honorable an action, but he put in amongst the thickest of them, and fought very gallantly: which the lord Admirall seeing (and being not able to bring in his owne shippe) took his long boat and went presently aboord the Espiranoze, & went into the fight also, taking with him his noble young sonne now the lord William Howard of Effingham: being at those young perces very desirous to seeke and share honoꝝ with the choicest captaiues at all hazards.

The

This fight lasted till past none, and then the Gallions being cruelly rent and torne, and so much slaughter in them, that the blood gushed out at the scuppit holes, some resolved to die to Porto Real, some to burne their ships, some ran their ships aground: diuers Spaniards lepte into the water, whereof some swamme althoꝝ, some were drowned, some taken, some slaine. The L. Admirall beholding this miserable spectacle of a conquered fortie in these distressed Spaniards swimming about their ships and craving mercie, had compassion of them, and took his boate and reue by and downe amongst them forbidding these cruelties, & preventing the firing of the Spanishe ships so much as was possible, which the Spaniards remaining aboord in this desperate beaten estate chiefly intended, and first they fired the S. Phillip a ship of 1500. tunnes, by whose side a pinnace of sir Robert Southwells was burned, but the men were saued. They fired also the S. Thomas, and the S. Juan (as Signior Fantonio affirmed to me in his house in Cadiz) but the other two Apostles S. Mathew, and S. Andrew ships of 1200. tunnes apiece were preserved from fire, and flats, and brought safe into England.

The battail by sea being thus happily fought and victorie obtained, the lords Generalls (not willing to lose any opportunity) presently set in hand the landing of the souldiers, and in a verie little space there was such diligence used, that the earle of Essex was aland nere the Puntall about a league from Cadiz, with 3000. shot and pikes: he was accompanied with the earle of Sussex, the earle Lodowike of Pallat, the lord Herbert sonne and heire to the earle of Worcester, the lord Bourke of Ireland, sir Edw. Winkfield, sir Robert Drury, sir Thomas German, sir Anthony Standen, master S. Laurence, master Alexander and master Will. Ratcliffes brothers, and diuers other gallant gentlemen aduenturers.

As soon as this lord Generall was landed he dispatched presently three colonels with their regiments to the Puente de Suazo, the Sergeant maior, and sir Christopher Blunt, and sir Thomas Gerard, with charge so to empelch the passage of that bridge that there might be no meanes left for any succours to come into the Ile of Leon to helpe the Spaniards, and to breake betwene that engine, by helpe whereof the Gallies might passe, and also to surprisise or force the Castle at the bridge foote called by the dutch Herods house: they did somewhat ruinate the bridge, and returned to Cadiz that same night. But the dutch (which presently after the Earles landing took the fort at Puntall) took also after ward that Castle of Leon at the bridge foote (as E. Metcranus writeth) but I neuer heard so much before. The Earle of Essex hauing for his guide Captaine W. Morgan, marched apace with his army toward the towne, although in no hope to lodge within it that night: vpon the way he was encountered with 400. or 500. canalleroes or haltsmen of Arres, and 600. or 700. footmen, but they were without any great difficulty beaten backe, and ran into the towne, offering to shut the gates: but the Earle made such haste as he entered with his troopes pell mell with them: and some made such shift to get into the towne that they climbed over the wals, helping our men by that meane another way to enter the towne if they could not haue got in at the gates, which

pppp 5.

The Captaine of this Castle was Don Martin Chaydi, a Dutchman.

The Battail at sea.

they some learned and put in practise: and by this the *L. Admirall* was landed with his battaile of some 12025 hundred, and followed the earle with a be-  
rry round march: hee was accompanied with all the chiefe commanders by  
sea, and captaines of ships and their retinue, as the lord Thomas Howard, and  
sir Walter Rawleigh, who was not able to march so fast as the rest, by reason  
that he was hurt in one of his legs with a splinter in the fight with the Gallio-  
ons. There were also in this march the young lord William Howard, sir Robert  
Southwell, sir Edward Hoby who bare the lord Admirals ensigne, master W.  
Paget, sir R. Leuison, master Philip Woodous, master John Townesend, mast.  
Ri. Weston, master Mathew Browne, captaine Robert Mansell, master Miles  
Corbet, master George Bucke, master John Morgan, master Th. Woodous,  
and diuers other gentlemen aduenturers, and men of qualitic, whose names  
I doe not now remember.

When the lord Admirall came into the towne, he found the Earle of Essex  
skirmishing and fighting with the Spaniards, who fought and fled till before  
him, others threw downe stones from the battlements of their houses, which  
annoyed much our soldiers, and some were hurt thereby. But after that the  
forces of both the Generals were ioyned together, the fight and resistance of  
the Spaniards continued not long, but they fled into the Castle and into the  
Cinabda or towne house in the market place adioyning to the Castle, and in-  
to other their strong places. And here sir John Winkfield riding vpon a nagge  
unarmed, hauing bene hurt before in the fight was shot in the head from a  
lopp in the Castle, whereof hee instantly died: yet before night the Cinabda  
was taken, and therein the Generals lodged that night, and they were mas-  
siera of the whole towne (the castle and the fort S. Philips excepted) both which  
also in the morning were rendred the one to the earle of Essex, and the other  
to the lord Admirall, and their red ensignes displayed vpon the tops and walls  
of them. And the next night the earle lodged in the frierie of S. Francis: and  
the lord admirall in the house of Don N. Ruygoes whose sonne was captaine  
of S. Philips fort, where he had thre or four hundred pikes and shot, and eight  
saire haile pieces of Ordnance, & wine and bread good plenty, as I my selfe  
saue being at the taking in of this fort by the commandement of the Lozde  
Admirall.

The conditions whereupon the Corrigidor and the rest of the chiefe of the  
towne yielded were these: they should haue their liues saued, and onely their  
wearing clothes permitted them: all the rest of their goods and wealth should  
be spoyle and pillage to the soldiers, and should pay besides to the Generals  
for their rancome five score thousand ducates: and for the payment hereof, the  
Generals took fouly of the chiefe Regidores, Cavalloeros, Clergie men  
and merchants for Rehenes or hostages, and brought them into England,  
and here kept them till the money was payde. And now proclamation was  
made that no Englishman should offer violence to any religious person, to  
any woman, or child, or any other of the Spanishe nation in Cadiz: and the  
Generals sent away boates, barges, and pinnaces, first with the Ladies and  
the religious, and then the men & all other of the inhabitants of Cadiz to Por-

to Santa Maria, excepting the Rehenes, and the prisoners of some English  
Captaines. The women were sould by the Generals to weare so much ap-  
parel as they were able to beare vpon them, and all their fewels: and because  
none of them should be spoiled by our ruder soldiers and mariners, the lozde  
Generals themselves stood at the water gates and saw their safe imbarking.  
The lord Admirall also let go the rich Bishop of Cusco, who was his prisoner  
without any rancome, onely he promised to send him a horse which he had not  
yet perforce. In this interim also the *L. admirall* appointed the *terce admiral*  
to take some of the lesser of the *Queenes* ships and merchants ships (that  
died but little water for their more safetie) to go after the Spanishe shippes  
which were fled to Porto Reall, and there either to take them, or to sink or  
to fire them, if they would not yield. But while this was determined, offer  
was made of two millions to the earle of Essex for the sauing & ransoming  
of those ships and their lading: The *L. admirall* would by no means agree  
that the ships should bee left to the Spaniards, nor ransomed: but onely  
the merchandice. But the Duke of Medina Sidonia *Admirall* of *Spainne* deci-  
ded this controuersie: for he being then at Porto Santa Maria, and alwaies ill  
affected to them of Cadiz, gaue order that the next morning before daie the  
whole flete at Porto Reall should be fired, which was put in execution: yet  
nevertheless our men made such haste thither that they recovered much mer-  
chandise and diuers pieces of ordnance & other things, but none of the ships  
could be saued.

Thus this whole flete which was valued by some of the best of the Spani-  
ards at tenne or twelue millions of ducates, was all either taken, sunke,  
or burned in a short space. In the towne of Cadiz were 1500. pipes of wine,  
2000. chests of sugar, great store of rice, much coine and plate and rich furni-  
ture in their houses: The *S.* had also much rich merchandice in his *Wharfas*  
or Warehouses, and a great deale of treasure in the castle, all which should  
haue bene preserved (and all that sooner else was the kings peculiar goods)  
for her maiesty by her right, if some had, or could haue performed the trust  
committed to them. But the losses which pinched the king most (his ships ex-  
cepted) were the 1200. pieces of ordnance which were taken or sunke in his  
ships and his forces, and armor in his armorie to arme five or sixe thousand  
men. All which riches, treasure, munition, merchandice, victuall, &c. of the  
kings and of his subjects there aboard the ships and in the towne, I heard va-  
lued by Pedro de Castilla the kings Iudge of the contratation, and Don Juan  
de Soto a principall sea man, and Signior Fantonio the rich florentine, three  
graue and well experienced men) to bee worth twenty millions of ducates  
at the least.

These things being thus happily atchieued, and sir John Winkfield verte  
honorably buried in Santa Cruz the chiefe church of Cadiz, with all the fane-  
rall solemnities of warre, the drums and trumpets sounding dolefully, the  
shot bearing the noses of their pieces downward, the pikes trampled, his body  
was borne by six knights, the Generals threw their handkerchiefs wet from  
their eyes into the graue, and at the instant the most part of all the shot great  
and

and small aboard and ashore were discharged.

The 27. day of June being Sunday, the **L. Generals** with all the **Chiefs** and gentlemen of the army heard a sermon at **S. Francisco**. Where after dinner they made a great many knights, even all almost that did deserve it, or affect it, or not neglect and refuse it (as some did:) this great Indulgence of fortune, and exceeding access of honor to them in this achievement, made them not onely bountifull, but prodigall of honor. But two verie woorthie Captaines (which were hurt in the fights at the entring into the towne) were knighted before the towne was all won: **sr Samuel Bagnol**, and **sr Arthur Savage**. The rest which were knighted at the fristie and afterward, were,

**Robert earle of Sussex**  
**Count Ludouik of Nassau**  
**Don Christoforo prince of Portugal**  
**The L. Harbert Somerset**  
**The L. Richard Bourke of Ireland**  
**Sir William Howard, sonne of the lord Admirall**  
**Sir Robert Dudley**  
**Sir George D' Eureux**  
**Sir Henry Neuill**  
**Sir Edwin Rich**  
**Sir Richard Leueson**  
**Sir Anthony Atley**  
**Sir Henry Lenard**  
**Sir Horatio Vere**  
**Sir Arthur Throckmorton**  
**Sir Miles Corbet**  
**Sir Edward Conway**  
**Sir Oliuer Lambert**  
**Sir Anthony Cooke**  
**Sir Iohn Townesend**  
**Sir Christopher Heydon**  
**Sir Fr. Popham.**  
**Sir Philip Woodous**  
**Sir Alexander Clifford**  
**Sir Maurice Barkley**  
**Sir Charles Blount**  
**Sir George Gifford**  
**Sir Robert Crosse**  
**Sir James Skydmore**  
**Sir Vrien Leigh**  
**Sir Iohn Lee**

**Sir Richard Weston**  
**Sir Richard Wainman**  
**Sir James Wootton**  
**Sir Richard Rudall**  
**Sir Robert Mansell**  
**Sir William Mounson**  
**Sir Iohn Boules**  
**Sir Edw. Bowes**  
**Sir Humf. Druell**  
**Sir Amias Preston**  
**Sir Robert Remington**  
**Sir Alexander Ratcliffe**  
**Sir Iohn Bucke**  
**Sir Iohn Morgan**  
**Sir Iohn Aldrige**  
**Sir Will. Ashinden**  
**Sir Mathew Browne**  
**Sir Thomas Acton**  
**Sir Thomas Gates**  
**Sir Iohn Stafford**  
**Sir Gylly Merike**  
**Sir Thomas Smith**  
**Sir Will. Pooley**  
**Sir Thomas Palmer**  
**Sir Robert Louell**  
**Sir Iohn Gilbert**  
**Sir William Haruy**  
**Sir Iohn Gray**  
**Sir Ion Van Duuenvoord**  
**Sir Melchior Lebbeu**  
**Sir Peter Regemorte**  
**Sir N. Medkerke**

There was great dispute about the keeping of Cadiz, and the opinions of all the olde souldiers and seamen asked: but because it appeared not howe it might certainly at all needes be relieved with men, munition, and victuals,

Dutch.

and for other causes best knowne to the Generals, it took no effect.

The next day being munday, the **L. Admirall** went aboard, to set things in order in the state, and to make ready for a new enterprise: and by his example also to drawe the sea men and mariners to their shippes that were loth to come out of the towne.

About this time the **L. Admirall** receiued (from his olde acquaintance, since 1588.) the Duke of Medina Sidonia Admirall of Spaine, two very honorable answeres to two letters which hee had before written to him about the exchange of prisoners, Spanish for English in the Gallies: the Dukes answer was that he liked well of the motion, and would do in it so much as lay in him. But (he saide) that that charge was more particularly in the Adelantado of the Gallies, to whom he would write, which he performed so effectually, that within a day or two the Adelantado sent a principall Captaine to the **L. Admirall**, and he made a full agreement for the exchange of English prisoners in the Gallies for Spanish prisoners in our shippes: and upon the sixt of July following, about 40. of our English prisoners were deliuered aboard the Arke by the Gally called **La fama**, and promise for the rest which was afterward duly accomplished. This gally **La fama** wherof Don Julian Hurtado was Captaine, came from **Acota** to the English state with a white flagge of safe conduct, according to the order of warre, but an ignorant sea Captaine made a shot at her as she passed by him, and hurt and killed three men in her, whereat the lord admirall was much grieved, and greatly offended with the Captaine, and threatened to haue hanged him: but the Captaine of the Gally and Don Payo Patin one of the Rebenes, made earnest suite to the **L. Admirall** for his pardon, which they obtained.

The Earle of Essex staid all this while in the towne with the rest of the commanders & captaines and companies of the army by land, which he suffered not to be idle. Upon the 28. day the ordinance was taken from the walls, Castles and fortres. Upon the 30. day of June in the night hee made a rode into the Tyle, and burned and rased and spoiled, all that mough: serue the enemy to any strength or reliefe. The next day he set ploners a worke to rase and besace the forts and castle in the towne. The first of July, the Tower of the Gualoa was battered downe. And lastly, upon the fourth of July set the whole towne on fire (the Churches excepted) and saw all his men embarked, & came aboard last. And the next day the whole state set sail, & sterd their course to the westward: and in the mean time besides the negotiation (which I spake of before with the gallies) the 6. of July the Generals sent a Pinnace into Barbary with 40. slauces which had escaped out of the gallies & came to them for succour. And about this time **sr Anthony Atley** was sent into Englande to make report to her maiestie what had passed hitherto, and for other secret affaires of the lords Generals.

From this time till we came to **Frato**, there was nothing done, but often meetings for consultation about their next enterprise, & how to get victuals & fresh water: seeing that the Gallies in a calm caught by a flieboat of ours bound for Engl. In this course we passed first by **Acota**, and by the point of **Cypiona**

The D. of Medina Sidonia's letters to the L. Admirall.

Chylona nere unto which lie the Rocks called the Salmedinas, and by the Duke of Medina Tower, or Almagana for Tunny fishing: and by Arenas Gordas in the mouth of the Bay of S. Lucar, and by Symont in Portugal, and then we doubled the cape S. Mary, and so came before Faro a principall towne of Algarua, where they resolved to land.

But first the Generals sent both their Lieutenants of their ships, Sir Amias Preston, and Sir Will. Mounson, and Captaine William Morgan, to discover the passage to the towne by the channel in their Pinnaces in the evening, and to view the place, to espie the forces, and to learne what flagge that was, which they saw at their coming before the towne, and to seeke for fresh water and victuals, and such like instructions. They brought answer the next morning, that the people were fled and had carried away their goods, and that they could not as yet finde any fresh water nor victuals: but yet for all this in the afternoon the lords Generals landed with all their forces: but the L. Admirall being not well, and having little hope of any reliefe there for their wants, returned aboard his shippe taking Sir Edward Winkfield with him, who was lame of a hurt which he had received at Cadiz in one of his legges, and indeed it was the earle of Essex his earnest desire that the L. Admirall (seeing him so ill) should returne to his ship and take that valiant knight with him. Whilst the lord Admirall lay here at anchor, the flate of the Gallies came, and anchored close by the English flate: but the L. Admirall sent a ship presently to them to command the in in his name to depart from thence and goe further off: which commandement they obeyed as readily, as if the Admirall of Spaine had sent it, and I rather note this because I thinke it was the first commandement that they ever obeyed, being giuen them by an enemy upon their owne coasts.

The earle of Essex being landed (as I said before) and being desirous to doe some exploit upon the Terra Firma of Spaine, being also provoked hereunto the rather by the enemy (who made byane shelves of horse and foote upon the coast all along) as we sayed by) he marched with his army that night to Faro (being about some two leagues from the place where we landed) he took the towne with ease, for the inhabitants had abandoned it and carried away most of their goods (as he was enformed before) there was in the Sumnerie some stiffe left, and in the Bishops palace, and a Library of booke valued at 1000. markes: there was also in the towne some fruites, and wines, and a few hennes: and in the fort there was some pieces of great Ordnance, whereof one was the fairest and longest Culuerin which the King of Spaine had, as it was esteemed. And here the earle appointed Captaine Brea a valiant gentleman, and of very able body, to march into the Countrey with 800. souldiers of the strongest, chosen out of bluer bands: he marched some two or thre leagues and found a towne called Locha which he took and burnt, without any resistance, but he saw a farre off troupes of horse and foote, (but none) approached him: but if any of his souldiers stragled, or were left sick by the way (as many were) hee found them at his returne pitifully mangled, some with their hands chopt off, some had their nostrils slit, and others killed.

31

In this journey he got aboute a hundred Cowes and Oxen, and some Swine, for victuall, and was brought by an old Portugall to a well of good fresh water, but small store: and so returned to Faro to the lord General, who after he had sacked and stered the towne, the third day returned to the flate.

And now being all aboard againe, the Generals with their counsell helde a new consultation that was else to be done, and how victuals and fresh water might be supplied: some had great desire to go for Lagos: but ere any thing was resolved, the flate was past the cape S. Vincent where a strong northerly winde took us and forced us to hale off into the sea some 80. leagues from the Cape, and towards the Isles of Azores: and here they called a counsell againe, and resolved to go for those Islands, there assuring themselves to have plenty of fresh water and victuals, and there to lie for the Caraks and West Indian flate, and to encounter with the 25. Spaniards men of warre, which lay at the Isles (as the Generals were advertised.) But neither did this purpose hold, for the windes coming contrarie, they held a new consultation, and that was to beare in with the coast of Spaine and Portugal, and to search what shipping was in the harbours thereof as they passed. And this course was thought the best, and kept for the most part untill we came before the Groyne & Ferola. From thence master George Buck was dispatched by the lords Generals to her maiesty, to make relation of that which had passed in the army since the flates departure from the Bay of Cadiz: and other particular busines of their Lordships for her maiesties service.

The L. Generals thus being come before the Groyne the first of August, and finding no shipping there nor in Ferola, now lastly resolved to come for England, and the rather by reason of the generall wants of victuals and fresh water, and for that there were many sick men in the Masspite and in bluer other ships of the fleet, and for a great leak that was sprung in the Mount-guard, and for that (which moved their Lordships most of all) her maiesties commandment that they should stay for but five months in this voyage. All which reasons duly considered, the lords generals now shaped their course directly for Engl., and upon the 7. and 8. daies of August they arrived with their whole fleet in Plymouth safely thanks be giuen to Almighty God, who hath so blessed her maiesty and her ministers in all her doings and enterprises, with so much honor and good successe, as he hath made her the mirror of all princely felicitie in this world. Thus far of the expedition to Cadiz.

In this meane space, to witte, on the 15. of June, Richard Fletcher Bishop of London deceased, at his palace in Paules church yard, and was buried in his Cathedral Church.

Bishoppe of London deceased.

The 22. of July, the right honorable Henry Cary Baron of Hunsdon, and L. Chamberlaine to the queene, deceased at Somers set house in Strand street, without Temple bar, and was honorably buried at Westminster.

Lord chamberlaine deceased.

About the same time also deceased the right honorable Sir Francis Knoles, one of her Maiesties private Counsell.

The 15. of August betwene the houres of eight and nine of the clocke at night, a house of timber, lately set by very high, and not fully finished, nere

Fenst. in by fall of an house.

to Saint Brides Church in Fleetstreet, suddenly fell downe, and with it one old house adioyning, by the fall whereof the good man named Cox, with a man seruant and a child were killed.

*The Duke of Boloine came into England.*

The twentie nine of August, the Duke of Boloine being arrived in England, came to the Court then at Greenwich, and there by her Maiesties othe confirmed the league of amity and peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France: and shortly after soldiers were sent ouer to aide the French, in their wars against the Spaniards.

*The Earle of Shrewsburies ambassage into France.*

Presently vpon the departure of the Duke of Bullion, the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewsbury was sent into France to take the oth of Henry the fourth French king, for the confirmation of the saide League, as also to trust the said king with the order of the Cartar: the manner where of being carefullie obserued by M. William Segar then Somerset Herault, I haue set downe according vnto his owne description as followeth.

We departed from Dover on Thursday the 16. day of September 1596. and arrived at Depe in France the Thursday seauen night following, where both the Ambassadors, the right Honorable the Earle of Shrewsbury, and Sir Anthony Myldmay Knight, were very nobly entertained, and seated, the first night by the Commander of Depe, Mounseur de Chasse, who was invited the next day to dinner and requited by the Earle, and so during the unshipping of their horse, and other their provisions, their Lordships passed the time in hunting for two or thre daies.

Monday the 27. following, the Earle set forthwarde to Roane, the capitall Towne of Normandie, and was mette on the way by Mounseur Feruagues, and his traine, who conducted his L. that night to the Castle of Cleve, where he lodged.

Wednesday his L. proceeding on was encountered within two miles of the Citie of Roane, by the Duke Mountpenser, the kings Lieutenant the reof, and about 200. horse, of nobles and gentlemen his attendants, who bringing his Lordshippe to his lodging, after some ceremonies of honorable entertainment toke his leave: his Lordships lodging was in the market place, called Le March Veux, in a very faire house, furnished with rich hangings and tapits, thre clothes of estate, and two standing beds.

The Wednesday seuenight following, being the first of October, the king made his rofall entrie into Roane, in which entring sundrie messages passed betwene the king and the Ambassadors, praying them not to thinke the time long of his coming, for that he was to attende a preparation which the townes men had purposed for his welcome, having neuer bin in the citie before: the manner whereof, for it was verie princelie, and full of rare deuices, I haue thought good to insert.

In the suburbs of the towne on the farther side of the river, was newlie erected for the king a most statelie roome, made of plaister of Paris, where his highnes stode with his possibilitie to beholde the companies, and severall Classes both of horse and foote, and to receive the townes mens submissions as they passed, which was most humbly performed by fire of enerie company,

and of his Maestie most grationlie accepted.

First the Order of the Friars Capuchins followed their Crosse, being of wood, vpon which a Crowne of thornes and thre great nayles were fast, their habit was Russet, all bepatched, girt with hempen cordes, shirtd with haire-cloth, and bare footed, wearing sandals onely. This order may haue but one habit for a man during his life, the same standing, and kleepe sitting, the pluse by almes, and are much esteemed of the people.

Secondly, the Gray Friars being Cordeliers followed their Crosse of silver. This order haue a Librarie in their house, containing fire and fiftie paces in length, with thre rowes of bookes all along, replenished with many excellent bookes both of Philosophie, and the fathers, the most parte Manuscript.

*Large Librarie of bookes in Roane.*

Thirdly followed the Carmelites, and Celestins. Fourthly, the Jacobins. Fifthly, the Augustins. Then proceeded the Priestes, and Chantres of the towne in their Surplices, singing, bearing 42. Crosse of silver, which was the full number of the parishes, and chappels in the towne, and every crosse had a great banner of a Saint, richly painted thereon, besides two tapers of white waxe in aulter candlesticks, borne by youths, and every taper armed with an Escutcheon of the kings armes.

Then followed the Spint-masters of Normandy, the merchants of the County of the River, Receivers, Customs, Treasurers, Advocates, Procurators, and other officers of the palace.

Then came Bachelers, and Masters of Arte, Doctors of Physicke, Civil lawe, and Diuinitie. All these degrees were clothed in very faire and reuerent garments, of damaske, satten, and blacke velvet, long and large, and for the most part riding vpon mules, distinguished by bidders that made way before them.

Then followed in Gownes of purple cloth, and hoods of the same, with square cappes on their heads, the Officers and Councillers of the Chamber of Normandie, in which is kept their high court of Chancerie, and Parliament.

Then came riding on mules to the number of foure in scarlet, called De la robe rouge, being Judges, and Officers of estate, belonging to the saide Chamber.

After them toke place, the foure Presidents of Normandie in Robes of scarlet, furred with Calaber, wearing on their heads great caps of maintenance of blache velvet.

Then proceeded the seuerall bandes of the Towne, containing foure regiments of foote, and thre coronets of horse, sited in greene, russet, and carthasian satten, and velvet, garnished with silver lace, their hats, plumes, scarfes, and shoes white: the furniture of their muskets, fether staves, and partisans, suitable to their colours, their ensignes, coronets, and standards all white, emblazoned with the kings armes, and enriched with his device, which was a Roseman H. Crowned, betwene two branches (as I take it) the one an Olive, the other a Laurel, his motto, or word, *Has dedie, His dabit vrbis.*

After

After vpon great Conlers rode for tie enfant d' Honeur o; Henchmen, the properest and thickest young men of the towne, laced in greene Weluet hoysmens coates, richlie laced with Siluer, their Caparisons and trappings admirable, their plumes, scarfs, and boates white.

Then came all the Galliauntes and young Gentlemen of the French court (cojacketing and fetching by their great horse) accompanied with blazers of the Nobilitie, as Barons, Vicountes, and Carles, the Kinghtes of the Saint Esprite were knowne by their blew Ribandes, and white Crosses hanging thereat.

The Chauncello; Monsieur Cheuemy rode alone after his mace.

The Archbishop of Rheims, did ride betwene the Bishops of Amolo and Carcuz.

Then marched the Kinges thre guardes after their Drummes and fifes. The Swilders with holte and pikes, the Scots and French with Halberds, the Kings Trumpets in hoysmens coates of greene Weluet, and vertie well mounted, then tooke they place, and sounded oftentimes, as they passed. Monsieur Suraine B. of the ceremonies, and one of the Captaines of the garde rode together, after whome followed thre Heraultes, Amolo, Picardie, and Byptaine, inuelled in rich coates of Purple Weluet, embroidered with the Armes of France, each bearing his name in capitall letters of gold vpon the left manch.

Then followed two Sergeants of Armes, carrying maces before the person of the King, who that daie was mounted on a white Courser, his olone apparell plumes, and hoyses furniture white, wearing the order of the Saint Esprite at a broad blew Ribande about his necke. About his person were his Guardes of Scottes, and certaine footemen in white. And after him followed the Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, Duke Joyeuse, and others.

It came thus the King going to the Citie, and let vs by the waie of preparation know how the same was ordered for his entertainment.

Some five or six daies before the King made his entrie, the Bailiffs of Roane commanded by sounde of Trumpet that all the strates through which his maiestie should passe, should be clenfed, sanded, and their signes taken downe, hanging forth their fairest coveringes, and Tapits at their Windows, and to erie Vive le Roy as hee passed. All which beeing in a readines, the Windows full of people of all degrees, the strates garded with certaine ensignes of muskets, and infinite numbers of common people in euery quarter.

His Maiestie by this time was come to an vtter gate betwene the bidge and the Suburbs, which in the late warre had bene more than halfe ruined. This gate in two or thre daies with plaster of Paris they had halfe repaired, and the other halfe remained in ruin for explication of a deuise, which was this. On the toppes of the Gate were certaine personages made of plaster, some carrying of stones, some mortar, some heaving, some leveling, and al to witte, that they seemed to want nothing, but vertie motion. Vpon the arches of

the part repaired save Apollo, with his lyze, vnder whome in golden letters, was written this prophesie.

*Henrico totum reparabitur auspice regnum.*

And ouer the Postall,

*Gallicarum urbium refectorem.*

The King being past this gate, hee came to the first Gate of the Bidge, which was made of twelue columns about foureteene foote of height, the base bodie, Capitall, frize, and Cornish, after the order Ionica. Ouer the Arch the whereof in a table of embossed work save a personage representing Solomon, resting her backe against two Leoparbes (the Armes of the Dutchie) in her left hande, she helde a Hart, her right hande shee put forth to a figure, resembling the King, who seemed to raise her bp, vnder her was written, *Damiferæ dextram*, and ouer her certaine droppes distilling from the Heauens. Then in golden letters vnder the Kings armes (which was embased with lotus palmes) were these verses in French thus englished.

O doubled branches, for Conquerors ordaind,  
If Henries name, for Crownes hath you not gaind,  
Bowing downe your toppes, for to be wretched  
You cannot giue him your honors triumphant,  
No more then this streame, can yeeld water currant,  
Valeffe from higher spring it be receiued.

The King hauing viewed the deuise, and read the verses, passing further vnder the rose o; bank of the gate, ouer his head certaine cloudes opened, and there descended vpon him the similitude of the holte ghost, and an angel presented vnto him a sword, called the sword of peace, before the opening of which cloud, a voice was heard, as from God saying:

Heavenly moouing spirits, stable intelligences,  
Cleue through, make way for this sprites descent;  
Presenting from one heauen, of thousand influences  
To one speciall monarke, one speciall present.

Henries mine annointed, he feares me, I him loue,  
Yeeld him due honor, the honor shall be mine:  
All kings are Gods, and as my selfe above,  
Dispose both good and bad, on earthly line.

The Angel descending saith:

Stay mighty monarke stay, the heavenly monarke sends  
To thee this sword of peace, with good and happy day:  
Take it, but in thy blisse, a modest heart intends,  
Himselfe who raisech, fals; and Gods loue loofethraye.

He hath giuen thee the sword in fields victorious,  
And that which to no other could be giuen so:  
One more of peace did rest for thy hand glorious,  
Receiue it from above, for to command below.

Threefold great by these, thou maist thrice happy make,  
France vnder thee to yeeld, thy scepter greames bring;  
Pursue this good (therefore) the price for gracious take,  
The which about thy browes, makes thouland laurels spring.

**The Angell ascending saith:**

Reioice yet heaueus, since peace which yor hath lesse  
Returned is on earth, to dwell with Henry,  
Who for his neighbours good, of ioy berefte  
Meris for his, that men one day be forye.

Earth do as much, tapet thy selfe with flowres  
And sundry fruites, that henceforth may encrease,  
All things without mans Art, or handy labours:  
For golden age is where there reigneth peace.

Then liue thrice happy, and content this prince,  
Who chiefe of world, and peace, is made this day,  
Of all the world heele make but one province,  
If there be kings, these kings shall him obay.

After these wordes delivered by the angell, the king proceeded out the  
hugge of Roane, which was garbed by five or six hundred swissers, al in bright  
armour, and Spanish pikes, untill hee came to the other gate of the hildge,  
which entered into the towne, the building of which gate was after the order  
rustique, rising thre degrees, baying upon the one corner of the first degree, a  
boynd with a Cupid riding on his backe, vnder which was written, *Dux A-*  
*mor est fidei*. And on the other corner, an Ore, with another Cupid, subscr-  
bed, *Vires fruantur Amore*. Upon the corners of the second degree, stood foure  
Eritons, or mare men with trepents in their hands, and aboue them vpon  
the third degree, was created a personage representing Roane, with a lambe  
standing, and laying one foote vpon the knee of the figure, ouer which was  
written, Nowe, it is to be understood, the lambe is the armes of the Citie,  
which in an Epigram made vnto the king was thus described.

O King your lambe before our wretched boile,  
Was wont to beare vpon her humble backe  
The golden fleece, like that of Colchos Ile,  
But certaine newcome Argonauts (alacke).  
Haue her oft times so barely cut and thorne,  
That on her body poore, and all forlorne,  
You scarce with paine, can find at all to pull  
One simple fleece, or litle locke of wooll.

The king passing through this gate, the towne had prepared for him a Ca-  
napie of purple velvet, richly embrodered with his armes, and device, and  
flower deluces streined all over, which canapie was carried ouer him by six  
henchmen

henchmen apparelled in the sute, from thence he went by the streets called  
La Rue du Pont. where was set up a very stately Pyramide, about 100. fute  
of height, on which was set forth in painting of Copper colours the labours  
of Hercules. vnder the topp whereof was a great Sunnie of golde, bearing the  
king crowned H vpon the points of his beames: the figure of this Pyra-  
mid was caried from the Bate, by a pedestall by foure Sophistes guild, and  
on the one side of the saide Bate, was written Hercules Gallicus, and on the  
other side in letters of golde vpon table, French verses thus Englished.

Hercules, and Henry, are semblable

In vertues, wordes, and Actes,

But that Hercules is in the fable,

And Henry in the Fades.

Here the king turned downe the streete called Ozou, where were set up  
two figures of plaister, vpon Antique Bases, both vndernamed in Greke  
characters. The first called Noble historie, held in her one hand a shalme, and  
in the other an Imperiaill Crowne, and scepter, treading vpon armour, and  
other martiall engines. The other figure was quite fighted Justice, holding  
a sword and ballance, and treading vnder her feete a number of blase, or  
maskes, signifying falsehoods, betwene them both was written in golden  
letters vpon a tur, certaine French verses to this effect.

Kings which for honour bore name of August

(Or happy Cæsars) preferred by History,

Acknowledge Henry more valiant and iust,

Would beare no other but the name of Henry.

So the kings passing through the streete named Le Rue de la Vis-  
count, at the streets end opposite his coming forth into the high street, there  
was raised a docthe pillar about 20. fute of height, on the top whereof stood  
Fame, treading downe death, holding a crowned H on one hand, and a trump-  
et with a bannerroll of France in the other, which when the kings trumpets  
in passing by sounded, Fame raised her trumpet to her mouth, and seemed to  
sound also, turning her selfe round about, which motion was most cunning-  
lie wrought by an engine belowe within the Bate. And vpon the out-side  
of the Bate, leaning against the pedestall, sat Pallace, and Peace; treading  
vpon Enue, who was set forth like a scie, with haies of snakes, and a  
murdering knife in her hand. Over these figures sat Historie sitting, and  
looking vp to Fame, vnder whom were written these Latin verses.

*Delicium historia, & fama sed vera canenti;*

*Henricum reges exemplar habet futuris;*

*Ut fuisse populos, & bello, & pace regat.*

O future kings example take by Henry,

Histories delight, and Fames, most true report,

Q q q q

That:



That you may rule, and gouerne prosperously,  
Your people both in warre and peacefull sort.

Under these verses was painted a Lion breathing forth Bees, but without either whistle, or allosion.

As being passing on through the Diall gate, there was an Arch, resembling Apollos temple, richly wrought of herbage, & fashioned like wreathed pillars; adorning to which was a little towre, wheron a wall was painted in prospect diuers Metamorphoses, as Daphne pursued by Apollo, & turned to a Laurel: Pan embracing Siringa, as she became a Reede; Europa & Iupiter, & such like. In which Arch was excellent musique heard, both for voice and instruments. All which being a while staid vnto by his maiesty, he proceeded to the Streetes end, turning to our Lady church (called Postcardame) where was erected a most magnificent Arch triumphall of plaitter, after the order Corinthique, on the toppe whereof upon a great Globe of the worlde, stood the Figure of the king in his Roman Robes, supported by two personages; the one Prudentia who crowned him with a crowne of Starres, the other Fortitude, who offered him a Scepter wreathed about with Laurell-bayes. In this Occasion, beheld him Clemencie; and round about him like aethers, ensignes, drummes, trumpets, and other martiall instruments: at either corner sate a huge Lyon of golde supporting the armes of France and Spawarte, and on the one side of the gate stood Enuie, bound in chaines feeding of her own hart, and on the other side a man of armes sitting a sleape on a drummes head, by whose side was written Securitie. Over the Diall-gate, vnder the Globe were written Latin verses thus translated.

To some for feare, to some for Clemencie,  
Are prizes giuen; but fourth king Henrie  
Excelling other kings in both, and both conioynde  
In him by wisdom, hath also adioynde,  
Vnto these three, a fourth (occasion)  
Which if it stand, with lawes probation,  
Hath sworne her selfe to be companion,  
Yoking worlds to France by king Bourbonion.

Opposite to this Arch-triumphall, upon two Rustique pillars (distingui-  
shed above 20. fote asunder) stood two Figures of plaitter, the one of Saint  
Leuin in his Angly Robes, holding a Scepter in one hand, and a berge in  
another; on the top whereof was a hand pointing to the king which stood on  
the Globe, with this verse vnderwritten. *Mille tua virtute mea maxima  
suis.* The personage on the other pillar, was Sambetha, one of the Sibils,  
who likewise pointed to the kings proportion, and presented to the beholders  
a table with this prophete in Latin, Enligthes thus.

Sambetha I of Sibils chiefe, an Hebrew by offspring,  
Glad Oracles bring to the French, and vnto thee O king.

The

The earth did neuer boast her selfe of any child so much,

As France (O Henry) shall reioyce that thou their king art such,  
Peace being to the people brought, a thousand armies strong,  
Dreadlesse shall march and follow farre thy battailes all along,  
Where Tagus, and Durias sweet, with goodly golden land,  
And where Idume for thy selfe holdes wpoorthy palmes in hand,  
Thou being Captaine, souldiers shall retorne with laden spoiles  
Of Easterne and the Westerne wealths, and shall bring to their soiles,  
Triumphant signes, and trophies backe; O king their countrey wone,  
Fame shall etemall crownes thee giue, for that which thou hast done.  
Lue thou therefore now all our yeeres, and Nestors longest date,  
Worlds loue, to people giuing lawes, made quiet by thy state.

The king going through this Arch Triumphall, he presently entred the  
Cathedral church of Postcardame, with all the ecclesiastical pompe that  
might be, from whence, after certaine ceremonies which entertained him  
for a time, he returned more ppiately in his coach to his Court, being fol-  
lowed by a Cardinals house, adioyning to Saint Owens Church, and thus the  
kings entrie ended with the day, being performed with great honoz, charge,  
and appoyntments of all sorts of people.

The 7. of October, the right honorable A. L. Embassadors had audience  
of the king, who most princely received, embraced, and welcommed them  
both, as also all other the Lordes, Knights, and Gentlemen their atten-  
dants.

The 9. of October the fidelitie of the of confederation betwene the king  
and the Quene's maiestie of England, was very solemnly taken in the  
Church of S. Owen, in the presence of the French nobility. Lords spirituall,  
and tempozall, who that day tooke the right hand of the quire.

Sunday being the morrow after, the order of the Carter was most ro-  
ally performed in the said Church, where both the Princes had their estates,  
and armes erected. The Quenes fidelitie being Sovereigne of this order  
had that day the right hand of the quire: & so had the right honorable Carle,  
her maiesties Embassador his armes, title, and stall accordingly. Before her  
maiesties estate sate Maister William Dechicke, Carter principall king of  
armes in his Robe of the Order. Before the Carle stood William Segar So-  
merlet Herault: Next vnto the Carle sate the Lord Embassador Liege. Then  
the Lord Cromwell, the Lord Rich. and all other knights and gentlemen accor-  
ding to their qualitie. On the left hand sate the king, betwene the two Bi-  
shops of Anioin, and Curent. Before the kings estate sate his Chancelor  
Monsieur Cheuery alone. And before him stood Anioin, Picardy, & Britaine,  
heraulds of armes. In the hals sate the knights of the Saint Eprit, who as  
farre as I doe remember were these, Duke Montpensire, Duke de Neuers,  
Duke de Namours, the Prince de Vaudemont, Duke Montmerancé Con-  
table, and his brother the Abbot, Duke Joyeuse, Duke de Bullion, the  
Marshall de Roz, and the Marshall Marignoni.

Of the fa-  
delitie ta-  
ken by the  
French  
king.

The French  
king im-  
posed with  
the order of  
the Carter.

All thing being accomplished with much honor, the kings maiestie innered and forth, the helpers ended, and the benediction given by a bishop in his Pontificalibus, the king taking the Carle by the hand, returned as they came, attended upon by the nobility, who two, & two proceeded before them. That night the king and the Carle supped together under one estate in the house of Duke Monpenser; where also was a generall feast for all the English.

The 14. of October the king took the Carle into his coach, and went to the bridge of Roan, to see a sea fight upon the River, which was performed by two French Shippes, against two supposed Spaniards, and one Brazilian (large boates armed and prepared for that purpose, with muskets, pikes and Hargubuze a Crooke) where after one houres fight, the Brazilian was sank, and the Spaniards forced to flee, by the French. This pastime was done by the townesmen, for the kings most delight.

The 15. the right honorable Carle with his attendants took leave of the Kings maiestie, and kissing his hand departed with great loue, honor, and reputation.

The sixteenth of October, his Lordship set forth of Roan, and came that night to Dape, being accompanied with the commander thereof, Monsieur de Chaste, where he remained for convenient passage, ten dayes after.

The 26. of October, the Quenes maiesties Shippes being come, his Lordship embarked himselfe in the Admirall, and arrived at the Portones nere Dover the day next following.

Rewarde given by the right honorable Gilbert Carle of Shrewsbury in his Embassage of France.

To Monsieur Suraine a Chaine of gold of 100. pound.

To the chiefe Comptroller a Chaine of 80. pound.

To the second Comptroller a Chaine of 62. pound.

To the third Comptroller a Chaine of 58. pound.

To spahem Matriana a marshall woman, a Jewell of 20. pound.

To Monsieur Civile 100. crownes.

To the Cookes, and other Officers of the Kings, 600. crownes.

To the Musicians 20. pound.

To Sir Henry Palmer Admirall of the Quenes Ship, in which his Lordship went, a Jewell of the Quenes picture, and a ring sent to his Lady.

To the Mariners of the Quenes Shippes in way of largesse amongst them a 50. pound.

Rewarde given by the King.

To the Carle her Spalesies Embassador, a Jewell with a very rich Diamond therein.

To master Garter principall of Armes 500. crownes.

To Somerset Herald 200. crownes.

This yere, like as in the month of August, so in September, October, and November, fell great rains, whereupon high waters overflowing the low

low grounds. Wheate and other graine grew to great price, so that wheate meale was solde at London for ten shillings the bushell, Rye at six shillings, Tyme at eight shillings the bushell, &c.

The 17. of November, a day of great triumph for the long, prosperous, and triumphant raigne of her Maiestie at the Court, the Carle of Cumberland Champion for the Quene, the Carles of Essex, Bedford, Southampton, and Suffex, with other, ran at the Race most bravely.

Sunday the first of December, great numbers of people being assembled in the Cathedrall church of Wells, in Somerseth shire, in the sermon time before noon, a sodaine darknes fell among them, a storme and tempest followed, with lightning and thunder, such as overthrew to the ground them that were in the body of the church, all which church seemed to be on a light fire, a tofome French fellowing some stones were thrown out of the bell tower, the wyers and pions of the hodge were molten, and no timber beams which tempest being ceased, and the people come to themselves, some of them were found to be marked with sundry figures in their bodies, and their garments not perished.

In the Countie of Kent, in the parish of Wickham, a mile and a halfe from the towne Southward, not farre from the East side of a common high way, called Wickham hill, leading from London towards Buckhurst in Sussex, two closes of ground lying together, separated with a hedge of Hollow albes, &c. On the 18. of December was found a part thereof for xii. perches long to be sunke vi. fote and a halfe deepe, the next morning xvi. fote moze, the third morning 80. fote moze at the least, and so from day to day, that great trench of ground containing in length about 80. perches, and in breadth 28. began with the hedges and trees thereon to loose it selfe from the rest of the ground lying round about it, & withall to move, slide, and shote Southward day and night for the space of xi. dayes. The ground of two water-pittes, the one vi. fote deepe of water, the other xii. at the least, and about xlii. perches over in breadth, having sundry tuftes of Alders and Aspes growing in the bottoms, with a great rocke of stone under them, were not onely removed out of their places, and caried towards the South, at the least foure perches a peece; but withall mounted aloft, and become hills; with their sedge, flagges, and blacke mudde upon the toppes of them, higher then the face of the water (which they had broken) by 5. fote, and in place from which they are removed, other ground (which lay higher) is risen, receiving the water lying now upon it. Somewhat in one place of the plaine selfe there is a great hole made by sinking of the earth, to the depth of thirtie fote at least, being in breadth in some place two perches over, and in length five or six perches. Elsewhere there is a hedge of thirtie perches long caried Southward with his trees, leaven perches at the least; sundry other sinkings there be in others places, one of fiftie and five fote, an other of thirtie and seaven, and an other of thirtie and foure fote, by meanes of all which confusion, it is come to passe, that where the highest hills were, there be the deepest dales, and the lowest dales are be-

Ann. reg.

39. Great triumph for the prosperous raigne of her Maiestie.

Tempest in the City of Wells.

A strange earth moving.

come the highest grounds. The whole measure of the breaking ground was at the last 9 acres, 7 day workes and foure perches, &c. The witnesses for testimony of truth hereof, were Robert Boocke Chiefe Justice of peace, James Aulkin, Sir Iohn Studley Vicar of Westham, Iohn Dawling Gentleman, and many other.

The moneths of December, January and February, continued cold and moyste, also March colde but by with extreme frosts, Aprill cold showers, May colde and drye, &c. by means of which weathering, and pouison for at sea, all kinde of victuals kept at an high price, as well fish as fowle, whilst meate and whatsoeuer, Butter was still sold for vii. d. or viii. d. the pound.

This yeare in the moneth of May, great preparation being made to the Seas, soldiers were pressed in the Citie of London, to the number of 550. and all their furniture was prepared at charges of the Citizens: these were daily for a long time trained in the fields also at the charges of the Citizens, out of which number was picked 400. the residue, were dismissed: these and other like picked men out of diuers Cities (besides soldiers) consisted of 6000. able men for land service, amongst the which were of Knights & gentlemen voluntaries, to the number of 500. or better, very gallant persons, and as handsomely furnished of all things necessary (besides superfluous in golde lace, plumes of feathers, and such like). These commanders were as followeth, Robert Deuereaux Earle of Essex, atwell Admirall by the sea, as Generall of the army by land, his vice-admirall L. Thomas Howard knight of the order, his vice Admirall Sir Walter Raleigh knight, captain of the guard, and L. of the Staranaries. For the land service, his lieutenant generall, was Charles L. Mountjoy knight of the order, his marshal of the field, Sir Frances Vere knight, colonell generall of the English forces in the Low-countries: master of the ordinance, Sir George Carew knight, L. president of the council: his seriant major, Sir Ferdinand Gorge knight, gouernor of 5 forts at Plymouth: the treasurer of the army, Sir Hugh Belsion knight, &c. The whole nauie deuided into three squadrons, consisted of 6. score saile, whereof 3. score were good men of war, the rest victualers, & ships of transportation of her maiesties ships, the number was 17. or 18. there were of this nauie 5. saile of good men of war, sent from the States of the Low-countries, to attend her maiesties fleet in this service, well manned & furnished. The residue of the fleet, consisted of the best shipping of London & other the most townes, together with sundry vessels belonging to the Lords & gentlemen adventurers in this voyage. The purpose of this preparation was for the taking of 3 Islands of Alores, which was resolved to haue bin taken & possessed by our Englishmen, there to haue placed strong garisons. This army & nauie meeting at Plymouth, embarked, & set saile about the ix. of July, but bring some 60. leagues on wards their iorney, there suddenly arose a fierce & tempestuous storme that against them, & so continued for 4. dayes, in so great violence that they were at forced back againe into Plymouth bayne, where they remained six weekes, ere all things could be ordered & repaired. On the 17. of August they againe weighed anchors, & set saile, making with many stormes & soile weathers, whereby they were dispersed, but on the 15. of Sept. they met at the Islands, where the gouernors of Flores and Euernes came to

Voluntary  
gallants to  
the sea in  
great num-  
ber.

Ships in  
this fleet.  
Earles  
Barons, &  
South-  
ampton.  
Lords, Gray  
Rich, and  
Coomwell.

Ships to  
the sea, for  
taking the  
Isles of  
Alores.

Flores and  
Island. &  
Euernes.

the Generall and himselfe themselves to him, bringing with them fruites and other fresh victuals, craving at his hands safeguard from the spoile of his men, which was granted vnder his seale.

At the Island of Fayall, the vice Admirall took a strong towne & forts thereof, boasting the country about, before the coming of the Generall thither, who refreshing himselfe & his followers there for some 4. dayes or better, he burnt the towne and brought away the ordinance both of the towne and forts.

In the meane time the Squadron of Flemings were playing their part in 5 parts of Pike, cancking the wines, & burning all 5 was within their power. The 26. of September, from Fayall the fleet made toward the Ile of Gratiola where they cast anchor, & presently came aboard our generall, 5 chiefe men of that Island submitting themselves & craving mercy, which they obtained by condition to send refreshing to the fleet, which they willingly performed.

From thence our fleet made for S. Michaels Island, & as they came very nere vnto it, two of the foremost ships of that fleet that of twisse or thysse, & bare by towards the Admirals ship, these brought newes of the Indian fleet, by them discovered, coming for the road of Gratiola, which the Generall had so lately left: vpon this intelligence our Admirall shot off a peece, & cast about, 5 like was done by the vice-admirall, & so through the fleet. Within few houres after, our fleet encountered & took the Spanish ships, coming from the Hauana. These ships made relation of 40. sailes of Indian men (whereof some 8. were freighted with the kings treasure) vpon this intelligence of the passing by of those Indian ships, our fleet followed after them to the Terres, where they were some 6. houres entered before, & had moored their ships so fast vnder the towne & fort (being one of the best portes of all Europe) that after a long dispute, our generall, and L. Mountjoy in the Desiance, & other tall ships bare in as close alongst the shore as they could, exchanging some 15. or 20. great shot with them, & so left the Ile of Tassora, & returned againe to S. Michaels Island, let fall their anchors before the towne, where, after diuers viols taken for a convenient landing place, it was at length agreed that Sir Walter Raleigh, should with all the strength of the fleet lie before the towne, whilst the generall, with all the land commanders and some 2000. men embarked into small barks & pinnaces, secretly in the night did conuey themselves about 5 point, to land at a towne called Villa Franca, some five miles off, where they arrived safe, & were laided by 5 next morning without any resistance. Those left in the best ships before the towne of S. Michael, did all that night vse their alarmes, to giue the land army the better means to go in secret, & to come vnbloked for on the land side of the towne of S. Michael, as was promised. They in 5 ships looked out all the next day, hoping to see their troopes marching over the hills & plaines, but the towne of Villa Franca, being seated in a pleasant soile, full of fruites, vines, and fresh victuals, the sellers stuffed full of Wade and wheate, the army was content there to ingarison six dayes together, feasting themselves and carping aboard of wheate, Wade, and other marchandise, into private mens ships, that followed for that purpose, whilst the fleet before Saint Michaels, gaped for the coming of their land army. A Bayell-man laden with sugar and Bayzell-wood, let fall his Anchor in the middle of them, & there

Favallan  
Island.

Gratiola  
an Island.

5. ships  
an Island.

Terres  
an Island.

Villa Fran-  
ca, a rich  
towne of  
marchan-  
dise, and  
very com-  
fortable.

A Bayell  
man laden  
with sugar  
and wood.

And a  
great Ca-  
rack fol-  
lowed of  
1400. tun.

A rich Ca-  
rack bar-  
ned.

Arthur  
Georges  
Knight.

As I have  
from the  
King of  
Polonia.

whom they take as prize, and a little after him a mighty Carack followed, thinking (as the Brazil man did) our fléete to haue bene the Spanish Armado, whereupon the reuerend Admirall Sir Walter Rawleigh, commanded all the flags to be taken downe off our ships, that no man should know an Anchor, shot off a peece, or put off boate, but by direction: all which time the Carack bare in with full saile: but suddenly one of the Flemish Squadoon, contrary to all direction given before, hooped Anchors, hoysed saile, and made towards the Carack (now ready to double the point that entered the Roade) and made a shotte at her, whereupon the discovering our fléete to be enemies, changed her course, and ranne her selfe a ground hard under the Solons and Foyle, and there set her selfe on fier in many places at once. She was a ship of 1300. or 1400. tunnes laden with Sugar, and other rich commodities. This tragedie thus ouer past, our fléete againe looked out for comming of our land-armie, but all in vaine, for they neither came, nor sent, and thus was a great peece of seruice, very vnfortunatly neglected and lost. The same night the Generall sent to command all the fléete to wepe, and come for Villa Franco, so left they Saint Michaels god towne: and then approached the time of yere, that brought with it violent stormes, & foule weather to those Islands, whereof, upon the meeting of the whole fléete before Villa Franco, a generall commaundement was given, that all sorts should with speede repaire aboaze their ships, for the winde and seas began to rise. Thus on the 9. of October they set saile for England, and landed on the west coasts thereof, about the end of October. There were in this voyage taken, besides Spaniards, three god prizes that came from the Hauana, laden with Cocbinella, and other rich marchandise, besides the silver, golde, pearles, Cit, Muske, and Ambergrée. And these three prizes (whereof one was about 400. tun) by report of those marchants that came in them, were valued to be worth about 400000. ducats, and thus much for this voyage to the Isles of Afores, whereof Sir Arthur Georges knight, then Captaine of her Maiesties ship called the Walspight, hath largely written, and learnedly discoursed, in his Booke, intituled; A plaine and true relation of the voyage made vnto the Isles of the Afores, &c.

This summer arrived at London an Orator from the king of Polonia; Sigismund the third, sonne to Duke Iohn of Finland, that after was king of Sweden, and was a long while here in England. This Embassado; was named Paulus de Saline, a Gentleman of that Countrey, he brought letters of credence from the king dated the 19. of May last past, and had audience the 25. of July, at the Court then at Greenwich: whose oration in Latin beginning, *Serenissima princeps, domina Clementissima, sacra Regia maiestas. Polonia dominus meus clementissimus, &c.* The effect of his speech after princely congratulations, what god entertainment her Maiesties subjects had in his dominions, as his owne subjects, and contrary to which, his subjects were in England deprived of all their former olde priuiledges, and liberties of trade, graunted them by her Maiesties predecessors, and consequently were deprived of all trade and traffique on her kingdome. And notwithstanding his

subiects

subiects hath made severall complaints, of the which he must haue a care, he could not be moued to diminish any part of his god will toward her Maiestie, and her subiects, but there was of late set forth certaine Poets and exclamations, by the which contrary to the law of nature, his subiects were forbidden the nauigation and trade into Spaine, and under colour thereof, diuers ships of his subiects had bene taken at sea, and their goods made prize, and confiscated, with moze the like iniuries, all the which were such, that it touched not only his marchants, of whom he must haue a care, but likewise all the vniuersall nobilitie of his kingdomes and dominions, for that by the trade, both consist all their linings and reuenues, so that no greater iniury can be done to the king his maister, and the states of his kingdomes: yet for his brotherly loue to her Maiestie, he hath suspended those means of doing the like to her Maiesties subiects, which meanes her Maiestie doth know, he doth not want: he thought good to procede with patience, and so to aduertise her Maiestie thereof, as a good neighbour, and Princes duty doth require. And so: that letters hitherto haue not bene regarded, he had now sent him to require her Maiestie, according to equitie, to make reparation and restitution, and that the trade Westward to Spaine might be free, as it ought to be to all men; by the law of nations, otherwise the king his maister would no longer neglect his subiects losses, but to take in hand such necessary means as might be required. As for the Quenes warres with Spaine, that ought not to hinder his subiects nauigation, by the common law of nature, and there was very olde and good friendship betwixt the king his maister, and the king of Spaine, and betwixt the house of Austria: the King his maister, hauing now renued the olde amitie, by marriage with a daughter of Austria, so that he is bound to maintain the friendship with the king of Spaine, as well as with her Maiestie, euer his request bearing such equitie, he doth trust that her maiestie will take regarde of his protestations, and commaund satisfaction, &c. commending withall some particular sorts and causes. This Oration was presently, learnedly, and eloquently answered by her Maiestie, also in Latin: the effect whereof in English followeth.

Wh, how is I deceiued? I looked for an Embassage, but thou hast brought a complaint vnto mee. I vnderstand by thy Letters, that thou wert a Legate, but I finde thee a Herault, neuer in my life heard I such an Orator of Polonia. I maruell truly, I maruell at so great and such vnaccustomed boldnes in a publick assembly. Neither doe I thinke, if the King were present, that he would say so much, but if peradventure he hath committed any such thing to thy charge (which surely I much doubt) this is the cause: That where the King is young, and not by blood, but by election, and newly elected, doth not so perfectly vnderstand the cause of handling these busineses with other Princes, which eyther his auncestors haue obserued with vs, or perhaps others will obserue, that afterward shall succede in his place. For thy part: Thou seemest to mee, to haue read many bookes, but not to haue come vnto the bookes of Princes,

Answer of  
the Orator  
to the Orator  
of Polonia.

1303

but altogether to be ignorant what is convenient amongst Kings: For thou that makest often mention of the lawe of nature, and nations, knowest that this is the lawe of nature and nations, that when warre doth happen amongst Princes, it is lawfull for the one of them to intercept the warlike helpees of the others, brought from any place, and to beware least they fall to the losse. This I say is the lawe of nature and nations. Whereas thou dost rehearse a new assistance with the house of Austria, which now thou makest so famous, forget not that there have bene of the same house, that would have bereft the kingdome of Polonia from thy king. But for the rest, which be not to be spoken of, at this place, and time, because they are many, and to be considered of, one after another: Thou shalt expect that, which thou shalt understand of some of my Counsell, to whom I will assigne this matter. In the meane time farewell and be quiet.

Shortly after, the sayd Orator, or Poland Embassadour, was called before certaine of her highnesse honorable private counsell, to wit, the Lord Burghley then high Treasurer, the Lord high Admirall, Sir John Forrester, and Sir Robert Cicell Secretary: to whom, after the sayd Poland Embassadour had delivered his speech, which he made before the Queene in writing, and excused his rough kinde of speaking, shewing that by his Commission signed, and sealed by the King in the assembly of the States of Polonia, he was therunto empowered: he received a large answer in the name of her Maiestie, which properly pertaining to the matter of the Spanes, and answering fully and very pertinently the question made by them about their olde privileges, and is set downe to the full, in a Booke intituled, A Treatise of Commerce.

**Great price of bread in Copie.** In this month of August, the price of Wheate at London fell from xiii. shillings the bushell, to ten shillings: Ale from nine shillings, to five shillings, and so to three shillings two pence, but then arose againe to the late greatest price.

**Embassa. do. from Denmark.** This yeere also, Arnald Whitfield Chancelloz of the realme in Denmarke Embassadour, and Christian Barnikan his assistant, from the king of Denmarke arrived here, and were lodged in Fenchurch Street: these had audience at the court then at Ribals in Essex, on the seventh of September, they made certaine requests, which her Maiestie presently answered without pause, to every point of their Embassage.

**Embassa. do.** The first, he required that where as there had remained a long league of amitie betwene the two Crownes of England and Denmarke, both in the life of the late deceased king and his predecessors, that it might please her maiestie to continue, and continue the same to the king his maiester, now newly adopted and crowned.

**Her Maiestie.** Her Maiestie granted thereunto, on condition the king his maiester would promise no worse then his progenitors had done, and in all Christian love accepted thereof.

**Embassa. do.** His request was, that whereas there was great and continuall warres betwene

betwene her Maiestie and the King of Spaine, whereby much Christian blood was shed; to the king his maiester, and all other Christian Kings great griefs, and to the great damage, and danger of Christendome, that it would please her maiestie, if in her wisdom she did see it convenient, to give her consent, that the king his maiester might make a motion of peace, and if he found both parties thereto addicted, to procure further for the effecting thereof.

**Her Maiestie replying,** sayde, she thought the king his maiester was too busy going to knowe the cause of the breach of the league betwene her Maiestie and Spaine, and as it was not broken by her Maiesties consent, nor by any of hers, so it should not be sued nor sought for by her maiestie, nor any in her behalfe, for sayde she: Knowe now, and be it knowne to the king your maiester, and all princes Christian, or Heathen, that the Queene of England hath no neede to craue peace, for I assure you (sayde she) that I neuer endured one houre of feare, since my first coming to my kingdome and subiects.

**Embassa. do.** He was to desire, if it might stand to her maiesties good liking, open trade like with Spaine, and that the goods might not be staide on the narrow seas, as it hath heretofore bene.

**Her Maiestie.** Here Maiestie said, if any his maiesters or subiects goods were so stayed, it was to her unknowne, but if he had any such iust complaint, he should (the matter being made to her counsell knowne) have such redresse, as should well content his maiester, and subiects.

**Embassa. do.** He was to returne the Charter that her Maiestie had bestowed upon the king lately deceased, as the manner of all foraine Princes is to do.

**Her Maiestie.** Her Maiestie accepted thereof, but told him she was lothe to receive it of him, for thereby she was put in minde of the losse of a most honorable brother and loving friend, and so that she were assured of his kings love & felicity in the like sort, she would hereafter to his king his maiester do the like favour.

**Embassa. do.** The Embassadour having his Audience the day that her Maiestie was borne took thereby occasion to say, that when it had pleased God, on that day (which hee was informed was her Maiesties birth day) to glorifie the world with so gracious a creature, who had brought so great happinesse to the Realme, and the neighbour kingdomes, hee doubted not but that the king his maiester should in that happy day, have an happy answer of his request, &c.

**Her Maiestie.** I blame you not to expect a reasonable answer, and a sufficient, but you may thinke it a great miracle, that a child borne at foure of the clocke this morning, should be able to answer so learned and wise a man as you are, sent from so great a Prince as you be, about so great & mighty affaires you speake of, and in an unknowne tongue, by three of the clock in the afternone. And with him more prudent and gracious words she ended, and gave him leave to depart.

**Embassa. do.** The 23. of October the right honorable Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, was created Earle of Nottingham at Westminster.

The

The 24. of October began the Parliament at Westminster: on the which day diuers people were smothered, and crushed to death, pressing betwixt Whitehall, and the Colledge church, to haue seene her maiestie and nobilitie riding to the said parliament, Sir Thomas Gerrard knight-marshal, and his men making way before them.

The 27. of October, her maiestie went by water to the parliament house and prorogued the said parliament, till Saturday the first of November.

Almo reg.  
40.  
Pepper 8.  
shillings  
the pound.

This yere against Christmas Pepper was solde at London for eight shillings the pound, a matter then much noted, considering that not many yeares since, a great Carreck richly laden with diuers marchandise, was taken at Sea, brought to our coasts, the goods thereof in smaller vessels connased to London, and layde vp in the Leaden hall, where the Pepper by Marchants of the Citie, was valued to be worth one hundred thousand pounds, appointed there to be solde, which was done, with restraint that no Pepper (by way of Marchandise) should be brought into this Realme, before sale of the former. Also Raypens was this yere solde for five pence the pound: Calcoine twine it. shillings six. pence the Gallon, sweete wines liii. shillings, &c.

The 20. of December, being St. Thomas tene, the parliament was put off till the 11. of January, on the which day they saie againe.

A great  
frost.

A great frost the ten first dayes of January, so that the riuer of Thamisis was at London very nere frozen ouer, but then it thawed.

Embassa-  
dours into  
France.

Sir Robert Cecil principall Secretary, Maister Harbert master of the Requests, Sir George Carew Maister of the Ordinance, and others prepared for their Embassage into France, and set saile from Douer about the 19. of February.

Singer  
hanged for  
murdering  
his father.

The 25. of January, one named Ainger was hanged at Tyborne, for wilfully and freelie murdering of his owne father a gentleman and counsellor of the law at Graies Inne, in his chamber there.

Parliament  
dissolved.

The ninth of February, the parliament having granted for defence of the realme three subsidies of 4.s. the pound lands, and 2.s. 6.d. the pound goods, and fire fittences: was dissolved and brake vp.

A colde  
spring after  
a colde  
winter.

In the month of March, the beginning thereof, three or foure dayes together were hot, more then ordinary for that time of the yere, but the residue of that month, and the next following very bitter colde, with great windes still West with haile snow, &c.

1598.  
Lightning  
a thunder.

The 26. of March in the afternoone great lightning, thunder and haile, and the weather still colde.

Two 30.  
to wine  
burned.

On the third of April, the faire and rich towne of Twisford towne in Devonshire was bent by casualtie of fire. beginning in a poore cottage, a woman there frying pancakes with strawe for lacke of other fuelle, the same fired the house, and so the towne about one of the clocke in the afternoone: the rage of which fire, lasting one houre and a halfe consumed 429. houses, burned downe: one hundred and fifty thousand pound consumed in money, plate, merchandise, household stuffe, and houses, fifty persons, men, women,

and

and children consumed: an almost bounden towne with poore men therein, in the midst of the flames: 2000. pound worthely things bestowed there in the market on marketes, in Devonshire market: 2000. people maintained by the clearing of that towne, in Devon, Cornwall, and Somersetshire. It was the Earle of Devonshires cheif estate, where by standeth his Castell at court place, thus much of this towne, was added to her maiestie, and was thought of many to be a just punishment of God vpon that towne for the ha merchandises of the rich, and small regard of the poore, which were daily liens to perish in the streets of that towne, for lacke of relief.

The first of May, Sir Robert Cecil Secretary, Jo. Hubbert squire master of Requests, Sir George Carew master of the Ordnance, and other the Embassadors, returned out of France, and came to the Court.

About the latter end of May, or beginning of June, Calais and other townes in France, lately holden by the Spanish nation, were upon compositions of peace rendred to the French king.

The Queens of England, for the congratulations of the late marriage solemnized at Copinague the capital Citie in the Realme of Denmark, between Christian the 4. King of Denmark, and the daughter of the Marquis of Brandeburge one of the Princeps Electors of the Empire: abiding, the Lord Zouch theither in Embassage, being assisted by Christopher Perkins Doctor of Lawe, who departed from her in Easter the 1. day of June. The second point of this legation, contained the recommendation of certaine complaints exhibited vnto her Maiestie by her Marchants trading into the East parts, touching a late arrest and detention of their goods in the same, amounting vnto the value of one hundred thousand Talers, vpon a pretect of false and untrue entries of their marchandise, to the detranding of the Kings customs. At which concealements and imputations of fraude, the Marchants themselves pertained in themselves a cleare will, supplying the making of their entries agreeable vnto the custome and usage in all other places, for marchandise of the like natures. Wherunto it was on her Maiesties behalfs desired, that it would please the King to enter into some indifferent and honorable consideration thereof, according to equitie, and to extend his clemencie vnto the Marchants in the release and restitution of their goods, if there should not appeare any fraude in form. Vpon some debating of the cause betwixt her Maiesties Embassador, and his assistant, and some other of the Kings counsell appointed to conferre with them therabouts, and these Danish Commissioners, still insisting vpon the iustitie of the considerations, the King in conclusion condiscended in regarde of her maiestie, to yelde vnto a restitution of thirty thousand Talers. At which offer, if it should please her Maiestie to accept, he would expect her resolution, vntill the feast of Saint Michael the Archangell next. The Lord Zouch and Doctor Perkins hauing receiued their small auctoritie from the King, departed from Copinague the 13. of Iune to Holofner, where the next morning they set saile for England, and returned to her Maiesties presence the first of August following.

Our Embassadors  
returned  
out of  
France.

Calais re-  
turned to  
the French

L. Joucht  
Embassa-  
dor: into  
Denmark.

D Parks  
insent in  
to Dem-  
marke.

In the month of September following, Doctor Parkins was againe disported in a shippage unto the King of Denmarke, to demand a generall restitution of all such goods of her Merchants as had bene arrested and confiscated: for considering that they still complained of the rigor of his commission, and adduced the matter of their entries according to the usage accustomed both here in her Majesties Custom house in England, and in all other countries, whether they resorted for traffike. The Queene reliev'd nothing satisfied with the late offer of the thirty thousand Tallers made unto her by the King. Wherefore in regard of this her Majesties second legation, the King added unto the said graunt of 30000. Tallers, other ten thousand, to be restor'd backe, partly in waies yet extant, and partly in ready money, which somme upon certaine aged by Doctor Parkins, was afterwards receiv'd, and distributed among the merchants damaged by the arrests.

Tallars of  
Dallars.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 1. of July, 19. persons for felony were hanged at Tyborne, and one pressed to death at Pelwate of London.

A challenge  
of all  
men at  
force was  
hanged.

Also John Barrofe a Burgonian by nation, and a Jewell by profession, that lately was come over and had chalenged all the Jewellers of England, was hanged without Advocate, for killing of an officer of the Citie which had arrested him for debt, such was his desperatenesse, and brought such rewarde, as might be an example to other the like.

A Semi-  
mary priest  
executed at  
St. Thomas  
of wateringe.

The 12. of July, one Jones, alias Buckley a Priest made beyond the seas, having bene arraigned at the Kings bench, and there condemned of treason for conspiring into this Realme, contrary to a statute, was by the King's Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered; his head set upon the pillewe in Southwarke his quarters in the high way to waterings Pelwington Lambheath, &c.

Lord trea-  
surer de-  
ceased.

On the 4. of August, Sir William Cecil knight of the Order, Lord Burghley master of the wards and quarters, high treasurer of England, a famous counsellor to the Queene lately all her reign, and likewise had been to Edward the 6. for his singular wisdom was renowned throughout all Europe, departed this mortal life at his house by the Strand; his body was carried to Westminster with solemne funeral, and from thence hither to St. Dunstons, and there buried amongst his successors.

A lightning  
of thunder.

The 11. of September, being Tuesday in the afternoon, lightning and thunder at London, two great Crackes, as it had bene the shooting of great Ordnance, some men smitten at the Porten by the Tower of London, and one man slaine at the bridgehouse in Southwarke over against the Tower of London.

Carle of  
Cumber-  
land re-  
turned from  
the seas.

The 2. of October, the earle of Cumberland came aland about Lambheath of Middlesex besides London, being returned from the seas, and having amongst other valiant aces, made spoile of the strong towne, and Castle of St. John de Portico, &c.

Carle  
executed.

The 9. of November, Edward Seigne of Oxtenwich was arraigned at Westminster, condemned of high treason, and on the 13. was hanged from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered.

The

The 14. of November, the Dutchman made his escape to the Netherlands, and took there by commandement from her countesse, and rapidly received by the Mayor of London, aldermen and the like, to be taken, and a great number of the best shipps of England in velvet coats, and chains of gold, silver, and beeches in the evening by Dutch light and of steel, come upon a point in the morning.

Am. reg.

In the month of December great frosts, the Thames might once freeze at London, but it was about one twike before it began again to freeze on St. Johns day the 27. and a great frost on the 28. so that the Thames might have been frozen as before, but on the 29. it was broken.

41.  
Great  
frosts.

In the beginning of the month of January, continued a hard frost, and in many other places, as also in the City of London, in the streets, and betwixt the walls of all things necessary for the use of the poor Countries, there to continue in houses, and place of the shipps, from thence to be transported and sent into Ireland. All the day more in the city, there fell out eight pence the pound of goods, lands towards this charge.

Souldiers  
into the  
Low  
counties.  
Souldiers  
sent into  
Ireland.

Also in this month great loanes of money were demanded, and at length granted by the Citizens of London, because of her charges at that time imposed upon them.

In the month of Februarie about the 18. day, a great inundation was made by the Citizens of London, for the setting forth of more souldiers into Ireland.

Carle of  
Essex  
lieutenant  
general, came  
through the  
Citie of  
London  
towards  
Ireland.

The 27. of March, about two of the clock in the afternoon, the right honorable Robert earle of Essex, lieutenant general lord high marshall, departed from Seething lane, through Fenchurch street, Grace Church, Churchhill, Cheape, &c. towards Aldersgate, and rode that night to St. Albans, towards Ireland, he had a great traine of noble men, gentlemen, on horse backs before him, to accompany him on his journey, his coaches followed him. He had also (by the pleasure of God) a great shew of twine, of raine, and haile, with some claps of thunder, as he rode through the city.

The month of March, April, & May, cold & dry, but on Wednesday great rains, and high waters, the like of long time had not bene seen: the month of June, and July, hot and drie for the most part, thus much for weathering.

This yeare in the month of August, the beginning thereof, pollicie preventing danger feared to happen, by occasion of some preparation of shipping to have been made in Spaine (as was presumed) to the accompanie of this our estate. The honorable Charles Howard Earle of Nottingham Lord high Admirall of England, was by her Majesties commaundment general of all England, as well by sea, as by land &c. The Citizens of London were charged with the furnishing and setting forth to sea, of twelve shipps, since increased to thirtie: Also with 5000. men, and furniture for the warres, which men were all the more made in a readinesse: Three thousand of the best shipps fitted in the last under Captaine: (this of the same Citie, from the 11. of August, &c. 12. the other shipps thence appointed to attend upon her Majesties royal person, were also likewise trained under Captaine, in three hundred, for they were bound to

Shipps  
sent to  
the Seas  
and men  
trained for  
the warres  
by the Lon-  
doners.



was of good stature, all body charged with purple, by the which, the redness appearing by subsidies taken of the Citizens. After by some commandement from her Majesty, the Chaires were taken thence, the which and sides of the Chaire, and Ambassadors with light of candles, hanged out at every mans doore, there to burne all the night, and so forth, right to the high altar, and great watches kept by the streets, which hanging of light, so continued some four or five nights, as before.

In this meane space, many thousands of horsemen and footmen, chosen for their skill appointed for the warres, trained up in array with their Captaines, under instant Captaines, in divers places, were brought to London, where they were lodged in the suburbs, houses, and villages, where were stopping: from the night of August, till the month of September, in which time the horsemen were trained in Saint James field, the footmen trained in other grounds about the City, and then all discharged homeward, with charge to be attaynes ready at one hours warning. And so it followed that on the five & twentieth of August, being Saturday night, postes were sent after them, to recall the horsemen, presently to returne to London, with all speed possible, in which charge they prepared to performe. But on Monday following the said postes, were likewise sent to staye them at home, or to returne them backe, whose forwardnesse in service of her majesty was lacke, as the like hath not bene seen, or heard of, towards any place of this realme, or other, to the great honour, and comfort of her Majesty, whom God had blessed with so dutifull, loving, and obedient subjects.

The 26. of August being Sunday, before five of the clocke in the morning, by commandement from her Majesty, the 3000. soldiers, trained up by the citizens, were all in armour in the streets, attending on their Captaines till past 7. of the clock, at which time, being thronged by wet by a great storme of raine, they were sent home againe for that day.

On the next morning being the 27. the other 3000. citizens, householders, and souldier men, were on the spiles end, where they trained all that day, and other daies following under their Captaines, also citizens, untill the 4. of September, and so ceased their training for that time, and what sooner had bene feared (a thing unknowne to the commonalty) good peace within this realme hath since followed, which was long time continue and increase amongst us.

In the which time, Robert Earle of Essex, Lieutenant Generall of Ireland, and high Marshall, &c. of late greatly feared, to have pursued England by force of armes, being now unlocked for, in secret manner returned out of Ireland, came to the Courte, then at Popelach, by Surveillant straight to her Majesty, and spake with her, by whom he was commanded to his chamber, where to remaine till he heard further of her Majestyes pleasure: And on the second of October was committed to the Lord High Treasurer, that all manner of graine might be kept within the Realme, but likewise directed them to punish such ingrocers, and sellers of cozne

Counsell (by commandement of the Queene) in the Starre Chamber, proceeded against rancorous talks of the Earle of Essex.

The 23. of November, the Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffes of London in Scarlet, and the commons a great number in Velvet coates and chaines of golde, all well mounted on horsebacke, as of late times had bene used, for honour of the Queene, by commandement, received her at Westminster by Torch-light.

On the 17. of November, the day where on she had bene proclaimed Queene, and had now reigned 41. yeares, was great stuffings and other triumphes, which was not ended in divers daies after.

Sunday the 23. of December, winde West and by South, boystons and great, wherethrough the toppes of many chimneys were overthromme, lead blowne off churches, trees, and barnes blowne downe, and also a flibboute from London towards Graucend lost against Woolwich, with 30. persons, men and women whereof eleven were slaine.

The 12. of January, Henry Adlingworth, a Mercer was hanged without the barres of Allegate, for killing of a man there, and after hanged in chaines on the spiles end.

The 19. of January 16. Priests and 4. lay men, were removed out of divers prisons, in and about London; and sent from thence to the Castle of Wilsheche in Cambridge-shire, whereof one was a Bishop of Ireland, and another a Franciscan Friar of the rule of the Caputians, which were his Priests twode all the way he went, a thing not seen in England many years before.

The 7. of February, the honorable Charles Blunt Lord Mountjoy, having taken his leave at the Court, departed through Holbozne towards Ireland, as Lieutenant there, souldiers out of divers shires were sent before him, and also after him in this month of February, namely the Citizens of London at their owne charges furnished and sent three hundred at that time into Ireland.

The 23. of March being Easter day it snowed and was extreame colde, and so continued till the last of March.

It snowed on the 4. of April, which whole month following, with also the month of May was colde and drye, frosts every morning (except some three daies little raine) which coldnesse of the spring, & drynesse of the ground, made men doubtfull of any good harvest to succede, whereupon, and by meanes of some late transpozting over the seas, procured by the Justices of the shires, but more by unconscionable farmers hoarding by their cozne, badgers, and other cozne-mongers, keeping the same from the markets, as extorting what price they liked, even upon a fodaine, namely, Wheate was raised from three shillings to five, seaven and eight shillings the bushell, still increasing their price. Untill the Queene published by proclamation that her Majesty had, not onely recommended precisely to her counsell and other principall ministers, that all manner of graine might be kept within the Realme, but likewise directed them to punish such ingrocers, and sellers of cozne

as by grubbish laboured to racke things vp to unreasonable prices, &c.

The 21. of June, Iohn Rigby was drawne from the Kings-bench in Southwarke, to S. Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, boweled, and quartered, for being reconciled contrary to the Statute.

Also in the moneth of July, were drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lincolnes; two Priests named Hunc and Spar, for coming into this Realme, contrary to the Statute: two other Priests Edward Thing and Robert Nutcr were likewise executed for the like offence at Lancaster. Also Thomas Palafar a Priest executed at Durham, and a Gentleman with him, for relieving and lodging him in his house.

Souldiers  
sent to Ire-  
land.

Bishop of  
London  
sent Em-  
bassador.

Carle of  
Essex suf-  
fered for  
his offi-  
ces.

Tempest  
of haile.

Essex  
against the  
king of  
Scots.

Prepared  
for an in-  
terview  
peace to be  
had.

In the moneth of July, the Citizens of London set out 500. souldiers in to Ireland, with their furniture, also out of diuers shires were like wise furnished and set out for the warres.

This yere in the moneth of Aprill, Richard Bishop of London, with two other Commissioners, to wit, Christopher Parkins Doctor of Law, and Doctor Swale, was sent in Embassage to Copen, there to treat with Commissioners from the King of Denmarke, according to appointment, but the Danish Embassadors, having bene there, and their commission expired, were returned, whereupon our Embassadors also returned into England the eight of July next following. In which service the said reverend father, so wisely, humbly and honourably behaved himselfe, that her Maieslie very graciously accepted of his proceedings.

The fifth of June the Carle of Essex was called before the councill, at the Lords keepers, where for matters laide to his charge, he was suspended from his of diuers offices, and till her Maiesties pleasure to the contrary, to keepe his house as above, &c.

Upon Wednesday the 16. of June, in the countie of Suffolke, at a towne called Kyles, and other townes adjoining, a great tempest of haile, most of the stones as great as Walnuts, to be taken by the Friday following by handfull, waisted to the bignesse of hassell nuts, many of the stones the length of a mans finger, bent and rugged, the force of the fall of them was so great that they brake the glasse windowes of houses, beate downe the leaues of trees, hore downe the wheat and hempe to a very great quantitie &c.

On the first of August, Charles James king of Scots in Scotland escaped a strange and strong conspiracie, practised by the Carle Gowrie and his brother, as at large appeareth in a booke thereof extant, first published and printed in Scotland, and since in England.

A Peace being concluded at Gerain in France, in the yere 1598. betweene Henrie the fourth king of France and Aquaine and Philip the second king of Spaine: the Queenes Maieslie of England was likewise invited by the French king, her Confederat and Allie, to dispose her selfe into a like treaty of Amitie with Spaine. To the effecting whereof, he had procured the consent of the king of Spaine then living. After whose decease, Philip the 2. succeeding his father in the Crowne, the same was againe retrained and solicited by Andreas of Austria the Gouernour of the low Countries, and the Bi-  
shop

shop of Constance, both for the house of Burgundy & kingdom of Spaine, afterwards ratified by the Archduke Albert returned out of Spaine with the Infanta his wife. Upon which former promise made by the Maieslie, she was at the length induced, to condescend unto a treatie of peace at Volougue in France, a place chosen by mutuall agreement on either side, with the assent and good liking of the French king: whether both Princes sent their Embassadors, furnished with ample power and authority in that behalfe, where the English Embassadors arrived the twentieth day of May in this present yere of our Lord God 1600. being the day prefixed for this assembly, and the Spanish the fourteenth of the same moneth. The Commissioners on the English side were these: Sir Henry Neuill knight, her Maieslies ordinary Embassador resident with the French king, Iohn Harbottle Esquire, her Maieslies second Secretarie of State, Robert Beale Esquire, her Maieslies Secretarie in the Spanish parts, and Thomas Edmonds Esquire, her Maieslies Secretarie for the French tongue. The Commissioners for Spaine were Balcaza de Caniga & Fonseca, Embassador resident for the king of Spaine, with the Archduke of Austria in the lowe Countries, and Ferdinando Carrillo Doctor of the Civil lawe: unto whom were adjoined on the Archdukes part Iohn Richardot president of the Councell of the sayde Archduke, and Lewis Verreyken the sayde Archdukes Audienter. The Commissioners on both sides being viewed and considered of, some question for the precedence and superiortie of place fell into disputation and debate, her Maieslie challenging the same as due unto her before the time of the Emperour Charles (as appeareth by Volaterran) in the time of king Henrie the seventh her highnesse grandfather, when this selfsame difference betweene both these crownes coming into question, the Pope preferred England, and adiudged unto this crowne the most honorable place. But for as much as the same was contradicted by the Spanish Commissioners, who not onely refused to yield preecarance unto her Maieslie, but also to admit of an equalitye, or of any other indifferent and middle course, whereby the honor of her Maieslie might be preferred: the present treatie (which hitherto was performed only by some private negotiations and conferences of some one or two of the Commissioners on either side, without coming to any generall meeting or colloquie) was on the second day of August in the yere aforesaid for this time belaid, and by mutuall assent of the Commissioners on both sides, according to their severall authoritties respectively granted unto them in this behalfe, suspended, untill the end of thrie dayes following, in which meane while it might be understood what should be the determination of both Princes for a further proceeding in the said Colloquie of peace, at some other time, and place, wherein as yet no certaine resolution hath bene hitherto taken.

About the 8. of August, arrived at Dover, certaine Embassadors and assistants, firste in number, sent from the King of Marocco, in Barbaria; these were by certaine English Gentlemen conducted to Grauesend, and from thence, by Sir Thomas Gerrard knight marshall, & other gentlemen, with the

Commis-  
sioners sent  
out to in-  
terview  
peace to be  
concluded.

Our com-  
missioners  
for peace  
remained  
out of  
France.

Embassa-  
dors from  
Marocco  
& Barbaria.

Barbarie merchants, towards London, where they were landed at the Tower, upon the 15. of August, from whence they were conveyed in foure Coaches to the Royall Exchange, and there lodged in the house of Anthonie Radcliffe Esquire, of London merchant taylor.

The 20. of August they rode in Coaches through Cheape, to Westminster, from thence by water ouer to Lambeth, and thence againe in Coaches to the Court at Ramesbury, where they were honourably entertained, and and returned the same night to their lodging at London.

About the last of August the Earle of Essex was set at libertie.

The 10. of September, the sayd Embassadors of Barbarie were againe conueyed to the Court then at Watlands, there to take their leaue of her maiestie, but were required to stay to see the Jousting and other triumphes at Westminster on the seventeenth of September.

In the month of September soldiers prest, in, and about the Citie of London, to the number of three hundred and fiftie masterlesse men, vagrant persons: and such like out of other parts of this Realme to be sent into Ireland: Divers of them running from their Captaines and Colours, being afterwards taken, were hanged for example to other.

The 18. of September, certaine Embassadors from Muscouie, or Russia, landing at the Tower wharfe, were there received by the Aldermen of London in scarlet, the Muscouie merchants, and a number (about two hundred) of the principall companies, in velvet coats, and chaines of golde, all well mounted on horsebacke, conveyed them riding in eight Coaches, from the Tower up to Abgate, from thence to the Leaden hall, downe Grace Stréete, by Fenchurch Stréete, and then downe Rode lane towards Bellingsgate. and there lodged in the house sometime pertaining to Sir Cuthbert Buckle Maior.

The 14. of October the said Embassadors from Russia & Muscouia, rode to the Court and had audience before her maiestie.

This yeare the most reuerend father Iohn Whigif, Archbishop of Canterbury, did finish that notable & memorabile monument of our time, to wit, his hospitall of the holy Trinitie in Croydon, in the County of Surrey, by him there founded and builded of stone and brick, for reliefe and sustentation of certaine poore people. As also a faire schoule-house for the increase of literature, together with a large dwelling house for the schoule master his use, and these premises by thorough Gods favorable assistance in his owne life time performed, and perfected, for that (as my selfe haue heard him say) he would not be to his executors, a cause of their damnation, remembering the good advice that an ancient father hath left written to all posteritie: *Tutor vult esse, ut bonum quod quisque mortem sperat agi per alios, agat dum vivit ipse.* per se: It is a way farre more safe for a man to doe good and charitable deedes by himselfe whilest he liueth: then to hope that others will doe the same for him after his death.

On Thursday the thirtieth of November, her Maiestie being most honourable attended on, by the Prelates, Nobles, and Judges of the Realme, was receiued neere unto Chelsep, by the Lord Maior of London, with his brethren

brethren the Aldermen all in Scarlet, besides to the number of five hundred Citizens, in coats of Velvet, and chaines of golde, on horsebacke, euery of them having two staffe torches to attend on them; And they all waited on her, to her royall Pallace at Westminster.

The 17. of November, & the 43. yeere of her maiesties raigne, there were most princely Jousts performed at White-hall in honor of the queens holday, by three earles, foure lordes, tenen knights, and nine gentlemen, her maiesties pensioners. At these iousts was so great an assembly of people, as the like hath not bin seen in that place before: There were also present sundry embassadors, as namely from the French king, the king of Barbary & c, & the emperor of Russia. There was no great harme that hapned (thankes be God) considering the multitude; but that one arme or branch of a great elm broke, which stood in the Parke, by being overladen with people, and from whence there fell three men, that were sore brused, and dangerously hurt.

The first of February in the morning, being Sunday, a great tempest of wind beyond Saint Giles field without London, towards Tisburyne, brake the Wind-mill there, the Miller was throwne one way, an other man an other way, one towards the North, the other South, a part of the Mill rose, and halfe the Millstone, on the like manner, throwne one way, the other halfe an other way.

The Citizens of London, were by the Quene commaunded, to cause certain Gallies to be made and furnished to Sea, towards charges where, of three fiftie, were at that time collected of the Citizens.

The third of February, the Embassadors from the Emperour of Russia, and other the Muscouites, rode through the Citie of London to Marybone Parke, and there hunted at their pleasure, and shortly after returned home, ward.

The Crosse in West Cheape of London, was by commaundement of the Quene, and letters from her Maiesties honorable counsell, to Sir William Rider, then Lord Maior, partly repaired, the old Crosse on the top being rotted, was taken downe, a new Crosse of timber was framed and set up, covered with Lead, and gilded, the body of the Crosse downeward, was cleaned of dust, &c.

Sunday the eight of February, about ten of the clock before none, Robert Deucieux Earle of Essex, assisted by sundry noble men and gentlemen, in warlike manner, departed from his house by the Strand, and entered the Citie of London, at the Temple-Barre; crying for the Quene, for the Quene, till they came into Fenchurch Stréete, and there entered the house of William Thomas Smith, one of the Shyrcers of London, who knowing himselfe not master of his owne house, by means of the strength the Earle brought with him, and being ignorant of his intent and purposes, conveyed himselfe out at a backe-gate to the Maior; whereupon the Earle with his troupe returned into Fenchurch Stréete to an Armourers house, where they required Armour, which was demped there; then went into Graue Stréete, where perceiving himselfe with his adherers to be proclaimed traitors, as

also the Citizens to be raised in armes against him, he with his followers hurrying by and done the Citty, towards evening, would haue passed at Ludgate, which was closed and defended against them, so was he forced to returne to Queene-hith, and from thence by water, to his house by the Strand, which house he fortified, but understanding that great Ordinance was brought to haue beat it downe, he yielded, and was conveyed to the Tower about midnight.

**Captaine Thomas Lee** was dyatone to Libbyne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, being before condemned, for conspiracie against the Queene, about deliuerance of the Earle of Essex out of the Tower, he took his death constantly, confessing he had diuers wayes deserued it, but to be innocent of that he was condemned for, &c.

**John Pybushe**, a Seminary priest, after seauen yeares imprisonment in the Kings bench, was hanged, boweled, and quartered at Saint Thomas Waterings, for coming into England, contrary to the Statute of Anno. 27. of the Queene.

**Robert Deuerieux Earle of Essex**, was arraigned at Westminster, and found guilty of high treason, as more at large appeareth in Bookes thereof extant, published by authority, wherefore I will forbear to set downe in this place any further of that matter of his arraignment.

**Robert Deuerieux Earle of Essex**, then being Athwodesday, about eyght of the clocke in the morning, was the sentence of death executed upon Robert Deuerieux earle of Essex, within the Tower of London, where a Scaffold being set up in the Court, and a forme nere unto the place, whereon sat the Carles of Cumberland, and Hartford, the Lord Vice-count Bindon, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Darcy, and the Lord Compton. The Lieutenant, with some sixtene Partizans of the Guard was sent for the Prisoner, who came in a Colone of wrought Metal, a blacke Sattin sute, a felt-hatte blacke, a little Ruffe about his neck, accompanied from his Chamber with three Minions, Doctor Montford, Doctor Barlow, and Maister Ashton his Chaplaine: then he had requested not to part from him, but observe him, and recall him if epher his eye, countenance, or speche, should betray any thing which might not become him for that time: All the way he desired the spectators to pray for him, and so arriving on the Scaffold, he bailed his hat, and with obey, came unto the Lords, to this effect he spake, viz.

**My Lords**, and you my Christian brethren, who are to be witnesses of this my last punishment, I confesse to the glorie of G D D, that I am a most wretched sinner, and that my finnes are more in number then the hayres of my head, I confesse that I haue bestowed my youth in wantonnesse, lust, and uncleannesse, that I haue bene passed by with pride, vanitie, and loue of this worldes pleasures, And that notwithstanding diuerse good motions inspired into me from the spiritte of God; The good which I would, I haue not done, and the euill which I

would not, that haue I done. For all which I humbly beseech my Saviour Christ to be a mediator to the eternall spaciouse for my pardon especially for this my last sinne, this great, this bloudie, this crying, this infectious sinne, whereby so many haue for lone to me bene dyatone to offend God, to offend their Soueraigne, to offend the world: I beseech God to forgive it vs, and to forgive it me most wretched of all: I beseech her spaciouse, and the state, and spiniffers thereof, to forgive it vs, and I beseech God to send her spaciouse a prosperous raigne and a long, if it be his will: O Lorde graunt her a wise and understanding heart: O Lorde blasse her and the Nobles, and the spiniffers of the Church and State, And I beseech you and the world to holde a charitable opinion of me, for my intention toward her spaciouse, whose death I protest I neuer meant, nor violence towards her person: I neuer was, I thanke God Althit, not beleuing the worde and Scriptures: neyther Papist trusting in mine owne merites, but hope for saluation from God onely, by the mercy and merites of my Saviour Christ Iesus. This faith was I brought up in, and herein I am now ready to dye: beseeching you all, to loyne your soules with me in prayer, that my soule may be lifted up by faith above all earthly things in my prayer, for now I will giue up selfe to my priuate prayer: yet for that I beseeche you to loyne with me, I will speake that you may heare me. And here as he turned himselfe a-doe to put off his Colone, Doctor Montford requested him to remember to pray to God to forgive all his enemies, if he had any. To whom he answered, I thanke you for it: and so turning himselfe againe to the Lordes and therest, he sayde: I desire all the world to forgive me, even as I do freely and from my heart forgive all the world. Then putting off his Colone and Ruffe, and presenting himselfe before the blocke, kneeling downe, he was by Doctor Barlow encouraged against the feare of death. To whom he answered: That haniug bene diuerse times in places of danger, where death was neyther so present, nor yet so certaine, he had felt the weakenesse of the flesh, and therefore now in this great conflict desired God to assist and strengthen him: and so with eyes fixed on heauen, after some passionate pawles, and breathings, he began his prayer in effect following.

O God, Creator of all things, and iudge of all men; thou hast let me know by warrant out of thy word, that Satan is then most busie when our end is nere, and that Satan being resisted will sicke. I humbly beseech thee to assist me in this my last combat: and seeing thou acceptest even of our desires as of our actes: accept I beseech thee, of my desires to resist him, as of true resistance, and perseu, by thy grace, what thou seest in my flesh to be feayle and weake, giue me patience to beare as becommeth mee, this last punishment inflicted vpon mee by so honorable a tryall: Graunt mee the inward comfote of thy spiritte: let thy spiritte seale vnto my soule an assurance of thy manifold mercies: let

thy spiritte seale vnto my soule an assurance of thy manifold mercies: let

O God, Creator of all things, and iudge of all men; thou hast let me know by warrant out of thy word, that Satan is then most busie when our end is nere, and that Satan being resisted will sicke. I humbly beseech thee to assist me in this my last combat: and seeing thou acceptest even of our desires as of our actes: accept I beseech thee, of my desires to resist him, as of true resistance, and perseu, by thy grace, what thou seest in my flesh to be feayle and weake, giue me patience to beare as becommeth mee, this last punishment inflicted vpon mee by so honorable a tryall: Graunt mee the inward comfote of thy spiritte: let thy spiritte seale vnto my soule an assurance of thy manifold mercies: let

When I awake, all earthly cogitations: and when I sleep, my body shall part, and my blessed Angels which may receive my soule, and convey it to thy place in heaven.

Then concluding his prayer for all Estates of the Realme, he shut up all with the Lords prayer, reiterating this petition: Lord Iesus forgive vs our trespasses, and deliver us from all our sinnes. Then desiring to be informed what would be his end, for disposing himselfe to the blocke, the Executioner on his knees presented himselfe, asking him forgiveness: to whom the Earle sayd, I forgive thee, thou art welcome unto me, thou art the minister of Justice. At which time Doctor Montford requested him to receive the Creed, which he did, repeating every article after the Diuines. So opening and putting off his doublet, he was in a Scarlet Wastecote, and then ready to lye downe, he said he would onely stretch forth his armes, and spread them abroad, for then he was ready: so bowing towards the blocke, the Doctors requested him to saye the two first verses of the 51. Psalm, which he did: and then inclining his body, he sayd; In humilitie and obedience to thy commandment in obedience to thy ordinance, to thy good pleasure, O God, I prostrate my selfe to my deserved punishment, Lord be mercifull to thy prostrate servant: so lying flatte along on the boardes, and laying downe his head, and sitting it upon the blocke, stretched out his armes with these wordes, which he was requested to say. Lord into thy hands I commend my spirit. His head was severed from his body by the Axe at three strokes, but the first bravely and absolutely despising all fence, and motion: The hangman was beaten, as he returned thence, so that the Sherriffes of London were called to assist and rescue him from such as would have murdered him.

The xxiiij. of February, Marke Bakworth, and Thomas Filcocks Seminary Priests, were beheaded to Tiborne, and there hanged and quartered, for committing into the Realme contrary to the statute. Also the same day, and in the same place, was hanged a Gentlewoman, called Mistresse Anne Line, a widow, for relieving a Priest contrary to the same statute.

The last of February, a young man named Wotton was hanged in Smithfield, for speaking and libelling against the Quenes Proclamation, and apprehending of the Earle of Essex.

The 5. of Marche, the earle of Marck, the Lord of Knyntors, Embassadors, and others in commission out of Scotland, came to London and were lodged by the Exchange, in the house of Anthony Radcliffe late Alderman.

The 13. of March, sir Gilley Merike Knight, and Henry Cusse Gentleman, were beheaded to Tiborne, the one from the Tower, the other from Newgate, and there hanged, boweled, and quartered, as being actors with the late earle of Essex.

The 18. of March, sir Charles Dawuers, and sir Christopher Blunt knights, were upon a new Scaffold set up for that purpose, on the Tower hill, beheaded.

In the moneth of Aprill sixe sicknesses were felted in London, towards setting

ting out of Walleys to the seas (as was appointed by the Quene) and charges about the earle of Essex, when he entered the Citie.

The 20. of June proclamation was made at London, for deliverance of prisoners, to serve in the Gallies made at charges of the Citizens.

Two men were set on the Pillory in Fleetstreet, whipped with gags in their mouths, and their ears cut off, for attempting to have robbed a Gentlewoman in Fleetster lane, in the day time, having put gags in the mouths of the servants of that house, because they should not cry: one of those thieves was afterwards hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings.

Gilbert Talbot earle of Shrovetbury, Edward earle of Worcester, and sir John Stanhope, were called to be of the Quenes councill.

This moneth of June was very colde, frosts every morning.

In the moneth of July 1000. souldiers were prepared and sent to the low countries, set out at the charges of the Citizens of London, three pound ten shillings a man: more 8000. souldiers were set out by the Shires abroad in the country.

The xxij. of August, Desmond and an other Knight, sent out of Ireland, were conveyed to the Tower of London.

About the 5. of September, certaine noble men, and other of France, to the number of 300. persons, arrived at the Tower-wharfe, the chiefe of them were conveyed in coaches from thence through the Citie, into Bishopgate street, and there the principall, namely Marshall de Biron, was lodged in Crosby place, the other nere adjoining in Coznevill.

The principall noblemen and gentlemen of France were these.

Countess Duke of Biron Marshall of France, the kings Lieutenant of the countie of Burgon and Breit.

Countess the Prince of Auvergne, the kings Lieutenant in Auvergne, and Limosen, baird to Charles of Valois late king of France.

Countess Duke of Aumont, knight of the order of the Holy-ghost, marshall of the field, and Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Countess, Earle of Pauabene, Lieutenant of the Countie of Poitou and Berie.

Countess Earle of Croque, Lieutenant of the Countie Valencinois, Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Countess Earle of S. Mary, Gouvernour of Roane, and Captaine of the kings guards.

Countess earle of Vignolet, Campe-maister and Gentleman of the kings Chamber.

Countess earle of Guersion, Marques of S. Pont, and Lieutenant of the countie of Bourbon.

Countess L. Baron of Biron, brother to the Duke of Biron, Campe-maister for the King of 1500. footmen.

Countess Baron of Tornes, Cozonell of all the horsemen in France.

Countess Baron of the signorie, biscount of Peaine, captain of 1200. men.

Countess Viscount of Sardigne, a gentleman of the kings chamber.

Countess

Gallies set out.

Men on the pillory with gags in their mouths.

Charles of Shrovetbury and Worcester of councill.

Souldiers into the low countries.

Desmond brought out of Ireland.

The Duke of Biron & other noble men of France.

Priests executed.

A gentlewoman hanged.

One hanged for libelling.

Embassadors from Scotland.

Strike & Cusse executed.

Dawuers & Blunt executed.

1601.

Mounſier Miſſicott of Caſſaneule Gouverneur of Cinquancie.  
 Mounſier Baron of Ferre, Captaine of 50. men.  
 Mounſier Baron of Panſack, of Ceane upon Leire.  
 Mounſier L. Baron de la Barre, Campmaſter & Captaine of 1000. men.  
 Mounſier Baron of Rurdire, Campmaſter of 1000. men.  
 Mounſier Baron of Cullen, Lieutenant of the towne of Teullirs.  
 Mounſier Baron of Bullogne.  
 Mounſier Baron of Maralles.  
 Mounſier Baron of Delbine.  
 Mounſier de Verdon gouverneur of Barcan.  
 M. de Fraige.  
 M. de Stroffe.  
 M. de Narnes.  
 M. de Padameſin.  
 M. de Garroinois.  
 M. de Penelle.  
 M. de Monplaiger.

Gentlemen of the Kings  
Chamber.

Besides 30. Gentlemen attending the Duke Biron, 8. officers, 3. Pages,  
 and 6. laquies.

Ten Gentlemen for every Duke, and Earle, 4. officers, 2. Pages, and  
 3. Laquies.

Sir for every Baron, 3. officers, 1. Page, 2. Laquies.

Every one of the rest had 3. servants, and 3. Laquies.

The  
 Queene  
 Progreſſe  
 into Ham-  
 pſſire.

The ſayd 5. of September, the Queene in her Progreſſe entered into  
 Hampſhire, and upon Eſchelſter heaſthe was received by the ſhiriffe of that  
 ſhire Francis Palmes, accompanied by many Gentlemen of accompt in the  
 ſame ſhire, ſo that her Maieſtie ſayde ſhe was neuer ſo honourably received  
 into any ſhire, for as Hampſhire is a countrie pleaſant of ſoile, and full of  
 delights for Princes of this land, who often make their prograces thether,  
 ſo is it well inhabited by ancient Gentlemen, ciuilly educated, and who  
 liue in great amitie together. Her maieſtie was that night attended on to  
 Baſſing, a houſe of the Loyde Marqueſſe, where ſhe toke ſuch great con-  
 tent, as well with the ſeate of the houſe, as honorable cariage of the worthy  
 Lady Lucie Marqueſſe of Wincheſter, that ſhe ſtayd there thirteene dayes,  
 to the great charge of the ſaid Loyd Marqueſſe. The 4. day after the Queene  
 coming to Baſſing, the ſaid ſhiriffe was commanded to attend the duke  
 of Biron at his coming into that countrey: whereupon the next day being  
 the 11. of September, he went towards Black-water, being the bittermoſt  
 confines of that ſhire, towards London, and there met the ſaid Duke, accom-  
 panied with aboue 11. of the nobilitie of France, and attended on with about  
 400. Frenchmen, who were met by George earle of Cumberland, & by him  
 conducted fro London into Hampſhire. The ſaid duke was that night brought  
 to the Vine, a faire & large houſe of the L. Sands, which houſe was furniſhed  
 with hangings & plate from the Tower, & Hampton-court, and with 7. ſcore  
 beds, and furniture thereto belonging, which the willing & obedient people

of

of the countrey of South-hampton upon ſix dayes warning had brought in  
 thether to ſend the Queene. The duke aboode there 4. or 5. dayes, all at the  
 Queens charges, & ſpent her moze at the Vine, then her owne court for that  
 time ſpent at Baſen. During her aboode there, her maieſtie went to him to  
 the Vine, and he to her to Baſen, & one day he attended her at Baſen-partie  
 on hunting, where the duke ſtaied her coming, and did there ſee her in ſuch  
 royaltie and ſo attended on by the nobilitie, ſo coſtly furniſhed, and mounted,  
 as the like had ſeldome bin ſene: but when ſhe came to the place where the  
 duke ſtaied, the ſaid ſhiriffe (as the manner is, being bare-headed, & riding next  
 to her, ſtaied his horſe, thinking the Queene would then haue ſaluted the  
 duke, whereat the Queene being much offended, commanded the ſhiriffe to  
 go on: the duke following her very humbly bowing low towards his horſe  
 maine, with his cap off, about 11. paces. her maieſtie on the ſudden toke off  
 her maſke, looked back upon him, & moſt gratioſly and courteouſly ſaluted  
 him, as holding it not beſeeming ſo mighty a Prince as ſhe was, & who ſo wel  
 knew all kingly maieſtie, to make her ſay directly againſt a ſubiect, beſore he  
 had ſhewed his obedience in following after her. She tarried at Baſen viii.  
 dayes as is aforeſaid, being very well contented with all things there done:

affirming he had done that in Hampſhire that none of her auncelſes ever  
 did, neither that any Prince of Chriſtendom could doe: that was, he had in the queene  
 her prograce, in her ſubjects houſes, entertained a royal Embaſſador & had at Baſen.  
 royally entertained him. At her departure from Baſen, being the xviii. of  
 September, ſhe made 1. knights (having neuer in all her raigne made at one  
 time ſo many beſore) whole names were, Sir Edward Citiell ſecond ſonne to  
 the Lord Burley: Sir Edward Hungerford, next heire to the L. Hungerford: Sir  
 Edward Bainton of Wilthire. Sir William Kingmill: Sir Francis Palmes  
 then ſhiriffe of the ſhire: Sir Benjamin Tichbourne: Sir Hamden Paulet: Sir  
 Richard Norton of Hampſhire: Sir Francis Stoner of Dorſetſhire: and Sir  
 Edmond Lutlew of Wilthire. That day ſhe went fro Baſen toward ſarn-  
 ham, a Caſtle belonging to the ſea of Wincheſter, nere unto which towne  
 the ſhiriffe of Hampſhire toke his leave, and the ſhiriffe of Surrey met her:  
 but the ſhiriffe of Hampſhire, & the gentlemen of that countrey went to ſarn-  
 ham by command, and there attended the next day, where they were feaſted  
 and kindly entertained by the learned Doctore Biſhop of Win-  
 cheſter, upon whoſe onely commendation, two ancient & worthy gentlemen  
 of Hampſhire, Sir Richard Moll, and Sir William Vdall, received there the  
 dignity of Knighthood. And thus much for that prograce to be noted.

About the xiii. of October, 400. ſouldiers were ſent out of the Title of ſouldiers  
 London towards Ireland.

The xiii. of November, the Lady Mary Ramſey, wiſdow to ſir Thomas  
 Ramſey, ſometime ſp. 102. of London, was buried in the pariſh Church of  
 Hoſpitall of Chriſts Church by Beſogate market. A charitable dole of  
 almes, was giuen for her on the ſame day in the afternoon at the Leaden-  
 hall, where xviij. poore and weakes people were amongſt the ſaid beggars,  
 cruſhed and troden to death.

The nineteenth of December after the granting of foure great subsidies, and 8. sittings, the Parliament was dissolved.

Lightning and thunder oftentimes before Christmas, and in Christmas holidays, and an earthquake at London on Christmas eve at none.

Of the late long warres in Ireland under the earle of Essex, and then the Lord Mountjoy, generals, have I hitherto received small intelligence, twozth the nothing, and therefore in this place I thinke good to set downe the copie of a letter, from a souldier of good place in Ireland, to his friend in London, touching the notable victory of her Spaishe forces there, against the Spaniards, and Irish rebels, and of the pœiding bp of Kynsale, and other places there held by the Spaniards, dedicated to sir W. D. Knight.

Sir in my last of the 19. of December, I wrote to you at large of the arrival of the new supply of Spaniards at Castell-hauen, Baltemore, & Warba- uen, and of their intents and beginnings to fortifie, in all those three impor- tant places. Likewise that sir Richard Lewison towing out of Kinsale-hauen against winde & weather, fought with them within Castle-hauen most val- lantly, and of their ships being fire, sanke and made unserviceable five: the men being most landed before he could come to them, by reason of the wea- ther, and beating upon him very dangerously from the land with their ordi- nance. That they were said to be 2000. in number, with great store of ordi- nance and munition, & that as they reported, some thousands more were com- ming after. That a great part of the Irish of Munster becommen rebels of new, were resolved to them and received into the King of Spaines pay. That Odonell with good forces of horse and fote out of the North, by the benefit of the then extreame and sudden frost, gat passage almost unlooked for by him- selfe, and slipping by the Lord President of Munster (who was sent to im- peach him) with such forces as could be spared from the Army) was ioyned with them. That Tyrone, with Orouck, Redman Bourck, Mac Guyre, Mac Mahone, Randal Mac Surley, Oconor, Slygoes brother, Fyrral, the Ma- son of Lixenbo, and the rest of the olde fugitive Rebels of Munster, with the greatest and choicest force that was ever amassed in Ireland, were gathered nere our Campe. And that these all, together with fire engines of those newly arrived Spaniards, in all to the number of 6500. fote, and 500. horse, by Powles, were on fote ready to march towards Kynsale and our Campe, with intent and most assured confident hope with helpe of them in the Towne which should have salged out on the campe, upon the at- tempt of Tyrone and Odonell, and were about 2000. Spaniards, almost all old souldiers, as well to releue and rescue the Towne, as to remove our siege, and utterly to brake, dishonour, and defeat us. And truly Sir when I did then consider, on the one side this great strength, the newly ioyned men and horses to be all fresh, vigorous, and strong having all the countrey open to them, abounding with victuals, forrages, armies, munition, and all furnitures: those in the Towne, the most of them experienced souldiers, well armed, and in no such want as was supposed: On the other side, our

men in numbers scant equall to them, all almost tyed and wearied out with the miserie of a long Winters siege, our horses decayed, leane and very weak, our best meanes of victuals and forrage likely to be cut from us, with many other impediments whereof I speake not: When I say, I well weighed and pondered with my selfe these points, and laide together withall, this one of great importance, that when we should be forced (as it was like- ly) to answer two forces at once, one from the Towne, another without, a great part of our men were like enough to shrink, or at least not to sticke firmly to us, (which by good coniectures I could make probable to you). Blame me not, if by: n these considerations I wrote to you then somewhat distrustfully of our estate, as taking indeed our liues and honors, this ser- vice, and by consequence this whole Countrey likely to be put to an unequall issue. And so may I well say they were, although by the goodness of God especially, & by the most vigilant circumspection and valiant prowes of our worthy Generall, things out of these difficulties have now lysed to so happy successe, as by that which followeth you shall sufficiently perceiue. To con- tinue therefore my accustomed Relation to you, and to begin from that laide day of the 19. of December, I may please you to knowe, that on Sunday the 20. we still plying our attempts to the Towne, with face and heels as though we nothing cared for Tyrone and his company, at night certaine in- telligence was brought us, that he would be the next night within a mile and a halfe of us, withall the above recited forces. And accordingly upon Sunday the 21. towards night, he shewed himselfe with most part of his horse and fote, on a hill betwene our Campe and Corke, a mile off us. At which time seeing two Regiments of our fote, and some horse drawn out of our Campe, and making a resolute march towards him, he fell backe to the other side of the hill, where he encamped that night strengthened with a fastness of wood and water. Whereby though his retire might be imputed to some touch of credite, yet had he this advantage, that he might kepe from our Arme all passages and meanes for forrage: The other side over the River of Ownebuoye being wholly at his disposition, by reason of the generall rout of those parts.

On Tuesday the 22. some of Tyrones horse and fote made shewe againe in the place where they had done the day before, and that night were some of their horse, and 500. fote discovered, searching if they might finde fit way to the towne.

On Wednesday the 23. as well by intelligence otherwise as by letters of Don John d' Aquila, Generall of the Spaniards, and Captaine of the Towne newly intercepted, we found that he had imported Tyrone and his company very much to give an attempt upon our Campe; intimating unto them his owne necessitie, and likelihood to be shortly forced within the Towne, their faithfull promises to succour him, the facilitie and undoubted successe of the enterprise, he assuring them, that our numbers could not be but much lessened, and those that were remaining, greatly decayed and weakened with the long winter siege, so that it was not possible we should be



be able to maintaine so much ground as we had taken when our strength was full, if they on the one side, and he on the other put vs well to it: which he for his part promised them assuredly to do very soundly from the Towne, whensoever they should thinke fit to do the like from their Campe. And it seemeth that upon this aduise they took their determinate resolution for this course, and to put it in execution with all speed, either that night or the next at the furthest. Those of the towne in the meane time gaue vs alarms, made Sallics, and did by all means what they could to keepe our men in continuall trauell, that they might be the lesse able for resistance when this attempt should come to be performed. The Lord Deputie till now applied himselfe in shew wholly towards the Towne, but indeed not meaning any forceable effectuall attempt upon it, til he saw what would become of Tyrone and his forces: And therefore had an especiall eye, by continuall espiall, upon his movements, and lest for daime hurt should be taken from him, or the towne, if both he without, and they within should inuade at once, he made Fortes and Barracadoes, heightened the ditches, deepened the Trenches, stopped & strengthened all the Avenues to the Towne, had the whole Armie in a readinesse upon every suddaine warning, and kept strong and watchfull guards alwayes in all places. And now late in the night of this Wednesday, the thre and twentieth day, being assuredly enformed of their intent of attempt upon his Campe that night, or the morrow after, his Lordship gaue order to strengthen the ordinary guardes, and to put the rest of his Armie in readinesse, but not as yet into Armes: commanding that the Regiment bolant, which was a Squadron of six Companies of foote, selected out of all the olde Bands, conducted by Sir Hen. Poore, and appointed to be alwayes in a readinesse to answer all Alarumes, and therefore exempted from all other duties, should draw out beyond the west part of the Campe, and there stand in Armes, not farre from the maine guard of horse.

A little before the breake of day, Sir Ric. Greame, who had the guard of horse that night, sent the Lord Deputie word, that the scouts had discovered the rebels matches in great numbers, whereupon his Lord. caused the armie presently to arme, and 300. choise men to be drawne out of the quarter, where the Earle of Thomond and thre other Regiments lay, to make stand betwene that quarter and the fort upon the west hill, himselfe with Sir George Carew, Lord President of Munster, Sir Richard Wingfield, Marshall of Ireland, advanced forward towards the scout, and hauing giuen order to Sir Hen. Dauers Lieutenant generall of the horse, for the ordering of those troopes, sent the Marshall, to take view of the Enemy, who sent word: he was advanced horse and foote nere the top of the hill. where the Earle of Thomond first quartered, within lesse then two hundred yottes of the towne. Whereupon the Lord Deputie calling to him Sir Oliuer Lambert, Gouernor of Connaught, who being there without Charge, was commanded to attend his Lord. that day, made choise of a peece of ground betwene that and the towne, of good advantage, both to embattel, and fight, as hauing on the back a Trench drawne from the Earle of Thomond quarter, and so secured from the

the Towne: And on the front, a boggyish glyne passable with horse onely at one end: The ground whereon the enemy must haue drawne in grosse to force the passage sanctified from the earles quarter by the Canon, and situate in the midst of all our forces, and returned word to the Marshall, that in that place he was resolved to giue the enemy battell, if he came forward: commanding further, the Regiment of Sir H. Folyat and thre old Companies of the Regiment of Sir Oliuer Saint-Iohn to be brought thither, the rest of the Army being already in Armes, together with five hundred Sea-men, brought by Sir Richard Leuejon to attend, when, and what, he should commaund.

But Tyrone, whose meaning ouer night, was, to haue bene with vs, by day, and as we since learned, to haue put all the Spaniards into the Towne, with eight hundred of the best Irish under Tigell, seeing it now faire day light, and discovering the Marshall and Sir Hen. Dauers to be advanced with all the horse and Sir Hen. Poore with his Regiment, stopt at the foot of the hill, and anon, thinking it to be no day for him, retired the troopes he had advanced againe, to the body of his Armie beyond the fford. Presently the Marshall sent the Lord Deputie word, that the enemy retired in some disorder, whereupon his Lord commanding the forenamed troopes to follow him with all speed, advanced himselfe into the head of all, to see with his owne eye, the manner of the enemy, and in what sort there upon he might determine to proceede. But before he could, either well bieto, or direct, a violent storme, during some quarter of an hower, gaue the enemy opportunity, not yet perfectly discovered, to draw off ouer a plaine in thre great bodies of foote, all their horse in the Rere, and the wings with all their other loose men fallen vp into the head. Which the Lord Deputie, the day now clearing, perceiving and discovering, by this their disorderly March, that they were in feare, being certified also, that there was not before them any place of so good advantage to make head on, as those they had passed and quited, resolved to follow, and to see what profit might be made of an enemy thus troublesly retiring. Whereupon dispatching presently Sir Geo. Carew, Lord President of Munster with thre cornets of horse, backe to the Campe, to attend there against the Towne, and whatsoeuer other attempt, because he was to be the fittest Commander in his Lord. absence, and because there had otherwise no horse bene left in the Campe, himselfe hauing with him in al, betwene thre and foure hundred horse, and vnder 1200. foot, made after the Enemy. And advancing some mile further on, pressed him so hard, that he was forced to stand firme in thre bodies upon a foote of a bogge (which bogge to assaile them, was must of necessity passe) and in all apparence, with a Resolution there to abide vs and fight. They maintained a good skirmish on our side the Bogge, with their loose wings, newly drawne out of their bodies, and hurt some of our men and horses, till with our wings they were at length beaten backe.

The Marshall being somewhat advanced, espied a fford, a musket shot off on the left hand, neglected by their foote, and onely guarded by their horse:

hoyle: whereof aduertising the Lord Deputy, with desire of leaue to foize them that way: the Lord Deputy appoyning it, and commaunding to be done by the sate with all expedition, the first twings of sate once arriued, seconded with sir Henry Poers regiment, the sparthall, with the Earle of Clanrickard, who neuer ceased vying to fight, taking with them sir Richard Greame, and other companies of hoyle: with them, and those sate, forcing the enemies hoyle that kept the passage, passed ouer, and with that advantage, finding themselves side by side with the enemies battell. and further on then their reer, charged their battell in flankes, but finding them to stand firme, wheeled about. At which the enemies taking courage, dyed on their hoyle, with a cry to a charge, who came on brauely within fiftie or sixtie paces of our hoyle, and there after their country fashion stopped, shaking their stances, and railingy vaunting, but darst charge no further. Which the Lord Deputy seeing, sent presently ouer the sward to them his owne cornet of hoyle, under sir William Godolphin, and the Lord Presidents cornet under Captaine Minshaw, (which two cornets he had appointed before, to keepe still a gresse in the here, to answer all accidents, together with two of our three bodies of sate under sir Iohn Berkeley Seriant maior of the Campe. Whereupon the sparthall and Earle of Clanrickard seeing a second at hand, uniting themselves with sir Henrie Dauers. hauing with him Capaine Fasse. Capaine Flemming, and other companies of hoyle, charged againe the Enemies hoyle, who not abiding the shocke, fled. At the sight whereof, the battell dismayng, our men thought it better to charge againe vpon them, then to follow the hoyle, and so courageously doing bitterly brake them. The reereward of the enemy in which was Tyrell, and all the Spaniards, stood firme vpon the bogge on the right hand, vnto whom, within callier shot, the Lord Deputy had ordeined vpon our here, which was Sir Oliuer Saint Iohns 3. companies, commaunded by Capaine Roe, in absence of sir Oliuer. (dispatched fety dayes before by the Lord Deputy, and Counsaile, for speciall affaires to her Maiesty, charging him first, not to stir, till he received direction from him. But seeing Tyrell, and the Spaniards drawing betwene our hoyle, being on the execution, and the bodies of our sate, his Lordship hauing hitherto, by direction set all other mens swords on worke, himselfe now in the head of our said here, where he had before resolved to fight, charged the Enemy in flankes, and put them to a disorderly retreat after their fellowes to the top of the next hill, where they made stand a little while. But the Irish quitting the Spaniards, the Spaniards in short time were broken by the Lord Deputyes hoyle, commaunded by sir William Godolphin, and most of them slaine. The vangarde of the Enemy, with all the losse twings, which were many, seeing what happened, threw away their armes (and all our men being otherwise busie) escaped. The chiefe Commaunder of the Spaniards, Don Alonso d'Ocampo was taken prisoner, with three Captaines, five Aliers, and fortye souldiers. Tiron, and Odonell, with the rest of the Irish Lords, ran apace, and saued themselves. Those of the battell were almost all slaine, and there were (of the Irish Rebelles onely, found dead in the place,

about

about twelue hundred bodies, and about eight hundred were hurt, whereof 1200. Irish name. many dyed that night: and the chase continuing almost two miles, was left off, our men being tyred with killing. The Enemy lost two thousand Armes brought to reckning, besides great numbers imbezeld, all their powder and dymmes, and ir. ensignes, whereof 6. Spanish. Those of the Irish that were taken prisoners, being brought to the Campe, though they offered ranstone, were all hanged. On our side, onely one man was slaine, the Cornet of the sir Richard Greame, sir Henry Dauers was hurt with a sword slightly: sir William Godolphin a little rased on the thigh with a pike butt, Capaine Crofts the skotw-maister with a shot in the back, and not a bone ere more common souldiers hurt. Many of our hoyles were killed, and more hurt. And thus were they utterly ouerthrowne, who but the very night before, were so haue and confident of their owne good successe, as that they reckoned vs already theirs, and as we since haue vnderstande, were in contention whose prisoner the Lord Deputy should be, whose the Lord President, and so of the rest. The Earle of Clanrickard caried himselfe this day very valiantly, and after the retraite founded, was knighted by the Lord Deputy, in the field amongst the dead bodies. So did all the rest of the Captaines, Officers, and souldiers, named and vnnamed, and especially the Lord Deputy himselfe, who brake, in person, vpon the srouce of the army the Spaniards, and omitted no duety of a wise diligent Conduator, and valiant souldier. Upon the fight ended, hee presently called together the Army and with prayers, gaue God thanks for the victorie, A victorie indede giuen by the God of hostes, and marvellous in our eyes, if all circumstances be duly considered, and of such consequence for the preservation and assurance to her Maiesty, of this deeply endangered kingdome, as I leaue to wisser consideration, contenting my selfe with this, that I see the God of power and might, disposed to protect the iust cause of his seruant, our gracions Quene Elizabeth, against the pride, malice, and powerfull disaune of the greatest potentates, his enemies. To him be the glorie.

After this glorious victorie thus valiantly atchieued, the Lord Deputy the same day passed to his campe, left any thing (in his absence) might happily haue bene attempted there. But, not finding the Enemy to haue made any fall, which indede had bene but haine for him, considering the small fruit hee reaped by them heretofore, euery one that he made hitherto rebounding still to his owne detriment and losse, and euery place of our Camp, at this time, being so well and sufficiently strengthened and prouided for against him as is sayd before.

The next day his Lordship commaunded Captaine Bodlegh Crench-maister generall of the Campe, who as well in the fight, as in the workes, had deserued speciall commendation, to see the formerly begunne sforte and platfaymes, to be undertaken againe, and neuer approaches to be cast out towards the towne. But after due or fety dayes labour Don Iohn d'Aquila, captaine of the Towne and Forces within, offered a parole, sending the Drumme maior of the Towne with a sealed letter to the Lord Deputy, by

still

which

which he required, that some gentleman of speciall trust and sufficiencie might be sent into the towne from his Lordship, to conferre with him, whom he would acquaint with such conditions, as he then stood upon. His request being assented unto by his Lordship, Mr William Godolphin was imployed in the negotiation, which was carried in this sorte, word for word, as it is taken out of the originalls here, viz.

Don Iohn tolde Mr William, that hauing found the Lord Deputy (whom he termed the Viceroy) although a sharpe and powerfull, yet an honorable enemy, & the Irish not onely treake and barbarous, but (as he feared) perfidious friends, he was so farre in his affections reconciled to the one, and distasteth with the other, as did inuite him to make an ouerture of such a composition as might be safe and profitable for the state of England with least prejudice to the crowne of Spaine, by deliuering into the Viceroy his power, the Towne of Kinsale, with all other places in Ireland, held by the Spaniards, so as they might depart on honorable termes, sitting such men of warre, as are not by necessity enforced to receiue conditions, but willingly induced, for inst respects to disingage themselves, and to relinquish a people, by whom their King and Master had bene so notoriously abused, (if not betrayed.) That if the Viceroy liked to entertaine further parley touching this point, he would first be pleased to vnderstand them rightly, and to make his propositions such as might be suitable to men thoughtfully resolute. rather to bury themselves alive, and to endure a thousand deaths, then to giue way to one Article of accord, that should taste of basenes or dishonour, being so confident of their present strength, and the royall Second of Spaine, that they should make no doubt of yeelding good account of themselves and their Interest in this kingdom, but that a iust disdain, and spleene conceived against the nation, dissuaded them from being further engaged for it, then of force they must, Mr William Godolphin being commaunded by the Lord Deputy onely, to receiue Don Iohns propositions and demaunds. Having made his Lords and Counsell this Relation, was by them returned with the answer following. That howbeit the Lord Deputy hauing lately defeated their succours, did so well vnderstand his owne strength and their weakenesse as made him nothing doubt of forcing them within a short time, whom he did know to be pressed with vnresistible difficulties, how much sooner they laboured to couer and conceale the same, yet knowing that her sacred Maestie out of her gracious and mercifull disposition would esteeme the glory of her victorie to be blemished by a voluntary effusion, and an obstinate expence of Christian blood, was content to entertaine this offer of agreement, so as it might be concluded, vnder such honorable articles for her highnesse as the advantage the had against them gaue reason to demaund: being the same which are set downe in the Articles of agreement following, signed by the Lord Deputy, and Don Iohn and others: sauing that there was in them besides the leauing of his treasure, munition, artillery, and the Quenes naturall Subiects to her disposition, all which points he did peremptorily refuse, with constant asseueration that both he and all his would rather

rather endure the last of misery, then be found guilty of so foule a Treason against the honour of his Prince, and the reputation of his profession, though he should finde himselfe vnable to resist, which more now, when he might not onely hope to sustaine the burthen of the warre for a time, but with patience and constancie in the end to overcome it. That he took it so ill, to be misundersood in hauing Articles of that nature propounded unto him, as were they but once againe remembered in the Capitulation, the Viceroy should from thenceforth vse the advantage of his sword, and not the benefite of his former offers: adding, that the Viceroy might rather thinke to haue made a good and profitable purchase for the Crowne of England, if with the expence of 100000. Macks he had procured Don Iohn to quitte his interest and footing but in Walsbymore alone, to say nothing of Kinsale, Castell-banen, and Borehaven: for (said he) suppose that all the with the rest of our places here had perished, yet would that Pen Insula (being strong in it owne nature, betwixt by our art & industry, provided as it is of bidualls, munition, and good store of Artillerie) preferre unto the King of Spaine a safe and commodious port for the arrival of his Fleet, and be able to maintaine it selfe against a land Armie of ten thousand, untill Spaine (being so deeply engaged) did in honour releue them: which would operate on a more powerful inuasion then the first, being vndertaken vpon false grounds, at the instance of a base and barbarous people, who in discourting their weakenesse and want of power, haue armed the King my master to relye vpon his owne strength, being tyed in honour to releue his people that are engaged, and to cancell the memory of our former disaster.

But this was spoken (sayd he) in case the Viceroy were able to force this towne, as I assure my selfe he cannot, hauing vpon mine Honour within these walles at this instant, aboue two thousand fighting men, that are strong and able, besides those, which hauing bene sick and hurt, recover dayly: the greatest part of these, composed of olde Shouldiers, which fall not but by the sword, and those that were new, being now both traped to their Armes, and growne acquainted with the Climate, are more able to endure then at the first: our means as good as they haue bene any times these two moneths, such as the Spanyardes can well abate with all, and thereof to suffice vs for these moneths more. While lodge in good warme houses, haue store of munition, and (which is best of all) stande well assured that our succours will be shortly here. To be playne, we preferre our men, and reserve our strength the best wee may, hoping to front you in a breach, which if our hearts faile vs not, we haue handes and breasts enough to stoppe against treble your forces: though I will giue the Viceroy this right, That his men are passing good, but spent and tyed out with the misery of a Winter-siege, which he hath obstinately maintained beyond my expectation, but with such caution, and vpon so good guard, as hauing nicely watched all advantages, I could neuer fasten a Shalle yet vpon him, but with losse to my selfe: wherein I must acknowledge my hopes decayed,

that grounding on some error in his approches, promised my selfe the benefit of at least a thousand men at one blowe. But when we met on the beach, I am confident on good reason, to lay five hundred of your best men on the earth, and rest hopeful that the loss of those will make a great hole in an armie that hath already suffered so much extremitee.

But to conclude our business, the king my Master sent me to assist the Condes, Oncale & Odonnell, performing on their promise, that I should have ioynd with them within few daies of the arrivall of his forces. I expected long in vaine, sustained the Miceropes Armie, saw them drawne to the greatest head they could possibly make, lodged within two myles of Kynsale, reinforced with certaine companies of Spaniards, every houre promising to release us, and being ioynd together to force your campes, sawe them at last broken with a handfull of men, blowane a sunder into blaised parts of the world, Odonnell into Spaine, Oncale to the farthest of the North, so as now I finde no such Condes in rerum natura (for those were the very words he used) as I came to ioyne withall, and therefore have moved this accord, the rather to disingage the king my Master from assisting a people so unable in themselves, that the whole burden of the warre must lye upon him, and so periculosus as perhaps might be induced in acquittall of his favour, at last to betray him. Upon relation made by Sir William Godolphin to the Lord Deputie and Councell, of these offers of Don Iohn, which at severall conferences had bene brought to such heads, as are spoken of before; as it was thought good, for divers important reasons, to proceede roundly to the agreement. For whereas in the propositions by him made, there was not any thing that admitted exceptions on our part, but onely, that he required to carry with him his ordinance, munition, and treasure, that being no way prejudiciall to the maine scope or drift of our Treatie, which chesely respected the common good and safetie of the kingdome, deserved not almost to be thought upon. Besides that, the Treasure being at the first but a hundred thousand Duckats, with foure moneths payment of so many men, and other necessary deductions, could not but be very nere wasted; and that little remainder, more fit for a prey to the poore souldiour, after his tedious travell, than for a clause in the composition. Furthermore, how needfull it was to embrace this accord, may clearly be seen by whosoever considereth the state of our Armie, almost bitterly tryed: how full of danger and difficultie it was to attempt a breach defended by so many hands; how long time it might have cost us, if we had lodged in the Breach, before we could have carried the Towne, it being full of strong castles: how her Spaiesties ships and others lying in the harbour, should have bene forced speedily to forsake us for want of victuals: how by a long contrarietie of winds, our selves were not provided for above five daies, at the time of this parley, though within few daies after god soe arrived: it being indeed worthy of observation, that by her Spaiesties great care, and the diligence of her ministers, so good providence was used, as though this descent of Spaniards drew into that quarter all the forces of the kingdome which could be spared, all which were onely to

like

line by provision out of England; notwithstanding all the difficulties of transportation, in so unreasonable a time, no notorious wants were found in the Armie, but that which is insuperable from a winter siege, in that Climate: that we had neither munition nor Artillerie left but for one batterie in one place at once, five of our peeces being before crazed: and finally, that if we had missed of our purpose, the whole countrey had bene hazarded. Furthermore, that which seemeth of greatest consequence to induce his Lordship to this agreement, was: That the Spaniards in Ballymore, Castlehaven and Bécce haven, by vertue of this contract, were likewise to surrender those places, and depart the countrey, which would have proved a matter of more difficultie, and have drawne on a long warre in a corrupted kingdome, to rote them out, being strongly fortified and well stored with victuals, munition, and artillerie, for that of necessitie the Armie for some space, must have rested, and in the end have bene constrained after a new supply of all necessities, to her Spaiesties intollerable charge, to transport themselves thither by sea, the way by land being altogether unpassable. In which time, their succours out of Spaine in all likelihood, would have bene come too late to them, the king being so farre engaged in his honour to second his enterprise, and we barred of that prosecution of the Rebels, which now by this agreement we may wholly intend.

The Treatie therefore was thus concluded, as by the Articles ensuing, Agreed on both parts, appeareth.

### Mountioye.

In the towne of Kynsale, in the kingdome of Ireland, the second day of the month of January 1601. betwene the noble Lords, the Lord Mountioye, Lord Deputie, and Generall in the kingdome of Ireland, for her Spaiestie the Queene of England, and Don Iohn d'L Aquila, Captaine and Campe-maister, Generall and Governour of the Armie of his Spaiestie the king of Spaine, the said Lord Deputie being encamped, & besieging the said towne, and the said Don Iohn with him in it, for last respects, and to avoide shedding of blood, these conditions following were made betwene the said Lords Generalls, and their campes, with the Articles which follow.

First, That the said Don Iohn d'L Aquila shall quit the places which he holds in this kingdome as well of the towne of Kynsale, as those which are held by the souldiers under his command in Castle haven, Ballymore, and in the castle at Bécce haven, and other parts, to the sayd Lord Deputie, or to whom he shall appoint: giving him safe transportation, and sufficient for the said people, of Ships and victuals, with the which the sayd Don Iohn with them may go for Spaine, if he can at one time if not, in two shippings.

Item that the Souldiers at this present being vnder the command of Don Iohn, in this Kingdome, shall not beare armes against her Maiestie the Quene of England, wheresoever supplies shall come from Spaine, till the said souldiers be vnshipped in some of the Ports of Spaine, being dispatched as soone as may be by the Lord Deputie, as hee promiseth vpon his faith and hono<sup>r</sup>.

For the accomplishing whereof the Lord Deputie offereth to give free passeport to the said Don Iohn and his army, as well Spaniards as other nations whatsoever that are vnder his command, and that he may depart withall the things he hath, Armes, Munitions, Money, Ensignes displayed, Artillery & other whatsoever provisions of warre, and any kind of stuffe, as well that which is in Castlehaven, as Bynsale and other parts.

Item that they shall haue Ships and victuals sufficient for their money, according and at the prices which here they vse to giue. That all the people and the said things may be shipped if it be possible at one time, if not, at two: and that to be within the time about named.

Item that if by contrary windes or by any other occasions there shall arrive at any Port of these Kingdomes of Ireland or England, any Shippes of these in which the said men goe, they be entreated as friends, and may ride safely in the harbor, and be victualled for their money and haue moreover things which they shall neede to furnish them to their voyage.

Item, during the time that they shall stay for shipping, victuals shalbe giuen to Don Iohns people, at iust and reasonable rates.

Item, that of both parts shalbe cessation of armes, and security that no wrong be offered any one.

Item, That the Ships in which they shall goe for Spaine may passe safely by any other Shippes whatsoever of her Maiestie the Quene of England, and so shall they of the said Quene and her Subiects by those that shall goe from hence: and the sayde Shippes being arrived in Spaine, shall returne as soone as they haue vnshipped their men without any impediment giuen them by his Maiestie, or any other person in his name, but rather they shall shew them fauour, and helpe them if they neede any thing and for security of this, they shall giue into the Lord Deputies hands, Three Capitaines such as he shall chuse.

For the security of the performance of these Articles Don Iohn offereth that he will confirme and sweare to accomplish this Agreement: and likewise some of the Capitaines of his charge shal sweare and confirme the same in a secretall writing.

Item

Item that hee in person shall abide in this Kingdome where the Lord Deputie shall appoint till the last shipping vpon his Lord Shippes word: and if it happen that his people be shipped all at once, the said Don Iohn shall goe in the same flecte without any impediment giuen him. But rather the Lord Deputie shall giue a good Shippe in which he may goe, and if his said men be sent in two Shippings, then he shall goe in the last.

And in like sort the said Lord Deputie shall sweare and confirme, & giue his word in the behalfe of her Maiestie the Quene and his owne, to keepe and accomplish this Agreement, and to appoint the Lord President, the Lord Marshall of the Campe, and thother of the councill of State, and the Earles of Desmond and Clanricard shall sweare and confirme the same in a secretall writing.

George Carew.

Thomond.

Clanricard.

R. Wingfield.

Ro. Gardemor.

Geo. Bourcher.

Rich. Lineson.

I Promise and sweare to accomplish and keepe these Articles of Agreement, and promise the same likewise on the behalfe of his Maiestie Catholique the Kinge my Maister,

Don Iohn d<sup>e</sup>l Aquila.

And so is this troubled cloud, of most likely perillous danger for this time dissolved, to her Maiesties most singular renowne: Not so much for the glory of the event, as for her owne Magnanimity and Princely resolution, to leaue nothing undone which might preserve that Crowne, how deare soeuer it cost her: to the great honour of our generall, Leaders, and Souldiers by land and Sea actors therein, who, if it be well considered, that after the Enemies arrivall xxviii. September, it was xxvi. October before they could get all things ready to sit downe nere the Towne: xxix. October before their Ordinance could play, And that by i. Nouember, they had gotten Ricconen castle, And then vij. Nouember were taken strethely to diminish their strength by sending the L. President from them with two Regiments of foote & 25. hozes against Odonell, That he returned not till xxv. Nouember, his Companies 26. And then that the Supplies of Spaine were landed, That the most of our shipping that did vs special service were gone towards them, that Odonell was already come, Tyrone shortly after and xx. December all in sight: & beaten: That xxiii. December the Parley began: & ii. Januarie the Articles were sworn: & the Towne yielded.

MISS 4

The

The xxiii. of January at night, bone-fiers were made at London, with ringing and otherwise rejoycing, for the newes out of Ireland, the victory of our English men obteyned there, as is before declared.

1602. The moneths of February, and March warme, and dyye this yeare.

Execution. The xxiii. of Aprill Peter Bullocke Stationer, and one named Ducket, for printing of booke offensive, were hanged at Teyborne.

Seminaries executed. The xx. of Aprill, Strichborne, W. Kenlon, and James Page, Seminaries Priests, were hanged to Teyborne, and there hanged, bolvelled and quartered, for coming into this Realme, contrarie to the Statute of Anno 27. etc.

Souldiers sent into the Low countries. In the moneth of May great pressing out of Souldiers was made about London, to be sent into the Low countries.

A man lost his carce. The xii. of May, a man was set on the Pillorie, and lest one of his eares at Westminster, and the other at Chancery lanes end, by the new Temple, for giving false witness and false othe in an inditement against an other.

Lady Walsingham deceased. The xix. of June, the Lady Walsingham widow to Sir Francis Walsingham late Secretary, deceased at Barne Clines in the countie of Surrey, and was the night next following buried at London, in the Cathedral Church of St. Paul, by her late husband: likewise secretly without any funeral pompe or solemnitie.

Proclamation against late buildings and inmates. The xxii. of June Proclamation was made for the pulling downe of late builded houses, and voyding of inmates in the Cities of London, and Westminster, and for the space of thre miles distant of both those Cities, but little was done, and small effect followed, more then of other the like Proclamations before time made, and also an acte of Parliament to that purpose: these Cities are still increased in buildings of Cottages, and pestered with inmates, to the great infection, and other annoyances of them both.

Men set on the pillorie. The last of June Atkinson a Customer of Hull, was set on the Pillorie in Cheape, and with him thre other, to wit, Wilkinson, Alson, and Cowley, brought thether on horsebacke, with their faces towards the horse tails, and papers on their heads. They were there whipped on the Pillorie, and lost their eares, by iudgement given in the Starre Chamber, for slanderous words by them spoken and written against the Lord Treasurer, and other of the counsell.

Tempest of thunder & haile. The same last of June, in the after-noon, fell great lightning, and thunder, with hail-stones in many places of nine inches compasse, which at Sandwich in Kent lay a fote deepe on the ground, brake the glasse windows of their Churches, and tyles off their houses, some Barnes were killed by the lightning.

Souldiers to Ireland. Ann. reg. vi. 45. About the first of August, the Citizens of London, were caused to set out and furnish 200. souldiers towards Ireland.

Citizens of London charged with ships. In the moneth of January the Citizens of London were charged with ships to sea, they to lye before Dunkerke, two ships and a Pinnett furnished, manned and maintained with the charges of 6000. pounds the yeare.

The

The xxii. of Februarie, W. Anderson a Seminary Priest was hanged to Teyborne, and there hanged, bolvelled and quartered, for being found in England contrary to the Statute of Anno 27.

In the moneth of Marche the Quene lodging at Richmond, and lying dangerously sicke, straight watches were kept in the Citie of London, with straight warding at the gates, Lanthorns with lights hanged out to burne all the night.

Thursday the xxiii. of Marche, about two of the clocke in the morning, deceased Quene Elizabeth, at her Manor of Richmond in Surrey, she being then aged lxx. yeares and had reigned 44. yeares, 5. moneths, and odde dayes, whose corpes was pilently conveyed to White hall, and there remained till the 28. of Aprill, and was then buried at Westminster.

It is a note worthy to be remembred, that Thursday hath bene a fatall day to King Henry the eyght, and all his posteritie, for himselfe dyed on Thursday the 28. of January, King Edward on Thursday the first of July, Quene Mary on Thursday the 17. of November, and Quene Elizabeth on Thursday the 4. of Marche.

On the sayd Thursday the 24. of Marche, the Lordes spirituall and temporall of this Realme, assisted with those of her late Majesties privie counsell assembling themselves together, took order, that with the publishing of the Quenes orpature, should also be declared to the comfort of the whole Realme, her latefull successor. And about xvi. of the clocke at none of the same day, which was (after the account of the Church of England) the last day of the yeare of Christ 1602. having proclaimed King James at the Court gate, entered the Citie of London, by Ludgate, where finding Robert Lee, Lord Mayor of that Citie, the Aldermen, and Citizens: they all together, with a multitude of other good subjects rode to the Crosse in West-Cheape, and on the West-side thereof, with sounding of Trumpets, caused to be proclaimed, James King of Scotland, the first of that name in Scotland, and of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, the first, as lawfull heire, lineally descended, from Margaret eldest daughter to Henry the seventh, and Elizabeth his wife, eldest daughter to Edward the fourth, married to James the fourth King of Scotland, in the yeare 1503, (one hundred yeare since) who had issue James the first, rather to Mary the first, mother to James the first, now King of this whole Island, England, Scotland, and Wales, with the Realmes of France, Ireland &c. Sir Robert Cecil principall Secretary, read the Proclamation, William Dehike, alias Garter, principall King at Armes pronounced it with an audible voyce. From thence they rode into Milke-streete, to the house of James Pemberton, one of the Shiriffes of London, where they dined, and after fate in Counsell.

That morning was dispatched in post, Sir Robert Curie knight, towards Scotland, to signifie, what had bene done here, which he performed to the King at Edenborough in Scotland, on Saturday at night next following, in less then which 3. dayes.

A Seminary Priest executed.

Quene Elizabeth deceased.

1603. Sir Robert Curie rode 300. miles in less then which 3. dayes.

was the 24. of March, and the first newes to the king of his sisters death. This change was very plausible or well pleasing to the Nobility and Gentry, and generally to all the commons of this realme among whom the name of king was then so strange, as but few could remember, or had seene a king before, except they were aged persons, considering that the gouernment of the Realme had continued nere the space of fiftie yeares, vnder the raigne of two Quenees which is the farre greater part of a mans age, but tydings here of being brought to the king in Scotland, he called a counsell to him, and taking order for setting all things in his Realme of Scotland. began his voyage age towards England, and did so much that after many dayes journey, and lodging in the howles of sondry Noble men, Gentlemen, and Townes, he arriued at London the seuenth of May, and was lodged at the Charterhouse making manie knights by the way as he came.



JAMES the first, Sonne to Henry Steward, and Mary late Quene of Scotland, bozne in Edenborough castle, began his raigne ouer this realme of England the 24. of March, the last day of the yeare, 1603. aged 36 yeares, and better, he had almost so long reigned King of Scotland, in peace withall christian princes, which grace he also brought vnto England; God make vs thankfull, and grant him in that blessed peace many yeares to raigne King ouer vs.

Diuerse prisoners touching the late Earle of Essex, were deliuered out of the Towre of London, namely the Earle of Southampton on the treaty of A-  
prill.

The xxi of Aprill, being maundy thursday, a maundy was kept at West-  
minster for the King, executed by the reuerend father in God Anthony Wat-  
son Bishop of Chichester, Almoner to the late deceased Quene, and then  
for the king, distributing the almes, he ministered vnto thirty six poore men  
(according to the Kings age) as the vse had bene of former times accustomed  
for the Quene.

The 27. of Aprill being then wednesday in Easter weeke, by casualty of fire,  
taking hold of 1000. weight of Gunpowder, and Salt petar, the powder  
mill and diuerse houses adioyning at Radesse in Surrie was three blowne  
topp, and lost, and people slaine to the number of xiiij. or xiiii. persons.

The same 27. of Aprill proclamation was made for the apprehension of  
William and Patricke Ruthuen brethren to the late Earle of Gowrie.

The 28 of Aprill being thursday, the corpes of Quene Elizabeth, imbal-  
med lapped in leade, covered with purple veluet, laid on a chariot, drawne by  
4. great hoxses, trapt in blacke veluet, the picture of hir whole body, counter-  
feited after life, in her parliament robes, with a crowne on her head, & a sep-  
ter in her hand, lying on the corpes, was attended on, by the nobility, honora-  
ble of estate, the worshipfull officers, and seruants of the household, all in black,  
Gentlemen of the Chappell, and quire of the Colledge all in rich copes, sin-  
ging: was royally conuailed from Whitthall, to the Collegiate church of saint  
Peter of Westminster, & there after a learned sermon preached by the reue-  
rend father in God Anthony Watson bishop of Chichester entered in the  
bault of her grandfather, henry the seuenth in his most beautifull chappell.  
There were assembled mourners in blacke about y number of 1600 persons.

In the meane time on the 5. of Aprill, King James departed from Edenbo-  
rough, attended on with multitudes of his nobility, Lords, Barons & Gentle-  
men of Scotland, and some french, as the french Ambassadors, being in Scot-  
land, besides in his traine many gallants and well appointed gentlemen, who  
all attended on him that day from Edenborough vnto Dungalass a house of  
the Lord Home, where he reposed himselfe that night.

The first of Aprill, his maiestie progressed from Dungalass towards War-  
wicke

Annoreg. 1603.

prisoners  
distra. ged.

The kings  
maundy  
kept at  
Westmin-  
ster.

A powder  
mill blow  
up.

Proclama-  
tion.

Funerall  
of Quene  
Elizabeth.

The kings  
journey  
out of Scot-  
land into  
England.



wick, hauing then attending on him many more noble-men, knights, and gentlemen, besides the Lords wardens of the Marches, and borders of England and Scotland, with seuerall companies to receiue him. The Lord Gouernor of Warwicke also accompanied with the counsell of warre, the Constables with their Cornets of horse, and diuers of the Captaines, the band of Gentlemen, Pensioners, and others, aduanced forward to meete entertaine and conduct his Maiestie into the towne of Warwicke. This night seeme a strange, and happy day, whom peaceably so many warlike English Gentlemen went out to bring an English and Scottish king both included in one person into that towne, which for many hundred yeares had bene an enemy, or held, for the one nation, or the other, but the king of peace, hath so ordained it to be. These companies met him and were graciously respected of his Highnesse, so falling in among the other troopes, they set forward, and when his Highnesse came within halfe a mile of the towne, and began to take view thereof, from the Castle came such a tempest as it were thunder, it was credibly reported that a better peace of Ordinance was neuer in any Souldiers memory discharged in that place. The king being come nere to the gates, and the smoke of Gun-powder banished, issued out of the towne William Selbie, Gentleman Porter of Warwicke, with diuers other Gentlemen of accompt, and humbling himselfe before the king, presented vnto him the keyes of the Portes, who receiued them graciously, and being entered betwixt the gates, he restored to the sayde William Selbye the keyes againe, and graced him with the honour of knight-hood for his seruice. This done his Highnesse entered the second gate, and being within both the walles, he was receiued by the Captaine of the warde, and so passed through a double garde of Souldiers, well armed in all points: betwene this garde his Maiestie passed on to the Market crosse, where the Mayor and his brethren receiued him with no small signes of ioy, but the common people omitted nothing they power could attaine vnto, to expresse loyal dutie and hartie affection: kneeling, shouting, crying God saue king James, till they were (in a manner) intreated to be silent. Then maister Christopher Parkenson the Recorder of Warwicke, a man graue and reuerend, made a braue speech to his Maiestie, acknowledging him their sole and Soueraigne Lord. To whom in the Townes name, he surrendered their Charter, presenting his Highnesse also from them with a purse of golde, which as an offering of their loue he graciously receiued. And for their Charter, he answered them, that it should be continued, and that he would maintaine their priuiledges, & uphold them and their towne in all quiettie, by reason it was the principall & first place, honored with his most gracious person. Whence his maiestie passed to the church, there to humble himselfe before the altar of the humble, & thank him for the benefitts bestowed vpon him & his people, at which time preached before him the reuerend father in God doctor Tobie Mathew bishop of Durham, who made a most learned sermon, which finished, the King departed to his palace, & then they gaue him a praise of great ordinance, more then before. Warwicke neuer hauing king to rest within their walles, for many yeares.

The

The next day, being the seventh of Aprill, his Maiestie ascended the walles, whereupon all the Canoniers, and other officers belonging to the great ordinance stood every one in his place: the Captaines with their bands of souldiers likewise vnder their coulores. Amongst which warlike traine, his Maiestie, to shew an instance how beloued and respected the arte Militarie, he made a shot himselfe out of a Canon, so faire, and with such signe of experience, that the most expert Gunners there gaue it iust commendations. After this he left that part of the wall, and being attended on by his nobilitie, both of Scotland and England, the Lord Henry Howard, brother to the late Duke of Norfolk, and the Lord Cobham, being then newly come to the towne, and guarded by the Gentlemen pensioners of Warwicke, he bestowed this day in surveying of the fortifications, commending the Military order of the towne, and so returned to his palace.

The 8. of Aprill the Trumpets warned for the remoue, and all that morning, his maiestie with royall liberality bestowed amongst the garrison souldiers, and every officer for warre according to his place, rich and bountifull rewards. After dinner, his Highnesse mounted on horse-back, and took leave of Warwicke, and proceeded into England, where he was receiued by Nicholas Forester, high Shyrliffe of Northumberland, accompanied with a number of Gentlemen of the shire: who riding before his maiestie, led the way to Withington, where by the maister of the place sir Robert Curie, and his Lady, he was receiued with all dutie and affection, the house being plentifully furnished for his entertainment.

The 9. of Aprill, he set forward towards New-castle (being 16. miles from Withington) where his Highnesse was met by the Mayor, Aldermen, counsell, and best commoners of the same, in toposill manner: the Mayor presenting him with the Sword and Keyes with humble submission: giuing to his Maiestie also in token of loue and loyalty, a purse full of golde. His Highnesse returned to the Mayor the Sword and Keyes, ratifying all their customs and priuiledges that they were possessor of; and so was conducted to the Mayor's house, where he was richly entertained, and remained there three dayes.

Sunday the 10. of Aprill his maiestie went to the Church, before whom preached the Bishop of Durham: Monday he bestowed in viewing the towne, the manner and beauty, the bridge and Key, being one of the sayrest in all the North parts. Besides he released all prisoners, except for treason, murder, and papistrie, giuing summes of money for the releafe of many that lay for debt. So topfull were the townsmen of New-castle of his maiestie being there, that they thankfully bare all charge of his household, during the time of his abode with them.

The 13. of Aprill his maiestie set forward toward Durham, and when he came nere, the maiestrates of the Citty met him, and behauing themselves as others before them, it was by his Highnesse as thankfully accepted. And passing through the gates, whence he entered the market place, there was an oration made vnto him, which being ended, he passed towards the

the bishops house, where he was royally receiued, the bishop attending him with a hundred gentlemen in Tawne liuey coats.

The 14. of Aprill his maiestie toke leaue of the bishop of Durham, whom he greatly graced, and commended for his learning, humanitie and grauity, promising to restore diuers things taken from the bishoprick: his Maiestie remoued towards Malworth 16. miles from Durham, where by the Gentlewoman of the house named millicke Genton, he was bountifullly entertained.

The 15. of Aprill his Maiestie set forward toward Pojke, his traine still increasing by the numbers of Gentlemen from the South-parts, that came to offer him feaultie: whose lone although he greatly censured, yet did their multitudes so oppress the country, and make prouision so deare, that he was faine to publish an inhibition against the inordinate and dayly access of peoples coming, that many were stopped of their way: The high shiriffe of Pojkeshire very well accompanied, attended his Maiestie to malster Inglebyes besides Topcliffe, being about 16. miles from Malworth, who with great humilitie receiued his Maiestie, where he rested that night.

The 16. of Aprill, his Maiestie remoued towards Pojke, being 16. miles from Topcliffe, and when he came about some thre miles from Pojke, (the liberties of the Citie extending so farre) Maister Bucke and Maister Robinson, shiriffes of the Citie met him, & with humble dutie presented him with their white staves: which his Maiestie receiuing, he deliuered them againe, so they attended him towards the Citie, within a mile of which, when his Highnesse approached, there met him the Lord Burghley, Lord President of the North, with many worthy Knights and Gentlemen of the shire. These also attended on his person to Pojke, where when he came nere into the Citie, met him thre of the seruants at Armes, M<sup>r</sup>. Wood, M<sup>r</sup>. Damsfort, and M<sup>r</sup>. Westrepe, who deliuered their spases, which his Maiestie deliuered to them againe, commanding them to waite on him: and the same time the Sergeant Trumpeter and some other did in like manner submit themselves, whom in like manner he commanded to waite on him. Then he rode till he came to one of the gates of Pojke, where the Lord Maior of the Citie, the Aldermen, and weltheift commoners, with abundance of other people met him: there a long Oration being made, the Lord Maior deliuered the sword and keyes to his Maiestie, together with a Cup of gold, filled full of golde, which present he gratefully accepted: deliuering the keyes againe to the Lord Maior, but about bearing of the sword, there was some argument, the Lord President taking it for his place, the Lord Maior esteeming it to be his, but the King demanded, if the sword being his, they would not be pleased, that he should haue the disposing thereof; whereunto they humbly answered it was all in his pleasure. His Highnesse deliuered the sword to the Earle of Cumberland, who bare it before him, riding from the gate to the Spinnier, in which way there was a Conduit that all the day ranne white wine, and Claret, cusey man to drinke as much as he liked. From the minster his maiestie went on foote vnder a Canopy, borne by foure knights,

to his steepe house, being the Mannor of Saint Maries, where he was honorably receiued by the Lord Burghley, who gaue cherefull entertainment to all his followers, during the time of his continuance in Pojke.

The 17. of Aprill being Sunday, the King went on foote to the minster to heare the Sermon, which was preached by Doctor Thornborow, Deane of Pojke, and Bishop of Limrycke in Ireland, whose doctrine and method of teaching was highly by his maiestie commended. The Sermon ended, the King returned a foote in the same foyle as he came, to his mannor, where he was royally feasted by the Lord Burghley, during his continuance in that mannor of Saint Maryes. It is sayd to exceed all the rest in any place of England before: Buttries, Pantries, and Sellars allwayes held open in great abundance for all comers.

Sunday the 18. of Aprill, his maiestie was feasted by the Lord Maior of Pojke, whom he knighted by the name of sir Robert Walter. After dinner his Maiestie commanded all the prisoners to be set at libertie, except papists, and wilfull murderers, and rode from Pojke to Grimstone, being a house of Sir Edward Stanhops, where he laye that night, and dyed the next day.

The 19. of Aprill his Maiestie rode to Pontefret, to see the Castle, which when he had viewed, he rode to Doncaster, where he lodged at the signe of the Beare and Sonne.

The 20. of Aprill his maiestie rode towards Worsope, the Earle of Shyresburys house: and at Watine the high shiriffe of Pojkeshire toke his leaue of the King, and maister Askoth high shiriffe of Nottinghamshire receiued him, and so conducted him till he came within a mile of Blithe, where his Highnesse alighted, and sat downe on a bankes side to eate and drinke. After which short repast he ridde forthwardes to Worsope, but in the Parke he was somewhat stayed: for there appeared a number of Huntsmen all in Greene: the cheefe of which in a Woodmans speech did welcome him, offering to shew some game, which he gladly condiscended to see, and with a traine set, he hunted a good space, and went into the house, where he was so nobly and royally receiued, with abundance of all things, that still, enery entertainment seemed to exceede other.

The 21. of Aprill his Highnesse toke his waye towards Aeto-worke vpon Trent, where that night he lodged in the Castle: the Aldermen presented him with a faire gilt Cuppe, which was kindly accepted. In this Colone, and in the Courte, was taken a Cut-purse doing the deede, and being a base pilking Thiefe, (yet was all Gentleman-like in the out-side): this fellow had good stoepe of coyne found about him, and vpon examination confessed, that he had from Barwicke to that place, played the Cut-purse in the Courte. The King hearing of this gallant, directed a warrant to the Recorder of Aeto-worke, to haue him hanged, which was accordingly executed, and all the rest of the prisoners in the Castell were pardoned.

The 21. of April, his highnesse rode toward Beamer Castle, hunting all the way as he rode: at Beamer Castle, his highnesse was royally received of the Earle of Rutland, and his Countesse, and plentifully entertained.

The 23. his maiestie set forward towards Burleigh, and by the way dined at Sir John Hasingtons, where that worthy Knight made him most royal entertainment: from thence he rode to Burleigh, where his highnesse with all his traine were received with great magnificence, the house seeming so riche as if it had bene furnished at the charges of an Emperour.

The next day being Easter day, there preached before him the bishop of Lincoln, and the Sermon was no sooner done, but all offices in the house were set open, that every man might haue free access to butteries pantries, kitchens, to eat and drinke in at their pleasures.

The 27. of April, the King remoued from Burleigh towards Hinchingham to Sir Oliuer Cromwell, and in the way, he dined at Sir Anthony Mildmayes, where nothing wanted in a subiects dutie to his Soueraigne. Dinner and banquet being past, and his Maiestie at point to depart, Sir Anthony presented him with a gallant Barbary horse, a riche Sable, and furniture suteable, which his Highnesse thankfully accepted, and rode toward Sir Oliuer Cromwells, and about some halfe mile ere he came there, his Maiestie was met by the Baylyffe of Hantington, who made to him a long Oration, and there delivered him the Swore, which his Highnesse gaue to the Earle of South-hampton to beare before him to maister Oliuer Cromwells house, where his Highnesse and his followers, with all commers had such entertainment, as not the like in any place before, there was such plentie and variety of meates, and diuersitie of wines, and the Sellars open at any mans pleasure. There attended also at Maister Oliuer Cromwells, the heads of the Vniuersity of Cambridge, all clad in Scarlet gownes, and cozner Caps, who hauing presence of his Maiestie, there was made a learned and eloquent Oration in Latin, welcomming his Maiestie, as also intreating the confirmation of their priuiledges, which his Highnesse most willingly graunted. Maister Cromwell presented his maiestie with many riche and acceptable gifts, as a very great and faire wrought Standing Cup of golde, goodly horses, depe mouthed hounds, diuers Hawkes of excellent wing, and at there, mone gaue 50. pounds amongst his maiesties officers.

Godman-  
chester.

The 29. of April, after breakesfast, his maiestie toke leaue of maister Oliuer Cromwell, and of his lady, late widow to Seniour Horatio Paulo Vicino. From thence he departed to Kopsion: and as he passed through Godmanchester, a towne close by Hantington, the Bayliffes of the towne with their brethren met him, acknowledging their allegiance. There conueying him through the towne, they presented him with three-score and ten Teme of hoxe, all traced to faire new Blonghes, in shew of thir husbandry, which, while his maiestie being very well delighted with the sight, demanded why they offered him so many Hoxes and Blonghes: he was answered, that it was their aunient custome, whensoever any King of England passed through their towne, so to present him. Besides they added, that they held

their

their lands by that tenure, being the Kings tenants. his Maiestie not only toke well in worth their good minds, but had them ble well their Blonghes, being glad he was Land lord of so many good husbandmen in one towne.

His maiestie in his way towards Kopsion, the thiefe of Huntingdon thre toke his leaue, and was there received by Sir Edward Denie high thiefe of Hartford thre, attended on by a goodly company in number seven score suteable apparelled in blew livery Coats, and white Doublets, Hatts and feathers, e al wel mounted on horses with red saddles. Sir Edward after his humble duty done, presented his maiestie with a gallant horse, a rich saddle, and furniture correspondent, being of great value, which his highnesse accepted graciously, and caused him to ride on the same before him, the knight quickly mounted the said horse, and in hzane manner conducted his maiestie to one spallier Chesters house where his highnesse lay that night, on his owne kingly charge.

The 30. of April, his maiestie rode to Standon to Sir Thomas Sadlers, and by the way the bishop of London met him, attended on by a goodly company of gentlemen in tawny coats and chaines of gold. At Sir Thomas Sadlers, his Maiestie was royally entertained for himselfe and his kingly traine: There his Maiestie stayed Sunday, before whome the Bishop of London preached.

The second of May being monday his maiestie remoued to Bockesbourne, a house of Sir Henry Cocks, cofferer to the late Quene Elizabeth, and now also cofferer to his Maiestie, where met him the Lord Keeper of the great seale, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Audrall, with most of the nobility of the land, and counsell of state, who were fauourably received. At which time the said Lord Keeper made a briefe and learned speech to his Maiestie: To which his highnesse answered with great grace and princely wisdom. But to speake of his highnesse intertainment at Bockesbourne, it was such and so abundant, as there was no man of what condition soeuer, but had what appetite desired: his maiestie also receiuing therby great contentment: And continuing there but one night, he departed the next day, thanking the good Knight for his great expences.

The 3. of May his Maiestie came to Chesbals a house belonging to Sir Robert Cicill.

At this house there met his Maiestie, all or the most part of the old seruants and officers in house-hold, of the late Quene: and with them the guards of his maiesties body, all of them being courteously received to their owne content.

Also in this house of Chesbals the 4. of May his Maiestie made others noble men of Scotland of his honourable counsell viz. the Duke of Lennox. The Earle of Mar. The Lord Home. Sir George Howme Treasurer of Scotland, Sir James Elphinston, Secretary to the King. The Lord of Kynloss, now maister of the Roles. Also of the English nobility, he made of his Council, The Lord Henry Howard, brother to Thomas Howard late Duke of Norfolk. Thomas Lord Howard, sonne to the said Duke, who was also

E t t

m m o s

made there Lord Chamberlain. And the Lord Mountjoy, not then returned out of Ireland. His Majesty stayed at Theobalds: four days, with entertainment such and so costly as hardly can be expressed, considering the multitude that thither resorted, besides the traine, none going thence unsatisfied. The King made knights there (as it was said) twenty eight.

The 7. of May being Saturday, he removed from Theobalds, towards London, riding through the meadows, where within two miles on this side Waltham, John Swinneron, one of the Shyrcles of London, and also Shyrcle of Spittlesey met his Majesty, with 20. men in livery Cloakes, where an eloquent and learned oration was made to his highnesse, by Richard Marten Gentleman of the Spittle Temple. Besides these men in livery Cloakes that attended the shyrcles, all well mounted on gallant horses, most of the shyrcles officers attended him, who conducted the Kinge, within some two miles of London: And at Stanfords hill, the Lord Mayor of London presented himselfe, with whom were the Aldermen in Gownes of Scarlet and chaines of gold about their neckes, withall the chiefe officers and counsell of the city, besides 500. Citizens, all very well mounted, clad in velvet coates, and chaines of gold, with the chiefe Gentlemen of the Hundreds. who made a goodly shew to entertaine their Soueraigne. There also met his Majesty, all his officers of estate, as Surgeants at Armes with their rich maces, the Herald in their Coats of Armes, & Trumpeters every one in his due place, the Duke of Lincolne bearing the sword of honor before him, his highnesse passed over the fields, and come in at the backe side of the Charter-house where he was most royally received and entertained, by the Lord Thomas Howard, he lay there four nights, and at his departure made about eighty knights.

Proclamation  
against  
Monopolies  
and  
Privileges.

The said seventh of May proclamation was made at London, to cease the exercising of all monopolies and protections, that hindered mens suits in law, & to forbid the oppressions done by salt peter-makers, purriers, & cartfakers.

The xi. of May the Lord Zouche, and the Lord Burghley were sworn privy counsellors at the Charterhouse, and the same day the King rode in a coach, com: what closely from the Charter-house to White-hall: from thence was conveyed by water to the Tower of London, attending on him the Lord Admirall, the Earle of Southampton, the Lord of Worcester, Lord Thomas Howard and others. The first day his majestie, viewed the offices in the Tower, as the Armoury, the Magazine, the Artillery &c. The next day he saw the Ordnance-house, the mint-house, and at the last the Lions.

Barons &  
knights  
made in  
the tower.

The 20. of May being friday, his highnesse made Barons, and knights as followeth, Sir Robert Cecil, Lord Cecil of Oxenden. Sir Robert Sidney Lord Sidney of Denburch. Sir William Knoles, Lord Knoles of Grays. Sir Edward Wotton, Lord Wotton of Spalep. And at the same time, William Dethick alias Carter, King at armes was made knight, and in the after none the same day were made x. knights, to wit Sir John Deane, Sir John Trauer, Sir Thomas Smith, sometimes one of the shyrcles of London and prisoner in the Tower.

To wit, about the late Earle of Essex, but quite himselfe so well that he was long since discharged, and now in the same place, by the King graced with the order of knighthood, and since by the said Kings appointment sent Lord Ambassadors, to the Emperour of Gulconie, Sir Thomas Hubbard, Sir Robert Markam, Sir George Merton, Sir Edmond Bolt, Sir Thomas Parton, Sir David Fowles, Sir William Gardner. Which made up (as was accounted) the number of 237. knights, or better made since the King entered Warwick.

The 16. of May, proclamation was made to prohibit & forbid al manner of persons from killing of Deare, and all kinds of wild foule, used for hunting and hawkng, upon paine of the severall lawes and penalties to be executed upon them.

Proclamation  
against  
spoiling  
of  
game  
in  
hunting.

The 17. of May proclamation against robberies on the borders.

The 19. of May was also proclamation made for the uniting, and quieting of the people inhabiting upon the Borders of England and Scotland, to live in love and quietnesse, from all spoiles, and robberies each from other. &c.

From the Tower of London the Kings highnesse removed by water to his Mannor of Greenwich, where on the 20. of May he made knights, Sir Julius Caesar, master of Requests, Sir Roger Wilbraham also master of Requests, Sir William Wade, Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Thomas Edmonds Clerkes of the Concell, and Sir Thomas Lake Clarke of the signet.

Knights  
made at  
Greenwich.

On the 22. his highnesse knighted Sir Robert Lee, Lord Mayor of London, Sir John Crooke Recorder of London, and Sir Edward Cooke Attorney Generall, his Majesty was that day most royally served, and at night divers fire-works on the Thames were shewed for triumph.

In Hillary Terme the 45. yeare of the late Quene these xi. viz. Thomas Coveny of the Inner Temple, Robert Houghton of Lincolnes Inne, Laurence Tanfield of the Inner temple, John Crooke of the Inner temple, Thomas Foster of the Inner Temple, Edward Phillips of the middle Temple, Thomas Harris of Lincolnes Inne, James Altham of Greys Inne, Henry Hubert of Lincolnes Inne, Augustine Nicholas of the middle Temple, and Robert Barker of the Inner Temple, received writs from the Quene, de statu & gradu servientiu ad legē suscipiēdo, returnable tres pasche. Then next following, being the second returne in Easter Terme, but the Quene dying in the meane time, their writs abated: howbeit the King being advertised into Scotland, from the counsell of England of this election of Sergeants at the law made by the Quene his late predecessor, gave good allowance thereunto, so far forth, as that by new writs returnable at the day aforesaid, he chose at the first elected number unto the said degree, only adding unto them three more, viz. John Shirley of the middle temple, George Snigge of the middle Temple (they being auncients to al at the first) & Richard Huron of Greys Inne Justice to them al. These 14. now in nūber on tuesday the 17. of May, being 6. next day after their returne of their writs made their appearance before S. Thomas Egerton, L. keeper of the great seale of England, in the high court of Chancery & were then sworn sergeants at law upon tuesday following, being the 24. of May they were admitted to the common place

Sergeants  
at  
law.

barre and the same day kept their feast in middle Temple hall. At which day Edward Philipps, being chosen the Kings Sericant meane, after their appearance in the Chancery, & before their feast day, had by reason thereof, the precedence before all other his assistants. And John Croke being knighted by the King upon Sunday in the said meane time before their feast, yet notwithstanding, took his place but in due order of his antiquity.

The first of June, a man that dwelt in Smithfield, and having his house visited with sickness there, for presuming to come into the court then at Greenwich, was whipped through the City of London.

The 4. of June, Valentine Thomas, that had many yeares layne prisoner in the Towre of London, was arraigned at the Kings bench barre at Westminster, and their condemned of treason, for conspiracy against our late Queene, and some of her Councell, and on the 7. of June, after six of the clocke at night, the same Valentine was hanged from the Kings bench in Southwarke, to Saint Thomas Waterings, and their hanged, bowelled and quartered.

About this time the honorable, Charles Lord Mountjoy returned out of Ireland, and with him Hugh Onely Earle of Tyrone, they were both lodged at Mansfield in Essex, for a season, and then repaired to the Court, where they were honorably received. The Lord Mountjoy was Sworne of his Majesties honorable private councill.

On the 7. of June, and on the 8. of June, proclamation was made, that the said Earls of Tyrone, was restored to the Kings fauour, & should be of all men honorably used.

Also in this month of June, diuers Embassadors, from soveraine Princes, arrived here at London and were they lodged, namely, from the Palgrave of Rheyn in Germany, one of the electors, these after their message of gratulation to the King returned the 10. of June.

From the States of the low countries, Holland, Sealand, &c. came their Prince of Orange, the Treasurer Foulk, (who died here) and Barnauile, commisioners, with a great traine, these were lodged in Bishops gate streete, where they remained long, and kept great cheere, sparing for no cost.

An Embassador from the Arch-duke of Austria, with his company was lodged without Bishops-gate, by the late dissolved hospitall called Saint Mary Spittle, in the house sometime pertaining to Sir Horacio Paulanison, and from thence removed to Stanes, nere unto Windsor, &c.

The 8. of June arrived at London Mounfieur de Rosny great treasurer of France, accompanied with noble men, and gallant gentlemen in great number, the same night they in 30. coaches, rode to the French Ambassadors leager, then lodged at the Barbicane by Red-crosse streete, they supped with him, and returned to Crosby place, (now belonging to Sir John Spencer) in Bishops gate streete, where the principall was lodged, and the other in places nere adjoining.

The 2. of July, the feast of Saint George, was royally kept at Windsor, by the king, and knights of the honourable order of the garter: where the

Prince, the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Southampton, the Earle of Mar, and the Earle of Penbrooke were installed.

The 5. of July Anthony Copley was proclaimed to be apprehended. And on the 16. was also made the like proclamation for Sir Griffin Markham Knight, William Watton priest, and William Clarke priest, to be apprehended,

About that time were apprehended, and committed, diuers persons, namely: Henry Brooke Lord Cobham, George Brooke, brother to the said Lord Cobham, Thomas Lord Gray of Wilton, Sir Walter Rawley Knight and others.

The 21. of July were created at Hampton court, in the great hall, by the Kings Majesty under his estate, and the queene present, Henry Writheolly Earle of Southampton restored and created, Thomas Lord Howard of Walden created Earle of Suffolk. Charles Blunt Lord Mountjoy created Earle of Devonshire. Sir Thomas Egerton Lord Chancellour, created Baron of Elefmore. Sir William Russell Lord Russell of Choznaugh. Sir Henry Gray, Lord Gray of Groby. Sir John Peter Lord Peter of Wiltoll. Sir John Harington, Lord Harington of Exton. Sir Henry Dauers Lord Dauers of Dauntly. Sir Thomas Gerard Lord Gerard of Gerards Wympy in comit. Stafford. Sir Robert Spenfor Lord Spenfor of Wymplepton.

Friday the 22. of July, the King and Queene removed to Westminster. On Saturday the 23. the king dubbed knights in his garden, the Judges, Sergeants at lawe, Doctors at lawe, and many others. 3. or 4. hundred

Judges. { Sir Francis Gandy.  
Sir Thomas Wamefley.  
Sir William Clarke.  
Sir Edward Fenner.  
Sir John Savell.  
Sir George Kingesmill.  
Sir Peter Warberton.  
Sir Christop. Telverton.

Doctors  
Ciuil.

{ Sir Daniell Dune.  
Sir Christop. Parkins.  
Sir Richard Swale.  
Sir Thomas Crompton.  
Sir John Gylson.  
Sir John Bennet.

Sargeants. { Sir John Heale.  
Sir Edward Philipps.  
Sir Thomas Harris.  
Sir David Williams.  
Sir William Daniell.  
Sir Edward Heron.  
Sir Henry Hubard.  
S. Tho. Fleming Solicitor  
Sir Francis Bacon.  
Sir Henry Montague.

Gentlemen  
Hushers.

{ Sir George Copin.  
Sir John Willoughby.  
Sir John Tyrrel.  
Sir Philip Skadamore.  
Sir Thomas Dabrig. Court.  
Sir William Roper.

Doctors  
Ciuil. { Sir Edward Stanhop.  
Sir Iohn Tyndall.  
Sir Mathew Caraw.

{ Sir Iohn Gilbert.  
Sir Francis Vincent.  
Sir Iohn Cotton.  
Sir Robert Lane.  
Sir Robert Edwards.  
Sir Nicholas Gilborne.

Sir William Sandes.  
Sir Thomas Myldmay.  
Sir Thomas Hammond.  
Sir John Whitton.  
Sir Alexander Cune.  
Sir Samuel Salterfall.  
Sir Robert Varna.

Sir Thomas Penruddock.  
Sir Edward Cooke.  
Sir Thomas Vmfrey.  
Sir Thomas Windbank.  
Sir Thomas Clarke.  
Sir John Wood.

Clarks of  
the Signet,  
&c.

Monday the 24. was performed the solemnity of Knights of the Bath, knights of riding honorably from Saint James to the court, and made them with their squires, and pages about the tilt-yards, and after went into the park of Saint James, and there lighted all from their horses, and went up to the Kings maiesties presence in the Gallery, where they received the order of knighthood of the bath.

Names of  
knights of  
the Bath.

Sir Phillip Harbert.  
Sir Thomas Berkeley.  
Sir William Evers.  
Sir George Wharton.  
Sir Robert Riche.  
Sir Rob. Carr. of Newboth.  
Sir John Egerton.  
Sir Thomas Compton.  
Sir James Erskin.  
Sir William Anstruder.  
Sir Patrick Murrey.  
Sir James Hays.  
Sir John Lindsey.  
Sir Richard Preston.  
Sir Oliver Cromwell.  
Sir Edward Stanley.  
Sir William Harbert.  
Sir Foulke Grevill.  
Sir Francis Fane.  
Sir Robert Chichester.  
Sir Robert Knollis.  
Sir William Clifton.  
Sir Francis Fortescue.  
Sir Richard Corbet.  
Sir Edward Harbert.  
S. Tho. Langton. baro Walco.  
Sir William Ilope.  
Sir Arthur Hopton.  
Sir Charles Morison.  
Sir Francis Leigh.  
Sir Edward Montague.

Sir Edward Stanhope.  
Sir Peter Manswood.  
Sir Robert Harley.  
Sir Thomas Strickland.  
Sir Christopher Hatton.  
S. Edm. Griffin of Dingly.  
Sir Robert Beuell.  
Sir William Welbye.  
Sir Edward Harewell.  
Sir John Mallet.  
Sir Walter Aston.  
Sir Henry Gaudy.  
Sir Richard Mylgrane.  
Sir John Stowell.  
Sir Richard Amcoats.  
Sir Thomas Leeds.  
Sir Thomas Iermey.  
Sir Raph Hare.  
Sir William Foster.  
Sir George Speake.  
Sir George Hide.  
Sir Anthony Felton.  
Sir William Browne.  
Sir Thomas Wise.  
Sir Robert Chamberlaine.  
Sir Anthony Palmer.  
Sir Edward Heron.  
Sir Henry Burton.  
Sir Robert Barker.  
Sir William Norris.  
Sir Roger Bodenham.

Also by reason of Gods visitation for our sinnes the plague of Pest. there reigning

reigning in the City of London, and suburbs (the Pageants and other showes of triumph, in most sumptuous manner prepared, but not finished) the Kinge rode not from the Tower through the City in royal manner as had bene accustomed. neither were the Citizens permitted to come at Westminster, but forbidden by proclamation, for feare of infection to be by that meanes increased, for there died that weeke in the Citie of London and suburbs of all diseases. 1103. of the plague 857.

The 25. of July being monday, and the feast of the blessed apostle Saint James, King James of England, first of that name, with the noble lady and Queene Anne, were together crowned, and annointed at Westminster, by the reverend father in God, John Whiggift, Archbishop of Canterbury, in the presence of the nobility, and other, namely Sir Robert Lee, Lord Mayor of London, in a Gowne of Crimson Velvet, his brethren the Aldermen in Gownes of Scarlet, and twelve principall Citizens admitted to attend on them: these in the morning early entered the Mayors Barge, at the three Canesaires & were rowed to Westminster, al other Citizens stayed from passing thither, either by Water, or by Land as much as might be.

The 26. of July, all the Aldermen of London were sent for, to come to Westminster there to be knighted by the king.

The first of August were forbidden by proclamation, all suiters repairing to the court, till winter following: and al men out of ordinary, commanded to depart the court to their dwelling houses, there to remaine till by occasion of service they should be recalled.

Friday the 5th of August, by commandement from the ordinary, was kept Holliday, with Morning prayer, Sermons, & evening prayer that day, and Bonfires at night, all men to praise God, for the Kings escape from being martyred by a most wicked traitor Earle Gowry in Scotland, on the 5. of August some three yeares since.

Wednesday the 10. of August. was by the ordinary appoynted to be kept Holliday, & called, the church to be frequented with prayers to almighty God, Sermons of repentance to the people, and charity to the poore to be collected & distributed, and the like commanded to be done weekly every Wednesday while the heavy hand of God, by the plague of pest. continued among vs.

Barlemew ffaire at London, and all other faires within 50. miles of London were forbidden by proclamation, not to be kept.

The 14. of August, Sir William Dedick Carter principall king of Armes being sent to Peterborough (in Northampton shire) with a rich pall of velvet embroidered with the armes of the mighty princeesse Mary Quene of Scots, having letters directed to the reverend Lord bishop of Peterborough in that behalfe, which pall of velvet embroidered was by him solemnly carried and laide upon & over the corpses of the same late quene assisted by many knights and Gentlemen, and much people, at the time of obitue service, and then the said Lord bishop preached a sermon in that behalfe, in the morning and made a great feast at dinner, & the Deane preached of the same, in the afternoone. The said Quene of Scotland was royally and sumptuously entred by the said Carter on the first of August in the yeare 1587.

Coronation at Westminster.

Aldermen of London knighted.

The 5. of August to be kept Holliday.

Wednesday to be kept Holliday.

Barlemew ffaire and others forbidden.

A rich pall sent to Peterborough.

Terme  
abolished.

The xvi. of September proclamation was made for the abolishing of Michaelmas terme, unto the 4. returns commonly called Menle Michaelis, and then to be continued at Westminster.

Proclama-  
tion against  
Inmates.

Proclamation was made against Inmates, multitudes of dwellers in straight rowes and places, in and about the citie of London, and for the raising and pulling downe of new erected buildings the xvi. of September, but nothing was done touching that matter, dangerous Roagues to be banished, so appointed by the Lords of the council, and confirmed by the King the 17. of September, the statute against Roagues, vagabondes, idle & desolute persons to be put in execution.

Prisoners  
of the  
Rings  
bench.

The 22. of September, in the evening about supper time, prisoners of the Kings bench in Southwarke about the number of 30. persons, brake out on the backe-side through gardens, but being descried, & pursued, many of them were taken and committed to more straight ward.

Lorde  
Spencer  
sent to Fre-  
derick  
Duke of  
Wiltom-  
bure.  
The xvi.  
of Dec-  
ber.

Some after his Maiesties Coronation, order was given that the high & mighty prince Fredericke Duke of Wirtemberg &c. who had bene elected to be one of the company of the noble order of the Garter by the late Quene Elizabeth at Saint Georges feast in the 39. yeare of her raigne, should now forthwith be inuested with the ornaments of that order, whereupon the right honorabile, the Lord Spencer of Wormeleyton, and Sir William De-thick Garter Knight, principall King at armes, was sent to the said Duke in that behalfe. In which journey went Sir Robert Lee, & divers other knights and Gentlemen. They tooke shipping the 8. of October, and landed the next day at Callice, and by Lozaine came to Stutgard the 2. of November, where the said Lord Spencer was received with much honor and loue, and the same day, the Duke heard the cause of their coming, and highly contented there-with, caused his principall noblemen and officers to be sent for. Upon the 6. of November (which was the day appointed for that action) the Duke was inuested the robes, Garter, and other ornaments of the said order, and other Ceremonies were performed in the Cathedral church of that City, in as religious & solemn manner as in like cases hath bene used, and all the residue of that day was spent in great feasts & triumphes. 4. dayes after were spent in hunting the wild Boare, & other pastimes, the evening before they departed were made very admirable & costly fire-works, and nothing was omitted that might seeme to serve for celebratio of that feast, and triumph, and for the honorable entertainment and satisfaction of the said Lord Spencer. And the whole company finally they departed from Stutgard the 14. of November, and returned at safe into England, before the feast of the nativity following.

Terme ay-  
loined to  
Michael-  
mas.

The 18. of October, the terme was proclaimed to be adjoined till Crafino Martini, then to be kept at Winchester in the countie of Southampton.

The courts of the Exchequer, wards, liveries, and the Dutchy of Lancaster, to be kept in the Kings Manor of Richmond in the countie of Surrey.

Proclama-  
tion.

The 24. of October proclamation was made for quietnesse to be observed in matters of Religion.

Monday the 4. of November, Henry Brooke Lord Cobham, late Lord warden

warden of the cinque portes, and Thomas Lord Gray of Wilton, were in find Coaches comitted from the Tower of London towards Winchester in the County of Southampton, also on Fryday the 1. of November, Sir Walter Rawley, Sir Griffin Markham Knights, George Brooke Esquire, brother to the Lord Cobham: Anthony Copley Gentleman, William Warlon and William Clarke piers, were comitted from the Tower of London towards Winchester, the same day, out of the Gate-house at Westminster Sir Edward Parham knight, and Bartlemew Brookesby Esquire of Leicester shire, all these stayed at Bagghat in Surrey 24. miles from London.

On Wednesday the 9. of November, Henric Lord Cobham under the custody of Sir Thomas Vauisor Knight aparchall, and Thomas Lord Gray, under the custody of Sir Richard Leucion knight, were conducted by Sir Henry Wallop, and Sir Hamden Pawlet Knights of the County of South-hampton, well & strongly guarded with 50. light horsemen of the same countie, from Bagghat to the Castle of Winchester, 30. miles from Bagghat.

And on Saturday the 12. of November, George Brooke Esquire, brother to the Lord Cobham, under the custody of Sir William Wade knight, Sir Walter Rawley knight under the custody of Sir Robert Mansell knight, Sir Griffin Markham knight under the custody of Sir Robert Wroth, Sir Edward Parham knight, Bartlemew Brookesby of Leicester shire Esquire, Anthony Copley Gentleman: Watton and Cleke piers every one of these last stay, attended on by the wardens of the Tower, & Sir Edward Parham, & Bartlemew Brookesby by the keepers of the Gatehouse besides: for they thence went out of that prison, were by the said Sir Henry Wallop knight, Sir Frances Palmes knight, Sir Richard Touchbourne knight, Some and Heire to Sir Benjamin Touchbourne then high sherriffe of the said countie of Southampton, together with 50. light horsemen of that countie conducted from Bagghat aforesaid to the said Castle of Winchester, and there delivered into the custody of the said high sherriffe, where they together with the said keepers (all save the said wardens of the Tower and the keeper of the Gatehouse) remained, till they were brought out to their severall arraignments into the great common hall of the Castle of Winchester.

Arraigned at Winchester the 15. of November, George Brooke brother to the Lord Cobham, Sir Griffin Markham, Sir Edward Pawlet knights, Watton & Clarke, piers, Bartlemew Brookesby Esquire, Copley gentleman indicted. Arr.

1. To conspire to kill the King.
2. To raise rebellion.
3. To alter Religion.
4. To subvert the estate.
5. To procure invasion by strangers.

To effect these treasons, on the 14. of June 1602 the said Lord James the first, they intended their act against the King & his home, & to carry them to the Tower, and there to enter, and with the Kings treasure in the tower to maintaine their intent. but if the Tower should not be taken, then to take the Castle of Dover, & to carry the King thither, & then there to obtaine of the King three things, viz. 1. Pardon for their owne presumptions. 2. Toleration of religion, 3. to remove some from the council.



Watson the pylest dealed othes in writing by which the parties were bound to conceale their treasons. Clarke and Watson pylest, did say the xiiii. of June, the king was no king untill after his coronation.

Spallier George Brooke, and Sir Griffin Markham opened their entents to the lord Gray, to which the lord Gray did consent. That the xv. of June they did consent to take Grenewich, and to take the lords in their Chambers there, and then to carry the king and his counsell to Dover; to the Tower, and there would holde the king halfe a yeare. And they would deuide places of authoritie amongst themselves, viz. Watson lord Chancelor, George Brooke lord Treasurer, Sir Griffin Markham Secretary, lord Gray master of the horse, and Carle Sparrhall of England: and they would send for the Spaloz and Aldermen of London, and keepe them in the Tower.

The xviii. of June they opened to the lord Gray the treasons, whereto the lord Gray gaue consent, and then the lord Gray himselfe desired to be Carle Sparrhall. They did also make the said xviii. day, and there did moue othes to loyue in their treasons. And also the xx. of June, the lord Gray, George Brooke, and Sir Griffin Markham, agreed that the lord Gray should attaine the leading of 1000. men for defence of the Low-countries, and that with those men he should effect this enterprise: most of them confessing the Inditement in part, not in the whole, & pleaded not guiltie: but master Brooke before he did make this argument: That which is not the rule of my action, can not be iudge of my action, but the comon lawe cannot be iudge of my action. He affirmed he had commission from the king, which he intended aboue the comon lawe, to do that he did, viz. to trie faithfull subjects: but being willed to shew that letter of Commission, he answered he had such a one, which he did not shew, wherefore his argument was of no force.

Watson the pylest affirmed he was the man that dyed in all these Gentlemen to their treasons as now they are held to be, as he said, but he held them not so, the king being not crowned: allegoing Saul was annointed in Ramath, and after ward Saſus Rex in Mipsa: & Clarke the pylest alleged Rehoboam, but it was answered, our king was king presently after the Quenes death, as any other is heire to his father before liuery liued, and that the kings coronation was but a ceremonie to declare him to the people to be king, for our king neuer dyed, and in England is no Interregnum.

Sir Griffin Marham confessed his discontentment, his liuing being taken from him, but desired to cleare himselfe of all intention of blood, & desired the lords to moue the king for mercy, confessing his fault very penitently.

The xxi. of November was Sir Walter Rawleigh arraigned, being indicted the xxi. of September at Satines, for combining with Henry L. Cobham the ir. of June at S. Martins in the felas to compass to destroy the king, raise sedition, commit slaughter, moue rebellion, alter religion, subuert the estate, to procure inuasion, leuie war, & to set by lady Arbella Steward, &c. as in the indictment with other arguments, which continued from morning till about six of the clock at night, that Sir Jarry in halfe an houre found him guilty of high treason.

The Lord Cobham arraigned at Winchester the 29. of November. The Lord Chancelor of England being lord Steward, and sat under the Cloth

Sir Walter  
Rawleigh  
arraigned.

of estate, & none in the upper end of the hall but himselfe, the lordes sitting on benches along the sides of the hall, halfe on the one side, & halfe on the other, and at their feete, on either side sat 4 Judges, and the kings eldest gentleman usher, sitting at the feete of the lord Steward. The Clarke of the Crowne with a very low curtseie, deliuered to the lord high Steward the kings spaiellies commission, which he with great reuerence receiued and so redeliuered the same backe againe to the Clarke of the Crowne. Then a Sergeant at armes made proclamation for silence, and the Clarke read the Commission, then the Sheriffe was called to returne his writ, & to bring in the body of the lord Cobham, then master Hamden Sericant at armes returned the sommoms of the lords & piers, who were called every one of them by name.

Then the lord Cobham was arraigned upon an Inditement taken the 24. of September last, for that he together with Sir Walter Rawley, & George Brooke, the 9. of June last at saint Partins in the felas did compass to depriue the King, and him and his to bringe to death, to cause slaughter, and stir rebellion, and the government, and Religion now established to change, and to subuert the estate, & to perswade strangers enemies of this land to inuade the same: to effect these treasons, the said 9. of June did meet with Sir Walter Rawley and did consult about inuasion, and rebellion, and to stirre up and depriue the King, and him & his to bringe to destruction, and to aduance Arbella Steward, and that he should intreat with Countie Arenberge for 6. hundred thousand Crownes, & there it was agreed that he the lord Cobham should go to the Arch-bispe to perswade him to assist Arbella, and Sir Walter Rawley agreed the lord Cobham should go to Spaine to perswade the king to assist Arbella, &c. As in the indictment to which he pleaded not guilty, and put himselfe to be tried by God and his piers, who found him guilty, & he had iudgment.

The 26. of November, Thomas lord Gray, was arraigned at Winchester upon an indictment taken the 24. of September at Satines, for ioyning with George Brooke, Sir Griffin Markham & Sir Edw. Parham knight, Watson and Clarke pylest, Barlemeu Brookesby squire, & Copley gentleman, the 14. of June last to compass the king to kill & depriue, the government & religion to change, & to perswade strangers to inuade, & to effect the said practices, the said 14. of June did meete at Westminster, & there did treat to bringe into their power the king & his son, & them to carry to the towre, & there to find money to maintain their action, & there would obtaine 3. things viz part of their prescription, toleration of religion, & to remoue some from the cosell, & if the towre would not be taken, then to carry them to Dover castle, & Watson the said 14. of June did deuide othes in writing to conceale their intent, & they did affirme the king was no king, till after his coronation, & did declare that to the Lord Gray & he assented, & conferred to effect these treasons, & how to take Grenewich, and to take the lords there & detain them, and then would carry them & the king to the towre; to Dover castle, and there imprison them halfe a yeare.

And the said day it was agreed at Westminster, that Watson should be Lord Chancelor: Brooke Lord Treasurer, and Sir Griffin Markham Secretary, and that they would send for the Spaloz and Aldermen of London, and keepe them in the Tower, till they had giuen hostages not to hinder their en-

Henry L.  
Cobham  
arraigned.

Thomas  
L. Gray  
arraigned.

surprised, & to effect more, the 18. of June they declared all this to the L. Gray whereto he consented, & there did toyne with them & there desired to be Earle of Marhall, & did conclude to effect the premises on S. Iohn Baptist day & that they would move others to toyne with them. And the Lord Gray, Brooke & Markham did consult that the L. Gray should obtaine the leading & conducting of 2000. soldiers for defence of the Iowle countries & should turne them to effect this intent, and the Lord Gray promised to procure 100. Gentlemen to ioyne with them and so farre of the Inditement.

The L. Gray made a long speech full of fine words but not to the matter. Then the Lord Steward spake to the Lord Gray, and willed him to answer boldly and without feare. Then to the piers, advising them though they stood on swyne yet to try indifferently betweene the king & the prisoner then to the kings counsell at law, willing them, not to confound the prisoner with vane coullarie matter. Serient Heale opened the Inditement, and maister at toyne answered the Lord Grayes speeches, and advised him not to vlie shifts, for they had not serued the other day the matter of shifts.

In the course of proceeding against the Lord Gray, it appeared by the examination of George Brooke, Mr. Griffin Markham & other, that he was acquainted with the kings surprise to haue bene at Hainworth or at Greenwiche, but the L. Gray stood upon it, that the conspiracy was not opened to him till after it was dead, & went no further to be proceeded withal, which was pious contrary, for the L. Gray afterward consented to bring an hundred gentlemen for that purpose, which he said was but to deliuer a petition to the King for reformation of some abuses in the common-wealth, neuertheless he lingered to attempt, for feare the Catholike faction should out goe his, & he saide he would haue his religion the superior: which seemed to be the reason why they did not attempt their wicked purpose: then the Lord Gray would haue extimated the fact, saying it was but a verbal matter and neuer to be effect & therefore could not be treason, but when the Iudges told him his fact was treason, he began to make an inuective speech against the law, which would not serue his turne, then the Lords went together and returning founde him guilty.

The 29. of November, Watson, & Clarke, Bishops were executed at Winchester, Watson first acknowledged his offence, secondly asked mercy of the king and state, desiring God to prosper both in peace and amity. Thirdly he was sorry, he had done so many into that act, wishing he had so many bodies as might satisfie his kings maiesty for all that had conspired & were in danger, & like to suffer so: that action, fourthly he forgave and desired to be forgiven of all, namely that the Jesuits would forgive him if he had written ouer eagerly against them, saying also it was decessioned by them whom he forgave if they had conspired & conspired had done him into that action for which he suffered, he desired also to witness that he died a true catholike, and all true Romanish catholikes to pray for him. Clarke in little differed from Watson, only he seemed not engaged in the action so much, he was done in by Watson, he said he had written a dialogue betweene a gentleman and a scholler concerning the obedience and loyalty of subjects towards their King.

and

and did therefore mention the booke, least happily if it were after printed it might not be thought to haue bene written by him, his death was with more penitency and constancy then Watsons was: he confessed he relied onely on the mercies of God, not his owne merits, desiring all christian Catholikes, & all which were in the unity of the church to pray for him.

Then both acknowledged that they suffered the iudgment of death, not for their religion, or their function of priest-hood, but for that they treasonable act, which the iudges by the lawes whose wisdomes they rather commended then would blame, had censured for treason, though their intents & hearts to God were cleare in that point, only Clarke said he knew not the certainty, yet he thought his priesthood at least by accident had hastened his execution.

George Brooke beheaded at Winchester the 5. of December, being brought forth vnto the scaffold, by the shrieve, and the bishop of Winchester to persuade him to dye well, after many good exortations and prayers by them vnto him, he uttered these few speeches, after a still kind of passion, with a very low voice, & cherefull countenance being by very few heard: That he would neither excuse, nor accuse any more for any matter of treason or practices against his king or state, but that he did assuredly hope that in time it would be knowne vnto the world manifestly discovered that he died free and innocent from any action worthy of death, and would not by any means seeme to acknowledge himselfe guilty, he desired the gentlemen, and those by him, to be witness to his last will and testament, wherein since his last act, had bereft him of all goods and landes, where withall he might benefite his beloued and deare wife, and children: he had nothing left to bequeath them, but only his earnest prayers to thalmyghty to bleesse and prosper them, which he did there earnestly offer vp vnto him, in the sight and hearing of them all.

He said to die it did not grieve him, neither was it in any sorte fearefull vnto him only his greatest care was that he should leaue his wife, and children, by his act wholly destitute and unprotected.

He was in the whole time of his being on the scaffold neuer sene to alter his countenance, or to make any shew of griefe, untill he came to talk of his wife & children, at which time the water stood in his eyes, and his countenance somewhat changed, for matters of religion he shewed himselfe a well deuoted christian, and in each respect obedient, and cherefull in his prayers, humbly desiring mercy and forgiveness of his sinnes, when he came to prepare himselfe to lay his head on the block, he told them, they must giue him instructions what to do, for he was neuer beheaded before.

Having laid downe his head, his hande being not sate, he rose againe, the headsmen pressing to helpe him, he put him from him, & called his owne man to do the last seruice for him he laid downe his head and had it taken off at a blowe, he was apparelled in a black damaske gowne, a suit of black latten with a wrought night-cap, his gowne being taken off it was deliuered to the shrieve's man, which the headsmen demanded, and being denied it, he made answer that but he had it, the shrieve should execute the office himselfe.

Here

Watson &  
Clarke  
executed.

George  
Brooke  
beheaded.

**Dr. the**  
**Lords**  
**Cobham**  
**Gray**  
**Essex**  
**Markham**

Here you must understand, that as soon as the arraignments were past, sed at Winchester, the privy council (to the number of fourtene or fiftene, of which company all of them had either bene triers of the noble men as their piets, or sitten as high commissioners upon the Gentlemen) were called before his Maiesty in his privy chamber at Wilton, where he commanded them to deliver (without respect to any person) the true narration only of the order in the trial of these persons, that had bene condemned by the Law, and of the nature and degree of their offences, as had appeared in every one of them by their severall answers. All which being clerely and iudly reported by them (each speaking in hearing of the rest) his maiesty, having concluded in his owne hart, in what manner to procede: and that without asking of any earthly person) it pleased him to resolve (betwene God and himselfe) that their execution should be stayed, even at the instant. And therefore, after the two priests were executed on Tuesday the 29. of November, and George Brooke on Sunday following his Maiesty on the same day, being the 5. of December, signed 3. warrants for the execution of the late Lord Cobham, Lord Gray, & Sir Griffyn Markham knight, with particuler direction to the Shrieve, to performe it on Friday after before ten a clocke in the morning, all these directions being now become notorious, both by the copies of Execution (which passed under the great Seale) and by the making ready the scaffold at Winchester, his Maiesty very secretly drew himselfe into his Cabinet, on Wednesday before the day of execution, and there privately framed a warrant, written with his owne hand to the Shrieve, by vertue whereof, he countermanded all the former directions, alleging the reasons therein mentioned. First his maiesty resolved it should be a Scottishman that should carry the warrant, being thereby like to be freed from particular dependency upon any nobleman, Councillor, or other their friends or allies. Next he resolved, to send a man of no extraordinary rank, because the standers by should not observe any alteration, nor the delinquents themselves should take any apprehension of such a mans being there at that time.

His being his Maiesties special desire that every one of them being severally brought upon the scaffold might quietly breath forth their last words, & true confession of his secret confidence. And so his maiesty made choice of Paister John Gibb, a Scottishman, a man that had never delt with any counsellour, or other, for suite or business, but one that had bene sent backe into Scotland, from whence he was but now freshly arrived at Wilton some few dayes before.

This party being by the King approved for an ancient trusty and secret servant, and a man little known, receiving the warrant secretly on Thursday, from the Kings owne hand, and telling his fellows that he must lye that night at Salisbury upon some private business of his owne, he rode directly to Winchester, and there keeping himselfe private all night, rose early in the morning, on Friday, and went obscurely to the Castle Greene, where the people flocking in all the morning, as the time drew neere, he put himselfe with the throng close by the Scaffold, and there leaned till the Shrieve brought

brought by Sir Griffyn Markham to the place, who was the man appointed first to die.

Where Sir Griffyn Markham, having ended his prayers and made himselfe ready to kneele downe. M. John Gibb (while the Shrieve was preparing) to give secret notice of his charge called Sir Benjamin Tichborne, the Shrieve, and then delivered him privately his Maiesties warrant, with further directions, who he should see it.

Here upon, the Shrieve perceiving his Maiesties intention, so discreetly ordered the matter, as he only called Sir Griffyn Markham unto him on the Scaffold, and told him that he must withdraw him selfe into the hall, to be confronted with before those two Lords that were to follow him, about some points that did concerne the Kings service: and so carrying Markham into the Hall he left him there and went up to the Castle for the Lord Gray, who being likewise brought up to the Scaffold, and suffered to powze out his prayers unto God at great length, and to make his confession, as he would answer upon his soule, when he was ready to kneele downe to receive the stroke of death, Paister Theris came to him to stay, and told him that he must goe downe into the Hall for a while, and trilled him there to tary till he returned.

Last of all, he went for the Lord Cobham, who having also ended his devotion to God, and making himselfe ready to receive the deadly blow, the Shrieve caused both the Lord Gray, & Sir Griffyn Markham, to be brought back to the Scaffold, and there before them all thre that were condemned, and in the hearing of all the company, notified his Maiesties warrant, by which he was authorized to stay the execution.

The Lord Cobham (holding his hands to heaven) applauded this incomparable mercy of so gracious a soveraigne, aggravating his owne fault, by comparing it with the princes clemencie, wishing confusion to all men alike that should ever thinke a thought against such a prince, as neither gave cause of offence, nor tooke revenge of ingratitude.

The Lord Gray finding in what measure this rare King had recompensed good for evil, and forborne to make him an example of discouragement, and terror to all men that breather might attempt to breake the bonds of loyalty, upon the passions of any ambition, begone to sob and wepe for a long while with most deepe contrition, protesting now that such was his zeale and desire to redeme his fault by any meanes of satisfaction as he could easily sacrifice his life, to prevent the losse of one finger of that royall hand, that had dealt so mercifully with him, when he least looked for it.

Sir Griffyn Markham (standing like a man astonished) did nothing but admire and pray. The people that were present, witnessed by infinite applause and shouting the joy and comfort, which they tooke, in these wonderfull effects of grace, and mercy in a prince, whom God had inspired with so many royall gifts, for their conservation. Thus far out of a letter written by T.M.

A true copy of his Maiesties warrant, written with his owne hand, and directed to Sir Benjamin Touchborne, high sheriffe of Hampshire, for stay of the execution of the late Lord Cobham, Lord Gray, and Sir Griffin Markham at Winchester. 1603.

**A**lthoug it be true, that all well gouernid and flourishing Kingdomes and common wealthis, are established by Iustice, and that these two Noblemen by birth, that are now upon the point of Execution, are for their treasonable practises condemned by the Lawe, and aduagist woorthy of the Execution thaireof, to the example and terror of otheris: The one of thaim hauing filthily practised the ouerthrow of the whole kingdom, and the other for the surprize of our owne Personne: Yet in regard that this is the first yeere of our Raigne in this Kingdom, and that neuer King was so farre oblest to his people, as we haue bene to this, by our entry here with so hairet and generall an applause of all sorts; Among whom all the kinne, friendis, and allies of the saidis condemned personis, vaire as for duart, and duetiful as any other our good Subiectis, as also that at the very time of their Arraignment none did more freely and readily giue their assent to their commition, and to deliuer thaim into the handis of Iustice, then so many of their neereft kinsmen and allies (as being Peers iuniere upon their Iurie, as likewise in regard that Iustice hath in some sort gotten course already, by the execution of the two Preists, and George Brooke, that vaire the principall ploteris and intisairs of all the rest, to the embracing of the saidis treasonabill Machinations, Vce thairefore (being resolu'd to mixe Clemency with Iustice) are contented, and by these Presentis commandyon, our present Sheriffe of Hampshire, to superseide the Execution of the saidis two Noblemen, and to take thaim backe to their prison againe, quibill our further pleasure be knowin. And since we will not haue our Lawis to haue respect to personis, in sparing the great, & stricking the meaner sort, It is our pleasure, that the like course be also taken with Markham, being sorry from our hairet, that such is, not only the heynous nature of the saidis condemned personis crime, but euen the corruption is so great of thair naturall disposition, as the care wee haue for the safety and quiet of our State, and good Subiectis, will not permit us to use that clemency towards thaim, quibill in our owne naturall inclination, wee much very easily be perswaded vnto.

On the 15. of December, Sir Griffin Markham, Bartemew Brooksby, and Antony Copely, with the Loydes Cobham and Gray, and Sir Water Rawley were all returned to the Towne of London.

In the former yeare, to wit 1602. the plague of pest. being great in Holland, Zealand, and other the low countries, and many souldiers returning thence into England, the infection was also spred in diuers parts of this realme, namely in the Citie of London and liberties thereof it so increased, that in the space of one whole yeare, to wit, from the 23. of December 1602. vnto the 22. of December, 1603. there died of all diseases (as was weekly accompanied by the parish clerkes, and so certified to the King.) 38244. whereof of the Plague. 30578. God make vs penitent. For he is mercifull.

The xi of Ianuarie was Proclamation made for commons of a Parliament

ment to be holden at Westminster.

A conference graunted by the King, and Proclaimed to be holden the 12. of January, before his Maiestie, in his private Chamber at Hampton Court, betwene the Bishops and other of his Cleargie, was upon occasion deferred till Saturday the 14. of January, on which day was holden the first conference: Monday the 16. was the second, and Wednesday the 18. the third. Agents for the plinary plaitiffes, were Doctor Reynolds, Doctor Sparkes, Gaillier Knechtubs, and maister Chatterton, commandement was given by his Maiestie, that none should be present but onely the Lozds of his private Counsaile, and the Bishops, to wit, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Durham, Winchester, Worcester, Saint Dauids, Elichester, Carlisle, and Peterborough; five Deanes, videlicet, of the Chapple, Westminster, Poules, Winchester, and Salisbury; who being called in, the doore was close shut by my Lord Chamberlaine.

The first day his Maiestie consulted with the Bishops about some speciall points, wherein himselfe desired to be satisfied, first concerning the Booke of Common-prayer, and diuine service used in the Church, second, excommunication in the Ecclesiasticall Courts: Third, the p'ouiding of sit and able Ministers for Ireland, &c.

The second day, the foure opponents brought in their complaints, who kneeling before Doctor Reinold, reduced all matters disliked to foure heads, and so into branches, all which was heard and answered by his Maiestie and the Bishops, to their contentments, as it seemed.

The third day, the Kings Maiestie shut up all with a pittie exhortation to both sides, for bntie, perswading diligence in each mans place without violence in the one party, or disobedience in the other: to which they all gave their binanimous assent, taking exceptions against nothing that was said or done, but promised to performe all duty to the Bishops as their reuerend fathers, and to toyne with them against the common aduerbsaries, &c.

The 29. of February at his house at Lambith, deceased the most reuerend Father in God (and my very good Lord) John Whitegift Archbishop of Canterbury, a man bozne for the benefit of his Countrie, and the good of the Church, wherein he ruled with such moderation, as he continued in his Princies fauour all his life, by surpassing such new sects as in his time began to rise, as his learned booke of purpose written by him against such Sectaries doth well appeare, whose aduancements for his good life, and sincers manners in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and in the common wealthe grew to these degrees. That he was (after some preferments taken in the Scholes, as Gaillier of Artes, Batcheler of Vniuitie, Gaillier of Peterborough house, Gaillier of Penbroke hall, Gaillier of Trinitie Colledge, and Doctor of Vniuitie, and twice Vice-chancellor, made Chaplaine to Quene Elizabeth, after Deane of Lincoln in the yeare 1572. next in the yeare 1577. he was endawed Bishop of Worcester, and shortly following, Vice president of Wales, upon the death of Grindall 1583. he was made Archbishop of Canterbury: in the yeare 1585. sworne one of her Maiesties private Councell,

wherein he continued during his life. At whose funerall at Cropdon (where he had founded a famous hospitall) were mourners of the Nobilitie (besides the Bishops) the Earle of Worcester, and the Lord Zouche, which among other noble men had bene his pupils, when they were brought up in Cambridge, of whom I will say no more in this place, because I have before in the yeare 1600. said some what, and my good friend maister Francis Thinne, Lancaster Herald, hath also liberally treated of him in his booke of the lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury: and one of his Chaplaines hath for an Epitaph delivered the whole course of his advancements, with the place of his birth, in these verses following.

*Wingigia Ebonum Grimsbeia ad littera nomen,  
Whigigia emisit, foelix hoc nomine Grimsbes,  
Hinc Natus: non natus ad hanc mox mittitur hospes  
Londinum: Inde notam te Cantabrigia matrem  
Insequitur, supraque fidem suavi vberis crescit:  
Petro fit Socius: Pembro: Triadiq; Magister:  
Fitq; Pater matri cathedræq; Professor vtriq;  
E cathedra Lincolnia suum petit esse Decanum:  
Mox Wigorn petit esse suum: fit Episcopus illic,  
Propriusq; Cambria quo nunquam acceptior alter.  
Post annos plus sex summum petit Anglia patrem,  
Plus quam bis denos fuit Archiepiscopus annos,  
Charior Elisa dubium est, an Regi Iacobo:  
Consul vtriq; fuit. Sis tu (rosdoni) testis,  
Pauperibus quam charus erat, quibus nobile struxit  
Hospitium puerisq; Scholam. Docemq; reliquit.  
Celibis hæc vitæ soboles quæ nata per annos,  
Septuaginta duo: millo enumerabitur ævo..  
Invidia hæc cernens moritur Patientia Vincens,  
Ad summum cuncto æternum dat lumen honori.* B.C. Capellanus.

The fifth of March, was proclamation made for the authorizing & transcribing of the Booke of Common prayer, to be read throughout the Realme.

The Kings Majesty lodging in the Towre of London, on the 13. of March, after he had surveyed all the officers, fire-keepers, and the point, where both the King and Quene copied money, & gave to divers persons there present. Being told of the Lions, he asked of their being, and how they came thither, for that in England there were bred no such fierce beasts, whereunto was answered, that no mention is made in any record of Lions breeding here, notwithstanding Abraham Ortelius, and other foreigne writers do affirme that

there are in England beasts of as great courage, as the Lion, namely the Spanish Dog. Whereupon the King caused Edward Allen, late servant to the Lord Admirall, now become the Spaniards man, and waiter of the Beare Garden, to fetch secretly three of the feeblest dogs in the Garden, which being done, the King, Quene, and Prince, with 4. or 5. Lords, went to the Lions Towre, & caused the lustiest Lion to be separated from his mate, and put into the Lions den one Dog alone, who presently flew to the face of the Lion, but the

the Lion suddenly threw him off, & grasped him fast by the necke, drawing the Dog by his eares & downe his eares. The king now perceiving the Lion greatly to exceede the Dog in strength, but nothing in noble heart and courage, caused another Dog to be put into the den, who proved as bolle & lusty as his fellow, and took the Lion by the face, but the Lion began to booke with him as with the former, whereupon the king commanded the third Dog to be put in before the second dog was spoiled, which third Dog more fierce and fell then either of the former, & in despite either of claws or strength took the Lion by the lip, but the Lion to loose the Dog by the eyes, head, and face, that he lost his hold, and then the Lion took the dogs neck in his mouth, drawing him by & downe as he did the former, but being wearied, could not bite so deadly as at the first, now whilst the last dog was thus hand to hand with the Lion in the upper rowne, the other two dogs were fighting together in the lower rowne, whereupon the king caused the Lion to be taken downe, thinking the Lion would have parted them, but when he saw he must needs come by them, he leapt claine over them both, and contrary to the kings expectation, the Lion fled into an inward den, and would not by any means endure the presence of the dogs, albeit the last dogge pursued eagerly, but could not finde the way to the Lion. You shall understand the two last dogs whilst the lion held them both under his pawes, did bite the lion by the belly, whereat the lion roared so extremely, that the earth shook to the hall: and the next lion ramped and roared as if he would have made rescue. The Lion hath not any peculiar or proper kind of sight, as hath the Dog, Beare, or Bull, but onely a ravenous kinde of surpising for prey. The 2. first dogs dyed within few dayes, but the last dog was well recovered of all his hurts: & the young Prince commanded his servant E. Allen to bring the dog to him to S. James, where the Prince charged the said Allen to keepe him, and make much of him, saying, he that had fought with the king of beasts, should never after fight with any inferior creature.

The 15. of March, King James, Quene Anne his wife, and Henry Frederick the Prince, passed triumphantly from the Towre of London, through his royall Cittie and Chamber of London, towards Westminster. The companies of the Cittie marshalled according to their degrees, were placed, the first, beginning at the upper end of Marke-lane, and the last reaching to the Conduit in Fleet-street, or there about: their seates being double raised, upon the upper part whereof they leaned: the streamers, ensignes, & banners of each particular company, decently fired. And directly against them, quite through the body of the cittie, so high as Temple-barre, a single raile, in such distance from the other, was likewise erected to put off the multitude: the king richly mounted on a white Gennet, under a rich Canopy, sustained by eight gentlemen of the Privie-chamber, for the barons of the Cinque ports, entered his royall Cittie of London, and passed the same towards Westminster, through 7 gates, of the which the first was erected at the East end of Fenchurch, over the which gate, was represented the true likeness of the notable houses Towres and Steeple within the cittie of London.

The second gate, a most sumptuous piece of workmanship, was loftily raised in Graffe-street by the Italians.

The first gate of parliament.

The second gate of parliament.

The third  
gate of pa-  
giant.

The third gate, upon Cornhill by the Exchange representing the 17. Princes of Belgia, of the Dutch nation, and by them raised.

Close to Saint Mildreds Church in the Poultie, a scaffold was erected, where (at the citties cost) to delight the Quene with her owne country Spackes, 9. Trumpets & a little drume, did very actively sound the Danish march.

The fourth  
gate of pa-  
giant.

The fourth gate, where through his Maestie passed, was (at charges of the Citizens, raised in West-cheape, at Sopar-lane end.

Adjoining to the East front of the great crosse in Cheape, was erected a square low gallop, some 4. foote from the ground, set round about with Pillars, where stood the Aldermen, the Chamberlaine, Towne Clarke, a counsell of the Citie, with Sir Henry Mountague Recorder of the Citie, who made to his Maestie a gratulatory Oration, as followeth.

Recorder  
at the crosse  
in Cheape.

High Imperiall Maiestie, it is not yet a yeare in dayes, since with acclamation of the people, Cittizens, & Nobles, auspiciously here at this Crosse was Proclaimed your true succellion to the Crowne. If then it was ioyous with harts, hands, and harts lift vp to heaven to crie King IAMES, what is it now to see King IAMES: Come therefore O worthieff of Kings, as a glorious Bridgome through your royall Chamber: but to come neerer, *Adit quem querimus*. Twentie and more are the Soueraignes we haue feared since our conquest, but conquerours of hearts, it is you, and your posteritie, that we haue vowed to loue, and wish to serue, whilest London is a Citie: Inpledge whereof, my Lord Maior, the Aldermen, & comons of this Citie, withing a golden raigne vnto you; present your Greatnesse with a little Cup of gold.

At the end of the Oration, three cups of golde were giuen in the name of the Lord spaoz, and the whole body of the Citie to his Maestie, the young Prince, and the Quene.

The fifth  
gate of pa-  
giant.

From thence his Maestie passed to the little conduit at Pauls gate, where was placed the first gate Arbour like, and so called the Arbour of Spackes, from thence he passed through St. Pauls church-yard: upon the lower battlements of which church an Antheme was song by the Matrisers of the church, to the musick of lowd instruments: which being finished, a Latin Oration was deliuered by one of maister Mulcafers Schollers, at the doze of the free schoule, founded by doctor Collet, sometime Deane of Pauls church.

The first  
gate of pa-  
giant.

The first Arche or Gate of triumph, was erected about the Conduit in Fleetstreet, whereon the Globe of the world was sene to moue, &c.

The sixth  
gate of pa-  
giant.

At Temple-bar where his maestie was upon the point of giuing a gracious and princely farewell to the Lord spaoz and the Citie, a leauenth arche or gate was erected, the forefront whereof was proportioned in euery respect like a Temple, being dedicated to Ianus, &c.

A Page  
ent at the  
Strand.

The citie of Westminster, and Dutchy of Lancaster at the Strand, had erected the invention of a Main-bow, the Spine, Sinne, & Starres, aduanced between 2. Pyramides, &c. which peece of worke was begun and ended in 12. daies: of all which Pageants, deuises, speeches & songs, deliuered in them, yee may read at large in a Booke intituled, The magnificent entertainment giuen to King IAMES, &c. upon the day of his triumphant passage from the Tower, brought

through his honourable Citie of London the 15. of March 1603. by Thomas Decker.

The 19. of March, the King, Prince, and Nobilitie, rode to the Parliament at Westminster, where parliament continued until the 7. of July 1604. and was then prorogued until the 7. of February next following.

The 27. of May, nine Letters of Resolutions, were passed at Westminster.

Thomas Smith, a worthy Gentleman, late Alderman of London, was sent Embassador from King James of England, to the Emperour of all Russia, great Duke of Volodchener, Moscow, and Nonograd, King of Cazan, King of Astracan, &c. He began his journey on his journey the 10. of June.

The 7. of July, the Parliament was prorogued until the 7. of February next following.

The 3. of August, about 1. of the clocke in the forenoon, great clappes of thunder was heard at London, and great raine and hails followed, such as the like had not bene sene in the memory of man, for one hundred yeares, to wit, all vii. of the clack, and then ceased, but the Thunder did not cease to rore so high, that many houses by them were over-taken of which he, and the goods or waies in them destroyed.

Sunday the 5. of August, a Towne named Elizabeth, in the Tower of London, brought forth a Lion wherewith a Lion whelpie lined not longer then the next day.

The same day landed in the Countie of Brittain, John de Valasco Countie of Castile, and Legion, Duke of the Citie of Plas, Carlo de Pado, Lord of the Countie of Villapand, and Perara de la Sierra, Lord of the Countie of Valasco, and of the leauen Infants of Lara, great Chamberlaine vnto Philip the thirde, King of Spaine, &c. He was lodged that night in the Countie of Pomer, he came to London, and he by water to Somerset house at the Strand, on Friday the 7. of August, about vi. of the clocke at night, he came there once London by night, 2. hundred, seven, and threescore, and threescore, with 6. horses the peace, all laden. The 15. he rode to the Court at Westminster, &c.

The 19. of August, being Sunday in the afternoone, about 5. of the clocke, a fayrest peace was proclaimed at the Crosse in Fleet-cheape, William Segar, and Gaycer, King of Armes read the Proclamation being present eight or ten Barons in their robes of Armes: Serjeant Crumpey, and 6. of Crumpeys bounding, and Sir William Runney one of the Sheriffs of London in Scarlet, all on Horseback.

The Proclamation thus, IAMES by the grace of God King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, to all our loving Subiects, and to all others that these presents shall heare or see, greeting. Know yee that this day, to the honour of Almighty God, the wefare of all Christendome, and specially to the peace and tranquillitie of this our Realme of England, a league of peace and amitie is concluded, ratified, and sworne on our part,

Parliament  
at Westminster.  
Ann. reg.  
m. 2.

1604.  
Pirates  
hanged.

Samuel  
boy to Mar-  
tin.

The Parli-  
ament pro-  
rogued.

Great raine  
and hails at  
London.

A Lion  
brought in  
to the Tower.

Countie of  
Castile  
came into  
England.

Peace pro-  
claimed  
in Spaine,  
the Arch-  
duke of Au-  
stria, &c.

The Pro-  
clamation.

between your Realms & dominions; and the high and mighty Prince Philip the third of that name King of Spaine, &c. And *Albion* and *Isabell*, Archdukes of Austria, Dukes of Burgondie, which as we hope shall be of long continuance, &c for the comfort of our people, so do we hereby make knowne the time to them requiring them all to observe & keepe the same, and from hence forth to accompt all subjects of the said King of Spaine, & Archdukes of Austria, Dukes of Burgondy to be our friends and Allies, & so to use them, as they will and were the contrary at their perill: Given at our Palace at Whitehall the day and yeare above-said.

Articles of Peace, Interchange, & Commerce, concluded in the names of  
 the said King and mighty Kings and Princes, James King of England,  
 Scotland, France, and Ireland; and Philip the sixth King of Spain; &c. And  
 Alphonso and Isabel, Infantes of Castile, Duke of Burgundy, &c. With  
 the Commissioners for the King of England, Thomas Cade of Wexley,  
 Baron of Buckburgh, High Treasurer of England; Charles Cade of  
 Bergham, Baron Howard of Bergham, Chief Justice itinerant of all the  
 Courts in this the West of England; and Captain general  
 of the shippes and fleet of England, Ireland, and the Isles and domi-  
 nions thereof, Charles Cade of Donnington, Baron of Donnington, Lieu-  
 tenant in the kingdome of Ireland, Spallier of the Chancery, Overseer of  
 the tower, Hays and Castle of Portsmouth, Knight of the most honourable  
 order of the Garter, Henry Cade of Northampton, Lord Boteward of Par-  
 ham, Lord Treasurer, and Admirall of the shippes of Wales. Robert lorde Wilcom  
 Cranborne, lorde Coill of Exeter, principal Secretary, Spallier of the  
 court of Chancery and Under all lorde of his highnes privie counsell.

Commissioners by the king of Spaine. John de Veiasca Constable of  
Castile and Legion, Duke of the citie of Arins, Carlo of Bars, layn of the  
towners of Villalpand, and Pedraca de la Sierra, layn of the house of Viesco,  
and of the leauen Infants of Lara, great Chamberlaine unto Philip the  
third king of Spaine &c. counsellor of state and treasre, Barboent of Arby,  
John Bapulla de Tassis, Carlo of Villa Mediona, Gentlemen of the kings  
chamber, and post-mastor generall in the kingdoms and dominions of the  
said king. Alexander Roudius professor of the Lawe in the college of Sal-  
lema and Senatoz of the province of Castille.

Commissioners for the Archbishops: Charles Prince and count of Arémburge, knight of the order of the Golden Fleece, Chancellor of state, and General general to the said Archbishops. John Richardot knight, President of the private council, councillor of state, Lodouik Verreken knight, principal Secretary, and Audientiaris. The Articles are in number xxviii. ec. published in Mainz by Robert Barker, Printer to the Kings majesty.

The 10. of August Robert Lays Cicell of C. States, was create Baronet  
Cranborne.

**The Inter-  
ling of Spec-  
ting at  
Battle-  
mentaire.**

At the month of September, the King sent prime Meales to the local

right citizens of London, for murmur, certain figures to be reproduced of them.

In the month of October, the customers of merchants both inland and outward being raised, were then taken out to firing.

The 24 of October, King James took in most solemn manner at the N. Yarned great cross in West-chance, proclaimed King of Great Brittain, France, & Scotland, Ireland, Wales, & the City, &c. Sir Thomas Bennet, Lord Bishop of London, his brethren the Bishops in Scotland, Lady Dorella and Countessess all on horseback being present.

The 16 of December, 1893, published at London contains nine pieces of coins, both of Gold and of Silver, both the true valuation and weights of them, according to the Spirit of our Nations; Another are secured.

**D. Bank-  
craft Arch-  
bishop of  
Canterbu-**

On the 24 of December, as on Christmas day in the afternoon, the Reverend Father Richard Vaughan, Doctor of Divinity, Bishop of Chester, being translated, was installed by his deputy D. D. in Pauls Church, Bishop of London.

The 27. of December, 1901, a proclamation was made to prepare the Berlin Ports and  
ment till the month of October next following.

The 4. of January, John Philip-Harborn, brother to the Duke of Devonshire, was married at the court then at Whitehall, to the Duke of Argyll's daughter, whose father was lately executed: the king gave the lady in marriage.

Friday the 4. of January at afternoon, Charles Duke of Albemarle (a child of some 4. years old) second sonne to King James, Robert lord Willoughby, the lord Chandoy, the lord Compton, the lord Norris, William Cicell, beinge and heire to the Honourable Cranborne, Allaine Pierce brother to the Earle of Northumberland: Thomas Somerfield second sonne to the Earle of Worcester: Francis Manners brother to the Earle of Rutland: Francis Clifford, brother to the Earle of Cumberland: Thomas Howard, second sonne to the Earle of Northfolke: and John Harrington sonne and heire to the lord Harrington, were appointed to be made knights of the Bath, the earles of Oxford and Essex beinge esquires to the Duke, took their lodgings at Whitehall in the first gate-house going to Kings-street, where they were all after supper, at which they sat by degrees acroo on the one side, with the armes of many of them, over the lease where he was placed, and layed upon funeral pallies in one chamber, with their armes likewise over them, havinge their hattons provided for them in the chamber underneath. The next morning beinge Saturday, they went about through the gallery betwixt into the Parks in their German robes, the squillions playing, & the Spanish going before them, into the Court, and so into the chapel, and thers after solemn marchelles, like to the knights of the Garter, first to the Altar, and then to the chace of office.



every one took his place in the Gallies of the River, and heard solemn service, which done, every one with his Equires, went and offered: the Mayne of the Chaple in a rich Coat before the Balcon. After they went by unto their lodgings, as they came, and there were attired themselves in Robes of Crimson Tassels, with Hatts and white feathers, then they went backe to the great chamber, where the king sat under the cloath of Estate, and by him were there giued with the sword, & had the gault spurrer put upon them. This done, they were solemnly served at dinner, & after dinner went againe to the chapple, and there offered their thanks.

The next day being Monday, in Twelfth day, in robes of Purple Satin, with Whorls on their Shoulders, and Hatts with white feathers, they proceeded out of the chappell with the Duke of Albany (being then to be made Duke of Yorke) into the Hall where the king sat under the cloath of Estate, at what time the Harleins going before, the knights of the Bath followed after them, the Lord Chamberlaine Earle of Suffolk, in his robes of Estate going alone, then Henry Howard earle of Northampton, and Charles Blunt earle of Devonshire, carrying the robes of estate for the Duke of Yorke after Henry Wiltshir earle of Southampton carried the Coronall, George Clifford earle of Cumberland carrying the golden Rod: the earle of Worcester the Cap of estate, and the earle of Nottingham bare the Duke of Albany in his armes, supported by the earle of Dorset Lord Treasurer, and the earle of Northumberland, who all coming in this order before the king, the Duke of Albany, soon after the Harleins read, created Duke of Yorke, with the robes and Coronall put on him, and the golden Rodde delivered to his hand: all which performed they went to dinner: the Duke of Yorke and the earles sitting at one table in the upper end of the great chamber in their robes of estate, and the knights of the Bath by themselves at another table in the end of that chamber.

The 26. of February was an other Lion whelped in the Tower in London by the Spanish Ambassie, which was taken from the Dam as soon as the same was whelped, and brought by by hand according as the king commanded: but this Lions whelp also dyed about some 20. dayes after. In the month of March. Thus much of these whelpes have I observed, and put in memory, so that I have not read of any the like in this land before this present yeare, to wit, one, on the 5. of August, and the other, on the 26. of February next following.

One note more (not the merest) though out of place, and cometh late, in here to be set, as I received it at the hands of my very good friend Master William Seger, Garter, king at Armes, when all the former was passed the Harleins: and thus it followeth.

The right Honourable Roger Earle of Rutland, appointed by the Kings Ambassie to be Ambassador to his brother Christian 4. king of Denmark, returned to his country (in his behalf) the Christianizing of the said kings Sonnes, as also to present his Highness with the most noble order of the Garter: which he leav at the court at Greenwich on Sunday the 26. of June

June 1603. And on Monday embarked himself at Gravesend, in his Ships, 26. of June  
his ship called the Gouden Lion, being towship accompanied with nine  
knights, twenty Equires his friends and allies, besides, about one hundred  
Gentlemen and Women his servants and followers. 1603.

On Tuesday the 28. day, his Lordship set saile at Gravesend: on Wednesday at night we lost sight of land, and the weather being favourable, on Tuesday seaven night following we arrived and safely anchored within the Sound of Denmarke. On Thursday the 7. of July his Lordship landed at Elsenor, was visited and saluted from the king. On Friday he rested himself: and on Saturday took his journey to Copenhagen, where the king then was with seaven score wagons prepared for his transportation. His majestie having also sent two very faire Coaches, and some Gentlemen his servants to attend him.

By the way his lordship was met by Ramellius, & some other of the kings Councill, who by an oration made in Latin, saluted his Lordship with most kinde welcome, signifying that it was the kings pleasure, that himselfe and all his traine should be free of all charge during their abode in his country, and to that end had so ordeined, that in all the towne and villages where he passed, Wine and Beere, with other vittall, were plentifully and freely offered unto all men. This Oration was answered by Master Nanton, a learned Gentleman that attended my lord for that purpose.

That evening we came to Copenhagen, the Ambassadors & his brothers were lodged in the Court, and the knights & Gentlemen in the towne: that night the Earle was visited in his lodging by some of the kings Councill, and some complements passed betwene the king and the Ambassadors by messages onely.

Sunday in the morning being the 10. of July, my Lord was appointed to have audience of the king, and thereupon about the houre of nine, his Lordship set forth of his lodging, with all his attendants in very good order and richly beset, his Gentlemen of the better sort had a livery of Scarlet laine with fine or fine Silver laces about, & the meaner sort with as many guards of white Satin.

The kings Majestie stood on a halfe pace in a great chamber at the side of a square table placed under a cloath of estate of Crimson Velvet, he was apparelled in black, for he then mourned for his brother which dyed in Russia. At my Lords approach he uncovered his head, and descending the halfe pace, embraced my lord with much kindnesse, then began Master Nanton my lords Orator, his Oration in Latin, which he performed with great eloquence. And in handling the parts of his Oration, he first presented the king of Englands letters of credence, and deputation for the Baptizing of the Child, and then the Commission for the order of the Garter. All which the king received and read, and after a few instructions given by his majestie to Ramellius his counsellor, Ramellius answered the Oration pointly, with great learning and readinesse. After which the king discoursed a while in the Italian tongue with the Ambassadors, taking knowledge of the knights & gentlemen, who kissed his

his Highness hands: and so proceeded to church, to the Chipping of the young Prince, in manner following.

The Streets of Copenhagen through which this royall proceeding should passe, were set with certaine Ensignes of Burgers, both of Shot and Pike: the kings Trumpets rid foremost sounding; then followed the kettle drums, then the kings household servants on foot, after whom followed 50. Gentlemen mounted on great horse, apparelled in black, who mourned as the king did, then came the Lord embassadoz attendants, followers and servants, accompanied with divers Dances on foot. The Bishop of Breame, with the deputies of Saxon, Brunswick, & Brandeburg, accompanied each other. The king, the lord embassadoz, and duke Vriek (the kings brother) rid all thre together. The Quene mother followed dressed in white, sitting alone in a chariot of Crimson Velvet embroidered & richly gaud, bearing the young Prince in her armes, the chariot was drawn with six white horse, sumptuously harnessed & plumed, and a guard of Suisses listed in red & yellow like, bore light torches therabout. After followed a spare chariot of purple velvet richly embroidered, & after it divers coaches of the Quenes women, apparelled in white like unto Prins. Thus with great triumph & rejoycing of the people (which were there in great numbers) they entered our Lady Church of that towne, where the baptizing was to be performed. The chancel was hung with crimson velvet and satin figured, & round about beautified with the fairest Ladies in great abundance, all riche in Jewels, and head attyres of Pearle, close dressed, but their garments were black and plaine. And truly in my judgment, both for habit & behaviour they seeme to be the most modest women of the world.

In the Chancell were erected two transees, th one for the Quene mother and the Prince, the other for the King and the Embassadors. After divers Anthems & Hymnes long, and continued with excellent Musick in great variety: a Bishop assisted with one Deacon in rich vestments standing before the Altar, began to read certaine prayers both in Latin & Danish tongues, which performed, the Bishop came to the Font, and the Quene mother being led by the Lord Embassadoz, and duke Vriek, brought the child in her armes to the same, and there she delivered the child to be held by the Lord Embassadoz, whilst she her self slipped back the head attire for the Baptisme, which the Bishop after certaine prayers performed, by putting water on the Infants head with the signe of the Crosse, saying, Name de Barne, which was Christian, done by the Embassadoz and the other Deputies, at the request of the King his father. All which accomplished, and the Quene mother with the Prince retired into her transe, the Bishop began a Sermon in Latin upon the Gospel for that day, which ended, the Trumpets sounded, and they royally returned as they came.

That day the king made a solenne feast to the embassadoz, and the other deputies, placing the Embassadoz of the king of England at the table end on the right hand of the Quene mother, himselfe sat on the right side of the table end, his Quene on the left: the duke his brother the bishop of Breame and the other estates were placed according to their degrees, and so were the

English

English knights & Gentlemen, as many as the house might containe. To be briefe, it were superfluous to tell you of all superfluities that were used, and it would make a man sick to heare of their drunken healths: he hath brought it into a fashion, a fashion made it a habit, which ill becomes our nation to imitate.

Monday the 11. of July the Lord embassadoz was entertained with the sight of the Kings Stable of horse, and with the Arsenall of storehouse of the kings munitions, which truly when it shall be performed, will be one of the most excellent provisions in Christendom. There was but one floor of it built, the other lay in their foundations, the habitation is of three levels, in the neermost is Artillery upon carriages, to neate and cleane kept, that the brasse is as bright as gould, and the Iron as black as Jet, the Bullets are built in piles according to their size, & all provisions so ready & necessary, as it is not to expect with words, what it is in forme, so is the middle storehouse of Ammours, Pike, & shot, Ensignes, Drums, & all martiall instruments els the top: 1. ft with Powder, Carbage, and other necessities is plentifully stored.

Tuesday the 12. day, was spent in seeing the king of Denmarks ships, and other compliments.

Wednesday the 13. day, my Lord embassadoz and his attendants having kissed the Quenes hand, & the young Prince, took their leave & returned frö Copenhagen to E. senor, by the way the king had the embassadoz hunted.

Thursday the 14. day, the king recreated the order of the Garter within the castell of Ellenor, which service was performed by William Segar Norroy King of Armes, unto whom the king gave a rich suite of apparell, & a chain of golde with his spedaigle hanging thereat: At the evening of the King, the Castell discharged fiftie canon, and the king of Englands ship lying beside the Castell, reported as many. That afternoon the king went aboard the English ship, and had a banquet prepared for him upon the upper decks, which were hung with an Awning of cloath of Laine, every health reported five, eight, or ten shot of great Ordnance, so that during the kings abode, the ship discharged 160. shot.

This Castell of Ellenor is a quadrant, and one off the goodliest fortifications in that part of the world, both for strength and most curious Architecture, and was built by Frederick this Kings father, there is in the same many Princely lodgings, and especially one great Chamber: it is hangd with Carpets off: & coloured like without gold, wherein all the Danish Kings are buried in antique habits, according to their severall times, with their armes and inscriptions, containing all their conquests & victories: the roofe is of inlaid woods, and hung full of great branches of brasse for lights.

Friday the 15. day, the king hunted, and by the way shewed my Lord certaine Water-mills (of his stone device) for the forging, hammering, and boaring of his Ordnance, both great and small: in which workes a dozen men did (with much ease) the offices of three or foure scope. The chase continued about two houres, the Deere being brought within foyles, were killed with speker-shot, to the number of eight or nine scope, the most part Stags. After which the king feasted my Lord in a lodge very royally.

Saturday

Saterday the 16. day in the morning, sixe or eight of the kings countell repaired unto my lord Embassadors lodging in the castell, and there in the presence of his lordship and his attendants, made a solemne protestation of the kings high acceptation of those labours & honours which his loving brother the king of England had done unto him, promising all princely requital, if it lay in his power, yielding likewise great thanks unto the Embassadors for his long and painfull journey to do him honour, and therewith presented his lordship with a faire Chaine and rich Jewell set with Diamonds & his picture also hanging thereat. Sixteen other chaines were given to the knights, and some of the gentlemen my lord's followers, and about ten of his specialles in gowls unto others.

The presents which the king of England sent unto the king of Denmarke were, A Collar of the Order, two very rich Georges set with Diamonds, & two Garters; & to the Quene, & Quene mother riche Carcanets and other Jewels, esteemed worth three or foure thousand pound Sterling.

That day Ramellius invited both the king and the embassadors to dine with him at his owne house nere the castell: & in his dining chamber had erected a cloath of estate of Crimson Sattin figured, with two chaires & cushions of the same, and upon the estate were set the Armes & Shies of both the kings, which before were not used, because the king received the order in his chamber, and not in his chappell. The cheare was great, and my lord being weary of those Bachinnall entertainments, took there his leave of the kings maiesly, intending that night to lye aboard, for his more speedy dispatch homewards: the king by no perswasion could alter his determination, and therefore after many embracements on either part, with kissing the kings hands, his lordship departed, and was accompanied unto the shore by his Maieslie, where the Winnetle and long Boate lay ready to convey him aboard.

Sunday and Monday we were becalmed in the Sound: and on Tensday the 19. of July we set saile for England, our ship saluting the castell, was saluted by the same: and the king standing upon a counter-lesse that lay into the sea, gave fire to a Canon with his owne hand for our last farewell. And truly I must say thus much of him, that for his royal person, & princely carriage, I hold him to be the goodliest King of Christendome.

Saterday the 30. of July, after we had bene fourtente dayes at Sea, carried by contrary winde, we landed at Scarborough in Yorkshire, and the 8. of August following, the Lord embassador came with his attendants, followers and servants to Hampton Court, where his Lordship and the rest, kissed the kings maieslies hand.

An. reg. 3. The 24. of March, D. Overall Deane of Paules, preached at Paules Crosse, being there present the Companies of the Citie in their liveryes, all praising God, & praying for the prosperous raigne of our soveraigne lord King James, and a Hymne was sung, & instruments sounded on the battlements of the church before the Sermon, the Guns were shot off at the Towre a great peale in the morning, & the like at none, the Bells in the Citie were rung, &c. The Court then at Greenwich, there was great triumph, running at the tilt, jousting, &c.

The

The right honourable Charles earle of Nottingham, Lord high Admiral, being chosen by his maieslie to goe ambassador unto the king of Spaine, to shewre the King into the League concluded, took his leave at the Court on the 27. of March, and on the 26. of March he set forward on his journey.

Thus good reader, have I brought this my Annales of England, (now lately enlarged) from the first coming of Brute into this Island (of whom it is said, it took the name of Britaine) untill this present yere of Christ our Saviour 1605. and the 3. of our soveraigne Lord James the first, unto whose maieslie I pray God to send a long and prosperous reigne over us, to Gods glory, and our comfort. And desire thus to take these and other my labours past in good part, like as I have painfully (to my great cost & charge) put of this book, & written of Charles the first, brought the same to light, and for thy great commoditie, bestowed them upon thee: in that thou shalt receive long lines by my labours, at the request and commendation of the reverend Father Mathew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, but he then deceasing, my toke was presented, by printing & reprinting (without increase, as well liking) of Raigne Wolke collection, and other late comers, by the name of Raphael Hollingshead his Chemician.

#### The severall ages of the World.

- 1 The first age from the creation of *Adam* to the flood of *Noe*, which continued yeres 1656.
- 2 The second from *Noe* to *Abraham*.
- 3 The third from the birth of *Abraham* till the departing of *Israel* out of *Aegypt*.
- 4 The fourth from the departing of *Israel* out of *Aegypt*, till the building of the Temple.
- 5 The fifth from the building of the Temple, till the captivitie of *Babylon*.
- 6 The sixt from the captivitie of *Babylon*, till the birth of our Saviour *Iesus Christ*.
- 7 The seventh beginning at the birth of our Saviour *Iesus Christ*, hath continued till this present yere of our Lord 1605. and shall last to the worlds end.
- 8 The age of the World at the birth of our Saviour *Iesus Christ*, was 3962.
- 9 The age of the World this present yere of our Lord 1605. is 5567.

Of the Vniuersities in England, and Colledges in the same, with the founders, and principall benefactors.



I have before time reposed (saith *Erasmus Roderdam*) that England was so well furnished with so many men of excellent learning, but now I begin to enuie her felicitie, for that she is furnished with all kinde of literature, that by taking the commendation thereof from other Regions, shee may as it were marvellouslie obscure them. And yet this commendation is not as now first seen in England, in the which (it is well knowne) have bene of long time, men of great learning. The Vniuersities provide this to be true, which have for their antiquities length, are contented with the most ancient & best Vniuersities in the world.

F F F.

Colledges

Colleges and Halls in the University of Cambridge, to the number  
of 21, endowed with lands and possessions for maintenance of Students

in all manner of Sciences, firstly accounted according to the time of their  
beginnings, although at this day by the altering of foundations  
they are but 18. left.



First, the Philosophic Schoole above and beneath, sometime called the Schoole of Emulation (that is to say, the West-end of the same church) was builden at the charges of the Universitie, and other good benefactors, since the place of our Lord God 1136. The Schoole of Physicke, and againe that beneath Chappell, (that is to say, the North-end) was begun by the Universitie upon contributions and collections of sundry persons. And the same was finished in the yere of Christ 1400. by the recitours of Sir William Thorpe Knight, sometime chiefe Justice of England. The Schoole of Art, and once that the old Library (that is to say, the South-end) was made by the Universitie of the ruines of the old Scholes. The gate of the same Scholes, with the walkes on each side thereof, and the new Library (that is to say, all the East-end) was builden at the costs of Thomas Rochester Archbishop of Yorke, with some contribution of the Universitie in the yere of Christ 1470. And in the yere 1476. was purchased, as now it standeth.

Saint Peters Colledge, commonly called Peter House, was founded in  
 the time of king Henry the third, by Hugh Balham prior of Ely, in the year  
 of Christ 1256. This was after enlarged in the time of king Edward the se-  
 cond, by master Robert Lyring, who gave a house with the appurtenances  
 wherein sometime dwelled the religious men called *Freres de sacco* or of po-  
 nencia lase (*Arish*); likewise another house was given by Robert de Ayle-  
 sham master of Framlingham. But the indowment was given by the  
 sayd Hugh Balham who was after the 15. Bishop of Ely, and died in the  
 Colledge in Anno 1284.

[illegible]

in England.

rights, as well by him as by divers other good benefactors of latter time. At this day it is taken into Trinity Hall.

The Universite Hall or Colledge founded by King H. the eight. of the Universite of Cambridge, in the yere 1226. And the 19. yere of king Edward the second (maister Richard Badew being then Chancelor) upon a ground, thereupon bode two houses belonging of old time to the said Chancelor and Universite in Spinelstrate. King Edward the thirde in the 20. yere of his raigne, gave licence of Mortmaine to the maister and schollers of the said new created Colledge, to take lands and tenements to the yerele value of forty pounds for ever, for their maintenance in study, at the request of the Chancelor and masters of the said Universite. Since that it was much increased by maister Walker Thackelme maister of the same Colledge. But now it is united into the foundation of the lady Elizabeth de Burgo countesse of Clare.

The Kings Hall in Colledge had his first original of king Edward the first, who of his owne devotion maintained there for a time 32. scholars, in a table of learning and knowledge, who for certaine yeres after were payde their salaries or stipends, sometime by the sheriffe of Cambridge, sometime by the prior and convent of Saint Neotes or Needes, and sometime out of the Exchequer. But king Edward the third by his charter dated the seventh daie of October, in the 11. yere of his raigne, erected there a Colledge in the honour of God and his blessed mother s. Mary the virgin, and all holy Saints, to a master and 32. scholars, calling it by the name of the Kings Hall. The ground whereof he purchased of master Robert Croiland, and after inbowed it with lands and possessions, which he continued a Colledge till the time of king Edward the 3. who united the same to his new foundation of Trinitie colledge. Clare Hall was founded by

the wife of John de Burgo Earle of Ulster in Ireland, daughter of sir Gilbert of Clare Earle of Glocestre, and one of the heires of sir Gilbert of Clare her brother the last Earle of Glocestre, she was first married to John de Burgh earle of Ulster in Ireland, after to Theobald of Berdon, and thirde to sir Roger Damary, and had issue by them all, the taking into her foundation the forenamed Winterstie Hall by the resignation of master Walter Thackelred master of the faide house, and the consent of master Richard Badew the first founder, called it all under the name of Clare Hall : and became the only founder thereof in the time of king Edward the thirde, about the yere of our lord 1347.

Pembroke Hall was founded by the ladye Mary of Valentia Countesse  
Pembroke, wife of Audomare de Valentia earle of Pembroke, and daugh-  
ter of Guido Earle of Saint Paule in France, who obtained licence of  
King Edward the third (whose colen she was) to founde this Colledge of a  
scholar and thirtie scholars or more, at her pleasure: And to assigne them  
their habitation a place in Cambridge of her owne inheritance, with thre  
other messuages which she purchased, and 100. l. of yeerlie rent in advow-  
sons of churches for ever, and called it Aula de Valentia Marja. Anno 1347.

Arre The

The Colledge of *Corpus Christi* & our blessed lady, commonly called *Bennet Colledge*, was founded by the alderman and brethren of *Corpus Christi* guild, and the brethren of our Lady guild in Cambridge, at the instance of the first Henry Duke of Lancaster, who in the 26. yere of king Edward the third, obtained a licence of *Papstmaln* for the said alderman and brethren, that upon a messuage to them belonging in Cambridge, they might erect this colledge for scholars, chaplaines, and others, to be gouerned by a master, according to their rules and ordinances. By the same licence was also appropriated unto the colledge for ever the aduowson of St. Bennets church standing before their gate. This duke of Lancaster in the 28. yere of the said king Edward the third, was elected alderman of the said guildes, who recognised the statutes of the colledge not by the dukes seale, but by the seale of the alderman of those guildes.

Trinity Hall was of olde time an hostell or house of studie. And in the time of king Edward the third, John Cranden prior of Ely and his count procured the same hostell for their monks to studie in. To this house were adde three other dwelling houses by master Richard Ling Chancelor of the Vniuersitie, and Archibald of Norwich, master Walter Elueden, and master Simon Rekinghale parson of Kolesby, either of them one house. And in the 28. yere of the raigne of king Edward the third, master Robert Stratton, John Trunch, Walter Bakton, Walter de Aldeby, and Peter de Biterings, gaue toward the enlargement therof one messuage and seven pieces of bold ground. And likewise the said Walter Bakton, and Peter Biterings, and Thomas Walsingham, gaue one other messuage called Draxes entrie. All which being thus laid together, were after purchased by master William Bateman bishop of Norwich, who by the kings licence builded thereon the Colledge, as now for the most part it standeth, in the worship of the holy Trinity, and indow'd it with lands and possessions, and became founder thereof, though since it hath bene increased by diuers good benefadors: hee deceased at Autun in France (where he was sent on the kings message) the first day of Januarie, in the 11. yere of his consecration, and of our Lord God 1354.

Gonville Hall was founded by Edmond Gonville parson of Terington in Norfolk, in the two and twentieth yere of king Edward the third, who for that purpose obtained a licence at the suite of Sir Gualter de Manney, to erect a colledge for a master and twentie scholars, to be students in the art of Logike and other sciences, upon a ground where sometimes stood three houses and a garden in Lurthowplane, which he purchased for his money. And in the 26. yere of the same king, the house of that colledge was enlarged by the gift of two other houses, the one by the Chancelor and masters of the Vniuersitie, and the other by the master and brethren of Saint Johns hospitall in Cambridge. This Edmond Gonville at his decease hauing a good summe of money, commended the further finishing of the same colledge to master William Bateman bishop of Norwich, which he performed both in the buildings and indowment with lands, and caused it to be named Gonville Hall. At this day it is vniited into the colledge of doctors Caius, and called by the name of Gonville and Caius colledge.

The

The Colledge of Gos-house was first founded by master William Bingham parson of Saint John Zacharie in London, upon a tenement and three garden plats in Spinestrate, which he bought for his money, and procured licence of king Henry the first, in the twentieth yere of his raigne, to erect thereon his said colledge for 25. persons and a prouost, to be gouerned by such rules and statutes, as should be assigned unto them by the said William Bingham, and by William Wimbell, William Millington, and William Gull doctors of divinitie, and John Tilney doctor of Law, and the longest liuer of them. This colledge was chiefly erected for such as should profess the study of Grammar, whereof (as it seemeth) there was great want in those daies, not only in both the vniuersities, but also throughout the realme. In few yeres after St. Henry being determined to found his great Colledge of our Lady and St. Nicholas, obtained of the said William Bingham a resignation of that house and ground for his said new colledge, and in stede thereof gaue unto him two other places in the Preachers strate, belonging sometime the one of them to the abbot of Ely, and the other to the prior of Wey, wherewith he also granted a licence of *Papstmaln* for one hundred pound by yere towards their maintenance for ever. But shortly after the said William Bingham in the yere 1447. resigned unto the said king Henry the foresaid colledge, to the intent that hee should be accounted the onely founder thereof as he was indeed. But now it is annexed to Christs colledge founded by the lady Margaret comtesse of Richmond and Darby.

The Kings Colledge of our blessed lady and Saint Nicholas was first founded by king Henry the first, under the name of a Rectory and scholars, in the nineteenth yere of his raigne. And after in the one and twentieth yere of his raigne, he translated the forme of that foundation into the name of prouost and scholars. Edward the fourth in displeasure with the Colledge so much land as the founder had given them, and after restored them to the poorely valew of five hundred markes. After that king Henry the seventh finished the same worke of that notable chappell begun by king Henry the first, and king Henry the eighth finished the glazing, stalles, and pavement of the same. This colledge was begun by king Henry the first, to haue bene one of the beautifull houses in this city, the plat whereof is more particularly set out in this my Annales.

The Colledge of Saint Margaret and Saint Bernard, commonlie called *Queens Colledge*, was first begun by Duene Margaret wife to king Henry the first, and daughter of Reyner king of Sicilie and Ierusalem, who procured *Papstmaln* for the same of 100. pound by yere, in anno 1441. at the intercession of master Andrew Ducker, parson of Saint Botolphes in Cambridge, sometime principall of Bernard Hostell, which Hostell he purchased and gaue to the said colledge. And by his owne money and helpe of others, purchased certaine other tenements and builded the colledge, being the first president of the same: and gaue as well in his life time, as by his testament, diuers summes of money and parcels of land: procuring likewise certaine giftes of George Duke of Clarence, of Cicely Duchesse of Yorke, of Richard

duke of Gloucester, and Anne duchesse of the same, of Edward earle of Salisburie, of Maule countesse of Arford, and Marmaduke Lomelle bishop of Litchborne, sometime Chancelor of the Vniuersitie. But the creation of this foundation goeth now in the name of king Henry the first, as appeareth by his charter dated the third day of December in the 25. yere of his raigne, who made the same vpon his owne ground, where now it standeth in Spilnesstrate, for one president and foure fellowes or mo, as the ir liuelode shoulde extend according to such rules and statutes as shoulde be deuised by Ma<sup>r</sup>. John Somersct, chancelor of the Exchequer, John Langton chancelor of the Vniuersitie, Richard Cawdreie, Peter Huford, Gilbert Northington, and Thomas Bolyn, and by the longest liuers of them. After all which, quene Elizabeth the wife of king E. the 4. made perfect the statutes of that Colledge, in the yere 1465. king Richard the 3. endowd this colledge, with 500. markes the yere laide.

Katherine Col.

Katherine Hall was founded by M<sup>r</sup>. Robert Woodlarke doctor of Diuinity, chancelor of the Vniuersitie, and p<sup>r</sup>osess of the kings Colledge, to the honor of our blessed Ladie and S. Katherine, the virgin and marty<sup>r</sup>, in the time of E. the 4. about the yere of Christ, 1475. for the number of one Master and three fellowes or mo, vpon a certaine messuage in Spilnesstrate, by him purchased, wherewith he also obtained of the said king a licence of mo<sup>r</sup>tymaine for 40. markes of p<sup>r</sup>ecely rent towards the ir maintenance for euer. Since it is enlarged by other good benefactors.

Jesus college.

Jesus Colledge was of old time a Monasterie of religious women of S. Kadegund, which monasterie being desitute of government, the offices fallen in decaye, the gods and ornaments of the church wasted, the lands diminished, and in conclusion a small number of nunnkes left, being but two, where of the one ready to depart, and the other an infant, were brought into such p<sup>r</sup>ouertie, that they were not able to relieue thei<sup>r</sup> selues, and therefore forced to depart and leaue the house desolate: whereupon John Alcocke bishop of Elye, obtained licence of king Henry the 7. in the yere 1497. to found in place thereof a Colledge to the honor of the holy Trinitie, and our blessed Ladie, and S. John the Euangelist, and S. Kadegund the virgin, for the number of one master, six fellowes, and a certaine number of schollers, to be gouerned by such rules and statutes as he shoulde appoint vnto them.

This John Alcocke was borne at Beuerley in Yorkshire, and builded a free schole at Eithkstone vpon Hull, and a chappell on the southside of the parish church wherein his parents were buried: he builded likewise a most beautifull monument in the great church of Elye, where himselfe lieth buried, and did in his time so many and so good actes, as would require a long treatise to set them forth. The rents of this Colledge, and the number of fellowes and schollers haue been more amplified at seuerall times by Sir Robert Resade knight, chiefe Justice of the common Pleas, doctor Elefon, doctor Roye Hon, and doctor Fuller.

Christ's College.

Christ's Colledge was first begun by king Henry the first, and after his decease by the lady Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby, daughter and heire of John Duke of Somerset, and mother of king Henry the seventh, in

In the place where sometime the Colledge of Gods-house stode in the Wyndesore strate, which colledge was first founded by William Bingham parson of Saint John Sabary in London and other, but because it came neerer to persection, he obtained of the said king her sonne his charter dated the first day of Aprile in the 20. yere of his raigne, and the yere of our Lord God 1505, to increase the number of students there, translating it according to her disposition, so that from thenceforth it shoulde be called Christ's Colledge, where in the allowed by her Will to the number of 60. persons, with seruants to them conuenient and necessary. The Abbey of Cerke being dissolved the lands were giuen to that colledge.

A master, six schollers fellowes, and 4 schollers with p<sup>r</sup>es.

Saint Johns Colledge was of ancient time an Hospitall of regular canons, founded by Nigellus the second bishop of Elye, and treasurer to king Henry the first, in the yere of Christ 1134. After him many yeres Hugh Balsam alias Norwold bishop of Elye, obtained licence of king Edward the first in the yere 1280. to translate the order of that house, and placed therein a certaine number of schollers, to cohabite among the religious persons, assigning to each part their portions by their owne consents, aswell of the landes as the goods: so that alwaies y<sup>e</sup> more people of ancient time there relieved, shoulde not be defrauded of the ir accustomed charitie.

Saint Johns Colledge.

The noble lady Margaret countesse of Richmond and Derby, being informed, that the number of religious brethren was greatly diminished, and now brought but to two, the house decayed, and the landes and goods wasted, procured licence of her nephew king Henry the 8. to erect in the same place a Colledge in the worship of S. John the Euangelist, but she being prevented by death, left the execution thereof to her executors Richard Foxe Bishop of Winchester, John Fisher Bishop of Rochester, Charles Somersct lord Herbert, afterward created Earle of Worcester, Sir Thomas Louell, Sir Henry Marney, and Sir John S. John knights, Henry Homeby, and Hugh Ashton clerkes, who with her goods finished the building, and with the remaine of the landes that was in the house before, amplified with her owne landes, founded the said Colledge for a master and fifty schollers, in the yere 1509.

Magdalen Colledge was first an Hospitall of Wall, inhabited by sisters moniks of sundry monasteries (and therefore of old called Honks Colledge) being sent from their abbeyes to the Vniuersity for to study.

Magdalen college.

Edward Duke of Buckingham had an intention to bestowe great cost in the building thereof, who builded by the hall in the yere of Christ 1515. whereupon it was for a time called Buckingham Colledge.

But these buildings being left by the duke imperfect, were after brought to some better passe by the p<sup>r</sup>os of Elye, and the abbots of Ramsey, and Walden, and so continued a place of study for the moniks till the generall suppression of monasteries made by king Henry the 8.

At length the Lord Thomas Audley Baron of Walden, and Chancelor of England, founded there a colledge under the name of S. Mary Magdalen, and indowd it with possessions, in the yere of our Lord 1542. But being prevented by death, so that that he had begun, he left unfinished, Sir Christopher

Stephen Wray Layde chiefe Iustice of England repaired and beautified it.

Trinitie college was founded by King Henry the eight, in the yere of Christ 1546. This college was erected in the plat where sometime Edward the thirde builded his college called the Kings hall, whereunto was also incorporated one other college called Spicard house, founded by Hericus de Stanton in the time of King Edward the second. And yet a thirde house called Whithwicke Hostel: All which three houses the King tooke into his newe college, with the possessions and buildings to the same belonging, and called it by the name of Trinitie college. The possessions thereof were greatly enlarged by the gift of Queene Mary. Shee gaue three hundred thirtie eight pounde lands by yere: In whose time the faire chappell of that college was also builded about the yere of Christ 1557.

Gonville and Caius college was first begun by Edmond Gonville, as before is said. John Caius Doctor in Philosophie sometime fellowe and lately master of the saide college, hath enlarged that house, and nowe made a seconde foundation thereof, with giuing certaine manors and landes to the same, in the yere 1557. and calling it by the name of Gonville and Caius college.

Emanuel college was founded by Sir VValter Myldmay Knight, chancellor, and undertreasurer of the Exchequer, and one of the Priuie counsell to our Soueraigne Lady Queene Elizabeth, about the yere of our Lord 1584. upon the house and grounds of the late frier preachers, or Dominick friers, in the preachers streete.

And thus far of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, with the Collegedges and Halles in the same.

## ¶ The Vniuersitie of Oxford was instituted by King

Alfred a Saxon, after the birth of Christ 873. yeres:

And bath Collegedges.



Macclesfield College (as some have written) was founded in the time of King Alfred, by Sir William Archdeacon of Duresme, in the yere 873: but in a booke intituled, the acts of the bishops of Werham, I find that the said College was builded by William bishop of Werham, in the 12. yere of the reigne of William the Conqueror, to wit, in anno 1081.

The Vniuersitie Church, alias St. Marie Church, was begun to be reedified in the time of doctor Fitz-James after bishop of London: he procured much money towards the building of it. The battlements of it were full of Minnacles, but by tempest were most of them throtene downe in one night.

Bailliol College was founded in the time of Edward the first, by John Bailliol, father to John Bailliol King of Scotland, in the yere of Christ 1163.

Merton College was founded in the time of Henry the third by Walter Merton, sometime chanon of Pauls, and also of Salisbury, at a Towne by Honesuch called Palbon in Surrey, in anno 1264. and after in Edward the first time, he being bishop of Rochester, translated the same to Oxford in the

yere

yere 1274. This Walter Merton deceased in anno 1277.

Exeter college was founded in the time of Edward the first, by Walter Stapleton bishop of Exeter, 1316.

And augmented in the time of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, by Sir William Peter knight, in the yere of Christ 1566.

Oxial college was founded in the time of Edward the second, by Sir Adam Browne Almoner of the faise king, the recorde calleth King Edward the second founder, the yere of Christ 1323.

Queenes college was founded in the time of Edward the thirde, by Robert Eglisham, in his owne grounde, and by him called the Queenes Hall: hee was chapleine to the Lady Philip, wiife to the same Edward, the yere of Christ 1340.

New college was founded in the time of King Richard the second, by William Wickham bishop of Winchester, in the yere of Christ 1379.

He also founded a college in the citie of Winchester, by the like name of New college, in anno 1389.

Lincolne college was founded in the time of Henry the first, by Richard Fleming bishop of Lincolne 1400. and augmented in Richard the thirde time, by Thomas Rotherham bishop of Lincolne, in the yere 1479.

Altones college was founded in the time of King Henry the first, by Henry Chicheley archbishop of Canterbury, in the yere 1437. King Henry the 6. gaue to his fourte Priories alians, to wit, Alberberie in Salope, Kanneyn in Bent, & argunth in South Wales, Wreden Winkney in Northamptonshire: And therefore the foundation of this college was giuen to him, as appeareth by the chartar, recorded in the Tower. Hee also founded Bernard college in Oxford, since suppressed by King Henry the eight, and now redified by Sir Thomas White, and by him called Saint Johns college. More hee founded a college at Wygham in Kent, with almes houses there.

Divinity Schoole was founded in the time of King Henry the first, by Humfrey duke of Gloucester: he gaue 129. bookes to the library 1447.

Wyndale college was founded in the time of King Henry the first, by William Wainster bishop of Winchester 1459. He builded a good part of Causton college, begunne by Henry the first: he builded a free schoole at Wainstet in Lincolnshire, seven miles from Alford toward Boston.

Wase-nose College was founded in the reigne of King Henry the seventh by VVilliam Smith Bpshopp of Lincolne, who deceased in the yere 1513.

The same VVilliam Smith sometime Bpshopp of Lichfelde, obtained an hospitall there for poore folkes, and a Grammar Schoole for poore folkes chyllyen. Also at Farnetwoorth, where he and his parentes had their original, he bestowed ten pounde the yere for ever, to one that shoulde teach a Grammar Schoole.

Corpus Christi college was founded in the reigne of Henry the seventh, by Richard Fox bishop of Winchester, himselfe being a fellow in Pembroke Hall in Cambridge: he endowed the same college with 110. l. 8. s. 11. d. of pearly rent for ever 1516.

Epist.



Christ Church

Christ Church was founded in the time of Henry the 8. by T. Wolsey cardinal and archbishop of Yorke, in the yere of Christ 1539.

Canterbury  
Colledge.

And finished by the same king Henry the 8. in the yere 1546.  
Canterbury colledge in Yorke: be founded by Sir Dr. Iohn Archbyschoppe of Canterbury, in the yere of Christ 1353. and latelie suppressed by Henry the eight, in the 31. of his raigne, and was ioined to Christs church in Yorke.

Trinity Col-  
ledge.

Trinitie colledge, was founded and so named in the reigne of quene Mary, by sir Thomas Pope knight, in anno 1556.

Durham Col-  
ledge.

Which colledge was first founded in the time of king Edward the thirde, by Thomas Hatfield Bpshopp of Durham, and by him named Durham colledge, for eight Bpshoppes and seauen clarkes, admitted by the Bpshopp of Durham, there to studie, anno 1370.

Robert Walwoorthie Bpshopp of Durham endowet it with thre bounties of land, 10. in Radington and Clarton, with the aduowson of the church of Radington: which colledge at the suppression by king Henry the eight, might depend in land as the same was then praised by the visitors 115. ponde, 4. shillings 4. pence.

Saint Johns  
Colledge.

Saint Johns colledge was founded, and so named, in the time of Quene Mary, by Sir Thomas White Merchant Tailor, anno 1557. Which colledge sometime called Barnard colledge, founded by Henry Chicheley Archbyschop of Canturburie, beeing amongst other suppressed in the raigne of king Henry the eight, and greatlie ruined; the same Sir Thomas V. White purchased, and after bestowed large summes of money in building the roof, and did laie the same colledge in vertie god lanne, nere to the Citie of Yorke, to the puerelle value of 500. ponde, which he purchased with his mony, and hath left order to make it dispnd 600. pound the yere.

Barnard Col-  
ledge.

In the Vniuersities of England (saith Erasmus Roterdame) there be cert. taine colledges, in the which there is so much Religion, so streight discipline, in such integritie of life, that if you did see it, you would neglect in comparison of them, all monkish rules and orders.

All the cities in England, manie Market Townes, and villages, haue free Grammar Schooles erected in them for the further increase of learning and vertue. Vertuous men haue to the perpetuall registering of their god names done these god deedes, learned men haue not barne all the doers. Some therefore for the supplie in other, of that which wanted in themselves, haue done likewise, all to this purpose: that vertue and learning vntied and knitt together, might in this our age make a learned vertuous worlde, haue done goodlie. It were much (they are so manie) in a small rounne to comprehend them, but the chiefe and woorthie patrones of the rest are.

Gaton Schole,

Westminster of new,

Winchester,

Pauls Schole in London,

Saint Anthonies in London.

Merchant Taylors Schole.

Henry the first 1443.

Quene Elizabeth.

William Wickham B. of Wilt.

John Collet 1510.

By Iohn Tate,

By the Merchant Taylors 1560.

FINIS.